PVRCHAS



PILGRIMES.

IN FIVE BOOKES.

The fixth, Contayning English Voyages, to the East, West, and South parts of America: Many Sea and Land Fights, Inuations and Victories against the Spaniards in those parts, and the Spanish Ilands, and Coast Townes on this side; Plantations in Guiana, and many strange admentarts of Englishman amongst the American.

The feuenth, Voyages to and about the Southerne America, with many Marine Observations and Discourses of those Seas and Lands, by Englishmen and others.

The eighth, Voyages to and Land-Trauels in Florida; Virgina, and other parts of the Notherne AMERICA. French
Plantings, Spanifb Supplantings; English-Virginian voyages, and to the llands Azor s.

The ninth, English Plantations, Discouries, Acts, and Occurrents, in Fireinia and Summer Ilands, since the Tere 1606, ull 1614.

The tenth, English Discourries and Plantations in New England, New found-land; with the Patent and Voyages to New Sections: Relations also of the Electric feet of the Section ELIZABETH against the Spaniards.

The Fourth Part,

Unus Deus, Una Veritas.



LONDON

Printed by William Stansby for Henrie Fetherstune, and are to be sold at his shop in Pauls Church-yard at the figure of the Rose.

1625.

CAHDI

PILGRIMES.



TO THE MOST

REVEREND FATHER

GEORGE,

Lord Archb. of Canterburie His Grace,

Primate of all ENGLAND and Meseopolitan,

One of His MARKSTIRS most Howo-

His very good Lord.



Aning brought onto your Grace the Sheafe Leuinssiof my first Fruits to be waued before the Lord, I am bold now also tooffer (not after 7: but abone 77. weekes) the same both may bee hallowed by the same Priestly bandin which respect your Graces N ame

which first honored my Pilgriniage, hath the last place in these Pilgrinia-Volumes, that my All might be blessed by your gracious embracing (the Alpha and Omega of my Dedications) and might bee by your Fatherly benediction commended to vulgar vse. The subshenesse of the former worke to your Graces Place and recreations, caused the former presumption: but now the Anthor, by frequent Dedications knowne and graciously acknowledged Yours (bow unprositable a seruant society) is guiltie not of single boldnesse; beautifying the Frontispice with His Highnesse Name onto your Graces entertainment (especially

in this time so many wayes Festinall) that your Graces Name and entertainment might fo much more Entitle and Endeare. the same to His Highnesse. The authorising of Books in instess order belongeth to your Grace, as doth the Author also: whose mistie conceits of ignorance, or smokie vapours of ambition fuffering the exhaling rayes of Princely heat and Highnesse, hope in the Middle Region of your Gracious and vertuous moderation to be so mildly attempered, that they shall neither fall short in vanishing dewes, nor be reiested after a short blaze as falling Starres, nor transcend into combustious Comets, nor fell downe in furious Stormes, but gently descend as fresh and fruitfull Showers on the thirstie Candid Readers. Pardon farre-fetched similitudes to a Historie of farre-fetched varities, and the Elements of the world borrowed to patronife our world of literate. Elements, not being (as the commendable labours of Others) a Booke of Voyages and Tranels in the world but the VV orld bistorised in a world of Voyages and Trauels. Wherein our Ship bath beene longer in her Circum-Nanigation then any of the World-Compassers bere related; often in danger to be onerset, whiles the Authors impotent and impatient Genius filled all her sailes to the Top and Top-gallant beyond the proportion of ber balast: whereby some leakes of unwitting errors, happening in so new a course thorow so various Seas, implore your Graces indulgence to the Ship and Pilot, Sir Francis Drake a Minia sters sonne, after a bappy invironing of the Globe, feasted Queene Elisabeth aboord bis Argo, and then laid ber up at Deptford, denoting her Carkasse to Time, Her (or rather bis) exploits to Fame and Eternitie. An English Minister, beginneth and endeth his more then Greling N auigation with the glorious Name of His Maiestie, in poore, but bis best entertainment, and returning thus manned and freighted, humbly fueth to bee laid up in the Liberties and Libraries of Saint lames. Yorke-house, Westminster, and Lambith. Here also the Pilot further petitionetb, that his Body being more leakie then bis Ship, your Grace (to whom principally the promise was made) will accept this Part of payment in satisfaction of the

>bole

DEDICATORIE.

whole debt of his Europæan Peregrination and Christian Visio tations. But a long Epistle were injurie to your Graces more necessarie imployments for the Church and State: My selfe am the Epistle, this Worke the Seale, this Epifile but the Superscription, these Pilgrimes all humble Sutors for your Gracious fauour to the worst

Your Graces

Chap.

SAMVEL PYRCHAS,



I to add the temperature of the section of

a. 10. Sut ster butters, injury you some see

And the state of t

Batter: Pracus



"ENGLISH VOYAGES. TO THE EAST, WEST, AND SOVTH PARTS OF AMERICA: MANY SEA AND LAND FIGHTS, INVASIONS

AND VICTORIES AGAINST THE SPANIARDS IN those parts, and the Spanish Hands, and coast Townes on this fide; plantations in Q VIANA, and many ftrange adventures of Englishmen amongst the AMBRICANS.

THE SIXTH BOOKE.

CHANGE.

A briefe Relation of the fenerall Voyages Ondertaken and performed by the Right Honorable, GEORGE, Earle of Cumberland, in bis owne person, or at his owne charge, and by his direction : collected out of the Relations and Iournals of credible nerfons Actors therein



He first Voyage of this Right Honorable Earle was intended to First voyage the South Sea : and begun from Granefend, June 26, 1 , 85, 1586. with three Ships and a Pinnace; the Red Dragon Admirall, of The Spanish 260. Tunnes, with 130. men, commanded by Captaine Rebert Englishment the Post Cifford Vice admirall, 65 to T. Widrington : the Barte Clifford Vice-admirall, of 130. Tunnes, Englis thips in with 70. men, commanded by Captaine Christopher Lifter (he his Ports of with yo. men, commanded by Laplaine Lovin your Laplain (in mercurion) had been taken priliner in Barbaria at the battell of Alcaffar, Spine and Poin which King Sebafham was flaine) the Roe Rere-admirall, ingel 1881, commanded by Captaine Hawes: the Dorother, a fmill Pinnace where not early of Sir Walter Raleighs (This voyage being published at large in expedited at Master Hakluyts printed voyages, I will here but briesh runne home, but euconer) Septemb. 7. they fell with the Coalt of Barbarie, haling ty where ho-

in with the Road of Santa Cruce: after that they anchored in Rio del Oro, and fearthed up the and happily River, finding it fourteene or fifteene leagues vpward as broad as at the mouth, some two leagues preuenced, ouer. The last of September they resolved for Sierra Leona, from whence they departed the le- See Hat. tomas uenth of November. The fourth of Impurie they fell with the American thours in 20, degrees Surfa Lana, and 40. minutes South latitude, the weather temperate. Ian. 10. they tooke (a little fhort of Abraham Cock. the River of Plate) a small Portugal ship, and in her Abrabam Cock of Leigh neere London, was one of his married in that Country, who was brought home by the Admirall. They learned that in that companie. See River were fine Townes each of feuentie housholds or more. Buenes Aeres, fiftie leagues up the of this voyage, River, the rest fortie or fiftie above each other; Tuccaman the vppermost 230. leagues from the Tem. 17.63. River, the reft fortie of fitte aboue each other; I necessar the wppermont 250, teagues from the effect of the contract of 1 m which was force of Come, Cartell, Fruits, but neither Silver nor Gold, In this seed by the feet of the same and fortie Negrees. The next day they tooke another, in which were fine and fixed expeditions. thirtie Negro women, foure or fine Friars, one an Irifoman. Their Bookes, Beades, and Pictures, tion. See Hale. cost about 1000. Duckets. The Bishop of Tuccaman had sent for them to take possession of a Mo- 43. I had it also naiterie. They learned of Mafter John Drake who went in confort with Captaine Fenton, cast written.

Bbbbb 3

away necre the River of Plate, his companie taken or flaine by the Salvages: of which lohn Drake and Richard Pairmeather escaped with two or three others in a Canoa to the Spaniards and lived

in those patts. Here also they tooks Colle Philips left in the Country by Sf. John Hawkins.

After countil taken they fell Aprill 3. wich the Land of Brafil in 16 digrees and a Terse, and wateredurthe Road of Commiss. They proceeded and anchored before the Towns of Baya, and found in the Nortour eight ships and one Carnell. The next day they forced the Portugal.

Bold courage, so abandon to go a she bast of those ships, and rowed the short of the in despite of infinite store of great and small that from the shoare and thips: one Hulke having in her foure and twentie pieces of Ordnance. The least of these prizes was 130. Tunnes. After this they haled the Hulke and commanded the Mafter to follow them, which he did, together with a Caruell with fifte Butts of wine. They fetched reliefe from the shoare also in despite of innumerable Indians and all the enemies forces. May 24 they tooke a flip of 120. Tunder laden with Meale and Sugar. But the voyage to the South Sea was defeated by some mens defire to returne; in which Captaine Hulks difafter. Delamour tooke a fmall Pinnace. The Flemmift Hulke taken into the Fleet in flead of the George cast off, furnished with her men, suddenly tooke fire and perished, Ship, Men, and Goods. Septemb. 29. the residue reached the Coast of England after an enprofitable and enfortunate

N the yeare 1587, when the Towne of Slawfe was befeeged by the Duke of Parma, Sir Roger Williams being Governour there, the Earle put himtelfe in perion to make proofe of his valour The Earle in Since, 83. fer . in that feruice, but at his arrivall found the Towne furrendred vnto the Duke, the faid Sir Roger being not able to hold out longer. Anno 1 <88, among ft many of the Nobility which distributed

themtelues into divers of her Maiesties Shippes vpon the approach of the Spanish Armada, the Earle put himselfe aboord the Bonaduenture commanded by Captaine George Raymond; when they wanne that honour that no Sea can drowne; no age can weare out. The Queene fo accepted this Noble Earles resolution, that she gave him leave the same yeare to goe as Generall, and for his greater honour and ability was pleased to lend him the Golden Lion, one of the Shippes Royall, to be the Admirall : which he victualled and furnished at his owne charge and adventure, having Commission to pursue his intended voyage towards the Spanish coasts, under the broad Seale of England, bearing date the fourth of Ollober, 1588. Attended with many braue 30 Gentlemen he fet forth about the end of Officer, and in the Narrow Seas met with a Shippe of Dunkerke called the Hare, laden with Merchandile for Spaine, which after some fight he tooke and fent home. But contrary windes first fuspended, and after that a storme (which forced them

to cut the maine Maste ouerboord) deprines him of further hopes and ability to prosecute his true defignes.

His spirit remaining neuerthelesse higher then the winder, and more resolutely by stormes compact & vnited in it selfe, he procured anew of her Maiestie the Vistory, one of the Royal Third voyage Nauie, accompanied with the Meg and Margares, two small Ships and one Carnell; which were fet forth at his charges, and manned with 400. Mariners and Souldiers : the Admirall comman- 40 ded by his Lordthip, and under him Captaine Christopher Lifter : the Meg by Captaine William Mounson Viceadmirall: the Margaret by Captaine Edward Careles alias Write Rereadmirall: the Carnell by Captaine Pigeon. The eighteenth of Inne they fet forth from Plummonth and within The League three dayes met with three French Ships, Leaguers of New Hanen, and Saint Maloes lailen with then, was ene-my to Queene New-found land fish; two of them with the Margaret not able to endure the Sea, were fent for

England. The thirteenth of July his Lordship met with eleven Dutch Ships which at first made shew to abide a fight, and after a few shot yeelded and sent their Masters abourd shewing their Pasports from Hamborough, Lubecke, Bream, Pomerland and Callice: who confessed that they had lew of Lisbons, goods abound to the value of toure thouland & fine hundred pounds of a lew of Lisbons, which being delivered and diffributed, his Lordship fet faile for the Afores. The first of August he had fight 50 of Saint Michael, and to difguile himfelfe put forth a Spanish Flagge. Elpying foure Shippes in the Roade, he refolued that night to cut their Cables and to bring them away : which he accordingly performed before he was descried. The Spaniards in three of them leaping into the Sea, with much noise and outcry gave the alarme to the Town, which made many vaine shots at his Boate in the darke. The fourth was the Falcon of London, under the name of a Scottifb Ship, hauing a Scottift Pilot. The three Spaniards were laden from Smill with Wine and Sallet Oyle. The

Pinnace tooke a fmall Shippe wherein was thirty tunnes of Madera wines, same Wollen Cloath, Silke and Taffata. The Carracks were departed from Tercera eight dayes before, He manned his Boates and obtained refreshing at Flores professing himselfe a friend to their King Don Antonio. From thence rowing a shipboord, the Boate was pursued two miles together by a monstrous 60 Fish, whose Finnes many times appeared about the gils aboue water toure or fue yards a funder, and his lawes gaping a yard and a halfe wide, not without great danger of ouerturning the Pinnace, and denouring fome of the company; but at the last they all escaped. Here his Lordshippe met and accepted into confort Captaine Danies with his Shippe and

IIA2 E. of Cumberlands first, second, and third Voyages. Spanish defeat. LIB. VI.

GHAP.L. Prizes taken (ap. Lytters valour rafbueffe, death. Cruell thirft.

Pinnace, a Shippe of Sir Walter Raleighr, commanded by Captaine Markethury, and the Having intelligence that the Carracks were at Tercera, he came up to the road of Frall the feuen and twentieth of August, and descrying certaine Shippes at anchor close abourd the shoare, See Lingbot. he fent his Boates which boorded a Ship of 250, tunne armed with foureteene caft Peeces; and 4.96. continued fight till a supply of Boates came from the Fleete to freend them, and then reconered the prize. The Spaniards (except lebude Palma) leapt all over-boord to fwimme to the shoare, Aprize of which was so neere that the Ship was moored to the Castle, from whence the great Ordnance Per Reco-

plaied all the time of the fight: onely it was not a play to the Mafter of the Caruell, whose calfe To of his legge was shot away. This Shippe came laden from Porr Rece with Sugar, Ginger, and or insures. The Ship-boates retched also out of the Roade some other small Ships laden from Guinner Shipe. with Elephants reeth, Graines, Goca nuts, and Goate Skinnes: most of which prizes he sent for taken. England, The next day, eight Englishmen prisoners ftole from Torcore in a small Boate, having moother yard for their maine faile then two Pipe staues. These told his Lordship, that the Carrackes were departed a weeke before, which moved him to returne for Fyall with purpole to

He arrived, September the tenth, landing his men, the Platforme (hot at them in their march, Fall taken) but they comming up found it and the Towns ahandoned, and tooks thereof possession. This Towns containeth 500, housholds well and strongly built of Lime and Stone, well stored with

20 fresh water, delicate Fruites and Grapes of diners forts, He fet a guard to preferne the Churches and Religious Houses, and staid there four dayes till the ransome was brought him, which was The social 2000, Duckets, most of Church Plate. He shipped from the Platforme eight and fifthe Peeces of Iron Ordnance. The Gouernour of Graciofa lent his Lordinip fixtie Butts of Wine, batexon fed his want offeelh water. A Ship of Wejmunt came thirther with a Spanit prize worth fixteene thouland pounds, and brought newes of the West Indie Fleete shortly to some; which afe ter three or four dayes playing to and fro in rough weather (Het paffe a Shippe of Saint Male, Ship of Saint which he took laden with New found-land Fish) he espied going into the hauen at Angra in Ter. Male. ers to the number of fifteene Cale, being too fare to Leeward to come neere them; and they being firong and forcified with the Caitle and Port, he was forced to give ouer. And although he

30 left's Pinnace for adnice, intending to waite for them at Sea ; yet the returned with newes that they had taken off their failes, and downe their topmasts with resolution of longer stay. Wherefre he failed to Saint Michaels; and being there repelled from watering, went to Saint Maries where they found two Brafil Ships laden with Sugar, which the Handers fought to brine a ground : but Captaine Lytter hattning the attempt in the face of the enemie and danger of continual shoare-shot, borded the vttermost, cut afunder her Cables and Hawsers and towed her servatoreus avray, whiles Captaine Daises entred the other then a ground and abandoned; and was forced to attempt. forfake her. Two men were ilaine and fixteene hurt. But a greater loffe followed whiles the His sudacious Earle in person fought to get the other ship, Captaine Lister rashly disvaluing the enemies force, enterprise and the Barre also detayning them on ground in the midst of danger from the enemie, to the loss and rathendance. 40 hart of eightie men. His Lordinip receitted three that vpon his Target, and a fourth on the fide, ring the reft. not deepe, his head also broken with stones that the bloud conered his face , both it and his legs

likewise burned with fire-balls. The Meg being leakie was fent with the prize into England, and his Lordship held his course for Spaine. By the way he tooke a Portugal thip laden from Brafil, and after that another which American thirs was one of the fifteene which had before entred Angra, being a thip of 400. Tunnes, laden from taken. Mexico and Saint John de Vibne with feuen hundred hides, fixe chifts of Cochenele, certaine chifts of Sugar and some Silver. The Captaine was an Italian, and had in her five and twentie thousand Duckets adventure. Thus full of ioy they resolved homewards, but Sea-fortimes are variable, having two inconftant Parents, Aire and Water. His Lordship sene Gap-

To taine Lefter in the Mexican prize for Portsmomb, which at Helcliffe in Cormuall was wracked. the Captaine and all his companie drowned except fine or fixe. Scarfitte of drinke caufed by Captaine 25. contrarie windes, caused his Lordship to seeke to recouer some part of Ireland for reliefe, bue for drowned. wayting for entrance was put off againe, their Beere and Water being all fpent. Three spoonfuls of vineger were allowed to each manata meale with some small reliefe squeezed out of the lees Miserable diof their wine veffels : which continued fourteene dayes without other supply then the drops of stresse for Haile and Raine , carefully faued with Sheets and Napkins. Some dranke up the foyled running want of drink water at the Scupper-holes; others faued by deutfe the runnings downe the Mails and carred Ropes; and many licked the moift Boards, Railes, and Maits with their tongues like Dogs. Yes was that Raine to intermingled with the fprie of the foaming Seas in that extreme ftorme, that

it could not be healthfull : yea, some in their extremitie of thirst dranke themselves to death with their Cannes of falt-water in their hands. Notwithstanding this extreme scarsitie, his Saledeadw noble charitie caused equall distribution of the small store they had aswell to all his prisoners as to draughe. his owne people. By this time the lamentable cryes of the ticke and hure men for drinke was The Earles heard in cuery corner of the (hip : for want whereof many perished (ten or twelue enery night) equina and ... more

Second voy-

A monfitous

more then otherwise had miscarried in the whole Voyage. The storme continuing added to

their milery, tearing the ship in such fort, as his Lordships Cabbin, the dining roome, and halfe

Decke became all one, and he was forced to feeke a new lodging in the hold. His minde was yet

vindaunted and prefent, his bodily prefence and preventions readie. The last of November hee

feake with an English thip, which promifed him the next morning two or three tunnes of Wine,

but foone after unfortunately came on ground. The next day hee had fome supply of Beere,

but not fufficient to enable him to wadertake for England. Hee therefore (the winde feruing) put

eieth of December he fet fayle for England. His Lordship in this Vovage tooke thirteene Prizes.

At his arrivall in London, hee met with the vnfortunate newes of the death of his eldeft Sonne

Francis Lord Clifford, which died the twelfth of December, 1 89, vet was comforted with the

birch of the Ladie Anne Clifferd (borne the laft of Ianuary following (his Daughter, and by the

death of Robert Lord Clifford, who dyed the fourteenth of May 1 591.) his heire, now the xer-

His Honourable Sparke was further kindled and enflamed by former difafters, and obtay-

ning of her Majettiea new ship called the Gerland, a ship of tixe hundred tunnes, added the

Samfon Vice-admirall, a ship of his Lordships, of two hundred and fixtie sunnes, the Golden

With these he fet forth 1591, at his owne charge to the Coast of Spaine, where hee tooke good

purchase, a ship laden at Saint Thomas with Sugars, which he was forced to east off by an irreco-

uerable leake : another also which after long contrary winds in her course for England, was dria

uen to put into a Spanife Harbour for want of viceuals. But in two other hee was more vnfortu-

nate. For Capvayne (Munfon being fent to dispatch the goods, and the Golden Noble to accom-

pany them (which the nights calmenesse prohibited) the ships beeing thus severed, were by the Gallies of Penseha set voon, his Lordship being within hearing of the shot, but by reason of the

calme not able to releeve them: to that the two ships were recovered . Captayne Bayly slaine.

Captayne Munfon and the rest catried Priloners to Peneche, and thence to Listone. His Lordship

tall to theirs of whom he prefumed hee should take store. For feare whereof the common lort

were returned a few dayes after new clothed, Captayne Manfon with fixe others only detay-

ned. His Lordship having intelligence of a great Armada prepared in the Grome, to bee fent a-

gainst the Lord Thomas Howard then Admirall of her Majetties fleet at the Aferes, attending to

furnize the West Indian fleet, sent the Mooneshine with adult : otherwise the Lord Howard

had runne the fortune of Sir Richard Greenwile, who loft his ship and life, or rather exchanged

the one for honor, and for the other made the Spaniards the greatest loiers in fo deere a purchase.

I Lordship considering the inconvenience of her Maiesties command, not to lay any Spe- 40

to feeke out amongst the Merchants, then to make further vie of the ships Royall. And so hee

hired the Tiere a thip of fix hundred tunnes, furnished by the Owners for three hundred pounds a

moneth wages, in which he went in person, thereto adding his owneship the Samson, and the

These in the yeare, 1 592, were set forth, but so crossed with winds, as three moneths victua-

alls were spent in Harbours, before they could get to the West ward of Plymmouth; whereby al-

to one of his Lordships principall designes was frustrate, which was the taking of the Carrikes

outward bound, as also the meanes to performe his intended Voyage to the West Indies, Where-

Lordship, he transferred the chiefe command to Captayne Norten, and returned to London, lea-

re, met two of the King of Spaines Gallions, returning from Brest in Brittanie; in fight with

whom the Golden Noble received a shot in her fore-mast, which made them doubt of her further

Sufficiencie : but having fished it aswell as they could, Captayne Case her Commander espied

an Argofie bound for Liftone, and gaue chase to her within shot of the Fort of Cascaigs within

five fachome water of a shoald called Catchers, and there in fight of the men on shoare laid her a-

vpon, not like to fatisfie that expectation which might arise from a personall expedition of his \$0

Thus weakned by disaduenture, he was forced to returne for England.

Golden Noble, with two small thips.

board, and returned into England with her.

wrote to the Archdake Albert, then Vice-roy, for their good viage, otherwise threatning require 30

Noble Reare-admirall, and to them the Allegarta, and a small Pinnaffe called the Discourie, 20

tuous wife of the Right Honourable Richard Earle of Derfet.

but that which was worth more then all the reft was loft, yet, the profit redoubled his adventures. To

The Councelle

The fourth Voyage 1591.

Ship of Saint

Chance of warre: Takers

Aduife.

Fifth Voyage

Ill beginnings.

and Captayne wing inftructions with the Admirall to goe for the Afores. Captayne Norton neere Cape Finifier-Norton fubiti-

Flores courte.

The Admirall with the rest of the fleet arrived at the Afores, and having watered and refrethed at Flores (which that Iland permitted to all men of warre, as not able to withfland them) 60 put to Sea and spreading themselves, the Santa Crace was descried, which made all the hafte she could for Angra in Torcera. They hafted after, and being within hafte a league of her, they espied Sir lobu Burroughs in the Ro-bucke, a thip of Sir Walter Raleighs of two hundred tunnes (which

Sir, & Birwoogh Ind ridden vnfeene on the Easterne fide of the Iland) standing to crosse the Carricker way, so that

now the was forced, the wind being Westerly to luffe vp, & recouer the Road of Lagorma on the South end of Flores. The law and cultom of the Sea, making al thips of war then together (though Sea custome not formerly conforted) equall sharers according to their tunnage of the prizes gained, Captayne of sharing. Norton out of cauli respect (and not needing help) contained with Sir John Burroughs, and they agreed to board ber the next morning. But a thorme in the night forced them all from their anchors, which the next day being formwhat allaied they recoursed the road & found the Carrike warped as neer the shore as they could having indeuoted also to put ashore such goods as time would permit)and fired, with all her fayles and flags up and Ordnance laden, which went off on enery fide when the fire came to them; a fight more pleating to the Portugals then the English, whom those 10 accounted now the Owners of that confumed fubiliance. The surge also (affue of the late florme) fearly permitted their Boates to land, to feeke to get wrackes, and what the Portagali had carried afhoure : enery man (for feare of wracking the Boates on the Rockes)being vp to the neck, and some ouer head and eares before they could obtayne the flioare, where also they were forced on hands and knees to climbe vp a fleep hill, on the top whereof flood many Handers tumbling downe great flones on them. But all difficulties were made case by resolution and hope, which brought them to the Towne (now fortaken by her Inhabrants) and made them Mafters of the Towne taken.

wracked goods, which feemed so five thicker for refuge from the fire and water. Whiles they were thus employed about this buint Carrike, Sir Robert Croffe Captayne of the Forefieht of her Maielties, Mafter Tomfon Captayne of the Dainie (a fhip of Sir John Hawkins) 20 Captayne Newpore in the Golden Dragon came into this confort. They were much grieved with this spectacle, but comforted that there had but one of the five Carrickes passed, this had fallen into this terrible Purgatory, and three were stall expected. They spread themselves, & continued expecting from the nine and twentieth of Inne, till the third of August, at which time Master Tomfon first had light of the great Carricke, called Madre de Dios, and comming vp, gave her a Madre de Dios broad-fide of Ordnance; & falling a sterne came (having laden his Ordnance) again and againe to a great Cariffe deliver his peaks to hinder her way, till the reft of the fleet could come, the Carricke answering with the like. Sir lobn Burroughes and the Golden Dragon came in about three a clocke, and Sir The fight. John received a shot of a Canon Perier under water in the Bread-roome, which made him beare vp to ftop his leake. Sir Robert Croffe was the next, who to give her his broad fide, came to neere. 30 that becalming his layles he vn villingly fell aboard the Carricke, which having lashed her fast

by the Strowdes, fayled away with her by her fide. The Earle of Cumberlands thips, worft of favle, were the lait which came vp, about eleven aclocke at night, not minding then to boord Oueenes faire her : But hearing the Forefight, calling to Captayne Norton, And you be men, fane the Queenes forp: danger. he gave order to the Samfon, to lay her abourd on the one fide, and promiting to doe the like in the Tiere on the other, which about twelve a clock was performed. The Tiererunning stemling aboord, broke her beake-head to the huddings; he Samfon laid the Forefight aboord, and entred thorowher into the Carricke. Whereby the Fore fuln without entring any one man, tooke op. Carrike enportunitie to free her felfe.

And now both thips companies beeing entred into the Fore-cheynes, the Fore-caffle was fo 40 high, that without any refiftance the getting up had beene d flicult. But heere was firong refihigh, that without any reminance one getting the hourd, and enflault continued an houre and an halfe, Fight and Enfo fo braue a bootie making the men fight like Dragons, till the Fore-caftle being gained, the Portugals flowed themselves in holds. The English now hunted after nothing but pillage, and were readie to goe to the eares about it, each man lighting a Candle, the negligence of which fired a Cabbin, in which were fixe hundred Cartrages of Powder, The rumour hereof made them all readie to forfake the Carrike, when Captayne Norton with some others with buckets of water, Danger by aduentured the quenching of that fire : Feare of leaks by the fight and neerneffe of the shoare fire. were great parts of his care. All these dangers freed, contention about forich a pillage was wellnigh kindling in the Commanders, beeing to divertly commanded and employed : but Sir John So Burroughes pretending the Queenes name, Captayne Norton yeelded that hee should take care of the Carricke, which he accordingly repayred, lands about eight hundred Negros on Corno, detaynes the ordinary Saylers, commits the Gentlemen to a ship of the Earle of Camberlands to bourthe boos goe whether they would, who escaped not a second rishing by other Englishmen of warre, which tooke from them (thus negligently difmiffed) nine hundred Diamonds befides other odde ends. The Earle of Cumberland had notice by a Pinnasse sent from Captayne Norton twentie dayes this Carriers before the Carricke came into England, and had Commission from the Queene for her fafe har- purchase is acbouring. Hardly the escaped the Rockes of Silly (the Tigre also participating in that danger) and tributed princame to Dartmouth, being to huge and vnweldie athip, as thee was never removed out of that cipally to Sir Harbour, but there laid up her bones. His Lordships share would have amounted according to may the Rea-60 his employment of thips and men, to two or three Millions, but because his Commission large derallo seeher enough otherwife, had not provided for the case of his returne, and substituting another in his dimensions at place, some adjudged it to depend on the Queenes mercie and bountie. Neyther yet by rea_ seods,&c. 1

fon of some mens imbezelling had her Majettie the account of the fifth part of her value; and have here followed that Relation which I found, and leave free judgement to the Reader. My copie also argueth my Lords case, which I haussmitted.

the Earle was faine to accept of fixe and thirtie thousand pounds for him and his, as our He next yeere 1 592, his Lothip procured two thips Royall, the Golden Lion Admirall com-

manded by himielie, the Bonaguenture Vice-admirall, and therewith employed the Backe

Sixt voyage.

1145

Two French

Chaldon, the Pilgrime, the Anthonie, and the Disconerie: which three last when hee came to the Coaft of Spaine hee fent for the West Indies. Hee tooke from the protection of fourteene great Hulkes, two French thips of Saint Malowes (which then held for the league, and vere therefore theps very rich reputed in flate of Spaniards) of great value, one of which he carried with him, and fent the other into England. The Spaniards having intelligence, fet forth an Armada against him, which rewaited for him at the llands, and the Earle hearing of their beeing at Florer, and within five leagues of them, lighted on a ship which they had sent to descry, which before shee could recouer her fleet, he tooke. He learning by these that the Spanis fleet trebled the force of his, having kept company with them one day, quitted them and kept tenne or twelve leagues diffant from them three weekes. In which space he tell sicke beyond hope of life, without returne or refrething from the thoare. Captayne Monfon with much hazard, procured him some refreshing from Corne; and leaving the reit of the ships (which tooke one Prize after) hee returned for England,

this proouing the most gainfull Voyage which he made before or after.

His fickpeffa

Scout taken.

THE Antonie of one hundred and twentie tunnes, commanded by Captayne lames Langton, 20 Pilot Antonio Marsino a Spaniard, which had long lived in those Indian; and well acquainted with those Ports : the Pilgrime of one hundred transes, commanded by Captayne Francis Sling fbie, Diego Petrus a Spanifo Pilot, and the Disconerie : these three after farewell folemnely taken and given by fhot on all hands, shaped their Course for the Antillas, and fell with the lland of Saint Lucia, there and at Matinnio, refreshing themselves three dayes, they concluded to attempt Pearl-fishings. the taking of the Rancherias, which are the Pearle-fishings of Margarita, contaying fixe or feuen seuerail small Villages, which for that purpose they inhabit but not about one of citemat once, when their fishing failes there, removing to another and so by course, having emptie houfes standing alway readie for that purpoie. The Pearles for more safetie are monethly carried to the Towne of Margarita three leagues from the waters fide. They kept out of fight all day for feare of discouerie, and at night landed and visited two emptie Raucherias : but taking a Spaniard which then came thither in a Boate with two Indians, they made him their guide to the inhabited Raucheria, five leagues off, commanding the Boates to row along the sheare, and not to double the point till euening. The two Captaynes with eight and twentie men, marched by land in the heat, which with want of water much annoyed them. They came thither in the beginning of the night, and agreed to affault the place in three places at once, notwithstanding their small numbers, lest they should gather head any where. The Spaniards at first thought it had beene some falle alarme of the Governour, and bid away with this iesting, but finding it earnest. hastily fled to the woods. Thus did they take the Towne, with some two thousand pounds value in Pearle besides what other pillage the Souldiers gate. Their weapons they brake for feare of 40

Rancheria affau red and

In the morning they went aboord the fishing Boats, and tooke their Oysters gotten the night before : and gate aboord their thips (much in fulpense for them, not knowing of this fudden enterprize) the fifth day after they had gone from them. The shippes now comming before the Towne demanded ranfome for their houles and Canoas, to redeeme which from destruction they gaue two thousand Duckets in Pearle. But Caruels of aduice having every-where given intelligence of them, at Cumana they found them on their guard and returned, not without loffe, Thence they coasted Terra Farma, till they came to the Ilands of Araba and Corresao, where Arubs and Cor. they landed and refreshed themselves : Thence to Rio de Hache, which they thought to have taken, but found the enemy ready for them, with other intelligence that they had carried their 50 goods into the Mountaynes.

Serange wate-

Ellanchas on

They therefore fet faile for Hifpaniola, came to Cape Tuberone, and thence to the Bay of Saint Nucholas, and thence to Fore Plat, and others on the North fide : thence to Mona, and fo Sauona, where they watered againe, in this manner. The Hand is low deflitute of any Spring, and to the Sea a small fine Sand. Not twenty paces from the wash of the Sea digging a hole and setting therein a Hogshead (the head knocked out) water is plentifully taken, feeming to be no other then the Sea water, losing the faltnesse in that passage. Thence they went to the River of Socke, about e. I. Eastward of Saint Domingo, and went in the night 4.1. vp and fuddenly furprifed an Eftanca, that is, a Farme place, where flaues keepe the great mens cattle, make their Caffami bread, dreffe their Ginger and Fruites, and doe other offices of Husbandry. Being thereof 60 possessed, they came to parlie for ransome of their Houses, and for their Negres, for which they gaue them the flesh of thirtie Beeues with Caffani and Fruites. Beefe will not keepe in those parts aboue foure and twenty houres, volefie first falted, and then dried in the Sunne, being first cut into two sides like Bacon, without any bone left in it, nor any peece of flesh thicker then

CH A P.I. Cap Lancaster Fights, Prifes. Eighth Voyage. Five wounds wounded. 1147

a mans hand. It must first be searched with a Knife, then rubbed over with Sale, and having fo remained twelve houres must be dried in the Sunne: and foure hot dayes drying will faue it

Other Estanças being likewise taken yeelded like contributions. From thence they went vp- Ri. Marracana on another River called Marracana, where there was an Ingenio of Sugars which they tooke for their provisions and caused the owner to ransome it from burning. Thence they went to the month of the harbour of Saint Domingo, and rid there at the East fide of the fame, at Point Torrofile to intercept any Shipping comming forth. The Sergeant Mayor came hither to treat for ransome of some prisoners, and with him an Englishman of Captaine Lancasters company of Captain Raymunds fleete, whole Ship was newly calt away comming out of the East Indies into Cap. Raymund. 10 those parts, a little to the West of Sain: Damingo at Acea: The Spaniards let forth two Caruels to intercept the Boates, which they did, but the Ships recoursed the taken and takers together. They brought foure braffe Falcons of Captaine Lancafters Ship, ten others of Iron they left for

the heavineffe being somewhat farre from the water. They tooke also a fine Friggot hidden vnder the trees, which they brought for England. Thence they went for lamaica, and there found two Barkes laden with Hides and Canna- lamaica fifula, one of which they manned and fent for England, taken by a French man of warre by the way. Thence they went to Cuba, to Cape Cortenter, and Cape Saint Antonio, to expect thipping comming for the Hauana, but in vaine. Thus after eight moneths fpent in

the Country, the Anonie and the Frigot went to the Bay of Honduras; the Pilgrime at Bay of Hondu-Hausra fpent fome few dayes, and then fet faile for England, where they arrived in Plim-

month, May 14. 1594.

The Antonie and the Frigot within four leagues of Porto canallo descried seuen Shippes in the Porto canallo. Road, the least of ninescore tun. They anchored within Calinar shot of the Spanife Shippes and moored their Snips a head and sterne, and bent their broad sides vnto them, and there fought all The Sabe. that day with those seven Shippes and all night, now and then a shot : Captaine Langion sent the Boate and Shallop to the shore, from whence they brought a Frigot of twenty tunne. The next morning they fired the Frigot, and with their Boates purpoled to bring her croffe the Ada mirals halfe. But when they faw them comming, they all ranne into the Boates and got afhore.

30 The Admirall let slippe the other fixe, vinhanged their Rudders, and carried them ashore that Ships firede none should faile away with the Shippes if they were taken. They laded the Admirall with the best out of all the Shippes, and sent ashore to know if they would ransome the rest, which they delaying, they fired one of them laden with Hides and Logwood, and then another laden with Sufaparill. But the King of Spaine had forbidden them any ranfoming, and they came not. All their Ordnance was heaved operboord faving two or three Braffe peeces, in hope some English. men might be the better for them afterward. One of them was a Shippe of fine hundred tunnes. They brought away the Admirall of 250 and came into Plimmenth the fifteenth of May, the next day after the Pilorims arrivall.

A Nno 1594. The Earle of Comberland on his owne charge with the helpe of some advert- The eight of turers let forth for the Tercera Ilands the Repall Exchange, Admirall of 250. tunnes, com- 2ges 1594. manded by Captaine George Came: the May Floure Viceadmirall, of like burden, commanded by Captaine William Antonie: the Samfon Rereadmirall, commanded by Captaine Nieholas Downton, a Caruell and a small Pinnace. They fet forth from Plimmenth, April 6. In the way they tooke a small Barke laden with Galieia wines, &c. June the second, they had fight of Saint Michael; After ten dayes they descried the great Carrieke of 2000 tuns called the Cinque LLagas or Fine Wounds. The May Floure first got up to her and received an vinwelcome falutation. In the night The great Care the Samfor came in and continued the fight, and at last the Admirall. They agreed that the this called Admirall should lay the Carrake aboord in the Prow, the Viceadmirall in the Waste, and the Fine worods. 50 Rereadmirall in the Quarter. But it fell out that the Admirall laying her aboord at the looffe, recoiled a fterne, the Viceadmirall being to neere that the was faine to runne with her bolt iprit betweene the two quarters, which forced the Rereadmirall to lay her abourd Borded.

After many bickerings, fire workes flew about interchangeably. At last the Vice-admiral Carrais fired. with a Culuering-shot at hand fired the Carrick in her Sterne, and the Reare-admirall her Forecastle by a shot that gaue fire to the Mat on the Beake-head, from thence burning to the Mat on the Bolt-sprie, and so ran up to the Top-saile-yard: they plying and maintaining their fires so well with their small shot, that many of those which came to quench them were slaine. These

fires encreased to fore that the Vice-admiralls fore-faile and fore-top-taile were both burnt, the Enclish Shine Reare-admirall being in like predicament, whiles the Admirall with much danger and difficultie in danger quenched the fires throwne into her from the Carrick. To fane themselves in this heat and furie. the Admirall and Vice-admirall fell off, leaving the Reare-admirall foule of the Carricks foritfaile-yard in great danger to have beene confumed with her, had they not helped her off with

Ĭŧ.

Brefe how kept there.

ILAS Unebaritable obstinacy, rich Carrike burnt. Nineb and tenth powerer. L.I.B. VI.

Pinifull dift effe of the Carrike.

In this distresse the companie brought the Commander Don Francisco de Melo to put forth a flagge of truce : but the Carricks Carpenter more desperare, comforted him with hope of quenching the fire, whereupon he cryed, Coragio, I will never yeeld, notwithflanding the protestations, contestations, and obtestations of the lamenting out-crying companie. One range maged on him, charging him with this foule vncharitablenesse, threatning vengeance on him and his for this obstinacy in suffering so many soules to perish , rather then to accept the English affiftance. Some of their chiefest, rich in chaines and jewels, cast off all, and naked as they were borne cast themselves into the Sea to adventure vpon English mercy; amongst all which, was taken vp by the Reare-admirals Boat, two men of note and three of inferiour qualitie. These three were clothed and fet on land : the other two were Dan Name Velio Periera (who had fomtimes bin Gopernour of Mozambique and Sofala, and returning for Spaine in a Carrick of great value, lok neere Bona Speranza, was now here a paffenger) and Brat Carero, Captaine of another Carrick cast away neere Mozambique, here also a pastenger. These two were brought into England and ransomed. Three impediments happened to the Affailants, the Reare-admirall hurt with a shot and made in person unseruiceable being a valiant man; the Vice-admirall slaine; and the Admirall himfelfe Captaine Came that at the first thorow both the legs , whereof thortly after his returne hee dyed. The Caruell and Pinnace were accidentally abtent : one and twentie were thine in the fight. In the Carrick were many of qualitie; and before infection had fallen amongst them neere the Cape, their number o' white and blacke men exceeded 1100, all which perished 20 but those before named. The burden of this Carrick and her lading in wealth did farre exceede the Madre de Dios, returning after a long voyage fraighted with pearles, jewels, drugs, filkes (her meanest lading pepper) besides the best of the Nazarer (lately cast away) her commodities, the Captaine whereot had beene Bras Carero aforesaid.

Another Care

The impedi-

king the Car-

They fet faile after this difafter for Flores and after some refreshing, on the nine and twentieth of Iune descryed another Carrick of 1500. Tunnes, which they supposed to bee the Saint Philip one of the King of Spaines men of warre. After some more cautelous fight occasioned by that conceit, they fent their Boat to fummon her to yeeld to the Queene of Englands thips vnder the command of the Earle of Cumberland, or elfe to vndergoe the fortunes of the Fine wounds, the forrowfull witnesses whereof they presented those two former Captaines; so whom the Generall Don Lewys de Costynio antiwered; As your Generall bath breme as the burning of the Fine 30 wounds, fo I have beene at the burning and taking of the Revenge of the Queene of Englands. Therefore let bim doe what be dare doe for bis Queene, and I will doe what I am able for my King : commanding the Boat inftantly to be gone. The fight was renewed, but intermitted by the calme, and remitted by the remisser companie, their Captaines being slaine and wounded. Whereupon they gaue ouer and arrived in England in August and the beginning of September, having done much harme to the enemie, and little good to themselves.

The ninth voyage, 1595.

a fortunate fhip to the Eaft Indian

Fight.

The Earle not liking his ill partage in the Madre de Dies, not this vnhappier losse of two Carricks for want of sufficient strength to take them, builded a ship of his owne of 900. Tunnes at Desford, which the Queene at her lanching named The Seourge of Malice, the best thip 40 that ever before had beene built by any fubiect. Shee made his Lordin three voyages, and after was fold to the East Indian Companie, whence thee made many beturnes (before in the name of the Dragon related) and proved fortunate against the Portugals in the East, His Lordship had thought to have gone in her in person, and prepared the Albeda his Vice-admirall, commanded by Captaine Monfon, the Antonio commanded by Doniel Investand the old Frigot. But when he had gone as farre as Planmouth on his intended voyage, Her Majettie by Sir Francis Drake and prifed valuckis Sit labu Hankins, fent for him to resutne, which commandement liis Lordfhip obeyed, but the ly by the Dutch: thips proceeded to feeke their adventure, giving command of the Admirall to Captaine Langton; fee Hores rela- which Captaine Morfon milliking went forth letterally to feeke his owne fortant in the Alcodo The Scourge, the Antonie, and the Frigor, went together to the Afores, where first they tooked \$9 Saint Thome Carnell of 100. Tunnes laden with Sugars. After Which neere the Hand of Flores in a togge they efpyed a great Ship lying by the Lee, which they conceined to be a Carrick , but found it to be the Saint Thomas, Vice-admira'l of the King of Spames fleet, lying for the waftage of the East and West Indian fleetes : with whom they fell in fo hoe a fight that three was glad to bearevo to recouer her felfe amongst the rest of her Conforts; which after the cleering of the fogge they differred not farre from them. Theree they went to the Coast of Spaine, where they tooke three Dutch thips of the East-Countries laden with Wheat, Copper, and other munitions and prouisions for the King of Spaine. Having spent their victuals they returned.

Tenth voyage.

A. 1,196. his Lordinip fet forth againe the Scowege of Malace, in which he went in personate 60 companied with the Drewl-words of the Queenes, and some other small ships; and about thirtie or forcie leagues from England was incountred with a storme, wherein the Seamee Spent her mayne mast, and was made unteruiceable for that voyage: so that hee was forced to returne for England in the Dread naught.

CHAP. L. Earle of Cumb. 11. and 12. Voyages. Sea fight. English Captolnes. 1140

He fame yeere perceiving that the Earle of Effex and the Lord Admirall were to goe to the Coast of Spaine with a great fleet of the Queenes, together with a Iquadron of Flemmil Eleuenth roy: men of warre, his Lordship thought good to a wait force gleanings in to great a Vintage, and fee age. forth the Accention of 300. Tunnes and foure and thirtie pieces of Ordnines, manned with 120. men, commanded by Captaine Francis Slingsby, chiefly to expect such thips as should come from Lisbone: The Afcenfion thus farmified , met with fuel a fret of winde that with all hafte they handed in their failes, and being within the Hooke of Godoine Sands drove with two anchors a- Godoine fandis head, till they were within two Cables length of the Sands. They then let fall drew fhort anchor, which by Gods grace stayed them till the next day noone (hoursly expecting their wrack)

To and at lait cut their Cables. Having refurnished themselves at Plimonth they fer forwards and comming to the Rocks, lay off and on. After fome fruitrated attempts by the Boat on a Caruell (in which the Captaine was fore wounded) the King of Spaines Admirall Sirage fet forth line thips against them, and himselfe and another thip laid the Aftenfion aboard, the one on the Bow. the other on the Quarter, and now the mouthes of one great Ordnance (being neere in place to Sea Bake) whifter) roared out their thunders and pierced thorow and thorow on all hands. Which ended, the Spaniards leaped into the fore-chaines and mayne-chaines, thinking to have entred the thin. but were brauely repelled. The English feeing many Spaniards together under the Admirals halfe decke, discharged amongst them a Fowler laden with case shot to their no small harme : to that the Spaniards had enough and were content to fall off. Of ours two and twentie were flaine and

no hurt, which toffe lighted almuch on them which his themselves as those which tood to the fight. To prevent the like afterwards, they put fafe in hold the Chirurgeon, Carpenter, and Cooper for the publike dependance on them', and made fast the harches that others should not feeke rafuge. But the Spanish Admirall making a brauado, and feeing them readie to receive them. tacked about and went in for Liftone without any further leave-taking. The Afontion continued on the Coast till they had but fourteene dayes victuals left, and then returned with hores to themtelnes, and loile also to his Lordship.

N. 1597. the vindanted Earle having furnished and victualled his owne ship the Matica. The welstin A Scourge, undertooke a voyage in person. Under him in it commanded Captaine lohn Wats voyage. 30 outward, and Captaine lames Langton homewards. The Merchant Royal was Vicesadmiralt, Names of the commanded by Sir Iohn Barkley; Captaine Robert Flicks commanded in the Afterfilm, Rayer hips and their admiral!; Captaine Horrie Clifferd commanded the Samples, after whole death at Porto Rest ployed in the Charles of the Captaines and the Charles of the Captaines and the Captaines Christopher Colebratt was her Captaine; Master loba Ley, and homewards Thomas Goreb Capt. twelith rogtaines of the Alcedo; Francis Simgely Captaine of the Confert; Captaine Lames Lames and Of the 28c-Professor, and homewards Captaine Iohn Wats; Captaine Henrie Palmer, in the Confession, and homewards after his death his fonne William Palmer ; Hercules Folyambe Captaine of the Galtion-Conftance ; Captaine Flemming in the Affetton; Captaine Christopher Colthurft in the Guidna, homeward Gerard Middleson; Captaine Henrie Ielliffe in the Soone; Captaine Robert Carelot, and after his death Andrew Andrewes in the Antonie ; Captaine Edward Goodwin in the Penaliu: 20 Captaine Henrie Bromley in the Reyall Defence; Captaine John Dixon in the Margaret and John ; Mafter John Lea Captaine of the Barkley Bay ; William Harper Captaine of the old Friort,

To make up the score we may reckon two Birges vsed for landing of men, as occasion required. For the land Souldiers, Sir Iohn Barkley was Coronell Generall: Captaine Wallam Mefey Lientenant Colonell : Captaine Hercules Polyambe Sergeant Major : Captaine Arthur Percel Lieutenant Colonell of the Earles Regiment: Captaines, Lewis Orrell, Thomas Roberts, Heirie Gill, Thomas Cooks, Hogh Starkie, Ralph Rodgesty, Roger Torobie; Captaine Andrew Ambrews Leader of the Earles Companie: Captaine Lames Toshill Leader of Sir Iobis Barkleys Companie: Captaines, lames Enans and George Orrell Corporals of the field : Captaine lohn Man Propole Marshall : Captaine Arthur Miller Master of the Artillerie and Prouant Master,

The noble Earle thus attended and furnished (chiefly at his owne charges) fet faile with this Fleet from Portimenth the fixt of March. But you shall have a better Relator.

His Lordship having had the spoile of all things at his pleasure, prepared for the sending aboard the Ordnance, Munitions, Bels, Ginger, Sugar, &c. of braffe Ordnance hee tooke aboue fixtie peeces : fetting faile for England July 16. In which returne his Lordship lost a Barge, by his commandement funke in the Hauen to the prejudice of the Enemie. Another Barge caft away in a storme at the Bermudas. The Pegasus wracked upon Goodwin Sands, and the old Frigot upon Vibent, with the loffe of about feuen hundred men, whereof fix hundred dyed of the bloudie flix and Calenture at Porto Rico: fixtie flaine in fight, and fortie drowned in the wracks of the old Frigot and Pegalin.

Ccecc

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

The Voyage to Saint Iohn de Porto Rico, by the Right Honorable, G E O E O E,
Earle of Cumberland, written by himselfe.

1446.



Orthiest of your Sexe, my chiefe Commandresse, to give content to your wish in bare plannelle. I have let downe the courles and fortunes of my late performed journey. The fixth day of March, with my whole Fleet I fet faile out of the Sound of Plumonth, the winde being prosperous though much. Wee kept altogewhen the faire passage put mee in hope that God had pre- 10

His purpole

pared this an vilooked for fortune, if it were well handled, in getting vpon the Coaft of Spaine fire intelligence whether the Carricks were gone, and how neere they were readie if not gone. The doing of which undiscourred, though I knew was hard, yet not impossible for him that could well worke : And confidering the mightie importance, I tooke the course to doe it my felfe, taking with me the Guiana and the Stone; which two I meant should onely be seene vpon the Coalt, and left the rest of the fleet, appointing them where to lye till I came vnto them. But God whose will is beyond mans resolutions, forced mee to alter this; for my Masts not made to fufficiently as I expected, both now began to flew their weaknesse, especially my mayne Mail, which I continually looked would have gone over board. My Mariners were at their wits end : and I protest I would have given five thousand pounds for a new one; the greatest part of 29 my strength both by Sea and Land having beene lost, if that ship had returned in this extremitie. Hearing all that would, I heard many opinions to little purpose, and at length resolued

Defect in the

The Burlings. Penechia.

(though many thought it dangerous) left the winde should with a storme come up at West North-weft, to goe to the Burlings and there ride, till my Masts were fished, my selfe knowing the Roade, though not any elie in my thip : the windes they spake of, I feared not; my onely doubt was that I should be discourred, being within three leagues of Penechia; Caruels comming off every day to fish ; but this extremitie forced device how to hide what I was. For goe thither I mutt, hopelesse otherwise to repaire those desperate ruines. My ship was black which well furthered my device, and though thee were great, yet thewed not to afarre off. Wherefore I came in

about eight of the clocke at night vpon Thursday, when I was fire all the Fisher-men were gone 30 to fell their fifth at Lisbone, and from the mayne they could not make moe : this was the fixteenth of March. Before the morning I had downe my top-masts, my mayne yard vnrigged, and all things readie for my Carpenters to worke. The small ships with mee I made stand off to Sea all day, that not having any in my companie I should be the leffe suspected. And thus with a strange Flage and Ancient vpon my poope, I rid without giving chale to any, as though I had beene fome Merchant, every day divers thips comming by me that were both good prize, and had beene worth the taking, Vpon Sunday night the Fisher-men returne to the Burlings; wherefore to goe away undifeouered of them, and also soone to meet with my fleet, which I had appointed to tarry for mee in that heigh betwixt twentie and thirtie leagues off, and that they should keepe with them what ships somer they met, that were outward bowne : I ceased not working day 40 nor night, and by Saturday at night was readie to fet faile, when within night I heard the Ordnance goe off betwixt me and the shoare, and well knew it was a small ship of Hampton and my little Pinnace the Skout, that were in fight with a thip which they chased to windward of mee

before night, and fearing their match too hard, as in truth it proued. I, for lofing time let flip

mine anchor, and foone came to helpe the poore little ones much over-matched. At my first

comming up free frot at me; yet forbare I, and went fo neere that I spake to them, and deman-

ding of whence they were ? answere was made, of Lisbone. Then aftering my selfe thee was a

answered as that I had three men killed, fiue or fixe shot, and my ship in fixe or seven places, some

of them very dangerous. So I laid her aboard and tooke her, thee prouing a thip of Hamburgh, 50

Bifeiner good Bifeine, and would fight well, I came close to her, and gaue her my broad fide, which thee fo

Ship of Hamburg taken.

Intelligence from Lisbone. Five Carraks fine thips.

laden with Corne, Copper, Powder, and prohibited commodities. I made the more halte to end this fight, for that I would be out of the fight of the Land before day, which as I defired I was, and there met with a French man laden with Salt going into Lestone: which small Barke was very fit to ferue my purpofe. For putting fome of my men into her, I fent her into Cales Road, commanding them to fall with it by day in the morning, and keeping themselues close to shew none but the French, and make a waft to call some Portugall to them for Pilotage up the River. This device succeeded well: for betimes in the morning they were fall by a Caruell that was going to fifth, which (not suspecting them) came close to them, so as the men I put in that at them with Muskets fo fait, as not any of them durft furre to handle their failes till their Boat went aboard, and to brought them off to me. Thele men came that night from Liftone, and affu- 63 red me that the next faire winde there would come forth flue Caracks, with more treasure then euer went in one yeere for the Indues, and fine and twentie ships for Brasil. This welcome newes was accompanied with the meeting againe of my whole fleet, which at that very instant I defcryed. So none being joyned, I wished for nothing but an happy houre to see those long-looked-

after Monfters, whose wealth exceedes their greatneffe, yet bee they the greatest ships in the world. My fleet being thus joyned, I called all the Captaines and Mafters aboard, and gave directions where and in what order we should lye, and how we would fight, not doubting to meete them being vndiscouered, and well knowing the way they would come. Being drawne from our rests with our ioy in our hope, wee so long continued galing for that which came not, as I began to feare fome valuckie accident, and leaving my fleet alone, with a Carrell I went in with the theare, and with her and my Boat got another Caruell, by whom I understood that the very New intellafame day that I tooke the first Caruell at the Rock, there came into Liftone a ship that brought gence. Spaniards out of England, and was in Plimonth when I came by , which affored them that I was

to comne forth, and they verily beleeved was looking for them, fo as they fent Carvels of advice to fearch enerywhere for me, one of which when I returned to my fleet; I voderitood had comne by them to windward and discourred them all. So I feared it was vaine to tarry there any longer; for either they would thift their course or not come at all. So knowing that their feeling of Another atme could not hurt, I went to fee if they were comne follow downe the River, as that it were pof- tempt. fible to lay them aboard in the night where they rode. Now sgame I left my fleet at Sea. and (the winde fomething fauouring me) got in betwixt the Cat-fhips, from whence I faw them riding in the Bay of Wiers. Here had I too much of my defire, feeing what I defired to fee, but hopelede of the good I expected by feeing them; for they were where no good could bee done voon them, riding within the Castle of Saint Inlian, which hath in it aboue an hundred peeces No hope that 20 of great Ordnance; fo as though I could have got in (which I verily beleeve I could) it had not way.

beene possible to have returned, the winde being ever very feant to come forth withall, and hanging for the most part to farre Northerly, as that for feare of the Cat-ships , I must of force have comne close by their platformes. With this vnpleasing fight I returned to my fleet, and that night being the fift of Aprill, wee went altogither for the South Cape. The eight day I went from thence towards the Canaries, and the thirteenth day I came to Lancerota, where by divers both He comes of Englishmen and Spaniards I had beene informed that there dwelt a Marquelle, that was worth the Corarie. 200000 pounds, if he could be taken Juddenly : which I doubted not , having abourd mee three Rich Maror foure which had beene prisoners there, who affired me they could bring me into the Road by queffer night; and being on land could guide me to the Caftle where he dwelt, how darke forger it were.

30 But they fayled in all : for when I came to the land, they knew not where the Road was , fo as I Poore perform was forced to anchor finding ground, but where it was they knew not. And in truth, it was to mance of riets neere a ledge of Rocks, as if we had gone any further, the thips had beene in danger. In the more promiers, ning, though then I had no other hope left me to catch the Marquelle, faue onely that perhaps he would hold his Caftle; yet I thought it meete to fet all my Souldiers on shoare, for that till this Helands his time I never had given them any trayning, and well knew many of them to bee very raw and Souldiers. wnpractified to feruice at land. Wherefore my selfe then fearing an ague, tooke physick, was let bloud, and sent Sir loba Barkley with them, knowing for certaine that place could make no reli-Sir loba Barkley flance against such a force. So being landed they marched to the Towne, which the guides faid, by. was but three miles from the landing place. But it proved more then three leagues, the most wic-

40 ked marching for loofe fromes and fand that ever I faw. That night I heard not from them , nor the next day till night, when I had word brought that they had taken the Towne and Castle Towne and without refistance. Onely as they marched the people of the Countrie (I meane the Mountay- Caffie taken. ners) would watch if any straggled, and would most desperately affault them with their Lances, being fo swift of foot, as when once they runne, not any could come neere them. In the Caffle was not any thing but some few peeces of Ordnance dismounted. In the Towne (whose houses were most beggarly) some little wine onely, which little was too much; for it distempered so pooreourchase many, that if there had beene a ftrong enemie to have attempted, they should have found drun- and yet too ken resistance; the meaner fort being most ouer-thrownealreadie, and the Commanders, some diarich. stempered with wine, some with pride of themselves, or scorne of others, so as there were very

50 few of them but that fell to most diforderly ourrage one with another. And Sir loba Barkler with much griefe told me, if I tooke not some seuere course to remedie those things, he affured himselfe it would be the ruine of our voyage. Whereupon the next day I went on shoare to see my men trayned, and calling all the Commanders before me, rebuked them for those faults, and gaue Ar- The Earles ticles both for their courses at Land and Sea, reading to them my Commissions, that they might honorable care know I had full power to execute those punishments I fet downe for every offence; and affuring and wife prothem I would not be flow in doing it if they offended. The next day being the one and twentieth of Aprill , I fet faile , and betwixt the Grand Canarie and Tenerife met with the Royall Defence, a thip which thould have comne with mee out of England, but being not readie followed

me; and thwart the Rocke, after I was comne from thence met with a Caruell, which by ten 60 English men that were prifoners in Liftone, was stollen forth in the night. They affored me (word Carnell ft.) lea being brought thicher that I was gone off the Coast) they resolved to fend forth the Carracks, forthby Es. and that within a few dayes they would come forth. Which I making knowne to all my Com- still captines. manders, they agreed with me that it was fit to ipend some few dayes and looke for their comming; fo did we : but not feeing them, the yeere was so farre spent that I affured my felfe they

the Case of

were either gone by, or would not goe this yeere, their time for doubling the Cape of Bus-Danger of late Ma Speranza being now past; for they never went out so late but once, and then were all torgoing forth for ced to returne.

Though many would imagine the missing of this faire fortune should much have troubled me; I affire you it did not : the reason I will let you know hereafter. Now againe, calling all the Captaines and Masters aboard me, I first asked them whether they thought it was fit to tarry any longer voon that hope, telling them mine opinion how little reason there was in it, and that longer stay might much hurt our other purposes, to which all agreeing, we resolved to proceede. Then I asked whether they thought the time was not too farre spent to get Farnanbuco? to which many answered; No. And though I well knew what it was, I would not reply till I 10 had called two Portugall Pilots, which I brought with me out of England, old men that had at the least beene twentie times apiece there out of Portugall: And asking their opinions, they told vs that they had gone it at that time of the yeere, but divers times put backe, and at their best passage beene lixe or seuen weekes in gerting one degree. To which there were that anfwered, though sometimes it happened so , yet it might fall out otherwise: and if not , though

we should be long in getting thither, yet there was affurance to win that place with ease, and gerting it to have wealth enough. Till this I kept fecret, what now every occasion gave mee fit time to vtter. Hauing dispatched from mee a ship that was in Trade at the Canaries and bound for Expland, and being to farre thot to the Southwards, as I was fure not to meet with any going to the Northwards; io as not any newes where I was could come into Spaine, till it came out of 20 The Farles the Indies: which winning of time would give me to good leifure to fortifie my felfe in the place whither I meant to goe, as hardly I would bee supplanted till either wee honorably quitted the morute and difc ect inplace, or had tupply; you may fee, too griedie defire is a dangerous enemie, for where I should tendments. have but lightly touched this as yet, I was almost entring into the bowels of my intention, the

time ripe I faw to speake more freely then I had done. I told them I had admifedly considered, of all thefe though now pleaded, and could, as I thought, before their speech bear simulters to fifteen trea-jons for the scaping of some other course then Brail, as would have stayed all these pleadings. But I thought it better first to beare enery one fpeake his minde , and then to viter my conceit. Which though I affored my selfe was the best for vs. yet of any amongst them could give reason against it , I would not onely take it well, but be drawne to them. Then layed I before them how our men were alreadie many of 30 them ficke; and that undambredly the croffing the Linu would keeps thois from receasing all though the passage was a good at man could wish. Besides, I remembred them of intelligence ginen ut bush open the Coast of Spaine and the Hand, that the King bad fent thither to defend the place against me fix hunored Souldiers; and alfo it was theely that he had ginen order, that they faw nes themselses from ge-wough to reflig that wash their portable goods they found flee into the Mountaines, and fet their Sugar and Brasill wood on fire; then were we fure to have nothing; and lastly, if wee beat long under the Line, undoubtedly the most of our men would fall ficke, and then (bould we be forced to returne without doing

any thing , for to no other place could we goe, once bearing up upon that occasion. With this I pawied, to heare if there would be any thing faid by them : but not any speaking, I said them I well perceined by their filence the doubts my worder had driven into their mindes : but not AO

His purpoles and probabi-

His forech.

to conceale any longer from them, that which butherto I had for all their goods done, the truth was I nener bad intention after I found I could not get out of England before Christmas, to goe for Brafil , but onely for the well Indies, where there were many poffibilities to make a voyage by : as first, the facking of Margarita, which they knew was rich; then Porco Rico, after that Saint Domingo, then in July the outward bound fleet would be in the Acoa, where we could not miffe them : and if thefe gane vs not content, in the end of luly or August, wee should meete the fleet at Cape Saint Antonio. Many of these reasons I vetered, more to carry my men with good liking thither, then for any thought I had of divers of them. And my speech had defired successe, for they all went with greedie desire, and hopefull expectation, I appointing them to make what halte they could to Dominica, where we would flay one for another, thinking it better to goe ftraggling thither then to goe togither, 50 They proceed, there being possibilitie to meete some purchase by the way, which we were in most likelihood of when we ipred furthest. Therefore we ipred thus till we met at Dominica, wee straggled all fauing the Alceden, the Centurian, and two Flemmings, laden with Corne, which I tooke vpon the coast of Spaine, and still carried alongst with me, as chiefe meanes to effect my most defired

They arrive at purpole. Thele with all the rest came lafely to Dominica, where wee carried our sicke people athoare the three and twentieth of May, and tarried till the first of lune.

This Iland is onely inhabited by Indians that mightily hate the Spaniard, but love the Englesh very much. They brought vs great store of Potatoes, Pines, Plantins, Tabacco, Mammyes, Indies-pepper, and other of their Countrie commodities to trade. They most defired to have Swords, Hatchets, or Kniues, and very much Clothes. But if they could get none of thefe, they would fell their commodities for glasse beades, and such trifling things. From hence I went to the Virgines Ilands which are not inhabited, and there purposed agains to muster my men, the Iland of Dominica being to wooddie as that there I could not doe it; and in the evening the third day I came there to an anchor. The next morning early I had them on shoare, and after mustering them for many respects, found it meet to speake to them, which as neere as I can remember, was thus : Kinde Countrimen and fellow Souldiers , I am fure there is none here but have marked, My Lords and the wifest wonder at my light regarding the many groffe faults committed amongst you fince my speech. comming to Sea ; suffering enery man to doe what he would, orging no man turther then he lifted: Mas ny courles drew me to this patience, onely one I will now otter, the rest being fitter to conceale to my felfe. then to make fo many acquainted with. The great hope of meeting the Caracks made me hope for a short iourney; which hapning, I thought it better to returne with enery mans good word, then by inst punishing of any to have their ill word at my returne. But that hope as you now fee is altoguber paffed, and now we are fettled to another course, which though it may be will not proue altogither to rich, and must of

TO force beene us longer abroad; yet I affure you upon my honour and confcience . I doe conftantly believe there will fpring out of it more glorie to God, more fernice to our Prince and Countrie, and more honour to our felues, then could have done by the Caracks if we had taken them all. For the better performance we must fall to another course; I in governing, you in obeying; I in directing you what to doe, you in fallowing my direction. To which end I have already delinered you certaine Articles, wherein you may fee how the breach of them shall be punished. And though these twentie dayes at the least you have had them amongst you, yet heare I there are some which wish they could but light upon so much as they would conceale from me. Base conditions be hatefull things in men professing Armes, there is none baser then theft; and no theft fo base as for a man to steale from his owne companion. And he that concealeth any Basenesse of thing gotten in this courney, stealeth from enery man in it, all going to have their part of whatfeetter is thefe.

20 gotten. This I thought not unfit particularly to touch, because the freech bath ginen great offence to the whole Armie, and no doubt may encourage some men of lend and base humours amongst us to doe the live: but let the warning I now give you drive those thoughts out of their thoughts that hold them: and be also a warning that they beedfully observe the rest of the Articles. For I assure you, my oner-patient and forced fluggift bumour is flaken off, and I will neither over-fee, nor suffer to palle unpunished ill deserners.

This delivered, I prefently thipped my men which were by mufter and gaue order to fer faile. Now having fet all things in order, and wanting nothing but fure knowledge, where might bee our lafest and most commodious landing, there were many of my Masters and Sea Captaines that would willingly have gone through the Virgines, as Sir Francis Drake did, when Sir Francis

30 hee was there. But I finding the way through the passages more certaine and safe tooke that Prese. course; more desiring to be the first that tooke Porto Rice, then the second that passed through the Virgines. And the fift day in the morning, I fent for Captaine Lanckton, and Knotsford, who was Matter of the Gallion , very expert in those Countries , and was Pilot with Ishn Hambins when hee dyed, and putting either of them into a small Pinnace, fent them before that they might make the landing place before night, and my felfe with the fleet did linger, and fo when it was darke, putting out all our failes, came to them vndiscouered, which was about one of the clocke that night. But they did mee no good, for the place they went to discouer was further They arrive as from them then they expected, so as it was darke before they came to it, and for feare of carry- the lland. ing me to leeward flayed, and told me they had done nothing. Wherefore I flood close vpon a

40 winde off and on, vntill the morning, when being close by the shoare there was to my seeming Euill surmises a smooth landing place, which by all them in my freet that were there with Sir Francis Drake, I was told was impossible to get, the winde ouer-blowing all day out of the Sea. Wherefore I tooke my Boat and Sit lobn Barkley with me, rowed thither, and found it not onely imooth, but His fearch. by the view of our eyes a most goodly sandie Bay, to march all alongst by the Sea side till wee came to the Towne. Being well pleafed with this fight I returned aboard, and gaue order to all the Commanders prefendly to land there. But by divers of them many objections were made against landing there. First, that the march seemed to be great : Then, that none knew the way: Obiections, and lastly, if the Towne flood in an Iland, as they often had heard it did, we should be forced to

returne to our ships, not having meanes to get vnto them. Gentlemen, said I, a willing minde makes The Earles To long step; with great ease: I have beene sicks and am not now strong; you shall goe no suriber nor faster answere. then I will doe before you : for guides wee need no better then our eyes; the Towne flanding by the Sea fide, and we landing from the Sea fee no other but faire fandie Bayes all the way thither : fo as much neerer we might land if we were fure there were any where to leeward such a head-land as this that maketh smooth landing within it. But that being uncertaine I meane to take this, which I doe affuredly believe God bath directed us unto , for I am fare, it is better then any ener told me of. And for your last argument, that if it be an lland we shall not get into it, that reason is nothing; for you see our Boats may row by vs, and when we shall come to any water they may set vs oner, if it be deepe: in shallow places we hall paffe our felues. So all you have or can fay being now throughly answered, let me have no more speaking, but get your men all into your Boates, and follow in order as I bane directed you. I will goe before

60 in my Boss , and when you fee my Colours difflayed , make all the hafte you can to land. This doe with good heart and courige, affuring your felnes you have the mayden bead of Porto Rico, and fo possesses the keves of all the in 1.3. And though there bee not fo many millions in it as there was when a greater farce then we went without it : vet affure your felfe the Towne is rich. The last yeere there were eighteene This laden with Ginger and Sugar from it. I affure you there are mynes of gold in it. And though thefe

CHAP. 3.S.I. Port Ricco Doyage. A Souldiers zeale. Canaries. Cancerota taken. II 9

minder of Souldiers, will, I doubt not, carry you beyond all profit. It is thought by men of indermont too frone for this Arength to carry, because it hath alreadie refiled a much firenegr force: so as we should haut institution to see proma a success success and a success of the control of t This faid, the Captaines that were there went for their men, telling all the rest my resoluti-

on. And as soone as they saw me rowe towards the shoare all followed as I had directed. Thus 10 landed we the fixt day in a most fine place, where not any wet his furniture nor faw any enemie. By which meanes all our troopes were put in good order, and we made much stronger: then a small resistance before we were martialled would have made vs. This place was leasues from the Towne, towards which we marched in the extreame heate of the day, the way being fandy, and would no doubt haue tired many, but that going all alongst by the Sea, we at pleafure marched in it when we lifted; and besides had the place wee went to, still in our fight. which standing vpon the top of an hill shewed much nearer then it was. When wee had gone fome three leagues, we law fix or feuen Horfemen; which (the forlorne hop.) comming within fixteene or twenty score of, presently turned their Horses and galloped away. Not long after nxcene or twenty increases, the first ferries, which I was most glad of; aftering my felfe there came a Negre willingly offering his fertice, which I was most glad of; aftering my felfe would have guided me to the Towne: but he not speaking Spanish nor voderstanding it, we 20 were led by him to the entrance of the Sea that maketh the Iland, where I imagined with Boates to get ouer. But of that we were hindred by a bulwarke flanding on the Iland fide clofe voon the mouth of the entrance, and having in it five peeces of Braffe. The entrance is not above fixtie wards ouer, and a little within it is stopped quite ouer with piles driven in; so as it was not peffible to get in there fo long as the enemy possessed it. Then were we at our wits end, but Laffured my felfe there was some other good way ouer where those Horsemen rid which we saw before; and with much a doe made this dumbe guide understand that I would have him carry me to the place where they went ouer, When I perceived he vnderstood me, I followed him through the most wickedeft wood that euer I was in in all my life, & at length he brought me to the reare part of all my troope. And for that it grew late, and I was loath to loofe any time, I made them 30 march, being Sir lobu Barkley: Regiment; and gaue order mine owne should come in the reare. not having place nor time then to thift them. We had not gone farre, but we croffed the footing of the Horlemen we saw before, and following them were about Sunset brought to a narrow Bridge, whereon three might goe a front about two score ouer, and to our seeming about the midit of it aftrong Grate of wood close thut; and at the further fide of the water a Block-house with Ordnance, by which there flood five Spaniards. When I and Sir lobn Barkley had viewed this place, we understood by another Negre, that comming thither, at a low water we might paffe ouer wading besides the Cause. And he telling vs that it was not low water till two of the pane out: waning of the morning, we returned to a little plaine (that we piffed by before) to reft our men and give them some refreshing, for the better inabling them to fight in the morning.

Negres millen-

Hu farre the same bonomable hand bath beene our Actor and Anthone: but here when hee comes to doing broats off feating and (tam Marte quam Mercurio) exchangel h words for foords, and Mercurial art into Mariall ad rof which we have mother Relator as of the roll of the Voyage: ana mere in attendance to his bonourable Master. But I cannot give him that which yet this gives bim, a name". It is a copious discourse, which we have somewhat abridged; both in that former partof the I have fines . Historie, which you already have from Him which best know it and in the rest, in some superflustice or diheard that his, graffiant feeming fuch at leaft to me, who bassing fo much works, make my folfe more to make the Reader name was Do name was 100 5 leffe prouiding neueribeleffe that not a drop of necessary bloud be lost or strange meeted, bow often some 50 tot Lapleid, we seeme to open a vaine to om redundant Aubor bleed it was another cause which made me te ane out a political descourse and State-moral mysterie of this History, written by the same Noble Commander. whose worth here we benour. The times are altered, and hemsoener Planets have their peculiar course fixed Star: must mome with their Orbe, and follow the first Momenble. The men of Bethshemeth bought dearely their prying into the Arke : and I know not how I may be tolerated to otter now in public, thefe accrety tour prints.

State-mifferies which he then in prinate counselled for his Countries good. I could also be willing, as State-myster world would be greedee of such morfels: but Actops Dogge furthing at the shadow of a more near the water, toft that which be had in bu mouth, and bu Crowe gaping to jung to place for Force di-fedin the water, toft that which be had in bu mouth, and bu Crowe gaping to jung to place for Force di-placed her felly with infle of all her other wealth and purchase. Every where in this waste worke we have pleased for size with size a mover more remain some provings, comer merce in this valet water when have been warry, and yet scarce warry concept of two danger in our warrish warring (s. wherean yet (f. and sede 60) family be it is not an inching sugar longs above vs., but there of furthers is a multisforme a taske than the water water than the second of the second perhaps bath occasioned overlight to eyes, otherwise dimme enough. Once; what seems the King and State disclaime, I disclaime also as not mine, because I and mine are theirs, and no farther desire to be or fee mine owne then in the publice of which, and for which (under God) I am have, can, write, do, feeke, acknowledge all things, I will pry in the East and West Indies rather then state at at home. CHAP.

be motines to draw you to fight, yet bane I not sold you of one. Tou being Souldiers and corrume the have inst canse to be proud of taking it, and (beleene me) assured we are to take it, now we see where to June 11, 1019 go mail make great homes, and it may be indure one brunt; but if they doe any more teare

CHAP. IIL

A large Relation of the Port Ricco Doiage , written as is reported, by that learned man and reverend Dinine Doctor LAYFIELD, bis Lordships Chaplaine and Attendant in that expedition; Dery much abbreuiated.

The Shippes emploied in the Voyage and accidents on the Coasts of Spaine. in the Canaries, and the Nauigation thence 20 Dominica.

Is Lordship being authorised by Letters Patents given at Westminster the foure- Aug. 1596. Aug. teenth of Ianuary, to leuie Forces serusceable by Sea and Land, came downe to Parte (month the eight of February , wherein nothing memorable happened till Munday, being the thirteenth of March. While we were at Morning Prayer, bis Munday, being the thirteenth of March. While we were at CMorning Prayer, bit
Lording bappened to fee a Gallant of the company (purposet) I name him not) reading of Worthy 20. of
Orlando Furioso 12 whom homselfic in person went presently after Service, all the 2 worthy man,
Company being by, and having told him that we mught looks that God would serve vs accordingly, if we

fermed not hims better; bad him be sure that if againe be took g him in the like manner, be would cast his Booke over -book a and turne bim (elfe out of the Ship. The next day by observation it was found . that towards the euening we had runne within fine or fixe and twenty leagues of the North Cape: whereupon his Lordship gaue direction to the Vice-admirall, that he should carry his Flagge in the Maine-top, and with a peece of Ordnance should hale in the rest of the Fleete to no his Lee, and that they all with him as their Admirall for the time, should this night winde South and by West; and there they shoul I ride off and on scattering themselves to the North and South in the height of the Burlings, till his Lordshippe should come to them. In the meane feafon himfelfe attended onely with the Guiana, and the Scourges from, run to fall in with the North Cape, meaning by the taking of some Caruell or some Fisherman to have some certaine intelligence in what forwardnesse the frue Carracks were which at this very time his Lordship knew were ourwards bound. The defect of his maine Malte caufed him to ftand in for the Burlings.

The Burlings is an Iland something longer then broad, and by the violent beating of the Sea. The Surfiness it felfe almost made two Ilands, and within few yeares it will be so; exceeding rockie it is and or Berlinga. barren aboue meafure. We found no living thing in it, but Lyfards and fome few Conies. Vpon thursday, being the thirteenth of Aprill, we had fight of the Ilands. The first that was The courts

within kenning, was Alegranga, the most Northerly of the Canaries: we left it on the star-board Hands, fide, as also three little hils rather then the Islands having all one name of the Grange. In the afternoone we had Lancerota, one of the fix great Canaries, in cleere kenning. The next morning twixt fine and fix, we were come to an anchor in the Roade, which beareth East South-east of the lland. His Lordship had taken colde with watching the last night, whereupon he found himselfe so ill the next morning (being good Friday) that he kept his Cabbin, and was glad to take fome ftrong Physicke : He fent therefore for Sir Jobs Barkley his Lieutenant generall and gaue him order to land with certaine Companies, to the number of betweene five and fix himdred men. They were in their March by ten that morning, and marched the next way (as they thought) to the chiefe Towne of the Hand, but their foremost defire was if they might, so have furprised the Marquesse, who commandeth both that and the next Iland called Fortenentura, 29 his owne possession. The Towne is from the place they landed at, as they consecture, some ten miles at the leaft. By fine in the afternoone they entered the Towne, which befides the expe- They take the Station they found clearely quitted of the enemy, and nothing in a manner left, fatting good ffore thiefe Towne of very excellent Wine and Cheefe, After the Towne was affured, Sir John fent a troope to a of Lamereta, a frong Hold some halfe a mile of from the Towne, called the Cattle; a place which the Merquesse had fortified with good store of Municion and Ordnance. When our Troopes were come The Castle taup the Hill, they found cwixt 80. and 200. Handers and Spaniards within and about the house, ken, but without fight they quitted the place, fo that our men entered it without loffe or danger, 60 They found in it a dozen or more cast Peeces of Brasse, the least Bases, the most whole Culturing

The House it selfe built of squared stone, slanked very strongly and cunningly, both for defence

and offence : the entrance thereunto not as in our Fores of equall height with the foundation

and ground, but raifed about a Pikes length in height, fo that without the vie of a Ladder, there

and Demiculaering, and an innumerable company of Stones laid in places of greatest aduantage.

could be no entrance there. I have heard fundry of our wifest Commanders say, that if they had drawne in their Ladder and onely shut the doore, twenty men victualled might have kept it a-The Towne gainst fine hundred. The Towne confisteth of somewhat more then a hundred houses, whose building is rade, being commonly but of one Storie; their Roofes flat and fomething floring to caft of raine, coursed onely with Canes or Straw laid vpon a few rafters, and very dirt caft vpon ail, which being hardned by the Sunne, becommeth of showre-proofe,

Inhabitants.

Beafts.

The Inhabitants are of very able and active bodies, their flature commonly tall, of swiftnesse (in that Mountainous Countrie) not farre behinde their Horfes and Cammels : their Armes are Pikes and Stones; when a Peece is prefented to them, fo foone as they perceine the cocke or match to fall, they call them felues flat to the ground, and the report is no fooner heard, but 10 they are upon their teete, their itones out of their hands, and withall they charge with their Pikes , and this in feattered incounters or fingle fight (for either they know not or neglect orderly bartalion) oftner giveth then receiveth hurt. The Hand it is not round, but firetched fomewhat in length to the North-east and South-west, parted by a ridge of Hils from end to end, as Italie is by the Mountaines-Apennine. These hils are barren, otherwise then that in prettie fore they teede flocks of Sneepe and Goates. Their Vallies promife no fruitfulnesse, being very fandy and dry, something like Rye-fields in Fngland, and yet they yeelde paffing good Barley, and Wheate. Their beatts be Sheepe and Goates, few Neate, many Affes, fewer Camels, but fewelt Gennets, and thefe of no great flature. The lland is thought to exceede the

28. degrees, and some minutes) by the complexion of the Inhabitants, which is blackish, and by their Haruest-time, which was past before the middest of Aprill, and looke for a second athe middeft of bout Michaelmas, their landing there was vpon good Friday. The next day, the fifteenth of Aprill, Sir John Barkeley, being out of hope to finde the Marquelle, not knowing where to freke him, whom feare had taught to hide him telfe closely, marched backe to the Nauie, without farther arme to the Towne or Cattle, then borrowing some necessaries. There is in the Towne a Church of old, and a Frierie not yet finished. Their Church hath no windowes, nor admit eth light otherwise then by the doores; it hath no Chancell, but is one vindeuided roome, stone feates along the fides, and in the one end an Altar with the appurtenants : for the people feemeth full of ignorant Superflition, many Buls and Pardons being found in divers houses. The 30 Friery is a prettie fquare, with more commodities of fresh water and Gardens, then any other place of the Towne, even the Marquelle his house.

Wieht both in breadth and length : of the Temper a man may judge (besides that it lyeth in 20

They came that night to the waters fide, yet thought it better to lodge abroade then abourd. though there were Boates to receive them. The next day being Eafter day, his Lording having fomerhing recovered his ftrength, after dinner went alhore to the Companies, having feene them trained knowing that the enemy watched for aduantage of scatterers, faw all his men shipt first. and then himlelfe tooke Boate. The next day, being Munday, all the Captaines dined aboord the Admirall, and after dinner his Lordship caused his Commission (which was exceeding large in many points) to be openly reade; and Articles of government were given for Sea-matters to the Captaine of every Ship, and for feruice by Land to the Captaine of every company; besides 40 which Articles to the Sea Captaines, was deliuered a fealed letter, which they should open, if upon any accident they loft the Fleete, and thereby learne direction where to feeke his Lordthip. But withall it was expresly articled, that in no other case they should adventure to open it; and that if they came into any danger of being taken by the enemy, they should not faile to cast the Letter over-board fealed, as it was delivered; for in no fort would his Lordship have his purpole difclosed, no not by examination nor torture.

While his Lording was coatting neere Teneriffa, the breathes rather then windes were fodiuers, that it was doubled on every fide almost and came so close abourd the shore, that we did eafily fee into Santa Cruz, and some other coasting Townes, and might discerne the men your the hils, the rather by conic cture, by reason of the eminencie and height thereof; among which 50 there is one about the rest incomprable, generally held to be much higher then the Pyke of the Acores, being then couered with Snow, when the bottome was as hot as at Midfummer it is in England. The Iland though to the Sea a very high land, yet is full of many very fruitfull Plaines. and Vineyards, yeelding to the King yearely (by credible mens report) 28000. Buts of Cana-Riches thereof ry-Sacke. Certaine it is, that in common reputation it is held richer not onely then the reft, but Capcaia Leight euen then the grand Canaria it felfe (though it feeme not fo goodly a champion Countrie (for we had that also in very neere kenning.) And that the King effeemeth it more no man can doubt feeing he keepeth a farre greater Garrison there, then in the Canaria.

Captaine Charles Leigh which hitherto had commanded of the Alcede, on the fourth of May laft, the Fleete and in his owne Barke, called the Blacke Lee, runne himfelfe alone for the River 63 of Orenogue. His Lordship after divers confulrations determined that the Fleete should goe for Dominico (His speeches, Captaine Slingsbies employment, and other particulars, are here for bre-

An old Portugall Pilor told his Lordhip that he had beene in eight and twentie voyages into

CHAP.2. \$.2. Gusts and Inwholsome raines. Black colour of the Sea, Dominica. 1157

Brafil, but at this time of the yeere onely in one; wherein, hee faith, the windes were fo contrarie, and they had so many other difficulties, that they were forced to put in againe and loose that yeeres youage; fo that the windes being in these parts at set times of the yeere, themselves alio constantly fet, we might well thinke wee should bee encountred with the same difficulties. All this while we held on our course for the West Indies, running West and by South , and West South-west, but bearing still to the Westward, both because we are likelier to keepe the fresher cale that way (though some were of contrarie opinion) and because the later wee entred within the Tropick, we should bee the likelier to meet with the Brafil fleet, whose course homewards must of necessitie be much to the North. By Wednesday the tenth of May (for till then wee 10 met not with any memorable accident, feeing to tell of the flocks of flying fishes, might infly feeme trivial) we were come fo directly vnder the Sunne, that none could fee evidently the fha- Sunne in their dow of a fule fee perpendicularly, but if there were any it inclined rather to the due South. For Zeauh, by observation by the Astrolabe (the vie of the staffe now fayling) we were found to have passed our Tropick three degrees and a halfe, and the Sunnes declination that day was precifely ewentie degrees. This was more cleerly perceived at night by taking the height of the Crofier (a flarte which of all other diffinctly to be perceiued neere the Antartick Pole, ferueth for those Souther. The Crosser,

ly parts, as the leffer Beare doth to the Northerly countries.) It is a long step from the Canaries to the Welt Indies, which first of all wee had in our kenning yoon Sunday being the one and twentieth of May. But to lay, if it be but a handfull of peeble 20 stones, in this gap. Vpon Saturday being the thirteenth of May, we had the first gust, and it had Gusts. many followers, for few dayes passed without raine. When this raine began, immediately wee all felt a very noyfome fauour, it was very fulphurous, and lasted folong as the raine did. Whe- Vnwholfomis ther this proceeded of the nature of the water that fell from fo neere the Sunne, or from the thip raine. being very drie (as on land after a great drought there will rife a hot fauour) it is not cleerly knowne, nor yet determined, but that others may the better, this observation is expresfed. This fauour was not felt vpon the decks, or any where elfe befides the Cabbin, or

at least not any where so much. The reason whereof may happily bee, that the aire being suddenly beaten in, and that by narrow passages, came the more violently, and by consequent the more fentibly into the Cabbin, then into other parts of the thip, and therefore what-30 foeuer qualitie it bore with it, it was there the strongliest felt. In the following of as great guits as that which came first, there was no such fauour felt, the fleet going still farther and farther from the Sunne. And which may be most to the purpose, not any of them that felt it . found any difference after it, onely the fenie was much displeated therewithall; his Lordship had at this time aken much physick, but still rather to preuent sicknesse, then for to recouer health (for God be thanked, his body was very able to obey his minde) finding no difference in the world in the working of physick there and in England. Nauigators may helpe themselues by his Lordships observation : That upon Friday being the ninteenth of May, the colour of the Sea began Colour of the femibly to alter, that whereas before it was of a cleere azure, it then began to incline to a deepe Seablack. blacke. We were that day a hundreth and fixtie leagues (or thereabouts) from the West Indies 40 and held our felues fo certainly in the height of Dominica, that wee runne a due Westerly course. It is not valikely but this colour will be found in the fame place at another time. And in such a course, wherein (besides the great difference of Cardes) a man must bee forced to trust to a dead reckoning ; this may bee some helpe to a heedfull man. Vpon Sunday in the evening his Lord-

thip directed the Matter to runne that night with an easie faile, because he tooke himselfe neerer land then most of the Mariners would confent to, being himselfe the first that both spyed and cryed land; they were but few that did affent at the first : fome defired it fo much, that they durit not let themselues be ouer credulous; others happily would have had themselues the first discry. ers, but his Lordship still made it land. Wee set faile for the land, and within two houres it was Matining. made to bee Matinino. Leaving it therefore on the larboard fide , wee flood for Dominica . and Dominica. 50 within an houre or thereabouts had it in kenning.

ð. I I.

Description of Dominica and the Virgines. Their landing on Port Ricco. march, fights, and taking the Towne.

Y two in the afternoone wee were come so neere aboard the shoare, that wee were met with many Canoes, manned with men wholly naked, fauing that they had chaines Naked Indians and bracelets and some bookins in their eares, or some strap in their nostrils or lips; the cause of their comming was to exchange their Tabacco, Pinos, Plantins, Potatoes, and Pepper with any trifle if it were gawdie. They were at the first suspicious that wee were Spa-

miards or Frenchmen, but being affored that wee were English they came willingly aboard. They are men of good proportion, throng, and ftraight limmed, but tew of them tall, their wits able

Redpainting. purpose, they prouide shelter against the raine because it washesh of their red painting , laid so on that if you touch it, you shall finde it on your fingers. That night, having with much adoe found land, within a quarter of a mile of the shore, we ankored for that night onely, for though there were a good watering place, and a very fweete 10 riveret falt by vs, yet his Lordship ment to way ankor the next morning, and to beare in to another watering place, where withall we certainly looked for a hot Bathe. Their Oares where with they rowe are not laid in bankes as Ship-boates have, but are made like a long Battledgore, fa-

ning that their palmes are much longer then broade, growing into a sharpe point, with a rising in the middest of thema good way ; very like they are to blades of bigge Westerne Daggers, that are now made with grauing. The shankes of these Oares are of equal bignesse, and at the top croffet like a lame mans crutch. These they vie alwayes with both their hands, but indifferent-Iv as they finde cause to steere this way or that way. The next morning wee bore in to the North-west end of the Hand, where we found a goodly Bay able to receive a greater Nauie then hath beene together in the memorie of this age. There his Lordship found the hote Bathe 20 fast by the fide of a very fine River. The Bathe is as hot as either the Croffe-bathe or Kings. bathe at the Citie of Bathe in England, and within three or foure yards runneth into the River. which within a ftones cast disburdeneth it selfe into the Sea. Hereour sicke men specially found good refreshing. In this place his Lordship staied some fix dayes in watering the whole Fleete, which in that time was all come fauing the Frigat, one of the blacke Pinnaces, and one of the Flemmings (which we hoped to be before vs, for they have directions.) It was held convenient here to take a Muster of our companies, and something better to acquaint every one with his owne colours; but the weather was so extreamely toule, that in three or foure dayes spent to this purpose, there could be nothing done. Vpon Wednesday therefore, being the last of May.

it was relolued to flay no longer there, but to come gaine to ankor at the Ungines, and there beflow one day in training our men. For that was our way to Saint John de Puerte rice, whether his Lordship now declared it was his purpose to goe first of all. By this time (for his Lordship would not have any thing done in that foule weather) the other blacke Pinnace was taken down for a long Boate to ferue for the more convenient landing of our men.

That evening and the next morning all our men were brought aboord, and on thursday night Description of our failes were cut for the Virgines. To describe this Iland, it lieth North-west and South-east. the foile is very fat, even in the most neglected places, matching the Garden-plats in England for a rich blacke molde : fo Mountainous (certaine in the places where we came neere the Seacoafts) that the Vallies may better be called Pits then Plaines, and withall so vnpassably wooddie, that it is maruailous how those naked soules can be able to pull themselues through them, 40 without renting their naturall cloathes. Some speake of more easie passages in the Inland of the Iland, which make it probable that they leave those skirts and edges of their Countrie thus of purpose for a wall of defence. These Hills are apparelled with very goodly greene Trees, of many forts. The tallnesse of these vnrequested Trees make the hils seeme more hilly then of themselves happily they are: for they grow folike good children of some happy civill body, without enuie or oppression, as that they looke like a proud meddow about Oxford, when after some irruption. Tems is againe cooched low within his owne banks, leaving the earths Mantle more ruggie and flakie, then otherwife it would have bin; yea to much feeme these natural children delighted with equalitie and withall with multiplication, that having growne to a definite flature, without deare of ouertopping others, they willingly let downe their boughes, which being come to 50 the earth againe take roote, as it were to continue the fuccession of their decaying progenitors: and yet they doe continually maintaine themselves in a greene-good liking, through the liberalitie partly of the Sunnes neighbourhood, which prouideth them in that necreneffe to the Sea. of exceeding showres; partly of many fine Rivers, which to requite the shadow and coolenesse they receive from the Trees, give them backe againe, a continuall refreshing of very sweete and A Town found taftie water. For the Inhabitants of this Countrie. A Captaine or two watering neere the place where his Lordship first anchored, found a leature to rowe vpa River with some guard or Pikes and Musketers, till they came to a Towne of these poore Saluages; and a poore Towne it was of fome twenty cottages rather then Houses, and yet there was there a King, whom they found in a wide hanging garment of rich crimion Taffetie, a Spanish Rapier in his hand, and the modell of 60

WildeMaiefty, a Lyon in finning Braffe, hanging upon his breaft. There they faw their women as naked as wee had feene their men, and alike attired even to the boring of their lippes and eares, yet in that nakednesse, they perceived some sparkes of modestie, not willingly comming in the sight of ffrance and apparelled men; and when they did come, buile to couer, what should have bin betCHAP.3. S.2. Adicherie. Maid and Wife. Common diet-roome, The Virgines. 1150

ter couered. The Queene they faw not, nor any of the Noble wives, but of the vulgar many ; and the Maidens it should seeme they would not have so squemish, for the King commanded his Daughters presence, with whom our Gentlemen did dance after meate was taken away. This withdrawing of their wines feemeth to come of the common isloufie of these people; for (it is Adultery pureported) that though they admit one man to have many wives, yet for any man to meddle nifhed with with another mans wife, is punished with death, even among them. And no meruaile if the fe- death, peritie of law be fet instead of many other wanting hinderances. It seemeth that themselves are wearie of their nakednesse, for besides the Kings apparrell, they are exceeding desirous to exchange any of their Commodities for an old Walte-coate, or but a Cap, yea or but a paire

It is pretie that they fay is the difference twixt the habit of a Wife and a Maide. The Maide Difference of weareth no garter (and indeede the needeth none) but the Wife is the first night the is married maide & wife, (which is not done without asking at the least the confent of her parents) to straightly gartered. that in time the fielh will hang ouer the lift. The haire of men and women are of like length. and fath on. But of all other things it is most memorable, that whereas their Houses are private to all other vies, yet they have one common place, where all their men at least take their diet, nature teaching them that Law which in Lucurgus his mouth was thought flrange and perhaps needeleffe. The King fitteth in the fame great roome with the rest, but withdrawing himselfe Kings state. into fome more louely part, accompanied onely with three or foure of the best esteeme; their

neates are their fine fruites, yet have they Hennes and Pigges, but it should seeme rather for delight, then victually their drinke is commonly water, but they make drinke of their Callain. better of their Pines (and it should seeme that might be made an excellent liquor) but the best and referred for the Kings cup onely of Potatoes : their Bread is Caffain. The last report of them shall bee what I have feene in experience, namely their great delire to vinderfrand the English tongue; for some of them will print to most parts of his body, and having told Desire to learn the name of it in the language of Dominica, he would not reft till be were told the name of it English. in English, which having once told he would repeate till he could either name it right, or at least till he thought it was right, and so commonly it should be, fauing that to all words ending in a confonant they alwayes fet the fecond vowell, as for chinne, they fay chin-ne, fo ma-20 king most of the monatillables, distillables. But it is time to leave them who are already many

leagues of.

On thursday night his Lordship set saile for the Virgines , and on faturday morning had They come to them in light : and in the afternoone we were come to an ankor. On Whitlunday in the morning betimes (for there was a fit place fought out the evening before) our land forces went on My Lordsland shore, and there his Lordshippe tooke a perfect muster of them. The Companies indeede were companies as (though after much ficknesse) goodly, in number one might well say not so fewe as a thousand. fand. When the Companies had bin trained into all forts, and faces of fights, at length his Lordhippe commanded the Drummes to beate a call, and the troopes being drawne in the nearest closenesse. The speech that conveniently they might be, that he might be heard of all, his Lording Randing vader a you have be-40 great cliffe of a rocke, his prospect to the Seaward, stept vpon one of the greater stones (which relation, and added to his naturall stature, gaue him a pretty height about the other company) to commanding there ore here

audience, made a speech to them.

After which, the Fleete then within one dayes failing from Pmerto rices, his Lordship pre- See before the fently appointed Officers for the field. They all made vp a dozen Companies: whereof it any names of the wanted the full number of 80, they were plentifully supplied, by a large overplus of gallant Captaines and Gentlementhat followed his Lordships colours, borne by Captaine Bressley; and Sir Jobn allo Commanders, had more then 80. so that the whole Armie appointed to Land, was neere vpon a thousand fpecially feeing the Officers of feuerall Companies were not reckoned in these numbers. The Offices thus bestowed, his Lordship forthwith commanded every man to be shipped in Boates, and 50 to goe aboord, where after dinner it was debated, whether it were better to paffe through the

Unreines, a way not clearely viknowne (for divers of our company both Souldiors and Marriners had gone it before with Sir Francis Drake, in his last voyage) or else to hold the old course Sir Fr. Drake, through the Paffages. It was acknowledged that the Virgines was the neerer way, but withall none can denie, but that it was the more dangerous; for the way is very narrow (about the breadth of Thames about London) and we durit not promite our felues the continuance of a leading winde. The way through the passages was found to be farther about, but withall it was without danger, and therefore having no great hafte choose the fafer way by the passages; for (faid his Lordship) I choose rather, to be the first that shall take Puerto rice, then the second that shall passe the Virgines. The Virgines are little Hands not inhabited; some thinke for want of The Virgines

60 water, some thinke that is no cause, and that there is store of water. They are very barren and described. craggie, fomewhat like the Barlings, but being much more fandie, as it is much more hot, Among these many scattered Hands there is one called the Bird-Hand, by reason of the incredible Bird-Hand, store of Fowle, So stored is it with plentie of Fowle, that never was English Doue-coat more willing to yeelde her increase then that hillocke, for you may take with your hands onely, as

much as you will to the filling of Bushels and Quarters. That evening we cut failes; and ranne force of Birds. through the Paffages in the night time.

Voon Monday afternoone, we made our felues to be not farre from Puerto rico ; and our defire was to heare in with it in the morning before day, that by that meanes we might leaft of all he discovered. For this cause therefore the Scont and the Anthony were fent before to make our landing place, and that done to returne, which was about midnight. His Lordships greatest care was and had bin tome dayes to fet his men fafely and well on land, for he doubted not to make them a way, if once they were landed without impeachment, Himfelfe therefore having commanded that Sir John Barkley should come aboord with him, tooke a Boate and went himfelfe no otherwise accompanied then with Sir John and the Cocksons gyng, to discover a landing 10 place. Without long stay he returned agains, so wet, that he was forced to change his apparell. but withall gave prefent commandement that every Captaine and Ship should put their men into Boates, and that they should follow his bloudy colours, which he would have prefently

They land vp. on the Boof Saiat loby de Puerto rico the fiat of luna

By eight of the clocke that tuefday, being the fixt of June, his Lordfhips regiment, and most part of Sir John Barkleys were landed, which amounted neere to the number of a thousand men. We began to march as toone as we could be brought into any order, & the forlorne hope drawne ont which was led by Captaine Andrewer the Commander of his Lordships private Company, which that day was brought up in the the Battell by Captaine Powell, Lieutenant Colonell of his Lordships regiment. The way we marched was along the Sea side, commonly on firme, some 20 time on loole fand, but yet it was a faire march, for three leagues at the leaft, till we met with a blacke-Moore, who we hoped should have bin our Guide (and so he was willing to be) but he neither spake good English, nor good Spanish, and besides was affrighted, fo that a great while he did millead vs; for through most vnpassable rocks and clifts he brought vs! for betwixt the clifts where we flood, and the Hand wherein the Towne flood, there we faw an arme of the Sea, in bread; h not Calieuer shot, but on the other side was a fort with fine peece of great Ordnance, and some, though not many, Musketeers; for both the evening before they had disconered our Nauie, and this morning our landing, as we were fure by divers Horlemen, whom we faw come forth to view our ftrength. Here there was offer made by fome, fo to plant a number of Musketeers in these rockes, as that they might beate them in the fort from their Ord- to nance; this was thought possible, and afterwards was done but now deferred, because though we had no annoyance of the fort, yet we knew not how to get ouer, for the depth of the paffage meetly voknown, and our Boats yet had not found any landing place neere the fort. And while here we were at a flat bay, euen at our wits end, what courfe we might take to come to the Towne, there was fent a Peece or two of great Ordnance (but without any hurt) from another fort, which standeth vpon the narrowest part of the same arme of the Sea, and was the onely pallage that was yied from the maine Hand where we were, to the Hand where the Towne is-Never milgui- Here the Nigre was fo nething comforted, and brought to the little wit he had; at length, with much a oe, being made to vinderstand, we tooke our selues to be out of the way, because wee could not paffe that way; partly with threatning and partly with promiles if he brought vs in- 40

to a better way to the Townshe began agains to leade, and we to follow with as nimble mindes as weary bodies, for we had marched from morning till now that it was even in the edge of the euening; but we would not be weary.

Bad March.

At length through many untroden pathes, or rather no pathes; but fach wodden holes, as would have raught the most proud body to stoope very humbly; he brought vs into a braten fandy way. But for all this we were not neere the Bridge which must be passed, and diverseven of our leaders began after follong and troublefome a march to faint, fo that order was guen to flav the Vanteard, when it pleased God to helpe by one meane or other to as many Horses, as kept ve from staying our march. There might be seene a poore tyred lade, without Saddle or Brille, onely with a match in his mouth very welcome to them that commanded the beftHor- To fes of England. But at length we ouercame the length of the way, and even to the Bridge were come, but it was so late, that that night we were out of hope to passe it, being (as we had great reaton to thinke) fortified against vs. Onely the Companies were commanded to keepe their guard, till his Lordfhip in person with Sir John Barkley went as quietly as they could to take view of the place; which they found to be narrow and a long Cawfe-way leading to a Bridge reaching from the one Iland to the other. The Bridge they perceived to be pulled vp, and on the other banke was there a strong Barricado, a little beyond which was a Fort with Ordnance. But how much or what we could not learne, nor by how many men it was held, yet perceived they it absolutely not to be passed but at a low water. Our Mariners and Sea-men could say little to the ebbing and flowing in this Countrie, and therefore the onely way to know the fit 50 time of affault, was to let a continual watch to give prefent information of the ebbe. The meane time the Armie was led backe to repose themselves a while,

Bridge and

In a great Lawne we all fat or lay downe, and with fresh water, which the first Negro, and another, that was afterwards taken in this wood, led our men to, they refreshed thein iclus;

fome had fome Bread, his Lordship was no niggard of that he had. His lodging that night was his Target; I lay at his head, and to my remembrance, neuer flept better. In the morning (two houres at least before day) the allarum was given very quietly, and was readily taken, for we needed not but to shake our cares. The Companies were streight ranged, and every man had forgotten how weary he had bin the last night, fo forward they were to be in service: Euen betwixt his Lord hip and Sir Ioha Barkeley there grew a little question; whether of them should have the point that day. Sir Johns answer was, that his Lordship might command them all, and therefore it was at his pleafure to have or leave the point; but fince it had pleafed him to Sir John Barke. dui le the Armie into two Regiments, and his Lordshippes Leaders had all the last day had the leri honourable Point, he tooke it to be neerer the order of the Warres if the other Regiment this day were re- ambition.

spected. This reason together with request to his honour to remember himselfe to be the Generall and therefore his place should not be so full of danger, so farre mound his Lordship that Sir Johns Regiment had the Point; neuertheleffe his Lordshippe would be at the service in person. Thus the manner of the enterprize being vpon the prefent resolved on his Lordship put himselfe into his Armour lo did all the Commanders, and who elfe had Armours, for they looked that the fernice (hould be hot, as indeede it proued,

tooke their enemies Pikes, and perforce brake them.

By and by the enemies Centinell had discourred the approach of our Companies, and they The fight betooke the Alarum. It may be well laid it was well fought by the English, and if it had bin day tweat the English and if it had bin day the and Spanthat every one might have feene what he did, it is to be thought fo many would not have de- ards, 20 ferued to much commendation. The affault continued about two hourses, during which time the Spaniards were not idle. For though the affalants left no way in the world vnattempted, yet no way could they finde to enter the Gate. The Cawfey, which was the ordinarie way of passage, was purposely made so rugged: that our men to keepe them on their feete, made choise to wade. The Earles acin the water besides it. Here his Lordship was (by the stumbling of him that bore his Target) cidentall danoverthrowne, even to the danger of drowning; for his Armour fo overburdened him, that the get-Sergiant Major that by chance was next had much adoe at the first and second time to get him from under the water : when he was up, he had received so much Salt water, that it drove him to fo great excremity of prefent fickneile, that he was forced to lye downe in the very place voon the Cawfey; till being somewhat recourred, he was able to be led to a place of some more 20 fafetie and eafe; in which place the Bullets made him threatning musicke on every side. His Lordshippe being brought to this little fafe place (whence yet he would not be removed till the fight was done) Sir lobn Barkeley led on his Regiment, from whom there were not leffe then 2000. English Bullets fent among the Spaniards, who had not fo many hands as we, yet were not much behinde vs, in fending thefe heavy leaden messengers of death. For besides fix peece of great Ordnance, which were bent and played inft vpon the Cawfey, and some pretty store of Musketeers; at a port fait by the gate lay there a fowler, or a cast peece, that did more skathe, then all the reft, for that at once that many murthering that, whereupon the peece is also called a murtherer; for all this our Soldiers came to the very gate, and with Bils, some two or three that they had, wanting other fitter influments, began to hewe it. At their ports and loope

haue swamme, he had bin drowned. They that were come to the gare called to their owne

Companies, that some Pikes should be drawne to them : this word was given farther then

was intended, for by and by all the Pikes were called for. Then his Lordships colours began

lous that it had bin as fafe being at the entry of a breach by allault : but the end was, it could

would be advantagious for vs, yet certainely it would have bin the death of many a man;

their Ordnance being bent to fcoure the Cawfey, and the ruggednesse which they had made to

hinder our approach, had made vs foriske it; which if the day had once discoursed to them,

they might early haue bent their Artillery to our much greater lose. But God would not

haue more bloud shed, nor ours as yet to haue our wils. The Companies therefore were brought

40 holes they were at the pulh of the Pike, and having broken their owne, with their naked hands at the sates,

But for all this no entrance could be got. Sir Iohn Barkeley attempting to discouer if any Sir I. Barkless paffage might be found of either fide of the gate, twice waded to farre, that if he could not courage.

to march, and to the Cawley came, where hee was very exceeding ficke lying upon the His Lordhips ground in a place, no lesse dangerous then if he had bin voon the Cawsey; a place so peril. perill.

50 not then bee taken; the tyde came in fo fait, that what was at our knees before, was now The tide him-

come vo to our middles : and besides the day began to breake, which though some thought deresh them.

off to the place where we lodged all night, before where the Chirurgians were presently to looke to the hart, which were not many, and the flaine much fewer, all vnder ficie of both forts. No Commander flame or hurt but two Lieutenants. Lieutenant Cholmley, that had fer-50 ued excellently well, and Lieutenant Belings. The loffe that the enemy had was much like, fauing that of the assaults there were some tew more slaine: from this place our Companies marched to the Sea-lide, whether his Lordship had appointed victuals to meete them. His Latdinip having given the Souldhours some time to refresh themselves, in the meane time His Latdinip

went himfelfe abourd to licke that in truth he was to be feared, with purpose to repose himfelte goeth abourd,

Ddddd

His remine and second

for that night, but his thoughts were fo busied and restlesse, that within few houres he came ashore againe, and presently put in execution a purpose, which his Lordshippe had this meine time digethed : it was to land men at the other Fort. For effecting whereof he gaue direction that one of the Ships should beare in close to the shore, though it were (as indeede it proved) with apparent danger of casting her away: But the service was to be done whatsorver it cost: Withall there were in the rocks on the other fide over against the Fort(I meane that which we first came to fee, but could not come at) some fifty Musketeers placed, to beate the enemy from their Ordnance : meane while there were shipped in Boates Captaine Coach , and Captaine Orrell with two hundred Pikes and shot to land on the other side the Fort, twixt it and the Town, that they having made good the place, might either make a stand till the rest of the forces were landed (if to it were thought needefull) or elfe might march and charge the other Fort on that fide, when our Good successe men should affault it on this side. This plot tooke very good effect; for within an houre that the attempt was given, partly the Ship, and partly the Musketeers had so beaten the Fort, that the Boates had good leifure to land; whereupon within fort space the enemy quitted the place without loffe to be tooken of to our Companies : for of all ours there were not about three hurt, and one flain, onely the Ship was driven upon the rockes, and finally cast away. Their dire-Chon was that the Souldiers should make the place good (for there was no doubt of their sufficient

Ship loft. The red Fort. cal'ed Mata.

distolo.

S: aniards be a-The English

take the Forts Another Fort

was gone.

the English.

firength) the Boats were commanded to come backe againe to his Lerdship, who appointed to tarry at a Conduit which is in the maine Hand but from whence men might be landed betwixt the point or the Bridge, and the red fort, called Mata-diabolo. Our men were fately landed some pretty distance beyond the red Fort; where the Spaniards were ready to receive them, and a while they skirmished gallantly, but finding themselves overweake, th y made an honorable retreat till they were fallen into the wood, in the edge whereof they made their first stand. Ours marched directly to the Fert, which they found quitted, and there lodged all that night. By that time that the Boates were come backe to his Lordshio, the Moone was growne fo light, and the water fallen to fo dead an ebbe, that there was no hope of patige till the next floud. There was not fo much as a candle or a match to be feene in the Fort, whereupon his Lordship told Sir John Barkeley that he tooke that Fort also to be quitted, the rather because some were seene passing from the Fort to the Frigat. Hereupon himselfe accompanied with Sir Iohn Barkeley, went to the Cawley to fee if they could perceive any more 20 certaintie, and Captaine Rukerby was sent and brought certaine intelligence, that the enemy

By this time it was growne very late, and our men needed some refreshing: the Companies therefore were drawne vp to the place where we had lodged the last night, where having eaten fomething they were within a while brought downe to the point, where meeting with Captaine Coach and Captaine Orrell, all began to march directly towards the Towne. And now They enter the our men made but little doubt of all having once fet fafe footing in the leffer fland. It was night lefe land and when we began to march, and by breake of day we were at the Towne. This day was thurfday, march to the Iun. 8. The pallage is woodlie on either fide, and so narrow that not passing three at the most can march in ranke; and from the Towne this Fort is a mile and a halfe : yet all this way being fo 40 fit for Ambuskadoes, or for the Irilb manner of charging by sudden comming on and off, there was not a Dogge that barked at vs, fo that in great quietnesse wee came to the Towne. people able to and found it quitted of all able to make refistance : fo. besides women and men , whom eibeare times, ther age or wounds had difal-led for the warres, all the rest had quitted the Towne, and beand entited by taken themselves as to their last hope, to one of their Forts to the Sea-wards . called Mora.

d. III.

The Fort Mora beseeged and taken. The Towne described: the Mines. Purpose to hold the place; altered by the death and fickeneffe of many.

The Fort furn-

The Gouernors brauado.

Care to fauc

Free that the place was affored with sufficient guards, and euery Company quartered:

first of all the Spanuards that were left were deducted to the Prouost, and then his Lordwhipsent a Drum to summon the Fort tobe deducted to him for the Queene of England, who had fent him thither to take it. The Gouernour made answere that the King of Spaine had fent him this her to keepe it, and that fo long as he lived it should not be delivered. After this summons his Lordship tooke exceeding care for the taking in of this hold with the leaft losse of men that pussibly might be; for he considered that he was to leave a strong Garri-60 fon there, and that he must himselfe goe home well guarded. His purpose therefore was to take it without fight, onely with a straight siedge to force them to yeelding; his Lordships speciall purpose and delire was by hunger to drive them to a yeelding (as in the end hee did) but

CHAP.3. S.3. Earle of Cumberlands inflice. Parlie, Propositions, Articles. 1162

withall he prouided a batterie, if their victualls should last longer then he wished and honed. At one time therefore he tooke order to cut off all possible meanes of reliefe of victualls, by tenting Boates, which continually lay twixt the Fort and their Mayne; and withall hee prouided two plateformes, and feuerall Gabions, that from two places at once their wall might bee beaten. To this purpose there was brought from the Scourge two whole Culuerings, and two Demiculperings, and about the Towne were found foure other preces that would ferue for batterie, among the which one was that which had thin Sir Nicholas Clifford there not long before. By Sa- Sir Nicholas turday the seuenteenth of Iune the Ordnance was readie to batter. But his Lordship would not clifford, have them begin on the Sabbath day; so that it was deferred till Monday.

All this while the noise of warre was not so great among vs, but that the still voice of Iu- His Lerdships flice was well heard. It is no newes that in such companies there will bee outrages committed, inflice, and fo was it there; for his Lordship publikely disarmed a very good Souldier, for ouer-violent Souldier differspoyling a Gentlewoman of her jewels. But because this was not terrible enough to the reft, med for vnand he was defirous to arme Iuitice with the authoritie of all the Commanders, forthwith hee mannerly ve caufed a martiall Court to bee called. Whereupon the Article of defacing Churches or Houses of fage to a wo-Religion, and of offering force to Women, there were two condemned to die. Hee that had man. done violence to a Spaniards wife, was a Souldier, and had given very good proofe of his va. Churches and lour, fo farre, that his Lordship had taken speciall notice of him, but being convicted of this Women secucrime, there was no place left for mercy, but hanged hee was in the market place; the Spa- Rauither exeniards as many as would come, being fuffered to be prefent at the execution. The other fellow cuted.

was a Sayler and an Officer in the Vice-admirall, for defacing fome things in the Church, with- Sacriledge out order from the Generall, hee was brought thrice to the Gibbet, and at length his Lordhin terrified, was intreated to grant him mercy. These few but indeed notable examples of justice have fince held vs in much better termes of ruly obedience.

Vpon Monday the batterie began to speake very loud: both the Gabions beat vpon a Caualero which they had made upon the Point next to the Towne. The Ordnance which they had planted thereon, by dinner time was judged to bee difmounted, and though that were the thing specially respected in the batterie, yet because the Wall and the Caualero that Hood you on it began to nod, they beat that place till towards the evening. All this while scarce was 20 there a Spaniard to be feene upon any part of their wall, whereas before the Ordnance began

to play, there could not within the fight and reach of the Fort, foure or fine of the Souldiers come together, but there would a shot of great Ordnance be fent to scatter them. In the euening the Canoneers found that they had spent all the Culuering shot, and therefore shut wp that day with the leffer peeces. Against the morning there was more provided; but in the meane feafon it was perceived, that the Caualero was alreadie fufficiently beaten, and that with the next raine (which in that Countrie and time of the yeere, is neither seldome nor little) it Raines would fall, being (as all the Countrie is) of a fandie earth, it did but crumble into duft. The Canoneers therefore were appointed in the morning to beate the other Point nearer the Sea. For that fo flanked the Gate, and the breach alreadie made, that without great danger there 40 could not any approch be made, and his Lordship was growne exceeding niggardly of the ex-

pence of any one mans life. This wrought so with them in the Fort, that about one a clocke, they sent forth a Drum to Parley demandemand parley. His motion was, that two of their Captaines might be fuffered to speake with ded. two of the English. It was granted; and they met in a place of the greatest indifferency that could be found, fo that neither partie should discouer others strength. The demands were deli- Conditions uered in Paper, written in Spanish: the fumme whereof was; for themselves they deired that demanded with Colours flying, match in their cocks, and bullets in their mouth be fet beyond the Point at the Bridge, to goe whither they would. Further, they demanded all the prifoners to bee de-

livered without ransome, and that no mans Negroes and Slaves should be detayned from them. 50 His Lordship veterly refused any such composition, but told them because hee tooke no pleasure in Bedding Christian bloud, hee would deliuer them some Articles, which if they liked, hee would without more adoc receive them to mercy. Which Articles were thefe, delivered under his Lordships owne hand to the Gouernour.

A resolution, which you may trust to.

Am content to give your selfe and all your people their lives, your selfe, with your Captaines and Arcicks offe-Officers to passe with your Armes: all the rest of your Souldiers with their Rapiers and Dag., ted.

gers onely.

60 You shall all stay bere with me, till I give you passage from the Iland, which shall be evithin this.

Any one of you, which I shall choose, shall goe with me into England, but shall not stay longer there then one maneth, but being well fitted for the purpose, shall bee safely sent home into Spaine without ransome.

Diddd 2

It was doubted whether there were any in the Fort that spake English, and therefore some were wishing the Articles were translated into Spanish. But his Lordship peremptorily refused to feeke their language, but would have them to finde out his; but because it was now growne late, he gave them respite to thinke what they would answere till eight a clocke the next day, and promife was given on either fide, that neither should practife to put things out of the state. they now were in. The next morning rather before then after the time appointed , there returned to his Lordfhip, befides the two former Captaines, both hee that now was, and hee that had beene laft Gouernour, and withall they brought with them one of good place in his Lordships feruics whom they had taken prifoner, while he was viewing a peece of Ordnance that lay neere the Fort, Thele also required (as Captaine Lanfois and the Sergeant Major before) 10 Spaniards yould private audience who without much difficultie yeelded vpon the forelaid conditions; and farther defined they might have two Colours left them, & in lieu hereof they made promife that nothing should be tooyled in the Fort. That day the Gouernour and his Companie dined with his Lordfhip, and after dinner the Gouernour went and brought out his Companies out of the Fort

The Fort Mera (which of all forts were neere foure hundred) and delinered the keyes to his Lordship, who wherein were immediately brought in his owne Colours, and Sir John Barkleys, and placed them upon the 400. Souldiers, two Points of the Fort. The Spaniards without being pillaged (for befide all promifes his deliuered vp to Lordfhip fuffered them to carry their ftuffe away) conueyed fafely into a ftrong Caftle in the Towns called Fortileza. This Fort was taken in youn Wednesday being the one and twentieth of June, and your Thursday our fleet was commanded to come into the Harbour, for all this 20 while it had rid without. This Fort is to the Sea-ward very firong, and fitted with goodly Ordnance, and bestowed for the most advantage to annoy an enemie that possibly could bee denifed. It is held absolutely impossible that any shippe should passe that Point without finking inflantly, if the Fort doe not graunt her paffage: And the riding without the Harbour is very dangerous as wee found by the lofe of many Anchors and Cables, to the extreme danger of many of the Ships, and the finall casting away of one of them. The Fort to the landward is not altogether to firong as towards the Sea, but yet being victualled able to abide a The Towne confisteth of many large streets, the houses are built after the Spanish manner.

doores in flead of windowes for receit of aire, which for the most part of the day wanteth ne-

uer. For about eight in the morning there rifeth ordinarily a fresh breese (as they call it) and

bloweth till foure or fine in the afternoone, so that their houses all that while are very coole, of

all the artificiall day the space from three in the morning till fixe, is the most temperate, so

very foultering, from five in the afternoone hottest of all the rest till midnight, which time

The description of the citie of two flories height onely, but very ftrongly, and the roomes are goodly and large, with great 30 of Saint Lobs de Puerto Rico.

Heathoword that then a man may well indure fome light clothes vpon him; from fixe till the breefe rife is

Great dewes. Greatneffe.

Cathedrall Church defcribed.

No classe windowes. The doores,

lowest part of

alto is held dangerous to be abroad, by reason of the Serenaes (they call them) which are raynie dewes. And indeed in the nights the Souldiers which were forced to lie abroad in the fields. when they awaked found as much of their bodies as lay vpwards to bee very wet. The Towne in circuit is not fo bigge as Oxford, but very much bigger then all Portesmonth within the for- 40 tifications, and in fight much fayrer. In all this space there is very little lost ground; for they have beene still building, infomuch as that within these three yeeres, it is augmented one fourth part. The Cathedrall Church is not fo goodly as any of the Cathedrall Churches in England, and yet it is faire and handsome; two rowes of proportionable pillars, make two allies besides the middle walke, and this all along up to the high Altar. It is darker then commonly Countrie Churches in England. For the windowes are few and little, and those indeed without glaffe (whereof there is none to be found in all the Towne) but covered with Canuas, fo that the most of the light is received by the doores, the greatest whereof is just in the West end to the Seaward, to that out of it a man walking in the Church may behold the ships riding in a very faire Harbour. The other two doores (besides that which is private from the Bishops 50 house) are on either fide, a little aboue their Quire. For that of all other things is the most fingular and differing from the fathion in England, that their Quire is in the very lowest and Weitermoft part of their Church, wherein is the Bishops feate rayled three good steps about the rest, and pompoully built. On either side of him seeme to sit sixe Prebends, and vpwards are places for linging men and Quirifters. Their Church wanteth no necessarie implement. On the North fide a faire paire of Organs; at either fide-doore a poore mans boxe : aboue the Organs on the same side, there is a decent Pulpit very conveniently placed; on the other side of the fide-doores, there were two Lauers for holy water, to fprinkle the Incommers, and in the South-west corner fast by the great doore is there a place seemly inclosed with Ioyners worke, where is a faire Font placed. This Church is facred to Saint John Baptist. as is all the 63 Iland: befides his Image there were many other in particular shrines, which the Souldiers could not bee held from defacing vnorderly. There are in the Citie three or foure little Chappels to Saint Anne, Saint Barbara, and others. Befides the Fort, which held out those few dayes, and is of some twice twelve score re-

mored from the Towne: there is in the West and by South side of the Towne a strong Castle, The Castle, built of squared stone, commonly called the Kings house, named before Fortileza, wherein was found good ftore of Munition. Betwixt this Caffle, and the Fort Mora, there is another peece of fortification of squared Stone and battlemented, it also coasteth along the Sea, and may beate the harbout, So that all things confidered, it was the mightie hand of God, which with the loffe of two men onely at one that flaine with a peece of Ordnance, delivered a place of fuch ffrength, to fo small a troope of men, the rather if it be considered, that we came not thither vnlooked for ; for they had particular warning a moneth at least before, and to the waterfide where Boates vie to land out of the harbour, they had cast vp a strong ditch to impeach landing

there, but God brought vs a better way. There is also a faire Frierie itanding on the North fide Monsteries of the Towne, but little distant from it: it is built of Bricke in a good large square, with a Church and Hall, and all necessary roomes for a Pryor and Couent of Fryers, it seemeth not to be perfected yet, for they are beginning of a Cloyster not yet coursed. The Couent was fled all, faning one old Fryer, who in the little broken Latine that he had told me, that they were Dominicani ordinis pradicatorum mendicantium. The scituation of this place is exceeding desighted full: it flandeth vpon the easie hanging of a hill, inclosed on three parts well neere by the Sea, The foile fandie and very light, like to our Rye-fields in England : the temper as in that height hot, and yet rather effectually and in operation, then to the lende. There books have their glewed backs, there melted and loolened; Flowers or Fruites candied in England, there lose their crust,

20 and English Comfits grow liquid. But after some little acquaintance, it is likely it would proue a very healthfull place; for though they speake of some mortality (as what place in the world is alwaies free from that scourge of God!) that hath bin there of late, yet hane I bin told by them that have lived there, in seventeene moneths there have not about two bin buried, and those of extreame age. And at his Lordships comming hither people of 80. and 90. yeares old were of good abilitie of body.

The rest of this little Iland (at the least halfe of a league in length) is for the most Woods com - Woods of replaining of the want of dreffing and industrie, yet are they all youthfully greene, and none with knowne trees, out some fruite or other, but so strange as would pose the professors of that skill in England: and

in these woods Horses and Oxen grow fat, if they be suffered to rest. Therein be also some large 30 inclosures carefully dressed, not valike to our manner of dressing Hop-yards, and every hillocke laden with the fruites of the Countrie. Lemmons or rather Lymes, and the goodlieft Orenges that ever I faw are ordinarily to be found where no man fet them. In and about the Towne there is flore of Coker-nut-trees, which, befide the excellencie of the Fruite, give a very delightfull gracing to the Towne. There is not in this little Hand any knowne River or Spring', but hard beyond the point in the other Hand there is an excellent Conduit of very good fresh water, handsomely ouerbuilt with squared Stone; and in the Towne every house hath a large Well, and fome two, fo as they cannot want water in such plentie of raine, which is there both often and abundant. And if men will not lose themselves with overmuch ease and pleasure, there will be no necessarie thing wanting. But the eminent and knowne profits of this place are Ginger,

40 Sugar and Hides, befides the fecrets of the Gold Mines, how focuer of late yeares neglected. Some realons have beene given, why the King left working though be knew there were exceeding flore of Gold. The first is, the very store of Gold; for say they the sweetenesse he found, made him vnwilling to have any copartners, and therefore knowing this place to bee the neerest to the Indies to Why those those Countrimen, whom he most feared that they would in time become sharers with him, mynes are he would not lay such a baite to entice them to set footing there, where being once entered, neglected. they would not onely guild their fingers, and pay their Souldiers for the present with his Treafure, but would make this their baiting place in the longer journey to the other Ilands, and continent of the Indies, which are the very coffers whence he feedeth his warres. And if it be ob-

iected, that the working in these Mines was ceased before the King had cause to feate the Eng-50 lift or French invasions thereinto, there being then no warres twixt him and them; let them reft (atisfied that with the answer made by a Spaniard to his Lordship, objecting the same, that the marres were then a brewing. Secondly, they tay that the King left working in this, because he would have all not onely this, but the other Mines alto; for he faw that all men, as they doe love wealth, so doe they also seeke after ease, And if with lesse labour they may get the same profit, none will undergoe needleffe trauell. From which generall, the descent is very easie and direct to this particular. That if in a shorter voyage and leffe time his subjects were sure to make themfelues Mafters of as much gold, as if they went farther and should come no heavier home; hee should finde but few that would fetch gold from Peru, or the other more inland parts of the Indies, when as they might have it with halfe the travell, and in halfe the time. Befides, the Spa-

60 mards great lands and pouertie of men will not fuffer all workes goe forwards at once. There are among the Spaniards whom God hath delivered to his Lordships hands, the same Lanfois of whom was spoken before. In what reckoning hee is held by the Spaniards, may bee perceiued, by their imploying him, in time of fo great necessitie. Once it is confessed, that hee almost onely was her that held the rest from present yeelding, and who after yeelding (which

vet they fay was without his confent) taketh the loffe of the Spaniards most of all to heart-He seemeth truly to be wise about the common pitch of Souldiers which is his profession, yet hath he beene heard fay and proteft by the faith of a Souldier, that there is not to rich and good a myne in all the Kings Dominions to the Westward, as that of Puerto Ruce, Others whose fathers were imployed in the workes, report what their dying fathers told them. But that which maketh most of all to the purpose, is the present preparation which the King is even now a making, for the reulaing of thele workes afieth in Paerto Rico, by fetting two hundreth Negroes to worke, and for that purpose had fent great store of Mattocks and Spades thither, there found in his store-house, and for what other vie they should have needed, is not well Much time was spent in taking order how the Spaniards might be dispatched to Carthagena:

(for thither it was refolued they should bee sent) being a place so farre to the leeward of Puerto Rico . as that they neither could in hafte them telues make any head, nor fend newes to Spaine, to procure the leading of any forces thence : and in prouiding victuals for this place, and repayring Suile descreed. Thips that were first to come for England. Vpon Thursday being Saint Peters day, there was a faile discryed at Sea in the morning, and by noone thre was come into the Harbour, which with much aftonishment thee found turned English. The Spaniards had fome few dayes before reported that they looked for a ship to bring from the Hanana much of the Souldiers pay that was behinde. This held vs for the time in great suspence of hope and doubt, whether this might bee shee or no; the rather because this seemed to bee of the same bignesse that they had spoken of , but when shee was fallen into the trap , it was found indeed to bee a very Moule, where we looked for a Mountaine. For her lading was a number of poore naked Negroes from Angola to bee fold there. Yet was shee a pretie Boat, and of her lading likely to bee made of good vie. Within few dayes after there was another faile almost taken after the same manner. yet perceiving a greater fleete riding there, then thee could hope to finde Spanifo flee got her tack aboard, and went away lasking, fo that though the Affection was fent away in chace after her, yet shee escaped.

Vpon Friday being the feuenth of July, all things being made readie for their paffage, the Spaniards were imbarked in a Caruell, and in another ship, which during the time the ships rode without the Harbour, for feare of them whom shee could not passe, or enuie that they 30 should receive good by her, ranne her selfe desperately ashoare, but shee and most things in her were faued, and here face faued the lending away of a better ship. With these two, wherein the bater Spaniards were put, there were two other shipsient to wast them, wherein also wene the Gouernour and some few others, who descrued some respect. And for themselves it was permitted them to come directly home for England. The next day being the eighth of July there came to his Lordship two Negroes from the mayne Iland with a flagge of truce, and a letter from one Seralia, an ancient Commander in that Iland, and who youn a wound received in the first fight at the bridge had with-drawne himselfe into the Countrie. The effect of his defire was , that being in great distresse through feare of the English , that daily marched up and downe the Countrie, he defred his Lordship to grant him and his protection to travell without 40 danger. Whereanto his Lordship made this answere to be written, and sent him. That he must absolutely dense his request, but yet if himselfe, or any of his Nation, or any dwelling with him or them would within eight dayes come unto him to Puerto Rico, be should by the vertue of that his Letter bee protected from being taken or spoyled, by any of his Souldiers : and this bee willed him to signific to them neere about him, that they might give notice of the same throughout the whole Iland. And further, his Lordhip promised that to as many as would come, that they should both come safely, and if they so would should bee imbarked, and fent away as the Governour with the rest of the Spaniards were alreadie.

His Lordships honorable resolution and intendment was, not to come so farre from home, to take onely or spoile some place in this other world, and then run home againe : buthee had de- 50 termined (by the leave of God) to keepe Puerto Rico, if it pleafed God to give it into his hands. That was the place he meant to carry, whatfoeuer it might cost him, being the very key of the West Indies, which locketh and shutteth all the gold and oluer in the Continent of America and Brafilia. He knew that Saint Domingo might with much leffe loffe bee taken, and would bring much greater profit for the prefent; in regard whereof, and of the delire hee had his Aduenturers should become gayners, his thoughts sometime tooke that way, but finally they stayed at Puerto Purpose of flav Rico, and there letted themselves. As this was his resolution before hee had it, to was it also after he had it, and then not onely his, but every man of worth or spirit saw such reason in his Lordfnips delignments, that fome thought themselves not so graciously dealt withall, that they were taips dengaments, that forme thought the passed ouer, when others were named to stay. But God had otherwise disposed. For within a winde that his Lordship had beene in Puerto Rico, many of our men fell ficke, and at the very first not very many dyed. The Spanish as well as the English were both ficke and dyed of the ficknesse, as befides Seralia was feene in divers others. O hers fulpected their bodily labours to have procured it, and both feeme to have concurred.

the place.

fickneffe and mortaliție.

In July and August is their Winter, so called for their great raines at those times, which to bodies alreadie rarified by the heat of the Sunne then ouer them, and yet rather where vehement led of shanexercise hath more opened the pores whereby inward heat is exhaled, must needed be very dangerons. It was an extreme loolenefte of the body, which within few dayes would grow into a in luly and flux of bloud, fometimes in the beginning accompanyed with a hot Ague, but alwayes in the August. end attended by an extreme debillitie and waste of spirits: so that some two dayes before death. The diferse, the armes and legs of the ficke would be wonderfull cold. And that was held for a certaine figne of neare departure. This fickneffe vitually within few dayes (for it was very extreme to the number of fixtic eightie, and an hundred ftooles in an artificiall day) brought a languithing 10 weaknesse oner all the body, so that one mans sicknesse (if here were of any note) commonly kept two from doing duties. And this was it, which rather then the number alreadie dead, made his Lordship first thinke of quitting the place. For though towards the beginning of July, there were not much about two hundred dead, yet was there twice as many licke, and there was no great hope to recouer the most of them. The ships were left weakly manned, for when we landed we landed about a thouland men, of which the greater part was dead or made voferuiceable for the prefent. There were about fourt hundred reported dead when his Lordship left the 400 English Towne, and furely as many to ficke, that most of them could not bring themfolius aboard, before deal of ficke his Lordihip left the place. After that it was once openly given out what his Lordihip purposed, Rico then was order taken to make readie the ships, in which time these things happened. Vpon Fri-20 day the feuenth of July, there was a faile diferyed, which being come in was found to bee one of our owne, though made ours by purchase. Heretofore it was noted, that at our comming from the Canaries, wee wanted the Frigat and one of the black Pinnaces, which being fent vpon a piece of feruice with Captaine Slingsbyin the Confent, had left him, and were gone after a chace, but how farre or whither none knew till this faile came in , which told vs that they had taken that chace, whose lading was Muttons onely and Hennes, passing from one Iland to another, but

the Frigat, was forced to breake open his Letter, to know his direction whither his Lordihip had appointed him to come to him. According whereunto they first stood for Margarita, where 30 not finding his Lordship, nor hearing any newes of the fleet; they put off agains for Puerto Ruo. according to the direction they had received. But by reason of the violence of the Current there not to well knowne to them, they were driven to the leeward of Puerto Rico, and so had beene at Domingo before they came to vs. There they heard newes of his Lordfhips being at Paerto Rico. and that he had taken the Towne, but the Fort held out still. Making therefore all the halte they could bearing up as high as the Paffager, they got thither at laft. The men in this flup were they which had beene in the black Pinnace, but because shee began to bee leakie, and not to brooke Black Pinnace thefe Seas, they had funke her, and put themfelues into the prize, which being of better falle funke, then the Frigat, had out-gone her some dayes sayling, for they told vs shee would also bee there within few dayes, and so shee was on Tuesday next after, having lost one man of their compa-40 nie, all the rest were very strong, and in good liking. Vpon Wednesday the nineteenth of July, there came into this Harbour a Caruell: Shee was found to bee of Margarita, laded onely with

withall they had to irrecoverably loft the ficet, that after they had there stayed fine or fixe dayes,

beating up and downe to finde vs againe, but without effect. Captaine Harper that commanded

paffengers that were bound for Spaine. There were also found some rags and medicine pearle, to Arbonford the value of a thousand Dockets; the men were not many, and it should seeme they had not Ducats worth further furnished themselves, then might provide them necessaries at their arrivall in Spaine, and of pearles to present their friends. Vpon interrogatories therefore he found it very certaine by the agree- found. ing confession of them all, that they were so farre from hearing of any fleet of the English in these Westerne parts, that in much securitie the Kings Chist was yet remayning in Margarua, with The Kings rich no more then the ordinarie guard. For befiles the old Garriton of about thirtie Souldiers, there Chift of peris was not any new supply. Onely they had received direction from the King, that seeing the in Margalia, 50 Chift was very rich, they should not aduenture to fend to great treasure without assured strength;

and therefore his pleafure was fignified to be, that it should attend his fending of some Gallions or Frigats for the lafe wafting of the same. The Chift had not beene stirred some yeeres , and therefore rich it must needes be, in a place which so plentifully yeelded pearle. Triall was made by his Lordship with three ships; but Margarita lying South-east or South-east by South from Puerto Rieco, and the windes at that time of the yeere constantly blowing East South-east or South-east by East, they were forced backe frustrate of their hopes.

A. IIII.

d. IIII.

Purpose of returne. Treatie with the Spaniards. His Lordships departure. Description of the Iland, the Beasts, Fruits, Plants, dec.

Is Lordship after he saw it was not Gods pleasure, that this place should yet bee kent by the English, had made some offers afaire off to the Teniente, and other chiefe men that were in the mayne lland, for ranfomming their lland and Citie. To this purpose he vied one Antonio Robles, a Licenciate in physick, that had beene taken in the thin of Angola, whereof I noted fomething before. This Robles is a man, whom fomelearning IQ and much experience added to his naturall wit, had made very subtile and craftie. Hee once returned, but soone after gaue the slip, as also did two others. By reason of this accident, the old Governour and the rest of the Spansards, were restrayned of much libertie they had, and were kept in closer durance : which wrought with them in such fort , that at his Lordships returne into the Harbour, the Gouernour Pedro Suarez made offer to his Lordship, that if it would please him to fend one Vincent Lopez (that was in restraint with him) againe to negociate with the Teniente touching the ransome of the Citie and Stansies, he would become suretie for his returne. His Lordship refused to write any more to men so vnworthy of his curtesie, which they had much abused; Marry if you, said my Lord, doe see likelihood that any thing would bee effected, and would your felfe and as from your felfe write to them to perswade them for their 20 Later fent with owne good, I would vpon your word and furetiship, be content that the faid Lopez should passe, Thus vpon Tuesday the first of August, was Lopez dispatched with one Letter to the Bishop. and another to the Teniente, both from Pedro Suarez. Vpon Thursday the third day , Lopez returned. And brought his Lordship 2 Letter in shew from the Licenciate in physick, Antonio Robles, but indeed it was an answere from the Teniente, Pedre Garcia, and the rest, into whose hands the government fell, vpon the fending away of the present Governour Antonio Musichere. In this Letter, besides many idle excuses for his owne treacherous breach of promise (the convenient doing whereof was in likelihood the caufe, that he specially was deputed to write for the reft) there was offer made, that if it would please his Excellence, to set downe and send them a definite summe, which he would accept, they would looke into their present abilitie, and accor- 30 dingly would fend his Lordship assurance, that within seuen dayes it should be sent to him, to be received at the Point, where hee held continuall guard. Concluding, that in these sendings they fought nothing but delaies, his Lordship determined not to send them any more, but withall speed so make himselfe and the fleet readie for a happy, and by many much delired returne, since it was cleere, that it was not Gods pleasure, that yet this Iland should bee inhabited by the Eneldh. All the Hides therefore, and Ginger and Sugar, which either was alreadie readie or in time could be gotten, was forthwith fhipped, and so was all the munition in the Towne, all the Ordnance in any place of that Iland, which amounted in all and of all forts very neere the full number of

80 peeces of fourscore cast peeces, some of them the goodliest that euer I faw. But when they faw his Lordthis refolute to fend no more to them for negotiating touching the ranfome of their Citie; they 40 nance brought now begin to fend againe and againe to him. His Lordfhip neuer meant to deface their Citie, or to make it whice to be inhabited. But withall he tooke the likelieft wayes, to conceale this from the knowledge of the enemie, whom hee could not fo well rule with any other bit, our owne frength being now growne to weake. His Lordship therefore entertayned their offers, and to farre granted their defires, that tome in the name of them all, might with his Lordin ps Pale come to the Citie to goe through with his Excellencie. There came two, Immanuel Corders and Don Pedro de Pantoia, who without the Bishops consent, they said, offered fine hundred kintals of Ginger; at whose returne (which should bee within three or foure dayes) they did thinke that thrice fo much would be given. The fleet was not yet altogether readie, and Sir lob Barkles not yet fo well recouered of his the common dileafe, as that it was deemed fit hee should pre- 50 fently commit himselfe to the Sea, being to bee so long without a bayting place; and hee by his Lordships directions left him, might dispatch the matter. These two therefore were licensed to returne to Luisa to their friends vpon Saturday being the twelfth of August, with promife to be againe with vs on the Tuesday following. But before their appointed day his Lordship set faile : yet it is not volikely his returne was formething haltened, by an accident that fell out, The old man Pedro Suarez had a countenance that promited an honest minde, and in regard of his age and weaknesse, he was not so narrowly looked to, as for sometime hee had beene. This old sicke man found a meanes to escape the Sunday-night after they were gone to Luifa, certainly not without practice with his Countrimen; and it is thought with the privitie of his Keeper. Now this mans departure onely therefore misliked, because it was traiterous and without leave, did 60 more and more confirme his Lordship in his opinion that the Spaniards dealing with vs was traiterous, and for some other end, then was pretended. And therefore seeing his owne stay should not be needfull (for he knew Sir lohn very fufficient to dispatch any thing that was to bee done) he presently commanded that his owne ship should weigh, and with her, of great ships onely

the Samoon: of the leiler, the Royall Defence, the Frigat, the Scout, the Elizabeth, the Guana. and two little ones that were found in the Harbour, one a Frenchman, and the other a Spanish Frigat, which were rigged during our aboad there. So that his Lordship left with Sir John the Ships left with gar, which of the Nauie, the Afcantion, the Gallion, the Alcedo, the Confent, the Pegafin, the Su I. Barkles. Centerion, two frong flie-boats, and the Anthonie. The true reason of his Lordships delire to be gone from Puerto Rico quickly, was indeed a longing he had to be quickly at the llands. For hee had so plotted the voyage, that still hee would have a string left in store for his Bow. And now hee had intelligence that the fleet of Mexico, which hee knew was to goe this yeere, was even Caufe of the now yoon their dispatch. For yoon very good aduertisements he was given to vinderstand, that Earles quick to the fleet meant to dilimbogge the first light Moone in their September, which falleth out to bee departures

the feuen and twentieth of our August, and his desire was to be at the Ilands before them, which he might well hope for being in the height of the Bermuda by that time they should put forth of the Bay. Besides this he had reason to looke for the meeting of a Carack, if by the middest of September hee were at the Hands. For though they, which are homewards bound having made their voyage in the East Indies, ordinarily have timelier passage, and areat home by August, yet if any of them, which this yeere were to goe from Lifton, should be put backe againe, September 15 the moneth, wherein they were to bee expected at the Agores. And for their more certaine meeting againe with his Lordship, that so all the fleet might come home together, his Lordship left them this direction, which was given to every thip vnder his hand. Tou fhall fleere in mil 20 the Southward part of Flores: if you finde me not in that courfe, then feeke me betweet ten and four-

teene le gues of Fayal, Weft South-west. If there you finde mee not , then come through betwirt Fayal near to your of the state of the most of the state of the leaue it vndefaced, faume that the Fort Mora should bee razed to the landward. Thus wee left Puerto Rice, and fleered as directly to the Hands as the windes would fuffer vs, which are there continually Eafterly, yet ferued vs fo fauourably, that blowing much at Eaft South-eaft, wee tooke our felues to hold a North North-east course, allowing our ships to drive one point to the leeward; which courie it we could hold, we hoped to weather the infamous Iland of Bermuda. notorious with vnmercifull and incredible formes of fearfull thunder and lightning. It was the The Earle de-30 fixt day after our departure from Paerto Rico, being Saturday the nineteenth of August, when I parted from fixt day after our departure from Farrio Ales, being Saturday the intellegence and a partie Rica the writ out this note, then were wee a great way from the height of the Bermada, which lyeth in La of Award.

thirtie three degrees.

Now we are in the way from Paerto Rico to the Hands of Agores, which must needes be found a long passage, and the way being not much beaten with resort of the Passengers, puts me in hope that this may be a leifurefull place, to pay a piece of a promife that I made before, to fay something more of the nature and qualitie and largenesse of the mayne Iland of Puerto Rico. The meanes which I did most wish and hope for, to enable mee the better for the payment of this debt, I could never with conveniency come by. For I alwayes waited if his Lordship would paffe ouer into the Mayne. For without him I had no great defire, and indeed I should have beene 40 quickly miffed, feeing it pleafed his Honor to vie mee in the difpatch of all things, which were The Authors

to be done by warrant or direction under his hand. So that what foeuer I shall fay here, I must employment be content to report upon the report of others; and I will not tell you any thing, which (mee with the Earle, shought) my felie did not first fee reason to beleeve. The plat and figure of the Hand is a square, Of the Bure. altera parte longine, the length exceeding the breadth neere the proportion of feuen to foure; for qualitie, and it is told me, to be fixe and thirtie leagues long, and twentie leagues broad, bearing it felfe out largeneffe of from end to end neere in the same distance. It lyeth East and West: at the West end the two land of Saint corners doe fo jut out, that they make a goodly Bay betwirt them, but yet not fo profitable, lobs de Puelle because a goodly River, which would gladly disburden it selfe into the Bay, is choaked with Rico. fands, which the Seacasteth vp into the mouth of the River, which being naugable a good way

yp into the Land, is within a stones cast of losing his old name, and being called the Sea, made shallow and vnsit for the receit of Vessels of burthen. There are indeed in the same Bay other leffer Ruerets, whereat Paffengers vie totake in freih water, as Sir Francis Drake did . after hee was beaten from the Citie of Puerto Rico , and put forth thence to Nombre de Dios. Vpon this part of the Hand , which is commonly called La Aquada, in English, The matering place, the greatest Commander, and of largest peffessions, is, or of late hath beene, one Chereno; whose proper land, is thought to containe in compatie and circuit neere the quantitie of ten leagues. The other end, the Easterly end is knowne by the name of La cabeça de San Inan, in English Saint Johns bead. The Citie of Puerto Rico is his right tide or arme : and the South fide about the Countrie of Choama (whither the Bishop at our comming had carried himselfe) will be answer-

60 able to the left fide or left arme, as being leffe fit for action, and his feet is the watering place. The most famous Rivers of this Iland are Ton and Baiamond, the rather because they runne into the Harbour of the Citie of Puerts Rico; whereof Toa is by much the greater, and falleth more with River Tos: the West of the Towne : This River riseth out of a Mountaine, called Guiamo, being on the South fide of the mayne Iland, fome fifteene or fixteene leagues from Paerto Rico to the Eastward;

River Baia-

Sold found

the Riucts of

Saint lohn de

Puerto Rico.

Basamond rifeth betwixt the parting of Toa and Luifa, and runneth a Northerly, but more Ea- 10 fterly course withall, till it mingleth it selfe with falt water on the South-west side of Paerte Rico. The Iland is watered with very many other Riuers, and Riuerets and Springs without number, or names, but those that give or take names of the Villages and Townes which stand vpon them, for the molt part runne Northerly. For besides Guiamo, which rifeth in the Countrie of Coama, and runnethinto the Southerly Sea, and the River whereon Saint German (which also is called Salamanca and Guadianilla) is situate towards the West end of the Iland neere to Cape Roxo: all the other of name runne to the leeward of the Hand, and fall into the Northerly Sea. As first and next to Puerto Rico to the Westward, the River and Towne of Saluco: next to it Guiamo, then the Recibo, twixt which and the Laguada is another, whose name I could not learne. The Laguada, whereof I spake before , and which gineth name to the Westerly end of 20 the Iland, where Sir Francis Drake (as I faid) watered, is next vnto the choaked Bay before mentioned; in which Bay at the North-west Point is the Gawaraba, which the Seas violence hath made something vnprofitable for nauigation, so that the passage to Saint Domingo, and the other leeward parts of the West Indies, are most ordinarily from the Laguada, if they of the Westerly part of the Iland have any butine fe that way. For as Saint Germans or Salamanca, though I have heard it to be a Harbour and a Sea-faring Towne, yet I am told fo much to the contrarie, as makes me doubt of the former report, though I dare not absolutely affent to this later, though a Spaniard of good vnderstanding told it me. Now, in every one of these Rivers which I have named is there gold found ordinarily before it be fought. And (I know it to bee true) when the Spaniards perceived by his Lordships manner of leaving the Citie of Puerto Rico, that he event not away 30 without purpose to returne, one of them told his Honor in plaine termes, that he could not thrust his spade into any of these named Rivers, and many other besides these, but hee should finde gold. Tais certainly is true, and I have feene the experience, that fome of the gravell of one of thefe Rivers being brought to his Lordihip because it looked rich, when triall was made, onely by washing away the find and gravell, there was comes of very good gold found in it, and that for the quantitie and proportion in great measure. Where, because we are againe fallen into this argument, I will report vnto you a certaine truth , whereby the richneffe of the mynes in Puerto Rico may be esteemed. One Ioancho de Luyando, a Mint-master in this Iland, dwelling in the Guadianilla necre to Saint Germans, or at the least having workes there, tooke a bullion or masse of gold fo pure, as it needed no further triall, that being ient to the King it was found worth three 40 thoutand and fine hundreth Duckets, and diners times he found such plates, that onely splitting them, he made himselfe trenchers of gold to eate his meat on. This man may bee judged to have beene of no great either wit or care; for it is certainly reported, that oftentimes meeting his owne flaues comming out of the Countrie to his house in Paerse Rice with flore of gold, hee did not know them to be his owne, till themselves told him so; and yet this man dyed so very rich, that he left every of his three formes a hundreth thousand Duckets; infomuch that the youngest of them being in Spaine vpon the dispatch of some businesse, which his father had left vnfettled. was there thought of flate fo good, that a Marqueffe thought his daughter well beflowed voon him in marriage, But fee how nothing will last where God with his preferring bleffing doth noe keepe things together. For at this day, scarce is there any remainder left of all his riches, and 50 this now most poore though great Lady, not being able to proportion her selfe to the lownesse of her fortune, and besides vexed with her husbands ill conditions, hath by authoritie left him, and having entered religious profession, is at this present in a Nunnerie in Saint Domingo.

Vanisie of

The foile.

I have beene very inquilitiue of the best observers, and mostable to judge among ours, that haue vpon occasion trauailed into the inparts of the Iland. They doe agreeingly tell me, first that their wayes are very myrie, or rather dirtie, as proceeding of mold rather then gravell or fand; now, the prouerbe in England is, that that Countrie is best for the Byder, that is most cumber some to the Rider. Secondly, the graffe and herbage they meet withall enerywhere is very proud and high, though somewhat course, which argueth a lustinesse, and strength of fatnesse in the soile, and which wanteth onely flore of mouther to ouer-come that luxuriant pride, and to bring it to 60 the finenesse which we most commend in England, which is made most probable, by that, which in the third place they report of their experience, that the foile is a black mold, underlaid within fome two foot, with a laire of reddifficlay, which is one of the most infallible marks by which our English Grafiers know effeir battle and feeding grounds. The whole Iland is delightfully and

CHAF3. S.4. Wild beards, Gingers, Sugars, bides. One man bath 12000. beenes. 1171

pleafurably divertified with Hills and Vallies. Among the Hills there is one eminent above the relt, called the Lequilla, commended with the greatest plentie and riches of mynes. And yet M. Lequilla. none of the Rivers that I can heare of, have their heads from thence, which perhaps may bee the realon, why it aboue the reit is leffe wafted. For they fay that in the other Hills also there are veines found, of whose pourtie no man needeth to complaine. This Hill which they call Loquills, is placed Easterly aboue Lussa. The Vallies are much wooddy, but in very many places interlaced with g sodly large Playnes and spacious Lawnes. The woods are not onely underlings. Woods and (as in the leffer fland for the most part they are) but timber trees of goodly talneffe and flature, fit Timber, for the building of thips, and of every part of them. For not to speake of a ship which wee our 10 felues found here a building towards the burthen of a hundreth, the great Eougonia; a ship of a thouland, having loft her Maits at Sea, had them all made here of the timber of this Iland, her mayne Malt being of two trees onely, and being there and all other wayes fitted for Spaine, was euen you the point of putting forth of this Harbour, when Sir Francis Drake and Sir Iohn Hamkins came hither with an honorable intent to take her and the foure Millions, which shee brought hither from the Hanana. For this ship was the Admirall of the fleet, which that veere went from Tierra firma; and being taken with a storme at Sca, and having lost her Masts, with much adoe recouered this Harbour, and here was againe fitted. But the Queenes Notice (vpon aduentife- Greathip aude recourred this laterous, four first the nick, that they were forced to finke her in the Harbour, foure millions ment of this accident) came to just in the nick, that they were forced to finke her in the Harbour, foure millions and that with to great hafte, that the paffengers had not time to fetch their clothes, but lading and a halfe of 20 and victuals and all was loft. Some of the ribs of this great Beaft we found here, but the marrow treasures and sweetnesse of her was gone; for shee brought in her foure millions and a halfe of treasure, for the wafting whereof those Frigats, which Sir Francis burned in this Harbour, were purposely fent, For while Sir Francis was watering at Guadalupe, fome of his fleet discouered the passage of their Frigats by Dominica; which good newes (as truly they were very good) affired Sir Fran-

eis (as he openly told the fleet) that the treasure was not yet gone from Saint lohn de Puerto Rico,

Lawnes of the mayne lland re graced with much varietie of many kindes of fruit; for belides the great Countries of ground where their Heards roame with fuch vncontrolled licence, as that Herds almost they grow almost wilde, the champaine which they have chosen to place their Stancies and In- wilde. 30 genies voon, are richly laden with Ginger and Sugar-cane. Their Ingenies are commonly voon Ginger and iome Ruer, or neere some moore-marrish and waterish places, for in places of that qualitie doe Sugar, their Sugar-canes prosper best. And besides, there is much vie of water for their Mills, and other works, though most commonly their Mills goe with the strength of men and horses, as I underfland, like our Horse-mills in England, which if I had seene my felfe I should have beene better able, and conleq iently more willing, to have reported to you the manner and cunning of the fame. They that have beene eye-witnesses, doe with great wonder and commendation speake of them. Their Stanfas are more inwardly placed in the Countrie, and yet a convenient neres Stanfas for nelle to fome River is defired, for more convenient carriage of their Ginger to Puerto Rice, whence Ginger. they vent their commodities into other Countries; which I take to bee some part of the cause

49 why more follow Ginger then Sugar workes, because their Stanfias doe not need such choile of place, and therefore the poorer may more eafily come by them, which yet also more eafily they let vpon, because much needeth not to set vpon the commoditie of Ginger. I have heretofore laid Ginger and in generall, that Sugar and Ginger are the greatest knowne commodities of this Iland. A third commoditie of the Iland besides Ginger and Sugar, I did before note to bee Hides. modities. Whereof without contradiction there is very great store. I have beene told by the Spaniard, that Hides. that fame (berene , whose Countrie is neere to the Laguade of the quite contrarie fide to Cape Roxo, is generally reported to feede to the number of twelve thousand head of Cattle. Where- One man ha-Roso, is generally reported to recue to the number of Cattell in this Iland is, feeing in the uing 13000.

Westerly end thereof, which is held farre worse for feeding then the Easterly, neere Saint Johns which vivally 50 bead, there is so incredible abundance. Once, it is generally spoken and beleeved, that by rea- are greater fon of this ouer-flowing of Beeues, it is lawfull for any man to kill what he needeth for his vie, then the Eaif onely hee bee so honest as to bring the skins to the proper owners. Now, these Hides must rile sale. to a huge summe of riches, considering that their Cattell are farre larger, then any Countrie that I know in England doth yeeld. For their Kine that I have feene here, are for goodlineffe both of heads and bodies comparable with our English Oxen. And I wot not how that kinde of beaft Beeurs profhath specially a liking to these Southerly parts of the world, about their Horses, none of which per there bee I have feene by much to tall and goodly as ordinarily they are in England. They are well made, fees. and well metalled, and good store there are of them, but me thinks, there are many things wan- Theirhorfes ting in them, which are ordinarie in our English light horses. They are all Trotters, nor doe I

60 remember that I have seene aboue one Ambler, and that a very little fidling Nagge. But it may be, if there were better Breeders, they would have better and more goodly increase, yet these are good enough for Hackneys, to which vie onely almost they are imployed. For Sheepe and Goates I cannot say that there are any great flocks, and of the two, fewer Sheepe then Goates. For I have feene and tasted of many Goates, but to my remembrance, I did not see one Sheepe,

for as much as he affured himfelfe that thefe thips were going to fetch it home. The Playnes and The playnes.

Goates. Way the be are tear.c. We loth

vet (fay they) that the lland is not without reasonable flocks; and I have beene told so, by them who have received information from their owne eyes. Neither can this scant of sheepe be laid upon the nature of the foile, as being unfit or unwilling to feed that fober harmlesse creature. but it proceedeth rather of a wochish kinde of wilde Dogs which are bred in the woods, and there goe in great companies together. This commeth to passe, by reason that these Dogs finde

crabs entre if Tortoi.s.

in the woods fufficient fuffenance, and preferre that wilde libertie before domefficall, and to The wild dogs the miclues much more profitable feruice. These Dogs live of Crabs; I meane not fruits of trees: jue of Crabs, but an Animal, a living and fensible creature, in feeding whereupon, even men finde a delight, not Description of onely a contentednesse. These woods are full of these Crabs, in quantitie bigger then cuer I saw any Sea-Crabs in England, and in such multitudes that they have Berriet, like Conies in English 10 Warrens. They are in shape not different from Sea-Crabs, for ought I could perceive. For I fpeake not this out of report, but of my owne sensible experience. I have seene multitudes of them both here, and at Dominica. The whiteft whereof (for some are vgly blacke) some of our men did catch and eate with good liking, and without any harme, that ever I heard complaint of. At our first comming to Puerto Rico, the Dogs of the Citie, enery night kept a fearfull howling, and in the day time, you should see them goe in flocks into the woods along the Sea fide.

Their experi-

This wee tooke at first a kinde b-moaning of their Masters absence, and leaving of them : but when within awhile they were acquainted with vs, who at first were strangers to them, and so began to leave the howling by night, yet fall continued their daily refort to the woods, and that in companies. We understood by asking, that their resort chither was to hunt, and eate Crabs, 20 whereof in the woods they should finde store. I his then is the sustenance which the wilde Dogs of Puerto Reco finde in their woods; which either fayling them fometimes, or out of a wooluith disposition they get by liuing apart from men, they fall upon the sheepe, whereof they have made great waste; but which easily might be repayred, if the Spanierds would bee content, to fweat a little, or to be a little wearie in killing of these Dogs. Their Goates line more securely, because they love cliffes of Rocks, or the tops of Hils, and therefore they are out of the ordinarie haunt of these murderous Dogs, by reason that their ordinarie soode the Crabs are most vivally in

Swine. Fowles. Pidgeons in Trees.

Sheepe.

Goares more

bottoms, and along the Sea fide. Befides Sheep and Goats there is reasonable good store of Swine, which in these Westerly and Southerly Hands yeeld most sweet Porke. I doe not remember that I have feene here either Hare or Come, but here is store of excellent Poultrie, as Cocks and 30 Hens and Capons, some Turkies and Ginny-hens, Piligeons in meruailous abundance; not in Done-houses as with vs, but which breed and build in Trees, they are both of great number and goodness. For besides other places, there are two or three little Hands hard by Puerto Rice, neere to the mouth of Toa, where a Boat may goe in an evening or morning, and fuddenly take nine, ten, or a dozen dozen; the chiefest of these three is called (as I haue heard) the Governous; Mand. I have not marked any store of Fowle vpon this little Hand, nor bave I heard of more by

Crowes

any that have beene in the mayne Iland. Parrots and Parrachetoes are here, as Crowes and Parrots as Dawes in England; I have ordinarily seene them slie in slocks, and except it bee some extraordinarie talkatine, they are not here much regarded, as it should feeme. Now, fruits of the Hand are abundant in number and measure, very excellent; Potatoes are 40 Pruits. ordinarie. Their Pines are in shape like a Pine-apple, and of this likenesse, I thinke, these had

Pines.

their names, but neither in feeling or tafte are they any thing like; for that wherewith this Pine is inclosed is not wood, but fost, that you may squease it in your hand, and so apt to bee mellow, that it will not keepe long, whereas a wooddie Pine-apple is of an exceeding durance and lafting. The taite of this fruit is very delicious, so as it quickly breedeth a fulnesse. For I cannot liken it in the palate to any (me thinks) better then to very ripe Strawberries and Creame, the rather if a man haue alreadie eaten almost his belly full: for then they much refemble a Pine; I haue seene some a quazter of a yard long at least, and in proportionable thicknesse, to bee like a Pine-apple; it groweth vpon an learb like an Artichoke. Their Mammeis are of the colour of a very darke ruffitting apple, or a leather-coat, of the bigneffe of a great Coltard, the rinde of it as 50 thicke or thicker then the barke of a Sallow, which being early pulled off discouereth a yellow, but well tafting meat, something like a Carrot roote, but much better. Within this meat, there are two or three great rugged ill-shaped stones, which (as I remember) have kirnels in them. Their Galauas are a leffer fruit, as bigge as a Peach, and without not much volike, but within not folid as the Mammeis, or as an Apple is, but full of such little feedes as a Goofe-berry hath, not io greenish, but inclining to a languine colour, the taile of this is (me thought) like to a very tipe great white Plum : this fruit is (which a man would not thinke) a remedie against the flux, and so are their Papaies, a fruit like an Apple of a waterish welsh taste. They have Plums blacke and white, their ftones much bigger, and their meat much lefte then in England, and their alio flay the flux. And so doe their wilde Grapes, which are a fruit growing in Clutters, and therein 60 onely (me thinkes) like Grapes, they are round, and as great as a good Musker-ballet, and yet

have they very little meat upon them, for their itone (if that which is not hard may bee called a

stone) is exceeding great for the proportion of the fruit, infomuch that the meat seemeth to be

but the rinde of this stone. A stone I call it though you may put it together with your singer, but

Guiauas,

Mammacis.

That and Pagai ft flux. Wilde grapes.

ie hath a bitterith kirnell in it, and that which is without it is meat , and that of a delightfull faiporous tafte. Their Plantines are a fruie which grow on a shrub bet wixt an hearb and a tree, but Plantines, it is commonly called, a tree of the height of a man, the fem of it as bigge as a mans thigh, the fruit it felfe, of the bignetle and thape of a Goates home, it groweth vellowish and mellowibe. ing ripe either youn the tree, or with keeping, and then eaten raw or reafted, it is a great mear, comming neere to the rellish of an Apple-John , or a Duson that hath beene kept tillatis overripe, fauing that me thought I ftill found fome tafte of a roote in it, the meat of it is larged voin a thin skin, which being frored the long way with a knife, eafily delivereth what is within it. Their Coker-crees please the eye as well as their Nuts doe the take. The body of them is but Cocos.

10 flender, no where to bigge as a mans middle, and vowards growing proportionably leffe; till they are silen some thirtie or fortie foot high without sprig or bough, then breake out their boughs all at once, enery one whereof is just like a goodly Oftridge feather; their leaves are to commingly fet rogether, every one whereof alone is formething like a Sedge or the leafe of a wilde Lilly Vra der this bufh which is the head of the tree, doe the Coker-nuts grow, fome forcie on a cree round about the Bole, some yard downward from where the branches breake out. These trees are a very great grace to the Citie of Paerto Rice, and very many there were found in it : and he that hath feene this may fomewhat conceine of the forme of a Palmeto tree, for in thane they are not wnlike. This Palmeto tree, while it is young (and yet of good yeeres) is much of it felfe meat, and Palmetos. talted (me thought) like a Wall-nut, but iomewhat bitterish; when it is old they say it beareth 20 fruit, the Date, one of the best fruits in my judgement ; I faw not any fruit voon any of the Pat-

metoes that I faw, and therefore this shall be said onely voon the report of others. Befales theft fruits the Hand yeeldeth Figs, Pomegranates, Muske-millions, Pome-citrons very fuite (as my Other fruits, felfe faw) but it is incredible almost that is reported of them by men of good credits that also Pome-citrons grow to folinge greatnesse, as that a very little number three or foure of these will Huge Citrons lade a horfe. Limons I did not fee any, yet they fay there are fome; but of Limes the number is numberleffe ; and as for Oranges, truly I thinke they are the best easted , and most goodly in the Oranges. world. For both their fweet and fowre Oranges are full of most delicate and tafte pleasing layce, and besides they are the goodliest both in colour and greatnesse, that ever Pfaw. They have Pepper also growing voon trees, the Pepper it selfe is a little seeds of colour twike white Pepper.

20 and yellow, and inclosed in a bagge which sometime is round like a Bell, sometime it runnerh ous in a picked length like a fruit, which we gather in our Gardens in England, and eate as a fallet with Mutton. This pepper is much hotter and fronger then the blacke pepper vied with vs in our Countrie. These fruits and many more grow vpon trees, and common to them all it is, and I thinke to all the fruits of the Iland, that the fame tree at once beareth buds, greene fruit, Treesdourts and ripe fruits, and often withall feedeth.

Now if any man thinke that wee have found meates in good flore, but wet want bread and greene & ripes drinke, it may at one word bee answered, that the industrious and primarual can want an attended either. For first of all their Cassaule specially new, and carefully desired is good bread and will Cassau bread. keepe io well that fhips that goe hence to Spaine are victualled with it to the good hat the service and to find the service of a small tree, like, me thought, wom our growne Hyllope Cassuit do.

stalke, or a young Sallow, but that the leaves are not so broad, but by much stacker whom the scribts. branches of Caffauie : this roote is very full of liquor, which must be carefully prefed forth, before the dryer part bee fit to make bread. For the roote eaten with the juyce, or the juyce by it The juyce not fore the dryer part bee fit to make bread. For the roose easier who was proposed to the fitting in the belly, whereof death doth of the fitting fit is possible. The the belly whereof death doth of the fitting fit is possible to the fitting fit is the fitting fit Spaniaris generally hold it for a kinde of poyson. Yet our men (1 am told) meeting with the rootes unpressed, and mistaking them for Potatoes (whereby you may coniccture chesis shape) have eaten them without after feeling any mortall diftemper. And to a body whose natural heat is able to ouercome their cruditie and rawnesse, there is happily no prefent danger; for they tell me that of this juyce fodden, there is made a prettie kinde of drinke somewhat like final Ale. The bread which they make of this roote is very passing white, not kneaded into louises.

but rolled out in Cakes of a reasonable thicknesse, yet may they be better called thin; and of such breadth that they lap them in foldes one voon another. Besides their Cassauie , they have Mais, Mare which maketh a much finer bread, and yied of the better fort. There are two forts of Maiz, the leffer they fay not whike to Rice, in proportion and bignesse and taste; this I never law either growing or raw, but I have teene it in the difh, and at first did take it for Rice, fauing that mee thought it was something ouer-swollen; they that eate it faid, it tusted like Rice, The bigger fort of Maiz I have leene growing, and it is either the fame or exceeding like to the graine which we call Ginny wheat; it groweth up with a knotted stalke like a Reed, with large scattered leanes; it rieth to a fadome and a halfe at least in height, and at the very top shooteth out the

60 graine. Betides Maiz and Caffauie, there is good ftore of Rice growing in the lland, and where Rice, Rice will grow, who will make a question of Come. But to put it without contrations, that Corne will come up wich good increase, experience hath determined the querion. For that fame Mulato Cherene (whom I mentioned before) did make experience and did fow Corne which he resped with good increase. But because it was painefull to follow husbandrie and til-

lage, and (forfooth) Cassauie and Maiz would serue, the Spaniards would none, may this Molato halfe borne a flaue, would not bee at the paines to continue tillage. For drinks . the Spaniard doth here, as in Spaine hee doth, vie water for most of his drinke, which in io hot a climate, would well agree with the English after some acquaintance; ver the Spaniard hath two other forts of drinke, the one called Guacapo, made of Molaffes (that is, the courfelt of their Sugar) and some Spices; the other kinde, and vied by the better fort of them, is called Ale; which is a kinde of Bragget made with many hot spices. And if both their fayled, yet have they good fore of wines, indeed brought in from other Countries; not that this lland will not nourtifi Vines : for I have feene fome grow here in Pacrio Rico very flourishingly. But I have heard the King will not fuffer them to plant and drefle Vineyards, as a matter of policie.

I might here, and so would I make an end of speaking of the fruits of this Iland (for me thinks what bath beene taid, the weth it to be felle fufficient to line well and happily) but their Terns will not have me forget it. This hearbe is a little contemptible weed to looke upon, with a long woodden stalke creeping upon the ground, and seldome lifting it selfe about a handfull high from ground. But it hath a propertie, which confoundeth my understanding, and perhaps will feeme frange in the way of Philosophers, who have denyed every part of fense to any plant; yet this certainly feemeth to have feeling. For if you lay your finger or a flicke voon the leaves of it; not onely that very piece which you touched , but that that is neere to it , will contract it felfe, and run together, as if it were prefently dead and withered, nor onely the leaves but the very fprigs, being touched, will is distainfully withdraw themselves, as if they would slip them- 20 feliges rather then be touched, in which state both leafe and sprig will continue a good while, beforest returns to the former greene and flourishing forme. And they fay, that fo long as the parsie which touched it flanderh by it, it will not open, but after his departure it will, this last I did not my felfe obserue ; and if it be fo, it must be more then sense, whence such a sullennesse can proceed; but for the former, I have my felfe beene often an eye-witnesse to my great wonder, for it groweth in very many places in the little Iland. His Lordfhip made some of it bee put in nots with earth, and yet it liueth, and how farre it will fo continue is vncertaine. There hath beene Cinamon and fomething else given me as fruits of the Hands, but I doe thinke they are but rarities at the most, and therefore they shall not come in my bill. But now to returne to the flow steps we made towards the Hands of the Acores.

Cinamon.

Accidents by Sea in their way to the Azores and there.

N. Saint Bartholomewes eue wee had store of lightning and thunder, which besides the observation, put vs more out of doubt of our neerer approach to the Berminda. The next day about noone wee began to steere East North-east and better. Vpon Friday

Hot calme thirteens

the five and twentieth, were were melted with a greater and more imothering calme 40 then any time before ; and yet (which made it strangest) wee had out of the North-west higher Seas, then before that time I had tuer feene, in the greatest winder that we had had. The hugeneffeof this Sea was perceived not onely by the view of our fight, but rather by the extraordinarie heeling of our thip, certainly as much or more impatient of a high Sea in a calme, as of any osher weather. This calme was so extremely hor, that wee were in hope it would bee like other extreames, of no long continuance; but behold it lasted obstinately thirteene dayes, suing that Imetimes there would be some thew of a gale, but it would to instantly and frowardly leave vs, as if is hadbeene come onely so let vs he wee needed not to despaire. There had beene often fpench of a Current, that wee were to have, and fome thought that they had found it, the most duct not be apprehensine. But woon Wednesday the shintieth; it began to be cleere : for though eq the winde was not worthy to be called fo, nor fcarce by the name of a breath, and belides fo narzow, that we flood upon abowling, yet we were found in that last passed artificiall day, to have run aboug fiftie leagues at the leatt. For whereas vpon Tuelday wee were by observation found to bee almost precisely in thirtie two : vpon Wednesday at noone, wee had the Sunne in thirtie Currentin 324 three, and two terces, and eight minutes. So that in foure and twentie houses we had rayfed one degree and fortie eight minutes, which if we had run due North or South, had rifen to about foure or fine and thirtie leagues. But feeing our course was three parts of the time at East North-east. and East and by North, the thip could not bee allowed leffe way, then fiftie leagues at the least; and this being without winde, argueth a violent Current, and the rather because for the time we had a hard Sea. This was made yet more certaine by observation of the Pole-star vpon Thursday 63 at night, This opinion for a Current, was vpon Saturday Sept. 2. made undoubted, for the lubstance of the thing, I meane that there was a Current, but the circumstance feemed to varie fomthing. For the Current was then judged to fet rather to the East & by South, though this would fill the former oblemations with greater difficulties. This was perceived by many drags, which how foeuer

CHAP.3. S.5. Ignorance beneficiall, Terrible ftorme. Description of Flores. 1175

the thip fcaped, yet they still runne or were carried to the East Southerly. And then many other things purpofely cast into the Sea to make further triall, all went the same way and that a good pace though directly ahead the ship. And yet farther if there were any breath at all, it was at South-east, so that they went against the winde that was.

And now I come to that the remembrance whereof rather then present apprehension yet maketh me grake, like the man that dyed vpon the fearfull knowledge of how great danger he had paffed at Rocheffer bridge. It was a fearfull storme, which I truly not knowing how dangerfull it was, feared not much while we were in it, but fince hearing old Sea-men and of long experience fineate of it, I perceine it is good to be ignorant fometime. Vpon Thursday the seuenth of Sep- Ignorance beto tember, the gale began to be very fresh and to keepe the failes stiffe from the Mass, and so contin nesiciali.

nued all that day. Vpon Friday it began to speake yet lowder, and to whistle a good in the throwdes, infomuch that our Mafter made the Drablers bee taken off, and before night it had A terrible blowne the fore-top-faile in pieces by the board; this was taken for the beginning of a fforme, florme, and the storme it selfe was looked for: which came indeed about the shutting in of the day, with fush furie and rage, as none could fay it ftole vpon vs vnawares. For I am out of doubt that I had neuerheard any winde to high. One of our Bonnets had beene taken in in the evening, and the other was rent off with the furie of the florme. And thus (for our mayne-top faile was taken in and the top-mast taken downe) bearing onely a bare corse of each, if the ship had not beene exceeding firongly fided, fhee could not have indured fo rough weather. For oftentimes the Sea 20 would thip in waves into her of three or foure Tunne of water, which (the fhip being leakie within board) falling often, was as much as both the pumps were able to cast out againe, though they went continually all night, and till moone the next day were neuer throughly luckt, so that tiney went communate a second water, it could not have been choicin, but the mult have foundered, leging the pumpes were hardly able to rid the water that was caft in aboue harches. The Miffen-faile had beene in the evening well furled (for the winde came vpon the starboard quarter) and yet the storme had caught it, and with such violence and furie rent it, that with much adoe the Miffer, yard was halled downe, and fo the quarter decke and poope faued from danger of renting vp. All this was in the night, which made it much more hidious, specially in the fore-end of the night before the Moone got vp. The winde continued in this excelle of vio-20 lence till mid right, and then abated hee formething, but then began the effect of his blowing to fhew it felfe, for then the Sea began to worke, and fwell farre higher then before. His Lordships flaip is a very goodly one, and yet would shee bee as it were in a pit, and round about vast moun. High-swolne taines of water, to that a man might leave out the rest of the verse, and say onely undid, pontus. Sea. For I protest, besides that which was over our heads, our prospect any other way was quickly Vading pontue determined, with waves, in my confcience, higher then our mayne-top. And that (which is

breaking of these valt waves vpon her. This continued all night : and though the winde fell by little and little, yet the Sea was to light, that all Saturday it was not quieted, fo that though out 40 of a ftorme, yet were wee still in a stormy Sea, infomuch that our mayne-top mait was broken. By Sinday we were come to have reasonable weather, and rather too little then too much wind. And you Monday being the eleventh of September, wee were not much from a new calme. which wee could not with much more patience have endured then a good storme; for then wee began to looke out for land, and now to come so neere, what so long wee had longed for. After the storme, the Admirall found himselfe all alone, and so were we the most part of the next day, but towards evening, came the new Frigat to vs. And a sterne her there was a ship seene, which within a day or two afterward, the Samfon came and told vs, was her felfe. With day the fif- Flores deferieds teenth of September, we had the South-well fide of it in fight, and bore in therewith till noone. His Lordship had no meaning to make any forcible attempt against it, nor to stay longer. then

trange (t) round about vs : for the Sea came vpou every point of the Compaffe, so that the poore ship, nor they that directed and cunned her, could not tell how to cunne her to bee safe from the

50 to take in fome fresh victuals; for which purpole , hee lent the Boat off with an old Portugall, and an African of Mozambique, who bearing a flagge of truce, should give the Handers to vnderstand what his Lordships pleasure was, that if they would let him have things for his money, he would not vie them worle then in former times, they had had experience of him. Withall he gave the Boat commandement, that thee should bring him answere to the East North-east side of the Hand, where he meant to come to anchor, and tarry for the newes they could learne either English or Spanish. This stay in hoysing the Boat out, gave the Samson time to get a head vs, and within awhile thee was at anchor. When, behold, at the opening of the Point, first there came one faile, then two, and then three failes, and within a little the fourth was feene; it was not at first knowne what there might be, yet because the Samfon being much neerer, made no haste 60 to weigh, we thought 'hee made them to be friends. And within awhile we perceived them to

have pen lengs in their fore-top-mail heads; this put vs out of doubt, that they were of our owne fleet. For his Lordflup at his departure from Puerto Rico, had given them direction that every flup flould to beare a pendent, for a marke to be knowne of their friends, and which would make fira gers neuer awhit the wifer. Thefe foure were the Merchant, the Afcention , the Confens,

and the Per ifin, which by and by came to an anchor with vs. Now were wee growne a prettie frong fleet againe, either part receiving new strength of other, each having formerly lost their

owne. For the storme had cattered Sir lobns companie as well as ours, though it should freme not to have beene altogether so great with them, as vs. Of Sir Iohns we had not vet, the Gallion.

the Alcedo, the Centurion, the Anthonie, the Kefar, and the Doue, which were the Flemmines.

The first newes that the Boat brought vs, made these though friends vet more welcome if that

might be. For the Boat having told his Lordihip that they could not be suffered to land, vet had

promite that his Lordship should have any thing that the lland would affoord. Mary (faid they)

we are ill prouided, by reason of the Kings men of warre, nine and twentie of them have within

ny hopefull paffage, they were of Merchants made men of Warre, and with the rest or rather the

reft with them, were fent to these Blands to wast the Caracks which were looked for at home this yeere. But the Caracks (faid they of Flores) were gone by, before their comming hither, for

the fafetie whereof, they had commandement to flay if need were, till the end of this moneth.

Whither this Armada was gone they faid they knew not, nor whither it would returne, but

the very last day a great Gallion was within kenning. These newes, as they gave great cause of circumipection and care, not to meet with them, whom we could not doubt to be too ftrong for

knowing that the Caracks were passed, if yet they staid, it made the intelligence of the Mexico

fleet more probable. And therefore if this were the caule of their flay, our hope to make fome

purchace or it, made vs more willing, to have their neighbourhood. Mary, it might bee, they

were tent to looke for our comming home, which they might thinke would be ftrag ling and

weake, and yet on the other fide the vincercaintie of our comming either at this time or certainly

this way, made this something valikely. His Lordship therefore commanded Captaine Simgley

(a fine Gentleman) to goe ashoare and to learne more certaintie what was become of the Kings

fleet, and why they came. This relation was from the men of Santa Cruz: but the intelligence

which Captaine Sling by brought the same night late, was from Villa de la punta Delgada, ano-

his Excellencie should have any thing wherewithall they could doe him feruice, and if it would

please him to come ashoare, they would take it as a great fauour. For the Kings men of Warre,

they faid, that they indged them certainly to bee gone home, for they were gone hence vpon a

fortnight before. The cause of their comming was to wast the Caracks, which all soure were

gone by , before the Kings fleet came hither, with purpose indeed to stay till the end of this moneth for them. But fince the Caracks were come home, there had beene fent a Carnell of Admife

to recall them. As for the Mexico fleet, there was not at the Ilands any newes of their com-

ming this yeere. This report made by Captaine Sling by ouer-night, was confirmed early the

next morning by the Gouernour himselfe of the place (a poore Gouernour scarce so good as an

fame offer to his Lordship, and withall brought both Hennes and Muttons with him, which hee

knew hee should not give for nothing, though hee would seeme vnwilling to receive any thing.

He having beene sometime with my Lord, and told all the newes hee remembred, was licensed,

having first asked and obtayned a Passe for himselse, and a Protection for the Handers, to keepe

them from spoile by ours. His Lordship granted his suit, and (which hee farther desired) that

they might bee conceived in the same forme as those were which the Earle of Effex had given

Enelife Constable.) But this Captaine Inan de Fraga de Mendoça, came himselfe and made the 40

ther Towne of the llands. The fumme of his report (for I was by when he made it was, that 20

vs. and therefore made vs wish they were finally gone from the Ilands; so on the other side, if 20

thefe few daves beene here, and taken almost all our prousions, for they were great ships, and In full of gallants, fine of them being the fine Caracks, that should this yeere have gone for the East Indies, but being by the Condes lying on the Coaft kept in till it was too late for them to have a-

CHAP. IIIL

The first Voyages made to diners parts of America by Englishmen. Sir SEBASA TIAN CABOT, Sir THO. PERT : alle of Sir IOHN HAWKINS. and Sir FRANCIS DRAKE, and many others : collected briefly out of Mafter CAMDEN, Mafter HAKLVYT. and other Writers.

It Schaffian Cabota wee have alreadie mentioned in the former Booke, as a great Discourser of that, which most justly should have have a significant to the state of the state great deale better might haue beene ftiled Cabotiana then America, neither Vefinting nor Columbus having discovered halfe to much of the Continent of the new World North and South as he (yea, the Continent was discourred by him, when Columbus had yet but viewed the Hands) this Herrera for the South part hath mentioned in his Relation of the River of Plate before, naming him an Englifman and for the

large and his description of Mexico, with the cause of his imprisonment about speaking freely of A pezo 44.8ds

North 15 by vs in the fourth Booke dehuered. A fecond time Sir Thomas Pert and the faid Cabo- Sir T. Port Cat 14. were fet forth with a fleet to America, by King Henrie the eighth in the eight yeere of his forth by King reigne, the same perhaps which Herrera hath also mentioned, of an English ship at Hispaniola, Henrie the and other American Hands, in the yeere 1517. Maiter Hakluge hath published the Vovages of eighth. many English into those parts : as namely of Matter Robert Tomfon Merchant , and John Field, Master Tom which together with Ralph Sarre and Leonard Chilton in a ship of lohn Sweeting dwelling at Ca- som &c. diz, all Englishmen An. 1555. Sayled to H. Spaniela, and thence to Maxico in New Spaine, where See Hal. som 3: they found Thomas Blake a Scottifhman, who had dwelt there twentie yeeres. At Mexico, Robert pag. 448. Tomion and Augustine Boatio an Italian, were impriloned many moneths by the Inquisition, and Spanish Inquithen brought out in a Saint Benite (or fooles coat) to doe penance, a thing neuer feene there be- fition. fore, which caused much concourse of people, given to understand of I know not what enemies of God, and expecting to fee fome Monfters of uncomb shape. They were much pitied by the peo- Monftrous lies. ple feeing fuch personable men, but fentenced by the Archbishop to be fent back to Spame, where 20 Tomfor did his three yeeres enioyned penance at Simil. Boatio found the meanes to escape and dved after in London. Tomfon after his libertie married with a rich Spanife heire. The historie at

Images this Mafter had made an Image of our Ladie of aboue 7000, pezos price, each pezo being Mafter Bades foure shillings and eight pence of our money) the Reader may fee in Maiter Haelant. Where allo is deliusted the voyage of Roger Bodenbam Englishman 1564. to Mexico: alfo of Mafter Chilton. John Chilton 1968, thither and from thence to Nueva Bifeaca, and to the Port of Nanidad on the Chiltons feuen. South Sea : to Sansonate in Guatimala, to Tecoantepec, to Soconnsco, to Nicaragua, to Nombre de travels in Nom Dies; to Potoffi. Cusco, Paita; to Vera Paz, Chiapa, three hundred leagues from Mexico. From Spaine, and Chiang he travelled thorow Hills till he came to Ecatenee, that is, The Hill of winde, in the end of Peru. 40 that Province, Supposed the highest Hill that ever was discovered, from the top whereof are seene Econtepes a hill both the North and South Seas; deemed nine leagues high. They which trauell vp it, lye at the leagues high foot ouer-night, and about midnight begin their journey, that they may travell to the top before Ifuppe ent the Sonne rife the next day, because the winde bloweth with such force afterwards, that it is should be nine impeffible for any man to goe up. From the foot of this Hill to Tecoantenec the first Towns of miles. New Spaine are fifteene leagues. From Mexico he trauelled againe to Panuco, and there fell fick, Good on of Which ticknesse in his returne benefited him; for he rell among it Caniball Indian which afraid to Harris Hawker. eate him for feare he had the pox, let him goe. Hee went to R. de las Palmas, and to the Mynes Sir Islin Hew. of Sacatecas, the richeft in all the Indies. After his returne to Mexico he travelled to other parts, him his third fpending feuenteene yeeres in his American peregrinations. Henrie Hankes lived five yeeres in voyage to Gui-50 those parts, and his observations are recorded by Master Haklays.

N. 1567. Mafter John Hawkins Generall in the Lefus, departed from Plimonth with fine o- Sir Francis Ather thips, the Minion, of which Mafter lobn Hampton was Captaine; the William and Drake John, Thomas Bolton Captaine; the Induh, of which Mafter Francis Drake was Captaine; the Saint Iohn de Angel also and the Smallow. Having on the Coast of Guinea taken some five hundred Negrous, The opinion they fayled with them to the llands of the West Indies, to fell them to the Spaniards. By tempest they were driven to the Port of Saint lobn de Vilna, where the Spanish thips with 200 000 to doe any inpounds in creature were at his mercy, but hee difmiffed them; which they repayed him with bumanity to treacherous dealing, the Spaniards perficiously fetting on the English contrarie to the Cournants Sauages pu-60 betwixt them concluded. For after that, when as the whole fleet with their new Vice-roy comvied Ch. flans ming thither had perished, if Master Hawkins had not permitted them to enter the Hauen, out of vectors in which he could eafily have kept them : they practifed fecretly and against agreement to certaine dealing to pu-Articles, affaulted the English perfidiously and treacherously, ving both fraud and scorne, min boutin which fight two thips of the Spaniards were funke, and one burnt; Some of ours were unginefic to

flame.

Earle of Effex his Iland WOYAGE. 3597-

The reft (as needleffe) is omitted.

him, within two dayes of the fame day twelue moneth; and which himselfe had carefully kept When this fellow was gone, the flagge of Counfell was hanged out, &c. The returns of this fleet upon confultation after the newes aforefast, I forbeare to mention in regard of the length of this 50 discourfe. They fet forth from Flores Septemb. 16. 1598. On Michaelman day they founded, and the ground on the fallow did still more assure vs of being in the sleene : and the Scollop shells confirmed their opinion which held vs rather on the Coast of France, by the Master and others judged otherwise: whose judgement if his Lordship out of his judgement and authoritie had not contradicted and cauled them to take a more Northerly courie; all had perished in all likelihood on the Vibent and Rocks. For the next morning we faw the land of Normandie.

CHAP.

flaine, others taken and dispiteously tortured, all distressed; all their ships also sunke and burnt. faung the Minim and Induth, which were by a fforme enfuing betrayed to famine at Sea, which forced the Generall to let 114. men on shoure to the cruell mercies of the Sauages and Spaniards. Yea. one Boat not being able to get to shoare, two were drowned, the rest getting a mile thorow Mile Polips the Sea thither as they could, as Miles Philips one of that forlorne companie hath recorded, Some were dead in feeming two houres space with abundant drinking of fresh water, others two ne exceedingly with falt water and fruits they found; a shower also leaving them not one drie thread, as if Heauen had pursued the Seas challenge, without; and partly hunger, and partly the water and fruits of the Earth, within their bowels, had conspired against this poore crue. The Chiebemici Indian Sauages added their inhumanitie, killing eight of their companie in 10

the first oniet, but they yeelding (having neither weapons nor hearts to refist) the Sauges perceiuing them not to be their Spanish enemies pointed them to Tampice, faying, Tampice Christian Portof course, no, which they vnderflood not : but divided themfelues into two companies, one going Weft-David agram. ward, of which Philips was one, the other Northward, and with them David Ingram, which recovered his Countrie. After the flingings of flies, deaths by Indians, and manifold mileries, this Westerne companie got to Panneo where the Gouernor stripped them of the little which they Spanife gouer- had, and of their libertie, calling them English Dogs and Lutheran beretikes, and when they denours crucities manded helpe of their Surgeons for tuch as the Indian, by the way had wounded, hee laid, they

Bould baue none other Surgeon but the Hangman : and after foure dayes fent for them out of the Prifon, and with many new Halters (wherewith they expected hanging) bound and ient them 20 to Mexico ninetie leagues diffant West and by South , with a great guard of Indians. At Mefittlan they received kind viage. One of their keepers vied them kindly, the other would ftrike them to the ground, and bid them, March, march English Dogges, Lutherans, enemies of God. Thus marching they came within two leagues of Mexico, where was our Ladies Church. Nactra Semana and therein her Image of Silver guilt as large as a tall woman, and before it as many Silver Lampes as are dayes in the yeere, which on high dayes are all lighted. Neither Horseman nor Footman will paffe by this Church without entring and praying, After their comming to Mexico many dyed, the reft had kind viage in the Hospitall, Thence they were carried to Telenco, to be vied as flaues, but by one Robert Sweeting (tonne of an Englishman by a Spanish woman) were holpen much from the Indians, or elfe had all perished.

Denillich in-

quittion.

After this they were put to Spaniards as feruants, and had meanes to get somewhat for themfelues, till they became a prey to the Inquilition, which feiled their goods and perions, shutting them afunder in dungeons a yeere and halte. By frequent examinations they would have pumped Somewhat out of them in matters of faith, and not being able, they yeelding to their Affertions in that kind, craving mercie as men which came into that Countrey by diffreste of foule weather: they neuerthelese racked them to extort confession that way, which made some to fay that which cost their liues. After folemne Proclamation that all might come to this fight, they were brought in fooles Coats, with ropes about their neckes and candles in their hands to the Scaffold, George Rinely, Peter Momfrie, and Cornelina an Irillman were burnt, others condemned Three Marrys to 200, or 300, blowes on Horseback with long whips, and to ferue in the Gillies, fixe, eight, or 40 ten yeeres : others to serue in Monasteries, in the S. Bento, fooles-coates, diners yeeres, of which Philips was one. The whipping was cruelly executed on Good Friday, two Cryers going before proclaiming, behold thefe Englift Lutherans, Dogs, enemies of God: the Inquitrors themselves and their Familiars, crying, Strike, lay on those English Hereticks, Lutherans, Gods enemies. All bloudie and (wolne they returned to prison to bee lent into Spaine to performe the rest of their Martyrdome. Philips and the reft having ferned their times (in which hee learned the Mexican tongue) they had their fooles-coats hung up in the chiefe Church. The rest married there Philips escaped a fecond imprisonment and after many travels in the Countrey and dangers in Spaine, returned

63.Englishmen fenrenced ar once. Anno

23. yeeres mie Sceleson of a huge Giant. * Voderstand it of the Philippine thips. Ginger how it

to England 1 c 8 2. Iob Horton another of this company hath related like adventures. He faith, that he and some to others were lent Priloners into Spaine, by the Viccoroy with Don Isan de Velasco de Varre, Admirall and Generall of the Spamib fleet, who carried with him in his ship to bee presented to the King of Spaine, the Anatomie of a Giant, fent from China * to Mexico; to the Vice-roy Don Marsin Henriques. The skull of his head was neere as big as halfe a bushell; his neck-bones, shoulder-plates, arme-bones, and all other lineaments huge and monstrous; the shanke of his skull from the ankle to the knee, was as long as from any mans ankle vp to his waste, and of bignesse accordingly. At this time were also fent to the King two chilts ful of earth with Ginger growing in them: The Ginger runneth in the ground like to Liccoras; the blades grow out of it in length & proportion like to the blades of wild Garlick, which they cut every fifteen daies, and water them twice a day. They put the blades in their potrage, and vie them in other meates, of pleafing tafte 63 and good for appetite.

Sea Monfier

When they came in the height of Bermuda, they discourred a Monster in the Sea, who shewed himselfe three times wato them from the middle vpwards: in which parts he was proportioned like a man, of the complexion of a Mallato, or tawny Indian. The Generall commanded one of

his Clerkes to put it in writing to certifie the King thereof. Prefently after for the space of fixteene dayes, the weather proued very foule. Offering to make an escape they were descried and feuerely Hocked, and imprisoned a yeere in the Contractation house in Simil, and breaking prifon were taken, and by the Inquificion were fentenced : Robert Barret and Iohn Gilbert to bee Second fenburnt, leb Horrey, and lobn Bone to the Gallies for tenne yeeres, and after that to perpetual pri- tence of Inquiion. Others were adjudged to the Gallies fonce eight, fome fine yeeres. Horton ferued twelve fition. verres in hunger, thirft, cold and thripes, and after foure yeeres imprisonment in his Fooles coat, was redeemed to the fergice of Hernando de Soria, from whom after three yeeres fergice more, he ftole away and landed at Portfmonth in December 1590, after three and twentie veeres mi-10 ferable bondage.

As for Danid Ingrams perambulation to the North parts, Mafter Haklust in his first Edicion Danid Ingram. published the same, but it feemeth tome incredibilities of his reports caused him to leave him out in the next Imprefion, the reward or lying being not to be believed in truths. And for Sir Ishn Sir I. Hambini Hawkins himfelte, he had made one Voyage with three thips and three hundred Negros gotten on the Coalt of Guinea to Hilpaniola, 1562, and other Ports; and returned with a rich gaine; This encouraged him to a fecond Voyage with the Iefus, Salomon, There, and Swallow, 1:64. And haning vifited duers Ports he returned by Florida, Anno 1 e67. their vifortunate Vovage before mentioned was fet forth in which his vinuffice to Sauages was chaffifed by vinuffice of Christians, in manner as you have heard. Himfelfe with his remayning company were first endangered 20 with an extreame fforme, after that with famine his men dying continually. So that the reft

being not able to manage the hip, and the winds croffing, feeking to releeve themfelves at Ponse Vedra, with fresh meate, they grew diseased and many of them died, and thereby were also in danger of a fecond Spanish betraying, which they hardly escaping arrived in England, January the twentieth 1 c68.

The Spanish indignities and treacheries were deeply lodged in the wronged minds both of Sir John Hambens, and of Captayne Drake: men borne for the honour of the English name and Na- M. Wil Hambins. tion in Marine affaires. Ser lobe Hawkins was fonne to Mafter William Hawkins of Plemmouth, a man much effeemed by King Heary the Eighth, as a principall Sea-captaine. Hee had long be-

fore armeda thip of his owne of two hundred and fifty tunnes, called the Paul of Plummonth. 30 wherewith he made two Voyages to Brafill, one in the yeere 1520, and the other 1522, in the first of which he brought a Brafilian King (as they tearmed him) to prefent him in his wilde accourrements to King Henry, It teemed, that Sea affaires and arts remayned an Inheritance, from the Father to the Sonne; and from him alfo to the Nephew, as thall after be feene : neither did the Wett of England yeeld fuch an Indian Neptanian paire as were thefe two Ocean Peeres, Han- Sir Richard kins and Drake.

A briefe Hiftorie of Sir FRANCIS DRAKES Voyages.

F Sir Francis Drake Master Camdon reports that he hath heard him say of himselfe, that he Sie Francis 40 Owasborne in the County of Denos, of meane condition; his Godfather was Francis Ruffell Drahubuth. afterwards Earle of Bedford, who gave him his name Francis. Whileshe was young, his father being called in question for Religion, by reason of the fixe Articles fet forth by King Henry a. Camdeni Elizagainst the Protestants) was driven to shift, and withdrew himselfe into Kent. After King Hen- betha gag 301. ries death, he obtayned a place in the Naut Royall to reade Service, and soone after was ordayned Deacon, and made Vicar of the Church of Vpner on the River of Medway: where by reafon of his powertie he put this his fonne to ferue a Neighbour Mariner which traded with a small Barke into France and Zeland, who brought him up in the Mariners art, and tooke fuch liking of him, that at his death he bequeathed (being a Bichelour) wato him his Barke, This Barke, His fire four voon the report of Sir Iohn Hawkons his preparations for that dilattrous Voyage 1567, hee fold dess. go and loyned to him in focietie aforefaid, and at Saint John de Vilna loft all, and hardly brought

himselfebacke. Hereupon seeking by his Mariners practice to repaire his losses, and thereby, and as a man of warre, having gotten store of money together, he made a second Voyage to recouer in the Spanish Indies what there he had lost (qued licere Theologus classication facile persuaferat) Exoperationica and with a ship of warre called the Dragon, and another ship and a Pinnasse, none knowing it but & pirasica. his owne conforts, Anno 1572. Sayled to Nombre de Dies, which Towne he suddenly surprised Brakes second and loft. For having landed one hundred and fiftie men, and leaving feuentie of them in a Fort, Indian voyage, with the reft he went to the Market place, and there discharged his Calieuers and sounded a was written by Trumpet, answered in like manner from the Fort. The Townelmen hereby terrified, fled into Later Very who the Mountaynes. But fourteene or fifteene would backe with their Harq ebuses to see what the was oken by 60 matter was, and discouering the Engishmen, shot and by hap killed the Trumpeter. Herenpon the Earle of they in the Fort not feeing their Trumpet answered, after they had heard the Calieuers, Suppofed all those which had entred were flaine, and fled to their Pinnaffes. The Captayne comming with his difand feeing his men all gone, was furprized with a new feare, and leaving their furniture they course about

fwamme and waded to their Pinnaffes and departed the Port. In the Sound of Dariene heehad him,

Negro fugi-Camden, ubi

intelligence by certayne fugitiue Negros of Mules comming loden with treasure from Panama to Nombre de Diss; and guided by them, intercepted two companies of Mules, and carried away the Gold only; for they were not able to carrie the Silver thorow the Mountavnes. Two dayes af. er he came to the house of Crosses, and burnt aboue 200000. Duckets in Merchandize. and so departed. When he trauelled ouer those Mountaynes hee beheld thence the South Sea : and thereby inflamed with defire of glory and wealth, was fo rapt with defire of fayling therein, that he fell there on his knees, and begged of God, and befought the fauour of God to affift Dietes you for him in that exploit, and made a folemne you to that purpose, one day to sayle on that Sea.

lobn Oxenban.

the South Sea, which every day and night lay next his heart, pricking him forwards to the performance. Whiles hee was muling and hatching these haughtie Designes, John Oxenham, who in the for- 10 mer Nauigations, had ferued under Captayne Drake, both Souldier, Mariner, and Cooke . became a Captayne allo, and with a ship of one hundred and fortie tunnes, and seuentie men came

to the faid Sound of Dariene, Anno 1575, and had conference with those Negroes. But hearing His audacious that the Mules were now conducted with Souldiers, hee refolued on a new Enterprize, which neuer any had attempted, and landed in that place where Captayne Drake had had conference with the Negros : and having brought his ship aground, and conered her with boughes, and hid his Ordnance in the ground, he tooke two small Peeces of Ordnance and Calieuers, with store of victuals, and went twelue leagues with fixe Negros into the mayne Land, to a River which runneth into the South Sea. There he cut wood and made a Pinnaffe fortie fine foot by the keele. and therewith went into the South Sea, to the Iland of Pearles, fine and twentie leagues diffant 30 from Panama, to watch for shippes comming from Pers thither : he tooke a Barke with 60000. Pezos of Gold, comming from Queto: and flaying fixe dayes longer, tooke another which came from Lima with 100000. Pezos of Siluer in barres, and delaying fomewhat long fent away his Prizes, and went with his Pinnasse up the River. This delay gave opportunitie of intelligence, and lohn de Ortega was fent to pursue him : at a partition of the River into three, when he was taking up the greatest, feathers of Hennes which the English had plucked, diverted him up the

Discord caufeth deftructi-Delay breeds

His prizes.

leffer ftreame, whereby hee lighted on the treasure first, Oxenbam beeing gone toget Negros to helpe him carrie his treasure, his owne men quarrelling for larger pay. Some of the English were taken, which bewrayed the frip, and the rest were betrayed by the Negros, whiles they were making Canoas for the North Sea, there to take fome Barke. They contessed that they had no 20 license from the Queene, and were all executed, but two Boyes. Thus perished Oxenbam. a man, if his Cale had beene just, worthy of lafting memory for an attempt so difficult, Quem finon tennit, magnis tamen excidit aufis. The King of Spaine fent Souldiers to take those fugitime Negros, which had affifted the Englifb, and two Gallies to guard the Coaft. This and Captayne Barkers frustrated attempts giue greater lustre to Drakes glorv. Andrew Barker of Bristoll, much wronged by the Inquisition, Anne 1576. fought to right

himselfe in those parts, and came with two ships to Nombre de Dies , and the River of Chagre, eighteene leagues distant to the North-west , landed ten men to seeke intelligence of Negros, which they could not find, and most of the men also died of the Calentura. Betwixt that and Veragua he tooke a Prize, and another in the Gulfe of Hondaras. Mutuall quarrels betwirt Coxe 40 Coxes quarrels. and the Captayne betrayed them to the Spaniards, which affayling them, flue the Captayne and eight men at the Ile Francisco. After this Coxe went with his Pinnasse, and tooke the Towne of Truxille, but eight men were (by realon of men of warre chaling the ship, thus forced to shife for themielues)left there to their fortunes. Fourteene others and the Frigat with the treasure were call away. Divers of the reft after their returne were long imprisoned.

Drafes happie Circumnaui-

These indeed are pettie things to Captayne Drakes expedition in December 1577. wherein he encompassed first of any Generall, and except Canaily more fortunately then all of them together, this whole Terreftrial Globe. Hefet forth with fine thips, and one hundred fixtie three Mariners. The whole Voyage you have before at large. The Carkaffe of the shippe; or some bones at leaft of that glorious Carkaile, yet remayne at Depiford, confecrated to Fame and Pofte- to ritie; in which Queene Elizabeth being feafted, Knighted this noble Mariner: at which time a bridge of boords made for her Maieftie to paffe, fell with one hundred men thereon, of which none were hurt, as if Good Fortune had both fayled abroad, and feasted at home in that ship. The goods taken were sequestred by her Maiestie, for answere to the Spaniard if need should bee. Some principall Courtiers are faid to have refused the offer of some of this, as Piratically gotten. Bernardine Mendeza made demand for the King of Spaine, (whose Embaffadour hee was) and received answere from the Queene, that the Spaniards had vniustly prohibited commerce to the Englift, that Drate fhould legally answere it any thing were prooued against him, the goods being to that purpose sequestred, how soeuer the Spaniard had put her Maiestie to greater charges against the Rebels, which the Spaniard had railed in England and Ireland : Neither 60 did the know why her fubiects and others were prohibited the Indies, which the knew no reason to thinke proper to the Spaniards, by vertue of the Popes Bull (which could nothing oblige Princes which owed him no obedience) nor by reason that the Spaniards had arrived here and there, had directed Cottages, and given names to Capes and Rivers. Neither might thefe things

CHAP. 2. S.4. Caufes why 2. El. protected the low Countries. Saint lavo taken. 1181

linder other Princes from commerce, or to transport Colonies to places not inhabited by the Spannards (the Law of Nations not infringed hereby, feeing prescription without possession is nothing worth) the vie of the Sea and Aire being exposed to all. Nor might any people or perton challenge right ouer the Ocean, whereof neither nature; nor course of publike vie permitred possession. Yet a great part of the money was repaied after to Peter Sebura the Spanish A. gent, which he repaid not to the owners, but made vie thereof against the Queene in the affaires of the Spanish Netherlands, as was afterwards found. Thus farre briefly collected out of Master Camden and Lopez Vaz a Portugall. Men noated to have compalled the world with Drake, which have come to my hands are Thomas Drake, brother to Sir Francis; Thomas Hood, Thomas Blacco-10 ler, lohn Gripe, George a Musician, Crane, Fletcher, Cary, T. Moone, John Drake, John Thomas. Ro-

bert Winterly, Oliner the Gunner. &c.

A little before this the Prince of Orange had beene murdered, and Parry had undertaken the Came on her Maiestie, having the Cardinall Comensis instigation, and the Popes absolution to that purpose. The Spaniards bad ginen great diffaite in English and Irish rebellions, and bad lately arre-Reathe English Ships and goods in Spaine, with other unkindenesses in Belgian businesses. The Belgia ans had offered the confederate Proninces to ber Maiesties Protection and dominion. This se refused, but their Protection the accepted, having discovered the Spaniards hatred to her Religion and Nation, which how easie were it to put in extreamest execution, if the Low-Countries were subdued to his full power (their ancient primiledges being all [wallowed up) and fo England (bould be exposed to Spanish 20 machinations with such opportunities of neighbouring Earts, Forces, Harbours, and Shippings. She therefore to remove present warre and future perils from her owne Countrie, with masculine magnanimitie adventured, not for vainglory but necessitie, to undertake a businesse which made the world to

wonder : being little leffe then denouncing warre to fo mighty a Monarke. She agreed with the States to minister to their aide 5000. foote, and 1000 borfe at her owne charge, to be by them after repayed, the first yeares charges in the first yeare of peace, the rest in the foure following, Flushing and the Ramekins and Brill to remaine bers in caution, &c. Her Maiestie fet forth a Booke alfo for ber instification by the ancient leagues with the Belgian Prominces for mutuall defence, the Spanish crueltie on the poore Belgians, and their nefarious denifes against her: neither had the any intent in administring these aides, but that the Low-Countries mucht entry their ancient liberty, the and her (ubietts their fecuritie, 30 and both Nations peaceable commerce. And to the end that warre might not first be brought home to

ber owne doores, she fet forth a Fleete to finde the Spaniard worke abroad.

Hereupon Anno 1585. Sir Francis Drake with a Fleete of fine and twenty faile, and 2200. Souldiers and Sailers was fet forth from Plimmonth Sop. 12. Christopher Carlile his Lieutenent Sir Fr. Drakes Generall, Anthonie Powell Sergeant Maior, Captaine Matthew Morgan and Iohn Samfon Corpo- toDomingo, Oc. rall of the field : Land Captaines Anthonie Plat Edward Winter, John Goring, Robert Pen, George Barton, John Merchant, William Coull, Walter Bigs, John Haman, Richard Stanton, Captaine Marzin Frobisher Viceadmirall in the Primrofe, Captaine Francis Knolles Rereadmirall in the Gallion Leicester. Captaine Thomas Venner in the Eliz. Bonaduentere under the Generall Captaine Ed. Names of the ward Winter in the Aide; (briftopher Carlile in the Tigre, Henry White Captain of the Sea Dragon, Commanders

40 Thomas Drake Captaine of the Thomas, Thomas Seely Captaine of the Minion. Captaine Bayly of the Barke Talbot, Robert Croffe of the Barke Bond, George Fortefeue of the Barke Boner, Edward Carelesse of the Hope, I ames Erizo of the White Lyon, Thomas Moone of the Fancis, John Rivers of the Vantage, lohn Vaughan of the Drake, lohn Varney of the George, lohn Marsin of the Beniamin, Richard Gilman of the Scont, Richard Hawkins of the Ducke, Captaine Bitfield of the Swallow. Enelife Shine They tooke a Shippe of Saint Sebastrans laden with fifth, entred the Iles of Bayon, and fent to the arcited the Citie to know whether there were warres betwixt England and Spaine, and why the English cause of the Merchants and their goods in Spaine were embarged or arrested. The Governour professed his ig . breaking out norance inboth, and that this later was the Kings pleasure. After some spoiles done about Via of Hostility. go, they fell with Hierro, but the Iland being poore, departed without harme. Thence they

50 went to the Iles of Cape Verde, and at Saint Lago entred betwixt the Towne called Playa or S. Lagoraken, Praya and Saint Iago, landed 1000.men, and (the men being fled) entred the Towne and shot off all their Ordnance, being 50 peeces, and wered from the Ships to honour the Queenes day, the 17. of November. No Treature was found but Wine, Oyle, Meale, &c. They possessed it foureteene dayes. November the foure and twentieth, they marched to Saint Domingo, twelve miles within land, and found the people fled.

After foureteen dayes they departed having burned the Towne of Plays, none of the inhabitants having offered to intercede, which feemed to happen from their guiltineffe towards old Mifter William Master William Hawkins, whose men perfidiously they had murthered foure or fine yeares before, Hawkins. against their promise, putting off to the West Indies, they could not put off the effects of the Dominica.

60 aire of that Iland, which by a Calentura killed two or three hundred of their men. The first I. land which they fell with was Dominica, the next Saint Christophers, and having there ipent S. Christophers. their Christmas, they resolved for Hift aniala : and having received intelligence by a Frigot which they tooke in the way, they landed nine or ten miles to the Westward of Saint Domingoon New yeares day. About noone they approached the Towne under the conduct of Matter

Carlile.

See Candoni

1182 Domingo affaulted Ambitious Armes Cartagena taken. Mortalitie, LIB. VI

Sain: Dominge affrulted and taken.

Carlile, and 150 horfemen prefenting themselues from the Citie being retired, they divided their forces to alault both the Westerne gates at once. The Ordnance being discharged on them, they ran in to present a second charge and entred with them pell mell into the Gates, the enemy altering their fight into flight, which they made by the North gate. Both troopes met in the Marker-place and there barricadoed themselues. The Castle was abandoned the next night. They held the Towne a whole moneth. They burned many houses before they could bring the Spaniards to a price for the rantome of the reft, for which at last they paid after much spoile 2000. Duckets. The pray was not much. In the Towne-house were the Kings armes, and in the lower part of the foutchion was painted a globe of the Sea and Land, a horse standing thereon with his hinder legges, the forepart without the globe, with this motto ascribed to his mouth, Non 10 From Saint Domingo they fet faile for Carthagena on the Continent, landing fome Comva-

Ambitious Armes.

Cartigma ale k:na

Caliniura. Tile Caule.

Other Townes taken. * 50 Canden. others,Saint taught them.

is printed in

Mafter Hak

but finding

rine written

Tom. 2. part. 2.

. This voyage

nies with Captaine Carlile fine miles of, which were led on by night, the Generall with this Fleete presenting themselves before the chained Port: and having gotten the Citie, held the fame fix weekes. They tooke Alonfo Brano the Governour. After many houses burned 11000. Mortelity by a Duckets were paid for ransome of the rest from burning. The Calentura continued, killing some (being a peffilent ipotted Feuer) and ipoyling others of their firength and memory for a long time. The Screna or Euening ayre is faid to caufe it to them which are then abroad, if not of that Country : to that by holding their watch, the English were thus infected. This forced them to give over their intended voyage to Nombre de Dios, and Parama, failing therefore along it 20 the coast of Florida, they tooke and fired two garrison Townes of the Spaniards, Saint Anthonse and Saint Helena, and the Fort of Saint Iohn. Then passing along the Virginian there they tooke home the Englif Colonie there remaining with Malter Lane their Gouernour, fent by Sir Wal-Fifty of To- ter Raleigh. There are failly Mafter Camden to have beene the first bringers in of the vie of Tobacco, fince fo frequently abused by our Nation. They arrived at Portsmouth the 28. of Ju-(as may be ly 1586. They got Ordnance of Bralle about 200, peece, and about 40, of Iron. The prey was thou my) of the then more valued at 60000. h. English. There ayed (most of the Calentura) 700. persons. The industry authe letteare of the Generallin all places is remakeable, whose vigilance and bodily presence, and labour in which the Vir all bufinell- was much, that had be beene in the meaneil he had merited the highest place. To 30 ginant lay the this is fittelt in next place to adde his Cadiz exploit Anno 1587, and the taking of the rich Ca-Denill (fo appearing tothe) racke, called Saint Philip.

HE: Maiestie being informed of that invincible Armadas preparing in Spaine (which did come and was overcome the yeare after) sent a fleete of 30.131le vader the command of Sir Francis Drake: the Bonaduenture, the Lyon, the Dread-namehr, and the Rainbon were cut of her Nauv Royall chosen to this service. The 16.0f Aprill two Shippes of Midleborough which came from Cadiz (with whom we met in 40.degrees) gaue him to vnderstand that there was great prouision in Cadez and thereabout prouided to come to Lisbone, whereupon the Generall with Relation, 1 thought good all post ble speede bending himselite thither to cut of the forces and prousions, the 19. of Aprill, to interit. It one houre before the Sunne letting, entred the harbour of Calle, and the Spaulh Fleete there was writtened checked vs, at the entring thereat with the Towne Galleyes, but in short time retired under 40 one The Pinner the Fortreffe.

There were in the Roades 60. Ships, and divers other small shipping under the forcesse. There fled 20. French Shippes to port Riall, and some Spaniards, which could not be hindred of the Fleete by reason of the sholdnesse. There were sunke by vs at our comming in with shot, one Oreafer of 1000.tun, furnished with thirty peeces of Brasle, and richly laden. There were two Gallies more came prefently from port Riall, and two other from Saint Mary port, but all in vaine the expenses of powder and thor, the greatest gaine to themselves.

There were to the number of 38. Shippes taken before night, and the English victours of the Roade: the Galleyes retyring vnder the Fortreffes. Twenty Hulcks Hollanders conficated to 50 the King, and their goods fold to the Kings vie - four-teene of them were fired the other fix were at port Kiall laden with Wines and Bread, and to be presently full laden for Liftburne one Carricke of foureteene hundreth tun appertaining to the Marquelle of Saint Cruce; fine great Bifkainers fired, toure of them lading and taking in of victuals for the Kings prouision for Lilburne, the Saint was a Ship of 1000. tuns, bound for Lukburne having in her great flore of Pikes, much Iron, Nailes, Spikes, Iron hoopes, and fuch like, fired. One Shataya laden with Wines of 2 co. tuns for the Kings proution, which we brought to Sea with vs, and discharged at Sea a part of their Wines, for the proution of the Fleete, and there fired her. Three Flye-boates of foure hundreth tunnes laden with Bisket whereof the one being of two hundred tuns and vpwards, we halfe volladed and then fired her, the other two are yet with vs in company. Sometenne 60 Barkes more laden with Wines, Raisons, Figges, Oyle, Wheate, with such like, fired. By supposition the eight and thirtie Shippes and Barkes fired, sunke, and brought away with vs. amounted in judgement to thirteene thouland tuns of shipping. There rid in light of vs at port Riall, by estimation, aboue fortie faile, besides those that fled from Calle reade.

Caricke of

CHAP. A. Cales. S. Philip the first Carike which was taken. Drakes last Doyage. 1182

They o me we little case during our aboade there, which they shot from the Galleves as also from the Fortrefles and from the thore, where continually they planted new Ordnance at plan ces contenient to offend; not withit anding their Ships we continually fired as the floud came. thereby to bee cleared of them, which terrible fire was pleasant vnto vs to behold and mittigated the continual burthen of trauaile, which lay vpon vs day and night in difcharging, firing, and valading, such promitions, with observations for good and gardable defence of the enemie. It pleated the Generall, after his great care and paines day and night, to finish this happy Action in her Maiesties service, in one day and two nights, and hee came forth agains the Friday in the morning, with very little loffe, thankes be to God.

Of twelve Galleyes, and those that came from port Riall, and Saint Mary port, tenne of them came forth after vs, as it were to make some pastime with their great Ordnance. At length, the winde standing, wer cast about againe and strooke in for the shoare, and came to an anker within a league of Cales, where their Galleyes suffered vs to ride quietly. There were also three Flye Boates more at Mallegai laden with Bysket, bound for Calez, and fo for Lilborne. We understood of their great prouisions and forces prouided within the straights. We doubt not, but as God hath begunne this worke in great happineffe to the daunting of the enemie : fo God will bleffe this Armie in cutting daily their forces (horter, to the great annoyance of the enemy, and to the honour of our Prince and

Wee haus had the experience of Galley fights (wherein I can affine you) that there onely Gally-fight foure of her Maiesties Ships wil make none accompt of swenty Galleyes; so as they were alone. and not driven to guard others.

There were Galleyes had place fitter for their adnantage in fight woon shot they receined, they had prefent fuccour to ground under the towne, which they fundry times did wave, riding in a narrow gutter, the place yeelling no better, in that wee were driuen to maintaine the fane vntill wee had discharged, and fired the Shippet, which could not conueniently be done but upon the floud; that thereby they may drive cleare

We rest now victualed with Bread and Drinke, for six moneths in our Ships, and Bread be-20 fides in two five Boates to maintaine a good Armie three moneths. We restall in good love with our Generall and unitie in all the whole Fleete.

After this, they came before the hauen of Lysbon, where the Marqueffe of Santia Cruz was with his Gallies, whom the Generall inuited to some exchange of Bullets, but he refused. Thence they failed to the Azores, and met with a Portugall Carracke, called Saint Philip, which had in her voyage outward carried the three laponian Princes into the Indies. This Carracke he tooke. the first of that kinde taken by the English, ominous in the name and so it proved not onely by the loffe of to great wealth to King Philip , both in leading the daunce to others after taken, and in opening the eyes of the English to write the Indian fountaines, whence such wealth islueds wherein allothe Hollanders quickly imitated them.

To omit other braue exploits neerer home, as that most glorious of 88, and the rest : our pur- Sir French pole is to ging you the remote Voyages of this worthy Sea-man; and now lastly that last and fa- Drates last tall expedition Anne 1 egg, with fixe of the Queenes Ships and one and twenty other Ships and voyage. Barkes, containing 2500, men and boyes, intended for some special service in the West Indies. Sir Francis Drake and Sir lobn Hawkins were joyned in Commission. They fee faile from Plime month the eight and twentieth of August, November the twelfth, neere the Eastermost end of Saint luan de Puerto Rico, Sit loon Hawkins died. The hauen of Saint loon they found strongly Len Hawkins. fortified against them, but yet they fired their fine Shippes each of 200 tunnes, having in every of \$.10 Part Rice. them twenty Peeces of Braffe, and richly laden. Much harme was done on both fides. The fine and twentieth they pasted by Mona. In the beginning of December, they tooke Rie de la Ha- R dela Harba 50 cha. They tooke also the Rancheria or fisher towns for Pearles. The Spannards affered to ransome taken; and

their Towne at 24000. Ducates which they brought in Pearle to deately rated that the General fent them backe, and both were burnt. The feuenteenth they tooke Tapia, and after that Saint Tapia. Mariba, and the Spanib Lieutenant Generall. The feuen and twentieth Nombre de Dies was taken a Towne fibrech to raine, and very unhealthfull: the roade faire, hauing on each fide as you Nombre de Diol. come aleilee of rocks. The nine and twentieth, Sir Thomas Barkernile with 750. Land-foldiors 5.Th. Barkernile. went for Panama, a fore march thorow the woods, the way cut out of the woods and rocks, very mirie, the Speniards playing on them out of the woods. After ten leagues march, they came to a fort on the top of a hill : two fuch more were betwire that and Panama, that also strongly fortie Marchfor Pa. fied, the enemy having knowledge before of this deligne. Hereby was he forced to returne. Ia- nama.

60 nurry the eight and twentieth. Sir Francis Drate died of a fluxe. He made his brother Thomas S. Fr. Drates Drakes fonne his heire. Sit Thomas Baskermill succeeded. The fix and twentieth of February the death. Spaniards fleete of tweaty failes, and the English met; a fight followed, & continued two hours, and then they parted. A great Ship of the Spaniards that night was burned. In Aprill following they arrived at Planmonth.

In this Voyage Phane followed the printed Relation: but because another hath comme to my hands, written (as it feemes) by one offended therein, I have to thy other eare permitted him to theake, that freedome of judgement may remayne to every Reader. He semen and twentieth of August, having our diffratch from her Maiestie, wee brought all own

fleet into the Sound of Plinmouth, and the eight and twentieth day wee fet fayle for our pretended

Quarrell bewint the Ge Voyage. In our course alongst the Coasts of Spaine, was divers meetings with our Generals, where val-

fed many rankend peeches, and fuch as Sir John Hawkins never put off till death. In this traff was put on a resolution with Sir Francis Drake, and Sir Thomas Baskeruile to take the Grand Canaria, where-Reason for and upon a counfall was beld, and therein propounded by Sir Francis, how great abenefit, much bonour, and to aganfi the Ca- good refresting was offered us, and therefore would fland on most voyces. Sir Iolin Hawkins to whom nary exploit. bee fake this veterly refused, with thefereasons following. First, there could bee no need confidering our small time out. Secondly, not possible to carrie it without haz arding all, and Thirdly, not good to lose time, which would never be recovered. To this last reason Sir Thomas Baskeruile answered. First. for time , bee-would require but foure dayes in this manner, In foure houres be would take it , and in the

rest would bee burne it downe, except they would compound, thus the fourth day would be be bipped readse for our Voyage.

In this controversie Sir Francis would goe for the Canaria with such as would follow binn , and Sir Iohn Hawkins with the rest for the Indies, yet after this bard debating, at the earnest request of some friends, Sir Iohn Hawkins upon the confession of need, was content to assist them, yet in his indecement 20 labour loss with much havard of all. Then altogether standing alongit, the fixe and twentieth of Sep. tember we came to anchor afore the Fort that guards the landing place at Grand Canaria, where were put into our Boates and Pinnaffes, all our land men under the conduct of Sir Thomas Baskeruile Colonell Generall, who drew head neere the middest of the Beatche. Betwixt the Fort and the Towne, as most safety for our landing. To this place even then did the Spaniards draw two or three very small Peeces of Ordnance, with which, and with some companies of Souldiers made some shew of resistance, whereupon notwithstanding most of our smaller shipping, who accompanied our Boats with their Artillers, See Thomas made bu retraite without putting foot on land, and then to know, as it was reported, if our Generals would put their Voyage thereon or no. With this better confideration were all our men Shipped agame, and food along it to the Westermost end thereof. Here went many ashoure some for water, some for 10 plea ure, amongst whom, the eight and twentieth day was Captagne Grimstone with two more in his company flaine, and by Peafants as was thought ! with this emill beginning, this night wee weighed and flood alongst for the Indies.

Dominica.

The Grand

thirtieth day we came all to fafe anchoring at Guardalopa, onely the Delight and the Francis, two of our smallest Prinasses, who being to becomerds out of sight, was there chased by fine Spanish fries, in which Sir I. Hawires chafe the Francis was taken, the other escaped with this newes. The last of this moneth Sir John Haw-KIDS not able to beare bis oriefes out longer, fickned. Here we built feuen Pinnaffes. The fourth of No. nember were they lanched, and we flood of for Porto tico, the eight day in the way we anchored amone the Hands Virgins, where all our Souldiers were appointed to their land Captaines. The twelfth day AD we came to anchor afore the Harbour at Porto rico, where dyed Sir Nicholas Clifford, by a foot from a platforme, fitting at supper in the D:fiance, with this stot was likewife Master Brewt Browne burt, who lived but few dayer after, and this day alfo died Sir Iohn Hawking, whose death of many was much

The ciebt and twentieth of Ollober, wee came faire by the Southermost end of Dominica : and the

At Parts rice. He dyeth.

> In this Harbour rid those fine Frigats of the Kings, which came for the treasure. This place beeing well viewed by our Generall, and Colonell Generall, a counfell was beld and therem agreed , That first and most necessariest these Prigats should bee burned, and for that service was named out the next night thirtie of our Boates and Pinnasses with fire workes, and with warlibe weapons, these Frigats were fo

Treafure loft

well defended aboord, and with the Ordnance aftere, that our men returned with confuming onely one of them. out of which were faued fome of the Spaniards, who reported certainly, that there the Treasure of 50 two Millions was, and fo were our men taken in the Francis. Notwithstanding all these quickning newes after some few dayes, we weighed and stood alongst to the Westermost and of this lland, where we contented us with some refreshing of water, Oranges and Plan-tanes, here were built some Pinnasses more. At this place font hee abourd me with his warrant sortie

thirteenth day, came in the same all in Pearle, and the fourteenth day came in their Lieutenaut for the

Souldiers out of the Defrance. The foure and twentieth day we weighed and flood along if for me Hand. called Knaw-law, with which wee fell the nine and twentieth day, but flayed not; thus flanding along st. The first of December we arrived at Cape dela Vela, the second in the morning was put into our Boats Rin dela Mattha. and Pinnaffes, all our Souldiers for Rio dela Hatcha. This was taken, the people being all fied, yet here with fearch in the Woods, and intelligence of some Negros, was found great flore of Pearle, Plate, Iewels, Rials of Plate, Bolts of Silke, rich apparell, with much other luggage. The fixt of this moneth, 62 brought in Ser Francis from one other Towne called Rancharia, great quantitie of Pearle and lug gage, The ninth day came in some Spaniards, with intent to ransome their houses, Negros, and some Spi-

foure houres respice for further answere from their Gouernour Don Francisco Manso, bis answere was himleife would come to conference, which hee did the fixteenth day. After dinner our Generall and Colonell Generall, with the Spaniards had secret conference about this Ransoms, whereupon concluding, they absolutely broke of, and therefore in all baste was fire out me some of the houses, and the Gonernour had two boures time to cleere him of our Army. Thus baning barnt Rio dela Hatcha, Rancharia, and Tapia. The eighteenth day wee weighed and Good along for Sancta Marca, to which we came thetwentieth day, here we onely tooke fome fine Pri- Santa Marta.

delivery. But in the valuing, their quantity and quality would not be taken wherefore departed they with

foners, whereof one was the Licatenant there. The one and twentieth, it was put to fire, and we (et fayle for Nombre de Dios, towbish we came the fenen and twentieth day, where in like manner the reople had

10 acquited the Towne, yet here was found by intelligence of fome Negros, as I heard, two and twentie Sowes of Silver, Gold in Bullion, Some levels, great Store of Plate, and Riall of Plate, with much other luggage. The nine and twentieth day, Sir Thomas Baskeruile. Colonell Generall with all his a- Sir T. B. skeruils blest Captaines and Synldiers tooke their sourney for Panama, now the marke of our Voyage; who neere i we ney for the mid-may being empeached by some Spaniards and Nogros, made their retreite to the Ships at Nom- Panama. bre de Dios, at this encounter were few of our men flaine, some burt, some of the which there left to the

mercie of the Spaniards.

The fifth day of lanuary, all our men being skipped, the towne and Galliots put to fire, we set sayle then by the adnice of a Spaniard, for the River Nicorago, in which way we fell with one Itand called Elcudo, a Estudo.

place which affordeth nothing good, yet here wee flaged from the tenth day untill the three and twentieth. when we fet fayle and plied to the Eastward, which by Gods speciall fanour, the eight and twentieth day we came in with Porta laibella. This morning died our Generall Sir Francis Drake. This is the place Sir F. Draket where the people of Nombre de Dios meaneth to dwell at. Here found we a beginning of a strong plat- death. forme with three Braffe Peeces vimounted. In my opinion , this was our best remove , for if God had not prevented our Generals purpose for the River Niccrazo, it would have hazarded all her Maiefies Ships, farre with the reft. Here tooke we in ballast, water, mended our fayles, and calked our flips.

The eight of February, Sir Thomas Baskeruile taking upon him Generall, we all fet faile for Santa Maria homewards, but not able to recover higher then Carthagena, as wee gheffe in the Bonauenture, o with the splitting of all our sailes, put ouer for lamaica. In this course lost we the Forc-Gebt, the Sufan Parnell, the Helpe, and the Gregory. The fine and twentieth day came we faire by Canaria granda, which bore over us in the morning East North-east , and this day was all our flesh and fish frent. The second of March, making this our miserse like to be known to Sir Thomas Baskeruile, who hath ginen mee his promile to relieue mee at my need, his answere was carelely for vs, and with all faid, bee would goe in with the Iland Pinos to water, which I otterly missiked, the winde then being good to stand along st. very ill to lofe, and more for that no Englishman in our fleete either knew or ener heard of any watering or other good there.

In this reasoning betwirt vs, we descried twentie sayle of shops a head vs, who were the Kings men of Warre, wayting our home comming, it was my fortune in the Bonauenture to take to taske the 40 Vice-admirall, one of the twelne Apostles of the Kings, for so I thought by a great golden Saint, which manned her Poope. The manner of our fight and my deserving, I leave even to the report of mine enemies, vet thus much understand, their Admirals with the rest, all the next day being in the winde, was content we should passe in peace. Thus being quietly, and we all disimborned some two bundred leagues, I made a second demand of Sir Thomas, his promise for victuals, which he viterly refused, wherefore as well in regard of our Generals lacke as mine owne danger, with a flot in our fight, wherein it was indifferent with mee to line or die; I told him I must make more haste home then I presumed hee would , yet wee stayed with him two dayes longer, when in a storme I left him, and this was the fourteenth day of March.

Now for these two English Sea-worthies, as wee have begunne their American Adventures, so and ended them together, to I have thought good to infert this following centure of a Gentleman in a Letter of his, touching them both, as an Epitaph dedicated to their memory.

C lr. I have according to your request, and my owne plainnesse sent you here the comparison betweene Sthofe two Commanders Sir Francis Drake and Sir John Hawins. They were both much given to trauell in their youth and age, attempting many bonourable Voyages alike; as that of Sir John Hawkins to Guiny, to the les of America, to Saint John de Vlua. So likewife Sir Francis Drake after many Discourses of the West Indies, and other parts, was the first Englishman that did ever compaffe the World; wherein, as also in his deepe indgement in Seacanfes, he did farre exceed not Sir Iohn Hawkins alone, but all others whom soener. In their owne natures and disposition they did us much dif-

67 fer : as in the managing matters of the Warres , Sir Francis beeing of a lively first , resolute, quicke, and sufficiently valiant: The other slow, seasow, and hardly brought to resolution. In Councell Sir John Hawkins did often differ from the sudgement of others, feeming thereby to know more in doubtfull things, then he would viter. Sir Francis was a willing hearer of every mans opinion, but commonly a follower of his owne: he never attempted any action, wherein he was an absolute Commander, but hee

mards Prisoners, and concluded for 24000. Pezos, every Pezo worth fine Stillings fixe pence. The

performed the same with great reputation, and did easily dispatch great matters; Contrariwise Sir John Hawkins did only give the bare attempt of things, for the most part without any Fortune or good fueceffe therein. Ser Join Hawkins did naturally bate the Land fouldier, and though hee were very popular, yet be affected more the common fort, then his equals; Sir Francis contrarily did much lone the Land-fouldier, and greatly advanced good parts, where some he found them. Hee was also affable to all men and of easte accesse. They were both of many vertues , and agreeing in some. At patience in enduring labours and hardnesse, Observation and Memory of things past, and great discretion in sudden dangers, in which, neither of them was much diffempered, and in some other vertues they differed Ser John Hawkins bad in him mercie and apineffe to forgine, and true of word; Ser Francis hard in reconciliation, and confiancie in friendship; be was withell sewere and consteam, magnanimious, and liberall. They were both faultie in ambition, but more the one then the other; For in Sir Francis was an in fa- 10 tiable defire of honor indeed beyond reason. He was infinite in promises, and more temperate in advertir, then in better Fortune. He had also other imperfettions, as apinesse to anger, and bitternesse in disgracing, and too much pleased with open flattery: Sir John Hawkins had in him malice with dissimulation, rude nessen behausour, and passing sparing, indeed miserable. They were both happy alike in being Great Commanders, but not of equal successe, and grew great and famous by one meanes, rising through their owne Vertues, and the Fortune of the Sea. Their was no comparison to bee made betweene their wel-deserning and good parts, for therein Sir Francis Drake did farre exceede. This is all I bane observed in the Voyages, wherein I have served with them.

R. M.

A briefe recitall or nomination of Souldiers, other Englishmens Voyages related as large in the printed Works of Master HAKLVYT.

Ther Voyages might here be inserted, made by Englishmen into the Bay of Mexico, as that by Captayne W. Michelfon, and William Mace of Rateliffe, in the Dogge 1589. which there tooke three shippes. They held fight with a Spanish man of Warre, who by fraud 30 fought perfidiously to obtayne that which they could not by vnspotted Fortitude. They put out a flagge of Truce, and after kinde entertaynment aboord the English, inuited them to their shippe, where they assaulted them, stabbing Roger Kong foold the Pilot to the Heart, flaying others , and forcing the rest to trust God and the Sea rather then the Deuill and the Spaniards; thus fwimming to their ship.

Treachery of Sir G. Careys.

The valiant fight of the Content, a small ship of Sir George Careys, (Lord Hundsdon, Lord Chamberlaine) 1591. June 13. with three great Spanife fhips, each of fix or feuen hundred, and one fmall hippe and two Gallies, farre more beeing flaine of the enemies then the English had Captaine New- to fight: Heaue to Mafter Hakluyts report: as also Captayne Christopher Newport his Voyage with three ships and a Pinnasse the same yeere, which tooke and spoyled Tagnana and Ocoa in 40 Histanisla, and Truxillo, besides other Prizes, and in the way homeward, were at the taking

of the Madre de Dios. The next yeere Captayne Lane Gen. of Master Wats hist fleete , Captayne Roberts in the Exchange of Brist-II, and Captayne Bemanins Wood with foure shippes fer forth by the Lord Thomas Howard, Captayne Kenell of Lime-bonfe, and Captayne King of Reteliffe Road, with thirteene fayles before Hanana, wayting for purchafe.

folke. Thirteene Layles English Sir R . Dudley.

Anno 1594. the Honourable Sir Robert Dudley fet forth with two ships and two Pinnasses, and made his Voyage to Trinidada, and the Coast of Paria, returning by the Iles of Granata. Santa (ruez, Santa Inan de Puerto Rico, Mona, Zacheo, and Bermuda. In which Voyage he and his company tooke or funke nine Spanifo thips; of which one was a man of Warre of fixe hun-50 dred tins. The particulars are related by himfelfe in Mafter Hablust.

Captaine Amas Prefton. Captaine Sum-Sir Antonie Sherley.

In him alio the Reader may find the victorious Voyage of Captayne Amias Prefton, and Captayne George Summers (both fince Knights) Anno 1 595. in which the lles of Puerto Santo, and of Coche neere Margarita, the Fort and Towne of Core, the Citie of Saint Iago de Leon, were facked and burnt; the Towne of Cumana ranformed, and lamaica entred.

Captaine Par-M. Pudfey. M. Hare. Sir I. Lancafter. Fenton and Jobn Drake.

Sir Antonie Sherley. Anno 1596. fet forth from Hampton, with nine ships and a Galley, to Saint lago Dominica, Margarua, Iamaica, Bay of Honduras, and homewards by Newfoundland. M. W. Homeins. This and Captayne Parkers Voyage 1596, to the same parts and Ports, with his taking of Campeche the chiefe Towne of lacatan, and bringing thence a Frigat, laden with the Kings Tribute: Alfo the Voyages of Sir Walser Raleigh to Guiana, and other intelligences of that Nation: likewife 60 Mafter William Hawkins his Voyages to Brafill, and those of Rewiger and Borey, Pudfay, Stephen Hare, Sir lames Lancasters taking of Fernambuc : Fenton and Ward, and John Draker Voyage after his departure from Fenton vp the River of Plate, and living fifteene moneths with the Sa-Dages, Anno 1582.

CHAP.5. Chidleys Voyage to the Straits. Peter Carders strange fortunes.

All their I referre to the painfull labours of Maiter Hakluyt, who hath well deferued of the English Nation, and of these Neptunian Heroes; that I mention not the many Voyages of others in those times of difference betwixt England and Spaine, which here and there you shall finde mention of in these Relations. Alto, Aano 1589, three thips were set torth by Malter Chillie and others for the Magellan Straites, one of which arrived there and tooke there a Spaniard, one of the foure hundred which had beene fent thither to inhabit, w ich had long lived there alone, the rest being famished. They spent fixe weekes there with contrary winds, and fixe only of their company returned, they all o being racked on the Coast of Normandie, as W. Masoths one

Thefe I doe but fummarily mention, as an Index rather to Mafter Haklayte labours, then with 10 any intent to give the discourse thereof. But the Brange fortunes of Peter Carder (not hitherto published) compell me to take speciall notice thereof, which himselfe hath thus related.

CHAP. V.

The Relation of PETER CARDER of Saint Verian in Cornwall, within fenen miles of Falmouth, which went with Sir FRANCIS in his Voyage about the World, begun 1 5 7 7. who with seuen others in an open Pinnasse or Shallop of fine tuns, with eight O ares, was separated from his Generall by soule weather in the South Sea, in October , An. 1578. who returning by the Straites of Magellan toward Brasill, were all cast away, faue this one only afore named, who came into England nine yeeres after miraculously, having escaped many strange dangers, aswell among divers Sauages as Christsans.



Fter Sir Francis Drake had passed the Straites of Magellan, the fixt of September 1578, and was driven downe to the Southwards in the South Sea, vinto the latitude of fiftie five degrees, and a terfe, with fuch accidents as are mentioned in his Voyage, and returning backe toward the Straite againe. The eight of October weloit light of the Elizabeth, one of our Conforts, wherein Matter Iohn Winter was, who returned by the Straites againe, as wee vinderitood afterward at With this Can;

our comming home into England; according to his Voyage extant in print. Shortly after his fe- Winter Ihaue paration from our company our Generall commanded eight men to furnish our small Pinnasse or had coference Shallop with eight men, whole names were these, my selfe, Peter Carder aforesaid, Richard Bur- in Sept. 1618. nish of London, John Cottle and another, both servants to Master John Hawkins, Artyur a Duich told me that Trumpetor, Richard loyner, servant to Vincent Scoble of Plummonth, Pasche Gidie of Salt Albe, and solemne post-AO William Pitcher of London.

This company was commanded to waite upon the ship for all necessary vies, but having not tually taken of passed one dayes victuals in vs, nor any Card nor Compasse, saving only the benefit of eight oares, the passed one dayes victuals in vs, nor any Card nor Compasse, saving only the benefit of eight oares, the vie of her in the night time by foule weather fuddenly ariting we loft the fight of our fhip, and though our Maiefly and Thip fought vs and we them, for a fortnight together, yet could we never meet together againe. her fuccessors Howbeit within two doves after we lost them, we recoursed the shoare, and relected our selues which he dewith Muscels, Oysters. Trabs, and some forts of Roots in the Woods, and within a fortnight after the lose of our confess, wee returned backe into the Straites of Magellan, and in two places came on land on the mayne of America, to relieue our selues in certaine Bayes, where wee World. found Oysters, Muscels and Crabs as before, and filled our Barricos with fresh water, and in one Thenames of 50 of these places we found Sauages, but they fled from vs.

Afterward we came to Penguin Iland in the Straites, and there wee falted and dryed many Cns. They lose their of the Penguins for our fullenance. Thence we shaped our course for Port Saint Iulian, where Sir fine, Francis Drake not many moneths before had beheaded Captayne Doutse: In this Port we stayed Their returne a day or two, and tooke fish like Breames and Mackerils, with hookes and lines. Then coffing to the Straits the land for some formight, some hundred leagues beyond the River of Plate, wee found a small and thorow the land for fome fortnight, some hundred leagues beyond the Nuclei Figure 1 and three leagues from the mayne full of Seales, whereof wee killed good from to our fuffer North Seales. nance, the young ones we found best and eate them roast. Then passing ouer the River of Plate Peneum Hand. to the North fide, we put into a small River, and went vp into the Woods fixe of vs : other two Port Saint 14remayning on the shore to looke to the Boat.

60 While we were thus feeking food in the Woods the people of the Countrey, called Tapines, fome fixthe or federate armed with Bowes and Arrowes (not fiercely at vs., and wounded vs. all Foure English very grieuoully, and foure of vo were taken by them, and neuer recourted: the rest of vo they taken by baur. purlued to our Pinnalle, and wounded vs all : but in the end we put them to flight. Thence we ges, the reft went to an Iland fome three leagues of in the Sea, not about a league in compatie. Where were wounded.

Rifff 2

dir remiyac.

P. der & Car. ser Carder and William Pucher. Here we remay ned the toace of two moneths, in all which time for our victuals, weekada froir (omewhat like vnto Oranges, growing vpon a high Tree, the leafe whereof was fomewhat like the Afren leafe, and small; white Crabs creeping upon the fand, and little Eeles which we found under the lands, but in all this Iland we could not find any fresh water in the World, in-No fresh water formuch that we were driven to drinke our owne vrine, which we faued in some sheards of certaine larres, which we had out of cur Pinnasse, and set our vrine all night to coole therein, to In

Red vrine.

drinke it the next morning, which thus being drunke often, and often auoyded, became in a while exceeding red, in all this time wee had no raine, nor any good meanes to faue it, if it had fallen, whereupon, iceing our felues in to great extremitie, wee deuised how we might get ynto the Mayne, and by good fortune, found a planke of fome ten foot in length, which of likelihood had criven from the River of Plate, whereunto with withes, wee bound fome other wood. and furnishing our felues with the foretaid fruit, Eeles and Crabs . wee committed our felues to Palage to the God; hoping with the fetting in of the tyde, and with the helpe of two poles, which we vied in fread of Oares to attay ne vnto the Mayne, which was fome three leagues off, but wee made

it three dayes and two nights before we could come to the Mayne. At our comming first on land, we found a little River of very sweet and pleasant water, where 20 William Pitcher my onely comfort and companion (although I difwaded him to the contrary) o-

Sword and Target with me, I met with fome thirtie of the Sauages of the Countrey, called Target

Piteler breakes uer granke himfelte, being pinched before with extreame thirft, and to my vnfpeakeable griefe withdraking and difcomfort, within halfe an houre after dyed in my prefence, whom I buried afwell as I The next day following, as I trauelled along the shoare towards Brasill, having mine Arming

Tuppan baffe Sauages.

pan Balle, which being armed with Bowes and Arrowes, and having two or three great Rattles with itones in them, and a kind of Tabrets that they yied in flead of Drummes, they went dancing before me about a Musket shot off, and then they stayed and hanged vp a piece of a white Net of Cotton-wooll, ypon a flicks end of foure foote high, and went from it about a 20 Musket shot off : then I comming vnto it, tooke it in my hand, viewed it, and hung it vp againe, He couch with then many of them, beckning and weating with their hands, cryed vnto mee, Iyorie, Iyorie, which (as afterward I understood, by living long among them) was as much as Come baber, Then I came to them, and they friendly led me a long fome halfe a mile, all the way dancing, af well men as women, whereof there were some eight in the company, vitill we came to another Riuer fide, where they hanged up their Beds, tying them fast to a couple of Trees, being a kinde of white Cotton Netting, which hanged two foot from the ground, and kindled fire of two flicks. which they made on both fides of their Beds, for warmth, and for driving away of wilde beafts.

and having fed me with fuch as they had ; we tooke our rest for that night. The next day earely in the morning they tooke downe and truffed vp their beds, crying ti- 40

allo, tiallo, which is to fay, away, away, and marched that day towards Brafill fome twentie Sauage towne

miles, and came to their Towne where their chiefe Governour was. This Towne was built four four, with four house onely, every house containing about two Bowe shot in length. and the houses made with small trees like an Arbour, being thatched over downe to the ground with Palme tree leaves: they have no windowes, but some thirtie or fortie doores on every side of this fauadron, by which each Familie paffeth in and out; their chiefe Lord, whose name was Caron, being a man of fome forty yeares old, had nine wives; but the rest have onely one wife, except fuch as are counted more valiant, then the rest which are permitted two wives, one to looke to their children at home, and the other to goe to the warres with them. This Towne contained very neere 4000 persons of all forts. The next day the Gouernour sent divers of his people a- 50 broad to bring in all forts of victuall which the Countrie yeelded, and offered them vinto me to fee which of them I liked best, among which there was great store of fish, as well Sea-fish as freshwater-fishes, many forts of Fowles, many forts of Rootes, and divers Land-beaits, as Ar-

Hospitall en-

deferibed.

Caiou their

Lord,

madillos, which afterward I found to be very good meate. Of all these at the first, I onely tooke one Fowle, and a couple of filles, and bestowed the rest among their children, which procured me no fmall good will among them. Here I stated among them (being well entertained) for certaine moneths, visitl I had learned their language most part of their language, in which meane space I noted their manners, which were as followeth. They went out to the warres armed at my first comming, onely with Bowes and Ar-

Their wattes. rowes, time three or foure hundred at a time, and when they had the victory of their enemies, they tied one of their Captines to one of their company with Cotten cords falt arme to arme, and bringing them home, within two or three daies after they would tie them to a pooft, and with a malie club of red wood one of the firongest of the company (after they have drunke a certaine firong drinke with dancing round about him) at one blow flits his head a funder : this

CHAP. S. Peter Carders life with the Sauages and yeelding to the Portugals. 1180

drinke is made by their women of a certaine roote called I. P. which first they seeth, and after- Their drinke ward chew in their mouthes, and then fpit it out agains into a long trough and mingle it with and drunken. water, and there let it worke two or three daies, and gate a yeeft voon it, like to our Ale; which neffe, done, they take the liquor and put it into broad mouth larres of earth, and of this both their men and women doe drinke at their teafts, till they be as drunke as Apes.

I could observe no Religion among it them, but onely that they reverence and worshippe the Moone, especially the new Moone; whereat they doe reloyce in leaping, dancing, and clapping Religions their hands. The Merchantable commodities of this Countrie, are Brafill-wood, Tobacco, red Pepper, and Cotten Wooll. They have also great flore of Apes, Monkies. Armachins. Hogges

To without tailes as bigge as ours; their Birds are Parrais, Parraketos, blacke Fowles as bigge as He teachth Doues, and Offriches as high as a man. After I had lived about halfe a yeare among frithem; and them to make learned their language, the King requested me to goe to the warres with him against his ene- Chibs. mies the Tapmeer. which I granted, but before we fet out, I shewed them a way for making of certaine Targets of the barke of a Tree some three quarters of a yeard long for defence against Arrowes, whereof we made fome hundred; and withall I wished them to make some two hundred of Clubs. Which being done we marched forward forbe 700. in number, which by mine aduice were all marked with a red kinde of Balfome from the knee downeward youn one legge to be known from our enemies (by the way it is to be noted that there are three forts of Ballamum in that Countrie, to wit, White, Red and Blacke very odoriferous and excellent good for a

20 greene wound, and the White I efferme to be beit.) In three dayes march we came to another Towne built foure square, as before I have declared, but much leffer; we set voor the Towne ... about foure of the clocke in the morning, the enemy standing youn defence of their Astowes. were much deceived by reason of our Targets, which being reconded by our Clubbes, wee immediately knocked downe to the number of two hundred, the reft, except fome twenty prifoners escaped into the woods. Here the King staied one day, and caused many of thir carkales to Man earling. be broyled upon the coales and eaten. The chiefest riches which we found here was their drinke which they yied to make themselues drunks withall; their Cotten Beddes and their Tobacco. Spoiles As for Gold and Silver they neither iceke, nor make any accompt thereof. This is to be noted. that how many men there Sauages doe kill, to many holes they will have in their vifage, be-

30 ginning first in their nether lippe, then in their cheekes, thirdly in both their eye-browes, Notes of genand laftly in their eares. Those twenty priteners which we brought home, were afterward kil-

led rofted and eaten.

While I remay ned here among it these people, certayn Portugals accompanied with certayn Negres and Brafilians, came within some ten leagues of our town, to fee whether they could surprise any of our Sauages, and to harken what was become of me, for that they had heard by this time that some or Sir Francie Drakes company were east ashouse amongst the Sauage people, but there comming was not fo fecret, but that two of the Portugals and certayne Negros were taken, and Portugals es. after their confession , of the intent of their comming thither, they were brained with clubs, ten. broyled and eaten. These things thus passing, I became futor to the King to give mee leave to deao part his Countrey, and to goe to lome River of Brafill not planted by the Portugals , to fee if I

could tpy out any English or French thip to paffe me into my Countrey, which hee in the end fauourably granted; and fent foure of his people with me to furnish me with victuals, which they His departure, did very plentifully of Birds, Fish, and Roots, for the space of nine or ten weeks, all which time they did accompany me, and I defiring to goe toward the Line, they brought me into the towne of Babia, Detodos los Sanches.

But about foure or fine miles before we came to the towne, I yeelded my felfe to a Portugal. He veeldeth called Michael Ionas, declaring vnto him that I was an Englishman, and enquired whether there himselse to a were any Englishmen dwelling in the towne, hee told me that there was one Antonio de Paua Portugali. in the towne which could speake good English, and was a louer of our Nation, and brought mee directly vnto his house. This Antonio de Pana, pittying my case, and adulting mee not to bee

knowne, that I vaderstood the Portugall Tongue, brought mee to the Gouernour, whose name was Diego Vas, this Gouernour told me by Antonio de Pana , which became my interpreter, that feeing I was found in the Inland of their Countrey Westward, being a strange, contrary to their Lawer, he could doe no leffe then commit me to Prifon, and fend me into Portugall to be committed to the Gallies for tearme of life, to this I answered by the aduice of my good friend Antonio de Pana, that I came not willingly into those Dominions, but beeing by calualtie once come there, I was not taken Prifoner, but fought them out and came and yeekled my felfe into their hands, laying downe my weapons at one of his Nations feet.

Neuertheleife he fent me to Priion, whereby the meanes of Antonio de Pana, and other of His impulen-60 his friends, I was sufficiently relieued, and within one fortnight after brought againe publikely ment to the barre in the Towne-house to mine answere. There I answered the second time by Antonio de Pana, my Interpreter, that I thought it sufficient, that when I might have kept our, yet of mine owne free will I had made a long journey, with great hazard of my life through the Countries of Sauages, being Man-eaters, which favoured me to feeke the Porsugall Christians out, and Fffff 3

Deliuerance.

peaceably to put my felfe into their hands. Hereupon the Gouernor and his affiftants confulted and concluded together that I should be committed to the house of Antonio de Parme, & there remaine vntill they might write into Portugall to know the Kings pleafure concerning me. Within one years they received answer from Lisbon concerning me, that I should be forth comming. and that hereafter the King would fend further order for my transporting into Portugall. But abone two yeares passed before this order came : In which meane space, first I spent part of my His employtime in going into the fields as overfeer of my friends Negros and Savages in their planting and dreffing of their Sugar Canes, and in planting of Gingers, which grow there exceeding well, but is a forbidden trade to be transported out for hindering of other places and in cutting downe of Brafil-wood, and in bringing it downe by Rivers vpon rafts vnto the Port where the Ships doe lade it, and in feeing them gather their Cotten wooll, and picking the feedes out of it, and pack-

ing the same, and in gathering of the long Pepper both white and red. After I had fpent, some yeare and an halfe in this butinesse, my friend Antonio de Parne ha-

ning a small Barke of his owne, which he employed in carrying of wares from Port to Port, and for bringing of Sugars to places where Ships should lade, yied me, knowing I had bin brought His coast vove wp to the Sea, in these his businesses. Our first Voyage was to Ilbeos, where we left some wares, ages to libeos. and flaied there some moneth : then we went to Puerso Seguro, and there tooke in some Sugars Puerto Seguro. for Linnen Cloath, Bayes, Wine and Oyle. Then returning home, shortly after we were set Spirito Santa. forth againe in the same Barke to Spirito Sancto, and Samt Vincent, and the River Ienero, where discharging our wares to certaine Factors, and receiving Sugars and Cotten Wooll aboord, we re- 20 R.Lenge. Damae Leage an English Sure turned lafely home. In may first Voyage one Master Danid Leake an English Surgeon, lost there

out of an English Shippe in the Countrie, being much fought for because of his skill, had passage with vs from Babia to Spirite Santte. Vpon my returne of my fecond voyage, my good friend Honeft Portugal Antonio de Paque aduertifed me, that a Shippe was shortly to arrive there to carry me into Portweall prisoner telling me that he should not be able any longer to helpe me, and therefore wished me to looke to my felte; but kindely offered me his helpe to conuay me away : whereupon I tooke his Boate and foure of his Negror, pretending to goe on fishing to the Sea; and so of purpose going much to Leeward of the place, I put in to Fernambuc : where the Negroes being examined Fernambuc. whence we came, and for what cause, being vtterly ignorant of mine intent, answered that they

were drawn thicker by force of weather, and for their Masters sake were well intreated, and re- 20 turned home with the next winde, my felfe remaining fecretly behinde them.

Hulke with eight English. Marchant

Royall.

Within certains moneths there came thither a Hulke with eight English men and foureteens Portugals, who after some three moneths had laden the same with English and Portugal goods to come for England. The English goods belonged to M. Cordal, M. Beecher, and M. Sadler, worthipfull Merchants of the Citie of London; which had bin left in the Countrie before by the Merchant Royall. Thus passing homeward in our course as far as the Iles of the Acores, within fight of CaptainGeorge the Ile of Pike, being fine Portugall Ships in confort, we met with Cap. Reymond, and Cap. George Drake of Exeter, with two English Ships of warre, who because the peace betweene England and Spaine was broken the yeare before, commanded vs to yeelde our felues to them as their lawfull prifes, which we did al fine accordingly without any relitance. But by contrary weather we 40 were driven into Baltimore in Ireland, and within a while after we arrived in the narrow Seas in His arrivall in the hauen of Chichifter, in the end of November 1586, nine yeares and foureteene dayes after my departure out of England with Sir Francis Drake in his Voyage about the World.

My strange aduentures, and long living among cruell Savages being known to the right hono-The Q. rewar. rable the Lord Charles Howard, Lord high Admirall of England, he certified the Queenes Maiefty thereof with speede, and brought me to her presence at White-ball, where it pleased her to talke with me a long houres space of my transiles and wonderfull escape, and among other things of the manner of M. Domties execution; and afterward befrowed 22 angels on me, willing my Lord to have confideration of me; with many gracious words I was difmiffed; humbly thanking the Almighty for my miraculous preferuation, and fafe returne into my native Countrie.

To the Reader.

Sectionalds. HEre masse those read that dissimal and set all voyage of Master Thomas Candish, in which be contions of the Globe, we have presented thee)thou findest a perpetuall Sunshine, no man ener having in necre so little time compassed that huge circumference, or taken bis choise of so much more wealth then be could bring bome, or remissed his native soile with greater pompe and triumph. The clearest day bath a night , 65 I haue heard nor doth Summer last alway; the Sea bath bis ebbing as well as flowing : the Aire hath calmes and failes at his re. Stormes : the Moone bideth sometimes the Suns lustre from us by her interposition; sometimes is her selfe turne in the ti- meerely darkened by the Earths shadow. And if the Elements Scasons, and Heanens two Eyes be subference of constant inconstancie, immutable mutability; this vanishing centre of dinersified vanitie, which -jerence of comments, which we call Man; shat benein also be should not resemble this samplar of the universe, as becommend a sixthe man to be like that larger Prototype. This we see all, and feele daily in our selnes: this in Master Candish bereis Sir Francis Drakes before, the Seas two darlings, there and thence both lining and dying ; if disposation of the body may be called a death, where the soule arriveth in beauen, the name file the earth, the deedes are presidents to posterate, and England their Countrie bath the glory alone that the bath brought forth two illustrious Captaines and Generals, which have fortunately embraced the round matte of their vafte mother, without mafte of life, reputation, and substance; yea victorious ouer elements and unemies, illustrious in wealth and bonour, they have comne home like the Sunne in a Sum-

10 mers day, seeming greatest neerest bis enening home, the whole skie entertaining and welcoming him in festivall scarlets and displayed colours of triumph. No Nation else hath yeelded one, which in all these respects may be matchable. Magalianes bath left himselfe odom to his Portugals for offered service to the Spaniard, and like Phaeton thinking with Phebus bis Chariot to compaffe the World, perified midway. Midmay was Schoutens Ship and men attached, and be and his had a fertile returne. Cano came or rather flad home like Magaliane's ghoss, hardly and with a few escaping. Noost scarlly escaped taking, drowning, firing, trechery, and hossistic. Spillbergen got blowes in the South Sea where Drake and Candish were made rick, and returned an Indian Merchant. Three Dutch worthies: but all lighted their candles at these two English Torobes. Thus may me magnific Drakes swimming, and can die the memorie of our Candish. But where it is faid ye are Gods, it is added, ye shall dye like men.

20 The Sea is awaning wanering foundation, the winder theatre both for Comedies and Tracedies. You have feene Drake acting both: and in both you here finde Candish. Christ is yesterday, to day, the fame for ever; God is without fladow, (without paffibilitie or possibilitie) of change . a light in whom is no darkeneile : but fublunarie things are like the Moone their neerest Planet, which never viewes the earth two dayes together with one face. God hath made our way to him fo full of chances and changes, that our unstedie, support way on this earth, and calme-forme-voyage in the fe Seas, way make us more to mediate and thirst after that banen of instabilitie, and beauen of eternity. Some passionate freeches of Master Candilh against some primate persons not employed in this action, I have suppressed. Some others I baue let paffe; not that I charge Captaine Davis or others, but that it may appeare what Sup. Tom. 1.1.4. the Generall thought of them. Master Hakluyt hath published Mafter lanes report of this Voyage,

20 which makes more fanourable on Captaine Davis bie side. If hee did deale treacheronsty, treacherie found him out, as in his last Voyage before is declared. If any thinke the Captaine here to conceiue amille I hall be willing to have the most charitable conceit, and therefore remit the Reader to Master Hak-

luves Relation afore fasd, for his apologie : the fum whereof, and of that Voyage is this.

Mafter lane there relateth, that Aug. 26. 1591. Captaine Candiff fet forth from Plimmouth with three tall Shippes, the blacke Pinnace, and a Barke. Nouemb. 29, they fell with the coaft Cap Dark his of Brafile. They tooke the Towne of Santes, and burnt Saint Vincent. After a cruell florme they voyage into arrived at Port Defire, and after fell with the Magellan firaites. Occasionally (faith Inne) they the South Sea, loft Captaine Candish, and went backe to Port Desire to seeke him: and whiles Captaine Danie Milane, Hab. further intended to feeke out the Generall, a dangerous conspiracie was plotted to murther Test. 40 him by Parker and Smith. There is also a testimoniall subscribed by fortie men. Thence they

returned to the Straits, and had fight of the people, which were very flrong, nimble, and naked. Sep. 12, they came in light of the South Sea, and being forced backe, the next day put forth againe, and being eight or ten leagues free from land, were repelled into the Straits. Octob.2. they put into the South Sea againe, and were free of all land, and there in a florme loft the blacke Pinnace. The Shippes company were in despaire of life, but by Gods grace recoursed the Straits, and a third time came to Port Defire; and there loft nine of their men (of which Parker and Smith were two) being on Land for Wood and Water : they knew not what became of them, but gueffed that the Saluages had denoured them. For the elementh of November, while Sugge Caple most of the men were at the Ile of Pengwins, onely the Captaine and Master with fixe others balswith dogs 50 left in the Shippe, there came a great multitude of Sauages to the Shippe (there on ground on the faces or 12312

04Ze) throwing dust in the ayre, leaping and running like bruite Beasts, having vizors on their oaze) throwing until the same systems of faces like Dogges faces indeede. We feared they would fet Dreams omie our Shippes on fire, for they would fuddenly make fire, whereat wee maruelled, fetting the pous bulhes on fire, but scared with Peeces they fled. Here they found much Scuruie-graffe which re- Men loft or couered them; and dried 20000. Pengwins, making some falt by laying the falt water on rockes taken as Kuiin holes. The fixt of February, many reported to each other their dreames of killing, and the like, set faith. and that day they loft 13. men at Placentia. Their dried Pengwins, when they came neerer the Loathforns Sun began to corrupt and there had in them a most learthforns and release to corrupt. Sun began to corrupt, and there bred in them a most loathsome and vgly worme which denoured

their vietuals, cloathes, timbers, and all but Iron, not sparing their flesh when they were alleepe, 60 fo that they could fearcely fleepe. Their multitude was fuch that they could not destroy them. Another disease tooke them with swelling in their anckles, two daies after which, shortnesse of breath, then falling into their cods and yards, so tormenting them that divers fell mad and died : on fine onely did the labour of the Ship relye; and June 11.1593 without victuals, failes, or men

God guided them to Beare-hauen in Ireland.

uer, were filke- sect to fuch vicificades ; what is this little molebill of earth, this modell of clay, this moneable circum-

Tragedics.

But let vi beare Master Candish bimselse more then acting his owne part. Discite justitiam moniti. Let not prosperitie poy fon the foule, with the fting of the old Serpent, (welling in pride , ingratitude , The morall of or contempt of God, or Man : let not any magnific bimfelfe in what sever exploits , or truß in vincertaine this and other riches, or promife to himselfe the perpetual smiles of the world; and then it hall seeme no new thing, nor cauje of despaire, of thee bites in flead of hissing. Shee is a Witch which transformeth men into Swine with her Cyrcan cups, if the mindelearne not by Religion to fasten it selfe to God, to account him her with the Vyteralicus; it too mouse warme was of accession as justice as just to you, or accession time our treasures, and the present own byte calling that inheritance of the Saints in light; for which Robert, to be stripped of these Reg is a bieffed purchase; meanwhile knowing that nothing dath, shall, can happen but by his providence, which is a Father, most miss, louing, bountifull, and mercifull, which alreadie bath given vs his Sonne, doth now give bis Spris, and 10 will give us himselfe. No Rocks can wrack that Soule, no stormes oppresse, no Seas can finke, no fortunes can either puffe up with succisse, or linke and make to formbe in it selfe by any pressure to despaire. which bath thus made God her portion: rea the worst of advertises by a boly Antiperitialis doe contrast and more unite the foules forces to greater ails of fortitude in doing and suffering his Will, to whose ours cusht alway to be subordinated. It is the woice of a Pagan, but the vertue of a Christian, Omnia mea mecum porto, and with lob to fay, The Lord hath given, the Lord nath taken, bleffed bee the Name of the Lord. I bane ginen Maiter Kniuets Relation after this of Mafter Candith, as before Peter Cardet after Sir Francis Drake ; that at both ferued under them in their Difcoueries , fo ther may in this our Discouerie of those Discoueries, as Pages to those Worther; the one a Mariner wayting on a Mariner; the other a Gentleman following a Gentleman; both unmatchable by any Englith for the 20 rare admentures, disadmentures, and manifold successions of miseries in those wilde Countries, and with thole wilder Countrimen of Brailia; especially Maiter Kniuet, who between the Brailian and Portu-2211, as betwirt two Mill flones, was almost ground to poulder: whom Colds, Sichnes, Famine, Wandrongs. Culumnies, Defertions, Solstarines, Deferts, Woods, Mountaines, Fennes, Rivers, Seas, Flights, Fights;

CHAP. VI.

Cultummers, Legersons, some mers, Legers, wows, excumannes, termes, sames, some, tugors, rugurs, midel Beds, valued Seepass, valueds Feds, valued Seepass, valued Seepass, valued Seepass, valued Seepass, valued Seepass, valued Seepass, participation of the Magellan Straits faceceded by drowning, fautume, foreign between both some God yet delivered, that Straits) bane in various facecellions made the fabrell of their working; whom God yet delivered, that

out of his manifold paines, thou maist gather this polic of pleasures, and learne to bee thankefull for thy

natine freets at bome, even delights in the multitude of peace.

Master Thomas Candish bis discourse of his fatall and disastrous voyage towards the South Sea, with his many disaduentures in the Magellan Straits and other places; written with his owne hand to Sir TRISTRAM GORGES bis Executor.



2602 Oft louing friend, there is nothing in this world that makes a truer triall of friend- 40 thip, then at death to thew mindfulnesse of loue and friendship, which now you shall make a perfect experience of ; desiring you to hold my love as deare dying poore, as if I had beene most infinitely rich. The successe of this most vnfortunate action, the bitter torments thereof lye fo heavier voon mee, as with much paine am I able to write these few lines, much lesse to make discouerie voto you

of all the adverse haps, that have befallen me in this voyage, the least whereof is my death : but because you shall not be ignorant of them, I have appointed some of the most sensiblest men that I left behinde me, to make discourse vnto you of all these accidents. I have made a simple will. wherein I have made you fole, and onely disposer of all such little, as is left, The Roe-bucke left me in the most desolate case that ever man was left in , what is become of 50

her I cannot imagine : if shee bee returned into England, it is a most admirable matter ; but if fine bee at home, or any other of my goods what focuer returne into England, I have made you onely Polleffor of them. And now to come to that villaine that hath beene the death of me, and the decay of this whole action, I meane Danis, whose onely treacherie in running from me, bath beene an veter ruine of all : if any good returne by him, as ever you love mee , make fuch friends as he of all others, may reape least gaine. I affure my telfe you will bee carefull in all friendship. of my last requests. My debts which be owing be not much, &c. But I (most vnfortunate vil-

Captaine Da. Mutinous

laine) was matched with the most abiect minded and mutinous companie, that ever was carried out of England by any man living. For I protest vnto you, that in going to the Streits of Magellan, after I was passed to the Southward of the River of Plate, and had bidden the furie of 63 stormes, which indeed I thinke to bee such as worser might not bee indured : I neuer made my course to the Straits-ward, but I was in continuall danger by my companie, which never ceafed to practife and mutinie against me, And having gotten the appointed place called Port Defire, I met with all my companie, which had beene there twentie dayes before me : and had not

my most true friends beene there (whom to name my heart bleedes) I meane my cousin Locke. I had been conftrayned either to have fuffered violence, or some other most disordered misse-hap. I came into this Harbour with my Boat, my ships riding without at Sea: where I found the Roes bucke, the Defire, and the Pinnace, all which complayned vnto mee, that the Tyde ranne to violently, as they were not able to ride, but were driven aground, and wished me in any wife not to come in with my thip, for that if thee should come on ground, thee would be veterly cast away: which I knew to be most true.

And finding it to bee no place for so great a ship without her vtter ruine : I forthwith commanded them, to make themselves readie to depart: they being fresh, and infinitely well relee-10 ued with Seales and Birds, which in that place did abound, and my companie being growne weake and feeble, with continual watching, pumping, and bayling. For I must say truly vnto you, there were neuer men that endured more extremities of the Seas, then my poore companie had done. Such was the furie of the Welt South-west, and South-west windes, as wer were Tempefis. driven from the hoare foure hundred leagues, and constrayned to beate from fiftie degrees to the Southward into fortie to the Northward againe, before wee could recouer neere the shoare. In which time, we had a new thift of tailes cleane blowne away, and our thip in danger to finke in the Sea three times : which with extremitie of mens labour wee recoursed. In this weakneffe, were departed for the Straits, being from that Harbour eight leagues, and in eighteene dayes, The Straits. wee got the Straits : in which time, the men in my ship were growne extreamly weake. The

20 other thips companie were in good cafe, by reason of their late reliefe.

And now we had beene almost foure moneths betweene the coast of Brasile, and the Straights. being in distance not about fixe hundred leagues, which is commonly run in twentie or thirtie dayes; but juch was the aduersenesse of our fortunes, that in comming thither wee spent the Summer, and found in the Straits, the beginning of a most extreame Winter, not durable for Extreme wine Christians. In despight of all stormes and tempests, so long as wee had ground to anchor in and ter. Twices to helpe vs, we beate into the Straits fome fiftie leagues, having (for the most part) the They enter windes contrarie. At length being forced by the extremitte of stormes, and the narrownesse of fittle leagues. the Straits (being not able to turne wind ward no longer) we got into an Harbour, where wee rid from the eighteenth day of Aprill, till the tenth of May : in all which time, wee neuer had other then most furious contrarie windes. And after that the moneth of May was come in. nothing but fuch flights of Snow, and extremities of Froits, as in all the time of my life . I never faw any to be compared with them.

This extremitie caused the weake men (in my ship onely) to decay; for in seuen or eight dayes, in this extremitie there dyed fortie men, and lickened feuentie, to that there were not fif- Death of meritie men that were able to stand upon the hatches. I finding this milerable calamitie to fall upon me, and found that befides the decay of my men, and expense of my victuall, the fnow and frost decayed our failes, and tackle, and the contagiousnesse of the place to bee such , for extremitie of Milerable froft and fnow, as there was no long flaying, without the veter ruine of vs all. What by these diffresses. extremities, and the daily decay of my men, I was conftrayned forthwith to determine fome course, and not (for all this extremitie of weather) to tarrie there any longer.

goe for China, and that there were two wayes thither, the one through the Straits, the other

Vpon this, I affembled my companie together, and thewed them that my intention was to Confultation.

by the way of Caput bone fpei; which courfe shewed them, as was well knowne to mee, as the way I had undertaken. And although that fortune had denyed us this paffage, yet I doubted not. but soone to recouer to this Cape, where I shewed them, I made no doubt, but we should releeve our felues, and performe to their contents our intended voyage, These perswasions with many others, which I vied, feemed to content them for the prefent : but they were no fooner gone from me, but forth with all manner of discontents were varipped amongst themselves, so that to goe that way, they plainly and refolutely determined neuer to give their willing confents. Some of to the belt and honestell fort hearing this their resolution, withed them rather to put vp a supplication to me, then thus privately among themselves to mutinie and murmur, which course might caule an vecer ruine to fall upon them all : affirming, that they knew me to be fo reasonable, as I would not refuse to heare their petition. Vpon this, they framed an humble supplication vnto me (as they termed it) the effect whereof was : That first they protested, to fpend their lines most willingly for my fake, and that their love was such to me, as their chiefest care was for mee, and they oriened very much to see mee put on a resolution, which (as they supposed) would be the end of my life, which was their greatest griefe. And next their owne lines would mimediately follow, both by reason of the length of the course, all which they must performe without reliefe. And further, we had not left foure moneths victuall, which might very well be frent in running a course not halfe so long. But if it would please me to 60 returns agains for the Coast of Bratile (where they knew, my force being together, was able to take any place) there we might both provide victuall to returne againe, and furnish our felnes of all other fuch wants, as these extremities had brought upon us, and at a seasonable time returne againe, and so per-

forme our first intention. Now , I knowing their resolution , and finding , that in somethings their reasons were not

vaine, began more feriously to looke into all my wants. First, I found my greatest decay to bee

in ropes, and failes, wherein (by meanes of fuch mightie extremities) I was veterly vnfurnifha ed, for I loft a new shift of failes comming thither; and further the Defire had bidden the like extremitie, which I furnished : fo as I had left no ftore at all : for no ships carry three new shifts of failes, all which, had beene little enough for me : and last of all, our victuals to be most short. I was to fall into confideration what to doe, I knew well that the windes were fuch and fo con-Winder and tinually against ve, as by no meaner it was possible to passe through : for the violent snowers fnows violent. Were fuch, as in two dayes together we should not be able to see fine houres, the place not a leave ouer in breadth, our ships not to be handled in such extremitie of winde : no, nor Canuas to hold the furie of the winde, our men fo weake, as of one hundred and fiftie men, I had not in my ship 10 fiftie in health. And this thip comming with all her companie, was like three times to have been vpon the shoare, by reason of her vnyarie workings. These causes made mee vtterly despuire of any passage at this season : fo I resoluted the companie I would put out of the Harbour, and beat to get through, fo long as the furious and westerly windes would fuffer vs : but if they came your vs, so as we could not hold it vp, wee would then beare vp againe, and so (according to their requeft) goe for the Coaft of Brafile, which they fo much feemed to defire, and I fo much

Port S. Iulian. Port Defre.

But in truth I was forced to take that way, for that there was no place, where this ship could come into, to tarry out a winter. For Port Saint Iulian is a barred Harbour, ouer which two of my thips would not goe; and Port Defire hath neither wood, nor water : and befides that, the 20 Tyde runneth fo extremely, as it is not possible for anchors to hold, the ground being so bad, But the last cause of all to be considered, was the sicknesse of my men, having no clothes to defend them from the excreme cold. These causes, and their ardent desires of being out of the cold, mooued me to goe backe againe, for that most wicked Coast of Brafile, where I incountred all manner of misfortunes, which as I have vnripped these former, so I will briefly declare the latter.

His returne from the Strait.

We were beaten out of the Strait with a most monstrous storme at West South-west, from which place we continued together, till we came in the latitule of fortie feuen, in which place Dauis in the Defire, and my Pinnaffe lost me in the night, after which time I neuer heard of them. but (as I fince understood) Danis his intention was euer to run away. This is Gods will, that I should put him in trust, that should be the end of my life, and the decay of the whole action. For 30 had not thefe two small ships parted from vs, we would not have miscarried on the coast of Brafile: for the onely decay of vs was, that we could not get into their barred Harbours. What became of these small ships, I am not able to judge, but fure, it is most like, they went backe againe for Port Defire, a place of reliefe, for two fo small ships. For they might lye on ground there without danger, and being so few men, they might releeve themselves with Seales, and Birds. and so take a good time of the yeere, and passe the Streits. The men in these small thins were all luftie, and in health : wherefore the likelier to hold out. The fhort of all is this : Danis his onely intent was vtterly to ouerthrow me, which he hath well performed.

Grieuous

These ships being parted from vs, wee little suspecting any treacherie, the Roe-bucke and my felfe, held our courle for Brafile, and kept togetlier, till wee came in the latitude of thirtie fixe, 40 where we incountred the most grieuous storme, that ever any Christians indured youn the Seas to liue, in which forme we loft companie. Wee with most extreme labour, and great danger, got the Coast of Brafile, where we were fifteene dayes, and neuer heard of the Roe-bucke. Wee Saint Vincent, came to an anchor in the Bay of Saint Vincent, and being at an anchor there, the Gentlemen defired mee to give them leave to goe shoare, to some of the Portugals Farme-houses, to get some fresh victuals, which I granted : willing them to make present returne, knowing very well, the whole Countrie was not able to prejudice them, if they willingly would not indanger themfelues. They went to a Sugar mill hard by mee where I rode (for that was my speciall charge, that they should neuer goe a mile from the ship) where they got some victuall, and came aboard againe very well.

The next day in the morning betimes, an Indian came vnto me with Captaine Barker; which Indian ran away from his Matter, at my last being there : this Sauage knew all the Countrie. He came vnto me, and laid, that beyond a Point, not a Culuering shot off, there was a very rich farme-house, and defired ten or twelue men to goe thither. Captaine Barker being one whom I most trusted in the conduction of men, and (who ever was the most carefull in such matters of feruice) I appointed to goe, and to take some twentie or thirtie men with him; and willed him (as he had any respect or regard of my commandement) not to stay, but to come presently away, finding any thing or nothing. He forthwith tooke five and twentie men of the most principall men in the thip, and then your coulin Stafford would by no meanes bee left behinde. They departed by foure of the clocke in the morning, to as I did not fee their companie. But what should 63 I write more then this vinto you? they were all fuch, as neither respected me, nor any thing that I commanded. Away they went, and by one of the clocke, they fent my Boat againe with Ginny wheat, and fixe Hennes, and a small Hogge. I seeing no returne againe of the companie (for they had fent away the Boat onely with men to row her aboard) was very much grieued, and

presently returned the Boat againe with message: That I much maruailed they would tarry at a place to long, with fo few men; and further, that it was not a Hogge, and fixe Hennes could releeue vs ; and feeing there was no other reliefe to bee had , I charged them ftraightly to come aboard presently. Thus having dispatched away my Boat for them, I still expected their present comming aboard : all that night, I heard nothing of them, the next morning I shot Ordnance, vet I faw no Boat come. Then I waighed anchor, and made aboard into the Bay, yet for all this. I heard nothing of them : then I doubted with my felfe very greatly , knowing there were no meanes left to make any manifester signes to them to hasten away. All that day I heard nothing of them , in the evening I fet failes againe, and ran into the shoare : all that night I heard no

The next morning, I faw an Indian come downe to the Sea-fide, and weaved vnto the fhin : we being desirous to heare some newes, caused a raft to be made, for Boat wee had none, and sent it ashoare, and fet the Indian aboard. When we saw him, we found him to bee our owne Indian, Captaine Barwhich had escaped away, being foare hurt in three places: who told vs, that all the rest of our terand source men were flaine with three hundred Indians, and eightie Portugals, which (in the evening) fer and twentie ypon them fuddenly. Then I demanded, why they came not aboard? the Indian answered mee. that some were vowilling to come, and the rest, did nothing but eate Hennes and Hogs, which they had there in abundance, and that they minded nothing to come aboard. I leave you to judge, in what griefe I was, to fee five and twentie of my principall men thus bately and wilfully cast 20 away : but I leave you to inquire of others, the practifes of these men, lett in writing vinto you

it (hould be thought I did it of malice, which (I proteft) is farre from me, they being now dead, and my felie looking imminently to follow them.

Thus I was left destitute of my principall men, and a Boat, and had I not (by great hap the day before) taken an old Boat from the Portugals. I had beene veterly vidone. This Boat I lent to an Iland fifteene leagues off, to fee if they could heare any newes of the reft of my thips : thee returned within eight dayes, all which time I remayned without a Boat. Thus I was fixe dayes before I heard newes of any of my conforts. The feuenteenth day came in the Roe-bucke, having The Roe-bucke ipent all her Malts, but their Mifon, their Sailes blowne cleane away, and in the most miferable commethin.

case that ever ship was in : all which misse-haps falling vpon me, and then missing my small ships 20 wherein (vpon that Coast) consisted all my strength, having no Pinnaces nor great Boats left to Brassian Coast land my men in, for they were all caft away going to the Strait. I (notwithflanding the want full of flocalds of Boats and Pinnaces) determined rather then not to bee revenged of fo base Dogs, to venture and barres. the ships to goe downe the River afore their Towne, and to have beaten it to the ground, which Mat (and) forthwith I put in execution. And having gotten downe halfe the way, wee found the River so high spirit. narrow by reason of a shoald, as all the companie affirmed plainly, it was both desperate and most dangerous. For the River is all Ofe, and if a ship come aground, it is vnpossible ever to get off, for there riteth not aboue a foot water, and no anchors will hold to hale off any my thips, in

fo narrow a place, as we were almost aground in wending.

Seeing this apparant danger, I forthwith bare vp out of the River, where we escaped no small 40 danger to get well out, for we had not little more water then we drew : and if thee had come aground, it had beene vnpoffible euer to have gotten her off. By these meanes of not passing the River, we were constrayned to let our revenge passe: for our Boats were so bad and small, as wee durit put no men in them. Notwithstanding wee landed, and did them much spoile vpon their Farme-houses, and got some quantitie of fresh victuals. This place being not for vs, considering our ships were notable to passe to their Towne; and further our great wants did confiraine vs to feeke some course of reliefe, which being not to bee had there, both for that wee had speyled it a little before, and also for that we could not conveniently come to doe them any prejudice, without most losse to our selves : I determined to part from thence, and to goe to a small Hand some History twentie leagues off, and there to have fitted all my necessaries, and to have cast off the Roe-bucke, for that by no meanes her wants could by mee bee furnished, and so at a seasonable time, to have

gone for the Straits of Magellan againe. Which intention (I must confesse) I kept most secret, for feare of some mutinie, but shewed Hispresence. the whole Companie, that I would goe for Saint Helena, where wee should meet with the Carracks : which course I well knew did not much please them; for they defired nothing more then returning home into England, and if I had but named the Straits, they would forthwith have fallen into a most extreme mutinie : for such were the miseries and torments they had indured . as all the best fort had taken an oath upon a Bible, to die rather then euer to yeeld their confents to

forting their despairing mindes as well as I might, leeing their greatest griefe was for the wants 60 of the small ships, without which, they all affirmed (and that truly) wee were able todoe nothing. For the Ports where their Townes fland, were all barred Harbours, and that it was not Necessitie e: possible to get any of these ships over them, whereby we could releeve our felues of such wants, finall stops out as we were in. These things being alleaged, I seemed to passe oueras slightly as might be, but yet the second comforted them, that we would prefently feeke some place of reliefe with all speede.

goe backe that way againe. I knowing this, feemed to speake nothing of that course, but com-

Pertural Pilots

There was a Portugall abourd me, who tooks upon him to be a Pilot, who came unto me. and told me voon his life, that he would take voon him to carry both my Shippes ouer the barre at Spiritus Santius, a place indeede of great reliefe, and the onely place in Brafile for victuall, and ali other wants, that we were in I knowing very well, that if I could bring my Shippes within fhor of the Towne, I should land my men, and further, it could not be in them to make refistance. The whole company defired this course, affirming that there was no way left to reliene all our wants but this: and that there they were in hope to finde some Shippes, to repaire the? Roe-bucke againe. I finding their willingnesse, and charging the Portugallypon his life, to tell me truely, whither the Ships might passe ouer the barre without danger; he willed me to take his life, if euer the Shippes came in leffe water then fine fathome, with fuch conftant affirmations Ior as he defired not to live, if he should not performe this. I considering the greatnesse of our wants. and knowing right well, the place to be the onely wished Towne on all the coast to relieue vs. forthwith gaue my content, and thither we went, leaving all other intentions. We anchored before the barre, and lent my Boate to found the barre, and found the deepest water to be but His ignorance, Afteene and seventeene foote (the Portugall himselfe going with them, all over the bar) the most water to be but three fathome. They comming aboord, brought me word of the truth, I called for the Fortugall, and demanded of him why he had so lied vnto me ? who aftirmed that he neuer founded the barre before, and that he had brought in Ships of 100, tuns, and that he made accompathere had not bin lefte water then five jathome. This mif-hap was no small amazement to me, and all the company, considering our distresse for

water and other necessaries, and that the roade was foill, as we were scantable to ride there. so as we could neither take in water, nor doe any other buinnesse. In this meane time while wee were forming of these matters, the Ros-bucker Boate rowing further into the Baye, faw where three Shippes were at an anker, not farre from the Towne, and came aboord, and brought mee word thereof : at which newes the Companie feemed much to rejoyce, and all affirmed that they would goe with our Boates, and bring them out of the harbour. I shewed them how much the taking of them imported vs, and told them, that although the day was fpent, yet I thought the night not to be altogether inconvenient, if they would put on mindes to performe it. Refolutely my reasons were these: first they were not so sufficiently provided to defend 30 notfollowed. the mielues at that inflant, as they would be in the morning; and further I told them, that if they were not able to defend them, they would take the principall and best things out of them, being so neere the shoare, and that if they had wherewith to defend themselues, it would be leffe offensiue to vs in the night, then in the day, and we in greatest securitie, and more offensiue to the enemy, especially this exploit being to be done on the water, not landing.

These perswassons seemed a little to moue them, for they all desired to stay sull morning: yet

fome of them prepared themselves. Comming amongst them, I found them, all, or for the most part veterly vnwilling to goe that night : vpon which occasion (I confesse) I was much moued. and gave them some bitter words, and shewed them our case was not to make detractions, but to take that opportunitie which was offered vs, and not to feare a night more then a day, and told them plainely, that in refusing of this, I could flay there no longer, for ouer the barre we 40 could not goe, and the roade fo dangerous, as never Shippes rid in a worte. And further, we law all the Countrey to be fired round about, and that to land we could not without otter fooile to Their yncafe-Their volcalo-nable cagernes Shippes, fo as I intended to depart. The next morning, there was almost an vorcare amonest them, the most of them swearing that if I would not give them leave, they would take the Boats and bring away those Shippes of themselves. I comming among them, beganne to reprehend them for their raffinesse, and told them that now all opportunity was past, and that they must be contented, for goe they should not. They much importuned me, and some of the chiefest of them defired me with teares in their eyes, that they might goe, affirming, that there was no danger to be feared at all; for if they were not able to take them, they would returne againe, 50 and that to depart without attempting to doe this, was a thing that most greatly grie-

I knowing right well, that if they landed not they could receive no prejudice : for if their Ships had beene able to withflood them, it was in their power to goe from them, being flarke calme. And further I knew that no Shippes vie Brafile that be able to defend themseives from a Cock-boate : much leffe that they should be of force to offend those Boates, wherein there were fo many Musketteeres as could fit one by another. I feeing their great importunitie, was contented to give them leave to goe : and this was my charge to Captaine Morgaine (to whom at that prejent I left my directions) that first, vpon paine of his life, he should not land at all what opportunitie soeuer was offered; and that if he saw any danger in comming to these Shippes, 60 ons to Captain he should attempt no further, but returne aboord againe, but contrariwise, if he saw that the place was such, as we might land without too much disaduantage, and if we might land on plain ground, free from woods or balles, hard before the Towne, that then he would prefently repaire voto me againe, and I, and fo many as these bad Boates would carrie, would presently land up-

Thus my Boxtes departed from me, having some eightie men, as well furnished with weapons, as it is possible to fort such a number withall. Now you shall vinderstand, that in the night the Portugals had hailed the Shippes hard afore the Towne : the River where the Towne frood was not about a Bird-bolt-fhot ouer, and halfe a mile from the Towne where the Shippes rode: The place dethe night wee came in, they had new cast up two small trenches, on each side the River one, serious, where they had planted some two small bases a peece upon an hill. Right over them were thicke woods and great rockes, fo that if any were puffelled of them, they might but tumble from slowne, and beate away 1000 men. The trench on the Wester-side of the River shot at our Boats. once or twice; voon that they began to thinke with themselves what to doe, Captaine Mircan affirming the place to be verie narrow, and that they could not well paffe it without danger, To confidering the many men in their Boats, and also the charge which I had given, was such, if they faw any danger, they should presently repaire aboord, and certifie me, and not to make any further till they had understood my further determination: This Master Morgan made knowing Mid Mutiners amonest them, whereupon some of the harebraine Sailers began to sweare, that they never thought other, but that he was a coward, and now he will shew it, that durit not land voon a bable ditch, as they tearmed it. Vpon this, the gentleman was very much moved, and answefwered them, that they should finde him to be none such as they accounted him, and that, come

what could happen him, he would land.

Voon this in they put the Boats betweene the two fconfes (that on the Eafter-fide they had They land not feene) and the Boats being hard vpon it, were fhot at, and in the biggeft Boat they hard two. 20 and killed one with that fhot. Vpon this, they determined, that the smallest Boate with their company should land on the Wester-side, and the other to land on the Easter-side. The small Boate landed first, and that place having but few in it, they being not able to defend themselves. ranne away, fo that our men entred peaceably without hurt of any. The other Boate drawing much water, was aground before they came neere the shoare, so as they that landed, were fame to wade about knee high in water. Now the place, or Sconfe, was in height some ten soote, made of frome (Captaine Morgan more resolutely then discreetely) scaled the wall, and ten more with him, which went out of the Boate together. Then the Indians and Portugals the wed themselves, Carraine More and with great stones from ouer the trench, killed Morgan and fine more, and the rest of them be- gan slaine. ing fore hurt, retired to the Boate, which by this time was fo filled with Indian arrowes, as of at.

men being in the Boate, there escaped not eight of them valuer, some having three arrowes flick- Many others ing in them, tome two, and there was none which escaped without wound. The furie of those are flaine or hunte rowes comming to thicke, and fo many of them being spoiled, they put the Boat from the shoare. leaving the reft on land, a spoile for the Indians.

By this time, there came two Boates full of lustie Portugals, and some Spaniards, who knowing the sconse on the Wester-side to be weakely manned, came with their Boates to the forts fide : one of them ran ashoare which was fullest of men, then our men let flye their Muskets at them, and spoiled and killed all that were in that Boate. The others, seeing their fellowes speede foill, rowed backe againe, with all their force, and got the Town againe. In this meane time the 40 great Boat being gotten of, they called to them in the Sconfe, and willed them to forfake the Fort, and to come and helpe them ; for they told them that all their men were spoiled & slaine. V pon this they strait came out of the Sconse againe, and retired to their Boat; who rushing in all together into the Boat, she came on ground, so that off they could not get her, but some must goe out of her againe: tenne of the luftieft men went out, and by that time the Indians were come Ten brane downe into the Fort againe, and shot at our men. They which were a land (perceiving the armenlos, rowes flye among them) ranne againe to the Forts side, and shot in at the lower hold with their Muskers. By this, the Boat was got of, and one that was the Mafter of the Roe-bucke(a most cow- Cowardly ardly villaine that euer was borne of a woman) caused them in the Boat to rowe away, and so basenessa left those braue men a spoile for the Portugals, yet they waded up to the necks in the water to 50 them, but those merculeffe villaines in the Boate, would have no pitty on them. Their excuse was. that the Boat was so full of water, that had they come in, she would have sunke with all them

in her; thus vilely were those poore men lost. By this time, they which were landed on the other fide (the great Boate not being able to rowe neere the shoare to relieue them) were killed with stones by the Indians, being thus wilfully and vadiscreetely spoiled, which you may well perceive, if you looke into their landing, especially in such a place, as they could not escape killing with Hones. They returned abourd againe, having loft five and twenty men, whereof tenne of them were left ashoare, in such fort 15.men flaine, as I have shewed you. When the Boates came to the Shippesside, there were not eight men others wonnin the biggeit Boate, which were not most grieuously wounded. I demanded of them the ded, 60 cause of their mishappes, and how they durift land, considering my strait commandement to the contrarie; they answered mee, that there was no fault in Captaine Morgan, but the greatest occasion of all this spoile to them, happened vpon a controuersie betweene the Captaine and those Souldiers that landed with him, and were killed at the Fort, for their ill ip eches and viging of Captaine Morgan, was the cause that hee landed contrary to my com-

1108 Candishes misery by the losse of the Roe-bucke. Manifold wants. LIB.VI.

mandement, and voon such a place, as they all confessed fortie men were sufficient to spoile

I leave it to your felfe to judge, what a fight it was to mee, to fee fo many of my best men. thus wilfully spoiled, having not left in my Shippe fittie found men: fo as wee were no more then able to wave our Ankers, which (the next morning) wee did, and findius it calme wee were conftrained to come to an Anker againe; for my onely intention was, to get out of that bad roade, and to put of into the Sea, and there to determine what to doe, for that place was not for vs to tarrie in, for the roade was fo bad, as wee were not able to helpe our felues with a Boates loading of fresh water, whereof wee stood in no small want. In this dayes stay in the Roade, I comforted these distressed poore men, what I to might, and found most of their defires, to returne againe into England. Het them understand. how wee would gor backe againe to the lland of Saint Sebaftian, and there wee would water. and doe our other necessary bulinesses, and there make a resolute determination of the rest of our proceedings. This course seemed to like them all very well, but the companie in the Ree-bucke, instantly defired nothing more, then to returne home, all affirming, that it was pittie fuch a Shippe thould be call of. But in truth, it was not of any care of the Shippe, but onely of a most cowardly minde of the Master, and the chiefest of the company to re-

Now you shill understand that the Captaine was verie ficke, and fince the time that the Ship loft her Maits, the became the most labourtome Ship that ever did swimme on the Sea, so as he 20 was not able to indure in her, and at that prefent he lay aboord my Shippe, so as there was none of any truft, or accompt left in her. But fuch was the case of that Shippe (being without failes, maffs or any manner of tackle) as in the fenfe & judgement of any man living, there did not live that desperate minded man in the world, which (in that case she was then in) would have ventured to have (ailed in her halfe so farre as England: and if she doe returne, it is (in my opinion) the most admirable returne that ever Ship made, being so farre of, and in her case. These vullaines haung left in my Ship, all their hurt men, and haung aboord of them both my Surgeans. I. hauing not one in mine owne Shippe, which knew how to lay a plafter to a wound, much leffe to cure any by falues : and further, having in their Shippe three times the proportion of my victuall (wherein confifted the onely reliefe and comfort of all my company) these most 30 hard harted villaines, determined that night amongst themselves, to loose mee at their Dammable de- next convenient time they could espie, and in this case to goe for England, leaving vs in the greatest distresse that euer one Christian left another in ; for wee had all her hurt men in vs. and we had taken out of her the best part of her men not long before : fo as in running from vs, they not onely carried away our Surgeans, and all their prouision, but also our victuall, wherein confiited all our reliefe and comfort : having in them at their departure but fix and fortie men, carrying away with them the proportion for fix moneths victuall of one hundred and twenty men at large.

I leave you to consider of this part of theirs, and the miserable case I was left in, with so many hurt men, so little victuall, and my Boate being so bad, as fixe or seuen men continually bailing 40 water, were feant able to keepe her from finking; and mend her we could not by any meanes, before we recoursed some shoare: for had not these villaines in the Roe-backe (that night wee rode in this Baye) fuffered their Boate to run ashoare with Irih men (which went to betray vs) Inad raken her Boate, and funke this great naughtie Boate. Such was the greatnesse of our mishaps, as we were not left with the comfort and hope of a Boate to relieue our felues withall; we The Ree buthe not having left in the Ship scarfe three tuns of water for 140, men, the most part whereof being forfakethhim, hurt and ficke We putting out of the road the next day, they, the fame night in this case left vs. and (as I suppose) they could not accompt otherwise, then that wee should neuer agains be

The next morning looking for the Roe-bucke, we could no where be seene. I leave to you to co iudge in what plight my companie was, being now destitute of Surgeans, victuals, and all other reliefe : which in truth was fo great a discomfore vinto them, as they held themselves dead men, as well whole as hurt. The scantnesse of water made vs that we could not seeke after them, but He commeth - were inforced to feeke to this lland, with all possible speede, having to beate backe againe thither to S. Sebaflians. two hundred leagues: which place, God suffered vs to get with our last caske water, the poore men being most extreamly pinched for want thereof. Where (after we had a little refreshed our felues) we prefently mended our Boat in fuch fort, as with great labour and danger, we brought fortie tunnes of water aboord. And in the meane time fearthing our flore of ropes, tackle, and failes, we found our felues vtterly vnfurnished both of ropesand failes: which accident pleased the company not a little, for by their wants, they affuredly accounted to goe home. Then making 60 a furnity of the victuall, we found to be remaining in the Shippe (according to the rate we then lived at) foureteene weekes victuals large.

Having rigged our Shippes in fuch fort, as our small store would furnish vs, which was most meanely, for we had but foure failes (our sprite-faile, and foretoppe-faile being wanting)

Candishes speech neglected by his mutinous company, Irishman, 1100 CHAP. 6.

which two the Ship (most principally loueth) and those which we had (except her maine faile) were more then halte worne. In this poore case being furnished, and our water taken in, my company knowing my determination (which was to haile my Boate a ground, and build her a new) they forthwith openly began to mut mare, and mutinie : affirming plainely, that I neede not Murinous mend the Boate, for they would goe home, and then, there should be no vie of her. I, hearing mamuring, thele foeeches, thought it was no w time to looke among it them, calling them together, and told them, that although we had many milhaps fallen upon us, yet (I hoped) that their mindes would not in fuch fort be onercome with any of the fe misfortunes, that they would goe about to undertake any base, or difordered courfe; but that they would cheerefully goe forward, to attempt either to make themselmet fa- His persuali-

10 mm, in refolutely dirag, or in living, to performe that, which would be to their perpetuall reputation: ons. And the more we attempted, being in fo weake a safe, the more (if we performed) would be to our bonours. But contrarinife, if we died in attempting we did but that which we same for which was either to performe or die.

And then I shewed them my determination, to goe againe for the Straits of Macellanic. which words were no looner vetered, but forthwith they all with one content affirmed planty. they would never goe that way againe; and that they would rather flay afhoare in that defare Hand, then in such case to goe for the Straits. I sought by peaceable meanes to perswade them. the wing them that in going that way, we fould relieve our victuals, by falling of Seales, and Birds : which (ther did well know) we might doe in greater quantitie, then our Ship could carry. And further, 20 if we got through the Stratt (which we might now easily performe, considering we had the chiefest part of Summer before us) we could not but make a most rich Voyage, and also meete againe with the two small Ships which were gone from vs : and that it was but fix hundred leagues thither; and to goe into England they had two thousand. And further that they should be most infamous to the world, that being within fix hundred leagues of the place, which we fo much defired, to returne home againe fo farre, being most infamous and bee gerly. Thele periwasions tooke no place with them, but most boldly they all affirmed, that they had fworne, they would never goe againe to the Straits; neither by no meanes

And one of the chiefest of their faction, most proudly and stubbornely vetered these words to my face, in prefence of all the reft: which I feeing, and finding mine owne faction to be to weake

20 (for there were not any that fauoured my part, but my poore coulen Locke, and the Mailer of the nifed. Ship) I tooke this bold companion by the bosome, and with mine owne hands put a rope about his necke, meaning resolutely to strangle him, for weapon about me I had none. His companions feeing one of their chiefe champion, in this cafe, & perceiuing me to goe roundly to worke with him, they all came to the Mafter, and defined him to speake; affirming they would be ready to take any course that I should thinke good of. I, hearing this, stayed my selfe, and let the fellow goe; after which time, I found them fomething conformable, at least in speeches, though among themselves they still murmured at my intentions. Thus having somthing pacified them, and perfwaded them, that by no meanes I would take no other course, then to go for the Straits, I tooke ashoare with me thirtie Soldiers, and my Carpenters, carrying sourceene dayes victuall with me 40 for them. Thus going alhoure, I hailed vp my Boate, to new build her in such fort, as she might bee able to abide the Seas , leaving aboord all my failers, and the reit, to rigge the Ship, and mend

failes, and to doe other bufineffe.

And now to let you know, in what case I lay ashoare among these base men, you shall ynderfland, that of these thirtie there were virie few of them, which had not rather have gone to the Portugals, then to have remained with me; for there were some, which at my being ashoare, were making rafts to goe ouer to the maine, which was not a mile ouer, where the Portugals had continuall watch of vs, looking but for a fit opportunity to let vpon vs : being in this case, al waies expecting the comming of the Portugals, against whom I could have made no relistance, and further the trecherie of some of my companie, which defired nothing more, then to steale ouer, so to 50 betray me, I proteft, I lived hourly, as he that still expecteth death. In this case I mede all the speed I could to make an end of my Boate, that we might be able to rowe her aboord, which in twelve daies we mainely finished, which being done, I came aboord, and found all my bufinesse in good forwardnesse : so I determined with all possible speede to dispatch, and be gone for the Straits of

But ere euer we could get in all our water, and timber-wood, and other necessaries, an Irish man An Irish rascall (a noble villaine) having made a raft, got over to the maine, and told the Portugals which and trainers were there (watching nothing but an opportunitie) that if they would goe over in the night, his fellowes, they should finde most of our men ashoare, without weapon, and that they might doe with them what they would: voon this, the next night, they came ouer, and having taken some 60 of our men, they brought them where the reft lay, which they most cruelly killed, being

ficke men , not able to stirre to helpe themselues. Those which were ashoare, more then the ficke men, had stolne out of the Shippe, for it was all my care to keepe them aboord, knowing well, that the Portugals fought to spoile vs, the place being so fit for them, all overgrowne with woods and bulhes, as their Indians might goe and spoile vs with their arrowes at their pleasures.

Their mani-

and we not be able to hart one of them. In the morning perceiving their comming, I fent my Boate alhoare, and rescued all my healthfull men, but five, which they found out in the night, without weapons to defend them : whereof (befides the loffe of our men) we having but foure failes, left one ashoare, which was no small mishap among the rest.

1200

The Portugals went prefently agains over to the maine, but left their Indians to keepe in the bushes. About the watering place, our men going alhoate, were shot at, and hure, and could Cap, Candilles by no meanes come to hurt them againe, by reason of the wood, and bushes. Wherefore finding my men hurt, and that by no meanes I could doe any thing there, without more lose of men (whereof I had no neede) for I had not about ninetic men left, or little ouer, notwith francing my wants of wood and water, and my Boate (not being fufficiently mended) was in no poffibilitie 10 to doe me pleafure, in this case was I forced to depart; fortune neuer ceasing to lay her greatest

> But now I am growne so weake and faint, as I am scarce able to hold the penne in my hand : wherefore I must leave you to inquire of the rest of our most vulnappy proceedings, but know this, that (for the Straits) I could by no meanes, get my company to give their confents to goe. For after this misfortune, and the want of our failes (which was a chiefe matter they alleadeed) and to tell you truth, all the men left in the Shippe, were no more then able to weigh our ankers. But in truth I delired nothing more, then to attempt that course, rather desiring to dye in going forward, then basely in returning backe againe; but God would not suffer me to dye so happy a man, although I fought all the wayes I could, still to attempt to performe fomewhat. For, after 20 that by no meanes I faw they could be brought to goe for the Straits, having fo many reasonable reasons to alleadge against me, as they had . fish, having but three failes, and the place subject to fuch furious flormes, and the loffe of one of thefe was death; and further, our Boate was not fufficiently repaired, to abide the Seas ; and laft of all, the fewnesse, and feeblenesse of our company (wherein we had not left thirty failers) these causes being alleadged against me, I could not well antiwere : but refolued them plainely, that to England I would neuer give my confent to goe. and that (if they would not take such courses as I intended) I was then determined, that Shippe and all should linke in the Seas together, Vpon this, they began to be more tracable, and then I shewed them, that I would beate for Saint Hellena, and there, either to make our selues happy, by mending, or ending. This course(in truth)pleased none of them, and yet seeing my determinati- 30 on, and supposing it would be more danger to refish me, then in seeming to be willing, they were at quiet, vntill I had beaten from 29, degrees, to the Southward of the Lauter to 20. At which time finding that I was too far Northerly, to have good winde I called them to tacke about the Shippe to the Southward againe. They all plainely made answere, they would not, and that they had rather due there, then be started in feeking an Iland, which (they thought) that way

we should never get. What meanes I vied to stand againe to the Southward, I leave you to inquire of themselves : but from the latitude of 20. I beate backe againe into 28. with fuch contrary windes, as (I suppose) neuer man was troubled with the like, folong a time together. Being in this latitude, I found the winde fanourable, and then I flood agains to the Northward, willing the Mafter & his com- 40 pany to faile East North-east, and they in the night (I being a steepe) steered North-east, and meere Northerly. Notwithstanding all this most vile viage, we got within two leagues of the Iland, and had the winde fauoured vs fo, as that we might have stemmed from 18. degrees to 16. Sailors dilobe- East North-east, we had found the lland : but it was not Gods will so great a bleffing should befall me. Being now in the latitude of the Bland, almost eighteene leagues to the Westward of it, the winde being continually at East South-east, the most contrary winde that could blow : I prefently made a furuary of my victuall, and found, that according to that proportion (which we

then lived at) there was not left in the Ship eight weekes victuall; which being fo farre from re-

liefe, was (as I suppose) as small a portion, as ever men were at in the Seas.

Scarfity of victuall.

His purpole

for.S. Helena,

Being to vocertaine of reliefe, I demanded of them, whether they would venture (like good 50 minded men) to beate to the Southward againe, to get this Iland, where we should not onely relieue our felues, but also to be in full affurance, either to finke, or take a Carracke: and that by this meanes, we would have a fufficient revenge of the Portugals, for all their villanies done vnto vs: or that they would pinch, and bate halfe the allowance they had before, and so to poe for England. They all answered me, they would pinch to death, rather then goe to the Southward againe. I knowing their dispositions, and having lived among them in such continuall torment, and disquietnesse; and now to tell you of my greatest griefe, which was the sicknesse of my deare kinfman lohn Locke, who by this time was growne in great weakeneffe, by reason whereof, hee desired rather quietnesse, and contenteduesse in our course, then fuch continuall disquietnesse, which neuer ceased mee. And now by this, what with 60 griefe for him, and the continual trouble I indured among fuch hel-hounds, my Spirits were cleane fpent; withing my felfe vpon any defart place in the world, there to dye, rather then thus bafely to returne home againe : which courfe, I had put in execution, had I found an Iland. which the Cardes make to be in 8.degrees to the Southward of the line. I fweare to you, I fought

CHAP.7. S.I. Mafter Th, Candishes last Will. M. Knivets Dovage with bim. 1201

it with all diligence, meaning (if I had found it) to have there ended my unfortunate life. But God fuffered not fuch happinesse to light vpon me, for I could by no meanes finde it. fo as I was forced to goe towards England: and having gotten eight degrees by North the Line . I loft my most dearest cousin.

And now consider, whether a heart made of flesh, be able to indure so many missortunes, all death.

falling your me without intermission. I thanke my God, that in ending of me, he hath pleased to rid me of all further trouble and mif-haps. And now to returne to our private matters, I have made my Will, wherein I have given speciall charge, that all goods (what source belong wnto me) Cap. candified be delivered into your hands. For Gods fake, refuse not to doe this last request for mee, I owe Will. 10 little, that I know of, and therefore it will be the leffe trouble : but if there be any debt, that (of truth) is owing by mee, for Gods fake, fee it paid. I have left a space in the Will for another name, and (if you thinke it good) I pray take in my Coulin Henrie Sackeford, hee will eafe you much in many bufineffes. There is a Bill of Adventure to my Coufin Richard Locke (if it happen the other thip returns home with any thing, as it is not impossible) I pray remember him, for he hath nothing to thew for it. And likewife Mafter Heren the Cultomer of Hampton, which is 50. pounds, and one Elies of Rescliffe by London, which is 50. pounds more, the reif haue all Bills of adventure, but the ruine in the victuall, onely two excepted, which I haue written ynto you. I haue giuen Sir George Carr the Delire, if euer thee returne, for I alwayes promised him her, if thee returned, and a little part of her getting, if any such thing happen, I 20 pray you fee it performed,

To vie complements of love (now at my last breath) were frivolous, but know : that I left none in England, whom I loued halfe so well as your selfe: which you, in such fore deserved as my hands, as I can by no meanes require. I have left all (that little remayning) voto you, not to be accomptable for any thing. That which you will (if you finde any ouerplus of remayned, your felfe specially being satisfied to your owne desire) give vnto my fifter Anne Candille. I have written to no man liuing but your felfe, leaving all friends and kinfmen, onely reputing you as Miftris Anni dearest. Commend me to both your brethren, being glad, that your brother Edward escaped so cardife. vnfortunate a voyage. I pray give this Copie of my vnhappy proceedings in this Action, to none, but onely to Sir George Coy, and tell him, that if I had shought, the letter of a dead man

30 would have beene acceptable, I would have written vnto him. I have taken order with the Mafler of my ship, to see his peeces of Ordnance deliuered vnto him, for hee knoweth them. And if the Roe-bucke bee not returned, then, I have appointed him to deliger him two braffe peeces, out of this ship, which I pray see performed. I have now no more to say but take this last farewell. That you have lost the louingest friend, that was lost by any. Commend mee to your wife, no more, but as you love God, doe not refuie to vndertake this last request of mine. I pray forget not Mafter Carey of Cockmoton, gratifie him with fome thing : for hee vied mee kindly at my departure. Beare with this icribling : for I proteft, I am scant able to hold a pen in my hand.

CHAP. VIL

The admirable adventures and strange fortunes of Master ANTONIE
KNIVET, Which went with Master THOMAS CAM-DISH in bis second Doyage to the South Sea. 1591.

What befell in their voyage to the Straits, and after, till he was taken by the Portugals.



E departed from Planmouth with fine faile of thips, determining to goe for the South Sea (the names of our Ships were thefe) the Gallion Leicester, which was our Admirall; the Roe-bucke, Vice-admirall; the Defire, the Dame, and the Blacke Pinnasse. Sixe or seven dayes after that wee were departed from the

Coaft of England, we met with nineteene faile of Flemmings in the night. Not regarding what they were, our Vice-admirall tooke one of them, and all the rest escaped. In Flemmift prize the morning the Master of our Flemmilb prize was brought before the Generall, and of him wee faished with had newes of a fleet of fhips, that was departed out of Liftone for Brafile , the which newes we Englishment

Vider the Equinoctiall line, we lay fewer and twentie dayes driving too and fro without puffe

Lepanders.

of winde : In which time most of our men fell ficke of the Scurule by reason of the extreme heat of the Sonne, and the vapours of the night; not withflanding our great danger of ficknesse did not appaule the hardnesse of our hearts, being in as great extremitie as ouer men were, it happened that two men of lapan which the Generall had taken in his first voyage (bearing engie to a poore Poringall that went with vs from Planmouth; accused him to the Generall) having before confined his death in this fort : The Generall being at dinner , thefe two laporers came to his Cabbin, telling their tale to loud that every one might heare the report (which was thus) that Periocal hane the Portugall of the thip was a Traytor, and that he had often given them counfell to run away wish him at Brafil: moreover (quoth he) if it fo had pleafed God wee had taken the Towne of 20 Santos, as our Generall had pretended, from thence that hee would guide them to the South Sea, where they should be well rewarded for their intelligence; upon the which accusations, the poore Portugall was hanged. And as for his going from Sautos by land through America. to the South Sea, had beene a thing impossible, for the Countrie is all Wildernesse, and full

After we had beene fo long becalmed under the Line, we had a faire North-west winde, and in twentie dayes faile we had fight of Land on the coast of Brasile, but no man knew certainly what part it should be. At length comming neers the shoare, we espied two small ships, the one of them we tooke, the other cleaped; that wee tooke was laden with Blackamores, and some merchandife: they came from Fernambaque, and were determined to saue gone to the River of 20 Plate, By the Pilot of this flip we knew we were at Cape Frio, that is, Cold Cape. This Cape lyeth twelve leagues from the Rouer of Leners, and thirtie leagues from Santos , which was the Towns we meant totake. In this thip we tooke a Friar that hid himselfe in a Chift of meale: the night following by the directions of our new taken Pilot, wee came to a place called Ilha Grande, twelve leagues from Santos , at this place we tooke fue or fixe houles with Poringals and Sauges of the Countrie. Here weehad good flore of Potatoes, and Plantons, divers kindes of

good rootes, with lome Hogs and Hennes, which was very good and comfortable for the refreshing of our men. Here we had fuch ditorder amongst our selves, that if the Portugals had beene of any courage, they might have kided many of vs. for our men would fight for their victuals as if they had beene in Christians but lewes, and they that got the beft, would get them into some 40 end from to ill hole, or into the Wilderneffe under some Tree, and there they would remaine as long as they had meat. For mine owne part (there was fuch fharking HI could in that place get neither meat nor mony, and pure hunger compelled me to goe into the Woods, to fee it wee could kill any thing will our occes, or it wooded finde force Porgoes, And is were went, wee encountred with teuen or eighcof our companie, that were tagether, by the cores about a Hogge they had killed, and the lettie was, who facult have the best states were required at that time, when curry one vied their fills, fole widy's cluster, and went a good way into the Wilderness, where we were merry for that right; the next day when the back spains with good fore of Potato rootes;

yong Whelpes for their dinner; wee gining them of our rootes they were contented that wee co In the afternoone we fet fire on a new thip, and burned all the houses, leaving the Merchant and all his Moores alhoare, we departed from thence, and having a faire winde about fixe of the Saint Schaffian, clocke watame to the Hand of San Schaffian, where wer anchored, being fine leagues from Santos. As foone as the thips were in the Highour, every Mafter and Captaine came aboard of the Generall, to know how hee pretended to take the Towne of Santos, and they all refolued that

and going into the house where the Generals musicians were, wee found them dressing of eight

our long Boat and our Shallon onely with one hundred men was enough for the taking of it. For the Porgugall Pilot told was that it was of no ftrength. On Christmas-eue about sin a clocke in the night, when the Beats were to goe alhoare there were so many that would have gone, that Varuly demos- wee began to fight and cast one another over-board into the Sea; but as soone as our Generall 69 heard the noise, he commanded every man to come aboard the ship againe. I fearing the General, and being delirous to goe alboare with the first (for I had scene before that they which came last got nothing) crept vider the feate of our Shallop, where I was for the space of two hours, and the Boat being full of men, I could not get out, but there had beene imothered, if it had not

CHAP. 7. S.I. Santos taken. Kniuets purchase in the Lesuite Colledge. I. King. 1202

beene for William Waldren that was our Boatiman, and Heered the Boat, who hearing me crie vnder him, tore vp the boords, and faued my life. About three a clocke in the morning, wee met with a Canoa (which is a Boat that they make of a whole Tree) in which wee tooke foure Portweats and two Women; the one of them was going to be married that morning. After we had taken this Boat we went close to the shoare; and having tarried for our Boat an houre, we heard the Portugals ring a Bell, prefently lasper lorge the Portugall Pilot told vs, that now was the sime to land, for he knew by that Bell that they were in the middle of their Maffe, and at that instant the Friar was holding up the Bread of Sacrament before the people to worthin it.

He had no fooner spoke, but we were all on shoare, and so marching to the Church, we tooke Santertaken to every mans fword without refistance, and there we remayned till it was seven of the clocke, for the comming of our long Boat, and the rest of our companic (for we were but twentie three in all) and we durit not take lack of the Towne with fo few. By that meanes some of the Puring als that were in their houles escaped with their perions and mony. Here was good flore of victuall and great store of Success, Sugars, and Caffaute meale, of the which wee made very good bread. In the Church there were three hundred men belide women and children. Alloone as wee had taken the fack of the Towne, and placed all our men in order, word was fent to our Generall of all that had beene done. After the Generall had fent answere againe to the Towne, all the Portus gals were fet at libertie, and we fortified our felues in the Towne, keeping onely feuen or eight of the chiefest and principall prisoners, Matter Cooke Captaine of the Vice-admirall, went Cap-20 taine of all the companie that went alhoare; he faubured me very much, and commanded meeto take a Friars Cell to lodge in, in the Colledge of lefts, where hee himfelfe lodged with many Captaines and young Gentlemen. It was my chance going up and downe from Cell to Cell, that I looked vincer a bed standing in a darke hole, where I found a little chift fast nayled, and the How Anthonie fearnes thereof were white with wheat flower. I drew it forth, and finding it of great waight, Kniver found a broke it in pieces, wherein I found 1700. Rials of eight, each whereof contayneth foure shillings chift of sluct.

English. This hole I tooke for my lodging, and no man knew of my good purchase; cloth, shirts,

blankers, and beds, and such stuffe no man regarded. The next day following, being S. Stenens day, the Portugals gaue vs a false alarum : the Generall came also with all the ships into the Road, and presently landed with two hundred men-20 and commanded all the outward part of the Towne to bee burned. Then hee gaue order for the building of a Pinnaffe to row with twentie Oares, and commanded all the fhips that were in the Harbour to be fet on fire. At this Towne we tooke an English man, called John King, which had Lien Ring Esbeene there fifteene yeeres. Our Generall lay in the Colledge of left all the time that we were slift man. at Santos. This Colledge had many back-wayes to the Sea-fide, and it happened one night, that lefuites Coltwo Sauages being abused by the Portugals ran away, and knowing the passages of the Colledge, ledge. came in the night to the Generals bed-fide , and brought with them Turkies and Hennes : The The General

Generall being awaked by them cryed out for helpe, One of them that could speake Portugall, by two forages

fell downe on his knees, and faid, that hee came to cratte his fauour; and not to offend him. The first scarred, morning following the Generall had discourse with these two Sauages, and by them he knew of studed. 40 what strength the Portugals campe was, and how that at his going out of the Towne they were determined to give battale : likewise they told him of three great bags of mony, and a jarre, that was hid vnder the roote of a Fig tree, and guided vs where we had three hundred head of Cattel. which ferued vs all the time we were there. The Daintie being a small thip made a good voyage to Santos, for thee came in before any of

our fleet, by the which meanes they laded her with Sugar, and good commodities of the Portugals thips that were in the Harbour; this thip went voluntarily with vs, and having made a good voyage, the Captaine told the Generall that he would returne for England, the Generall antive- The Daintie

red, that he was determined to fend him into the Riner of Plate, and then with all his heart hee would haucreshould returne. We continued two moneths at Santos, which was the cuerthrow of our voyage, turned from 50 In the time that we were there many Canibals came vnto vs, defiring the General that he would land destroy the Portugals, and keepe the Countrie to himselfe, protesting to bee all on his side ; the Generall thanked them for their kindneffe, and told them that at that time he had a farther pretence. We found flore of gold in this Towne, that the Indians had brought from a place, called by the Indust, Mutinga, and now the Portugals have to yries there. Many of our companie coun- Mutinga felled the Generall to winter at this Towne, but he would not by any meanes. From our first feeting forth from England, till we came to Samos, I had great love to Christo-

pher the lapon , because I found his experience to tree good in many things. This Indian and I grew into fuch friendthip one with another, that wee had nothing betwixt vs vnknowne topanders retogether. I a long time having found him true, I told him of the money I had found under tidie. 60 the Friers bed; with that hee told mee of some money that hee had got, and wee swore to part halfe from thenceforth whatfoeder God should permit vs to obtaine : fome foure dayes after that, when we were ready to depart, he told me that that time of the yeare was past, wherefore it was best to hide our money in the ground, and remaine in the Countrey. I believing his periwations, agreed to doe what he thought best; thus we determined both, that the same

1204 Port Famine in Straits; ominous names. Kniuets toes loft with cold. LIB.VI

day we were to goe a shipboord, that then he should take all the money in a Canoa, and hide it by a River fide; in the morning I delivered all the money into his hands, and he fwore that in leffe then two houres he would returne, but I staied aboue fine houres, and might have tarried all my life, forhe was gone abourd the Ship, afterward by good meanes I got mine own-againe. and fo our former friendship was parted. Our men marched by Land from Santos, to another Towne called San Vincent, and in the way our men burned fine Engenies, or Sugar-mils, the diforder of our men was fuch at their imbarking, that if the Portugals had beene of any courage, they might easily have cut our throates, the two Indians which came at night to the Generals chamber went with vs to the Straits.

We departed from Santos, with a faire winde for the Straites of Magellan, fourteene dayes we

had faire weather, the fifteenth day all the Masters and Captaines of the fleete comming abourd. the Admirall wonne a great fumme of money. Two dayes after wee were becalmed, and the Pilotes taking their height, found it to be in the altitude with the River of Plate. And we being farre from the shoare did beare roome for Land, determining to fend the Daintie, the Blacke Pininto the aforefaid River of Plate, but it was not the will of God that we should execute our pretence. For the same day wee thought to have descried Land, the winde At the reserver beganne to blow South-well, and the Seas were very darke, swelling in waves so high, that we great florms. could not perceive any of our accompanied ships, although we were very neere one to another. Inthis storme the Seas brake over the Poope of our shippe, and washed our men astonisht with feare into the against our Poope, and brake downe all 20 the Crow a Smal Skippers, the Roe-bucke in this storme ranne her our Gallerie : all things were cast into the Sea that stood aboue Hatches, heere miserable Fornunke before our eyes, with tune began to frowne on vsall, especially on mee, for all that I had, both in clothes and money. with the Seas that brake over her fides. Here twelue men & were cast into the Sea, all our ship aboy. The Ros- our Generall shewed himselfe to bee of a noble courage, for hee did nothing but runne up and downe encouraging his men which were all amazed, thinking that to bee their laft houre, this ftorme continued three dayes, in which time wee lost most of our sayles blowne away from

> It was the will of God, that after we had been three dayes in the storme, the wind ceased but the Seas continued fo great, that wee were not able to beare any fayle. We lying thus toft with Seas, without fight of any of our fleet, the company murmured, and wished themselves againe at 20 Santes, and indeed we al thought that the rest of our company were driven back with the storme to the Coast, thinking it best for vs to returne againe. The Generall hearing what speeches passed in the shippe, came forth vpon the halfe decke, and commanded all the company to come before him, and after he had heard them speake, he answered that he had given directions to all the Mafters and Captaines of the fleete, that what weather focuer should part them, that they should vie their indeuour to take Port Defire, and that they should tarry a fortnight, so if none of the company came, they should leave some marke on the shoare, and goe on their Voyage, with that every man was satisfied, the Generall promising twentie pounds to whomsoever could first spie a fayle, we made our course to Port Defre, and in ten dayes we safely arrived at our desired Port. where we found all our fleet but the Daintie , which was no little comfort to vs all, because the 40 time of our yeere was almost past, we stayed here but two dayes taking a few Penguins, from an Hand right before Port Delire.

When we came to the mouth of the Straits wee found the winde contrary, and were forced to lye heating before the Harbour of Port Famme, three dayes ere wee could double that Cape, for many times we did cast anchor without the Cape in twentie fathomes water, but on a sudden, the current would carrie away the fnips with Cables and Anchors affoat in the night, in this current the Roe-bucke driven with the current, fell crosse over the haze, there wee had no other remedy, but were forced to cut out cables, and folofe our Anchors. In the end with much adoe we doubled the Cape, and got into Port Famine, where wee lay a feuennight for want of winde and weather to goe forward. It the time that wee were at Port Famine, every day our so men went on shoare, to get Muscles and Fruits of the Countrey to eate, and the barke of a tree that was like Sinamon. One day the Boate being ashoare, there came to vs aboue a thousand Canibals naked, with feathers in their hands, but they would not come so neere vs, as we could touch them. If we offered them any thing, they would reach to vs with a long Pole, and whatfocuer we gave them, they would returne vs feathers for it, wee made our fignes to them for victuals, and they would thew vs by fignes, that they had none, but what they could kill with their Darts. I have told you how my chift, and all my clothes were cast over-boord, now comming to this cold Climates, and wanting clothes my hope of life was little, for here men were well at morning, and by night frozen to death. It was my fortune to goe alhoare to get some Milerable cold food, for the allowance of our thip was little, and comming aboord againe with my feete wette, and wanting shift of clockes, the next morning I was nummed, that I could not three my legs. Anthonie Kni- and pulling off my stockings, my toes came with them, and all my feete were as blacke as soote. met loft his toes and I had no feeling of them. Then was I not able to ftirre.

CHAP. 7. S.I. Harris bloweth of his nofe: Straits pursue them out of the Straits. 1205

Thus I continued for the space of a fortnight, till wee came into a faire Bay, where there were many faire Hands, and on the rockes of fome of thefe Hands, wee found Scouts made of the barkes of trees, and afterwards wee found many Indians, but none of them would come to vs. On the South-west fide of the Mayne we found a River, which wee thought had gone to the Strait and South Sea: Our long Boate was lent up this River, and found it to be very firaite and deepe. On deepe Refera the fides thereof they found great Muscles, and in them good store of Pearles, and we named it Muscles with the River of Pearles; the Bay had the name of the Malter of our Pinnalle, because he first found Pearles. it and did discouer it, called it Tobias Bay. From this place wee went further into the Straites having the winde against vs, and with the cold there died every day out of our ship eight or nine to men, tiere one Harris a Gold-smith lost his Nose : for going to blow it with his fingers , cast it Harris his hard into the fire. This lobu Chambers, Cafar Ricafen , and many that are now in England can testi- hapfie. The Generall having experience, that the wind would tarry at the least two moneths, his

men died to fait, that hee thought best to returne for the Coast of Brafil, and there to separate

our fleete to the Hauens, of Santos that lye on the Coast, River of lennary, Spirite Santo, determining by this meanes, to furnish himselfe with Ropes, Sayles, and Victuals of such prices as hee How weretutdid not doubt but to take, and likewife determining to take Santos againe. The Generall came backe with this pretence for Brafill, came to Port Famine, where wee an- gellan. chored two dayes, and there tooke a note of all his men, that were living, and finding some of Generall canthem very ficke, commanded them to be fet on shoare, I was so ill in the Straites that no man dif commeth 20 thought I would have lived, and twice I was brought upon the Hatches to bee cast into the Sea; against to Port but it was the will of God, that when they had faid Prayers, as they accustomed when any man bee setteth died, and that they laid hands on me to cast me ouer-boord, If pake, defiring them not to cast me eight menon over-boord, till I was dead. At this Port Famine comming backe, the Generall would have fet shoare and me on shoare, but Captaine Cockeentreated for me ; so I remayned in the ship. I had very sorie would have clothes, the toes of my feet full of Lice, that (God is my record) they lay in clusters within my hoare with fiesh, and of many more besides my selfe; I had no Cabbin, but lay vpon a chist. Now we come them, had it out of the Straits with all our fleet, but the Dainty that loft vs in the River of Place, in the fforme not beene for that we had, and the Crom that was funke. After that we came out of the Straits, wee came be- Captain Cocte

I had no feeling were they never fo hot. That day that we departed from Port Defire, the Generall fent for all the Masters of the ships. and commanded them that till midnight they should keepe there course with him, and that when he should show them two lights, then they should cast about and beare in with the shoare, but Danis which was Captaine of the Defire, and Tobie Mafter of the Pinnaffe did deceiue vs, and went for the Straits, as I was enformed afterwards by some of there men that were taken at How the Defree Brafill, after that I was taken. Three or foure dayes after this wee had a great storme, in the and the Blacke Brafil, after that I was taken. Three or foure dayes after this wee had a great frome, in the Pinneff good 40 which the Ree-backe loft her mayne Mast, and we loft her. Now were we all alone in a great analysis good. thip, and we knew not what wee were beit to doe, but in the end wee determined to come for

Santes, hoping there to find the rest of our company. In this storme I sate on a chist, and was not Of a great able to ftirre, for ftill as the ship seeled on one tide, the chift went from starboord to larboord, and storme we bad it was the will of God, that it fell betweene a piece of Ordnance, and the Carpenters Cabbin coming backen on the one tide, and on the other fide betweene another Peece, and the Chirurgions Cabbin. Thus all the night I lay very cold, and it was the will of God that the chift neuer turned over, for if it had, I could not have escaped death, the next day the storme ceased, and most of our young Saylers, which we call men of top a yard, being wearied with their nights worke that was paft. were vnder Hatches afleepe, and would not come up to doe fome bufineffe that was to bee done. With that the Generall came downe, with the end of a Rope as bigge as mine arme, and one of the Saylers hid himselfe behind me; the Generall spying him, strooke at him, and hit me on the fide of the head, and halfe an houre after, finding me in the tame cafe that the Generall had left How the Ge mee in, they tooke me, and would have cast mee out of one of the parts of the ship , but it was nerall strooke

Wee with much adoe in the end got to the Harbour of Santos, where wee found none of our They come to company, we anchored right before a Sugar-mill, that stood hard by the Sea side, the Generall afked if there were any that would goe ashoare, then Captaine Stafford, Captaine Southwell, and Captaine Barker offered themselves to goe on shoare, and twentie more with them, the Boate 60 that they went in was made of Sugar chifts and barrell boords, they landed and tooke the Sugarmill, at the which they tooke a great Barke, and fent it laden with victuals, aboord our shippe, which was more welcome vnto vsthen if it had beene gold. Here wee continued all that day, and the next day they fent the great Boate againe laden with Sugars and Guinee Wheate, then

the Generali fent them word that they should come away, but they fent him word againe, that

the night at Santos, fell ouer-board by a mischance and was drowned.

fitraits of Ma-

fore Port Defire againe, and there our Boats went to Pengnin Iland for Pengnins; at this place the How I got fee 30 Generall tooke a Chirurgion who cured with words; This man comming aboord our flip, faid my himmes ab fome words ouer my feet, and I had feeling in my legges and feete which I had loft before, for ter we came the space of a fortnight, many times before this man came, I had hot Irons laid to my feet, but out of the

the will of God that I spake and was faued. Here one of the Indians that came to the Generall in gainst his wills

S. Vincent.

men, and wee

loft ours with three men-And at the Service we took the Defires long Boat for the Admirall.

Port Defre.

Magellan Port Famine.

Current-

Barke like Si-Naked Sana-

in the Straits.

Thus

they had more prountion on thoare, and before all was abourd they would not come. The third day, that our men were on shoare, the Poringall let on them. They had the little Boate alhoare, but the wind being from shoare, the great Boat went not from the ship side that day, the next day that our men were flaine, our long Boate went ashoure, and brought vs newes how the little Boat was broke and how all our men were gone. One of the Indians that I have told you of landed here with our men, and having experience of the Countrey, when our men were in the hotteft of their fight ranne away, having one Arrow shot thorow his necke, and another in his mouth and out at his poale, this Indian fwamme aboutd visto vs vpon a logge, and told vs that all our men were flame.

diff before.

come curs at Santes.

The Generall thought good to goe from hence to the Iland of San Sebastian, and there if he ... did not meete with tome of the fhips, that then he would returne for England, the same day that we were to depart from Santos, the Roe-bucke past by the mouth of the River of Bertia; where we were, and that a Peece, and we answered with another, then the Roe-bucke came into vs with her Masts broken. After the Ros-bucke came to vs, we went neerer the Towne, determining to have beaten downe the Towne with our Ordnance, but wanting water, the Galleon Lecester toucht ground, and we had much adoe to get her cleere againe. Then wee landed eightie of our men, at a small River neere the Towne, where we had great store of Mandiora Roots, Potators, Plantons, and Pine Apples. The Portugals feeing our mengoing into the River, fent fix Canoas to meete them, we leeing them, made a shot at them with the chaine of our Pumpe, with that they returned, and our Boats came fafely aboord with good store of the aforenamed Roots. In 20 our thip there was a Portugall whom we tooke in the thip taken at Cape Frio, this Portugall went with vs to the Straits of Magellanus, and feeing of our overthrow, told vs of a Towne called Spirito Sancto, this Portugall laid that we might goe before the Towne with our fhips, and that without danger, we might take many Sugar-mils, and good flore of cartle.

Spirito Santo.

Portugals ad-

Portugall han-

The words of this Portugall made vs breake off our pretence that wee had for San Sebestian. and we went to Spirito Santio, in eight dayes we got before the mouth of the Harbour; at length we came to an Anchor in the Roade, and prefently we fent our Boats to found the Channell, and we found not halfe the depth that the Portugall fand we should finde, the Generall thinking that the Portugall would have betrayed vs. without any trial caused him to bee hanged, 'he which was done in a trife. Here all the Gentlemen that were living, defred that they might go ashoare 20 to take the Towns. The General was very unwilling, & told them of divers inconveniences, but all would not fuffice them, they were to importunate, that the Generali choice out one hundred and twentie men, of the best that werein both the ships , and sent Captaine Morgan a singular good Land-fouldier, and Lieutenant Royden, for choife Commanders in this action. They landed before a small Fort with one of the Boats, and drave the Portugals out of it, the other Boate went higher, when they had a very hot skirmish, and their lives were quickly shortned, for they landed on a Rocke, that it cod before the Fort, as they leaped out of the Boate, they flid all armed into the Sea, and so most of them were drowned. To be short wee lost eightie men, at this So, men flaine: place, and of the fortie that returned, there came not one without an Arrow or two in his body. and some had five or fixe.

When we saw we could doe no good at this place, wee determined to come agains for the I-

land of San Sebastian, and there we meant to burne one of our ships, and from thence we deter-

mined to goe for the Straits againe, the company that was in the Roe-bucke, hearing of it, in the

Venemous

night runne away from vs, and we were left alone againe, well we came to San Sebastian Iland, all this while I lay under Hatches lame, ficke, and almost starued : I was not able to stirre, I was fo weake. After we came to this Iland, the first thing that was done, the ticke men were set on shoare to shift for themselves, twentie of vs were jet on shoare, all were able to go yo and downe although very weakly, but (I alas!) my toes were raw, my body was blacke, I could not speake Authory Kninet nor firre. In this cate I was layed by the shoate side, and thus I remayned from sine of the clock in the morning, till it was betweene eleuen and twelve of the clocke, that the Sunne came to 50 his higheif, and the extreme heate of the Sunne pierced through my bodic, whereby I came to my felfe, as a man awaked from fleepe; and I faw them that were let on flore with me, lye dead and a dying round about me : there men had eaten a kind of Peare, that did grow by the Sea fide which did poylon them. When I faw all these men dead, I prayted God that had rid them out of their milerable estate, and cursed my hard fortune, that Death it felfe did refuse to end my tormented and most miserable life. I looked towardes the sheare, and saw nothing but these Peale, and if I did eate them, I was fure of death, if I did not eate them, I faw no remedie but to flarue.

Seeing in this manner, I looked towards the ship, to see if the Boate came ashoare, but (alas) all my hopes were with speed to end my life, but that it was the will of God, I saw things there 63 by the Sea fide, and it was a great ebbe; then I went creeping on my hands and my feete like a childe, and when I had gotten to the Sea fide, I faw many Crabs lye in the holes of the mudde. Ipulled off one of my flockins, and filled it with Crabs, and as well as I could, I carried them to a hollow figge tree, where I found a great fire made, to cathing them on the coles, I did eat them.

GHAP.7. S.2. Kniuets terroar and food, captivity, danger of death.

and fo I lay downero fleepe till the next day; and then I watched for the ebbe to get fome more meate. Thus I lived eight or nine dayes without fight of any man, the ftinke of fome of the dead men that the Sea came not to, was fo noy fome that I was faine to remooue from that place, and as I went along the shoare to seeke some place to abide in I passed by a faire River that went into the S:a; where I thought it good to make my abode because of the fresh water. I had not beene there fearce the space of halfe a quarter of an houre, but I saw a great thing come out termical ha of the water, with great feales on the backe, with great vgly clawes and a long tayl; this beatt a misi of the came towards me, and I had not the power to thun it, but as it came towards me I went and met the come out it, when I came neere it, I stood still amuzed to see to monstrous a thing before me. Hereupon of the water, to this beaft flood still and opened his mouth, and thrust out a long tongue like a Harping-Iron. I

commended my felfe to God, and thought there to have bin torne in pieces; but this beaft tur-

ned againe, and went into the River, and I followed to the Rivers side. The next day I went farther into the lland, fearing to tarrie in this place, and I found's great

Whale lying on the shoare like a ship with the keele vpwards, all coursed with a kinde of short moffe with the long lying there. At this place I made a little house, and fed on the Whale for the space of a fortnight. In this time the Generall fet forty men more ashoare, at the place where I Whale, was fee first on land, likewife the Generall trimmed his Boate at this place, and had a Not continually a fi hing, of which John Chambers his Cooke had charge, who is this day living in London. After that there men came ashoare, I left the place where I was with the Whale, and came to our 20 men and lived with them, beeing at this time reasonable well, and able to goe very well, for the vie of going into the Sea did heale my toes. After these men had beene on shoare seuen or eight dayes, we had taken wood and water for the ship, the Poringals of the River of Innuary, landed on the North point of the Iland hard by the Whale, they took two of our men and one elcaped, who came to vs in the night, and told vs that the Portugals and the Sanages were landed. That day wee had taken a great Tortois ashaore, and wee did bid the Sayler to bee of good cheere, for if it were true, it was the better for vs, for wee were fure, that the Generall would not take vs againe into the flip, with that we all commended our felues to God, and dranke to our friends in faire water, and to we determined to march along the shoare with a white shirt instead of a sligge of truce, but the Sea was so high that we could not, then we determined to watch quarterly, till 30 fuch timeas we could efpie them, I had the first watch, and watched till I was weare . so called one of my fellowes, to watch, and he answered angerly, Tit, tes a lie: with that I lay downe ty They are taken the fire as well as the reit. Before i was afleepe, the Portugals were at our doore, then I frarted and flane. up, and one of them tooke me by the legge, presently wee were all led to the shoare side, there all that were taken with me, were knocked on the heads with fire-brands, the Indian that had He (scapeth, hold of me, ftrooke twice or thrice at me with a short Bill, but I striuing, cryed out in Portugall, That if they would faue mee I would tell them newes, with that a Portugall paffed by . an I caught hold of him, fo well as I could I told him a Tale which faued my life at that time, this

Portugall game me againe to a Sawage, & I cryed to him that I would go wherfoeuer he went, then

he bid me not fear for that Sauage was his flaue, and that he would carrie me to the Caprayn, fo I

when wee came where any Rockes reached into the Sea; hee would take mee on his backe, and

fwimme with mee round about the Rockes, till wee were free from the Rockes, thus we went

almost all night, til at length we came by a great Cliffe that stood by the shore. Then the Sanape

whiftled, and another Sanage answered him from the Cliffe, wherupon five or fix Portugals came

forth, and amongst them came the Captaine with a piece of bread and Marmallet in his hand,

and as foone as he faw me, he asked me what newes, I answered that I was very hungry, and

defired him that hee would give mee some meate, and then I would tell him all the newes that I

could, with that all the Portugals brake out in a laughter, and gaue me bread and fifth to eate, after

I had eaten that which they had given me, I told them the truth of all that they asked me, heere

50 they killed eight and twentie of our men, and faued only my felfe, and Henrie Barrawell who

40 was content perforce to goe I knew not whether, this Camball carried me along the ashare, and

was faued by my meanes.

ANTHONY KNIVET his comming to the R of Ianero, and wlage amongst the Portugals, and Indians : his divers travels therew divers Regions of these parts.

He next day our thip weighed Anchor, and whether thee went I knew not, wee were carried by the Portugals to the River of Innero, I went with a Mellizo, which is halfe a Portugall, and halfe a Sanage that faued my life in the night w en I was taken. When we came to the Citie of San Sebastian in the River of Janero, the Portugals in the Canoas, made fuch a noyle, with Pipes and Drummes, that all the people of the Citie came to fhoare to fee vs, with that the Canoas going round, as if they were in fight, two Portugals tooks mee. and call me towards the shoare, laying, here is our prize; the tyde being strong carried mee to the mayne, where I had beene drowned had it not beene for a woman, who feeing the tyde carry me away, fent two or three flanes, and they faued mee. When I came ashoare, all the Portugals were at the Church of our Lady, and I would have gone into the Church, but the Portugals would not let me, faying, that I was not a Christian. Then I was brought before the Governour, and he gaue me to the man that had faued mee, and I was very well contented, for hee vied mee very kindly as I came with him from the Hand of San Sebastian. For the space of three moneths tha: I was with this man, I kept a house, and went to the Sea-fide with his Hogs, and there I euery day brought him home a basket of great Crabs that lie in the holes of the mud, as deepe as 10 voucan thruit in your arme. This w sa good life, my Master called me sonne, and I dined and supped with him : also I had a hanging Net to he in, and lay in the same roome which hee It happened one day being by the Sea-fide washing of little Dogs, there came a Canoa full of

Portugals, and they tooke me to the Towne with them, but as foone as I landed I remembred my Matters house and ran to it. As I went I mer with Henrie Barmay : the next day the Gouernour fent for mee and examined me what I was, I told him that I was a poore ship boy, with that Henrie Barway reproued me, asking what I meant to fay to to the Governour; I replyed , that I was no other but what I had told him, then the Gouernour commanded mee to bee carried to the Sugar mill, where I was three moneths, till all the clothes that I had were torne in peeces, with working in a Barke going day and night vp and downe for Sugar canes and wood for the Mill : the miferable life that I was in made me careleffe what I did. I had neither meat nor clothes but blowes as many as Gally flaues. Then I determined to run away into the Wilderneile, for I was athamed to be feene naked of the Portugals. I made me a Cottage in a great Caue in the Wildernesse, where I was seuen moneths. In the day I fished for to live, and in the night I came to some Indians houses, and for fish they gaue me Castauie meale, and many kindes of Rootes, that served me for bread. In the end the Gouernour caused me to be sought out, and gaue mee a sute of blue clothes, and commanded me to worke in a Garden, where I carried earth, and digged the ground

to plant Cabidges and Turneps.

faluted in this fort.

After that I was commanded agains to take charge of the Sugar boar, where I was worse vied 30 then ever I was before, for the Factor was a man that hated English men, and would vie me more like a Dogge then a Man. When I had concinued foure moneths in the Barke, it happened that one of the Gouernours fonnes, called Marin de Sas, came from Spirito Santo. This man pittying my poore and miterable life, defired his father that he would give mee vinto him, which his father granted, and I was very well vied of my new Mailer, two yeeres after I had ferued him. It happened that hee and his Mother in law fell out, whereupon the Governour his father fent him to a Towne, called Wyanaffes, which were in peace with the Portugals, and for Kniues and Hatchets, they fell their Wives and Children. This iourney I went with him, and we came to a Towne called lawarapipo (that is to fay) Is this the Dogge? He feeing me forward to doe him feruice, fent me from this Towne with eight of his flaues laden with Hatchets and Knines , to ano- 40 ther kinde of Canibals, called Porces, which had beene likewife friends with the Portugals, but it was long before any Pertugal had beene there, I came to the Towne of Peries, where I was

He fleeth.

His new Ma.

Wyanaffes.

Lawarapipo.

Paries.

As foone as I came into a great house, which I thought was their Kings, which they call Mo-Stronge enter. ronichana; prefently, they had hanged up a faire Not betweene two poiles, in the which I was commanded to fit downe, and as foone as I was fet, there came at the leaft twentie women, and fome laving their heads on my shoulders, and others on my knees, they began to crie out making fuch a pitious noife, that I was amazed : yet I determined to fit still till they had done. As foone as the women were gone, an old man came in, all painted with red and blacke, and hee had three great holes in his face, one in the winder lip, and one on either fide of his mouth, and in every hole so stood a faire greene stone. This Cambell came through the house where I was, with a woodden fword in his hand, and as hee came hee spake very loud, and looked as though hee had beene mad. figiking his hand on his breaft, and on his thighs; still crying out, he walked up and downe. Atter this Sauage had ended his speech, he stroke me on the head, and bad mee welcome; and commanded fuch things as were in his house to be fet before me to cate. After I had beene there two or three houres, newes went through all the Towne of my being there, and from this Towne to others that were bard by,

His danger by Whileft I continued in this Towne a Sauage called Waynembuth, who bare a great grudge to the Portugals, came where I was, with two women, and when hee came into the house where I was he laid his hands on their necks, and to came dancing before mee, thus after hee had danced fome quarter of an house, he spake to me, faying, Doest thou fee thefe women, by my valour I got their loves, and now their defire I am sworne to fulfill, which is to kill thee, as I have done many more. I antiwered him that I came not as an enemie against him, or any of his, but as a friend that brought him many things that I was affured hee wanted, and that if nothing would fatisfie him but my

life. I affored him, that hee and all his Countrie would pay for it. To this hee made no answere. but went to separate my things that lay by mee to his Concubines , withall I started out of my bed, and tooke my fword in my hand, and thrust the Camball from my things, that I had almost ouerturned him, and he durft not touch them nor me any more, but stood rayling, and threatning to kill mee, and with the noise that hee made, the old man came into the house, and seeing mee fland with my fword in my hand, asked mee what was the matter, and I told him all that had palled betwixt mee and the forefaid Caniball. After hee had heard mee, hee turned to the Caniball that had offered me abufe, and asked him what reason he had to doe him so great a discredit, and to meddle with any friend of his in his Towne, and angerly commanded him to avoid his Town, To if not he would make him repent that ever he came thither; with that, for feare of afterclaps he went away with his Concubines : the next morning newes came to the Towne, that Wanambuth was comming with three hundred Cambals, and that perforce he would have me to his Towne, and that there I should be killed according to the order of the Countrie; and how hee left order with his wives to prepare wine through all the Townes in readinesse.

When the old man heard of this, hee presently commanded all his people to take their wear pons, and defired them to goe with him into the field to meet them that were comming to wrong him; whereat they all gave a great hoope, faying, that they would all die rather then Hofbitall fide they would bee diffraced. The old man embraced mee many times, and defired mee that I would line in Satarry in his house. I thanked him for his love, and told him that in any wife I would not tarry unges, 20 behinde him; fo I went with him to meet the Caniball in the field; we being a great many more then they, they ient three or foure vnto vs as messengers, that they came to be merry and to buy and fell fuch things as they had, then the old man gaue leave for them all to come into his Town. except the Caniball that had mit-vied him the day before; that night I gaue all my merchandife to the old man, and defired him for it, that hee would cause mee to bee conducted out of his Countrie; the next day following the old man gave me ieuentie flaues, and caused three hundred Bow men to goe with me till I was past the River of Paraeyna; from whence they retuined to River Paraeya their Towne, and in forrie dayes journy with eale I came againe to Ilba Grande, where I found my Master. Martin de Saa, who was v. ry glad of my returne, and for recompence of my paines. he promifed me one of them to bee my flave, bu. when hee came to the River of lanere, hee fold

so them, and gaue me nothing. After wee had beene at home two moneths, hee would have fent mee againe into the fausee countrie for more flaues, but I knew that thereby I should get nothing and refused to goe. Wherevoon hee returned me againe to his father, thinking I would rather choose to goe then serue his He returneth tather in the Sugar boat. But I was contented to goe against o his father, hoping to be better ve to his o'd Mafed then I was before : then his father commanded me to goe a fishing in a small boat for to make fler. oile for the Sugar mill. One night being vpon a Rocke fishing for Dog-fish, which the Portugals Endangeredby call Tubarones; I tooke my line, laid it vinder me and fell alleepe: about mid-night with the be- a Sharke. ginning of the floud a Dog-fash tooke my booke, and the line being vinder mee . I awaked, tooke the line in my hand, and running about the Rocke (I know not how) the line tangled about my legge, and the fifth drew me into the Sea; and affoone as I fell into the water the Sharke fwam at me as if he would have devoured me, but affoone as I faw him come neere mee, I caught hold on the hooke that was in his mouth, and firsking downwarke with my hand the Sharke I wam a-

way againe. I now remembred a knife, that I had about my necke tyed with a firing, as the Cambals vie, and there with cut the cord, or elfe there had I ended all my miteries; all my body was torne with the Crags of the Rocke, so that for the space of a fortnight I was not able to flirre. After I was healed the Governour commanded mee againe to goe a fishing : wee had newes in

the R uer of lanero that Mafter Hankins was at Cape Free, which made me the more defirous to Milter Ham. be on the Coast in hope to get to him. It happened that one day being a fishing by an Iland that tiss at Cape So lay two leagues from the shoare, Master Hameins passed by the Sea as farre as well hee could bee Frie. deferyed, but it was a very faire day : affoone as I faw the ships I fet the Indians that were with me on shoare on the Iland, commanding them to seeke prouision for vs for that night I did affure my felfe that Mafter Hawkins would refresh his men at the Hand of San Sebastian, and feeing the Another dow winde faire, and all the Indians ashoare, I hoysted faile, and tooke my course towards the Hand of bledifaster of San Sebastian, but fortune was so crosse to me, that being in sight of the ships, a contrarie winde blue with such a storme, that perforce I was driven vpon an Hand so full of Rocks, that my Boat was broken all in peeces, and my felte all cut and bruifed with the Rocks. Getting to the floare upon this Iland I remay ned three dayes without meat, or meanes to get away from the Iland, the Indians that landed upon the Iland where we were a fifting, got to the Towne and told the Governour how I had beguiled them. Presently upon that newes the Governour sent two Canoas to deferie the ships, these Canoas came on shoare at the Hand where I was, and there they found me almost starued, and all my face hurt beaten voon the Rocks.

From this place they went to the Iland of San Sebafian, and Mafter Hawkins was gone ; then they returned agains to the River of Innero, and I washrought bound with my hands behind me,

on to be hanlefuites faue

Imprisoned

all the Towne rayled at me, calling me Run-away, then I was brought before the Gouernour and His imprison- he looking very angerly upon me lent me to prilon, where I was vied like a Dogge for the inace of a fortnight : for I lay on the ground, and had no meat given me, but Cassaui meale and water. Condemnati- After I had endured this miferie, I was condemned to be hanged for a Run-away and a Lutheran. and as I was going by the Colledge of Iefus, all the Friars of the Colledge came forth with a great Crucifix, and falling on their knees before the Gouernour they craued pardon for me, and I was carried agains to prilon, where I remayned three dayes longer, then I was brought forth on a Market day, with my hands and feet bound, and there in publike beaten with cordes, that I had not a whole foot of skin on all my body. After they had punished mee, as you have heard. I was commanded to be put againe in prifon, where I was for the space of a fortnight, with no meste 10 but Caffaui meale and water, my lodging was the earth, my body was all bruifed and full of

wormes with lying on the ground.

After this the Governour commanded great hoopes of Iron to bee clinched to my leave of thirtie pound weight, the which I carried nine moneths, continually working in the Sugar mill like a bond-flaue. The Factor vied me more like a Dogge then a Man, for his harred was to much to me, and to all ftrangers, that I neuer came by him but I was fure of blowes. Now was my life fo intolerable, that I grew del perate and careleffe what I did to end my life. Many times I would tell the Governour now like a Tyrant the Factor vied me, but for all that he law my body black. and bruifed with blowes, he had no compatition on me. I had no meanes nor hope of any release of

Diffoliorerefo- my miferable life, but to kill the Factor. Now occasion came fitly to execute my pretence, and 20 it happened thus; I comming in the night with a Barke laden with Sugar canes, after the Barke was valuden, the night being cold, I lay vpon the boards before the Fornaces, and had not refted halfe an houre, when the Factor came into the Sugar house, fo finding measleepe (as you have heard) hee ftrooke mee with a withe on the naked ribs, with fuch force, that I thought hee had broken all the bones of my body. I started up, and seeing him before mee readie to fecond his malice with another blowe, I embraced him in mine armes, and with a great knife that I had . I hurt him in the fide , the backe, and the arme ; hee cryed out I had flaine him. I thinking no lesse ran away into the chiefest of the wood, and the favourable night being darke, no man knew which way to follow mee. When day came I went wandring up and 30

He fleeth againe.

downe, praying to God to fend some Leopard, or Lion, to deuoure mee, rather then to bee taken againe by the Portugals, for I knew if the Gouernour once got mee againe, I should endure the most extreame torture that ever was invented for man. Wandring in the Wildernesse. I did hearea great notic of people, then I was amazed, knowing not what to doe to faue my life, fometimes I run like a mad man, then would I fit downe and liften if I could heare any noise, and which way somer I went I heard still the noise of people neerer me. Thus feeing Danger of 12- my felte at the last cast, I espyed a great Tree, in which grew a thing of thick long leaves, calking in a Cara- led by the Indians, Carakala; as bigge as the nest of an Eagle, I got me into that, having not beene there a quarter of an houre, many Indians came to leeke mee. and fhot many times with their arrowes at the thing where I was, when they faw that I did not flirre, they went their An waves, and I remayned all that day in the Tree, the night following, and the next day and night, I came downe very weake, for in two dayes I had eaten nothing, then the night being darke, I came to the Sea fide, fo going along by the shoare fide, I espyed a Canoa drawne to shoare, and hard by it on the ground lay three Sauages affeepe, by them lay bowes, arrowes, and rootes, with hookes to fift with, of those things I tooke what I thought best, and went along the Sea fide till I came to a Point of the I and, where I found a Sauage affeepe vpon the fands, when I Solamen milera had viewed him well I knew him to be one of my Masters slaves, who killed one of his fellowes, wherefore hee durft not goe home, I tooke his bow and arrowes lying by him and awaked him. when he faw me he began to lament, and defired that I would not carry him home to my Ma-

This Sauge was a great man in his Countrie, his name was Quarafips inca, that is, the yellow Sunne. Neuer man found truer friendlhip of any then I did of him. This Caniball and I after many discourtes determined to swim from the lland to the mayne. When we had escaped the dans His wandrings, ger of passing the arme of the Sea, at least two miles in breadth, we both landed very feeble, with the long being of our naked carkaffes in the water. Now wee are at the foot of the Mountaine called Paranapiacano, a defart, where many have beene devoured with Leopards. Lions, Crocodiles, and Surococous, and divers other Serpents. Notwithstanding all these fearful inconveniences, we chole rather to fall into the pawes of a Lion, and the clawes of the Serpent, then in- 62 to the bloudie hands of the Portugall. Seven and thirtie dayes we two travelled through this defart, every day we were in danger of our lives, for we met many Leopards, Lions, and huge Serwirch others pents, but God delivered vs from them. In this journey we eare wilde Honie and Palmetos, and a kinde of Snakes, called by the Cambals, Boaryna, After we had poffed this defart, we came into

fter, I antiwered him that my cause was ten times worse then his, and defired him to tell mee if 50

he knew any place whither wee might goe to laue both our lives, and with that told him what

I suppore by Incancth that fp.rtted beaft, saila Tigre.

a champaine Countrie, where we had great flore of Pine nuts. Wandring up and downe in this Countrie, one morning we espyed smoke in a wood not farre from vs. Then wee travelled that waves, and comming neere, I knew where we were, and prefently I told Quariffacusa, that the Towne was called Pinnita, and that this was the place where Invariping had vied mee fo well, Pinnita when Wanambuth would have killed me. Now come we to the Towne, where we are very kindly received, especially of mine old friend lawaripipo.

After we had rested a little while among these Cambals, I desired them that they would some to his old host. themselves together; for in publike I would rehearse somwhat vnto them of my comming into their Countrie. Now when they were all together, I began to rehearfe vnto them how cruelly Senare of Sa-10 the Portugals did vie their Nation, in making them bond-flaues, marking them like Dogs, whip- uages. ping and tormenting them, as if they were not of flesh and bloud. I rehearsed vnto them the course of mine owne life, and defired them to remember how my Countrimen had yfed them in

former times, encouraging them to bee valiant, and to pull vp their spirits, and perswading to defend themselves against such Tyrants, who vider the colour of friendship vied them most villainonfly. Then I told them that I had killed a Portugall, and that I was determined to end my life with them, if they would promife to defend mee and themselves from the Portugals. With that many of them embraced me, all together giving a great hoope, faying, as long as their lives lasted, and their Bowes brake not, that they would defend themselves and me. Here I continued nine moneths, till it happened that Martin de Saa came againe to buy more flaues. He came to a 20 Towne hard by the Hand of San Sebastian, called laquerequere, where ving the Canibals kindly, laquerequere,

and giving them Knives and Hatchets and Beades, hee won their hearts to much vinto him that they gave him their Sonnes and Daughters to bee his slaves; and moreover told him, that I and Onarififacupa was at a Towne hard by. Then Martin de Saa fent foure Portugals and twentie Sauages for me to the Towne, When the Sauages of laquerequere came to Pianua, they gave fuch Sauage faith, report in all the Towns of the liberalitie of Martin de Saa , that without any deliberation they Antonie Knines bound my hands, and brought me backe againe to my Mafters fonne.

When the Canibals brought mee before Martin de Saa, all those that protested before most and brought to friendship vnto mee, are now become my greatest and most mortall enemies, and with hoo- his Master. ping and hollowing deride mee, striking mee on the head, and declaring to the Portugals,
30 how I vied great periwasions to have them become their enemies. Martin de Sas made no anfwere to all their exclamations, but commanded certaine Portugals and Indians to fee that I

runne not away. Being brought the next morning before him, hee told mee that hee did pittie my hard fortune to come to fo bad an end as I was like to come to, making mee beleeue that the Factor was dead, and therefore hee thought that the Law world condemne mee. When hee had fooken. I defired him to bee fauourable vnto mee, and that hee would confider what feruice I had done him and his father, and to thinke how vnreasonably the Factor had vied mee a long time. Then hee promised mee , that wherein hee might hee would stand my friend : then I entreated him to give mee leave in that defart to end my life among it the Canibals, where hee

might well bee affured I could never hurt him nor any of his Nation : hee would not condescend 40 thereunto, but promised hee would faue my life, if I would but goe to a place in that Countrie. called Paracyua Wereob, and there to trafficke with the Canibals for Women, Boyes, and Girles. Paracyua We

Although the danger of going into the Countrie of wild Man-eaters where I neuer had beene, rest. was no lesse then the value of my life, yet considering with my selfe that my offence deserved death among the Portugals, I chose once againe rather to stand to the Heather mercy of sauage Man-eaters, then at the bloudie crueltie of Christian Portugals. And feeing my felfe in fuch extremitie, I shewed my selfe very willing and diligent to doe the Captaine service; but God His next adknowes, my hope was neuer to have feene him againe. Now goe I along it in the Wilderneise, uenture thowith twelue Sauages, I know not whither, but as they guide mee ouer huge Mountaines, and row the demany great Rivers, passing many dangers of our lives by land of Lions, Leopards, divers great farts.

So Snakes : in the Rivers , Crocodiles , Iararaquas , and Capucaras , with many other Servents that vie the water. After wee had travelled five and twentie dayes in the Wildernesse, wee came to a faire River as broad as the Thames, and the Canibals that went with mee faid that the A faire River, Towne flood by that River fide, where wee were to trafficke, but certaintie they knew not where about. Then wee made vs a Boat of the barke of a Cedar Tree, going downe the streame in it. Wee had not beene there long a going with the swiftnesse of the Current, before wee efpyed a Boate of the same fashion that ours was, with two Canibals in it, who as soone as Two Sausses. they had espyed vs would have runne away, but wee beeing better manned then they overtooke them before they got to the shoare. With mee there went one of their owne Nation

by name Morology, who had beene taken by the Wayanaffes, and they fold him to the Por-60 tugals. This Morosoey spake the language of the Taymayas, which I understood very well. The two Cambals that wee tooke in the Boate, were amazed to see men apparelled, info- Apparell much that they knew not their owne Countriman that was with mee, when they faw him Rrange, apparelled like a Portugal; if they were amazed at vs , I was no leffe at them, for in Their flenge all my trauell I neuer faw the like fashion of Canibals. For when I saw them first I thought habite.

Her commark

Hhhbh 2

1212 Feathered nation. Emulations of Sauages, High hill, Venemous Snakes, LIB. VI.

Stranger na-

they had beene borne with feathers on their heads and bodies, like fowles of the aire, they had ano need their bodies with gumme of the oiletulees of Balfome, and couered themielues to artificulty with feathers of divers colours, in fuch order, that you could not have feene a toot of their skins but their legs : after wee had beholden them well and they vs , I commanded Morofceir. their Countriesan to disclose himselfe to his Countrimen, and to tell them the cause of our comming, defining them to goe to their Towne, and tell of our being there, left our fulden commine hould raile an vprore among them, the which they were very willing to doe; fo guine either of them a knife, and a few beades, they departed very joyfully.

Two hours after that they were departed from vs, there came at the least flue hundred of them firiging and rejoycing, shewing themselves very glad of our comming to traffick with them, 10 encreating vs to goe to then Towne, the which we did, where wee were received with dancing and finging of great and small, and in every house I was received with great ceremonies. and long speeches of the chiefest that were in the Towne. The next day I began to traffick with them for flaues, and I bought ninetie, all which I brought to Martin de Saa, who remayned at Ilha Grande till I returned againe. Affoone as I came vnto him, I deliuered all vnto him, deliring him to fland my friend, and to give mee leave to tarrie among the Cambals, till fuch time as hee had fooken with his fatuer in my behalfe. Laughing, hee answered that I neede to feare to goe home, for the man was recoursed, and gone to the River of Plate, and that his father was very forry, tlinking I had beene eaten by some Serpent, Leopard, or Lion. When I came before the Gouernour, he bleffed himtelre to tee mee, meruailing where I had beene to long, and tent 20 me againe to his Sugar mill, where I continued a twelve-moneth, and I had the charge to chift all the Sugar, in which time I got two hundred crownes. I determined to goe to Angola in Athio. pia; and the Gouernour gaue me his word that I shoul :, and that what suour he could show me. Tihould bee fire to haue, but when the ship was readie to depart, the Gouernour fent mee out of Towne on a sleeuelesse errand, and I remayned ashoare, and lost all that I had scraped together

for my voyage.

A monet for two after this it happened that the Wayanaffes were fet on by a kind of Canibals. called Tarmaya, the Wayanaffes have traffick and friendihip with the Portugals, and the most mor-Ambijous ma, tall enemies that the Portugals have in all America, are the Taymayas. The Wayanaffes having lost lice in faunges, a great many men in a battell, not being able to make any head againe of themstelles; craued 30 exp duion a fuccour againe of the Portugals. My Masterbeing Gouetnour of the Towne, fent his sonne Exp outon 3- Martin de San with feuen hundred Portugals, and two thousand Indians. The Wayanaffes certified vinto vs that the mott that wee should bee, before wee come to the Taymayas, would

PH-47-55.

Tous the fourteenth day of October 1597, we departed on our way with fixe Canoas by Sea. some thirtie miles from the River of lannarie, for a Port called Paratee. The first day that we de-

Danger of drawning.

parted, we had a great storme, where we thought we should all have beene drowned, but it was the will of God to face our lines, with the generall loffe of all we had, the Canoas turned votide downe with the forme, wee holding faft on the bottom of them, were driven on fhoure with great hazard of our lives. From the place where we drove on shoare to the River of Wareteena it 40 was three miles, which we went by land, and fent the Canous to the River of I amuarie for victuals. We tarried two dayes at Wareteena till the aforesaid Canoas returned, the third day wee went to a place of Great Hand, called Ippon, where there dwelt two or three Portneals. Here we had great flore of Posatos & Plantons to eat. At this place we remay ned fine dayes for fine hundred Canibals, that were to come from an Hand called I awarpipo. When these Indians were come we deported in our Canoas for our defined Port called Parage. As we went in the night wee cut a great Bay of the Sea, where a Whale did ouerturne one of our Canoas, notwithitanding wee tooke the men that were in the Sea, and went on for the Harbour aforesaid. The next day the Captaine commanded all the Canoas to be pulled out of the water, and to couer them well with boughes, determining immediately to depart by land.

Whale ouerrurneth a Ca-

11ha Grande.

That night that we came to Paratee, there came a Cariball to vs, called Alecio, from a Towne A caniball capcalled lequerequere, this Town lyeth by the Sra fide right ouer against the Iland of San Sebastian. This Inates brought eightie Bow-men with him, offering himselfe with all his companie to goe with our Captaine. The next day we departed on our voyage, through the Mountaines, at night the Captaine feeing Alecia the Camball lying on the ground, tooke away the Net that I had to fleene in, and gaus it to the Caniball, I being faine to lie vpon the earth. I complayned to some of the Portugals of the wrong that the Captaine did vie vnto mee: they answered, that his father fent me in that voyage onely to be made away; I replyed, Gods will be done. After wee had gone on our journey three dayes, we came to the bottom of a great Mountaine, called by the Indians, Paranageacano, that is in our language, The fight of the Sea; this Mountaine is to high, that 60 wee were three dayes going vp, and three dayes also going downe. Two dayes after wee were descended we came into a faire champaine Countrie like meadow ground with long graffe. and great store of Pine trees, where we lodged that night in a bottom, in which we killed aboue fixe hundred Snakes; it was the will of God that one Indian, called Ieronimo, was bit by them, and

taine with eightic jollowers.

Three dayes

CHAP.2.S.2. M. Paracoua. R. Paracua, Sauages entertainment, travell, fibrits, 1213

not any more. This Indian prefently (welled, and his blond forung out of his eyes and his nailes. and fo he died.

After that we came to travell agains through the Mountaynes fome forty dayes, then wee came to a great River called Paracuona; which River wee paffed with things made of Canes tyed R. Paracuona topether with withes, which the Portneals call langardas. We were fouredayes before we paf- how paffed. fed over this River it was to great, and ranne fo fwift. After that, wee trapelled againe fome 20. daves till we came to a great Mountayne called Panace mano apacone, we were foure dayes going up this Mountayne by reason of the great showres of raine that we had, besides wee were

very weake, and all our victuals were done. But hoping to find our enemies very foome, we did four edwes to our best so hold our comming up this hill, from fixe of the clocke in the morning, till it was two journey. of the clocke in the afternoone on a rainie day, the Captaine commanded every man to make his abode for that night; whereupon I fet downe my burthen , and went into the Mountaynes to out some boughes of a Tree called Sammambaya, to court vs from the raine, the weather was for cold, and I having travelled all day without meate was to feeble, that going to cut a bough, my Histonger of tword fell out of my hand, and I face vnder a Tree, where I had made mine end, if it had not bin death, for my deere friend Henry Barrawell; who leeing that I tarried long came to feeke me, and found me in such case, that I was not able neither to speake nor stand. After he had brought me to the Campe, he layed me by the fire, I recourred and was very well.

After we had passed this Mountayne of Parcena; wee transled in a kind of low wash ground; 20 there were great store of Camibals called Pories. Vpon a sudden there would come one 100 of them out of the Wood, and affoone as they had gotten any thing from vs, would be gone, wee knew not whether : and prefently there would come as many more. There we kept very good order, and had alway very good watch, for feare they should worke vs any Treason; for all our men were very weake; within foure dayes iourney from the aforefaid Mountayne, we came to the River of Paraena, where we had great flore of fifth, but nothing elfe to eate withall. At this R. Petaree. River, one day I going a fithing, being a very rainie day, three Indians that went with mee returned againe, and left me alone. As I would have come backe, I loft my way that I had gone with the Indians through the Wilderneffe, then I returned againe to the River fide, knowing thereby I could not misse my way, still going by the Riverside homewards where the Captaine was, He loseth hir

30 being fomewhat late, suddenly I came to a place where there were at least a 100, men and wo- wari men of those Portes. I thought I ficuld have died no other death, but these Canibals did mee no harme, but only tooke away my Knife and my fish-hooke, and gaue me of their meat they were eating, which was rofted Monkeyes. After I had eaten as much as I would, they made mee a thing of dry Canes that they had to fwimme youn the water, which in a meane space carried me where the Campe lay by the River fide. Theie Canibals told vs of a Towne within two dayes iourney, where we might get Peafe and Gunie Wheate, and some Roots of Caffam. In one day we passed Paryena; and the next day wee came to travell towards the Towne that

the Peries had told vs of. We were seuen dayes betweene the River and the Towne, and when we came there, we found almost nothing but women, and asking for their Husbands, they told no vs that they had gone to warre against the Taymores, and that they had killed them all at this Towne. We found a little Ginnie Wheate, but it was not ripe, of the which we fed a weeke being there, these Cambal; are called Tapuyas. Wee went forward to other Townes of a kinde of Tapuyas. Canibals, called Waanawafons, that were hard by the Tapayas. Comming to one of their Townes, Waanawafons, there came twentie old men with woodden Swords in their hands, whooping and rejoycine, which is (as I have faid) their manner of bidding welcome. After they had done, they asked what was our determination; wee told them that wee came to warre against the Tamopes, then there came an old man vnto vs all painted with red and blue, with Bow and Arrowes in his hand, and a paire of slippers on his feete, and with one of his Daughters that had beene captine to a Portugall of Santumfence, which had runne away from her Mafter, with other Captines, and fo

came againe to her father. This old man, by name Carywafan, came before our Captaine, and at this Porfonous Towne all our men both Indians and Portugals fell ficke by eating of a kinde of tweete pleasant fruit, fruit that was poyfon, and had it not beene for a Gentleman called Enefrio de (ay my Mafters Kinfman, who had a piece of Vnicornes home, we had all died. At this Towne we had nothing to eate but a few Potatoes. As we came through this Towne, all the Cambais Wasnaffees ranne away from vs, with all our clothes. Now the old man with tenne luftie young men went with vs, and guided vs betweene two Mountayns, continually vp a River from morning till night, for the space of forty dayes, we were neuer out of the water from morning till night that we should River. make our abode, and entred in the morning againe.

Our men were very weake, and almost starued with hunger. The Indians died , amazed (as Of Spirits that

60 fome of them faid) with a Spirit which they call Coropio, which did kill them, many would postedied the complaine that they were politifed with Spirits called Anafah. Those that were tormented killedthem, with this Spirit, would command themselves to be bound hand & foot with their Bow strings, Master Kniust he heard one Indian voon occasion of such possession, conferring with the Spirit and threatning, if the Spirits vied them so ill they

would turne to the Christians ; and thereupon the Spi, it left the perion fo poffeffed.

afcending a Mountaine. Snak-s very venemous.

Hhbbb 3

Strange difcale.

After we had done travelling up the aforefaid River, wee came into a faire Champion Countrey, all full of Pine Trees, but the Apples were not ripe, and we could find nothing to eate, but here and there a little wilde Honey; wee trauelled at leaft a moneth; the Portugals beganne to difpaire, and threw away their Peeces, being not able to carrie their clothes. In all this mifery, Hard ferui:ude the Captayne made me carry two Muskets (as I hope to be faurd) and I was faine to waite voon him every day to helpe to make his lodging, and my friend Henry Baraway, was foill, that I was many times faine to carry him on my backe, and continually to leade him by the hand. In

M.ferable fa-

this march were were forced to eate all our Targets, which were made of raw Hides of Buffe; likewise we did ea e a Cowesskinne, which the Frier carried with him (as he went with vs) to couer his things which I ee faid Maffe withall from the raine, happie was hee who could get a Toad or Snake to eate. After wee had paffed those Champion Countreyes, where wee lost 180. 20 of our men, we came againe into the Mountaynes, and trauelled a great Hill called Esapuca: that is so lay, the Mountaine of long flones, for there we found blacke stones of a yard long, as round as if they were made of wood. When we came to the top of this Mountayne, wee were not able to goe downe, but as you shall heare. In those Mountaynes there are great store of withes

that hang from the fides and the laquetyna Trees, wee tooke of those withes, and making them Steep descent fait to a great Tree , wee were faine to flide by them at the least one hundred fathomes. In those Mountaynes, we had great store of Palmitos and wilde Honey, and many kinde of

The Canibals that guided vs told vs, within foure dayes wee should bee with our enemies the Ground Hony. Tamojes, but wee were aboue twentie dayes, wee came into a dry blacke Champion Countrey, 30 not having in it almost any grasse, there we found good store of Honey that the Bees made in the ground, likewise we found a kind of great Beast as bigge as a Beare, and like a Beare in the bodie, but it hath a nose of a yard long, and a faire great tayle all blacke and gray, this beaft putteth his tongue through Ant-hils, and when the Antes are all vpon his tongue, hee swalloweth them vp. After we had pailed this place, we came to a Mountayne called Etambe, that is to fay, the Mountagne of greene flones; we were in as great milery as euer we were. Then the Portugals affembled together, and told the Captayne that they thought that the Canibals did leade them wp and downe of purpose to destroy them. The Captayne called the old Caniball, and told him how long we had followed him, and how he told vs before, that in twenty dayes we might eafily goe from his Towne to the Towne of our enemies the Tameyes. The old man aniwered, that 40 within two dayes he would bring vs to the Towne of our enemies, if not he would lofe his head,

and that all his company should be our slaves.

from Petoffs.

Vomits and

was on the farther fide from vs , and on the fide that we were on, they had good flore of Mandioqua and Pealen. Wee came before the Towne in the Evening, and lay all night in ambush. thinking to take some of them the next morning comming for their meate. That night our men eate to much Mandoco, that when we thought we should have had some skirmish, they lay all vomiting that they were not able to stand, and thirteene of them died. The next morning, when we faw no bodie ftir, we maruelled, thinking that they were in ambuth for vs, the Porta- 50 gals durft not goe over the River, for feare thereof. Then the Captayne commanded me to paffe ouer the River, the which I did vpon a woodden Target, when I came into the Towne, there was nothing but a few great pots that the Cambals had left full of greene VI heate, great flore of town for laken. Pumpions, and two great Estridges, I tooke most of the provision that I found, and layed it altogether for the Captayne, then I called for the company that they might not feare, for there was no body. At this place wee remayned two moneths, here the Captayne reaped the grounds, that the Indians had planted with Mandioque, commanding every man to make meale for his prouition homewardes, for hee faid that from thencehee would returne. Wee had nothing to cate at this place but Potatoes and Cafani Meale that wee made our selues, and of that

Within two dayes according as the old man faid, wee came before the Towne by a River fide,

which River is called I awary, it taketh the head from the Mountayne Potofin in Pern, the Towne

By this Towne there was a bogge, and when it rained, there would bee great store of Frogges, of them wee would take in the night with Torches of Waxe to light vs, It fell out one night that I should have beene Sentinell at midnight, and about eleuen of the clocke it rained, then I fayd to my friend Henry Barrawell, I would to God shat one night you would goe and take

CHAP. 7. S.2. Fire-Snake killed: worfe Snakes farmining: Kniucts miferies by them. 1215

fome Frogget, for you know prefently I shall bee called to watch, with that hee went and presently returned agains without any thing, and told vs, that a great Snake was by the Snake which bogges, and that it leaped up and downe after him. Then the Indians laid, that it was a kinde leapes at the of Snake that flyeth at the fire, I asked Hemy Barraway where I might finde the Snake, hee fire. told me at such a place, then I tooke the handle of an Aze beeing of a heavie blacke wood, and a little Waxe Candle in a guard, because the Snake should not spie mee; and made it very readie. When I came to the place that my friend had told mee , I lighted my Torch, and was foncere the Snake, that it I would, I could not found her, this Snake had a great Frogge in her mouth, and affoone as thee law the fire, thee put the Frogge out of her mouth, and raying vo her skinnelike the scales of a great fish with her mouth open, shee offered to flye at mee , as to foone as her mouth was open, I drooke at her, and hit her on the head and the teeth, that I crushed her braines. Assoone as I had strooke her, I threw my Torch one way, and ranne halfe a doozen steps another way, the Snake made a great noyse in the water, but I looked still towards my Torch, to prooue if it were true that they would five in the fire, but when I faw no fuch thing, I went and tooke my Torch againe, and very warily went to the place, where I had ftrooke the Snake, where I faw all her head bloudie, and her eyes broken , and fo I killed her. When I had done, I tooke a withe and bound it to her forequarters, and dragged her home to the house where I lay, when I came home I asked if I had beene called to watch, the Paringall The Snake kile and Henry Barramay faid that no man had asked for me, then I tooke a Knife, and beganne to led-20 cure a piece of the Snake for the Captayne, and would have parted the reft among the reft. As I

was parting, the Enfigne of our company came to the doore, I went and opened the doore, and afloone as hee came to mee, hee strooke mee with a cudgell. I not knowing why hee should yfe mee to, came and closed with him, to both of vs went to the ground, with that the Portorals that were in the houle came and parted vs , and asked him wherefore hee ftrooke mee. then the enfigne answered that the Captaine had rifen and found no body in the watch, to that they all answered, that no man had called mee, then hee commanded mee to goe before the Captaine : hee without hearing me ipeake , commanded two Indians to binde mee to a pofte. and commanded them to take the cords of their beds and whip me, I defired that the Captaine would heare the truth, and if hee found any fault in mee, I would according to Marshall Law 20 bee hanged. Before the Indians had vntyed their beds, there came in an ancient old man . by name lohn de Solo, Captaine of our Rere-guard, and with him forme twentie Portugals, that lay in the fame house where I lay. When they faw mee bound they told the Captaine that I was not in fault, for no man had called mee. Then the Captaine commanded mee to bee vn-

tyed, and bade mee goe to my Watch, I went home and fetched my Sword, and prefently came agains where I should have watched, and when I same there, I found him that had gone his way before, and faid to the Captaine before my face, that hee had called mee . and that I made him no answere, when I saw him there, I asked him if hee was not ashamed to appuich that which was a Lye? with that hee beganne to abuse mee in vile words. calling mee English Dogge and Heretique, when I faw my felfe difgraced by a passtry Me-40 fize, I tooke my Sword with both my hands, and strooke him on the head with the Hiles, that I made a great wound.

Then the Captaine commanded mee to bee fet in the Stockes, and bound my hands, where I He is fet in the

lay all that night, and the next day in the afternoone, there came two Portugals and read cer- Stockes. taine Articles against mee, which the Captaine had caused to bee made, saying, that I had killed many ficke Indians when I had found them alone, and that I had defenued death by making a mutinie in the Court of Guard by striking, that was sufficient to make an vprore. After they had read all this, they bid mee prepare my selfe for death, and so went their wayes. Within halfe an houre after the Frier came to mee, and asked mee whether I would confesse or no, I told him that I had stolne nothing from no man, and as for my sinnes God knew the secrets of all hearts. so wherefore I had nothing to confesse to him. With that after many Oracions that hee made to mee, hee went his way. All the Portugals went to the Captaine entreating him to pardon me, but hee would not heare them, defiring God that he might neuer come into Christian Countres if hee did not hang mee. Ilay all day and night in the Stocks, till it was foure of the clocke the next morning. Then the Frier came to me againe, and told mee that my houre was very neere, and defired mee to prepare my felfe to dye like a Christian, I told him I hoped the Lord would

Betwixt fix and feuen of the clock, there came the enfigne, and a Scriuener, and two or three He is brought Portugals with them, and an Indian with a cord in his hand, and by the command of the Portion to execution. tugals put it about my necke, then I was carried to the place of execution : all the Portugals

haue mercie voon me.

60 being about me, I faid, Gentlemen, the Captaine putteth me not to death for the offence that lately I haue done, but a grudge he holdeth against me fallely rumered by his Cosen, who is now present, because I would not faue him; and for that, and no other matter I am condemned at this prefent. As I was speaking, the Indian that should have beene my executioner.came from the top of the house, where I should have bin executed, and thrusting me on the side of the

1216 Kninet escapes banging admentures eating Christall hill Gold Stones LIB VA

head faid. What doeft thou prate, knowest thou not that the Captaines Father fent thee hither that thou Honest Portu- might est wener returne? with that the Portugals checkt the Indian, and lober de fof flanding with Graned del Galbo, and Postino Abanos, yea, a great many Portugals faid, what authoritie hath the Captaine to hang this man, we come not in the Kings feruice, but for our owne profits, and he is but the Governours baffard Sonne; fo they commanded the execution to be flaied, then lobs de Solo went to the Captaine, and told him, Sir, we know not where we are, and marry of one men are dead, wherefore it is not convenient at this time, that we should weaken our felues for we know not if any of vs thall returne againe or not, wherefore weedefire you to pardon this Englishman, for he is as good a Souldier as any of vs, and the man that is hurt is not in danger. The Captaine Iwore a great oath, that I should dye; then loba de Sofo; and the reft of the Per- 10 tweels, bid him thew what authoritie he had to put me to death, and if he thew not authoritie from the King, I should not dve at that time, for they were to answere for me as well as he. The Captaine came out very angerly, and made great protestations against lobs de Sofe; that hee was an voholder of mutinies. John de Sofo faid, that he would answere to all that he alleadged. and fo I was released from death. After we had beene at this place, two moneths making our prouision, we went forward

to another Towne, we found great store of Gmnie Wheate newly planted; here we remained three moneths, till the Wheate was ripe, from thence all the Company returned home but my felfe, and twelve vone men; we asked leave of the Captaine to goe to feeke our adventure. The Captaine saue vs leave to doe what we would; for mine owne part, I asked leave onely for feare to goe homewards, left the Captaine should worke me some mischiefe; likewise wee didall

come, we durit not returne againe, for feare of the Pories, and Lepos Tominenos, and other Canibals, left they feein g vs weake, should betraie vs.

. . . d. III.

thinke we flould hardly get home, for we knew not where we were, and the way that we did

Hu strange transiles with twelve Portugals, whom the Sanages did cate. His life with the Canibals : and after that with the Portugals, from whom hee fleeth to Angola, is brought backe, and after manifold chances, is shipped to Lisbone.

And the tweltie aforefaid, tooks our leaue of the Captaine, determining to goe to the South Sea, rather then returne againe without any thing. The names of the Portugals were these. Francisco Tanares, Lewes de Pino, Gonsalo Fernandes, Tomas Delmare, Lewis Loello, Matheas del Galo, Iohn de Silnefa, Petro de Casta, Antonio fernandes Gorgedias, Manuell Caldera, and my selfe Anthony Kninet. After we had departed from our Captaine. we

made a great Canoa of a barke of a tree, and went downe the River called lanary for the space of Ac a weeke, that we came where we found a little Village of fixe houses, and it seemed it had beene along time fithence any inhabitants were there; when we came to this Village we left our Canoa, and determined to goe by land. In this Towne we found great store of earthen Pots, and in some of them peeces of Gold tied at lines that the Indians fish withall, likewise we found Stones as greene as graffe, and great store of white glistering Stones like Christall, but many of them were blew and greene, red and white wonderfull faire to behold : when we faw the peeces of Gold and those Stones, we made accompt that we were very neere Potafin, then we tooke our way South-welt, and went vp a great Mountaine of Wildernesse. After that, we came to a Golden Rivers place of dry Browne earth, full of hils, rocks, and many small Rivers at the head; by many of thefe Rivers we found little peeces of Gold, as bigge as an Hafell nut, and great store in dust like fand. After which, we came into a faire Countrie, and we faw a great gliftering Mountaine before vs. ten daies before we could come to it, for when we came into the plaine Countrie. and

Glift:ring Mountaine. the Ant-beares, little we came to the foote of this Mountaine, where we found great flore of Tamandres.

We went along by this Mountaine at the least twenty daies, before we could finde any way to paffe ouer it; at last we came to a River that paffed vinder it, here we determined to make fome thift to get through, fome of our company faid that they thought it best to goe still along by the foote of the Mountaine, rather then to venture to goe through; for they faid, if this watergoe not through, we are all calt away, for it is impossible to returne againe against this cur- 62 rent. Then I answered, friends, we may as well aduenture our lives now as we have done heretofore in many places, if not, we must make accompt to like here like wilde Beasts, where we shall have life as long as pleaseth God, without credit, name, or Religion: wherefore I thinke that our best way is to goe through if we can, for no doubt but God that hath hitherto delive-

were out of the Mountaines, and the Sunne began to come to his height, wee were not able to

trauaile against it, by the reason of the glistering, that dazeled our eyes. At the last, by little and

CHAP.7. S.3. Terrible Caue-passage. Worse throat-passage. Kniucts Sauage-life. 1217

red vs from dangers infinite, at this time will not for lake vs, and questionlesse if it be our fortunes rorraffe on the other fide, we shall finde either Spaniards or Indiane, for I am sure, that each of you to pane der the sound afaire day it is to be differred from the top of Potafin to this Mountaine, After I had thus spoken, the Portugal's determined to venture to goe through; we made a great thing of great Canes, three wards and a halfe broad, and fix yards long, that we might live downe and fleepe ypon it : we killed good flore of Tamandroes, and rofted them very dry for our prouifion for we knew not how long we should be in the vaute.

After we had made all ready, taking good store of wood with vs, commending our selves to God, we put our felues into the vaut, which made fuch a noise with the running of the water,

that we thought it had beene tome inchantment. We went in on munday morning, and we came out on a morning (whether we were two dayes or one in the vault I know not.) As soone as we perceited light we were very glad, but when we came out, we law on every fide houses. then we tooke counted what was the best for vs to doe, to hide our felues, and see if we could raffe the Townes in the night, or to goe and submit our tekies to the Indians : we all agreed, that the best was to goe to them; then I laid, well friends, fithence we have agreed, let vs fully determine here what we shall doe and say, for questionlesse, they will examine vs what we are, and from whence we came; then the Portugals faid, we will tell them that we are Portugals, then I answered, I will tell them that I am a French man. We went towards their houses, who as foone as they had perceived vs came out hooping and hollowing with their Bowes and Arrows:

and when they came vnto vs they bound our hands, and tied cords about our middles, and foled vs to their houses: picseutly there came two or three old men, and asked what we were then the Portugals answered, that they were Portugals, and I, that I was a French man.

Within two hours after they had examined vs, they tooke one of the Portugals, and tied a The Indiana new roape about his middle, and carried him into a yard, with three Indians holding a cord on kils the Persuthe one fide, and three on the other fide, and the Portugal in the middeft, there came an old man, salt, and after the one fide, and thing, they be their and salt him that he finally had a middle of the first head and salt he first he finally had a middle of the first head a middle of the first head and salt he first head a middle of the first head and salt head a middle of the first head a an bid him looke on all things, that he liked, and told him that he fould bid them farewell, for hee fould fee them no more: then there came a luftie youg man, with his armes and face died red, and faid vnto him, doest thou fee me, I am be that bath killed many of thy Nation, and will kill thee. After

he had spake all this, he came behinde the Portugell, and throoke him on the nape of the necke, Dinelish 30 that he felled him to the ground, and after hee was downe gaue him another that hee killed Butchers him; then they tooke the tooth of a Conie and opened all the upper skinne, so they tooke him by the head and the feete, and held him in the flame of the fire: after that, rubbing him with their hands, all the upper skin came of, and the flesh remained white, then they cut off his head. and gaue it to him : they tooke the guts, and gaue them to the women, after which they iointed

him joint by joint, first hands, then elbowes, and so all the body. After which, they fent to eucry housea peece, then they fell a dancing, and all the women made great store of Wine: the next day they boiled every joint in a great pot of water, because their wives and children might eace of the broth; for the space of three dayes they did nothing but dance and drinke day and night : after that they killed another in the fame manner as you have heard, and so served all but 40 my felfe.

When I faw all the Portugals dead, I looked for the fame, but after the Indians had done with Hatted of the the Feafts, they came unto me and faid, Feare not, for your ancestors, have beene our friends, and we Tanosesso the theirs, but the Portugals are our enemies, and make vs flanes, wherefore we have done with them as you Pertugals. have Gene. After I had heard what they faid, I told them I had no reason to scare, for I knew they were my friends, and not mine enemies, and that I had bin a long time prifoner to the

When I had bin two moneths with these Indians called the Tamoyes, they went to warre against Tomomines, and comming to fight, we had almost lost the field, for the Tamomines were a great many more, to that we were faine to take the Mountaine : when I faw the rufticall manner

50 of their fight, that without any order they would fet vpon their enemies like Buls, I taught them how to fet themselves in Battaile, and to lye in ambush, and how to retire and draw their enemies into a frate: by this meanes, we had alwayes the upper hand of our enemies, and I was them to fight held in great accompt amongst them, for they would never goe to the field, except I went with them: in a short time we gave so many battailes to the Tomominos, that we made them leave their Countrey, and flye further from vs: fo wee lived in peace. The Tamores offered mee many wines, but I refused, faying it was not our custome to take wines out of our Countrey. After wee had conquered the Tomommes, wee lived in peace for the space of foure moneths, and then there came another kinde of Caribals, called Topinaques. These made their Topinaques. Towne very neere vs , at a Mountaine called by the Indians Taminua (that is) the Mountaine

60 of Gold. When we heard of them, we prepared to make warre against them, wee went fine thousand Mountaine of firong, in fine dayes journey we came before the Towne; but we being espied, they left their Gode. Towns and fled, we followed them tenne daies, taking many old men and women, which as we tooke them we killed: we followed them till we came to a great River fide, where we durit

not raffe for feare left the enemy (hould ouercome vs at the landing, fo we returned home agains. from the River called Morgege, where we remayned ftill in peace, for the space of eight moneths till we removed our felues.

His rich appa-

At this place I went all naked with out any thing, onely a few leaves I tied before mee for shame. One day going all alone a fishing for pleasures sake, I sae downe remembring my selfe in what flate I was, and thinking what I had beene, I began to curse the time that eyer I heard the name of the Sea, and grieued to thinke how fond I was to forfake my natural! Countrey where I wanted nothing : then was I out of all hope either to fee Countrey or Christian againet fitting by the River in thefe paffionate thoughts, there came on old Indian one of the chiefelt of them. and beganne to talke with me faying. It was a good time with them when they dwelt at Cape to Frio, for then they had trade with the Frenchmen, and wanted nothing, but now they had nev-Henerswades ther Kniues nor Hatchets, nor nothing elfe, but hued in great necessitie, with that I answered them to feeke I did heartily wish, that he and his company would goe and dwell by the Sea-coast, without danger of Portugals, whereupon hee and I went home together, and the Indian reported in the Towns what I had faid voto him: the next morning there came (at the leaft) twenty of the chiefelt of them into the house where I lay, and asked me if I knew my Place certains, where they might finde any French Ships: I told them that I was fure betwixt the River of Plate, and a Riuer called by the Portugals Dos Patos, we should finde French men, and if we did not, that here the Portugal's could not hurt vs. Moreover, it were better to dwell by the Sea fide, where we should have plenty of al things, then where we did, where we had nothing to live you but roots. 30 These old men went and told the people, which all defired to see the coast, so they resolved, and making prouision, we departed from our abode, being thirry thousand of vs.

New discous-

Amazons, not a

one-breaft:d

Nation, but

warlike wo-

stones, we came to a faire fandie Countrie, through which we trauelled some twentie dayes, and we went Northward for feare of comming into the Countrie where there are great store of Spamiards, and this Countrie is it felfe very populous, and are friends with the Spaniards. Therefore we changed our course and travelled all Northward, till we came into the Countrie of the Amafons, which the Indians call Mandioculyanas, then we tooke our course Southward againe. I would have perswaded the Tamores to have warred against the Amasons, but they durit not, for they faid, we know that their Countrie is very populous, and we shall be all killed. After wee came 20 to the head of the River, called Patos, there we found Canoas of barkes of trees that came downe the River fonce eight dayes, then wee found the River very broad, and many trees cut by the Riuers fide, whereby we suspected that we were neere the Sea fide, or some Town of the Waanaffer, for the Wasnaffes never inhabit far from the coast. When the Indians faw these tokens of abidances they asked me what I thought was best to doe: I answerd, I thought it best to hide our selves, and to fend some nine or ten yong men to see if they could spie any Towne, so we to circle them in their houses in the night : to that they all agreed, and ten of them were fent, they returned again at night without fight of any Towne, but they faid there went a great path by the River fide, and brought peeces of Cords that they found in the way with them. Hence we judged that we thould finde fome Towne by the River fide, and determined to goe downe the River in the night with our Canoas, to fee if we could finde the Towne.

After we had passed many a Hill, all Wildernesse and Rivers, where wee found many precious

"About foure of the clocke we came to a faire Bay, and faw the Sea; and doubling a point of the theare we espied a Towne, then as fast as we could we landed our men, and the day began to be cleare, and one of the Town comming out to the Sea fide, espied vs, whereupon all the Town role up in armes, and we had a great skirmish. We were many more in number, and had farre better order, so we put them to flight killing a great many of them : wee tooke three hundred prisoners men and women, which the Tamojes killed and did eate afterwards. These Indians are called Carisos. After we had put them to flight they went to Saint Vincents by land, and craued fuccour of the Portugals. At this Towne of the Carios we found great store of provision, Cassaui. Ginnie Wheate, Potatoes, Plantons, Pumpions, and all other fuch like that the Countrie yeeldeth, 50 and in great plenty : there likewife we found great flore of Ryals of eight, for there had beenea Caruell cait away in that place not long before, and the Spaniards were gone before by land to Bonas Ayres in the River of Place: with these Indians the Portugals had peace, but now they are in warre with them againe.

Some of the Carios went to the River of Plate to crave succour, others, as I said before, came They are affair to the Town of Saint Vincents: from Saint Vincents, newes was fent to the River of laners, from led by the Por- thence the Portugals made a Nauie of Canoas and Caruels, of the which the Governours some Marten de Safa (which was come home from the River of Janary, where I departed from him) was come againe as Captaine of all the Portugals, and comming upon vs in the night, they leized our Towne: about three of the clocks, an Indian that came with the Portugals beganne to fpeake very load to the men of the Towne, that they should not stirre, for if they stirred they 60 should be all put to the sword. When the Tamojes heard the Indian speake, they began to rusell with their Bowes and Arrowes, making a great noise, with that the Portugals shot of a Peece, then they all lay downe in their beds, like men without lines or foules; when the day was

CHAP.7. S.2. Thousands flaine and taken. Tale of S. Thomas. Resolute Jauage. 1210

cleare, and my Mafters Sonne faw me adue, he bleft himfelfe, and asked me what was become of my companions, I told him that the *ludium* had killed them, and eaten them. After that about Heretumeth ten of the clocke, all the Indians were brought out of their houses, and being examined, some or his Mifter. them (aid that I bid them kill them, & if many of them had not been, I had died for it, but it was The Portugils Gods will to discouer the truth by their own mouthes; then the Portugals killed all the old men kill 10000 and and women, and all those that had beene particuler actors of the Portugals deaths, which were in Copting 200000 all 10000, and 20000, were parted among it them for their flaues. I came againe to my old Mafter, and was fent with the Tamoyes to a Sugar Mill that my Mafter

had newly made. There I went (till to the woods with the flages to draw out great peeces of To Timber for the space of three moneths : then was newes brought from Cape could, that the Camibals, called Vartacalles, were come to make their abidance a little Southward of the Cape, in certaine places, where before the Tamoyes had inhabited. The Saluador Coria de Sala fent his Sonne Ganfalo Corea de Safa, with whom I went againft my will. We trauelled eight daves by the Seatide, where we had alwayes great flore of Fish. After that we came to a place. called the Scance, visit is to fay, the Stone bonfe, as fitting a thing as euer I faw, for it vvas a great huge rocke, Tale of Sint and it hath an entrance like a great doore, voichin it, as any Hall in England; the Indians fay that Thomas, future. there Saint Thomas did Preach to their forefathers there: hard by standeth a Stone as bigge as ring like Saint foure great Canons, and it standeth vpon the ground vpon foure stones little bigger then a mans Frincies Lee finger. like stickes; the Indians say that was a miracle which the Saint shewed them, and that good. 20 that Stone had beene Wood : likewife by the Sea fide there are great Rockes, woon them I faw

great flore of prints of the footing of bare feete; all which prints were of one bigneffe. They fay that the Saint called the Fishes of the Sea, and they heard him. From thence we went through the Wilderneffe, foure daves till we came to a great Mountaine, called Aboulanga retam; by the Sea fide of that Mountaine, we found a fmall Towne of Tamores, that had elegated in the time of the first conquest, that Saluador Corea de Sala made a-

gainit that kinde of people, and neuer were heard of till now that wee found them by chance. Old Captaine:

The Captaine of them was (as they she wed by signes) one hundred and twenty yeares old, and ver was very luftie : he had in his lippe a great hole, and on either fide of his cheekes a great hole. and in either of them a faire greene Stone. After we had taken this small Towne, wherein there 30 were fine hundred foules, we asked if they knew where the Wastacaffes were, they told vs all that they knew very well, to in three dayes they guided vs into a low leggie Countrie, where the Wastacaffes were: when we came to their habitation, this Aboufanga came among the thickelt of the Portnoals, and faid thefe words; He that never faw Abonfanoalet him looke on me now. and they that dare follow me shall see my valour: and so with his Boweand his Arrowes, he ran amongst the thickest of the enemy, where he was shot with one and twenty Arrowes. In that enterprise we all faw him kill three of the Wartacaffer. When we came to the fight, all the Wartacaffes ranne away & we tooke but one of them: for all the Abonfanga was fo hurt, he lived toure houres: the Pertugals asked him why he had beene so desperate ? he told them that he had lived all his life a free man, and that he had beene a great warrier, and would rather dye then be their High spirit of a 40 Captine. Then he asked Baptisme, and defired them that they would tell him somewhat of God, Sauage.

for he faid what foeuer they told him he would beleeue; the Portugall Frier told him that God was the fauer of foules and the giver of life, and that if he truely repented and would be Baptifed he should be faued; he answered, that all that was told him he truely beleeved, and debred that with speede he might be Baptised, and so died, calling to God for mercy till his last houre: from this place we returned home.

After we came home again, his fon Gonfalo Corea de Safa, reported fo well of me, that his father commanded me to waite on him whither locuer he went: newes came at that time from Portugall of a Nauie of Shippes out of England, that were come to Brafil; whereupon the Gouernour commanded a Fore to be made of his owne cost vpon a rocke that standeth on the mouth of the ha-

50 uen, so neere the River side, that three moneths after it was done, the Sea carried it away, with What became all the Ordnance in it. I have told you before that three moneths after I was taken, the Defire of the 13, mon came from the Straits to a great Hand, where fixteene of her men were flaine, and one taken, by (fo many M. name Andrew Towers : this man was a Philitian, and did many cures, the Portugals tooke him lane reckofor a Sorcerer, for he would prognosticate many things; he had but one eye, and the Portugal, neth) left our faid that in his eye which was out, he had a familier : this man tooke vpon him to make a deuile his Ship. to take the peeces of Ordnance out of the Sea, which was this; he caused to be made a suite of Leather all greafed and pitched, that no water could enter into it, then he caused a great head to be made all pitched, with a great noie, & at the note were three bladders, and at the mouth two; he intifed me to vindertake to goe down into the Sea in that, faying it was very easie to be done. Andrew Town

60 I told him, that if I might be well recompensed, I would venture my life to doe it; then he made deuise, it knowne to the Gouernor, that if I were well paid, I would venture my life, then the Gouernour called me and faid. I will give you ten thousand Crownes, and a Pasport to goe for your Countrie, or whether you will, if you put a Ring into the eare of one of the Peeces. I told him, I would doe my beft by Gods helpe.

Afcer

His mad aduentare.

Mallangano 1

in Affice DCC

His etcape to

And Battell.

Angola.

After the deuile of Leather was made, most of the Portugals went to the place, where the pieces were loft with great folemnitie, praying to God to fend me good lucke. Putting on the fitte of Lether. I was call into the Sea in eighteene fathome deepe, with a mightie great from twed about me. The head was to bigge, all pitched and tarred, that the weight of the fione (for it was great only) carried me downe, and it was a great paine vnto me, for the weight of the stone carried me downeward, and the water by reason of the head bare mee vpward, that I thought the cord I was tied withall, would have cut me in pieces. When I felt my felfe fo tormented. I tooke a Knife that was tyed in my hand, and cut the cord, and affoone as I came aboue water. I tore the bladders from my face, and cut my fure before, for I was almost stifled, and for the space of a moneth, I knew not what I did.

Continually I delired my Mafter, to give meleave to get my living, intending to come into

my Countrey, but the Gouernour, would not let me goe from him. When I faw no meanes to get leave of my Mafter, I determined to runne away to Angola; for to ferue the King as a Souldier in Mallangano, till fuch time that I might paffe my felre to the King of Anteca, which warreth against the Portugals, and so have come through Prester Johns Countrey into Turkie. On the fenen and twentieth day of June 1597 I embarked my felfe voknowne to my Mafter in a fmall thip of one Emanuell Andrea, for to come for Angola. In this Voyage wee were driven fo neere the Cape of Good Hope, that we thought all of vs should have been east away, the Seas are there To great; and by reaton of the current they brake in fuch fort, that no shippe is able to endure. There we brake both our mayne mast and our Melen. I: pleased God to send vs the wind East- 20 ward, which brought vs to our defired Harbour Angola. Wee had beene fine monethes in our Voyage, and by that meanes other shippes that departed two monethes after vs were there before vs. when I heard that there were thips of the River of Ienero, I durit not goe alhoare for feare of being knowne of some of the Portugals, the next day after that wee came into the Harbour: there came a great Boate aboord vs, to aske if wee would fell any Caffani meale, wee told them we would, and asked them whether they went with their Boate, they answered, that they tarried for the tyde to goe up to the River of Guar fa Tomafongano, then I thought it a fit time for

my purpole, and so embarked my felfe in the Barke, the Portugals maruelled to fee mee goe willingly to Masangono; for there men dye like Chickens, and no man will goe thither if he can choose. Nine daves we were going up the River of Guanfa, in which time two Portugall Souldiers

dyed, the Countrey is fo not that it pierceth their hearts, three dayes after I had beene in Ma-Gangano, Don Francisco de Mendosa Fortado, the Gouernour of the Citie of Congo, having receiued a Letter from Saluador Coria de Safa, who was his great friend, fent a Purlumant for me, who brought me by Land through the King of Congos Countrey, and in fixe dayes we came to a Towne called Saint Francis, (where the Gouernour was) hard by the Kingdome of Manicongo, when I came before the Gouernour hee vfed mee very kindly in wordes, and asked mee, what I meant to cast my felfe away wilfully in Masangano, then I told him , how long I had ferued Saluador Corsa de Safa ; and in how many dangers I had beene for him and his Sonne, without ever having any recompence of any of them, and there- 40 fore I thought it better to venture my life in the Kings feruice, then to line his Bond-flaue. The

lent backe to Governour commanded me to be carried to Angola, and charged a paire of bolts to bee put vpon my legges, because I should not runne away. About a fortnight after I was sent backe againe in a Carnell of Francis Lewes, and in two moneths we arrived in the River of lenero, and I was car-Nil habet infaried with my bol.s on my legges before the Gouernour; when he faw me, hee beganne to laugh

rie well.

lix paupertas aurus inte. And to least with mee, faying, that I was welcome out of England. So after many leasts hee dunius hombies Captain Cocke.

He is raken &

After I had beene with the Governour agains fome two monethes, then came a small man of Warre to great Hand, the Captaines name was Abram Cocke, he lay in waite for the ships of the 50 Riper of Plate, and had taken them if it had not beene for five of his men, that ranne away with his Boate, that discouered his beeing there, for within a seuennight after hee was gone, three Carnels came into the lame Road where he was. Thele five men were taken by a Frier that came from San Uncents, and were brought to the River of lenero, I being at this time in some account with the Gouernour, fauoured them aswell as I could, especially one of them, by name Richard Bett, becaufe that they all faid, that hee was a Gentleman, after that wee had beene in the Towne together about some three moneths, one of them called Thomas Cooper , being married, had his house by the Sea lide, where he vied his Trade, we were then nine Englishmen, and three Dutchmen, and wee determined when the shipping came from the Riuer of Plate, that wee Heixis perfidi. Would take one of them comming into the Harbour, this Heixi alwayes went with me to a Por- 60 Heiris berhal. oulnelle tohis tugals house where I was very well beloued. One night hee comes into the house, and steales a-Countrimen, way a boxe; that had fixtie Rialls of eight in it, and two or three pieces of Holland, I defired him to reflore the fame, but this Hesse being a fwaggering companion vied me most vilely in words, and went and told the Gouernour, what wee all had determined, and faid that wee were Here-

'pake, hee bade pull off my boles from my legges, and gaue mee cloth, and vied mee ve-

rickes, and that he himfelfe was a Catholicke, that day at night I should have stolne the Key of the Kings Store-house to have taken Muskers and Powder, and have carried it to Thomas Courses houle, but it was Gods will that he had accused ve before I had done it, or elfe we had beene all hanged for it. We being all before the Gouernour, and denying that we had ever meant any such matter Heart faid, Sir, fend to Thomas Coopers house, and your hall find 20; Moskets and nowder. that Anthony hath Rolne out of the Kings Store-house for that purpole, if your Worthip find it not to, fay that I am a lier, and a falle dealer. Then the Governour fent vs all to Prifpin, & himselfe and Heist, went to T. Coppers house, where they found no finch matter. He went to the Kines Store-house and faw that nothing was stirred; w' eremon hee was somewhat apery with To Heire, because he had taken him with an vntruth, and taid, that he never faw men of to perverse

and vile condition as we were to feeke the defituation of each other. Vpon oceafion of this Mexit Heists milera his ill demeanure not long after, the Conernourient him to Angela, and from thence Don Franchic dea h. cifco fent him to Mafangano, where he dyed in a milerable effete. Prefently after that Andrew Towres, was accused for eating fieth on the Friday, and for that was put in pricen, and paid too. Rials of eight, and was fet at libertie, within a moneth after he had bin out of prilon, he rawaway to Fernambucke. the Gouernour being informed of ittent two small Carnels after him to bring him back againetin one of the small Carnels went his some Garfalo Corcade Safa, and the High Priests Nephew, and a great many more young Gentlemen. After they were out on the Mayne. and almost abourd of the ship that Andrew Towers was in on a sudden, there came a great storme. 20 that the small Caruell that the Gouernours forme was in, could not endure the Sea, but was fain

to run on thore on the Coast, where three of their company were cast away, one of them begins the High Priefts Nephew, and I thinke that they had bin all drowned, if it had not bin for Martin de Safa, that was at that place with 100. Haves making Bratill ready for a thip of his Fathers, the other Caruell followed him to Fernambuque, and brought him backe againe to the River of Ienero, where hee was put in prison and should have bin hanged, but that all the Towne begged

him, he was fent to Majongona where he dyed.

Anno Dom. 1598. there came two Dutch thips being Captaine of them; lafter Fernandes a Two Dutch Dutchman, and leave of the Governour after he had the wed his Licence out of Portugally fet all thips, his goods on the re, and had bought and fold for the space of titree monethes in the Towne, and 20 made great store of money. At the time of his going away, the Kings Officers faid that his Licence was not good, and would have stopped his ships, then the Governour faid, why looked

you not to that before, feeing I gave them leave to come in your words, faying, that his difpatch was good, answere it how you can, for feeling he came in with leave and upon my word

he shall goe out without any hearing, and so he departed for Angela.

After that, the Gouernor General of all the Coast of Brafil; Don Francisco de Sala; came to the River of Ieners, with two Hulkes, and being enformed that Infper Fernandes was at Angola, her fent a Caraell thither, that his ships should be kept for the King, her hearing of it went about his ships, and went away in spight of the Portugals; the same yeere thete came Francisco de mondunfa de vefconfales for Gouernour to my Matters place, that day the Hulke which the new Goao uernour was in, came to the mouth of the Hauen, the Governour Saluador Corea de Safa; was at

a Sugar-mil that he had newly finished. The aforesaid, when the came to the mouth of the Hauen beganne to shoot off her Ordnance, the Gouernour not knowing what it should bee, pretently caused a great Canoa to bee made readie, for immediately, hee would goe to the Towne to see what was the matter, within halfe an houre after we had ben out at Sea, to come to the Towne. what was the matter, writing marte an industry and the Canoa, there my Matter had bin caft away, if God first, He fueth his and I had not laid hands on him, for all his flaues fwamme away to the shore, and Henry Barra- Haster, was with them, only I, and Domingos Gomes a Molato flaue that my Matter carried with him in the Sea, and betweene vs, we got him to the Canoa, where he held fast, till wee drew neere the shore, where the Sea brake like Mountaynes, there we had like to have bin all cast away for the

Sea would calt ve against the Hils of fand , and carrie vs backe againe to the Sea; after I had gor my felfe ashore, I looked towards the Sea, and faw my Master come in a great wane, and as the wave brake, I and my deere friend Domingos Gomes tooke hold of him and dragged him our of the Sea; but we both thought that hee would have dyed, for hee could not speake, then wee tooke him betweene vs by the legges vpon our shoulders, and made him vomit a great deale of water, and forecoursed him, when I faw him well, I told him that the Sea knew no Gotternours better then other men, thenext day the Governour went home by land, and found the other Governour in the Towne, for whole comming I did not a little reloyce, for then I thought the time was come that I long had defired, hoping thortly to come into my Countrey.

In the same yeere there came foure Hollanders, and anchored before the Citie in the mouth of Co the Hauen, ti en all the Towne rose vp in Armes, my Master was at his Sugar-mill, and I remayned in the Towne to wayte on my Miftris. When fine faw the Portugals runne up and downe with their Armes, the commanded me to take a Musket, and bade mee goe to one of the Forts, the which I did according to her command: the new Governour came to the Fort where I was, and viewed the men that were in the Fort, and commanded one of his men to give vs

Powder and thot. After I had spoken with the new Gouernour (who liked mee very well, because he said I was ready with my Peece, and praysed the English Nation to be very good Souldiers,) One John de Selnera told him, that he were best take heed of me, that I ranne not away to the Hollanders, for I had done greater matters then that, and that he knew I made no account to from abound of them in the night voon any piece of wood, and rehearfed many things that I had adventured in the time that my Mafter was Governour. The new Governour came and tooke me by the hand, and carried mee to Prison, where I lay 27. dayes, till the Hulkes were departed from the mouth of the Hauen, and went to Great Hand, then I was fet at libertie. After that the Governour Generall had beene at San Vincents some two moneths, there came a great Hulke of Amsterdam, called the Golden World, and a Captaine that was called Lawrence Buter, the to Hulke had beene at Saint Thomas Iland, and an Iland called the Prince, and from thence to the Straits of Magellan, where many of her men dyed, and by contrary wind they were compelled to returne to the Coast of Brafill, this Hulke comming to San Vincent, fent her Boate to tell the Governour that they were Merchants, and that if they would give them leave, they would graffigue with them, the Gouernour Generall made them a Certificate under his hand and Seale, that they should have no wrong but pay the Kings Custome and goe their wayes when they would. and whether they would: with that the Captaine of the Hulke put into the Harbour: & commanded his goods to be fet on shore. Every day he was visited by the Governour Generall abourd his thip, and promifed him great courtefie. After that the Captayne had landed all his goods, and mott of all the Hollanders were ashore, a great many Portugals went abourd the Hulke with Git- 20 ternes finging and playing. When the Flemmings faw them come in that fort they mistrusted nothing, the Portugals danced in the ship and dranke with the Flemmings, and vpon a sudden when the Flowmores thought least of them, they drew their Swords and killed two of them, and poffest them selves of the Hulke for the King.

In the beginning of the yeare of the Lord 1599, there came nine Hulkes before the Citie of

Flemmine taken treche. roufly.

of Portugals.

Bacia, but they could do no good. After the Gouernour Generall had been some foure moneths at San Vincents, my Mafter had fome businesse thither, and I went with him, when we came to San Dincente the Governour Generall was departed fiftie leagues within the land, at a place where he was enformed of fome Mynes of Gold, but when he came thither, he found that they were not worth the working, then he determined to fend farther into the Land to a place called Esapufick, 30 I being there, and knowing the place was commanded by the Gouernour Generall to goe this Mynes of gold, ther, when we came to the aforetaid place, we found very fingular good Mynes, and wee brought of the foyle to the Gouernout Generall, and many small peeces or Gold that we found in mamy places where the water washed aways the Earth, the Gouernour Generall tooke it, paying vs for it more then it was worth, and fent it to the King with a Sey, for to confider whether it should be wrought or not, the Gouernor Generall fent likewise 40000, pounds worth of Plate, that he had wrought out of the Myne of Saint Paul, which is twelve leagues from San Vincents, In the time that I went to Examplishe, my Master was gone home, then I served as a Souldier for the space of three moneths, that shipping went to the River of Leners; then the Governour General I required my paines very honourably, and sent me backe against o my Master. After that 40 my Malter fent to a place called the Organs, which Hill is to bee feene from the River of Jenere, where we found a little Myne of Gold, and many good stones. There came a Hulke out of Spaine that brought a Bishop, and a Spanish Gouernor to goe from thence in small shipping to the River of Place, and from thence to Somma. A little after that, this Hulke arrived at the River of lenero. Divers frayes, where fell a difeafe in the Country like the meazels, but as bad as the plague, for in three mo. neths their dyed in the River of leners, aboue three thouland Indians and Portugals: this difeafe

Author, which bere followed, was generally in all parts of the Countrey. At this time going up and downe from the Sugaras in other pla- mill to the thip, in the night with a Barke lading of Brafill for the Hulke, with the Ayre one of ees of the Hi- my legges (welled, that I could not firre : it is common and very dangerous in those Countries florie, for bre- when a man is hot, to come in the Ayre, especially in the night, for being a hot Countrey, it hath 50 omitted. Legge fwolne

The Oreas

The fourteenth of August 1601. Saluador Corea de Safa; Gouernour of the River of lannary. embarked himselfe in the aforesaid Hulke with his Wife Donenes de Sofo, determining to make his Voyage to Fernambuque, we fayled East to Scaward. The fitteenth day wee kept still Eastward to the Sea. The fixteenth day we kept North-east, and about tenne of the clocke we had fight of the Cape

a piercing ayre, and fuddenly striketh in any part of the bodie. I was very ill for the space of a

The feuenceenth, eighteenth and nineteenth, having the wind North-west, we kept stil Eastward for feare of the fands and cliffes called Aborollas , they lye betweene the Cape and Spirito Same. The twentieth day having the winde South, wee fayled our course North-east. This courie we kept till the five and twentieth of the moneth, then the winde turned Northward, we made East to Seas this course we were faine to keepe till the last day of the moneth, the first of February, the winde being at South-west wee sayied North-east along the Coast, till the seuenth day of the moneth. The eight day the Mafter and the Pilot tooke the height of the Sun.

and were ten degrees and an halfe Southward of the Line. As the Mafter and the Pilot were talking together concerning the Voyage, there came a Sea-foule, and fitting upon the backe flav. cast out two or three little fishes, with that a Spaniard called lasper Conquero, who had some experience of the Coalt, faid to the Master take heed, for I am afraid you are neerer the shoate, then you take your selfe to bee , for you know not how the current driveth you Westward voon the Coaft, the Flemmings bade him meddle with his owne bufineffe, and that they knew what to do without his counfell, the Pilot made himfelfe forty leagues from the shore, & directed his course North. The ninth day at midnight wee deforied Land, the Pilot prefently cast his Lead, and found but eight fathomes water, then he commanded the Saylers to cast about, the which they Danger at Sea 10 did, the wind being at North-east, and wee being neere the shore, could not beare vp to Sea: for wee faw Clifts both on the starboord and larboord fide of vs, and before wee could get out our

Anchor, we were driven so neere the Clifts on the lee side of vs, that wee had no other remedie. but to runne upon the Rockes, where we had beene all cast away, but that it was the pleasure of God to deliver vs, for wee lay with the Prow of our ship vpon one of the Rockes for the space of halfe an houre, and we were faine to cut off both our Masts, and to cast many chists over-boord. chinking it had beene impossible to saue any thing, but it was the will of God when wee least thought of it, that a great Sea brake ouer the Rocke, and put vs into eight fathomes water, betweene the Rockes and the Cliffes, fo by the providence of God, wee were delivered out of the aforefaid danger.

The next day we saw Cambali along the shore, then the Gouernour commanded mee to be see onshore to talke with the wilde people, and to know of them vpon what Coast wee were, or if we might soe to Fernambuque by land, the Captaine commanded a Mamaluke, called Antonia Mamaluke, of Fernandes to goe with me athore, but when we came to land, this Mamalake durit not goe on Mefizon shore, for feare of the wilde Cambals, so I went alone, and saluted them according to the fashion of the Country, then I enquired of them, how they called the place where they were they told of the Countrey, com a conquestion of the River of Toades, likewife they faid that we were River of toades, likewife they faid that we were River of toades. very neere the River of Saint Francis, and Northward, we had the River called Saint Michelland that they were flaues to the Portugals of Fernambucke, having driven cattle to Bara: and now they returned home againe. One of these bond-slaves went abourd the shippe with mee, and tal-30 ked with the Gouernour, the next day, the Gouernours Wife entreated her husband, that hee would leave the Hulke, and goe by land, the which he did at his wifes request, so commanding all his Treasure to be fet on thore, we left our thip, the Gouernour commanded the Master to take Fernambuquo if it were possible, if not that he should goe to Baya, and from thence into Portugall, with any ships that thould depart from thence, this Hulke had nine tunnes of Silver in her, Nine tuns of the which incharged to Diego de Guadro, by the Gouernour Generall Don Francisco de Sasa; and filuere at Fernambuquo, the charge of it was given to my Master Saluador Corea de Sasa, from the place where we were driven on thore to Fernambucke, is fortie leagues. In this journey from the Riner

of Toades, or from the Clifts called Baylhas Deamrobrio did I and Domingos Gomes alway carrie a Boxe of pure Gold of my Mafters, some twelve leagues, from the aforelaid River of Toades to a 40 place called by the Indians V panafon; are three leagues, this V panafon; is a very fingular good place Places on the to take fresh water, from Vpauason to another River called Casuays, is one league from the Ca-Coash fuages, to the River of Saint Michellare foure leagues, at this River dwelleth a very rich Mamalucke, John de Reche, at this River we rested three dayes. The Governour Generall fraughted a fmall fisher Boare at this place, and determined to goe to Fernambuque in it.

The same day that wee made sayle in the smal Barke from the River of Saint Michell, there arose a great storme from that North-east, and we were faine to take the River of Saint Michels A florest. againe with great hazard of our lines, for the winde being very great, wee were driven youn a Rocke that lyeth South-west from the mouth of the River very neere the shore, all those that could iwimme leaped into the Sea; and so the Barke was lighter, and swamme off the Cliffe,

50 then the Gouernour and his Wife faid that they would goe by Land, fo the day after we departed from the Ruer of Saint Michels to another great River called Ves, this River is three leagues from Saint Michel, heere my small ship may enter and take fresh water, and kill great store of fresh fish, from thence we went to another River called I aquareaficke, from this place the Governour fent me and Antonio Fernandes before to a small Village to prouide some prouision against his comming, there was in our company a Portugalicalled Rafiel Penera, that perforge would go with vs, we told him that we had many great Rivers to paffe, and that it were better for him to tarrie with the Gouernour and his Wife, he not regarding our words went with vs. so we departed all three of vs, the next day after wee had departed from the Gouernour, wee came to a very faire River called Saint Antonio, that which we paffed vpon a langure made of Canes, from 60 thence wee went to a place called by the Indians Amrecuua Prisems, this is the Harbour of

Frenchmen, from thence wee came to a great faire River called Camarijuna, wee went on to the River of Stones. We departed from thence vp the River on a Mangada, made of three dry pofts pinde together, the next morning we landed in a faire Champaine Countrey, where we faw great flore of Cattle, and a Sugar-mill grinding of Canes, to which wee went, the Owner of the Mill

was a high Dutchman, to whom we deligered the Gouernours Letter, the which as foone as hee had read, prefently he commanded two Beenes to be killed, and fent away with tenne bushels of Callani meale, and many Hens and Turkeyes, and wee two were very honourably yied torthe trace of a weeke that we were there, from thence wee departed to a place called Porto de Culus. three leagues from the Arefeene, this is an excellent Hauen for all weathers, and all the veere long, there is at the least two thousand chiffs of Sugar. At this place Mannell Masquerennas met vs with two hundred Horse, and then after two dayes rest we came to Fernambuone.

Twentie daves after we had beene in the Towne lelifiano Cuello, fent word to Manuell Mafquerennas, how that he was believched in Rio Grande, by the Putewaras, and that if he were nos prefently ayded by him, he should be forced to lote the Kings Towne, with the loffe of all their to liues . Mafquerennas prefently determined to got himfelfe , and left the Towne of Fernambuque in charge to my Matter Saluador Corea de Saa; and thus we departed from Fernambuque with toure hundred Porsugalls, and three thousand Indians, and in feuen dayes journey we came to Rie Grande, having many a brave skirmish, with divers Canibals in the way. As foone as wee were come refore the Towne our Captaine made a long speech to all the Poringals and Indians, incouraging them against those Infidels whole Armie was at the least fortie thousand strong, and defired them all to confesse to their Ghostly Fathers and to take the Communion, for the next morning he was resolved to give the onlet on his enemies, the which was very bravely performed, for the Caribals the nay before in a skirmish that they had, did take two hundred prisoners, and having killed many of them to eate, not expecting our comming in the chiefelt of their featt, and their 20 drinking we fet vpon them, the people of the Towns on the other fide, hearing the rumour, iffued for h, thus taking them on the fudden, wee made fuch flaughter among them, that they were forced to remooue their fiege, with the loffe of three thousand prisoners, and five thousand that were flaine. The King of these Canibals was called Peraiswath that 18 to fay, the finne of a fib, when this Heathen Prince faw himfelfe ouerthrowne with fo fmall a number as wee were, in comparison of his multitudes, he tent certayne of his men to Mannell Masquarennas to treate of peace, upon these conditions, that if he would release all those prisoners, and admit him and all his Nation to live as free men, that then hee and all his would fubmit themselves as subjects vato him and be baptized, which offer indeed wasaccepted of by Masquaremas, and thus one of the greated Prounces of all the North part of Brafilia, became fubicct to the King of Spaine. 30
This conquest beeing ended, our Captaine Generall Masquarennas presently built two strong Forts hard by the Towne, on the River fide, and fent to Fernambuquo for forty cast Peeces of Iron, placing twentie in either Fort, many Souldiers, got at this conquest very rich stones, both Diamonds, Rubies, and great store of blue Saphires, in some small Villages that stood by the Sea Ambergreece, fide. We found great store of Ambergreece, which the Indians call Parapoun Arepoty, here fortune was some what fauourable vnto me, for I got about fine hundred Crownes in this journey. After this co: quest was ended, Manuell Masquarennas returned againe to Fernambuquo.

Turner I was

acqu mied with and re-

Where I found my Matter Saluador Corea, de Saa, readie to fhip himtelfe for Portugal, in the fame thip that brought him from the River Inners, which by this time was come from Bayera, after wee were let ashore at the place, called Ous Bufibos de don Rodrigo, where we had all like to have 40 beene call away, at my returns from Rio grands to Fernambrano, I met with two Englishmen, the one of them a Gentleman called Thomas Turner, the other Muserane, Pilot of a Fly-boate of Malter Newtons a Merchant of London, Mafter Turner by my admice, went to the River of lanero, and from thence to Angola, where he made great profit of his Merchandize, for which hee thanked me after we met in England. Now to my storie. The thirteenth of August 1596. Salceiucd of him nador Corea de Saa, Lord Gouernour of the River of Innero, Captaine Generall of Spirito Santo, Porta Scoura, Santos, and San Vincent, departed from Fernambuquo, with fifteene Hulkes of after M.Kn.uet Hamborough, leven Fly-boates of Omden and Hamborough, and at the least twentie Carvels, all of them being laden with Sugars. The old Mary of Hamborough wherein the Gouernour came was Admirali, a thip of feuen hundred tunnes, the Owner whereof was called Hans Burgo, the 50 new Mary Vice-admirall a ship of fine hundred tunnes, the Owner called Adrian Cornelias, Rere-admirall a thip of fine hundred tunnes, the Owner called Conrado, likewife another great thip came with vs, called the George of one Hans Duke, the Danid and others, with this fleete we departed from Fornambaquo, the fifteenth of August 1599. and in two monethes fayle wee arrived at Lilbone, where I continued with the Gouernour in his house for the fpace of nine moneths, after which time I fell very ficke, and by this time having spent all that I brought with me from Brafill, my mifery great, and had beene a great deale greater, had it not beene for a vertuous English woman, which I met withall in a Nunnery, and in that time that I was riueth at Life there, thee made her approbation. By God first, and by her meanes I was faued from dying a most

His fickneffe,

After my comming to Lifbone, I fell very ficke in my Mafters house, where I lay in a backe roome having only a piece of an old mat for my bed, thus I lay for the space of sicke weekes, in the greatest mifery that could be, for first I was sicke of a burning Feuer, none came at mee but a poore flaue ofn.y Mafters, for before this time my deare friend Domingos Gomes was dead, this

flave in love to me, fometimes would bring me meate and water, fometimes I was two daies without either meate or drinke : in the end of this fixe weekes, Thomas Mulerane and Mafter Thomas Turned came to me with some Dutchmen, and they amongst them gaue me twelve thillines : I had receited fo many bountifull gifts before of my vertuous friend Miltris Foller, that I would have chosen rather to have died, then she should have knowne my want; but Thomas Muserane of Rateliffe, knowing how much she favoured me, did periwade me to write vnto her. the which (although vn willingly) I did; presently vpon the receit of my letter, I received from her fiftie Crownes, and every day was visited from her, yet for all this my sicknesse grew to be such, that those that faw me thought that I could not escape, except I had the helpe of some 10 Doctor, then by her meanes, reporting that I was her kiniman, I was carried to the Kings Hospitall, where in two moneths I recoursed, being one and twentie times let bloud, and short-Iv after that I was past all danger, I was very kindely discharged out of the Hospitall, with ten shillings in my purie.

After I came forth of the Hospitall, I thought with my selfe, that the best way was to leave my Masters house, and determine how to get my liuing by some other meanes : with this determination I went to the Kings Custome house, where I met with many men of all Countries. there I met with fome Scotchmen, feeking of one that could fpeake the language; I hearing them, offered my feruice, & after that, I had asmany customers as I could turne my hands vnto, and got by them for interpreting veriegood maintenance: many Duich Merchants would have had me 20 gone backe againe in their affaires for Brafil, and the Indies , but I still had a delire first to come to England, thinking that there I should finde some meanes to set forth my selfe in some good fathion, but alas I finde that want hath no preferment : now for my comming into England, my determination was to have tarried somewhat longer then I did, but that my fortunes were and are euerlike to be croft, for living as I have told you in verie good fashion, maintaining my selfe verie well by foraine Merchants, that could not speake the Spanis tongue : one day amongst the reft in the Kings Cuftome house I met with one who told me that my Master Salmador Corea de Sas, did command me to come to him againe, if not, that he would make me be brought whither I would or no : in briefe, I made little account of his meffage, and held on my course with them by whom I lived, but now my old friend, imprisonment, and miserie comes againe, and 30 I am as farre from my long defired home as ever I was, for Saluador Corea de faa, feeing I would not come at him, incenst the Viceroy Christopher de Moneo against me, telling him what harme Imight doe if I got into my Countrie, I prefent ypon this was taken in the streete as if I had beene fome notorious villaine, carried to prifon, cast in a dungeon, where I lay (God be my witneffe) three daies without meate, or fight of light; in the end I espied a little glimpse of the light, and clambering up the wall, in delpaire and halfe madde, I broke downe a peece of a boord that flood before an Iron grate, there I cried out in fuch fort that a great many came to the window, where many pittied me, but none could helpe me, &c.

8. IIII.

The diners Nations of Sanages in Brasil, and the adiopning Regions: their dinersities of Conditions, States, Rites, Creatures, and other things remarkeable, which the Anthor observed in his many yeares manifold percerinations.

He Petinares are not of fo wilde and barbarous conditions as many other Prouinces are The Petinare 50 in Brasil; for if you come as a Merchant vnto them, they will trafficke with you, if as described.

Warrier, they will fight very valiantly. They are men of good stature, their bodies are all carued with very fine workes, and in their lips they make a hole with a Roe-bucks horne, and when they come to mans estate, they cut the hole of their lippes with a Cane, and then the hole being bigge they weare a greene Stone therein, and he that hath not this failing is counted a petant. Thefe Caribals have no religion, they may take as many wives as they will, or as they No fee forme can get : the women can take no more husbands but one, except her husband give her leave in of Religion, publike before them all, then the may take whom the will. When thefe Indians goe to the wars, Warres, their wives carry all their provision in Baskets on their backes : thefe Canibals goe all naked, and Region, inhabit on the Northerne parts of Brafil from Baya to Rio Grande: they have no certainty of Dict. so meate but rootes, and if they kill any wilde Beart or Foule in the Mountaines, when he comes home, looke to which of his wives he giveth that which he bringerh, with her he will lye that night; then the prefently goeth to the water, and watheth her telfe, and lying downe in a net, commandeth all the reft of her husbands wives to ferue her; which they doe very obediently Ricco of while for that day. When the time commeth that any woman is to be deliuered of Childe birth, the birth

Sharkes denoured by Sharkes. Crocodiles. how and why raken.

Crab lice.

Cape, and all the Portugals and Blackamoores were eaten. I have icene them take great dog-fiftee by the taile, and dragge-them alhoare. In this place I have feene very great water Alioares (which we call in English Crocodiles) feuen yards long. This Crocodile hath great scales, and long clawes very vely to be seene. The Portugals, when they know where any of these great ones are, doe fifth for them with a chaine, and great Iron booke, and for bait they tie a Cock or a Hen to the booke, they take this paines to take him because his Cods are very great, and better then any muske. At this place, the Mountaines are fo full of Crab-lice, that weeknew not what to doe. they would flick in our skins that we could not get them off, but were faine to take drie flraw 10 and finge our felues, as you would finge Hogs, and to rid our felues of them. Here also wee had great flore of wilde Hogs, and a kinde of wilde Fe wle as bigge as Turkies, called Matas.

with any kinde of Nation, but doe ease all kinde of people, Frenchmen, Portugals, and Blacka.

moores. Many times whileft I was at the River of lanuarie, fome thips were cast away at this

Abanlanga, is the name of a valiant Caniball, that is adioyning hard by the Wataquazes, thefe Canibals are a kinde of the Tamores. Some twentie yeeres agone there was a Gouernour among them, called Mendelan, in the River of lanuarie, who made warre against the Tamoyes, and in the end over runall their Countrie or Province; onely this Aban anga remayned hidden in Dungeons and great Holes with fome fortie or fittle of his Countrimen. It was our chance going to warre with the Waraquazes to come through this Towne, and there we had newes by Abanfangas people, that he was at warre against the Wasaquazes; whereupon we made Spies to see if we could take him, before that we would fet upon the Wataquazes. One evening, we heard a great 20 noise of Canibale, then the Captaine lending out fome Spies, my felte being one, wee faw that it was Abanfanga, and his companie, that had raken fine Wataquazes, and with great stirre were killing of them to eate. Affoone as we had efpyed all that we could, wer returned agains to the Captaine, and told him what we had feene, and that night circled Abaufanes. and tooke him prijoner, with fixtie young men of his companie; wee asked of him our belt course, to warre against the Waraquazes, he told vs, that he was rather to take our aduice, then we to aske his, that he vied no policie but to fight in open field, and if we would, we should fee how he made warre ag .i. if his enemies : the next day, we being hard by the Inhabitants of the Wataquazes ; Aban. lanea came forth, and joyned all his companie together with leave of our Captaine, and affoone as they were all readie with their bowes and arrowes, hee ran into the thickest of his enemies. 30 with all his companie, where eighteene of his companie were prefently killed, and most of them fore hurt, he himfelte being that in one and twentie ports. In our fight he killed three Wataquazes before hee fell; the Portugals kept still by the woods side, and with their peeces killed one hundred and thirtie Wataquazes, the wilde people were fo amazed when they heard our peeces goe off, that they thought the Deuili had beene among it them, and every one began to flie as fait as he could, the Portugals following them, found Abaufanga in the field hurt, as you have heard. This Aban lane a affoone as he perceived the Portugals to stand amazed at him, defired them to tell him somewhat of God, for he said, that Frenchmen had told him that there was a God, and that he which beleeved in him should be faued. The Portugals telling him of their faith, hee faid that hee beleeved in that God, and defired to bee baptifed, and had his name given him John. For the 40 space of two houres that this Indian lived, hee did nothing but call upon God, and so ended his

The Wayanaffes. The Wayanaffes, inhabite eighteene leagues Southward of the River of lannarie, at a place called by the Portugals, Ilba Grande, that 18 to fay, The great Iland. Thele Canibals are of low itature, great bellies, and broad feet, very Cowards, of a reasonable good complexion. They doe not carne their bodies , neitheir doe they glorie fo much to eare mans flesh , as the Tamojes, the Tommenos, and other Canibals doe. The Women are bigge in the body, and very vgiv but they have very good faces. The Women of this Countrie doe paint their bodies and faces with a thing called in their language Urucu; it groweth in a round Cod like a beane, and that maketh a red inke like Oker; which maketh them feeme most vgly. The haire both of men and women 50 groweth long by the fides, and on the crowne all shaven like Franciscan Friars. These Cambals Ive in Nots made of barkes of trees, and likewife when they travell through the Wildernelle, fuch promition as they have, they carrie in little Nets at their backs; they are neuer without Tabacco. they effeeme it more then any thing that they have in their Countrie, and with it do heale their wounds, when they are hurt. When the Poringals doe stand in need of slaues, they doe come to Ilha Grande, and there they shall be fure to meet with some of the Wayanasses a fishing then they thew them Kniues, Beades, and Glasses, telling them what they would have for merchandise, and prefently they will goe to a place called in their language lawarapipo, which is their chiefelt Towne, and from thence bring all fuch as they meane to fell to the Sca fide, and as good cheape

life, being one hundred and twentie yeeres of age, as he shewed vs by fignes.

Tabacco,

Panting.

as you can you may buy or them. The Topinaques inhabite at Saint Vincents, they are men of good stature, and of reasonable good complexion; their women are all painted with divers colours, and on their heads, they weare a thin barke of a tree like a Ribband : the Cambals eate mans flesh as other Cambals doe. they adore no Idoll , neither have they any kinde of Religion , onely when they kill any man,

CHAP.7. S.A. Bearded Sauages, civill, women faire, Weeping-welcome, Wild doos. 1220

they all paint their bodies with a kinde of fruit, called Janipano, and all their heads are let with feathers, and great flones in their vnder-lips, with Rattles in their hands, and thus they will dance for three dayes together. I was amafed to fee how they would drinke a filthy drinke without breaking of their bellies, and asked them how they were able to fland to long and drinke to much of that filthy drinke; they answered me, that Tabacco did make them as fresh as if they had done nothing. Among these Caribals there is great store of gold in many Hills hard by the Sea tide, and now the Portugali have fome of those places. I would wee had the reit. Here I end to discourte any farther of the Canibals that dwell by the Sea fide, till I have told you of fuch Nations as I met withall when I went through the Countrie, and how I came agains to the Sea: I to have told you in the first booke of my travell, how that five or fixe yeeres after I had beene taken by the Portugals, I went to warre against the Canibals with the Portugals. Now by the grace of God, as neere as I can I have told you of all the Nations, that I faw, and converit with in nine moneths, that I trauelled through the Wildern-ffe with the Portneals, and a yeere and eleven moneths that I passed with the Canibals themselves.

He Canibals called Pories, inhabite at the least one hundred miles within the land, they are Canibals called noit like voto the Wayanaffes, men of low statute, they live onely on Pine nuts, and small Poiks. Cocos that are as bigge as Apples, but they have shills like Wall-nuts, somewhat harder, the In- Small Cocose dians call them Errires. They are of good complexion, and effeeme very much of clothes if they 20 can get them; the women are all painted with divers colours, as red, blue, and yellow; they are in peace with the Portugals, and warre with no Nation, neither will they eate mans flesh, if they have any other meate; they lie in little Nets made of barkes of trees, they have no houses but two or three boughs tyed together, couered with Palme leaves if it happen to raine. In this part of the Countrie I faw great store of Leopards, and Lions; the Indians call the Leopard, lawarile,

and the Lions, lawarofon; and many great Cats of mountaine, which the Indians call Mar-

carabite. here you may have of the Indians for a Knife or a Combe, five or fixe Gallons of Bal-

After you have passed the famous River of Paraeyna, you shall come into a Countrie of Cari. The Mologabals, called Molopaques; they are much like unto Dutchmen in bigneffe, very faire of complexi- ques, bearded 20 on, they have all beards like other men; fo hath not any other kinde of Canbals, except it bee couller then here and there one. Most of them doe couer their prime parts, they are very civill in their beha-others. uiour : their Townes are very itrong, all circled with walls made, of earth and great logs , they have houses severall every man with his familie. They have only among it them whom they call Houses several Moronishaua, which is their King, but we taw no difference betweene him and the rest, but only the name, and he had (as I remember) thirteene wives, and no other had fo many. Among the thefe Canibals we found good itore of gold, the which they doe not esteeme, neither doe they vie Goldit for any thing , but to tie on their filhing lines , when iffy goe a fishing in the River of Para, where they take great itore of good fish. Para is beyond Paraeyna eightie leagues : thefe Indians River Parae doe not worke in the mynes for gold, as the Spaniards doe, but onely take such percesas they Mynes. 40 finde when the raine hath washt away the earth : for where the mynes of gold are there are no trees, but are drie Mountaines of black earth, which the Indians call Tainquara; and the Mountains where the Molopaques doe finds this great flore of gold, is called Exepararange: if these Ca. nibals had the knowlenge of God, I might bolily fay, that there are not any in the world like them. The women are goodly of person, faire of complexion, as our English women are, they Faire womens are very modest and civill in their behausour, you shall neuer see them laugh, they are people very capable to conceine any thing, they have their haire fo long, that they tie it about their middles with the barke of a tree, wherewithall they couer their nakedneffe, they efteeme very

much of it. Their harre is of colours like our English women, fome yellow, fome white, fome browne : the women that have not long haire, to couer their nakednesse, doe weare a kinde of Furre, which they call Samyathwason. These Canibals doe cate mans flesh, I was not past nine or ten dayes among them, therefore I cannot relolue you further of their suffomes. In that time I was with them I taw no manner of Religion among them, they doe keepe very good order, obeferring times to eate their meate, at noone, and at night, and that doth not any other Nation 4- Mooleig mongit them, they are very cleanly in what locuer they doe.

Then wee came to a faire champaine Countrie, where wee found a kinde of Cambals, called The Motaya Motavas. Associate these Canibals heard of our being in their Countrie, they all lett their houfes, and came to meet vs dancing and finging, telling vs that they were very glad of our comming into their Countrie; they brought Ginny Wheat, Pepper, and divers kinde of rootes to prefenc vs, and craued our friendfhip, defiring vs, that we would aide them against the Tamoyes. We de-

60 firing nothing more, told them that to that purpose we were come. Assoone as wee came to the Weeping we houses of thete Can.bals, all the women would lit about vs, and laying their hands on our bodies, come. they would weepe most bitterly. After that, every one of them would bring such victuals as they had; fome brought boyled Frogs, others brought Serpents, and Snakes, which wee found Very good, other tome brought Munkers, and a kind of wilde Dogge that they kill in the Moun- Wilde Dog

taines. The men brought vs mans flesh rosted, drie, as black as a coale, and told vs that it was of a Tamora that they had killed, and defired as that we would eate of it, thinking they had prefented vs a great and daintie dish. When they saw that wee refused to eate mans tiesh, they fell a laughing and some of them said that we knew not what was good meat. These Canibals are men of imali stature, browne of complexion, they goe all naked, they weare their haire (as now we doe in England) below their eares, and so doe the women. As their haire groweth long, they burne it with fire, making it equall fo artificially, that you cannot perceive but that it was one with Sizors. They will not have any haire grow on their eye-browes, nor on their chin, but still as it groweth they pull it away with a shell : their food is Guny wheat, and Roots, Frogs, Snakes, Serpents, Crocodiles, Monkeis, Dogs that they kill in the Wilderneffe, Leopards, and Cats of 19 Mountaine; all this is good meat among it them, and we found them very good, and were very glad when we could get them to eate.

The Legos.

Then we came to a kinde of Camball, called Lopos, the Portugals call them Bilreros, these Canibals are alwayes in the Mountaines of Pine trees, and have not any other thing to live on : I neuer faw any houses that they dwell in, but boughs tyed together with rines of trees, these Camibals would come to vs, and tell vs of many things, and would goe with vs two or three dayes, and then would run away from vs, and many times when they did meet with any of our Indians, or our Portugals, they would take away fuch things as they had about them, and fend them away without any hurt to their persons. As wee went through this Countrie we found many mynes Go'din plen- of gold, and among ft thefe Indians our Captaine got good ftore of it, and many good ftones. In 20 all America, there is not a richer pare then this, but it is fo farre within the Land, and that Countrie is so populous that as yet neither Poringall nor Spaniard can inhabite there. They are men of small stature, and very browne of complexion, their bodies are all painted as the other Caribals before named. The women are as browne of complexion as the men, and very rude and shamelesse, for in their behaulour they differ not from wilde beafts, but in all things live

The Waranawa'ens, fimple fauszes.

After we had passed this Province, we came into the Province of the Wayanamalous, where we found them in small Townes built by a Rivers side, and found these the simplest Nation of all other : for these Canibals would stand and gaze upon vs like herds of Deere, and never say any thing vnto vs. Here we found great store of Ginny wheat, and pompions that weedid eate. In 30 many Bogs hard by their Towne we killed good ffore of Crocodiles, and did eate of them, for in this journey we were almost started. These Cambals are of a good stature, bigge, and tall of bo-. die, and very cleane made of their lims, very sufficient to behold; but they are a kinde of lane people, that care not for any thing, but will lie all day lafing in their houses, and neuer goe abroad but for their victuals. The women are of good stature, they are of a dunne pale complexion, and they doe prouide Pompions and Rootes for their husbands. Here we were all, or most of vs very ficke with eating of a kinde of fruit, which the Indians call Madipuera, this fruit is as bigge as a Horse plum, as yellow as gold, the kirnell of it is as sweet as any Almond, of this frust did most of our companie eare, and of them dyed sixteene, and many others sicke for a fort-

Venemous

Affoone as our companie had recourred we went on our way to feeke out the Tamores, having for our guides fixe of the Motayes, who carried vs at the least two moneths up and downe the Wildernesse, euery day making vs beleeve, that we should come vnto our enemies Countrie. They brought vs at last to the fight of two Townes along by a River fide. The Porsugals after they had feene how great the Townes of the Canibals were, durft not adventure to passe over the River, for feare left the Indians had espied vs, and were layne in ambush. There was not any of all the companie, Portugall nor Indian, that durst to goe over the River; the Captaine and the chiefest of the Portugals agreed together and made me goe to the Towne, whether I would or no. When I faw that there was no remedie, I tooke my leaue of them all ; for I thought verily that I went Mony firshes. to the flaughter house, or at least to have lived a Comball with them during my life. With these 50 two extremities in my thought, commending my foule and bodie to Almightie God: I fwam ouer the Riner upon a little Target made of Corke, and affoone as I had landed I went firaight to the Towne, where I found nothing but two tame Estridges : he people had espyed vs, and were run away. When the Portugals had newes from me that there was no body, then they were fo ges. Riuer*lewary*. valiant as Lions, firiting who should get first into the Towne, this was the River of lawarie. the Towne is called Mennare. Here it was that I should have beene hanged, for striking of Antonio Martines in the Court of guard, after I had killed the great Serpent, called Serocuen. In this Towne we found great flore of Given wheat, and Pompions dried in the smoke, In this Towne likewise we had great store of drie Tabacco, and Potato rootes : wee found great store of gold in peeces, and also flore of Cristall, and many other good stones; some found Diamonds, and a kind 62 of blue stones that the Portugals did esteeme of very much, and called them Pedras de Sangua,

Gold, Criftall and Icmmes. The Serpent Serecues defl:ange forme and qualities,

Tame Effrid-

The Serpent that I killed was thirteene span long, it had four and twentie teeth, as sharpe as any naile, about the necke it had greater fiels then the other parts of her body; the shels were

blacke and raffet like a coller, and on her body they were ruffet and darke greene; vnder her belle all ineckled with black and white. It had foure sharpe feet, no longer then a mans finger, it had a conque like a harping Iron, her taile was like a straight Bull horne, all black and white listed. From one of these did the Lord defend me, and permitted me to kill one of them with the helue of an axe in the night. The Indians dare not goe to kill one of them except they goe fine or fixe of them with howes and arrowes. All kinde of wilde heafts, Lions, or Leopards, all kinde of Snakes, but only this, doe feare the fire, and if they come where the Indians leave any fire travelling through the Wildernesse, if any of these Serpents doe finde it, they never leave beating themfelues in it, till they either kill themselues or put out the fire. These Serpents when they feeke 10 their prey will stand about a small tree or a bough, and when any wilde beast passeth, hee falleth woon him, thrufting his taile into the fundament of whatfoever it ferzeth on.

After we had remayned at this place a fortnight, or three weekes, the Portnoals did refolue to come back agains without any purchase, there the Captaine gaue up his authoritie, and joyned hintelfe with his friends to feeke the neerest way home, then did I and twelve young men of the Portugals determine to goe to the South Sea by land, for we knew by the Notes of the Motares. that we were not farre from Perm, and Cufco, and we knowing how poote our effaces were, and the great famine we had passed comming to the Towne of Mennere, made vs afraid to goe back againe, that way which we had come, and for mine owne part, I encouraged the twelve young Particular all that I could to goe forward, for I had furely beene knocked on the head if I had gone 20 back ut my Captaines companie. With much adoe, wee thereon refolued to feeke our fortunes in the Wildernesse. After we were departed from our companie, wee came to many Mountaines. where we found good store of gold, and many precious stones; when wee came into this Countrie, wee thought wee had beene in the Pronince of Pers, wee had fuch plentie of mynes. and there was not one of vs but had flore of itones, that those which we tooke as to day, wee would shrow away to morrow to take other better then them which we had before. Thus wee travelled some two moneths in the golden Countrie, till at the last wee came to that great and most Two moneths Grange Mountaine of Criftall. This Mountaine is of a huge height, that it feemeth to be within trauellin a the cloudes, and so steepe that it is impossible to goe ouer the top. Here it was that wee passed golden Counthrough the Vault, and in truth it was one of the greatest dangers, and the most desperate that tries 30 euer I was in.

Affoone as we had paffed this danger, it was the pleafure of God to deliver vs into the hands Vauk-firaits. of our mortall enemies the Tamojes, where my twelve companions were killed and eaten. onely my felfe remayned among these Canibals a yeere and eleven moneths, in the which time I went many times to warre against other Proninces that were loyning woon the Countrie of Tamoyes, and (I thanke God) prospered so well that I was very much esteemed of them, and had a great command over them when they went to the field. Thele Tamoper be as proper men at any bee in Tamper proper all Europe; they vie to make holes in their vpper-lips like the Petewares; most of them are of a men. very faire complexion. The men have their heads alwayes fet with feathers of divers colours

which sheweth very pretily, they goe starke naked. The women are as proper as any Nation 40 can be, tall, comly, well legd, cleane made of body, very small in the waste, very faire of complexion, fine handed, and very comly faces. They vie a kinde of carning ouer their breafts, which becommeth them very well. Here the Canibals esteeme not any more of gold, or precious stones, Store of gold. then wee doe of any itones in the ftreets : if the Spaniards had knowne of this Countrie, they needed not to have gone to Pera, there is not like vnto this for all kinde of rich metals, and many kinde of precious stones. In this place I lived eighteens moneths, and went naked as the Canta bals did. After I had lived with these Canibals the time that you have heard, I was in great fauour and credit with them , infomuch that they would not doe any thing before they had made me acquainted withall : I have told them many times of the comming and going of our English ships to the Straits of Magellan, and how well we did vie all kinde of Nations, and what kinde 50 of all things necessarie wee had for their vie. These wordes made the Cambals desire to come to

the Sea coast, and asked of mee how it were possible for them to come to dwell by the Sea without being flaues to the Portugals: I told them that I knew many places where English men and French men did vie to come, but that neither Porngall, nor Spaniard was never there. After I had His journe told them what I thought best, we all agreed to come through the Prouince of Tocoman, and so with the Sato the Sea, betweene the River of Plate and Saint Vincents. This Countrie of Tocoman is all fan- ges. die, and in it inhabite the Pigmers; I have feene many of them among ft the Spaniards at the RiPigmers dwels uer of Plate. They are not altogether to little as weet peake of them here in England: their inha- ling in Cauca bitation in Tocoman is in Caues of the ground. In this Countrie the Inhabitants in many places have fuch Wheat as we finde in England, and Caffaui meale.

This Tocoman is judged by the Spaniard to be the end of Brafill, and the entring into Pers; for in Tocoma there are all kinde of Brafila Rootes, and all kinde of Corne, at well as Pers; this Countrie yeeldeth nothing to the Spanisods, but wilde Horles, and the Indians of Tocomun are mortall enemies to all the Inhabitants of Pern; therefore the Spaniards doe keepe this Countrie because they keepe the Provinces of Pers in feare, or elie they would rise vp against the Spa-

niards. After we had passed this Countrie, we came to a River that runnetti from Tecomon to River running Chile, where we tartied foure daies making Canoas to paffe the River, for there were fo manie Crocodiles, that we durft not paffe it for feare of them : after we had paffed this River, we came Mountaines of to the Mountaine Detodas Metalas, that is, of all Metals. At thisplace divers Spaniards and Pontugals have beene, and certain lawleffe men were let on thoare on this coaff by one Pedro de Charamento, which came to this place, and fet vp a great Croffe, and on it writ, that the Countrie was the King of Spaines; the which I put out, and writ that it was the Queene of Englands. This hill is of divers kinde of Mettals, Copper and Iron, some Gold, and great store of Quicke-sither. It is verie high, and all bare wir. out any Trees. Here likewite was a little Church made, where we found two Images, one of our Lady, and another of Christ crucified. When the Tamores 10 faw those fignes, they thought that I had betraied them, and (indeede) I was amazed, thinking that we had beene in some part of the River of Plate, and because the Indians should not be difcouraged. I shewed my selfe to be very glad, and told them that I knew those were signes that my Countrie men vied to make when they came into frange Countries : with these persivations I made the Tamojes to come on their journey to the Sea; where otherwise if I had told them it had bin let up by the Spaniards, the feare that thepoore Cambals stood in of them had bin encase h to have made them all returne againe from whence they came. At the last we came to the Sea. as I have told you, to the Towne of the Cariyobs: this Towne standeth in a fine pleafant place. hard by the coast in a faire Bay, where one hundred Ships may anker without any danger. And in this place you shall alwaies have great store of fish. In this Countrie, for a Knife or a till hooke, 20 you may buy a dozen of skinnes of very good Furre; and if you will, thefe Indians will goe flor any trifle) and feich two or three baskets of Mettals, and fome have had fuch good lucke, that for two or three Glailes, and a Combe or two, with some Kniues, they have got the value of foure or file thousand Crownes in Gold and Stones. The Towne food upon a hill, but we puld it Jown. But when we were taken by the Portugals, and that the Cariyon were reftored against to their Countrie, they did scituate againe with in the same place where they were when we draue them out of their Countrie. Here the Portugals did binde mee, and would have hanged mee for the twelue Portugals that the Cambals had killed and eaten:

The Carriebs.

The Carriebs are men of good stature, and very valiant : they make holes in their under linne as the other Canibals doe, These Canibals likewise eate mans flesh, and speake the same language to that the Tamojes doe; the women are very comely, the most of them are of a faire complexion: they weare their haire loofe about their eares, and all their bodies are died with blacke, and their faces withered, and yellow, their breits are all carued with divers colours, which befeemeth verie well. Here is the end of my travell through America; with the Cambals, from whence I returned againe to my Mafter Saluador Corea de Safa; where I was worfe then ener I was before.

The Giants of Port Defire, and inhabitants of Port Famine : also Angola, Congo, and Massangana, and Angica, Countries of Africa.

T Port Defire, which is the next haven to the straits of Magelan, inhabited Giantsof fif- 40 A teene or fixteene spans of height. Laffirme, that at Port Defire I saw the footing of them, by the thoare fide, that was about foure foote of one of our mens in length; and I faw two of them that were buried newly, the one of them was foureteene spannes long. After I was taken with the Spaniards, the Defire, one of our Shippes that had beene all alone at Port Defire, loft nine men and a boy, and two or three of them that had beene taken on the coast of Brast, laid that thefe Giants did throw flones of fuch bigneffe at them out of firings, that they were faine to weigh anker, and to lye further from the shoare. I saw another of these in Brafil, that was taken by Alonfo Dias a Spaniard, that with foule weather was driven out of Saint Inhans; this was but a young man, yet about thirteene spannes long. This Port Defize is a faire pleasant Countrie, it 50 hath many fine Rivers, and the Spaniards doe affirme, that from this place it is easie to goe to the Indians Chele, which is a very rich Countrie. In Port Defire, in many small Rivers there is great flore of Pearle, and Currall. Here you may have great store of Penguins and Seales at an Hand that lieth a mile Southward of the mouth of the hauen, These Giants whereof I have spo-Giants habitken, goe all naked, they weare their haire long to the shoulders. He whom I faw at Brafil, was a man of faire complexion, and very well proportioned according to his long flature; and this is all that I can report of them, for I know not their behaniour, but as the Portugals and Spaniards indge, they are no better then the Man-eaters of Brafil.

Port Famine in the Straits of Magelan. Wide moushed men.

A youth 1 to

1; ans high.

chile.

At Port Damine the Generall would have left mee, Here inhabit a kinde of strange Canibals, fhort of body, not aboue fue or fix spans high, and very strong and thicke made : their moutles 62 are verie bigge, and reach almost to their eares; they eate their meate in a manner raw, for they doe nothing but forch it a little in the fire, and logate it, and with the bloud that runneth from their mouthes, they smeare all their faces, and their breaits, and lay vong feathers on their bodies to the bloud that clingeth to their skinnes like Glue. When we were at the straits in this

CHAP.7.S.4, Extreame cold. Angolas King and Kingdome described

place, there came about four or five thousand vinto vs of them, but they never brought vinto vs any thing but Feathers and Pearle as much as we would (for there is great flore in this Port Famine) all the while that we were at it. These Canibals would never let vs come so neere them. as to touch any of them, for feare we should take them; when they would give vs any thing they would tie it at the end of a long staffe, and so likewite we did to them. Here our Generall lete fenen ficke men ashore; the Snow lyeth all the yeare on the Mountaines, and it is so cold in June. and Iuly, that our men did freeze, and many of them loft their toes, as I my felfe for one, for in Extreme cold one night that I lay moilt of my feete, I loft three of my toes on one of my feete, and foure of the and maked toppes of the other foote; fome had their feete trozen fome their noles, as Harris a Gold-fmith, people. To Henry Barramell, that was taken with me, loft his haire from his head, and was all bald for a Herris the

veare or two in Brafil: yet for all this cold, all the Inhabitants goe naked, except here and there Gold mith. He one weare feale skinnes, or the skins of some wilde E'afts, of the which there are many, as Leo-Barrewell. pards. Lions, and a kinde of Beafts bigger then Horles, they have great eares aboue a spanne long, Beafts bigger and their tailes are like the tailes of a Cowe; thefe are very good, the Indians of Brafil call them then Horfes at Tavermafon : of thele Beatts I faw in Ethiopia, in the Kingdome of Manicongo, the Portugals call the Magellan them Gombe : farther within the Straits at Tolisbay, we found many barkes of trees , that the frais, called Indians of the Strates doe fifth in, thefe Indians would not come neere vs, but full as they fpied Tape: praces, in our Boates they would runne away, but we plainely faw that they were men of good stature, ther he mea. and of white skinnes; they goe all naked both men and women. And thus I end my trauell neih Zebra or 20 of America.

Angola is a Kingdome of it felfe in Ethiopia, where first the Portugals did begin to inhabit : Tom. 1.p. 1002. the Countrie of Angela commeth along the coast, as Portugall doth vpon Spaine, so doth Angela Of Angela to runne vpon the Kingdome of Longa and Manicongo. In Angola the Portugals have a Citie, called curof grafilias the Holy Ghoft, where they have great store of Merchandile, and the Moore doe come thither is before deliwith all kinde of fuch things as the Countrie yeeldeth, fome bring Elephants teeth, fome bring livered. Negro flaves to fell, that they take from other Kingdomes which joyne hard by them ; thus doe they wie once a weeke, as we keepe Markets, so doe all the Blackamoores bring Hens and Hoes; which they call Gula, and Hennes they call Sange, and a kinde of Beatt that they take in the Wildernesse like a Dogge, which they call Ambroa: then they have that Beast which before I have an told you of, called Gumbe, which is bigger then a Horie. The Black amoores doe keepe good Lawes, The Kings

and feare their King verie much : the King is alwaies attended with the Nobles of his Realme, Pompe, and whenfoeuer he goeth abroad, he hath al waies at the leaft two hundred archers in his guard. and ten or twelve more going before him finging and playing with Pipes made of great Canes, and foure or fine yong Moores comming after him as his Pages, after them follow all his Noblemen. When there falleth out anie contropertie among them, they crave battell of the King, and then they fight it out before him. They come before the King and fall flat on their breafts, then Rives of the they rife up and kneele on their knees firetching out their armes, crying Mahobeque benge, benge; people, then the King striketh them on the shoulders with a Horse-taile, then they goe to the Campe, and with their Bowes they fight it out, till they kill one another. After the battell is done, if

ao any liueth, he that liueth falleth downe before the King in the same manner as he did when he went to the field, and after a long oration made, he taket h the Horfe-taile from the Kings shoulder, and waueth it about the Kings head, and then lateth it on his shoulder againe, and goeth away with great honour, being accompanied with all the Nobles of the Court : the Moores of Angola doe know that there is a God, and doe call God Cari pongos, but they worthip the Sunne and the Moone.

The Countrie is Champain plaine, and drie blacke earth, and yeeldeth verie little Corne, the most of any thing that it yeeldeth is Plantons, which the Portugals call Baynonas, and the Moores call them Mahonge, and their Wheate they call Tumba, and the Bread Anou; and if you will buy any Bread of them, you must say Tala Cuna anen tumbola gimbo, that is, gine me some bread, here

50 to money. Their money is called Gull ginbo, a shell of a fish that they finde by the sheare fide, and from Brafil the Portugals doe carrie great ftore of them to Angola. These Moores doe efteeme verie much of red, blew, and yellow cloathes, they will give a flave for a span of cloath in breadth I meane, and the length of it of the breadth of the peece, those peeces of cloth they weare about their middles, and under it they hang the skin of a great Weafell before them, and another behinde them, and this is all the garments that they weare. A Weazell in their language is called Wezels thin Pucen. You can doe a Blackamoore no greater difgrace, then to take away his Skinne from be- affected. forehim, for he will dye with griefe if he cannot be reuenged; the Portugals doe marke them as we doe Sheepe with a hot Iron, which the Moores call Crimbo, the poore flaues fland all in a Branded berow one by another, and fing Mundele que sumbela be Carey ba belelelle, and thus the poore rogues are beguiled, for the Portugals make them believe that they that have not the marke is not guiled flaves.

accounted a man of any account in Brafil or in Portugall, and thus they bring the poore Morres to be in a most damnable bondage under the colour of love. The Countrey of An. gola yeeldeth no stone, and very little wood: the Moores doe make their houses all couered with earth; these houses are no bigger then a reasonable Chamber, and within are many partitions.

made of great Bulruthes fowed together with the rindes of a Tree. They doe make cloth like Sparke of Veluet (but it is thinner) of the barke of a Tree, and that cloth they doe call Mol-Taking of Ele- lelleo. The Elephants doe feed in the Euening and in the Morning in low marifles as there hee many. The Moores doe watch which way they come, and affoone as the Elephants are at meat. they digge great holes in the ground, and cover them with flicks, and then they cover the pits with earth, and when they have made all readie they goe to the Elephants, and shoote at them with their Arrowes, and affoone as the Elephants feele themfelues hurt, they remeat whatforuer they fee before them, following after the Blackamores that chale them, then they fall into the deepe pits where after they are once in, they cannot get out. The Moores of Angola are as in blacke as let; they are men of good flature, they never take but one Wife, whom they call Mocasha. These Moores doe cut long streakes in their faces, that reach from the top of their cares to their chinnes. The women doe weare shels of fishes on their armes, and on the small of their legges. The Law amongst them, is, that if any More doe lie with an others wife, hee shall lose Circumcifion, his cares for his offence. These Moores doe circumcize their children, and give them their names, as wee doe when we baptize. Angola may very eafily be taken: for the Portugals have no Forts to defend it of any fireneth.

The King of Congo is the greatest King in all Athiopia; and doth keepe in the field continual-

Of COMES.

ly Extie thousand Souldiers, that doe warre against the King of Vangala, and the King of Angola; this King is a Christian, and is brother in Law of Armes with the King of Spaine, his feruants of 20 his honfe are most of them all Portugals, and hee doth favour them very much. The King is of a verie liberall condition, and verie fauourable to all Trauellers, and doth delight verie much to heare of forreigne Countries. He was in a manner amazed to heare how it was possible her Maiestie had lined a Maiden Queene so long, and alwaies reigned in peace with her lubiest. When I was brought before the King, and told him of my Countrie; what plentie of things we had, if the Portugals had not liked of it, they would interrupt my speech, and the King would shew himfelfe verie angrie, and tell them that euerie man was best able to speake of his Countrie, and that I had no reason but to tell him that which was true. The King of Congo, when hee goeth to the Campe to fee his Armie, rideth vpon an Elephant in great pompe and maieflie, on either fide of the Elephant he hath fix flaues two of them were Kings, that he himfelfe had taken in the field; all the reit were of noble birth; some of them were brothers to the King of Ancies, and fome of them were of the chiefest bloud of the great King of Bengala. These noble slaves at cuerie command of the King of Congo; doe fall flat on the ground on their brefts, When the King doth ride as you have heard, they carrie a Canopie as it were a cloth of State over his head. His two Secretaries, the one a Nobleman of Spaine, the other a More, doe ride next after him, Before him goeth at the least fine hundred Archers, which are his Guard, then there followeth a More, which doth nothing but talke aloud in praise of the King, telling what a great Warriour he hath beene, and praising his wisdome for all things that hee hath accomplished verie honourably to his great fame of such as knew him. When this King of Congo commeth to his Hoft, all the Souldiers as he passeth, fall flat on their faces to the ground. He neuer commeth into his Host after 40 any battell, but hee dubbeth at the least twentie Knights Portugals, and as many Moores, githing them verie great living according to their callings, and the feruice that they have done. The brother of this King was in Spaine, at my comming from thence for Ambassadour from his Here the Portugall Captaine would have taken mee perforce, to have beene a common Soule

mination at that time was to have gone for the Countrie of Prester lobn, for I had a great delire to fee the River of Nilo and lerufalem (for I accounted my felfe as a loft man, not caring into what Countrie or Kingdome Icame) but it was not the will of God, that I should at that time obtaine my defire. For travelling through the Kingdome of Congo, to have gone to the King- 50 dome of Angila, It was my fortune to meete a companie of Portugall Souldiers that went to a Conquest, that the King of Spain had newly taken, called Masangana; which place is on the bor-See Tom. 1.17: ders of Anguca. Here they made me serue like a Drudge, for both day and night I carried some 6-3. And Battell ftone and lime to make a Fort. It lieth right under the Line, and standeth in a bottome in the middle of foure hils, and about are many fogges, but not one River. It is the vnfirmest Countrie vnder the Sunne. Here the Portugals die like Chickens; you shall see men in the morning verie lustic, and within two houres dead. Others, that if they but weat their legges, presently they swell bigger then their middle; others brake in the sides with a draught of water. O, if you dil Sickly difpose know the intollerable heate of the Countrie, you would thinke your selfe better a thousand times dead, then to line therea weeke. There you shall fee poore Souldiers lie in troupes, gaping 62 like Camelians for a puffe of winde. Here lived I three moneths, not as the Portugals did, taking of Phylicke, and euerie weeke letting of bloud and keeping close in their houses when they had any raine, observing houres, and times to goe abroad morning and Evening, and never to

dier, but the King commanded that they should let mee goe whether I would, and my deter-

Angicans described, Perewares language, Ringes CHAP.7. S.5.

to eate but at fuch and fuch times. I was glad when I had got any thing at morning, noone or night, I thanke God I did worke all day, from morning till night, had it beene raine or neger for great heate. I had alwaies my health as well as I have in England. This Countrie is verietich, Gold. the King had great fore of Gold fent him from this place: the time that I was there, the King of Angica had a great Citie at Masangana; which Citie Paulas Dias, gouernour of Angola, tooke Paul Dias, and testcated there, and finding hard by it great flore of Gold, fortified it with four Forts, and walled a great circuit of ground round about it, and within that wall, now the Portugals doe build a Citie, and from this Citie euerie day they doe warre against the King of Angica, and haue Angica

burne a great part of his Kingdome. burne a great part of this famguount.

10 The Angiest are men of goodly stature, they file their teeth before on their vipper lawe and division with on their vader lawe, making a distance betweene them like the teeth of a Dogge; they doe ant.

eate many field, they are the stubbornest Nation that lives under the Sunne, and the resolutest in the field that euer man faw; for they will rather kill themselves then yeelde to the Portugals: Of Mahumeten the held that ever man laws to the same of Moores thefe are the blackeft; they doe live Religion if the in the Law of the Turkes, and honour Mahomet, they keepe manie Concubines as the Turkes Author were doe, they wash themselus euerie morning vowards, falling flat on their faces towards the East, not deceived They weare their haire all made in plaits on their heads, as well men as women: they have good by occasion of ftore of Wheate, and a kinde of graine like Fetches, of the which they make Bread: they have their circumgreat store of Hennes like Partridges, and Turkies, and all their feathers curie on their backes: in divice is

20 their houses are like the other houses of the Kingdomes aforenamed. And thus I end, shewing common ro you as briefe as I can, all the Nations and Kingdomes that with great danger of my life I travel. Christian and led through in twelue yeares of my best age getting no more then my tranell for my paine. From this Ethnicks, with Kingdome Angica, was I brought in Irons againe to my Master Saluador Corea de fa fa, to the Mahumetans, Citie of Saint Sebastian in Brasil, as you have heard. Now you have seene the discourse of my trauels, and the fashions of all the Countries and Nations where I have beene, I will by the helpe of God, make you a short discourse in the language of the Petimeres, which language all the Inhabitants of Brafil doe understand, especially all the coast from Fernambucque to the River of Plate, the which I hope will be profitable to all travellers, and of them I truft my pames thall be well accepted of.

30 First, you must tell them of what Nation you are, and that you come not as the Portugals doe. for their wives and children to make them bondflaves.

We are Englishmen, as you all know that in [times past had peace with you.

Now knowing the neede and want that thers had, for the love that both your ance-Want, we are come to renew our anciet amity. | passms.

Ore uqureiuna que se neering peramoya werisco Catadoro wareny orenysbe berefor.

Coen pecotene Comanere pipope pewsena bareyou have of all fuch things as before your Fa- | fer opacatubage berna oweryco coen pecotene fou fe. Core mandoare peramoya way souba, ore ranoya frours and ours did beare one to another, and | wasfonna refer eteguena refer pecotene pararaua, for the loue and pittie that we have of your ore in ibewith ore ramoya pereri focatumorn on

The description of diners Rivers, Ports, Harbours, Ilands of Brasil: for instruction of Nauigators.

So Io Grande, is called by ve the great River, lately was conquered by a Portugall, called Rio Grande, Manuell Masquerenbas. It is aboue two leagues broad in the mouth, and on the South-east fide frandeth a great Fort made by the foresaid Manuell Masquarenbas: that Countrie is plaine and fandy in many places, especially neere the Sea, and yeeldeth Sugar Canes in abundance. On the coast are many great Biyes, where the Indians doe oftentimes finde great ftore of Ambergreese : within this place, there is also store of Wood, Pepper, Ginger, and Waxe. Ambergreese, Here inhabit a kinde of Cambals, called Petymares : these Cambals have had trafficke a long time with France, and amongst them there are many that can speake French, which are Bastards, begotten of Frenchmen.

On the coast of Brasil there are three Rivers of Paraeyua: one is this that lieth next to Rio Paraeyash :? Gande, the other is a great River that runneth through the Countrie almost as farre as Lymo, Rivers, and commeth out betweene Cape Frio and Spirito Santio : the third is a faire River that lieth be-60 tweene the River of Plate and Saint Vincents. This Pareyna whereof we ipeake, is a faire great Bay, where thipping being neuer to great may enter, within this Bay vpon a hill, you thall fee a faire Citie, and on the Sea fide ffandeth two small Forts. You may anker neere the shoare, as the entrie of this Bay, you shall be three hils of red earth on either side of the harbour, which the Portugals call Bareras Mermethies.

Kkkkk 2

A Ringricalled

Guyana, is a small River that lieth by Paraena, it belongeth to lasper Designera, who was chiete Iustice of all Brafil. In the mouth of this River standeth a great rocke, which is continu-Canada I mean and ally couered with Sea Foules. This River hath two fadome water in the mouth, a quarter of a Barr Book, mile within this Ruer, on the South-west fide, you may take fresh water, and great store of Cattell : voon this River there are great store of Sugar Mils, and continually you shall have in this River imall Carvels that fish, and carry Sugar from thence to Fernambuquo: likewife here is great ftore of Brasil, Pepper, Ginger, and Cotten, Cocos, Indian Nuts, here likewise inhabit Pe-

Etamariqua in the Indian language is a bed, it is a point of the land like a Cape: the point runneth halte a mile into the Sea, and vponit the Portugals haue built a Towne, you may anker 10 end a piece, very neere the shoare, both on the South-west and on the North-east side of the Towne, in seven I was Live and eight fadome water. All the Countrie till you come to Cape Augustin, is low land, and to faile from thence to Fernambuquo is no danger, but the clifts which lye along the coaft, as faire as the River Saint Francis, which are alwayes feene, the Seas when there are any Spring tides. doe overflow the land behinde : moreover if any winde blow from the East, it beateth the Sea into hils of the Clifts, that it maketha great noise. Wherefore the Indians call it the Land of the Bell, Here are reasonable store of Sugars, and great store of Coco Nuts.

On the North fide of Fernambuque, you shall fee white Downes, and when you are past all the Downes on the South, you are by Capignramiring, which is a place where alwaies you shall fee Filter-men in small Boates or langades; and from thence to Fernambuquo, are fue or fix miles, 20 and fo if you be under 8. degrees, you shall see a flat land even and bare, called Capitana; then you must take heede you runne not Southward, for then you runne vpon a point of the land, called by the Portugals Punte de Olynda, which is foure leagues from the Cape, and firetcheth into the Sea as farre as Cape Augustin. As soone as you have doubled this point, you must take heede you put not in with the Towne of Olynda, which you shall see; for if you doe, you will runne voon the Sands, called by the Portugals Baybos de S. Antonio, which lye at least foure or fine miles into the Sea, being neere the shoare, you shall see the Shippes that lye at anker ouer the Clifts, called by the Portugals Arecias: this place is a league from Fernambuquo, being the harbour where all the Shipping that goes from Fernambuque doe arrive; from this place to the Cape you shall fee the Clifts as if it were a wall made by Bricklayers, no higher in one place then in another, but all 30 euen. The Towne of Fernambuquo is scituated vpon a hill, and very strongly entrenched round about, on the Sea fide euery twelue score, standeth a small Fort or defence for Soldiers, with foure cast Peeces, and so they scowre all the shoare from the Arecia, where the Shippes lye to the point of Olynda, which is the farthest part of the Towne Northwards, from the Areciae where the Ships Ive commeth a River through the land, a Harquebuffe shot from the Sea coaft. and runneth right behinde the Towne from the South to the Weft and Eaft, which maketh the Towns almost an Hand, all but a little part of the North side.

The Cape of Saint Augustin is a Point of land that runneth into the Sea two or three miles: from the Sea you shall see three hils, called by the Petiwares, Aquare Wason Remitum, they will feeme vnto you like the backe of a Camell, and now you may easily know it, for you may lee 40 a Church that the Portugals have built; and halfe a league towards the South, you shall fee the Iland of Saint Alexxo.

The lland of Saint Alexo is long and narrow : it lieth within a league of the shore, and Il of S. Algxo. ftretcheth North-east and South-west, you may anker betweene the shoare and it all weathers, for the Hand hath very faire Baies, where you may lye inten or twelue fadome water. Vpon this

Hand you may take wood or fresh water. Parin Derales.

Porto Docalno lyeth Southward of the Hand of Saint Alexo, it is a flat land, you neede not feare the comming in by the rockes, for hard by them you shall have foureteene fathome weater. Here you shall have great store of Cattell, and Sugars. This Countries plaine low land, and all planted with Sugar Canes: you shall know this harbor very easily from the Southerne point of 50 the Iland Saint Alexo, for when it ebbeth, you shall see a faire Bay, and all the shore bare almost to the Cape, being blacke ground.

River of flones Eight leagues Southward from the Porto de calno, is the River of flones. Southward of it vou shall fee three great red Hills, which stand over the River of Camarysuna, which is a league from this River, you shall see from Sea a great Bay run within the Land, and before the mouth of it many great Rocks, to come to this Bay you must come close to the shoare on the South-west side, and after you bee in the Bay keepe full West, and it will bring you to a River that runneth into the Land at the least twentie leagues. In the mouth of this River dwell fixe or feven Portugals, that keepe Cattell for lobn Pays, but they are of no strength. Here you may take water at pleafire, and alwayes in thole houses, that stand in the mouth of the Riuer, you shall have good flore for Cassum meale. If you be of any strength, that you dare goe ten or twelve miles up the Riuer of you shill take good store of Sugars, for there standeth three or foure Sugar mills onely, an other on the Rener fide; likewise here is good store of Brasill, and Pepper, Cotton, and many other merchandite.

CHAP.7. S.S. Rivers, of Stones, S. Antonio, Crossdiles, S. Michael. Alaqua. 1220

Camarrians (as I have faid) lyeth a league Southward from the River of flones, to know it Camarriana wou shall see three Hills of red ground, called by the Portugal's, Barees Vernellies, this place is not inhabited: the mouth of this place is narrow, and hath not aboue fine foor water, but you may anchor in the Bay hard by the River , and fend your Boat fafely for frelh water without danger. or to filh with your Net, for there is great fore of fresh fish of all kindes.

The River of Saint Antonio lyeth feuen leagues from Camerinua, it is a faire great River , ly. The River of erh some fiftie leagues within the Land, hath foure fathom water at the comming in . but is so Saint Asionie. narrow that no fhip can come in. It is a very good place for you if you fland in neede (having falt) to make your promision, for there you shall have great store of all kinds of fish, especially of Sale.

10 a kinde of fift, called by the Indiant, Varana, which is as bigge as an Oxe. After you are within Fift Process this River, you shall have high land on both fides, and you must be carefull and keep good watch. for yo this River dwellerli a kinde of people, called Caraja, their people if they fee you ynornnided will fight with you, but if they fee you able to defend your felues, then will they bring fuch things as they have to traffick.

The Harbour of French-men called by the Indians, Auroma pialane, lyeth two learnes South A place called ward from the River of Saint Amonio. It is a small Bay, that may be knowne by a high Hill that the Harbour of flandethouer it, which is all full of Brafill trees. To enter into this Harbour, you must marke Frenchmen. the Cliffes, and when you are to the North of them all but one, you may fafely come within a ftones cast to the shoare. When you have landed if you want fresh water, you must feeke on the

20 South fide of the Hill, and you shall finde a streame that runneth out of the Hill into a great Cie fterne of ftone, which is made out of a Rocke, you cannot miffe of this place if you feeke for it.

for all the way you shall see small Rocks, and mens names written in them.

This River in our language is called the River of Crocodiles, for in it there are many, which the Rivercalled Indians call faquares; it is narrow, and in the mouth of it flandeth a white Rocke. To enter it laquareafiche. you must take heed you keepe on the North side of this Rocke, and you shall finde nine and ten toot water ; after you be within it you shall come to a great Bay, and on the North-east side you fhall finde a small River, where you may take fresh water, but let every man take heed how hee leaneth into the water, for the Crocodiles lie by the banke-fide hidden, and if any thing fall into the water presently they kill it. Here is nothing to bee had valeffe you will fish for the Croco-30 diles, and take the Bladders or Cods of muske from them ; here you need not feare any inhabitants, except you be efpyed by fome paffengers that goe to Fernambnane.

Alaqua is a very faire River, that lyeth foure leagues Northward from the River of Saint Alaqua. Michael and three leagues Southward from the afore [aid River of Crocodiles. On either fide of it you shall fee a great Hill, called by the Portugals, Os Campes. You shall finde but seuen or eight foot water at the comming, and very cleere from any Rocks, but after you bee within, you shall finde many bankes of fand, where you shall kill good store of fish, and alwayes you shall bee fure to have Caruells fishing in this place, at the comming in on both fides you may take

Before the River of Saint Mishael you shall fee the Cliffes like Arecines of Fernambuque; you River of Sains must enter at the end of the Cliffe, hard by the shoare on the South-west: and you must marke a Michael. small Cliffe that lyeth betweene the mouth of the River and the shoare, this Cliffe you leave betweene you and the shoare, and betwint this Cliffe and the great Rocks you may enter it : three fathom water. But take heed when you enter, that you faile not towards the North-east, although you fee the Bay great, for you shall run voon many great banket of fand, therefore you must keepe West still within a stones cast of the shoare, so shall you be fure to keepe in the Channell. Thus you must faile till you discouer a house, that you shall see doubling a Point sull South from you, then your best is to anchor, for if you goe farther, you are in danger except you know the Channell very well. In this place dwels a Portugall, called loba de Rocho: and vp a River that you shall see runne into the Land dwell many Portugals, where they have a Church with 50 Friars to say Masse. Here you shall have good store of Cattell if you need, and Brasill wood, Caffaui meale; and in this River you shall have good store of Oisters, and in them you shall find many great Pearles : likewise here is good store of Balsom oile, and trees of All Nestee, which is a very precious and rich wood, fingular good for bruifes, or old hurts: also here is good store of Tae bacco. This place is eight leagues from the River of Toades, where we were driven on the Rocks, because we knew not where wee were, for it is a singular good Harbour to enter, if a man know

the comming in betweene the Rocks, called, Os Bayos de Don Rodrigo. Because the Indians indeed doe kill many Toades, therefore they call it Cornoen, that is to The Harbour. fay, the River, or water of Toades, I tell you the name in the Indian language. Because in all placealed The Riv ces you shall haue of them, and so you may know when they tell you where you are. When you wer of loades. are in ten degrees and an halfe Southwards of the Equinoctiall Line, you shall see fine hils and the three that standeth on the North side of this place whereof wee speake are round and high, the other two that stand on the South, not farre in distance one from another, are long and lower then theother, if you come neere the shoare, you shall see a great many of small Rockes, and a

great Bay which is the place I speake of, right before this Bay you shall see two great Rockes, to

Kkkkk 2

Cama

Prices.

goe into this Harbour, you must passe betweene these Rockes which are called Bayor de don Rodrieg, Wen you are entred you may anchor hard by the Rockes, and found the Channell . which will lyc North-eatt from you. Here you may have fresh water vo the River, but it will be hard for you to find, theretore your best is to goes quarter of a mile by the Sea fide, and you shall fee a faire River, where you may take water at pleafure, and kill good ffore of fish. At this place comming from the Rulet of leners, in the night we were driven voon the Rockes for want of a Pilot that knew the Coaft.

Hot that knew the back, betweene this and the Cape Frie, because I know them not but by report of other Traughlers, and merefore I leave it to them, for I will write no more but what I have feene, and amable to proue when time thall ferge, and thus I end thewing you all that I to have feene on the Coaft Northward of Cape Frie, which is in our Language Cape Cold,

Cape Frio is a point of the Land than runneth into the Sea at leaft twelve mile, it leth under 22. degrees. At this Cape you may have fight of a great Mountaine, that you may fee ouer it called abusango Retambuera, here you may anchor on the East-fide of this Cape in a Harbour called Abaya formozo. Here you may have great store of Brassell-wood, and in this Bay you shall find often times good store of Amber-greece, and on the North side of this Bay you shall fee a great River called vparafon, where you may kill good store of many kinde of fishes, and in the mouth of this River you shall have great store of Corall, if you will dragge for it.

Saquarema is a River, where the Frenchmen did traffique with the Canibals called Tamores: it Howeth foure leagues Stuthward from the Cape. This River is narrow at the comming in, you finall find twelve foote water, till you be three or foure leagues up the River. You shall find tresh water on either fide of the Ruser, and great flore of Braffell-wood, all along the Riserfide. On the South fide of this Riser you shall lee a great hill which the Indians call Boppena, that is, The retten Whale, for you shall see the top of it like a dead Whale. If you want refreshing, you may have good there of Potato Roots there, Plantons, Lemons, Orenges, and many other good Roots as bigge as great Turnips, which the Indians call Caranajon.

Lives is a league Southward of the River of Saquarena, It is (as I have faid in the description on of my travell) a great and huge Rocke, hollow within, where the Indians fay that the feruant of God did preach anti them, which they call Topansa, spera, be fore the mouth of this Rock to-wardes the Sea standard another stat Rocke, that reacheth somewhat into the Sea; upon it 30 you shall see the prints of barefeet, here if you fish with Lines, you may quickly lad your shippe. A little behind this stone boole, you shall see a fine River of water, where you shall finde many pretie greene stones that Indians doe vie to weare in their lips. You may anchor within a Musket shot of the shore, but it is verie dangerous if the wind be in the East.

Pirateninga is fine leagues to the Southward of Elioca, right before it standeth a small Hand.it Principal is inhabited by the Partie, It., It is a Bay that pinneth betweene two Mountaines a mile and Mountaines mile and Mountaines mile and Mountaines on more within the Land. There I have feene a Mermaid and many other strange fishes. You may by the Author. lie with your shipping at the Hand, and fend your Boates ashore, where you shall find great store of Cattle: and you may take good hore of all kind of fishes it you will, either with Hook or Net. Here you may have Oranges, Lemmons, and Cassaui Meale, and all other such things that the 46 Countrey yeeldeth, but you must be alwaies fure to keepe good watch, for feare of the Portneals

of the River of Innuary, which are hard by you. The River of lanuary lieth three leagues from Pirateninga, it is a great Arme of the Sea, that lorge, and Ci. runneth into the Land at the least fourteene miles; on the mouth of this place, fland foure Ilands, and now the best marke that it hath to be knowne, is a Fort that standeth on the North fide of the comming in of the Harbour, vpon a Rock. On the South fide flandeth a Hill that reacheth into the Sea, which the Portugals call Camo, that is, The top of a flip, for it feemeth like the maine top-faile of a fhip from Sea. Hard by the Sea fide on the foote of this Hill on the North fide of the Hill as you faile into the Harbour; standeth a Rocke of great height made like a Sugarloafe, and is called by the Portugals the Sugar-loafe. In the midft of the going in, in the mouth 50 of this River lieth a Rocke plainly to bee feene, to goe in you must keepe betweene the Rocke and the Fort, that flandeth on the North fide of you. When you are entred the mouth of the River and are past the Fort, you shall see an Iland lie right before you, and even with a Church called Santa Lucia, this lland is called the lland of Brigalion, You must be sure to passe on the North fide of this lland, and affoone as you have paffed it, you shall see all the Citie both on the Hill, and on the Sea fide. Then you must take heed that you goe not right to the Towne, for you shall run vpon certaine shelues of sand, that lie right before the Towne all along to a small Iland called the Iland of Saint Bent, this Iland lieth a quarter of a mile from the Iland of Bragation, and East-Iland of Briward of this Hand of Saint Bent, standeth a great Rocke, you may faile betweene the Rocke and the lland, and assoone as you have entred, betweene them you may anchor hard by the lland, and 60 then you shall see a Church standing vpon a Hill which is called Saint Bent, then you need not feare to goe right before the Towne, within a Caleeuer shot of the shore from the Towne, you thal fee on the North-east thore a towne of Canibals, called Saint Lorenzo, which is in peace with the Portugals, and within the Bay you shall finde many Rivers and Sugar-mils, where there is

high Hill, and on either fide both on the South-well and North-east is low Land, in this place led Waratinh. you cannot enter with any thip, but you may anchor betweene the Hands, and lendryour Boses athere. If you goe vp, you shall find good store of Potatoe Roots, Plantons, great store of Oranges and Lemmons, and many other kind of faints, which are very good to releeve ficke men. If you will hih with your Net, heere you hall kill all kinde of good hihes, but alwayes bee fure to keepe good watch, for the Portugals are very neere you.

Waratine lieth three leagues from the River of lannery, you may know it by two:llands that

From the River of Waratine for the space of fourellagues is all fandy low Land; you shall see Cermine Is an a high Hill which the Indiani call Marambayapnam, that is in our Language, the end of Warre; lands called right ouer against this point you shall fee a great Hand at the comming in of this Harbour , you by then the need not feare, for hard by the shore, you shall haup twentiefathome water. When you are in the Hand he mouth of this Harbour right before, you hall fee a white Rocke, which will lie full West from you : you must leaue the Hand Southward from you, then shall you descrie another great Hand galled Eperya; at a point of this Iland that lieth full Well, towards the firme Land, you hall fee two small Hands, and when you are right against those two Hands you shall see a faire Bay, where: you may anchor at pleature to come into this Bay, you must enter between those two Hands there Inaue tooken of. I doe describe this Harbour vnto you aboue many good Harbours that you have find, because you may depart from hence with any wind, for the mouth of Marambana heth South-eath from you, when you are in this Harbour, then you have another going out that lieth

North-east from you, from this Port where you half anchor called Epeara. If you want victuals: fer your ships, you may take your Boat or your Pinnaffe, and goe out betweene the two Hands that you entred, and when you are betweene those Hands you shall see a flat broad Hand, which will lye flat South-weit from you; this Hand the Indians called Sapannera; that is, the morning and this is the Hand that I was driven vpon, when I runne away to Mafter Hanking, as I have told you in the discourte of my troubles , you must come with your Boat to this Hand, and 'your must be fure to passe betweene the West shore and the Hand; and assoone as you have passed the point of this Iland, you shall fee three Hils of red Earth one hard by another. You must leane one of them West from you, then may you land your men at pleasure, when you have landed, you ao must goe through a little Copps, for the speacol a Harquebuse shor, then shall you come into faire Lawne, where you shall find great store of Cattle, and a house or two that standeth your a Hill where you shall have alwayes good store of Castler meale, if you will have Rootes and

Plantone voon the Iland where you anchor there are good flore, but there is an Iland called the Long Iland, where you shall have of all these things in abundance. To know this Hand, tow with vour Boate to the lland of Eperya that lieth full South from your ship , and then you shall fee a long Hand hard by the firme Land, which is this whereof wee speake, and because you shall bee fure not to miffert, be attentiue. When you come neere the shore, beholding a Rocke that lieth a quarter of a mile from the shore, vpon which Rocke standeth a Crosse, this is the place where a Portugall called Manuel Antones dwelleth, but now there is no bodie, but a kinde of Canibals

40 that come and goe, therefore be fure alwaies in those parts to keepe good watch and be carefull; if you can speake their language you may have many things. From this Hand Southwards you shall see two small slands halfe a league from you, these Blands are called Amount of the lands. against them lieth a faire River, where you shall have alwaies great store of fish, and by the River, fide you shall see the Mandioca plainly, and many other Roots very good to refresh your companie. Southward from this place some two leagues you shall see a faire Bay called Paratery there dwelleth a kind of Cambals called Vannaffes, of them you may buy skins of divers wilde beafts, and tomerimes they have good ftore of Amber, which they call Pira ponia ergain.

Saint Sebaftian lieth some three leagues from Great Hand, It is a long and a faire Hand, you The Handofs. may anchor betweene it and the shore. After you have entred at the North point of this Iland, Schoftien. sc you shall see a great white Rocke, right ouer against this Rocke, you shall see a point of the firme Land runne into the Sea, and right before this point lie three Rockes, where commonly you shall tee Indians shooting fishes with their Bowes and Arrowes, if you goe with your Boate to that point, you shall see a great Bay called by the Indians lequerequere. There likewife standeth a great Towne of Cambali, such as those that dwell at Great Iland, halfea league from Saint Schaftians standeth a small Hand right into the Sea, called by the Indians Vraritan, and by the Portugals Alquatraffes, heere you shall finde great store of Seafoules and Seales, Alegators that live on the Land called by the Indians Fifewafon. Right ouer against the South point of the Iland of Saint Sebailian standeth a great white Rocke called by the Portugals Pas demilio, that is, the life of Ginnie Wheate; then shall you fee an Iland hard by the shoare called by the Indians Borsoneonga, that is, the Whales head, this Iland standeth in the mouth of Pertioqua, which is, the River that goeth to Saint Vincents, as you goe to this place after you have passed the lland, you that see North-east from you certaine houses where there dwell a kind of Canibals called Caijofes, there you may have good store of Cattle, Orenges, Lemmons,

and many kinds of Rhots and Fruits.

tis of Saint

great profit to be made.

The descripti-

Right against this Towns of Cambals called Carthes, standeth the Towns of Saint Vincents called by the Indians Warapiumama; as you goe father up the River you shall fee a small Hand 2013 & Santes, Southward, where you shall fee a Sugar-mill of the Captaines of Santos called Ieronimo Leton. where our Gentlemen were flaine. Farther vp the River, you shall see a Castle stand at the foore of the Hill; then you come to the Towne of Santos, which flandeth hard by the water fide. Right behind the Towne of Same, flandeth a Hill wher Brafenbar had a house, from the top of this Hilldid John Davies make a Place of the Countrey. Now the Portugals have found Mynes of filuer in this place.

The descripti-

The third Partena is a good Harbour for thips, and here are great store of Camibals and Caribbe on of the third which very lately are inleagued with the Portugals, you may buy of them great flore of Pep- 10 per and Ginger, very rich Furres, and Cotton-wooll, and Waxe, this is the place that I came vnto after I had beene taken by the Tamojes within the Land. Here the Tamojes were taken by rangelica pato, and by the the Portugals, and I was given agains to be my Masters slave, when 10000. of the Tamojes were Indian Vingin. flaine, and 20000, of them parted among the Portugals for flaues. The mouth of the River of Plate is wide, and within it there are many Downes of fand . you

must bee sure to keepe very neere the North shoare, till you shall see a high Mountavne white at the top; then must you faile Southward at least foure leagues, and shall you see another small Hill on the Northside, you must faile right with it; then shall you come into a faire Bav. where you must be sure to keepe still along the shoare, and after you have passed the Westerne point of this Bay, you shall have the River Marser; then you need not feare any shallower till you 26 come before the Towne of Bones Ares. There the River runneth full Southward, and along the River lide from Bonos Ayres is a small Village built by the Spaniards of Lime and stone that they brought from Brafil, for all the Countrey is fandie : the Indians doe make their houses all covered with earth. Here are great store of wilde Horses and Cattle, sheepe and Goats, but for filuer and gold, there is none but that which commeth from Cordina and Potafin. Here likewife the Indians have great store of Wheate, twentie leagues within Land lyeth a Province called Tocoman, now it is a Bilhopricke, this Countrey is the division of Brafit, and all the Provinces ot Nona Hilbania. Here the Indians have Wheate and Caffani, Apples, Peares, Nuts, and all other fruites of Spaine, likewise they have all the fruites of Brafil. But after you travell Southward of Note. Beafts of Brafil, this Countrey, you shall not find any thing that groweth in Brafil, nor any wild beafts, as Lee- 20 pards, or Capinaras, Invaferines, Cat of Mountaines, Aqueques, Waristas, Movoquies, Iobryas, Surveus, Idvarcas, Boyana, Boyleninga, Boybena. Brafill is full of all these wilde and dangerous beafts, and divers others; But the Provinces of Pers are cleere of them, except it bee fome Trauelly chance. From Tocomos to Saint Info is eightic leagues, and you shall trauell it as you doe Compalle on by Sea with a Compasse, for the Countrey is all fand, and as the wing bloweth, so shall you have the Mountaynes of fand, to day on one fide of you, to morrow on the other, in this passage you shall passe through many Rivers, which to your thinking are not about a soote deepe, but if you have not good guides and great experience, your waggons and hories will quickly be cast away in them, and at an instant be covered with quicke fand. After you have passed this Countrey, you shall come to Saint lago, then till you come to Potofin, you shall travell 40 shrough great Mountaines and Valleyes, and all the way as you goe, you shall have great Townes of Indians, who are all in peace with the Spannerds, you shall have five hundred of these Indians by the way as you travell readie with Nets to carrie you, tyed one a Cane from Towne to Towne, for a fifth-hooke or a few beads of glaffe, or any fuch trifle; and there is no travelling in the World fo case as this, for you may lye, or sit, and play on a Gitterme all the way if you will, for so the Spaniards doe; you shall passeby many Mynes of Gold and transque with the Indians for Gold, and divers kinds of precious Stones, but not in that plentie as you shall at Potalin, by real on that there the Mynes are open and wrought on, and those betweene Santiage and Potoffin are not. At Potoffin there is no want of any thing, although the Countrey of it felie bee very barren, but by reason of the great traffique that they have from Lyma, and all the Townes es of the South Sea; they have alwayes provision enough, for from those Townes, they bring Oyle and Wine in great larres of earth vpon great sheepe, which are called sheepe of fine quarters for their tailes have almost as much as a quarter. To tell the particulars of the Mynes, would beea new Storie, only this : they find the Oare like blacke Lead, then they grinde it in Ingines, then they wash it through fine Sieues in paued Cifternes that are made for the purpose; the Moores are all naked as long as they worke, because he shall not hide any precious stone. The Spaniards here are all very rich, and in truth as gallant fellowes as can be. The Francisco Friers carrie a great

fway in this Countrey, by reason that they were the first that preached in this part of India.

CHAP. VIII.

Relations of Master THOMAS TVRNER who lived the best part of two yeares in Brasill, &c. which I received of him in conference touching his Tranels.



N Saint Michael one of the Acores, they ascend up in a forenoones journey unto Saint Michaels. a hill into a Chappell, wherein they need a fire in Summer for the cold : there being a little off three Springs, the one whereof caffeth vp waters in a continual boyling with a terrible noise, and of great heate, the second of heate intolera-ble, which in short time scaldeth any hung thing to death, the ground also hote to frand on : but the water calme. The third is warme, and a fit Bathe, In thefe

Ilands in Caues bee found men buried before the Conquett, whole, &c. Brafitan Indians are Cambals, and not for revenge only, but for food also denoure mans flesh. The Portugals make not flues of them, nor can enjoyne them worke, by reason of a commission to the contrarie obtain lesuits Sauges ned by the lefuites: neither doe they winne of them ought but by faire meanes. They are most fried ds. excellent Archers, goe starke naked, the womens haire long and blacke, barsh as a Horse-taile. He Giante did fee up the River of Plate, one twelve foot high, and report was of higher in that Countries. Their Weapons are two mailie bowles at the two ends of a ftring cast, &c. He saw also men there with the hinder parts of their heads, not round but flat, (and a little before this Relation, about

Anno 1610, he faid that at London he had feene carried to the Court a thigh bone of a man a yard Flat heads. and halfe in length.) Their beafts in Brafill are great Apes with beards and Mustachioes. Kine like vnto ours of both fexes, but liuing in the waters and reforting to land to feed. Hauing no Viders, nor horners long legs, harmeleffs, leffe fomewhat then ours, their flesh like beefe, but eaten in the name of fish. Strange Kine,

Tieres like Grey-hounds spotted like Ounces exceeding swift, the force of whose pawat a blow killeth his prey. Their beaft by some called Hay, which yet he faith, eateth leaves of trees and not Aire only : the louely prettie Segonia. The Serpent Cobrus: whereof he faw one al noft See before in 20 as bigge as himselfe, twentie foot long, killed by their Indian boy, of colour like an Adder. Of Oniedo. as bigge as minutes, or an arrange service whom they report (and a Father gaue him inflance of the proofe) that watching his prey, that Strange Service whatfoeuer commeth by, it winder about and getteth the taile into the fundament drawing this num. the suts after it: and so preyeth on the same, denouring all, till that it be not able for subselle to ber may perflire, but rotteth as it lyeth, the fielh quite away, the head and bones remaining, in which haps feeme inthe life continuing recourreth at lait his former Hate. One was thus found in the rottennesse, credible and and being bound for proofe by the Portugals, with a withe tila Tree, at their returne was telethereport, fo found repaired. The beaft that baggeth vp her young ones, &c. (as in others Relations, heere which in fome therefore omitted.) one veere after

The Indian is a fish in the Sea, and a Foxe in the Woods, and without them a Christian is nei-fome great 40 ther for pleasure or profit fit for life or liuing.

Out of Angola is faid to be eyeerely shipped eight and twentie thousand I flues and there but the genewas a Rebellion of flaues against their Maiters, tenne thousand making a head and barraca- ral reportis of doing themselves, but by the Portugals and Indians chased, and one or two thousand reduced. divers thou-One thousand belonged to one man, who is said to have tenne thousand slaves, Eighteene sands shipped Ingenies, &c. his name is Iobn de Pais, exiled out of Portugall, and heere prospering to this the Potteral thence yearly a incredibilitie of wealth.

There are Apples called Ananas, pleasant in colour and exceedingly in taste, and holesome, gained the but eating Iron as Aqua fortis. Brafil is full of Mines, if the King would fuffer the digging them.

Negroes foolish and fpichefull wars vpon each others

CHAP. IX.

The taking of Saint Vincent and Puerto Bello, by Captaine VVIL-LIAM PARKER of Plimmouth, the fenenth of February 1601.



N the beginning of November 160t. I departed from Plymmouth with two ships, one Pionasse and two shallops in quarters toward the West Indies. My chiefe thip wheiein I went my felfe as Admirall was named the Prudence, of an hundred tuns, wherein I had an hundred and thirtie tall men, the second was the Pearle, a small ship of fixtie tonnes, wherein went as my Vice-admirall Master Robert Rawlin, accompanied with fixtie luftie fellowes, my Pinnaffe of twentie tuns was manned with eighteenemen. In this Confort were Maller Edward Giles , and Philip Ward

Gentlemen Captaines by Land, with Captaine Amone Fugars, Captaine Lorman, Captaine Andley, and divers other Gentlemen of much towardlinetle and valour as they made good proofe in the furceffe of this Voyage. In our patting by the Cape of Saint Vincent in Spaine, commonly called the South Cape, I was encountred with fuch a terrible Ternado or guit of winde that my Pinnaffes loft Pinnaffe with fifteene of our men, to our great griefe was vtterly cast away, wee being not able with the vetermoit of our endrauours to faue about three of the reft. From thence I shaped my course to the lles of Cape Verde, and immediately upon my arrivall there, I fet upon one of them Hes of Cape called Saint Vincent, with an hundred men, and tooke the Hand and the Towne thereof. which Tarle. was a prettie place, the spoile whereof I gaue to my Souldiers, which after they had pillaged it, The He and

Towne or S. jet the jame on Ere. Hence we haled ouer to the Coast of Tierra sirma, and arrived first at the lle of Margarita and Trimer & C.K. R. The Raschera

with discre

comming to the Rancheria or fishing of Pearles in the small Hand of Cubagua, we found the Go-1 CHOMINA. uernour of Cumana, there with a company of Souldiers : neuertheleffe we made bold to land, and in our landing we received a great fight wherein divers of our men on both fides were wounded; p. iconers (2) k mand ranfo- but in the end I tooke the place with divers of the floutest of our Enemies Prisoners, and thirteene Periaguaes and Canoes, which are Barkes and Boats of the Countrey : for ranfome of all which I received five hundred pounds in Pearle. This done I proceeded on my journey, byling directly for Cape dela Vela, and there meeting with a Portugal shippe of two hundred and hisie tuns laden with three hundred and feuentie Negros, brought from Congo or Angola, and going to Cantagena with little reliffance I rooke the fame. And fayling along with my prize Weft- 30 ward, not able to double the Iles, called Las Cabecas; I was driven farre downe to the Southward into the Gulfe of Acle, in Spanish called Enfenada de Acle, where we landed all our Portugals and Necres, kiering only the Captaine which afterward paid the fine hundred pounds for his owne and their rantomes. Within a while after we flood Westward with our shippes, and went into the Hes called the Cabecas, where I embarked an hundred and fiftie of my men in two small Pine They take fixe maffes and two fine shallops, and went for the Iles de Bastimentos, and landing there voon the faid or fram people Hands which are peopled and very fruitfull, I tooke fixe or feuen Negroes for guides, and to prefently with our Pinnaffes and Boates entred the mouthof the River of Porto bello, the feventh of

At our full entrance into the Hauen, which is about twelve fcore over, and very deepe at the 20

mouth and farte voward, we were halled by the flrong and stately Castle of Saint Philip, having

houre afterwards with my two shallops which lav close by my Pinnasses, and some thirtie of my

principall men, I went up the River having fomoof the fmaller Fort, called the Fort of Saint

Tago, which is directly ouer against the great Caffle of Saint Philip, symning still on the shoare,

and crying out on me to flay; but neglecting their out-cryes, I landed at the first Towne called

Triana, where the alarme was prefently given : which nevertheleffe I fet on fire, and marched o-

Kings Treature-house, which is very faire and large, we found a squadron of souldiers (whereof

there are two hundred and fiftie alwayes belonging to the Towns and another company of the

Inhabitants) with two braffe Pieces of field Ordnance well mounted on their carriages, which

At which alarme Captaine Antonie Fugars, and Captaine George Lawriman of Ratcliffe , came

we prefently poffeffed, and fiercely fet youn the Souldiers.

uera little Brooke into the great rich Towne of Porto bello ; and comming directly vp to the po

Bafi mentes, Februarie about two of the clocke after midnight, the Moone thining very brightly. R. of Parto

The great Cas thirtie fine great pieces of Brazen Ordnance and fittle Souldiers in the fame, to know whence 91. of S. Phi- we were: wee having aboord variuch as could focalte Spanish excellent well, answered that we Eye, with 25. were of Cartagena: then they commanded with another, which we did accordingly. About one braffe, and to.

Porte belle.

up with my two Pinnades with an hundred and twentie men to my refeue, which was very hardly laid voto. At this house at our first comming into the Towne, my Lieutenant Samuel Banet was flot on the fide of his head, and through his eare, and Captaine Giles comming to fecond him, was likewife that ouer the breft and through his arme. In this meane space Pedro Melender the Gouernour of the Towne, had gathered fixtie Souldiers together, and was comming to toward a certaine bridge to encounter me, I having not then aboue eight or nine men with mee to withfland them; but God did profper our proceedings mightily. For the first two shot that went from vs, that Melendes through his Target, and went through both his armes: and the other fnot hut the Corporall of the field. Whereupon they all retired to the house, which they made good untill it was almost day. Against whom I sent Captaine Ward with some Souldiers. who entred the house, killing divers of them, and wounded Melendes in eight places more:

Governour ta- end he tooke Melendes Prifoner, and became Mafter of the house. My felfe with others went to the Kings house, wherein were many of the Souldiers, who would not come to any composition, but stoutly defended the same against Captaine Gues and 60 our Lieutenant Samuel Barnet : who in the end flue divers of them and hurt many others, taking the Kings Scringso prifoner. This fight endured for the space of sourcer five houres. The fight being ended, and we being Matters of the Kings Treasure-house and all the Towne, and haming the Gouernour Melendes, and the Serimono with many others of the chiefelt my Prifoners,

himfelfe being foot through both his thighes in entring, and some of his men hurt : but in the

except the Alcalde which fled out of the Towns with a chaine of Gold about his necke. Such Treasure as was found in the Kings house to the value of some nine or ten thousand Dackers. I referred to my felfe, which was nothing to that which wee did expect (that being the receite at one time of the yeere of all the Treasure that commeth from Pers and Chile, amounting at least to fine or fixe Millions of Duckets) and had I come but feuen dayes fooner. I had taken heere an hundred and twentie thousand Duckets which were newly laden in two Frigats for Cartagena. The rest of the spoile of the Towne, which came to no small value in Money, Plate, and Merchandize, I gaue wholy to my Souldiers : which being done, I dispoted my Corpses du quard in diners places, for keeping the Towne all that day : and at the end of the streete leading toward TO Panama on the South Sea, being full of all Artificers, we made a barricado where Captaine Giles flood with another Corps du guard being divers times affaulted by the enemy! whom ftill hee valiantly repulsed and put to the worse.

Pedro Melendes the chiefe Gouernour of the Towne being my Prisoner, in regard that he had Besse for it & valiantly carried himselfe in making resistance vatill he had tenne or cleuen wounds upon him, I liberall minds did not only at length difmiffe without any peny for his ransome, but also caused my Chirurgion of Captaine very carefully to dreffe and trimme his wounds : vfing him and his, farre otherwife, then Pedro Parter. Melendes his great Vncle vied lobn Ribault, Landoniere, and the French Nation in Florida, whom they most cruelly murdered and massacred as many as they could lay any hands you.

Thus being Mafter for one whole day of the stately and new builded Towne of Porto bello Porto bello de-20 which had two goodly Churches in it fully finished, and fixe or feuen faire threets, whereof two were full of all necessarie Artificers, and of Merchants, with three small Forts on the Townes Heat timesh fides, besides the great Fort of Saint Philip on the other, when I might have speedily have con-from ting furned it all with fire. I willingly abstained from the same : knowing that though I could have the T wine of done the King of Spaine exceeding great hurt, and have vindone a number of the Inhabitants, yet Perto bello on the good that I should have done my selfe, and mine thereby should have beene very small in fire, comparition of their damage. Only certaine out houses wherein their Negros dwelt , I caused to be burned to amaze and put them in feare: I also tooke two Prigats of theirs which roade far Two Frigats vp within the River, the one of them having in her three pieces of Ordnance, the which I like- taken and wife tooke and brought away from thence with mee, with the which Ordnance we beate your brought away, 20 the enemy marching voto vs from the Wester Fort.

The day being fpent, at the beginning of the night I embarked my men , enriched with the Their deparchiefe spoile of the Towne, and fet faile to depart with my owne two Pinnaffes and two shallops ture.

and the forefail two Spanife Frigats which I had wonne: but in going out I was shot in at the elbow, and out at the wrift with a Musket shot which came from the Wester shoare, whereof there were many shot ouer vs: besides eight and twentie great shot from the chiefe and Easter Fort, which did endanger vs often. But God fo wrought for vs, that we fafely got forth agains contrarie to all our enemies expectation, who made full account to finke vs in going forth. Being fafely come forth wee rode with our Pinnaffes, and shallops behind a small lland which lay betwixt vs and the Wester most Fort of Saint Iago, untill my Vice-admirall Captaine Rawlins 40 brought two ships thither, which rode somewhat to the Eastward of the Castile of Saint Phi- Sir Fr. Draged up, under the Rocke where Sir Francis Drake his Coffin was throwne over-boord, all the while burially

that we were busied in gaining, sacking, and possessing the Towne. Our whole seet beeing affembled together in the place aforefaid , I fet the Kings Serimane , and the rest of my prisoners on fhore, suffering them to depart without paying any kind of ransome. And the next day being the ninth of February, I fet faile and stood off to Sea, leaving the

goodly Hauen and beautiful Towne of Porto bello, which standeth in ten degrees of Northerly latitude : and directed my course backe againe toward Cartagena, and about twelue leagues to the Eastward thereof, I came into a good Bay called Sambo, where I watered and flaied some twelue or thirteene daies, and riding there tooke certaine Frigats which were bound for Cartage-

50 na. Whereupon the Gouernour Don Pedro de Coronna, armed out two Gallies and a Brigandine. Sambe. with some two or three Frigats, with a purpose to assault vs; but beeing better aduited they would neuer come neere vs. When he heard that I had taken Porto bello, one of the chiefest places of the West Indies, with so small forces, he pulled his beard, and sware that he would give his Mules la le of filuer, but to have a fight of mee and my companie. From this Bay of Sambs wee Virtus in hofe stood over for the Hand of Jamaica, and so doubled the Cape of Saint Antonio, beeing the most laudanda, Westerly part of Cuba, and disimboked through the Gulfe of Bahama, the last of March 1602and came with good weather to the Iles of the Acores, where victualling my Vice-admirall and two Pinnasses out of mine owne ship for two moneths, and leaving them at Sea to take some far-

ther purchase, with mine owne ship I tooke my course for "limmouth, and arrived there in safetie 60 the fixt of May 1602.

CHAP.

Beinsra.

Aruba.

Brackes.

Cape S. And

Organes.

Cuba

Seven men



He five and twentieth day of May, weefet faile from the Loward, and the tenth day of June we fell with the Grand Canarie : the Towne standeth on the Northeast point of the Iland, and the Road is one league to the Northward of it. To That night we flood of South South-well. And the five and twentieth day of June we were in the latitude of twentie two degrees thirtie minutes.

The fixe and twentieth day of June wee came in companie of feuen faile of Punta delaraga. Hollanders, that were bound for the West Indies, to Punta delaraga to lode Salt, and the seven

and twentieth day we loft fight of them. The second day of Julie we fell with Saint Pincent. When you came from Saint Vincent to the S. Vincents. Teftogos, you must make the way South-west by West, or else you shall not fetch it, for the Cur-

rent lets North and by West from them. Being to leeward from Caracus, two leagues we flood ouer North North-weff, the wind being at East North-east, we fell twelve leagues to the Eastward of Bomara, being the twelfth of Talle. If you frand our from Bosnara to Opralao, minded to coe to the South ward of the Hand. you must stand South and by West, or else you cannot get about, because there is a Current that

iers North-weit, and may fet you voon the Hand. The three and twentieth day of Julie wee anchored to the Westward of Qurasao, and there the Land lies North and South.

The nine and twentieth of Julie we landed upon Aruba, for to get fresh water, and there we had feuen men flaine by the Indians of the Hand : and we rid with our flip in flue fathomes water, halfe a mile from the shoare. One point of the Land bare North, the other South-rast and by South, and there is an high Hill in the mid-le of the Hand, and that bare Eaft and by South. Betwixt Coque and the Maine the courle is East and West.

The shoale of Puntall lieth two leagues off: the best of the Channell betwixt that Point, and Coase is in eight, nine and ten fathomes. From Braches to the Parretaes is fine leagues courfe West and by South.

From the Parretaes to Gape Caldera is twentie fine leagues course North-west and by West. Cape Caldera. and betwire the Parretaes and the Maine, you shall have foure, five, fix and seven fathoms water.

The Road of Morecapana lieth betwixt the Maine and Boracheo, within the Ilands. The eight day of August we set faile from Araba, and we stood over South for the Maine, the wind being at East and by South, wee fell with Mecola, being nine leagues from Aruba. Saint Ann is an high Hill voon the Maine neere voto Mecola.

The feuen and twentieth day of August we came to anchor at Portete, that is to the Eastward 40 of Cape La mela, foure leagues. The Cape bare Well a little to the Southwards, at the going to Portete. And on your Larboard fide going into Portete, there is a round Hill : being in the offing it sheweth verie blacke. The going into this Harbour is verie narrow, but within it is a verie broad Sound, and two thousand faile of thips may ride there in werie good ground, and you may ride from five fathomes to twentie, but wee ridde in three, a little within the point, on our Larboord fide going in.

The eighteenth of lanuary wee parted from our Man of Warre at Cape Saint Anthony, and fet faile for England, in a Prize, a thip of fome one hundred and fortie tunnes, laden with Campeche Wood and Hides, the Master of the Prize, was William Goobreath : and from Cape Saint Anthony we it ood off North-west and by North.

The nine and twentieth day at noone, we had fight of the Westermost Land of the Organes, being East South-east from vs, and then we stood North-east, and the twentieth day we were in latitude 23. degrees 15. minutes, the winde being at East North-east, we stood off North, and from the twentieth day to the one and twentieth day wee made our way West and by North, and this day we were in latitude 23, degrees 20, minutes, then we flood to the Entiward.

The two and twentieth day, we were North-weil and by North, from the Crowne in Cuba. fourteene leagues, then we flood to the North-ward; thefe fourteene leagues we surned up and downe with the winde Easterly. The three and twentieth day, wee were in la itude of 24. degrees no minutes, the wind being at East North-east, and we lay North with the stemme, and this night we came in twelve fathomes, being then in latitude of 24. degrees 25. minutes, the 60 winde being at East and by South we stood to the Southward. The fine and twent eth day, wee fell with Cober twelue leagues to the Eastward of the Hanana, and this day about foure of the clocke in the afternoone, we had the Pam of the Matangas South-east, and by South from vs fome fixe leagues, the winde being at East, and we stood North North-east three Watches, and

CHAP. II. Martyrs. Florida, Silley. Guianos Rivers and Ilands described. 1247

brought the Pan upon the Matanzas South of vs : the winds being at East North-raft, we stood to the Northward, for io we made the thips way. The feuen and twentieth day at foure of the clocke in the afternoone, wee fell with the South-east part of the Martyrs: then wee stood off Martyrs. South-east and by South three watches with a low faile, and so cast about, and stood North-east and by North three watches, and then oblerued, and found the ship to bee in the latitude of 24. degrees and 55, minuts, being then South-west and by South of the Cape of Florida about three Cape of Florida leagues: the winde being at South-east and by East, we stood off South and by West three wat- da. ches, and then cast about, and stood North-east two watches, and then observed, and found the thip to be in 25, degrees 36, minutes being the nine and twentieth day of Ianuarie, 1502, and to then two watches North and by East, and foure North North-east; and the thirtieth day at moone wee had the Cape Cananaral West and by North from vs fixe and twentie leagues : by Supposition being now in latitude 28, degrees 14, minutes, the winde being at South, wee flood North-east and by East into the Sea. The eighteenth day of March at noone (being Thursday) weefell with Silley, and wee were South from it three leagues or ten miles , the Silley. winde being at West South, west, wee stood for the Lizzard, and the twentieth day of this moneth we came to winde being at anchor in Dartmonth , this was my first voyage which I have to the West Indies.

CHAP. XI.

The description of the He of Trinidad, the rich Countrie of Guiana, and the mightie River of Orenoco, written by FRANCIS SPARREY left there by Sir WALTER RALEIGH, 1595. and in the end taken by the Spaniards and fent prisoner into Spaine, and after long captivitie got into England by great (ute. 1 6 0 2.

The description of the He of Trinidad.

Orte la Spaniele lyeth North-east. The Spaniarde name themselues Conquerabians. Anaparima is the name of the River, which goeth to Corona the Spanish Towne. The North part is very mountainous. The Indians of Trinidad have foure names. 1. Those of Parice are called laiss. 2. Those of Punts, Carao Arugeas. 2. Those of Curiadan are called Saluages. 4. Those betweene Punta Carae, and Punta de la Galera, Nepoios. But those which are servants to the Spaniards, name them-

felues Carinapagetes. The chiefest of the Indians, I meane the Kingsand Lords of the Handsin times pait, named themiclus Acaremana, but now Captaines,

The description of Guiana, and of the oreat River Orenoco.

Wiene beareth directly East from Pers, and lyeth almost under the Equinociall Line. The The River of Tentrance to the River Orenece through the River Capari at the mouth at a full Sea hath nine Capari foot water, and at the ebbe but fine foot, The water floweth but a small time, but increafeth much; and the ebbe goeth but flowly; for it continueth fixe houres. In the bottome of the Gulfe of Guanipa there is the River of Amana, which leadeth into Orenece alfo. In this The Gulfe of River , which wee named the River of the Red Croffe , wee tooke an old Timitinan for our Pilot Guenipa to Orenoco.

The River of Orenoco or Barequan hath nine mouthes, which lys on the North-fide of the Amana. mayne land : but I could heare but of feuen mouthes you the South-fide. So that betweene Ilands and broken Lands it hath some fixteene mouthes in all. The Hands are somewhat bigge, so as I can hardly ghesse how many leagues it is from the North-side to the South-side. At the entrance of this River are two great Lords Tinitimans, which hold warre one with the other con- Timitimans tinually : The one Nation are called the Tinitinans of Pallamos , and the other of Hororotomaca. He that entreth the River of Amana from Curispan, cannot possibly returne the same way hee came, by reason of the Easterly windes and the great Currents, but must of force goe in a River within the Land, which is called Macuro.

To goe from the He of Trinidad to the great River Orenoco the River of Amana beareth Macurial 60 South : But parting from that River by a branch which beareth to the West we entred Orenoce. Togatimate a Toparimaca is the chiefe Gouernour vider Topiawari, of the entrance of the Eastermost part of Amacan, the River Orenoco. The Towne of this Governour is called Armacan. Thele are friends to the carapana lyeth Carapanans, Tourimans, and all Nations, the Caribes excepted. Carapana byeth in the Province in the Proof Emeria : and the Eastermost part of Dorade is called Emeria.

nince of Exec A [4. 712

Cabej.

efferma Hand. Inun Iland. arrargetane. Furnisa River. Mercasito. Arromaia. Patanaima Ibook Owe a The Playnes n' Samte. Cumana. droam; Pand.

dialland. Maneribane. A omain. Th River Caroni. Cafs:pagotos. Mor. canilo. 4 4 ma Hand Pouremi. Great Fall. Ca invi. Store of gold

among the E. parenians. Cafigago: 05. E .. r 0 05. Armea olos. Store of gold beyond the Mountaines of Curas. Store of gold. River Arui. Riuer Cafripe. River Atoica. River Carra. River Calmero. Amapaia. ri. Limo Paco. Catari, Voari, The Prouince

Bad water. Guicat GMX41. Pasemens The land of Amazones. The Iland A. River Vbra. Eregoodawe, Oromona. Tapiamary. Riuer Sabna.

of Amapaia.

Papemena a great River.

Athal, a moft fweet & plea-Cant Hand

Affapana is the first Hand in Orenoco: it is but small. The second Hand is called Iwana, There is another entrance into Orenoce, which I discovered not : but the Indian's name it Arrarograma Europa is a River which commeth into Orenece; but the head of it I know not. In the middeft of Orenose there is a pretie bigge Hand, which is somewhat mountainous; and the name of it is Ocamit Aland, Ocamita, One Putima commandeth under Topiamari, in the Confines of Morrequite, which lyeth in the Province of Arromaia. The Iland of Patapama is farre up within the River of Orenoco, and frandeth right against the high Mountaine, called Occope. Ouer this Mountaine lye the Playnes of Samia. Through these Playnes you may goe to Cumana, or to the Caracae: which are at least one hundred and twentie leagues iuft North. In these Playnes are four. Nations, which are held tor great men. The Samias, the Affamais, the Wateries, and the Arroras, 10 Thete Nations are fomething blacke.

On the left fide of this Ruer Orenoce are two small Hands, a small distance the one from the other. The one is called Arouni, the other Aio. In the morning before the Sunne bee high the winde is still Easterly in this place, Manoripano lyeth in the middle of Orenoco. Aromaio is the name of Morrequite. Orenece reacheth to the Mountaines of Wacarimoc , which is to the East in the Prounce of Emeria, or Carapana. The Vallies are called Amariocapana, and the people by that name alfo. Vpon this River Orenoco there is a pleasant River for many kindes of victuals, which is called Caroli, and the people Caffipagotos.

This Countrie of Morrequite lyeth in some five or fixe degrees to the North of the Equinoctiall Line. At the Point of the River Caroli is the small Hand called Catama. The 20 Inhabitants of this Iland Caiama are enemies to the Epuremi. Here is a very great fall of Land water. Canuri lyeth in the Province of Morrequito. The Governour is called

The Epuremians are richest in gold onely. These people called Epuremi have many enemies, but three especially which are very strong : which are their; the Cassing Eparagotos, and Arawagotos. Hee that will paffe the Mountaines of Curas shall finde itore of gold: which is faire to the Weff.

The River Armi runneth continually North, and so to the River Cassing, and from thence into Orenoco: neere vnto the River Arm are two Rivers , the one is called Atoica , the other Caera: and also one branch which is called Caera. To the Westward of Carais is a fourth Ri- 30 uer, which is called Cafnero: it falleth into Orenoco on the fide of Amania.

The first River that falleth into Orenoso from the North, is called Care. Beyond it on the fame fide is the River Lime : to the West of it is the River Pase : and beyond that are the Riuers Caturi, and Voari; and another called Capuri, which is dangerous to enter. To the Westward of Capars in the Proxince of Amapaia, is most vile, vnwholfome, and bad water The Rivers Ca- to drinke; it is of a bad tawnie colour; it hath killed many a man, both ladiens and others. They fay this water commeth from Anches.

On the North part of Pern is a way to enter into Orenoce, as I have heard by the Indians. The first place whereby they are to paste, is called Gnicar: the second Goanar; and so to the River of Papemena; which is the River that runneth toward the Iland of the Amazones. Neere 40 vnto the Iland of the Amazones is the famous Iland of Atbul.

The Ruer Ubra, bearing to the West of Carthagena, beareth to the Southward of the Iland of the Amazones. This River Vbra, if you fland to the South-well, leadeth to a part of Aromain), which is called Eregoodane. This Countrie of Eregoodane is very Mountainous, and nothing frontfull : it is inhabited by the Coman Ibes. They have Ginny wheat but no flore, and very little Cassaui : Venison, Hogs, and Conies they have in great abundance, The King or chiefe Governour of this Province or part of Aromayo, which is called Eregoodawe, is one which beareth great fway in those parts, whose name is Oromona. But all are chiefly commanded by Tapuamay King of Morrequito.

In mine undertaking the discouerie of the North part of Oreneco, I was aduertised by cer- 50 taine Indian Pilots, that I should finde a perfect and readie way to goe to Pers. In which my travell, I fell, by reason of a great storme, into a River, which is called by the Indians Salma. This River is not great; in three dayes I paffed through this River, and entred into the River of Papamena. This River of Papamena is more in my judgement then five or fixe Leagues

North North-west of this River is the Iland of the Amazones. But leaving that course, I came to the most sweete, pleafant, and temperate Iland which is called Athal. If I had had companie to my liking. I could have found in mine heart to have flayed there and frent my life. Athal is not rich in mettals ; but fome stones I found in the fresh-water Rivers : for there are great flore of fresh-water Rivers; and no want neither of Fish, Tortoyles (which the Indians 60 name Catfepames) Foules, nor other good things. It hath Wood great ftore, Fruites all the yeere in abundance, many good places to make a Towne if you will, Cotton, and Ballamum. Brafill, Lignum vitz, Cypreffes, and many other sweete trees. The earth of this Iland doth promise to the eye to be good, it is very sad, and much like to Oare, which I found in divers plaCHAP.II. Curaa and Camalaha commodities. Orenoco, Europa, Habito.

ces. I cannot report of the goodnesse of the stones, because my knowledge in them is nothing. Athal is not inhabited by any. The Iland is small, and for feare of the Caribes , there is no body.

I returned from this good Iland Athal toward the River of Orenoco, because I found my la- He returned hour was loft : For to finde the way to Peru that way was impossible. And to make my jour- from Aibal. nev the shorter. I returned by the River Papemena, but left the River of Salma cleane, and Papemena, came my directeft way to Orenoco: which mine Indian Pilots held to bee through the River of Lime : and fo I came into the River of Orenoco. Then I went from Orenoco, and held my course Lime. altowether Westerly : because I found the West most rich ; although it was most dangerous to Orenoce,

10 trauaile thither, I meane farre into the Countrie, by reason of the Epuremi, which live continually in armes, and hold warres against many Nations, but against three Nations especially. These are, as I wrote before, the Cassipagotos, the Eparigotos, and the Arawagotos, My defire was to goe to Curaa; and from Orenoce I first entred into the River of Cofnere, and fo cofnere River. coasted to Amapaia, where is the bad tawnie water, which before I mentioned : from thence Amapaia, I went to the River Page; and within fixe weekes after I departed out of the River of Orenoco Page River. I came to the rich Countrie of Curas.

The Countrie of Curaa is in the Province of Guiana, or Manoa, where are the mynes of tric of curaa white stone; in which mynes is much naturall and fine gold, which the Indians call Callierry. htt weekes tra-The gold in this place, I say in Manoa, or Guiana, runneth betweene the stones like veines; nece. 20 of which gold I had some ftore : but now the Spaniard is the better for it. In Caras is also gold Manas in small graines, which lye in the lands in the little Rivers or Brookes. I alwayes tooke those Gold in abun-

in Imali graines, winten ye in the lands in the first state of the finest gold. In these Rivers where gold lyeth, are many Aliganos or Crocodiles. Gold in grains I heard by the Nation of the Timitinans, that a place called Tulabe, had many good things in it: found in Ribut I found it nothing fo. Some bad fresh-water pearles I found there : which were nothing ness. round, Orient, nor very great. I brought of them with me to the Spaniards; and they faid they Crocodiles in were no Pearles, but Topasses.

Camalaha is a place where they fell Women at certaine times, in the mannet of a Faire. And there you shall buy colours, such as the Saluages paint themselves with. In this Faire, go which is called Camalaha, which is to the South of Orenoco, I bought eight young Wo- Tulebe. 30 men, the eldelt whereof I thinke neuer law eighteene yeeres, for one red-hafted knife Badpearles. which in England cost mee one halfe-peny. I gaue these Women away to certaine Saluages Topastes. which were my friends, at the request of Wariane the Kings Daughter of Murrequite.

Ter or Turos is an Iland, which is to the South South-west of Orenoco. To which place I and yet no fair went, because they said there was neuer any that inhabited in this Bland, but that it was in woman, the manner of a bayting place for the Caribes, when they had stollen people, which they Eight women meant to eate. One Captaine Caramaton was my guide to this place : whither we went some for a halfe-pewhat ftrong, with intent, if wee could finde any Caribes on this Iland, to kill them; but Ter or Tave, wee found none. Many houses wee found there couered with straw, which wee set on fire, an Iland, And there I found close by the water fide, going about the Iland, which was but small, many 40 Stones of divers colours.

To the West of this River and Iland, which is called Tar or Taros, is a River, which is called Habue: There are about this River in most places eight, ten, seventeene, and thirtie Habue a River, fathomes water. This River of Habne commeth from the Sea. The entrance of this River at the mouth is barred; but at a full Sea you shall have fourteene and fifteene foot water; but in the Channell in which the Canoas enter, which is but narrow; there is more then fixe fathoms : but I doubt that ships cannot enter there. This River Habue is the best and furest har- Habue scarce bour that I could finde for our ships, and freest from the danger of the enemie; and is not full eight dayes eight dayes iourney from Orenece.

The River Europa lyeth to the East of Orenoco as you come from Trinidad : you may, as I Europa River, so certainly know, going fome twentie leagues in the River of great Amana, discouer the great and high Mountaine which is called Occopa: being there you shall plainly see the Playnes or Occopa Moun-Downes of Samia; through which Playnes you may fafely march ouer the Land within ten or taine. twelve leagues of Camana, or to the Caracas.

From Orenoce alfo it is very easie to goe to the Towne of Santo Domingo, which beareth Santo Domingo. North North-west directly: but you must passe of force the River Amapaia, leaving the Iland Amagaia River. called Amazones South and beare your course as neere as you can North-west, or North North - Amazones Iwest. By this course you shall passeand escape the force and danger of the Towne, and land some land. fixe dayes journey from Santo Domingo.

The River Winnershi is to the North of Orenece. To goe into this River, which is little worth, Winnershi River. 60 you may goe in the Land till you come to another small River, which is called Maccab: dire- Maccab River. Ching your course South, you shall within two dayes, if your Canoa bee good, enter the Ri- West, are Canabasea. uer of Wannuls. The Land taketh the name of the River. The Governours name is Worigar Wor - Guiand on rok Halaba. Carrabonca is in the firme Land of the great Hand, called Murrequito : it is the Maria, common trade to goe to the rich Guiana or Manoa.

Drano is a faire River, but it is dangerous to goe farre in it, by reason it lyeth due South-eastfrom Orenoco : and the Southermolt part of the Moores of Anebas is very low, so that the tanie waters iffue in great abundance into this River of Drano. The danger for entring this River is nothing, but the doubt is onely of the bad water, and most terrible dewes which fall from the Moores, which are vnhealthfull, and kill the Indians daily; for that continually when they tra-Vahealthiull

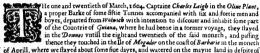
uell they lie in the open aire. The Eastermost part of Dorado is called Emeria, There is a small River, which lyeth farre East in Emeria, and beareth North North-west. Through this River called Capurifol is a fure, a perfect, and most fafe way to goe to Pers : but the journey will aske eight or ten weekes to finish it. Through their Rivers of force wee must palle with Canoas or Ship-boats, or such like : 10 for there is alway very little water.

Capacifol River. The River of Capacifol lyeth in eight degrees and two terces to the North of the Equinochiall

Line. But the North starre keepeth his degree and altitude 11. degrees and two terces. In this River is full a fine small brise of winde, which lightly bloweth at West : but at noone you shall hardly finde any winde.

CHAP. XII.

Captaine CHARLES LEIGH bis voyage to Guiana and plantation there ..



He one and twentieth of March, 1604. Captaine Charles Leigh in the Oline Plant. a proper Barke of some fiftie Tunnes accompanied with fix and fortie men and boyes, departed from Walwich with intention to discouer and inhabit some part of the Countrie of Guiana, where he had beene in a tormer voyage, they flaved in the Downes vntill the eight and twentieth of the faid moneth, and paffine thence they touched in the Ile of Mogador on the coast of Barbarie in the moneth

the rebell Moores, which would have had money for our watering. Thence with prosperous 20 winde coasting the Iles of Cape Verde, we passed over to the West Indies, and vpon the tenth of May comming in change of water, which shewed thicke and white, by the next day we were in fresh water, and the next day following about fine in the morning wee faw two Ilands in the River of Ams. mouth of the River of Amazones, making account that we were fortie leagues up the River, and came to an anchor in three fathoms vnder them, which wee found low land coursed with high Trees. Then the Captaine with some eight of the best men of the ship went toward the shoare, and finding many Indians comming toward them they returned aboard, and found the ship almost aground, but founding the Bay brought their ship into the Channell which they found very narrow.

Within awhile after foure Indians in a small Canoa shewed themselves vnto vs, to whom we 40 fent our Boat with fome of our commodities, as Hatchets, Kniues, Glaffes, Beades, they had nothing but Maiz and small blue-headed Parrots, for which we gaue them some of our triffles. Not long after another Canoa comming out, our Boat clapt betweene them and the shoare to take fome of them, to learne the flate of the River by them, but they freed themselves all saue one youth, which was brought aboard, which next day after escaped leaping into the Sea twelue leagues as we judged from land. Thus we tooke our leave of the River of Amazones, and having vicertaine shoaldings all the way in our way, about ten a clocke in the night wee strooke upon a fand before we could let fall our anchor, where wee beat off a piece of our false keele, before wee could get off. Being gotten off, wee came to an anchor in foure fathom and a halfe water. and rode there vntill the next morning, where wee descryed the land fixe leagues from vs with eq the entrance of a River:

The Falls.

River Wishers. The two and twentieth of May, wee arrived in the River of Wishers, in the latitude of three degrees and a halfe to the North of the Line, where wee found the people readie to give ve the beil entertainment they could, bringing vs Hony, Pines, Plantons, Potatoes, Caffaui (whereof they make their bread and wine) Fish of many forts, Hennes, Conies, Hogs, and such like. This day he tooke an oath of all his people to be true to him as long as he abode in the Countrie. Then after divers conferences with the chiefe Indians, and namely with two of their Countrie, which had beene before in England, and could speake some English, he found them very willing to have him and his people abide in their Countrie : who pretending want of many necessaries, whereof indeed he stood in need, and especially of victuals, hee went up the River in his Boat with some 62 fourteene men to take perfect view of a fit place to inhabit in , and to found the depth of the River as they went. At his returne he caused his ship to be brought up hard unto the falls of the River: but after they had stayed there one day, finding fundrie inconveniences, they came backe againe to their first road; with a determination to plant and feate themselves your the first

Mount or high ground, at the entrance of the North fide of the River. But the Ingosand Saparos freing him and his company come downe the River againe, entreated him earnestly to flavamong them, offering him their owne dwelling Houses and Gardens alreadie planted to their hands, whereof he accepted: to wit, of two Houses and of as many Gardens as they thought convenient to ferue his turne, with condition that he should ayde and defend them spainst their enemies the Caribes and others. Hereupon they made a great Feast, deliring our Captaine to bee at it, and they demand of their generalitie of the flaving of our men in the Country or no. Whereunto they gaue their free confent, and defired him withall to fend into England, for men They defired to teach them to pray. This done, the next day he brought all his furniture on fhoare, and be-learne religion

to stowed it in the aforesaid houses. And for the better assurance of the performance of the Salwages promife, he demanded pledges of them to be fent into England : whereunto they willingly condescended : which where in number fine, whereof two were of good account. Hee retayned thirtie five Englishmen and Boyes with him, fending the rest home in June, with the five Salmages which were plentifully furnished with their Country victuals, with Letters to the right Worshipfull Sir Olane Leigh his brother, of his successe and defire to supply his wants, which he most

kindly twice supplied to his great charge, within shore time after. The Caribes in eight warlike Canowes came to jurprize them as farre as the Mount Comaribo: Caribes.

whereof the Indians being advertised by our fishers, defired Captaine Leigh to aide them; which he did with fome foure and twentie of his men in eight Canowes. But the battell being begun 20 after they had heard the found of our Trumpet and Musket, they fled to Sea-ward, our Canowes chafing them: but the enemy being iwifter elcaped with casting of one of their Canowes which are able to carry twentie men and victuals for ten dayes, which Canowe they brought home.

Within a fennight after our Captaines returne, hee made a Voyage in an Indian Canowe ha- A Canowe tauing Indians to rowe him, accompanied only with Thomas Richardon, his Refiner of Metals, and Renal John Burt his Chirurgion 90, miles by water up the River of Aracana, to a Nation Called the Manyaunas, where he traded for Tabacco and Cotton yarne, and Cotton-wooll. There he left his Chirurgian being ficke, and with his Refiner and three Indians (whereof one Willsam was his Interpretour) went vp to a Nation called Marraias the space of thirtie miles, where they paffed thorough a goodly Plaine foure milesbroad of much thonie ground, wherein they faw Deere-

20 At length meeting with the people, they were kindly entertayned and fed with fuch as they had; as dried Tygres flesh, dried Hogges flesh, and small fish. Then after some discourie, they enquired for Gold flewing a Ring. An old man fpake vnto him and pointed vp into the Countrey, and the Captaine asking the Interpreter what he faid, he told him that he faid there was no fuch that way. The Captaine perceiuing the falshood of his Interpretor would goe no further, and so returned home, where he found vs for the most part sicke, and the Indians not so kind vnto vs as they had promifed: which he much maruelled and grieued at.

Within three dayes after his returne, his shipwright Richard Haward died before hee could make an end of his shallop. And in September our Captains himselfe began to droope, partly of griefe to fee the weake efface of his people, and the ill performance of the Indians promifes: yet 40 neuerthelesse he ceased not to take order for the Indians bringing in of victuals and such Mer-

chandize as could be gotten, as Waxe, fine white long Feathers, Flaxe, Tabacco, Parrots, Mon- The Commo keyes, greene and blacke, Cotton-yarne and Cotton-wooll, iweet Gummes, red Pepper, Vra- dities of the po, and Apriepo woods, Spleene stones, matiate stones, Roots and Berries, which we thought to Countrey, be medicinable, Anato a Betrie or God, fuch as the Indians paint themselves red withall mingled with Oyle, Vrapo which is the heavie wood whereof they make their Swords and Bowes, Apriego, a wood that the Frenchmen and Hollanders fetch away, a wood which they call Ayard. which they kill fift withall.

The fishers beate this wood with another piece of wood, till it shiner into flakes, which smelleth exceeding strong like Garlicke, wherewith in fundry places of the creekes going in accor-Strange

50 ding to the depth of the water, they beate it vp and down often in the Riner, which the fifth fifthing, are intoxicated, and fo diftempered with all, that they flore and tumble vpon the vpper part of the water, and then with Bats and Poles they knocke them on the heads. Their bread they make of Caffauia, a white Roble commonly a spanlong, and almost so thicke, which the women grate in an earthen panne against certaine grates of stone, and grate three or foure bufshels in a day : The inyce thereof they crush out most carefully beeing ranke poyson raw, in a hole of withe, which they hang vp vpon an hooke, and afterward with a weightie logge which they hang at the other end they iqueeze out the water into an earthen pan or piece of a Gourd, The inice and then leethe the same juice with their red Pepper whereby it becommeth holesome, and if they will haue it sweete, they will seethe it but ordinary, if they will haue it sowre, they will

60 feethe it extraordinarily, and wheit in manner of fawce, and when they be ficke they eat the fame and bread only. The women also make drinke of this Cassaus bread, which in their Language they call Arepapa, by baking of it blacke, dry, and thinne, then chewing it in their mouthes, they put it into earthen pots narrow in the bottome and broad aboue, contayning some a Firkin, iome a Kilderkin, fome a Barrell, fet in a fmall hole in the ground, with fire about them. LIIII 3

Reing well fod, they put it out into great larres of Earth with narrow neckes, and there it will wo ke a day and a night, and keepe it foure or fine dayes till it be ftale, and then gathering together an hundred and more, they give themselves to piping, dancing and drinking. They make drinke also of Callana vnchewed, which is small and ordinary in their houses. They vie also to make drinke of Potatos which they paire and sampe in a Morter being fod, then putting water

to it, drinke it. Sickn:ffe.

Before and after the fickneffe of our Captaine, many of our men fell ficke, some of Agues, some of Fluxes, some of giddinesse in their heads, whereby they would often fall downe; which grew chiefly of the excellue heate of the Sunne in the day, and of the extreame dampe of the earth. which would so moviten our Hamackas, or Cotton beds, wherein wee lay a yard from the In ground, that we were faine to imitate the Indians in making fires on both fides vinder them. And for all that we could doe, some nine of our company were dead before our ships arrivall. Besides we were mightily vexed with a kinde of Worme, which at first was like to a Flea, and would Ni per little. creepe into the feet especially, and under the nayles, and would exceedingly torment vs. the Womes, great time it was in, and more in the pulling out with a Pinne or needle, if they were few. But one of our men having his feete over-growne with them, for want of hofe and shooes, was faine to fubmit himselfe to the Indians cure, who tying one of his legges first with his feete vpward.

Trecheric of

nowred hot melted Waxe which is blacke vpon it, and letting it lye vpon it till it was throughly cold, they forcibly pulled it off; and therewithall the Wormes came out flicking in the fame. feuen or eight hundred in number. This man was named John Nettleton a Dier of London, which 20 atterwar d was drowned. In themiddelt of all these extremities our Captaines Interpretor which hee had threatned for

his falle demeanour in his Voyage to the Marraies before mentioned, gaue counfell to his Mafter named Anaccauri, an ancient Captaine among them, to make a motion among the Indians at their next meeting to fay, it is the best way for vs now to make an end of them while they are sicke either by starting or otherwise. For when the ship commeth, hee will kill vs for keeping him without victuals now. This motion being made at their meeting, which was in Carifana his house, and among his and Martins kinred, (which then remayned pledges for our mens fafetie in England) their wives hearing the Interpretors Master Anaccaurs broaching this matter ranne furiously whom him and tare his clothes such as hee wore from him, and mightily beate him, the 30 other of their kindred, keeping those Indians off from the women, which would have taken

Some of our owne men lying at the next house where this was done, inquired of an Indian which ewed this Anaccauria grudge, what the cause was of the said tumult : who imparted the whole truth vnto them. Our men comming fuddenly to the Captaine, acquainted him with the whole matter : who fuddenly bethought himselte and sent for all his men that were neere him; and for Eperiago and Pluainma an Indian that had beene in England: which were two of the chiefest, and caused him to fend for his trayterous Interpretor, which came bringing Hens. drinke and bread: Affoone as he came, shewing what hee had heard, requiring them to declare what wrong he had done them. Who answered, none. Then said he, this fellow, meaning the 40 Interpretor hath fought my life; and therewith commanded his men to bind him hand and foot, which done, he dismissed them, desiring them to returne the next morning. In the meane time he caused his Prisoner to fend for a Canowe to fetch three of his men. which were vp in the Riuer, who immediately did fo. Now having all his men together, hee caused them to have all their Furniture readie : appointing one William Blake to feethe fame diligently fulfilled . the watch carefully to be kept in the night, and two to ward at the doores all day with their Furniture, to take the Indians weapons out of their hands at their comming in at the doore.

This being ordayned, the Indians came the next day, to whome the Captaine faid. In regard that I have been elo carefull to punish the wrongs done ynto you, I would have you readie to renenge the wrongs done vnto mee, who feemed very vn willing to doe any farther luftice, effee- 50 ming his binding a sufficient punishment. At the which the Captaine beeing very much vexed. commanded the two foresaid Indian Captaines to depart, charging them to fend him in fish and other victuals for his company. In the meane time he and the chiefe of his men confulting what course to take with the Malefactor, they thought it best that hee should lye so bound untill the next day being the third of his bondage, and to fend for the chiefe of the Indians, and your confession of his fault, and craving pardon thereof, to be dismissed before them.

> Captaine Charles Leighs Letter to Sir Olane Leigh his Brother.

Oil louing Brother, I did write unto you from Muggador, where I gazed until the ninementh of Aprill, and on the fourteenth of May I had first fight of Guiana, in the mouth of the River A- mazones. The two and twentieth, I arrived (prayfed be God) in safetie in the River Caroleigh, heretofore called Wyapoco, and the same day, I tooke possession of the Country in sight of the Indianis. The Indians which doe inhabit this River are about one thousand five hundred men, women, and children and they are of three Nations, viz. Yaioas, Arwarkas, and Sapayoas, which beeing chased from other Rivers, by the Catibes have combined themselves together in this place for their better defence, and are now at deadly warres with the Caribes. After that I had stored my selfe with Bread and Roots sufficient untill the Earth with Gods promidence might yeeld me Supply, I did then fend for the chiefe Captaine of the Yavoas abourd, whom with gefts and good vsage, I easily entreated to stay abourd my this vintill such time as by his meanes I was provided with all kind of Plants, which their Gardens doe affoord , ret all this while he knew not my purpose. The day before I purposed to make my intent knowne, their came another chiefe Captaine of the Yayoas abourd to dine with me, who together with the former after Dinner defired to speake with me, whereupon I fent for an Indian who had beene in England, to bee Interpreter and tooke hem into my Cabbin. The two Captaines told a long Storie of the wrongs the Caribes had done them, how toey had driven them from their ancient dwellings in other Rivers, killed many of their friends, carried their women and children away Captines, and burt many of their men, and therencon they called one of their men to shew me how he was lately burt in three places with their Arrowes to conclude, they told me, how they purposed the next Moone to goe against the Caribes, with twentie Canoas. and carnestly entreated me if I stayed so long to goe with them to their Warres. Voon this good occasion.

CHAP.II.

I told them that I purposed to stay in the Country, seuen or eight moneths, to seeke out and make triall of Mynes. And in the meane time that I purposed to build Houses assource at the head of the River, and there to plant Gardens, that my men might have victuals of their owne labours, which done, I would build a shallop, and send twentie men in her with them to fight against the Caribes, withall this they semed wonderfull well content, and thereupon they promifed Indians to belpe mee to build and to plant, and the chiefe Captaine promised himselfe to goe up with me. The next day being the third of May, I see layle from the mouth of Caroleigh, and cast Anchor in a Bay under Mount Oliphe, where I purpoled to plant, and make my habitation : but my men discomforted with the sight of the Woode; which they were to fell, grew generally discontented, and omitted no practices to overthrow the Voyage, being suborned under hand, by my unfaithfull Sermant, the Master, his lewd conforts he brought with him, being the only publike maintayners of the mutenie. How I have beene troubled with him and his conforts, (who 20 intending footle and purchase in the West Indies) have from the beginning sought the overthrow of this

Voyage, this Bearer can certifie you at large. And undoubtedly bee made full account with his beadfrong companions at such a time to have commanded the ship at his pleasure. To conclude, amongst o-ther their practices, they so consumed the victuals which so had been mayntained versitishe earth had geelded supply as that in fixe dayer, our Potatoes which should have lasted us two monethes, were wholly hent hereupon being farre diffant from the Indians, who inhabit at the month of the River, fortie pen derappor com just sujamo from a suscession of the commence of the commence

ac them and their exemies they would be readie and willing to furnish os with victuals, upon any extremitie, to which condition they generally consented, that place being first motioned by some of them. The Stippe being resurned, they had then brought musimie to such a head, as that to my face, they stood in destance of the Voyage, and told me plainly they would not fray doe what I would or could, I orged them with their promie to plant on Mount Huntly, one of them who seemed wost forward of all men to yeeld to that motion: answered that he promised in policie, to draw me from Mount Oliphe. But in the end it plea-sed God, what by faire meanes and what by sonle, I brought them all to consent to stay one whole seere, thorow all extremities, if it were possible to make a full triall both of people and Country, and to plant upon Mount Huntley, according to their promife. This agreed upon, I went ashoare to the Indians, to provide victuals, and other necessaries for our Plantation , who being exceeding glad of my returne ; of-So fered me to choose the best of their houses and gardens, to dwell amongst them. For they were very un-

willing that I should goe to any other place, to conclude, indiging their offers by many likelihoods, to be without deceit, I resolved to abide with them upon this condition : that they should send four eprincipallindians for England as pledges, for our Safetie with them whereunto they willingly condescended, and if I would, I might have twentie. For they make daily fuite to me to goe for England. Beeing in conference with an affembly of two or three hundred, purposely met to crave my abode amongst them, and demanding of them vowes and protestations, according to the custome of all people, for the more securitie of our peace and amity: their answere was that they knew not how to make vowes and protestations, and therefore generally they defined (fundry of their Captaines speaking it together, with a low and humble voice) that I would bring them men to teach them to pray. Which motion of theirs, proceeding from themselves and in

that humble manner, strocke me I assure you into an admiration of ion, to thinke that it hath pleased Almightie God after so many dangers heretosore, and troubles in the Voyage, to preserve me to be a meanes to this simple hearted people of the knowledge of Christ. Vindoubtedly, it was the wonderfull worke of Gods Spirit in them, whereat all Christian hearts ought to relogice. And I am perswaded, the like instance hath never beene before by any people in the World : I befeech Almightie God to give a ble fed end to this hopefull beginning.

The foureteenth of June, concluding with the Indians upon fundry conditions, I purchased of them the same day for a few Hatchets, Houses and Gardens planted with Caffaua, and Potatoes sufficient for all my company ; the scituation of our Houses is in the pleasantest and most fruitfull place of all their baas my tempory.

Bit alions. And because it is a small Village of fix or senen bouses; and the first place of our seited aboade

I have named it Principium: the Hill on which it standeth being part of the Monutaine on the West. fide of the entrance of the River, I have named Mount Howard, to honour the remembrance of my Lord Admirall, of whom heretofore I have received many fanours : on the East side of the entrance of Caro Leighh, lieth the Riner Olivoleighe beretofore called Arrikowarye: and on the Welt fide of Mount Howard runneth the River lotrameleighe, by the Indians called Wanarie. The commodition ties which this Countrie doth yeelde, and through industrie will abound in, are thefe; Sugar Canes, Cot- 10 ten and fine Flaxe; also it would yeelde great store of long Pepper, if there might be vent for it in England: here is sundry forts of Gummes, of Woods, and of Dies, which I hope will proue good commodities of all which I have fent you samples by Master Huntlie, especially one fort of Gumme, which I am persuaded will prone very rich. Also I have sent unto you a peece of a Stone taken out of a Manuate or Sea Come. I am ginen to under frand that a little thereof beaten into powder, and drunke in Wine or Ale, will in few houres cure any man that is troubled with the Stone, they fay it dissolveth it instantly. I doubt not but to get a dosen of them before this time twelve moneths : my refiner bath made triall of sunarie Minerals, but cannot yet finde any Mettals. At my arrivall bere I found a Dutch Shippe, and Sithence here bath arrived another, they buye up all the Flaxe they can get, and pay so deere that I can get none; they have not gotten fo little I thinke as ten tunnes of Flaxe within thefe two moneths.

I doubt not but I shall be able to returne a Shippe laden with Flaxe and other commodities the next yeare; the Flaxe yeeldeth a wonderfull encrease, and will grow any where, but especially in low moonsh grounds: the Indians report that the Roote yieldeth increase energy moneth, and eneric yielde may be some four ounces, by this accompt an acre of ground planted with the service, and distant three soute a sunder. youl yeelde 17280.li, enerie yeare, which amounteth at fixe pence the pound to 422.li. I doubt this will not prome an swerable to sheir reports, but I verily beleene it will yeelde halfe the encrease they sheake of. the Dutch men baue reported that it is worth in Holland but fix pense the pound, but they confesse that Holland will vent 400 tunne thereof. Some of the Dutch men have reported that it is worth in Holland fixeteene pence the pound, which I rather believe, for my Weners tell me that they will warrant it to dreste exceeding well, and then it must needes be excellent fine grounds for any stuffe; for Cotten bere is 30 little, not worth the speaking of, yet the Countrie will yeelde abundance, and in sixe weekes the seede will pecied Cotten, and it beareth continually and pientifally. I pray you for fend me more Weaver, for I know not how to get any thing founne for them, for the women here are put to that extreame labour, that they baue no time to spinne, for they onely fetch water out wood to burne, and bring it bome upon their backet, they gather all their rootes and bring them out of their Gardens, they make all their Bread which is verie labour some, they dresse all the victuals, make all the drinke, attend upon the men while they are at meate, and besides, they dresse up their honses in their kinde, and nurses beir owne children: so as the ey are alwayes toiled with labour, and have little or no time to spinne. For Sugar Canesthe world doth not yeelde better foyle for their encrease, and whereas in Batharie it is fifteene or fixteene moneths before ther come to perfection, here they grow up in ten moneths. And in Bathatic they are planted onely in 40 two Vallies, where they are watered enery weeke, but here they grow upon the Mountaines, and neuer watered but with raine onely. A few yeares I doubt not will afford plentie of Sugars, if wee shall have meanes to make them. My loofe commodities, as Hatchets, Beades, Knines, Looking glaffes, &c. are almost all gone; a great part in buying of victuals, but the most part to stoppe the mouthes of my Mutinors and monstrous Sailours; to whom also I have promised two third parts of my Iron.

Now for the profecuting of this voyage, in such fort as that we be not presented brahe Spaniard nor any other Nation; I would entreate you with as much speede as possibly you can to send me a supply of one bundred men at least, to abide bere, all labouring men and Gardners, for such are the fittest here for a time, with a few Carpenters; and with them three or foure good peeces of Ordnance with shot and powder: also fiftie Caliners for the men that stay here: if you can send these men in two Shippes, I doubt not but to 50 lade one of them backe in three moneths after arrivall and the other which I wish may be the Olive plant. I would keepe here and fit her for a Frigot to keepe and command the River. I have written to my brother Iohn Leighe to deliver unto you such monies as he bath received of Gifford, who I hope hash ere this time paid his debts. I hope you shall get store of voluntarie men to ease the charge of the Voyage, and looke what you shall dishurfe in my behalfe for the accomplishment of the Voyage, I will, God willing, see you bonefly paid with advantage ; or elfe if it please you to put it in adven: ure, it shall be accomplished in any fort to your owne desire. As I doubt not of your lone and forwardnesse, especially in so good an action so also I make no question but this Countrie will in few years yeelde you sussection beyond your expectation. If my wife have not alreadie attained her fuite of the Kings Maieftie, I hope the will the fooner freede voon this newes, which if the doe, my defire is, that all shall be imployed upon these proceedings; and to that 60 effett I have written to ber. I have written a Letter to the Kings Maiestie; another to the Lords of the Counfell, and one to my Lord A imsrall.

The bearer hereof Capraine Hunthe is the worthieft young Gentleman that ever went to Sea, upon any cangerous enterprize, be was never definated, neither with extreame dangers at Sea, nor with all the Mu-

tinies aboord, which had beene able to have discouraged an old experienced Souldier; besides, I found him tinies avoora, wone and full, and loyall friend, and therefore I pray accompt him for a right honest man. I have made him my Lieftenant generall of these Countries during life, and therefore I pray let him returne chiefe commander in the first supply. I would pray you also to procure to come with him some bonest and differente men whom I might relie upon as trustie friends, and use as companions both for adult and Gocietie, for Lam now very uncomfortably matched, having no worldly strength to trust upon but my selfe onely. I have fent unto you foure Indians, principall men in their Countrie, which were delinered unto me as pledges of our safeties here, and they are to returne again the first, but I thinke some of them will be more as pleages of our fafeties over annual work was left here by Captaine Lea, is dead, I pray you pro-willing to stay longer. The English man which was left here by Captaine Lea, is dead, I pray you pro-Captaine Lea. no cure Sir Walter Rawleighes Indian or my Lord Admirals, for I want an Interpreter exceedingly, bere is but one, and he understandeth but little to any purpose. I pray forget not to send Preachers, sober and differente men, and such as are well persuaded of the Church government in England, Co. From Principium, or Mount Howard this fecond of Inly 1604.

CHAP. XIII.

A true Relation of the traiterous massacre of the most part of threescore and seven English men, fet on land out of a Ship of Sir Oliph Leagh, bound for Guiana. in Santa Lucia an Iland of the West Indie, the three and twentieth of August, written by TOHN NICOL

Ir Oliph Leagh, a worshipfull Knight of Kenn, sending a supply of good numbers of men un a Snip called the Oliph blossome to his brother Master Charles Leigh. which was planted in the Ruser of Waspoge, within three degrees and an hale Northward of the Equinoctall line in the West Indies, which departed from Wolmich the foureteenth of Aprill 1604, vader the conduct of Captaine Cataline, and Capraine Nichelas Sainte lobn Albeing defirous to fee the world, con-

30 forted my felfe with that co apany. But by contrary windes and voknowne currents of the Sea, and the viskilfulnelle of our Matter Richard Chambers, wee were put to leeward of our port, without any hope of recouring the fame in any due time; And being not victualled, as it Saint Barbudoi. feemed for about fours or fine moneths, after confulsation had, we were faine to touch first at the Santa Lucia. Ifle of Barbudos, and then at Santa Luzia in the West Indies. Where fearing to perish at Sea for Garcin. Ni. hunger before we should be able being so many abourd to reach England; Captaine Nicolas Saint eb. Saint lon John, with the rest of the passengers, which purposed to have staied with Master Charles Staint Saint Leagh at Wiopogo in Guiana, resolved to stay and take their fortune in the aforesaid fruitfull men.

Thus fixtie feuen of vs ar our owne feeking were left on shore in the aforesaid Hand of Santa Luzis the three and twentieth of August 160s, with our Swords, Muskets, and Powder, and one Falcon, and one barill of Biscuit onely for all our food. The next day our Ship departed from vs with fome difcontentment, because we had feafed upon her Boate to ferue our turnes. After our Shippe was departed from vs, we lived very peaceably, daily trading with the Indians for victuals ; which were Caffaui, Potatos, Plantans, Pinas, Popayes, Pompions, Calabaffus, Tobacco. Pappies, Mammeyes, all very pleasant to eate. Also they brought vnto vs Hens and Guls. and fome Pelicanes, Woodcocks, and Snipes: we our selues did kill with our Peeces many of them likewife. And every night we fent out fixe vpon the fands to feeke for Tortoyfes, whereof we neuer miffed night without one or two, and many times three, which was the greatest suffe. Torteiles, 50 nance we found; for they are very large and great. I have often taken out of one of them to the number of feuen hundred egges. Also the Indians had great store of Roan linnen cloathes, Serges, and other Stuffes, and Spanish wollen cloath : and iarres of Oyle which they tooke and faued as Sea with their Periagnas. For three Spanish Shippes had beene there cast away a little before our arrivall, if we had had a Pinnesse there we could have laden her with many good commodities, which they had hid in their houses in the woods. All which we could have bought for Hatchets, Kniues, Beades, Thimbles, Fishhookes, and other such trifles.

Thus for the space of five or fixe weekes wee went not much abroad; till our Captaine seeing certaine foure square Plates, which the Indians ware on the imall of their armes, asked Browne, a Gold finer, his opinion, what he thought of them ! who told him, that three parts thereof was Shew of Cold. 60 Gold. And asking the Indians where they got them, they pointed vinto an high Mountaine on the North-welt part of the Hand. This caused Captaine Nicholas Saint lobu, and lobn Rogers, who was our interpreter for the Spanish tongue, with as many of our chiefe men as could well goe in

the Boate vpon a Munday to goe thither, promiting his Brother Alexander Sainet John, Matter

Garret, and Mafter Teneb, whom he left to gouerne the restat home, to returne the next Saturday.

Indian treacheric.

The Indians for three dayes after did not come vnto vs with victuals, for they perceived when The Capraine the Boate went, and as we thinke, they were then at the flaughter of our men at the Monna tayne. Voon Thursday morning we killed two Tortoyles on the fands; where wee found a great company of the Indians gathered together, for what purpole we knew not : And left wee should suspect them of any bad intent towards vs, they willingly offered themselves to bring home our Tortovies, which they tooke into their Periaguas, and brought them to our

All that forenoone weekept good watch : for there were very many that came both by Sea and Land to the number of two or three hundred; and divers of them were very merrie with vs. drinking of Tabacco and Aquante, vntill ten of the clocke, and then they departed all faue one which was a Captaine of the He of Saint Vincent, called Augranuers, and an old man which was his Father: who promited vs, if wee would goe to their houses, that wee should have any thing that they had. For the day before I had beene at their houses with other two of my fellowes to have bought victuals: yet they would not part with any, no not for any commoditie that wee had and yet they had more flore of victuals then euer I faw them have before. But wee perceived afterwad, that it was prouided for them, that came to take their parts against vs. whom they kept fecret in the Woods. So we three ceturned, and trauelled farre into the lland. Estre gardens, and vaffed through fixe or feuen Gardens very full of Caffabe, Potatoes, and many other rootes and truits, and by the way faw many tall trees of fo huge bigneffe, that wee three could not at of hard wood, twice fathome one of them about; and they were fo hard, that wee could not cut them with our 20 Kniues, and the Barke of them was white like Ash. Then we returned to our Sconce againe.

der, Matter William Tench, my felfe, and divers others, to the number of eighteene, went with Augramers and his father, having neither Bowe nor Arrow, onely his father had a Brafill fword. They went thus meanly armed left wee should suspect them. Augramers also promised Master Hamaca beds. Alexander Saint lolm, that he should fee his wife, and we should have Hamaces, which are Indian beds of net-worke made of cotton yarne to lye in. So we trauelled along the Sands very fecurely, young Saint John going a little space before playing and jesting with the Indian Captain. till they came within fight of their houses, where in the woods they had placed an ambush of three hundred Caribes : when fuddenly Augramers tooke hold of his Rapier with the one hand 20 and of his Poniard with the other, and the old man his father with his Brafill fword ffrooke him downe to the ground. Then out of the woods came the Arrowes fo thicke about our eares, that weehad not the time to put our matches in our cocks. And many of our companie had their match to light, which gave a great encouragement vnto the enemie; infomuch that we discharged not fixe peeces against them which caused divers of our companie to file into the Sea vo to their necks, and fome along the lands as amuzed, feeing fuch a huge companie against fo small a number: vntill young Saint John reconering againe, encouraged vs to make a ftand at a point of Land which went corner wife into the Sea,

Vpon Thursday after dinner, Mafter Alexander Saint Johns , Mafter Francis Kettleby the el-

But all was in vaine : for before wee could make our peeces readie, there came another companie on the back of vs, and filled our bodies full with arrowes : and then wee betooke vs to our 40 iwords and fo runne through them : but fill they encreased out of the woods, shooting their arrowes in great abundance, not daring to come neere vs vntill they faw vs fall : and then with their great Brafill fwords they strooke out our mens braines. I my selfe being all this time running with young Saint lobe, and Mafter Kettleby, who behaued themselves most gallantly , haning at the least one hundred arrowes apiece before they fell, came at the last into the entrance of a narrow path, where fue of my fellowes were gotten before I came, and thinking to have paffed through, there was another ambush who killed them all. I onely with three arrowes in me, by running into the wood and fwimming ouer a ftanding Lake escaped home, giving them warning before they came to affault them : and vpon my comming they all came in fight vpon the Sands, whom we foone fent away by shooting off our great Peece, so they came not in three so

Voon Monday there came to the number of thirteene or fourteene hundreth both by Sea and Land, and there belet vs round, wee having nothing but our Chifts to defend vs from their arrowes : thus for the space of seuen or eight dayes we fought with them, and of nineteene men which were left of all our companie, twelue were fore wounded with their arrowes. And the first day at twelve a clocke they shot fire in their arrowes and burned our houses, thinking then to have entred in voon vs. but with our Falcon wee drove them backe with most horrible cryes. After that our houses were burned, and all our Chifts which before were our Fort, wee fortified our felues with the remnants of the stakes and thatch which we had faued from burning, setting them in the ground flopewife, couering it with fand and earth, which faued vs euer atter from

The next day after they all departed in their Periaguas. And the Lord feeing what need wee had of food, contrarie to our expectation, mooned the hearts of our very enemies to bring vs food. For when all the rest were out of fight, one returned very well prouided of victuall, and

three or four comming out of their Piragua with asmuch as they were able to carry of Cassauri, Potatoes, and Plantans, cryed vnto vs to exchange with them, first holding vp their bowes and arrowes, and after laying them on the ground againe in figne of peace. Which wee perceiuing, fent out three likewise to bargaine without weapons, with Kniues and Beades, and other trifle; which traffick being done, they departed and we returned, giving praise to God, for this miraculous feeding of vs. For we had no meanes of our felues to get any food : for they had bereft vs of our Net, with which we had wont to catch as much fish of many forts as would juffice vs for a wholeday. Thus they continued daily for the space of seuen dayes; and then our victuals began to faile againe, which caused vs to hold out a slagge of truce : which they perceiping , came 10 in peaceable manner vnto vs.

Then one Francis Brace, which could speake French, made them understand that our defire was to give them all that we had, if they would let vs have a Piragua to carry vs away. Which one Captaine Antonie willingly confented vnto (contrarie to the will of his brother Augramers, Captaine of Saint Vincent) and the next day brought it, drawing it on thoare within the comnaffe of our Fort; for which we gaue them Hatchets, Kniues, and Beades, yntill they were contented : and to please them the more, we gaue them every one a Shouell or a Spade, where with they were fully contented, and so departed. Then with all speede we went all to worke, some vpon the Saile, which we made of very good Roan-cloth, and some to make the Mast; and euery one did labour all he could to be readie against night. For Captaine Antonio, which was Cap-20 taine of Santa Lucia, told vs, that his brother Augramert would come the next day from Saint

Vincent with twelue Periaguas all laden with arrowes; whose words we alwayes found true. Thus on a thursday, the fixe and twentieth of September, at one of the clocke after midnight, having among it vs all but one Barrico of fresh water to drinke, and one small Firkin of Rice, we embarked our felues being nineteene in the whole number; not one haning skill in the Mariners art, and without Carde or Compaffe to direct vs : wee fayled by the Sunne in the day-Blind hungrid time, and by the Starres in the night, going alwayes betwix: South-weft and by Weft. The vi-voyage, Etuals that wee had were not fufficient to lerue that companie for three dayes. For wee had not aboue twentie Biscuits, three Cassaui cakes, a dosen Plantans, and some thirtie Potatoes, and some foure or fine gallons of water, and a little barrell halfe full of Rice. And as it pleased the 20 Lord he had faued it vntill this our great necessitie, for the preservation of our lives : for all our other victuall was gone in two dayes, and our water in three dayes. And then Mafter Garres gaue to every two of vs a pottage dish of his Rice twice a day, which wee washed in salt water and so eate it raw. Thus we continued at Sea seeking for Land, for the space of tendayes, where wee endured one great tempest, although to our great perill, looking alwayes when weeshould Assorme be drenched. The raine which then fell, was voto vs in the middeft of our danger a great comfort : for we faued it with great toy, and dranke it, thanking God for that good refreshing ; who

would rest them upon the side of our Boat, so that we tooke them and dryed them in the Sunne with a little gun-powder, and eate them. Our Boats brimme was fo neere the water, that eue-40 ry wave came over it, readie to linke vs, but that foure of vs continually did lade the water forth by courfes. Now, on the tenth day one Thomas Morgan dyed, not being able to live of that Thomas Hersmall allowance, and at noone we threw him ouer board. Within an houre after it pleased God gan dyeth. to glad vs (who were likewise readie to follow our fellow) with a joyfull sight of Land, vnto Land the neerest part whereof we made as fast as we could.

likewise did send the very Fowles of the aire to feed vs. For being wearie of their flight they

But the winde being calme we were benighted before we could come to it. And so wanting the light of the day, we were voon the shoare before wee were aware, and there split our Boat Boar folis to the middeft, and all our men were turned out faue my felfe, which held the helme, thinking the next wave would fet her off againe, not knowing her to be split. But the breach was so great that it turned me vnder, putting me in great danger to be grinded to pieces with her weight ly. ing voon me against the great Rocks; yet at the last wee all recourred our setues, some sitting

50 vpon the Rocks, others on the rootes of great Trees, thinking there to faue our felues vntill the morning. William Picks, and my felfe, went and haled the Boat on shoare, which was split to the very middeft, and to farre with our Swords we cut off, and put in an head in the middeft, and fastened it with our Daggers, Kniues, and Bodkins; stopping all the leakes with our shirts, and fent fine of our companie over to the mayne land; which were Miles Pet, William Picks; Francis Brace, William Kettleby, and William Butcher. They haled their Boat foure or five dayes along the shoare, crotting divers Rivers with their Boat , being sometimes pursued by Aligates or Crocodiles, and Sharkes.

God pittying their poore estate, guided them to a place, where they found a great carthen 60 larre full of wheat flower fet in a little Caue, which they boyled in the larre with fresh water, and fatisfied their hungrie appetites, with thanks vito God for the same. And within two dayes after they met with three Spaniards, with halfe a dofen Indians and Negroes, travelling Three Spanier from Caracas to Core, driving Hories and Mules laden with merchandile : who feeing their ards. weaknesse for want of victuals, valoded their Horses to feede on the grasse, while they retreshed

Miferable fa Vicot Tabacco

our hungrie men with plentie of their good cheere, and shewed themselves very courteous suffering them to ride, and went themselves on foot two or three dayes, till they came to a Towne of civil Indians, called Tocora, where they stayed to refresh them, for they were very weake. And there they let the Spaniards know in what miferable cafe they left vs in a defolate Hand : where we endured the greatest milerie, that ever men did with life. For wee continued fifteene dayes having no kinde of meat but Wilks, falt Water, and Tabacco; which did nothing at all nourish vs. yet neuerthelese it tooke away the defire of hunger, and saued vs from eating one another. In those fifteene dayes five of our companie pined to death, because they could not take Tabacco : John Parkins, Edward Greene, Thomas Stubbes, Andrew Swell, and an old man called John. By noting two or three of our men to die, we knew by those tokens when we drew neere 10 our death : which were thefe, first they would swell very bigge, and shortly afterfall to the very bones, and wanting strength to hold vp their heads, they would fall downe, and droope into their bosomes, and in twelve houres after yeeld up the Ghost,

At the fifteene dayes end, Francis Brace having more frength then the reft, guided the three

Spaniards with fixe Indians to the Iland where we were, and they brought victuals with them :

which when we had eaten had almost killed vs, by reason of the weaknesse of our stomacks, be-

ing to farre from that we could not digett it, although we fed thereof very frangly. The next

day they carried vs to the mayne land, where wee had horfes brought vs to carry vs ; and the

Fine died in

Food almost penurie. Tocors.

Co:0.

Good Flore

goods wee had they tooke all to the King of Spaines vie, and so conveyed vs to Toroya; where wee which were weake remayned fifteene dayes, and those which were frong went with the 20 three Spannards to Coro, which is some fiftie leagues from Tocoya: and at the fitteene dayes end. Kind Spiniards one of the Spaniards, whose name was Sennor Coralanal, came for vs with horses, who shewed himfelfe as carefull of vs. as if we had beene his owne Countrimen and friends and brought vs to Core to our fellowes: where we were brought before the Gouernour; and by a Flemming which could speake a little Engleh, which had beene a prisoner there sixteene yeeres, we were examined of the cause of our comming thither; who excused vs very well. For beeknew, that if we had confessed whether we were determined to goe, they would have either put vs to death, or condemned vs to the Gallies. But he told them, that we never purposed to come thither, but were by misfortune and tempeft of winde and weather driven on that Coaft, and told them of all the dangers which we had endured, which draue them into fuch great admiration, that fome faid, so verily wee were Denils and not Men : others, that we deferued to bee canonized, but that wee

were Lutherans.

All the chiefe Sennors of the Towne beeing there, every man was defirous to take one of vs. After we were decided among them, they did not vie vs like priforers, but were as carefull of vs Somily gentle- as of their owne children, not fuffering vs to want any thing necessarie for the procuring of our healths. My lot fell out to bee entertained by one whose name was Semier Francisco Lonez ; and being extreamely ficke of a Calenture, or hot Feuer, one Captaine Perofo which had married his daughter having good skill in Philicke, came daily to my Chamber, and there let me bloud, dieted me, and purged me, giving his owne Wife in charge, not to let me want any thing that was there to be had. Thus by the will of God, and their tender care over vs, wee recovered our 40 healths and firengths againe; only two dyed there, which were Thomas Fletcher, and Fulke lones a shoomaker. In Coro eleven of vs remay ned alive (being all that were left of fixtie fenen, which Two more die. were put on thore in the Hand of Santa Lazas) for the space of five moneths, every day going to one another when wee pleased: and wee rid often into the Countrey, where the Indians tooke great delight in our company. For against our comming, they would prouide all kind of delicious fruits: which were in most abundance in that Countrey, and would kill Deere and wild Hoss for Commodities vs: and would bring vs Apes, Monkeyes, Parrots, and any thing that they thought wee

The Countrey about Core doth yeeld abundance of Sugar, Honey, Ginger, and Pitch. Alfo

they have very good Wheate growing there : but the bread is for the most pare made of Maiz, 50

whereof they have great plentie, for they reape it three times in one yeere. This Maiz they do

mingle with the juyce of the Sugar-cane, which maketh an excellent kinde of bread, and it will

keepe like Bisket. Also they make their drinke of this Maiz and of Potatoes; which is very

of the Coun- delighted in.

Drinke made

fweet and firong: for the Indians will be quickly drunke with it. While we were there, a Spamiard rode to a Farme of his in the Countrey with his brother, where he had many Indians dwelling to make Tabacco. One of his chiefe Indians, which vied to be familiar with him, tooke vp The treason of a new Hatchet, which his Master had brought him, asking him what it cost, and suddenly cloue his head therewith : which his brother perceiuing ranne for his Rapier : but the Indian women had ftolne it away before; and so they killed him also with their Bowes and Arrowes, and three or foure Negroes, which feemed to refift them, and thereupon flied to the Mountaines, gathering 6: a great company vinto him, promiting them, that if they would aide him against the Epaniaras in Core, he would give them the Spaniards wives and daughters in marriage. But before they put this conspieacie in practife, Captaine Perofo by a Policie tooke him feasting among his fellowe and women, and tooke thirtie with him, and brought them all to Coro; where they were to fulfer death with great torments, to terrifie the reft. And of some they cut off the thumber and cut the linewes of their two fore-fingers, whereby they wanted the benefit of hooting.

Our enterrainment there was fuch, that we could not defire to part from them to come into our owne Countrey without offending them. For a Frigat being readie at Coro to age for Coro thagena, foure of vs made intreatie for passage, which were Philip Glaftocke, Richart Garret. William Picks, and my felfe, (lalm Nicols) for all the reft were in the Countrey upon plature, forms in one place, and some in another. And when the ship was readie to depart, they perseated the Governour not to let vs goe. For they told him that there were many thips of Holland pon the Coaft : and that if we went all in the Frigate, we would betray it vito them , caufing he Fathers of their Churches to tell vs, That if we would flay, wee should be as themselves, art they would willingly befrow both their daughters and their goods vpon vs. Yet not withflanding all their allurements, our defire was for our owne Countrey; and fo three of vs procured menes for to goe, and William Picks was flayed, by meanes his Mafter told the Gouernour, that four were to many to venter in the Frigat, Thus we departed from Core about the twentieth of A prill, leaving all those with whom wee dwelt very fortowfull for our departure : who saue vs great flore of prouision for our Voyage. They were very lath to let vs go to Carthagena, for feare we should be put into the Gallies : And the Gouernour of Coro himselfe, wrote vnto the chiefe men of Caribacens in our commendation, as to Don Pedro de Barres, who was his Sonne in Law: but it tooke small effect. By the way wee touched at Santa Marra, and watered there.

20 Within three dayes after we arrived at Carthagena, we were committed to Pritonby the Teniente, for the Gouernour was dead not three dayes before we came in. Yet we brought our Letter from Core, from one Sennor Gafper Sanchio Contador, or in our behalfe to one Sennor Antonio Cambero, who prooued a speciall good friend vnto vs. For we had not been an houre in Prifon , but hee came to vs and comforted vs , and bade vs not to feare, for wee thould not want any thing. So he went to the Toniente, and proffered three of his Negroes to fet vs at libertie, and if we made an escape, he should have those Negroes for his owne vie. (The worst of those Negroes was worth three hundred Duckets.) But hee would not, neither would he allow vs any victuals. But this Cambero fent vs euery day at moone one very good meales meate. Also there were three Englishmen, who served as Mariners in one of the King of Spainer Gallions

30 which carrie his Trealure : which after that they were at Sea were by forcible tempest driven back againe to Carthagena, in a great danger to be funk: for she had twelve foot water in her. Some escaped to Hamana, and fine of the richett ships were funke on the shoulds betwixt Caribasena and Hanana. These three Englishmen did allow vs twelve pence a day so long as wee remay ned in Priton. Euery Saturday, the Temente with his Alcaldier doe fit in judgement within the Prifon where the Teniente commanded that we should be fent to the Gallies. Then one Alcaldie, who was alwayes found to bee a fauourer of Englishmen; whole name was Sennor Francisco Lopez de Moralis, called for our Examination : which when hee had perufed, hee told him, that hee could not with Iustice commit vs. Who answered againe, Then let them remayne in Prilon vntill the Gallions come from Spaine, for the treasure.

40 Within two moneths after a Deputie Gouernour was chosen : vnto whom we framed a Petition; which was deliuered by Ichn Frendgam; whose answere was to him, that if wee could procure any Spaniards to bayle vs for our forth comming, we frould be at libertie. Which Sennor Francisco Lopez and Antonie Cambero no fooner heard, but they entred into bond of a thousand Duckets for our forth comming, And at our delivery, the Teniente told vs, that although by or der of Law, they could justly have put vs to death; yet feeing God had fo miraculously faued vs. and that we had endured fo many miferies to faue our lines, and that we came to them for fuccour and reliefe, they were content to fet vs at libertie. So Francisco Lopez brought a discharge from the Gouernour to the Iaylour for our delivery out of Prison, and brought vs all three to his owne house: where was prouided for every one of vs a severall bed : For the Countrey is so hot. 50 that we cannot lie but one in a bed. Our entertainment was very great, and all our fertices in plate, with great varietie of meates, and of all the most delicious Indian fruits : and yet he thought we neuer fared well enough, without hee fent vs one extraordinary dish or other from his owne Table. Also many Gallauts reforted to his house to play at Cards, who would be every liberall vnto vs at their winning, and would give vs fixe or feuen pieces of Eight at a time.

There we continued vntill the Gallions were readie to goe for Spane with the treasure: then * The caufe hee procured vs passage enery one in a seneral ship. * And the day before wee embarked which why Francisco was about the first of August, there came two more of our company from Coro, which were Lopez did vis Miles Per, and Richard Ferne, who were both placed with Philip Glastocke, in the shippe called visioning Saint Basthelomen, Richard Garret went in the thip called La Madre de Dios, and my felfe in the Washecaufe
Saint Cruz. Sawe were a moneth in fauling to Hause with results and norther moneth as Sir Fr. Drage 60 Sama Cruz. So we were a moneth in fayling to Hanana, where wee stayed another moneth to when he tooke trimme the ships. The Gouernour there was Don Pedro de Valder, Priloner in England 1588. Cartagena did So we lived all on shoare with eighteene pence a day for our diet, and about the end of Septem- saue all his sa-

with another thip called the Saint Vincent for want of prouition of bread,

ber departed, leauing that shippe, wherein Philip Glastocke, Miles Pet, and Richard Ferne were, there goods with another thin called the Sunt Vincent for want of provision of heard

We flot the channell of Florida, in eight dayes against the winde, and came along by the He of Bermuda, and were nine weekes in fayling betweene Hanana and the Coaft of Spaine. The tempesta and stomes which we had, were wonderfull great. Infomuch that all the fleete were differ fed, and got about two fhips did hold company together. Which put them in great feare left they (hould have met with the Hollanders; who might with three good ships have taken all their treame with small adoe for every little Carmell did put them in seare, thinking her to

Voon He fecond day of Februarie 1686. Mafter Barwicke landed fafely, thanked bee God. at Downes i Kent, and gaue me money to bring me to London.

CHAP. XIIII.

The Relation of Master I o H M WILSON of Wanfeed in Effex. one of the last ten that returned into England from Wiapoco in Guiana 1606.



Apraine Charles Leigh and his Brother Sir Olane Leigh, did furnish to Sea the good thip called the Phenix with Commodities for the Countrey of Guiana; and ne. 20 ccflares for the Voyage, with fiftie perfons to inhabit Wiapoco, of fundry Trades who directing their course towards Wispees, on the Coast of Ginera, which is Spaniards call the River of Canoas, a critical on the twentieth of May following, where he found a thip of Amsterdam, trading with the Indians. They perfwaded

the Indians, that our Nation came to inhabit among them, only to oppreffe them as the Spaniards doe in other parts of the Indies, which the Indians themselves confessed vnto Captaine Leigh notwithstanding they offered our Nation no vakindaesse, but wied them in all the kind manner they could. For they prouided whatformer our Company wanted which they could get them. In fomuch the Gentleman was like to have done right wel, if it had not happened that his Company Caufes of their had not mutined, which did partly arife because of the climate, which is much hotter then ours. 30

And for that they were enprouided of victuals or other necessaries, therefore constrained to live in such manner as the Indians themselves doe; for that they did see at their landing only Mountaynes and Hils coursed with Woods. And for that the most part of them had beene housholders in England, not accustomed vnto such a strange Countrey or Nation; nor such a diet : for which causes they were so much discontented, that they cried to their Captaine, home, home, Thus the Captaine and his whole company was discontented, and also the Master of his ship called Martin Prinz , who shipped himselfe shortly after their arrivall into the Amsterdamer, which they found there, whereupon the Captaine placed his Mate Richard Port of Weymouth, to bee Master of the Phenix, furnishing him with such victuals as the Countrey affoorded, as Caffaui for their bread, and Potatoe Roots, with fish, water, and such prouision as they had of their owne aboord, 40 appointing Edward Hunty to be their Capaine, to goe for England, who departed from Propose about the first of luly 160, by whom Captaine Leiph advertised his Brother Sir Olane Leiph. After whole arrivald its 10 Olane Leiph, he with all freed from the first of luly 160, by who captaine Leiph advertised his Brother Sir Olane Leiph, he with all freed from first det has forested with 150 of the captain the part of the six of the

Phenix to Sea. with Commodities for the Countrey and other necessaries, with thirtie men of

Deicard

fundry Trades, appointing the aforenamed Richard Pets to be Master, and Edward Huntly to bee Captaine, they departed from Woollage, one the towards Wiapoco, who arrived at their Port one the fifteenth of Ianuary following, who expected with the rest of their company aboord, to have found the Generall and his company on Land, to have beene in farre better case then they were, for that they found them for the most pare extreame lickes, and some of them dead: and presently after their arrivall three or foure men of them died, and the Generall him- 50 felfe was very weake and much changed, which partly proceeded by reason of their great want Captain Leighs of victuals, for that the Pidians could not at all times provide them that they wanted. And chiefly for that the company were perfwaded that the fhip would neuer have returned vnto them againe, which plainly appeared amongst them, for that at the arrivall of our ship, some of them which had not in three monethes time beene a stones cast from their houses, came abourd of vs. a mile and more from their houses in weake estate, which caused very much discontent among it our fresh water Souldiers aboord, and they were the more discontented, because they could not advertize them of any commodities the Country yeelded which would affoord them prefent benefit, infomuch that they wished themselves in England again. During which parley, our Generall

fore the Generall fent one Sidney Harrington vinto Captaine Huntly, M. Tederington Preacher and

Mount Howard, came not abourd of vs, for that he was at his house called Mount Howard, a mile and more vp into the Land, which food on a hil very pleafantly fituated, but according to the Country manner, by reason that their enemies should not wel find their houles nor suddenly assault them, have there fore very rough passages vnto them, inuironed all with Mountaines, Woods, and Hils. Whereto the Mafter of the ship to land their company in Possession Bay, a place which the Indians gave vnto our Generall, and therefore by him fo named.

At whose landing according, vnto the Generall his Commission, they were all sworne vnto certaine Articles, as that they should acknowledge Captaine Charles Leigh to bee their chiefe Generall of Guiana, under King James our King of Great Britaine, and that they flould not be hurtfull vnto the faid Generall his proceedings, but to ayde and affift him to their vitermost powers. Which being effected, our Generall came vnto vs, and after kinde falutations, hauing taken order for our Lodgings, for that time hee departed from vs. The Indians in like manner after their Countrey fashons kindly entertained vs , and after further conterence had 10 with our Generall, hee related at large vnto vs what had happened vnto him and his company

in their absence; that by reason of his company their discontent and sicknesse, they had not tranelled un into the mayne Land; and therfore of his owne knowledge hee could not certifie them of any other commoditie the Countrey did yeeld, then fuch as hee knew of before their departure, but the Indians had informed them , that there was up in the Mayne very rich com- Gold & filuer. modifies, as also Gold, and filter, and especially in the River of Caliane, where the Caribes in- R. Caliane, habit, who are enemies vinto our Indians of Wiapoco, and to called by them. Vpon which information our Generall thought it would have beene best to have peaceably traded with the Caribes: But our company milliked thereof, infomuch that the Generall altered his determination, and agreed to joyne with their friend Indians against the Caribes their enemies.

20 Whereof having advertized the chiefest of them, they most kindly embraced their offer prefently made eight of their Canoas in a readinesse, furnishing them with Bread and Drinke, and Victuals, which for the most part are Crabbes and Fish, with some hundred of themfelues all naked in their Canoas , whome our Generall accompanied with some eight and thirtie of our company, leaving the rest to keepe our Shippe and Houses, shipping the most part of them in a Pinnasse that was built by one named Keele whereof hee made of a Canoa, which prooued a very fitting Pinnaffe for those parts Expeditionaand Rivers. This Pinnaffe after our Generals death the Indians did breike a pieces because gainst the Cathey thought wee would have stolne away from them in her vnto the Spaniards. And the ribes, rest of our company were placed in their Canoas, all of vs furnished with our Caleeuers:

and fo wee departed on our Journey and Voyage on the fixe and twentieth of February, on

which day at night wee came to a place which wee named Mount Huntly, where wee lod- Mount Huntle ged in the Woods that night, our Generall commanding vs to keepe a good watch: which wee need not to have done, for the Indians themselves were very watchfull, and wonderfull carefull of our Caleeuers, and for to keepe our Powder drie, after we had beene acquainted with them, and very diligent for to pleafe vs. The next day at night we came to a place called the Con, and there wee lodged, and the next Con.

day following we came into the River of Wia; and there we found two or three of the Caribes R. Wie. Canoas, but all their men were runne vp into the Woodes, and from thence our Generall went up farther into the River, where wee burned certains of their houses, not finding any 40 people in them. From whence our Generall purposed to have gone farther into the River of Caleane. But the Indians did advertize him, that there was an English ship there, whom the Generall knew to bee one lobnfon of Plimmonth , that had beene four fourteene dayes before at Wiapoco, and came thither in the way of Trade. But our Generall would not fiffer him fo to doe, for that he would not hinder himselfe and his company, which our Generall at that time called to minde, and therefore thought it not good to proceed in the River, because hee doubted that there would have rifen contention betwixt his company and John fons, and for that hee also misdoubted wee should have wanted Bread and Drinke if hee should have proceeded in his journey, and therefore returned to Wiapoco, where we arrived all, except one Canoa. About the fourteenth day of March.

Our Generall fent with foure of our Nation named Blake, Owen Goldwell, William Crandall. 50 and Henry Powell, with commodities up into the Countrey, fome thirtie leagues to a place called Urake to the Inhabitants there named Armakes, to trade with them. And after our journey by Prale. reason of such Raine and soule weather as wee had in the same, most of our company tell sicke. Armakes and for that they had no comfortable drinkes, nor any comforts that ficke persons doe want, dipers of them died of the Fluxe; which the Indians (as also the Difease called the Calenture) Mortalitie, know right well for to cure, yet concealed it from our Generall. But vnto vs after his death they did reneale, which ficknesse among st the company caused no small griefe vinto our Generall, and chiefly to fee such wants amongst them; wherefore hee resolved with himselfe to goe for England, which hee acquainted the company with, promiting them to returne as spee-

60 dily as hee could with provision. Presently after he had shipped his provision, and such Commodities as hee had gathered together in the Countrey, and was in a readinesse to depart for England, he sickned of the Fluxe, and The Captains died aboord his ship, and was by Captaine Huntly secretly buried on the Land, the twentieth sicknesse and of March, whose death was so secretiv kept by the Captaine, and the Master of the ship, that death.

Mmmmm 2

1262 Dutchmans kindnesse, The English aide Indians against Indians. L I B.V I.

most of the company knew not thereof. The reason was , because there was prouition too little for them which were shipped, and others of the company, if they had knowne thereof, would M. Tederington. have preffed to have come with them. Wherefore Captaine Huntly with Mafter Tederington our Preacher and others fet faile from Wispoco towards England, on the second of Aprill 1605, promiling a flip to returne vnto vs within feuen monechs, God not hindering their intents, which had happened, for Sir Oline Leigh to his great charge had prouided a great Fly-boat of the burthen of one hundred and seventy tunnes furnished for to have come for Wiapoco, as I have heard

35 persons left since my being here in London, before Captaine Huntly his arrivall in England, but it pleased God

that the neuer came to Wiapoco, to that we had no comfort of her, being in number, left at Capthine Huntlies departure out of the Countrey thirtie fine persons, of whom one named Richard In Sacksie was by Captaine Legb in his life time, apppointed to bee chiefe amongit vs., who shipped himselfe into a ship of Middleborough, who came into the River about the first of May Kindneffe of a 1605, and fourteene more of our company with him, and more that Zelander would have carried it Sackise would have fuffered him, tuch was his kindnesse towards our Nation. Hee gave vnto vs luch wine and other comforts as he had, vnto our great reliefes. His comming vnto vs to Wiapoco, was to have fold vinto our Generall Negroes, whose kindnesse we did require in helping him to fuch commodities as wee had, and did get the Indians to provide Callaus and Guinea Wheate for bread, with Potato Roots for his Negroes to eat, who departed on the one and twentieth of May (after he had bin fome three weekes in the River of Wigpece) for Point de Ray, where he shipped of our company into his Countrimens ships, some in one ship and some into others for 20 Holland, of which thips we heard that iome of them were taken by the Spaniards, and they were

French thin.

call over-boord with the Hollanders.

Ten more de-

The fame day the Hollander departed, which was the one and twentieth of May, came vnto vs a French flup of Saint Mallors, who dealt very kindly with vs. wherefore weeded inffer him to trade with the Indians, who did remayne therefore two moneths, voto whom many france Indians did bring their commodities, and at his departure hee thipped ten of our men; hee tooke Powder, and other commodities of vs which we had, for their patinge into France leaving tenne of vs behind him, of which two died before the ship was out of ken of vs , Nicholas Wilkins and Andrew Vinderbill, But within some fourteene dayes after, two of those foure which our Generallhad fent to trade vnto Vrake, came vnto vs not expecting euer to haue feene them; the o- 30 ther two were drowned by the way. These two named Owen Goldwell , and William Candall. which came to vs. reported they had beene fome fortie miles vointo the Land . in a very plaine

pleasant Countrey, and brought commodities hereafter written of.

out of the Countrey to them. Th. y plant Flaxe, &c.

About the middle of July, our number of ten were all in good health, spending our time in planting of Caron called Flaxe, whereof we planted about twentie English Acres of Land, and iome Tabacco, observing the manners and conditions of the people, the nature of the Land and what commodities it verldeth, and what commodities of ours are in most request with them. About the third of October . the Indians did request vs for to accompany them in their warres against the Caribes, whereunto wee willingly did agree. They prouided feuen Canoas furnishing them with men, and bread and drinke, and their victuals (for the most part Crabs, and fish of di- 40 uers forts, which they take every day fresh and fresh as they travell in the Rivers.) We went into the River of Calsane, which is some thirtie leagues from Waspece, where wee rowed up and downe, but we could not find any of the Caribes in the River, we per waded them to land which they did, and marched up fome two miles vnto the Carthes houses, as wee marched to their houfes, the Caribes came to the water fide where our Canoas did Iye, but finding my felte there with my Caliuer, they had no great defire to come very neere vnto vs; and so after wee had burned fome of their houses, and killed divers of them, our company returned to our Canoas, having lost one of the Indian Captaines named Macato, others of the Indians were shot with three or our company, whom they healed as they did themselves, with a leafe, very speedily. They are armed in their warres with naked skins, and their Artillery are Bowes and Arrowes, 50

Indian Armes, their Weapons woodden Swords and Bucklers. They choose their Captaines at their drunken Mad choice of Featts; he is placed in the middeft of the whole company, holding his hands on his head. After apatient Cape they have made an Oration vnto him to be valiant, and not to be treacherous vnto them, with

at every stroke, and he never once mooueth thereat. By these meaner they try his patience and R. cilimelear. Courage. After we had shipped our felues into our Canous, weerowed up and downetheriner of Caliane, some eight or ten dayes, which wee noted for to be a very faire River and nauigable. It runneth divers waves from the mayne Land; and great ftore of fuch commodities hereafter fpecified, which the Countrey yeeldeth is to be hadiin the faid River. We returned voto our houses at Wiapoce, about the first of Nouember. In this Journey we were kindly vied of our conforts our Indians, and highly respected of them for our service which we did.

fuch like speeches; they whip him with a Whip which maketh the bloud spring out of his bodie

After a few dayes reit at Wiapoco, the Indians advertised vs of three Ships which were in the R. of Amazons, River of Amafons, and that one of them would come vato vs to the River of Wiapoco lome two moneths after, which proued to be true, but by what meanes they knew it I could not imagine,

CHAP.14. Wyapocos inhabitants, customes, commodities. Child-birth, Funerals. 1262

except it were by their divels meanes, which they call their Pejar, with whom the men have Pejar divining often conference, and it will answere them, but the women neuer that I could perceive ; when the men will conferre with their Pegar, they suffer not a childe to be in the house, and when any of them are ficke, they know by him whether they shall line or dye; if he faith they shall dye, they will give the ficke person no physicke; but if he say that he shall live, then they will give him any thing they have for his comfort. After our company was advertised of a Shippes comnim any thing they went with the Indians in their Canous, fome into the River of Wispeco, and River of Ard ming vinco vs, we work of Arosem, to make away such commodities as we had left which were not commany, referuing some of them to give to our Indians for our victuals, although their kindenesse 10 towards vs was fuch, that if we had not had any commodities, they would not have fuffered vs

to have wanted. In which our journey we noted the River of Aracom to be a very pleafant Riuer, and yeeldeth fuch commodities as other Riuers doe; also the Riuer of Wiapoco is a very faire River, and nauigable, which entreth the maine more then fortie miles. And at the end thereof there is a very great fall of water which commeth ouer great hils and mountaines; fome of our Fall. company were on the tops of them, for some moneths in the yeare the Mountaines are drie. and we were informed that on the other fide of those great hils, there is a River which is inhabited with many Indians, and hath the like commodities that Wieger hath, and that there is Gold in that place, which the Indian; calleth Carocare but we never went to fee the fame River. by reason we had very small store of commodities.

20 At our returns to Wyapeco we gaue to the Indians for their paines, and prouiding of vs victuals in our journey an Axe, for which they would have travelled with vs two or three moneths time if occasion had required. And for an Axe they found vs victuals two moneths time at our houfes, as Bread, and Drinke, and Crabbes, and Fift, and all fuch kinde of fielh as they killed for themielues, for the same price : but if we defired any Hennes or Cockes of them, then we were to have given them some small trifles, as Beades ; so likewise if they brought vs in our travell to any of their friend Indians houses, we must doe the like as at our departure, to give them some trifles, as Kniues and Beades. So that we lived very good cheape.

There are of the Indians three forts which inhabit at Wyapoco with whom wee were, whole houses be scituated as neere the Rivers mouth as they well may be, they are named the Tayes, The Tayes, 30 the Armalkes, and the Suppayes. The Tayes are a people very proud, and vie much flouting and mocking of others, much given vinto danting, and are full of merriment, very ingenious, and ve- The Armsh ry kinde of nature. The Armackes are a people of better carriage, and did vie our company with better respect then the Tayer. These two kindes of Indians come out of the West, wherefore they doe know all those Coasts, and they hate the Spaniards as deadly as they doe the Caribes. Supported The Suppores are a people more craftie in their dealings, for they will not part with any thirte but will have commodities for commodities. They are not many of them, and wee could not Nakedneffe learne from whence they are come. The men and women goe all naked, without any couerture Men and woat all : they are very well himmed and proportioned of body. They never company together all men bow they the day time, but as the women doe bring them their victuals, they doe rate vivally every day : line, they have doores at each end of their houses, the men remaine at the one end of the house, & the women at the other. The women are very neate in making of their Bread, which they call Aripo, and their drinke Palibe: they make their Bread and Drinke of a roote which they call Callani. which maketh good Bread, and very fireng drink, very pleasant to drinke after one is vied to it.

Their houses are built after the manner of our barnes in England, but much longer, for we have Their houses. measured some of them which were one hundred and fiftie paces long, and some twenty races broad, one hundred persons keepe together in one of those houses; they are most artificially builded and thetched, fothat no raine commeth into them: although in Aprill, May, and June, and most of July very extreame raine doth fall there. Also they make Pots of earth, which shew Faire earther as if they were guilded, and some of them will hold thirtie or forcie gallons of liquor, they are Pots. 50 very faire to behold, and very sweete to keepe any thing in. They make Baskets of ditters forts Baskets most artificially, and their beds which they call Hamaker; they are some of them made of Cot-Hamaker. ten wooll, and some of barkes of trees, they vie to lye in them hanging. They have a great delight to paint themselues both men and women, and especially when they goe to any Peast.

The women against their day of travell in childe bearth, make for that time a roome spart in Childebirth the house, whereunto they goe all alone, and are deliuered without any helpe at all; and preferely after the childe is borne, the calleth for her husband, and delivereth him the childe, who pre-Tently washethit in a pot of water, and paintethit with fundry colours, which feemed very ftrange vnto me, that I did not heare the women, once fo much as to groane, or to make any 60 moane at all in all her time of her travelle if any one of them dieth they doe vie to make great moane for them some ten or twelue daies together after his death or longer, according as the par. Funerals. tie was beloved in his life time.

And touching such kinde of Beasts as are in the woods as well about Wispeco as ith other plas. Beasts of those ces of the Countrie. There are great store of Deere, Hares and Conies, Hogges and many Mon. parts, kies great and small, blacke and greene, which fores are called Marmofites, and great red ones as

Mmmmm 3

bigge as Baboones (those the Indians doe kill and eate) and there are Leopards, and Porcupines, and Lyons; for in one place we did see a Lyon which the Indians had killed; they brought all their boyes they had, and did lay them on the Lyons backe, and with a whip did give every of them three lastes, wherefore they did so we could not learne, but imagined it was because they should semember the place where the Lyon was killed: also there are great store of Otters, and a beait which is called an Aligator, he hath a cod that smelleth like the Muske cod.

Fowles.

Of Foules, I have feene Cockes, Hennes, Duckes, and Geefe; Partridges, Wood-doues, Hernes shaws, Shouellers, and a foule of a crimion colour, called Pafferay Fiemingo, & great store of white foules, which the Indians call Waterouses, & great store of Parrate, and Parrakeits, which she there in sholes like Starlings here in England : allo there is a Parrat there as bigge as a great Hen, blew 10 and red, very beautifull to behold, and multitudes of foules of other forts, and Hawkes of divers forts in the woods and Rivers.

And of fifth there are great abundance of all forts both of fresh water fish, and Sea fish, and ing as before. Crabbes great store; and the Indian; take their fish with a kinde of wood which they beare against some stone or other tree, vntill one end thereof be all bruised, and putting that into the River, prefently the fishbecome drunke, and run themselves on the shoare, and swim aboue water.as our Haddockes doe in England.

Fruites.

There are store of good Rootes and Plants with Fruites, as the Pina and Plantine, Potatoes, Nappoyes, and a fruite called of the Indians Poppoyes, it is bigger then an Apple and very pleafant to eate, and fundry forts of Plums, and other forts of fruites whereof they make drinke very pleafant to be drunke.

Duing woods modities of

There are these commodities at Wingeco, and in other places of the Countrie where I have trauelled, Woods of blacke, red and yellow colours, Tobacco, Ginne pepper, Cotten wooll, Carow (of vs called Flaxe) Anoto, Berries which dye a very faire Scammell colour, Spienard, whereof a precious Oyle may be made, Gummes of divers forts, Bee-waxe, Feathers of the best forts, such as Ladies doe weare in their hats, and other Feathers abundance. There grow naturally in many places Sugar Canes, and great abundance of Caron of it felfe, called of vs Flaxe, and of the Spaniard Pero. Also they make Oyle which they paint themselves with of a kinde of Nut bigger then a Chestnut, whereof are great abundance growing; and the Manery stone is to be had ger then at hermun, whitever at give no other place of the lader that I have heard of. Thefe things 30 in the Aracres Countrie, and in no other place of the lader that I have heard of. Thefe things 30 I noted, but if fo we had expected certainely for to have had a Ship of our owne Nation to have come vnto vs, I my felre, and the rest of vs should hater beene encouraged to have observed more then I have done. Neither had we any figte of commodities to trade up in the Maine, as the two Hollanders hath which are there, and were left there at our comming from thence by John Sims, Master of a Ship called the Hope of Amsterdam, of the burthen of one hundred tuns Frauchted by the Merchants of Amfterdam, and by their Charter partie was bound to lye in the River of Wiapoco, and of Calane fix moneths time, which he did, for he lay with vs at Wyapoco from the twentieth of December vnto the twentieth of May following, trading with the Indians, and fought most after the Manite stone and Garon, which we call Flaxe. They furnished there two Factors very well with Commodities, which they left at 19) apoco. They dealt very kindely with 40 Their returne. vs.for he shipped all our whole company, which were nine of vs. Taking our leaves of the Indians (who were as vnwilling to part from our companies, as we

were willing to goe into our owne Countrie, faying vnto vs, that if any of vs euer came to them againe to trade with them; No other Nation (hould trade there but we. And after they knew Sir WalterRow- of our departure; whilest we remained amongst them, they brought their children vnto vs for to name after our great mens names of England, which we did. They had often speech of Sir Walter Ramleigh, and one came farre out of the Maine from Orenagne to enquire of vs of him, faying he promifed to have returned to them before that time, After we had provided our necessa-

ries, and fuch commodities as we had, and had given the Indians great charge of the Hollanders Factors, we shipped our selnes and departed from Wispecs on the last of May 1606. And from 50 thence we went into the River of Caliane, where our Master low Sime traded some thirtie dayes with the Caribes, and other of the Indians. This Sams was Masters mate of the Holland Shippe which Captaine Lee found in the River of Wapeco at his first arrivall there ralio he was Master of the Ship which the Indians advertised vs was in the River of Amazons, and according to their Fridabilio faying. God be thanked he came to vs to our Comforts.

Trinidada:

Fountains of

After his departure out of the River of Calians, he failed vnto Trinidads, where the Spaniards entertained him and his companie very kindely, for they gaue them Tobacco for all fuch commodities as they had, and fuffered them so lade Pitch which goeth out of the ground there, for that our Maffer durft not goe to Point de Ree to lade Sault there as he determined, because hee heard that the Spaniard did lye there with their men of warre, and had taken certaine Holland 60 Shippes, and had flung ouer boord all the men that were in them : our Master tooke his course from Trendade to Amsterdam, where he arrived on the of and were in number of vs eight belides my felfe, named Owen Ganlimell, Rebert Gardner, William Crandall, Robert Becke. Richard Pren, William Frier, Gilbert Browne, and Richard Bonoche. Since my being here I vnderCHAP. IS. Boate betraied by the Indians at Same Lucia. Rogues Bav.

stand that one of our company which we left at Vishinge, named William Crandall is gone in a Shippe of Holland for Wyspece, which voyage they would have hired my felte and others to have gone with them, by reason we have the Indians languages: such is the diligence of that Nation, with whom I with well for the great kindenesse they shewed my sale and others of our Nation.

CHAP. XV.

Part of a Treatife written by Master WILLIAM TVENER, Sonne to Doctor TVENER of London a Philitian, touching the former Voyage.



He foureteenth of August, about two in the afternoone, we had light of the Bar- The large bades, which bore of vs South South-west. The Land hath two points bearing journal of East and West one from another; and from the middle of it, it rifeth like Tene- their voiage to orfe, and is tenne leagues broad, and is barbarous was hout any inhabitants, having this place, is great flore of Hogges, Piggeons, and Parrats. We bore for the Westermost part for breuity o. great flore of Hogges, Piggeons, and Parrats. We note for the Westermort part mitted, as also of this Iland, and so wee-steered away West Worth-west, and North-west and their course

20 by West amongst for Saint Lucia. The fifteenth day, being thursday, we had fight of Saint Lucia, bearing West North-west of vs. This Hand of Saint Lucia is a very fertile He, bearing many forts of fruites, as Plantons, Potatoes, Pinos, * Guanos, Pompins, Casado, and many other truites. It hath also great store *The vertue of of Cotten wooll, and Tobacco, but their Tobacco is not very good. It hath also many wilde the Guenera Beafts in it, as Tygars, Guanes, Alagartos, and other Beafts, which time would not permit vs thing worthy to fee. It hath also great itors of Pigeons, Parrats, Pellicans, Caes, and Dogges. The people goe the noting, tor to fee. It hath allo greatitore of Pigeons, Parrats, remeans, care, and Pogges, and people goe their nature is, naked, having very long haire, and are very honest, kinde hearted people. In this Iland wee set their nature is, one examine our paffengers alhoare, and furnished them with all things necessary that our distressed Shippe one, a feet one could afford them. But they like treacherous idle disposed people, not regarding our kindeneste, a couring, and 30 not pittying our necessitie, betraied our Boate from vs one morning as wee went ashoare, my eatea greene felfe and three or foure other Gentlemen being in her; and then they detained three Saylers one, it will flay which were drawing in the Boate keeping them for their owne vie, and afterward fent vs a- Preference

boord in a Corne, which we were faine to buy of them for Kniues. The Mafter and the Captaine feeing this their treachesous dealing, and being out of all hope to get their Boate againe, about thursday in the evening, being the three and twentieth of August, gave them a Peece of Ordnance with intent to beate downe their houses. We had no fooner let flye at them, but prefently they thou at we againe, the bullet whereof came betweene our maine Mast and our Poope, but is hurt no body. So that night we waied, and went to a Baye some two leagues to leeward of this roade where we first ankored. In this Bay there are halfe a dofen of Indian houses very pleago fantly scituated upon the top of a hill, with a fresh water River at the foote of the same hill; and in this Baye we had very good trafficke of linner cleath, and many pleafant fruites, for our Hatchets and Knines. After we had roade here fome fixe houres, we might plainly differne our Boate underfaile, whereupon we presently fitted our small shot, hoping that their intent was to come abourd, and betray our Shippe, but they tacked in, and rowed along it the shoare, till they came to the very Bay where we roade, and there they flopped, and we were in good hope to recouer our Boate againe, but they tarried there trading for their commodities in the face of our Ordnance : whereupon we feeing their daring boldnesse to be so great that they prefue En que differ med to trafficke in our owne Boate before our noies, and to goe about as it were to flop vs from dia cites pertrafficke ; we let flye at them fixe peeces of Ordnance, and a vallie of small shot; but what harme dutit miseres.

we did amongst them, we know not, for they rowed away, and got out of fight of vs. We tear- Rosewis Bar. med the Baye where we put these men a shoare Rogues Baye, & the Cape we called Cape Knaue, Cape Kn and the River, River of Rafcols.

This very fame day being the foure and twentieth of August, we waied anchor, and steered zway South South-east, and South-east and by South amongst for Saint Vincents. And upon Saturday, the five and twentieth day, in the afternoone we arrived at the Ifand of Saint Vincents, where Saint Vincents we came within a Ships length very nigh the shoare, which put vs all in great feare, for if God had not feneve a gale from the shoare, we had runne a ground, and we had had all our throaces cut by the Indians of that Iland. So that night we tried it off at Sea with our fore-top-faile, and foresfaile, intending next day, being Sunday, to fland it in againe for the shoare (because we had 60 good hope of good trafficke there.) But the current had driven vs fo farre off at Sea by the next morning, and the winderblew to vehemently from the thouse, that we could by no meanes fetch the land; whereupon being foure leaves from the shoare of Saint Vincents, we steered away South South-west, and South-west and by South aftiongst for the Testigues. And the next morning being monday, we had light of the Granades, bearing of vs South east, but we could not fetch the Granades,

Current. Margarita. Telliges. The nine and twentieth being Wednesday morning, we had fight of fine small Rocks, which bore of vs West and by North some five leagues off : wee had also light of the lland of Blanco, whereby wee found that the Current had fet vs, and doth fet to the North-east, and therefore your best course to goe from the Granades to the Testiges, is to steere away South-west-

The first of September being Friday morning wee had fight of Margarita, and at night wee cast anchor at the Westermoit Point of this lland, cailed Point Macanao. The second day the next morning wee went ashoare with our Canoa, to see if wee could meete with any Spaniards, with whom wee might bargaine for fome Beeues. But wee could neither fee Spaniards. Becues, nor fresh-water, onely we found the dung of Becues. In this Iland of Margarita also there are great store of Pelicans. This morning wee weighed; and as soone as wee had 10 doubled the Point of Macanas, we had fight of the Rangeria, which is as it were a little towne. contayning in it some fortie or fiftie houses. Here wee did not land because wee saw no people, but stood it away South South-east and South and by East amongst for the Burdones. About mid-night wee came close aboard the sheare by an Hand, dalled Febrere, and then wee founded. and had ground at fortie fathome.

The third day being Monday morning, wee were becalmed, forme three leagues off from the mayne. About twelve at noone the same day, wee had light of Point de Ray. The winde and breefes blew fo firongly of the shoare, that we could not come to anchor that night to the Bardones. These Burdones are no Towne, nor hath any houses, but belongeth to the Towne of

The fourth day being Wednelday, at foure in the afternoone, wee came to an anchor at the Burdones ; fo that wee were three dayes in getting to the shoare, being in fight of it all the while. About twelue at mid-night the fame day, wee put out our layne-Net into the Sea for to catch some fish. And about foure in the morning wee found a great Sword-fish shue into the Net. which was fourteene foot long, and he had a fword fome three foot long. The fword is fourte and blunt at the end, having great prickles vpon each fide, of the bigneffe of a wikde Bores tuske. We fent our Canoa alhoare here, to parley with them bruing a flagge of truce. The Gouernour of Comment perceiving our Canoa comming afterne, fent a Molatato parley with our men, who faluted them very kindly, inquiring of vs, what newes in England, and whether the Conftable of Spaine were gone home into Spaine or no; we told him he was gone into Spaine, before 30 we fet out of England: we asked of him what newes in Comme of any English men, and when any had beene here; hee told them about a monath agoe, and that one of them had like to have been taken by a French Pirat, if a Figurating had not souke his part. This night there came foure Spaniards aboard our flaip from a Caspell which was as an anchor halfe a league from vs. These Spaniards burged with vs fome Tabacen, and told va, that Captaine Lee had a Towns built for himfelfe, and that the Pinnasse had beene here a moneth agoe.

The feuenth of September in the afternoone, there came the adule of Mafter Edwar to an anchor in the road where we rode, and then we welcommed them wish a shot, and they gave ve three for one : after these our falutations, the Captains of the dide; called Squire , came aboard vs, and told vs, that Sir Oliph Lee his Pinnaffe was come home, before they fet out of England, 40 and that Captaine Lee dyed in the Pinnelle comming into England others of his companie faid, that they heard he was betrayed, and killed in his Hames in Wissore. He also rold us, that he had left fome thirtie men behind him which were in great miferie and extremitie, both for lacke

of health and scarcitie of viewels.

The nineteenth of September, Captaine Squire weighed, and left ve going for Comonagota. The Spaniards date not trucke with va for any thing, but when that they steale aboard in the night; for if that they should be efpyed they should be hanged: Cloth of Tissue and Gold, cloth of Siluer, Veluet, Sattins, Silkes, fine woollen cloth and linnen, as Cambrick, Lawne, Holland; new Trunkes, Piltols, Fowling peeces, and Muskets are very good commodities to truck with the Spaniards, and all other places in the Indies. I noted one thing amongst many things , con- to cerning the nature of that climate of Communa. It is monstrous has all the day long till it be noone, and then there blowes a coole breefe; and at noone you hall alwayes have thundering and lightning without any raine for the most part. The towne of Comore stands two miles from the Sea-lide, and cannot be seene by reason of the trees which concrete fight of it, but you may fee the Gouernours house, for it stands upon the top of a Hill, looking over the trees, which

Seven faile of The eight and twentieth of September being Saturday, wee efpyed feven faile of Florenings bound for Ponitra. The thirtieth day being Monday, we weighed for Laguera; and were fleered away North and North and by West for Ponitra from Camana; and about fixe of the clocke in the morning we arrived there fafely.

The fourteenth of October, Captaine Cation and two other Genelemen, went out of our thip vpon some discontentments, miliking of the Master of our ships viagotowards them, and had their passage in two Hollanders, that were riding at Ponitra. The five and twentieth, about eight a clocke at night wee weighed at Ponitra, having two Flemmift thips our conforts with vs. On

the phirtieth we had fight of the Westermost end of Porto Rico, called Cape Roxo, and of a little Hand fome foure leagues off, called Echro. Here we ft. yed till Friday and Saturday, hoping for to have gotten the shoare for fresh water, and Oranges; but we had no winde at all to serue our turnes. About Saturday at noone, there came vnto vs a Flommib boat with a dozen men in it; these men told vs, that vpon Sunday the seuen and twentieth day of this moneth, there came niveteene faile of Spaniards, and that they had taken all the ships which we left behinde vs , in number ten, fauing two thips of Captaine Mogerownes, which fcaped by their fwift fayling, and that they themselves being ashoare with their Boat made an escape from Pontra, and so came to vs at Porto Rico, which is one hundred and threefcore leagues, where wee refreshed our felues 10 with fresh water and Oranges.

The ninth of November being Saturday, wee difembogued from Porto Rico. The two and twentieth of December we faw Flores, one of the Hands of the Afores.

CHAP. XVI.

A Relation of a voyage to Guiana performed by Robert HARCOVET of Stanton Harcourt in the Countie of Oxford Elquire. To Prince CHARLES.



N the yeere of our Lord 1608, and the 23. of March, when I had furnished my 23. March. felle with one (hip of fourtcore tunnes, and a Shallop of nine tunnes, called the Latthirtie tunnes, called the Patternet; and a Shallop of nine tunnes, called the Latthirtie tunnes, called the Latthirtie tunnes, called the Latthirties of the Company of the Latthirties of felfe with one thip of fourfcore tunnes, called the Rofe; a Pinnaffe of fixe and 1608. uing, I then imbarked my companie, as followeth.

In the Rofe, I was accompanied with Captaine Edward Fisher, Captaine Edward Harner, The Rofe. Mafter Edward Gifford, and my Cou'in Thomas Harcourt : and besides them, I had of Gentlemen and others one and thittie Land-men, two Indians, and three and twentie Mariners and Saylers. In the Patience, my brother Captaine Michael Harcourt, had with him of Gentlemen and o- The Patience, thers twentie Land-men, and eleven Mariners and Saylers. In the Lilly, Jafter Lilly the Ma- Th. Lilly. fter, had one Land-man, and two Saylers : to that my just number (too great for to few th ps of no greater burden) was in all fouricore and seuenteene, whereof threescore were Land-men. Be- Land-men ing thus imbarked, wee fet faile from the Rainge at Dartmouth the faid three and twentieth of They fet faile March; but the winde altering vpon a fudden, put vs backe againe that evening; and about the as. of two of the clocke the next morning (it comming better for vs) we weighed anchor, and put to March. Sez: the evening following we lost fight of the Lizzard, and fleered away for the Canaries.

The feuenth day of Aprill we fell with Alegranza and Lancerote, two flands of the Canaries : They arrive at we flood in with Alegranza and came to anchor on the South-well fide thereof: that evening Alegranza. 40 and the next day I landed my companie to exercise their limmes on shoare : in this Iland wee found no Inhabitants, nor fresh water, neither fruitfull Tree, Plant, Herbe, Graffe, nor any thing growing that was good, onely an abundance of vnwholfome Sea-fowle, which after one meale were vulauourie and distastefull, and a few wilde Capritos, or wilde Goats, which the craggy Rocks defended from our hands, and hungrie mouthes,

The eighth of Aprill we departed from Alegranza, and directed our course for Tenerife, ano- Tenerife ther of the Hands. The eleventh day I fent the Pinnaffe, and the Shallop to water at the Calmes, and there to attend my comming; but with my thip I held my course for Orotano, a Towns on the other fide of the Hand, in hope to get some wine amongst the Merchants there; but not being able (by reason of a contrarie winde) to double Punta de Nega, wee altered off course from 50 Wine to Water. And the twelfth day wee passed by Santa Cruz, and watered that evening at

This watering place is very convenient for all fuch as paffe by those Hands, and is thus to bee An executors found : there is a woodden Croffe neere vnto it, the high Pike of Tenerife beareth due North watering from it. There is also a ledge of Rocks to the Eastward of the landing place, which is a short place. Sandie Bay. When you are landed, you shall finde the place about fortie or fiftie wards from the Sea fide.

Then we flood on our course for the River of Wispoco in Guiana, having a prosperous winde, faire weather, and a smooth Sea. The ninth day of May, wee fell into the Current of the great The River of and famous River of Amazones, which putteth out into the Sea such a violent and mightie Fresh water 60 streame of fresh water, that being thirtie leagues from land, we drunke thereof, and found it as in the Sea 30, fresh and good as in a Spring or Poole.

This Ruer for the great and wonderfull breadth (con:ayning at the mouth neere fixtie land. leagues) is rightly termed by logephus Acoffa the Empresse and Queene of all Flouds, and by Hieron Grasse Hieronymus Grana Tarraconensis: it is faid to bee the greatest not onely of all India, but also of Tarraconensis.

wrack.

The Bay of

Indian boats.

Wiateco.

the whole world; and for the greatnesse, is called of many the Sweet Sea. It rifeth and floweth from the Mountaines of Pers, and draweth out her streames in many windings and turnings vnder the Equinoctiall, for the space of one thousand and fine hundred leagues and more : although from her Fountaines and Springs vnto the S-a it is but fixe hundred. When we entred into the aforelaid Current, we founded, and had fortie foure fathome water, fandie founding. The tenth day the colour of the water changed, and became muddie, whitish, and thicke; then we founded againe at noone, and had thirtie fathome; and seuenteene at soure in the atternoone. The eleuenth day at eight of the clocke in the morning wee made land, the vitermost Point thereof bearing West from vs. and came to anchor in five fathom water.

At night the Patience putting in to neere the shoare, came to anchor in two fathome and a Ia halfe water voon the floud which fell from her voon the ebbe, and left her die voon the Oaze, and the next floud comming in , did to shake and beate her against the ground , that before shee could get off, her rudder was beaten away, and her ribs fo rent and crafed, that if Almightie God had not preserved her, shee had beene wrackt: but (God be thanked) with much adoe shee came off into deeper water, and mended her Rudder, as well as the time and place would afford means. Then we followed on our course, coasting along to the North North-west, the Landso trending, It is very shoule all along this Coast, the ground soft oaze, but no danger to be feared, keeping our thip in fine fathem water.

When we came to the latitude of two degrees and a halfe, wee anchored in a goodly Bay, by · Hands called Certaine Hands, called Carripapoory, I did at that time forbeare to make particular discouere of 20 this Coast, intending (if God spare me life) to make a perfect discouerie of the famous River of Amazones, and of her feuerall branches, and Countries bordering vpon it, and of all this tract of land from the Amazones, vnto the River of Wiapoco, which contayneth many goodly Prouinces, and Signiories, which are in this discourse, but briefly mentioned : For at this time I purposed onely to prosecute my first project, which hastened me vnto another place.

From hence I stood along the Coast, and the leventeenth of May, I came to anchor in the Bay of Wissoco : where the Indians came off vnto vs in two or three Cances, as well to learne of what Nation we were, as also to trade with vs; who understanding that we were English men boldly came aboard vs, one of them could speake our language well, and was knowne to some of my companie to be an Indian, that iometime had beene in England, and ferued Sir John Gilbert many 30 yeeres: they brought with them fuch dainties as their Countrie yeeldeth; as Hens, Fish, Pinas, Platanaes, Potatoes, bread of Caffaui, and fuch like cates, which were heartily welcome to my hungrie companie : In recompence whereof, I gaue them Kniues, Beades, lewes trumps, and fuch toves, which well contented them. But when I had awhile entertayned them, and made known vnto them the rerurne of the Indian, Martin, their Countriman, whom I brought with mee out of England, they feemed exceeding joyfull, supposing that he had beene dead, being about foure yeeres since he departed from them.

The Indian before mentioned to have ferued Sir Iohn Gilbert (whose name was Iohn) whilest he lived (for he is now dead, and dyed a Christian) was a great helpe vnto vs. because hee seake our language much better then either of those that I brought with mee, and was ever firme and 40 faithfull to vs, vntill his death. By him I vnderstood that their Towne was situate vpon the East file of the Hill in the mouth of Wiapoco, and was called Caripo: that the Indian, Martin, was Lord thereof, and that in his absence his brother was chiefe. Moreover, hee certified mee that the principall Indian of that River was called Carafana (who by good fortune) was then at A village cal. Caripo, and to having spent some time in other conference and friendly entertainment, they tooke their leave, and departed for that time. I fent one of my companie with them to give notice to Carafana, and the rest of the Indians of Caripo, that I had brought home their Country. man Martin, whom they all thought to bee dead, and another of their Nation also, who had kindred and friends amongst them; to defire him to come aboard my ship, and to bring with him the principall Indians of Caripo, that I might declare vnto them the caute of my comming into 50 their Countrie, and conferre with them of other matters intended for their good. The next day I came into the River of Wiapoco, and anchored over against the Sandy Bay.

The day following the Indians came aboard as I had defired, and brought vs good store of their Countrie prouition : Carafana, and one or two more of them were attyred in old clothes. which they had gotten of certaine English men, who (by the direction of Sir Walter Raleigh) had traded there the yeere before; the reit were all naked, both men and women; and this I ob-The chief men ferued amongst them, that although the better fort of men (especially the Tatos) doe couer their privities, by wearing over them a little peece of cotton cloth, pretily woven after their manner; yet did I neuer fee any of their women couered in any part, either aboue or beneath the waste, albeit they daily converted amongst vs, but were all (as the plaine proverb is) even starke 60 belly naked.

> At their comming aboard my flip, first Carafana as the principall amongst them, and after him the reft, faluted and welcommed vs after their rude manner, I vied them with all curtefie, and entercayned them as well as the straight roome would give me leave giving them good store

of Aguanita, which they loue exceedingly: I prefented to their view their two Countrimen. Martin the Lord of their Towne, and Anthonie Canabre, who was a Christian, and had lived in England fourteene yeers, both which Lhad brought home wato them : when they beheld them. and after falutations, and some conference, knew to bee the same persons, whom they supposed and acter into and state of the period and the period and the state of the period and their owne mouthes) how well I had vied them, they feemed to be better pleafed with our comming : and when their rude falutations to their new-come Countrimen were ended . I tooke them apart, and thus declared the cause of my comming.

First . I brought to their remembrance the exploits performed by Sir Walter Raleigh in their Their confeto Countrie, in the reigne of our late Soueraigne Queene Elizabeth, when to free them from ferui- rence with the countrie, in the ranguished the Spaniards at Translade : burned their Towne, tooke their Indians. tude) he most worthily ranquined the Spaniara; at 1 random of the Indian Kings imprisoned, and Six W. Raleight bound by the necke with collers of Iron; and with great labour and perill discourted the River parts. See of Orenoque, and the Countries adiopning, as farre as the Prouince of Aromana, the Countrie of Hele 18.3. Topiamery, and the River of Caroli beyond it: And that their Countrillen called the Orenomenoni (who are the borderers of Oreneque) did then most willingly sibini: and render themselves The Orenequeunder the fubication of the late Queene; all which they well remembred, and faid, that Sir pairendred Walter Raleigh promised to have returned agains when them long fince.

Valer Ratego promited to nate returner against vivo ment ong mees.

Then I excused his not returning according to his promise, by reason of other imployments Elizabeth. 20 of great importance imposed woon him by the late Queene : the wing them moreour, that when he could not (for that cause) returns himselfe, hee tent Captaine Kejmis to visit them, and to Cap. Kejmis bring him true intelligence of their eftate (supposing that hee had left no Spaniards behinde him his voyage to at Trividade of power tomoleft them) to the end that reliefe and side might bee prepared for Guiana, them, according to their necessities, and oppression of their enemies. Then I told them of the death of the late Queene, whereby that bufineffe of theirs was againe hindered.

Moreover, I declared vinto them, that our gracious Soueraigne Lord King lames, who now rejeneth ouer vs (being the onely right and lawfull Heire, and Succeffor, to the Crowne and Dignitie of the Realme of England, after the death of the late Queene) was throughout the whole Land proclaymed King of England; and to comming to reigne oner vs, hath been ever

30 fince busied in ordering the State and affaires of the Kingdome, which being (by his great wifedome) feeled in tranquillitie and peace, like a good, gracious, and worthy King, doth now permit his Subjects to trauell abroad into forraine Countries, and Nations, to aide and affift all fuch as are vinuitly molested by their enemies. Whereupon, I and the rest of these worthy Gentlemen my affociates and friends, having intelligence by some that beene followers of Captaine Charles Lee (who was a man well knowne amongst them , and heretofore had taken Possession of possession of their Countrie to his Majesties vie, and was planted divers yeeres in Wiapoco, where the Countrie hee lyeth buried) of the great variance and discord depending betweene them the allied Nati- tiken at Wide ons, the Taiot, Armacon, Sappaios, and Paragentos; and their enemies the Charibes (all inhabi- 1000, by Capcons, the tame, Arrantem, organization of Amazones, and Deseguibe) have made a long and dangerous voy-Maichies vic. 40 age into those parts, to appeale their diffencions, and defend them against the Charibes, or other

enemies that shall molest or oppresse them : and now being there arrived, doe intend to make fearch in those Countries for convenient places, where such of our Nation, as shall hereafter come to defend them, may be firly feated to dwell amongst them; that if any of those Nations shall attempt at any time to diffurbe the quiet living of their Neighbours, they may have flore of English friends at hand and amongst them, that will not spare their paines to appeale their difcords, nor their lines to defend them from harme.

When I had thus declared wnto them the cause of my comming, they made this answere : that with our comming they were well pleafed; but our number of men they thought too great . that they wanted meanes to prouide vs bread fufficient for them all , having but a small Towne. 50 few Gardens, and flender prouision for their owne companies, because fince Captaine Lee his death, and his mens departure from them, they never made provision for any strangers.

I replyed, that albeit their Towne was fmall, and their Gardens few (for the grounds wherein they plant their Caffaui, whereof they make their bread, they call their Gardens) yet their Countrie was full of Inhabitants, and had ftore of Gardens to supply our wants of bread , and was plentifully stored with other provisions sufficient for a greater number, which I defired might bee weekely brought vnto vs, as neede required, for that I meant not to take it without recompence, but would give them for it fuch commodities as should well please them, which they wanted : as Axes, Hatchets, Kniues, Beades, Looking-glaffes, Iewes trumps, and fuch like things wherein they most delight.

Then they defired to confult among it themselves, which I permitted, and expected their an- The tradium go fwere about two houres, which time they fpent in debating the matter after their manner, and to countell. drinking Aquanta, and in the end defired my presence, and made me this answere.

That they were contented and well pleased we should line among st them; that they would Their answers. furnish vs with houses to lodge in , and prouide all necessaries for vs in the best manner they

A meffencer fent to the Indiana

The Indians came aboa: d.

of the Taios couer their prinities. The women generally goe

could. But whereas I faid our King would permit his people to line and abide among ft them, and defend them against their enemies: they answered, it was a thing they greatly defired, and had expected long, and now they made much doubt thereof, and faid they were but words, having *By Si: Walter heretofore beene * promifed the like, but nothing performed. To refolue that doubt, and make Rakith, and good my speeches, I told them what I had spoken should certainely be performed, and to that Captaine Lee. end I would leave my brother in their Country, and fome of my company with him, to dwell amonest them, vntill a greater supply might be sent from England for their better defence, Then they leemed to give credit to my words: And to after much talke, and many complements to please the naked people, I gaue to Cara Sana a Sword, and to the reft some other things, which pleased them well : and then after their manner taking their leaue, they departed. The next 10 day the Indian Martyn went ashoare, and seemed joy full that he had againe recoursed his owne

The Indian Martyn goeth ashoare.

The English

The gratefull

The day following I tooke land, with my companies in armes and colours displayed, and went vo vnto the Towne, where I found all the women and children standing at their doores to behold vs. The principall Indian came out vnto me, and inusted me into the Captaines house, which vntill the returne of Marys belonged vnto his brother, aschiefe Lord in as absence: went vp with them and was friendly feated with many kindes of their Countrie cates a when feated by the I had well eaten and refreshed my selfe, Martyn tooke me by the hand and faid, that he had not any thing wherewith to requite my kindenede towards him, in such manner as he desired : neiany thing wherevent to require my announce of the state o that fuch prouision as the Country yeeldeth, should be prouided for vs. His speech was approued by the reft of the Indians prefent, who tooke me by the hand one after another, and after their manner bad me welcome. I gaue them many thankes, and fomerewards for their kinde entergainment; and then disposed my company in convenient lodgings: but yet I kept a continuali guard, as in time of warre.

The English The firength of the place,

When I had thus fetled my company at this village, I went out to view the scienation of the The angely place, and the advantages for defence thereof. It is a great rockie Mountaine, not accessable by reason of fast woods, and steepe rockes, but onely in certaine places, which are narrow foote- 30 paths, very steepe and easie to be desended : whereby we were lodged as in a Fort, and most connemiently in respect the harbour was so neese, for our Ships did side at anchor vinderneath vs. ouer against the foote of the hill.

continual

Being thus arrived ypon the Coast, I found the time of the years so vnfeafonable for our purpole, that (by reason of continual) raines) we were constrained to lye still and doe nothing for the space of three weekes, or a moneth: in which idle time I conferred with the Indians, sometime with one, fometime with another; and by helpe of my Indian Anibony Canabre, and the Indian Iohn about mentioned (whom I vied for my interpreters) I gathered from them as well as I could, the State of their Countrie; the manner of their government and living; how they flood with their neighbours in tearmes of peace, and warre; and of what power and strength 40 they were, I inquired also of the seasons of the yeare in those parts : of their division, and account of times, and numbers; of the prouisions of their Countrie for victuals, and other necessaries; and made a diligent inquiry of all the commodities their Country yeeldeth, and what things were of most estimation amongst them : all which I have briefely declared vitto your Highnesse in this following discourse.

The bounds and limits of Guiasa.

His goodly Countrie, and spacious Empire, is on the North part bounded with the Sea, and the great River of Orenoque, wherein Sir Walter Releigh performed his worthy and memorable discouery on the East and South parts, with the famous River of Amazones: and on the West part with the Mountaines of Pers

Атгаросо а branch of Aderrovaes.

Maicary. Analy way

The westermost branch of the River of Amazones that fallerh into the Sea, is called Arrapoco: vpon which Riuer are feated many goodly Signiories well deferuing a particular diffcourty. which shall (by Gods permission) be performed hereafter. To the North of Arrapoco is the Riuer of Arraway, which is a goodly River, discovering a gallant Countrie. From Arraway vnto the River of Cassipurogh extendeth the Province of Arricary; containing the Signiories of Arrawary, Maicary, and Coolbebery; of which Analyury is principall, who by Nation is a Taio, and fled from the borders of Orenogue for feare of the Spaniards, to whom he is a mortall enemy. He hath feated himselfe in the Prouince of Arricary, and now dwelleth at Morong a in the Signiory of Maicars. To the North North-west of which, there falleth into the Sea a River called Congwini, whereupon the Signiory of Coolbebery bordereth; whereof an Indian named Laonard Raga- 61 po is Chiefe, under the subjection of Anaki-v-ry. This Indian is christened, and hath beene heretofore in England with Sir Walter Raleigh, to whom he beareth great affection: he can a little Learned Research vnderstand and speake our language, and loueth our Nation with all his heart. During my 2. boad at Wispeco, having intelligence of him, and of his Country, and that certaine stones were

found therein, supposed to be Diamonds : I fent my Cozen, Captaine Fifter to discouer the same and fetch fome of those stones, to be resolved of the truth.

At his comming thither, Leonard entertained him with all kindenesse, not after the ordinary rude manner of the Indians, but in more civill fashion, and with much respect and love, he furnished him with guides to conduct him through the Country to the place where the Stones were mified him with guides to conduct min through the country of the place there is an high Mountaine appearing in fight, called Comptand on the top thereof (as the Indians report) a great A Mountaine appearing in fight, called Comptand on the top thereof (as the Indians report) a great A Mountaine Lake or Poole, full of excellent fish of divers kindes. The Countrey was as pleasant and decalled (most lightfull. as euer any man beheld ; but the Stones not Diamonds . yet they were Topales, which 10 being well cut, and fet in Gold by a cunning workman, doe make as faire a shew, and give as Toppes in Congood a luttre as any Diamond whatfoeuer: which yeelde good hopes of better to be found here- Bebers. after: For where the Topas is found on the Mountaines of Tenaferen, in the East Indies, the great

test store of Diamonds are also found.

When my kiniman returned, Daptaine Leonard came with him to Wiapoco (being about an hundred miles from his owne Country) onely to visite me and my company; for the great loue he did beare to Sir Walter Raleigh, and our Nation. I much manuelled to fee him, for afferedly he is the braueit Indian of all those parts. After he had beene with me a day or two, he earneilly requeited me to lend some of my company into his Country, which he greatly commended for the wholesome ayre, and plenty of victuals, alleading that the place where then wee lived (by 20 his owne experience) was very vnhealthfull, that our men would there be fubiect to fickeneffe and die: and for an instance he named Captaine Lee, and his company, who formerly were planted there, and almost all dyed by sicknesse in the same place : But he assured me that his own Country Coolhebers was of a good ayre, pleasant, and healthfull; that there they might have roome sufficient to build English houses in (for those were the words hee vied) that thither they should be welcome and should want nothing. Much he perswaded to draw me to his desire, which by his importunity I granted, and accordingly performed it; finding his Country answe- The quality of rable to his report; being for the most part champian ground, naturally intermixt of plaine the Province fields, fruitefull meadowes, and goodly woods, in such admirable order, as if they had beene of confessory. planted artificially by handy labour. The fields appearing about the meadowes in pleafant and 30 delightfull manner, prefenting here and there vato the eye, from flately Mounts, most beautifull

and linely prospects: the meadowes bordering on every side betweene the fields and woods, the woods growing in the lowest valleys betwirt the meadowes, and commonly are swatered with

fweete and pleasant fresh ftreames running through them : which strange and rare mixture of

Mounts, Valleyes, Meadowes, Fields, and Woods, afford as excellent and healthfull habitations

as can be wished or defired but is not greatly peopled. From the River of Casique och N. Westward to the River of Arracon, and vp further into the Land towards the West, and South-west, as farre as the River of Army (which falleth into Wiapoce about the overfalles) extend the Provinces of Arracory, and Morownia, which also to the Arracory and landward (by the relation of my Brother, Captaine Muchael Harcourt, and Captaine Harney, Mortownia, 40 who have travelled and discourred those parts) are pleasant and delightfull plaine Countries, like

unto Cooftebery. The Arracory Countrie is well pleopled, and their chiefe Captaine is called Ipero. Betwixt the Wapocoories and Arracoories there is no hearty love and friendship, yet in outward hew they hold good quarter. In Morrownia, there is also flore of people, which are friendly Indians. In that Prouince there is a very high Hill called Callipany, fallioned like a Su-An exceeding gerloafe, or a Pyramie, which oueruieweth and discouereth all the Territories adiopning about high Hill calan hundred miles. Beyond the Country of Morrowni to the Southward bordering the River of Army, is the Pro-

uince of Norrak: the people thereof are Charibes, and enemies both to the Morrowinnes, the in- Norrak. habitants of Morrownia, and to the Wiapopoories; who are also under the subjection of Analy-ve-50 77, the principall and greatest Lord, or Cassique of all the Taios in those Proninces, bordering vp. date vor on the Sea betwixt the Amezones, South-eastward, and Deffequebe North-westward.

From the River of Amazones to the Bay of Wiapoco, there fall into the Sea thefe Rivers fol- Rivers falling lowing: Arrapoco (a branch of Amazones) Arrawary, Micary, Conawini, and Caffiparoph: In into the Sea. the Bay of Wispocco to the Eaft of the faid River, there falleth into the Sea the River of Arracon; betweene A. the Bay of Waspece to the East of the faid River, there raised into the Sea the River of Arracow; and into Arracow falleth the River of VVasts. To the North of VVaspece there is a small creeke movement of Wasts. called Wismany, which letteth into the Sea a dayes iourney Westward vp into the land; former take Wismany, which letteth into the Sea a dayes iourney Westward vp into the land; former take Wismany acreek. this creeke to be a River, but they doe erre in that opinion, it having neither Spring nor Fountame from whence it falleth, To the North and North-west of the said creeke, there is a ridge of high Mountaines running towards the River of Approvaca, the foile whereof is excellent and 60 fertile for Tobacco, and beareth the best of all those parts; so are the Sugar-canes there growing fertile for Tobacco, and bearern one perit of all times paris; in all the read of Land betwire the River the heft and faireft that are found you the Coaft and all the trade of Land betwire the River the heft and faireft that are found you the Coaft and all the trade of Land betwire the River The Province the net and ratter trac are journey possible country and an interest of property, containing the Signiories of Wispece, and Aparwaca, is accounted the Promince of Wispece, and Aparwaca, and Aparwa of VViapoco , and VVianary. Benea h the overfals in VViapoco (which are forty miles diffant

from the Sea) there is much people, both of Taios, and Armaccas : of the Taios in this River Cara-Nanan

Erafana. A TENNERA f -funica. Rivers talling

fana is chiefe. Of the Armaceas, Arriquona is principall. In Wianary there are few Indians. and Cufureno is their chiefetaine. To the North- west of the Bay of Wiapoco, there fall into the Sea the River of Apurwaca. Cowo.

Wio, and Caiane. Aparwaca is a goodly River, and well inhabited: Como is voide of inhabitants: trathe North- Wio is a faire River and leadeth many dayes fourney into the high land, tand discovereth a fertile well of Wiggs, and hopefull Country. At Casane there is an excellent harbour for shipping of any burden, which heretofore by Captaine Lawrence Keymis was called Port Howard : On the Starbood fide. as you enter this harbour, there is an Hand of low land, called Muccumbre, feituate betwixt the River of Casane and Meccoria, containing in circuit about fixteene leaves. In this Iland there Muccumbro an are two hils, the one called Muccumbro, whereof the lland taketh the name; the other called Ia Cillicedemo: from these hils the greatest part of the Hand may be ouerniewed, which containeth many goodly Pastures and Meadowes intermixt with some Woods, and is full of Deere both red

On the Larboard fide, as you enter Caiane there is another Hand of high Land, called Mat. toory, in quantitie much like vnto the first : this liand for the commodious scituation, is of great eff at for the defence of the harbour, affording naturally two such notable convenient places for the planting of Ordnance for that purpose, as no industry of art could deuise better, or more augileable.

Arravica 7 chiefe Cape taine of the Catane. Foure or five men placed at

The Inhabitants of this Prouince of Caiane, are Charibes, their principall commander is called Arranicars, who dwelleth at Cillicedemo before mentioned; we have found him truthy and faithfull to our Nation but; to our friend Leonard ot Coffebery, he is a mortall enemy. At this mans house Heft foure or fue of my company, thereby to hold amity and friendship with the Charibes, to learne their language, and to keepe peace betweene them and the Taios, Armaceas. and other Narions their allies. To the South-westward of these Prouinces about mentioned towards the high land, there be many others which hereafter shall be more exactly described by a second These Provinces & Signiories to the landward are not plentifully inhabited, the greatest num-

The manner of their go. mernment. Murderand

bers of people are seated neare vnto the Riuers, & trauell from place to place in Canoes. There is no fetled government amongst them, onely they acknowledge a superiority, which they will obay as farre as they please. In every Promince or Signiory there is a chiefe Call que, or Cap- 30 taine, commanding all : So likewife in every Towne and Village, they commonly chaftife murder and adultery by death, which onely are the offences punished amongst them, and certaine . Adurery pungle persons are appointed by them to execute those punishments. The Indians take wives, ouer The indian by whom they are excreame realous, and expect great continencie in them; for if they take them nature leafous in adultery, they prefently caufe their braines to be beaten out. The better fort of persons haue every one of them two or three wives, or more, the rest but one ; accounting him that hath most wines, the greatest man. Their wines (especially the elder fort) are as servants vnto them, for they make their bread and drinke, dreffe their meate, ferue them at meales, and doe all the other bunneffe about the house.

hau mayay Diuerslanguacoaft.

ouer their

The Ledians

The Indians make wir for their women.

The Charibes Warte Veon Leon rd.

pons of the Leonard defiseth aide of the English.

These Provinces are peopled with divers Nations of severall languages, namely, Taios, Ar- 40 maccas, Sappasos, Paragotos, and Charibes. The Charibes are the ancient inhabitants, and the other Nations are such as haue beene chaied away from Trimidado, and the borders of Orenoane. And foralmuch as they have vnited themselves in those parts, the Charibes have held them in whon the Sea continuall warres, but the Taiss and the other Nations their Allyes, are growne fo ftrong, that they have confirmed the Charibes of the Sea-coast to contract a peace with them, yet beare no hearty loue the one Nation to the other: but with the Charibes inhabiting the in-land parts vpon the Mountaines, they have as yet no peace at all; for they doe often times come downe voon them in great numbers, spoile and burne their houses, kill their men, and carry away their women, which is the greatest cause of warre and hatred amongst them; whereof our men haue seene experience in Coofbebers, where happened an accident worth the observing, which I will here 50 declare vnto your Highnesse. The Indian Leonard Ragapo, before mentioned, is a Taio, who finding the Countrey of Coolbebery flenderly inhabited, hath ferzed vpon it for his owne Signiorie; and at his earnest request, I sent soure Gentlemen of my company to remaine there with him. The naturall inhabitants that dwell upon the uttermost bounds thereof, towards the South, and West, are Charibes, and enemies to him, and to his Nation : for while our men vnknowne to the Charibes) flaied at Coofhebery, they affembled themselves together to the number of two hundred or more, and came dome into his Signiorie, burned and fpoiled houses, roafted one woman, tooke many prisoners, and intended to affault him also: which to preuent he armed about fiftie of his Indians, with their vivall weapons; which are Bowes and Arrowes, long The viual wea- States that pened at the point, and with fire hardened: woodden Swords and Targets very artifi- 60 cially made of wood, and painted with Beaits, and Birds: He requested also our men to aide and affift him with their Muskets, which I commanded them to doe, vpon all fuch occasions offered: And so being all in readinesse, Leonard (as their captain) led them on to intercept his enemies; and as I have heard by Master Henry Baldmin (who then was prient, and (to observe the manner

of their warres, gaue him leaue to command all) he brauely performed that exploit, in good order after their manner, and with great judgement and resolution. For in the Front, he first placed our foure Englishmen, by two in a ranke; next to them, two Indians armed with woodden Swords The manner and Targets; then two Archers; and after them two men with sharpned states, instead of of ordering Pikes; and in like manner ordered, and ranked all his Company. Being thus prepared, hee then mining marched against the Charibs, who (neere at hand) were comming in the same order towards the warres. him; but when they approached, and (vnexpected) perceived our English men amongst the Taios, they were much amazed, and made a fudden fland: which Leonard perceiving, guelfed rightly at the cause, and instantly did make good vie of that advantage. Hee commanded

10 his owne company to keepe their Station, himfelfe with a Sword in his hand (which I had given him) and a Target of his owne fashion, went boldly towards them to parley with fight of the their Captaines. And having called them out, hee reproved them for comming (as enemies) English into his Signiory, for burning and spoiling his houses, and his people: hee demanded satisfactionfor the hurt done, and restitution of the prisoners taken, and warned them forthwith to the che contains the contains th depart out of his Signiory, and deaft from warre: which if they refused to fulfill, he was there rives. ready with his friends the Englishmen to fight with them, and revenge his wrongs: and faid further, that if in the conflict any of the English men were flaine, or hurt; hee would then fetch all the reft from Wiapoco, and returne to burne their houses, and cut them all in peeces. Thus hee boldly spake, with such a courage, shewing also our men vinto them (who had their The charites

20 match in cocke ready to discharge) that hee strooke such a reare into them all, by reason of our agree to peace mens presence, that they presently agreed to peace, performed what conditions he required, for feare of the and then departed home with all their company. Here may your Highnesse note the factions among the Indian Nations : the discipline and order they hold in warre : the feare the Charibes conceived at the fight of our English men, and the policy of the Indian Leonard to take advantage by their feare, and make our men his Guard, and chiefe protection against them. These things in time will much auaile vs, being well observed, and rightly applied according to occation. But to our former discourse.

The power and strength of these Countries (being so thinly peopled) is not very great to withfrand the might of forraine enemies. The vivall weapons of the Indians, are before deferi-30 bed fauing that their Arrowes are oft times poisoned. But fince our trade and commerce with them, they have gotten a few good Swords, Miskets, Calivers, and some small quantity of fhot and powder; and have learned to handle their Peeces very orderly, and fome of them are good fhot.

The seasons of the yeare upon this coast, and in this climate are divers, for in the East parts of Guiana towards the Amazones, the dry weather, which we call their Summer beginneth in Au- The season of Guissa towards the Amatones, the my making, and we can take a compared to a mileson or guit, and the violent raines and tempelmous winds, which we count their winter, doe begin in the years and February Bar in the Weltern parts, towards Oresones, the dry featon beginneth in October, Guissa.

Let a my making the summer of the sea of the country of the sea of the and the raines and windes in Aprill. There is little difference of heate and cold in this diuerfity of seasons being so neere the Equinoctiall, where the day and night are alwayes equall: August.

40 for in those parts wee finde, that when the Sunne declineth further from them towards the The winter be-Tropicke of Capricorne, the ayre is then cleareft, and the feafon of the yeare most dry; as ginneth in Fein the Easterne parts of Guiana in August, September, October, Nouember and December: bruary. and when the Sunne returneth towards the Tropicke of Cancer, then doe the raines begin, mcrease, and decrease, from Frbruary to July: but sometimes they begin to fall, and the Rivers to rife, swell, and overflow sooner or later by a moneth; and the yeare is sometimes more or lesse windie and wet, according to the disposition of the beauens, and of the Planets: and as the Sun approacheth, or declineth little, or much, even so the earth wanteth or aboundeth with water

They have no division or account of times or numbers; they onely reckon by the Moones, as Their account they made no distinct of the Moones: or by dayes in like manner. Their numbers they reckon of times and thus, one, two, three, and so to ten: then they say ten and one, ten and two, ten and three, &c. And to numbers. thew their meaning more certainly, they will hold vp one, two, three, or more of their fingers, expressing the numbers, still making signes as they speake, the better to declare their meaning: when they will reckon twenty, they will hold downe both their hands to their feete, shewing all their fingers and toes, and as the number is greater, so will they double the figne. When they appoint or promise any thing to be done by a time limited, they will deliuer a little bundle of flicks equall to the number of dayes, or Moones, that they appoint, and will themselves keepe another bundle of the like number: and to observe their appointed time, they will every day, or Moone take away a flicke, and when they have taken away all, then they know that the time of 60 their appointment is come, and will accordingly performe their promife.

As touching Religion, they have none among it them, that I could perceive, more then a cer- Religion. taine observance of the Sunne and Moone, supposing them to be alive, but vsing no religious They vieno worship rowards them, not offer factifice to anything a volete them, and offer factifice to anything a volete them. worship towards them, nor offer sacrifice to any thing; vnlesse they vse a superstition in religious wortheir drinking feafts, by facrificing larres of drinke: for at the death of any of their Caffiques, thip to any Nanna 2

The manner

Captaines, or great friends whom they efteeme, they will make a folemne feast (their chiefest The manner prouision being of their best and strongest drinke, which they call Parranow) which featt shall or their arios deschot their finging, and drinking excessively; in which vice they exceede all other Nations whatsoeners accounting him that will be drunke first, the brauest fellow: during this folemnitie of their drinking, fome women being neerest of their kin vnto the party dead , doth stand by and cry extreamely : thus their manner is vntill their drinke be spent, and then the feast is ended. Whether they vie any superstition in this custome I know not time will reueale, and also reforme it. It Their Petaios is most certaine that their Pecaios (as they call them) Priests, or Southfayers, at some specially or Pricfts haue times haue conference with the Diuell (the common deceiver of mankinde) whom they call to with the divel. Wattipa, and are by him deluded; yet not withit anding their often conference with him, they Their opinion feare and hate him much, and fay that he is nought : and not without great reason, for hee will of the dead. oftentimes (to their great terror) beate them blacke and blew. They believe that the good fredians when they dye, goe vp, and will point towards the heavens, which they call Caupo : and that the bad Indians goe downe, pointing to the earth, which they call Soy. When any Caffigne, shey kill an In-Captaine, or chiefe man dieth among & them, if he have a slave or prisoner taken from their enemies, they will kill him; and if he have none such, then will they kill one of his other femants. that he may have one to attend him in the other world.

him in the other world. The quality of

At the death

dim to ferue

The qualitie of the Land in those Countries, isof divers kindes; by the Sea side the Land is low, where the heate would be most vehement, if it were not qualified and tempered by a 20 fresh Easterly winde or Brieze, most forcibly blowing in the heate of the day: in many places this low land is very vnheal-bfull, and little inhabited, by reason of the ouer-flowing of the waters : but for the most part it hath goodly nauigable Rivers, a fertile foyle, much people, and is a healthfull habitation. Vpon the Mountaines there is a high land, where the avre is colleft, in some places it is fruitfull, in others not : but generall is full of Minerals, and mines of mettals, and yeeldeth as many as any part either of the Eaft, or West Indies, both of the best, and of the batest whereof, we shall (by Gods permission) give good restimony, to the benefit of our Countrey, and honour of our Nation in time convenient : and in most places voon the Mountaines there is found and healthfull dwelling. There is also a middle fort of land, which is of a meane height, and is most temperate, healthfull, fertile, and most inhabited of all other: it aboundeth in Meadowes, Pastures, and pleasant streames of fresh water, in goodly woods, and most delightfull Plaines, for profit, pleasure, sport, and recreation : and also is not void of Minerals.

The roote of Caffaui miketh

The prouisions of this Countrey for victuals, are many : First, of the roote of a tree, called for victuals. Cassani, they make their Bread, in manner following; they grate the roote vpon a stone, and presse out the juice thereof, which being rawe is poylon, but boiled with Guinea Pepper, whereof they have abundance, it maketh an excellent and wholefome fawce, then they drie the grated roote, and bake it voon a stone, as we hake our Oaten cakes in England. This Bread is very excellent, much like, but farre better then our great Oaten cakes, a finger thicke, which are yied in the Moorelands, and the Peake in Stafford bire and Darbibire. There is a kinde of great Wheat, called Maix, of some it is called Guinea Wheat, which graine

Maix or Guinea

is a fingular prouision in those Countries, and yeeldeth admirable increase, even a thousand or fifteene hundred for one, and many times much more. It maketh excellent meals, or flower for Bread; and very good Malt for Beere or Ale, and ferueth well for fundry other necessary vies for the reliefe of man. Of the aforesaid Cassami bread, and this Wheate the Indians make drinke, which they call Passium : it will not keepe long, but must be spent within source or fine daves: they make another kinde of drinke of Cassani, called Parranon, very good and kindsofdrinke strong, much like vinto our best March beere in England, and that kinde of drinke will keepe ten An excellent dayes; many forts they have which I have tafted, some strong, some small, some thicke, some thin, drinke made but all good, being well made, as commonly they were among it the Taios, and Armaccas, which 50 are the clenliest people of all those Nations.

of Caffani. Store of hony.

There is great store of hony in the Country, and although it be wilde being taken out of trees and buries in the earth) yet is it as good as any in the world; of which may be made an excellent drinke much vied in Wales, called Meath. The hony and the waxe, are also good commodities for merchandife.

The foyle ex-

There is no Vines in that Country, but the Soyle being rich and fertile, and the climate hot, if they were planted there, they would prosper exceedingly, and yeelde good Sackes, and Ganary wines, which in those parts we finde to be very wholesome.

Sundry kindes ot Beafts in

Many other necessary prouisions sufficient for the sustenance of man, doe there abound in plenty: Namely, Deere of all forts, wilde Swine in great numbers, whereof there are two kindes, the 60 one small, by the Indians called Pockiero, which hath the namile in the backe; the other is called Paingo, and is as faire and large as any we have in England. There be store of Hares, and Conies. but of a kinde far differing from ours: There be Tigers, Leopards, Ounces, Armadils, Maipuries, uile in the back which are in tafte like Beefe, & wil take falt: Baremoes or Ant-Beares, which tafte like Mutton, &

other small beaits of the same tafte, coloured, like a Fawne, Elkes, Monkies, and Marmosites of diners forts, both great and small : of these beasts there bee innumerable, and by experience we have found them all good meate. Many other kindes of beafts there are of fundry and ffrance shapes, which hereafter shall be figured in their true proportion according to the life with their names annexed.

Or Fowles there bee divers kindes; namely, Wild-ducks, Widgins, Teales, Wild-geefe, He- Great variety rons of divers colours, Cranes, Storkes, Pheafants, Patridges, Doues, Stock-doues, Black-birds, of Fowles, Curlewes, Godwits, Woodcokes, Snites, Parrots of fundry forts, many other kindes of great and imall Birds of rare colours; belides great rauenous Fowles; and Hawkes of every kinde.

Of fift the varietie is great, first of Sea fift, there is Sea-breame, Mullet, Soale, Scare, Thorne- Divers kinder backe, the Sword-fish, Sturgeon, Seale, a fish like vnto a Salmon, but as the Salmon is red, this is of fish, yellow; Shrimps, Lobsters, and Oysters, which hang vpon the branches of Trees : There is a rare fish called Cafforma, which hath in each eye two tights, and as it swimmeth it beareth the Oysters hing lower fights within the water, and the other about the ribs and back of this fifth refemble those voon trees, parts of a man, having the ribs round and the back flat, with a dent therein, as a man hath; it is A file having formewhat bigger then a Smelt, but farre exceeding it for daintie meate; and many other forts four eyes. there be most excellent. Ot fresh-water fish many kindes vaknowne in these parts, but all ex- and the ries, ceeding good and daintie: And I dare be bold to fay, that this Countrie may compare with any and backe like other of the world, for the great varietie of excellent fish both of the Sea, and fresh Waters. aman. 20 There is also a Sea-fish which vsually commeth into the fresh waters, especially in the winter

and wet feafon, it is of great elteeme amongst vs, and we account it halfe fiesh, for the blond of it is warme; it commeth up into the shallow waters in the drowned lands, and feedeth upon graffe and weedes : the Indians name it Coismers, and the Spaniards, Manats, but wee call it the Sea-com; in taste it is like beefe, will take falt, and ferue to victual ships, as in our knowledge The Sea com hath beene proued by our Countrimen : Of this fish may bee made an excellent oile for many like beete, purpoles; the fat of it is good to frie either fish or flesh; the hide (as I have heard) will make good buffe : and being dried in the Sunne, and kept from wet, will ferue for Targets and Armour against the Indian arrowes : In the wet season the store of them are infinite ; some of these hides were heretofore brought into England, by Sir Walter Ramleigh.

The seuerall kindes of fruits are many, the Pina, Platana, Potato, Medler , Plums of diviers Sundrie kindes forts, the Nuts of strange kindes. The excellency of the Pina I cannot expresse, for I dare bold- of fruits. ly affirme that the world affoordeth not a more delicate fruit : In taile it is like Straw-berries, Pina. Claret-wine and Sugar. The Platana is also a very good fruit, and tasteth like an old Pippin. Platana The Potato is well knowne. The Medler exceedeth in greatnesse. The Plums I cannot com- Potato. mend, for to eate much of them doth cause fluxes, which in those Countries are dangerous. The Plummes! Nuts are good being moderately eaten.

Auing thus (most excellent Prince) declared the severall sorts of provisions for victuals and Nuts. necessarie foodes, it remay neth that I now make mention of the varietie of commodities, 40 found in the Countrie for the trade of merchandife, which in few yeeres, by our paines and induftrie, may be brought to perfection, and to fetled in those parts, that not onely the vindertakers may receive reward for their indeuours, but our Countrie also may grow rich, by trading for the fruits of our labours.

The first and principall commoditie of estimation, are the Sugar-canes, whereof in those parts The varieties there is great plentie; the foile is as fertill for them as in any other part of the world; They doe of commodithere grow to great bigneffe in a flort time; by orderly and fit planting of them, and by erecting ties.

Sugar Canes, convenient workes for the boyling and making of Sugars (which at the first will require some charge and expence) may be yearly returned great benefit and wealth; the long experience of the Porsugals and Spaniards, in Brafil, and the Iland of the Canaries; and of the Moores in Bar-

50 barie, may give ve certaine affurance, and full fatisfaction thereof. The Cotton wooll is a generall commoditie, beneficiall to our Merchants, and profitable to Cotton wooll, our Countrie, by making of Fustians, and serving for Bumbaste, and other vies : for making of

Hamaceas, which are the Indian beds, most necessarie in those parts, and also of a fine cotton cloth for clothing of the people. There is a naturall Hempe or Flax of great vie, almost as fine Naturall hemp as filke as it may be vied; we have now found out the best vie of it; and for making of hnnen or flaxe. cloth it is most excellent.

There bee many rare and singular commodities for Dyers, of which sore there is a red berrie, Divers comcalled Annoto, which being rightly prepared by the Indians, dyeth a perfect and fire Orange. modifies for tawnie in filke ; it hath beene fold in Holland for twelve fhillings starling the pound, and is yet Dyers. 60 of a good price. There is another berrie that dyeth blue. There is also a gumme of a tree, whereof I have icene experience, that in cloth dyeth a fure and perfect yellow in graine. There bee A gum which leaues of certaine Trees, which being rightly prepared, doe die a deepe red. There is also a dyeth a yellon wood which dyeth a purple, and is of a good price; and another that dyeth yellow. There is in graine, yet another wood which dyeth a purple when the liquor is hot, and a crimfon when the liquor

Nanan 3

C H A P. 16.

is cold. Many other notable things there are (no doubt) not yet knowne vnto vs. which by our diligent labour and observation in time will be discovered and found.

The fweet Gummes of mestimable value and strange operation in physicke and chirurgerie, are innumerable; there is yellow Amber, Gumma Lemnia, Colliman or Carriman, Barratta, and many more which I omit. The Collman hath beene proued by Mafter Walter Cary of Willham in Buckinghambire (a Gentleman of great judgement and practice in physicke) to be of speciall The vertues of regard for many purpoles : this gumme is black and brittle much like in flew to common pitch; Colliman or Care if you put a little of it you burning coales, it filleth all the roome with a most sweet and pleafant favour. He further reporteth of it, that certainly if you hold your head ouer the fume thereof three or foure times a day, it cureth the giddineffe of the head, and is also a most excellent 10 comfort and remedie tor a cold, moift, and rheumatike braine : it is also good against the resolution (or as the common fort call it) the dead palie, whereof the giddinesse of the head is often a meflenger, and the fore-teller of that most permicious griefe, It is also of great vie for the paine that many women haue in the lower part of their backs; which is very common to fuch as haue had chil 'ren : for remedie whereof, it is to be melted in a pewter vessell with a gentle fire, then with a knife it must be spread lightly vpon a piece of leather, and laid warme to the place grieped, vntill it come off of it felie. This plaister is also very good for aches, and doth greatly com-The Colliman fort and ftrengthen the finewes. Thus much hath Mafter Cary written and reported of it, and hath proved by his owne experience. This gumme is also approved to bee an excellent remedie

helpeth the sowt.

Barratte a rare Ballamum.

Drugges and phyficke,

An app e which prono-

drunke.

c% 55. £ 11.5 .tast.

Tobacco.

against the gowt; and of singular vertue in the cure of wounds. The Barata is a most soueraigne Balsamum farre excelling all others yet knowne : which by the lame Gentlemans experience is of admirable operation in the cure of greene wounds: and being burned upon coales, is of a fweet and odoriterous fauour.

There bee many other fweet gummes of great vie for perfumes; whereo, one doth make fweet Marge- a very rare perfume, much like vnto the ient of fweete Margerum, very pleafant and dele Hable.

For physick there be also many excellent Drugs; namely, Spiknard, Cassia Fistula, Sone; and the earth yeeldeth Bole-Armoniack, and Terra-Lemnia, all which are knowne vnto vs. There be other Drugs and Simples also of strange and rare vertue, in these parts voknowne : of which fort there is a little greene Apple, by the Indians called in their language, The flerping Apple; 20 which in operation is fo violent, that one little bit thereof doth cause a men to fleepe to death : keth fleepe to the leaft drop of the juyce of it, will purge in vehement and excessive manner, as dangerously was proved by my coulin Vnton Fifter, who first found it : for biting a little of it for a taste ; and finding it to burne his mouth infome extremitie, did fodainly fpit it out agains, but fome small quantitie of the juvce (against his will) went downe into his stomack, which for two or three dayes (pace did prouoke in him an extraordinarie fleepinefle, and purged him with fixtie feates. This Apple, for the purging vertue in fo small a quantitie, is like to bee of good price, and great estimation in the practice of physick; for the learned Physicians doe well know how to correct the fleeping qualitie thereof wherein the danger refteth. There is a berrie in those parts very ex-A berry curing cellent against the bloudie-fluxe, by the Indians it is called Kelletre. The juyce of the leafe called 40 V pper, cureth the wounds of the poyloned arrowes. The juyce of the leafe called lears, is good fluxe.

against the head-ache. Many other Drugs and Simples are there found of fingular properties. A leafe curing to both in physick and chirurgerie, which if they should bee seuerally described according to their the wounds of the second second in the second the poyfoned value and worthinesse, would containe a large Volume.

Moreover, the Tree wherewith they take their fish, is not a little to be esteemed, but chiefly A leafe cuting the great goodnesse of God therein is highly to bee prayfed and admired, who amongst so many admirable things by him created, and planted in those parts, hath vouchfased to bestow upon those barbarous people so great a benefit, and naturall helpe, for the present getting of their food and futtenance. These trees are commonly growing neere vnto the places of their habitation for their present vie : for when, at any time, they goe to fish, they take three or source little to flicks of this tree, and bruife them upon a stone, and then go into certain smal creeks by the Seashoare, which at a high water are viually full of very good fish of diners kindes . which come in with the tyde; and there they wade vp and downe the water, and betweene their hands rub those small brusted sticks therein, which are of such vertue, that they will cause she fish to turne up their bellies, and lye ftill aboue the water for a certaine time : In which space they presently take as many as they please, and lade them into their Canoes, and so with little labour returne home fufficiently prouded.

There is also a red speckled wood in that Countrie, called Pira timinere, which is worth thirtie orfortie pounds a Tun : It is excellent for Ioyners worke ; as chaires, fooles, bed-fteds, preffes, cupboords, and for wainfcot. There are divers kindes of stone of great vie, and good price, 60 as laiper, Porphyrie, and the Spleene-fione.

There is yet another profitable commoditie to be reaped in Guiana, and that is by Tabacco, which albeit some dillike, yet the general tie of men in this Kingdome doth with great affection entertaine it. It is not only in request in this our Countrey of England, but also in Ireland, the

Neatherlands, in all the Eafterly Countreyes, and Germany; and most of all amongst the Turkes. and in Barbary, The price it holdeth is great, the benefit our Merchants gaine thereby is infinite. and the Kings rent for the cultome thereof is not a little. The Tabacco that was brought into this Kingdome in the yeare of our Lord 1610. was at the least worth 60. thousand pounds: And fince 60000, worth that time the flore that yeerely hath come in, was little leffe. It is planted, gathered, feafoned, of Tanacco in and made up fit for the Merchant in hor: time, and with easie labour. But when we first arri- a yeere. ned in those parts, wee altogether wanted the true skill and knowledge how to order it, which now of late we happily have learned of the Spaniards themselves, whereby I dare presume to fay, and hope to proue, within few moneths, (as others also of found judgement, and great exto perience doe hold opinion) that onely this commoditie Tabacco ; (fo much fought after and defired) will bring as great a benefite and profit to the vindertakers, as ever the Spaniards sained by the best and richest Siluer Myne in all their Indies, considering the charge of both.

The things which the Indians defire from vs by way of trade in exchange for the about named The comodicommodities, (whereby wee hold focietie and commerce with them) are Axes, Hatchets, Bill- tiesmoft effect hookes, Knines, all kinde of Edge-tooles, Nailes, great Fish-hookes, Harping-irons, Iewes does. Trumps. Looking-glasses, blue, and white Beads, Christali Beades, Hats, Pinnes, Needles, Salt. Shirts, Bands, linnen and woollen Clothes, Swords, Muskets, Caleeuers, Powder, and Shot: but of these last mentioned, we are very sparing, and part not with many, valeffe vpon great oc-

casion, by way of gift to speciall persons.

20 When the raines ceased, which was in July, I beganne to travell abroad in fearch of those golden Mountaines, promised vnto vs before the beginning of our Voyage, (by one that undertooke Leaden minds, to guide vs to them) which filled my company to full of vaine expectation, and golden hopes, but golden that their infatiable and couetous mindes (being wholy fet thereon) could not bee fatisfied with Mynes. any thing but only Gold. Our guide that vainly made those great promises , beeing come vnto the wished place to make performance, was then posteffed with a shamelesse spirit of ignorance. for hee knew little, and could performe nothing. What other intelligences of Mynes alreadie found) I had from other men in England, and from the Malter of my thip, who had beene heretofore in those parts, I found them by experience falle, and nothing true concerning Mynes. that was in England reported voto me.

30 Our greedie defire of Gold being thus made frustrate, divers vnconstant persons of my vn- Diforders by ruly company began to murmure, to bee discontented, to kindle discords and diffentions, and to muriny. flirvo mutinie euen almost to the confusion and ruine of vs all: and were youn the point to sake off all obedience to their commanders; to abandon patience, peace, and vnitie, and wilfully to breake out into all mischiese and wretched disorder, onely because they were deceived of their golden hopes and expectations : but with good words, and comfortable perswafions . I pacified them for the time, and made them acquainted with my better hopes conceived of the commodities about mentioned. I perswaded them in generall from idlenesse, to travell abroad, to search and feeke out amongst the Indians, what other nouelties they could (though Gold were wan- Good to bee ting) whereby we might hereafter benefit our felues; and still I employed them fome one way, what to pre-40 and some another, to occupie their minds by doing something, the better to preuent differtion, uent the dead which commonly is bred of idleneffe, the flourlyfull Mother of all filthy vices.

As I daily converfed among ft the Indians, it chanced one day, that one of them prefented me with a halfe Moone of Metall, which held somewhat more then a third part Gold, the rest Copper : another also gaue me a little Image of the same Metall; and of another I bought a plate The bish of the same (which he called a spread Eagle) for an Axe. All which things they affored mee Country of were made in the high Countrey of Guiana, which they faid did abound with Images of Gold, Guiana abounby them called Carrecoory. Thefe things I shewed to my company to fettle their troubled minds, deth with imawhich gave much contentment to the greater part of them, and fatisfied vs all that there was ges of Gold. Gold in Guiana. Shortly after that my Indian Anthony Canabre, brought me a piece of a Rocke, The Rocks of

50 of white Sparre, whereof the high Countrey is full : And if the white Sparres of this kinde, the pureft which are the pureft white of all others, (for every fort of Myne hath a Sparre, and for the most white Sparre part white) be in a maine Rocke, they are certainly Mynes of Gold, or Silver, or of both I made are Mynes of triall of a piece of Sparre, which the same Indian discouered vinto mee, and I found that it held sold or filters both Gold, and Silver, which (although it was in small quantitie) gave me fatisf &tion that there be richer Mynes in the Countrey to be found ; but the best lie deeper in the earth, and wee had not time nor power to make learch for them.

I travelled up the River of Wispoco, to veiw the over-fals, but the waters being high and firong, I could not passe them. In August when they are sallen , with some labour they may bee passed. Manyouer-fala This River hath very many over-falls, lying one a good distance beyond another, even to the in Wapare.

60 head thereof. Aboue some of the first falls there dwelleth an Indian, called Comarian, who is an old man of a free disposition; by him I learned that a certaine distance about the first falls, the Riuer Army falleth into Wiapoco; moreouer that certaine dayes journey beyond him towards the high Land, upon the borders of Wiapoco, there is a Nation of Charibes having great eares of an extraordinarie bignesse, hard tobes beleeued, whom hee called Marashemaccas : amongst thele

prople

diam vie The proportie

People hauing people (as Comarian reporteth) there is an Idoll of stone, which they worship as their God; they great eares; haue placed it in a house made of purpose for the greater honour of it, which they keepe very great eares, have placed it in a house made of purpose for the greater honour of it, which they keepe very prihaps shele cleane and handsome. This Idoll is fashioned like a man sitting upon his heeles, holding open eares are made his knees, and refting his elbowes vpon them, holding vp his hands with the palmes forwards. targe by art, as discret East In- looking vpwards, and gaping with his mouth wide open. The meaning of this proportion hee could dot declare, although he hath beene many times amongst them, and hath often seene it. What other Nations were beyond these he did not know, having neuer travelled to farre. but he laith, they be Charibes, and also enemies vnto them. It feemeth there bee many Nations of thole great eared people : for in the River of Marrawini, I heard also the like, who dwell farre up towards the high Land, as hereafter you shall heare, and I suppose, by the trending of the Ri- ta uers of Wiapoco, and Marrawini, are all one people.

Vpon the fourteenth day of August I went vnto a Mountaine, called Gomeribo, beeing the vttermost point of Land to the North-ward in the Bay of Wiapoco; I found the soile of it most excellent for Tabacco, Maix, Cotton-trees, Annoto-trees, Vines, and for any other thing that should bee planted there. When I had taken good view of the place, and found it commodious for many purpoles; then in the presence of Captaine Fisher, divers Gentlemen, and others of my company, and of the Indians alio, I tooke possession of the Land, by Turfe and Twigge, in the behalfe of our Souereigne Lord King lames : I tooke the faid possession of a part, in name of the whole Continent of Guiana, lying betwirt the Rivers of Amazones, and Orenoque, not beeing

actually possessed, and inhabited by any other Christian Prince or State; wherewith the Indians 20 feemed to be well content and pleafed.

In like manner my Brother Captaine Michael Harecours, and Captaine Harney, (whom I left as his affociate, and he efteemed as an inward friend) in a notable journey, which (to their great honour) they performed, to discouer the River of Arrawary, and the Countrey bordering vpon it, The like pof- (neere adjoyning to the River of Amazones) did take the like possession of the Land there to his

The dangers and great difficulties which they in that attempt incountred, were memorable,

festion taken Maiefties vie. at Arrawar7.

Policilion ta-

ken for the

and fuch, as hardly any of our Nationin fuch small Canoes (being onely some-what longer, but not fo broad as our Thames Wherries, and flat-bottomed) euer ouercame the like. First the numher of their owne attendants besides themselues, was onely one man, and a Boy: Their troope 23 of Indians fixtie persons. Their journey by Sea vnto the River of Arrawary was neere one hundred leagues : wherein (by the way) they met with many dreadfull plunges, by reason of a high going Sea, which breaketh upon the flats and shoalds; especially, at the next great Cape to the North of Arraway, which, in refpect of the danger they paffed there, they named Point Perillow. Then their Difcouery vp the River, was fiftie leagues more : where they found a Nation of Indians, which never had feene white men, or Christians before, and could not be drawne to any familiar commerce, or conversation, no not so much as with our Indians, because they were strangers to them, and of another Nation. The Discouery of this River is of great importance, and speciall note, affoording an entrance more behouefull for the searching and Discouery of the Inland parts of Guiana, then any other River yet knowne vpon the Coast; for trending Westward 40 vp into the Land, it discouereth all the Countreyes and Nations to the Southward of Arrican, Coofbebery, Morrownia, and Norrack, which I have mentioned before.

eie in che Countrey.

Many weekes they spent in this Aduenture, still taking up their Lodgings in the Woods at night. Provision of meate they wanted not, for fish were euer plenty, and at hand : and the Woods yeelded either Deere, Tigres, or Fowle : their greatest want was of bread and drinke, which onely defect did hinder (at that time) the accomplishment of that Discouery. For when the Indians perceived their bread tobe neere spent, and their drinke to be corrupted, they could not be perswaded to proceed, having no meanes to supply their wants amongst the Arrawaries, the Indians of that River who would not freely trade with them upon this first acquaintance, but alwayes flood upon their guard, on the other fide of the River, where they inhabited : yet 50 defiring to obtaine fome of our English commodities, and make triall of our Indians friendship, affoorded some small Trade for their present reliefe during their abode in that River: So that of force they were constrained to breake off their Discouerie, and hasten homeward.

But here their dangers ended not, for as they returned, arriving at certaine Ilands called Carripoory, and passing betweene them and the mayne Land, much against the wils of all the Indians, who knowing the danger of the place, and more respecting their safetie, then their owne (being themselves all expert Swimmers) would have distanded them from that hazard: but they being ignorant of the perill, would needs passe on , and at the last met with such a Boore (35 the Seamen terme it) and violent encounter of two tydes comming in, which like two furious inraged Rammes, or Bulles rushed together, and oft retired backe, to returne againe, with greater vio-fo lence, vntill the one by force had ouer-borne the other: that if next under God) the diligent care and paines of the Indians had not preserved them, they had been there destroyed, and swallowed up by that mercilelle Boore or breach of waters; which (God be thanked) they escaped, and returned home in fafetie.

When I had (as before) taken possedion at Gomeribo, in presence of the faid parties, I deliue- Gomeribo delired the politifion of that Mountaine to my Indian Anthony Canabre, To have, hold, poffife, and ucced to an enjoy the same, to him, and to his Herres for euer, of our Souereigne Lord King lames, his Heites Indian as the and Successors, as his Subject; Teelding and paying yeerely the tenth part of all Tabacco, Cotton- Kings tenant. wooll, Annoto, and other commodities what loeuer, which should hereafter be either planted or growing within the faid Mountaine, if it were demanded. The Indian most gladly received the polletion upon these conditions, and for himselfe, and his postericie, did promise to bee true Subjects vitto the Kings Majestie: his Heires, and Successours: And to pay the duties imposed youn them; and to that bufinelle being finished, I returned agains to Wispeco.

Now (most worthy Prince) there came vnto my knowledge, an inconvenience happened by the carelette negligence of the Matter of my thip, who had the charge of prouiding and laying in The only the prouitions and victuals for the Voyage, which was the cause that I gained no present wost cause of losse by it, but left off all my Difcoueries in the first beginning. I had a purpole at that time to per- by the royage. forme a bulinesse, which might have proved profitable, and honourable vinto vs, if I had beene able to have stayed the time, but it was not my chance to bee so fortunate; for the Master, his Mates, and the Steward of my Ship, came vnto me, and told mee plainly, that if I made any longer abode in that Countrey, I would never in those ships returne into England : or if I did aduenture it, my felfe, and all my Company would starue at Sea for want of Beere . Syder, and Water, for all my Caske was spoyled, because it was not Iron-bound; the woodden hoopes flew 20 off, by reason of the heate of the Climate; and our Beere, and Syder, (whereof wee had good ftore) did leake about the ship, that we could hardly saue sufficient to releeue vs, if wee made a longer flay vpou the Coast; which was the Malters fault, having had a speciall charge to be care-

full of that onely point. By this default, I was constrained to make a vertue of necessitie, and

prepare my selfe for England, and leave my former purposes to be accomplished hereafter, which shall be done (God aiding me) in time convenient. Then disposing of my company, I appointed my Brother Captaine Michael Harecourt to Cap, Michael remayne in the Countrey, as chiefe Commander in my absence, and to continue the possession on Hauceurs leit the Kings behalfe; I gaue him directions to travell abroad, as (occasion ferued) to discouer the Commander Countrey, to spend sometime at Coofbebery, and sometime also in other places; but to make his of the compa-30 chiefest residence at Wiapoco, (the onely Rendeuouz for shippes that trade vpon that Coast) and there to plant good store of Maix, for our releife of bread and drinke, which is the chiefest thing to be respected in those parts; for other victuals wee need not take much care being alwayes eafily prouided. He performed his charge with great reputation, discouered many goodly Prouin- Possession ces, and spacious Countreyes; and worthily continued the possition full three yeares compleate. continued 3. Left with him for his affiltance, Captaine Harney, who hath nobly vowed his time and fortune yeeres. to be employed in the profecution of this honourable action. For his Lieutenant I appointed Twentiemen

in the mouth of the River Course : which hath a narrow deepe entrance, and within affoordeth

Barre, the Channell is three, foure, fiue, and fixe fathome deepe. Fine leagues within the river

and stayed at a Towne called Cormynay on the right hand, at the house of Minapa, the chiefe

Charib of that Signiorie) to pounde two Canoes to profecute our journey for the Discouerie of

50 2 good Harbour, which may in time to come (for fome speciall purpose) be of great vie.

40 from Wiapoco, and the day following arrived at Caime.

Mafter Edward Gifford, a valiant and worthy Gentleman; and Heft also with him of Gentle- lett with Capmen and others, about twentie more, with all such necessaries as I could spare, and thought con- taine Harcoar; uenient for them : and so commending them to God, the eighteenth day of August I departed at Wiapeco.

At my comming to Caime my Pinnaffe received a leake, which would have proved dangerous, if we had beene farre at Sea; whereby enforced to attend the flopping thereof, and new trime The Pinnaffe ming of the Pinnaffe; and vnwilling to be idle in the meane space doing nothing. Heft my ships leake at Chiang there to repaire theire defects, and in my ship-boate departed thence, the twentie three of August: taking with me Captaine Fifter, who hath ever beene (since we first crept into the work.) my chiefe companion, both in Armes and travels; I tooke allo with mee his Brother Unton Fin

fber, Maker Cradle the Mailers mate of my ship, and about fixe more. I followed the Coast to R. Macconid. the Westward steering during West, and passing by the Ruer of Meccooria, I lodged that night R. Courres.

The next day, and the night following I proceeded Westward with full faile, and passing the Rivers of Manmanury, Smammara, Oorassovini, Coonannonia, Vracco, and Amanna; I arrived the Rivers to the ewentie fine day at the Riner of Marrawin, which openeth a faire Riner, but is shoale woon the Barre, which lieth two or three leagues off at Sea , having but two fathome water : within the

we passed by certaine Hands called Curewapory, not inhabited, for at the rising of the waters they Hands called are alwayes ouer-flowne, of which fore the Rouer hath very many : we lodged that night a lit- Curempery.

tle beyond these first Ilands at a Village called Moyemon, on the left hand, the Captaine thereof is called Maperitate, of the Nation of the Paragotos, a man very louing and faithull to our Nation 60 on, whereof we have had good proofe. The next day wee proceeded up the River three leagues,

on of their

People having people (as Comarian reporterh) there is an Idoll of flone, which they worthip as their God: they have placed it in a house made of purpose for the greater honour of it, which they keepe very great eares; have placed it in a house made of purpose for the greater honour of it, which they keepe very pulpass these cleane and handsome. This Idoll is fashioned like a man sitting vpon his heeles, holding open eares are made his knees, and refting his elbowes voon them, holding vp his hands with the palmes forwards, large by art, as locking vpwards, and gaping with his mouth wide open. The meaning of this proportion hee divers Eaft incould dot declare, although he hath beene many times amongst them, and hath often seene it. The proportie What other Nations were beyond these he did not know, having neuer travelled to farre. but he faith, they be Charibes, and also enemies vnto them. It seemeth there bee many Nations of thole great eared people : for in the River of Marrawini, I heard also the like , who dwell farre vp towards the high Land, as hereafter you shall heare, and I suppose, by the trending of the Riners of Wiapoco, and Marrawini, are all one people.

Vpon the fourteenth day of August I went vnto a Mountaine, called Gomeribo, beeing the vetermost point of Land to the North-ward in the Bay of Wiapoco; I found the foile of it most excellent for Tabacco, Maix, Cotton-trees, Annoto-trees, Vines, and for any other thing that should bee planted there. When I had taken good view of the place, and found it commodious for many purpoles; then in the presence of Captaine Fifter, divers Gentlemen, and others of my company, and of the Indians also, I tooke possession of the Land, by Turfe and Twigge, in the behalfe of our Souereigne Lord King lames : I tooke the faid postession of a part, in name of the whole Continent of Guiana, lying betwirt the Rivers of Amazones, and Orenoque, not beeing actually possessed, and inhabited by any other Christian Prince or State; wherewith the Indians 20

feemed to be well content and pleafed.

In like manner my Brother Captaine Michael Harecourt, and Captaine Harney, (whom I left as his affociate, and he effeemed as an inward friend) in a notable journey, which (to their great honour) they performed, to discouer the River of Arrawary, and the Countrey bordering upon it, The like pof- (neere adioyning to the River of Amazones) did take the like possession of the Land there to his

The dangers and great difficulties which they in that attempt incountred, were memorable,

festion taken Maiefties vie. as Arrawan.

ken for the

and fuch, as hardly any of our Nationin fuch small Canoes (being onely some-what longer, but not to broad as our Thomes Wherries, and flat-bottomed) ever overcame the like. First the numher of their owne attendants besides themselues, was onely one man, and a Boy: Their troope 20 of Indians fixtie persons. Their journey by Sea vnto the River of Arrawary was neere one hundred leagues; wherein (by the way) they met with many dreadfull plunges, by reafon of a high going Sea, which breaketh youn the flats and shoalds; especially, at the next great Cape to the North of Arraway, which, in respect of the danger they pasted there, they named Point Perillow. Then their Discouery up the River, was fiftie leagues more : where they found a Nation of Indians, which neuer had feene white men, or Christians before, and could not be drawne to any familiar commerce, or conversation, no not so much as with our Indians, because they were strangers to them, and of another Nation. The Discouery of this River is of great importance, and speciall note, affoording an entrance more behouefull for the searching and Discouery of the Inland parts of Guiana, then any other River yet knowne vpon the Coast; for trending Westward 40 up into the Land, it discouereth all the Countreyes and Nations to the Southward of Arricary, Coofbebery, Morrownia, and Norrack, which I have mentioned before.

Many weekes they spent in this Aduenture, still taking up their Lodgings in the Woods at night. Prouision of meate they wanted not, for fish were euer plenty, and at hand : and the Woods yeelded either Deere, Tigres, or Fowle: their greatest want was of bread and drinke, which onely defect did hinder (at that time) the accomplishment of that Discouery. For when the Indians perceived their bread tobe neere spent, and their drinke to be corrupted, they could not be perswaded to proceed, having no meanes to supply their wants amongst the Arrawaries, the Indians of that River who would not freely trade with them upon this first acquaintance, but alwayes flood vpon their guard, on the other fide of the River, where they inhabited : yet 50 defiring to obtaine some of our English commodities, and make trial of our Indians friendship, affoorded some small Trade for their present reliefe during their abode in that River : So that of force they were constrained to breake off their Discouerie, and hasten homeward.

But here their dangers ended not, for as they returned, arriving at certaine llands called Carripoory, and paffing betweene them and the mayne Land, much against the wils of all the Indians, who knowing the danger of the place, and more respecting their safetie, then their owne (being themselves all expert Swimmers) would have distinated them from that hazard: but they being ignorant of the perill, would needs paffe on , and at the last met with such a Boore (15 the Seamen terme it) and violent encounter of two tydes comming in, which like two furious inraged Rammes, or Bulles rushed together, and oft retired backe, to returne againe, with greater vio- fo lence, vntill the one by force had over-borne the other: that if next vnder God) the diligent care and paines of the Indians had not preserved them, they had been there destroyed, and swallowed vp by that mercilelle Boore or breach of waters; which (God be thanked) they escaped, and returned home in fafetie.

CH AP. 16, Indians at Gomeribo the King of Englands tenants.

When I had (as before) taken possedion at Gomeribo, in presence of the faid parties, I deliue-Gomeribo delired the policifion of that Mountaine to my Indian Anthony Canabre, To have, hold, possesse, and uccedes an enior the fame, to him, and to his Heires for euer, of our Souereigne Lord King lames, his Heires Indian as the and Successors, as his subject; Teelding and paying yeerely the tench part of all Tabacco, Cotton. Kings tenaph wooll. Annoto, and other commodities what joeuer, which should hereafter be either planted or growing within the faid Mountaine, if it were demanded, The Indian most gladly received the polletion voon these conditions, and for himselfe, and his posteritie, did promise to bee true Subjects vinto the Kings Maiestie: his Heires, and Successours: And to pay the duties imposed ypon them ; and to that bufineffe being finished, I returned agains to Wiapoco.

Now (most worthy Prince) there came vnto my knowledge, an inconvenience happened by the carelesse negligence of the Master of my ship, who had the charge of providing and laying in The only

the prouitions and victuals for the Voyage, which was the cause that I gained no present profit cause of losse by it, but left off all my Discoueries in the first beginning. I had a purpose at that time to per- by the voyage. forme a bulinesse, which might have proved profitable, and honourable vinto vs, if I had beene able to have flaved the time, but it was not my chance to bee fo fortunate; for the Maffer, his Mates, and the Steward of my Ship, came vnto me, and told mee plainly, that if I made any longer abode in that Countrey, I would never in those ships returne into England : or if I did aduenture it, my felfe, and all my Company would starue at Sea for want of Beere , Syder, and

Water, for all my Caske was ipoyled, because it was not Iron-bound; the woodden hoones flew 20 off, by reason of the heate of the Climate; and our Beere, and Syder, (whereof wee had good ftore) did leake about the ship, that we could hardly saue sufficient to releeue vs , if wee made a longer flay voou the Coast; which was the Masters fault, having had a special charge to be carefull of that onely point. By this default, I was conftrained to make a vertue of necessitie, and prepare my felfe for England, and leave my former purpofes to be accomplished hereafter, which shall be done (God aiding me) in time convenient.

Then disposing of my company, I appointed my Brother Captaine Michael Harecourt to Cap, Michael remayne in the Countrey, as chiefe Commander in my absence, and to continue the possession on Haracure leit the Kings behalfe; I gaue him directions to travell abroad, as (occasion ferued) to discover the Commander Countrey, to spend sometime at Coolbebery, and sometime allo in other places; but to make his of the compaso chiefest residence at Wiapoco, (the onely Rendeuouz for shippes that trade vpon that Coait) and there to plant good store of Maix, for our releife of bread and drinke, which is the chiefest thing

to be respected in those parts; for other victuals wee need not take much care being alwayes eafily prouided. He performed his charge with great reputation, discouered many goodly Prouin- Possession ces, and spacious Countreyes; and worthily continued the post fion full three yeeres compleate. continued 3. Left with him for his affiltance, Captaine Harney, who hath nobly vowed his time and fortune yeeres. to be employed in the profecution of this honourable action. For his Lieutenant I appointed Twentie men Mafter Edward Gifford, a valiant and wor by Gentleman; and Heft also with him of Gentle- lett with Capmen and others, about twentie more, with all such necessaries as I could spare, and thought conuenient for them : and fo commending them to God, the eighteenth day of August I departed at "iapecs. no from Wispoco, and the day following arrived at Caime.

At my comming to Caises my Pinnaffe received a leake, which would have proved dangerous, if we had beene farre at Sea; whereby enforced to attend the stopping thereof, and new trim- The Pinnosse ming of the Pinnaffe; and vinwilling to be idle in the meane space doing nothing, I left my ships leake at Chiage there to repaire theire defects, and in my thip-boate departed thence, the twentie three of Auguft : taking with me Captaine Fifber, who hath euer beene (fince we first creptinto the world) my chiefe companion, both in Armes and trauels; I tooke also with mee his Brother Unton Fifber, Mafter Cradle the Maiters mate of my ship, and about fixe more. I followed the Coast to R. Microbid. the Westward steering during West, and passing by the Ruer of Mescooria, I lodged that night R. Courres. in the mouth of the River Course : which hath a narrow deepe entrance, and within affoordeth 50 a good Harbour, which may in time to come (for some special purpose) be of great vie.

The next day, and the night following I proceeded Weltward with full faile, and paffing the Rivers of Manmanury, Smammara, Oorassowini, Coonannonia, Vracco, and Amanna; I arrived the Rivers to the twentie fine day at the Riner of Marrawen, which openeth a faire Riner, but is shoale vpon the Barre, which lieth two or three leagues off at Sea , having but two fathome water : within the Barre, the Channell is three, foure, fine, and fixe fathome deepe. Fine leagues within the river we passed by certaine Hands called Curewapory, not inhabited, for at the rising of the waters they Hands called are alwayes ouer-flowne, of which fore the Ruer hath very many : we lodged that night a lit- carement, tle beyond these first slands at a Village called Mojemon, on the left hand, the Captaine thereof is called Maperitates, of the Nation of the Paragotes, a man very louing and faithuil to our Nation 600n, whereof we have had good proofe. The next day wee proceeded up the River three leagues, and stayed at a Towne called Coenynay on the right hand, at the house of Minapa, the chiefe Charib of that Signiorie) to pourde two Canoes to profecute our journey for the Difcouerie of

Trees which had the fenfe of feeling: Thefe grow both in the

1.day, 2. meeke.

Vignit 2 Towncof 20. houses. left at Wiawia,

M. Filber tra. like Buffe.

The twentie eight day we went forward paffing many Villages any Townes, which I for-They proceed in discourty of beare to name, and having gone about twentie leagues from the Sea, wee found the River in a manner barred vp with Rockes, ouer which the water falleth with great violence, yet not with-The River full standing weadventured to proceed, and the further wee went, the more dangerous wee found

the over fals, and more in number; but when wee had passed the first Mountaine, towards the high Countries of Guiana, called Sapparon, and discouered farre off before vs other high Moun-They went fixe taines called Matawere Monpanana, and had proceeded fixe dayes journey up the River (which daies journey was more then fortie leagues) we met with fuch shoale rockie streams, and great ouer-fals, that vp the River, there to our griefe our journey ended.

Being thus for that time debarred from our intended Difcourrie, we prepared our felues with to patience to returne towards our ships, and the third day of September we turned downe the Riuer. shooting the over-fals with more celeritie then when we came up, difpatching three dayes journey in one, and the fifth day returned fate to Mojemon; but before I departed thence, Captaine Fifter told me of certaine Plants which her had then found, much like vnto Rofe-trees. growing about halfe a yard in height, whereof (for the strangenesse of them) I cannot forbeare to adde a word or two.

These Plants or little trees had affuredly the sence of feeling, as plainly appeared by touching

them : for if you did but touch a leafe of the tree with your finger, that leafe would prefently fhrinke, and close up it felfe, and hang downe as if it were dead; and if you did out off a leafe with a paire of Cizzers, then all the other leaves growing upon the fame tree would instantly 10 Fast indies & shrinke and close up themselves, and hang downe as if they were dead and withered, and within in Guinne. See halfe a quarter of an houre, would by degrees open themselues againe, and flourish as before; and 10. Gom, 10.1. dig. as often as you did either touch or cut off any of them, they would doe the like; which dideuidently they a reftriction of the Spirits, inuncibly arguing a Senfe. Howfoeuer this may feeme strange and incredible to your Highnesse, and to them that have not seene it, yet toralmuch as Scaliger Evercit. Scaliger, and Bartas make mention of the like, I dare be bold to affirme it vpon my credit, having feene and shewed it to fortie others : I gathered two of the Plants, and did fet them in pots in their owne earth, and carried them abourd my ship, where I kept them fairely growing almost a fortnight, untill they were destroyed by certaine Monkeyes that brake loofe, and pulled them in pieces : which might have beene prevented, but that I was conftrained to fet them in the o- 20 pen aire, the better to preferue them.

The feuenth day, I went to Wiania, a great Towne of Paragetos, and Taios, four leagues to the West of Marrawini, whereof Maperitaka aboue mentioned, and Arapawaka, are chiefe Captaines, At this Towne I left my Coulin Viton Fifter, and Humfrey (routon an Apothecary, M.V. nton Fifter to beare him company, and one feruant to attend him called Christopher Fifter, having first taken and two others order with Mapernaka for their diet, and other necessaries both for travell, and other wile: who euer fince (according to his promife) hath performed the part of an honest man, and faith-

I gaue directions to my Coulin Fifter to profecute the Discouerie of Marrawini, and the inland parts bordering voon it, when the time of the yeere, and the waters better ferued; and if it 40 were possible to goe vp into the high Countrey of Guiana, and to finde out the Citie of Manoa, mentioned by Sir Walter Raleigh in his Discouerie. He followed my directions to the vttermost of lus abilitie, being of a good wit, and very industrious, and enabled to vndergoe those imployments, by obtaining the love, and gaining the Languages of the people, without which helpes, there is little or no good to be done in those parts.

When the waters of Marrawini were rifen, and the River paffable, (much differing from the uelled cieuen Riuer of Wiapoco, which is not to be trauelled, but in the lowest waters.) Hee began his iourney tothe River of for the Discourrie thereof, in company of the Apothecarie, his servant Fifter, the Indian Mape-Morta,viz.100. ritake, and eighteene others, and proceeded eleuen dayes journey up the River, to a Towne of Charibes, called Tanpuramane, diffant from the Sea aboue an hundred leagues; but was foure The Province dayes journey fhort of Moreflego, which is also a Towne of Charibes, lituate upon the River fide of Marginegoro. in the Province of More/hegoro: the chiefe Captaine thereof is called Areminta: who is a proud rough skinnes and bold Indian, much feared of all those that dwell within his Territories, having a rough skin like vnto Buffe Leather, of which kind there be many in those parts; and I suppose proceedeth of some infirmitie of the bodie.

He understood by relation of the Indians of Taupuramune, and also of Areminta, that fix dayes iourney beyond Moresbego, there are divers mightie Nations of Indians, having holes through Divins mighty their Eares, Cheekes, Noftrils, and neather Lips, which were called Crameanna, Paumeeanna, Nations of In- Quikeanna, Peemattere, Aramceso, Acamreanno, Accoreo, Tareepeeanna, Corecorickado, Peeauncadissesting in the Coccasion, Informa, and Warensife: and were of thrength and stature farre exceeding other In- 69
Marraw in, towards the light, disses, having Bowes, and Arrowes foure times as bigge: what the Indians also report of the greatnesse of their eares, I forbeare to mention, vntill by experience wee shall discouer the truth thereof. Moreover, hee learned that there fall into Marrawini divers great Rivers, called

CHAP. 16 Danger of drowning, Punta de Galea, An excellent Bath at Meues. 1281

Arrenne, Topannamin, Errewin, Cowomma, Poorakette, Arroua, Arretemenne, Waonne, Anape, Rine: falling Againe, and Carapio: whereof forme he hath feene himfelfe, That it was twentie dayes journey, into Marran int from Tanpuramune, to the head of Marrawini, which is inhabited by Armaccai, Sappaios, Para- I wenue daies cotes, and some Taies: and that a dayes journey from thence to the Land-ward the Countrey is journey from phine, and Champian ground, with long graffe. Hee paffed in this iourney aboue eightie ouer. Tanjuran mee phine, and Champian ground, with long grane. Hee patted in this lourney about eight to the head of fals of water, and many of them very dangerous; of tome of them I had experience the yeere to the head of before. He proceeded no further at that preient, being unprouided for fo long a journey, support The Countries fing that it had beene neerer (then he found it) to the head of the River by a formights travell : above the and fo returned backe in fixe dayes space, intending better preparation for a second journey : but head of Mar, is 10 his purpole was preuented by an victimely death: for shortly after shee was drowned by mission. tune ; whereby we fee, that man determineth, but God difpofeth.

"He tenth day of September being Sunday, I left the maine of Guiana, and in my ship-boat Thetenth of THE tenth day of September being Sunday, I tere the mante of color or ride four e leagues from thore, September thood off into the Sea to feeke my thips, which were forced to ride four e leagues from thore, September though the thirty leit of a sea of the caff away by the thirty leit of a by reason of the shoales; but as we passed ouer them, we were in danger to bee cast away by the they let Guiabreach of a Sea, which verily had funke our Boat, if with great celeritie wee had not lightned they were in her, by he using ouer-boord many baskets of bread, of Cassan, Maix, Pinas, Platanas, Potatoes, and danger to be fuch like prouision, wherewith our Boat was loden; by which means it pleased God to deliuer vs cast away. from pretent deltraction, and to bring vs fafe vnto our fhips.

30 When I came aboord, we weighed anchor, and steered away from the Iland of Trinidado, and when the eighteenth day in the morning, we arrived at Punta de Galea, where wee found three They finde a English hips at anchor, which was no small comfort vnto vs, confidering our great defects and English thips at wanes. One of thele shippes was called the Diana, belonging to Master Lat a Dutch Merchant Punta de Galeadwelling in London. The other two, the Penelope, and the Indenour, belonging to Matter Hall, 2 Merchant also of London. We stayed at this place fixe daies to mend our bad Caske, and to take fresh water : during which time I was kindly intreated, and feasted by the Merchants, and had supply of all such things as I stood in neede of; which courtese I requited in the best manner I could for the prefent.

Vpon Sunday the twentie foure of September we weighed anchor, fo likewife did the Diana 30 (the other two shippes beeing gone two or three daies before vs,) but the winde shifting to the North-east, inforced vs backe againe almost to the same place from whence wee departed. The ewenrie fine we weighed againe, and plied along the shoare towards Cape Brea, about three leagues. This Cape is fo called of the Pitch which is there gotten in the earth, whereof there is Pitch gotten fuch abundance, that all places on this fide of the World may bee flored therewith. It is a most which melterly excellent Pitch for trimming of thippes that paffe into their Regions and hot Countries, for it now the the melteth not with the Sunne, as other Pitch doth,

The twentie fixe day we flood along againe, the winde being still contrarie and variable, intermixt with many calmes, and to continued vntill the fecond of October, when we arrived at They arrive at Port de Hispania. Within two daies after our arrivall there, Don Sanches de Mendosa, the Te- Port de Hissaria 40 miente for that yeere, with certaine other Spaniards came abourd vs : wee gave them the besten- Don Sanches de tertainment that our meanes, the time, and place would affoord, and had much friendly confe- Mendofa comrence together. They told me, that they lately had a conflict with the Charibes, wherein they their ship, had loft feuen or eight of their men, and had many others hurt and wounded, whereof fome came tomy Chirargion to have their wounds dreffed during our abode there. And they plainly The Signified: confessed that they are very much molested by the Chariber; and knew not how by any meanes much mole-

50 for the paffages, called Les forot beccas de Drago, and difembogued about eight of the clocke

We staied at Porte de Hispania untill the seventh day, in hope to get some good Tobacco amonght the Spaniards, who daily fed vs with delaies and faire words, but in truth they had none good at that present for vs, which we perceiving, departed thence vpon the seventh day, about They depart

one of the clocke in the morning, leaving the other thips to attend their trade, and flood away from Trinidade

the fame morning. Then wee steered away for an Iland called Menes, and leauing the Ilands of Granado, Saint Vincent, Guadalupa, and Monferate, in our starboard side, wee arrived They arrives there the twelfth day, where we flopped to take in ballaft, and more water, for our thips were ment

In this Iland there is an hot Bath, which as well for the reports that I have heard, as also for An excellent that I have seene and found by experience, I doe hold for one of the best and most source gne in hot Bath at

that one of the same persons now, or lately dwelt at Woolwich neere the River of Thames, by 60 whom the truth may be knowne, if any man defire to bee further fatisfied therein. As for my owne experience, although it was not much, yet the effects that I found it worke both in my felfe, and others of my company in two daies space, doe cause mee to conceive the best of it. For An extr. sine at my comming thither, I was grieuously vexed with an extreame cough, which I much feared cough cured would turne me to great harme, but by bathing in the Bath, and drinking of the water, I was by the Bath.

the World. I have heard that divers of our Nation have there beene cured of the Leprofie, and Mress,

1282 Departure from Meues by Faval, Arrivall at Crook-hauen in Ireland. LIB. VI.

burned with Guppowder. and by the Bath cured in

Swellings in the legges cue red in a day. They depart

Faral.

They are driuen bya ftorme into Ireland

The number of those that

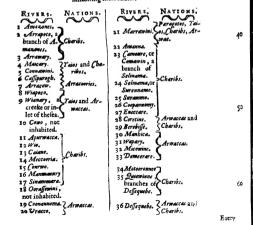
speedily cured ; and euer fince that time, I haue found the flate of my body (I giue God thanken for it) farre exceeding what it was before, in strength and health. Moreover, one of my compa-A mans hand ny, named John Huntbatch (feruant to my brother) as he was making a fire, burned his hand with Gunpowder, and was in doubt thereby to loofe the vie of one or two of his fingers, which were fhrunke vp with the fire, but he went prefently to the Bath, and washed and bathed his hand a good space therein, which soopled his fingers in such manner, that with great ease he could fliand firetch them out, and the fire was fo washed out of his hand that within the space of twenty foure hours, by twice or thrice washing and bathing it, the forenesse thereof was cured onely the eye-fore for the time remained. Furthermore, two or three other of my company having fwellings in then legs, were by the Bath cured in a day.

Hence we departed the fixteenth day of October, in the afternoone, and leaving the Ilands of Saint Christopher, Saint Martin, and Anguilla on the Starboord fide , we diffembogued through the broken Ilands on the North fide of Anguilla vpon S. Lukes day, where I thinke neuer Eng. Libraran diffembogued before vs: for we found all our Sea-charts falle concerning that place, those broken llands being placed therein, to the Southward of Anguilla, betweene it and Saint Martime, and we found them icituate to the Northward thereof.

On the eleuenth day of Nouember wee had fight of Fayal, one of the Ilands of the Terceras which we left on our starboord side, and sleeted away for England, the winde continuing faire untill the twenty foure day, But then it changed, first to the East by North, and then to the East South-east, and became so violent and furious, that for three dayes space we were not able 30 to beare our faile, but did drine before the winde at the least three leagues, a watch out of our courfe : and the first land we made was Cape Cleere, in the South-west part of Ireland, where against our wils we arrived at Crooke Hanen the twenty nine of November.

During the time of my Voyage, we loft but one Land-man, who died in Guiana; and one Sailer, and an Indian Boy, who died at Sea in our returne : and during the space of these three yeares last past fince the voyage, of all the men which I left in the Countrey, being in number about thirty, there died but fix, whereof one was drowned, another was an old man of threefcore years of age, and another tooke his death by his owne diforder; the rest died of sicknesse, as pleased God the giver of life : for fuch small lose, his holy name be blessed now and ever.

The names of the Riners falling into the Sea from Amazones, to Dessequebe, and of the severall Nations inhabiting those Rivers.



CHAP, 17. Fish good flesh, Marwin with the adiacent Regions and Inhabitants, 1282

Finery house hath Cocks, Hennes, and Chickens, as in England; and the variety of fish is wonderfull, without compare; but the chiefelt comfort of our Country-men is this, that the Beaft called Mappary and the fish called the Sea-Cow (being severally as bigge as a Heiser of two years A beaff and a old, and of which kinde there are very many) are in eating to like vnto our English Beefe, that fift like Beefe old, and to white the can diffinguish them, and may as well as Beefe be salted, and kept for our pro-tision. There is also a Beast in colour like a Fawne, but fuller of white spots, in stature somewhate Mutton. leffe then a small Sheepe, and in tafte like Mutton, but is rather better meate : the Baremo is also of the same tafte. I have the Copie of Master Harcourt his Patent, and he published also certaine Articles for the Aduenturers, &c. which for breuity are omitted.

CHAP. XVII.

A Relation of the habitations and other Observations of the River of Marwin, * and the adjorning Regions.

Townes in the River of Marwin.

" I found this fairely written amongst M. Hak. papers, hur know nor who was the

Nprimis, Marracommin a little Village so called where the Armaccas dwell. whose chiefe Captaine is Coretan, and is at the foot of the River of Marwin in a creake on the left hand going vp the River. Secondly, Ruffia a little Village fo called where likewise Armaccas dwell being likewise at the foote of the River on the right hand going up the River. Thirdly, Moryemon, a large Towne where are some twentie houses all builded very lately, inhabited by Paramagotos and Taios, whole chiefe Captaine is Maperitacea (being the Captaine with whom the Generall left vs. and with whom we continue) being on the left hand of the River. Fourthly, Kiamarie, a Towne inhabited by Careebees, almost right against Moyremon, whose Chiefetaine is-30 Fiftly, Tonorima, a little Village aboue Kiewary inhabited by Careebees, being on the same fide of the River, who be governed by the Captaine of Quuenow, Sixtly, Quuenou, a Towne fome quarter of a mile distant from Tonorima, inhabited by Careebees, whose Chiefetaine is Vcapea, havinga lame hand. Seventhly, Aronaita, a Towne situate on the same side of the River (whose inhabitants be Careebees but a good prettie way beyond, whose Chiefetaine is Seepanes Eightly, Co. murraty, a Towne fituate beyond Aronatta, on the other fide of the River, whose Inhabitants be Careebees, and Chiefetaine is Parapane. Ninthly, Pasim, a Towne situate beyond Commeratie on the same fide of the River whose Inhabitants bee Careeb, and Chiefetaine is Tanatmeya. Tenthly, Paramaree, a Towne fituate beyond Pasim on the other side of the River, inhabited by

paramunns, whose Inhabitants be Careebees. Twelfthly, a daies journey from thence is another Towne called Moreefbeego, whose Inhabitants be Careebees. About some twentie daies journey beyond Moreesbeego is a Towne called Aretonenne, whose Inhabitants bee Careebees having vebeyond Coursespeege is a Lowin Called Section, rie long earcs hanging to their shoulders, and they are reported to beea very gentle and louing long earcs, perhaps made uing people. Some twentie daies farther is the head of the River Marwin, where dwell Paraby art, with wagatos, Arwascas, and Suppay, and after a daies journey in the Land, they report the way to hanging be very faire, and Champian ground with long graffe.

Careabees, whose Chiefetaine is Iuara. There is beyond Paramaree a lone house, beeing situate

Eleuenthly, about some eleuen daies journey beyond the lone house there is a towne called Tan-

40 some dayes journey from Paramaree on the same side of the River being inhabited by Careebees.

Townes from the foot of Marwin on the Northfide along the Sea.

First, Equimibone, a Towne inhabited by Armaccas and Paramagotos. Secondly, Carcoofcom rooro, inhabited by Armaccas, whose Chiefetaine is Woaccome. Thirdly, Ampea inhabited by Armaccas. Fourthly, about fix mile within Land is Careebee, inhabited by Armaccas, whose Chiefetaine is Aramea, Fifely, Wia Wiam, about two miles from the Sea, a Towne inhabited by Taios, Parrawagotos and Arwaecas, whose Chiefetaine is Araponaca. Sixtly, Soorry Soorry, fome two mile directly farther toward the Sea fide, inhabited by Parawagotos , whose Chiefetaine is Resurrima. Seventhly, Amiebas, a little distant from Soory Soory, inhabited by Paramagotos. Eightly, Viegnano, some fixe mile beyond Sorry Soory, inhabited by Taos and Parawage. 60 tos. Ninthly, Vrarinno adiovning to Vicenano, inhabited by Armaccas and Paramagotos. Tenthly, Surarer a daies iourney beyond Wia Wiam vp into the Land inhabited by Armaccas. Eleventhly, Simarra, some fixe miles diffant from Wia Wiam, inhabited by Arwaccas, Twelfthly, Capri, a Towne adiopning to Simarra, inhabited by Armaccas. Thirteenthly, Consocre, a Town adiovning to Caure, inhabited by Paramagotos, and Armaccas.

weights thereon as is yied in the Eaft IB- Waters ouer-

To most of these places there can be no passage but by Canoas in the Winter being marsh-medowy grounds, overflowne with swelling Tides. But in the Summer it is faire, and then they hide their Canoas in the Woods by the Sea-fide.

Greve Bare Darke and

As for the River of Marwin, there are no other Rivers which fall into it : but there be many llands, and fome very great. The passage to the head thereof from the men with long eares is very dangerous, by realon of the paffage through hollow and concaue Rockes, wherein harbour Bat-mife of an voreatonable bigneffe , which with their clawes and wings doe wound the Palfengers shrewdly; yea, and oftentimes depriue them of life. During which paffage (which is dangerous paf- fome quarter of a mile, and very darke; for the Rockes are close aboue, and in fashion like an Indian house) they are inforced to make great fires in their Canoas, and put over their heads some of their Crab-baskets ro defend them from the force of their clawes and wings, and fo they fafe-

Stones arank parent, Sec A. Kninet.

Stanistide

There is a Chareebee (with whom I am very well acquainted) whole name is Caronree) who affured me of certaine transparent itones, both of a greene and red colour, which hee described by a greene eare-ring which I shewed him, affirming they were somewhat bigger, and that they lay in a little gutter at the head of the River, which ran in a Valley betweene two Hills. I was further informed by a Taio, an ancient man (who came downe from the head of the Ri-

uer Selmama in a little Canoa, with foure other, and a boy; three of which were Armaccas, and one Taio, who was borne in Orenoz, , and as I judge, about the age of fourescore yeeres , or little leffe) who reported to mee, that hee was one of them which with Morequite and Patimay, was an at the killing of nine Spaniards , and a Spanis Pedas ; and how Morequito was put to death. and a greatmany of his Indians hanged : himselfe was taken prisoner, and pinched with Pinters for his punishment, and his eares nailed to wood, which I coniecture was a Pillourie. Besides. they rubbed his body ouer with falt mixt with Vrine, after they had pinched him, and fetche bloud, and after tyed him up in chaines. The reason why they put him not to death . was because hee had beene a great Traueller and knew the Countries well, and so they kept him for

It so chanced, that the Spaniards, upon his informing them of the Cassipagotos Countrie, and how rich they were, and how he would be their guide, went with fome companie to conquer it: the Captaine of the Spaniards was called Alexander, as he faith. But the Caffipagotes knowing 20 his crueltie, thought it better to fight it out, then trult to his clemency, and so overthrew him and his companie, driving them to their Canoas, in which fight he escaped: But yet afterward it was his milhap to be againe in the hands of his adversarie by the meanes of Caripana King of Emeria, and put in chaines, and handled cruelly. His body was besmeared, as he said, with a vellow stone; for so he called it, which I take to be Brimstone, and so set on fire on his body, and at Gazinles on after that he was well, and his skinne smooth and faire, they anointed him with honie from top the South Sea to toe, and fo scattered dust upon him, in which which were millions of Pismires, tying him in chaines to a great tree, where Muskitos flockt about him like moates in the Sunne, and did pitiin iron chains fully fling him, then which death had beene better, as hee faid. Within fome small space hee with another Tajo, and three Armaccas were choien to goe a fishing some two dayes journey AD whipped till from the Towne. Likewise there went as overseers over them foure Spaniards, three of which. athis flesh was while they were a fishing went into the Wood a fowling, and the fourth which was left for the raw, and to to operfeer by chance fell allegge, which they efpying, agreed to release themselves and to slip from the shoare with their Canoa, and went vp Selinama seuen dayes iourney within land from the head thereof to a Towne of the Armaccas, called Corropon, where he now dwellerh, whose death by Mus name is Weepaskea; and the chiefe Armacca which came with him is called Edaddeama, and the Captaine of Cooroopen is called Naushickeban. This Taio told mee of a Mountaine at the head Goldenhopes, of Difficebee which is called Oraddoo, where is a great Rocke of white Spar, which hath streams of Gold in it about the breadth of a Goose-quill ; and this he affirmeth very earnestly. Also he speaketh of a Plaine which is some seuen or eight dayes journey from the Mountaine where is 50 great store of Gold in graines so big as the top of a mans finger, and after the flouds be fallen they findethem, which Plaine is called Mumpara.

Further, he spake of a Valley not farre distant from thence, which is called Wancoobanona. which hath the like : and he faid, they gather them the space of two moneths together; which two moneths are prefently after the great raines which wash away the sand and gravell from the graffe which groweth in turfets, and then they may perceive the Gold lie gluttering on the ground. And of these they are very charie. And the Captaines and Priests or Peeas; doe charge the Indians very strictly, yea with punishment of the whip, that they be secret, and not reueale it to the Spaniard. But it feemeth they are willing the English should have it, or else bee would neuer have related fo much of the state of his Countrie.

He spake very much of Sit Walter Raleigh: he likewise knew Francis Sparrow, and the boy 60 which Sir Walter left behind him at Topiamary his house. He further faid, that Topiamary wondred that he heard not from Sir Walter, according to his promife: and how Topicsary did verily thinke, that the Spaniard had met with him, and so had slaine him. Further, her faith how To-

piawary is dead, and how one Repenogegraps succeeded in his roome. Likewise he sayth Carpa-na the King of Emeria, who was very subject to the Spaniard, and did once betray him to the Snaniard, 15 now dead : at which he feemed not a little to resoyce; and how one Dothronias 15 in his place, and is a good King , holding Armes against the Spaniar I with the Cassipagotos, and and groung him many ouerthrowes, to that now hee hath cleare left Diffikeebee and not a Spaniard there. He likewile faid, how Topiamary had drawne in the Indians of Warmacheri, Amariocupana, Aromana, Wickery, and all the people that belonged to Wanuritane, Captaine of Canuria, and Wacariopea Captaine of Sayma against Sir Walter Raleigh his comming to have warred assauft the Teanderpuremei: And as yet Wanuritone and Wacartopea doe expect his comming. against the temperature of the two Nations of Timitimas, called Ciamona and Warawitty, Timitimas home to the two Nations of Timitimas, called Ciamona and Warawitty, feson nees

He addeth further, now he which the transfer on the top of trees. And now he faith the Spatos, who are forced in the flouds to build their houles on the top of trees. And now he faith the Spatos, miard hath for the most part destroyed them, keeping divers of them to make and mend his Canoas. Further hee knew Toparimacca, and fayth hee is yet living, and Captaine of Aramaca a Napor, who likewife doth expect Sir Walter his comming, and had drawne a companie of Indians for the aide and affiftance of Sir Walter. Likewife, how Patimay is yet living, and how the Spaniards have layd great waite for him, but could never finger him to bee revenged for his pare of killing the nine Spaniards. Further he addeth, how the Spaniards were killed at a Mountaine called Riconers in Patimays Countrie, and how Patimay expected long for Sir Walter Raleigh. Likewise he saith, how the Epouremei haue now two very faire Townes, one called Aruburgua-20 ry, and the other Corburrimore: and faith, they are not good people, yet they dare not warre

with them. He further affirmeth of the men whole shoulders are higher then their heads , which Men with he called Wyweppanamy, and offereth to goe with me thither if I come up in their high Countrie house reprinted the foreign can be and bend their forces against the Spaniard. He this heads. further spake of a white, cleare, high and huge Rocke vnder a Mountaines side, which is called Cryst il Rock, Mattuick, that on a Sun-shine day if a man looked on it, it would dazle his eyes exceedingly. Hee shewed mee before his departure from me,a piece of metall fashioned like an Eagle, and as I ghelle, it was about the weight of eight or nine ounces troy weight, it feemed to be Gold or at leastwise two parts Gold and one Copper, I offered him an Axe, which he refused; to which I Images of added foure Kniues, but could not get it of him : but I imagine the Dateb at Selinama have gold,

20 bought it of him, for their only comming was for Axes, as he faid, hearing that the Dutch were at Selinama. I demanded where hee had that Eagle, his answere was, hee had it of his Vncle. who dwelt among the Weear sapoyns in the Countrie called Sherumerrimary neare the Callinger. tos Countrie where is great ftore of these Images. Further he faid, that at the head of Selinama and Marwin there were great itore of the halve Moones, which hee called by the name of Vinnaton. He likewise spake of a very taire and large Citie in Guiana, which hee called Monooan, Manooan great which I take to be that which Sir Walter calleth Manon, which standeth by a falt Lake which Citie in Guid, he called Parroowan Parrocare Monoan, in the Province of Afaccona the chiefe Captaine or A- na. carimannora, as he called him, was called Pepodallapa. He further faid, that after that a man is vp at the head of the River and some ten dayes sourney within the Land, every childe can tell of , the riches of Monooan. Further he addeth, how that once in enery third yeere all the Cassianes or Lords and Captaines some seuen dayes journey from Manooan doe come to a great drinking, which continueth for the space of ten dayes together, in which time they goe sometimes a fishing, fowling, and hunting, their fishing is in the salt Lake, where is abundance of Canoas, and

thole very great. They have many fith-pooles of standing water, wherein they have aboundance of Fish. They have store of wilde Porkes and Deere, and other beasts, which are very good meate. Their Houses be made with many lotts and partitions in them. but not boorded, but with Houses with barres of wood, onely the lower floore on the ground is spread with clay very smooth, and with losts, fires hardned, as they doe their pots, then presently they build their houles, as is before fooken of. Allo he affirmerh, that within the Citie at the entring in of their houses they hang Carocore on the posts which I take to be Images of gold.

> Directions to the Towne of Cooropan from Marrawin.

Rom the head of Marrawin to Ithuerwa, a Chareeb Towne: from thence to Caperocca, a Charceb Towne: from thence to a Mountaine called Pagen: from thence to Una, a Mountaine : from thence to Tonwalprenay, a Charech Towne : from thence to Tetattecomogneto, a Chareeb Towne: from thence to Tunftoorito, a Chareeb Towne: from thence to Soynoon, a Paramag Towne: from thence to Craoroorere, a Suppay Towne: from thence to Macatana a Sup-

60 pay Towne: from thence to Pipicorwarra, a Mountaine: from thence to Shadden, an Armacca Towne: from thence to Lonnoo, an Armacca Towne: from thence to Horurra a Mountaine: from thence to Habittebin, a Plaine: from thence to Warocca, an Armac. Towne: from thence to Hardos an Armacca; and from thence to Coorepon, where he dwelleth, which he faith is but ten dayes iourney from the head of Marrawin.

000002

Directions

Spanish denises of torrures. Six Fr Drakes found a Negro Senced to be Sunne, to be

Six W.Ral.

Directions from the head of Selinama to Cooropan, which is bus seuen dayes iourney.

Rom the head of Selinama to Kiarno a Chreek Towne: from thence to Pommaro a Chareek
Towne: from thence to Scooadoddepon an Armae Towne: from thence to Sickene a Mountame : from thence to Shuhurway an Armac Towne : from thence to Hadarinner a Suppar Towne: from thence to Weeatoopona, Armac: from thence to Ruttrahar, Armac: from thence to Caboretitte, Armac : from thence to Hecanamerre, Suppay: from thence to Wabeckeyamay, Arwas: from thence to Hanamob, Armae: from thence to Mustuggabee, a Mountaine; and fo to 10 Corropon, which is but feuen dayes journey from the head of Selmama.

He like wife faith it is but a moneths journey by land, from the head of Marranin to the head of Diffikeebee, and from the head of Diffikeebee to the head of Oreneg, a moneths travell.

Rivers from Brabific to the Amazones.

	RIVERS.	NATIONS.	ľ	Ecaurwa.	Charceb.	
	Brabise.	Charcebees.	1	Camrooroo.	€barecb.	
	Winniepa.	Chareebes.		Muccurrie.	Chareeb.	20,
	Arew.	Napoys.		Kiam,	Charech.	
	Mannapoo.	Napoys.		Wia.	Chareeb.	
	Muccauren.	not inhabited.		Kowo.	not inhabited.	
	Morecoofe.	Napoys.	j·	Apoorwasca.	Charceb.	
	Arawon.	not inhabited.	:	Wannase.	Taios.	30
	Orenoso.	Taios Arwac.		Wiapoce.	Taios.	
	Emataccoo.	Charcebes.		Aroccona.	Arcecola.	
	Eparramoo.	Charcebes.		Casippooroo.	Arcecoole.	
	Aratooree.	Charcebes.	li	Connawin,	Taio.	
	Amockeores.	Chareeb.	i.	Miocaree.	Areccool.	
	Parcema.	Chareeb.		Demeerare.	Arwac.	
	Wine.	Chareeb.		Miconine.	Arwac.	
	Moroka.	Taios	ĺ	Wapary.	ATWAG.	
	Paurooma.	Armaccas.		Manhica.	Arwac.	
	Wacapwhou,	Armaccas.		Keribiffe.	Arwac.	
ranches of ijfleebee	Diffikeebee.	Arwac.		Corctine.	Charech, Arm	2
	Contowinne.	Chareeb.		Encecare.	Chareeb.	
	Matooronee.	Charceb.		Coopanomi.	Chareeb.	
	Marrawin.	Para. Ta. Cha.		Soorammo.	Chareeb.	
		& Arwa.		Surennamo, alias,		40
	Amanna.	Charceb.	Branches of Selinama	Selinama.	Charech.	
	Vraco.	Arwac.		(Camouree, alias,	Charceb.	
	Coonannoma.	Armac.		7 Commawin.		
	Oorafframni.	not inhabited.		Arowaree.		
	Sinomarra.	Chareeb.		Arapoco.		
	Mannomanury.	Chareeb.		Amazone.		

Topaniminni, a Branch of Marmin, at the head thereof going toward Oronog., in which dwell a wilde People called Frokere, which are fwife in running. The Chareebees with long cares are called Norraco. Ekimicke, a kinde of worme, which poi-

And thus much of Guianian affaires. Some other Voyages thither have beene at large published by by Sir W. R. and Master Keymis, recorded by Master Hakl. A later also with great noise, preparation and expectation bath happened, written alreadie in bloud; therefore, and for the latenelle needlelle and unworthie, that I fay not too difmall and fatall for our Relations.

CHAP. 60

CHAP. XVIII.

A Description and Discouery of the River of Amazons, by WILLIAM DAVIES Barber Surgeon of London.



He River of the Amazons lieth in the highest part of the West Indies, beyond the Diffing from He River of the Amazon Beth in the ingret part of the vertical conditions the Diffusion from Equinocità Lince, of all with this River forter leagues from Land you find have 8. England \$6.00.

6. & 7. Lathomes water, & you thal fee the Sea change to a ruddie colour, the wa-leagues ter find, by their eignes you may run boldly in your courie, and come. This is a rate of the condition of the condit

make Discouerie of the Trees before the Land, by reason the Land is very low, and not higher in said Daules of one place then another three foote, being at a Spring tide almost all ouerflowne, God knowes his milerable how many hundred leagues. It flowes much water there with a verie forcible tide. In this Ri- captinine; ner I continued tenne weekes, feeing the fashion of the people and Countriethere: This Countrie is altogether full of Woods, with all forts of wilde Beatls : as Lions Beares , Woolies, Leonards. Baboones, strange Boores, Apes, Monkeies, Martins, Sanguines, Marmofets, with diners other ftrange beatts : also these Woods are full of Wild-fowle of all forts, and Parrats 30 more plentifull then Pidgeons in England, and as good meate, for I haue often eaten of them. Also this Countrey is very full of Rivers, having a King ouer everie River. In this place is continuall Tempetts, as Lightning, Thunder, and Raine, and so excreame, that it continues most commonly tixteene or eighteene houres in foure and twentie. There are many standing

waters in this Countrie, which bee full of Aligators, Guianes, with many other feuerall water Serpents, and great store of fresh fish, of strange fashions. This Countrie is full of Muskitas,

which is a small Flie, which much offends a Stranger comming newly into the Countrie, The manner, fashion, and nature of the people is this: They are altogether naked, both men and women , having not fo much as one threed about them to couer any part of their nakednesse. the man taketh a round Cane as bigge as a pennie Candle, and two inches in length, through 30 the which hee puls the fore-skinne of his yard, tying the skinne with a piece of the rinde of a Tree about the bignesse of a small pack-threed, then making of it fast about his middle, hee continueth thus till hee haue occasion to vie him: In each Eare hee weareth a Reede or Cane. which hee bores through it, about the bignesse of a Swannes Quill, and in length halfe an inch. and the like through the multi of the lower hype: alloat the bridge of the Note he hangs in a Reede a finall gl.fie Beade or Button, which hanging duckly store his Mouth, files too and tro fills abee jeakes, wherein hee takes great pride amy, pleafore. Her wares his Haire

and troining some peaker, wherein the case great pines are pleasure free waters in failing long, being councid below a time neather part of his fart, and our blact, or rather as I indiged pluckt bald on the cowne like a? rie? But their wongerye no falkion at all to fee forth them relues, but flarke niked at they were borne, with his large of their fleads, all of their Breatls 49 hang verie low, by rettly they are neuer laced or bracked up: they dire vie to anoint their Bodies, both Men and Women, which a kind of reddle Earth, she cause the Mushitas, or Fites shall

These people are veriesing enious, craftic, and treatherous, verie light of foot, and good Their people are veriengenous, critice, and trea, herous, verte light of toot; and good Bowemen, whole like I have neuerteene, for their object ordinately kill their owner food, as Beaths, Fowle, and Fulh, the manner of their Bow and Arrowes is this. The Bow is about two yards in length, the Arrow Gung food: His Bow is made of Braill-wood verte curious, his thing of the rinde of a Tree, lying-locker of the Bow, without any henr, his Arrow made of Reede, and the head of it is a find home a Freede she had of it is a find home a Freede she had of it is a find home a Freede she had of it is a find home a Freede she had of it is a find home a Freede she had of it is a find home a Freede she had of it is a find home a Freede she had of it is a find home a Freede she had of it is a find home a Freede she had of it is a find home a Freede she had on the home a Freede she had only the followes him like a Bloud-hound till he

50 fall, oftentimes feconding his shoot: then for any Fowle be he neuer so little, he neuer misses him: as for the first, hee walkes by the water fide, and when hee hath spied a fish in the water, hee prefently ftrikes him with his Arrow, and fuddenly throwing downe his Bow . hee leaves into the water, fwimming to his Arrow which hee drawes aland with the fifth fastened to it, then having each kild his owne food, as well fiesh, and fowle, as fish, they meete together, to the number of fiftie or fixtie in a company, then make a fire after this fashion : They take two stockes of Wood, rubbing one hard against another, till such time as they bee fired, then making of a great fire, every man is his owne Cooke to broile that which he hath gotten, and thus they feed without Bread or Salt, or any kind of drinke but Water and Tobacco, neither doe they know what it meanes : In these Countries we could find neither Gold nor Silver Oare, but great store

60 of Hennes. For I have bought a couple for a lewes Harpe, when they would refuse tenne shillings in money. This Countrie is full of delicious fruite, as Pines, Plantines, Guaues, and Potato Rootes, of which Fruits and Roots I would have bought a mans burthen for a glaife Button or Bead. The manner of their Lodging is this : they have a kinde of Net made of the rinde of a Tree which they call Hamac, being three fathome in length, and two in breadth, and gathered

20

at both ends at length, then fastning either end to a Tree, to the full length about a yard and halfe from the ground, when hee hath defire to fleepe, hee creepes vnto it. The King of eueria River is knowne by this manner. He weares voon his head a Crowne of Parrats feathers, of fea uerall colours, having either about his middle, or about his Necke, a Chaine of Lions teeth or clawes, or of fome other strange beaft, having a woodden Sword in his hand, and hereby is he knowne to be the King : Oftentimes one King warres against another in their Canowes, which are Boars cut out of a whole Tree, fometimes taking one another, the Conquerours eates the Captines. By this time ten weekes were spent, and being homewards bound, but not the

same way that we came, for we failed viito the River before the winde, because it blowes there continually one way, which forces all shippes that come thither to returne by a contrarie way.

The end of the fixth Booke.



VOY-

VOYAGES TO AND ABOVT THE SOVTHERNE

AMERICA, WITH MANY MARINE

OBSERVATIONS AND DISCOVR-SES OF THOSE SEAS AND LANDS. BY ENGLISHMEN AND OTHERS.

THE SEAVENTH BOOKE.

D Eader, I here present thee the exactest Treatise of Brasil which I have seem written by any man, Reader, I here present thee the exactest treatise of health which i make seeme written of non-man, effectally in the Historic of the multiplied and distributed Nations and customers of men; as also in 16 index the the natural Historic of Bealts, Serponts, Femles, Fifter, Trees, Plants, with dances other remarkeable to of the local distributed from the continue to the natural Historic of Bealts, Serponts, Femles, Fifter, Trees, Plants, with dances where remarkeable to of the local distributed from the continuence of the c toe manaras tripers of the feetings. It was written (it feetings) by a Portugall Frier (or Iefute) which had listed receips and me rarities of those Regions. It was written in seminary of a total properties Booke was taken by one Fran - name which its other parts, from whom (much against the will side written Booke was taken by one Fran - name which is the written by the seminary of ces Cooke of Dartmouth in a Vojage out ward bound; for Braid, An. 1601, who fold the same to Ma - w Enfinement ces Cookeef Datemouth in a Copage on man necessary in the straighted ont of Portugall into English . Chief a bene-fler Hicket for twenty billings 3 by whose procurement is was translated ont of Portugall into English . Chief a benewhich translation I have compared with the written Originall, and in many places supplied defetts, to have been amended errours, illustrated with notes, and thus singled and parnished to the publike varse. Great loss Authorofetis Trestic conference of the works, and it not a little of his name.", which I should as unlargely bease in served the ne bad to Anthor of the works, and it were a united from name , which is great and admirable worker of the Creator are but the name to as worthy much become you use unaufries, by writer he great and assurance works; of the Urtain site but the same Induktivents; the which least new invested morning of his insightle power, and manifold wrifedome. Site of discussions were not not not in the contract of the protection of the Contract of better knowledge both of the civill-uncivill dealings of the Portugals with the Indians; and of the under personal descriptions of the contraction christian christianitie in their owne practise and connersion of the Indians, and that by lesnitical testi- fact-wastactos monie. I may well adde this lesuite to the English Voyages, as being an English prize and captine.

CHAP. T.

A Treatise of Brasil, written by a Portugall which bad long lined there.

ð. I.

Of the beginning and original of the Indians of Brasil, and of their Customes, Religions, and Ceremonies.



C H A P.I. S.I.

I seemeth that this people hath no knowledge of the beginning and creation of the world, but of the deluge it seemeth they This opinion haue some notice : but as they haue no writings nor characters of a Boud. fuch notice is obscure and confused; for they fay that the waters drowned all men , and that one onely escaped spon a language with a filter of his that was with childe, and that from thefet wo they have their beginning, and from thence began their multiplying and increase.

This people hath not any knowledge of their Creator, nor have or the of any thing of heaven, nor if there be any paine nor glory after Creator, and

this life, therefore they have no oderation nor ceremonies, nor of the Soule, duine worthip, but they know that they have foules, and that they dye not; and they fay that Paradife, Dir

the foules are connerted into divels, and that after their death they goe to certaine fields where are many figge trees along by a faire River, and all together doe nothing but daunce. This is the cause why they are greatly afraid of the Diuell, whom they call Curupira, Taguain, Pigtangra, Mache chera. Anhanga: and their ferre of him is to great, that onely with the imagination of him they dye as many ti nesalready it hath happened: they worthip it not, nor any other creature, neither have they Idols of any fort, onely fome old men doe fay that in fome waies they have cer-Divelefeare, taine Posts where they offer him tome things, for the feare they have of them, and because they wou'd not die Sometimes the Diuels appeare vnto them, though very feldome, and among them

Caroibasing-

Thy vie forme witchcrafts, and there are some Witches, not because they believe in them, or 10 doe worthin them, but onely they give themselves to the Compar in their ticknesses, seeming to them that they receited their health, but not because they doe think they have any diginity, and they do it rather to receive health, then for any other respect. There arise sometimes among them fome Witches, whom they call Caraiba, and most commonly it is some Indian of a bad life; this doth some witchcrafts and strange things to nature, as to show that he raiseth some to life, that makes himfelte dead, and with thefe and other like things he carrieth all the Countrie after him. decenting and faying to them that they shall not cultimite, nor plant their Pulfe and their proujfion, neither digge nor labour, &c. for with his comming the time is come that the Mattockes themiclues shall digge of their owne accord, and the Beasts goe to the fields and bring the prowithon, and with thete fallhoods he leades them fo deluded and inchanted, that not looking to their lives, and to get their foode, they die for hunger, and their companies are diminished by livand little till the Caraiba remaineth alone, or is murthered by them.

name of God.

They have no proper name to expresse God, but they say the Tapan is the thunder and lightning and that this is he that gave them the Mattocks and the foode, and because they have no other name more naturall and proper, they call God Tapan. There are mariages among them, but there is a great doubt whether they be true, as well be-

Ofthe Ma.i-They give no in law.

Tailes.

Drinking*

cause they have many wives, as for the easie for laking them for what locuer quarrell, anger, or any other diffrace hapning among them; but either true or not, among them they were made in dowries to the fort. No yong mandid wie to marrie before he had taken an emenie, and he continued a the industries or to the fors, virgin till be took eard flow him, holding first his featts for the space of two or three yeares, the but they form woman in like fort did not marrie nor know man, till she had her tearmes, after the which they made her great teafts; at the time of the deliverie of the woman they made great drinkings. And the realt being ended, the marriage remained perfect giving a net cleane washt; and after they were laid, the father tooke a wedge of flone and did cut vpon a post or stake, then they fav hee did cut the tailes from the grandchildren, and therefore they were borne without them, and after they were married they began to drinke, for vnrill then their fathers did not fuffer them. teaching them that they should drinke heedefully, and should be considerate and wife in their speaking, that the wine might doe them no hurt, and that they should not speake bad things, and then with a vessell the old ancient men did give him the first wipe, and hold his head with their hands that he might not vomit, for if he doth vomit they hold to themselves that he would This people eateth at all times by night and by day, and euerie houre and moment, and when

Of the manner th.ir cating and drinking.

presently they eate all that they have, and decide among their friends, in fort that of one fish hat they have they divide it to all, and they hold for a great honour and gallantrie to be libe-Liberality, and rall, and thereby they get great fame and honour : and they hold for the greatest iniurie that they can doe them, to hold them for niggards, or call them for and when they have nothing niggardiie. to eate, they are very patient in hunger and thirft. They have no fielh or filh daies, they eate all manner of fielh, even of vicleane creatures, as Snakes, Toades, Rats, and fuch like wormes; they este also all manner of Fruites, saving somethat are poisonous. This sustenance is ordinarily of that which the Countrie yeeldeth without husbandrie, as wilde fowle, flesh and fruites. Their diet. but they have a certaine kinde of foode of a good fubstance, and healthfull, and many other pulfes, whereof hereafter shall mention be made. Ordinarily they drinke not while they cate, but after meate they drinke water or wine which they make of many kindes of fruites, and rootes, as hereafter shall be faid, of the which they drinke without measure or order, even sill

they have any meate they keepe it no long time for they have no providence for the future, but

Drinking.

They have some particular daies wherein they make great feasts, and all ends in thrinking, and Feafle. they last two or three daies, in the which they eate not but onely drinke, and there be men that emptie a whole great veffell of wine. That thefe drinkings may be more festivall, some goe about finging from house to house, calling and inuiting all they finde for to drinke and be merne. 60 Thefedancings last with mulicke all the time of the drinking, in the which they sleepe not, but Daune:s passe it all in drinking, and when they are drunke they play many disorders, and they breake one anothers head, and take other mens wives, &c. They give no thankes before nor after meate Rudeneffe. to God, nor wash their hands before meate, and after meate they wipe them at their haire, on

their body, or a poste. They have no towels nor tables, they eate fitting, or lying in their nets, or cowring on the ground : they eate their mease throwing it with their band into the mouth; and Lomit many other particularities that they have in their eating and drinking, because these are

All this people have for their beds certaine nets made of Cotten wooll, and they fleepe in Oithe mana

them hanging in the ayre. These they make some wrought, others of fundry colours and as they have in their remaine in the ayre, and have no other covering or cloathes alwaies in fummer and winter, they fleeping. have fire youler them; they rate not very early, and goe to bed by times, and in the mornings there is one chiefe man in their houses, " that lying in his net doth preach vito them for the " One House of pace of an houre, how they are to goe to labour as their forefathers did, and he appointed them contained the time, telling them what they are to doe; and after he is vp continueth his preaching, running many Fami-

through the Towne. They tooke this custome from a bird which is like a Hawke, which singeth in the morning, and they call it the King and Lord of the other Birds; and they fay that even as that Bird doth ling in the mornings to be heard of the reft, to the principall should make those preachings and speeches to be heard of theirs.

All of them goe naked as well men as women, and have no kinde of apparnll, and are nothing. Nakedneffe. afhined: rather it feem th that they are in the flate of innocencie touching this behalfe by the great honestic and modestic they loe keepe among themselves; and when any man speaketh Modeffy. with a woman, he turneth his backe to her. But to make themselves gallant they vie divers in- Painting. 20 yentions, painting their bodies with the juice of a certaine fruite wherewith they remaine black.

making in their bodies many white stroakes, after the fashion of round hose, and other kinde of Galantry garmines. They enplume themselues also, making Diadems and Bracelets, and other very fine indentions, they esteem every much all manner of fine Feathers: they let no haire grow in the parts of their body, but they pull them out, onely the head excepted, which they cut in many fashions, for some weare them long with a halfe Moone shauen before, and they lay they tooke Nearnesse. this ye from Saint Thomas, and it feemeth that they had fome notice of him, though confusedly: others make certaine kinde of crownes and circles that they feeme Friers: the women all doe weare long haire, and ordinarily blacke, and the haire of the one and of the other is fmooth;

when they are angrie they let their haire grow long; and the women when they mourne, doe Mourning, 20 cut their haire, and alto when their husbands goe a farre journey, in this they show their love and loyaltie to them : the vanitie they have in their poling is fo much, that by the head the Nations are knowne.

Now alreadie some doe weare apparell as well men as women, but they esteeme it so little Apparell. that they weare it rather for fathion then for honethes take, and because they are commanded to weare it; as it is well feene by fome, that fometimes come abroad with certaine garments no

further then the nauell, without any other thing, and others onely with a cap on their heads. and leave the other garments at home : the women make great accompt of Laces and

These Indians doe vie certaine Cottages, or houses of timber, couered with Palmetree leaves, Of their Hou. 40 and are in length tome of two hundred and three hundred spans, and they have two or three doores, verie little and low. They shew their valour in seeking timber, and verie great posts, and of great continuance, and there be houses that have fiftie, fixtie or feuentie roomes of twentie or five and twentie quirters long, and as manie quarters long, and as many in breadth. In this house dwelleth one principall man or more, whom all the reft doe obey, and ordinarily they are kinft men. In every roome of these dwelleth a houshold with their children and family without any repartition betweene the one and the other, and to enter in one of these houses is to enter into a laberinth, for every roome hath his fire, and their nets hanging, and their tituffe, for that

comming in, all that they have is in fight, and fome house hath two hundred persons and more The women when they are brought to bed (they are deliuered on the ground) doe not Childebrich take up the childe, but the Father taketh it up, or some other person whom they take for their 50 Goffip, and in friendship they are as the Goffips among the Christians. The Father doth cut the Nauell string with his teeth, or with two stones knocking the one with the other, and then they fet themfelues to fasting untill the Navell string falleth off, which is ordinarily to the eight day, and till it doth fall they leave not their faiting, when it falleth, if it beea man childe he maketh it a Bow with Arrowes, and tieth it at the end of the Net, and at the other end manie handfuls of hearbes which are the enemies which his sonne shall kill, and eate. These ceremonies being en led, they make drinkings where with they all are merrie. The women when they are delinered, doe prefently goe and wash themselves in the Rivers , and they give the childe sucke ordinarily a yeer and an hilfe, not giving it any other thing to eate. They love their children Love and el

60 extraordinarily, and beare them in certaine pieces of Nets which they call Tupina, and carrie canon or class them to their plowings and to all kind of labours on their backes, through cold and heate, and dren. they carrie them like the Gip ies stradling about their hips; they give them no manner of corre-Gion, that their children may not cris. They have manie Southfayings, for they put Cottonclothes; vpon their head, birds teathers, and flickes; they lay them one the palmes of their

Friers and Iefuirespaines with Indians

hands, and rocke them by them that they may grow. They effecte more to doe good to their children then to themselves, and now they effecte and love the Fathers verie much because they bring them up, they teach them to reade, write, and cipher, and finging, and to play on an Inftrument, a thing which they doe much esteeme.

Of the cuftom they haue in harboring, or their guefts.

When any guest doth come to the house, the honour and entertainment they make him is to bewaile him; Now the guest being come into the house they fet him in the Net, & after he is set without fpeaking any word to him the wife and the daughters, and the other friends do fit them downe round about him with their haire loofe, touching with the hand the partie: they all beginne to weepe with a high voice and great abundance of teares, and there they tell in a verified profeall things that have happened fince they law one another to that houre, and manie other which they invent, and the troubles that the guest hath fuffered in his journie; and all things elie that may proubke pitie and teares. The guest all this time speaketh not one word, but after they have bewailed him a good while thy wipe the teares, and remaine fo quiet, fo modeft, fo pleafant and merne that it feemeth they never wept, and then they falute one another, and give their Ereins, or welcome, and they bring him meate, &c. And after these Ceremonies ended, the guest telleth wherefore he commeth. The men likewise bewaile one another, but it is in some weightie matters, as deaths, misfortunes in wars, &c. They hold it for a great courtefe to entertaine all men and to give them all things necessarie for their sustenance, and some gifts, as Bowes. Arrowes. Birds, Feathers, and other things according to their pouertie without any kind of reward.

Of the cuftom they have of drinking of

Thele Gentiles doe accustome to drinke the smoake of Petigma, by another name the boly berbe, 20 this they drie and make of a Palme-tree leafe a Coffin like the joint of a Cane, and filled with this herbe, they fire it at the small end putting the biggest in their mouth, and so they sucke or drinke that smoake, and they hold it for a great daintie and fauour, and lying in their Nets they found part of the daies and of the nights: to some it doth much hurt, and maketh them dizzie and drunke, to othersic doth much good, and maketh them voide a great deale of fiegme at the mouth. The women also doe drinke it, but they are such as are old and sickly, for it is verie medicinable vnto them, especially for the cough, the head-ache, and the Dilease of the stomacke, and hence come a great manie of the Portugals to drinke it, and have taken it for a vice or for idlenesse, imitating the Indians to spend daies and nights about it.

Of the manments and husbandric,

This Nation hath no monie where with to fatisfie the feruices that are done to them, but they 20 live with bartering one thing for another, and principally in change of wine they doe all that they will, and so when they have any businesie, they make wines, and aduiting the Neighbours, and affembling all the Towne, they delire them to helpe them in their Husbandrie, which they doe with a good will; and labouring till tenne of the clocke they returne home againe to drinke their wines; and if that day their tillage be not ended, they make other wines, and fo goe another day till ten of the clocke to make an end of their butine fe. And in this fort doe the wife White men or Portugals vie, that know the vie and fashions of the Indians, and how much they do for wine; they make wines for them, and call them to their Husbandries, and to their Sugarcanes, and with this they pay them. They vie also ordinarily to change some things for white beades, which are made of Wilkes : and in change of some Notegaies they give even their wives; 40 and this is the ransome wherewith they vie ordinarily, that is, the White men, for to buy of them the flaues, as well men as women that they have for to eate.

Oftheir lewels Thefe Indiani vie ordinarily, chiefly in their Feasts, Collars which they make of Wilkes, and Brooches. Diademes of Feathers, and certaine Brooches, (that is, stones which they put in their lower lip) some greene, white, some blue, and verie fine, and are like Emeralds, or Christall, they are round, and some of them so long that they reach to their breaks, and it is ordinarily among the great and principall men, to have them of a span, or more in lenght. They vie alto white Bracelets of the same Wilkes, and they put in their eares certain white stones of a span long and more; and thefe and other like are the ornaments wherewith they adorne themselves in their Feasts, whether they be of flaughters of the enemies : or of wines; and these are the Riches that they so esteeme about all that they possesse.

Of the yfage and how they

Theie Indians doe vie to intreate their Wines well, they never strike them, neither quartell of their wines, with them, except in the time of their drinkings, for then ordinarily they revenge them is lies of them, giving for an excuse afterward, it was the wine they had drunke, and then they are friends as before, and the hatreds betweene them last not long. They goe alwaies together, and when they goe abroad, the woman commeth behind and the man before, that if any ambush bee laid, the wife may not fall into it, and may have time to flie while the Husband fighterh with his aduerfarie, &c. But at their returning home from their fields, or from any other place the wife commeth before, and the Husband behinde, that if any mischance shall happen, the wise may flie home, and the Husband fight with the enemies, or any other thing. But in a lafe Countrie and within the Townes the wife alwaies gooth before, and the Husband behind, for they are verie jealous, and will have alwaies their wife in fight.

Terioniie. Of their danses and their fongs.

Though they be melancholike they have their Games, especially the children verie divers and pleasant, in the which they counterfest manie kinds of Birds, and with so great feast and

order as may be. And the children are joyfull and given to play, and they play with fuch quierneffe and friendilip, that among them is no bad name heard, or any fcurrilitie, or calling any nickname one to anothers Father or Mother; and feldome doe they difagree when they play nor diforder themselves for any thing, and verieseldome doe they strike or fight one with another. The Fathers doe teach them from their cradles to dance and fing, and their dancings are not fundrie changes, but a continual flamping with the feet flanding full, or going round about, or firring their bodte or their head, and they doe it all by fich compaffe, and pleafantnelle as can be firming their pour of the made after the fathion of those which the children vie in Inframente. Saaine with manie final stones within or certaine feeds whereof they make also verie good beads: 10 and fo they fing dancing altogether, for they doe not one thing without the other . in fuch compaffe and order that sometime an 100, men dancing and finging together in a row one behind the other doe end all at one stroke, as if they were altogether in one place. The singers as well men as women are much esteemed among them, in so much that if they take an enemie a good singer. and an Inuencer of Veries, they therefore spare his life, and doe not eate him nor his children. The women doe dance together with the men, and make many gambolls and geffures with their armes and bodies, especially when they dance stone. They keepe among themselves ces.

differencies of voices in their Confort : and ordinarily the women doe fing the Treble, Coun-

ter, and Tenours. They are verie wicked, especially in weeping for the dead, for when any one dieth, the Kin- Of their bu-20 dred doe cast themselves voon him in the Nee, and so suddenly that sometimes they chooke him rials, before he dieth, seeming to them he is dead. And those that cannot cast themselves with the Coarse in the Net doe cast themselves on the ground with such falls and knockes that it seemeth Lamentations a Miracle they doe not end their lines with the dead, and of these falls, and mournings they re- to be lamenmaine fo feeble that sometime they die. When they mourne they speak manie pittiful and dolo- ted. rous words, & if he die at evening all night long they weep with a high voice, that it is a wonder they are not wearie. For these mournings they cal the Neighbours, & kinsmen, and is he be one of the principall, all the Towne doth meete to mourne, and in this they have also their points of honour, and they curse with plagues those which weepe not, faying, that they shall not bee mourned for. After he is dead they wash him and paint him vene brauely, as they paint their e-30 nemies : and after this they couer him with Cotton Yarne that nothing is feene of him, and put a couering ouer his face, and fitting they put him in a great tinnage or veffell that they have vn-

der the Earth for that purpose, and doe couer it in such manner that no Earth may come to him. and the veffel they couer with earth, making him a house where euerie day they carrie him meat. For they fay that when he is wearie with dancing he commeth thether to eate, and fo they goe for a certaine time to be waile him enerie day all his Kindred, with him they burie all his Iewels or Brooches, that none may fee them and grieue thereat. But if the dead had any Peece, as a Sword, &c. that had beene giuen him , it returneth to him that gaueit, and hee taketh it againe whereforeur he findeth it; therefore they fay that when one dieth he lofeth all the right of that which was given him. After the Coarfe is buried, the Kinfmen are in continual weeping night 40 and day, the one beginning as the other endeth, they eate not but by night, they hang their Nets neere to the roofes, and the women after tweneie daies doe cut their haire, and this lamenting laffeth a whole Moone, the which being ended they make great Wines or Drinkings to put away their mourning. The men doe cut their haire, and the women doe paint themselves with blacke, and these Ceremonies and others being ended, they beginne to communicate the one with the other, aswell the men as the women. After their companions are dead, some never doe marrie againe nor enter into the Feaft of Wines, neither paint themselues with blacke; but is verie feldome among them, because they are much given to women, and cannot live with-

Before they had any knowledge of the Portugals they wied tooles and infirmments of stone, Of the Infirm 50 bone, wood, Canes, and teeth of Beafts, &c. and with the ethey hewed downe great Woods, vie. with wedges of stones, helping themselues with fire; and they digged also the ground with certaine sharpe stakes, and they made their Brooches, Beades of Wilkes, Bowes, and Arrowes, as well as now having Instruments of Iron, but they spent a long time in making of what source thing; wherefore they effeeme the Iron verie much, for the facilitie or eafe which they finde in making their things with it. And this is the reason wherefore they are glad of Commerce with the Portugals or white men.

The weapons of this people ordinarily are Bowes and Arrowes, and they boaft themselves of Of the weapons them, and they make them of verie good wood, and verie faire interlaid with Palme-tree of fun. Pentewea. drie colours, they die their strings greene, or red, and they make their Arrowes verie faite, see- vie.

60 king for them the fairest feathers they can find. They make these Arrowes of sundrie Canes, and fasten in their points the teeth of beasts, or certaine verse hard Rushes, or sharpe stickes with many finagges, and many times they empoison them with herbes. These Arrowes to ones fight feeme a thing of mockerie, but are verie cruell Weapons, and pierce quilted breaft-plates or cutates; and striking in a sticke they cleaue it afunder, and sometimes happen to goe through a man Cruel arrowes

and flicke on the ground. They doe exercise themselves in these Weapons veric young, and are Cunning Ar- great Archers, and focertaine that no Bird can escape them be it never so little, or any vermine of the Woods; and there is no more but if they will shoot an Arrow through the zie of a bird on a man; or hit any other thing be it neuer fo fmall, they doe it with great facilitie and with their owne fafetie; and for this they are greatly feared. They are front also and fierce, and dreadfult to

Their Arts.

They are as vermine of the Woods, for they goes hunting into the Countrie naked and bare. foot, without any feare. They have a maruellous fight, for at a league off they fee any thing, and Outch fighted, in the same manner they heare. They gueffe verie right ruling themselues by the Sunne, they so to all parts they lift, 200. or 300. leagues through thicke Woods, and mile not one iot; they tra- to uell much, and alwaies running a gallop, especially with some charges, no Horse is able to hold out with them. They are great hishers and swimmers, they feare no Sea nor waves, continues day and a night fwimming, and the fame they doe rowing, and fometimes without meate. They vie also for Weapons Swords of wood, and interlay the ends of them with Palme-tree of lime drie colours, and fet Plumes on them of divers colours, chiefly in their feafts and flaughters. And these Swords are verie cruell, for they make no wound, but bruise and breake a mans head with

out having any remedie of cure.

Swords.

ð. II.

Of their manner of killing and eating of humane flesh : and of their creating Gentlemen.

Fall the honours and pleasures of this life, none is so great for this people as to kill and get a name on the heads of their Adverfaries , neither are there an mong them any Feasts, comparable to those which they make at the death of those which they kill with great Ceremonies , which they doe in this manner. Those which beeing taken in the Warre are appointed to die, came presently from

thence with a token, which is a small coard about his necke; and if hee bee a man that may to runnne away, he hath one hand tied to his necke under his chinne. And before they come to the Townes that are by the way, they paint their eie-lids, eie-browes, and their beards, polling them after fashion, and enpluming them with Yellow feathers fo well placed that yee can fee no haire: which makes them to gallant as the Spaniards in their rich Apparell, and to they goe fliaring their victorie whereby focuer they paffe. When they come to their owne Countrie, the women came out to receive them, showting altogether and striking themselves on the mouth which is a common entertainment among them; without any other vexation or imprisonment. except that they weare about the necke a round collar like a coard of a good bigneffe, as hard as a sticke. In this collar they beginne to weaue a great manie fathomes of small coard as long asa womans haire, fastened aboue with a certaine knot, and loose underneath, and so it goeth from 40 eare to eare behind the backe, horrible to looke on. And if it be on the Frontier where hee may runne away, they put him in stead of shackels below the knees a string of threed twisted verie hard, which is too weake for any Knife; but that they have Keepers that goe not one moment from him, whether he goe about the houses, to the Woods, or by the Fields; for he hath libertie for all this, and commonly the keeper is one that is given him for wife, and also for to dreffe his Gentle cruell meate, with the which if his Mafters doe give him no meate as the custome is, he taketh a Bow and Arrowes and shootethat the first Henne he leeth, or at a Ducke be it whosesoeuer, and none doth contradict him, and fo he waxeth fat, neither breaking therefore his fleepe, his laughter, or his pleasure as the rest, and some are as contented though they are to ber eaten, that in no wife they will confent to be ranfomed for to ferue; for they fay that it is a wretched thing to die, and 50 lie stinking, and eaten with Wormes. These women are commonly faithfull in their charge, for they receive honour thereby, and therefore manie times they are young, and daughters of the chiefe, especially if their brothers are to be the slaiers. For those which have not this interest manie times, affect them in fuch manner, that not onely they give them leave to runne away, but they also doe goe with them , neither haue the women any other punishment if they bee taken

againe, then a few strokes, and sometimes they are eaten of those same to whom they gave life. The time when he shall die being determined, the women beginne to make vessels, that is, Bowles, Trajes, and Pots for the Wines, fo great that euerie one will hold a pipe. This being readie, as well the principall as the rest doe send their Messengers to inuite others from fundrie places against such a Moone about tenne or twelue leagues compasse or more, for the which none 60 doth excuse himselfe. The guests doe come in Mogotes or troupes with their wives and children, and all of them doe enter the Towne with Dancers; and all the time the people are a gathering together, there is Wine for the guests, for without it all the other entertainments are nothing worth. The people being affembled, the Feafts beginne some daies before according to

the number, and certaine ceremonies preceding, and enerie one lasteth aday. First, they have for this certaine coards of Cotton-wooll of a reasonable bignesse, not twisted but wouen of a vene faire worke, it is a thing among them of great efteeme, and none hath them but some principall men, and according to their finenesse and workmanship, and their taking pleasure, it is to be belegied that they are not made in a yeere Thele are alwaies verie fafely kept, and are carried to the place with great feift & great noise in certain traies where a Master of these things doth tie two knots within from that which one of the points do run in fuch maner that in the midft there remaineth a nooie. These knots are so fine that few are found that can make them, for some of them have ten casts about, five croiling over the other five, as if one should cross the fingers of the right hand over the left, & after they die them with thewater of a white clay like lime, &let them drie.

On the second day they bring a great number of burdens of wilde Canes or Reeds as long as Lances or more, and at night they let them on fire in a round heape, the points vpward leaning one to another, and so they make a great and faire high bone-fire, round about the which are men and women dancing with sheaves of arrowes at their backe, but they goe very swiftly; for hee that is to die, which feeth them better then hee is feene because of the fire , catcheth hold of all that he can, and catcheth them, and they beeing many hee miffeth few times. At the third daw they make a dance of men and women, all of them with pipes of Canes, and all of them at once doe Hampe on the ground, now with one foot then with the other, all together without missing a ftroke : and observing the same meature they play on their pipes , and there is no other singing

30 nor speaking; they being many and the Canes some bigger and some smaller, besides the resoun- Black Saints. ding in the Woods, they make a Hel-feeming harmonie, but they abide it as if it were the fweeteft Musicke in the World. And these are their feasts, betides others which they intermingle

with many graces and foothfayings.

On the fourth day, they carrie the captived enemie as foone as the day breakes to wash him at a River and they while the time that when they doe returne it may be broad day light, comming is to the Towne, the Prisoner goeth presently with a watchfull eye, for hee knoweth not out of what house or doore a valiant man is to come out to him, that is to catch hold of him behind. For as all their happinesse doth confist in dying valiantly, and the ceremonie that followeth, is now the necreit vito death, as he which is to lay hold of him, doth flew his forces in ouer-comming and him him lelie alone without any other helpe, so he will shew courage and force in resisting him: First encourse and sometimes he doth it in such fort, that the first standing aside as wearied in wrestling, ano. text, ther succeedeth him which holds himselfe for a valianter man, the which sometimes remaine

well bedufted, & more they would remaine if at this time the captine had not his cord or shakels. This wreftling being ended, he on foot blowing and puffing with rage and wearineffe, with the other that hold him faft, therecommeth forth a troope of Nymphes which doe bring a great new painted bowle, and in it the cords rolled vp, and very white, and this prefent being fet at The womens the feet of the captine, a cunning old woman in these matters, and Mistris of the troope begin- parts. neth to tune a Song, whom the other doe helpe, the Dittie is according to the ceremonie. And while they fing, the men take the cords and the nooze being put about his necke, they give it anan other knot neere to the other great ones, that it may not lofe againe; and having made of every

end a coyle, they put them on the arme of the woman which alwaies goeth after him with this weight, and if the weight be great because the cords are great and long, they give her another to carrie one of the coyles, and if he before was terrible with the coller, he is more now with those two knots to bigge behind about his necke, and therefore one of the verfes of the Song faith, wee are those that make the necke of the bird to stretch, although after other ceremonies, they say to him in another foote, If thou hadit beene a Parrot annoying vs, then wouldest have fled.

At this time the veffels of wine are fet in a rowe, in the middeft of a great house, and the house (hauing no partitions though it bee of twentie or thirtie fathome in length) it is full of people; and when they begin to drinke it is a Labyrinth, or a Hell to fee and heare them. For those which dance and fing doe continue with great feruentnesse all the daies and nights that the wines doe Their fonge, so laft. For this being the proper feaft of the flaughters, in the drinking of the wines are many &c. particularities, which last long, and they make water at enery stop; and so they continue day and night; they fing, dance, drinke, and speake telling in whoopes through all the house of warres, and acts that they did; and as every one will be heard in his Historie, every one doth speake striping to bee lowdest, beside other noises, without any intermission, no not a quarter of an houre. That morning in which they begin to drinke, they paint the captine by a particular way that they have for that defigne, in this fort, his face being cleane, and all the feathers he hath brought

vpon it the powder of certaine egge-shels of a certaine wild bird, and vpon this they paint him the Captine 60 with black very faire pictures, and all his bodie to the fole of his foote, and flicke him all with feathers which they have alreadie out for that purpose and died redde, and that maketh him to feeme halre as bigge againe, and touching his face it maketh it feeme as much greater, and the eies fo much the smaller, that he remaineth an horrible visige. And in the same manner that they haue painted his face, they adorn the Sword which is of wood, in manner of a Ferula or Palmer.

forth, they amoint him with the Milke of a certaine tree that cleaneth very faft, and they cafe Adoming of

The fatall

but that the head is not fo round, but almost three square, and the sides doe almost end in an edge. and the thaft of it which may bee of feuen or eight ipans is not altogether round. It hath at the head about foure fingers broad, and commeth ftill narrowing vinto the end where it hath certains pendants or little bels of divers coloured feathers, it is a gallant thing and of great effeeme among them, they call it Inga penambin, that is, eares of the Sword. The last day of the wines they make in the midlt of the place cabins of Palme-boughs, as many as they are that shall die, and in that they lodge, without entring any more, any house, and all the day and the night bee is well ferued with feafts more then with meate, for they gine him no other foode but a fruite that hath the fauour of Nuts, that the next day he may not have much bloud,

The fifth day in the morning at feuen of the clocke, little more or lefe his woman doth there 16 leave him, and goeth home very fad, and speaking for her farewell some pittifull wordes at the least fainedly. Then they take away his shackels, and passe the cords from his neck to the waste. and flanding at the doore of him that must kill him, the flaughterer commeth forth in a dance as white as a Doue painted with white earth, in a garment which they call a cloke of feathers tied about the breaft, voward like the wings of an Angell, to dancing he goeth round about the place, and commeth making very strange countenances with his eies and bodie, and with his hands he counterfeiteth the Kite that defireth fielh, and with this Deuillifhnelle hee commeth to the wretch, which stands with the coard stretched, on both sides having one that holdeth him; and the poore wretch if he find wherewith to throw at him, hee doth it with a good will, and many times they give him wherewith, for many valiant men doe come out to him, fo nimble in win- 30 ding their bodie that he cannot hit them. This being ended there commeth an honorable Judge, or ttickler of the new Knight that shall bee, and taking the Sword passeth it many times betweene his legges, putting it now on the one fide, now on the other, even in the fame manner that the Pipers dogs doe paffe betweene their legges, and after taking it by the midft with both hands he pointeth as with a thrust to the eies of the man which is to die; and this being done he turneth the head of it voward in the fame manner that he is to vie it, and putteth it in the hands Hallowing the of the flanghterer, as apt and fit already with those bleffings for to doe his office; they place themfelies somewhat to the left side, in such fort that he may hit him with the edge of his Sword in the nape of the necke, for he striketh at another place. And their brutishmesse is so much, that because they feare no other eails but that which is pre- to

fent, they are as resolute as if it syere nothing, as well for to speake, as for to try their courage, for after they take their leave of life, faying, In a good bonre, let me die feeing many are dead, and that belides this his brethren and kinfmen remaine bere to reneuge them. And with this the one makes him readie to discharge, and the other to avoid his bodie, which is all the honour of his death. And they are so nimble in this that many times it is high daies before they are able to kill them, for when he fees the weapon in the aire, fometimes hee drawes his head afide, fometime heedeclines his bodie; and in this they are fo doughtie, that if those that hold the points of the coards doe gird him hard (as they doe when the flaughterer is flow or weake) hee puls fo hard that hee brings them to him, and makes them to flacken in defpight, having one eie on them another on the Sword, without any standing still; and as the killer may not deceive them with an offer and 40 not firike vnder paine of receining a fillip, they doe forelee their flroke in such fort that come it neuer fo low in a trife they stoope, and lie fo flat that it is a wonder to see; and no lesse is the taking of the Sword, holding the arme in fuch fort that doing him no hurt, they pul it downe jointly with themselves, and they put it under the arme pulling by the killer; wherein if they did not helpe the other would dispatch him; for they have in this action so many sooth-layings that for

to kill a child of fine yeere old, they goe so prepared as for to kill some Giant. And with these

helpes and incouragements fo many times hee firsketh till hee hitteth and that is enough, for al-

foone as he is downe he giveth him to many blowes till he batters his head (though one man was

feene that had it fo hard that they could never breake it, for as they goe bare-head, they have

them fo hard that ours in comparison of theirs are like a Pompion, and when they will injurie 10

any White man, they call him foft-bead.) If this which they kill falleth on his backe, and not on his belly they hold it for an euill lucke and prognoftication that the killer shall die, and although he falleth vpon his belly, they have many ceremonies, which if they be not kept they hold that the killer cannot live, and many of them are to painfull that if any one did fuffer their troubles for Gods fake, they would be accounted meritorious, as hereafter shall be faid, The poore wretch beeing dead they carrie him to a bone-fire that they have readie for the fame, and bringing the bodie neere the fire rouching him with the hand, flay off a skinne tomewhat thicker then the rinde of an Onion, till he remaineth cleaner and whiter then a scalded Pig. Then it is delivered to the Butcher which maketh a hole beneath the stomacke according to their vse, whereby the children first do put in their hands, and 60 pull by the guts yntill the Butcher cutteth where bee lifteth, and that which remaineth in the hand of currie one is his part, and the rest is divided among the Commons except some principal pieces which for great honour are given to the guests that are the most principall, which they doe carrie well r. fled, to that it may not corrupt, and with them afterward in their countries they make new leafts and drinkings of wine.

The killer having ended his office, taking of the cloke of feather, and leaving the Sword hee Certmonies goeth home, where at the doore the same judge or flickler that was before with a shooting how of making a in his hand, that is, one of the points on the lower threshold, the other at the vpper, and pulling new Gentleby the ftring as though he would shoote, the killer passeth betweene him so cunningly that hee toucheth in nothing. Affoone as he is passed the other lofeth the firing making shew that it grieues him to have missed him whom he shot at, as though this hath vertue to make him swife afterward in the warre, and the enemies to miffe him. When he is within he beginnes to runne through all the houses, and the Sifters and Cousins in the same manner before him, saying my Brother is called N. repeating it through all the Townes, and if the Gentleman lath any 10 good thing he that goeth takes it from him till they leave him nothing. This being ended they cast on the ground certaine legges of a certaine Tree, called Pilan. Vpon the which hee stands all that day with so much tilence as if he had some astonishment in him, and carrying to present thicker the head of the dead, they pull out one of his eies, and with the strings and finewes of it they anoint his pulies, and cutting of his mouth whole, they put it on his armeas a Bracelet, and then he layeth him downe in his Net as a ficke man, and certainly hee is ficke for feare, that if he doe not accomplish the Rites perfectly, the foule of the dead will kill him.

Exploits of honour, Titles of Gentlemen, Pitiouaras

Within a few daies they give him the habit, not in the breaft of the Coat which he hath not, but on his owne skin race him all ouer the bodie with the tooth of a Cutta, that is like a Comes tooth, the which as well for their little skill, as because they have a hard skinne it seemes, that 20 they teare a piece of Parchment, and if he be valiant, they doe not race him with right firekes Markes and but a Croffe in fort that there remaine certaine very fine workes, and some doesny and groane habit of new with the paine. This being ended they have small Cole finely grownd, and the juice of Broamerape Gentrie, wherewith they rub the cuts ouertnwart, that the put him to great paine and iwelling, which is yet a greater torment, while his wounds doe close, which continue some daies, he lyeth still in his Net without speaking any word, not asking any thing, and that he may not break his illence. he hath neere him water, flowre, and acertaine fruit like Almonds which they call Amendants.

for he tafteth neither fish nor fiesh those daies.

CHAP.I. S.2.

After he is whole, many daies or moneths being passed, they make a great drinking of wines that hee may put off his mountning, and cut his haire which vntill then he did not, then hee an-30 oints himfelfe with blacke, and from thence forward hee remaines enabled to kill without any painfull ceremonie being done to him, and he also sheweth himselfe honoured and contented, and with a certaine disdaine, as one that hath honour alreadie, and gets it not a new. And so he doth no more but give the other a couple of blowes, although the head remaine whole, and he stirring he goeth home, and prefently they come and cut off his head. And the Mothers with their children about their necke, come to congratulate him, and hanfell him for the warre, ffaining his armes with that bloud. These bee the exploits, honours and vallour whence this pe. ple take their names, whereof they boast very much, and they remaine thence forward Abaetes, Murubixaba, Moçacara, which are the names and titles of Gentlemen. And thefe are the vohappie Titles of Feaths whereon these wretches doe ground their felicitie and glorie, before they have any know. Honour, 40 ledge of their Creator.

Q. III. Of the dinerfitie of Nations and a Inguages, and of the Soyle and Climate.

Mail this Province are many and fundrie Nations of divers Languages, but one is the See before in principall which comprehendeth some ten Nations of Indians. These line on the Sea in M. Edines. Coast, and in a great part of the Land, all of one Speech, though they differ in some

words. This is that which the Portugals doe understand, it is easie, eloquent, pleasant, 50 and copious; the difficultie of it is in having many comparisons, but of the Portugals almost all those that came from the Kingdome; and are seated here, and doe communicate with the Indians do know it in a short time, and the children of the Portugals borne here doe speake it better then the Portugall, as well men as women, chiefly in the Captainship of Saint Vincent, and with these ten Nations of Indians have the Fathers communication, because they know their Language, and they more tame and well inclined. These were, and are the ancient friends of the Portugals, with whose helpe and armes they conquered this Countrie, fighting against their owne kindred, and waste neipe and armes they conquered in a country, nguing games from any that it feemed an diner other Nations very barbarous, and those of this generation were so many that it feemed an Portugal vie of duers other vations very carbotous, and those or this generation were or many they are almost impossible thing to extinguish them, but the Portugals have made such hatte that they are almost states. dead, and they vie such meanes that they disinhabit the Coast, and slie the Land inward, some 60 three hundred, some foure hundred.

The first of this Language are called Pisignaras Lords of Paraba, thirtie leagues from Per- Pitignaras. nambuce, and have the best Brasill woode, and are great friends to the Frenchmen, and did contract with them vitill now, marrying their Daughters with them, but now in the yeere 1584. Parapha was taken by lames Flares his Maietties Generall , driving out

154: ta 1 000ple catenous by the Portu-

Turinaba.

Cadete.

Turinaquin.

of the Armada fought not. Neere vnto these bued a great multitude of people which they call Viatan, of these there are are none alreadie, for they being friends with the Punguaras, and Kindred, the Portugals made them enemies among themselves, giving them to be eaten, that by this meanes they might warre against them and hold them for slaues; and finally, having a great dearth, the Portugals in flead of releguing them, tooke them Captines, and did fend thip-loades to bee fold in other places. There was toyined with this a Magician Portugall Priest, that with his deceits conneighed them 10 all to Pernambuco, and so ended this Nation. The Portugals remained without Neighbours to defend them from the Pitiguaras, which vitill now that they were ouercome, perfecuted the Portugals fetting on a fudden upon their Corne, Goods, and Sugar-mils, burning, and killing many of the Portugals, because they are verse warlike, but now by the goodnesse of God they are freed from this incumbrance.

the Frenchmen; and he left a Fortrelle with 100. Souldiers, befides the Portugals which also have their Captaine and Governour one Fructuofo Barbofa, that with the principal men of Per-

nambuco carried an Armie by Land wherewith he overcame the enemies, for from the Sea thole

Others there be that they call Tupinaba, these inhabit from the River Royall till ye come neere the Illeos, these were also among themselves contrarie, those of the Bay with them of Camania. and Intrare. Along the River of Saint Francis dwelt another Nation called Casete; and amone these were also contrarieties with them of Pernambuce.

From Illers, or the little Hands, and Port Secure, voto the Holy Ghost inhabited another Nati- 20 on called Tupinaquin; these proceeded from those of Pernambuco, and scattered themselves in a Comprise of the Maine, multiplying exceedingly, but now they are but few. These were alwairs oreat enemies of the things of God, hardened in their errours, verie regenerall, and would revenge themselves as soone as they see their enemies, and louers of many women; of their alreadie are many Christians, and they are firme in the faith.

There is another Nation a kinne to thefe, which runneth off the Maine from Saint Vencent to Pernambuco, called Tupionae, there were without number, they doe diminif, for the Portugali doe goe to leeke them to ferue themselves with them, and those which escape doe see verie farre off that they may not be flaues: There is another Nation Neighbour to this called Apigapigtanga, and Muriapigeanga. There is also another Nation contrarie to the Tupinaquins which are called to Guaracayo, or Itati.

Timinina. Tananya. Artra: C.

Another Nation dwelleth in the Holy Ghost, called Timimmo, they were contrarie to the Tupinagnins, but they are now verie few. Another Nation which is called Tansaya inhabitors of the River of January, these the Portugals destroyed when they inhabited the River, and of them there be verie few, and some that are in the Maine are called Ararape, another Nation inhabiteth beyond Saint Vincent, about eightie leagues, enemies of the Tupinaquins of Saint Vincent, of these there are infinite multitudes, and doe runne along the Sea Coast and in the Maine, vnto the Paraguai which the Castilians doe inhabite, all these Nations abouesaid, though different, and many of them enemies one to another, they have the Language, and their conversion is in hand, and they have a great respect to the Fathers of the company of lefes, and in the Maine they figh 40 for them, and call them Abare, and Father, defiring they would come to their Countries and convert them; and fuch is their reputation that fome Portugals of badde consciences doe faine themfelues Fathers, apparelling themfelues in Gownes, shauing their crownes, and telling them fame Portugals they are Abares, and that they came to feeke them for the Churches of the Fathers which are theirs aswell as ours. Thus they seduce them, and assoone as they come to the Sea, they divide them among themselves, sell, and marke them, making first a great slaughter of them in the Countrie, robberies and affaults, taking away their Daughters and their Wines, &c. And if it were not for these and other like hinderances, all those of this Language had beene converted to our holy Faith.

There be other contrarie Nations enemies to these of divers Languages, which in a generall 50 name are called Tapuya, and they are contrarie also among themselves. In the Maine first neigh-Scuentie fix Nations of Tabouring to the Tupinaquins inhabit the Guamures, and they occupie tome eightie leagues of Coast and toward the Mayne all that they lift. They are Lords of the wild Woods, very great bodied. See of thefe Mafter Knivet and by the continuance and custome of going through the Woods, they have their skinnes very hard, and for this effect, they beate their children being young, with certaine Thiftles to accuwhich lived frome them to goe in the wilde Woods.

They have no Husbandrie, they live by rapine, and by the point of the Arrow; they eate the * Mandioca raw and it doth them no hurt, they runne verie swiftly, and to the White men they * A roote fo come not but on a sudden. They vie verie great Bowes; they carrie certaine stones made a purpose verie bigge that wheresoeuer they hit, they may presently breake the heads in pieces. And 60 when they come to fight, they hide themselves vnder shrubs, and from thence they play their part, & they are greatly feared, & there is no power in the world that is able to ouercome them. Cowards and They are great cowards in the fields and dare not come forth, neither paffe they any waters, vie any shipping, nor are given to fishing, all their living is from the woods. They are cruel as Lions,

when they take any enemies they cut off his flesh with a Reed whereof they make their Arrowes, and flea them that they leave them no more but the bones and the guts; if they take any child & are followed, that they may not take it away aliue, they firike off his head against a post. They disbowell the women with child to eate their children roafted. These annoy the Port Secure verie much, the little Hands, and Camama, and these Countries goes to decay because of them: their speech cannot be vinderstood.

Befides these towards the Maine and the fields of Castinga, doe line many Nations of Tapa- Tucking and 748, which are called Tucanness, these line in the Maine of the great River, opposite to Port Secure, other Nations they have another Language. Others doe live in the Maine before yee come to Aquitigpe, and are many. so calle Nacy. Others which they call Oquigiainbs, others which are called Pabi; these weare course Cotton-clothes, wouen like a Net, with this they couer themselves as with a lacke, they have no fleeues, they have a different speech. In the Ariare others which also live in the field going toward Aquitique. Others which are called Larabio, it is a great people, of a different ipeech. Others which are called Mandein : also of another speech, others called Macutu, others Napara, these have husbandrie. Others called Cux are, these live in the middest of the field of the Maine, others which live in the same field, that are called Nubins, others doe live toward the Maine of the Bay which is called Guayana, they have a speech by themselves, other there about called Taicuin, these dwell in houses, they have another speech, others in thesame Countrie called Cariu, of a different tongue. These three Nations, and their Neighbours are friends 20 of the Portugals, others which they call Pigra, they dwell in houses, others which are called O. bacoattara, thefeliue in Ilands in the River of Saint Francis, they have Houses like vnto Caues Gaue-houses.

under the Earth. These when the enemies come against them flie to the water, and by diving escape; they continue long under water, they have great Arrowes like halfe Darts, without Bowes, and with them they fight; they are verie valuant, they eate humane flesh , they have a different tongue.

Others there are that live farre within the Maine are called Anhelim, they have another Lan-Anhebim, &c. guage; others that line in Houses called Aracnaiati, they have another Speech; others called Caimari, they live in Caues. Others called Guaianaguacu, they dwell in Caues and have another Speech; others farre within the Maine called Camneniara; these have paps that reach under their Great Paps. 30 wafte, and neere to their knees, and when they runne they binde them about their wafte: they are neuerthelesse great Warriours, eate mens fiesh, and haue another Speech : Others which they call lobiora Apuayara, Lords of Sharpe Stanes, for they fight with tofted slaves and sharpe, they are valiant, and eate humane fleih, they have another Speech. Others called Annachie, they dwell in Houses, they have another Speech, but they understand themselves with these abovesaid their Neighbours. Others they call Guaiacain, and Guaiatuu, these have another Speech and dwell in Houles. Others called Cumpehe, these cate no humane fiesh, when they kill the enemie, they Cumphe Sauscut off the head and carrie it for a shew, they have no Houses, and are like Gipsies, O. hers cale get not cambals led Guayo, dwell in Houses, they fight with venomed Arrowes, they eat humane flesh, they have another Speech. Others called Cica, haue the same Speech and customes of them abouefaid. O-40 thers called Pahain, eate humane flesh, and have another Speech. Others called Iaicnin, have the fame Speech that thefe aboue. Others called Tupijo, dwell in Houses , have Husbandrie, and a-

nother Speech, Others called Maracaguacu, are Neighbours to these aboue, and have the same Speech. Others called Iacuruin, vie Husbandrie, dwell in Houses, and haue another Speech. Others called Tapecniu, are Neighbours of these aboue, and have the same speech. Others called Anacuin, haue the same Speech and customes that those aboue, and all of them doe fight with venomed Arrowes. Others called Piracnin, have the same Speech that those above, and venomed Arrowes.

Others called Taraguaig, haue another Speech, they fight with venomed Arrowes. Others called Pahacuin, can ipeake the Language of them aboutlaid. Others called Tipi, are of the field, and fight with venomed Arrowes. Others called Guacaraiara, hatte another Speech, and 50 haue Husbandries, and dwell in Houses. Others Neighbours to these aboue called Camaragea. Others called Curupia, were enemies of the Tupmaquis. Others called Aquirino, haue another Speech. Others called Piraguaye Aquig, line vinder the Rockes, are enemies to these about. O. thers celled Pinacuin Others called Parapoto, these can speake the Speech of them of the Coast. Others called Caraemba, haue another Speech. Others called Caraems, haue another Speech. Others called Mainuma, these joine themselves with the Guaimures enemies to them of the Coaft, they understand themselues with the Guammes, but they have another Speech. Others called Aturari, enter also in communication with the Guaimures, others called Cuigtaio, doe also communicate and enter with the Guammures. Others called Cuigpe, their were the Inhabitors

60 of Port Secure. Others called Guigrainbe, are friends with them aboue. Others called Augara. ri, thefe dwell not farre from the Sea, betweene Port Secure, and the Holy Ghost. Others called Amixocori, are friends with the former. Others called Carasa, doe line in the Maine toward Saint Pincent, and went flying from the North thither, they have another Speech. Others called Apetupa, liue in the Maine toward Aquitipi. Others called Caraguatiyara, haue another

with them.

Speech, Others called Aquiquira, these doe converte with the former. Another Nation liveth in the Maine, enemies to the Muriapigtanga, and of the Tarape, it is a Dwarfish people, low of bodie, but bigge legged and backed, the Portugals call their Pigness, and the Indians call them Tapigeniri, because they are little. Others called Quiricignig, these doe live in the Maine of the Bay, verie farre. Others called Guirig, theie are great Horiemen, and friends of the former-Others called Guerre, doe line in the Maine of Port Secure, verie farre off. Others called . E. naguing, these were Inhabitors of the Countries of the Tupmaguins, and because the Tupinaguins remained Lords of the Mountaines, they are called Tupinaquens,

Guaitaca.

Beaft in bumane shape,

the Sca.

Others called Gnaitaca, doe live in the Sea Coast betweene the Holy Ghoft, and the River of Januarie, they live in the fields, and will not live in the Woods , they goe to eate to their Hul- 10 bandries, and come to the houles to bed, they have no other treatures. They live as the catrell that feedeth in the fields, and come not to the Houses but to sleepe, they are so swift in running that by footmanship they catch the game. Others called Ighigrannpan, are enemies to the Tuninaguns, they communicate with the Guaimures, when they fight with their enemies, they make great noiles friking with certaine flickes vpon others. Others called Quirigma, thele were I only of the Countries of the Bay, and therefore it is called the Bay Currenters. The Tupinghas did expell them out of their Countries, and remained Lords of them, and the Tapnyas went toward the South. Others called Maribuco, in habit in the Maine right against the great River. O. there called Catagna, doe live right against lequeriquare, betweene the Holy Ghoff and Port Seenre. Others called Tapuxerig, are enemies of the Tapuyas, and eate vp their Corne fields. O- 20 there that dwell about the Maine that goeth toward Saint Vincent, are called Amocaro, and were enemies of the Tupinaquins. Others called Nonea, have verie great faces. Others called Apur, dwell neere the field of the Maine, they are great fingers, and have another Speech. Others called Panaeurs, differing from the former. Others also differing called Bigrorgya, Others called Pirin, there are a great number of thefe.

All these seventie fixe Nations of Tapuras, which have the most of them a fundry Language. are a wilde lauage and vntamed people; they are all for the most part enemies of the people that dwell in the Sea Coast neighbouring to the Portugals onely a certaine kind of Tapuyas, that line in the River of Saint Francis, and others that dwell nearer are friends of the Portugals, and entertaine them verie well when they passe through their Countries, Of these many are Christians, 30 that were brought by the Fathers from the Maine, and learning the Speech of them of the Sea Coast which the Fathers can speake, they baptized them, and many of them doe line in the Townes of the Fathers married, and serue them for Interpreters, for the remedie of so great a number of people as is loft; and onely with these Taparas, may some fruit bee gotten, with the rest of the Tapayas no conversion can be wrought because of their mutabilitie, and the having manie and fundrie very hard Languages. Onely there remaineth one remedie, if the Lord God doe not discouer another, and it is; getting some of their children, and making them to learne the Speech of the rest, and seruing for Interpreters may some fruit be gotten, though with great dif-

ficultie, for the Realons aboutfaid, and manie other.

The Climate of Brafill generally is temperate, of good, delicate, and healthfull aire, where 40

mue & Gount the men live lon even to 90.100. and more yeeres, and the Countrie is full of old men. Generaltric of Brafill, & ly it is neither cold nor hot, though from the River of lanuarse, vnto Saint Vincent, there be colds

of fome nota- and heates, but not very great. The Heatens are very pure and cleere, especially by night; the bie inings found there, as Moone is very prejudiciall vnto health, and corrupteth the things very much. The mornings are

well one the verie healthfull : it hath verie little twilights, as well in the morning as in the euenings, for as

foone as it is day prefently the Sun rifeth, and as foone as it is fet, it is night, Their Winter beginneth in March, and endeth in August, the Summer beginneth in September, and endeth in

Februarie, the nights and daies are all the yeere almost equall.

The Countrie is somewhat melancholicke, overflowne with many waters, as wel of maine Riuers, as from the Skie; in it is great flore of raine chiefly in Winter, it is ful of great Woods that are 50 greene all the yeere. It is a Hilly Countrie, especially toward the Sea Coast, and from Pernambuco vnto the Captaineship of the Holy Ghoft, is verie scarce of stone; but from thence to Saint Vincent are verie rough and high Mountaines, of great Quarries of Rockie stone, the food and waters are generally healthfuli, light, and of easie digestion. There are few Commodities for apparell, because the Countrie yeeldeth nothing but Cotton-wooll, and of the rest the Countries plentifull: especially of Cattell and Sugars.

d. IIII.

CHAP.I. S.A. Deere, Elkes, Boares, Asuti, Pacas, Ounces, Carioue. eg. ð. IIII.

Of the Beasts, Land-serpents, Fowles.

He Deere in the Brasilian tongue is called Cuaen: there are some very great, like faire Horfes, they are well headed, and fome have ten or twelve fnags; these are rare, and they are found in the River of Saint Francis, and in the Captainship of Saint Vincent. Their are called, Cuacuapara, they are effected of the Cargos, who of the shankes and

to finowes make the points of their Arrowes, and certaine throwing Balls which they vie for to strike downe beasts and men. There bee other smaller, they have hornes also, but they are onely of one point : belides these there are three or foure kindes, some that feede onely in the Woods, others onely in the plaine fields in heards. They make great account of the skinnes. and of the flesh.

The Tapurete are the Elkes, of whose skinne the leather Targets are made, they are like Kine, much more like a Mule, the tayle is of a finger length, they have no hornes, they have a front of a quarter long, which he shrinketh vp and p steeth forth. They swimme and dive very much, but when they dide they take ground prefently under water, and going on it they come out in another place, there are great ftore of them in this Conntrie.

There are great flore of willie Boares, and it is the ordinary food of the Indians of this Coun- The wilde trie, they have the nauell on their backe, and out of it there cometh a fent like the fent of little Boare, 3. kinds and more. Foxes, and by that fent the Dogs doe hunt them, and they are eafily taken.

There are others called Tayacmirica, that is to say, a Boare that Inappeth or grindeth his teeth. these are bigger then the common, and more rare, and with their turnes they goare all the beasts they meete.

Others are talled Tayacupita, that is, a Boare that flandeth fill and tarieth; these doe affault the Dogs, and the men : and if they catch them they eate them ; they are are so fierce , that men are forced to take the trees to escape them, and some doe stay at the foot of the trees some dayes till the man doe come downe; and because they know this tricke of theirs, they goe prefently to the trees with their Bowes and Arrowes, and from thence they kill them. There bee also other kinde of Boares, all good meate.

The Acutis are like the Conies of Spaine, chiefely in their teeth : the colour is dunne, and Acuti, draweth toward yellow: they are domerticall creatures, so that they goe about the house, and goe out and come in againe to it, they take with their fore-feet all that they eate, and fo they carrie it to the mouth, and they eate very fast, and hide that which they leave against they be an hungred. Of these there are many kindes, and all are eaten,

The Pacas are like Pigs, there are great abundance of them; the fielh is pleasant, but it is Pacas heavie. They never bring forth but one at once. There bee others very white; these bee rare, they are found in the River of Saint Francis.

There are many Ounces, some blacke, some grey, some speckled, it a very cruell beast, and Incorrete, There are many Ounces, tome otacke, tome grey, tome spectrus, the array close total, and M. Roisette calls fierce, they affault men exceedinly, that even on the trees they cannot close them, especially M. Roisette calls if they be bigge. When they are flesht there is none that dare abide them, especially by night; them Tigres. they kill many beafts at once, they spoile a whole Hen-house, or a heard of Swine, and to open a man, or whatfoeuer beaft, it sufficeth to hit him with one of his clawes. But the Indians are fo Bold vain-glohardie, that some of them dare close with one of them, and holdeth it fast, and kills it in a field, rious Indians, as they doe their enemies, getting a name, and vfing all the ceremonics they doe to their enemies. They vie the heads for Trumpets, and the Portugall women vie the skinnes for Rugs or Couerlets, especially of the painted ones, and in the Captainship of Saint Vincent.

The Carigue are like the Foxes of Spaine, but they are smaller, as bigge as a Cat, they smell carigue. worfe then the Foxes of Spaine themselves, and they are grey as they. They have a bag from the go fore to the hinder feet, with fixe or feuen duys, and there they carrie their young ones hidden till they can get their owne food, and hath ordinarily fixe or feuen in a litter. This vermine defroyeth the Hens, for it goeth not by day but by night, and climes the trees and the houles, and no Bird or Hen can escape them.

The Tamandua is of notable admiration, it is of the bigneffe of a great Dog, more round then Ant Beare, or long, and the tayle is twice or thrice as long as the bodie, and fo full of haire, that from the Tamasdua, a heate, raine, cold and winde, hee harboureth himfelte all under it, that yee can fee nothing of frange-shaped him. The head is small, and hath a thinne snout, no greater mouth then an oyle Cruze, round beast. and not open, the tongue is of three quarters long, and with it he licketh up the Ants, whereof 60 he onely teeds ; hee is diligent in feeking of the Ant-heapes, and with the clawes hee breaketh them, and casting out his congue the Ants sticke on it, and so he drawes them in, having no more mouth then to hold his tongue full of them; it is of a great fierceneffe, and doth affault many people and beafts. Th O inces doe feare them, and the Dogs exceedingly, and whatfo-

ener they catch, they teare with their clawes; they are not eaten, neither are they good for

any thing but to deftroy the Ant-heapes, and they are so many that they will never bee deffroved altogether.

Tatu ot Arma-The Fadas are the Rhinoce-2015.

The Tate is of the bignefie of a Pigge, and of a whitish colour, it hath a very long front, and the body full of thing-like plates, wherewith he remayneth armed, and it hath certaine pieces hanging downe as the Badas haue. Thefe plates are fo hard, that no Arrow can pierce them, excopt it hits him in the flankes; they digge fo fast, that it hath chanced feuen and twentie men with Mattockes not to bee able to digge fo much as one of these with their snout. But if they cast water in their holes they are presently taken : it is a creature worth the seeing, and they call it an armed Horfe, the fielh is like Hennes fielh, or Pigge, very pleafant, of the skinne they make Purfes , and they are very faire, and lasting , they are made tame, and are bred in the house. Of to these there be many kindes, and there are great abundance of them.

Canduscu, ot Porcupine: diners kinds:

The Candnace is the Porcupine of Africa, and hath briffles white and blacke, fo great, that they are af a spanne and a halte, and more, and they cast them like as those of Africa. There be other of theie, called Candamiri, because they are imaller; and they have briftles as the other, There be other smaller, of the bignesse of a Cat, with yellow briftles and blacke at the points. All these brittles have this qualitie, that entring into the flesh, bee it never to little, of it selfe it pierceth through the fleth. And for this cause these briftles doe ferue the Indians for an infirmment to bore the eares, for putting neuer fo little in them in one night it pierceth them through. There be other smaller like Vrchins or Hedge-hogs, they have also brittles, but they cast them not, all these beasts are of a good flesh and taite.

Hirars or Ciuer Cats.

The Hirara is like the Ciuet Cat, though fome fay it is not; they are of many colours, viz. grev. blacke, and white, they eate nothing but hunnie, and in this they are to terrible, that bee the hole of the Bee-hine neuer fo little they make it fo bigge that they may goe in , and when they finde the Hunnie they neuer eate it, till they have called the rest of the young ones, and and then the old one going in, he doth nothing but bring out the Hunnie, and give it to the yong ones, a thing of great admiration, and an example of great charitie for men, and that this is fo the men of the Countrie doe affirme. The Aquiqui are very great Apes, as bigge as a good Dog, blacke, and very ougly, as well the

Aquiqui, Apes or Mankies. Ape-king.

male as the temale; they have a great beard onely in the lower chap: of thele come fometimes a male one to yellow that it draweth toward red, which they fay is their King. This hath a 30 white face, and the beard from eare to eare, as cut with the Sciffers, and it hath one thing much His Oration. to be noted, namely, that he goeth into a tree, and maketh fo great a noise that it is heard very farre off, in the which he continueth a great while without ceasing, and for this, this kind hath a particular inftrument; and the inftrument is a certaine hollow thing, as it were made of Parchment, very ftrong, and fo fmooth, that it ferueth to burnish withall, as big as a Duckes Egge, and beginneth from the beginning of the gullet, rill very neere the palate of the mouth between both the cheekes, and it is to light that affoone as it is tought it moueth as the key of a Virginals. And when this Ape is thus crying he fometh much, and one of the little ones that is to remaine in his place doth cleanfe many times the fome from his beard.

His Page. Many kindes

There are others of many kindes, and in great abundance, they are blacke, grey, and yellow; 40 of Monkies. the Country-men fay that some of these, when they shoot at them with an Arrow, catch it in their hand, and turne againe, and throwe it at the man; and when they are nurt they feeke a certaine leafe and chaw it, and thrust it into the wound for to heale them, and because they are

Their Phylike, alwaies on the trees, and are very fwift, when the leape is great, and the little ones cannot paffe, one of them lieth acrosse like a bridge, and the rest passe ouer him, the tayle scrueth him for a hand; and if any be ftrucken, with his tayle he holdeth fast the bough whereon he is, and so die eth hanging, and falleth not. Monkic-ricks. They have many other qualities that are feene every day, as to take a flicke and beate fome

body that doth them harme; another found a basket of Egges, hung it by the cord about his necke, and going to the top of an house, from thence made many mowes at his master that to went to feeke him, and breaking them, did eate them all before him, throwing the shells at

Cuati.

The beaft (nati is grey, and like the Badgers of Portugal, it hath the fnout and clawes very long, it climeth the trees like the Monkie : no Snake, on Egge , no Bird doth escape it , nor any thing that it can get. They are made tame in the houses, but no man can abide them, for they denoure all ; they will play with little Cats, and whelpes, they are malicious, pleafant, and are apt for many things. There bee other two or three greater kindes, as great Dogges, and have tufhes like the wilds

Other kinds.

Boares of Portugall; these devoure beaits and men , and when they finde their prey, they compaffe it about, some in one place, some in another, till they denoure it. WildeCats. Of wilde Cats are many kindes, fome blacke, fome white, fome of a Safran colour, and are very faire for any furre. These Cats are very terrible, and swift; they live by prey and by birds,

and they affault also the men; some of them are as big as Dogs, The lagoarnen are the Dogs of Brafill, they are of a grey colour mingled with white, very

fwift, and when they yelpe they are like Dogs; they have the tayle very hairy, feed on fruits and vpon prey, and bite terribly.

The Tanati are like the Conies of Portugall, and here they doe barke like Dogs, especially by Tavati. night, and very often; the Indians hold this barking for an euill figne; they breed three or foure at once: they are very rare, for they have many advertaries, as birds of rapine, and other beafts

The laguacini are big as the Foxes of Portugall, and have the same colour of a Foxe, they feed laguacini. onely youn the Sea-crabs, and among the Sugar-canes, and deftroy many of them; they are very fleepie, for they kill them fleeping, they doe no hurt,

The Biarataca is of the bigneffe of a Cat, like a Ferret; it hath a white stroake and a grey Biarataca, alone the backe, like a croffe, very well made; it feeds upon birds and their egges, and upon other things, especially vpon Ambar, and loueth it so well, that all the night he goeth by the Seafide to feeke it, and where there is any, hee is the first. It is greatly feared, not because it hach any teeth, or any other defensive thing, but it hath a certaine ventofitie fo itrong, and so exill of Stinking beaft, fent, that it doth penetrate the wood, the stones, and all that it encountreth withall, and it is fach, that some Indians have died with the ftench. And the Dog that commeth peere it escapeth not: and this smell lasteth fifteene, twentie, or more dayes; and it is such, that if it lighreth neere some Towne, it is presently dis-inhabited. And that they may not bee perceived. they scrape a hole in the ground, and there within they voide that ventofitie, and court it with an earth; and when they are found, that they may not bee taken, their defense is to cast out

The Prignica (which they call) of Brafill, is worth the feeing; it is like a shag-haire Dog, or Prignica or Laa Land-spaniell, they are very ougly, and the face is like a womans cuill drest, his fore and hin-zinesse. der feet are long, hee hath great clawes and cruell, they goe with the breaft on the earth, and their young fast to their bellie. Though yee strike it never so fast, it goeth so leasurely, that it hath need of a long time to get up into a tree , and fo they are eatily taken; their food is certaine fig-tree leaues, and therefore they cannot bee brought to Portugall, for as foone as they Simple food. want them they die presently.

In these parts are a great multitude of Rats, and of them are some ten or twelve kindes, some Twelve kinds 20 blacke, others wellow, others dunne, all are eaten, and are very fauourie, especially some great of Rate ones that are like Conics, and fometimes they are fo many, that lighting upon a fowne field. they veterly destroy it.

Of Land-Snakes and Serpents;

"He Giboys is a Snake of the greatest that are in this Countrie, and there are some found of Of the Snakes twentie toot in length, they are very faire, but more wonderfull they are in swallowing a that are on the whole Deere; they have no poifon , neither are their teeth great according to the bodie. To land, and have take their prey whereon they feed, they wie this fleight. It layeth it felfe along by the high-Gibys. 40 wayes, and when the prey paffeth it leapeth vpon it, and windes it felfe in fuch order, and crusheth it so, that it breaketh all his bones, and afterward licketh it, and his licking hath fuch yertue, that it bruifeth or suppleth it all, and then it swallowes it vp whole,

There are others, talled Guiraupiaguara, that is, Eaters of birds Egges, it is very blacke, long, Eggenter. and hath a yellow breaft: they goe on the tops of trees as it were i wimming in the water, and no man can runne fo faft on the ground as they on the trees; thefe deftroy the birds, and their

There are others very bigge and long, called Caninana, they are all greene, and of a notable caninana. beautie. These also doe eate egges and birds, and kill little chickens.

There is another, called Boystapus, that is, a Snake that bath a long fnout, it is very slender, Long snow 50 and long, and feeds onely vpon Frogs. The Indians observe footh-saying with this, that when the woman hath no children, they take this Snake and strike her with it on the hips, and fay she shall presently have children.

There is another, called Gaistepia, they are found only in the Rarm, it is of a notable bigness, Gaittorie. he smelleth so much, like a Foxe, wheresoeuer he goeth, that there is none can abide it. There is another, called Boyuna, that is, a blacke Snake, it is very long and flender, it fmelleth Equina,

alio very much like a Foxe. There is another, called Bom, because that when it goeth, it crieth bom, bom, it is also very

great, and doth no hurt.

There is another, called Boisenpecanga, that is, a Snake that bath prickles in his backe, they are 60 very great, and groffe, the prickles are very venomous, and all men doe avoide and keepe themfelues from them.

lawaraca is a name that comprehendeth four kindes of very venomous Snakes. The first is Snakes that greatest, called lararacuen, that is, great lararaca, and they are of ten spannes long, they have have poston, great tufhes budden in the mouth along their gummes, and when they bite they itretch them largace.

Boycininga.

Ibiracua.

like a finger of the hand : they have their poifon in their gummes , their teeth crooked , and a itroake voon them whereby the poison runneth. Others fay, they have it within the tooth. which is hollow within, it hath fo vehement a poifon, that in foure and twentis houres, and leffe, it killeth a man: the poifon is very yellow, like Saffran water, they bring foorth mane young ones at once, one hath beene taken with thirteene in her bellie.

There are others, called lararcoaypitinga, that is, that bath the point of the tayle more white them grey: these are as venomous as Vipers of Spaine, and have the same colour and fashion.

There are others, called lararaepeba, most venomous; it hath a red chaine along the backe, and the breafts, and the rest of the bodie is all grev.

There are other smaller Iararacas, that the greatest is about halfe a yard long, they are of an earthie colour , they have certaine veines in their head like the Vipers , and they make fuch a

noise as they doe. The Curnenen is a Snake very hideous and fearefull, and fome are of fifteene spannes lone: CHTHEUCH. when the Indians doe kill them they burie prefently the head, because it hath great store of poifon : for to catch the prey and the people, it lieth close to a tree, and when it feeth the prev. it cafts it felie voon it, and to killeth it.

The Boycininga is a Snake, called of the Bell, it is of a great poifon, but it maketh fuch a noife with a Bell it hath in his taile, that it catcheth very few; though it be fo fwift, that they call it, the flying Snake , his length is twelve or thirteene spannes long. There is another , called Bocining peba: this also hath a Bell, but smaller, it is blacke, and very venomous.

The poison of the Ibiracus Snake is so vehement, that if it biteth any person, presently it makes him to voide bloud through all the passages of his bodie, to wit, the eies, nostrils, mouth, eares, and all open places elfe of his bodie; it runneth a great while, and if he be not holpen, he empties his bloud and dieth.

The Snake Ibiboboca is very faire, it hath the head red, white and blacke, and so all the bodie Zbiboboca. is sported of these three colours; this is the most venomous of all, it goeth slowly, and frueth in Store and fore, the crannies of the earth, and by another name it is called, the Snake of the colours.

The great vehemencie that these venomous Snakes aboue faid haus, the great paines they caule, and the many persons that every day doe die of their stinging cannot be exprest : and they are so many in number, that not onely the fields and the woods , but even the houses are full of 20 them, and they are found in the beds, and within the bootes, when they put them on. The Brethren going to their rest doe finde them there wound about the benches feet, and if they be not holpen when they fling, cutting the wound, letting him bloud, drinking Vnicornes horne, or Carima, or the water of the Snakes-wood, or some other effectuall remedie, in source and twen-Carima, a drug tie houres and leffe he dieth, with great crying and paines, and they are so excessive, that when any person is bitten presently he demandeth consession, and maketh account to die, and so dif-

poleth of his goods. There are other Snakes, chiefely these largraces, that have a great smell of Muske, and where-Musk-fnake. focuer they bee, they are descried by the good and fragrant smell they have.

There are many Scorpions, that every day are found in their beds, among the bookes, and a- 40 Scerpions. bout the chambers, ordinarily they kill not, but in foure and twentie houres they cause intole-

It seemeth that this climate doth flowe in poison, as well for the many Snakes there are, as for the multitude of Scorpions, Spiders, and other vncleane creatures, and the Lizards are so many that they couer the walls of the house, and the holes are full of them.

Of the Fowles that are in the Land, and are thereon sustained.

EVen as this climate doth flowe in poison, so it seemeth to create beautifulnesse in the birds, and as all the Countrie is full of Groues and Woods, so it is full of most beautifull birds of

The Parots in this Countrie are infinite, more then Dawes, or Starlings, or Thrushes, or Sparrowes of Spaine, and so they make a cackling as the birds about faid; they destroy them by thoufands, they flie in flockes alwaies, and they are formany, that there be llands where there is nothing but Parots; they are eaten, and are very good meate; they are ordinarily very faire, and of many and fundrie colours and kindes, and they almost all speake if they be taught.

Varietie of Pas The Arara Parots are those that by another name are called Macaos; it is a great bird, and are very rare, and by the sea-coast they are not found, it is a faire bird in colours; their breasts are red as scarlet; from the middle of the bodie to the taile some are yellow, others greene, others blue, and through all the bodie they have feattering, some greene, some yellow and blue feathers, and ordinarily every feather hath three or foure colours, and the taile is very long. Thefe 60 lay but two egges, they breed in the trunkes of trees, and in the rockes of itone. The Indians efteeme them very much, and of their feathers they make their fine things, and their hangings for their fwords, it is a very pleasant bird, they become very tame, and domesticall, and speake very well if they be taught.

The Anapara Parot is most faire; in it all colours are found with great perfection, to wit, red, greene, yellow, blacke, blue, grey, the colour of the Bulfach, and of all these colours it hath the bodie belpeckled and spotted. These also doe speake, and they have another advantage, that

CHAP.I. S.4. Diners kinde. of Parots. Guaimimbique a rare bird

is, they breed in the house, and hatch their young ones, wherefore they are of great effective. The Araruma or Machao is very faire, it is all blacke, and this blacke sprinkled with greene, Ararum, which giveth it a great beautie, and when the Sunne shineth on him he is so shining that it is very pleasant to behold; it hath the feet yellow, and the beake and the eies red; they are of great esteeme for their beautie, for they are very rare, and breed not but very farre within the Land. and of their feathers the Indians make their Diademes and Pictures.

30 The Parots Ainrueure are most beautifull, they are all greene, they have a cap and a collar of Ainrueure. vellow, very faire, and ouer the beake a few feathers of a very cleare blue, which doe beautifie him very much, it hath pinions of the wings red, and the taile feathers red and yellow, for inkled with greene.

The Tame are a kinde of Parot very small, of the bignesse of a Sparrow, they are greene. This, fprinkled with other divers colours, they are much efteemed, as well for their beautie, as because they practile much, and well, and are very tame. They are so small, that they skip every where on a man, on his hands, his breast, his shoulders and his head; and with his bill hee will cleanse ones ceeth, and will take the meate out of the mouth of him that brings them up, and make many gambols; they are alwaies speaking or singing after their owne fashion.

20 The Parots Guirainba, or Tellem birde, neither speake nor play, but are fullen and fad ; they are Guirainbe, much efteemed, because they are brought from two hundred and three hundred leagues, and are not found but in great mens houses, and they hold them in such esteeme, that they give the ranforme and value of two persons for one of them, and they esteeme them as much as the lapanet doe the Treuets and the Pors, or any other great man efteemeth any thing of great price, as a Faulcon, Gerfaulcon, &c.

The Taps is of the bigneffe of a Pie-annet, the bodie of a fine blacke, and the taile of a very Taps. fine yellow, it hath three tufts on the head that are like little hornes, when hee raifeth them: the cies are blue, the neb very yellow. It is a very faire bird, and hatha very frong fmell when it is angrie. They are very carefull in feeking their food, there escapeth not a Spider, Beetle, or

30 Cricket, &c. they are very cleanly in a house, and goe about like Pie-annets, they leave nothing vnfought. It is dangerous holding them in the hand, for they runne presently to the eies, and Dangerous to

Of the finall birds called Guaiminobique, there are fundrie kindes, as Guaracie &, that is, Fruit The Guaininoof the Summe; by another name, Guaracia oba, that is, Concerng of the Summe; or Guaracia aba, bique: others that is . The haire of the Sunne; in the Antillas they call it the rifen or anaken bird, and they fay call it the Ide it fleepeth fixe moneths, and liueth other fixe moneths. It is the fineft bird that can bee imagi- minerat, ned; it hath a cap on his head, to which no proper colour can be given, for on what foeuer file vee looke on it, it she weth red, greene, blacke, and more colours, all very fine, and shining; and the breaft is fo faire, that on whatfoeuer fide yee take it, it shewth all the colours, especially a 40 yellow more finer then gold. The bodie is grey; it hath a very long bill, and the tongue twice the length of the bill; they are very I wift in flight, and in their flight they make a noise like

the Bee, and they rather feeme Bees in their fwittneffe then birds , for they alwaies feed flying without fitting on a tree, euen as the Bees doe flie sucking the Hunnie from the flowers. They haue two beginnings of their generation, fome are hatched of egges like other birds, others of Generation, little bubbles, and it is a thing to bee noted, a little bubble to beginne to convert it selfe into this little bird, for at one instant it is a bubble and a bird, and so it conuerts it selfe into this most faire bird, a wonderfull thing, and vnknowne to the Philosophers, seeing one living creature Note for Philosophers without corruption is converted into another.

The bird Gurranbe eng eta is of the bigneffe of a Gold-finch; it hath the backe and wings Guranbe spa 50 blue, and the breaft and bellie of a most fine yellow. It hath a yellow Diademe on his head that eta. beautifies him very much. It is a very excellent bird for the Cage, it speaketh many waies refembling many birds, making many changes, and changing his speech a thousand waies. They continue long in their fong , and are of eleeme, and of theie for the Cage there bee many, and faire, and of divers and fundrie colours.

The Tangara is of the bigneffe of a Sparrow, all blacke, the head is of a verie fine Orange-Tangara tawnie, it ungeth not, but it hath a wonderfull thing, for it hath fits like the Falling sicknesse, and for this cause the Indians doe not eate them, for the auoiding of that disease, they have a kinde of very pleafant dancing, and it is, that one of them makes himselfe as dead, and the other compasse him about skipping with a long of a strange crying that is heard verie farre, and when they Dance,

60 end this feast, crying, and dancing, he that was as dead rileth, and maketh a great noise and crying, and then all goe away, and end their feath. They are fo earnest when they doe it, that although they be seene and shot at, they sie not away. Of these there bee many kindes, and all

The bird Quereins, is of the most esteemed of the Land, not for the fong, but for the beautie Quereins,

Parots.

Tucana

Масисация,

CHAP.I. S.5.

of the feathers; they are a cleare azure in part, and a darke, all the breaft is most fine red. the wings almost blacke; they are to efteemed, that the Indians doe fleathem, and give two or three persons for the skinnes of them , and with the feathers they make their Pictures , Diademes.

The Tucana is of the bignesse of a Pie, it is all blacke except the breast, which is all yellow. with a round red circle; the bill is a large spanne long, verie great, yellow, and within is red. fo smooth and shining, that it seemeth to bee varnished; they are made tame, and breede in the houses, are good to eate, and the feathers are esteemed because they are faire.

The Guirapanea is white, and not being very big it crieth fo loude that it founds like a Bell.

Guirananta. and it is heard halfe a league, and their finging is like the ringing of Bells.

The Macucagna is greater then any Henne of Portugall, it resembleth the Feasant, and so the Portugals doe call it; it hath theee skinnes one over another, and much fleih, and, and verie fa-

norie, they lay twice a yeere, and at euerie time thirteene or fifteene egges, they goe alwaies on the ground, but when they fee any people they file to the trees, and at night when they goe to rouft as Hennes doe. When they fit on the trees, they put not their feet on the boughs, but the shankes of their legs, and most on the fore part. There bee mamy kindes of these, and they are

Among them there is one of the smallest, that hath many properties; when it sinceth it foresheweth raine, it crieth so loude, that it is incredible of so small a bird, and the reason is, because the gullet is veriegreat. It beginneth at the mouth and commeth out at the breast betweene the skinne and the flesh, and reacheth to the fundament, and returneth againe and entreth into the crop, and then it proceedeth as other birds, and doubleth like a Trumper with his turnings. They runne after any bodie pecking him and playing like a little whelpe, if they fet it voon Hennes egges, it fi teth ouer them, and bringeth vp the young chickens, and if it fee a Hen with chickens, it fo perfecutes her, till it takes them from her and broodes them, and brings them vp. The Hen Muts is very domesticall, it hath a combe like the Cockes, spotted with white and blacke, the egges are great and very white, like a Goofe egge, so hard that knocking the one with

Hard egges. Dogs poilon. Dog that eateth the bones of it dieth, and wnto men it doeth no hurt at all.

 V_{14}

the other, they ring like Iron, and of them they make their Maraca, that is, their Bells : any In this Countrie there are many kindes of Partridges, which though they are not like in all 30 things to thole of Spaine, yet are they very like in colour, tafte, and in the aboundance.

Turtles innumerable.

In this Countrie are many kindes of Turtle-doues, Stares, and Black-birds, and Pigeons of many torts, and all these birds are like to them of Portugal; and the Pigeons and Turtle-doues are in fuch abundance, that in certaine fields farre within the Land they are fo many, that when they rife they hinder the light of the Sinne, and make a noise like a thunder; they lay so many egges, and fo white, that a very farre off yee may fee the fields white with egges, as if it were fnowe; and feruing the Indians for meate as they doe, they cannot be diminished; rather from thence at certaine times it feemeth they runne ouer all the parts of this Prouince. In this Countrie are many Offriches, called Andugeacu, but they keep only within the Land.

Offriches. Horne media

The Anima is a fowle of rapine, great, and crieth that it is heard halfe a league and more, it 40 is all blacke, hath faire eies, the beake bigger then a Cocks, vpon this beake it hath a little horne of a spanne in length, the men of the Countrie say that this Horne is very medicinable for those that are taken in their speech, as hath beene proued, hanging it about the necke of a girle that did not speake, which spake presently.

There be many other fowles of rapine, to wit, Eagles, Faulcons, Gof-hawkes, Merlines, and Tarfels, and many other, but they are all ordinarily to wilde, that they will flie at any thing, neither will they come to hand, or stoope to lure.

Of the Brasilian Trees for fruit, medicine, and other vies; and their Herbes of rare operations.

Many vies

flower groweth in the fings, which makes certaine points like fingers, and in the faid points there groweth a red flower of a good smell, and after it groweth a Chesnut, and from the Chesnut commeth an Apple as big as a great Apple, or a Pippin, it is a very faire fruit, and some are yellow, others red, and it is all juyce. They are good for hot weather, they coole verie much, and laying the myce vpon a white cloth it never goeth off till the cloth bee wome. 60 The Chefnut is as good or better then those of Portugal, they are eaten rosted, and raw laid in water as blanche Almonds, and of them they make Marchpanes, and sweet meates as of Almonds. The timber of this tree is little worth, enen for the fire, it yeeldeth of it selfe a certain gumme good to paint and write, and there is great store. With the barke they dye their yarne,

Atinde He Trees Acam, are very great and faire, they cast the leafe at their times, and the

and the veffels that ferues them for Pots. This being stamped and boyled with some Copper. till the third part of the water be confumed, is a four raigne remedy for old fores, and they heale quickly. There bee so many of these trees as of Chesnute in Poringall, they growe about these Woods, and they gather many quarters of these Chesnuts, and the fruit in their season satisfie all men. Of theie Acaisa doe the Indians make Wine.

There is great abundance of the trees Mangaba, especially in the Bay, for in other places they Mangaba. are rare, in making they are like the barke of Anafega, and in the leafe with those of Frezo, they are very pleasant trees, and haue alwaies greene leaues. They yeeld fruit twice a yeere, the first in a knob, for then they doe not flower, but the very knob is the fruit; this season ended. 10 which lasteth two or three moneths, it giveth another bearing, first the flower, which is altogether like the lesamine, and of as good a smell, but more quicke; the fruit is as big as an Apricock. Or Musk role wellow and spotted with some spots of blacke; within it hath some kernels, but all is eaten, or fucked as the Seruices of Portugall. They are of a very good tafte, and healthfull, and so light that eate they never io many, it feemes they eate no fruit at all. They ripen not on the tree, bur fall to the ground, and from thence they gather them already ripe, or gathering them greene they

lay them to ripen. The Indians make Wine of them. The tree and the fruit it felfe being greene, is full of white Milke, and cleaveth to the hands, and is bitter. The fruit Muruenge groweth on certaine trees, very high and like the wilde Peare-trees of Murueuce. Portugell. It hath a very long stalke, they are gathered greene, and are layd to ripen, and being 20 ripe they are very pleasant and of an easie digestion. When they are to gather them, they cut Illigathering downe the tree, because they are very high, and if this destruction were not, there would bee more abundance, but therefore they are rare, the trunke hath great abundance of white Milke.

and it congealeth, it may ferue for Sealing-waxe if they will vie it.

Of the Araca trees are great abundance, of many forts; the fruit is certaine small Peares. Araca yellow, red, or greene; they are pleafant, vnloathfome, toothfome, because they have little taile of fowre, they yeeld fruit almost all the yeere.

This Ombu is a great tree not very high, but well spread; the fruit is like white Plums, yel- Ombulow and round, and therefore the Portugals doe call it a Plum. It causeth the teeth to fall, and the Fruit eaufing Indians that doe eate it doe lote them. The rootes of this tree are eaten, and are very pleafant, and teeth to fall. 30 more toothsome then the Abalancia, for they are sweeter, and the sweetnesse thereof is like Su-

gar, they are cold and healthfull, and they are given to the ficke of a Feauer, and it ferneth for water to them that goe inward to the Land, for they have no other.

The lacapucaya is of the greatest and fairest of this Countrie; it beareth a fruit like a Pot, as lacapucaya, big as a great Bowle, as thicke as two fingers, with a couer vpon it, and within it is full of certaine Chefnuts like vnto the Myrabolanes; and it feemes they are the fame of India, when they are already in feafon, that couer doth open and the fruit falleth. If any doe eate much of it green, he casteth all the haire he hath on his body; rosted it is a good fruit. They wie the huskes for Haire-fal-fruit Cup, and they are lasting; the timber of this tree is very hard , it doth not rotte , they esteeme Grace it for the Axel-trees of the Sugar-mills.

Aration, is a tree of the bigneffe of an Orange tree and greater, the leafe is like a Citron tree or Aration, a Lymond tree, it is a faire and plafant tree, it beareth a fruit as bigge as Pine apples; and they have a good smell, and a reasonable taste, it is a fruit that loatheth not.

Of these Trees are many kindes, and one of them called Araticu panania. If they eate much of the fruit it proueth a cold poilion, and doth much hurt. Of the rootes of these trees they make booyes for the Nets, and they are so light as any Corkes.

There be two forts of Peques, one of them beares a fruit as big as a good Orange, and so they Peques. haue the rinde thicke like an Orange; within this rinde there is nothing but Hunnie fo cleare and sweet as any Sugar, in quantitie of an egge, and mingled with it, it hath the pippens or

The other Pequea is timber, of the heaviest of this Countrie, in Portugall it is called Setim, it hath very fine wanes, it lasterh long and doth not rotte.

On the tree labaticaba groweth a fruit of the bignetle of a Lymond of Sytill, the rinde and labaticaba tafte is like a fowrish Grape, from the roote of the tree through all the body vnto the vtmost bough or iprig, is a rare fruit, it is onely found within the Land in the Captainship of S. Vincent. The Indians doe make of this fruit a kinde of Wine, and they boyle it like the wine of Grapes.

In this Brafill are many Coco-nuts, excellent like those of India; these are ordinarily set, and Cocos. growe not in the Woods, but in Gardens, and in their Farmes. And there are more then twen- ao, kinds of tie kindes of Palme trees, and almost all doe beare fruit, but not so good as the Cocos: with some Palmes. of these Palme trees they couer their houses.

60 Belides these Fruit-trees there are many other that yeeld fundry fruits, whereof they make profit, and many Nations of the Indians sustaine themselves, together with the Hunnie, whereof there is great abundance, and with their hunting, for they have no other fuftenance.

In the maine of the Captainfhip of Saint Vincent vinto Paraguay, are many and great Woods The Pinetree. of Pine trees, euen like vnto them of Portugall, which beare Apples and kernels; the Apples are

29999

Of the Trees that free tor medianes. Cabueriba. Por: Engaddi, for wounds.

not lo long but rounder and greater, the kernels are greater and are not fo hot, but of a good temperature and wholfome. Cabueriba is very great and esteemed for the Balme that it hath; to get this Balme they prick the barke of the tree, and lay a little Corton wooll to the cuts, and from certaine to certaine dayes they goe to gather the Oyle that it hath diffilled. The Portugals call it Balme, because is is very l ke to the true Balme of the Vineyards of Engeds, it serveth for greene wounds, and taketh away all the featre : it fmelleth very well, and of it, and of the barke of the tree they make Beades, and other finelling things. The Woods where they growe doe finell well, and the heafts doe goe and rubbe on this tree, it formeth to bee to heale them of fome difeases. The Timber is of the best of this Countrie, because it is very strong and heavy, and some are of such to bigneffe, that of them they make the Beames, Axel-trees, and Skrues or Vices for their Sugar-Mills, thefe are very rare, and are found chiefly in the Captainfoir of the Holy Chof.

Cuparba. For wounds.

Cupayba is a Fig-tree, commonly very high, straite and big, it hath much oile within; for to get it they cut the tree in the middeft, where it hath the vene, and thereit hath this oile in lo great abundance, that some of them doe yeeld a quarterne of oile and more, it is very cleare, of the colour of oile, it is much fet by for wounds, and taketh away all the skarre. It ferueth alfo for lights, and burne well, the beafts knowing the vertue thereof doe come and rubbe them. felues thereat. There are great flore, the wood is good for nothing,

swhaha. For wounds,

The Ambayba Fig. trees are not very great, and are not found in the true Woods but in Conpices, where some fowing hath beene; the barke of this tree scraping it on the infide, and cru- 20 thing those scrapings in the wound, laying them on it, and binding it with the barke it selfe, healeth in a fhort time. There is great abundance of them, and are much efteemed for their great vertue, the leaves are rough, and ferue to imooth any wood, the timber ferueth for nothing.

Ambaretinea.

The Fig-tree which they call of Hell, Ambaigtings is found in Taperas: it yeelds a certaine Oyle that ferueth for lights, it hath great vertue, as Monardes writeth, and the leaves are much effected for them that doe vomit, and cannot retayne that which they eate, anointing the flomacke with the Oyle, it takethaway the Oppilations, and the Collicke. To get this Oyle, they lay it in the Sunne some dayes, and ftampe it, and seethe it, and presently that Oyle commeth on the top, which is gathered for the effect about-faid.

Iebacamuci. For the bloudy Fiuxa

Of the trees Ighacamuci there are many in Saint Vincent: they beare a certaine fruit as good 30 as Quinces, fa hioned like a Panne or a Por, they have within certaine small feeds, they are the onely remedie for the bloudy Fluxe. The Igeines yeeldeth the Matticke , smelleth very much for a good while: they notch the

Igeigea. Fo colddifcales.

tree in some places, and in an instant it stilleth a white liquor that doth congeale; it serueth for Plaisters in cold diseases, and to perfume, it serueth also in stead of incense. There is another tree of this kinde , called Igrangewa, that is, Mafticke as bard as flone , and

Gunme A.

foit feemeth rather Gumme-anime then Masticke, and it is so hard and thining that it feemeth Glaffe; it ferueth to glafe the earthen veffell, and for this it is much efteemed among the India ans, and it ferueth also for cold difeafes. There is a River betweene Port Secure and the Illers, that commeth from more then three 49

hundred leagues within the Mayne, it bringeth great store of Rozen , which is the Gummeanime it felfe, which the Indians doe call Igraigeica, and the Portugals, White inconfe; it hath the same effects that the Incense.

Curunicaiba. For wounds. and for the Poxe. Catyoba.

Currepicaiba is like to the Peach-trees of Portugal in the leafe: the leaves doe diffill a kinde of I quor like the Fig-trees of Spaine, which is the onely remedie for wounds both greene and old, and for the Poxe, and it taketh away all the scarre from the wounds, if they pricke the barke of it, it yeeldeth great ftore of Bird-lime, wherewith they catch the small birds, There is great abundance of the trees Casroba, the leaves of these chewed and layd to the

For the Poxe. Pock-fore drye and heale it in fuch manner, that it neuer commeth againe, and it feemeth that

the wood hath the same effect that the China wood, and that of the Antilles have for the same 50 difeafe. Of the flower they make a Conferue for those that are ficke of the Poxe. The wood Caarobmocorandiba is like that of China, it is taken in the same manner that the odib.:
For loofeneffe ther, and it healeth the loofeneffe, the Poxe, and other diseases of cold, it is grey, and bath the

Carrobmocoranand the Poxe, pith very hard as the wood of China. Inhuvandiha For the fickneffe of the Liuer.

It is long fince laburandiba was found, and it is, as fome Indians doe fay, called of the Indians Betele. The Rivers and their borders are full of these trees, the leaves are the onely remedie for the ficknesses of the Liner, and many in this Brafill haue already beene cured of most grieuous For the Tooth diseases of the Liner, with the eating of them. There is another tree called also Betele, it is smaller and of a round leafe, the roots of it are an

ake. Coffia fiftule. Of the Oyles the Indian doe victo anoins them'elues

excellent remedy for the tooth-ake, putting it in the hollow place of them, it biteth like Ginger. 62 They say also, that in this Brafill is the tree of the Caffia fiftala, it is vnknowne to the Indians. the Spaniards doe vie it, and fay it is as good as that of India.

The Anda trees are faire and great, and the wood ferueth for all things, of the fruit they make an Oyle, wherewith the Indians doe anoint themselves, and the women their haire; and it ferseth also for wounds, and drieth whem up presently, and they make many gallant things about the legs and body, painting themselues with this Oyle.

The Moxerequieba tree is found within the Maine, in the fields, it is small, beareth a fruit as Moxerequieba. big as an Otange, and within it hath certaine kernels, and of it altogether they make an Ovle to anoint themselves, the barke serueth to kill fish, and every beatt that drinketh the water where it is caft, dieth.

The Aintainburg is small, beareth a red fruit, and of it they make a red oile to anoint distributed themfelues.

The Alabatipita is fine or fixe spannes in length, the fruit is like Almonds and blacke, and so Mabutitita. to is the Oyle, which they efteeme very much, and anount themselves with it in their infirmities.

The lampaba tree is very faire, of a pleasant greene; every moneth it changeth the leafe, lampaba and is like a Wal-nut leafe; the trees are great, and the timber pleafant to worke; the fruit is like great Oranges, and in like Quinces, or ruflet Peares; the taffe is like Quinces: it is a good medicine for the Laske of all fores. Of this fruit is made a blacke Inke ; when it is made it is white, and anointing themselves therewith it stayneth not profently, but within a few houres the partie remayneth as blacke as any leat. It is attich effeemed of the Indians, with this they make on their bodies round Hofe and Doublets all cut, and they give certaine strokes in the face, eares.

note, chinne, armes, legs, and the lame doe the women, and they become very gallant. This is their appareil, as well on the weeke as on the Feath day, adding tome feathers to it, wherewith 30 thee adorne themselves, and other lewels made of bone : this colour lasteth on the body nine dayes still blacke, and after remayneth nothing; it maketh the skinne very hard, and to make the painting the fruit is to be gathered greene, for being ripe it will not doe it.

The tree lequitimenaçu beareth a fruit like the Spanift Strawberie, and within it hath a beane lequitimensus. as hard as a flicke, which is the feed; they are of the best Beades that can be, for they are very equall, and very blacke, and they have a gloffe like lear, the huske that covereth these Beades, is Beades and more bitter then Aloes, it ferreth for Sope, and it washeth better then the best Sope in Portugal. Sope. A certaine tree groweth in the fields and the Mayne of the Bay, in dry places where no wa- Of the tree

ter is, very great and broad; it hath certaine holes in the branches, as long as an arme, that are that hath wafull of water, that in Winter nor Summer neuer runnerh over, neither is it knowne whence tere so this water commeth, and drinke many or drinke few of it, it is alwaies at the fame flay, and fo it lerueth not onely for a Fountaine, but also for a great maine River : and it happeneth five hun- Note, Com-

dred persons to come to the foot of it, and there is harbour for them all , they drinke and wash pare this with all that they will, and they never want water; it is very favoury and cleare, and a great remedie those mentioned by A. Balk. for them that travell into the Mayne, when they can finde no other water. In this Countrie of Brafil are Groues, wherein are found trees of great bigneffe and length, Of the Trees

whereof they make very great Canoas, of feuen or eight spanues broad in hollownesse, and of that serue for fiftie spannes and more in length, which beare a load like a great Barke, and doe carrie twentie timber. or thirtie Rowers of a fide; they make likewife great Beames for the Sugar-mills. There are many forts of wood incorruptible that putting it in the ground it never rotteth , and others let 40 in water are every day greener and stronger. There is a holy wood of certaine white wants.

whereof are made very faire Bed-steads and rich. The Brafill wood whereof the red lake is made, and other woods of divers colours, whereof divers Inkes of great effreme are made, and all turned and carued workes. There be finelling woods, as the lararanda, and other kindes of great price and esteeme, there are found white Sandalos or Dates, in great quantitie. The wood of Aquilla, and in great abundance, that ships are made of it. Cedars; wood of Augolin, and the Cedars and Nutmeg tree, though these woods are not so fine, and of so great smell as those of India, yet they Nutmegs. want but a little, and are of great price and esteeme.

Of the Herbes that reeld fruit, and are eaten.

50 THe ordinary food of this Country, that serueth for Bread, is called Mandioca, and they are Mandioca certaine rootes like Carrots, though they are greater and longer : thele shoot out certaine flemmes or branches, and growe to the height of fifteene spannes. Their branches are very tender, and have a white pith within, and at every franne it hath certaine joynts, and of this bigneffe they are broken and fet in the ground as much as is sufficient for to hold them yo and within fixe or nine moneths have so big rootes that they serve for food. This Mandioca contayneth many kindes in it felfe, and all are eaten, and they are preferred under the earth three, foure, or vnto eight yeeres, and needs no feafoning, for they doe no more but take them out and make fresh meate every day, and the longer they are under the earth the bigger they growe, and yeeld 60 the more.

It hath fome things worth the noting, that is, man except, all creatures defire to eate it raw, The inyce is and it fatteneth them, and nourisheth them exceedingly, but if when it is crushed, they doe posson, drinke that water alone by it telle, they have no more life then while it commeth to the ftomacke. Of these rootes crushed and grated they make a Meale that is eaten, it is also layd in

29999 2

steepe till it corrupt, and then cleanfed and crushed, they make also a Flowre, and certains Cakes like children very white and delicate. This roote after it is steeped in water, made in balls with the hands, they fet it you hurdles at the smoake, where it drieth in such manner that it is kept without corrupting, as long as they lift, and after fcraped and stamped in certaine great traves, and fifted, there remayneth a Flowre whiter then of Wheate, of the which being mingled in a certaine quantitie with the raw, they make a certaine Bifquet, which they call Of the warre, and it ferueth the Indians and the Portugals by Sea, and when they zoe to warre, as Bisket. Another Bisket bread is made of very water of the greene Mandioca, if they let it congeale, and dry it at the Sunne or at the fire; this is about all most white and for pleasing and delicate, that it is not made for every one. Of this Mandioca dryed at the smoake they 10 make many forts of broaths, which they call Mingaos, to healthfull and delicate that they give them to them that are ficke of a Feauer, in flead of Caudles and Restoratines, and of the fame they make Cakes. Simnels, Frutters, little Pyes, Cheef-cakes of Sugar, &c. And mingled with the flowre of Millet, or of Rice, they make leauened bread, that it feemeth of Whear. This fame Mandioca dryed at the smoake, is a great remedie against poison, chiefely of Snakes. Of this Mandacca there is one which they call Appins, which contayneth vinder it felfer many Other kindes. kindes. This killeth not raw, and boyled or roited is of a good tafte, and of it they make Flowre or Cakes . &c. The Indians makes Wines of it, and it is fo fresh and medicinable for the Liver, that to it is attributed not to have among them any difeafed of the Liver. A certains

kinde of Tannas doe eate the poisonous Mandisca raw, and it doth them no hurt, because they 20 The boughs of this herbe or tree, is the feed it felfe, for the stalkes of it are planted, the leaves

in time of need boyled doe ferue for food. The herbe Nana is very common, it is like the herbe Aloes, and and hath fuch leaves, but not

fo thicke, and all round about full of very sharpe prickles; in the middest of this herbe groweth a fruit like a Pine-apple, all full of flowers of divers colours, and very faire, and at the foot grow foure or fine forigs, which are planted; the fruit is very smelling, pleasant and one of the best of the world, very full of inyce, and pleasant, it hath the taste of a Mellon, though better and more smelling, it is good for them that are troubled with the Stone, and it is very prejudiciall for Feauers. The Indians doe make Wine of this fruit, very strong, and of a good taste, the buske to wasteth much the Iron at the dressing of it, and the juyce taketh away the spottes from the clothes. There is fo great abundance of this fruit, that they fat their Hogs with it, and regard it not for the great abundance, they are also kept preserved, and raw they helpe the Sea-sicke at Sea, and with Wine in the morning they are medicinable.

Pacoba is the Fig-tree which they call Adams, it is neither tree nor herbe, for on the one fide it becommeth very bigge, and groweth to twenty quarters long, the stalke is very soft and full of pores; the leaves that it hath are most faire, and some a fathome long and more, all of them raced like the Veluet of Braganca, so smooth that they write on them, and so greene, coole, and fresh, that one sicke of a Feauer lying downe vpon them, the Feauer is mitigated with their cooleneile. They are very fresh for to dresse the houses, and the Churches. This herbe beareth in 40 every foote many impes, and every one of them beareth a cluster of a certaine fruit like Figs, which hath fometimes about two hundred, and when they are ripe, the foote is cut whereon the cluster hangeth, and the rest doe growe and so they goe multiplying ad infinitum, the fruit is laid to ripen, and becommeth very yellow, of a good tafte, and healthfull, especially for the ficke of a Feauer, and for him that spitteth bloud, and rosted they are very pleasant and healthfull. It is an ordinary fruit whereof the Gardens are full, and there is of them all the yeere.

Murucuja,

The herbes Murucuia are very faire, especially in their flowers: they runne vpon a wall, and up the trees like Iuie, the leaves beaten with a little Verdigreafe is an onely remedie for old vicers, and the Poxe, it beareth a round fruit like Oranges, other like Egges, some yellow, some blacke, and of other divers colours and kindes. Within they have a certaine substance of ker- 50 nels and inyce with a certaine filme that couereth them, and altogether is eaten, it is of a good taile, and it is somewhat tart, and it is a fruit of some account.

In this Country are many other kindes of fruits, as Deaw-berries, blacke and red. Potatoes, Brafilian plants, and other rootes which they call Mangara, another called Cara, that is like to Turneps, and the Rones of the earth. Of the Potatoes they make bread , and divers sweet meats , their Indians have many other Pulfes, vz. Beanes, more healthfull and better then those of Partne all, and in great abundance, many kindes of Pumpions, and some so big, that they vie them for veffels to carie water, and they hold two peckes or more, French Beanes of many kindes, they are toothsome, and like to them of Portugall, Millet of many forts, and of it they make Bread, Wine, and it is eaten tofted, and with it they fatten their Horfes, Swine, and Hennes, and there are cer- 60 taine Taiaobas, that are like Cabiges, and they cause to purge. And an herbe called Iambig, the onely remedie for them that are ficke of the Liuer, and the Stone, there are also many forts of Pepper, that give a good tafte in the eating.

leigence is the Mechagan of the Antilles, they are certaine rootes, long like Radice, but of

a good bignesse, they serve for a purge, this roote is taken beaten in wine or water for the Ague: it is taken preserued in Sugar like Marmalate, it is boiled with a Henne, causeth great thirst bue A purge. is profitable and of great operation.

lepecaya, or Pigaya is profitable for the bloudie Fluxe ; the stalke is a quarter long, and the Fortheblondy roots of another, or more, it hath onely foure or fine leanes, it smelleth much wherefore it is, Fluxe, but the smell is strong and terrible, this roote beaten, and put in water all night at the deaw. and in the morning if this water with the fame roote beaten and ftrained be drunke, onely the

water, it caufeth prefently to purge in such fort, that the laske ceafeth altogether It is but a little while fince the herbe Carapia was found, it is an only remedie for whatfoeuer A remedie for

10 poison, especially of Snakes, and so it is called the Snakes berbe, and it is as good a remedie as the Poyson. Unicorne and Bada, Bezar stone, or Coco of Maldina; nothing profiteth but the roote, which is flender, and in the middeft maketh a knot like a button, this beaten, and put in water and drunke. it killeth the poison of Snakes; It is also a great remedie for the wounds with the Arrowes that are poiloned, when any is hurt he remaineth feareleffe and fecure, drinking the water of this more, it is also a great remedie for the Feauer, continuing it and drinking of it tome mornings. this herbe fmelleth like the Fig-tree leaves of Spaine;

The herbe Tyrogui or Tarerogus is a principall remedie for the bloudie Fluxe, the roots are all Tyrogui or Tare The herbe 1 graque of 1 arraque is a principal tendent to the flowers are red, and draw some- resqui iagged, the branches very slender, the leaves are like Basill; the flowers are red, and draw some- For the bloudy what to a ruddle colour, and they growe in the very points. Of this there is great abundance, Fluxe, 20 when it is eathered it is vellow, and being dried it turneth white, it is taken in the fame manner that the former. The Indians perfume themselves with this herbe when they are ficke, that they may not die, and for a certaine licknesse that is common in the Countrie, and it is called the ficknesse of the worme *, it is a great remedie; it serueth to kill the worme in the Oxen and * Perhaps the Swine, and for Empostumes. This herbe is as withered all night, and as affeepe, and as foone as wome in the the Sunne rifeth, it openeth againe, and flutteth againe when it is fet.

The herbe Embegnacu ferueth much for the Fluxe of bloud, especially in women; the toots mentioned by The nerve Emergences trucked and the state of the state o Cordes are made, and Cables for thips, and they are long lasting, for in the water it wastetli For the Fines greene. This being taken, to wir, the barke of it, and perfuming the partie in the place of the of bload.

30 Fluxe, it ceafeth prefently.

Cas obetings is a small herbe, hath few leaves, which it putteth forth even from the ground, Cas obetings. white vinderneath, and greene aboue, beares a flower as big as a hafell Nut; the roots and the Forwounds, leages stamped are an excellent remedie for whatsoever wounds, they vie the leafe also vistamped, which being laid to the wound cleaueth fast, and healeth it.

Cobaura terueth for old fores that have already no other remedie, it is laid beaten and burne cobaura. in the wound, and eateth presently all the Canker, and bringeth a new skinne, it is also laid to. For woundse onely the leafe beaten to skinne the place.

The Holy berbe ferueth for divers difeases, as wounds, and coughs, the rheume, &c. and prin- The Holy berbe cipally it ferueth for the ficke of the head, the ftomacke, and for the shortnesse of breath, or the or Tobacco. 40 Chine-cough. In this Countrie they make certaine Coffines of Palme-tree leaves, and being full difeases. of this herbe dried and fetting it on fire at the one end, they put the other in the mouth and drinke the smoake, it is one of the delicates and dainties of this Countrie; and all the Countrymen, and even the Portugals are even loft for it, and it is their great vice, to bee all day and all night laid in their Nets, to drinke this smoake, and are drunke with it as if it were with wine.

Guaraquimiya is the Mirtle tree of Portugall, and besides other good properties that it hath, For the worms like the Broome-rape, the feed of it is the onely remedie for the Body-wormes, and ordinarily

they that eate it doe voide them prefently.

Camaracasimbae is like to the Sylvas of Portugall, it is boyled in water, and the faid water is camaracasimbae the onely remedy for icabbes, the poxe, and new wounds, and when the wounds are cored with For icabs, and 50 the leaves of the Fig-tree spoken of in the title of the Trees, they wash it with the water of the Poxe. this herbe, whole flower is most faire, it feemeth a yellow and red Ielly-flower, and smelleth of Muske, and of these they make Pot-boughs and Nose-gayes for the Altars.

Aipo is the very Smaledge of Portugall, and hath the vertues, it is found onely about the Sea- Aipo, coast, especially in the River of lanuarse, and for this cause it is sharper, and not so sweet in the talte as that of Portugall, it may be because of the Seas.

There is great store of Meade-mallow in this Country, it hath the same effects, it hath cer- Meade-Mall taine flowers as big as a Tetter, of a very faire red, that they feeme Rofes of Portugall,

Caragnata 15 a certaine kinde of thitle, they beare a certaine fruit of a finger long and yellow, Caragnata raw they make the lips to blifter, boiled or rofted they doe no harme, but any woman with child 60 that eaceth them doth prefently abort her childe ordinarily. There bee other Caragnatas, that It confether beare certaine leaves like Fl. gs very long, of two or three fathoms, and beare a certaine Harti- abort. chocke like the Nana, but they ta'te not well; thefe leaves laid in fteepe doe yeeld a very fine Flaxe, vnto the threed to lowe withall, and for fifting lines.

Timbo are certaine wonderfull herbes, that growe from the earth like a string vuto the high- Baite for fishes

40

called.

est top of the Mulberie trees, where they are, and some growe close to the tree like Iuie: they are very strong, and serue for bindings, and some are as big as a mans leg, and winde them never fo hard they never breake, the barke of these is very fine poilon, and serveth for a baite to kill the fish, and it is to throng, that in the Rivers wherein it is east it leaveth not a fish alive as farre as it hath his vertue, and of these there be many sorts, and profitable as well for binders, as for

Other herbes there be also that serue for medicines, as are Sow-thistles, Purcelane, Beets, Endine. Anenca, Bafill , and of all there is great abundance , though these have not the perfection of those of Spaine; there want no wilde Mulberies white and blacke, like those of Porsugal, and great store of good Parsley, about the strands, whereof a good conferue is made; they 10 want no Pot-flowers.

Of smelling herbes in this Countrie there are many, Mintes, or wilde Sage, especially in Pia ratinga, they inell not fo well as those of Portugal, they have also cartaine French Mallowes. with certaine faire and pleasant flowers which ferue for Nosegaies. Many Lillies there are, not fo fine nor fo red as those of the Kingdome, and some white ones are also found.

Sleeping herb. There groweth here in the Spring, an herbe that fleepeth, and is like the Mares of Portneall. and as that doth wither and fleepe after Sun-fet, and when it rifeth it openeth againe, and fleweth her beautie; the smell is somewhat strange. There is also another tree that sleepeth in the fame manner, and beareth certaine fine flowers, but they have no great fmell.

Zrus vina : See The Quicke berbe is of a good height, and hath boughes, and certaine iagged leaves, of a plea- 28 M.Harcourt his fant greene, it is called Quicke berbe, becaule it is so quicke and sensible, that as soone as it is touched with the hand or with any other thing, presently it hangeth the head, and withereth as if they had done it great injurie, and within a little while it commeth to his perfection, and as many times it is touched it withereth, and commeth againe to himfelfe as before.

Many other herbes there be like Origanum, and many other fundrie flowers, but it feemeth that this Clymate, either for the many waters, or because of the Sunne, insuseth no smell in the herbes, rather it feemes to take it away. Of the Canes,

In this Countrie are many forts of Canes, and Tacmers it as big as a mans thigh; others which haue ioynts a fathome long, others whereof they make their Arrowes, and are esteemed, Others folong that they have three or foure Lances in length, thefe growe among the Woods, and as so there are many, so there are many and long beds of Canes of many leagues, and as they growe among the trees, they goe to feeke the Sunne, and therefore are fo long,

Of the Fishes that swimme in the salt water: also Shel-fishes, Trees and Fowles of the Sea : of Rivers and the Creatures which live therein; and the Beasts and Plants brought thisber out of Portugall.

He Oxe-fish in these parts is a Royall fish, esteemed about all other fishes, very healthfull in eating, and of a good tafte, either falted or fresh: And it rather feemeth Beefe then Fish, and some doubts there were, because it was eaten on fish dayes; the flesh is all grained like Beefe, and so it is cut in slices, and they dresse it at the smoake like Bacon, or hanged Beefe. In the tafte, if it be eaten or fodden with Cabidge, or other herbes, it tafteth like Beefe, and dreft in fowce it tafteth like Mutton; and rofted, both in smell, tafte, and fatnesse it is like Porke, and hath fat also.

The Fish in his making seemeth a land creature, and chiefly an Oxe, the head is altogether of 50 an Oxe. with skinne and haire, eares, eyes, cheekes and tongue; the eyes are exceeding small for the bodie it hath, he shutteth and openeth them when hee listeth, which other fishes doe not; ouer the ventsit hath two skinnes wherewith he closeth them, and by them he breatheth, and it cannot beelong vinder water without breathing, it hath no more nor other finnes but the taile; which is all round and close; the bodie is of a great bignesse, all full of yellow haires, it hath two armes of a cubice long, with two hands like round peeles, and on them he hath five fingers all close one to another, and every finger hath his nayle like a mans nayle. Under these armes the female have two paps, wherewith thee bringeth up her young; the beareth but one at once: the inward part and the inwards of this fifth are like an Oxes, with liner, and lights, &cc. In the head ouer the eyes meere the braines it hath two stones of a good bignesse, white and heavie, 62 they are of great efteeme, and are the onely remedie for the Sione : for beaten to powder and dranke in wine or water it caufeth to void the flone, as it happened that giving it to a person to drinke, kauing other many experiences, within one houre hee voided a stone as bigge as an Almond, and remained found, being before at the point of death. The bones of this fifth are all maffie and white like Iuwie. They make of it great store of * Butter, they take two leaues as from a * Or Greace hogge; and the most of the Butter it hath in the taile, which being of a yard or more in length, or Oile : fo ais ie melcethall into Butter, it liath a good taite, and for to dreffe or frie fish , and for light; It is ter. Maniega in verie good alle for Medicines, as the Hogges Greafe, it is white and fmelleth well, it hath no the Partugall imell of h h. Tois filh is taken with Harping-Irons; it is found in the falt Rivers, neere the fresh word. water : is fredeth on an herbe that groweth by the borders, and within the Rivers , and where this herby groweth, and neere the Springs of fresh water, whereof hee onely drinketh. They are verie great, fome weigh tenne, others fifteeene hundred, and fuch a fift hath beene taken, that an hundred men could not get it out of the water, but they broke it wo there where it

The fith Beympire is the storgeon of Peringall, and fo it is held and eftermed of heere as Beympire. a royall fift : it is very healthfull, fat, and of a good tafte, they bee infinite , and some of their rowes area foan in companie about; their fiftes are taken in the bread hea, with a hooke and line.

it is fix or feuen frances long; the bodie is round, blacke on the backe and the belly white. The Oxe-cie is like the Tannyes of Spaine, as well in higheste as in making inward as outward: The Oxe cie. it is verie fat, it hath sometime betweene leafe and leafe courses of tat as thicke as a Portugall I Telerithey are cut in backes and bellies like the Timmer, and of them is made great flore and d Or foure verie good . Butter, it bath leaves like a Hogge, is a fish efteemed and of a good taffe, it defer-finllings a ueth well the name of One filh, as well in his beautie, as his bigneffe, the cies are properly like e Or Greson

an Oxe, and therefore it hath this name. The fish Camurani is also a royall fish, and esteemed in these pares, the graine of it all in flakes, Camurani, enterlarded with fat and greafe, and of a good tafte, it bath many bones through all the bodie, and is dang rous in eating, Is hath a finne on the backe, which is carries alwaies raifed vp wards. it is of two or three quarters long, the fifth is long of twelve and thirteene quarters in length and of a good bignesie, and two men naue much adoe to lift up one of them , they are taken with Harping Irons, there are many of them, and much ! Oile is made of them.

This wilde fish, which the indians call Pinaembu, (that is, a fift that fuereath, the reason is, be- The wild fish. caule wherefocuer it is, is heard by his fnorting) is of a good bigateffe, about eight or nine spanies, it is of a good tafte, and efteemed; it hath in the mouth two ftones as broad as a hand, exceeding to ftrange, with them they breake the Wilkes whereof they feed, the Indians citeeme the ftones and weare them about their neckes as a lewell.

There are many other fifthes of fundric kinds, that are not in Spaine, and commonly of a good tafte and healthfull. Of the fiftes of Portugall in these parts are also many, to wit, a fish called Tainbas, and a great multitude, and it hath beene tried that the Tamba beeing fresh, and laid so the flinging of a Snake isangeber Vnicorne. There want no Sea-breames, a filh called Chiebarros, it is like a Mackerill, Pargos, or great Sea-breames, Sarges, other Sea-breames, Garates, Darader) the Needle-fish, Cod-lishes, but these are rare, Palshards like them of Spaire, are found at formetimes in the River of lamustie, and the most parts of the South, Scates, and Rayes; their Rayes some haue in their mouth two bones, and breake with them the Wilkes.

All thele fishes are so healthfull that in these parts they are eaten after Milke, after flesh, and all a whole Lent without Oile or Vineger, and it causeth no scabs nor other diseases as in Europe, but rather it is given to the ficke, though they have a Feuer, or be very weake.

Because this Coast is full of many Bayes, Nookes, and Creekes, there came greet flore of The Whale. Whales to these Concares chiefly from May to September, when they spawne and bring up their young, and also because they come to the great store of fish that at this time there is in this Creekes. They are sometime so many that ye may see fortie or fiftie together, men doe lay that they doe caft the Amber that they find in the Sea, and whereof they also feed, and therefore is some of it found in this Coast; others doe say that the Sea it felfe doch cast it on the shoares with Ambergise, great tempelts, and commonly it is found after a great storme, and all the beasts doe eate of this 60 Amber, and great diligence is needfull after the tempests that they may not find it caten. It is

very dangerous to faile in small Barkes along this Coast, for besides other dangers, the Whales onerwhelme many, if they heare any ringing, they are so sared as Horses when they heare the found of a Deumme, and are as fierce as Lions, many runne vpon the shoare, and great store of Ode is made of them. They have the head open, and there they breathe, and cast at once great ftore of water, and fcatter it fo in the Aire as if it were a great showre.

There is great flore of the Sword-fishes, they are great and fierce, for they have a snowt like The Sword fish a Sword, all full of teeth round about, verie sharpe, and as bigge as Dogges teeth or bigger; they are a mans hand or more, and the length is according to the greatnesse of the fish. Some of these snowes or Swords are of eight or ten spannes long; with these they make a cruell battell with

60 the Whales, for raifing it voward, and striking formany strokes on her, and totals that it is a Battle with wonderfull thing : the Sharkes refore to the bloud, and fucke it in fuch fort till the dieth, and fo Whaiesmany are found dead and cut in pieces. With this snowt also they eatch the fishes whereof they feed. The Indians vie thele ino wts when they are young for to beate their children, and to feare them when they are disobedient voto them.

Ιn

A Tortoile.

In this Coast are many Tortoises; there are many taken, whereof there are coffers, boxes for the hoalts, cups, &c. These Tortoises doe lay their egges in the fands, and they lay 200, or 200. egges at a time, they are as bigge as Hens egges, verie white and round as balles: they hide thefe egges in the fand, and when the young are hatcht, prefently they goe to the water, where they are nourshed, the egges also are eaten. They have this propertie, that though you boile or roaft them the white is ever foft, the inwards are like a Hogges; and they have vents where through they breathe. They have another particularitie, that when yee turne them on their belly, they turne prefently toward the Sea, neither can they line otherwife. Some of them are to bigge that of their shels they make whole Targets, and one was taken your this Coast so bigge, that twentie men could not lift, nor poife it from the ground.

Tuberens, or

Voon this Coast are many forts of Sharkes, and in it are found fixe or feven kinds of them : ie is a very fierce and cruell fifth, and kils many perions, especially those that swimme. The Riners are full of them; they are so cruell that it happened one to runne after an Indian that went in a Boate, and put him in such a straight, that the young man leaping ashoare, the Sharke leapt after him thinking to have caught him, and fell on drie land where they killed him. In the broad Sea where also are many, they kill them with Snares, and Harping Irons, and they are to eager. greedie, and love fleih, and they are fo denouring, that they find in their bellies, skinnes, preces of cloth, thirts and breeches that fall from the Sailers, they goe ordinarily accompanied with certaine verie faire fishes of divers colours called Pelgrames. They make great store of Oile of them. and the Indians vie the teeth in their Arrowes, because they are verie sharpe, cruell, and vene. mous, and verie feldome, or with great difficultie are they healed that are hurt with them,

Pelgrimes.

The flying fish. The flying fishes are ordinarily of a spanne long or little more, it hash the eies veriefaire, of a certaine verie gallant picture, that beautifies it much, and doe feeme precious ftones, the head is alto very faire, it hath wings like Reere-mice, but of a filter hue; they are much perfecured of the other files , and for to escape they flie in flockes, like Stares, or Sparrowes, but they flie not verie high, they are also good to eat, and when they flie they glad the Sailers, and many times they fall in the thip, and come in at the Cabbin windowes.

Botos and Toninas, are two kinds of Porpoifes. Of these fishes there are great abundance, as

Soles and Salmonets. A little red fift very daintie in Spaine. Of the vene-

mous fiftes.

Toad fiith

deadly.

They find also in this Coast Salmonets, but they are rare, and not so esteemed, nor of so good 20 a tafte as those of Europe. The Soles of these parts are verse rare, they have this propertie, that when they are to be boiled or fried they beate them, and the more throakes they give them, the stiffer they are, and the better to eate, and if they beate them not , they are loft and no-

As in this Countrie of Brafillare many Snakes, and venemous Wormes, whereof wee will speake hereafter, there are likewise many fishes verie venemous,

The Toad fish, in their Language, Amayaca, is a small fish, a spanne long, painted, it hath faire eies, taking it out of the water it (norteth verie much, and cutteth the hookes, and out of the water it (welleth much, all the poiton lies in the skinne, and flaving they eate it : but eating it with the skinne it killeth. It chanced a young man to eate one with the skinne, who died 14 almost suddenly; the Father faid, I will eate the fish that killed my Sonne, and eating of it died also presently, it is a great poison for Rats, for those that eare of it doe die presently.

There is another kind of Toad fish of the lame fashion that the other, but it hath many cruell prickles, as a Hedge-hogger it fnorteth, and swelleth out of the water; the skinne also killeth, especially the prickles, because they are verie venemous, fleating it, it is eaten, and it is good for the bloudie Fluxe. There is another Toad fifth, called in their tongue, Itanga, it is three square, and the bodie such, that all of it is like a Dagger; it is faire, it hath the eies bluish, it is eaten fleade; the poi fon confifteth in the skinne, livers, guts, and bones, whatfoever creature doth eate it, dieth.

Puraque, or Torpedo, See

Purague is like the Scate, it hath such vertue that if any touch it, he remaineth shaking as one 50 that bath the Palife, and touching it with a flicke, or other thing it benummeth prefently him that toucheth it, and while he holdeth the flicke ouer him, the arme that holdeth the flicke is benummed, and afleepe; it is taken with flue-nets, and with casting Nets it maketh all the bodie tremble, and benummes it with the paine, but beeing dead it is eaten, and it hath no poilon.

Caramera

The Caramuru are like the Sea Snakes of Portugall, of ten or fifteene spans long, very fat, and roafted taile like Pigge; their have firange teeth, and many men are may med by their bytings, and the hand or foot where they were bitten, doe rot away. It hath ouer all the bodie many prickels. The Countrimen fay that they engender with the Snakes; for they finde them many times knie with them, and many in the fands tarrying for the Sea Snakes.

Amoreaty is like the Toad fifth, it is full of prickels, and thruits himlelfe under the fand along the shoore, and prickes the foot or hand underneath that toucheth it, and it hath no other remedie but only by fire.

Amaga curub is round and of the bignefic of the & Bugalles of Spaine, and are very venemous, it hath the bodie full of Wartes, and therefore it is called Carab, that is to fay, a Wart in their Language.

Irreparatinga, is a Snake that liveth in the Sea; her manner of living is to lie very fill, and whatforuer high thing that toucheth is; remaineth fo falt flicking to it that in no wife it can firre, and to he feedeen and fustaines himfelfe. Sometimes it commeth out of the Sea, and becommeth very fmall, and as foone as it is toucht it flicketh faft , and if they goe with the other hand to lofe themfelues, they remaine also fast by it, and then it becommeth as bigge as a great Cable, and to carrieth the perion to the Sea, and eateth it, and because it cleaveth to fast, it is called Terepomone, that is to fay, a thing that cleaneth fast.

CHAPA. S.6. Mermen, Cutiles, Crabs of fundry kinds, Oysters.

Finally, there are many kinds of very venomous files in the Sea, that have fo vehiment a notion, that ordinatily none escapeth that eateth or toucheth them.

politon, sace on the Sea, are called in their language Tpapiapra; the men of the country are foafraid of them, that many of the Sea, are called in their language Tpapiapra; the men of the country are foafraid of them, that many of them die only with the thought of them, & none that feeth them Monfitts of fcapeth. Some that died already, being domanded the onife faid, that they had feene this Monfter, the Sea, they properly are like men, of a good flature, but their eies are very hollow. The Female are like women they have long have, and are beautiful; these Monsters are found in the bars of the fresh Riversin lagourpe, feuen or eight leagues from the Bay have many bin found, & in the veere 82. an Indian going to fish, was chased by one, and fleeing in a Canoa told it to his Mafter. The Mafter for to animate the Indian, would needs go fee the Monfter, & being careleffe with one hand out of the Canoa, it catche hold of him, and carried him away, and hee was never feene againe, and in the same weere died an Indian of Francische Lorengo Cuerro. In Pore Secure are some seene, which 30 have killed fome Indians alreadie, the manner of their killing is to embrace themselves with the

person so strongly, kishing, and grasping is hard to it selfe that they crush it in pieces remaining whole, and when they perceive it dead, they give fome fighings in flew of forrow, and letting them goe they runne away, and if they carrie any they eate onely the eies, the nofe, the points of the fingers and toes, and prinie members, and fo ordinarily they are found on the fands with thefe things miffing.

The Seas of these parts are very plentiful of Cunles, this kind of fish hath a hood glwaies full Of the Shelof very blacke Inke : this is their defence from the greater fishes, for when they come to catch them they cast that Inke before their eies, and the water becommeth very blacke, and then hee goes his waies. They take them with flooting at them, but they baite them first, they are also 30 taken with lights by night. For to exte them they beate them, and the more, the forter they are, and of better tafte.

Apula is a shel-fish like the joint of a Cane : it is rare, it is eaten, and drinking it fasting in Apula. Powder, a fouereigne remedie for the Mile or Spleene.

In these parts are infinite of the Sea-formes, and are great, as broad as a hat; they have many Sea-formes, foulds wherewith they catch the fifth, and resemble the Barberie Purses, they are not eaten; if they fting any one, they cause great paines, and cause to weepe, and so faid an Indian that was flung with one of them, that he had received many wounds with Arrowes, but never wept till then; they are neuer feene but in neape tides (or flow waters, therefore the Portugals call them Agnas mortas, or Dead waters.)

The Vca is a kind of Crab found in the mire, and they are infinite, and the foode of all this Sea Crabs. Countrie, chiefly for the flaues of Guinea, and the Indians of the Countrie, they have a good Ve. tafte, vpon them is good drinking cold water. They have a particularitie to bee noted, that when they cast their shell they goe into their holes, and there they are two or three moneths, and casting the shell, mouthes and feet, they come so out, and they grow againe as before.

Guainumn is a kind of Crabs fo great, that a mans legge will goe into their mouth. They Guainumn, are good to eate; when it doth thunder they come out of their holes, and make fo great a noile the one with the other, that men haue gone out with their weapons, thinking they had beene enemies : if they doe eate a certaine herbe, who some reateth them then dieth, these are of the Land, but keepe in holes neere the Sea fide.

The Aratu Crabs keepe in the trunkes of the trees, that grow in the Oowes of the Sea, when Aratu. thay find a Cockle that gapeth, they feeke presently some little stone, and very cunningly put it into the Cockle; the Cockle shutteth presently, and not beeing able because of the little stone it hath within, they with their mouthes doe take out the fish and eate it.

There are ten or twelue kinds of Crabs in this Countrie, and as I haue faid, they are so many in Ten or twelue number, and so healthfull, that all are eaten, especially of the Indians, &cc.

The Oysters are many, and some are very great, and the meate is as broad as the palme of the Oysters. hand; in thele are some Pearles found very rich, in other smaller arealso very fine Pearles found. The Indians in old time came to the Sea for Oysters, and got so many that they made great Hils of the shels, and carried the fishes they carried away for to cate all the yeere; vpon these Hilsby

the continuance of time grew great Groues of Trees and very thicke and high, and the Portugals discouered some, and euery day goe discouering others anew, and of these shels they make lime; Note for lime. and of one only heape was part of the Colledge of the Bay made, the Palaces of the Gouernour, and many other buildings, and yet it is not ended, the lime is very white, good forto garnish and

Mufeles.

There want no Muicles in this Countriesthey ferue the Indians and the Portugals for Spoones and Knines, they have a taire filter colour g in them is found fome feed Pearle; there is a small kind of them, whereon the Sea-guls doe feed, and because they cannot breake them, they have fuch a naturall inftinct that taking them up into the Aire, they let them fall fo many times till they breake it, and then they eate them.

Pereminkles.

The Pereminkles are very tattefull, and good in this Countrie, and fome feed Pearle is found in them, and fo of the Pereminkles, and of the Muscles there is great store, of many and fundrie kinds.

The greatest Wilker which are called Gnatapiggoogn, that is, a great Wilke, are much effected of the Indians, for of them they make their Trum pets, Furnitures, Beades, Brooches, Earerines, and Gloues for the children, and they are of fuch effectme among them, that for one they will give any one person that they have captine; and the Partugals gave in olde time a Crowne for one : they are as white as luone, and many of them are of two quarters broad, and one in length.

The Pirasmaig are also eaten, and of the shelles they make their Beades : and for fo many fathome they give a perion. Or these the Sea casteth up sometimes great heapes, a wonderfull thing. Of Wilker and Skallops there is great quantitie in this Countrie, very faire, and to bece-Reemed, of fundrie kinds.

They find great flore of white-stone Corrall under water, it groweth like small Trees all in leaues, and Canes as the red Corrall of India; and if this also were to, there would be great riches in this Countrie, for the great abundance there is of it, it is very white, it is gotten with difficultie, they make lime of it also.

Prowner.

There are great multitudes of Praunes, because this Coast is almost all enuironed with shelves, and Rockes; there are also many Sea-ruffes, and other Montiers found in the Concauties of the Rockes, great Crameffes or Crabbes like those of Europe, it seemes there bee none in

Of the Trees that 2: ow in falt-water. Mangues.

The Mangue Trees are like the Swallowes, or Willowes of Europe, there is so great quantitie of them in the armes or creeks that the Sea maketh within the Land, that many leagues of the Land 20 is of these Trees, that are watered with the tides. We trauelled I say leagues, and whole daies in the Rivers where these Trees are, and they are alwaies greene, faire and pleasant, and of many kinds. The wood is good to burne, and for to build houses, it is very heatie and hard as Iron; of the barke they make Inke, and it ferueth to tanne Leather, and they are of many kindes. Acertaine kind of them doe call certaine twigs from the top of their length some times as long as a Launce, till they come to the water, and then they cast many branches and rootes, and these branches remaine fast in the earth, and while they are greene these twigs are tender, and because they are hollow within, they make good Flutes of them. In these Creekes are a certaine kinde of Gnats called Marequis, as small as Hennes Lice, they bite in such fort, that they leave such a Wheale, finart and itching that a man cannot helpe himfelfe, for even through the clothes they an pricke, and it is a good penance, and mortification to fuffer them on a Morning, or an Evening; there is no other remedie to defend themselues from them, but to anoint themselues with dirt, or to make a great fire and fmoke.

Gnats.

In these Creekes are many Crabs, Oysters, and Water Rats, and there is one kind of these Rats, a monftrous thing, for all the day they fleepe, and wake all night.

In these Creekes the Parrets breeds, which are to many in number, and make such a noise, that it feemeth the noise of Sparrowes, or Dawes.

On the Sands they finde great store of Parsley, as good and better, then that of Portugal whereof also they make Confernes.

Birds that doe feed, and are found in the falt water.

Guiratineas

He Bird Guiratinga is white, of the bigneffe of the Cranes of Portugal; they are extreame white, and have verie long feete, the bill verie cruell and sharpe, and veriefaire, of a verie fine yellow, the legges are also verie long, betweene Red and Yellow. On the neckeit hath the finest Plume Feathers that can bee found, and they are like the Estridges Feathers

Note,

Carpera by another name Forked-tayles, are many; they are called Forked-tayles . because their taile is divided in the middle; the Indians make great account of the Feathers for the feathering of their Arrowes, and fay that they lait long, at iometimes they are verie fat, the fat is good for 60 the loofenesse. These Birds doe vie to bring newes a land of the ships, and they are so certains in this that very feldome they faile, for when they are feene, ordinarily within twentie or thirtie daies the thips doccome. GANCA

CHAP.I.S.6. Birds and fresh water Rivers. Cucurijuba a wondersul Snake. 1217

Guaca is properly the Sea-men of Portugal, their ordinarie food are Gothles, and because they Guaca. are hard, and they cannot breake them, they take them in their bill, and lecting them fall many times they breake them and eate them; of these Sea-monnes there are an infinite number of kinds. that the Trees and the firands are full of them.

Guirateonteon is called in Portugall Sould-pane, it is called Guirateonteon, that is, a Birdsbat bath Guitateonteon deadly accidents, and that dieth and liveth againe, as though it had the Falling ficknelle, and there fits are fo great that many times the Indians doe find them along the strands, and take them in their hands, and thinking they are dead doe fling them away, and they affoone as they fall doe rife and flie away, they are white and faire, and there are other kinds of thefe that have the fame

The Calcannar are as bigge as Turtle-doues, or Pigeons; the men of the Countrie fay, that they Calcanar, or lay their Egges in the Sea, and there they hatch, and breed their young t they flie not , but with Sea-flamper. their wings and feet they swimme very swiftly, they forethew great calmes and showers , and in calme weather they are so many along the shippes that the Marinets cannot tell what to doe. they are even the very ipite it felfe, and melancholy.

ey are even the very apiecis serie, and distance only.

The Appear are as bigge as a Pye-amuer, more white then red, they have a faire colour of white the appearance of the series of t besported with red, the bill is long and like a Spoone. For re catch the fish, it hath this sight; it firiketh with the foor in the water, and firetelling out his neck, tartieth for the fifth and carcheth it, and therefore the Indians fay it hath humane knowledge,

The Commons is small and gray, it hath faire eies with a verie faire red circle, it hath a firange commons note, for he that heareth it thinketh it is of a verie great bird, it beeing verie fmall; for it fingeth with the mouth, and jointly behind it maketh a noile fo founding, loud and ftrong, though not finelling verie well, that it is a wonder, it maketh this fweet Mulicke two houres before day. and at Euening till the Euening twilight be done, and ordinarily when it fingerth, foresheweth

The Guara is as bigge as a Pye-annet, it hath a long bill with a crooked point, and his feet of a Guara. quarter or span long, when it is hatched, it is blacke, and after becommeth gray, when it alreadie doth flie, it becommeth whiter then any Doue, afterward it turneth to a bright red, yetat length it becommeth redder then Scarlet it selfe, in this colour he continue th till his death, they 30 are many in quantitie, but they have no other kind. They breed well in Houses, their food is fish, flesh, and other things; their food must be alwaies in water, the Indians esteeme greatly the Feathers of these, and of them they make their Diademes, Fringes wherewith they couer the Swords they kill withall, and they make Bracelets to weare on their armes, and faften them to their haire like Rose buds, and these are their lewels, and Chaines of Gold wherewish they adorne themselues in their Feasts, and they so much esteeme, yea, they beeing so much given to eat humane fiesh, they give many times the enemies they have for to cat in change for their Feathers. These birds goe in flights, and if the Sunne doth shine on them vpon the Sands, or in the Aire, it is a faire thing to behold. Many other birds there are that do feed on the Sed, as Hearnshewer, Cormorants, and a certaine kinde of Eagles (which are our Asperalles) which would bee AO tedious to recite.

edious to recite.

The maine Rivers wherewith this Province is watered are innumerable, and some verie great. Of the fresh The maine guerrs wherewith this grounders water and Fountaines, whereof the Of the fresh and haue verie faire barres, not wanting in the Rusers, Brookes and Fountaines, whereof the Church and the Churc Countrie is verie plentifull, and the waters ordinarily are verie faire, cleere and healthfull, and things that in plentifull of infinite fishes of fundrie kinds, of the which fome are of an exteeding greatness, and them are. of great value, and verie healthfull, and are given voto the ficke for Medicines. These fishes doe the Indians catch with Nets, but ordinarily with Hooke and Line. Among these there is a royall fish of a good taste and sauour, that is verie like the Sturgeon of Spaine, this is called lan, they are of fourteene and fifteene quarters long, and fometimes bigger, and verie fat, and they make Butter (or Greafe) of them. And at sometimes the fish is so much, they fat their Hogges with it, 10 In the small Creekes are manie Shrimper, and some of a quarter and more in length, and of a verie

Fresh water Snakes (and Creatures of the water.)

He Snake Cucuryaha is the greatest, or of the greatest that are in Brasil, notable as well for greatneffe as beautic, some are taken of flue and twentie or thirtietoote long, and a yard in great Snake compafe. It hath a Chaine along the backe, of notable Pictures and veriefaire, that beginneth many wayer at the head and endeth in the Taile; it hath Teeth like a Dogge, and laying hold on a man, Cow, wonderfull. Stagge, or Hogge, winding it with certaine turnes of her Taile, it swalloweth the faid thing 60 whole. And atter the hath it to in her belly, the lets her felferor, and the Rauens and Crowes do eate her all, so that there remaineth nothing but the bones, and afterward it breedeth new flesh againe, and reneweth as before it was. The reason whereof is (say the men of the Countrie) be-

cause while it putrifieth it hath the head in the mire, and having life in the noddle they linea-

gaine; and because this is known alreadie, when they finde them putrified, they seeke out the

head and kill it. The manner of their feeding is to waite for their prey, either beafts or people laidealong by the waies, and when it paffeth, it winds it felfe about it, and killeth and eateth it. After they are full they sleepe in such lort, that sometimes they cut two or three pieces of their Taile, they not waking, as hath happened that after they had cut two pieces of the Taile of one of these, the next day they found her dead with two wild Bores in her belly ; and it was about twelve yards and an halfe long.

Manima.

The Snake Manima keepeth alwaies in the water, it is yet greater then the other abouefaids it is much painted ; and from his Pictures did the Gentlies of Brafil take the painting of themfelues. That Indian holds himfelfe for bleffed, that it doth flew it felfe vnto, faying, they shall line long, feeing the Marima did flew it felfe voto him.

Many other kinds of Snakes there be in the Rivers of fresh water, which I leave for breuitie

fake, and because there is nothing in particular that can be faid of them.

lacere(or Gro-

The lacare Lizards are of a notable greatnesse, and some are as bigge as Dogges, their snows is like a Dogge, and to have they their Teeth verie long, they have over all the bodie certaine plates like an armed Horse, and when they arme themselves, there is no Arrow can pierce them. they are painted of divers colours, they doe no hurt to the people, but rather they take them eafile with Snares, some haue beene taken of fifteene quarters (or spans) long, and the Indians esteeme them much, and hold them for estate as the Rimbabas, that is, Dogges, or any other thing of eflate. They keepe in the water, and on the land, they lay Egges as bigge as Geefe, and so hard that firiking one against another, they tingle like Iron. Where these doe haunt they are pre- 20

fently perceived, by the great cries they give; the flesh of these smelleth very much, especially his Cods of Muske, and they are of esteeme, their dung hath some vertue, especially it is good for The laguarnen is a beaft greater then any Oxe, it hath Teeth of a great quarter long, they keepe in and out of the water, and doe kill men; they are rare; fome of them are found in the

laguerucu. A great Dogge. This feemeth fome kind of the Hippopeta-Atacare. Iaguapozeba.

River of Saint Francis, and in Paraguacu. The Assespe are Woolues smaller, but much more hurtfull, for they come out of the water to watch for men , and being verie swift they kill some persons and eate them.

The lagrapopeba are the true Atters of Portugall. There is another small beaft of the bigit is called Zariguemein, thele haue rich Skinnes for Furres; and of thele 30 water beafts, there are many other kinds; some doe no hurt, others are verie fierce.

Bacapina.

The Baepapina are a certaine kind of Mermen as bigge as children, for they differ nothing from them, of these there are many and doe no harme.

There be many of the water Hogges Capigoara, and are of the bignesse of land-hogges, but Water-hogge, they differ in fashions; in the roofe of the mouth it hath a very great stone that doth serue him for great Teeth. This the Indians hold for a lewell for their children, fonnes and daughters. It hath no taile, they continue long under water, but they lodge on the Land, and in it they bring up their young; their foode is graffe, and fruites that they find along the Rivers.

In the fresh Rivers of waters are many kinde of Igta Scallops, great and small. Some are so bigge as good Siues, and ferue to fift their meale with them; other are smaller, and serue for 40

Spoones, all of them are long, and of a filuer colour, in them are fome Pearles. In the Rivers are found many of the Cagados, (a Sea bird so called) and they are so many in number, that the Tapayas doe feed fat in a certaine time of the yeere with the Egges, and doe

feeke for them as for some other daintie food.

Guararich. Men dye with

There want no Frogges in the Rivers, Fountaines, Puddles, and Lakes, and they are of many kinds especially these Guararici. The feare that the Indians have thereof is a wonderfull thing, that of the onely hearing it they die, and tell them neuer fo much they have no other remedie, but let themselves die, io great is the imagination and apprehension that they take of the hearing it fing, and whatfoeuer Indian that heareth it dieth, for they fay it doth caft from it felfea brightnesse like a lightning.

All these maine Rivers have so great and so thicke Woods on the one side and the other, that they faile many leagues by them and fee no ground, on either fide, in them are many things to

be told, which I omit for breuities fake.

Of the Beasts, Trees and Herbes, that came from Portugall, and doe grow and breed in Brasill.

This Brafill is alreadie another Portugall, and not speaking of China, which is much more temperate and healthfull, without great heates or colds, where the men doe line long, with few sickneiles, as the Collicke, of the Luer, the Head, the Breast, Scabe, nor any other Diseases of Portugall. Neither speaking of the Sea, which hath great flore of fish, and wholsome, nor of the things of the Land, which God hath given to this Nation, nor of many other commodities which the men haue to passe their lines withall; though the commoditie of houses is not great,

for the most of them are of mud walls, and thatched, though now they beginne to make buildings of lime and flone, and tile, neither are the commodities for apparell many, because the Countrie yeeldeth no other cloth but Cotton-wooll. In this place the people are in great need. especially from the River of Januarie, vnto Saint Umcent, for want of ships to bring Merchandize and Clothes, but in the most Captaineships they are provided of all kinds of clothings and Silkes, and the men see well apparelled, and weare many Silkes and Veluets. But it is alreadie Portugall as I faid for the many Commodities that from thence doe come vnto it.

In this Province is a good breed of the Horfes, and there be alreadie great abundance of them Horfes, and very good lennets of a great price, that are worth 200, and 200. Duckets and more, and there is alreadie running at the Geefe, at the Ring, at Canes, and other Sports and Skirmifhes. and from hence they beginne to prouide Angola of Horles whereof they frand in great want.

Though this Countrie hath weake pastures, and in Port Secure is an Herbe that killeth the Kine, beaits if they doe eate it, notwithstanding there is a great number of them alreadie, and all Brafill is full of great Heards, and some have soo, some a 1000, heads, especially in the fields of Piratininga, because it hath good pastures, and are like to them of Portugal, and it is a pleasant thing to fee the young breed that is there.

The Swine doe like very well heere, and they beginne to have great multitudes, and heere it Swines is the best flesh of all, yea, better then Hennes flesh, and it is given to the ficke, and hath a very

Vnto the River of Innuarie are many sheepe found alreadie, and Weathers, and they fatten so Sheepe much that they burit with fatnesse : it is not here so good flesh as in Portugall.

The Goates are yet but few, but yet they like well in this Countrie, and doe multiply verie Goates, much, and in a short time there will be a great mulcitude.

The Hennes are infinite, and greater then in the Realme of Portugall, and because the Coun- Hennes trie is temperate they breed well, and the Indians doe esteeme them, and breed them within the Maine, three hundred and foure hundred leagues, the fielh here is not fo good as in the

The Hennes of Pern, like well in this Countrie, and there is great abundance of them, and Turkies; there is no Banquet where they are not a dish.

The Geefe doe like well in this Countrie, and are in great abundance, there is also here and. Geefe and ther kind of the Countrie it felfe, and are farre greater and fairer.

The Dogges haue multiplied much in this Countrie, and are of many kindes; they are effee- Dogges, med heere ai well of the Portugals which brought them, as of the Indians that efteeme them aboue all the things they have : because they helpe them in their hunting, and are domesticall creatures, and so the women doe carrie them on their backe from one place to another, and nourish them as Children, and give them sucke at the breast.

Trees with prickles, as Orenges, Pomecitrons, Limons * of both kinds, of fundrie forts do Trees; grow well in this Countrie, which almost all the yeere have fruit , and there are so great Oren- "For one kind ges and Pomecitron Groues, that even among the Woods they grow, and the abundance is fo are called Li-40 great of those things that they are not fet by. They have a great enemie, the Ants, notwith- the Female, standing there is great abundance, without euer being watered, and as there wanteth no Sugar, they make infinite Conferues, to wit, of Citrons, Limons, the flowres, &c.

The Fig-trees grow verie well heere, and there bee many kindes, as long Figges, blacke Fig-trees. Figges, Figge-Dates, and many other kinds, to the River of Ianuarie, that are hotter ground, they yeeld two crops in the yeere.

In the River of lanuarie and Saint Vincent, in the fields of Piratinings, doe grow many Quinces, Quinces, and yeeld foure crops a yeere, one after another, and there are men that with verie few Quince Trees doe gather, ten, and twelve thousand Quinces, and here they make great store of Marmelets and verie shortly will those of the Iland of Madera be spared.

There are many force of Grapes, as Feriads, Bones, Baftard, Greene, and Gallizian Grapes, and Vines, 50 many other. To the River of Landarie they have all the yeere Grapes, if they will have them, for if they cut them euerie moneth, they beare euerie moneth Grapes successively. In the River of Ianuarie especially in Piratinings, are Vineyards, and are so loaden that they bow to the ground, they yeeld but one crop. They beginne alreadie to make Wine, though with trouble to preferue it, for in wood the Worme doth prefently eatethorow, and earthen veffels they have none, but seeke remedies of their owne, and doe continue it, and in a short space they will

In the River of I annarie and Piratminga, are many Roses; one, Damaske Roses, whereof they Roses, diftill great store of Role-water, and Conterue of Roles for to purge, and not to purge, for of 60 the other they have not, they feethe the Damaske Roles in water, and straining them they make Conserue of Roses very good wherewith they doe not purge.

Muske Melons want not in many Captaine ships, and are good and fine, many Gourds where. Plants and of they make Conferues, many Beets whereof they make it alfo, Cabbages, Cowcumbers, Herbes Raddishes, Turnops, Mustard, Mintes, Coriander, Dill, Fennell, Peake, Leekes, Onions.

ha e. k Na e that

bufh.ls.

the Alque que

Garlicke, Borrage, and other Pulles which were brought from Portugall, and grow well in this

Wheater

In the River of Ianuarie, and fields of Piratininga, groweth Wheate, they vie it not because they have no Horfe-mils, nor Water-mils, and they have also great trouble in the gathering of i That is foure it, for because of the many waters, and ranknesse of the ground it commeth altogether, and it bu hel, and an multiplieth to much, that one Corne beareth fixtie and eightic Eares, and some beeing ripe, others grow anew, and it multiplieth almost in infinium. Of lesse then a I quarter of Barley that a man fowed, in the field of Piratininga, hee gathered fixtie and odde & Alqueires, and if the Asperdue
contineth 18, men would give themselves to this commoditie, the Country would be verie rich and plentifull.

There are many forts of Bafill, and Gilliflowres Yellow, and Red, and doe grow well in Pi. 10

Smelling ratininga, and other finelling herbes, as the 1 Onion fefe, ore, he bes. About all this, Brafil hath one commoditie for men to live, that in it doe live diforderly, that 1 An herbe fo there are but iew Lice or Fleas, but among the Indians, and Guinne Moores there are some Lices cilled. but there want no Hornets, Dorres, Waspes, Flies, and Gnats of so many kinds, and so crowle Vermine and venemous, that flinging any person, the place swelleth for three or foure dayes, especials Infecta. ly in the fresh men, which have their bloud fresh and tender, with the good Bread, Wine and

CHAP. II.

Articles touching the dutie of the Kings Maiestie our Lord, and to the common good of all the estate of Brafill. Written (as is thought) by the Anthour of the former Treatile.

delicate fare of Portugall.

T greatly behooveth for the universall good, and prefernation of the efface of Brain fill, that the King our Lord doe take all the Captaineships for his, satisfying the Lordfhips. For as the Tenths are all his Maiefties, and the Lordfhips have no more then the tenth, which is verie little, at the least in the Captaineships of the Holy Ghost, Saint Vincent, Port Secure, and the Ilets, the faid Captaine- 10 thips are neuer prouded, neither have Powder, Bullet, or Caleeuer, &c. for to de-

fend themselves from the enemies, and whatsoever French or English shippe that goeth thither. doth put them in such danger, that either they must give them entrance, and traffick with them. or leave them the Towne and goe to the Woods, as now it was feene in the Captaineships of the Holy Ghoff, and Saint Vincent, and being the Kings they be otherwise promided, making Fortref-les in the barres for their defence, at the least in those of the Holy Ghoff, and the River of January, as it was done in that of Saint Vincent, in the which thips may come in at any houre, and in this manner will have a delight to dwell, and labour in them the which now doe live in trouble and complaints, feeing themfelues fo disfauoured, and in any danger of warre they rather thinke how to flee away, and escape with their Wines and Children, then how to defend the Countrey, whose fatetie, prefernation, and augmenting importeth so much, as is notorious to the good of all Peru.

The fecond Article.

Weakneffe of

the Portugals

whence.

in Erafill how

It idemeth necessarie that in Brafill there be a Court Royall, where many causes may be determined, as there is in Peru, New Spaine, and in all his Maiefties Proninces. The first reason that for this is offered, is, that the people whereof at the first this Countrey

was inhabited, commonly were banished for facts committed in Portagall. And as at the beginning there was no Iustice Royall in it, at the least in the Captainelhips, and Lands of the Lords, as all of them were, but onely Captaines and Judges, placed by the Lords of them, there was little regard of Iuftice, as well in them which ruled, the which had authoritie for to kill, hang, &cc. and as they had no Science, nor peraduenture Conscience, ruled rather by humane respects, 10 Brafill peopled friendthips, hatreds, and proper gaines, then by direct reason, as in the subjects, the which as there was no Iultice but of Goffips, (as the speech is) did hue at large as they lifted, having no bodie to contradict them, and though the Kings afterward did take & referue the Justice to themfelues fending Governours, and generall Judges, and though there come many men of more qualitie to continue the inhabiting of the Countrey, notwithstanding a great part of that first libertie and licence remained fill, with the which many euils were and are committed without punilhment. For many of them have alreadie so much power with their riches(gained God knoweth how) that I know not whether those that now doe rule dare meddle with them , bee it that they feare their power and might, or because fere ownes diligunt munera: and the Iustices that went, and will not be interessed but beare the Rod vpright, let them prepare themselves to suf- 60

fer troubles in this Countrey. The second reason is, that many Sutes may here be determined definitively, in the which are delayings of many yeeres, without any obtayning of luftice by Appeales and Grienances to Portugal. Now if the Gouernour (as many times it hapneth) will put himselfe in the office of the generall Judge, and with his power binds his hands, all goes topfieturule, without any civill peace in the Country, but rather a continual confusion, and perturbation, and the matter commeth to this point, that the Gouernour apprehendeth the Iuige himfelse (as alreadie it hath happed) and fendeth him to Portugall, and in the meane while the Inflice of the Countres remayneth in the hands of him that cannot administer it, and in stead of reason entreth affection. or passion, and then nothing is done but what the Gouernor lifteth. The same behoueth, and peraduenture more, to that which appertaineth to his Majesties goods, wherein are difficult matters. and have need of a man of knowledge and conscience, for to decide them.

The third reason is, that there may learned men of conscience bee there for to determine the 10 Justice of warre, for want of that have many been made in Brafil, against all Justice, which was a great cause of the destruction of the men of the Countrie, and so all the Coast is almost whabired. And although the Kings past commended this greatly, and commanded that no warre should be held lawfull, but that which should be made by order of the Gouernour generall, hee taking first counsell with the Bishop, and Fathers of the company, and experienced persons of the Country, and of good confeiences, and the Iustice of the warre being determined by them. notwithstanding many times it is not done with such examination as the cause requireth; and Iesuites comfo either the Fathers of the company are not called thereunto, or if they be called, it is for a com- plaint for not plement of Justice : and they have more regard to the hope of the profit that is offered them, of being called getting of flaues in the faid warre, then vnto the luftice of it, and to the common good, and to counfels of 20 danger they put themselues in, for sometimes they fare cuill in the broyle, with the death of warre. many Christians, both Poringals and Indians. With these warres especially all the Coast of Pernambuco, which beginneth from the River of Saint Francis thitherward, which are fiftie leagues, and the greatest part of the Maine is disinhabited, having before a most copious number of Indians ; and fo now that Captaineship wanteth Indian friends, to helpe them to defend, and it is, euery day wasted, staine, and exten of the Indians Pitiguares of Paraiba, which before were their friends, whom they did also great injustice to.

The third Article is about the Kings Customers Accounts, &c.

His Majestie hath a great obligation to the Indians of Brasil, to aide them with all corporal! The fourth and feirituall remedie. For almost all those of this Coast are almost consumed with sicknesses. Arricle. 30 warres and tyrannies of the Portugals, and those which escaped, went into the Maine to their Wastofthe Inkindred, and neither haue these their lives there. For when the ransomes of slaves did end, which dians by Portuwere held for lawfull, they intented Armies for to goe to the Maine to bring them to the Sea Seifor to ferue them felues of them perpetually.

These companies are made in this manner, three or foure or more persons doe joyne, and euerie one of them doe put in fo much stocke, and aske license of the Governour to goe into the Maine to bring free Indians, the Gouernour grants it, with his order, to wit, that they bring them without any force or deceit, but with their owne good will, declaring to them, that they come to ferue the Portugals, and to helpe them in their labours. Sugar-mills and other workes. Hauing this License, the Venturers doe loyne people to fend into the Maine, to wit, Interpre-40 ters, and other persons, that sometime came to fiftie or fixtie with their pieces and other weapons, and with many Indian Archers both free and bond, that doth carrie their burdens of the ransome and the victuals, and with helpe if by deceit they cannot bring the people they goe to feeke, they may bring it by force.

With this License in this manner they depart, and neuer keepe the order set downe; as it is Portugals willy manifest and all doe openly confesse without contradiction, for presently when they are depar-wronging the ted they fay, that if that should be declared vnto them there, that certaine it is, that no Indian Nations. will come, and therefore they must vie deceits and force for they have no other meanes to mouse them from their Countries, and with this purpose they goe, without any regard of the order, nejther of them that goe to the Maine, nor of the Inflices when they come from thence, and fo they

So vie these Licentes, without any examining of them. Now when they come to the Townes of the Indians, that are within the Maine, 100, and 200, leagues, they beginne presently their deceits, faying that they come for them by commandement of the Gouernour, that they may come to enjoy the good things of the Sea, and that they shall bee together in their Villages by themfelues, and at their will (without making any manner of repartition) and that from thence they shall helpe the Portugals in their warres, and other things. Other whiles they tell them that the Gouernour, and the Fathers of the company doe fend for them for to bee in the Churches of their kinsmen, which doe learne the things of God, naming some ancient principal Indians, whom they much esteeme, and hold as Fathers, and that they wil be with them, and for this there hath beene some of these Interpreters, that ordained among themselves one, whom they fained to be a 60 Pather of the company, with a shauen crowne, and a long habit to deceive them more easily.

When these deceits, & other such do not prevaile, they vie violence, labouring to kil fome, that doe hinder this comming, for the which it hath hapned to put poison in the veffels of their wine, with many other inventions, wher with they feare them. As once, that comming alreadie by the way, because one of the principali Indians did shew to come with an euill will, and did impart is

Rrrrr 3

faith, and obedience of the King our Lord.

with the reft, it is faid that they tooke for a remedie two or three to remaine behind with him alone, and being affeepe they choaked him with a Towell, and gaue out, that hee died ind. denly, because he would not come. Other whiles they kill some of other Nations, that are hy the way, all to the end, that those which they bring doe not goe backe, and in this manner they bring such a number of them, without provision of necessarie food, that by the way with hunger and euill vsage, a great part of them doe die, and those that doe come are in such a case, and so Whe now are weake, that it is needfull before they come into the houses, the Fathers of the company to one the Conibalt > about the Woodes christening the children at their Mothers breafts that they may not die vn. bantized, and others they find halfe dead, and full of flies, that the Mothers haue left, as not able to bring them.

Vnchriftian wickedneile.

Being come to the Sea those that scape alive, having promised them that they will put them in Townes, at their owne will, presently the venturers doe divide them among themselves, and many times they separate fathers from children, wives from husbands, brethren from brethren. &c. and enery one carrieth his part to their places, some one hundred, another two hundred, another thirtie, &c. euery one according to the stocke he putteth in. Besides this, they give their share to the men that went to bring them (for this is the money they pay them withall) to one foure, to another ten &c. and as many of these have no lands for to maintaine them, they sell them prefently to others, and so they have marked and fold a great number to these and other Captaineships, and as the poore men doe see themselves deceived, and toiled with over-much Labour, with pure griefe they die, and fomerunne away and goe even to their enemies, willing an rather to be eaten of them, then to abide such vsageamong the Portugals, and in this sort of 20. or 40000. foules, that have beene brought, I know not whether 3000, bee alive, and with this a great part of the Maine is destroyed. For the same licences doe the Captaines give in their Captaineships, and the same is vied. These vexations and tyrannies, are the cause that the Indians lose the patience, which alwaits

they have had exceeding, and doe kill some Portugals. Now in the Maine of the Bay the Tapayse a people which alwayes had great friendship with the Portugals, and gave them passage through their Countries, and aide to bring the Indians above said, did rise with the deceits and lies of certaine Portugals, that went thither with title of bringing Saltpeeter, and killed some eighteene or twentie of them. Some of the Maine of the Captainelhip of the Holy Ghoft, did kill 30 certaine Indians that certaine Messives did carrie with them, going thither to play their accu-flomed prankes, for within their owne houses they would have killed them, and the Mungrels escaped by flight, and with this that people is alreadie an enemie of the Portugals. The Maine of the River of lanuarie with fuch other lyes did revolt, being before our great friends, and killed some Portugals, having a little before a Father of the company gone thither at the request of the Inhabitors of the Citie, and had beene fixe moneths with them, confirming them in the friendship of the Portugals, and preaching the faith vnto them and brought from divers and remote places some 600. soules which now are Christians baptized almost all in their Towne with a Church made within the River of I anuarse, which are great helpe for the defence of that Citie, and they helpe euery one to doe their worke : and many other remayning moued for to follow 40 their Kinsmen, with this revolting all ceasied, and so there as also in other places, the gates ynto Conversion are altogether shut vp.

To the Maine of the Bay, twice the Fathers of the company have gone at their owne cost, (with helpe of the Indians christened, which doe teach,) to bring some people for

to furnish the Churches , which beginnes to diminish , and to preach the Law of God yn-

to them. And there they found of this Soule-leffe people , that were in the Townes of the

Indians, as in their owne houses, and the Fathers bringing some number of Indians, which

came from verie farre to become Christians. These Portugals laboured by all meanes possible to

diffwade them. Sometimes preaching to the Indians, that the Fathers brought them deceived,

ny Wittes, and whip their children, &c. the which is an vie and custome among these pratiers for

to discredit the Fathers. Not being able to prevaile by this meanes, they tooke another way and

did contract with some other Indians, of the principallest of those that remained there, that

they should fell them those which the Fathers carried, giving them great ransomes for them, and

with this they pretended to take them away perforce, before their eies, fo that it was needfull

the Fathers to bid the Indians to defend themselves, and with this remedie they left them. O-

there came to the high-waies and did steale them that the Fathers brought, as one Messizo

which tooke some twentie and odde, and transported them by another way, taking wife and

children, brethren, and all the Family from a principall Indian, and left him alone because he was

and that heere they would take away their Customes, as the drinking of their Wines, their ma- 50

Conucrling.

Reuerfing.

Diuerling.

Inucring.

Adverting.

Auerling.

fore hurt in one foot, and was not able to goe. With these iarrings of these men of this trade, the Indians know not whom to trust, nor whom to beleeve, and by the fame that they heare already of the viage that is done here to theirs, that come to the Sea. For this cause a great principall Indian of the Mountaine of Rari, that is from hence about two hundred leagues, where now is the greatest force of people, that escaped

from the tyrannies, fent hither a Sonne of his to fee how it went, and being true that which the Fathers had faid, that he should make herre some prouision for food sowing some grounds, and to returne thither with some Father for him and for all his Family; for to come and receive the law of God. The Sonne came, and finding the truth, and feeing the viage that is done to theirs in the Sugar-workes, and other labours of the Portugals, he prefently husbanded fome grounds in one of the Townes of the Christians, that are in protection, and doctrine of the Fathers, with a determination to goe and bring his Father as he commanded him. Many other of this Fort did leave Petuertings their Fathers, being mooued in that Mountaine, but with feare of thefe affaults aboutfaid they dare not come. Likewise they have here no grounds fitting for their maintenance, for it is all oc-To cupied by the Portugals. Besides this the Nation of the Tapayas, which have divers Languages. doe not agree well in the Sea Coast, for ordinarily they live here of the Mountaine, and in their

owne Countrey they might have the Euangelicall Law preached vnto them.

All the abouefaid well confidered, it feemed necessary that his Maiestie should forbid these adnenturings, fending a commandement, that none might goe thither without express warrant of his Maieftie, under great penalties, the which with effect might be executed, and that neither the Gouernours might give any licence for them, feeing how they which carrie the faid Licenses never kept, nor will keep the order given them, as aforefaid. For all men know and fav. that if it be kept, neuer will any Indian come from the Maine, as vntill now none came but decrined, and this being to publicke, and daily, and not the fault of one or two particular men. but a common vie of all the Countrey, that it paffeth before the eies of the Justices neuer vntill this houre did the Governours forbid them, rather past by it not punishing any of them that so brought them, norredreffing the poore Indians. These adventurings taken away, the Fathers would adventure themselves to goe among them, to preach the faith of Iclus Christ, and make a Christianitie, and in time, Partugals or Spaniards, might goe thither, but fuch as were men of a good conscience with order from his Majestie, that might inhabit, and helpe in the conversion. and in this manner, by the grace of God all that people would bee subject to the voke of the

The Indians that are brought from the Maine, and are in the power of the Poringals, and all The fift Asiathat are by the Coast of Brafill, as welfree as flaues, have no kind of doctrine by obligation, that is de-30 impoled vpon them; for neither Bilhops, nor Curates have any care of it, bearing themselves vpon the Fathers of the company, and in thirty foure yeeres fince that the company was fent to thefe parts by the King Don lobn the third, no Curate in all Brafill did ever fay Maffe in reforce of the Indians, or flaues borne in the Countrey; only they baptize the children with their offerings, and those that are already growne they need no more preparation, then to bring them to be baptized. without giuing them any other knowledge of the faith, & fo it hapneth by their ignorance, that not only they receive not the grace of Baptisme, but also sometimes not the character. It is pittle Subversing. to fee the little regard that is had in this, being the principall dutie of the King our Lord.

The Fathers of the company fince they entred in to Brafil, tooke this matter effectually, and in all places where they have houses, there is alwaies a particular Masse said for the slaves all 40 Sundayes and Feaftdayes, catechiling them every day, and sometime Morning and Evening: They labour to learne the Countrey Language, and instruct them in the marters of faith, and law of God, they baptize, marrie, and doe shrieue, and administer other Sacraments vinweariedly. But because they cannot accomplish all, and many doe perish in want for the Curates take no care of them as if they were not their sheepe) it is necessary that his Majestie doe prouide in this some more effectuall remedies.

The first remedie offered was, that his Majestie should command to make a Catechisme in that Catechisme in Brasilian Language, which is vniuersall from the River Marangon, vnto the River of Plate, and the Brasilian should be imprinted at his Majesties cost, and to enjoyne every Curate to have it, and to teach by Tongue, it. For though the most of them have not the language, they may not with standing learne to read 50 it very well, and to teach by the Booke, as at the beginning, and even now some Fathers of the company doe, that the Indians hearing him reade will vaderstand, &c.

It is very necessary that his Majestie doe command to examine the Justice that these Portugals The fixt Are haue to serue themselues of these tree Indians they bring from the Maine in the manner about ucle, faid, for although they hold them with a title of free, they have no libertie but in name, for in truth they are more then Captines, according to the viage they have. For first, as touching the Slavericof the foules, they care not for their doctrine , nor that they bee baptized , married, or line, like Indians. Christians, they have no other respect but of their service, as of any other brute beait, and so lec them live in adulterie, without hearing Maffe, or fhrieuing, and many die without Baptisme. As touching their bodies, their labours are immoderate and perpetuall by night and by day, con-60 trarie to the nature of the Indians, which are suffained with very little labour in their Countries.

If they fall ficke they have then leffe care of them then of their flaves, for of these because they coft them their money, they have more regard, as the Mafters themselves doe confesse. Those that have them in their power, are served of them, as of slaves, all their lives, not letting them goe to another Mafter or place, though it be to the Churches of their kinimen, that are

Rrrrr 2

Christians, where they may be better instructed in matters of the faith, and of their faluationand if they doe goe to at y place, though it be to the faid Churches, they labour by themselues. and by the Justices, to bring them againe, as indeede they doe bring, and put them in Irons, as though they were flaues. Whence arifeth a great feandail to the Indians Christian, their kinfmen, some of the which, as yet are tender Plants in the faith, for sake the Churches and flee with their familie about the woods, grieued with the injuries that are done to theirs, of pecially in matter of libertie, which they fo much esteeme, and for feare they will doe the like with them. and so wandering are lost and neuer seene againe; and truth it is, that if it were not for the continuall care and vigilancie that the Fathers of the companie have over them, and the love the Indians doe beare them, because they are their masters; and seeing that for their defence they are 19 hated of the Portugals, and murmured ar, they had not continued, no not these three small towns of Christians of the Baye, wherein may be about 2500, foules, which onely escaped of eleuen Courches, that there were, wherein were gathered more then 40000, nor other Townes likewife of Christians, that are about the Captaine shippes. Neither had Gouernors nor Captaines fufficed for to have fuffained them(as the experience hath showen) for they would not have suffered such vexation, though they had died for it, as others didalready at the beginning, running away and dying, wherewith the coast was difinhabited.

Wicked man-Acaling.

Not onely doe the Portugals ferue themselves of the free Indians above said, which they bring from the maine; but they fell them also to others, and they say with title of free, but the price is such, that a lawfoll slave is fold no deerer, and so the goods, that without them was worth. I 20 put the cafe 2000. Duckets, with them they give it for 4000 and thefe that doe buy it doe take already maitership of them, as of slaves, that cost them their money, and so from hand to hand their captiultie increaseth, and though they say that they are served of them, as of hired men, the pay for their feruice is nothing; for it they give a cotten garment to one or two of the principallest of them, which they weare in their feruice, they doe not neither is it possible to give it to 100. or 200, that they keepe, as they them! lues confesse; with the like viages many of the fard Indians either cate earth till they kill themselves, or let themselves de verie casily with meere griefe and fadnesse. And because jointly with this the punishments they give them are like the flaues, and thefe buyings and fillings are not vsed particularly betweene one or two is my name blas hermed a persons secretly, but it is an vie and custome in all the Countrie, without any institute looking in- 30 to it. Finally, they are not onely ferued of them all their life, but they give them alfo in mariages to Sonnes and Daughters as a dowrie; and at their deaths they remaine in their wils with the name of free, but bound to ferue their children perpetually, whom they leave them vinto as bareditario iure, and to the heires goe to law about them, and have judgements, as if they were lawfull flaues.

As touching the inflice that is vied with the Indians, the King our Lord is to understand that

although his Maiestreas all the Kings his predecessors doe recommend alwaies this matter of the

is my name mongft the

Through you

The feruenth

Indians to the Gouernours about all as their principall duetie, with very effectuall words, notwithitanding the inflice that untill now hath beene in Erafil toward them was none or verie little, as it is plainely feene by the affaults, robberies, captiuities, and other vexations that al- 40 The mercies of waies were done to them, and even now are done. Against the Indians was alwaies a rigorous instice, they have already beene hanged, hewen in peeces, quartered, their hands cut, nipped with hot pincers, and fet in the mouth of peeces, and fhot away the Indians for killing or helping to kill fome Portugall (which peraduenture had well deferued it at their hands) but having perions, not a few in Brafil, as alwaies there were, and yet there are, notoriously infamous for robbing, stealing, branding felling, and killing many Indians, neuer vntill this time was there any show of punishment, and it is to be feared, seeing it wanteth on earth, that it will come from heaven on all the inhabitants of Brafil.

The eight Article is touching the Indians exceeding services without reward.

The ninch Article is to preuent their totall destruction, which cannot but follow the practife so of Portugals in making flaues of them by fowing quarrels, and interesting themselues on one side. by burning &c.

The tenth Ar-

All the coalt of Brasil doth want and is destitute of Priests that may be Curates for the soules. for in the Bay, except three or foure that doe ferue in the high Church, and one that ferueth for Curate in one Parish, that did learne in the colledge of the Companie: there are no Priests that know how to doe their office, and their customes and lives are much blemished, for many of them came suspended from Portugall for grieuous crimes, and also for incorrigible; and here as they want Priests they are presently enabled and made cures of soules, and although in the three Colledges of the companie that are in this Countrie, Sc. in the Bay, Pernambuco, and the River of Januarie. are ordinarie lectures of matters of confcience, there is no Priest that will heare it, and as they are most ignorant, they doubt nothing, and so they absolue and dispence more then Popes with great loffe of the foules; and fuch there was, that dispensed with a parishioner of his to communicate after he had drunk, whereby may be coniectured what the rest will doe. And with this they doe other follies, and misbehautors in the celebrating of the maffe before the people, that

they feeme altogether fooles. And their life is pittifull, for finally their care is to fill themthey recent around meate, and drinke; and to follow the lufts of the flesh, with a great scandall of the fecular.

Those are very rare, and may bee told with the finger through all the coast, which doe line & life worthie the Priettly function, and those which the Bishop banish from hence for their faults or suspensions to the River of lanuarie, presently they are there received by the Ruler, as now he did particularly to one that being a Friar come from Portural expelled from the Order for incorrigible, and afterward heewas enabled here by the Bishop, hee was put in the visitation, because he was not shriven in three yeeres, celebrating almost every day, and this being another to time condemned by the Biftop in his Court, and brought to the estate that he came in from Portweell, expelled his Order, and banished from his Bishopricke, and his life infamous and leandas lous to all the Secular, the Ruler enabled him prefently in the River of Tamarie, (not without great feandall of the good) not onely for fellow-helper of the Curate of that Citie but also for a Preacher. And the Prelatestay they doe all this because they have no other, whom to give the Parishes vnto, which are many.

CHAP. III.

Extracts out of the Historie of IOHN LERIVS* a Frenchman, who lived in Brafill with Monf. VILLAGAGNON. Ann. 1 557. and 58.

Of the Beafts, and other living creatures, and Plants, of Brafill.

Efore I proceed any further, presently in the beginning of this Chapter; I thought fed. The Story is long, which good briefly to admonth the Reader, that no living creatures of the kinde of hadby mee toure-footed beafts are found in all the Brafilian world, altogether like vnto wholly transours in shape: and that the Tonompinambaulty vie not, but very seldome, to lated, but flore bring them up tame at home. But, that I may generally deferibe the wilde hath bred a

beatts, which the Barbarians call Soo, I determined to beginne with them which most of it. I are applied to the vieof man. It feemeth, that that is to bee fet in the first place; which also is howevered most common: they call Tapirousson, of a reddish, and long shaggie haire, greatly resembling a as also all The-Kow in bignesse and shape : yet, seeing it wanteth hornes, and hath a shorter necke, with longer wets Voyage Kow in bignefic and thape: yet, seeing it wantern norms, and main a more bearing the write thinker, and 40 and hanging eares, and more withered and flender legs, with an whole hoofe, very like write the thinker, and that of Stading and hanging extes, and more within a and a man may rightly fay, it participateth the nature of the Kow, and Affe. Not in those parts, withstanding it different very much from either, both because it hath a very short taile (here thou; a allange, the Reader is by the way to be admonished, that very many heasts are Bied in America, which lished and reas have no taile at all) and hath much sharper teeth : nor may any danger bee therefore procured die for the vnto men by this beaft, feeing it vieth to repose fafety rather in flight, then in ftrength. The Prefie. who men by this bean, as also many others, shooting them through with Arrowes, or vie to Beatharians kill them, as also many others, shooting them through with Arrowes, or vie to Beatharians bred catch them in an hollow trench, or with other manner of Traps and Gins ingeniously and cunin America ale

But that wilde beaft is greatly efteemed by the Barbarians, by reason of the skinne, which as like vote curs, 50 foone as they have taken away, cutting the backe of the hide in a round circle, they drie it in the The wild bear Sunne, and falhion it like vnto a Target of the bigneffe of the bottome of an indifferent veffell, where the therefore. wherewith they repell the Arrowes, of the enemies, received in the warres. And the skinne bleshaKow, dried in the Sunne becommeth fo hard, that I eafily believe that it cannot bee pierced through and an Affe with the stroke of any weapon, although it bee cast with great violence. I carefully defired to Most American bring two such Targets into France, but the famine so oppressed vs returning, that all the prouifion of victuall being spent, not excepting Monkeyes and Parots, and other liuing creatures Targets of the or the same kinde, which we brought with vs out of that Countrie, those two Targets, being hide of the laid voon the coales, were also eaten to expell hunger; vnto the which the rest of the skinnes wilde beaft

that were in the ship (as I shall declare in their proper place) were added. Moreouer, the flesh of the Tapirousson, commeth almost neere vinto the taste of Beefe : this mine. the Barbarians broyle after their manner, and in their Country language call it, Boucanare. But The taffe of because I have now vied that word, and that hereafter it shall bee often repeated, left the the flost the Reader should any longer remaine doubtfull , occasion being offered, I will declare what this Tapmouff u.

flants went a Vil. his request to M. Calun, to Brafill, he there forti ying and pretending E. u ngelicall reformati :n from which he

with falt, as the manner is here, they vie the onely remedie of broyling, for the preferring of of preferring them. Therefore, although they had taken thirty wilde beaits in one day, (fuch as we will demeats among feribe in this Chapter, they would lay them all cut in pieces, vpon thole Grates, as foone as it to might be done, left they should be tainted and corrupted; and there, being often turned, they are sometimes broyled and scorched aboue soure and twenty houres together, vntill the inlide of the flesh be as well rosted as the outside, and by this meanes they are all preserved from corruption. Nor is there any other manner of dreffing or preferuing fish, which when they have got-Meale of fishes ten, they dry them in great plenty, to make Meale, especially, those which in their Country language they call Praparati, which are the very true and natural Mullets, of the which I shall

The Americans fastning foure woodden forks in the ground, of the thicknesse of an arme, three

hereafter speake in another place. And these Grates among the Barbarians are rightly to bee accounted the Shambles, and Store-house: and therefore you shall scarce come to their Villages. but you may fee them laden with the flesh of wilde beachs, and fishes: and it visually happeneth Mans flesh laid also very often , as wee shall hereafter speake, if you come vnto the Barbarians , that you shall 20 you Bouces. behold these Grates filled with mans flesh, which, I thinke, they bring as spoyles taken from the conquered enemies, to be flame, and eaten.

But, that I may profecute the intended description of wilde beasts, the second degree of bienelle feemeth to be given vnto a certaine kinde of Deere, which they name Seonalou, but herein they d ffer from ours, both that they are much lower, and haue leffer hornes, and also in kin to beere, this, that they have a long shagged haire, as our Country Goates. But the American Boare, which they call Taisson, is very like in shape vnto those which are bred with vs, in bulke of bodv. cares, head, and teet, very hurtfull alfo, through his long and sharpe teeth: yet seeing hee is more leane and flender, and terribly gnasheth and grindeth his teeth together, hee is notorious Swine with an allo through that deformitie. He hath an hole in the backe, by nature, as the Sea-fwine haue in Swine, with an hole in their the head, whereby he draweth in breath, and letteth it out. These three are their greatest beasts.

backe:

There is also among the Americans, a certaine red wilde beaft, which they name Agenti, of the height of a weaned Pig of thirty dayes old, with a clouen foot, a very short tayle, and with the note and eares almost of an Hare, most delightfull to the taste. There are also others of two Tapita, a kinde or three kindes, which they call Tapita, not much valike our Hares, but somewhar of a rede

of Hare.

They catch great Rats also in the Woods, of the bignesse and haire of Squirrels, which come Reddish Mife. neere vnto the delicate taite of Conies. Pag, or Pague, (for after what manner they pronounce it, you can scarce, or not at all ynder-

Pag, a beaft

Pag, a beatt marked with fland) is a wilde beaft of the indifferent height of an Hound, with a deformed head, the flesh 400 comming neere vnto the tafte of Veale, with a very faire skinne, diftinguished with white, rusfer, and blacke spots, so that it would be of great price with vs, if they were to be gotten.

Sarigo, a ftin. There is another alfo found, which they call Sarigo, which the Barbarians cate not, by reason of the noy some stinke thereof : but flaying some of them, and taking away the fat of the kidneves, whence that stinke proceeded, wee eate them without loathing : for, they are both tender, and also excellent flesh.

Tates, armed

There is also that which they call Taton: this is not very well able to runne, yet (as Hedgewith scales. hogs with vs) creeping through the bryars and bushes, shee is armed with very hard scales 160 that shee cannot be pierced with a sword, if also you wrap the skinne together being taken off (wherewith the Barbarians make very many Chifts, which they call Caramenos) you would lay they were warlike Gauntlets. It is of a white flesh, and of an excellent talte. Moreouer, vnto these beasts, which are most common with the Americans, Crocodiles, called

Moreouer, who there exists within a more continue, the deep reaction which is a more continue, the continue, the continue within a more continue dren play with them without any danger. Those Crocodiles which I happened to see, had a very wide mouth, long legs, with a tayle neither round nor sharpe, but very small atthe end: and whether, as some haue written, they moue the vpper chap, I freely confesse, that I have not Towns, Lizards observed. Moreover, the Americans take Lizards, they call them Towns, not greene, but ruffet, and of a spotted skinne, like our Countrie small Lizards. And although they bee source or five foote long, and proportionable in bignesse, and therefore of a terrible forme, yet notwithstan-

ding like Frogs, they abide in the Rivers, and Marishes, hurtfull vnto none. Furthermore, the skinne being plucked off, if they be bowelled, and fodden, they are very delicate meate, fo that I Lizards in A- haue not taited any thing more fweet in America. For, they are of as white a fielh as Capons are merica, edible. with vs. delicate, tender and fweet, that nothing excelleth them : yet in the beginning I abCHAP.3. S. I. Serpents eaten. The Lizard prodigious but barmlesse. Ian-ouarc. 1327

horred the taffe thereof, but afterward when I had taffed them better, as touching meates, the Lizards were chiefly commended of mee.

near the Townspinambankin have also very great Toads, which they eate being rosted, without Toadeseaten. bowelling. But feeing both Physicians teach, and it is also commonly knownt, and apparent, in daties. that the fielh, and corrupt bloud, and whatfoeuer eliebelongeth to the Toade, is deadly, any one, that the nem, and the content of the temperature, although I hold my peace, may eafily contecture, that by reafon of the temperature of that attnough thought to the caule, whereof I am ignorant, it happeneth, that Toades, there, are

not venomous, and dangerous at all, as they are with vs.

They cate Serpents also, of the bigneffe of a mans arme, fine foote long almost. Moreover, The American They care Serpents and, of the Barbarians (as I mentioned concerning Crocodiles) brought home ry great Set-I naue outernes, that me party-coloured, with blacke and red, and caft them downe among pents. a certaine and children, fo fecure, that they handled them with their hands. These monfrom Land Eeles, they cut into pieces, and dreffe : but they are vnfauoury, and of ve-

Divers kindes of Serpents also are bred with them, and specially in the Rivers, where they appeare greene like pot-herbes; long and slender, whose flinging is very hurtfull. There are alto Lizards in the Woods (belides those which we mentioned before) very dangerous, as it shall manifeftly appeare by the difcourse which I will here set downe. When therefore I sometimes The Authors trauelled to fee the Countrie, with two Frenchmen in my companie, and that, as the manner report of a

20 was, wee had not the Barbarians to guide vs in the way, and therefore wandred in the Woods, pro-isjous was, wee man me to a deepe Valley, hearing the noise of a certaine beast comming towards vs. supposing it to bee some timerous and harmelesse wilde beast, notwithstanding, proceeding on our intended Journey, wee were secure and quiet in minde: but presently, thirtie paces distant our intended souther; sight hand, wee faw a Lizard on an hill; bigger than the body of a man, amoit from vs, on the light thee, being spread all ouer with white and rough scales like Oviterfiells, holding up one of his fore-feet, with his head aloft; and thining eyes shegan to behold vs. wherefore being aftonished (for none of vs ; as it then fell out ; carried a Hand-gunne , but had Wheretore being aminimies, too holds and Arrowes, which weepons food not greatly hurt that Montley armed with tuch hard fealer: Neuertheffic, fraving lefts if wee shifted for our that Montler armed with tuch hard scaler: 30 felues by flight, being swifter then wee, he would dispatch vaaltogether) when the one feare-

fully beheld the other, we stood still in the fame place. But after that prodigious and fearefull Lizard had beheld vs a quarter of an houre, with an open mouth, and because it was exceeding Lizard nad central va a quarter day, almost at noone) feeching a deepe groane, that weemight not weather (101 to the went vito the top of a Mountaine, with fo great noise of the erashing and breaking of twigs and boughs, as a Deere running through a Wood, would scarce haue made. Wee therefore, who then were much affrighted, not being very carefull to purfue him, gaue thankes vnto God who had deliuered vs, and proceeded againe on our intended Journey. And embracing their opinion who affirme, that the Lizard is delighted with the fight of 2 man, it feemed to me, that the beholding of vs pleased that Monster as much as we were togenen-

40 ted through his presence. There is also a wilde beast bred with them, that higher your themrey. which they call law-onare. This beaft bath legs almost as long as an hunting Dog, and mattheth Inches which they can tarnear. In both matter, a through the man they can be made the made they can be made they can be made they can be made they ca greatly feare that wilde heaft. For feeing shee is accustomed to the prey, as also, the Lion, if men. thee catch any of them, the teareth him in pieces, and denometh him. But as they are derirous of revenge, and fuffer not any of those things vareuenged which are troublesome voto them: of revenge, and interest of they make for that cause, or with any other kinde of Traps or Gins, they put her to a lingring death, shooting her through with many Arrowes. that thee might the longer languish: and that it may the better appeare, how early that wilde beaft dealeth with the Barbarians, when sometimes fine or fixe Frenchmen of the companie pas-50 fed by this way, the Americans adusted vs, to beware of the Ian-onare, because that very selfe-

same weeke, thee had cruelly denoured three men in a certaine Village of theirs. I thought good to adde to this Edition , that the Americans , before the Voyage of Villagagno had neuer feene Dogs: and therefore, whien they beheld a Dog of the kinde of Hounds. Dogs firft feen which with certaine whelpes we brought thither, and that he fauned on vs , they were aftoni- by the amerifhed, and fled away from him, because (as I mentioned before) hee came nerre vnto the shape of 62ms. the lan-onare. For that cause also, Gomard in his General Indian Historie, cettifieth, chas in the Canas. vecte 1509. when Christopherus Columbus first arrived at the Hand Beringua, called also by the

name of Saint John, the Indians of this Countrie, who made warre with the Spannards, greatly 60 feared a red Dog, and that he flood them in as good flead almost as two Harquebusters: because he did not onely fiercely affaile the Barbarians, but alto differning his companions from the Enemies, although being prouoked, he was not offensue vinto them, but also taking notice of the Caribas (the worst, and most detestable nation of all those Countries) pursued them, fleeing into the middeft of the Armie of the Enemies, and being to much promoked stooke no reft, vatill

he had torne the Enemie in pieces on whom he leized: fighting to fortunately for the Spaniards that being accompanied with him, they fought fo cheerfully against the Indians, as if they had had three horsemen in their companie. Yet this Dog, while hee swam after I know not what Cariba, being thot with a poisoned Arrow died, and made his Master very forrowfull, and the Indians toyfull and glad. So, Vallouas also, the most valuant Captaine of the Spaniards, when he fift discouered the South Sea, letting flip the Dogs which hee had, against the Indians, who withflood him, from entring on the Land, the Barbarians were ftricken with fo great a feare. that they were compelled to prouide for themselves by flight : and the Dogs of Vallouss, preuailed as much as the best Souldiers of them all. Moreouer, many Monkeyes are found on the Monkeys. Brasilian coast, little and blacke, which they call Cay, which I cease to describe, because they are very well knowne vnto vs. I will onely declare this one thing, that feeing they continually line in the tops of trees, bearing fruits in cods like vnto our Beanes, wherewith they are nourished. and meete together there in companies, especially when the smoaking showres fall, it is a pleafant thing to heare them crying, and making a noise. But feeing at one birth they onely bring forth one young one, the Monkey, as soone as he commeth into the world is indued with that naturall industrie, that he firmely hangeth about the necke of the Syre, or the Damme : therefore if Hunters come fuddenly voon them, the Syre or Dammes leaping through the boughs, he also taketh his flight together with them. For which cause, the Barbarians cannot easily catch Monkeyes of any age whatfoeuer : yet they cast them downe from trees wounded with Ar-

The industrie of the Monkeyes in delinering their young from danger. The mancer of taking Monkeyes.

Sazouin a beautifull little beaft.

ten compelled through paine, to kill them with strokes. There is also another kinde of Monkey among the Americans, which they call Sagonin, of the bigneffe of a Squirrell, and of a red haire; but as touching the shape, in the shout, breast. necke, and almost all the other parts, being very like vnto a Lion, and also hardie, it giveth place in beautie to none of the little beafts, which furely I faw there. And if it were as easily brought ouer the Sea as the reft, it would be of farre greater price and estimation. But seeing it is of so weake a little bodie, that it cannot indure the working of the ship; for it is of that haughtinesse of spirit, that if it be offended neuer so little, it would die through discontentment : yet some 20 are here to be found. But , that I may freely confesse the matter as it is , although I have beene curious, I was not fo diligent in obferring all the liging creatures of America, as I defired, nevertheleffe, that I may once make an end, I will yet describe two kindes, which are monifrous in fhape, as those that art most,

rowes, and afterward having healed them, and made them tame a little while at home, they ex- an

change and barter them for Merchandifes. But at the first , they are so fierce, that they wound

the fingers of them that handle them , with their teeth, fo that being bitten , they are very of-

Hay, a deformed beaft.

The one which the Barbarians call Hay, is of the bigneffe of a Dog, with an hanging bellie. like a farrowing Sow with pigge, of an afh-colour haire very much washed, with a very long tayle, hairy feet after the manner of a Beare, and long clawes: but as, while it lineth in the Woods, it is very fierce; yet being taken, it is very easily tamed. But the naked Tonompinama bankty doe not willingly play with him, because he bath both long, and also sharpe clawes. They fay, it liueth onely on aire.

Coaty, with a monftrons great fagut.

The other, whereof I am also to speake, called by the Barbarians, Coaty, is of the height of an Hare, with short and spotted haire, little and sharpe cares, both of a little head, and also with an eminent from the eyes, more then a footelong, round like a walking-flaffe, juddenly decreasing at the end, so that it is altogether of an equall thicknesse, with so narrow a mouth, that it can scarce receive the little finger. None may be found more monstrous: afterward, when this wilde beait is taken, gathering her foure feet together, thee bendeth her felfe to the one fide or the other, or falleth flat downe : nor can thee euer bee raifed, nor compelled to eate , vnleffe Ants be given her, on which shee also feedeth in the Woods.

Chapette. Oura, birds.

Arginan-ropia,

This Chapter also, wherein I will intreate of Birds, I thought good to beginne with those which are fit for the maintainance of mans life, and by a generall name, are called Oura, by the 50 Tonoupinambaulta: they have great plentie of those Hennes, vnto the which wee gave the name Arginan-outfou, from India, and they call them Arginan-outfou: from that time also fince the Portugals lived a-Indian Hennes, mong the Barbarians, our Countrymen vied to nourish Hennes, called by them, Arginan-miri. Arginau miri, And although (as I have elfe-where mentioned) they efterme the white ones very much, that plucking off the feathers, and dying them red, they might clothe and decke themselves; yet for the most part they abstain from both kinds, as touching the eating of them. Moreover, seeing they perswade themselves, that the Egs, which they call Arginau-ropia, are, as it were, poison, they were not only aftonished, if we supped Egs before them, but also reprouing vs, added moreouer, that it was not cobe fulfered; for, while we prevented the hatching of chickens, we eate an Henne in an egge. Therefore, they are almost as carefull of their Hennes, as of the Birds, which hue in the Woods, they fuffer them to lay wherefoeuer they are disposed. But the Hens in like manner, bring home their chickens out of the briars and bushes, so that the Americane women may be without trouble.

Together with the Hennes, the Barbarians also nourish Indian Duckes at home, they call

CHAP.2. S.I. Brafilian Birds delicate for food, for feathers. Prating Parrat. 1220

them Opec. But because the Tonompinambaulty are so superfittious, that they thinke, if they Poec Indian them Oper. Due occarrie, they should get the same flownesse; so that if the Enemies should Duckes. affaile them, they could not seeke their safetie by flight : no man may easily perswade them to taite the least morfell of them, and for that cause they abstaine from all those creatures which goe flowly, and also from fishes, as Raies or Thornebacke, and others which cannot swimme which live in the woods, they take them as great as Capons, Income a kinde and chose of three forts, which the Barbarians call lacoutin, lacoupen, and lacou-onaffin. They of Pheaiant. haue all blacke and ash-colour Feathers, and come neere vnto the Pheasants in taite, and I may truely affirme, that no fweeter or more delicate meate can euer be eaten, then those

10 Iacous are. Besides, there are two kindes of most exquisite and choice Birds, which are named Monton, Monton a rare of the bignesse of Peacocks, with the same Feathers which the former had, and they are very tel-

Macacona, and Taambon-onaffon, are two kindes of Partridges, of the bigneffe of our Country A kinde of Geele, not much valike the talte of Mutton. These three following have one and the same talte great Paralmost, Inambour-miri of the height of Partridges: Pegaffon Stockedoues, and Paicaca the Tur- tridges.

But that I may briefly finish the discourse of Birds, which are found in great plentie, both in the Wools, Rivers, and also in the shoares, I will come vnto those which are not so fit for foode. an Among the reil, there are two kindes of the same bignesse, which come neere to the greatnesse of a Rauen or Crow : which as the rest of the American Birds, have crooked bils and talons. as alio Parrats, in which number they might be reckoned. As touching the Feathers, as it is eafily in ged, I fearce thought that Birds of fuch excellent beautie were to be found in the whole world. in the beholding where fabundant matter offereth it felfe, not as prophase men, to commend nature, but the creator : and that it may manifeltly appeare, the first which the Barbarians call A. Mat, a Bird ture, but the creator: and that it may maintain appear to the traine and wings, of a foote and a halfe long, partly purple like vnFesthers, to red, and partly of a blew colour, greatly thining, to the which also, the other parts of the body are correspondent. When this Bird moueth in the Sunne, where she very much abideth. no man can euer be farisfied with her fight.

The other called Canide, with the inferiour Feathers, and those that are round about the necke thining of the colour of gold, and those that couer the backe, wings, and traine of an excellent with blew teablew colour, feeing they feeme to be under-laid with embrodered gold, and ouer-laid with a thers. Veluet Mantle aboue it caufeth great admiration to the beholders.

But although thefe Birds be not domesticall, yet they oftner build their nests in the tops of the trees which are in the middle of the Villages, then in the woods, whereby it commeth to Feathers, of palle, that the Barb trians plucke their Feathers three or foure times in the yeare, of the which the which, palle, that the Barbersans plucke their Feathers three of court times in the years, or the which eaps, garments Feathers they make Cappes, Garments, and Bracelets, decke the handles of their clubbes, and &care made. adorne their bodies. I brought many such Feathers with me into France.

Three or foure forts of Parrats are taken there : the greatest and fairest whereof the Barbari- Acquirement exert 40 ans call Atomrous. These have the head intermingled with red, yellow, and violet colours, the andvery faire ends of the wines fearlet or crimfon, the taile, which is very long, yellow, and the rest of the Parrais, body greene; very few fuch are brought vnto vs.

A Woman in a certaine Village, some foure miles distant from our Hand, had brought vo one of this kinde, which as if the had beene indued with reason, conceiued those things which she was commanded. As often as we went that way, we prefently heard the Militelle of that Bird fay, will you give me a Combe, or a Looking-glaffe, and I will prefently command my Par- A wonderfull rat to ling and daunce before you . If happily we granted her requelt, the Parrat prefently hea- ftorie of a Page ring certaine words of her Mittreffe, did not onely dance on the pearch where she fat, but also practed, and whiftled; and laftly, the wonderfully counterfeited the Barbarians going to the wars. To be short, if her Mistresse thought good to bid her sing, the sung, if to daunce, the danced: contrarily, if not rewarding her, with a little sharper speech she had commanded her their Auge, that is be ful, then the prefently held her peace, nor could we make her with any words to move either her tongue, or feete neuer so little: wherefore I leaue it to the Readers to be considered whether if the Romans had had fuch a Parrat they would not highly have efteemed her, who, as Libro. 1894 at Plusy recordeth, sometimes solemnized the death of a Crow with innumerable rites of funeral, by which, at the place of Common Pleas, they were every morning by name faluted, and punished him with death, who killed the tame. The Barbarian woman called this Parrat Cherimbane, that is to fay, her best beloued. And furely the was so deere voto her, that demanding at what price we might buy her, the answered in scoffing manner Mocaouas ou, that is to say, a great braffe 60 piece, and therefore we could not wrett her from her at any price. I found that they made their

Netts in the holes of hollow Trees, Among the rest of the American Birds, the first place shall be given to a certaine Bird named Toucan, a Bird Toucan, whereof we made mention of before. It is of the bignesse of a Pigeon, of a blacke colour of a Pigeon, like a Crow, except the breft, which is of a yellow colour, compaffed from the lower part with

Panta Rind

with a red

ler colour.

breaft.

a ring of red feathers, which being taken away, the Barbarians vie it for ornament of the cheeks and other parts of the body. And it is highly effeemed with them, because they vie it when they intend to daunce. From thence it hath taken the name Toucan-tabourace that is, a Feather to daunce with. Yet not with standing, they have such store of them, that they refuse not to change them for our Merchandizes. The bill of this Bird exceedeth the rest of the body in length. from bill of a where with a Cranes beake is not to be compared, and therefore it is to be accompted the most monthrous bill of the whole world.

There is another of the bigneffe and colour of a Black-bird, except the breft, which is as red as Oxe bloud; this, the Barbarsans take away after the same manner that they did the former. and call the Bird Panou. There is also another of the bignesse of an Owzell, with all the Feathers of a scarlet colour, this

they call Quampian.

But one very little Bird is not to be omitted, of no lefte admiration then smalnesse, which the Bird or a fcar-Barbarians call Conambuch, with white and thining Feathers : it exceedeth not a drone Bee, or Beetle in bignesse, yet maketh wonderfull melodie in singing. Sitting vpon that great Milium which the Barbarians call Anati, or other high plants, she fingeth so loud, that valesse she be feene you would icarfe beleeue that fo loud, and (weete melodie could proceede from that fmall body. She is not inferior to our Nightingale.

The variety of

But because I cannot particularly describe all the American Birds, which differ not a little from ours, not onely in kinde, but also in variety of colour, as rose colour, red, violet, white, also colour, purple, &c. I will at length describe one, which the Barbarians so observe and esteeme, that they will not onely not hurt her, but fuffer them not to escape vnreuenged who doe her any wrong. She is of the bignesse of a Pigeon, and ashcolour, the Townpinambaulti, heare her more often in the night then in the day, with a mournefull voyce, and believe that she is sen from their friends and kindred, vnto them, and also declareth good lucke, and especially, that she incourageth and admonisheth them to behaue themselves valiantly in the warres against their enemies. Besides, they verily thinke that if they rightly observe these divinations, it shall come to passe, that they should vanquish their Enemies, even in this life, and after death, their soules should five beyond the Mountaines, to their ancestors, perpetually to daunce there,

I chanced once to lodge in a Village, named Vpee by the French men, there, in the night I heard those Birds, not finging, but making a lamentable noise. I saw the Barbarians most attentine, and being ignorant of the whole matter, reproued their folly. But, when I finited a little you The dotage of a French man standing by me, a certaine old man seuerely enough restrained me with these The dotage of words: bold your peace, least you hinder vs, who attentially barken to the happy tidings of our auncethe Barbarians
who objectue flours. For, as often as wee beare thefe Birds, so often also are we obserted, and our strongth recei-

the finging of a meth increase.

Yra, Hony.

The Americane Bees differing from ours, are like vnto the leffer blacke flyes wherewith we American Bees. are troubled in the time of Summer, and make their hony combes in the hole of a rotten tree. The Barbarians are skilfull to gather hony and waxe. Being gathered, intermingled, they call it Tra-jetic, for Tra fignifieth hony, and Tetic waxe. The hony being seuered, they eate it after 40 our manner, but keepe the waxe which relembleth the blacknesse of Pitch made into lumps of the bignesse of a mans arme. Yet, not that they make Torches or Candles therewith, for, there is no other vse of a Candle with them, then of a certaine wood which sendeth forth a most cleere and bright flame. But they chiefly vie that Wax to stop those huge canes, wherein they put their Feathers, least they should be eaten, and gnawed with the Butter-flyes, which also we will describe in this place.

Arauers, But-

They are called Arauers by the Barbarians, of the bigneffe of Grashoppers, they also come in great multitudes to the fire as Creekets doe, and if they finde anie thing they eate it, but especiallie they fo gnaw leather doublets and shooes, that they whollie consume the superficies and ypper graine thereof. But, if we negligently fet vp Hennes, or other meates of that kinde, in the morning the bare bones were found without flesh.

The Barbarians being stung with Scorpions applie bruised Scorpions to the wound, if they can get them. Moreouer, as we have eliewhere laid, that they are most desirous of reuenge, nay, I might almost say, that they are made against all hurtfull things, so that if vnawares they flum-The Barberins ble at a stone, they bite them after the manner of mad Dogges, and diligently seeke out all liuing creatures hurtfull vnto them, and vetterly roote them out as much as they can,

The Countrie of America hath alfoland Crabbes, the Townpinambaulty call them Ouffa; they 20e in multitudes like Locusts, vnto the Sea shoare, and fennie places, and if any one goe thither he may fee them flying hither and thither: they conuey themselves into the bodies and rootes of trees, out of the which they cannot fafely be drawne, for they pinch the fingers and hands of 62 such as takethem, with their clawes. They are farre leaner then the Sea Crabs, but because they fmell of the Juniper rootes, they are nothing pleafing to the tafte.

His discourse of America fishes I bane omitted, except this which you shall now beare. I will not omit a storie which I heard reported by a Barbarian. When, faith he, on a certaine day, I was carried in a Boate with certaine others, in a verie calme Sea, a certaine huge fish tooke hold with the hand on the brim of the Boate, and in my judgement, it would either have ouer turned it. or enten vp into it. I feeing that, cut off the hand with a fickle which I had in a readinesse, so concerning a shat it fell into the Boate, and it had fine fingers verie like vnto ours; besides, for paine which fish with hands that fift telt, putting the head aboue water, which was like vnto the head of a man, it fqueaked and countea little, and made a certaine noife.

First, because the Brasil tree is the most famous of all that soile (from whence also that Countrie hath taken the name) especially for the colour which our Dyers make therewith, I will defcribe it in this place. This Tree therefore is called by the Barbarians, Arabontan, and equalleth Of thetrees, to our Oake in height and plentie of Boughes. Some of these are found, the thicknesse whereof bearbs, roots,

containeth full as much as three men can fathome.

After what manner that Timber vieth to be brought into the Shippes, I thought good in this which grow is place to describe. But first you are to understand, that except the Merchants were holpen by the American the Inhabitants, they could scarce lade a Ship with that Timber within a yeare, both for the Soyle, the Innabitance, and therefore the difficultie in cutting, and also chiefely, because that Countrie wan
rebeston, the

Brasil tree, and tech all labouring Beafts, and therefore it is to be carried upon the shoulders of men. The Barbarians being hired for Garments, Shirts, Cappes, Kniues, and other Merchandizes, doe not onely thereof. cut.cleaue, and make round that Timber, but alfolaying it vpon their bare shoulders, carrie it into the Shippes, and sometime in most cumbersome places, lying three or foure miles distant 30 from the wood to the shoare. But I expressely say, that the Barbarians, since the French men and wanteth all Partugals came vnto them, cut their Brail trees, for before that time (28 farre as I vnderftood beafts of burfrom the elder fort) they had no other way of felling them, faue that they ouerthrew them by den. putting fire vnto them. Moreouer, because I know some thinke that the timber which is brought The Barbarians water vs. hath the thicknesse of the trees, I purposely added, that the Barbarians made it round,

that they might the more easily carrie the fame. Furthermore, it hath bin observed by me, for so long time as I lived in America, and vied a The ancient cleare fire through the benefit of this wood, that this kinde of wood was nothing moift, which manner of felvitally happeneth to most of the other kindes of wood: nay, that it was dry as it were by namong the Bemong the Beture, and beeing kindled, yeeldeth very little smoake. One of our men defired to wash our besient. 30 fhirts, and vnawares, put the after of the Brafil wood into the lye, whereby they were fo furely The Brafil died with a red colour, that although they were washed, they neuer changed the same, and be- wood, almost

ing fo died with that colour, we were to put them on.

50 or his next kindred.

Because out Tomonpinambantty doe not meanely wonder, when they see French men. and other strangers comming farre off from remote Countries, take so much paines to carrie backe their dye fines of a Shippes laden with their Arabouran, that is to fay the Brafil or red wood : Therefore a certaine red colour. elderly man of the Barbarians, sometimes questioned me in this manner, concerning that matter: What meanethit, that you Mair and Peros (that is French men and Portugals) come fo farre to fetch Wood? dotb your Countrie yeelde you no wood for the fire? Then taid I, it yeeldeth fuell furely, and that raine Barberiin great plentie, but not of that kinde of trees, (such as yours are; especially Brafil, which our men carrie an with the 40 from bence, not to burne, as you suppose, but for to dye. Here he presently excepting; But bane you, Author, faid he, neede of so great plentic of that wood? Yea surely, said I, for seeing even one Merchant with vis possible to more Scarlet Clousber, more Kniver and Sisser, and more Looking-glasses (alledging knowne and familiar examples unto him) then all these which were ever brought hither unto you: he onely will bur all the Brasil, to the end that many Shipper might returne laden from hence. Ab (faith the Barbarian) you sellme strange and wonderfull things. Then presently remembring what he had heard, he proceeded to demand further questions of me. But, faith he, that great rich man, of whom you make report, doth be not die? He dieth, faid I, as also other men doe. There, then (as these Barbarians loue to comment, and doe not abfurdly finish their intended speech without interruption even unto the end) he began to demand of me : Who therefore, (aith he, is here of those goods which this man leaneth when be dieth ? His children, faid I, if he bane any : if he bane none, bis brethren, fifters,

When I had faid this, furely (faith that my discrecte old fellow) hereby I easily perceine, that you Mair (that is French men) are notable fooles. For, what neede you fo greatly to tire and turmoile your selues in failing over the Sea, in passing whereof (as being here arrived you report to vs) you suflaine so many miseries? Is st, for south, that you might get riches for your children, or lining kinsfolke? sentence deli. Is not the Earth, which bath nowished vs. sufficient also to maintaine them? we surely have both shil- ueted by aberdren, and also kinsfolke, and them, as you fee, we love dearely; but feeing we confidently bope, that it shall barian. come to paffe, that after our death, the same Earth which nourified vs, shall also reliene and cherish them, therein we repose our selme; and rest content.

60 But that I may present the description of the American Trees, foure or fine kindes of Palme trees are found there : among which, that is accounted most common, which they call Geran, Foure or fire and another also named Tri: notwithstanding, as I saw none of their fruites, so, as I thinke, I kindes of the eate none. Tri bringeth forth a round fruite like Damsens in the shape of a large cluster of so SIIII

ance refere bling the fhape of a man Chap.13.

and moff ex-

and corre is in-

great

A tendrell of yong branch in the op of the Palmes to be eaten.

great weight, that it may hardly be lifted up with one hand, but the kernell onely is of the gnesse of a Cherrie, and may be eaten. Belides, in the top of these Palmes, there is a certaine white yong tendrell or branch, which we cut off, to eate the fame : Philippus who was troubled with the hamron es, affirmed, that it was a remedy for that difeale, the warrantable truth where of I leave to the Philitians.

There is also another tree, called by the Barbarians Airi, which although it be very like the Agri, athorny Palme in leaves, with the stocke armed on every side with thornes and pricks, resembling the points of needles. The Fruite is of an indifferent bigneffe, in the middeft whereof there is a kernell of the whitenesse of Snow, which yet is not to be eaten; and this I suppose to be a kinde of Ebeny: for befides that it is of a blacke colour, and of such hardnesse, that the Barbarians partly wie it for the making of their clubs and arrowes (which I will more at large describe when I shall treate of their wars) it is also smoothed, and made very bright, and lastly, is so heavie, that being cast into the water, it presently finketh to the bottome.

most stinking

They have divers coloured woods, and divers of differing fcent; one fmelling like a rofe; another called Aon ai, of the most stinking smell of Garlicke, which no man is able to indure, while it is hewed or burnt : it hath leaves not much valike the leaves of our Apple trees : but the fruite thereof (which commeth neere in shape to the rough shell of a Chesout) and especially the kernell, is fo venemous, that to him that eateth it, it relembleth the effect of the most firong and deadle poison. Norwithstanding our Barbarians highly esteeme that fruite, because they make their Rattles of it. Here alto it is to be confidered, that Brafilia (as we shall hereafter speake) bea-Very many 4- ring excellent apples of very many kindes, aboundeth allo with trees, which furely yeelde vemerican trees ry goodly fruites, yet vnprofitable to be eaten. E pecially on the shoare there are many imall shrubbes, the apples whereof being very like vnto our Country Medlers, are dangerously eaten. Therefore, when the Barbarians fee the French men, and other ftrangers comming to gather those apples, often vsing the word Tpochi, in their Country language, they admonish them to abstaine from them.

beare poilonous fluits,

The tree called by the Barbarians Chorne, is of an indifferent height, with leaves of the shape The tree cher- and greenenesse of a Bay leafe, with Apples of the bignesse of a children head, comming neere vnto the shape of the Estridges egges, which surely are no meate. Or these the Tourspinambaulin, by reason of the hardnesse of the shell, piersing some of them through whole, in leng th and breauth barians make wherewith they make their Maraca or Rattles; they also nollow and divide them into halves. for cups and other imall veffels.

Sabaucase is also numbred among the Brasilian trees, having an apple bigger then both a mans

filts and imitating the forme of a cup : in the bottome whereof certaine small kernels are found,

their Ma aca. Sahaurajawhole fruite is properly vied for hike vnto Almonds, and almost they resemble the very taste of Almonds, the making of Moreover there is a tree in these Countries of the highest formation of the making of

Moreover, there is a tree in those Countries, of the height of our Service tree, whose apple the Barbarians name Acaiou, of the bignesse and shape of an Hens egge, which when it is ripe, incli-This is a kinde ning to the colour of Gold, like vnto a Quince, is not onely profitably eaten, but also yeeldeth

of Ceco. to be caten. tender fhrub.

Pace, a long

Majou, a fruite formewhat a tart juice, not unpleasing to the taile, which most comfortably cooleth those that are inflamed with heate. Paco-aire, is a shrub, of ten or twelue foote high, with a stocke. sometimes of the thicknesse of a mans thigh, which not with standing is so tender, that it may be cut downe at one stroake with a Sword : the Barbarians call the apple Paco, of the length of a mans hand, not vulike a Cucumber in shape, and of the same colour also, when it commeth to ripenesse. But these apples grow, for the most part, twentie or fine and twenty thicke together, on enery bough, which the Americans gathering, carry them into their cottages, of fo great a waight as they are able to beare with one hand. And as touching the goodnesse of this apple, when it is ripe, the knop being plucked of after the manner of a tresh gathered Figge, it feemeth clottie and full of clu-Paco, a Figge fters: whereby it commeth to paffe, that to them that eate it, it refembleth the Figge, whereupon, we called it a Figge: but in tafte it excelleth the most delicate Massiltensian Figges; and 50 therefore not vnworthily it may be reckoned among the best fruites of all that coall. The forme The leaves of of the leaves of Paca-aire, is not volike the leaves of water-Sorrell, but they are of so great a big-Pace-aire, are nefle, that commonly the length is extended to fix feete, and the breadth about two: whereby bignesse. The it commeth to passe, that I cannot be perswaded by any meanes to believe that in Europe, Asia, Author faith it and Africa, there are leaves of fo great length and breadth. For, although I neard a certaine Apois like the Musa the cary affirming, that he had seene a lease of Petasitis of the breadth of an Elle and a quarter, Perafirstance that is (for this Plant is round) whose circumference contained in compasse three Elles tound leate. and three quarters: yet this largenesse came nothing neere to the greatnesse of our Paco-aire. It is true furely that the thickneffe of those leaves answere not the length, nay, they are very slender, vet daily lifted up, to that the middle ribbe onely beareth the violence of the most vehe- 62 ment winde, wherewith that Country is very often troubled; but the relt is fo lagged and cut a funder, that to him that beholdeth them a farre off, thele thrubs are supposed to be decked with E.t. 1 gesteathers.

CHAP. 2. S.2. Brafilian Cotton-trees. The American irreconcitiable wars.

As touching the Bombain Cotton furubs, which grow up to arrandifferent heighth, they are found in great number, in Brafill: they yeeld flowres, like the little yellow hels or buddes of Cucumbers but when the Apple is formed, it commeth not only verie neer vato the Mait of Beech. but also being ripe, divideth it felfe into foure parts, which yeeld Bombain Cotton in flockes of the bignesse of a ball, which the Barbarians call Amoni-ion. In the midst of those stockes cerraine blacke graines are found, close joined and verie much pressed rogether, after the forme of a Cotton. mans Kienie, the greatneffe of which compacture exceedeth not a Beine. Moreover, the Barbarian women are not vnskilfull in gathering and spinning that Bombasis Cotton , for of it they make their beds.

Reeds often grow in the Woods, of the bigneffe of a mans legge : but as I'lid before of Pacisaire, they are io tender, that while they are yet flanding, any one of them may bee cut downer with one ftreake of a Sword, yet being drie, they are of such hardneffe that when they are cleft, Reeds, where and fashioned after the manner of the Surgeons Lances, the Barbarians to head their Arrowes with the Barba therewith, that they ouerthrow wilde beafts flat to the ground at one shoot.

Masticke also groweth in this our America among the briers and bulkes, which together, almost, with infinite other odoriferous herbes and flowres, perfameth the earth with a most sweet and pleafant fcent. The Trees are never spoiled of their leaves, being not troubled at all with the cold, they flourish all the whole Yeare, as the Woods vie to doe with vs in the moneth

The plant which bringeth forth the fruit Ananas, is like in forme vnto the Flowre-deluce, rica. with crooked bending leaves, divided round about, comming neere vnto Alee, of the same forme with the greater Thirtle, but the Apple which is of the bignesse of an indifferent Melon, and of leanes thereof. the thape of a Pine Apple, bending to no part, groweth after the manner of our Artichoke.

Thole Anana when they are come to full ripeneffe, are of a golden colour imitating blue, and Anana the verldeth the fmell of the fruit of the Idean Bramble, so that by the smell they were easily found most excellent of vs, wandring in the Woods and other places where they grow: they are of fo fweet and plea- fruit of all dfant a tafte, that none of our preserved fruits excell them. Therefore I thinke it to bee the best fruit of all America. I sometimes wrung one of them, out of the which I drew a Cruze of fuice, which vnto me, seemed nothing inferiour vnto the Wine which they call Malmesey,

Laffly, as I have faid, that among the Americans, no foure-footed beafts, birds, fiftes, nor any living creatures, in all things refemble ours of Europe: fo I now affirme, as much as I could finde cent three) by experience wandring through the Woods and Fields, that there are no Trees, or Herbes, and differ from laftly no fruits, which are not valike to ours, except these three Plants, Purssane, Basil Royall, and ours Fearne, which grow in certaine places.

The Bombafiri

riant head

fhing in Ame-The Plant A.

All the trees of America (ex-

ð. I I.

Of the Warre, Battailes, Fortitude, and Weapons of the Barbarians: and of their Religion.

Lthough our Tononpinambaulty Tonpinenquin make immortall warre against divers bordering Nations, after the manner of all the reft of the Barbarians. Notwithstanding, chap. 14. they contend not by warre to inlarge their bounds (for they possesse more Lands then For what can't

they need) or thinke of the getting of Riches, by the spoiles, ransomes, and armes of the Americans the conquered. For as they all confesse, they are prouoked through no other affection then that they might most senerely avenge the death of their Parents and Friends long since taken, and denoured by the enemie. Moreover, when war is first proclaimed betweene certaine of thele 50 people, all of them agreeing in this, that the enemie vnto whom injurie is done, will perpetually thinke on the revenging of the same, and therefore that it is to be attributed to cowardite, if being brought into their power, they fuffer him to escape vnpunished : their enmities are fo inue- The Babeien

terate, and of such continuance, that they can never be reconciled each to other. But the manner whereby our Tonoupmambaulty affemble, being readie to goe to the warres, their enemies, is this, as much as I could observe. Although they have no Kings or Princes among them, but are almost equall in dignitie, yet this is given them by nature (which allo was most exactly in former times observed by the Lacedemonians) that they admire and reverence the elder fort whom Senatus. they call Peorera Picheb, for their experience of things: therefore in everie Village no contempti- The Americans ble service and obedience is performed vinto them. These occasions being offered, either walking yeeld obedi-

60 or fitting in their Cotton hanging beds, exhort the rest with these, or the like words. What (lay they speaking by turne, without interruption of speech) were our Ancestors who The Oration not only fought against so many enemies, but also vanquished, sue and denoured them, an Exame of the elder ple unto us, that wee should perpetually lye lurking heere at home? Shall wee suffer our Mation, Americans,

cannot be re-

CHAP. 3. S. 2. Toupinenquins Armies by Sea and Land France fights, felines without Tribunes, and Quarter-maiters, fo thatat the found of the Trumpet they verie

foeedily affemble in battell array. But chese are fome, who with hornes, which they call Inabia, of the length of an elle and

an halfe, and of the thicknesse of our Country Speare, of the bredth of an hand at the lower without conan name, and the a Trumpet, saile the Souldiers, both going out of their Countrie, and when the tulen. end like a range of the line also carrie Whitties made of the bone; of their enemies, daine and limbia, buge Campe removed.

Campe removed in former time, wherewith they continually pine by the way, that they might fittee Whitlies of vo the mindes of their companions, and increase their defire to kill the enemies in like manner. mens bones But if, which often happeneth, they please to undertake a Voyage, against the Enemie, by

to Boat, they passe along the fluores, and commit not themselves votor be maine Sea. They order themselves in their Boats, which they call Teat, energy one whereof conflitted of the barke of Test, a Boat of one tree, taken off, and appointed to this vie; yet are they of fuch largeruffe, that every one of them may receive fiftie mes. Standing therefore after their manney, they drive the Boat forward with an Oare, plaine on both fides, which they hold in the middle, Moreover, these Boats feing they are plaine, are rossed with very little trouble; yet is there no vie of them, in the maine Sea, or it a tempest arife. But, our Barbariant, gaing a warfare, in a great calme, you may fee a Fleet confitting of fexcie fuch Boats. And thele paffe the Seas with lo fwift a motion, that they are pretently gone out of tigits. So, these are the Armies of the Toppinenquin, both by Sea,

and Land. Being furnished after this manner, they fometimes goe fittie miles into the Enemies borders. And first they vie this stratagem. All the most valiant, leave the rest with the women and car- The first stratagem. risees, one or two dayes fourney behind them: they approach with great filence, and poffeffe gem of the the Woods, lying in waite to entrappe the Enemie, for whom they fo diligently watch, that oftentimes they lie hid there, for foure and twentie hourgs. And if they fet vpon the Enemie vnawares, as many men, women and children as they meete with, are not onely brought away. but also flaine by the Enemies returning into their Countrey, and put vpon Boucan in pieces. and at length denoured. And they furprize them to much the more eafily, because the Villages (for they have no Cities) are not compated with walls, and the Cottages (which yet are fourtfcore or an hundred paces long) haue no Doores, but in their flead, they fet the boughs of 20 Palmes, or the stalke of the herbe Panda at their Gates. Yet they have now learned to fortifie and intrench certaine Villages round about, which border vpon the Enemies, with postes of Palmes, of fixe foot long, belides they strengthen the entrances with woodden stakes tharpe at the end : if therefore the Enemies will affaile those Villages by night, which is common with

But, if they delire to fight in open warre, bringing forth their forces on both fides, it is fearce credible, how cruelland horrible the battell is: whereof my felre was a beholder, and therefore can justly make report thereof. I, with another Frenchman, somewhat more curiously, to an our great danger, determined to accompanie our Barbarians going to the warres : for if we had beene taken, or hurt by the Margaiates, wee had certainely beene demoured. These being foure thousand men in number, fought with the Enemie neere vnto the shoare, with such fierceneffe. that they would have overcome even the most furious and outragious.

the name of their wounded feete, who are prefently softed and eaten by the Inhabitants.

The Tonoupinambaniti, as foone as they faw the Enemie, brake out into fo great and loude howling and exclamation, as they who here hunt Wolues, make no out-ones comparable with The howling those: for the clamour to pierced the aire, that thunder then could scarse have beene heard, and exclama-But, comming neerer, they doubled their cries, and blew their Hornes, and laftly, winfilled with tion of the But comming neerer, they doubled their cries, and blew their Hornes, and laftly, winfilled with Buthericas their Pipes, the one threatned the other, and in a brauery shewed the bones of their dead Enemies: and also the teeth, whereof some wore them hanging about their neckes, strung vpon a the bestell threed about two elles long: and laftly, they terrified the beholders with their geffure. But, The fit wing 50 when they came to joyne battell, matters fell out farre worfe : for, a multitude of Arrowes was of the bones

shot on both sides, like swarming Flyes in number. Such as were wounded, who were not sew. floutly plucked the Arrowes out of their bodies, which they bit like madde Dogs, and yet abstayned not therefore from the battell. For this Nation is so fierce and cruell, that io long as they The Barbarians have any little strength, they fight continually, and never betake themselves to flight : we withdrawing our felues a little from the conflict, were contented with that spectacle. In the meane space, I protest, who have divers times here seene mightie Armies both of horse and foot ordered in battell array, that I was never fo much delighted in feeing the Legions or footmen in their glittering Armour, as in beholding these Touonpinambaulty, while they were fighting. For be-60 fides that they were pleafantly feene whiftling, leaping, and very speedily and nimbly gathe-

ring themselves round in a ring : a very thicke cloude of Arrowes was moreover added; the fea- The bodies & there whereof being rote-colour, blue, red, greene, and of other fuch like colours, gaue a radiane the Barbarism Infire in the Sunne; their garments also, Caps, Bracelets, and other ornaments of feathers, decked with which made a wonderfull glittering showe in the eyes of the beholders.

The Barbarians

them, then, the Inhabitants of the Village iffue faftly forth vipon them; whereby it commeth to paffe, that whether they fight, or thee, they never escape, but fome are overthrowne through

which in former times was so great a terrour to all the rest, that they could not in any fort indure their fight, to be fo much reproached to eur great diffrace, that our enemies should affaile us by Warre enemin our owne boules? Shall we through our comardize cause, that the Margaites, and Peros ergains (that is , thefe wicked Nations) affault us first? Then that Orator clapping his thoulders and buttocks with his hands, addeth thele words with exclamation : Erima, Erima, Tonompinambanks, Co. nomion : fon Tan, Tan, &c. that is to lay, My Countrimen, and most valiant young men, wee are not fo to doe : but rather let vs prepare vs for the fight, and bequeathe our felues to death and flaughter, or avenge our people.

With these Orations therefore of the ellers, which sometimes are prolonged for fix hourses the hearers who most attentively hearken, so that they forget not so much as one syllable, being 10 increased both in strength and courage, Ipraking each to other in everie Village, affemble as speedily as they may at the prefixed place in great multitules. But before wee bring our Tonompinambankin to the Battaile, were are to declare with what Weapons they are

Tacare a kinde

And first furely, they have Tacapes, that is, Clubs, or Swords made some of redde, and some of blacke wood : they are commonly of the length of fine or fixe feete, round at the ends, or of an ouall shape, of the breadth of a foote, and of the thicknesse of a Thumbe in the middeft, but the edges are verie finely sharpened, for they are made of verie heavie wood. fuch as Boxe is, and are little inferiour to the edge of a verie sharpe Axe: so that I casily beleeve, that one Tononpinambanlian armed with fuch a Clubbe, and inraged with 20 furie. would beeable to put two of our Countrie Fencers to much trouble, and drive them to their fbifts. Orabat. 2 Bow. Moreover, they have Bowes, which they call Orapats, made of the fame kinde of wood

to wit, redde and blacke; and they exceed ours fo much in length and thickneffe, that none of our men is able either to bend or vinbend them : infomuch as they are of necessitie to vie all their thrength for the bending of the Bowes of Children of tenne yeeres old. They vie the The herbe To- herbe called Tocon, for ftrings, which although it bee verie flender, yet is it of fo great a cau, fruing in Arength, that it may indure the force of an Horfe. Their Arrowes are of the length of an fleed of Bow Eil, made with three joynts; the middle part confliting of a Cane or Reede, and the other two fittings.
The length of of blacke wood: and those pieces are so aprly bound together with certaine banks of Trees, to their Arrows. that they could not bee more firmely glued. They apply two little feathers visto them, of the length of a foote, which they binde together with a Cotton Thread, because Glue is not in vie with them : they aptly iowne very tharpe bones to the ends, tometimes a piece of a drie Reed, of the length of a mans hand out fmooth after the manner of a Surgeons Launce; and fomt mesthe verie end of the taile of the fish Raye, which as I have elsewhere faid, is verie venemous. But. fince the Frenchmen and the Portugals came into those Countreyes, the Barbarians, after their manner have accustomed to threngthen their Arrowes with Iron heads, or at the least, with verie sharpe Nailes.

We have alreadie spoken what their dexteritie is, in handling their Clubs: but as touching the Bowes, I hope that all they who have feene the Barbarians, will confirme that with their 40 naked armes, they shoot so speedily, and so certainly, that (bee it spoken by the Englishmens leave, who are yet accounted the most skilfull Archers) putting their Arrowes in the hand wherewith they hold their Bow, twelue may fooner bee fhot by them, then fixe by the

moft skil:ull Targets of

The American

Lattly, they have Targets of the Hide of Tapirouffon, which I mentioned before, broad, plaine, and round, like to the bottome of a Germane D umme, with these they couer not themselves in fight, after the manner that our Souldiers vie, but fighting, receive the Arrowes of the Enemi: s with them. So these are all the Weapons of the Americans: for they couer not their bodies with other Armour : but contrarily (excepting their Caps of Feathers, Bracelets, and other fhort attire, wherewith as aforefaid, they decke their bodie, if they work but a en fhirt, being about to goe vnto the battaile, they would prefently put it off, fearing least they might be intangled and incumbred there with.

Iron Swords.

If they received Iron Swordes from vs, as I gave one to a certaine Monfacat of mine, they prefently cast away the sheathes: they did the like also receiving Knives, delighting in the brightnesse of them, and thought them more serviceable for the cutting of the boughes of Trees, then for fight.

Eight or tenne thousand people being gathered together after the manner which hath beene spoken, with no small number of women, not to fight, but to carrie their bagge and baggage, and prouision of victuall, allembling vnto the Campe, they of the elder fort, who have The elder Bor. flaine and denoured the greatest number of enemiess, have the chiefe command and conducting 62 berians, Cap- of the forces : who being their Leaders, they prepare themselues for the journie. And although they goe without order, yet when they march trooping, the most valiant men keeping the Front of the Armie, it is a wonder how well all that whole multitude conney them-

This battell being ended in the space of three houres, and many slaine and wounded on both fides, our Tonoupmambaulty carried away the victorie, and brought about thirtie captines more or leffe, both men and women, to their people. And wee, who performed no other feruice, but encouraged the Barbarians with our drawne fwords, and small thot, sometimes discharging them, as we beheld them fighting (in that it was most acceptable voto them if strangers went with them to the warres) procured fo great an opinion of vs, that from that time the elder fort embraced vs with a fpeciall good-will and loue.

The captines are bound.

The Captines therefore being placed in the middeft of the Armie, and fome of the stronger bound with ropes, we went with the Bay of Ganabara, from which we were diffant about foure and twenty miles. A few dayes after, certaine Barbarians, who had captines with them, came voto our Caftle, whom by Interpreters, we intreated that they would fell certaine flaues to Vil. lagagno. So, a great part of the captines was delinered from the lawes of the Barbarians: ver hardly, and against the will of the Barbarians; which not long after was plainly declared vnto mee. I bought a certaine woman with her little childe fearce two yeeres old, the price wascertaine merchandise, the value whereof amounted to three French pounds. But hee that fold them, complained thus vnto mee: What will be hereafter I know not, but fince Parcolas (for To they named Villagagno) arrived here, wee have fcarce eaten the halte part of our captives, I greatly defired to keepe that little childe vnto my felfe, but Usliagague, reftoring my merchan-difes, challenged both the mother and the fonne. I sometimes faid, vnto the mother, that when I passed over Sea, I would transport the little childe hither. But shee (the desire of taking reuenge is to inherent in the mindes of that Nation) answered that shee had rather that he should be denoured by the Tononpinambanki, then to be carried into fo remote Countries : for fhee ho-Author: De-cause we have ped, that growing older, he might by some meanes escape, and convey himselfe vnto his Counglutted you al. trymen, and reuenge the death of his kindred.

Their feafting with mans here emitted. thous b fully ready, &c.

Chap. 16. Of their Reli-Cicero 1. de Le-The Tougusinambaultÿ ate ignorant of the true God, and acknowledge no falfe gods, nor the barians thinke of the Scrip-

Bill and won-P(41.29.

A Lthough that faying of Cicero, be held for a most certaine Axiome by the common account of all men, that there is no Nation fo fanage, nor fo fierce, that doth not know that they are to bane a God, alshongh they be ignorant what manner of God they ought to have : yet, how this may appeare to be true in our Tonouginambanltis, I doe not fufficiently knowe. For, they are ignorant of the true God, and neither acknowledge nor worship any falle Gods, either celestiall or ter- 20 restriall: and therefore have no publike place where they may affemble for the cause of Religion. They are ignorant also of the creation of the World distinguish not dayes by names. nor preferre one before another: they observe not weekes, moneths and yeeres, but measure times by the Moones. They are not onely altogether ignorant of Scripture, whether it be facred or profane, but also veterly without Characters, wherewith they might bee able to write the creation of the meaning of the minde. When I first came into those Countries, I writ certaine words and fentences, to acquaint my felte with their Speech, and read them prefently before them. They thinking it to be a juggling tricke, fpake one to another in thele words: Is it not a wonder, that this man, who yesterday, knew not so much as one word of our Language, (by the meanes and helpe of this Paper which teacheth him to ipeake our words) should now so skilfully pronounce 40 them, that they may be understood of vs ?

As often as we talked with them, and happened to make mention of God, we faid, that we beleeved in one God, Creator of Heaven and Earth, who as he hath made the World, and what-The Barbariam focuer things are therein, fo he gouerneth all things at his pleasure. When they heard this, loobearing of the king one vpon another, and breaking out into this word Teb, which is a familiar token of adtrue God, con- miration with them, they flood full, fixed, and aftonished : Moreouer, because, as wee shall fpeake in his proper place, they are vehemently terrified with the noise of Thunder (which they call Toupan) if bearing with their rudenesse, wee tooke occasion thereby to instruct them, and faid, that that was the God whereof we spake vnto them, who that he might declare his power, shooke Heauen and Earth after that manner : they answered, that that God by whom they were 50 fo terrified, was a naughty one. I doe not beleeve that there is any Nation in the whole World. which may be more eftranged from all Religion. Yet, that I may also declare how little apparance of light I perceived, among those thicke mysts of darknesse wherewith they are blinded: Laffirme, that they doe not onely beleeue the immortalitie of the foules : but are also certainly perswaded, that after death their soules who have embraced vertue (but they define vertue after their manner, to wit, to auenge them of their Enemies, and to eate very many) flying beyond the highest Mountaines, are gathered to the soules of their Fathers and Grand-fathers, and there, in most pleasant Gardens, leade a toyfull life in perpetuall delights, and dansing: (this is that long peregrination of Socrates, and the Poets Elysian fields) but contrarily the foules of the fearefull cowards, who lued ingloriously, without any care of defending their Countrie, are 60 violently carried away by Aygnan (for so they call the Deuill) and line in perpetuall torment

These most miserable Barbarians are wofully even in this life tormented by the Deuill (whom by another name they call Kangerre) : For, I have sometimes seene them, even while they were talking with vs, immediatly crying out like frantike men, Hei, bei, helpe vs, for Agenan beatalking with vs, immediativ crying out the training method of them fometimes in the flape Again an evill teth vs. Nay, they affirmed, that the wicked spirit was seene of them sometimes in the spirit vexels of a cruell Beaft, sometimes of a Bird, and sometimes also in some monstrous forme. And the Sauages, or a cruen searly wondred that wee were not vexed by the Deuill: therefore, wee telling them that we were delinered from those torments by that God, whereof wee often make who them, who was tatre aboue Aygnas, and hindered him from procuring vs any trouble. It vnto them, who was talt danger enforcing them, they promifed to belieue in God, but being de- Mafter Kniuee linered, they were vinmindfull of the promile. But, that it may enidently appeare, that the tor- which lined ments wherwith they are vexed, are no pastimes, I my selfe haue somtimes seen them so stricken lang with the

CHAP.3.S.2. Americans the Deuils captines, their Priests, affemblies, &c.

ments where they are vectors as a second ment were that the strength of the ment and quaking feare, remembring that milerie, that tweating through anguish, told mentage and clapping their thighes with their hands, they complained vnto vs with these words. Man he knewone Atonraffap , Acequeicy Aignan Atompane : that is , My foole, my companion , I feare the Deuill of their Ca. about all other euils. But contratiwife, if any of vs spake vnto him in these words, Naseque - raibes or Distier Agenan, I feare not the Deuill: then, bewailing their condition, they faid; Ah, how happie ners converte ier Agenam, I feare not the Dentil! then, bewalting their condition, they and it in the horse with this Spie were we, if thereby we might be fecured from him: whereupon we answered, that theretore with in cormenthey were to beleeue in him who is mightier then Azenan. But although, as hath beene faid, in ting one of his the prefent danger they promifed that they would doe it; yet they prefently returned to their fellowes; and

owne disposition of nature.

Therefore, although our Americans confesse not God with the mouth, seeing among them- he is dealt Therefore, although our 22 merican confidence of with the mount, seeing among their with them, that they are continued that there is some distinct power; therby I gather, that they shall neither they would all he excusable nor justly take occasion to pretend Ignorance. But belides those things which have goe to the beene spoken by mee concerning the immortalitie of the Soule, which they believe sof the white men. &c. Thunder, whereof they are horribly affraid; and Deuils, by whom they are tormented: (which whereupon three things are first of all to be noted) I will moreouer adde a fourth principall matter. That the man recothey have Prophets or certaine Priefts among them, which they call Caraibes, who going from many other Village to Village, periwade those miterable men, that they (because they have familiaritie had died. And with Spirits) give not onely fortitude and courage to whom foeuer they please, whereby they this shewes might ouercome their enemies in warre, but also that through their helpe, all fruits, and those that which might ouercome their enterior in wants but and the American folle produceth, Moreouer, (as farre as the voluentalist 20 I underflood by the Neuftrian Interpreters, who had lived many yeeres in those Countries) the tie of religion, Tououningsubaultians have this custome, that every third or fourth yeere they affemble together, how or use At which affemblie, as shall immediatly be declared, I was present vnawares : concerning which these wantso-I am to report that which followeth. I, with a certaine Frenchman named lacobus Ruffus, and lemne formes also a certaine Neuftrian Interpreter, travelling farre from home, turned in to a certaine Village of it. Deos feits also a certaine Village of it. Deos feits to lodge; the next day after, wee prepared our felues early in the morning for our lourney, at which will not which time we faw the Borderers come flocking thither from all places. So, the Inhabitants of Deum veteri that Village loyned themselves with them that came, and presently wee saw sixe hundred ga- tanquam carenthered together in a cerraine voide plat of ground. We demand the cause of that meeting, and tem, timebunt faw that multitude divided into three parts. All the men went into a certaine Cottage, the vi hosen Varia, 40 women into another, and the children also went into the third. I, who had feene certaine Ca-much liker the raibes intermingled with the men, suspecting that some vnaccustomed and strange thing should Denill which be done by them, earneftly entreated my companions, that they would fraud itill there with worthips:.or me to observe the whole matter : which I obtavned of them. The Carabes, before they depar- God yet beleeted from the women and children, with great care forbid the women to goe out of their Cot-bleth, lam. a. tages, but diligently to attend to the finging, and also charged we to keepe our selues close in Caraibes false that Cottage where the women were: Being earnestly busied about our break-fast, and igno- Prophets. gant of those things which they purposed to doe, we heard a certaine lowe and soft muttering Arclation of noise breaking out of the house into the which the men had seuered themselves (for that Cottage a great solement) was almost thirtie paces distant from ours) the women which were about two hundred in number, standing, and giving care, gather themselves as it were on an heape. But the men lifting vp their voices by little and little, to that their distinct words were heard of vsexhorting, and likewife repeating this Interiection,

we heard the women presently, with a trembling voice singing the same Interiection againe, be, be, be, &c. And they litted up their voices with fo great vehemency of minde, and that for 60 the space of one whole quarter of an houre, that they drew vs who were the beholders into admiration. And furely, they did not onely horribly howle, but also leaped forth with great vio. The howling, lence, and shaked their paps, and formed at the mouth, nay some of them (not valike vnto those that are troubled with the Falling-licknesse) fell downe dead. So that I thinke , that the Deuill Amoit as woentred into their bodies, and they fuddenly became possessed with the Deugli. Moreover, having men,

Lib.3.cap.3.

Lib.2.650.3. 0 110.3.640.1.

plainly perceived those things which Bod new writeth, in the Booke which he called Demone. mansa, concerning the extatie of Witches, which hee affirmeth to bee common to all Witches. who have made an expresse covenant with the Devill, and who are often violently carried away in foirit, the bodie remayning voide of all fenfe, although also they are fometimes carried away both in bodie and minde. Adde (faith he) that they never meete together in any place, but they danie, among which, as farre as he could gather by the confession of certaine Witches, they all crie cut together. Har, bar, (which very well agreeth with He, be, of our Americans) the Dewill crieth, Danse buber, danse bither : and others answere , Sabbath , Sabbath , that is, A festivall day, or day of rest; lifting vp their hands, and the crops of herbes or trees which they have in

Deut.12.6.7.

The Americane women a e led with the fame ipirit, where. tric Watches

Loncefaw Treinian dance, with fuch exit the Deuill

the American Gottages.

round circle.

The Caraines confectating Maraca,

Pelum by the thought to diffing fent, &cc. I thinke it the

their hands, that they may shew a most assured token of ioy, and signific that they serve the De- 10 with all their heart : and fo, that they imitate the adoration due vnto God. For, in the Law of God, it was preicribed to the Ifraelites, that they should lift up their hands voto the Lord, and shew themselves cheerefull before him. These things, I say, being certainly knowne, I gather, that Satan is Lord of them both : and that they are led by the same spirit, so that the diffance of places hindereth not, but that the Father of lyes may worke here and there you them who through the just judgement of God are delivered vinto him. Likewise, when I heard with our count the children crying altogether (although I had now line, halfe a yeere with the Barbarrans, and was almost acquainted with their manners) yet, not to diffemble, I was then somewhat afraid. especially, seeing I knew not what should be the end of that matter. At length those cries were I once faw Tomocome a Vir- ended, the men being for ewhat filent, the children and women also altogether holding their 20 peace, prefently the men began to fing to fweetly, and with fogreat harmonie, that I was wonderfully defirous to fee them. But when I would have gone out of the Cottage, I was both kept ta icall viages backe by the women, and also admonthed by the Interpreter, that he (who had already lived lehehaniour, as uen yeeres among the Barbarians) durit neuer come to those solemne meetings; and lastly, that if I went vnto them I should not doe wifely. Whereby he caused me to stay a while, for feare of danger; yet, because hee alledged no probable reason thereof, the women and Interpreter fomewhat relifting, I went forth: relying upon the friendship of certaine ancient men, Inhabitants of that Village. Going therefore vnto that place where I heard that Musicall harmonie, I made an hole through the roofe of the Cottage , that I might the better perceive what was done within. For, they are somewhat long, and round, after the manner of our Countrie garden 30 Arbours, and couered with graffe from the top to the bottome. Then, making a figne with my finger. I called my companions, and at length wee entred into that Cottage. As foone as wee faw that the Barbarians were not moued through our prefence (which thing the Interpreter fulnected, would have been done) and that they kept their order very well, and proceeded with their Veries : we went apart into a certaine corner, and beheld them without feare. Thefe are The gesture of their gestures in dansing. They were ordered in a round circle, standing close each to other; yet to, they tooke not one another by the hand stooping, with their bodie somwhat bending downward, shaking onely one of their legs, to wit, the right, with their right hand laid voon their buttockes, and the left hanging downe, and after this fashion they both dansed and sung. All that whole multitude made three fuch round Circles, in the middle whereof were three or foure 40 Caraibes, attired with Caps, Garments, and Bracelets of feathers. Each of them in either hand

Moreouer, those Caraibes dansing, sometimes, went forward, and sometimes backward, and did not continually fland ftill in the lame place, as the reft. Further, I observed that with a very long Cane, wherein they put the herbe Patum * fet on fire, they often turned themfelues hither and thither, and blew out the fume of that herbe vpon them that flood round about them, with these words : Receive the spirit of fortitude, whereby you may all ouercome your enemies. bicco because And this was often done by these Caraibes. The celebrating of these Rites and Ceremonies was 10 it hath a please prolonged for the space of two houres: those men continually dansing and finging. And their tunable finging was fo fweet, that to the vnskilfull it is fearce credible, how excellently well that harmonic agreed, especially, seeing the Barbarians are veterly ignorant of the Art of Mufike. And furely, although in the beginning I was ftricken with a certain feare, as I lately mentioblowing voon ned, yet contrarily I was then fo much ouer-loyed, that I was not only rauthed out or my felic: the Barbarians, but also now, as often as I remember the tunable agreement of many voices, both my minde rejoyceth, also mine eares feeme continually to ring therewith : but especially the burden of the fong yeelded a pleafing found vnto the eares, which at the end of enery Verie, they jung after

carried Maraca, that is, that rattle of a fruit exceeding the bignesse of an Estridges egge, where-

of we have made mention before, for that vie, as they faid, that the Spirit might speake out of

them : and that they might rightly confectate them, they continually shooke them.



Being

CHAP.2. S.2. The Barbarians Songs, feafting, groffe Superstition.

Being about to make an end of that tunable finging, flaking the ground with the right foote more venemently then before, they all spit alio, and all with one voice, and that hoarie, sing this Song often repeated.

Then because I did not yet plainly understand their Language and conceived not many things to which had beene poken by them, I intreated the Interpreter that hee would declare them vinto me. He figmfieth, that their men, first lamented their dead Ancestors, who were most valiant. but in the end were hereby comforted, in that they hoped that after death they should at length go vnto them beyond the Mountaines, and dance with them, and celebrate merrie meetings: and that afterward they most grieuously threatned the One ones, (which are a people not farre remonted from them, with whom they have perpetuall enmitte, whom also they could never opercome) and forecold, that it should shortly come to passe, that they should be taken and denoured, as the Caraibes luckely gheffed. Moreouer, I know not what they intermingled with their Sone; concerning a floud, that the waters in times past to overflowed, that they covered the whole earth; and that through that inundation all men perished except only their Ancestors. The confus of 20 who climbed up into exceeding high Trees. Which last thing commeth very neere vnto the fa- opinion of the cred Historie, and I neuer once heard it from them before.

The same day they were simptuously received by the Barbarians, for they liberally entertained the floud. both with most exquisi e meates, and plentifu'l drinke Canoin. I also with my companions, who were present at those Feasts of Bacchin vnexpected, were most honourably entertained by Feast followour Monflacat, that is the Mafters of the houle, who give food to their guefts. But beside those ing. things which have bin spoken by me, those dates being past (wherein these solemne meetings are celebrated every third or fourth yeere among the Tonoupinambankin) fometimes also before they came thither, those Caraibes goe about from Village to Village, and command three or foure of those Rattles which they call Maraca, to bee decked with the best feathers in every Family : The decking 30 which being fo decked, they flicke the longer part of the flaffe, wherewith they are thrust of Maraca. through in the ground, and then command meate and drinke to be fet before them. Whereby it commeth to paile, that those miserable people, through the perswasion of those Impostors, beleeue that those hollow fruits decked after that manner deuoure the meats. Wherefore energy

ouer, they serue those Maracas being to stucke in the ground, for fifteene whole cases together Perfittion. with very great diligence. Lattly, those miserable people after that to great bewitching of those Maraca, (which they continually carrie in their hands) conceive an opinion, attributing holineffe vnto them, that while they are thaken by them, a certaine Spirit speaketh with them from the middelt thereof. And they were to be witched with those delutions, that if we travelling that A most 40 way, feeing fome more delicate meates, which they had fet before their Maraca, tooke them to eate (which we oftentimes did) the Barbarians supposing that some great misfortune would thereby happen vnto vs, were offended. Moreouer, if taking occasion thereby to discouer their errours, we fignified that they were deceived by the Carabes, not only because they taught them that Maraca did eate and dfinke, but especially in this, that they most falsly vaunted that through their meanes, the fruits, and great Roots which they eate, increased and grew; which

only was to be attributed vnto God, from whom wee were to believe that wee had received the fame : thefe things, I lay, were of fo great moment with them, as if any here should speake against the Pope, or at Paris, denie that the Image of Genouef would procure raine. For which gainst the rope, or a range that was did no lefte hate vs, then immerimes the falle Prophets of Baal recule those Importors the Caraibes did no lefte hate vs, then immerimes the falle Prophets of Baal reculs to 50 did Elia detecting their delutions. And therefore they fhunned our fight. But although our Touonpinambauliy, as hath beene declared by mee in the beginning of this Truth pursely

Chapter, neither honour their Carabes, nor Maraca, with any external rite, no not with knee- falshood to ling vnto them, nor worthip any thing created, much leffe adore it, or call vpon it for helpe, I flight, will adde an example of those Relikes of Religion which I observed among them. When by chance I was sometimes with other Frenchmen in a certaine Towne (which they call Ocarentim) and that we supped abroad in the open Aire, the Barbarians Inhabitants of that Village flocking together to fee vs, not to feast with vs (for this is their vivall custome, that they never fit together at meate, with those whom they reuerence most) the elder men especially with many to- How the onkens of friendship stood ound about vs as our guard or attendants : and holding in their hands cient Barbarje

60 the bone of the beake of a certaine fish, of three or foure foot long, in the forme of a Sawe, they are entertaine droue away the children from vs , with thefe words : Get you hence Knaues : for you are vn- the Frenchmen. worthy to come voto thelemen. So they beheld vs attenticely, and holding their peace, not speaking the least word the meane while : votill the Banket being ended, a certaine elderly man observing vs to beginne meate with Prayers, and also to end Supper with Prayer, comming vn-

concerning

Monffacar carefully fetteth before them, not only meale with fielh and fish ; but also Caonin, More. A grosse Sue

the true God vnto the Bar-

to vs. spoke thus. What meaneth this custom, which you now yied, when taking of your caps, you all kept filence, faue one, that spokes to whom appertained that speech which he made? to any of you that are prefent, or to some that are absent? There fitly taking that occasion offered, that I The oceasion might speake vnto them concerning the true worship of God, seeing besides the largentsle of the of declaring village, & the great refort of people (table perceived the Barbaria's more attentive then they were wont) I intreated our Interpreter that he would declare my speech vinto them in their Language, that they might conceine the fame. Then beginning with the question of the old man, I answered that our Prayers were directed vnto God : and that although he could not fee him, he had not only plainly heard vs, but also did apparantly know what soeuer we had hid in our hearts. From thence comming to the Creation of the World, I first of all laboured to teach them, that among 10 the creatures God made man the most noble and excellent, that hee should so much the more endenour to extoll the glorie of his Creator, And that we furely in that we worshipped him, were deliuered by his hand from infinite dangers of a very long Nanigation, in fo vaft a Sea, and depending voon his helpe, were freed from all feare of Aignan , both in this life and in the life to come. Wherefore, if they would reject the delutions of their Caraibes, and that barbarous cuftome of denouring mans fielh, they should vindoubtedly obtaine the same gifts of God, which they faw we had. Moreover, we added many things concerning the corruption and fall of Man-The Barbarien kind, that we might prepare their minds vnto Chrift , applying Reasons and Examples to their capacitie, as much as might be. Now when they had harkened vnto vs about the space of two hours with great attention and admiration : one of them reuerent for his authoritie and yeeres, 20 discoursed after this manner: Surely, you have bere told us wonderfull and excellent things; and such A relation of a as we have never heard before, and certainly your freech hath brought into my memorie, what wee have Barbaran most often heard our Grandfathers report: To wit, that even from ancient time, and so many Moonet linee. as we cannot now remember, acertaine Mair (that is a Frenchman, or firanger of any other Nation) came into these Countries, attired after your manner, and basing a beard. And that bee, to the and bee might draw them to the obedience of your God, made such a speech unto them, as you delinered unto us

and derision, to the neighbouring Nations. Heere wee tellified with great vehemencie and earnest speech, that it was so farte off, that they ought to be mooued with the scoffes of the borderers, that contrarily, if they seriously worshipped that Creator both of Heauenand Earth, they should carrie away the victorie from all those, who for that cause, should willingly be troublesome vnto them. Lastly, the Lord game that efficacie to our words, that not only many Barbarians afterwards promifed to frame their lines according to that Law which they had learned of vs., and that they would never eate the flesh of their slaine enemies any more; but also according to this conference, kneeling on the The Barksviens ground, gaue thankes with vs, vnto God. That Prayer which was made vnto God, by one of 40 promife to em- our men, with a loude voice, in the middeft of their affembly, was prefently expounded vnto brace the wor- them by our Interpreter: and so they brought vs to sleepe in those hanging beds of Bombasin thip of God, & Cotton. But fleepe had not yet taken vs, when, behold, wee heare thefe Barbarians finging and are present at crying out together, that they were to take vengeance on their Enemies, and that more should

this day. But, as it was reported unto us by tradition from our Fathers, they will not give credit to his

words. Therefore, presently another succeeded, who gave them a Sword, in token of a curse. Hereupon,

followed warres amongst vs, and from that time, wee bane not ceaffed to exercife crueltie one towards a-

continuall vie, if we hould now suddenly leave our ancient custome, wee should become a laughing stocke,

nother, through mutuall flaughters. But now, after we have accustomed our felues to these outrages by 30

be eaten then before. Behold the inconstancie of this miserable people, and the lamentable example of humane nature. Yet furely, I perswade my selfe, if Villagagno had never revolted from the true Religion, and that wee had stayed longer in those Countries, it would have happened,

that at length, some should have beene wonne vnto Christ. Another time I being with three Sauges, and finging the ros. Plalme, at the request of one of them I declared the fense and antiquitie thereof, so many thouland Moones. Whereat he cried 50 their owners. Teb, how happie are you Mair, who know so many secrets, which are hid from vs poore misenorance and rable men. Afterward, one of them to gratifie mee, presented mee with a certaine little beaft, which he carried, called Agonis, speaking vnto mee in these words. Heere, take you this . because you have sung sweetly. I have willingly added this digression, to the intent I might declare that the Barbarous Americans, although outragious against their enemies, are not verso rude that they cannot discerne those things which they heare, with judgement. Nav. I dare affirme, that they are more apt in framing speeches, then our Countrie Peasants are, and very many of them alfo, who effeeme highly of themselves.

ò. III.

of their Marriages, Education of Children, Politic, Hosbitalitie, Difeases, Physicians, Funerals and La-

N Marriages, these degrees of Consanguinitie only, are observed mone of them taketh his Mother, Sister, or Doughter to water no regard is had of the refer to the second of the refer to the refer to the second of the refer to the second of the refer to the second of the refer to t his Mother, Sifter, or Daughter to wife: no regard is had of the reft: the Vncle mar-of Confanthe American Dialogue, no man may marrie the Daughter or Silter of his Atomraf-

rieth the Neece, and so consequently. Neuertheleffe, as shall bee hereatter spoken in guingtie. Tap. And he is called Atouraffap, whose familiaritie with any one is so great, that both their goods are common. There is no place for Rites or Ceremonies. Hee who defireth a Widdow, or

Virgin, being certainly periwaded of the good will of her whom hee loueth, goeth to her Parents, or if the have none, to her next Kindred, and asketh them whether they will marrie their Daughter vnto him? If they confent, he prefently bringeth her home, without giving her any affurance of Dowrie and fo keepeth her for his lawfull Wife. And if he fuffer the repulie, he giueth ouer his Sute without any perturbation of mind. But it is to bee noted, that Polygamy is Polygamic, vitall with them, and therefore it is lawfull for a man to marrie as many Wiues, as he shall think 20 good. Nay, the more Wives that any one bath the more valiant and generous hee is effeemed.

Among the rest I saw one, who had eight at home, and hee often spoke very much of them in commendation of himfelfe. But this is chiefly to be wondred at, that in fo great a multitude of Wines although one be beloued of the Husband aboue the rest, the other meaner take it gricuously, or become jealous, or openly murmur. Therefore they live most quietly and with great agreement, weating their Cotton beds, looking to the affaires of the house, making Gardens and

They to hate adulterous women, that it lyeth in the Husban's power either to kill the adul- men. treffe, or at the least, to put her away with great ignominie and reproach. This forely is true, The Sauger that they are not very carefull of preferring the chaffitie of vnmarried women : nay, they eafily terre. 20 prostitute them to any man. So that (as I haue alreadie said) I haue seene very many in diuers Single women

Villages deflowred by the Neuftrian Interpreters, who yet were not reprochfully diffgraced for loofe,

I have observed that the younger fort both men and women are not very much given to lust: How the Ameand I would our Countrey people could moderate themfelnes afwell in this behalfe. But that I rican women. may attribute no more vnto them then is meete, I remember, that often in their brawling they great with vied to object this reproach Tjune, that is, Buzgerers, one vnto another, whereby we may conjetthem (cluss Aure, that that hainous and abhominable wickedneffe raigneth among them. The women great Child-birth. with childe, abstaine only from the greater burthens, and performe the other accustomed duties. And furely the women much exceed the men in labour, for the men (laue that fometimes in the

40 Morning, neuer at noone, they place certaine Trees to make Gardens) ipend the time in war- The American fare, hunting, fishing, making of woodden Clubs , Bowes, Arrowes, and other things of that men perkinde. As touching the trauell of women; I and another Frenchman lodging in a certaine Vil- formethe of lage, about midnight heard a great out-cry of a woman, and supposing the had been surprized by fice of Midthe cruell beaft Ian-onare, we arole, and ran vnto her, and found the woman in trauell, to whom wines. the Husband performed the office of a Midwife: he receiving the Infant in his armes, cut the nauell ftring afunder with his teeth, but pressed downethe N Je (for they esteeme the beautie of children to conlift in the flatneffe of the Nofe) the new borne Infant is prefently walhed , and painted by the Father with colours blacke and red : then, not being wrapped in fwadling-clours atall, it is put into a Cotton hanging bedde. But if it bee a Male childe, the Fa her will give The little In-50 him a little woodden Sword, a small Bow and little Arrowes, prefently after his birth, fants Gugawes

and lay them in the bedde with the coilde, and killing the little Babe will speake vnto What the mahim in these words. My Sonne, when thru art come to mans eff ste, be valuant, to take remenge of thme ner is of giving enemies. As touching the giuing of names, I remember that hee of who a I now spoke, was American named by the Father Orangeen, which word fignifieth a Bow and Bow firings: for the word is names. compounded of Orapat, which is a Bow, and Con which tignifieth a ffringe. The fame manner

alfo is observed in others.

Their nourishment, beside the Mothers Milke, is chewed Meale, and every most tender kinde. The food of of meate. The woman lately deducted lieth downe two daies only, or three daies at the most. In ants. Afterward putting the little childe in a Cotton Scarffe, fiee either goeth to the Garden, orto 60 difpatch her other bufin ffc.

This opinion hath preuailed with vs, that little children would have crooked legges, valeffe they were carefully wrapped and bound in swadling clouts : But , I. firme, that the Barbarians nothing regard thefe things (who put the new borne Infancs naked, and variwadled in their Cottonbeds) whose children notwich tanding, goe most straight and veright of all the men in the

full agreement American won

the height of their flature, they worke after their manner, and also beginne their weauing from

the hottome. They make certaine of those beds in the forme of Nets, and others thicker, like the

The American Infants are ve-

the Barbarians

bufie theme

Marriages.

can women.

The punish-

Chues.

World. The Mothers who both want linnen, and also vie not the helpe of leaves for these serusces (whereof not withfranding they have great plentie) to diligently wipe the hinder parts of ry clean with the Infants with small chips of wood, that they are continually free from all filth. The elder fore out the vie of also observe the same manner, whom also (digreffing a little into this filthy matter) I thought good linnen elothes to mention, that they vie to make water in their houses, and yet no euill nor flinking favour arifeth from thence; although they thine bright almost continually with often fires, and are strewed with fand : but as often as they doe their easement, they vie to goe apart farre from the Houses.

Moreover, proceeding to speake of the Marriage of the Tononpinambaultians, as far as shame In what things and modestie will permit, I affirme (contrarie to that which some have forged) that the men obferuing naturall shamefastnesse, doe no where openly company with their Wives.

This is especially worth the noting, that for the space of an whole yeere, while we lived in those Countries, we neuer saw any woman having the flowres. I thinke that they diver that themesathesse Fluxe by some meanes voknowne to vs. For I saw Maidens of twelve yeeres olde, whose is observed in fides were cut by their Mothers, from the arme-hole downe to the knee, with a very harpe the American tuske of a certaine beaft. And the young Girles gnashing with their Teeth through extre-The surgation mitie of paine, bleed very much : I conjecture that they preuented their monthly Fluxe be this remedie. of the Ameri-

The Barbarians line peaceably

As touching the Policie of the Barbarians, it is scarce credible how well they agree among themselves, being guided only by the light of Nature. Nor may this be spoken, but to their great fhame who are instructed in divine and humane Lawes, which yet is to bee vinderstood of them 20 who are of the same kindred, or of the Confederates : for how they behave themselves towards their enemies, it hath beene alreadie by vs declared. Yet if any contention arise betweenecertaine perions among them (which very feldome happeneth, for in the whole space of a veere, while I lued among them, it was my chance twice only to fee them brawling) the beholders care not to pacifie the ftrite : but fuffer them to doe their pleasure, although they bee readie to put out one anothers eies. But if the one wound the other, and that hee can bee taken, heeis ment of murtherers among wounded in the same part of the bodie by the Kinsmen of him that is wounded. Nay, if perthe Barbarians, aduenture death follow the wound, the Murtherer is flaine by the Kinsmen of the dead. Lastly, Leuit,34-19-20 they recompence eie for eie, tooth for tooth, and life for life. But these things as I faid, very feldome happen among them. The things of the ground, with them are Cottages, and fields farre larger then might be requi-

red for maintenance of the Inhabitants. As touching the Cottages, you are first to understand.

that enery Village containeth fixe hundred men : wherefore very many are of necessitie to dwell

in one and the same Cottage. Notwithstanding everie Family possessing their place without any

those houses lie open, which for the most part are extended fixtie paces in length) everie Master

of a Family hath his wife and children placed apart. Moreouer, you are to observe (which sure-

ly is to be wondred at) that the Americans inhabit not one place aboue fine or fixe moneths. But

carrying away the matter and herbe Pindo, whereof their houses consist, they often transport

mooued a mile from the accustomed place. No man buildeth a Cottage, which he is not compel-

led to finish, nay, to build and plucke downe, about twentie times before his death, if hee have attained to the full age of a man. Now if it be demanded of them, why they change their habi-

tation to often. The answere is easily made. That the changing of the Aire is verie profitable

for the health; besides, that if they should alter the custome of their ancestors, they should prefently perish. As touching the fields, euerie Moussacar hath certains particular plats of ground,

which he chooseth at his pleasure wheresoener he thinketh good for the making of Gardens. But

that excedine care of duriding the grounds, fetting limits, and bounding the fields, they leave to

Concerning their houshold stuffe, I have often spoken in the former Chapters. Yet that wee so

our Countrie couetous persons, and to the Lawyers.

their Villages, which yet alwaies reteine the fame names. Wee our selves faw some Villages re- 40

After what monner the willages and American femi- distance betweene (for there is nothing that may hinder, but that from one end vnto the other

The transpormerican Villa-

peculiarly pof-

How the Ant-

may not omit any of those things which appertaine to the houshold government of the Barbarians, I will heere recite the cunning of the American women in spinning of Cotton, whereof there is manifold vie, as well for Ropes, as for the weating of their hanging beds. Being drawne out of the flockes, in stead of all picking and carding, they plucke it out somerican women what in length with the fingers, and then lay it vpon the ground in a heape (for they know not spin the cotten how to vie Distaffes) in stead of a Spindle they take a little wand of the thicknesse of a singer, and a foot in length, which they thruit through a little wooden round ball, and faften the Bombain Cotton to the top of the small wand, then turning that Instrument about upon their thigh (as our Countriewomen doe their Spindles) they let it flip out of their hands. That little round ball is turned about, through the houses and streets, like a Wherue. And after that manner they 60 spinne Threed, not only course and great for the weating of their Cotton Beds, but also that which is most fine. Of this fort I brought some into France , wherewith I caused a faire stomacher to be made of the white Web, which was of io fine and small a Threed, that some tooke it for the best and choicest Silke.

added, vnto the which they faften cords: and hang them vp in their houses vpon beames, made of the Berkerich fit for this vie. But, living in the Campe, or in the woods for hunting, or on the shoares for fishing, as are prepared they hang them youn trees. These beds (that wee omit nothing) when they have gathered filth ted and fored 30 either through humane (weat, or by the imcake, by reason of the continual) fire, are washed cleaner after this manner. The women gather a certaine fruit in the woods, not much volike in thene wnto a plaine Gourd, but farre larger, so that every Apple may scarce bee borne with one hand : thefe fruits they cut into small pieces, and having cast them into some very great earthen vessell. they mousten them with water. Then, they vehemently stirre them about with a sticke, and Fome, which caule a fome to arise from them, through the helpe whereof (in fead of Sope) they make their among the de Beds fo cleane, that in whitenesse they may be comparable with the Snowe, or Fullers Clothes. merican ful The vie of tuch Beds is farre more commodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the ac of Soosa of Soosa of Soosa customed manner, should tumble in Beds of graffe : for they both foule their garments, and get

20 with the Armes, which Souldiers continually weare: which in the fiege of the Citie Sancerra. we proued in good earnest: For the Enemie law a whole weere at our Porrs.

That we may gather the rest of the Americane houshold-stuffe into a short fumme, the women (who have the charge of domeflicall matters) prepare huge Cannes, and make very great Earthen veffels, wherein to put their Can-min. They also make Pots of duers fashions, little and The American indifferent Basons, Platters, and other things of that fort, vessels which on the outside furely, are nothing fmooth, but are so polished within, and beautified with I know not what kinde of meane, and tincture, which prefently waxeth hard, so that those women may easily match the industrie of little earther all our Countrie people. Besides, I know not what kinde of ash-colour painting they steepe in vessels, water, and afterwards make divers formes of things in their veffels, within, and specially in 20 thoie wherein they lay up their Meale, and other kindes of meates , to bee preserved. The vie

Lice, and that which is more, if they be to arise voto the fight, the bodie is brusted in some fort

therefore of them is most acceptable, nay those vessels farre excell them of wood, which very many vie here with vs. Yet thefe Women-painters have this fault, that when they have pourtrayed with the Pencill whitfoener they pleafe, if they be intreated to paint the fame againe, they are not possibly able to doe it : because they have no example proposed, beside the industrie of their owne fantalie. Hence it commeth to paffe, that two of thefe kinde of pictures may fcarce be found alike. Moreouer, (as I have elsewhere faid) the Barbarians have Gourds, and other kindes of fruits.

which they divide, and make hollow, and they vie them in flead of Cups, (which they call Co- Post and other wi) and other veffels of divers vies. They have also Panniers, large and meane, and likewife veffels, of 40 Baskets, very finely made of bul-rushes, or yellowish graffe, not much differing from Wheaten fruits, panifest ifraw. Their they call Panacon, and in them they put Meale and other things which they andbakers,

Although the Tououpmambaultianis receive firangers very curteoufly, yet the Frenchmen, and The Barbarient other Strangers, who are ignorant of their Language, were not a little aftonished in the begin cutteenly en-ning, by reason of their viaccustomed behaulour. When I first conversed among them (which tertain guests, happened about twenty dayes after our arrivall at the Caftle of Colligne) a certaine Interpreter brought me to certaine Villages, in the Continent : that which I firit faw, in their native Language is called Therraci, but in French, Pepin, by the name of a certaine Pilot, who fometime laded a ship at that place ; foure miles only distant from our Castle. In the very entrance the Bar. A pleasant dif-

barians came thicke about me, and fpake vntome in these words, Marape derere, Marape dererel things which that is, By what name are you called? Which words, furely, to mee were very barbarous, but one befellihe Aus of them taking off my Hat, put it vpon his head; another girdeth my Girdle and Sword vnto thous when he of them taking on my riat, put is you in succession and they dull me with their cries, and being closhis naked fide: another putteth on my Coat: and they dull me with their cries, and being closhis naked fide: another putteth on my Coat: thed with my spoiles, runne hither and thither. I then thought that I had loft all, and did not well knowe how fafe I might be among them. But, as I found by experience, that feare arole from my ignorance of their customes, for they vie to doe the like to all strangers, especially vnto them whom they never faw before. Now, when for their recreation, they had walked about a little while in that habite, they precifely reftore enery thing againe. Then I was advertised by the Interpreter, that they greatly defired to vinderstand my name : but in declaring that, !

60 was to forbeare vivall names with vs, which the Barbarians could neither pronounce (for in flead of folion, they faid Niss) nor yet well remember: but was to propound somewhat which The Authors might be knowne vnto them. The matter succeeded so happily, that, as the Interpreter fignis name in the fied vnto mee, who was very skilfull in the Brafilian Language, my name Lerina fignified an American Language Oyster : I therefore answered, that I was called Lorig-onflow. They liked it very well, and of. guage.

They call their Cotton beds Ini. The women, to whom this workmanship appertaineth have their work-houses for their Loomes somewhat valike to those of our Countrie: for they are Int., Cotton neither made flat and plaine, nor confift of fo many fubrile inventions; but being framed to

the bottome. I may be the fine or fixe foot long, and an ellebroad : vnto either end Cotton loopes are How the Beda

The American

wayle the

comming of Gueffs.

mong the A.

ten ving Teb, their Interiection of admiration, they ipake thus vnto me. An excellent name furely, nor have we ever fe und any Mair, who had tuch a name. They have so good and fure a memorie, that if they have once heard any mans name, they never forget it.

The same day, accompanied with the Interpreter, I went further, and turned into the Village Enramiri, lo called in their native Language, but in French, Gofer, after the name of a certaine Interpreter, who dwelt there some little while: wee came thither about Sunne set, and found them danling, and drinking their Cao-sun, by realon of a Captine, whom they had flaine that day. I perceived the pieces of his field laid vpon Boncan. I thinke, you need not enquire with how great and horrible feare I was then thricken ; yet that was but a small matter, if it be compared with the feare wherewith I was afterward aftonished. Wee entred into a Cottage, and 10 fare woon the hanging beds, after the accustomed fashion: the women lament after that manner which we will declare, and the Master of the Familie entertaineth vs with friendly words. The Interpreter who was acquainted with these matters, and who was very much delighted with their drinkings, leaveth me vnialuted, and ignorant of all things, and went away to them that were danfing, and drinking. But being wearie, after I had refreshed my selfe with Meale, and certaine other meates that were let before vs, I lay downe in the bed. Notwithstanding through the notic of their danfing, drinking, and devouring of the Captine, I was prefently awaked, and (which was the chiefelt matter) by one comming vnto mee, who carried the rofted foot of the Capting in his hand, and demanding of mee, as I afterwards understood, for then, I conceived not his words) whether I would eate thereof; I was fo aftonished through feare , that I was al. 30 together freed from drowfineffe and fleepe. And I verily beleeued, by that gefture, which I sooke in the worst part, that the Barbarian had showed me, that my fish should shortly after be denoured after the lame manner. Moreover, as feare begetteth ful picion, it came prefently into my minde, that the Interpreter had betrayed , and delivered mee into the Barbarians hands. Wherefore, if I had had any way open to flee, I had quickly taken my flight. But they flood round about mee, whole minde I did not fufficiently knowe, for they attempted no cuill against mee. Now being confirmed in feare, I valuckily gheffed, that I should presently have been flaine, wherefore I paffed the whole night in powring forth prayers voto God. At the first dawning of the day, the Interpreter (who had passed all the night in pleasure with the Barke eiens) returned voto mee, and law mee pale, and taken with a Feuer, whereupon he demanded to whether I were ill at cafe, & whether I had not quietly rested. Then I began sharply to reprove him, who had left me alone among thole Barbarians, whose speach I vaderstood not at all. Her openeth the whole matter to them who flood by me all the night, to congratulate my comming: they fignifie, that they perceived the matter in some fort, and yet were forrie, that I had naffed that night in fo great feare of them. And at length they breake out into diffolute laughter, which was the folace and comfort of that my feare. From thence I and that Interpreter, went vato certaine other Villages.

There are the Rites which the Barbarians observe in entertayning Guests. First of all, as some as the Gueft entreth into the house of that Mouffacat, which hee hath chofen to bee his Holl, (which is to be done in every Village, nor are you to turne into another, valetle you will incurre 40 his difpleafure) he must presently fit downe upon a Cotton hanging Bed, and remaine quietly there a while without speaking any word. By and by, the women come vnto him compatte the Bed about, and fitting on the ground, put their hands on their eyes, and bewayling the happie comming of the Gueft after this manner, they rehearle innumerable things in his commendation. As for example: Hane you taken fo much paines to come unto us : you are good, you are valiant. But if the Gueft be a Frenchman, they adde, you have brought very many excellent merchandifes unto us, which we want here. To conclude, those women, as hath beene faid, entertaine Guells wee-Thegefure of ping, with such like flattering speeches. But the Guest who sitteth on a Cotton bed, if he defire to procure fauour with his Holt, fettling his countenance, valeffe hee meane to weepe in good earnest (as I saw some of our men of so weake a courage, that teares were forced from them, 10 through the howling lamentation of these women) he must of necessitie counterfeit weeping. How Monfacet answering somewhat at the least, and fetching deepe sighes. This most pleasant salutation being ended by the women, Monfacat, that is, the Mafter of the Familie, being builly employed in making of an Arrow, casts not so much as his eyes for a certaine time voon the Guest, as if he marked nothing. At length comming vnto the Gueft, hee speaketh vnto him in thele words: Ere loube? that is, Are you come? then, bow doe you? what feeke you? &c. After , hee demandeth, whether you be bungrie? if you grant that you are, prefently he commandeth meates of diuers kindes to be tet before you in earthen veffels, to wit, Meale, which with them supplieth the place of bread, Venilos, Fowle, Fifh, and other things of that kinde: but because there is no vie with them, for Tables, and Benches, all those things are set on the ground. As touching 60 Drink, if you defire Cae-nin, & that it be in the house, it shall prefently be given you. Lattly, after the women have floutly folemnized the comming of the Guetts with weeping, they come vato them bringing Fruits, and other trifling Prefents, and to, fecretly, demand Combes, Lookingglasses, and little Brades of glasse, which they winde about their armes.

Moreover, if you will lodge all night in that Village, the Mouffacat commandeth a very neat and cleane bed to be hanged vp for you, round about which he will cause smal fires to be kindled. and often quickned in the night with Bellows, which they call Tatapecona, not much valike the little round Fannes, wherewith the nicer and more delicate fort of women with vs. defend the fcorching of fire from their faces. Not because that Countrie is subject vnto cold, but by reason of the moisture of the night, and especially, because it is their vivall manner. Now teeing we have chanced to mention Fire, which they call Tata, and Smoake Tatatin. I thinke it needfull that I declare the excellent manner of kindling the fame. They have two kindes of wood. whereof the one is very foft, but the other very hard, which they yfe after this manner, to kindle fire. They tharpen a twig of a foot long of that hard wood at the one end like a Spindle. and sticke the point thereof in any piece of that foft wood, then laying it on the ground, or vp. on a stocke, they turne that twig swiftly about with the palmes of their hands, as if they would pierce an hole through the piece of wood which lieth vader. Through that to fwift and violent motion, smoake is not onely raised, but also fire; putting Corton vnto it, or certaine drie

CHAP. 2. S. 2. Entertainment, charitie and courte fie of the Barbarians.

made triall. After that the Guests have refreshed themselues with meate, and lodged after the manner Howstraneers which we have declared, if they be liberall, they vie to give vinto the men Kniues, Scizzers, and require their Pinters fit for the plucking out of the haires of their beards : to the women, Combes, and Loo- Hoft. an king-glasses; and to the children, Fish-hookes. But, if the Guest want victuals, when he bath agreed of the price, he may carrie them away. Moreover, because they want all kinde of beaffe of burden, they are all of necessitie to travell on foot. If Strangers bee wearie, and give a Knife to any of the Barbarians, he prefently offereth his helpe to carrie him that is wearie. I my felfe The Barbarians when I lived in those Countries, was divers times carried by those Porters, and that furely two carrie Stranmiles iourney together. And if wee admonifhed them to reft a little, they laughed at vs with gers vpor these word; What? Thinke you that wee are so effeminate, or of so weake a courage, that wee should faint, and tie downe under our burden? I would rather carrie you all the day without any intermission. But we breaking out into laughter, wondered at those two legged Hackneyes, and encouraging Two legged

leaues (in flead of our Countrie tinder) fire is very aptly ingendred : whereof I my felfe haue

them, faid : let vs therefore proceed on the way. They exercise naturall charitie abundantly among themselves, for they daily give one vnto The Berberiens

another, both Fish, Meale, and Fruits, and also other things: nay, they would be very forrie, if practif charithey faw their neighbours want those things which they have. They also vie the like liberalitie the even by the towards Strangers : whereof, it shall be sufficient, to bring one example. In the tenth Chapter direction of of this Booke, I made mention of a certaine danger, which my felfe, and two other Frenchimen escaped, to wit, that we were in great perill of death, by reason of an huge Lizard which met vs in the way: at that time, wee wandred two dayes through the middle of the Woods out of the way, and indured no meane hunger, and at length came vnto a certaine Village called Pane. where wee had lodged before. There wee were most liberally entertained by the Barbarians, For, having heard the troubles which wee had fuffered, and specially the great danger wherein 40 we were, that we were likely to have beene denoured by wilde beafts, but chiefly, that wee were in danger to bee flaine by the Margaintes, our common enemies , neere vnto whole borders wee approached vnawares: and, feeing also the hurts and feratches of thornes, wherewith our skin was miferably rent, they tooke our harmes fo grieuously, that I may here truly affirme, that the faigned flatteries wherewith our Countrie people vie to comfort the diffressed, are fare from the fincere humanitie of that Nation, which we call Barbarous. For, they washed our feet with Anotable excleare water (which put me in minde of the ancient cultome) every one of vs fitting apart wpon ample of the an hanging Bed. Then the Mafters of the Families, who had alreadie prouided meates to curtefie of the be prepared for vs, and caufed new Meale to be ground, which (as I elfewhere faid) is nothing Barbariant. inferiour vnto the crumme of white bread, in goodnesse, presently, after wee had beene a little refreshed, commanded all the best meates, to wit, Venison, Fowle, Pila, and the most exquisite and choicest Fruits, where with they continually abound, to bee fee before vs. Moreour, the night approching, the Monfacat our Hoft, remoueth all the children from vs, that wee might

the more quietly rest. The next day after, early in the morning, he commeth vnto vs. and demandeth, goe to Atourassap, (that is, dearly beloued Confederates) bane you quietly rested thus night? wee answered, very quietly. Then faith he ; my fonnes, reff your felues yet a while, for, yea flerday, I perceived that you were very mearie. To be briefe, I am not able to expresse with words, how friendly, and curteoully wee were entertained. But wee neuer trauelled farre from home without a Sachell full of Merchandises, which might serue vs in stead of money among those Barbarians. Departing therefore thence, we gate our Hofts, what wee thought good: to wit, 60 Kniues Sizzers, Pinfers, to the men: Combes, Looking-glaffes, Bracelets, and glaffen Beades, to the women : and Fish-hookes to the children,

I one day turned out of the way to lodge in a certaine Village, and was requested by my Barbarians c-Monfaces, to thew him what I had in my Sachell, who commanded a great earthen veff. It to them kniues, and other bee brought, wherein to put my merchandises: I tooke them all out, and set them in order: Ttttt 2

CHAP.A.C.I. Hulderickes passages from Antwerpe to the River of Plate.

whereat he greatly wondring, calleth the reft of the Barbarians unto him, and faith. See I Dray you, my good friends, what manner of man I have entertained with me : doth it not manifelt. ly appeare that he is very rich, feeing he carrieth fo great wealth about him? yet those would scarce have beene fold at Paris, for two filter Cardicues. Then, because (as we have said) they loue liberall men, that I might procure authoritie and fauour among them, I gaue my Monffacat the best of my Knipes before them all, which he esteemed no lesse, then any one with vs would regard a golden chaine, of very great price, bestowed vpon him.

If peraduenture it happen, that any of them fall licke, when the inward and familiar friend

Pages, the Barr for the ficke perion hatch declared the grieuzed part, one fuckerth it with his mouth, fometimes albarriags The Barr for that fermice is performed by certaine impoltors, which they call Fager, that is, Phylicians, or a
barriags Thylic.

But they are a knowled People differing from the Carabits, whereof thau epoken before.) And they also say, that they draw out the paine, and prolong the life. They are sometimes ficke of Feuers, and other common difeafes: but, not fo often, as wee vie to bee. Moreouer, they are troubled with a certaine incurable difease, which they call Pians. This, for the most part proceedeth of luft; yet, I have seene the little children infected therewith not vnlike the manner of our Countrie Meafels. This contagion breaketh out into puffler, broader then a thumbe, which overforead the whole bodie, and also the face it felfe. They never give meate to the ficke, vnleffe he defire it, although he be readie to perifh through hunger. Moreouer, ale though it be the most grieuous dilease, they that are healthie, neuer cease dansing, singing, and drinking after the accustomed manner, to dull and wearie the miserable sicke person with the noise: nor doth he complaine, because he knoweth, that he shall not preuaile at all. But, if hee die, that finging (especially if he be a Master of any familie) is suddenly turned into teares, and so great lamentation is made, that if by chance we turned into a certaine Village, at the time of that mourning, we were of necessitie to goe to some other place, or passe the night without fleepe. First of all, not without admiration, the women are heard, which so crie out and exclaime, that you would fay they were the howling of Wolues or Dogs, and no humane voices. But they powre forth thele complaints with a trembling voice. That most valiant man is dead, who sometimes gave us so many Captines to be denoured. Then the rest say, O notable Hunter, O most excellent Fifter, O valiant Killer of the Portugals, and Margaiates. To be briefe, those women prouoking one another to mourning, and embracing armes together, delift not from thefe to lamentations, and praifes, before the dead bodie be brought forth. Lastly, these Barbarian women imitate the Bearneansian custome in bewayling their dead

men, whom, as I have heard, they follow with these complaints. La mi amon, La mi amon, La mi rident, wil desplendon, cama lenge, bet dansadon: La me balen, lo m'esburbat: mati depes: fort tard coneat. that is. My friend, my triend, with a merrie countenance, thining eyes, swift legs, notable danfer, firong and valuant, thou diddeft arite early, and goe late to bed. The Valcone women alfo, who adde thefe things to the former, Tere, vere, o le bet renegadou, o le bet jougadou qu'bere: that is, Alas, alas, how front and deepe a Swearer was hee, how notable a Gamester? Moreover, to those complaints whereof we spoke, the Barbarian women often adde this burden of the Song, He is dead, be is dead, whom we now lament. Then the men answere: Alas, be so is dead, and wee hall see him no more, until wee danse with him behind the Mountaines, as our Cagaibes teach. Those howling lamentations are prolonged for fixe hours; for they vie not to Reepe their Dead any longer unburied. Then digging a Trench, not long as we vie, but circular, like a great Drie-far, they burie the dead bodie bolt vpright. The dead Masters of Families, they burie in the middeft of their houses, wrapped in their Cotton bed, with feathers, and other things, wherein they delighted in their life time, laide in the Graue, Since their commerce with the French they have forborne to put precious things in the Grayes: but they retained a Grange and very deuillish Superstition. The first night after the Funerall, the Barbarians, who are thus perswaded, that Aygnan, volesse he found other meates prepared, would digge up the dead bodie, and deuoure it, fet no small fore of vessels, with Meale, Fish, Flesh, and other meats 50 carefully prepared, and also great pots full of their drinke Casaus, about the Graue. Which Sacrifice they performe fo long , vntill they thinke that the dead bodie bee wholly confumed. From the which errour they were the more hardly removed, because certaine Newstrian Interpreters, by example of the Sacrifices of Bell, divers times before our comming, privily fiole a-

Americans. A very deuil-

The Graues.

and rices of

buriall of the

Det.14.

though we shewed them, that those meates fet downe in the evening, remained in the morning, yet with great labour and difficultie we diffwaded very few from that errour. As often as the Barbarians transport their Villages vato another place, after the manner which wee have declared, they put certaine coverings of the herbe Pindo voon the Graves of the Dead. Whereby it commeth to palle, that Trauellers may take notice of a certaine forme of a place of buriall. At which places, if at any time wandring in the Woods, they remember

way those meates. Through which fact they so confirmed the Barbarrans in errour, that al-

the dead men, they make so great lamentation, that they may be heard farre off. Worse then their howlings here, worse then their former man-eatings, is the tragical famine which attended Lerius and his fellowes in their returne, besides dangers of shoppracke, resolution of some to

bill their fellowes for food; Thother by Sea in 500. fathome depth feeming like a Marift, the borbes relian topic mith Berries lake these of lawsper, the leases like Rue, with threads like ground lines floring on the Sea, but not safely bandled; in some places redde filth like concombes summing, the touching of see des, one of the hand preferring to speel) as also bie Braitifan Distromarie, Ge, for breussie I hane donie-buch consisted the hand preferring to speel) as also bie Braitifan Distromarie, Ge, for breussie I hane donie-ted Villagagnons Apostasie from the Religion was the cause of their departure; whose malice pursued them homewards to pronounce them to bee burned for Herefie upon his accufation at home : as they were faine to line from him in Bratill. Wee well leane this Religions Frenchman . and acausing som with a Germane.

CHAP. IIII.

The tranels of HVLDERIER SCHNIRDEL in twentie newes space from 1524. to 1554. abbreniated.

His Voyage up the River of Plate, foundation of Townes, their expedition up the River of Parana and Parabol : the people of thefe parts.



Nas 1534. I went from Antwerps to Cadiz, and there found fourteene thins furnithed for the River of Plate. There were 2500. Spaniards , 150. high and low Dutch, vnto which I joyned my felfe. They fet forth in September the fame veere. and (having had some trouble at Palma, one of the Canaries, about stealing of a Citizens Daughter by George Mendeza,a Kinfman of the Commander Den Pedro de Mondoza arrived at the river lonero. They call these Indians, Tompin Here we abode Towns

fourteene daies, and Petro Mendozaour Generall then gave commandement to lobn Oforius his fworne Brother, to take charge of vs in his steed, because hee being weake, and consumed in his members, was much troubled almost with continuall ficknesse and diseases. But when a little after the gouernment received, lohn Oforum had beene faltly accused, and by forgerie, to Mendoza his (worne brother, as though he had gone about reditionly to ftirre the company against him. the faid Mendoza commanded other foure Captaines (to wit) lebu Eyoldas, John Saleifen, George Luchfam, and Lazarus Saluafeho, that having stabbed him with a Dagger, they should expose Menderal him as a Traitor in the middle of the Plaine, to the view of all beholders. And straightly com-cruckies manded it publikely to be given in charge, that no man vpon paine of death disquiet or trouble 40 himfelfe in the behalfe of Oferius, for if he did, he should be no more respected, who sever, or of what condition socuer he were. But hee was altogether injuried. For hee was an honest man, and a flout and couragious Warriour, and courteous, liberall, and verie beneficiall to his fellow

Souldiere. 6. Departing hence with our ships and going to the River of Plate, we came into a pleasant R. Parone F. River, which they call Parana Vraffa. It is farre from the mouth of the River where the Sea raffa, leaues it, and is fortie two leagues broad. And from the River lange to this River are two huns dred and fifteene leagues. Heere wee came to a Hauen called Saint Gabriel, and all our fourteene thins anchored in the River Parana. But because we were to abide in the greater shippes on the water, a Musket shot from the Land, our Generall Petro Mendoza gaue commandement to set 50 the people and Souldiers aland in the leffer Skiffesor Boats, which they call Potten, then prepare red for that purpose. So by the grace and bleffing of God, in the yeere of Christ 1535, wee happily arrived at the River of Plate, and there we found a row of houses, or an Indian Village, R. of Plate, wherein there were about 2000 men, whom they call Zecharnas, who eate no other thing, faue Lecharus, fish and fiesh. And goe all naked, but that the women couer their secrets, with a thinne piece of Cotton-cloth, which reacheth from the Nauell to the knees, They therefore at our comming, leauing the Towne, fled away with their wives and children. Then our General! Mendoza commanded the people to be shipped againe, and conseied over to the other fide of the River Parama, where the bredth of the River extendeth it felfe no more then eight leagues.

7. In this place wee built a Citie, which for the wholfomeneffe of the Aire wee called Bonos Buenos Ages 60 Ares. We brought with vs: lio out of Spaine feuentie two Horfes and Mares, in our fourteene build thips, We found also another Village in this Countrie, which the Indians inhabit, whom they call Carendes, of whom there were about 3000, men, together with their wives and children. These also as the Zechnruss are covered from the Nauell only vnto the knees, who brought exercise. ws fish and fiesh to eate. These Carendies have no Proper and settled dwellings, but wander in the

Ttttt 2

· Giolies.

Gountrie hither and thither, almost as our Cingari, " and Zigenners, When they take their journey in the Summer, they oftentimes travell thirtie leagues and more by Land, and finde not a drop of water to drinke. If they light vpon a Stagge or other wildebeaft, when they have killed it, they drinke the bloud thereof : fometimes they find a Roote . which they call Cardes, and chewing that, they quench thirft. But that they drinke bloud, this pinly is the cause a for that they want other drinke, and peraduenture without this, they (hould die for thirlt, Thele Cornsies for tourteene daies imparted liberally of their pouertie, and daily brought fifth and fielh water our Campe, one day only excepted, wherein they came not to vs at all. Therefore our Generall Don Petro Mendoza fent our Corrigidor lan, Baban and two Souldiers vnto them (for thefe Carendies abode foure le-gues diftant from our Campe) but they fointreated them when they came to voto them, that they ient them home all three foundly cut and mangled with ftripes. But when our Generall Petro Mendoza vndestood these things by report of the ludge : who for this cause raised a tumule in our Campe, he sent his owne naturall Brother Don Diego Mendazaa-gainst them with three hundred Souldiers, and thirtie readie light Horsemen, amone the which I also was one, straightly charging him to kill, and take all the faid Indian Carendies, and possesse their Towne. But when we came vnto them, there were now fome 4000, men gathered together; for they had fent for all their familiars, and friends to helpe them.

The fight or skirmith with the Indian Carendus.

for they flue our Captaine Don Diego Mendoza, and fixe Gentlemen with him, and of the horse and foote about some twentie. But on their part there fell about 1000, men. Therefore they fought couragiously and floutly against vs, which wee felt by experience. The weapons 20 of these Carendies are Bowes, and a kinde of Dart like the staffe of a Speare of a middle length, whose point the yarme with a flint called a Marchafate, with an edge in forme of the three edged T underbolt. They have also bowles of stone hanging at a long coard, formewhat like our plummets of Lead, There bowles they so cast about the feet of Horses, or Stages, that they are constrained to fall. After this manner they flue our Captaine, and the Gentlemen with these bowles, which I my felfe beheld, but they flue the Footmen with their Darts : yet by the grace of God (to whom be praise) we ouercam: them in battaile, and possessed their Towne. But we could take none of their Indians; their wives and children also, before we assaid them by warre had fied into another Village. We found nothing in this Towne of theirs, but Otter skins, plen- 30 tie of flesh and flowre, and the trane of fish. Abiding therefore three daies we remained in that place, and after returned to our Campe, leaving 100, men there, who in the meane time should fish with the Indians Nets, to maintaine our Souldiers more plentifully : for the waters there are maruellous full of fish : for three ounces only of flowre made of fine Wheate were distributed to euerie one for one daies victuall, and euerie three daies one fish. This fishing lasted two moneths. and if any would eate fish otherwise, he must seeke them on foot foure leagues off. 9. When we returned to our Campe, they that were fit for labour among the people, were

Of the buildings of the Circof Bones A researd of the tamine which they indured there.

Miserable fa-

How forme faior the Runer of 8. When we fer voon them, they fo retifted vs, that they put vs to trouble enough that day:

separated from them that were fit for warre, that enery one might be put to service agreeable vnto him. The Citie therefore began to be built there, and a wall of earth to be raifed about it. to to the heigth of a Speare or lauelin, and in the Citie a firme and strong house for our Generall. 40 The wall of the Citie was three foot broad. But that which was built to day the next day fell downe againe. For the people wanting food, lived in great scarcitie, so that many died of famine, nor could the Horses latissie them. There was not plentie enough of Dormice, or other-Mice, or Serpents, or other wild beafts, to affwage this lamentable famine and vnfpcakable pouertie. Not to much as shooes and other Leather could avoid this rage of devouring. It fell out also at that time, that three Spaniards having ftolne a Horse, did privily eate him. Which as foone as it was discourred, they were grieuously tormented, and questioned touching the fact, and when they confessed it, they were condemned to the Gallowes. When they were hanged, three other Spaniards conforted themselves together, who the same night going to the Gallowes. cut off the legges of them that were hanged, and cut out pieces of flesh from their bodies, that 10 in their Cottages they might affwage vntollerable hunger by eating thereof. A certaine Spaniard (through exceeding hunger) eate his owne brother, who died in the Citie of Buenas Acres.

10. When therefore our Generall Don Petro Mendoza faw, that the people could no longer be fulfained and preserved in this place, he presently commandeth foure small Barkes which they call Brigantines, or small men of warre, and are carried with Oares to bee made readie, whereof energe one will hold fortie men; there were also three other leffe called Potten. Thefe feuen little Veffels therefore being made readie and dispatched, our Generall commanded the company to be mustered, and George Luchfam with 350 readie and able men, to faile up the River, and feek out the Indians, that we might get provision of victuals and food. But the Indians understanding before of our presence, burnt their prouision of victuall, and what societ was good to eat, together 60 with their Villages, and runne away. But wee in the meane feafon got no food, and for eueric daies allowance vnto euerie man, one ounce and an halfe of bread was distributed, whereby it came to passe, that in this journie the halfe part of our Souldiers perished through famine. Wee therefore of necessitie returned to the said Towne where our Generall was, who greatly wondred, that fo fmall a number of people should returne, seeing we were no more then fine mone; his ahfent and he demanded of our Capraine George Lachfam to declare vinto him what hee had done in this journie, who lignified, that they who were wanting, died of famine, because the Indians had confumed all the food with fire, and after run away themselves.

11. All thefe things falling out thus as I have faid, yet we continued together in the Towne How the town 11' All their things falling out interest want, expecting while the furnitute of our flippes et saves dett of Buena Arets, a whole moneth in great want, expecting while the furnitute of our flippes was befreed should be finished. In the meane while, in the yeere 1535, the Indiani fliuxde vs and our Citie of a finished and Buenas Aeres, with the ffrength of twentie three thoutand men, and in their Armie there were burnt. foure distinct Nations (to wit) Cariendes, Bartennis, Lecharade, and Tiembas. The purpose and Foure Nations to principall intention of all thefe was, to kill vs all. But praife and glorie hee to God . who faued of todient. the greatest part of vs fafe from deltruction. For together with the Captaines, and Ancients, and other Souldiers, there were not about thirtie men of ours flaine.

When therefore they first came to our Citie of Bienas Meres, some of them ranne furiously to affault it: others cast fierie Dares voon our houses, all which (except our Generals house which only was concred with Tile) were only that ched ; and by that meanes all our Citie, together with Their fights & all the houses was confirmed with the flames, even from the foundation. The Weapons or Darts weapons, of these Indians are made of Reed, which when they are cast or shot out, take fire in the point. They have a kind of wood also whereof they make their Darts, which if they bee fired before they be cast, are not quenched, but (et houses (couered with Thatch) on fire, and so those that

20 touch or joyne together burne together.

In this fight thefe Indians burnt vs also foure great shippes, which were halfe a league distant Foure thins from vs on the water. But the Souldiers who were in thele thips , when they faw that mightie burned, tumult of the Indians, betooke themselves to flight from these foure shippes, into three others, which rode not farre from thefe, and were furnished with Ordnance. They therefore when they faw the foure thips burne, began to defend themfelues, and eagerly to affault the Indians and ther flee the bullets which caused them to leave the assault and depart, giving rest vnto the Christians. All this was done on the Feast of Saint lobn the Europe list. In the yeare 1937.

1 2. All thefe things being past and done, all the people went into the thips, and our Generall They muster Don Petro Mendoza made loin Eyollui his Deputie, creating him Lieutenant Generall, deliue- their Son Don Petro Mendor a made loom Eyottus his Deputie, creating nim Lieuvenant General, genue-ting ouer vnto him the whole government of all as also of the people. He taking a view of the thips to goe company, of two thousand fine hundred men, which came from Spaine together in thips, hee further. found only fine hundred and fixtic aline : all the rest were dead, whom for the most part the in- The most of tollerable famine had confumed.

After this, our Lieutenant loba Eyollus, commandeth eight little Barkes, which they call famine, Bregantines and Post, speedily to be built. And of fine hundred and fixtie which remained aline. hee tooke vnto him foure hundred men : leaving the other one hundred and fixtie to take charge of the foure great thips; ouer whom hee fet Iohn Romero the chiefe commander, leaving provision for a whole yeere, fo that foure ounces of bread were diffributed to every man for his daily al-

40 13. After this our Lieutenant lobn Eyoffus with his foure hundred Souldiers, which hee had with him, among whom also Petro Mendoza our Generall was, faileth vp the River of Parana, in the Brigantines and Posts, furnished for this purpose, vntill wee came vnto the Indians, which They goeyp was pe formed in the space of two moneths, from our comming forth of the Citie of Balenas A- the River, erer, to that wee were now eightie foure leagues distant from our faid burnt Citie; When therefore we were not about foure leagues from these people (which they call Tiembus, but wee Tiembus, called them Bona speransa) and they understood of our comming before, about four hundred men of them came peaceably vnto vs in their Boats, which they call Canoas, in every one of the which Canoas fixteene person sate. When therefore we met together in the River, our Generall gaue the Captaine of these Indians of Tiembus, (whom they call Zchara Wassu) a shirt, a red Cap, a Hatchet, and certaine other things. Which prefents beeing received, the laid Zchars 50 Waffa brought vs into their Towne, fetting before vs fish and flesh plentifully, and sufficient food, so that we were exceeding well contented. For if this Voyage of ours had continued yet

hundred men, who came together in the ships, fiftie were dead. These people of Tiembus, weare on either nostrill a blue starre artificially made of a white and blue stone; they are large men, and of a tall stature, but the women as well young as old, are very deformed with torne faces, and alwaies bloudie : from the Nauell to the knees they are courred with Cotton-cloth, the rest is naked. This people hath no other meare saue fish and fiesh, nor euer lived with any other thing. The strength of this Nation is thought to be fif eene thousand 60 men or more. The Skiffes or Boates which they wie are made of a Tree eightie foote long, and Desi Pens Men three broad, which (as the Fishermens Boats of Germanie) are rowed with Oares, faue that their deca being a-Oares are not bound with Iron.

but ten daies longer, we should all have died with famine, as even now in this Voyage of source

14. We abode foure whole yeeres in the forefaid Village or Towne, but our Generall or Ad- into Spaine mirall Petro Mendoza, by reason of his extreame and continuall sicknesse, in that hee was able dieth in the

neither to ftirre hand nor foote, and had fpent in this journey of his owne about fortie thousand Ducates of ready money, would no longer flay with vs in this Towne, but returneth in two Brigantines to Buenes Acres, to the foure greater Shippes, and there taking two of them, and fiftie Souldiers, he intended to returne into Spaine, but scarce halfe the journey performed, the hand of almightie God fo smote him, that he miterably died. But before his departure he cere tainly promited vs, that he would doe his best, as soone as he, or the Ships returned into Spaine, that two other Shippes should be fent backe to the River of Place (which by his will be had to ordained, and was faithfully also performed) furnished with Souldiers, provision of victuals. Herchandife, and other things necessary for fuch a voyage.

14. The name of the Commander of these two Shippes was Alfonso Gabrero, who also brought 10 with him two hundred Spaniards, and prouision for two yeares. He arrived at the Towne of Buen from Spameto. was Acres, in the years 1 539, where we left the other two Shippes (when wee departed) togewards the runt ther with one hundred and fixtie men. They prefently fent away a Shippe into Spaine, prouded for this purpose (for so the Counsell of the Emperours Maiestie commanded) and delivered orderly and at large to the faid Counfell the state and condition of these Countries, and people, and other circumstances. After this, our Generall John Eyollas confulting with Alfonso Gabrero. Martino Don Eyollas, and the reft of the Captaines, undgeth it to be most convenient to muster the Souldiers; which being done, together with ours, and those who came first from Spaine, fine hundred and fiftie men were found of thefe; they choose vnto them foure hundred men, leaung one hundred and fiftie in Tumbus. 16. By this order of the Captains, we faile up the river Par and, with thefe foure hundred men.

R. Parabel.

They faile turthey faile turthey perfect in eight Brigantines, leeking another Ruser, whereof we were told, called Parabol. at uer of Parane the which the Carier dwell, for thefe were reported to abound with Turkylo graine, and roots. count count of the which they make wine, and also fish, and flesh, and Sheepe as bigge as Mules, and Harts, Hogges, Eitridges, Hennes, and Geele. Departing therefore from the Hauen of Bona Speranta. with our eight Brigantines, failing foure leagues the first day, we came to a Nation called Curende which live with fielh and fish. This Iland is 12000. Strong of men fit for warre, and hath great flore of Canoes. This Nation is like the former Tumbus, with little flones hanging dangling in their notes. The men also are of a tall stature, but the women, as well your as old, detorthese Sausges, med, with rugged and bloudy faces: And are no otherwise apparelled then they of Tumbus, to 30 wit, couered with a Cotten cloath from the navell to the knees, as is before faid. These Indian haue great plenty of other skinnes. There men did liberally communicate vinto vs of their pouerty, or of that little they had, Fish, Flesh, Skinnes, to whom contrariwise wee gaue Glasses, Beales, Looking-glaffes, Combes, Kniues, and Fish-hookes, and abode with them two dayes. They gave vs also two men of Carsos, who were their captines, to be our Guides and Interpreters. 17. Sailing further hence, we came to another Nation called Gulgaifi, which is able to bring

40000 men for warre, into the field. This Nation also hath two flones at their nose; it

We came to Gultaili & Ma-

was thirty leagues distant from the Island Corenda, and they and the inhabitants of Tiembus have the fame language. They dwell upon a Lake fixe leagues long, and foure broat fituate on the left 🙍 fide of the River Parana. We stated here foure dajes, and these men imparted to vs of their pourtie, and we did the like to them : proceeding further thence, for the whole space of eighteens daies we light on no men, but afterward we came to a River, flowing into the Countrie it felfe. In that Country we found a great number of men come together, which they call Macuerendan These have nothing to eate, saue fish, and a little flesh, and are 18000 strong of warlike men, and have a great number of Boates. These men after their manner intertained vs courteously enough: they dwell on the other fide of the River Parana, rowards the right hand, have a differing tongue from the former, and are tall men, and of a good proportion, but their women also are very deformed. They are distant from those whom they call Gulgais fixtie foure leagues. While we re-Huge Serpent, mained idell among these people foure daies, we found an huge monitrous Serpent fine and twen- 10 ty foote long, lying on the land not farre from the shoare, which was as bigge as a man of a blacke colour, spotted with a deepe yellow. This Serpent we killed with a Gunne, which when the /ndiens faw, they wondered thereat with great aftonishment, for they themselves had never seene any fo great before.

This Serpent, as the Indians themselves said, had done much hurt voto them; for when they washed themselves in the water, the Serpents finding men there, wound their tailes about them, and having drawne them under water, devoured them, fo that the Indians knew not oftentimes what became of many of them. I diligently measured the length and thicknesse of this Serpent, which the Indians cutting in preces, every one carried part home vinto their houses, and being fod and roafted did after eate thereof.

co,and Nepe-

18. From hence failing further vp the River of Parana, in foure daies journey we came to Nation, called Zemais Saluasfee. The men of this Countrie are of a fhort stature, and of a gross body. They live with nothing else saue fish, flesh, and hony. Both men and women goe naked,25 they came into the world when they were first borne, so that they couer not their body so much

as with a thred, no not their prinie parts. They make warre with the Macuerendan; the fleth they eate is the flesh of Stagges, Boares, Estridges, Conies, which excepting the taile, are not much volike a Dor-mouse or Rere-mouse. They are sixteene leagues diffant from the Macheren. das, which distance we failed in foure daies, and abode one onely day with them.

Departing hence, we came vnto another Nation called Mepenes, who are 10000. ftrong. Mese-These people dwell scattered here and there, every where in that Countrie, extending it selte fortie leagues in length and breadth, yet within two daies both by water and land they may all come together. The multitude of the Boates they have exceedeth the number of themselves as we faw when we were with them : and in such a Boate or Canoa about twentie persons 10 are carried. This people received vs in hostite and warlike manner with fine handred Canoas vpon the River, but with little profit for themselves, for we flew many of them with our fliot, for they had never before feene either Gunnes or Christians. But comming to their houses, wee could prevaile nothing against them, seeing they were a whole league distant from the River of Parana, where our Ships lay. The waters also about their Towne were very deepe; which ran out of a Lake, so that we could performe nothing against them, that was of any worth, fane that we burned and deftroyed two hundred and fiftie Canoas which we had taken. Neither did we thinke it good alfo for vs, to depart fo farre from our Shippes. feeing it was to be feared leaft they would affaile vs from the other fide : We returned cherefore to our Shippes. This people of Mepenes fight onely upon the water, and is diffant from the former Countrie of

20 Zemais Salnaifco, from whence we departed ninetie fiue leagues.

10. Sailing up higher from thence, and in eight daies space arriving at a certaineRiver, we light Orthe River on a Nation that was very populous, called Cueremaghas, which also liveth onely with fifth and Parabeland the fielh. They have Cherrie trees, of the which they make wine. This people bestowed their best people, wereaffections youn vs, and curreoully imparted those things vnto vs whereof we stood in neede. maghas, and dy-The people are of a huge and tall stature, both men and women. The men haue a little hole in the smeethat their noise, into the which, for ornament, they put a Parrats feather. The women paint their Men or tall faces with long blew streakes, which all the time of their life are never put out. They couer stature. their privities with Cotten cloath, from the nau-Il to the knees: from the forefaid people of Their gallintry Mepenes, to these Cheremaghas are fortie leagues: so we staied in this place three daies.

Departing thence, we came to another Nation, called Aygaic, which also liveth with fish Aygais, and fielh. The men and women are of a tall flature : the women like the former paint their faces, and couer their prinities after the fame manner. When therefore we arrived on their coaft. taking armes, in hostile manner they relisted vs, and would have stopped our passage. We order red our batta le both by land and water, and fighting with them flew many of them fifteene alfo of our men were flaine. These Aygain are thout warriers on the water, but not so by land, Being ready to fight against vs. they had conveighed away their wives and children to another place before, and had hidden, whatfocuer promion of meate or other like things they had, fo that we could get nothing from them. Their Village is scituate neere the Riner called lepidus, having the River called Parabellon the other fide, descending from the Montainous Countries 49 of Pern, neere the Citic Fuech Kamin. Thele Aygans are diltant from the forefaid Cueremachas

thirtie fine leagues.

20. Departing from these people, we came to a Nation called Carios, fiftie leagues distant Of the people from the Agais, with whom (by Gods grace) we found (as was told vs) plentie of Mais, Potatoes Carins. and Mandischpobier, having the tafte of a Chestnut, of which they make wine. They have also fish, flesh, wilde Bore, Estridges, Indian Sheepe, as big as our Mules, also Conies, Hens, Goates, and fuch like : fufficient plency of Honie, whereof, by boiling it, they make a kinde of Coine. This Country also aboundeth with Cotten.

Thele people of Carios inhabit a large Countrie, extending it felfe three hundred leagues in Carios cultomes length, and breadth: they are men of a flort flature, and thicke, and more able to indure worke

and labour then the reft. The men have a little hole in their lippes, and yellow Christall 50 therein (which in their language they call Parabel) of two spannes long, and of the thicknesse of a quill or reede. The men and women both in this Countrie, goe all naked, as they were created of God. Among it their Indians the Father fels the Daughter, the Husband the wife, Sometimes also the Brother doth either sell or change the Sister. They value a Woman at a Shirt, a Knife, a Hatchet, or some other thing of this kinde. These Carios also eate mans flesh, if they can get it. For when they take any in the warres, whether they be men or women , yong or old, they fatten them, no otherwise then wee doe Hogges. But they keepe a woman some yeeres, if the be yong, and of a commendable beautie, but if in the meane time, the apply not her felfe to all their defires, they kill, and eate her, making a folemne banquet, as marriages are wont 60 to be celebrated with vs. But they keepe an old woman, till the dye of her owne accord. Thefe

Caries undertake longer iournies then any of these Nations upon the River of Place. They are couragious and fierce in battaile, and their Villages and Townes are fituate vpon the River Parama, on an high and mounting land.

21. The Citie of thele people (which the Inhabitants call Lampere) was compaffed with a

double bulwarke cunningly made of timber, as with a hedge or inclosure, every trench being of the bredth and thicknesse of a man, and one bulwarke or trench was twelue paces distant from the other. The trenches being digged a fathome deepe into the earth, were so high aboue the ground, as a man might reach with the length of a Sword. They had also Pits and Caues fife teene paces diffant from the wallscaft vp the height of three men, in the middeft whereof pikes were stucke, yet not appearing aboue ground, as sharpe pointed as a Pinne. They made these Pits so couered with straw, putting twigs and branches therein, with a little earth strowed betweene, that we Christians pursuing them, or being readie to assault their Towne, might fall into them. But they cast these pits for themselves, and at length they sell into them : for when our Generall lohn Eyolkas, gathering all his Souldiers together, who were not about three hundred (for they left fixtie to guard the Brigantines) ordering and ranging the companies, went against their Citie Lampere, they vndertlanding before of our comming, making a stand a Musket that of with their armie of foure thousand men, furnished with Bowe and Arrows after their manner, commanded that we should be told, that they would prouide vs victuall, and other necessaries, desiring vs to goe backe and returne vnto our Ships, that so departing as sooneas we could, we might peaceably returne to our companions. But it was neither good for our Generall, nor our felues, that we should consent to their request : for this Nation and Countrie, by reason of the plenty of victuall, was also most fit, and commodious for ve, especially when in The Spaniards foure whole yeares past, we had not leene a morfell of bread, living onely with fish and flesh, and in foure yeeres oftentimes also in great penurie.

a morfell of

Theie Caries therefore taking their Bowe and Arrowes, entertained and faluted vs therewith. But as yet, wee had no minde to hurt them, but commanded to fignific vnto them, that they should be quiet, and we would become their friends. But they would not be so contented, for they had not yet tried our Gunnes and Swords. When therefore we came fomewhat neerer unto them, wee discharged our brasse Peeces against them. Which when they heard, and faw that so many men sell downe dead, and when neither Bullets, nor Arrowes appeared, but holes onely were seene in their bodies, they wondred with astonishment, and horribly terrified, tooke their flight in troopes; ouerthrowing one another like Dogs: and while with great celeritie they haften to shelter themselues in their Towne, more then three hundred men, in that amased feare, fell into the forefaid pits, which themselves had digged,

Afterward comming to their Citie, we assaulted it, they couragiously defending themselves. till the third day. But when they could detend themselves no longer, and were much afraid or their wives and children, which they had with them in the Towne, they earnefly entreated our fauour and mercie, promiting, that they would doe any thing for vs, and for our fakes, at our pleasure, fo that wee would spare their liues. In this stirre inxteene of our men were slaine. They brought alfo to our Generall Eyelas, fixe women, among which the el.left was but eighteene yeeres old, they prefented alto fixe Stags, and another wilde beaft, entreating vs to flay with them. They gave two women to the Souldiers, to ferue them for Laundreffes and other feruices. They also prouided vs victuals, and other necessaries for foode. And to peace was concluded betweene them and vs.

A Caffle is

22. These things being so done, the Corios were compelled to build vs a great House. of stone, timber, and earth, that the Christians might have a place of refuge, if hereafter they mo-Frequents cal-bed the affiamp insurie. Wee tooke this Village or Citie of thems by affault the yeere of Christ 1329 in the feast of the Assumption and gaue it that name. And here wee abode two moneths. These Carios are fitte leagues distant from the Argais, and from the Hand of Bona fer anza, which the Tiembus inhabite about three hundred thirdie and foure leagues.

Making therefore a league with these Carios, they promised, that they would aide vs, when we went to the warres, and if we were to undertake any ieruice against the Ayeas, they would fend eighteene thouland men with vs. When our Generall had thus determined, taking three 50 hundred Spaniards, with these Caries, going downe the River of Parabel, with the streame, wee marched thirtie leagues by land, till we came to the place, where the faid Areas dwelt twe flue them both old and young, in the old place where wee left them, vnawares in their houses, while tfley yet flept, early in the morning betweene three and foure of the clocke (for the Carior had diligently fearched out all) oppreffing them even to the death; for the Caries have this cuitome that being conquerers in warre, they kill all without any commiferation or pitie.

Argais des

After this, taking away fine hundred Canoas or Boats, we burnt all the Villages to the which we came, doing much hurt besides. After one moneth past, some of the people of Ayeais came who vs, who being abient farre from home, were not prefent at this fight, and crauing pardon, yeelded them telues into our hands.

23. Continuing therefore in this Citie of the Assumption of Marie fixe moneths, we quietly refreshed our selues. In the meane space our Generall Don Eyollas enquired amongst these Carios, of the Nation called Piembos, from whom hee received answere, that it was almost an hundred leagues diftant from the Citie of Affumption, and that they dwelt up the Ruer Parabol. Being

CHAPIA S.I. Caracorilan Commodities I. Evoltar of the Souldiers flane beered. 1258

further demanded, whether they had plentie of food, and how and with what they lived, where their behaulour and conditions were? They and were againe, that these Palembos have no other meate and prouision, but Flesh , and Fish , and also Ceratia, which they call Algorobo , whereof shey make Meale, which they eate with their Filh. Moteouer also they make Wine thereof. which may be compared to our fweet Wine, for the pleasant neffe thereof.

The Generall musters the Souldiers, and out of fourt thindred men , chooseth three hundred. whom he faw better furnished with Armes and other things then the rest, leaving the other hunwhom he aw occur unammed the description. We therefore layle up the River, and al-wates in first leagues diffance we arrived at lome Village floutet upon the River of Parabot, whose parabot well

to Inhabitants came to meete vs withall necessarie prouition.

24 Departing thence wee came to a Mountaine called Fernande, like vnto that which they call Bogenberg. There we light on the faid Paiembos, twelve leagues diftant from Weibingo. There peoble Entertallied vi friendly and peaceable, but with a treacherous and deceitfull minde, as you Weibing. that understand hereaftet. They therefore brought vs into their houses, and gaue vs Fish, Flesh, Painnes treand Coratte, or bread to eate, and so we abode nine whole dails with them. In the meane time chery. our Generall commanded to enquire of them, whether the Nation called Carcarilo were known vnto them? They answered him, that coincerning them, they knew nothing, but what they Carrifo. had heard by report, to wit, that they dwell farre hence, in a Countrie abounding with Gold and Silver, but that they had never feene any of them. They added also moreover, that thefe Ca-20 recenfer were wife men as we Christians are, and that they abound with Victuals, to wit, Maiz, Mandereb, Mandaus, Potales, Mandereb Nach te tu, Mandereb Purpy, Mandereb Ade, Mande called Sherpe parea, and other rootes; and with flesh allo of Indian Sheepe, called Amte, which are a kinde of of Pensandir. beaft like Affes, having feete like Kine, of a thicke and groffe skinne; and that they had plentie fremeth bizalio of Conies, Harts, Geefe, and Hens : but that none of the Faiembor had ever feene them, as ger and ftronshey remember, but that they had it onely by report of others; but we found afterwards affile ger in thefe

redly how all things went. Hauing learned this, our Generall required to have some of the Pagembes to goe with vs into the Author shat Countrie, whereupon they readily offered themselves, and their chiefe Commander pre- rode on one, Sently appointed three hundred Paiember to goe with vs, to carry our victuals, and other neces. which in Peru to faries for vs. The Generall commanded to prepare, and of five Shippes he caused three to be de-burthen, stroyed. To the other two he appointed fittle men of vs Christians, whom he commanded that in his ablence they should stay there foure moneths, expecting his returne, and that if within the time appointed he returned not voto vs, they should goe backe with these two Boates to the Citie of the Affinmption. But it fo fell out, that we flaied whole fixe moneths with thefe Paientbor, and neuer heard any thing in the meane while of our Generall Islan Eyellas; and prouifion of victuall failed vs. and therefore of necessitie, with Dominiche Eyellas, who in the meane time was left to command vs, we were to returne with our Shippes to the forefaid Citie of the Af-

25. The Generall departing from the faid Paiembes, he came to a Nation called Maperus, joy- Naperus, 40 ned in league and friendship with the Paiembes, who had nothing but fiesh and fish. And it is a populous Nation of these Naperus; our Generall tooke certaine vnto him, to shew him the way, for they were to goe through divers Countries with great labour and in great penurie of all things; for they had tried the violence of many who refifted them in hoftile manner, the halfe part of the Christians almost being dead; being brought therefore to a certaine Nation called Peilennos; he could goe no further, but was compelled to goe backe againe with all his peo- Peilennos, ple, except three Spaniards, which by reason of their weake effect of body, he left with the

Our Generall therefore lohn Eyollas being in reasonable good health himselfe, went backe againe with all his people and Souldiers, and quietly refreshed himselfe with all his fellowes for to three daies with these Naparus, for the people were faint, being over tired with the journey : and munition and weapons failed vs, which the Naperus and Patentos vinderstanding, configure among themselves, to kill the Generall John Eyollas, with all his followers, which also they performed: for when our Generall marched with his Christians from Naperns, toward the Paiember, and had almost now gone halfe the way, these two faid Nations, set woon them vnawares in a thicket or Forrest (which they chole for their ambush) through which the Chrifians were togoe. There the Generall, together with his ficke and faint Souldiers, was flaughtered by them, as of fo many mad Dogges, fo that not one escaped.

ð. II.

MARTIN EYOLLAS made Generall. GABRER OS comming: SCHERYES Voyage. NVNNER his infolance. Diners people and accidents described.

M the meane space, while wee fiftie men returning to the Assumption, expect our Generall, we understand what happened, by report of a certaine Indian flaue of loke Eyeller who was now dead, given him of the Perfenner, who being skilfull in the Language escaped the hands of the enemies, he declared all the whole matter. This was further confirmed by two of the Paiembes taken Prifoner, and it feemed good to vs Christians, that we should create Marine Eyellas often named to vs., our chiefe Commander and Generall.

watill we received other commandement from the Emperours Majeffie. Our Generall therefore gaue commandement, that foure Brigantimes should be prepared, and

taking I co. men of the company, leaning the rest in the City of the Assemption of Mary, hee made thew that he would gather together the 150, men left with the Tembus (as wee faid before) and also these too. Spaniards who abode with the ships in the Citie of Buena Meres, into the said City of the Assumption. With these foure Brigantines therefore hee went downe the Rivers of Paraball, and Parana with the streame, and came to Tiembus (which first place we called Bona foranza, but the Caltle wherein our Garrifon Souldiers were, wee named Corpas

But before we came from the Assembles to Tiembus, a certaine man of the Christians, to wit, Captaine France Ruis, a Priest called John Bahan, and a certaine Secretarie John Ermodus, as it wer- fubordinate Gouernours of the Christians, tooke treacherous and wicked counfell together. to kill the Captaine of the Indians of Tiombre, and certaine other Indians with him : which wice

ked attempt they performed also in deed, so that, not without great impietie before our Generall Marin Don Eyellas his comming, and ours, they had flaine those Indians, from whom a long time they had received no small benefits. Our Generall therefore commanded Anthonio Mendoza (whom he left as Commander in the Castle of Corpus Christi, with a Garrison of 120, of 20 our men, giving him also provision of victuall) if his life and fafetie were deere vnto him, that in any case he should beware of the Indians, and should diligently keep watch and ward, by day and night. And if the Indians making frew of friendship should come vnto them, that they should deale courteoully with them, performing all friendly offices vnto them, yet in the meane time they should carefully look vnto themselves, & be very warie in all things, left any damage should be done to themselues, or other Christians. These things being thus or dered and dispoled , hee prepareth himselfe to continue his intended journey, taking with him shofe three persons, who were Authors of the murder. When they were now about to take their purney, one of the Nobles of Tiembus Zuche Lyems by name, although he were a great friend of the Christians, yet by reason of his wife and children, and other Kintmen of his, and familiars, compelled to content 44 to their counsels and practifes the admonished our General Evollar, to cause all the Christians to be conveyed downe the River with him, for now all the Countrey had made readie all their forces, that either they might wholly cut them all off, or drive them all out of the Countrey. To whom our Generall Martin Don Eyollas answered, that hee would shortly returne : and that his people had firength enough to fustaine the affault or force of the Indians, and added moreover, that hee detired, that Zuche Lyemi with his Wife and children, and all his familiar friends, and all his people would come ouer to the Christians, and toyne himselfe with them, which also he promited,

28. Eight daies after or thereabouts, the aforesaid Indian Zuche Lyenne, fundeth one of his brethren Suelapa by name, bat deceitfully and treacheoully, and requefted our Captaine Men- 50 doza to grant him fixe Christians furnished with thot and other weapons, for he would bring our all his substance, with his whole Family vnto vs, and from henceforth dwell amongst vs. Our Captaine being perswaded by these promises, gives him not fixe but fiftie Spaniards, exceeding well provided and furnished with armour and shot, the Tiembus came vnto them, and intertained them with Indas kiffe, bringing fiesh and fish, that they might eate: now when the Christians began to fall to their meate, their friends and conforts, and other Tiembus gathered together amongft them, with those also who hide themselves, in the field and houses, fall voon these hite flaine by Tiem men, and so consecate the Banquet with them, that no man escaped aliue, except one Boy only Butreacherie, called Calders, who got out of their hands. Afterwards they fet vpon vs with 10000, firong and befreged the Village (which we held) continually for fourteenedajes, jatending who lly this 60 that being brought under, they might utterly defired vs. but God in mercie defeated their pur-

After this, our Generall is carried downe the River, and leaveth vs at Corpus Christia

pofes, and overthrew their enterprizes.

They had made themselves long Speates or Jauelings, of the Swords which they had gotten from the flaine Christians, wherewith they fought against well with the edge and point, dant-

ting our Village day and night. Our Captaine Anthony Mendoza armed with a two hand Sword, ting our vising very and the state of the Port, neere which some Indianalay in ambush, so that they could not be seene. deve slaine, Being gone therefore out of the Port, the Indian; thrust him through with their lauelings, to that hee prefently fell downe dead upon the ground. But because the Indians wanted victuals. they could fuffaine themselues no longer heere, but were compelled to leave the siege and bee gone.

After this two Brigantines laden with prouision of victuall and other necessaries arrived at our Port, which our Generall tent vnto vs from the Towne of Buenas Acres, to maintaine our felues therewith till his comming. As therefore wee were cheered at the comming of them, fo they 20 who arrived with the Brigantines, incredibly forrowed and lamented for the flaughter of the Christians. Wee therefore determined by a common Councell (which thing also feemed to bee beit for vs) to flay no longer in this Village of Corpus Chrifts, abiding with thefe Trembus, but. that being carried downe the River, gathering all our forces together, we returne to Bnena Acres, to our Generall Marsin Dominicke Eyous. Who beeing frighted at our comming, was vehemently grieued (for the flaughter of the people, doubtfull how to confult what he should first doe, feeing also victuall and other necessarie things failed vs.

29. While therefore we continued fine dayes at Buenae Acres, a Carauell came to vs out of Spains, and brought vs newes, that a ship was arrived at Saint Katharme, whose Captaine Allun-20 Gabrero, brought with him 200. Souldiers out of Spaine, which when our Captaine certainly 20 knew, he commanded one of the leffer ships, which they call a Galley, to bee made readie, that Galtern comhe might fend her as foone as possibly he could to Saint Kaibarines into Brasil, which was 200, ming out of leagues diltant from Buenas Acres: making Gonzallo Mendoza Captaine thereof to governe the Spaine with finp: giuing him charge also, that if arriving at Saint Katharines, he found the ship there, they aco. Souldiers should lade one of the ships with Rice, Mandeoch, and other victuals, as seemed good vinto him. Gonzallus Mendoza therefore receiuing this commandement, requested the Generall Mertin D. Eyollas to give him seven of the Souldiers whom hee might trust, for this Voyage which hee promifed. Hee therefore chose mee, and fixe Spaniards to himselfe, with twentie other

Setting faile from Bnenas Acres, in the space of a moneth we arrived at Saint Katharines, and 30 finding the flip there; which came out of Spaine, together with Captaine Allunzo Gabrere, and all the Souldiers, wee greatly rejoyced. Abiding with them two moneths, wee laded our thip with Rice, Mandeoch, and Turkelb Corne, as full as it could hold, fo that no more could bee put in both the ships to carrie with vs. And the day before All Samts; were arrived at the River Parana, twentie leagues yet diffant from Buenas Aeres. Both the ships met together that night, whose Pilots asked one another, whether wee were now in the River of Parana: when our Pilot affirmed we were, the other faid the contrarie, that we were yet almost twentie leagues of, For when twentie or more ships saile together, in the Evening at the going downe of the Sunne they meete together, and one of the Mafters asketh the other, what way he had made that day, and with what wind hee would faile by night, left they should bee divided one from the others.

and with what wind nee would rake by might, better, which breadth of The River of Parana Visiffs, at the Bay or mouth thereof is thirtie leagues broad, which breadth of The River of Parana Visiffs, at the Bay or mouth thereof is thirtie leagues broad, which breadth of Createffeed The River of Fartage suggest, at the bey of mounts the Port of Saint Gabriel, where the River Parts, Parana is eighteene leagues broad. After this our Pilot asketh the Mafter of the other fhip, whother hee would laile after, to him the other made answere, that night was now at hand, and therefore he would continue still at Sea, till the rising of the Sunne, and that he would not make to the Land in the vnseasonable night. And this Pilot in guiding his ship was more circumspect then ours was, as the euent afterward declared. Therefore our Mafter held on his intended

30. Sayling by night, a mighty storme troubled the Sea, so that about twelve or one of the 30. Sayining of migray anguly control of the Sea, we deferred Land, and our clocke before Sunne rifing, before we had caft our Anchors in the Sea, we deferred Land, and our 50 thip was much bruifed when wee were yet a league or more from the Land. Wee could finde no other remedie for this mischiefe, then making our Prayers vnto God, to intreate him to be merother emeute to this internet, that making the was broken in more then a chouland pieces, and fitteeneof our men, and fixe of the Indian; perilhed being drowned in the waters. Some taking hold of great pieces of Timber (warmer out. I with fue of my companions escaped by the helpe of a Mait. But of fitteene perions, we found not fo much as one carkaffe. Afterward we were to trauell fittle leagues on foot, when we had loft all our clothes, with all the victuals in the thip, so that we were constrained to sustaine our selves, only with Rootes and other Fruites, which we could find here and there in the fields, while wee came to the Port of Same Gabriel,

where we found the foreraid ship with her Captaine, who arrived there thirtie dayes before vs. But our Generall Martin D. Exollar had heard before by intelligence, of this our milhap, and thinking that we were all dead, commanded fone Maffes to be read for our fooles health. When They are we were brought to Buenas Aeres, our Generall commandeth the Captaine of our thip, and the wracked. Matter thereof to be cited, an itinal to their triall, who without doubt had hanged the Pilot, if Indiscent the hanter thereor to be cited, and a man to then trian, who we have condemned for four yeers to lot, for great and earneit intreases had not been yied, yet hee was condemned for four yeers to lot,

Gathering together all our companies to Buena Aeres, our Generall commandeth the Brieantines to be made ready, and all the Souldiers to bee thipped therein, and commandeth the reit of the shippes to be burned, yet preserving the Iron Vessels and Instruments. Wee therefore once more faile vo the River of Parana againe, and arriving at our forelaid Citie of the Allumption of Marie, itaying there two yeeres, we expected further commandement from the Emperours Majesty.

Alustes Nun-

46. norfes to

the River of

Plate. And he

was 8. whole

moneths in

this Voyage.

first in the

yeere 1542.

hee arrived at

21. In the meane time while these things are thus done, a certaine Captaine Alustrez Nunnez. Cabeca de Vacha commeth out of Spaine, whom Cafars Majestie had created Generall. and with toure hundred men, and thirtie Hories divided into foure thips, of the which two were greater, and the other two Carauels.

The foure ships arrived in Brasill at the Hauen of Wiesaiy, or Saint Katharine, to seeke provi-Note. Franciffion of victuall. And when the Captaine had fent the two Carauels eight leagues from the Hacus Lopez chap. pen to feeke victuals, fo great a fforme tooke them, that they perified, being broken all to piethis Alumer, ces in the Sea, the men not withflanding which were in them being faued. When Aluarez the So writeth of A sunequation to the Commander knew this for a certainty, hee durift not put to Sea any more in the greater the years 1541. greater ships; he therefore commanded vtterly to destroy them, and travelling by land towards he was fent the River of Plate, at length came vnto vs, to the Assumption of foure hundred men bringing from Colars three hundred with him, the rest dying either of famine, or of cruell diseases. Micitie, with 400. men, and

From hence the Captaine was eight whole moneths in his journey, and from the Citie of the Assumption, to S. Katherines are reckoned three hundred leagues. This is to be understood of the 20 next and most direct way, for from the Affamption, downe the River to the Sez, there are three hundred thirtie foure leagues, and to Saint Katharine three hundred. Aluarez Nunnez alfo brought the title of his gouernment out of Spane, granted vnto him from Cafars Maiestie, and therefore required, that our Generall Martin Don Eyollas, should yeeld up the whole government vnto him, which thing alto Don Eyollas, and all the company with all their heart were readie to performe, yet vpon this condition, that hee should make good proofe also, that this power and authoritie was granted vnto him from the Emperours Maieftie. But the whole afthe Allumpion.
Shipwracke & fembly could not wrest this from him, only the Priests, & one or two of the Captains affirmed it.

23. The faid Aluarez Numez therefore taking a view of the Souldiers, found the number of 100, menlost the whole Army to be eight thouland men. Making friendship allowith Martin Don Eyellas, 30 each iware to other brotherly fidelity and friendship, to that Eyollas should have no lesse power to command the people, then he had before. The Gouernour commandeth nine Brigantines to be made ready that he might faile up the River as farre as it was possible. But before the ships were made readie, he sendeth three Brigantines with one hundred and fifteene Souldiers before commanding, that they should go as far as they could, and seeke out the Indians that had Maiz.

Sauage nation of Suruculis.

Hee joyned also two Captaines vnto them, Antonio Gaberro, and Diego Tabellonus. These therefore in the beginning come to a Nation, called Surrucusis, having Maiz, Mandeoch, and other Roots of that kind, and Mandnes also (which are like our Filbirds) and fish and flesh. The men carrie in their lips a blue stone like the bone of a Die,

Village of

With this Nation we left our ships, and with them certaine of our companions, to whom we 40 committed the custodie thereof: but having gone foure dayes journey into the Countrey, wee came to a Village pertayning to the Carios, being three hundred strong, inquiring therefore diligently there, of the state of that Countrey, wee received honest and peaceable answeres from them. Returning thence vnto our thips, and going downe the River of Parabol, we came to the Nation Achkeres. There we found Letters lent from Aluaro the Gouernour, whereby hee commanded to hang up the chiefe Captaine of these Indians, Achkeres by name. Which commandement our Captaine obeyed without delay, and we returned home.

Achkeres hanged.

33. The whole Countrey of Dabero and Carios, were vp in Armes, loyning their forces together to inuade the Christians. For the King of Dabero was the brother of that Achteres, whom the Christians hanged, whose death hee would most seuerely auenge vpon the Christians. Our 50 Governour armeth himselfe in the meane time against his Enemies, to vindertake some serviceagainst them. He therefore determined with the consent of his sworne brother Marin Dos Eyollas, that this Eyollas should goe against the faid Dabero, and Carios with foure hundred Chri-Gians and two thousand Indians, and either drive them out of the whole Country, or etterly roote them out. The faid Eyollas faithfully executing this commandement, leadeth his Armie out of the City of the Affamption, and meeting with the enemy, by the commandement of Cafars Maiestie first perswadeth Dabero to peace and quietnesse, but he little regarding this, would admit no treatie of peace, for he had gathered a mightie Army, fenced his Villages with Bulwarks or Rampires of wood fastened in the ground, and had compassed them about with a triple fence of takes or piles, having also call rp deepe and mightie pits, whereof we spoke before in the 21. 60 Chapter, all which wee found out before by diligent fearch. Wee flood still quietly without Armeetill the fourth day , before wee proclaimed war against them , but the fourth day in There t kin. the morning, three hou es before the riling of the Sunne, making an affault, wee violently rushed and the City and whomfoeuer we found there, we flue, yet taking many women, and preferring

them from flaughter, which afterward turned to our great benefit. In this affault twenty fixe of the Christians were flaine, many of the people being wounded and hutt. And many also of the indians on our part perished but of the Caniballs 3000. slaine, Not long after Dabero, came vinto vs Dalets comiwith his people, and craued fauour and pardon. In the next Expedition Dabero fent to Numez metains 2000. Indians to aide vs. From the Carior allo he commandeth nine Brigantines to bee furnished. all which being done, 800. Christians he taketh 900. leaving 300. at the Affampion, over whom he made lobn Satenfler Captaine. With this Army of 500. Christians, and 2000. Indians, we faile vo the River of Parabel: 2.1d the Carios had with them 83. boats, wee Christians had mine Brigantines, in every one of the which there were two horses. But the horses were conveyed over

10 Land 100, leagues, and we were tarried upon the River unto the Mountaine of Saint Ferdinand. At that place taking our horses againe into the ships, from thence afterward we were carried torward, vntill we came to our Enemies the Paiember, but they not looking for our comming, con- Paiember. neved away themselves by flight with their wives and children , having first fee their houses on fire. After this we trauelled 100. leagues together, and light not on any people, at length wee came to a Nation, whose people are called Balchareper, who have by fish and fieth. It is a populous Balchareper Nation, and they inhabit a large Countrey of 100, leagues broad. They have fo great a number of boats, that it is incredible to be written. Their women couer their Secrets. These people refuling to talke with vs. fled from vs. Departing from them, wee came to another Nation called Surneusis, 90. leagues diftant from the Bascherepes, the people out of this Countrey louingly Surneusis, 20 and friendly entertained vs. Euery Housholder of these Surmensis dwelleth in a peculiar and pro-

per house of his owne with his wife and children. The men haue a round piece of wood hanging at their eares like a Calecus Die. The women have Christall of a Skie colour, of a finger thicke hanging at their lips, they are wel-fauoured to behold, and goe altogether naked. Their people abound with Turkilb Corne, Mandacch, Mandais, Padadet, fifth and fleth. And it is a vely populous Countrey.

Our Captains commanded to inquire of them concerning a Nation called Carchacaris, and alfo of the Carior. They could tell vs nothing of the Carchacaris; but concerning the Carios carcharait. they faid, that they were with them at their houses. But it was not true, having learned this, our Generall commanded to prepare our felues for the journey, for hee determined to goe

30 further into the Country. He appointed an hundred and fiftie Souldiers to flay with the (hips, to whom he gaue proution of victuall for two yeeres. Taking the other three hundred and fiftie together with the eighteene horses, and twenty thousand Indians or Carios, who came from the Affumption with vs, he went further into the Countrey, but with little benefit to vs. For our Generall was not a man fit for fo great anattempt; befides all the Captaines and Souldiers hated Generall no: him, for his preverse and rigorous carriage towards the Souldiers. Having travelled therefore eight belowed. teene dayes journey they neuer fet eye neither woon the Carios, her any other people, and food alto failed them, to that our Generall was of necessicie to returne againe vnto the shippes. But yet Her seturneth. our Generall chargeth a certaine Spaniard Franciscus Rieffere, with tenne other Spaniards to goe forward, commanding them that if after ten dayes journey they found no people, they should 40 recurne vnto the thips, where they would ftay for them. It happened therefore that they light

vpon a populous Nation, which had plentie of Turkilb Corne, Mandesch, and other Roots. But the Spaniards durft not come in their fight, and returning to vs, fignified this vnto our Generall, who was very defirous to have gone into this Countrey againe, but he was hindered by the waters, that he could not proceed.

He therefore commandeth a thip to be furnished againe, wherein he put eighty Souldiers, and Ernendus Rick making Ernandsu Rieffiere, Captaine injoyneth him to goe vp the River of Parabel, to discover fiere sayleth vo the Nation called Scherner, and therein two dayes journey, and no more to enter into the heart the River to of the Countrey, and after that to make report vnto him of the Countrey, and the Inhabitants the Guebucus thereof. Departing by thin from our Congrell, the first day was a constant. It figured debits thereof. Departing by thip from our Generall, the first day we came to a certaine Nation called Guebuecusis, on the other lide of the Countrey, whose people inhabit a certaine Iland, contay. Guebuecusis, ning thirty leagues in length, which the River Parabol compaffeth. They feed upon Mandeoch, Il no in the Maiz, Manduis, Padades, Mandepore, Porpe Bachkeku, and other Roots, and allo voon flesh and Rivers

file. The men and women are like the former Suruenfis in Phisnomy and fauour. Wee stated this day with them, When we were to depart the next day, they accompanied vs with ten Canoas or Boats : twice in the day time they filhed, and caught Venison, which they gaue vs. Boats : twice in the day time they filhed, and caught Vention, which they gaue vs.

Spending nine dayes in this icurney wee arrived after at the Nation called Abbiers, where a Menotall Menotall Menotall great multitude of people were guthered together. The men and women, are of a great and tall flature.

stature, the like whereof I faw not in all the Countrey of the River of Place, and these Achte- They are calres are thirty leagues distant from the forefaid Surmonfisthey live by no other thing fave fish and 1 d debenes, zes are thirty leagues diffant from the foreland Surucufus, they hue by no other thing sauc mis and 60 fields the women court their fecters. We flated one day with their Abbkeres, and from hence the fand Surucufus returned with their ten Boats or Canoas to their Village. Afterward our Captaine disso the Ernandus Rieffere, requested the Achkeres, to shew him what way they might goe to the Scher- flore (1 'ecmes, whereto they were very readie, and fent eight Canoas or Boats from their Village with vs, meth (of thes? and twice every day they caught fish and fiesh, that so we might have sufficient plenty of food, creatings in

Vuuuu 2

The those parte

Indian fortifi-

26. The sinth day after our departure from them, we came to the Schernes, vnto whom from the said Achkeres, are thirtie fixe leagues. This Nation is very populous, yet they are not true and naturall, among whom the King himfelfe hath an house. But these Schernes maintaines Priest export in the Mysteries of Religion, and have a ring of wood hanging at their eares. These men also weare a blue Christall in their lips, of the shape and bignesse of Dice, they are painted with a blue colour from the paps to the prinities, with that excellency that I thinke a Painter is not to be found in all Germany which could performe the like fo finely and artificially. They goe Conning pain naked, and are beautifull after their manner.

Pri. Rs and woo.den Earings.

We stayed therefore one day with these Schernes, and after going fourteene leagues forward in three dayes journey, at length wee came to the place where their King dwelleth, from the rewhich the Inhabitants are called Sebermes. His Country containeth only four leagues in length. Yet hath he a Village fituate vpon the River of Parabol. Therefore leaving our fhips heere, we committed the custodie thereof to twelue Spaniards, that returning wee might vie them for our defence. Wee also intreated the Sebernes dwelling there, that in the meane space they would friendly connerse with the Christians, and intreate them courteously, which also they did. with necessaries for our journey, passing ouer the River Parobol, wee arrived at that place, where the feate and house of the King was. Who, when we were almost yet a league from him. commeth forth to meete vs guarded with more then 12000. men in a Champion plaine, yet friendly and peaceably. The path wherein they marched, was eight paces broad, ffrewed with flowers and grafte on every fide, and made fo cleane, that not fo much as any little flone, flick, 20 or firaw appeared. The King had also with him his Muticians, whose Instruments were like our crooked Trumpets, which wee call Schalmes. Hee gave commandement alfo, that they should hunt Stags and other wilde beaft on both tides of the way which hee went, fo that they tooke

about thirtie Sags and twentie Eftridges or I and w, which spectacle was very pleasant to be-

hold. When we were entred into the Villige, he alwaies appointed one looging for two Chri-

flians. But our Captaine together with his Seruants or followers was brought into the Kines

He is wont to have Musicke at the Table, and at his meate, when soener he pleaseth. For then

women, which dances and skippings seemed so strange vnto vs , that looking vpon them , wee 30

they play upon the Flutes or Pipes, men leading the dances and skipping with most beautifull

had almost forgot our selves. In the reft the Schermes are like those people of whom wee spoke

before. The women make them gownes or upper garments of thinne Cotton , almost like our

clothes which are some part filke, which we call Arras or Burfebet. They weave in their divers

shapes of Stags, Ettridges and Indian theepe, according as every of them is more skilfull in the

When we had stayed there foure dayes, this pettie King demanded of our Captaine what our

and Siluer. Therefore he gaue him a Crowne of Siluer weighing a pound and an halfe. He gaue

him also a plate of Gold of a spanne and an halfe long, and halfe a spanbroad, and certaine other

Gold : And that these things wherewithhe presented him, were the spoiles which in time past

That he made mention of the Amerones and of their riches, was very pleafing to vs to heare. Our Captaine therefore presently demandeth of the King, whether we might come to them by

things made cunningly wrought of Silver, and told our Captaine that he had no more Silver nor

he had gotten in war against the Amazons.

pu pose was, and whether we would goe! to whom he made this answere, that he fought Gold 40

ot the King.

Wild pompe

Stags and

Mulicke.

Weamers.

In these garments they sleepe, if the Aire happen to be somewhat cold, or putting them under them they fit upon them, or vie them at their pleasure for other services. These women are very

Gold and Sil-

Sea, or by the River, and how much further we had to goe, when wee were to take our journey towards them; whereunto he answered, that we could not goe to them by water but by land, and that in two whole moneths journey. 37. These women the Amazenes, have only one of their pappes, their Husbands come vnto them three or foure times in the yeere. And if the woman beeing with child by her Husband. bring forth a Male child, the fendeth him home again to his Father, but if it be a Female, the keepeth it with her : and feareth the right pap of it, that it may grow no more, which she dorh for this purpole, that they may be more fit to handle their Weapons and Bowes. For they are warlike women, making continuall war with their Enemies. Their women inhabit an Hand that is very large, on every fide compaffed with water, to whom there is no acceffe but by Caneas of Boats. The Amazones have neither Gold not Silver in this Hand, but they are reported to have great Treasures in the firme land, which the men inhabit. It is a very populous Nation, and is faid to haue a King called legues, and the King of Scherues told vs the name of the place. There- 60 fore the Captaine Ernandus Ruffiere defired the King of Schernes, to joyne certaine of his men with vs, to carry our bagge and baggage for vs, and then we would enter the heart of the Country to feeke those Amazones. He willingly affenteth thereunto, yet in the meane time admonaking vs, that the whole Countrie was now overflowed with waters, and therefore we should

hane a very difficult and vneally Iourney vnto them, and that wer could not early at this time come vato them. But we would not give credite to his words, but were instant to have the Indians joyned with vs. He therefore gaue twentie men to our Captaine, for his owne person, to carrie his provision and necessaries : and to every one of vs, he gave five Indians to ferue vs. and carriethat little which we had. For wee were to goe eight dayes Journey, wherein wee thould

But afterward we came to a certaine Nation called Siberis; who in their language and other Siberis. things were like the Schernes. Wee were to goesfor thele eight whole dayes, day and night in the water vp to the knees, and fometimes reaching as high as the waite : nor could we by any Wading Jourto meanes get out of them. And if we would make fire, we were of necessitie to put it woon a pile neg. orflacke made of great blockes or pieces of wood; and it fell out often, that when wee were Bellie-thifes, about to boile our meate, both the pot and the firefell into the water, to that after that wee were faine to be without our meate. And Gnats also troubled and vexed vs day and night, to Gnats,

that we could not doe our necessarie worke or bufinesse.

Wee therefore demanded of those Siberis, whether wee should yet have any more waters? who answered, that wee were yet foure dayes to walke in the waters; and atterward were to travell five dayes by Land, and at length wee should come to a Nation called Orethislen. They fignified also vinto vs. that wee were too few in number, and therefore that wee should returne. Butthe Schernes would not doe this; for wee thought rather to fend them backe vinto their 20 Towne, who had hitherto accompanied vs, but they reliated to doe it, faying, they were enjoyned by their King not to leave vs , but should continue with vs, virtil wee came out of the Countrie againe, These Siberis loyned ten men with vs , who together with the Scherwes (hould show vs the way to the fore-faid Orethwise. Wee were yet seven dayes more to Travels in hos tranell in the waters which were so hot, as if they had beene heat upon the fire, which was waters. ter also , having no other , wee were compelled to drinke . But some might peraduenture thinke, that it was River water, but at that time, showres of raine were so common and yfuall, that they filled the whole Countrie with water, which is altogether very plaine and even.

The ninth day we came vnto a certaine Village of the Nation Orethunfen, betweene ten and Orethunfen. en eleven of the clocke. And at twelve of the clocke, being come into the middelt of the Towne. we came vnto the Princes house. At that time a cruell and mightie Plague was very her, whereof Famine was the cause: for, two yeeres together, the Graf-hoppers had to eaten and Locusts. corrupted all manner of Corne, and the fruits of trees, that almost nothing was left them, which they might eate.

But our Captaine asked the Petie-King of this Nation, how many dayes Journey we get had to the Amazones? from whence he receiveth ani were ; That wee must yet trauch one whole The Amazons moneth, besides that all the Countrie was full of water.

The King of these Orethwisen, gaue our Captaine soure Plates of gold, and soure filter Rings, bryond the rewhich they put about their armes : but the Indians weare the Plates of gold on their forcheads gion of Trush; go for ornament, as our Nobles doe their Chaines, or Collars of Eiles hanged about their neckes, it the title be For thele things our Captaine gaue the King of the Indians an Hatchet , Kniues , and Beades, or Properly Pater-nofters, Barbers Scizzars, and fuch l.ke. Wee would willingly have craued more of them, same here debut wee durft not attempt it, because wee were but few in number, to that wee were forced to firibed. For stand in feare of them. For the multitude of these Indians was very great, and the Towne huge, warlike wines in fo much as I have not feene any greater or more populous throughout all India. For the Towne hung in tociewas very long, and broad.

28 Going backe therefore, we returned to the foresaid Siberis, and we Christians were ill fur-Gold and filnished with prouition of victuall, and other things, nor had we any meate, but the fruits of trees, uer, which they call Patmides, and Cardes, and other wilde roots growing under ground. And when we should returne vnto the Schernes, the halfe part of our people was deadly sicke, and that by reason of the water, through which wee were to wade for thirtie dayes together, so that wee Thirtied ext. could neuer turne afide, or get out of the same; and also by reason of the great scarlitie and ta- wading. mine, which we must indure in this Journey ; which calamitie was not a little encreased, in that we were compelled to drinke that althie and impure water. Abiding therefore foure dayes with Profitable these Schernes, with whom the King himselfe dwelleth, we were very louingly and bountifully tricke, entertained, and provided for. For the King gave commandement to his Subjects, to give visall things necessarie. Every man also had gotten for himselfe almost two hundred Du. acs onely by Cotton Gowns, and Silver, which we had gotten of them by fecret exchange of Kniues, Beades, Scizzers, and Glaffes.

60 After all this, being carried downe the River, wee returned to our Generall. But when wee came to the ships, the Generall commanded upon paine of death, that no man should goe out of the ship, and he also in proper perion comming to our Captaine, laying held of him, commanded him to be cast in Prison, and by violence tooke away from vs Souldiers, whatsoever we had gathered in this Iourney. And not contented with this, would have hanged our Captaine voon

a tree. When we abiding yet in the Brigandines understood this, taking countell with certaine of our friends, which were alhoare, we raifed a tumult and a fedition against our faid Generall. and in his prefence face to face we faid vinto him, that forthwith he should fet Captaine Ernen. dus Rieffere free before vs, and reftore all vnto vs, which he had violently taken from vs, otherwife we would prouide according to the flate and the time.

When Alumm 12 w this our tumult and indignation, with a willing minde, he prefently freed the Captaine from captinitie, and reftored also vinto vs what socier he had taken from vs, andeauouring with faire speaches, that we might be pacified.

Vohealthfull

39. In this Countrie Surucufis I found no Indian, who had attained to fortie or fiftie yeeres. and in all the time of my life I neuer found a Countrie leffe healthfull. It is fituate under the Tropike of Capricarne.

Wicked pre-

Our Generall talling ficke in this his ficknesse commanded an hundred and fiftie Christiene to arme themselves, and taking two thouland Caries with them, to make foure Brigandines alto readic. These he enjoyned, to goe about some foure leagues to the Hand of Surmonfis by ship. and after kill and take all this people, and should principally destroy those persons, who were fortie or fiftie yeeres old. But how the faid Surneufis entertained vs before, is alreadie declared. But what reward we gaue them againe, and how welcome we were voto them, you shall shortly vinderstand. And God knoweth we did them great injurie. When therefore wee arrived at their Towns ynawares, they came out of their houses with their Armes , Bowes and Arrowes. yet peaceably to meet vs, but forthwith a tumult arising betweene the Carios and the Surncusti, 20 we Christians discharged our brasse Peeces against them, killing very many : and having taken also two thousand of their men, women, boyes and girles, wee tooke away all their housholdstuffe, and whatsoener might bee taken from them, as in such violent affaults is viually done. Then we returned to our G. nerall, who was well pleafed with that we had done. But because our So. Idiers were for the most part feeble and ficke, and most of them also were ill affected to our Generall, and hated him, we could doe no more with them, but being altogether conveyed downe the River Parabel, we returned to our Citie the Affumption; where wee left the reft of the Christians. There our Generall fell sicke agains of a Feauer, and kept within doores fourteene whole dayes together, more of wicked diffimulation and pride, then hindered by reafou of licknesse.

40. All the companie hereupon, as well Noble as Ignoble, determined and decreed with one confent and purpose, that they would fend this their Commander prisoner vnto Cafars Maiestie. the Treaturer or Judge, the Clarke, or Mafter of the Toll or Custome, and the Secretarie, ordained by Cafars Maieltie (whole names were Almanzus Gabrerus, Francus Mendeza, and Grains Haming 10) to king to them two hundred Souldiers, tooke our Generall, who feared nothing leffe then this, and this was done upon Saint Marker Day, in the moneth of Aprill. And they kept him prisoner an whole yeere, till they might fend him with two other Officers into Spaine in & Carauell, Martin Don Eyollas was choten Generall, who alto gouerned this Countrie before, especially seeing the Souldiers also loved him : which election the better part allowed. At this The Authours time, I lay griewoully ficke of the Dropfie, which difeafe I had gotten in our Journey to the Ore- 40 thrifen, when we waded to long in the waters, and befides fuffered want, and almost intolerable hunger: By occasion of that Iourney, eightie of our men beganne to bee ficke, whereof onely

thirtie recouered health. 41. Aluarus Nunnez therefore being fent away into Spaine, the Christians began to disagree among themselves in holtile manner. These fightings and contentions continued with vsa whole yeere almost, the sending away of Aluarus giving occasion to this mitchiefe. When the Caries and Argais, (who hitherto were our friends) perceived this, to wit, that we Christians, bare fuch treacherous hearts one to another, and vied and exercised such fighting and skirmishing amongst our selves, it fell out very acceptably to them all, and by taking Armes against vs, forced vs to peace among ft our felues.

42. Departing from the Assumption, together with our Generall, and three hundred and fiftie Christians, to whom one thousand Indians joyned themselves, which our Generall jo divided. that three Indians alwaies should ferue under one Christian; we went so farre forward, that we were onely three leagues distant from that place where our Enemies the Carios encamped, who being fifteene thousand men strong, had now ranged their battell. But although we were now but halfe a league from them, yet we would not fet vpon them that day, because we were wearie by reason of the Journey, and many and great showres of raine troubled vs : therefore wee hid our felues in a Wood, where we lay close the night before.

Going forth the next morning at fixe of the clocke, and comming into their fight about leuen, we joyned battell, prolonging the fight till ten of the clocke. But at length they being put 60 to flight, made hafte to a certaine Towne called Framidiere, foure leagues distant, which they had fortified with strong Bulwarkes. The Chiefe Commander of the Carios was called Machkarias, and in this conflict, there fell two thouland men of the Enemies, whose heads the lessrm tooke with them. Of ours, befides those that were wounded and hurt, whom we fent backe

to the Assumption, ten Christians were flaine. But wee pursued the Enemie with all our Armie. euen to their Towne Framidere, whether the Commander of the Carios conveyed himlelie by Framidiere. flight. They have compaffed this Towne with a triple rowe of Trenches, as with a wall. The Trenches were as thicke as a man in the middle, which being digged a mans depth into the ground, rofe three tathom high about ground. They had also cast up pits, or deepe holes, whereof also we have poken before, in every one whereof they had pitched fine or fixe stakes, sharpe pointed like Pinnes or Needles. This Towne therefore by fortification, and Garrisons of valuage and couragious men, was exceedingly well fenced, to that three dayes we befreged them in vain, vet at length, by Gods helpe, we conquered it. Wee made also great and round Targets of In-10 dian Sneepes skinnes, which they call Amaten, or Amidas. This beaft is of a reasonable bignesse.

like an ordinarie Mule, of a grey colour, with clouen feete like a Kow, in the reft like an Affe, yeelding plealant meate. There is great ftore of thele beafts in this Countrie, they have a skin balfe a finger thicke, Wee therefore gaue these round Targets to the Indians Isperss, gining fome of them also an Hatchet : and betweene two Indians we placed an Harquebuile shot. Defroving their triple inclosure, we entred the Towne of Framidiers; we neither spared men nor women, boyes nor girles. But the greatest part of them having escaped by flight, betooke them felues to a certaine other Towne of theirs called Carieba, twentie leagues diffant from Franidi - Carieba ere, which Towns also they fortified as strongly as they could. The Caries also in great numbers came together againe, incamping themselves neere an huge Wood, that if peraduenture this 20 Towne alto should be wonne by the Christians, they might vie the helpe of the Wood for their

Wee came to the faid Towne, and pitching our Tents, befreged it round in three places. We had also hill tome of our men in a Wood, to keepe diligent watch there. Supplies also of two hundred Christians, and five hundred of the lepersus, and the Bathies came to aide vs, from the City of Assumption. For many of our men, both Christians, and Indians, were much wounded. So that we were of necessitie compelled to fend for a fresh supplie of Soul liers for our aide. Now therefore all our forces were foure hundred and fiftie Christians, and the leperus and the Bathacis were thirteene hundred in number.

But our Enemies the Carieba, had much more strongly fortified this Towne with Trenches. 22 and Motes, then ever they had done any before. They had also made and framed certaine Engines, and instruments like Traps, wherewith Mise are taken, which if according to their and English purpole and meaning, they had fallen, every one of them at one fall had flaine twentie or thirtie men. They had disposed many of these Engines hereand there about this Towne.

Wee abode therefore neere this Towne foure whole dayes, and could effect nothing of any worth , vntill Treason (which getteth the masterie enery where throughout the world) came betweene them and home. For a certaine Indian of the Caries our Enemies, who was their Captaine, to whom this towne properly belonged, came by night vnto our Generall, earneftly increacing, that we would not waite and destroy this his Towne by fire, which if wee would promife him, he would inynemen with vs; and would shew vs the way and meanes how to 40 take it. Which when our Generall had promised, adding also this caution, that he should receiue no hurt nor damage, he shewed vs in the Wood two wayes to come to the Towne, and said, that he would raife a flaming fire therein, during which we should violently breake into it,

When these things proceeded just according to the purpose and agreement made betweene vs. by this meanes entring we got the Towne, and great flaughter of the people was made by vs Christians: And they that thought they had escaped by fleeing, fell into the hands of the Ieperso, by whom the greatest part of them were slaine. But they had not their wines, and children then with them, but had hid them in a great Wood four leagues distant from thence. The den then with them, but had the training a great viscolitation of the Petie-King of the Indians, called Dabero: and the Village which entertained them, was called Labert Sabeit, and was fortie to leagues diffant from Carieba. But wee could not pursue them thicker, for this reason, because what way soener they passed, they had wasted all farre and neere, with fire, and spoyling, and had taken away all the store of provision and victuall. Abiding source dayes in the Towne Carieba, we cured the wounded, and also refreshed our selues.

43. After this we returne to our Citie, the Assumption, that after we might sayle up the Riuer, and seeke out the Towne of Inberie Sabaie, where the King Dabero had an house, with nine Brigandines, and two hundred Canoas or Boats , wherein fifteene hundred Indians of Isperiss were carried, we went up the River Parabol, to feeke our Enemies luberic Sabaie. In this Voyage also that captaine of the Carios, who betrayed the Towne Carieba to vs, ioy- 46. leagur

ned himfelie with vs, bringing with him one thouland Carios, to aide vs against Dabero. We goe forward therefore with all our forces gathered together on the Land and River, and come fo neere vnto our Enemies Inberie Sabaie, that we are but two leagues diftant from them. When we had arrived there, our Generall Eyollas, fent two Indians of the Carios to the Enemie into their Towne, who should perswade them in the Christians behalfe, that returning into their Countrie, with their wines and children, and all their houshold-stuffe, they should ferue the

Christians with due subjection, as they did before, which if they refused to doe, they would drive them all out of the Countrie. To this Dabero the King of the Cartor, for answer, commandech to tell our Generall, That he neither acknowledged him, nor the Christians, but if they came. they would kill them by casting bones at them. They also fend away the two Indian mellengers well bombafted with cudgels, with this straight charge, that they should speedily withdraw themselves from the Campe, other wife it should come to passe, that they should be slaine.

R.Stue a.

We came to a Riuer, called Sinefia in the Indian language, almost as broad as Danubuis, halfe the height of a man deepe in some places also deeper. This River doth sometimes to increase by inundation, that it doth much hurt to the Countrie, and by reason of such inundation or ouerflowing, they cannot trauaile by land. We were to passe ouer this River, and because the ener In mie had pitched their tents on the other fide of the River, they did vs much hurt in the paffing ouer. When they faw that we had now paffed ouer the River, speedily taking their flight, conuaied themselves into their towne, halfe a league distant from the River; we so purfued them. that we came to their towns of Inberic Sabaie, at the verie fame moment that they themselves entred, which also prefently we so besieged round, that none of them might either goe out or in: We allo forthwith armed our felues with targets made of the skinnes of the Amydau, as aforefaid. We wan their towne.

Our Generall commanded, before we should inuade them by force of armes, that we should neither kill the women, nor their children, but onely leade them away captines; whose comman lement also we obayed, but all the men that we could light upon, must dye, yet many ef- 20 caping by flight, preferred themselves, and our confederates the leperus got one thousand of the enemies heads. All their things thus performed, thoir Carios, who escaped by flight, came, together with their King, and crauing parlon of our Generall, intreated that their wines and children might be reftored voto them, and then they would performe all obedience of fubication vnto vs. as before, and ferue vs faithfully. Our Generall therefore received them to favour. who afterward also continued constantly in our friendship and amitie, so long furely as I abode in those Countries. And this warre continued a yeare and an halfe, and fell out in the veare 1546.

ð. III:

A long and troublesome March from Assumption into Peru. The Authors resurne.

Eturning therefore with our Shippes to our Citie the Affumption, wee staied there two whole yeares. But when in the meane time, neither the Ships came out or Spaine, nor any thing was fignified by mellengers, our Generall going torth with three hunored and fittle Spaniards, and two thousand Carios, in the years 1548. Salleth up the River Parabol, with As feuen Brigantines, and two hundred Canoas, or Boates. But those of the people, whom the Shippes could not hold, trauaile by land with one hundred and thirty hories. Hee made Don. Franck Mendoza Captaine; giving also provision for two yeares. These things therefore being thus setled. The Generall having sent backe fiftie to Assumption

Naperus.

Manais:

on with three hundred Christian Souldiers, one hundred and thirty Hories, and two thousand Carios, having gone forward eight dayes sourney found no Nation; but the ninth day wee light young Nation called Naperus, the people thereof live onely by fifth and flesh. They are of a tirong and tall stature. Their women, which are not beautifull, couer their secrets. This Country is fixe and thirtie leagues diffant from the Mountaine Saint Ferdinand: here we lay all night. The day following, continuing on our journey, we came the fourth day after, to another Nationcal- 10 led Mapais, which is very populous; the Subjects are compelled to ferue their Noblemen, with fishing, and labours, and other worke, no otherwise then our Boores with vs, doe their Nobles. But this Nation aboundeth with Mais, Mandeoch, Ade, Mande pore, Mandeoch portie, Padades. Mandues, Bachkeku, and other rootes, and things to eate. It hath also Stagges, Indian Sheeps, Estridges Ducks, Geese, and many other kindes of Foule. Their Woods abound in great plentie with Hony, of the which also they make Wine, and put it to other necessary vies.

Two kindes of The Sheepe (which they call Amidas) are of two kindes, some of them domesticall and some Amidas, one a wilde, which they vie for carriages, and to ride vpon, and for other feruices, almost as we doe out bie to beare men, Acoffa Horfes, as I alforid, being carried on fuch a Sheepe in this very journey, more then fortyleagues,

menions those When my legge was lame. They vie the same Beasts also in Peru for carriage of Merchandite, 25 60 of Peru to bear our people doe packe Horfes. Thefe Mapair are men of a tall stature, and warlike, converting all their labour and study to

or little more. warlike affaires. Their women are faire, and couer their fecrets. They doe no worke and labour in the fields, but the whole care of maintaining the Family, lyeth upon the man; neither doe they any thing elfe at home, faue fpinne, and weave Cotten, or dreffe meate for their husbands.

We were not about halfe a league from this Nation when they comming forth of the towner they met vs neere a certaine little Village, where they perswaded vs quietly to refresh our selues that night, for they would give vs whatfoever we had neede of, but this they did deceitfully and treacheroully : that also we might be more secure, they gave our Generall fo re filter Crownes, fuch as are vivally worne upon the head, and foure Plates of filuer, whereof every one of them was a france and an halfe long, and halfe a france broad, Thefe Plates they binde to their foreheads for ornament, as we have faid before. They prefented our Captaine also with three your

When we had turned into this Village, supper being caded, and the watch set, that the people might be fafe from the treacherie of the enemie, wee gaue our felues to reft. About midnight our Generall had loft his your wenches.

45. After this, two thousand of the forefaid Mapais came vnto vs. that ouercharging vs vnawares they might veterly ouerthrow and kill vs, but they got no great matter at our hands. and in this conflict and bickering more then one thousand men were flaine. They becake themfelues to flight, whom we purfued with great hafte, even to their Towne, but found no man there, no not to much as their wives and children: our Generall therefore diffratching one hundred and fiftie harquebuffe fhor, and two thousand fine hundred Indian Carios, pursueth thele an Mapaie three dayes, and two nights with great speeds, so that we did but dine, and rested by night retrefling our felues foure or five houres with fleepe.

The third day we fuddenly came upon them gathered together in a certaine wood with their wines and children, but they were not those we fought, but were their friends; who were nothing afraid of vs, nor did they suppose that we would ever have come vnto them. Notwithflanding the anocene were forced to pay for the fault of the guilty; for when we light woon then, we flew many of them, and tooke of the men, women, and children, about three thoufand persons, and if it had bin day, as it was night, none of them had scaped our hands; for an huge number of this people had gathered themselves together in a certaine Mountaine inclosed round with woods. I had gotten for my part of the spoile about nineteene men and workin, not very old, together with certaine other things,

These things performed, returning to our Campe, we quietly reposed our selues for eight daies ; for we found there, sufficient plenty of victuall, and other necessary things; from this Nation Mapais, vnto Saint Fordinandes Mount, where our Shippes rode, were fiftie leagues, and

from the Nation Naperm thirtie fix.

Marching on againe from thence, we came to a Nation called Zemie, fubiect to the forefild Zemie Mapair. They live almost as the Boores doe with vs, vader the power of their Lords. In this iourney we light upon fields tilled, and let with Mais, and other rootes, and chele fruites and Fieldsof Mais. meates, are all the years long found in the fields; for before one reape and gather the one into &c. the barne, another is ready for the haruest. And this also being reaped and gathered, it is time 40 to fowe another. Turning afide thence, we came into another Towne, whose inhabitants when they faw vs at hand, fled all away. This towne is four leagues diffant from the forefaid Mapair. Departing hence, and travailing fix leagues in two dayes journey, we light on another Nation called Tobanna, but we found no men here, but great plenty of foode. The men of this Coun- Tabanna

trie also are subject to the Mapair. Going from hence we met with no Nation in our journey in foure dayes space. But the for uenth day we came to a Nation called Poisses, foureteene leagues diffant from the former To. Pristant banna. In this Countrie a great number of people came together; and their Captaine came forth to meete vs, guarded with a great multitude of men, yet peaceably, and earneftly belought our Generall not to enter into their Towne, but that we should stay without, in the place where he came to meete ve; and our Generall would not confent, but directly marched forward, will

so he, nill he, entred into the Towne.

We staied with these Peieras three dayes, and our Generall demanded many things of them concerning the nature and condition of this Countrey. When we were to depart, these Peionas gaue vs an Interpreter and a guide, that we might finde water to drinke, for there is great fearcity of water in this Country, having travailed foure leagues, we came to a Nation called Maye- Mangary: gory, and staying one onely day there, taking an Interpreter againe, and a guide, we marched forward. And these people were gentle and curteous.

Departing also from these people, when we had marched eight leagues, we came to a Nation, whole people, which were many in number, were called Marronos. They also gently and cur- Marronos. 60 teoully entertained vs : we abode here two dayes, and receiving a relation of the nature, and condition of the place, taking also a guide with vs, we went further forward. Departing toure

leagues from thele, we came to another Nation, yet not so populous, called Paronios. This Coun- Paronies. trie aboundeth not with victuall and foode, yet notwithstanding it is 3000. ilrong of men able for warre. In this Countrie we rested one day onely.

led Symamos, where a great multitude of men came together. Their towne is fituate youn an trmevar. Wall of bushes high hill and compassed round about with Bryar bushes, as with a wall, day ones.

46. We traugiled fixteens leagues further in foure daies journey, and at length were brought vnto a certaine Nation, called Barconos: the men thereof, feeing, our comming chanced to them beyond their expectation and opinion, prefently betooke themselves to flight, as soone as were came neere their towne; yet they could not escape out of our power. But when we onely craued foode of them, being very ready, they willingly gaue vs Hens, Geele, Sheepe, Eftridges, Stags and other foode abundance. Departing thence, the third day after we came to a Nation, whose people were called Ly-

Lephannes. Grafhoppers, Carcheonos.

Suberia.

thu A

They dye of

bames. They dwell twelve leagues removed from the former. These people had but little fooie. for the Grafhoppers had corrupted almost all their fruites. Therefore resting one onely night with them, after having travailed fixteene leagues in foure dayes journey, we came to another Nation called Carebeoner. The Grashoppers also had done them great displeature, but had not to much hurt them as they had done the former; abiding with them one day, we viderifood the of the condition and quality of the Countrie, that we should gode no water in four and twenty or thirty leagues space: we approached to these Suberis in fix dayes space: But many of our mendied or thirth, although with these Carebeones we had furn shed our telues with indifferent flore of water for this journey. But in this journey we found a roote about ground, having great Roote holding and broad leaves wherein water remaineth as it were in some vessels, nor is it powred out thence, 20 nor allo to early confumed, and one of these rootes containeth about halfe a measure of water.

Thele Suboris had great fearcitie of water alfo, neither had they any other thing befides to drink,

No rine in a, and it had not now rained for three whole moneths; yet of the roote called Mandepere, they monerhe Drinke of a

make drinke arter this manner. They gather together the faid roote into a Morter, and out of them being flamped they wring forth a mice like milke: if water may be had, wine also may be made of these rootes. In this Village there was one Well onely, which was to be kept by a watchman. So that we were not much troubled with the defire either of Silver or Grid, but the common complaint of all men, would be for want of water. In this Countrie farre and wide also nortiuer waters are to be found beside these, but they vie onely that water which they gather in the criternes. There Suboris make warre with the bordering Indians, onely for water. The to Suboris, who should have showed vs the way, by night primity stole away. We were therefore now to feeke out the way our felues, and at kingth we light upon those people called Persenner. they refusing our friendship withstood vs by armes, but got little at our hands. We tooke some of these Perfennes, who told ve that there had bin three Spaniards in their towne, whereof one called /kieronimus was a trumpeter, whom John Evollas (who was fent by Don Petro Mendoza, to discouer thele Countries) left ficke there, as we have at large before rehearsed. They said therefore that the Perfeunos had flaine these three Spaniards, foure dates before our comming thither, being advertised thereof by the Suboris: but they should deerely pay for this fact of theirs. Abiding foureteene daies in their towne, we fought them round about vs euerie where, till at lait ta-

Maigenes.

47. Taking our journey, at length we came to the Margenes, but the people thereof relifting vs with firong hand, would not entertaine vs as friends. Their Towne being fituate vpon an hill, was compassed round on enerie fide with a thicke and broad quickfet hedge, as high as a man might reach with his Sword. Wee Christians therefore with our Carios, began to affault this Towns in two divers places. But in this affault twelve Christians, together with some few of the Carios were flame, and they put ye to a great deale of trouble, before we could take and win

king them vnawares in a wood, but not al, we partly flew them, & partly led them away captiues. 40

Carios and Mai-

Eight daies after the Towne taken five hundred of our Caries, taking their Bowes and Arrowes, departing fecretly and without our prinitie, about two or three leagues from our Campe, feeke out the Margenos, who were fled. On whom when they lighted, thefe two Nations 50 fought with fo great and conftant resolution, that more then three hundred men of the Carios, but of the enemies, almost innumerable, were flaine; for there was so great a multitude of them, that they foread almost a whole league in length. But the Carios fending a messenger to the towne where we were, earneftly entreated our Generall, that they would come with iome supply of Souldiers to helpe them; for the Margenes had to belet them round in a wood, that they could neither goe forward nor returne backe againe.

Which when our Generall understood, he presently commandeth the Horses to be made ready, and to fend away and dif patch one hundred and fittle (hristians, but of the Carios affembled a thousand men, leaving the rest of the Souldiers in the tents to guard them, that wee being abfent, the Maigener our enemies might inuade them. We went for h therefore with this force (10 60 wit) the faid norfe, one hundred and fiftie Christians, and one thousand Carios, to helpe the Carior our friends. But fo foone as the Maigenos perceiued our comming, remouing their tents, they committed themselves to flight, and albeit we pursued them with as much speede as wee could, yet could we never oue rake them.

Retur-

CHAP.4.5.3. Passages through the Carcokies, Machasies unto Peru.

Returning therefore to our tents, we abode there three daies; for we had found in this town e of the Maigenos, great plentie of foode, and other things. Having travailed a continuall journey of thirteene daies, that is to fay(in out judgement and theirs who are skilfull in the celeftiall motions) two and fittie leagues, we came to a Nation, whose people are called Carcokies: and Carokies. hauing travailed further the space of nine dies, we came into a'certaine little Countrie, sixe leagues long and broad, which was all fo thicke ouerfpread with excellent Salt, as if it had fowed Salt Country, Salt in great abundance, and this Salt is not corrupted winter nor fummer.

We rested two daies in this Salt Countrie, going forward, at length, after soure daies iourney, we came to the foresaid Nation Carcokies: But when we were yet foure leagues from their to towne, our Generall fent fiftie Christians, fiftie Carios to prouide vs lodgings. Hauing entred the towne, we found such an innumerable multitude of men gathered together, as in all this journey we had not feene the like; wherefore being very penfine and carefull about meafure, fending a mellenger presently backe vnto our Generall ; who taking his journey the very same euening, came vnto vs betweene three and foure of the clocke in the morning. But the Carcokies fuppofing there had bin no more men there then we, whom they had seene before, had now promiled themselues the victorie. But when they understood that our Generall followed vs with a greater force, they were very fad and forrowfull, and performed all friendly offices and kindeneffe vnto vs; for they could doe none other, feeing they were afraid of their wines, children, and their towne. They brought vs therefore fielh of Deere, Geefe, Hens, Sheepe, Eftridges, 20 Conies, and what focuer elfe of this kinde of Venifori, and also of Birds, they had also Turkish Samdelic Come, Wheate, Rife, and certaine Rootes, of all which things there was great plentie in this

The men of this Countrie weare a blew stone in their lippes, as broad as a Dye. Their weapons are Darts, the staues of Speates, and round Targets made of the skins of the Indian Sheepe called Amida. Their women haue a little hole in their lips, in the which they put Christall either of a greene or blew colour : they have garments of Cotten, like to a shirt, but without fleeues : they are beautifull enough : they doe nothing elfe but spinne, and order things appertaining to the houshold; for tillage of the ground, and other things necessarie for the maintenance

48. When we had gone three daies journey from this towne, we came to a certaine River cale led Mackager, league and a halfe broad: and when we faw not how we might passe fately one uer without danger, at length we found out this meanes, that for enery two persons wee should make a Boate of twigs and timber, whereon being carried downe the River, they might come to the other fide of the banke; but in this passage foure of our men were drowned. This Riuer hath most fauourie Fish, Many Tygars also are found about these places, and this River is but foure leagues onely diffant from the towne Macheafies.

The Inhabitant's comming forth to meete vs, entertained vs curteoully, speaking to vs in the Spanish tongue, whereat being astonished and foreafraid at the first, wee demanded of them to They arise in what Lord they were subject, and who was their supreame Gouernour! They therefore an- the Kingdome of wered vs, and our Captaine, that they were subject to a certaine Noble man in Spaine, whose of Pau.

name was Petro Ausuctes.

Entring into this Towne, we found certaine men and women, and little Infants also swarming with very little vermin, like our fleas. These little vermin, if they lay hold of the toes of the feete, or any other part of the body, they gnaw and enter alwaies more and more deepely Strang worms? in, and at length become wormes, such as are found in our filberds; yet if it be done in time, this mischiefe may be preuented, that it shall not hurt, but if deferring the cure it be neglected, at length by eating and gnawing, it confumeth and corrupteth whole toes.

From the often named Citie of the Assumption of Mary, to this Towne, are numbered (according to the account of the Altronomers) three hundred seventie two leagues. And when we had flaied there about twentie daies, a Letter was brought vs from a Citie of the Kingdome of Peru, A Letter on 50 called Lama, where the Viceroy or Lieutenant of Cafars Maiestie, who at that time was Liecu- of Pou. tiatus Lagafen, had an houfe. The Letter contained, that our Generall Martin Don Fiottas should goe no turther forward, vpon paine of death, but abiding in the Towne Macheafies, should ex-

pect his further commandement. But after this our Generall fent away foure persons to the Gonernor to Pers. Thele foure perfons journying fixe weekes in Perm.came first to that Nation called Potafi, next to another called Rueskem. The third Nation to which they came, was called Plata, and the fourth, which was the

Metropolis or the chiefe Citie, was called Lima.

49. This also is worthie of observation. That the Countrie of Macheafies is so fruitfull, 60 that we neither found, not faw any like it in fruitfulnelle, in all this our lourney. For if an Indian Hony in trees, going forth into the Wood, make an hole or a cleft in the first tree that commeth to hand, fimi- flings. ting an Hatchet into it, fine or like measures of so pure Honie flowe out, as if it were sweete Wine, or Muskadell. The Bres that make this Honie are without flings, and are very fmall. This Honie being eaten with Bread, or mingled with other food, yeeldeth pleafant meate. They

Pedro Anfuetes.

make also Drinke thereof, or Wine, of the same taste that Muskadell hath, but sweeter. Our Generall Eyellas fo wrought with the people, that wee could flay no longer here, by reason of the want of prousion. For we had scarce victuall for one moneth.

In performing this Journey we spent a yeere and an halfe, doing nothing else, but making continuall warre. And in this Journey we had brought into our fub ection about twelue thou fand men, women, and children, who were compelled to ferue vs as bond-flaues: as I for mine owne perion did possesse about fiftie men, women, and children.

Barny.

Barede.

Gingie.

co. Wee, with our Genetall Martin Don Eyollas, came vnto the Citie Assumption, but Abriego a Captaine which had rebelled against Captaine Mendoxa, and slaine him would neither open the Citie to our Generall, nor yeeld it vp vnto him, nor acknowledge him for Generall, and

But the faid Diego Abriego, being forced to forfake the Citie with fiftie Christians, who iow. ned them telues with him, fled thirtie leagues from vs, fo that we could atchieue nothing against him. This warrecontinued two whole yeeres space betweenevs, the two Captaines so oppofing themselves one against the other, that neither was safe from danger of other,

51. In the meane feafon, while thefe things were thus done, I received Letters out of Spanne, and thewed to Martin Don Eyollas, I prefently defired a friendly and curteous difmission from him. I tooke my Journey in the name of God, vpon Saint Stephens Day, which was the fixe and twentieth of December, in the yeere 1552, and departing from the Assumption of Marie, care ried woon the River of Plate, with my twentie Indians in two Canvas or Boats, when wee had to now gone fixe and forcie leagues, we first arrived at a certaine Towne called Inberie Sabase. In that Towne four others alio, together with two Portugals ioyned themselves with vs, having gone fifteene leagues, we came to a Towne called Gaberethe. After this having gone fixteene leagues further in foure dayes, we came to a certaine Village called Barotis. Whence departing againe, having gone foure and fiftie leagues in nine dayes, wee came to a Towne called Barede, where staying two dayes, we sought prouision and Boats to carrievs, for wee were to goe one hundred leagues vp the River Parana by Boat, At length being brought to a certaine Towne called Gingie, wee abode there foure dayes. And thus farre the Countrie and Empire of Celar Maiestie extendeth it selie, all which places in former time were subject to the People Cariet.

ca. After this therefore, all the Nation Toupin, beginneth the Countrie and Jurisdiction of to the Portugal, and we were compelled, leaving Parana, and our Boats, to travell by land vnto thefe Tours, which continued fixe whole moneths; in which Journey we were to goe over Defarts, Mountaines and Valleyes, and for the feare waxed of wildeand rauening beafts, we durft not fafely take our fleepe, &c.

Wee wandred eight whole dayes through Woods and Thickets, so that although having trauelled farre and wide, yet in all my life time I had neuer gone fo rough, troublefome, and tedious a way : nor had we any thing which we might eate, fo that wee were compelled to furfaine our selues with Honie, and Roots, wheresoeuer we could get them: and for the danger also, to wit, that we feared left our enemies would pursue vs, we had not so much time as to take any venison. After this wee came to a Nation called Biefaie, where staying foure dayes, wee prouided our in

Biefaie. River Vrauam.

Telues againe of victuall, but durst not come neere their Towne, because we were so few. In this Countrie there is a River called Vrquam, wherein we faw Water-Inakes, and Serpents called Tuesca, in the Spanish Tongue Schene Ejba, which were fixteene paces long, and foure tathome thicke. These Serpents doe much hurt: for if a man wash himselfe in that River, or any beaft fwim ouer, forthwith fuch a Serpent fwimming to them, windeth his tayle about the man, or beaft, and drawing them under water, denoureth them.

Proceeding further hence we trauelled about one hundred leagues, in a continued Journey of a Schenetueba. whole moneths space, and at length came into a large Towne called Schenerveba, and rested there three dayes.

Going againe further, we came into a certaine Towne of Christians, whose Captaine was John to

53. Moreouer, proceeding further thence, we came to the Towne of Saint Vincent. From the Citie of the Affirmation of Marie, to the Towne of Saint Vincent in Brafil, are reckoned three hundred and feuentie leagues.

Setting sayle from the Towne of Saint Vincent, on Saint Iohn Baptifts Dav, which was the Heatrieed at four and twentieth of Line, in the yeere of our Lord 1553. wee arrived at Lifeon, the third of Answers, September, in the yeere 1553, and white weether whence he had died, which I brought with me out of those Countries. September, in the yeere 1553, and while wee abode fourteene dayes there, two of my Indians

I had thought here to have added the Voyages of Ichannes Stadius, (another German, which ferned the Portugals in Bratill about Schmidels later time) published in Theodore de Bry : and had the 62 Same by me translated. But containing little light for the Countrie, and People; and relating in manner onely bis owne Tragedies, in his taking by the Sauages, and often perils of being eaten by them, is some of his friends were before his face, with other like Sausge arguments wherewith wee have glusted you alreadse: I being alreadse too volummous, base omitted the same, and hasten to other Relations.

CHAP. V.

The Observations of Sir RICHARD HAWKINS, Knight, in his Voyage into the South Sea. An. Dom. 1593. once before published, now reviewed and corrected by a written Copie. illustrated with notes, and in diners places abbremated.

What happened in this Voyage before they came neere the Aquinottial Lines with diners accidentall Discourses vsefull for

Eith the Counsels consent; and helpe of my Father, Sir John Hawkins, Knight, I resolued a Voyage to be made for the Slands of Japan, of the Philippinas , and Moluccas, the Kingdome of China, and East Indies, by the way of the Straites of Magelan, and the South Sea,

For this purpose in the end of the yeere 1588, returning from the Journey an amedite Regainst the Spanifo Armado, I caused a Ship to bee builded in the River of Thames, betwiet three pentance ; and and four hundred tunnes, which was finished in that perfection as could be required. For she ominous n me was pleafing to the eye, profitable for flowage, good of fayle, and well conditioned. On the pare, as you all day of her lanching, thre was named, The Repentance,

The Repentance being put in perfection, and riding at Derford, the Queenes Maiestie passing characterissore by her, to her Palace of Greenwich, commanded her Barge-men to rowe round about her, and not to terreviewing her from Post to Stemme, disliked nothing but her Name, and said, that shee would instanced in Christen her a new, and that thenceforth shee should bee called the Daintie; which name shee the Reague, brooked as well for her proportion and grace, as for the many happie Voyages shee made in her Thunderb it. Maiesties services: Haung taken (for her Maiestie) a great Bytten, of fine hundred tunnes 10- and this Referen den with Iron, and other Commodities, under the conduct of Sir Martin Furbufher; A Carack tance, with the bound for the East Indes, under my Fathers charge, and the principal cause of taking the great Happy. Carack, brought to Dartmonth by Sir lobn Bonrow, and the Earle of Camberlands thips, Anno 1592. with others of moment in her other Voyages. To vs, thee neuer brought but coff, trouble, and care.

Hauing made an estimate of the charge of Victuals, Munition, Imprests, Sea-store; and ne- ons for preceffaries for the faid ship; consorting another of an hundred tunnes, which I waited for daily tended Voye-40 from the Straites of Giberalter, with a Pinnace of fixtie tunnes, all mine owne: And for a competent number of men for them; as also of all sorts of merchandiles for trade and trafficke in all places where we should come; I began to wage men, to buy all manner of victuals & promitions, and to lade her with them, and with all forts of commodities (which I could call to minde) fitting; and dispatched order to my servant in Plimonth, to put in a readinesse my Pinnace; as allo to take up certaine prouisions, which are better cheape in these parts then in London, as terpromided Beefe, Porke, Bisket, and Sider. The eight of Aprill, 1593. I caused the Pilot to set sayle from at Pimonto. Black-wall, and to vaile downeto Gramef-end, whither that night I purposed to come. And for then at Lendor that shee was very deepe loden, and her Ports open, the water beganne to enter in at them; Note. which no bodie having regard vnto, thinking themselves, safe in the River, it augmented in such Danger of nanner, as the weight of the water began to prefle downe the fide, more then the winde : At length when it was feene and the sheete showne, she could hardly be brought vpright. But God was pleafed, that with the diligence and trauell of the Companie, shee was freed of that danger: which may be a gentle warning to all fuch as take charge of shipping, euen before they fet fayle, either in Ruer or Harbour, or other pare, to have an eye to their Ports, and to fee those thut and calket, which may cause danger; for auoiding the many mishaps, which daily chance for the neglect thereof, and have beene most lamentable spectacles and examples vito vs : Experiments in the Great Harrie, Admirall of England, which was over-fet and funke at Portfmouth with her Captaine, Carem, and the most part of his companie drowned in a goodly Summers day, with a little flaw of winde; for that her Ports were all open, and making a small 60 hele, by them entred their defruction; where if they had beene shut, no winde could have hurt her, especially in that place. In the River of Thames, Master Thomas Candolb had a small thup over-fet through the fame negligence. And one of the Fleet of Sir Francis Drake, in Santo Domingo Harbour, turned her keele vpward likewife, vpon the same occasion; with many others. which we never have knowledge of.

Prouisionship

in lanuarie

Comming neere the South fore-land, the winde began to vere to the South-east and by South fo as we could not double the point of the Land, and being close aboord the shoare, and putting our thip to flay, what with the chapping Sea, and what with the Tide vpon the Bowe, the mill flaving, and put vs in some danger, before we could flat about; therefore for doubling the Point of any Land better iseuer a fhort boord, then to put all in perill.

Being cleere of the race of Poreland, the winde began to fuffle with fogge and milling raine and forced vs to a fhort fayle, which continued with vs three dayes; the winde neuer vering one point, nor the foggetuffering vs to fee the Coaft. The third day in the fogge, we met with a Barke of Dartmouth, which came from Rochell, and demanding of them, if they had made any land, answered, that they had onely seene the Edie flone that morning, which lieth thwart of In the Sound of Plimonth, and that Dartmonth (as they thought) bare off vs North North-eaftwhich fremed frange vnto vs; for we made account that wee were thwart of Exmouth; with in two houres after, the weather beganne to cleere vp, and wee found our felues thwart of the Berry, and might fee the small Barque bearing into Torbay, having over-shot her Port; which errour often happeneth to those that make the land in foggie weather, and vie not good diligence by found, by lying off the land, and other circumstances, to learch the truth; and is cause of the loffe of many a fhip, and the fweete lives of multitudes of men. That evening, wee anchored in the range of Darsmouth, till the floud was fpent; and the ebbe come, wee fet favle againe. And the next morning early, being the fixe and twentieth of Aprill, we harboured our felues in Plimonth.

Parts requifite in a good

1268

And in this occasion, I found by experience, that one of the principall parts required in a Mariner , that frequenteth our coaftes of England , is to cast his Tides , and to knowe how they jet from point to point, with the difference of those in the Channell from those of

Abules of fome Sea-faring men-

After the hurts by a cruell forme (in which the Pinnace was funke, and the Dainties Mafe cut over-hoord) repaired. I beganne to gather my companie aboord, which occupied my good friends, and the luftices of the Towne two dayes, and forced vs to fearch all lodgings. Tauems and Ale-houses. (For some would ever bee taking their leave and never depart :) some drinkt themselves so drunke, that except they were carried aboord, they of themselves were not able to goe one fleppe : others knowing the necessicie of the time, faigned themselves ficke ; others to bee indebted to their Holts, and forced mee to ransome them; one his Cheft; another, his Sword : another, his Shirts ; another, his Carde and Inftroments for Sea : And others, to benefit themselves of the Imprett given them, absorbed themselves; making a lewd living in deceiving all , whole money they could lay hold of : which is a frandall too rife among tour Sea-men; by it they committing three great offences. First, Robberie of the goods of another person : Secondly, Breach of their tasth and promite: Thirdly, Hinderance (with leffe of time) vnto the Voyage; all being a common injurie to the owners, victuallers, and companie; which many times bath beene an vtter overthrow, and vindoing to all in generall. An abuse in our Commonwealth necessarily to be reformed.

Mafter Thomas

Mafter George

Note.

He addes another remedie in taking away impr fts. The confequence of In.

Mafter Thomas Cardish in his last Voyage, in the Sound of Plimonth, being readie to set # fayle, complained vinto mee, that perfors which had abiented themselves in Imprests, had coft him about a thousand and five hundred pounds: These Varlets within a few dayes after his departure, I faw walking the streetes of Plimouth, whom the Iustice had before fought for with great diligence, and without punishment. And therefore it is no wonder that others presume to doe the like, Impunitas peccandi illecebra. The like complaint made Master George Remond: and in what fort they dealt with mee, is notorious, and wasfuch, that if I had not beent provident, to have had a third part more of men, then I had need of, I had beene forced to got to the Sea vomanned; or to give over my Voyage. And many of my companie, at Sea vaunted how they had confened the Earle of Cumberland, Master Candish, Master Reymond, and others, tome of fine poundes, some of tenne, some of more, and some of lesse. And truely, I thinke, to my Voyage prospered the worse, for theirs and other lew I persons companie, which were in my ship: which, I thinke, might be redressed by some extraordinarie, seuere, and present luflice to bee executed on the offenders by the Iustice in that place, where they should bee found

The greater part of my companie gathered aboord, I fet fayle the twelfth of Iune, 1993. I cannot but aduite all fuch, as shall have charge committed vnto them, ever before they depart out of the Port, to give vnto their whole Fleet not directions for civill government, but also where, when, and how to meete, if they should chance to lose companie, and the signes how to knowe one another afarre off, with other points and circumstances, as the occasions shall minister matter different, at the different of the wife Commander, by publication of that which is good and necessarie for the guide of his Fleet and people; but all secret instructions, to give them sealed, 6) and not to be opened, but comming to a place appointed.

Lanching out into the channell, the winde being at East and by South, and east South-east, which blowing hard, and a floud in hand, caused a chapping Sea, and my Vice-admirall bearing a good fayle made fome water, and shooting off a Peece of Ordnance, I edged towards her, to knowe the cause; who answered me, that they had sprung a great leake, and that of force they must returne into the Sound, which seeing to be necessarie, I cast about, where anchoring and going aboord, prefently found, that betwixt winds and water, the Calkers had left a feame vn. Falle calking. calked, which being filled up with Pitch onely, the Sea labouring that out, had beene fufficient to haue finke her in short space, if it had not beene discouered in time.

And for more securitie, I hold it for a good custome vied in some parts, in making an end of For preuents calking and pitching the ship, the next tide to fill her with water, which will vindoubtedly dif- on thereof. couer the defect, for no pitcht place without calking, can fuffer the force and peaze of the water. In neglect whereof, I have feene great damage and danger to enfue. The Arke Royall of his Example. See 10 Majelties, may ferue for an example: which put all in danger at her first going to the Sea , by a Caparrings haft

Maieftes, may terue for an example: which put at in danger at her integoring to the sea, by a Voyag: a nerivuell, hole left open in the poft, and couered onely with Pitch. In this point no man can be which the too circums pect, for it is the securitie of ship, men, and goods.

This being remedied, I fet fayle in the morning, and ranne South-west, till wee were cleare of was of endan-Vilbent; and then South South-west, till wee were some hundred leagues off, where wee met gered thereby, with a great Hulke, of some fine or fixe hundred tunnes, well appointed, the which my companie, (as is natural to all Mariners) prefently would make a prize, and loden with Spaniards goods, Aduice for and without speaking to her, wished that the Gunner might shoot at her, to cause her to amain, shooting at Which is a bad custome received and vied of many ignorant persons, presently to gunne at all Sea, whatforeer they discouer, before they speake with them; being contrarie to all discipline, and 30 many times is the caule of diffention betwint friends, and the breach of Amitie betwint Princes; Two English

the death of many, and fometimes losse of ships and all, making many obstinate, if not desperate. In the beautiful the death of many, and fometimes losse of ships and all, making many obstinate, if not desperate. Comming within the hayling of the Hulke, we demanded whence the was? whither the was wronged tach bound? and what her loding ? Shee answered, that she was of Demmarke comming from Spame, either by misloden with Salt: we willed her to thinke her Top-fayles, which fhee did, and shewed vs her Chare taking. ter-parties, and Bils of loding, and then faluted vs, as is the manner of the Sea, and fo departed.

Wee directed our course to the Maderas. The Madera Ilands are two: the great, callen La The Madera Madera, and the other Porto Santo; of great fertilitie, and rich in Sugar, Conferues, Wine, and Hands. fweet Wood, whereof they take their name. Other commodities they yeeld, but thefe are the principall. The chiefe Towne and Port is on the Souther fide of the Madera, well fortified : they are subject to the Kingdome of Portugal; the Inhabitants and Garrison all Portugals.

The third of Julie, wee past along the llands of Canaria, which have the name of a King- Canarie Hands. dome, and containe thefe feuen Hands, Grand Canaria, Tenerifa, Palma, Gomera, Lancerota Fortementura, and Fierro, Thefe Hands have abundance of Wine, Sugar, Conferues, Orcall Pitch. Iron, and other commodities, and store of Cattell and Corne, but that a certaine Worme. called Gorgofbo, breedeth in it, which eateth out the fubitance, leaving the huske in manner whole. Goreefbo. The head Hand, where the Inflice, which they call Andiencia, is relident : and whither all finits have their appellation, and finall fentence, is the Grand Canaria, although the Tenerifa is held for the better and richer Hand, and to have the best Sugar : and the Wine of the Palma is reputed for the best. The Pitch of these Hands melteth not with the Sinne, and therefore is proper 40 for the higher workes of shipping. Betwix: Fortenentura and Laneerota is a goodly Sound, fit

for a meeting place for any Fleet. Where is good anchoring, and abundance of many forts of Fish. There is water to be had in most of these Ilands, but with great vigilance. For the naturals of them are venturous and hardie, and many times clime vp and downe the steepe Rockes and broken Hills, which feeme impossible, which I would hardly have beleeved, had I not feene it. and that with the greatest arte and agilitie that may bee: Their Armes for the most part, are Lances of nine or ten foot, with a head of a foot and halfe long, like vnto Boare-speares, faue The defector that the head is somewhat more broad.

Two things are famous in these Blands, the Pike of Tenerifa, which is the highest Land in my and the Pike, indgement that I have feene, and men of credite have told they have feene it more them fortie Of a Tree in leagues off. It is like vnto a Sugar loafe, and continually coursed with Snowe, and placed in the Fierro. One 50 middest of a goodly Valley, most fertile, and temperate round about it. Out of which, going for, now dwelvp the pike, the cold is fo great, that it is vnfufferable, and going downe to the Townes or the ling in Hol-Iland, the heat feemeth most extreme, till they approch neere the coast. The other is a tree in the borde, told me

Iland Fierro, which some write & affirme, with the dropping of his leaves, to give water for the that A. 1618. in this lland, and seene this Tree, which he thus described; It is as big as an Oake of middle size, the barke white like Ha dbeame; fixe or feuen yards high, with ragged boughs; the leafe like that of the Bay, white on the bottome, and greene on the other fide. It beareth neither fruit nor flower. It is festuate in the decliuitie of a Hill; in the day it is withered, dropping in the night (a cloude hanging thereon) yeelding water sufficient for the whole Iland; which containeth 8000, soules, and above 100000, beafts, Camels, Mules, Goats, &c. It falls into a Pond made of bricke, floored with flones very thight, by pipes of Lea 1 conneighed from the Tree to it, and thence divided into fenerall Ponds through all the Hand. They which dwell up-hill fetch it 60 in barrels. They water therewith also their Corne-grounds. The Pond holds 20000, tuns, and is filled in a night. He added a report (perhaps deutled to keepe off buffe fingers, or with buffe tongues to militake wonders) that the Maores having them that Hand from the Chriftians, went to fell that Tree, but each blowe recoyled on the firiker. Hee affirmed also that hee had beene up the Pike of Teneriff, two miles. He faith the South fide is healthfull, the North very Aguith, and fubicet to Calentures; and the

Inhabitants on one fide looke luftie, on the other withered.

fullenance of the whole Iland, which I have not feene, although I have beene on fhoare on the Iland: but those which have feene it, have recounted this mysterie differently to that which is written, in this manner : That this Tree is placed in the bottome of a Valley ever flourishing with broad leases, and that round about it are a multitude of goodly high Pines, which ouerstop it, and as it feemeth, were planted by the Diuine prouidence, to preferue it from Sunne and winde. Out of this Valley ordinarily rife every day, great vapours and exhalations, which by reafon that the Sanne is hindered to worke his operation, with the height of the Mountaine towards the South-east, convert themselves into moisture, and so bedew all the trees of the Valley, and from those which ouer-top this Tree, drops downe the dew vpon his leaves, and to from his leaves into a round Well of stone, which the Naturals of the Land have made to receive the Io water; of which the people and cattell haue great reliefe : but fometimes it raineth and then the Inhabitants doe referue water for many dayes to come in their Ciffernes and Tynaxes, which is that they drinke of, and wherewith they principally sustaine themselves.

The Citie of the Grand Canaria, and chiefe Port is on the West side of the Iland; the head Towns and Port of Tenerifa, is towards the South part, and the Port and Towns of the Palma and Gomera, on the East fide. In Gomera, some three leagues Southward from the Towne, is a great River of water, but all these Ilands are perilous to land in, for the siege caused by the Occan Sea, which alwaies is forcible, and requireth great circum pection; who foeuer hath not vegent cause, is either to goe to the Eastwards, or to the Westwards of all these Ilana's, as well to avoide the calmes, which hinder sometimes eight or ten dayes fayling, as the contagion which 26 their diffemperature is wont to cause, and with it to breede Calenturas, which wee call burning The first disco- Feners. Their Ilands are faid to be first discouered by a Frenchman, called John de Betancourt, about uerers of these the veere 1405. They are now a Kingdome subject to Spaine.

Tlan.is Exercises vp-

1368

Being cleare of the llands, and feeing my felfe path hope of returning backe, without fome enthe Sou.h. extraordinarie accident, I began to fet order in my Companie and victuals. And for that, to the wards of the Southwards of the Canaries, is for the most part an idle Natigation, I denited to keepe my people occupied, as well to continue them in health (for that too much eafe in hot Countries is neither profitable nor healthful) as also to divert them from remembrance of their home; & from play, which breedeth many inconveniences, and other bad thoughts and workes which idlenesse is cause of; and so shifting my companie, as the custome is, into Starboord and Larboord men, the 20 halte to watch and worke whileft the others flept, and take reft : I limited the three dayes of the weeke, which appertained to each, to be employed in this manner : the one for the vie and cleanling of their Armes, the other for roomaging, making of Sayles, Nettings, Decking, and detenfes of our Ships; and the third, for cleanling their bodies, mending and making their apparell, and necessaries, which though it came to be practifed but once infeuen dayes, for that the Sabboth is euer to be referred for God alone, with the ordinarie obligation which each person had befides, was many times of force to be omitted; and thus wee directed our course betwixt the Hands of Cape de Verde and the Maine. These Hands are held to bee seitnate in one of the most vahealthiest Climates of the world, and therefore it is wisedome to shunne the fight of

oane de Verde.

The vowholfomnaffe thereof.

The heare. of Fouers is the dowes ry night: 10 that the execeding moiflure and vn-

them, how much more to make abode in them? In two times that I have beene in them, either cost vs the one halfe of our people, with Fe-. uers and Fluxes of fundrie kindes; fome shaking, some burning, some partaking of both; some peffelt with frensie, others with flouth, and in one of them it cost mee fixe moneths ticknesse, with no small hazard of life: which I attribute to the distemperature of the aire, for being within fourteene degrees of the Equinoctrall Line, the Sunne hath great force all the yeere, and the more for that often they passe, two, three, and foure yeeres without raine; and many times the earth burneth in that manner as a man well shod, cannot indure to goe where the Sunne shi-Ano ber cause neth. With which extreme heate the bodie fatigated, greedily desireth refreshing, and longeth for the comming of the Breze, which is the North-east winde, that seldome fayleth in the afternoone at foure of the clocke, or fooner: which comming cold and fresh, and finding the pores 50 which fall cue- of the bodie open, and (for the most part) naked, penetrateth the very bones, and so causeth fudden diftemperature, and fundrie manners of ficknesse, as the Subjects are divers, whereupon they worke. Departing out of the Calmes of the Ilands, and comming into the fresh Breze, it cauleth the like, and I have seene within two dayes, after that wee have partaked of the fresh aire, of two thousand men aboue an hundred and fiftie haue beene crazed in their health. The Inhabitants of these Ilands vie a remedie for this, which at my first being amongit them, feemed vito mee ridiculous, but fince, time and experience hath taught to bee grounded vpon reason. And is, that vpon their heads they weare a Night-cap, vpon it a Moutero, and a Hat ouer that, and on their bodies a fute of thicke Cloth, and youn it a Gowne, furr'd or lined with Cotton, or Bayes, to defend them from the heate in that manner, as the In-60 habitants of cold Countries, to guard themselves from the extremitie of the cold. Which doubtleffe, is the best diligence that any man can vie, and whosoener proueth it, shall finde himselfe leffe annoyed with the heate, then if he were thinly cloatned, for that where the coldaire commeth, it pierceth not fo fubtilly.

The Moone also in this climate, as in the coast of Gnynne, and in all hoe Countries, hath forci-The influence ble operation in the body of man; and therefore, as the Plannet, most prejudiciall to his health, is of the Moore to be hunned; as also not to sleepe in the open Ayre, or with any Scuttle or Window open, in hot Counwhereby the one or the other may enter to burt. For a person of credit told me, that one night tries. in a River of Gaynne, leaving his window open in the fide of his Cabin, the Moone thining woon his shoulder, left him with such an extraordinary paine, and furious burning in it, as in about twenty houres, he was like to run mad; but in fine, with force of Medicines and cures, after long corment he was exted.

CHAP.S. S. I. Saint lago described with the Fraites, and Trees thereof.

Of these Ilands are two pyles: the one of them lyeth out of the way of Trade, more Wester-10 ly, and fo little frequented : the other lyeth fome fourescore leagues from the Maine, and containeth fixe in number, to wit, Saint lago, Fuego, Mayo, Bonavifto, Sal, and Brano. They are belonging to the Kingdome of Portugall, and inhabited by people of that Nation, and are of great trade, by reason of the neighbourhood they have with Gayane and Bynne: but the principall is, the buying and felling of Negros. They have store of Sugar, Sale, Rice, Cotten-wooll, and Cottoncloth, Ambergreece, Cyuit, Olyphants teeth, Brimstone, Pummy Rone, Spunge, and some Gold. but little, and that from the mavne.

Saint lago is the head lland, and hath one Citie and two townes, with their Ports. The Citie Saint lago called Saint Iago, whereof the Iland hath his name, hath a Garrison and two Forts, stituated in the bottome of a pleafant Valley, with a running streame of water passing through the middest 20 of it, whether the reft of the Ilands come for Luftice, being the feate of the Audiencia, with his Bishop. The other Townes are Plays, some three leagues to the Eastwards of Saine I aco. placed on high, with a goodly Bay, whereof it hath his name : and Saint Deminge, a small Towne within the Land. They are on the Souther part of the Hand, and have beene facked fundry times in Anno 1 (82, by Manuel Serades, a Portugall, with a Fleete of French-men: in Anno 1 189, they Sackedby Me. were both burnt to the ground by the English, Sir Francis Drake being Generall: and in Anno nuel Serates Sir 1 196. Saint lage was taken, and lacked by the English, Six Anthony Sherley being Generall. The Francis Dra fecond Hand is Fuego, fo called, for that day and night there burneth in it a Unican, whole flames and Sir daibe. in the night are seene twentie leagues off in the Sea. It is by nature fortified in that fort, as but my sberley. by one way is any accesse or entrance into it, and there cannot goe vp aboue two men a brett. Fleet hill.

The Bread which they spend in these slands, is brought from Portugal and Spaine, saving that which they make of Rice or of Mayes, which we call Gypune wheate. The best watering is in the lie of Brass, on the welt part of the Hand, where is a great River, but fouls Anchoring, as is Brass, good in all these Hands, for the most part. The fruits are few, burshoftantiall, as Palmitos, Plantanos, watering. Potatos, and Coco Nuts.

The Palmito is like to the Date tree, and as I thinke a kinde of it, but wilde. In all parts of The Palmino Afrique and America they are found, and in some parts of Europe, and in divers parts different, In Afrique, and in the West Indies they are small, that a man may cut them with a knife, and the leffer the better. But in Brafil they are fo great, that with difficulty a man can fell them with an Axe, and the greater the better sone foote within the top is profitable, the reft is of no value. 40 and that which is to be eaten is the pith, which in some is better, in some worse,

The Plantane is a tree found in most pares of Afrique and America, of which two leaves are The Plantan fufficient to couera man from top to toe: It beareth fruite but once, and then drieth away, and great leanes, out of his root sprouteth vp others new. In the top of the tree is his fruit, which groweth in a great bunch, in the forme and falling of puddings, in fome more, in fome leffe. I have feene in one bunch aboue foure hundred Plantans, which have weighed aboue fourescore pound waight. They are of divers proportions, some great, some leffer, some round, some square, some triangle, most ordinarily of a span long, with a thicke skinne that peeleth eatily from the meate; which is either white or yellow, and very tender like Butter; but no conferue is better, nor of a more pleasing taste. For I never have seene any man, to whom they have bred mishike or done hure with 50 eating much of them, as of other fruites. The best are those which ripen naturally on the tree. but in most parts they cut them off in branches, and hang them vp in their houses, and eate them as they ripe. For the Birds and Vermine presently in rapping on the tree, are feeding on them, The best that I have seene are in Brafit, in an Iland called Placensia, which are small and round, Flacensia and greene when they are ripe : whereas the others in ripening become yellow. Those of the West Indies and Guymneare great, and one of them sufficient to satisfie a man : the onely fattle they have is, that they are windie. In some places they eate them instead of bread, as in Passa. ma, and other parts of Tierra firme. They grow and prosper best when their rootes are ener conered with water; they are excellent in Conferue, and good fodden in different manners, and dried

on the tree not inferior to Suckets. The Coco nut is a fruit of the fashion of a Hafell-nut, but that it is as bigge : san ordinary The Cocos, & Bowle, and some are greater. It hath two shels, the vetermost framed (as it were) of a multis their kindels, tude of threds, one laid upon another, with a greene skin ouer-lapping them, which is foft and thicke : the innermoft is like to the shell of a Hafell-nut in all porportion, fauing that it is greater and thicker, and fome more blacker. In the top of it is the forme of a Munkies face, with

two eyes, his note and a mouth. It containeth in it both meate and drinke, the meate white as milke, and like to that of the kernell of a Nut, and as good as Almonds blancht, and of great quantity: The water is cleare, as of the Fountaine, and pleafing in taite, and somewhat answereththat of the water diffilled of Milke. Some fay it hath a fingular property in nature, for conferuing the fmoothnesse of the skin; and therefore in Spaine and Portugall, the curious Dames doe ordinarily wall their faces and necks with it. If the holes of the shell be kept close, they keene foure or fix moneths good and more; but if it be opened, and the water kept in the shell in few dates it turneth to Vinegar. They grow upon high Trees, which have no boughes, onely in the top they have a great cap of leaves, and under them groweth the fruite upon certaine twigges: and some affirme that they beare not fruite before they be aboue forcy yeares old. They are in all 10 things like to the Palme trees, and grow in many parts of Afia, Afrique and America. The fiels of thele nuts are much efteemed for drinking cups, and much cost and labour is bestowed vpon them in caruing, grauing and garnishing them, with Siluer, Gold, and precious stones.

In the Kingdome of Chile and in Brafil, is another kinde of thefe, which they call Coquillos. as we may interpret (little Cocos) and are as bigge as Wal-nuts, but round and smooth, and grow in great clusters : the trees in forme are all one, and the meate m the nut better, but they have

Another kinde of great Cocos groweth in the Ander of Para, which have not the delicate meate nor drinke, which the others have, but within are full of Almonds, which are placed as the graines in the Pomegranner, being three times bigger then those of Europe, and are much like 20 them in tafte.

Munkeyes.

In these llands are Cyuet-Cats, which are also found in parts of Asa, and Afrique; esteemed for the Civet they yeelde, and carry about them in a cod in their hinder parts, which is taken from them by force. In them also are flore of Monkies, and the best proportioned that I have feene and Parrots, but of colour different to those of the West Indies; for they are of a rulet or gray colour and great speakers,

ð. I I.

Considerations of Currents: the Scorbute: fire in Ships; Fishes which attend them: Sea-hawking and hunting : their comming to Brafil and observations thereof.

Change of

a faire and large winde we continued our course, till we came within fine degrees of the Equinoctial line, where the winde tooke vs contrary by the South-weit, about the twentieth of July, but a faire gale of winde and a smooth Sea, so that wee might beare all a * tawt : and to advantage our felues what we might, we stood to rangue, a sea-terme, fig.ftiffe the Eastwards, being able to lye South east and by South. The next day about nine of the clock, 40 my company being gathered together to ferue God, which we accustomed to doe every morning and evening, it feemed voto me that the colour of the Sea was different to that of the daies past. evening praier and which is ordinarily where is deepe water; and so called the Captaine and Master of my Ship, I told them that to my feeming the water was become very whitish, and that it made shew of Sholde water. Whereunto they made answere, that all the lines in our Ships could not fetch grand : for we could not be leffe then threefcore and ten leagues off the Coast, which all that kept reckoning in the Ship agreed vpon, and my felfe was of the fame opinion. And fo we applied our felues to ferue God, but all the time that the feruice endured, my heart could not be at reft, and still me thought the water began to waxe whiter and whiter. Our prayers ended, I commanded aleade and a line to be brought, and having the lead in foureteene fathoms wee had 50 ground, which put vs all into a maze, and fending men into the top, prefently discourred the land of Gapna, tome five leagues from vs, very low Land, I commanded a Pecce to be shot, and Etrorin reck. lay by the lee, till my other Ships came vp. Which hailing vs, we demanded of them how farre shey found themselves off the land; who answered, some threescore and ten, or fourescore leagues : when we told them we had founded, and found but fourereene fathorns, and that we were in fight of Land, they began to wonder; But having confulted what was best to be done, I caufed my Shallop to be manned, which I towed at the Scene of my Shippe continually, and fent her and my Pinnace a head to found, and followed them with an easie fayle, till we came in seuen and fix fathome water, and some two leagues from the shore anchored, in hope by the Sea, or by the Land to finde some refreshing. The Sea wee found to be barren of fish , and my Boates 63 could not discover any landing place, though a whole day they had rowed along it the coast, with great defire to fet foote on shore, for that the sedge was exceeding great and dangerous. Which experienced, we fet faile, notwithstanding the contrariety of the winde, sometimes standing to the West-wards, sometimes to the East-wards, according to the shifting of the winde.

Here is to be noted, that the errour which we fell into in our accompts, was fuch as all men fall into Note. where are currents that fet East or West, and are not known for that there is no certain rule yet practifed for small of the longunde, as there is of the latitude, though some cursons and experimented of our Nation. with whom I have had conference about this point, have showed me two or three manner of wage; how to bnowit. This, some yeares before was the loffe of the Edward Cotton, bound for the coast of Brail, The left of which taken with the winde contrarie neere the line, flanding to the East-wards, and making accompt to Edward outen, be liftie or fixtic leagues off the coaft, with all her failes standing, came suddenly a ground upon the sholes of Madrebomba; and To was caft away.

CHAP. S. S. 2. Senerall currents considered. The cause, fignes, & effects of the Scuruey, 1272

This currant from the line Equinottial, to twentie degrees Northerly, bath great force, and fetteth 10 next of any thing East, directly upon the shore, which we found by this meanes: Standing to the Westwards the winde Southerly, when we lay with our Ships head Weft and by South, we gained in our height more then if we had made our way good West South-west, for that the currant tooke us under the bow : but lying well or West & by North, we loft more in twelne houres then the other way we could get in foure and twentie. By which plainty we fam, that the current did fet East next of any thing. Whether this currant runneth over one way, or doth alter, and how, we could by no meanes understand, but trail of time and observation will discouer this, as it bath done of many others in fundry Seas.

The current that setteth betwirt New-sound-land and Spaine, runneth also East and West, and New found land long time deceined many, and made some to count the way longer and others shorter according as the pas-sage was speedie or slow, not knowing that the surther ance or bunderance of the currant was cause of the 20 feeding or flowing of the way. And in Sea Cards I have seene difference of above thirtie leagues between

the Iland Tercera and the Maine. And others have recounted unto me that comming from the Invies. and looking out for the Hands of Azores, they have had fight of Spaine. And Jome have looked out for Spaine, and have disconcred the I lands. The selfe same currant is in the Levant Sea, but runneth trade Levent Sea. betwixt the Maines, and changeable sometimes to the Eastwards, sometimes to the West-wards. In Bra- Brail and fil and the South Sea, the currant likewife is changeable, but it runneth ener along it the Coaff, accom. South Sea, panying the winde : and it is an infallible rule, that twelve or twentie four boures (before the winde alters) The currant begins to change.

In the West Indies onely the current runneth continually one way, and setteth along it the coast from the Equinoct sall line towards the North. No man bath yet found that thefe currants keepe any certaine Currents of time or ranne formany dayes or moneths, one way as another, as doth the courfe of abbing and flowing, well imiller force busine in all Seat : onely neere the shoare they bane small force; partly, because of the resum which the coast causeth, and partly for the obbing and flowing, which more or leffe is generall in most Seas.

When the currant runneth North or South, it is easily discourted by augmenting or diminishing the beight, but how to know the setting of the current from East to West in the maine Seas, is difficult, and as yet I have not knowne any man, or read any Author, that bath prescribed any certaine meane or way to discours it. But experience teacheth, that in the maine Sen, for the most part it is variable; and therefore best and fafest rule to prenent the danger (which the uncertaintie and ighterance hereof may cause) is emefull and continuall watch by day and night, and upon the East and West course ener to be before the Ship and to use the meanes possible to know the errour, by the rules which new Authors may teach: AO beating off and on, sometimes to the Westwards, sometimes to the Eastwards, with a fairegale of winde.

Being betwixt three and foure degrees of the Equinoctial line, my Company within a few daies began to fall ficke, of a difeafe which Sea-men are wont to call the Scurule : and feemeth to Adicourfe of be a kinde of dropsie, and raigneth most in this climate of any that I have heard or read of in the securety, or secondary world; though in all Seas it is wont to helpe and increase the milerie of man; it possesses all those of which it taketh hold, with a loathforme floathfulneffe, that even to cate they would be content to change with fleepe and roft, which is the most pernicious enemie in this ficknesse that is knowne. It bringeth with it a great defire to drinke, and canfeth a generall swelling of all parts of the body, especially of the legges and gummes, and many times the teeth fall out of the lawes without paine. The fignes to know this difease in the beginning are divers, by the The fignes fo fwelling of the gummes, by denting of the fielh of the legges with a mans finger, the pit remaining without filling vp in a good (pace ; others show it with their latineste, others complaine of the cricke of the backe, &c. all which, are for the most part, certaine tokens of infection. The cause is thought to be the floracks feeblenesse, by change of aire in vntemperate climates, of diet in falt meates, boiled also in Salt water and corrupted fometimes; the want of exercise also either in persons or elements, as in calmes. And were it not for the mounting of the Sea by the force of windes, tydes, and corrents, it would corresp all the world. The experience I faw in Anne 1590. lying mita a Florte of ber Maissier Ships about the Ilands of the Azores almost six moneths, the greatest part Strange est. of the time we were becalmed: with which all the Sea became soreplenshed with search sorting est. of calmes. and former of Serpents, Adders, and Snakes, as feemed wonderfull: forme greene, some blacke, some yel-

6) low, some white, some of diners colours and many of them had tife, and some there were a yard and haife, and two yards long; which had I not scene, I could hardly have believed. And bereof are witnesses all the Companies of the Shippes which were then present; so that hardly a man could draw a Bucket of water cleere of some corruption. In which V ryage, towards the end thereof many of enery Ship (fauing of the Nonperell, which was under my charge, and had onely one man fishe in all the Voyage) fell ficke

of this difease, and began to die apace, but that the speedie passage into our Countrie was remody to the crazed, and a prefernative for those that were not touched.

By Dick

The best preuention for this descale (in my indgement) is to keepe sleane the Shippe, to besprinkle ber ordinarily with Vinegar, or to burne Tarre, and fome fweet favours, to feede upon as few fall Meatin the bot Country as may be, and effecially to frum all kindes of falt Fift, and to referue them for the sold Climates, and not to dreffe any meate with falt water, nor to suffer the companie to mash their Shirts nor Cleat bes in it, nor to fleepe in their Cleathes when they are wet. For this canfe it is necessarily required.

By thift.

that promision be made of apparell for the Company, that they may have wherewith to shift themselves. Being a common calamitie among ft the ordinary fort of Mariners, to found their thrift on the bore and to bring to Sea no more Cloathes then they have backes; for the body of man is not refreshed with any 10 thing more, then with hifting cleane Cleathes : a great prefermatine of health in hos Countries. The fecond Antidote is, to keepe the company occupied in some bodily exercise of worke, of agilitie, of paf-

By labour.

times, of dancing, of vie of Armes; thefe below much to bamift this infirmitie. Thirdly, In the mer-By early eating ming at difcharge of the watch, to give enery man a bit of bread, and a draught of drinke, either Berre, or Wine mingled with water (at the least, the one balfe) or a quantitie mingled with Beere , that the poores of the bodie may be full, when the vapours of the Sea ascendup. The morning draught should bee ener of the best, and choisest of that in the ship, Pure wine I hold to be more hurtfull, then the other is profitable. In this, others will be of a contrary opinion, but I thinke partiall. If not, then leave I the remedies thereof to those Phisicions and Surgeons who have experience. And I wish that some learned man would write of it, for it is the plague of the Sea, and the spoyle of Mariners; doubilesse, it would bet 20 a Worke worthy of a worthy man, and most beneficiall for our Countrie, for in twentie yeares (fince ! have vfed the Sea) I dare take upon me, to give account of ten thousand men consumed with this disease.

Ten thouland English dead of the Scuruic in 10, yeeres, By fowre O. ranges and Lemmons. By Doctor Stenens Water. By Oyle of the Land.

That which I have seene most fruitfull for this sicknesse, is sourc Oranges and Lemmons, and a water which amongst others (for my particular provision) I carried to the Sea, called Dollor Stevens water. of which, for that his vertue was not then well knowne vuto me, I carried but little, and it took end quick. ly, but caue bealth to those that wied it. The Oyle of Vitry is beneficiall for this disease; taking two drops of it, and mingled in a draught of water, with a little Sugar. It taketh away the thirst, and beloth to clenfe and comfort the stomacke: But the principall of all is the Ayre of the Land, for the Sea is mass-rall for Fishes, and the Land for men. And the oftner a man can have his people to Land, (not hinds: ring bis Voyage) the better it is, and the profitablest course that be can take to refresh them. Hauing stood to the Westwards some hundred leagues and more, the winde continuing with vs contrary, and the fickneffe to feruent, that every day there died more or leffe; my company

The company ficke and difmayed. Prouerbe.

in generall began to be difmayed, and to defire to returne homewards, which I hindered by good reasons and perswasions: As, that to the West Indies, we had not about eight hundred seasues. to the Ilands of Azeres little leffe, and before wee come to the Ilands of Cape de Verde, that wee should meete with the Breze; for every night we might see the reach goe contrary to the winde which we sayled by; verifying the old Prouerbe among it Mariners; That hee hath need of a long Mast, that will fayle by the Reach; and that the necreft Land and speediest refreshing wee could looke for, was the Coast of Brasill cre.

As wee approached neerer and neerer the Coast of Brafill , the winde beganne to vers to to the Eastwardes, and about the middle of October, to bee large and good for vs; and about the eighteenth of October, wee were thwart of Cape Saint Angultine, which lieth in fixe degrees to the Southwards of the Line : and the one and twentieth in the height of Farnambuca, but some fourescore leagues from the Coast, the twentie foure, in the height of Bana de Todes Santos, neere the end of October, betwixt feuenteene and eighteene degrees, wee were in fixteene fathomes, founding of the great Scoles, which lye along ft the Coatt, betwire the Bay of Todos Santos, and the Port of Santos alias nueftra fenora de Vitoria; which are very perillous,

Tedos Santos. De Vitoria.

But the dinine Providence hath ordained great flockes of small Birds (like Snites) to live your the Rockes, and broken lands of these Sholes, which are met with ordinarily twentie leagues before a man come in danger of them.

Dangers of fire. . By hearing of

It shall not be amisse here to recount the Accidents which befell vs during this contrary wind, and the curiofities to be observed in all this time. Day and night we had continually a faire gale of wind, and a fmooth Sea, without any alteration; one day the Carpenters having Calked the Decke of our ship, which the Sunne with his extreame heate had opened, craued license to heate a little Pitch in the Cooke roome : which I would not confent vnto by any meanes; for that my Cooke roomes were under the Decke, knowing the danger; untill the Master undertooke, that no danger should come thereof, But hee recommended the charge to snother, who had a better name, then experience. He suffered the Pitch to rile, and to runne into the fire, which cauted fo furious a flame as amazed him, and forced all to flee his heate; one of my company, with a double paire of Gloues tooke off the Pitch-pot, but the fire forced him to let flip his hold-fast, before 60 he could fet it on the Hearth, and so ouerturned it, and as the Pitch began to runne, so the fire to enlarge it felfe, that in a moment a great part of the ship was on a light fire. I being in my Cabbin, prefently imagined what the matter was, and for all the hafte I could make, before I came, the fire was about the Decke : for remedie whereof, I commanded all my company to cast their

Russe Gownes into the Sea, with Ropes fastened vnto them. Thefe I had provided for my peo. ple to watchin, for in many hot Countreyes the nights are fresh and cold; and deuided one Vicofingge Gowne to two men, a Starboord and a Larboord man; fo that hee which watched had euer the Gowne : for they which watched not, were either in their Cabbins, or under the Decke, and fo needed them not. The Gowner being well foaked, enery man that could took one, and affaulted the fire; and although lome were findged, others scalded, and many burned, God was pleased that the fire was quenched, which I thought impossible; and doubtlesse, I never faw my telse in greater penil in all the dayes of my life. Let all men take example by vs, not to fuffer (in any case) Pitch to be heate in the flup, except it be with a flot heate in the fire, which cannot breed danger and 10 to permit fire to be kindled, but vpon meere necessitie; for the inconvenience thereof (is for the Presention. moft part) remedileffe.

CHAP. S. S. 2. Directions for the anoyding of the danger of fire in ships.

Great care is to be had also in cleaning of Wood, in Hooping or Scutling of Cashe; and in any busis - lesis of Lubech. nelle where violence is to be vied with Instruments of Iron, Steele, or Stone; and offecially in ocening of Robick, Blacke Ponder, thefe are not to be vfed, but Mallets of Wood; for many unfebances bappen beyond all expect a. Lim, or. have Powar, rough we been credibly enformed by doners per four, that comming out of the In lies, with Sculing a been burned, time, I have been credibly enformed by doners per four, that comming out of the In lies, with Sculing a been burned. But of water, the water hath taken fire, and flamed up, and put all in hazard! And a Serman of mine facilities of Thomas Creat told me, that in the hip wherein he came out of the Indies, Anno 1600, there happened Caske. the like; and that if with Maniles they had not smoothered the fire, they had beene all burned with a Noic. Pipe of Water, which in Scatting tooke fire. Matter John Hazielocke reported, that in the Arlenall of 20 Venice happened the like, he being present. For mine owns part, I am of opinion, that some waters have By natures of

this propertie, and especially such as have their passage by Mines of Brimstone, or other Minerals which waters. (as all men know) gine extraord nary properties unto the waters which runne by them : Or it may be that the water being in Wine Caske, and kept close, may retaine an extraordinary propertie of the Wine, Yea. I have drunk e Fountaine and River waters many times, which have had a favour as that of Brunstone. Three learnes from Bayon in France, I have prooned of a Fountaine that bath this fanour, and is madicinable for many Difeafes. In the South Sea, in a River fome fine leagues from Cape Some Francisco. in one decree and an balfe to the Northwards of the Line, in the Bay of Atacames, is a River of fresh

water, which hath the like famour.

We had no small cause to give God thankes, and tooke an occasion hereby, to banish sweating By sweating 30 out of our flips, which among it the common fort of Mariners and Sea-faring men, is too ordinarily abused. So with a generall confent of all our company, it was ordained that in every shippe there should be a Palmer or Ferula, which should be in the keeping of him, who was taken with An excellent an Oath, and that hee who had the Palmer should give to every other that hee tooke swearing order for this in the Palme of the hand a Palmada with it, and the Fernia. And whofeener at the time of Euc- Iwearing, ning or Morning Prayer, was found to have the Palmer, flieuld have three-blower siven him by the Captaine, or Matter, and that he should be still bound to free himselfe by taking another, or Custome feeds elfe to runne in danger of continuing the penaltie; which executed; few dayes reformed the vice which fe-Vice; fo that in three dayes together, was not one Oath heard to be fworne. This brought both were that in three dayes together, was not one Oath heard to be fworne. This brought both were that in three dayes together, was not one Oath heard to be fworne. Ferulaes and Iwearing out of vie.

Ordinarily such this as Nauigate between the Tropickes, are accompanied with three forts pringitionis of fish The Dolphin, which the Spaniards call Dozado: the Bonito, or Spanish Makerill: and the ofduers file: Sharke, alias Tiberune. The Dolphin I hold to be one of the fwifteft fishes in the Sea : He is like and their devato a Breame, but that he is longer and thinner, and his scales very small. Hee is of the colour scription, of the Rain-bow , and his head different to other fifnes; for, from his mouth halfe a loan it gotth The Delphia ftraite vpright, as the head of a Wherry, or the Cut-water of a fhip. He is very good meate if he be in feation, but the best part of him, is his head , which is great. They are some begger, some leffer; the greatest that I have seene, might be some foure foot long. I hold it not without some ground, that the ancient Philotophers write, that they bee enamoured of a man ; for it meeting with thipping, they accompany them till they approach to cold Climates; this I have noted di-SC ners times. For difembarking out of the West Indies, Anno 1583, within three or foredaws afrer, we met a Scole of them, which left vs not till wee came to the Hands of Arores, beese a

thousand leagues. At other times I haue noted the like. But fome may fay, that in the Sea are many Scoles of this kind of fish, and how can a man know if they were the same ? Who may be thus facisfied, that every day in the morning, which is the time that they approach neerest the ship, we should see foure, fine, and more, which had (as it were) our eare-mark. one hurt voon the backe; another neere the taile; another about the finnes, which is fufficient proof that they were the same. For if those which had received so bad entertainmene of vs would

not forfake vs , much leffe those which wee had not hure; yet that which makes them most in loue with flups and men, are the fcraps and refreshing they gather from them.

The Bonno, or Spanish Macketell, is altogether like vnto a Macketell, but that it is somewhat The Bonno. more growne ; he is reasonable food, but drier then a Mackerell. Of them there are two forts; the one is this which I have described; the other so great, as hardly one man can life him; At such times as we have taken of thefe, one fufficed for a meale for all my company. Thefe from the finne of the taile forwards have voon the chyne feuen imall yellow-hillockes , choic one to ano-

ther. The Dolphins and Bonitos are taken with certaine Instruments of Iron, which we call Vac. gen, in forme of an Eele-speare, but that the blades are round, and the points like vnto the head of a broad Arrow; thefe are faitned to long itaues of ten or twelve foote long, with Lines tied vnro them, and so shot to the fish, from the Brake-head, the Poope, or other parts of the ship. as occasion is ministred. They are also caught with Hookes and Lines, the Hooke beeing bayted with a red Cloth or with a white Cloth, made into the forme of a fifth, and fowed your The Sharke or Tiberane, is a fish like vnto to those which wee call Dog-fishes, but that hee is

The Sharke.

far greater. I have feene of them eight or nine foot long; his head is flat and broad, and his mouth in the middle viderneath, as that of the Scate; and he cannot bite of the bare before him, but by to making a halte turne; and then he helpeth himfelfe with his taile, which ferueth him in flead of a Rudder. His skinne is rough (like to the fifth which we call a rough Hound) and Ruffer, with reduith foots, faving that under the belly hee is all white : hee is much hated or Sea-faring men.

who have a certaine foolish Superfittion with them, and tay that the ship hath seldome good succeffer that is much accompanied with them. It is the most rauenous fish knowne in the Sea : for Albedenouring, he swalloweth all that hee findeth. In the Puch of them hath beene found Hats, Caps, Shooes, Shirts, legges and armes of men, ends of R pes, and many other things; whatfoeuer is hanged by the shipstide he sheereth it, as though it were with a Razor; for he hath three rowes of terth on either fide, as sharpe a, nailes; some say, they are good for Pick-tooths. They spawne not, as the greatest part of fishes doe, but Whelpe, as the Dogge or Wolfe; and for many

Three rowes Whelping.

daves after that she hath whelped every night, and towardes any storme, or any danger which may threaten them burt, the Damme receiveth her Whelpes in her mouth, and preferueth them, till they be able to thift for themfelues. I have feene them go in and out, being more then a foot and haite long; and after taking the Dam, we have found her young ones in her belly. My company tooke many. At the taile of one, they tied a great logge of wood, at another, an emptie Batizia well stopped; one they voked like a Hope; from another, they placked our his eyes, and fo threw them into the Sea. In catching two together, they bound them taile to taile, and so fet them a swimming, another, with his belly flie, and his bowels hanging our which his fellowes would have every one a fnatch at; with other infinite Inventions to entertaine the time, and to avenge themfelves; for that they deprived them of fwimming, and fed on their fielh at being dead : they are taking with Harping Irons, and with great hookes made of purpote, with Swyuels and Chaine safor no Line nor imall Rope can hold them, which they share not assuder.

There doth accompany this fifth, diners little fifthes, which are called Pilats fifthes, and are ever woon his finnes. his head, or his backe and feede of the forage and fuperfluities of his preyes. They are informe of a Trowte, and itreaked like a Mackerell, but that the itreakes are white and blacke, and the blacke greater then the white.

Sea hawking

The manner of Hunting and Hawking representesh that which we reasonable creatures vie, fauing onely in the disposing of the same. For by our industry and abilitie the Hound and Hawke is brought to that obedience, that whatfoeuer they fe ze, is for their Mafter, but here it is otherwife. For the game is for him that feizeth it, The Dolphins and I mitoes are the Hounds, and the 40 Alcatraces the Hawkes, and the flying fithes the game: whole wonderfull making magnifieth the Creator, who for their fafetie, and helpe, hath given them extraordinary manner of finnes, which ferue inflead of wings, like those of the Bat or Rere-mouse; of such a delicate skinne, interlaced with bones fo curioufly, as may well cause admiration in the beholders. They are like vnto Pilchards in colour, and making; fauing that they are somewhat rounder, and (for the most part) bigger. They flee best with a side winde, but longer then their wings bee weate, they cannot suffaine the weight of their bodies; and so the greatest flight that I have feene them make, hath not beene about a quarter of a mile. They commonly goe in Scoles, and ferue for food for the greater fithes, or for the Foules. The Dolphins and Bonises doe continually hunt after them, and the Alcatraces lie foaring in the Aire, to fee when they fpring, or take their 53 flight; and ordinarily, hee that escapeth the mouth of the Dolphin, or Boxito, helping himselte by his wings, falleth pritoner into the hands of the Alcatrace, and helpeth to fill his gorge.

Alcatrace.

The Alcatrace is a Sea-fowle, diff sent to all that I have feene, either on the Land, or in the Sea. His head like vnto the head of a Gull, but his bill like vnto a Snites bill, fomewhat shorter, and in all places alike. He is almost like to a Heronsbam, his legs a good ipanne long, his wings very long, and therpe towards the points, with a long taile like to a Pheafant, but with three of foure feathers onely, and these narrower. He is all blacke, of the colour of a Crow, and of little fleth: for hee is almost all skinne and bones. Hee soareth the highest of any Fowle that I have feene, and I have not heard of any, that have feene them reft in the Sea.

The fight of

Now of the fight betwixt the Whale and his contraries; which are the Sword-fifth and the 60 Thresher, The Sword-fish is not great, but strongly made, and in the top of his chine (as a man may fay) betwire the necke and thoulders, he hath a manner of Sword in fubiliance, like vato 2 bone of foure or five inches broad, and above three foote long, full of prickles of either fide, it is and Thresher. but thinne, for the greatest that I have teene, bath not beene about a ringer thicke. The Thresher

is a greater fith, whose taile is very broad and thicke, and very weighty. They fight in this manner: the Sword-fish placeth himselfe under the belly of the Whale, and the Thresher upon the Ryme of the water, and with his tayle thresheth vpon the head of the Whale, till he force him to give way, which the Sword-fish perceiving, receiveth him vpon his fword, and wounding him in the belly forceth him to mount vp againe: (besides that, he cannot abide long wader water, The strokes but must of force rife up to breath) and when in such manner they torment him, that the fight is heard two fometimes heard about three leagues diffance, and I dare affirme, that I have heard the blowes of leagues. the Thresher two leagues off, as the report of a peece of Ordnance, the Whales roaring being heard much farther. It also happeneth fundry times, that a great part of the water of the Sea to round about them, with the bloud of the Whale changeth his colour. The best remedy the 62.0 C. Whale hath in this extremitie to helpe himfelfe, is to get him to land, which hee procureth as foone as he discovereth his adversaries, and getting the shore, there can fight but one with him

and for either of them hand to hand he is too good.

Amber-greece is thought by some to breede in the Whales belly by eating of a certaine hearb, Amber-greece but that which carrieth likliest probabilities, that it is a liquor which affueth out of certaine Fountaines, in lundry Seas, and being of a light and thicke fubitance, participating of the Ayre, fuddenly becommeth hard, as the yellow Amber, of which they make Brades, which is also liquor of a Fountaine in the Germaine Sea : in the bottomeit is fost and white, and parraking of the Avre becommeth hard and itonie : Allo the Corrall in the Sea is foft, but commeth into the 20 Ayre, becommeth a flone. Those who are of this former opinion, thinke the reason (why the Corall-Amber-greece is sometimes found in the Whale) to be for that hee swalloweth it . as other things, which he findeth fwimming upon the water, and not able to digeft it, it remaineth with

From the Tropicke of Cancer to three or foure degrees of the Equinoctiall, the breze which is the North-east winde, doth raigne in our Ocean Sea the most part of the yeere, except it be Best times to neere the shore, and then the winde is variable. In three or foure degrees of either fide the line, paffe the line the winde hangeth Southerly, in the moneths of July, August, September, and October; all the first the Northreft of the years from the Cape bona efferance to the llands of Azores, the breze raignest contiqually : and fome yeares in the other moneths also or calmes, but he that purposeth to croffe the 30 line from the Northwards to the Southwards, the best and furest passage is, in the moneths of Iamuary, February, and March. In the moneths of September, October and November is also good passige, but not so sure as in the former.

Betwixt nineteene and twenty degrees to the Southwards of the line, the winde tooke ve contrary, which together with the ficknesse of my people made me to seeke the shore and about the end of October, we had fight of the land, which prefently by our height and the making of it, discouered it life to be the Port of Santor, alian noffra Senera de Victoria, and is casie to be knowne, for it hath a great high hill ouer the Port, which (howlocuer a man commeth with the land) rifeth like a bell, and comming neere the shore prefently is discoursed a white Tower or Fort, which standeth vpon the top of a hill over the Harbour, and vpon the Sea-most-land; It is 40 the first land a man mutt compasse before he enter into the Port ; comming within two leagues of the shore we anchored, and the Captaines and Masters of my other Ships, being come aboord,

Ships twenty foure men found) and the winde vncertaine when it might change, wee thought with policie to procure that which we could not by force, and to to offer traffique to the people of the shore.

Enering the Port, within a quarter of a mile is a small Village, and three leagues higher vp. is the chiefe towne: where they have two Forts, one on either fide of the Harbour, and within them ride the Ships whih come thicher to discharge or loade. In the small Village is ever a Garrifon of a hundreth Souldiers, whereof part affilt there continually, and in the white Tower you 50 on the top of the hill, which commandeth it.

it was thought conuentent (the weakenesse of our men considered, for wee had not in our three

Here my Captaine, whom I fent with a Letter, had good entertainment, and those of the shore received his meffage and Letter, difpatching it presently to the Governor, who was some three leagues off in another place; at least, they heare vs so in hand. In the time that they expected the Post,my Captaine with one other entertained himselfe with the Souldiers ashore, who after the common cuitome of their profession (except when they be beforior) fought to please him, and finding that he craued but Oranges, Lemmons, and matters of imall moment for refreshing for his Generall, they suffered the women and children to bring him what he would, which he gratified with double Pistolets, that I had given him for that purpose. Sogot he vs two or three hundreth Oranges and Lemmons, and fome rew Hens.

The answere of the Gouernor was, that he was forry that he could not accomplish our defire, being fo reasonable & good: for that in consideration of the war betweene Spaine and England, he had expresse order from his King, not to suffer any English to trade within his jurisdiction, no nor to land, or to take any refreshing upon the shore. And therefore craued pardon, and that we should take this for a resolute answere : And further, required vs to depart the Port within three daies.

which he said he gaue vs, for our courteous manner of proceeding: If any of my people from that ti ne forwards, should approach to the shore, that hee would doe his best to hinder and annow them. With this and were we refolued to depart; and before it came, with the first faire windel we determined to be packing : but the winde fuffered vs not all that night, nor the next day. In which time I lund in a great perplexitie, for that I knew our owne weakeneffe, and what they might doe voto vs, if that they had knowne to much. For any man that putteth himfelfe into the ene nies Port, had neede of Argus eyes, and the winde in a bagge, especially, where the enemy is throng, and the tydes of any force. For, with either cobe or flood, those who are on the thore, may thrull upon him inventions of fire, and with fwimming or other deufes may cut his thore, may trade upon min measurements. The like may be effected with Reffes, Canoas, Boates or Pinnaces, to annoy and affault-him and if this had beene practifed against vs. or taken effect, our Ships must of force have yeelded themselves; for they had no other people in them but fick ment nany times opinion & feare preserveth the Ships, and not the people in them Wherefore For preventi. it is the pire of a promident Governor to confider well the dangers that may befull him, before be put himfelf into fuch places: fo ball he ener be promided for prenention. In Saint John de Vluz, in the New-Spain. when the Spaniards dishonoured their Nation with that foule all of periory, and breach of faith, pinen to my Faiber, Sir John Hawkins (notorious to the whole world) the Sp niards fired two great Ships,

Their punish-

with intention to burne my Fathers Admirall, which be prevented by towing them with his Boates and ther war. The great Ar nado of Spaine, fent to conquer England, Anne 1588, was with that felfelane industry ouerthrowne: for the fatting on fire fix or famen Ships (whereof two were name) and letting 20 them drive much the floud, forced them to cut their Cables, and to put to Scano feeke a new way to Spain, In which the greatest part of their best Ships and men were lost and perished. The next night, the winde comming off the shore, we fet faile, and with our Boates and

Note for that

Barkes founded as we went. It flowed vpon the Barre not about four foote water, and once in foure and twenty houres (as in some parts of the Welt Indees) at full Sea there is not woon the barre about feventeene or eighteene foote water. The harbour runneth to the South-weitwards. he that will come into it, is to open the harbours mouth a good quarter of a league before he heare with it, and be bolder of the Wester-side, for of the Easterland lyeth a great ledge of Rockes, for the most part vnder water, which sometimes breake not, but with small shipping, a man may goe betwixt them and the point.

The vertue of Oranzes.

Comming abourd of our Ships, there was great toy amongst my company, and many with the fight of the Olanges and Lemmons feemed to recour heart: This is a wonderfull fecret of the power and wifedome of God, that hath hidden to great and vinknowne vertue in this fruit, to be a certaine remedy for this infirmity; I prefently caused them all to be reparted among it our ficke men, which were so many, that there came not about three or foure to a share; but God was pleafed to fend vs a profperous winde the next day, to much to our comfort, that not any one died before we came to the Ilands, where we pretended to refresh our selves : And although our fresh water had failed vs many dayes (before we law the shore) by reason of our long Nauigarion, wit out touching any land, and the excessive drinking of the sicke and diseased (which could not be excused) yet with an invention I bad in my Ship, I easily drew out of the water of the 40 Sea fufficient quantitie of fresh water to lustaine my people, with little expence of fewell, for with foure billets I itilled a hoghead of water, and therewith dreffed the meate for the ficke and whole. The water so distilled, we found to be wholesome and nourishing.

The coast from Santos to Cape Frio lyeth West and by South Southerly. So wee directed our

Diffilling of

course West South-west. The night comming on, and directions given to our other Ships, wee fee the water, having a faire fresh gale of winde and large. My felle, with the Master of our Sip, having watched the night paft, thought now to give nature that which the had beene de-Vaskilfulneffe prived of and fo commended the care of Steeridge to one of his Mates; who with the like travell on the Mafters part being drowne, or with the confidence which he had of him at the Helme, had not that watchfull care which was required; he at the Helme steered West and West by South, & brought 50 vs in a little time close vpon the shore : doubtleffe he had cast vs all a way, had not God extraordinarily delivered vs : for the Mafter being in his dead fleepe, was fuddenly awaked, and with fuch a fright, that he could not be in quiet : whereupon, waking his youth, which ordinarily Providence of Il or in his Cabin by him, asked him how the watch went on; who answered that it could not God, and the be an hopice tince he laid himfelfe to reft. He replyed, that his heart was fo vinquiet, that he could not by any meanes fleepe, and to taking his Gowne, came forth upon the Decke, and prefently discovered the land hard by vs. And for that it was fandle and low, those who had their eyes continually fixed on it, were dazeled with the reflection of the Statres, being a faire night, and fo was hindered from the true difcouery thereof. But he comming out of the drake, had his fight more forcible, to difference the difference of the Sea, and the shoare, So that forthwith hee come 6. manded him at the Helme, to put it close a flarbourd, and taking our Ship, we edged off; and founding, found feane three fathome water, whereby we faw euidentiy, the miraculous mercy of God, that if hee watched our vs, as he doth continually our his, doubtleffe wee had perished without remedie : to whom be ail glory and praise everlatting world without end.

In this point of Steeridge, the Spaniards & Portugals doe exceede all that I have feene. I meane for theircare, which is chiefest in Naugation. And I wish in this , and in all their workes of Care of Stee-Discipline and reformation, we should follow their examples, as also those of any other Nation. ridge, In every Shippe of moment, vpon the halfe decke, or quarter decke, they have a chaire or feate : Exquisit in the out of which whilst they Nauigate, the Pilot, or his Adjutants (which are the same officers Spaniards and which in our Ships wee terme, the Mafter and his Mates) never depart, day nor night, from the Portugals. tiobe of the Compale, and have another before them, whereby they fee what they doe; and are ever witnesses of the good or bad Steeridge of all men that take the Helme.

The next day about ren of the clocke, we were thwart of Cape Blanco, which is low fandie Cape Blanco. 10 land and perilous, for foure leagues into the Sea (thwart it) lye bankes of fand, which have little water on them; on a fudden we found our felues among ft them, in leffe then three fathome water, but with our Boate and Shallop we went founding, and fo got cleare of them. The next day following, we discourred the Hands, where we purpoted to refresh our selves : they are two, and Saint lalmer Ifome call them Saine lames his Hands, and others, Saine Anner! They lye in two and twentie de. lands , alian grees and a halfe to the Southwards of the line; and towards the energing flering the fift of No. Saint Annes. uember) we anchored betwixt them and the maine, in fix fathome water, where we found our

other Ships.

All which being well Moored, we prefently began to fet up Fents & Booths for our fick men. to carry them alhore, and to vie our beit diligence to cure them. For which intent our three Surve-20 ans, with their feruants, and adherents, had two Boates to waite continually upon them, to fetch whatfeener was needefull from the Ships, to procure refreshing, and to Fish either with Nets or Hooks, and Lines. Of these implements we had in abundance, and it yeelded vi some refreshing. For the first dajes the most of those which had health, occupied themselves in romeging our Ship. in bringing afhore of emptie Caske, in filling of them, and in felling and cutting of wood: which being many workes; and few hands; went flowly forwards.

Neere thefe Hands are two great Rocks or small Hands adjoyning. In them wee found great Ganners. ftore of yong Gannets in their nefts, which we referred for the fick, and being bayled with pickled Porke well watered, and mingled with Ozemeale, made regionable Portage, & was good refreshing and sustenance for them. This provision failed vs not, till our departure from them. Vpon-

30 one of these Rocks also, we found great flore of the hearbe Phellane, which boyled and made in- Purslane.

to Sallets, with oyle and vineger, refreshed the ficke stomackes, and gaue appetite. With the ayre of the shore, and good therishing, many recoursed speechly : forme died away quickly, and others continued at a frand. We found here forme flore of Fruits ; a kinde of Cherry, Cherries that groweth vpon a tree likea Plum-tree, red of colour, with a ftone in it, but different in making to ours, for it is not altogether sound, and dented about : they have a pleasing tafte. In one of the llands we found Palmito trees, great and high, and in the top a certaine fruite like Cocos, but Palmitos. no bigger then a Wal-nut. We found also a fruit growing vpon trees in cods, like Beanes, both in the cod and the fruite. Some of my Company proued of them, and they caused vomite and purg- Purgatiues. ing. One other fruit we found, very pleafant in tafte, in fashion of an Artechoque, but lesseon the 49 outside of colour red; within white; and compassed about with prickles: our people called them of Prick-pears.

Prick-peares : no Conserue is better. They grow vpon the leaves of a certaine roote, that is like vnto that which we call femper vina; and many are wont to hang them up in their houses : but their leaves are longer and narrower, and full of prickes on either fide. The Fruite groweth vpon the fide of the leafe, and is one of the best fruites that I have eaten in the Indies. In ripening, prefently the Birds or Vermine are feeding on them; a generall rule to know what fruite to take or feis wholesome and good in the Indies, and other parts. Finding them to be eaten of the Beatls or fuse volumes; Fowles, a man may boldly eate of them.

The water of these llands is not good; the one for being a flanding water, and full of venemous wormes and Serpents, which is neere a Butt-shot from the Sea-shore, where wee found a 50 great Tree fallen, and in the roote of it the names of fundry Portugals, French-men, and others, and among ft them Abraham Cockes, with the time of their being in this Island. The other, though a running water, yet passing by the rootes of certaine trees, which have a smell as that of Garlique, Contagions taketh a certaine contagious fent of them. Here two of our men died with swelling of their bel- water. lies : the accident we could not attribute to any other cause, then to this suspicious water. It is little, and falleth into the fand, and toketh through it into the Sea; and therefore we made a well of a Pipe, and placed it under the rocke from which it falleth, and out of it filled our Caske: but we could not fill aboue two tuns in a night and a day.

After our people began to gather their ftrength, we manned our Boates, and went ouer to the Maine, where presently we found a great River of iresh and sweete water, and a mightie Marish 60 Country, which in the winter feemeth to be continually ouer-flowne with this River, and others, which fall from the mountainous Country adjacent. We rowed some leagues up the River, and found that the further vp we went, the deeper was the River, but no fruit, more then the fweate of our bodies for the labour of our hands. At our returne we loaded our Boate with water, and afterwards from hence we made our Store.

The ficknesse having wasted more then the one halfe of my people, we determined to take one the victuals of the Hanke, and to burne her; which we put in execution. And being occupied in otm n.
Hissorke, we faw a Ship turning to windwards, to fuccour her felfe of the Hands; but having deferred vs.put off to Sea-wards. Two daies after, the winde changing, we faw her againe runnine alone if the coaft, and the Daintie not being in case to goe after her, for many reasons, wee manned the Fances, and tent her after her; who about letting of the Sunne fetched her vp. and foake with her; when finding her to be a great Fly-boate, of (at least) three or foure hundreth tuns, with eighteene Peeces of Artillery, would have returned, but the winde freshing in, put her to Leewards; and standing in to succour her felfe of the land, had fight of another small Bark which after a fhore chase she tooke, but had nothing of moment in her, for that she had bin you to the great Sholes of Abrevies in 18 degrees, and there throwne all they had by the board, to face then lives. This and the other chase were the cause that the Farer could not beate it yo in many dayes; but before wee had put all in a readinesse, the winde changing, shee came vnto vs. and made Relation of that which had past; and how they had given the small Barketo the Portugals, and brought with them onely her Pilot, and a Merchant called Pedro de efcalante of Potofi.

Industry of the They furprife

In this Coast the Portneals, by industry of the Indians, have wrought many feates, At Cape Frie they tooke a great French Shippe in the night, the most of her company being on the shore with Canoas, which they have in this Coast so great, that they carrie scuentie and eightie men, in one of them. And in Isla Grand, I saw one that was about threescore footelong, of one tree as an 5 at Canon, are all I have teene in Brafit, with provisions in them for twenty or thirty daies. At the Iland of San-febastian, neere Saint Vincent, the Indians killed about eightie of Mafter Candib his men, and tooke his Boate, which was the overthrow of his Voyage,

There commeth not any Ship vpon this Coast, whereof these Canoas give not notice present-

ly to enery place. And we were certified in Ifin Grand, that they had fent an Indian from the Ri-

ner of Jewers, through all the Mountaines & Marishes to take a view of vs. and accordingly made a Relation of our Ships, Boates, and the number of men, which were might haue. But to preuent the like danger that might come your vs being careleffe and negligent. I determined one night, Wie ftratagem in the darkeft and quietest of it, to ice what watch our Company kept on the shore; manned our Light-horfman, and Boat armed them with Bowes and Targets, and got affore fome good di- 30 france from the places wherewere our Boothes, and fought to come vpon them vndifcouered : we yied all our best endeuours to take them at vnawares, yet comming within fortie paces we were discoursed; the whole and the sigke came forth to oppose themselves against vs. Which we feeing, gaue them the Hubbub, after the manner of the Indians, and affaulted them, and they vs; but being a close darke night, they could not differne vs presently vpon the Hubbub. From our Ship the Gunner shot a peece of Ordnance over our heads, according to the order given him, and thereof we tooke occasion to retire vnto our Boates, and within a little space came to the Boothes and landing places, as though we came from our Ships to aide them. They began to re-

count vnto vs , how that at the Wester point of the Hand , out of certaine Canoas , had lan-

uents of a care ded a multitude of Indians, which with a great out-cry came vpon them, & affaulted them fierce- 40 ly, but finding better refiftance then they looked for, and feeing themselves discovered by the Ships, tooke them felues to their heeles, and returned to their Canoas, in which they imbarked themselues, and departed. One affirmed, he saw the Canoas; another, their long haire; a third, their Bowes; a fourth, that it could not be, but that some of them had their paiments: And it was worth the fight, to behold those which had not moved out of their beds in many moneths (vnleffe by the helpe of others) had gotten, some a bow-shot off into the woods, others into the tops of trees, and those which had any flrength, joyned together to fight for their lines. In fine, the Booths and Tents were left desolate.

To colour our businesse the better, after we had spent some houre in seeking out, and loyning the Company together, in comforting, and commending them; I left them-an extraordina-52 ry Guard for that night, and so departed to our Shippes, with such an opinion of the affault, given by the Indians, that many fo pollefled (through all the Voyage) would not be perfwaded to the contrary. Which impression wrought such effect in most of my Company, that in all places where the Indians might annoy vs, they were after most carefull and vigilant, as was

" resin the

In these Hands it heigheth and falleth some five or fixe foote water, and but once in two and twentie houres; as in all this Coast, and in many parts of the West Indies; as also in the coast of Peru and Chely (fauing where are great Bayes or indraughts) and there the tydes keep their ordimary course of twice in foure and twenty houres. In the leller of these liands, is a Coue for a small Ship to ride in, Land-lockt, and the may moore her felfe to the trees of either fide : this we called 60

Palmite Hand. Palmite Hand, for the abundance it hath of the greater fort of Palmite trees, the other hath none at all. A man may goe betwixt the Ilands with his Ship, but the better course is out at one end. In The creatures, thefe Ilands are many Scorpions, Snakes, and Adders, with other venemous Vermine. They have Parots, and a certaine kinde of fowle like vnto Phelants, fomewhat bigger, and feeme to be of

CHAP. S. S. 2. Isla Grand described Negros good merchandize at the R. of Plate. 1281

their nature. Here we ipent aboue a moneth in curing of our ficke men, supplying our wants of awood and water, and in other necessary workes. And the tenth of December (all things put in order) we fet faile for Cape Frio, having onely fixe men ficke, with purpose there to set alhore our cate Frio. two Prisoners before named : and anchoring under the Cape, we set our Boate a hoare, but they could not finde any convenient place to land them in, and fo returned: the winde being Southerly. and not good to goe on our voyage, we fuccoured our felues within Ifia Grand, which lyech fome dozen or foureteene leagues from the Cape, betwixt the West, and by South and West Southweit : the rather to fet our Prifoners on fhore.

In the mid way becwint the Cape and this Hand, lyeth the River lenero, a very good Har- Ienero. to bour, fortified with a Garrison, and a place well peopled. The Isla Grand is some eight or tenne leagues long, and caufeth a goodly harbour for thipping: it is full of great fandie Bayes, and in the most of them is flore of good water: within this Iland are many other smaller llands, which cause divers founds and creekes; and amongst these little Hands, one, for the pleasant scituation Little Hand. and fertilitie thereof, called Placentia. This is peopled, all the rest defert : on this Iland our Prifoners defired to be put ashore, and promited to fend vs some refreshing, Whereto wee condescended and fent them ashore with two Boates well manned and armed, who found few Inhabitants in the Hand; for our prople faw not aboue foure or fine houses, not withflanding our Boates returned loaden with Plantines, Pinias, Potatoes, Sugar-canes, and I ome Hens. Amongst which they brought a kinde of little Plantine, greene, and round, which were the best of any that I have 20 feene. With our people came a Portugall, who faid, that the Iland was his; hee feemed to be a Misteche (who are those that are of a Spanish and an Indian brood) poorely apparelled and mile-

rable; we featted him, and gaue him fome trifles, and hee according to his abilitie answered our courtefie with fuch as he had. The winde continuing contrary, we emptied all the water we could come by, which we had

filled in Saint lames his Hand, and filled our Caske with the water of this Illa Grand, It is a wil- Ifla Grand, dernesse coursed with Trees and Shrubs so thicke, as it hath no passage through, except a man make it by force. And it was strange to heare the howling and cries of wilde Bealts in their Wools day and night, which we could not come at to fee by any meanes; fome like Lyons, others like Beares, others like Hogs, and of fuch an 1 fo many diverfities as was admirable. Here our Nets Shels of most 20 profited vs much, for in the fandy Bayes they tooke vs ftore of fish. V pon the fhore at full Sez. theroi Pearles marke, we found in many places certain fiels, like those of mother of Pearles, which are brought out of the East Indies, to make standing cups, called Caraceles; of fo great curiofitie as might moue all the beholders to magnifie the maker of them : and were it not for the brittleneffe of them, by reason of their exceeding thinnesse, doub; lesse they were to be esteemed farre about the others, for more excellent workmanship I have not feene in shels,

The eighteenth of December we fet faile, the winde at North-east, and directed our course for the Straits of Magalianes. The twenty two of this moneth, at the going too of the Sun, we defcried a Portugall (hip, and gaue her chase, and comming within harling of her, she rendred her selfe without any resistance, she was of an hundred tuns bound for Angola to load Negroes, to be carried 40 and fold in the River of Plate : It is a trade of great profit, and much vied, for that the Negroes are carried from the head of the River of Plate, to Porofi, to labour in the Mines. It is a bad Negro, who is not worth there five or fix hundreth peeces, every peece of ten Ryals, which they receive Price of No. in Ryals of Plate, for there it no other Merchandize in those parts. The loading of this Ship was greet. meale of Caffani, which the Portugals call Farina de Paw, made of a certaine roote which the In- cafani meale dians call Tuca, much like vnto Potatoes. Of it are two kindes, the one sweete and good to be eaten (either rolled or fodden) as Potatoes; and the other of which they make their bread, called Caffani, deadly poison, if the liquor or juyce be not throughly pressed out. This Farina, in making Pancakes, and frying them with butter or oyle, and sometimes with Manteca de Puerco: when strewing a little Sugar vpon them, it was meate that our company defired aboue any that 50 was in the Ship.

The Indians also accustome to make their drinke of this meale, and in three seuerall manners. And for Br-First, is chewing it in their mouthes, and after mingling it with water, after a loathsome man-uerage. ner, yet the commonnest drinke that they have; and that held best which is chewed by an old woman. The second manner of their drinke, is baking it till it be halfe burned, then they beate it into Powder; and when they will drinke, they mingle a small quantity of it with water, which giueth a reasonable good taste. The third, and best, is baking it (as aforesaid) and when it is beaten into Powder, to feeth it in water; after that it is well boyled, they let it fland some three or foure daies, and then drinke it. So it is much like the Ale which is yied in England, and of that

60 The Indians are very curious in planting and manuring of this Tucas It is a little shrub, & carri- The mante eth branches like hazell wands; being grown as big as a mans finger, they breake them off in the of planing middeft, and fo pricke them into the ground; it needeth no other art or husbandry, for out of each Laca. branch grow two, three or foure roots, fome bigger, fome leffer: but first they burne and manure the ground, the which labour, and whatfoeuer elfe is requilite, the men doe not fo much

Хуууу з

With the labour of the women.

as helpe with a finger, but all lyeth vpon their poore women, who are worfe then flaues; for they labour the ground, they plant, they digge and delue, they bake, they brew, and drelle their meate, fetch their water, and doe all drudgene what focuer; yea, though they nurie a childe, they are not exempted from any labour : their childe they carrie in a Wallet about their necke, ordinarrly under one arme, because it may fucke when it will,

The men have care for nothing but for their Canoas, to paffe from place to place, and of their Bowes and Arrowes to hunt, and their Armes for the warre, which is a fword of heapie blacke wood, some foure fingers broad, an inch thicke, and an Elle long, somewhat broader towards the top then at the handle. They call it Macana, and it is carried and wrought with inlaid works very curioully, but his edges are blunt. If any kill any game in hunting he bringeth it not with him, but from the next tree to the game, hee bringeth a bough (for the trees in the Indies have leaves for the most part all the yeare) and all the way as he goeth streweth little peeces of it here and there, and comming home giveth a peece to his woman, and fo fends her for it. If they goe to the Warre, or in any journey, where it is necessary to carry promision or Merchandize, the women ferue too carrie all, and the men neuer fuccour nor cafe them, wherein they flew greater Barbarisme then in any thing (in my opinion) that I have noted among it them, except in eating one another.

We tooke out of this Prize, for our provision some good quantitie of this meale, and the Spear the had, being not about three or foure Chefts; after three dayes we gave the Ship to the Perine gals, and to them libertie. In her was a Portugal Knight, which went for Gouernour of Angela, 20 of the habit of Christ, with fiftie Souldiers, and Armes for a hundreth and fiftie, with his wife and daughter. He was old, and complained, that after many yeeres feruice for his King, with fundry milhaps, he was brought to that poore estate, as for the reliefe of his wife, his daughter and himsel'e, he had no other substance, but that he had in his Ship. It moved compassion, so as nothing of his was diminished, which though to vs was of no great moment, in Angola it was worth good Crownes. Onely we difarmed them all, and let them depart, faying, that they would resurne to Saint Vincents. We continued our course for the Straits, my people much animated with this volookt for refreshing, and prasted God for his bountse, providence, and grace extended towards vs. Here it will not be out of the way to speake a word of the particularities

The description on of Brafil.

Brafil is accounted to be that part of America, which lyeth towards our North Sea, betwixt the River of the Amazons, neere the line to the Northwards, untill a man come to the River of Place in 26. degrees to the Southwards of the line. This coast generally lyeth next of any thing South and by Weft, It is a temperate Countrie, though in some ports it exceedeth in heate; it is full of good fuccours for shipping, and plentifull for Rivers and fresh waters. The principall has bitations, are Fernambuca, the Bay De todos los Santos, Nostra Senera de victoria, alias Santos, the River Jenero, Saint Vincents, and Placentia: every of them provided of a good Port. The winder are variable, but for the most part trade alongst the Coast.

Its Hauens.

A worme there is in this Countrie, which killed many of the first Inhabitants, before God Strangworme. was pleased to discouer a remedie for it, vinto a religious person. It is like a Magot, but more sin- 40 Variation of der and longer, and of a greene colour, with a red head. This worme creepeth in at the hinder the Compasse. parts, where is the enacuation of our superfluities, and there (as it were) gleweth himselfe to the gut, there feedeth of the bloud and humors, and becommeth to great, that flooping the naturall passage, he forceth the principall wheele of the clocke of our body to stand still, and with it the accompt of the houre of life to take end, with most cruell torment and paine, which is such, that he who bath beene throughly punished with the Collique can quickly decipher or demonstrate. The Antidote for this pernicious worme is Garlique: and this was discourred by a Phistian to a Religious perlon.

d. III.

THARLTONS treacherie: Discouerie of Land wnknowne : Entrance of the Straits, accidents therein, and description thereof : diners occasionall discourses for the furtherance of Marine and Naturall knowledge.

N our Naugation towards the Straits, by our obfernation we found, that our Compafe varied a point and better to the Eaftwards.

In the height of the River of Plate, we being some fiftie leagues off the coast, a storme tooke vs Southerly, which endured fortie eight houres : In the first day about the going downe of the Sunne, Robert Tharlton, Matter of the Fancie, bare up before the winde, without giving vs any token or figue, that the was in diffreste, We seeing her to continue her course,

bare we after her, and the night comming on, we carried our light, but the neuer answered vs. for they kept their course directly for England, which was the Overthrow of the Voyage, as well for shat we had no Pinnace to goe before vs , to discouer any danger, to feeke out roades and and chorme, to helpe our watering and refreshing; as also for the victuals, necessaries, and men which The ouers they carried away with them : which though they were not many, yet with their helpe in our throw of the fight, we had taken the Vice-admirall, the first time shee bourded with vs, as shall be hereafter Voyage by a manifested. For once we cleered her Decke, and had wee brene able to have spared but a dozen perfidious man

CHAP. S. 2. Fishing with Hooke and Line for Fowles. Vaknowne Land.

men, doubtlette, we had done with her what we would, for the had no crote fights. Moreouer. if the had beene with me, I had not beene discoursed upon the coast of Pirew. But I was wor-10 thy to be deceived, that trufted my Ship in the hands of on hypocrite, and a man which had left his Generall before in the like occation, and in the felfe same place : for being with Maifer Thomat Candilo, Matter of a small Shippe in the Voyage wherein hee died, this Captaine being aboord the Admirall, in the night time for tooke his Fleete, his Generall and Captaine, and returned home. Pitie it is that such perfidious perfons are not more feuerely punished.

Thefe ablentings and chapes are made most times sandy to piffer and steale, as well by taking The cuming of tome prize when they are alone, and without command, robinder or order their bad proces- of Runnadings, as to appropriate that which is in their intrusted shipper casting the fault, if they bee wayes, called to account , vpon some poore and voknowne Mariners , whom they suffer with a little pillage, to abient themielues, the cunninglier to colour their greatest diforders, and

20 Robberies.

The Horme ceasing, and being out of all hope, wee fet faile and went on our course. During Birds like this ftorme, certaine great Fowles as bigge as Swannes, foured about vs, and the winde calming, the Hellstaderi tetled themselves in the Sea, and fed vpon the sweepings of our ship; which I perceiting, and de-tound in the fireds to lee of them, because they feemed farte greater then in truth they were; I caused a Hook Strains which and Line to be brought me; and with a piece of a Pilehard I batted the Hooke, and a foot from they called it, tied a piece of Corke, that it might not finke deepe, and threw it into the Sa, which, our Mores. fun driving with the Sea in a little time was a good space from vs, and one of the Fowles beeing Line & Hookes hungry, prefendly feized upon it, and the Hobke in his upper beake. It is like to a Faulcons bill but that the point is moore crooked, in that manner, as by no meanes free could cleere himfelfe,

30 except that the Line brake, or the Hooke righted : Plucking him towards the thip, with the wauing of his wings he eated the weight of his body and being brought to the sterne of our ship, two of our company went downe by the ladder of the Poope, and feized on his neck and wings: but fuch were the blowes he gaue them with his Pinnions, as both left their hand fast, beeing beaten blacke and blue; we cait a finare about his necke, and fo triced him into the ship. By the fame manner of filhing, we caught fo many of them, as refreshed and recreated all my people for r. ir. famens. that day. Their bodies were great, but of little flesh and tender, in taste answerable to the food whereon they feed. They were of two colours, some white, some grey; they had three joynts in each wing; and from the point of one wing to the point of the other, both firetched out, was aboue two fathomes.

40 The wind continued good with vs, till we came to 49. degrees and 30. minutes where it took vs Weiterly, being (as we made our account) fome firty leagues from the shoare. Betwix- 49. and 48, degrees is Port Saint lalian, a good Harbour, and in which a man may graue his shippe, though the draw fifteene or fixteene foot water : But care is to bee had of the people called Pata- Care of the gones. They are treacherous, and of great stature, most give them the name of Grants.

The fecond of February, about nine of the clocke in the morning, wee deferred land, which bare South-west of vs, which we looked not for so timely; and comming neerer and neerer vnto it, by the lying, wee could not coniecture what Land ir finuld be, for wee were next of any thing in 48. degrees, and no Plat, nor Sea-card which we had, made mention of any Land, which Land vnlay in that manner, neere about that height; In fine, wee brought our Lar-boord tacke aboord, knowing, 50 and flood to the North-east-wards all that day and night, and the winde continuing Westerly

and a faire gale, we continued our course alongst the Coast the day and night following, in which time we made account we discouered well neere threescore leagues off the Coail. It is bold, and made [mall shew of dangers. The land is a goodly Champion Countrey, and peopled; wee faw many fires, but could not come to speake with the people; for the time of the yeare was farre spent to shoote the Straits, and the want of our Pinnasse disabled vs for finding a Port or Road; A caucarfor not being discretion with a ship of charge, and in an vinknowine Coast, to come neere the shoare comming sudbefore it was founded; which were causes, together with the change of the winde (good for vs dealy to ne re to paffe the Strait) that hindered the further Difcourry of this Land, with its fecrets : This I anyoknowne hand forcowed for many times fince for that it had likelihood to bee an excellent Countrey. It Land.

60 hath great Rivers of fresh waters for the out-shoot of them colours the Sea in many places, as we ranne alongit it. It is not Mountaynous, but much of the disposition of England, and as temperate. The things we noted principally on the Coaft, are thefe following: the Weltermoft point of the Land, with which wee first tell, is the end of the Land to the Westwards, as wee found afterwards. If a man bring this point South-west is rifeth in three Mounts or round Hillockes:

Ууууу 3

Faire Iland.

bringing it more Westerly, they shoot themselves all into one; and bringing it Easterly, it riseth Point Tremoun- in two Hillockes. This we called Point Tremountaine. Some twelve or fourteene leagues from this point to the Eastwards, faire by the shoare, lyeth a low flat Iland of some two leagues long, we named it Faire lland; for it was all ouer as greene and smooth, as any Meddow in the Spine

Some three or four leagues Easterly from this Iland, is a goodly opening, as of a great River.

or an arme of the Sea, with a goodly low Countrey adjacent. And eight or tenne leagues from this opening, some three leagues from the shoare, lyeth a bigge Rocke, which at the first we had thought to be a ship under all her sayles; but after, as we came neere, at discovered it selfe to bee Emduit-bead, a Rocke, which we called Condust-bead; for that how focuer a man commeth with it, it is like to to the Conduit-heads about the Citie of London. All this Coast so farre as we discourred, lyeth next of any thing East and by North, and West and by South. The Land, for that it was discouered in the Reigne of Queene Elizabeth, my Souereigne Lady and Miftris, and a Mayden Queene, and at my cost and adventure, in a perpetual memory of her chastitle, and remembrance of my endequours, I gave it the name of Hawkins Maiden land, Before a man fall with this Land fome twen: y or thirty leagues, he shall meet with beds of Oreweed, driging to and fro in the Sea, with white flowres growing vpon them, and fometimes farther off; which is a good flow white flowres, and figne the Land is neere, whereof the Westermost part lyeth some three score leagues from the neerest Land of America.

With our faire and large wind, wee shaped our course for the Straits, and the tenth of Februto the Straits. ary wee had fight of Land, and it was the head-land of the Straits to the Northwards, which agreed with our height, wherein wee found our felues to bee, which was in 52. degrees and 40. minutes. Within a few houres we had the mouth of the Straits open, which lieth in 52. degrees and go, minutes. It rifeth like the North foreland in Kent, and is much like the Land of Margates. It is not good to borrow neere the shoare, but to give it a faire birth; within a few houres we entred the mouth of the Straits, which is some fixe leagues broad, and lieth in 52. degrees, and co. minutes; doubling the Point on the flarbood, which is also flat of a good birth, we opened a faire Bay, in which we might descry the Hull of a ship beaten upon the Beach. It was of the Spanish Fleet, that went to inhabit there, in Anne 1 ,82, vnder the charge of Pedro Sarmiento, who at his returne was taken Prisoner, and brought into England. In this Bay the Spaniard 30 Pedro Sarmien- made their principall habitation, and called it the Citie of Saint Philip, and left it peopled; But the cold barrennelle of the Countrey, and the malice of the Indians, with whom they badly agreed, made speedy end of them, as also of those, whom they left in the middle of the Straits, three leagues from Cape Froward to the Eastwards, in another habitation.

San Philip.

We continued our course along ft this Reach (for all the Straits is as a River altering his course. fometimes vpon one point, fometimes vpon another) which is some eight leagues long, and lieth West North-west. From this we entred into a goodly Bay, which runneth yp into the Land Northerly many leagues; and at firstentrance, a man may fee no other thing, but as it were, a maine Sez. From the end of this first Reach, you muit direct your course West South-west, and tome fourteene or fifteene leagues lyeth one of the narrowell places of all the Straits; This lea- 40 deth vnto another Reach, that lyeth West and by North some tix leagues. Here in the middle of the Reach, the wind tooke vs by the North-west, and so we were forced to anchor some two or three dayes. In which time we went ashoare with our Boats, and found neere the middle of this Reach, on the starboard side, a reasonable good place to ground and trimme a small ship; whereit higherh some nine or ten foot water. Here we saw certaine Hogs, but they were so tarre from vs, that we could not differ ne whether they were of those of the Country, or brought by the Spaniards; these were all the beasts which we saw in all the time we were in the Straits.

Note.

Since it hath bin plainly

In two tides we turned through this reach, and so recovered the llands of Pengwins; they lye from this reach four leagues South-west and by West. Till you come to this place, care is to be taken of not comming too neere to any point of the land; for being (for the most part) fandy, they 50 have sholding off them, and are somewhat dangerous. These llands have beene set forth by some to be three, we could diffeour but two; And they are no more except that part of the Mayne, which lyeth ouer against them, be an Hand; which carrieth little likelihood, and I cannot determine it. A man may faile betwixt the two Ilands, or betwixt them and the Land on the Larboard file: from which Land to the bigger Hand is as it were a bridge or ledge, on which is the South part foure or five fathorn water; and to him that commeth neere it, not knowing thereof, may juffly caule feare : for it she weth to be shold water with his ripling, like vnto a Race. Betwize the former Reach, and these Ilands, runneth vp a goodly Bay into the Countrey to the North-wards. It caufeth a great Indraught, and aboue thefe Ilands runneth a great tide from the mouth of the Straits to these Hands, the Land on the Larboard-fide is low Land and fandy (for the most part, 60 and without doubt, Hands) for it hath many openings into the Sea, and forcible Indraughts by them, and that on the Starboord fide, is all high Mountaynous Land, from end to end; but no wood on either fide. Before we paffed these Ilands, under the Lee of the bigger Iland we anchored, the winde beeing at North-east, with intent to refresh our felues with the Fowles of their

Hands they are of divers forts, and in great plentie, as Pengwins, wild Ducks, Guls and Gannets: of the principall we purposed to make provision, and those were the Pengwins. The Pengwin is in all proportion like a Goose, and hath no teathers, but a certaine downe vpon Straits. all parts of his bodie; and therefore canot flee, but analeth himfelfe in all occasions with his The description feet, running as fast as most men. He liueth in the Sea, and on the Land feedeth on fish in the on of the Sea, and as a Goofe on the shore vpon grasse. They harbour themselves vnder the ground in Bur. Pengma. rowes, as the Conies; and in them hatch their young. All parts of the Iland where they haunted were undermined, faue onely one Valley which)it feemeth) they referued for their food; for it was as greene as any Medow in the moneth of Aprill, with a most fine short graffe. The slesh of to these Penswins is much of the sauour of a certaine Fowle taken in the Ilands of Lander and Siller; which we call Puffins, by the tafte it is eafily difcerned that they feed on fish. They are very fat, and in dreffing must be flead as the Byter; they are reasonable meate rosted, baked, or sodden: but best rosted. We salted some doozen or sixteene Hogsheads, which served vs (whilest they lafted) in fteed of powdred Beefe. The hunting of them (as wee may well terme it) was a great Hunting the recreation to my company and worth the fight, for in determining to catch them, necessarily was Penguin. required good flore of people, every one with a cudgell in his hand, to compaffe them round about, to bring them, as it were, into a Ring; if they chanced to breake out, then was the fport; for the ground beeing undermined, at unawares it failed, and as they ranne after them, one fell here, another there, another offering to ftrike at one, lifting vp his hand, funke vp to the arme-20 pits in the earth, another leaping to avoid one hole, fell into another. And after the first flaughter, in feeing vs on the shoare, they shunned vs, and procured to recouer the Sea : yea many times feeing them felues perfecuted they would tumble downe from fuch high Rocks and Mountaines. as it feemed impossible to escape with life. Yet as soone as they came to the Beach, presently we should see them runne into the Sea, as though they had no hurt. Where one goeth, the other followeth, like there after the Bel-weather but in getting them once within the Ring close together, few efcaped, faue fuch as by chance hid themselves in the borrowes, and ordinarily there was no Droue which yeelded vs not a thouland, and more : the manner of killing them which the Hunters vied, beeing in a cluster together, was with their cudgels to knocke them on the head, for though a man gaue them many blowes on the body they dyed not: Befides the flesh 30 bruized is not good to keepe. The maffacre ended, presently they cut of their heads. that they might bleed well : fuch as we determined to keepe for store, we faued in this manner. First, wee The keeping folit them, and then walhed them well in Sea-water, then talted them, having laine fome fixe for store, houres in Salt, we put them in preffe eight houres, and the bloud being foaked out, wer falted them againe in our other caske, as is the cultome to falt Beefe, after this manner they continued

good fome two moneths, and ferued vs in steed of Beefe. The Guls and Gamets, were not in fo great quantitie, yet we wanted not young Guls to eate The Guls. all the time of our stay about these Ilands. It was one of the delicatest foods, that I have eaten in all my life.

The Duckes are different to ours, and nothing so good meate; yet they may ferue for necessis Ducks, 40 tie: They were many, and had a part of the Iland to themselves severall, which was the highest Hill and more then a Musket (hot ouer. In all the dayes of my life, I have not feene greater arte and curiofitie in creatures voide of reason, then in the placing and making of their Nests; all the Hill being fo full of them, that the greatest Mathematician of the World, could not demie how Cunning Arto place one more then there was voon the Hill, leaving onely one path-way for a Fowle to paffe chitectures betwixt. The Hill was all leuell, as if it had beene smoothed by arte; the Nests made onely of earth, and feeming to be of the felfe-fame mould; for the Nests and the foile is all one, which, with water that they bring in their Beakes, they make into Clay, or a certaine dawbe and after fathion them round, as with a compasse. In the bottome they contains the measure of a foots in the height about eight inches; and in the top, the same quantitie ouer; there they are hollowed in, formwhat deep, wherein they lay their Egges, without other preuention. And I am of opinion. 50 that the Sun helpeth them to hatch their young: their Nefts are for many yeares, and of one proportion, not one exceeding another in bignesse, in height, nor circumference; and in proporrionable diffance one from another. In all this Hill, not in any of their Nefts, was to be found a blade of graffe, a ftraw, a fticke, a feather, a moat, no, nor the filing of any Fowle, but all the Nefts Their nearnes,

and passages betwire them, were so smooth and cleane, as if they had bin newly swept & washed. One day having ended our hunting of Pengwins, one of our Mariners walking about the lland, Of Seales, or discourred a great company of Seales, or Sea-wolves (to called for that they are in the Sea, as the Wolues on the Land) adulting vs, that he left them (leeping, with their beilies toasting against the Sunne : we prouided our felues with thaues and other weapons; and fought to fleale vpon 60 them at vnawares, to surprize some of them, and comming downe the side of a Hill, we were not difcouered, till wee were close voon them, notwithstanding, their Sentinell (before wee could approach) with a great howle waked them : we got betwirt the Sea and some of them, but they hunned vs not; for they came directly vpon vs; and though we dealt heere and there a blow , yet not a man that withflood them , cleaped the ouerthrow. They reckon not

Good prouifie

of a Misket flot, a fword pierceth not their skinne, and to give a blowe with a staffe, is asto fmite voon a flone : only in giving the blowe voon his inout, prefently he falleth downe dead. After they had recovered the water, they did as it were, forme vs, defie vs , and daunced before vs, vntill we had shot some Musket shot through them, and so they appeared no more.

This fifth is like voto a Calfe, with four legs, but not about a spanne long : his skinne is hairy likea Calle : but thefe were different to all that euer I have feene, yet I have feene of them in many parts; for these were greater, and in their former parts like vnto Lions, with shagee Their Sentinel, harre, and moltaches. They live in the Sea, and come to fleepe on the Land, and they ever have one that watcheth, who adulfeth them of any accident. They are beneficiall to man in their skinnes for many purposes : In their mostaches for Pick-tooths, and in their fatte to

Wee embarqued our felues, and fet favle with the winde at North-west, which could serve vs but to an end of that reach, tome dozen leagues long, and fome three or foure leagues broad, It lieth next of any thing, till you come to Cape Agreda, South-west; from this Cape to Cape From and, the coast lieth Well South-west. Some foure leagues between them, was the second peopling of the Spaniards: and this Cape lieth in 55. degrees and better. Thwart Cape Froward, the winde larged with vs, and we continued our course towards the Iland of Elizabeth's which lieth from Cape Freward tome foureteene leagues West and by South. This reach is foure or free leagues broad, and in it are many channels or openings into the Sea : for all the land

The fecond propling of the Spania ds.

on the Souther part of the Straites are Ilands and broken land; and from the beginning of this 20 reach to the end of the Straits, high mountainous Land on both fides, in most parts covered with Snowe all the veere long. Betwixt the Hand Elizabeth, and the Maine, is the narrowell passage of all the States: it may be some two Musket shor from side to side. From this Strate to Eli-Elizabeth: Bay. zabeth Bay, is tome foure leagues, and the courie lieth North-west and by Weil. This Bay is all tandie, and cleane ground on the Eatterne part; but before you come at it, there lieth a point of the shoare a good birth off, which is dangerous. And in this reach, as in many parts of the Straites, runneth a quicke and forcible tide. In the Bay it higheth eight or nine foot water. The Northerne part of the Bay hath foule ground, and Rockes under water : and therefore it is not whollome borrowing of the Maine, One of Matter Thomas Candifo his Pinalies (as I have been

enformed) came aground upon one of them, and he was in lazard to have left her there.

The River of Ieronimo, -

From Elizabeth Bay to the River of Ieronima, is forne fine leagues. The course lieth West and by North, and West. Here the winde scanted, and forced vs to tecke a place to anchor in. Our Boats going alongst the shoare, found a reasonable Harbour, which is right against that which Another chan- they call, River lerenime: but it is another channell, by which a man may diffembeque the Straite, as by the other which is accustomed ; for with a storme, which tooke vs one night, suddenly were were forced into that opening vnwittingly; but in the morning, feeing our errour, and the winde larging, with two of three boords we turned into the old channell, not daring for Blanches Day. want of our Pinaffe to attempt any new Discouerie. This Harbour wee called Blanches Bay; for that it was found by William Blanch, one of our Matters Mates. Here having moored our thip, we beganne to make our prouttion of wood and water, whereof was plentie in this Bay, 40 and in all other places from Pengwin Ilands, till within a dozen leagues of the mouth of the

Now finding our Deckes open, with the long lying under the Line, and on the coast of Brefill, the Sunne having beene in our Zenith many times, we calked our flup, within boo d and without, about the Deckes. And fuch was the diligence wee wied, that at foure dayes end, wee had about threefcote Pipes of water, and twentte Boars of wood flowed in our thip: no man was idle, nor otherwife bufied but in necessarie workes; fome in felling and cleaning of wood; fome in carrying of water; fome in romaging; fome in washing, others in baking; one in heating of Pitch, another in gathering of Mulich: no man was exempted, but knew at euening, whereunto he was to betake himfelte the morning following.

Objection of wafte. Aniwere.

- - 1657

Some man might aske mee, how were came to have to many emptie Caske in leffe then two moneths; for it feemeth much, that fo few men in such short time, and in fo long a Voyage should waite so much? Whereto I answere, that it came not of excessive expense : for in health we never exceeded our ordinarie; but of a milchance which befell vs vnknowne in the Hand of Saint lames, or Saint Anne, in the coaft of Brafill ; where wee refreshed our felicis, and according to the sustome, laid our Caske ashoares to trimme it, and after to fill it, the place being commodious for us. But with the water a certaine worme, called Broma by the Spannard and by ws Arters, enemed also, which cate it to tuli of tioles , that all the water foaked out, and made much of our Casks of fmell vic. This we remedied the cell wee could, and discoursed it lone before we came to this place.

Hereof let others take warning, in no place to have Cashe on the Shoare, where it may be another gainst wormen for it is one of the pronifions which are with greatest care to be preferred in long Voyages, and baraef which etc . so be supplied. The fo Arreis, or B oma, in all hot Countries enter into the plantes of flips, and effect. throughthirs. all wherevere Reners of fresh winer, (the common opinion is, that they are bred in fresh water, and will

the current of the Rivers are brought into the Sea) but experience teacheth, that they breede in the great Seas, wall bot chimates, especially neere the Equino Stall Line: for lying fo long under, and neere the Line, and towing a Shalop at our sterne, comming to cleanse ber in Brafill, wee found ber all under water courred with these Wormer, as bigge as the stile singer of a man, on the outside of the planke, not fully concred, but halfe the thicknesse of their bodie, like to a gellic wrought into the planke as with a Gowdoe. In little time, if the flip be not sheathed, they put all in bazard; for they enter in no bigger then a small Spanish Needle, and by little and little their boles become ordinarily greater then a mans finger. The thicker the planke is, the greater he groweth; yea, I have seem many ships so eaten, that the most of their plankes under water have beene like Home-combes, and especially those between twinde 10 and water. If they had not beene beathed, it had beene impossible that they could have swomme. The entring of them is hardly to be discerned, the most of them being small as the head of a Pinne, Which. all fuch as purpose long Voyages, are to prenent by sheathing their ships.

And for that I have feene diners manners of freathing, for the ignorant I will fet them downe which Of theathing by experience I have found best. In Spaine, and Portugall, some theath their ships with Lead; which, In Spaine and besides the cost and weight, although they wie the thunnest sheet-lead that I have seene in any place, yet Pottwall. it is nothing durable, but subject to many casualties. Another manner is used with double plankes, as with double thicke without as within, after the manner of furring; which is little better then that with Lead: for Plankes, belides his weight, it dureth little, because the Worme in (mall time passesh through the one and the o.

ther. A third manner of sheathing had beene vsed amongit some with fine Cannas; which is of small With Canuss. 20 continuance, and so not to be regarded. The fourib presention, which now is most accounted of is to Withhurse burne the upper planke till it come to be in enery place like a Cole, and after to pitch it : this is not bad. In China, (as I have beene enformed) they wife a certaine Betane or Varnish, in manner of an In china with artificiall Puch , wherewith they trimme the outfide of their ships. It is faid to bee durable, and of Varnith. that vertue, as neither worme, nor water pierceth it; neither hath the Sunne power against it. Some baue denised a certaine Pitch, mingled with Glaffe, and other ingredients, beaten into powder, with which if the ship be pitched, it is said, the worme that toucheth it, dieth : but I have not heard that it hath beene viefull. But the most approved of all is the manner of sheathing vied now adapts in Eng. In England, land with thinne boords, halfe inch thicke, the thinner the better, and Elme better then Oake; for it rineth not, it indureth better under water, and yeeldeth better to the thins fide

The innention of the materials incorporated between the planke and the sheathing, is that indeed which anayleth; for without it many plantes were not sufficient to hinder the entrance of this worms : this manner is thus : Before the Speathing board is mayled on, upon the inner side of it, they smere it over Best manner with Tarre, halfe a finger thicke, and vpon the Tarre, another halfe thicke of baire, such as the White- of Meathing lymers vie, and so nay le it on, the wayles not above a spanne distance one from another: the thicker they are driven, the better. Some hold opinion, that the Tarre killeth the worms; others, that the worms paffing the sheathing, and seeking a way through, the have and the Tarre so innolue, that bee is cheaked therewith; which mee thinkes is most probable: this manner of sheathing was innented by my Father; and experience hath taught it to be the best, and of least cost.

Such was the diligence we vied for our dispatch to shoot the Straits, that at foure dayes end, we had our water and wood flowed in our thip, all our Copper-worke finished, and our ship calked from Post to Stemme: the first day in the morning (the winde being faire) we brought our felues into the channell, and fayled towards the mouth of the Straites, praising God : and beginning our course with little winde, wee descried a fire voon the shoare, made by the Indiant The Naturalis for a figue to call vs; which feene, I caused a Boat to bee man'd, and wee rowed ashoare, to see what their meaning was, and approaching neere the shoare, we saw a Canoa made fast under a Rocke with a Wyth, most artificially made with the rindes of trees, and sewed together with the finnes of Whales; at both ends sharpe and turning vp, with a greene bough in either end, and ribbes for ftrengthening it. After a little while we might discerne on the fall of the Mountaine (which was full of trees and shrubs) two or three Indians naked, which came out of cer-

50 taine Caues or Cotes. They spake vnto vs, and made divers signes; now pointing to the Harbour, out of which we were come; and then to the mouth of the Straites : but we vnder flood nothing of their meaning. Yet left they vs with many imaginations, suspecting it might bee to adulfe vs of our Pinnace, or fome other thing of moment : but for that they were vnder couert, and might worke vs some treacherie (for all the people of the Straits, and the Land neere them, vse all the villanie they can towards white people, taking them for Spaniards, in revenge of the deceit that Nation hath vied towards them vpon fundry occasions:) as also for that by our stay wee could reape nothing but hinderance of our Nauigation, wee hafted to our ship, and sayled on our courfe.

From Blanches Bay to long Reach, which is some source leagues, the course lieth West South Long Reach. 60 west entring into the long Reach, which is the last of the Strates, and longest. For it is some thirtie two leagues, and the course lieth next of any thing North-west. Before the setting of Mouth of the the Sunne, wee had the mouth of the Straites open, and were in great hope the next day to be Straits. in the South Sea: bat about feuen of the clocke that night, we faw a great cloude arife out of the North-east, which began to cast forth great flashes of lightnings, and suddenly sayling with

Note:

Tempeft.

a fresh gale of winge at North-east, another more forcible tooke vs assayes, which put vs in danger: for, all our fayles being a taut, it had like to have overfee our fhip, before we could take in our favles. And therefore in all fuch femblances it is great wifedome to carrie a fhort fayle, or to take in all tayles. Here we found what the Indians fore-warned vs of : for they have great intight in the change of weather, and befides have fecret dealing with the Prince of Darkneffe. who many times declareth vnto them things to come : By this meanes and other witch-crafts. which he teacheth them, he possesseth them, and causeth them to doe what pleaseth him, Within halfe an houre it began to thunder and raine, with so much winde as wee were forced to lie a hull, and so darke, that we saw nothing, but when the lightning came. This being one of the narrowest Reaches of all the Straites, we were forced, every glasse, to open a little of our force fayle, to cast about our ships head ; any man may conceive if the night feemed long vnto vs. what defire we had to fee the day. In fine, Phabus with his beautifull face lightned our Hemiinhere, and reloyced our hearts (having driven aboue twentie foure leagues in twelve houres ly-

ing a hull : whereby is to be imagined the force of the winde and current.) Wee fet our fore tayle, and returned to our former Harbour : from whence , within three or foure dayes, we fet fayle againe with a faire winde, which continued with vs till we came with. in a league of the mouth of the Strait , here the winde tooke vs againe contrarie, and forced vs to return agains to our former Port : where being ready to anchor, the winds scanted with vs in such manner, as we were forced to make aboord. In which time, the winde and tide put vs fo farre to lee-wards, that we could by no meanes feize it : So wee determined to goe to Eliza- 20 beth Bay, but before we came at it, the night ouertooke vs: and this Reach being dangerous and narrow, we durit neither hull, nor trie, or turne to and againe with a fhort tayle, and therefore bare along it in the middelt of the channell, till we were come into the broad Reach, then lava

When we fet tayle and ran alongst the coast, seeking with our Boate some place to anchor in;

fome four leagues to the Westwards of Cape Froward, we found a goodly Bay; which we na-

med English Bay: where anchored, wee presently went ashoare, and found a goodly River of

hull till the morning.

The nariues houses,

fresh water, and an old Canoa broken to pieces, and some two or three of the houses of the Indiant, with pieces of Seale stinking ripe. These houses are made in fashion of an Ouen seuen or eight foot broad, with boughs of trees, and couered with other boughes, as our Summer houses; 30 and doubtleffe doe ferue them but for the Summer time, when they come to fish, and profite themselues of the Sea. For they retire themselues in the Winter into the Countrie, where it is more temperate, and yeeldeth better instenance : for on the Mayne of the Straites, we neither faw beaft nor fowle . Sea-fowle excepted, and a kinde of Black-bird, and two Hogs towards the beginning of the Straits. Here our thip being well moored, we began to supplie our wood and water, that we had spent. Which being a dayes worke, and the winde during many dayes contrary, I endeauored to keep my people occupied, to divert them from the imagination which Sloth cause of fome had conceived; that it behoued we should returne to Brafill, and winter there, and so shoot the Straits in the Spring of the yeere. One day wee rowed up the River, with our Boate and Light-horfeman, to discouer it, and the Inland : where having spent a good part of the day, 49 and finding should water, and many Trees fallen thwart it, and little fruit of our labour, nor any thing worth the noting, wee returned. Another day, wee trained our people ashoare, being a goodly fandy Bay: another, wee had a hurling of Batchelors against married men; this day we were builed in wreftling, the other in shooting; so we were neuer idle, neither thought we the time long.

we were driven fo farre to lee-wards, that wee could not recover into the Bay; and night comming on, with a short sayle, we beate off and on till the morning. At the breake of the day conferring with the Captaine and Mafter of my flip, what was best to bee done, wee resolued to 50 feeke out Tobias Cone, which lieth over against Cape Fryo, on the Southerne part of the Straits. because in all the Reaches of the Straits (for the most part) the winde bloweth trade, and thereforelittle profit to be made by turning to winde-wards. And from the Ilands of the Penguini to the end of the Straites towards the South-fea, there is no anchoring in the channell; and if we should be put to lee-wards of this Come, we had no succour till we came to the llands of Pongwins; and fome of our companie which had been with M. Th. Candifb in the Voyage in which he died, and in the fame Come many weekes, vndertooke to be our Pilots thither. Whereupon wee bare vp, being fome two leagues thither, having fo much winde as we could fearce lie by it with our course and bonnet of each; but bearing up before the winde, we put out our Topsayles and Setting of the Spritfayle, and within a little while the winde began to fayle vs, and immediatly our flip gaue 60 a mightie blowe upon a Rocke, and flucke fast upon it. And had wee had but the fourth part of the winde, which we had in all the night past, but a moment before wee strucke the Rocke, cur tions God pro- ship, doubtlesse, with the blowe had broken her selse all to pieces.

After wee had past here some seuen or eight dayes, one evening with a flaw from the shoare, our ship droue off into the channell, and before wee could get vp our Anchor, and fet our Sayles,

All our labour was fruitlesse till God was pleased that the floud came, and then wee had been

off with great iny and comfort, when finding the current fauourable with vs, wee flood over to Enally Bay, and fetching it, we anchored there, having beene fome three hours vpon the Rock, and with the blowe, as after we faw, when our ship was brought a ground in Perico (which is the Port of Panama) a great part of her sheathing was beaten off on both fides of her Bulses. and fome foure foot long , and a foot square of her falle stemme, joyning to the Keele , wrested scroffe, like vato a Hogs yorke, which hindered her fayling very much.

CHAP.5. \$ 3. Crabby Coue. Sir Richard Hawkins bolde undertakings.

They founded a Cour fome fixteene leagues from the mouth of the Straite, which after wee Crabby Cone. raffed Crabby Cone. It brooked his name well for two causes; the one, for that all the water was fill of a small kinde of red Crabbes; the other, for the crabbed Mountaines which ouerstopped To it: a third wee might adde, for the crabbed entertainment it gaue vs. In this Coue wee anchored, but the windefreshing in, and three or foure Hills ouer-topping (like Sugar-loaues) aftered and thraight ned the patiage of the wind in such manner, as forced it downe with such violence in flawer and furious bluftrings, at was like to onerfet our thip at Anchor, and caused her to drive, and ws to weigh; but before we could weigh it, the was to neere the Rocks and the puffes and enths of wind fo fodden and vecertain, fomtimes feant, fomtimes large, that it forced vs to cut our Eable. and vet dangerousif our fhip did not east the right way. Here necessitie, not being subsect to any law, forced vs to put our felues into the hands of him that was able to delinet vs. Wee cut our Cable and Savle all in one infrant : And God to flew his power and gracious bouncie cowards ws, was pleafed that our thip cail the contrarie way towards the thoare, feeming that hee with 30 his owne hand did wend her about : for in leffe then her length, the flatted, and in all the Voyage but at that instant, shee flatted with difficultie, for that shee was long; the worst propertie shee had. On either fide we might fee the Rockes under vs, and were not halfe a ships length from

the shoare, and if shee had once touched, it had beene impossible to have escaped. From hence wee returned to Blanches Bay, and there anchored, expecting Gods good will and pleature. Here beganne the bicternesse of the time to encrease with blustering and sharpe windes, accompanied with raine and fleeting flowe, and my people to bee difmaved againe, in manifesting a delire to returne to Brafill, which I would never content vnto , no , not fo much as

And all men are to take care, that they goe not one fince backs, more then is of meere force: for I Voyage ouer30 baies not seen, that any who have yetched thereunts, but presents they have returned homes. As in the
throwne by giVoyage of Masser Edward Fencton; is that whole the Earls of Cumberland set for the to be great unsward. charge ; as alfo in that of Mafter Thomas Candilh, in which be died. All which pretended to shoots Edward Fenies the Straites of Magelan, and by persuasing of some ignorant persons, being in good possibilitie, were and Master brought to consent to returne to Brakill, to winter, and after in the Spring to attempt the passing of the Thimmacandish. Stratte againe. None of them minde any abode in Brafill : for prefently as foone as they looked fromewerd, one, with a tittle lieffering winde taketh occasion to lese companie; another complaineth, that be manueth victuals; another, that his ship is leake; another, that his mastes, sayles, cordidge sayleth him. So the willing never want probable reasons to further their pretences. As I saw once (being but young, and more bold then experimented) in the yeare 1,82. in a Voyage, under the clarge of my Uncle

40 William Hawkins of Plimourts, Efquire, in the Indies, at the Wester end of the Iland of San Ivan Master William de Portorico; One of the Ships (called the Barke bonner) being somewhat leake, the Captaine com- Hamins. playned that free was not able to endure to England : whereupon a Counfell was called, and bis reasons beard, and allowed. So it was concluded, that the Victuall, Munition, and what was serunceable, stould be taken out of her, and ber men divided amongst our other ships; the Hull remayning to be sinke, or burned. To which I never if ake word still I fam it resolved, being my part rather to learne; then to ad-mse. But seeing the satall sentence given, and suspecting that the Captaine made it worse then it was, rather upon policie to come into another ship, which was better of sayle, then for any danger they wright rumeinto: with as much reason as my capacitic could reach unto, I diswaded my Uncle privately; And orged, that feeing wee had profited the Adventurer, nothing, we should endeauour to preserve our principall, especially, busing men and victuals. But seeing I prenasted not, I went further, and offered

50 to finde out in the fame fine, and others, fo many men, as with me would be content to carrie ber home. guing us the trianger of the value of the lips, as free should be valued at, at her returne, by fine in-different person; and to sease the Vice-admirad, which I had under my charge, and to make ber Vice-different person; and to sease the Vice-admirad, which I had under my charge, and to make ber Viceadmirall. Whereupon it was condescended, that wee should all goe abourd the ship, and that there is should be determined. The Captaine thought himselfe somewhat touched in Reputation, and so would not that further triall should be made of the matter, saying, that if another man was able to carrie the Ship into England, he would in no case leave ber, neither would be for sake her till shee sunke under him. The Generall commended him for his resolution, and shanked me for my offer tending to the generall good; my intention being to force those who for gaine could undertake to carrie her home, should also doe it gra-60 tis, according to their Obligation. Thus, this leake-ship went well into England; where, after she made

many a good Voyage in nine yeeres.

As the weather gaue leaue, wee entertained our felues the first dayes in necessirie affaites and workes, and after in making of Coale, with intent (the winde continuing long very contrarie) to fee if wee could remedie any of our broken Anchours; a Forge I had

in my thip, and of fine Anchors which we brought out of England, there remained but one three was ferniceable.

In the Ilands of Penewins we loft one, in Crabbia Come another as third, vpon another occasion we broke an arme, and the fourth, on the Rocke had the eye of his Ring broken. This (one day deniting with my felfe) I made to ferue, without working him a new. Which when I tooke first in hand, all men thought it ridiculous : but in fine, we made it in that manner fo feruiceable ... as till our thin came to Callen, which is the Port of Lyma, thee fcarce vied any other Anchor, and when I came from Lyma to Panama, which was three yeeres after, I faw it ferue the Admirall in which I came (a ship of aboue 500, tuns) without other arte or addition, then what my ownein. uention contriued.

The mending of an unferniceable An-

And for that in the like necessitie, or occasion, others may profit themselves of the industrie. I will recount the manner of the forging our eye without fire, or Iron. It was in this fort. From the eve of the shanke, about the head of the crosse, we gaust wo tunnes with a new strong Hale fer, bet wixt three and foure inches, giving a reasonable allowance for that, which should be the eve, and ferued in fread of the Ring, then we fallned the two ends of the Haller, fo as in that part it was as ftrong as in any other, and with our Capften ftretched the two bightes, that every pare might beare proportionably, then armed we all the Halfer round about with fixe yarne Synnets, and likewise the shanke of the Anchor, and the head with a smooth Mat made of the fame Synnet : this done, with an inch Rope, we woolled the two bightes to the fhanke, from the croffe to the eve, and that also which was to sepre for the Ring, and fitted the stocke acces. M dingly. This done, those who before derided the invention, were of opinion, that it would ferre for need onely they put one difficultie, that with the fall or pitch of the Anchor in hard ground. with his waight he would cut the Halfer in funder on the head; for preuention whereof, we placed a panch (as the Mariners terme it) ypon the head of the Anchor, with whose softmess this danger was preuented, and the Ancher past for serviceable. Some of our idle time we spent in gathering the barke and fruit of a certaine Tree, which we

them contayning within foure or fine granes, twice as bigge as a Mufferd-feed, which broken,

Tree, hath the fauour of all kinds of Spices together, most comfortable to the stomack, and held

to bee better then any Spice whatfoer. And for that a learned Countriman of ours Doctor Two-

ner, hath written of it, by the name of Winters Barke, what I have faid may furfice. The leafe of

Otherwhiles we entertained our felues in gathering of Pearles ont of Muscles, whereof there

are abundance in all places, from Cape Fromard, to the end of the Straits. The Pearles are but

of a bad colour, and small, but it may be that in the great Muscles in deeper water, the Pearles

are bigger, and of greater value, of the small feed Pearle, there was great quantitie, and the Mus-

cles were a great refreshing vnto vs : for they were exceeding good , and in great plentie. And

opinion touching the breeding of these Pearles, which I thinke to be of a farre different nature

and qualitie to those found in the East and West Indies, which are found in Oysters, growing in

the shell, under the ruffe of the Oyster, some fay of the dew, which I hold to be some old Philo-

sophers conceit, for that it cannot be made probable how the dew should come into the Oyster:

and if this were true, then, questionlesse, we should have them in our Oysters, as in those of the

East and West Indies : but those Oysters were by the Creator, made to bring forth this rate fruit, all their shels being (to looke to) Pearle it selfe. And the other Pearles found in our Oy-

flers and Muscles, in divers parts are ingendred out of the fatnesse of the file, in the very lib-

stance of the fish, so that in some Muscles have bin found twentie and thirtie, in severall parts of

which are ever perfect in colour and cleerneffe, like the Sunne in his rifing, and therefore called

Orientall, and not (as is supposed) because out of the East, for they are as well found in the

West, and no way inferiour to those of the East Indies. Other fish, besides Suales and Crabbes,

the filh, and these not perfect in colour, nor cleernesse, as those found in the Pearle-ovilers, 50

here let mee craue pardon if I erre, feeing I disclaime from beeing a Naturalist, by deliuering my #

this Tree is of a whitih greene, and is not valike to the Afpen leafe.

Entertainment found in all places of the Straits, where we found Trees. This Tree carrieth his fruit in clufters like noid idlenesse. a Hawthorne, but that it is greene, each berry of the bignesse of a Pepper-corne, and enery of Akind of hor Spice in the are white within, as the good Pepper, and bite much like it, but hotter. The barke of this & Straits.

In gathering of Waters Barke.

O: Pearles in the Straits.

they breed.

like Shrimpes, and one Whale with two or three Porpules, we faw not in all the Seraits. Heere wee made also a furuay of our victuals, and opening certaine Barrels of Qatten meale, wee found a great part of some of them, as also of our Pipes and Fats of bread, eaten and confumed by the Rats; doubtleffe , a fift part my company did not eate fo much , as these denoured, as we found daily in comming to spend any of our provisions. When I came to the Sta, it was not suspected, that I had a Rat in my thip; but with the bread in Caske, which wee trans ported out of the Hawke, and the going to and againe of our Boats vnto our prize. (though wee 62 had divers Cats and yied other preventions) in a small time they multiplyed in such a manner, is incredible: It is one of the generall calamities of all long Voyages, and would be carefully preuented, as much as may be. For befides that which they confume of the best victuals, they eate the fayles; and neither packe, nor cheft, is free from their furprizes. I have knowne them to

make a hole in a Pipe of water, and feying the Pumpe, have put all in feare, doubting left fome The calamine leak had bin fortung vpon the ship. Moreouer, I have heard credible persons report, that ships have they bring to a heene put in danger by them to be funke, by a hole made in the bulge. All which is eafily remedied at the first, but if once they be somewhat increased, with difficultie they are to be defiroied. And although I propounded a reward for every Rat which was taken, and fought meanes by poifon, and other inventions to confume them, yet their increase being so ordinary and many; wee were not able to cleare our felues from them.

At the end of fourteene dayes, one evening being calme, and a goodly cleare in the Eafter- Backwardness boord. I willed our Anchor to be weved, and determined to goe into the Channell, being gotten in the compato into the Channell, within an houre, the wind came good, and we failed merrily on our Voyage; ny. and by the breake of the day, we had the mouth of the Straits open and about foure of the clock in the afternoone, we were thwart of Cape Defire; which is the Westermost part of the Land Cape Defire.

e. IIII.

Entrance into the South Sea ; discovery of the South parts of the Straits to bee but Hands by Six FRANCI'S DRAKE (which the Hollanders afcribe to MAIRE and SCHOVTEN.) Of the Iland Mocha, and the parts adiovnino.

Rom Cape Defire, Some foure leagues, Northwest, lie foure Hands, which are very from Lap. 2-1917. South Part of Experience of Cape Define, and his fathion of a Sugar-loafe. We were no South part of fooner cleere of Cape Define, and his ledge of Rockes (which lie a great way off in. the Suries fooner cleere of Cape Define, and his ledge of Rockes (which lie a great way off in. the Suries footer of the West of the West of the Suries into the Sea two dayes and two nights to the Westwards. In all the Straits is abbeth and flow childlenge the eth more or leffe, and in many places it hieth very little water, but in some Bayes, where are discourry of

30 great Indraughts, it higheth eight or ten foot, and doubtleffe, further in, more.

on the Souther fide of the Straits.

If a man be furnished with wood and water, and the winde good, hee may keepe the Mayne Mayre and Sea, and goe round about the Strairs to the Southwards, and it is the shorter way; for besides the fore twice fair experience which we made, that all the South part of the Seraits is bue Hands, many times ha- led about by uing the Sea open, I remember, that Sir Francis Drate told mee, that having fhot the Straits, a Sir F. Drate, ftorme tooke him first at North-west, and after vered about to the South-west, which continued See fap. the forme tooke him nirt at North-weit, and which him many dayes, with the extremitie, that he could not open any fayle, and that at the Preface to the with him many dayes, with the extremitie, that he could not open any fayle, and that of the Freede to the feed of the could not be the feed of the end of the storme, he found himselfe in fiftie degrees, which was sufficient testimony and proofe, terost ib a. that he was beaten round about the Straits, for the least height of the Straits is in fiftie two de- Sir F. Drefe grees and fifeie minutes; in which fland the two entrances or mouthes. And moreover, hee faid, imbraceth the 40 that flanding about, when the winde changed, hee was not well able to double the Southermost Southermost Iland, and so anchored under the lee of it; and going ashoare, carried a Compasse with him, and world, Since feeking out the Southermost part of the Hand, cast himselfedowne vpon the vttermost point this, in that groueling, and so reached out his bodie ouer it. Presently he imbarked, and then recounted vnto Voiage wherehis people, that he had beene vpon the Southermost knowne Land in the World, and more fur- in W. Adams ther to the Southwards upon it, then any of them, yea, or any man as yet knowne. These testi- was Pilot monies may fusfice for this truth vnto all, but fuch as are incredulous, and will beleeue nothing and sek. Wests but what they fee; for my part, I am of opinion, that the Straite is nauigable all the yeere long, ye have in the although the best time bee in November, December, and I anuary, and then the windes more fa- former Tome) uourable, which other times are variable, as in all narrow Seas.

Being some fiftie leagues a Sca-boord the Straits, the winde vering to the West-wards, wee rand one of stabout to the Northwards and lying the Confidence of the state of the 50 caft about to the Northwards; and lying the Coast along, shaped our course for the Iland Mocha. caried by tem-About the fifteenth of Aprill, we were thwart of Baldinia, which was then in the hands of the peff(as bey Spaniards, but fince the Indians, in Anno 1 1999. dilpolleffed them of it, and the Conception; which write to 64 de-Spaniards, but fince the Indians, in Anno 1999, disposited them of it, and the Loneyson with green South in are two of the most principal places they had in that Kingdome, and both Ports. Baldinia had which beight which beight its name of a Spanis Captaine fo called, whom afterwards the Indians tooke Priloner, and it is the country faid, they required of him the reason why hee came to molest them, and to take their Countrey was mountain from them, having no title nor right thereunto; he answered, to get Gold; which the barbarous nous & coueunderstanding, caused Gold to bee molten, and powred downe his throate, saying, Gold was thy red with snow, thy defire, glast these with it. It standeth in forty degrees, hath a pleasant Riuer and Nauigable; Nowes, I fee.

60 for a Ship of good burthen may goe as high wp as the Citie, and is a goodly Wood Countrey, med to extend Heere our Beefe began to take end, and was then as good, as the day wee departed from Eng. towards the Iland; it was preserved in Pickell , which, though it bee more chargeable, yet the profit payeth lands of Salo-Corder another of that fleet after professous fuseeffigin (bill, was taken by the Portugal at the Malucem, and carried to deale capit

foner, Mocha, Baldinia and Conception wonne from the Spaniards by the Indians, Beete kept moft fafely in Pickell.

the charge, in that it is made durable contrary to the opinion of many, which hold it impossible that Beete should be kept good passing the Equinocaiall Line. And of our Porke I cate in the house of Don Beltran de Castro in Lyma, neere foure yeeres olde, very good, preserued after the fame manner, notwithstanding, it had lost his Pickle long before.

Some degrees before a man come to Baldinia to the Southwards, as Spaniards have told mee. lyeth the lland Chule, not easily to be discerned from the Mayne; for he that passeth by it, cannot but thinke it to bee the Mayne. It is faid to bee inhabited by the Spaniards, but badly, yet rich of Gold.

Tland Mochs.

The nineteenth of Aprill, being Eafter-euen, we anchored under the lland Moche. It lyeth in thirty nine degrees, it may bee some foure leagues ouer, and is a high mountaynous Hill, but in round about the foot thereof, some halfe league from the Sea-shore, it is Champaine ground, wel inhabited and manured. From the Scraits to this Hand, we found, that either the Coast is fee out more Wester w then it is, or that we had a great current, which put vs to the Westwards; for wee had not fight of Land in three dayes after our reckoning was to fee it; but for that wee coafted not the Land, I cannot determine, whether it was caused by the current, or lying of the Land. But Spaniards which have Lyled along ft it, have told me, that it is a bold and fafe Coaft.

Note.

and reafonable founding of it. In this lland of Moche we had communication and contractation with the Inhabitants . hue with great vigilancie and care; for they and all the people of (bily, are mortall enemies to the Spaniards, and held vs to bee of them; and fo effeemed Sit Francis Drake, when hee was in this I- 20 land, which was the first Land also that hee touched on this Coast, They vied him with so fine a treachery, that they possessed themselves of all the Oares in his Boat, saving two, and in striving

to get them also, they flue, and hurt all his men; himselfe who had fewest wounds, had three, and two of them in the head. Two of his company which lived long after, had, the one feventeene; his name was lohn Bruer, who afterward was Pilot with Mafter Candift; and the other Treacherie of aboue twentie, a Negro Seruant to Sir Francie Drake. And with me they vied a policie, which among fi barbarous people was not to be imagined, although I wrought fure ; for I fuffered pone to treate with me, nor with my people with Armes, Wee were armed, and met voon a Rocke compassed with water, whether they came to parley and negotiate. Beeing in communication with the Caliques, and others, many of the Indians came to the heads of our Boates, and some went into them. Certaine of my people standing to defend the Boats with their Oares, for that there went a bad fege, were forced to lay downe their Muskets, which the Indiana perceiuing, endeauoured to fill the barrels with water, taking it out of the Sea in the hollow of their hands By chance casting mine eye aside, I discoursed their slynesse, and with a Truncheon, which I had in mine hand, gaue the Indians three or four good Lambeskinnes. The sheepe of this Iland are great, good, and fat; I have not tasted better Mutton any where,

They were as ours, and doubtleffe of the breed of those, which the Spaniards brought into the Countrey. Of the sheepe of the Countrey, wee could by no meanes procure any one, although we faw of them, and vied meanes to have had of them. This Hand is fittuite in the Province of Aranes, and is held to bee peopled with the mon va- &

liant Nation in all Chily, though generally the Inhabitants of that Kingdome are very cours-Their apparel, gious. They are clothed after the manner of antiquitie, all of woollen; their Castockes made like a Sacke, square, with two holes for the two armes, and one for the head; all open below, without lining or other art : but of them, some are most curiously wouen, and in colours, and on both fides alike. Their houses are made round, in fashion like voto our Pidgeon houses, with a loner in the top, to enacuate the smoake when they make fire. They brought vs a strange kinde of Tobacco, made into little cakes, like Pitch, of a bad fmell, with holes through the middle, and Strange Tofo laced many upon a string. The people of this lland, as of all Chily, are of good stature, and well People of chily made, and of better countenance then thole Indians which I have feene in many parts. They are Their weapons of good understanding, and agilitie, and of great strength; Their weapons are Bowes, and Ar- 19 rowes and Macanas, their Bowes short and strong, and their Arrowes of a small Reed, or Cane, three quarters of a yard long, with two Feathers, and headed with a flint-flone, which is loofs, and hurting, the head remaineth in the wound, some are headed with bone, and some with hard wood . halfe burnt in the fire. We came betwixt the Iland and the Mayne: On the South-west part of the Hand lieth a great ledge of Rockes, which are dangerous; and it is good to be carefull how to come too neere the Hand on all parts.

Their hate to

Immediatly when they discourred vs, both upon the Hand and the Mayne, wee might see them make fundry great fires, which were to give aduice to the rest of the people to bee in a readinesse: for they have continuall and mortall warre with the Spaniards, and the shippes they sec, they believe to be their Enemies. The Citie Imperial lyeth over against this Iland, but eight or 60 ten leagues into the Countrey : for all the Sea-coaft from Baldinia, till thirtie fixe Degrees, the Indians have now (in a manner) in their hands free from any Spaniards.

Having refreshed our selves well in this Iland, for that little time we staved, which was some three dayes we fet fayle with great by, and with a faire winde fayled along it the Coast, and

fome eight leagues to the North-wards, wee anchored agains in a goodly Bay, and fent our Roars ashoare, with delire to speake with some of the Indians of Aranea, and to see if they would be content to entertaine amitie, or to chop and change with vs. But all that night and the next morning appeared not one person, and so we set faile againe; and towards the Evening the wind began to change, and to blow contrary, and that so much, and the Sea to rise so fuddenly, that wee could not take in our Boats, without spoyling of them. This storme A cruelforese continued with vs tenne dayes beyond expectation, for that wee thought our felues out of the in the Sea of Climate of fowle weather, but truely it was one of the sharpest stormes that ever I felt to en- Ladies. In it

The storme tooke end, and we shaped our course for the Iland of Saint Maries, which lyeth in Saint Maries thirtie feuen degrees and fortie minutes, and before you come vnto the lland fome two leagues. in the Trade way lieth a Rocke, which afarre off, feemeth to be a thip under fayle. This Hand is little and low, but fertill and well peopled with Indians and fome few Spaniards in it. Some ten leagues to the Northwards of this Iland, lieth the Citie Conception, with a good Port; from City of Conthis wee coasted alongst till wee came in thirtie three degrees and forty minutes. In which ception, height lay the Hands of Inan Fernandes, betwire threefcore and fourefcore leagues from the inan Fernandes, shoare, plentifull of fish, and good for refreshing. I purposed for many reasons not to discover my felfe vpon this Coaft, till we were patt Lyma, (otherwise called Cinidad de los Reres, for that Good to another it was entred by the Spaniard the day of the three Kings;) but my company viged me to farre, that discourre.

20 except I should seeme in all things to over-beare them, in not condiscending to that which in the opinion of all (but my felfe) feemed profitable and best . I could not but yeeld vnto, though it carried a false colour, as the end prooued, for it was our perdition. This all my company knoweth to be true, whereof tome are yet living, and can give testimonie. But the Mariner is ordinarily so carried away with the defire of Pillage, as sometimes for Wilfulnesses

the greedinesse of spoile, onely hoped for in ships of Trade, which goe too and fro in this Coaft. blinded them from forecasting the perill, whereinto wee exposed our Voyage, in discouering our felues before we past the Coast of Callas, which is the Port of Lyma; To bee short, wee haled the Coast abourd, and that Euening wee discourred the Port of Valperize, 30 which ferueth the Citie of Saint lego, flanding some twentie legues into the Countrey; when presently wee descried source shippes at an Anchor: whereopon wee manned, and armed our Boate, which rowed towards the shippes: they seeing vs turning in , and sea. They seize

very appearances of small moment, he looseth his Voyage, and many times himselfe. And so Mariners,

ring that which was, ranne ashoare with that little they could faue; and left vs the rest: vpon some whereof, wee were Masters in a moment, and had the rifling of all the Store-houses on This night, I fet a good guard in all the shippes, longing to see the light of the next morning, to put all things in order; which appearing, I beganne to furuay them, and found

nothing of moment, faue fine hundred Botozios of Wine, two or three thousand of Hennes, and some refreshing of Bread, Bacon, dryed Beefe, Waxe, Candles, and other necessaries. 40 The rest of their lading was plankes, Sparres, and Timber, for Lyma, and the Valleyes, which is a rich Trade; for it hath no Timber, but that which is brought to it from other places. They had also many packs of Indian Mantles (but of no value vnto vs) with much Tallow, and Manteca de Puerce, and abundance of great new Chefts, in which we had thought to bee fome great masse of wealth, but opening them, found nothing but Apples therein; all which was good Merchandize in Lyma, but to vs of smal account. The Merchandize on shore, in their store-boules And the Wares was the like, and therefore in the fame predicament. The Owners of the ships gauevs to yn- houses. derstand, that at a reasonable price they would redeeme their ships and loading, which I harkened vnto; and fo admitted certaine persons which might treate of the matter, and concluded with them for a small price, rather then to burne them, souring for the greatest, which I carried with me, more to give latisfaction to my people, then for any other respect; because they would 50 not be perswaded, but that there was much Gold hidden in her; otherwise she would have yeel-

ded vs more then the other three. Being in this Treaty, one morning, at the breake of day, came another ship towring into the harbor, and standing into the shoare, but was becalmed. Against her we manned a couple of Boats, and tooke her before many houres. In this ship we had some good quantitie of Gold, which shee had gathered in Baldsnia, and the Conception, from whence shee came. Of this ship was Pilot, and part owner, Alonso Perezbuene, whom we kept for our Pilot on this Coast; till moved with compation (for that he was a man charged with wife and children) we fet him alhoare betwixt They feize Sama and Truxillo. Out of this ship we had also store of good Bacon, and some prouision of Bread, upon another

60 Hens, and other victuall. We gaue them the ship, and the greatest part of her loading freely. this, and other victual. We gate them the hip, and the greater part of her adding receiv.

Sold.

Here wee (spipled our want of Anchors, though not according to that which was requirte, gold.

Here wee (spipled our want of Anchors, though not according to that which was the spipled our want of Anchors to the spipled our want of Anchors to the spipled our want of Anchors to the spipled our want of the spipled ou in regard of the burden of our ship; for in the South Sea, the greatest Anchor for a ship of sixe brought from or eight hundred tunnes, is not a thousand waight; partly, because it is little subject to the North Sea. formes, and partly, because those they had till our comming, were all brought out of the North

And the first Artillerie.

1394

Sea by Land; for they make no Anchors in these Countreyes. And the first Artillerie they had, was alio brought ouer Land; which was fmall, the carriage and passage from Nombre de Dies, or Porte Bello to Pasawa, being most difficult and steepe, vp hill and downe hill, they are all carried your Negroes backes. But some yeeres before my imprisonment, they fell to making of Artillery and tince they torge Anchors alto. We furnished our ship also with a shift of failes of Cotroncloth, which are farre better in that Sea, then any of our double fayles, for that in all the Nanigation of that Sea, they have little raine and few ftormes, but where raine and ftormes are ordinary, they are not good; for with the wet they grow fo fliffe, that they cannot be handled.

In treating of the rantomes, and transporting and lading the prouisions were made choice of wee ipent lome fixe or eight dayes, at the end whereof, with reputation amongst our enemies, la and a good portion towards our charges and our thip as well stored and victualled, as the day we departed from England, we fet favle.

They depart from Lyna.

Sato.

Wine.

The enemy

lefted ince-

The time we werein this Port, I took small rest, and so did the Master of our ship, Hugh Cor. nifh, a most carefull orderly, and sufficient man, because wee knew our owne weaknesse; sor entrine into the Harbour, wee had but feuentie fine men and boyes, fine thips to guard, and energy and conceale one moored by himielte, which (no doubt) if our enemies had knowne, they would have wrought some stratagem vpon vs; for the Gouernour of Chily was there on shoare in view of vs. an ancient Flanders Souldier, and of experience, wildome, and valour, called Don Alonfo de Sota The noblen s Mayor, of the nable of Saint lage, who was after Captaine Generall in Terra firme, and wrought all the inventions vpon the River of Chagree, and on the shoare, when Sir Francis Drake purpo. in fed to goe to Panama, in the Voyage wherein he died. As allo at my comming into Spaine, bee was Prefident in Panama, and there, and in Lyma, vied mee with great courtefie, like a Noble Souldier, and liberall Gentleman; hee confessed to mee after, that hee lay in ambush, with three hundred horie and foot, to fee if at any time we had landed, or neglected our watch, with Balfat, rous then the which is a certaine Rate made of Maits or Trees fastened together, to have attempted something against vs. Bu the enemy I seared not so much as the Wine; which, notwithstanding all the diligence and preuencion I could vie day and night, ouerthrew many of my people, A foule fault, because too common among it Sea-men, and deserueth some rigorous pumshment with seueritie

ne Bay.

small Hand, neere the shoare, under which, for a need, a man may rice with his ship. It is a good marke, and fure figne of the Port, and discovering the Bay a man must give a good birth to the Note of tides. Harbour; for it hath perillous Rockes lying a good distance off. It neither ebbeth nor floweth in this Port, nor from this, till a man come to Guayaquil, which is three degrees from the Equino. chall Line to the Sou h-wards; let this be confidered. It is a good Harbour for all winds, that partake not of the North; for it runneth vp South and by West, and South South-west, but it hath much foule ground. In one of these ships we found a new deutee for the stopping of a sudden leake in a ship under

A lague or better before a man discouer this Bay to the South-wards, lieth a great Rocke, or B

for fipping a water, without board, when a man cannot come to it within boord; which was, taking around leake without wi ker Basket, and to fill it with pieces of a lunke or Rope chopped very small, and of an inch 40 long, and after tozed all as Oacombe; then the Basket is to bee conered with a Net, the Melhes of it being at the least two inches square, and after to be tied to a long Pike or Pole, which is to goe a crosse the Baskets mouth, and putting it vider water, care is to be had to keepe the Baskets mouth towards the ships side : if the leake bee any thing great, the Oacombe may bee somewhat longer, and it carrieth likelihood to doe good, and feemeth to bee better then the stitching of a Spar: Rudders Bonnet; or any other diligence, which as yet I have feene. Another thing I noted of these ships, which would be also vied by vs; that every ship carrieth with her a spare Rudder, and they have them to hang and vnhang with great facilitie : and besides, in some part of the ship, they have t' e ength, breadth, and proportion of the Rudder marked out, for any mischance that may befall them; which is a very good preuention.

Ten leagues to the Northwards of this Harbour, is the Bay of Quintera, where is good ancho ring, but an open Bay; where Mafter Thomas Candilo (for the good hee had done to a Spaniard' in bringing him out of the Straits of Magellan, where, otherwife, hee had perifhed with his company) was by him betrayed, and a doozen of his men taken and flaine: But the judgement of Ingratitude God left not his ingratiude enpunished; for, in the fight with vs, in the Vice-admirall, he was punified. wounded and may med in that manner, as three yeeres after, I faw him begge with crutches, and in that miserable estate, as he had beene better dead, then aliue.

Coquinbo.

thwart the place, we were becalmed, and had light of a ship : but for that she was farre off, and night at hand, the got from vs, and we having winde entred the Port, thinking to have had tome 60 shipping in it; but we lost our labour : and for that the Towne was halfe a league vo in the Countrey, and we not manned for any matter of attempt, worthy profecution, we made no abode on Excellent har- the shoare; but presently set sayle for the Pern. This is the best Harbour that I have feene in the South Sea, it is land-locked for all winds, and capeable of many shippes; but the ordinary place

From Balparizo, wee fayled directly to Coquinbo, which is in thirtie degrees, and comming

where the ships lade, and valade, and accommodate themselves, is betwint a Rocke and the Mayne on the Wester side, some halfe a league vp within the entrance of the Port, which lieth South, and South and by East, and North and by West. In the in-countrie, directly over the Port, is a round piked hill, like a Sugar loate, and before the entrance on the Southerne point of the Port comming in, out of the Sea, is a great Rocke, a good birth from the shoare ; and these are the markes of the Port, as I remember.

Being cleave of this Port, we shaped, our cause for Arice, and left the Kingdomes of Chile, dies in chip. one of the best Countries that the Sun shineth on: for it is of a temperate climate, and abounding mended, in all things necessarie for the use of man, with infinite rich Mynes of Gold, Copper, and fundry to other metrals. The poorest houses in it, by report of their Inhabitants, have of their owne flore. Bread, Wine, Fleir, and Frust; which is fo plentifull, that of their superfluitie they supplie other parts: fundrie kindes of cattell; as Hosfes, Goates, and Oxen brought thither by the Spa- For all forts of miards, are found in heards of thousands, wilde, and without owner; beliefes those of the Counfruits. trie, which are common to most parts of America: in some of which are found the Bezar Stones,

and those very good and great. ... Amongst others they have little beasts, like voto a Squirrell, but that hee is grey, his akinne Chinchilla a is the most delicate fort, and curious Furre that I have leepe of much estimation, (as is reafon) rate beast. in the Pern ; few of them come into Spaine, because difficult to be come by, for that the Princes and Nobles lay waite for them, they call this beaft Chinchills, and of them they have great a-20 bundance. All fruits of Spaine, they have in great plentie, faving flore fruit, and Almonds : for in no part of the Indies, have I knowne, that Plummes, Cherries, or Almonds have borne fruit : but they have certaine little round Cocos, as those of Brafil, of the bigneffe of a Wall-nut, which is as good as an Almond & buildes, it hath most of the fruits naturall to America. The Gold they gather, is in two manners; the one is washing the earth in great Trayes of wood in And plente of many waters; as the earth wasteth away, the Gold in the bottome remaineth. The other is. by force of Art. to draw it out of the Mynes, in which they finde it. In most parts of the Gountrie, the earth is mingled with Gold; for the Barrain (in which the Winewas) which wee found in Balpharizo, had many fourkes of Gold thining in them. Of it the Gold-fruths I carried with me (for like purpofes) made experience.

When Baldinia and Aranca were peaceable, they yeelded greatest plentie, and the best: but now, their greatest Mynes are in Coquinbo; as also the Mynes of Copper, which they carrie to the Peru, and sell it better cheape, then it is ordinarily told in Spanne. Inc Industry Browsing the end of the Spanner's modeltation, to be principally that defire of their riches, have enabled the end of the Spanner's modeltation, to be principally that defire of their riches, have enabled the end of the Spanner's modeltation and the spanner's continuous services are the spanner's continuous services and the spanner's continuous services are the spanner's continuous services and the spanner's continuous services are the spanner's continuous services rie to the Peru, and fell it better cheape, then it is ordinarily fold in Spaine. The Indians know. The Indians but every howre of raine, is a howre of Gold when them ; forwith the violence of the water a flowre of falling from the Mountaines, it bringeth from them the Gold : and besides, gives them water to gold, wash it out, as also for their ingenious to worke; so that ordinarily every weeke they have Processions for raine. Designation of the second

In this Kingdome they make much lianen and woollen Cloth, and great flore of Indian Man. Linnen and 40 tles, with which they furnish other parts, but all in coarse stuffe It hath no Silke , nor Iron , ex- woollen cloth cept in Mynes, and those as yet not discouered. Lewrer is well esteemed, and so are fine linnen, quinto. woollen cloth, Haberdashers wares, edge-tooles, and Armes, or Munition. It hath his Gouernour, and Audiencia, with two Bishops: the one of Saint lage, the other of the Imperial; all under the Vice-toy, Audiencia, and Primate of Lyma. Saint Lago is the Metropolitan and Head of the Kingdome, and the feate of Iustice, which hath his appellation of Lymas

The people are industrious and ingenious, of great strength, and inmincible courage; as in the The valour of warres, which they have fulfained about fortie yeeres continually against the Spaniards, hath the araweans, beene experienced. For confirmation whereof, I will alledge onely two proofes of many : the one was of an Indian Captaine, taken prifoner by the Spannerds; and for that, hee was of name

30 and knowne to have done his denoire against them, they cut off, his hands, thereby intending to difenable him to fight any more against them : bur he returning home, delirous to revenge this injurie, to maintain his liberty, with the reputation of his nation, and to helpe to banish the Span. with his tongue intreated & incited them to perfeuere in their accustomed rator and reputation abasing the enemie, and advancing his Nation; condemning their contraries cowardlinesse, and confirming it by the cruelty vied with him, and others his companions in their milhaper thewing them his armes without hands, & naming his brethren, whole halfe feet they hadeut off, because they might be vnable to fit on horfebacke with force, arguing, that if they feared them not, they would not have vied to great inhumanitie; for feare produceth crueltie, the companion of towardife. Thus encouraged he them to fight for their lines, limbes, and libertie, choosing rather so 60 die an honourable death fighting , then to live in feruitude, as fruitleffe, members in their Common-wealth. Thus, ving the office of a Sergeant Major , and having loden his two stumpes with bundles of Arrowes, succoured those, who in the acceeding battell had their store walled, and changing himselfe from place to place, animated and encouraged his Countri-men, with such

comfortable perswalions, as it is reported, and credibly beleeused, that hee did much more good

with his words, and prefence, without striking a stroke, then a great part of the Armie did with fishting to the vemoft.

The other proofe is, that fuch of them as fight on horsebacke, are but sightly armed, for that their Armour is a Beatts hide, ficced to their body, greene, and after worne till it be drie and hard He that is heft armed, hath him double : yet any one of them with their Armes, and with his Launce, will fight hand to hand with any Spaniard armed from head to foot. And it is credible reported, that an Indian being wounded through the bodie by a Spaniardi Launce, with his own hands hath crept on vpon the Launce, and come to grapple with his Aduerfarie, and both fallen to the ground together. By which is feene their refolution and unuincible courage, and the defire they have to maintayne their reputation and libertie.

The mischiefe

This let me manifest, that there have beene and are certaine perfons, who before they goe to Sea, sither robbe part of the promisions, or in the buying, make penurious, unwholfome, and amaritions penus worths ; and the last I hold to be the least; for they robbe onely the Villnallers and owners, but the an thers fleate from owners, villuallers, and companie, and are many times the enely emersbrowers of the Vorace . for the companie thinking themselves to be stored with foure or fixe moneths Victuals , voin furmay, they finde their Bread, Beefe or Drinke hore; yea, perhaps all, and fo are forced to feeke home in time of best bopes and employment. Thu unfabiefe is most ordinarie in great altions. Lastly, fome are fo cunning, that they not onely make their Voyage by robbing before they goe to Sea, but of that allo which commeth bome. Such Gameflers, a weferman of our Nation refembled to the Mill on the River of Thames, for grinding both with floud and obbe: So, these at their going out, and comming bone, to will be fore to robbe all others of their shares.

Of d-tayning dingo: wages,

But the greatest and most principall robberic of all, in my opinion, is the defrauding or the detarning of the Companies thirds or wages, accur fed by the inft God, who forbiddesh the hore of the labourer to fleep with vs. To fuch I fleake, at enther abuse themselves in detayning at ; or elfe to such at force the poore man to fell it at vile and lowe prices: And lastly, to such as upon famed causts and suits, doe deterre the simple and ignorant fort from their due profecutions: which being too much in vie amonost vs. hatb bred in those that follow the Sea a sealousie in all employments, and many times can (eth mutinies and infinise inconneniences. To prenent this, a Chift with three lockes was appointed: I kept one, the Mafter another, the third one chosen by the Companie.

Of Mariners by challenge of Pillage.

No life worthie reformation are the generall abuses of Mariners and Souldiers, who robbe all they is can, under the colour of Pillage; and after make Ordnance, Cables, Sayles, Auchors, and all about Deckes to belong unto them of right; whether they goe by thirds or wages: this proceedeth from those pilfering warres, wherein enery Gallan that can arme out a Ship, taketh upon him the name and office of a Captaine , not knowing what to command, or what to execute. Such Commanders for the most part confort and some unto themselves desorderly persons, Pirates, and Ruffians, under the title of men of valour and experience: they meeting with any Prize, make all upon the Deckes theirs of dutie, Oc.

In the time of warre in our Countrie, as also in others, by the lawes of Oleron (which to our anci-Ourse, concet- ent Seamen were fundamentall) nothing is allowed for Pillage but Apparell, Armes, Instruments, and other necessaries belonging to the per fons, in that firp which is taken : and these to, when the ship is gained by dint of fword; with a promise, that if any particular Pillage, exceed the value of fixe crowner, it may be redeemed for that value, by the generall flocke, and fold for the common benefit. If the prize render it felfe without forcible entrie, all in generall ought to be preferred and fold in mafe, and fo equally dinided; yea, though the fine be wonne by force and entrie, yet what former belongeth to her of takling, Sayles, or Ordnance, is to be preserved for the generalitie: faying a Poece of Artillerrie for the Captaine ; another for the Gunner, and a Cable and Ancher for the Mafter, which are the rights due unto them; and these to be delinered, when the shop is in safety, and in harbour, either unloden or sold: which Law or Custome well considered, will rife to be more beneficial for the Owners, Victuallers, and Companie, then the diforders newly crest in and before remembred. For the Sayles , Cables , Anchors, and Hull, being fold (enery one share) yeeld not the one halfe which they would doe if they were fold as ? together, besides the excusing of charges, and rebberies in the unlading and parting.

In the warres of France, in the time of Queene Marie, and in other warres (at I baue heard of many ancient Captames) the Companichad but the fourth part, and enery man bound to bring with him the Armes, with which be would fight e which in our time, I have knowne also wied in France : and if the Companie vill waled them selves, they had then the one halfe, and the Owners the other halfe for the ship. powder, Shot, and munision. If any Prinewere taken, it was fold by the tunne, Soip and goods, so as the loading permitted it; that the Merchant basing beught the goods, bee might prefeutly transport them whicher foener he would: By this manner of proceeding, all rested contented, all being truly payd; for this was just dealing, if any deferned reward, he was recompensed out of the generall stocke. If any one had filebed or folne, or commutted offence, be bad likewife bis defert : and who once was knowne to be a difordered per fon, or a thiefe, no man would receive him into his /hip : whereas now a dayes many vaunt thomfelues of their thefts and diforders ; yea, I have feene the common fort of Mariners, under the name of pillage, maintaine and instific their robbertes most institutely before the Queens Maiesties Commissioners, with arrogant and unfermly termes. Opinion hash held fuch for tall fallowes, when in truth, they news

prove the best men in deficult occasions. For their mendes are all fet on spoyle, and can be well contented to suffer their affociates to beare the brunt, whilest they are prolling after pillage, the better to gaine and Note or brand to suffer their affectates to vente to trans, would be so need to places. For the orderly and quiet men, a tather to talk maintaine to a go. Localions to be of best use, most valuant, and of greatest sufficiency. Tet I condemne gred sellowes, wante but those who will be reputed valuant, and are not, examine the accusation. All what somer is Whit ought nave found upon the Decke, going for Merchandife, is exempted out of the censure of pillage; Silkes, Linnen, to be reputed Junu Up. Collen cloth in whole pieces, Apparell, that goeth to be fold, or other goods what foener (though they be pillage. intermants) manifolily knowne to bee carried for that end; or being comprehended in the Register, or Bills of lading, are not to be contained under the name of Pillage.

10 But as I have faid of the confort, so can I not but complaine of many Captainet and Gonernours, who But at 1 bane just of incomport, pie an "no one component of more parameter an observant, more against the outcome with the greedy defire of game, considered to the functioning and happressing of the ancient attorphises of displaying of the ancient attorphises of displaying of the control production of displaying of the control production of displaying of the production of displaying of the production of displaying the production of displaying of the d absent themselues, till the beate be past, and partition made. Some of these canse the Bills of lading to be cast into the Sea, or so to be bidden, that they never appeare. Others send away their prisoners, who De cast into the den, or jou our counter, alors, very never appears. Over seen a more tours projected, who seem times are more worth then the sips and the clading, decarfe they should not discourt their seers slotue tressare: for many times, that which is less out of the Register or Bills of lading (with purpose to de-tressare: for many times, that which is less out of the Register or Bills of lading (with purpose to defrand the Prince of his Customes (in their conceits, beld to be excessive) is of much more value, then Concealmentthat which the ling and lading is worth. Tes, I have knowne flips worth two hundred thou and pounds, of much more that which the hip and lading is worth. Ies, i name knowne into two owners a two man permit, value, then the and better, cleane swept of their principal riches, nothing but the bare bulke being left unsached. The Trading.

20 like may be forken of that which the diforderly Marmer, and the Souldier termeth Pillage. My Father, Sir John Hawkins, in bis infructions, in actions under his charge, had this particular The orenen-

Associe: That who seemer rendred, or tooke any shop, should be bound to exhibite the Bill; of lading; to tion of vadue keepe the Captaine, Master, Merchants, and persons of account, and to bring them to him to be examined, pillagings. or into England : If they should bee by any accident separated from him, what socuer was found wanting or into Engrand : as well was to be made good by the Captaine and Companie, which tooke the Ship, and this upon great punishments.

Running along it the coast, till wee came within few leagues of Arica, nothing happened vnto vs of extraordinarie noueltie or moment, for wee had the Breze fauourable, which feldome happeneth in this climate, finding our felues in 19. degrees, wee haled the shoare close aboord.

30 purpoling to see, if there were any shippi g in the Road of Arica. It flandeth in a great large Bay, with in 18. degrees : and before you come to it, a league to the Southwards of the Road and Towne, is a great round Hill, higher then the reft of the land of the Bay, neere about the Towne: which we having discouered, had light presently of a small Barque, close aboord the shoare becalmed; manning our Boat, wee tooke her, being loden with fish from Moormerene; which is a goodly Moormerene head-land, very high, and lieth betwixt 24. and 25. degrees, and whether ordinarily some Ba ques vie to goe a fifhing euery yeere.

In her was a Spaniard and fixe Indians; The Spaniard, for that he was neere the shoare, Swam voto the Rockes, and though we offered to returne him his barke, and fish (as was our meaning) yet he refuled to accept it, and made vs answere, that he durft not, for feare lest the lustice should 40 punish him. In to great subjection are the poore vinto those who have the administration of Theseneride Inflice in those parts, and in most parts of the Kingdomes and Countries Subject to Spaine. Info. of Spaine. much, that to heare the Iuftice to enter in at their deores, is to them defiredtion and defolation : for this cause wee carried her alongst with vs. In this meane while, wee had sighe of another tall ship, comming out of the Sea, which wee gaue chase vnto, but could not fetch vp, being too good of fayle for vs. Our small Prize and Boate standing off vnto vs , descried another (hippe, which they chaired and tooke also, loden with fish, comming from the Ilands of

After we opened the Bay and Port of Arica, but feeing it cleane without thipping, wee haled the coast along ft, and going aboord to visite the bigger Prize, my Companie faluted mee with 50 a vollie of (mall fhot. Amongst them one Musket brake, and earried away she hand of him that shorie, through his owne default, which for that I have seene to happen many times, I thinke it necessary to note in this place, that others may take warning by his harme. The cause of the Muskets breaking, was the charging with two bullets, the powder being ordayned to carrie but the weight of one, and the Musket not to fuffer two charges, of powder or shot. By this overfight, the fire is restrained with the ouerplus of the weight of shot, and not being able to torce both of them out, breaketh all to pieces, fo to finde a way to its owne Centre.

And I am of opinion, that it is a great errour, to proue great Ordnance, or small shot, with double charges of powder, or flot; my reason is, for that ordinarily the mettall is proportioned to the waight of the fhot, which the Peece is to beare, and the powder correspondent to the 60 waight of the bullet : and this being granted, I fee no reason why any man should require to proue his peece with more, then is belonging to it of right: for I have feene many goodly peeces broken with fach trials, being cleane without hony combes, cracke, flawe, or other perceauable blemish, which no doubt, with their ordinary allowance would have served many yeares. If I should make choice for my felfe, I would not willingly, that any peece should come into Fore,

or ship (vnder my charge) which had borne at any time more then his ordinary allowance, mife doubting, leaft through the violence of the double charge, the Peece may be crafed within, or fo forced, as at another occasion, with his ordinary allowance he might breake in peeces : how man ny men fo many mindes : for to others, this may feeme harfh, for that the contrary cuftome harh fo long time beene received, and therefore I submit to better experience, and contradict not but that in a demy culturing, a man may put two Saker or Minion shots, or many of smaller waight: and fo in a Musket, two Calieuer shot, or many smaller, so they exceede not the ordinary waight. prescribed by proportion, art, and experience. Haurng visited our prizes, and finding in them nothing but fish, we tooke a small portion for

Their m.!?

expert (wim-

ming.

our victualling, and gave the bigger Ship to the Spaniards againe, and the leffer wee kept with purpose to make her our Pinnace. The Indians (which we tooke in her) would by no meanes depart from vs, but defired to goe with vs for England, laying that the Indian and English were brothers; and in all places where wee came, they shewed them selves much affectionated vators. Thefe were Natiues of Moremorene, and the most brutish of all that ever I had feene ; and except it were in forme of men and speech, they seemed altogether voide of that which appertuined to reasonable men. They were expert swimmers, but after the manner of Spaniels, they diue, and abide vinder water a long time, and fwallow the water of the Sea, as if it were of a fresh River, except a man fee them, he would hardly believe how they continue in the Sea, as if they were Mermaides, and the water their naturall Element. Their Countrie is most barren, and poore of foode fif they take a fish aline out of the Sea, or meete with a peece of salted fish, they will de- an uppre it without any dreffing, as favourly as if it had beene most curiously fodden or dreffed, all which makes me believe, that they fuffaine themselves of that which they catch in the Sea. The Spaniar ds profit themselves of their labour and travell, and recompence them badly, they are in worfe condition then their flaues, for to those they give fustenance, house-roome, and clothing, and teach them the knowledge of God; but the other they vie as beafts, to doe their labour without wages, or care of their bodies or foules.

The Viceror fends an Armado against the English; which viewesh them and resur. neth : is againe fet forth : their fight; the English reelde voon composition : Diners martial discourses.

Bay of Pifce. CapeSangalean Chilca. Aduise ginen by Sea and

Y generall accord we ested our felues of a leake prife, and continued our course alongst the coast, till we came thwart of the Bay of Price, withich yeth within 15 degrees and 15 minutes. Presently after we was a large of the Bay of Price, within 15 degrees and 15: minutes. Presently after we were cleare of Cape Sangalean, and his llands, we ranged this Bay with our Boate and Pinnace. It hath two small Ilands in it, but without fruite, and being becalmed, we anchored two dayes thwart of Chilea.

By Sea and by Land, those of [1919 had given advise to Don Garsia Hiertado de Mendoca, Marquis of Canete, Vice-roy of Pern, refident in Lima, of our being on the Coast. He prefently with all possible diligence, put out fix Ships in watlike order, with well neere two thousand men, and dispatched them to feeke vs, and tought with vs, vider the conduct of Don Behrian de Castro Tdelatuca, his wives brother; who departing out of the Port of Callao, turned to wind-ward, in fight ouer the shore, from whence they had daily intelligence, where wee had beene discouered, And the next day after our departure out of Chilea, about the middle of May, at breake of day, we had light each of other, thwart of Camete, we being to wind-wards of the Spanish Armado. some two leagues, and all with little or no winde. Our Pinnace or prize being furnished with Oafes came vitto vs, out of which we thought to haue taken our men, and fo to leave her; but to being able to come victo vs at all times, it was held for better, to keepe her till necessitie forced vs to leave her ; and fort was determined, that if we came to likelificod of boording, the flouid lay our Boate aboord, and enter all her men, and from thence to enter our Ship, and io to forfake her : Arthough by the scient in that occasion, this proved good, not withflanding I hold it to be reproued, where the enemy is farre laperiour in multitude and force, and able to come and boord, if hellit : and that the fureit course, is to fortifie the principall, and the best that may be, and to cut off all impediments, where a man is forced to defence; for that no man is affired to have time answerable to his purpose and will, and voon doubt whether the others in hope to faue themfelues, will not leave him in greateff extremitie.

We presently but our felues in the best order we could, to fight, and to defend our selues : our 62 prayers we made vnto the Lord God of battels, for his helpe and our deliuerance, putting our Telues wholly into his hands. About nine of the clocke, the Brefe began to blow, and wee to stand off into the Sea, the Spanuards cheeke by iole with vs, euer getting to the wind-wards vp on vs; for that the shipping of the South Sea, is ever moulded sharpe vider water, and long;

CHAP.S.S.S. Difgrace of Spaniards. Port of Santa, Hands of Salomon.

all their voyages depending upon turning to wind wards, and the Brefe blowing ever Sou-

As the Sunne began to mount aloft, the winde began to fresh : which together with the rowling Sea, that ever beateth vpon this coast, comming out of the westerne-bourd, caused a chapping Sea, wherewith the Admirall of the Spaniards frapt his maine Mast afunder, and fo began to lagge a sterne, and with him, other two Ships. The Vice-admiral fplit her mainefaile, being come within flot of vs vpon our broad fide, but to lee-wards: the Reartiadmirall cracked her maine-yard afunder in the middeft, being a head of vs; one of the Armado, which had gotten voon the broad fide of vs, to wind-wards, durit not affault vs.

With these differees upon them, and the hand of God helping and delittering vs. night comming, we began to confut what course was best to be taken, to free our selues; wherein were diuers opinions : tome faid it was best to stand off to the Sea close by, all the night : others to lye ita hull ; others to cast about to the shoare-wards two glasses, and after all the night to stand off to Sea close by. The Admirall of the Spaniards with the other two were a sterne of vs. some foure leagues : the Vice-admirall a mile right to lee-wards of vs: the Reare-admirall in a manner right a head, fome culturing that; and one upon our loofe, within that also, the Moone was to rite within two houres. After much debating, it was concluded, that we should beare vip before the winds, and seeke to escape betwixt the Admirall and the Vice-admirall, which we put in execution, not knowing of any other difgrace befallen them, but that of the Reare-admirall : an till after our furrender, when they recounted vinto vsall that had past. In the morning at breake or day, we were cleare of all our Enemies, and so shaped our course alongst the Coast, for the Bay of Atacames, where we purposed to trim our Pinnace, and to renew our wood and water, and fo

to depart upon our Voyage with all possible speede. The Spanish Armado, returned presently to Callas, which is the Port of Lyma, or of the Citie Returns of the of the Kings. It was first named Lyms, and retaineth also that name of the River, which passets Seasibly made by the Citie called Lyma, the Spanish Armado being entred the Port, the people began to got athore, where they were so mocked and scorned by the women, as scarce any one by day would scotted at thew his face, they reuiled them with the name of cowards and golnias, and craued licence of the Vice-roy to be admitted into their roomes, and to vindertake the furrendry of the English

20 Shippe. I have beene certified for truth, that fome of them affronted their Souldiers with Daggers and Piltols by their fides. This wrought fuch effects in the hearts of the difgraced, as they vowed either to recour their reputation loft, or to follow vs into England, and fo with expedition, the Vice-roy commanded two Shippes and a Pignace to be put in order, and in them placed the chiefe Souldiers and Marriners of the rest, and furnished them with victuals and

The forefaid Generall is once againe dispatched to seeke vs; who ranged the Coasts and Theyset forth Ports, enforming himselfe what he could: Some fiftie leagues to the North wards of Lyma, in the second fight of Mongon, we tooke a Ship halfe loaden with Wheate, Sugar, Miell de Canas, and Cordo-time. uanskins: which for that the was leake and failed badly, and tackled in fuch manner (as the Mar-

40 riners would not willingly put themselves into her) we tooke what was necessary for our prouision, and fired her. Thwart of Traxillo, wee set the company of her ashoare, with the Pilot which we had taken in Balparizo, referring the Pilot of the burnt Shippe, and a Greeke, who chose rather to continue with vs, then to hazard their lives in going ashore; for that they had departed out of the Port of Santa (which is in eight degrees) being required by the Iuftice not to weigh anchor before the Coaft was knowne to be cleare.

It is a thing worthy to be noted, and almost incredible, with how few men they vie to faile Few men min a Shippe in the South Sea, for in this prife, which was aboue an hundred tunnes, were but eight a Ship in the persons : and in a Ship of three hundreth tuns, they wie not to put aboue foureteene or fifteene South Sea. persons : yea I have beene credibly enformed, that with foureteene persons, a Ship of five hun-

go dred tuns hath beene carried from Guayaquil to Lyma, deepe loaden: which is aboue two hundred leagues. They are forced ever to gaine their Voyage by turning to wind-wards, which is the greatest toyle and labour that the Marriners haue; and slow sometimes in this Voyage source or fine moneths, which is generall in all the Nanigations of this coast; but the security from flormes, and certainty of the Brefe (with the defire to make their gaine the greater) is the cause that every man forceth himselfe to the vetermost, to doe the labour of two men.

In the height of the Port of Santa, some seuen hundred and fiftie leagues to the West-wards, Port of Sante. lye the Ilanus of Salomon, of late yeares discouered. At my being in Lyma, a Fleete of foure faile Plantation of wasfent from thence to people them; which through the emulation and difford that arofe a the llands of mongst them, being landed and settled in the Countrey, was veterly overthrowne, onely one Salomon. 60 Shippe, with tome few of the people, after much mifery, got to the Philippines. This I came to the knowledge of, by a large relation written from a person of credit, and tent from the Philippines to Panama : I law it at my being there, in my voyage towards Spaine. Hauing edged necre the coast, to put the Spaniards on shore, a thicke fogge tooke vs, so that we could not see the land; but recouring our Pinnace and Boate, we failed on our course, till wee came thwart of the Port

salled Malabrigo, It lieth in feuen degrees,

In all this Coast the currant runneth with great force, but neuer keepeth any certaine course. fauing that it runneth along it the coast, sometimes to the South-wards, sometimes to the Northwards, which now runneth to the North-wards, forced vs fo farre into the Bay (which a point of the land caufeth, that they call Punta de Augusta) as thinking to cleare our felues by roung North-west, we could not double this point, making our way North North-west. Therefore speciall care is ever to be had of the current and doubtlesse, if the providence of Almighty God had not freede vs, we had runne athore vpon the Land, without feeing or fuspecting any fuch danger: his name be euer exalted and magnified, for deliuering vs from the vnknowned anger, by calming the winde all night: the Suns riting manifelted vnto vs our errour and perill, by difcauering vnto vs the land within two leagues right a head. The current had carried vs without any le winde, at the leaft foure leagues : which feene, and the winde beginning to blow, we brought our tackes aboord, and in thort time cleared our felues.

Thwart of this point of Augusta, lye two defert Hands ; they call them Illas de Lobet, for the multitude of Seales, which accustome to haunt the shore. In the bigger is very good harbour, and secure : they lye in six degrees and thirty minutes. The next day after we lost sight of those Ilands, being thwart of Parta, which lyeth in five degrees, and having manned our Pinnace and Boate to fearch the Port, we had fight of a tall Ship, which having knowledge of our being on the couft, and thinking her felfe to be more lafe at Sea, then in the harbour, put her felfe then voder faile : to her we gave chase all that night, and the next day; but in fine, being better of faile then we, the freed her telfe. Thus being to lee-ward of the Harbour, and discouered, we continued our course alongst the shore. That evening, wee were thwart of the River of Gmanagnil, which hath in the mouth of it two Hands : the Souther-most and biggest, called Puma, in three degrees; and the other to the North-wards, Santa clara,

Puma is inhabited, and is the place where they build their principall shipping: from this Riuer, Lima and all the valleyes are furnished with Timber, for they have none but that which is brought from hence, or from the Kingdome of Chile. By this River passeth the principall trade of the Kingdome of Quito; it is Nauigable some leagues into the Land, and hath great abundance Those of the Peru, vie to ground and trim their Shippes in Puma, or in Panama, and in all c-

Medicinable

ther parts they are forced to carene their Shippes. In Punant higheth and falleth, fifteene or fix-30 teene foote water, and from this Iland, till a man come to Panama, in all the coast it ebbeth and floweth more or leffe; keeping the ordinary course, which the Tides doe in all Seas. The water of this River, by experience, is medicinable, for all aches of the bones, for the stone and strangurie: the reason which is given, is, because all the bankes and low land adjoyning to this Ruer, are replenished with Salfaperslia: which lying for the most part foaking in the water, it participateth of this vertue, and giveth it this force. In this River, and all the Rivers of this coast, are great abundance of Alagartees; and it is faid that this exceedeth the reft, for persons of credit haue certified me, that as small fishes in other Rivers abound in scoales, so the Alagartoes in this; they doe much hurt to the Indians and Spaniards, and are dreadfull to all whom they catch within their clutches.

Scoales of

Some fine or fix leagues to the North-wards of Puma, is la Punta de Santa Elena; vnder which is good anchoring, cleane ground, and reasonable succour. Being thwart of this point, weehad fight of a Shippe, which wee chafed, but being of better faile then wee, and the night comming on, we lost fight of her; and so anchored vnder the Isla de Plata; to recouer our Pinnace and Boate, which had gone about the other point of the Iland, which lyeth in two degrees, and fortie minutes. The next day we palt in fight of Puerto Vicjo, in two degrees ten minutes; which lying without shipping, we directed our course for Cape Passas. It lyeth directly under the Equinoctiall line; tome fourescore leagues to the West-wards of this Cape, lyeth a heape of llands, the Spaniards call Illas de los Galapagos; they are defert and beare no truite: from Cape Passas, we directed our course to Cape Saint Francisco, which lyeth in one degree to the North-wards 10 of the line : and being thwart of it, we descried a small Shippe, which we chased all that day and night, and the next morning our Pinnace came to bourd her; but being a Ship of adulte, and full of passengers, and our Ship not able to fetch her vp, they entreated our people badly, and freed themselues, though the feare they conceived, caused them to cast all the dispatches of the King, as also of particulars into the Sea, with a great part of their loading, to be lighter and better of

faile, for the Ships of the South Sea loade themselves like lighters or fand barges, presuming vpon the fecuritie from fformes.

Being out of hope to fetch vp this Shippe, we flood in with the Cape, where the Land beginneth to trend about to the East-wards. The Cape is high land, and all couesed ouer with trees, and so is the land ouer the Cape, and all the coast (from this Cape to Panama) is full of wood, 60 from the Straits of Mazelan, to this Cape of San Francisco. In all the coast from head-land to head-land, the couries lye betwitt the North and North and by Weil, and sometimes more Westerly, and that but seldome: It is a bold coast, and subject to little soule weather, or alteration of windes, for the Brefe, which is the Southerly winde, bloweth continually from Balparizo to

CHAP.S.S., Indians dismissed. Spaniards distresse. Indians chase Spaniards. IAOI

Cape San Francisco, except it be a great chance. Trending about the Cape, wee haled in East North-east, to ferch the Bay of Atacamer, which lyeth some seven leagues from the Cape. In Bay of Ataca the mid way (fome three leagues from the shore) lyeth a banke of fand, whereof a man must have me. a care ; for in some parts of it there is but lettle water.

The tenth of Iune we came to an anchor in the Bay of Atacames, which on the Wester part hath a round hammock. It feemeth an Hand, & in high Springs, I judge, that the Sea goeth round shout it. To the Eastwards it hatha high fandie Cliffe, and in the middest of the Bay, a faire birth, from the shoare lieth a bigge blacke Rocke aboue water: from this Rocke to the fandy Cliffe, is a drowned Marth ground, caused by his lownesse; And a great River, which is broad but of 10 no deoth.

Manning our Boate, and running to the shoere, wee found presently in the Westerne bight of the Bay, a deepe River, whose Indraught was so great, that we could not benefit our felues of it, being brackish, except at a low water; which hindred our dispatch, yet in fine dayes, wee filled all our emptie Caske, supplied our want of wood, and grounded and put in order our Pinnaffe. Here, for that out Indians ferued vs to no other vie, but to confume our victuals, we exied They diffinife our felues of them; gave them Hookes and Lines which they craned, and some bread for a few their Indiante dayes, and replanted them in a farre better Countrey, then their owne, which fell out luckily for the Spaniards of the Shippe which wee chafed thwart of Cape San Francisco; for victuals growing thort with her, having many mouthes, thee was forced to put afhoare fifty of her pal-

20 fengers, neere the Cape; whereof more then the one halve died with famine, and continuall wading through Rivers and waters : the rest(by chance) meeting with the Indians, which we had put afhore, with their fifting, guide, and industry were refreshed, sustained, and brought to habi-

to feetiale, but the four-teenth in the cusning, we had light of a Shippe, fome three leagues to defining Sea-wards; and through the importunitie of my Captaine and Companie, I condificended that our Pinnace should give her chase, which I should not have done, for it was our destruction : I gaue them precise order, that if they stood not in againe at night, they should seeke me at Care San Francisco, for the next morning I purposed to let Layle without delay, and so feeing that our 30 Pinnace flowed her comming, at nine of the clocke in the morning, we waied our Anchors, and flood for the Cape; where we beate off and on two dayes : and our Pinnace not appearing, wee flood againeinto the Bay, where we descried hes, turning in wishout a maine Maft, which flanding off to the Sea, cloid by, with much winde and a chapting Geapbearing a caut-fayle, where a A taut faile is little was too much (being to small purpose) so dainely they bare it by the bound; and standing that which in with the shore, the winde, or rather God blinding them for our punishment, they knew not proprie mather land; and making themselues to be to wind-wards of the Bay, bare up and were put into the the land; and making themselves to the war and hatha great fresh River, which highest fifteene for the vestel.

Bay of San Mathew: It is a goodly harbour, and hatha great fresh River, which highest fifteene By of S.Maor fixteene foote water, and is a good Countrey, and well peopled with Indians; they have flore them. of Gold and Emeralds. Here the Spaniards from Guay aquid made an habitation, whilit I was pri-40 foner in Lyma, by the Indian confent, but after not able to futfer the infolencies of their guelts,

Our necessary businesse being ended, we purposed the sifteenth day of May, in the morning, Occasion of

and being a people of stomacke and prefumption, they suffered themselves to bee perswaded and led by a Molato. This leader many yeares before had fled vnto them from the The Indian Spaniards, him they had long time held in reputation of their Captaine Generall, and was led by a desire admitted also vnto a chiefe Office by the Spanwards, to gaine him vnto them. But now the Chale the span Indians voiting themselves together, presuming that by the helpe of this Molato they should force minds. the Spaniards out of the Countrey ; put their resolution in execution, droue their enemies into the woods, and flew as many as they could lay hands on tew eleaped with life; and those who had that good hap fuffered extreame milery before they came to Quite; the place of meerett habitation of Spanierds.

To this Bay, as foone as our people in the Pinnace faw their errour, they brought their rackes

aboord, and turned and tyded it vp, as they could. Affoone as we came to Anchor, I procured to remedy that was amife; in two dayes we dispatched all we had to doe, and the next morning we resolved to set sayle and to leave the coast of Permand Queto. The day appearing, we began to weigh our Anchors, and being a Pike ready to cut fayle, one out of the top descried the apamifb Armado, comming about the Cape: which by the courte it kept, pretently gaue vs to vn- Spanife Armado derstand, who they were : though my company (as is the custome of Sea men) made them to be do. the Fleete bound for Panama, loaden with treasure, and importuned that in all haste wee should

cut fayle and stand with them, which I contradicted, for that I was affired that no Shipping would stirre vpon the coast, till they had securitie of our departure (except some Armado that might be fent to feeke vs) and that it was not the time of the yeare to carry the treasure to Pamama. And besides, in riding still at an Anchor, they ever came neerer wato vs, for they stood directly with vs, and we kept the weather gage; where if wee had put our felues vnder fayle (the ebbe in hand) we should have given them the advantage, which we had in our power, by refon of the point of the Bay. And being the Armado(as it was) we gained time to fit our felues,

Pride and vnrunners of

the better to fight. And truly (as before, to a stiffe-necked Horse) io now againe, I cannot but refemble the condition of the Mariner to any thing better, then to the current of a furious River repressed by force or Arte, which neverthelesse ceasieth not to seeke a way to ouerthrowe both fence and banke : Euen fo the common fort of Sea-men, apprehending a conceit in their imagic nations, neither experiment, knowledge, examples, reasons nor authoritie, can alter or remove them from their conceited opinions. In this extremitie, with reason I laboured to contince them, and to contradict their pretences: but they altogether without reason, or against reason. breake out, some into vannting and bragging, some into reproaches of want of courage, others in. to withings , that they had neuer come out of their Countrie, if wee should refuse to fight with The valuation two ships what soener. And to mend the matter, the Gunner (for his part) assured me that with he the first tire of shot, he would lay the one of them in the fods : And our Pinnace, that the would take the other to taske. One promised, that he would cut downe the Maine-yard, another that hee would take their Flagge; and all in generall shewed a great defire to come to triall with the Enem .. To some I turned the deafe eare, with others I dissembled, and armed my felfe with patience (having no other defence nor remedie for that occasion) foothing and animating them to the execution of what they promifed, and perfwaded them to haue a little fufferance, feeing they gained time and advantage by it. And to give them better fatisfaction I condifcended that our Captaine with a competent number of men, should with our Pinnace goe to discouer them: with order, that they should not engage themselves in that manner, as they might not bee able to come vnto vs, or we to fuccour them. In all thefe divisions and opinions, our Master, Hust Dermile (who was a most sufficient man for government and valour, and well faw the errours of the multitude) vied his office, as became him; and so did all those of best understanding.

In short space, our Pinnace discouered what they were, and casting about to returne vnto vi, the Vice-admirall (being next her) began with her chafe to falute her with three or foure Peeces of Artilerie, and to continued chafing her, and gunning at her. My Companie feeing this, now began to change humour: And I then, to encourage and perswade them to performe the excution of their promises and vaunts of valour, which they had but even now protested, and given affurance of, by their profers and forwardnesse,. And that we might have Sea-roome to fight. we presently weighed Anchor, and stood off to Sea with all our sayles, in hope to get the weather gage of our contraries. But the winde feanting with vs, and larging with them, we were 30 forced to lee-ward. And the Admirall weathering vs, came roome vpon vs ; which being with in Musket thot, wee hailed first with our noise of Trumpets, then with our Waytes, and after with our Artilerie: which they answered with Artilerie, two for one, For they had double the Ordnance we had, and almost see mentor one. Immediatly they came shoaring abourd of vs. Speniards, and of the English vpon our les quarter contrarie to our expectation, and the custome of men of Warre, And doubtleffe. had our Gunner beene the man hee was reputed to be, and as the world fold him to me, thee had received great hurt by that manner of boording : But contrarie to all expectation, our stearne Peeces were vaprimed, and so were all those, which we had to lee-ward (faue halte one in the quarter) which discharged wrought that effect in our contraries as that they had five or fixe foot water in hold, before they ful pected it.

How farre a Commander is to truft his officers,

The inexperi-

And careles.

neffe of the

Hereby all men are to take warning by me, not to trust any man in such extremities, when he himselfe may fee it done : and comming to fight, let the Chieftaine himselfe bee fure to have all his Artilerie in a readinesse, vpon all occasions. This was my ouersight, this my ouerthrow. For I, and all my Companie, had that fatisfaction of the fufficiency and care of our Gunner, as not any one of vs euer imagined there would be any defect found in him. For my part, I with the reft of our Officers, occupied our felues in clearing our Deckes, lacing our Nettings, making of Bulwarkes, arming our Toppes, fitting our Wast-clothes, tallowing our Pikes, slinging our Yards, doubling our Sheetes and Tackes, placing and ordering our People, and procuring that they should be well fitted and prouided of all things; leaving the Artilerie, and other Instruments of fire, to the Gunners dispose and order, with the rest of his Mares and Adherents; which so (as I faid) was pare of our perdition. For bearing me euer in hand, that he had fine hundred Cartredges in a readinesse, within one houres fight, wee were forced to occupie three persons, onely in making and filling Cartredges, and of five hundred elles of Canuas and other Cloth given him for that purpose, at fundry times, not one yard was to be found. For this we have no excuse, and therefore could not avoide the danger, to charge and discharge with the Ladle, especially in io hot a fighe. And comming now to put in execution the finking of the thip, as he promifed, hee feemed a man without life or foule. So the Admirall comming close vnto vs, I my felfe, and the Master of our ship, were forced to play the Gunners.

Deceit of the Gunner, and his extreme careleineile, and fuipicious

Those Instruments of fire, wherein he made me to spend excessively (before our going to Sea) now appeared not; Neither the braffe Bals of Artificiall fire to be fhot with Shurbowes (where 60 of I had fixe Bowes, and two hundreth Bals, which are of great account and lequice, either by Sea or Land) he had flowed them in fuch manner (though in double Barrels) as the falt water had spoyled them all; so that comming to vie them, not one was teruiceable. Some of our Companie had him in fuspicion, to be more friend to the Spaniards, then to vs; for that hee had ferned fome yeares in the Tercea, as Gunner, and that he did all this of purpole. Few of our Peeces were clere, when we came to vie them, and fome had the fhot first put in, and after the powder. Belides, after our furrendry ; it was laid to his charge, that he should say; he had a Brother that ferued the King in Pers, and that he thought he was in the Armado; and how he would not for all the world, he should be flaine, Whether this were true or no, I know not, but I am fure all in generall gaue him an ill report, and that hee, in whose hands the chiefe execution of the whole fight confilted, executed nothing as was promited and expected.

It is requifice that all Captaines and Commanders were fuch, and fo experimented in all offices, that Who to 2:they must be able as well to controule as to examine all manner of errors in officers. For the Government count a true 10 at Seahardly suffereth a head without exquisite experience. The deficiencie whereof hath occasioned Marriner. Come ancient Sea-men to Straighten the attribute of Marrinerin fuch fort, as that it ought not to be oinen but to the man who is able to build his Ship, to fit and provide her of all things necessarie, and after to but to the max who is able to omit one coup, which the total max who is able to the world: residue, to be but saylers. Hereby giving us to understand, that bee should his knowledge bnow the parts and peeces of the Ship, the value of the timber, planke and I reneworke, fo to be able afwell to build in proportion, as to procure all meterials at a suft price. And againe, to know bow'to cut his Carles, what length is competent to every Roupe, and to be of sufficiencie to reprehend and reforme those paper, what tength is competen to every ways much and the state of face it must be erre, and doe amisse. In promiding his Ship for victuals, munition and necessaries, of face it must be providence. be expected that he be able to make his estimate, and (that once provided and perfected) in scason, and with expedition to fee it loden and stowed commediously, with care and proportion. After that, Hee is to 20 order the Spending thereof, that in nothing be be defrauded at home, and at Sea, euer to know how much is spent, and what remaineth to be spent. In the Art of Naugation, be is bound also to know, so much, Fot Naugatio at to be able to dive directions to the Pilot of Maiter, and confequently to all the reft of inferior officers.

In matter of guids and diffifing of the Saylers, with the tackling of the Ship, and the workes which be . Office of the long thereunto, within bourd and without, all is to be committed to the Mafters charge. The Pilot is to Mafter. looke carefully to the Sterridge of the Ship, to be watchfull in taking the heights of Sunne and Starre; Office of the to note the way of his Ship, with the augmenting and leffening of the winds, Oc. The Boatefwaine is to Pilot. Ge his Ship kept cleave ; his Makes, yards and tacklings well coated, matted and armed; his shrouds The Boateand states well set; his failes repaired, and sufficiently prevented with martnets, blayles, and castess; his swaine. boate fissed with Sayle Oares, thoughts, tholes danyd, windles and rother : His Anchors well boyed fufe-30 In flooped and fecured, with the rest to him appertaming. The Steward is to fee the prefernation of Va. The Steward. Etnals and necessaries, committed unto his charge, and by measure and meight to deliver the portions an-

pointed, and with discretion and good tearmes, to give favesfaction to all. The Carpenter is to view the TheCarpenter mailta and yards, the fides of the Shep, her deckes and columns; her pumpes and boate; and moreonier to occupie himselfe in the most forcible workes, except he broncher wife communicated. The Gunner is to care The Gunner. for the britching and tackling of his Artillery; the fitting of his floor, Tamptins, cornes, crones and lina stocker, & c. To be proudent in working bie fire worker, in making and filling his Cartreger; in accommo-dating bis ladles, sponger and other necessaries; in sisting and drying his powder; in bleansing the armes, munition, and such like workes, intrusted unto him.

In this manner every officer in his office, ought to be an absolute Commander, yet ready in obedience 40 and love, to facrifice his will to his saperiors command: This cannot but cause vnitie; and vnitic cannot but purchase a happie issue to dutifull travels. Lastin, except it be invergent and precise cases, the Head Directions in Should never direct his command to any, but the officers, and thefe fecretly, except the occasion require fecret. publication; or that it touch all in generall. Such orders would be (for the most part) in writing, that all might know what in generall is commanded and required.

The reason why the Admirall came to seewards (as after I vinderstood) was for that her Artislery being very long, and the winde fresh, bearing a taut fayle, to fetch vs vp, and to keepe vs Wby the Spscompany, they could not vie their Ordnance to the weather of vs , but lay shaking in the nife Admirall winds: And doubtleffe it is molt proper for thippes to have thort Ordnance, except in the came to leefterne or chase. The reasons are many: viz. easier charging, ease of the Shippes side, better tra- wards. 50 nersing and mounting, yea, greater securitie of the Artillery, and consequently of the Shippe. For Rule for Order

the longer the Peece is, the creater is the retention of the fire, and so the torment and danger of the nance. Peece the greater. But here will be contradiction by many, that date ancueb that longer Peeces are to be preferred; for that they burne their powder better, and carry the shot surther, and so necessarily of better execution : whereas the flort Artillers many times founds much of their powder without burning, and workes thereby the Stenderer effect. To which I answere that for Land service, Forts, or Castles, the long Pecces are to be preferred; but for hipping, the shorter ate much more sermiceable. And the powder in them, being such as it ought, will be all fired long before the shot come forth; and to reach farre in fights at Sea, is to little effelt: For be that purpofeth to annoy his Enemie, mult not shoote at randon, wer at point blanke, if he purpose to accomplish with his denotre, neither must be frend his shot mor powder, 60 on where a pet sun may reach his contrary; bow much the neerer, so much the better: and this duely executed, the hort Artillery will worke his effect, as well as the long; otherwife, neither short nor long are of nime himportance : but here, way meaning is not, to approve the overfloort Pecces, denifed by forme per-Sans, which at enery shot they make daunce out of their cariages, but those of indifferent length, and which

keeps the meane, betwirt scauen and eight foote.

1300.

The Spanish

Here it shall not be ont of the way, to discourse a little of the Spanish Discipline, and manner of their government in generall; which is inmany things different to ours. In this expedition came two Generals the one Don Beltran de Caitro, who had the absolute authoritie and command: The other Michael Angell Pilipon, a man well in yeares, and came to this preferment by his long and painefull fernice, who though be had the title of Generall by Sea, I thinke it was rather of courtefie then by Pattent; and for the he had beene many yeares Generall of the South Seas, for the carriage and swaftage of the Silner from Lyma to Panama; Hee feemed to be an affistant, to supply that with his counsell, adnice, and experience, whereof Don Beltran bad never made triall (for be commanded not absolutely, but with the confirmation of Don Beltran) for the Spaniards never give absolute authoritie to more then one. A custome a that hath beene, and is approved in all Empires, Kingdomes, Common-wealths, and Armies, rightly difficiplined: the mix ture bath beene feldome feene to profper, as will manifestly appeare, if we consider the silve of all actions and iourneys committed to the government of two or more generally.

The Spaniards in their Armadoes by Sea, imitate the discipline, order and officers, which are in an Army by Land, and divide themselves into three bodies, to wit, Souldiers, Marriners and Gunners. Then Souldiers ward and watch, and their officers in enery Ship round, as if they were on the shoare : this is the onely taske they undergoe, except cleaning their Armes, wherein they are not oner curious. The Gunners

are exempted from all labour and care, except about the Artillerie. And these are either Almaynes, Flemmines, or frangers; for the Spaniards are but indifferently practifed in this Art. The Marriners are but as flames to the reft, to morle and to tayle day and night, and those but few and bad, and not suffered to fleepe or harbour themselmes under the deckes. For in faire or foule weather, in stormes, summe or

raine, they must paffe voide of court or succour. There is ordinarely in enery Ship of to arre a Captaine, whose charge is, as that of our Masters with

boyes, little more or leffe, and those of the choise of Pers.

Officers in a Ship of War. Capraine of the Ship. Captaine of the Soldiers. M.Del Campo.

Vs. and alle a Captaine of the Souldiers, who commandeth the Captaine of the Ship the Souldiers, Gunners, and Marriners in her: wea, though there be diners Captaines, with their companies in one Shippa (which is whall among it them) yet one hath the supreame authoritie, and the residue are at his ordering and defoling. They base their Mastros de Campo, Sergeant, Master, Generall (or Captaine) of the Artillery with their Alfere Major, and all other officers, as in a Campe. If they come to fight with another Armado they order themselves as in a battell by land: In a Vanguard, rereward, maine battell, and wings, &c. In enery particular Ship the Souldiers are let all upon the deckess their forecastle they account a sheir head Front or Vangard of their company; that abast the Mast the rereward; and the waste, the maine battell; wherein they place their principall force, and on which they principally relye, which they call their placa de armas or place of Armes; which taken, their hope is lost. The Gunners sight not, but with their oreat Artillerie: the Marriners attend onely on the tackling of the Ship and handling of the failet, and are unarmed, and subject to all misfortunes; not permitted to shelter themselves, but to be still alost, whether it be necessary or needelesse. So ordinarily, those which first faste are the Marriners and Sailers, of which they have greatest needs. They vie few close fights or fireworks & all this proceedeth (as I indee) of errour in placing land Captaines for Gonernors and Commanders by Sea, where they feldome underfand what is to be done or commanded. Some that have beene our prisoners, have perfited themselves of that they have seene among st us : and 19

Ili order.

Prying of the outDiscipline. baffages, haue noted our forme of hipping, our manner of defences and discipline : Sithence which estill in

Their imitati- at Sea: which doubtleffe is the best, and most proper that is at this day knowne, or prattifed in the whole on of our Dif- world if the execution be answerable to that which is known and received for true and good amone it vs. cipline.

In the Captaine (for fo the Spaniards call their Admirall) was an English Gunner, who to gains Engliftman loft grace with those wider whom he served, preferring himselfe, and offered to linke our Ship with the English and the first shot he made; who, by the Spaniards relation, being traversing a peece in the bowe, to make his shot, had his head carried away with the first or second shot, made out of our Ship. It flew also two or three of those which stood next him, A good warning for those which fight a- 60 gainst their Countrie.

others disquised, under colour of treaties, for ransoming of prisoners, for bringing of presents of other Im-

such actions as they have beene imployed in they seeke to instate our government, and reformed discipline

The fight continued to hot on both fides, that the Artillery and Muskets never ceased playing. Our contraries, towards the euening, determined the third time to lay vs abourd, with refolution to take vs, or to hazard all. The order they fet downe for the execution CHAP. S. S. Spanish Vice-admirall indangered. Directions for Sea-fishts.

hereof, was, that the Captaine (or Admirall) should bring himselfe vpon our weather bow, and fo fall aboord of vs, vpon our broad fide: And that the Vice-admirall, should lay his Admirall aboord vpon his weather quarter, and fo enter his men into her; that from her, they might enzer vs. or doe as occation thould miniter.

The Captaine of the Vice-admirall, being more hardie then confiderate, and prefuming with his ship and company to get the prize, and chiefe honour; waited not the time to put in execution the direction given, but preferrly came abourd to wind-wards upon our broad fide. Which The Spanished doubtleffe was the great and especials Providence of Almightie God, for the discouraging of our e- pay deerly (at nemies, and animating of vs. For although the was as long, or rather longer then our flip, being their rafinefic, to rately built, and veterly without fights or defence; what with our Muskers, and what with our fire-works we clered her decks in a moment; fo that scarce any person appeared. And doubt leffe if we had entred but a doozen men, we might have enforced them to have rendred vnto vs. or taken her, but our company being tew, and the principall of them staine, or hurt, wee durit not,

neither was it wisdome, to aduenture the separation of those which remayned : and so held that for the belt and foundest resolution, to keepe our forces together in defence of our owne. The Vice-admirall feeing himselfe in great distresse, called to his Admiralt for succour : who presently laid him aboord, and entred a hundred of his men, and so cleered themselves of vs. In this boording the Vice-admirall had at the least thirtie and fix men burt, and flaine; and among ft them his Pilot shot through the bodie, so as he died presently. And the Admirall also received

20 some lose; which wrought in them a new resolution; only with their Artillery to batter vs; And take a and fo with time to force vs to farrender, or to fink vs, which they put in execution; and placing new refolution themselves within a Musket shot of our weather quarter, and sometimes on our broad side . lay continually beating upon vs without intermiffion, which was doubtleffe the best and secureft determination they could take, for they being rare ships, and without any manner of close fights. in boording with vs, their men were all open vnto vs, and we vnder couert and fhelter. For on all pares our fhip was Musketfree, and the great Artillery of force must cease on either side (the thips being once grapled together) except we refolued to facrifice our felues together in fire. For it is impossible, if the great Ordnance play (the ships being boorded) but that they must fet fire Great Ordon the ship they shoot at; and then no suretie can bee had to free himselfe, as experience daily nancable a 30 confirmeth. A Peece is as a Thunder-clap. As was feene in the Spanife Admiral after my impri-

fonment, crofting from Panama to Cape San Francisco, a Rayao, (for for the Spaniards call a Thunderclap) brake ouer our flup, killed one in the fore-top, aftonished either two or three in the shroudes, and split the Matt in strange manner; where it entred, it could hardly be discerned, but where it came forth, it draue out a great splinter before it; and the man slaine, was cleane in a of Thuncas manner without figne or token of hurt, although all his bones turned to powder, and those who lived and recovered, had all their bodies blacke, as burnt with fire. In like manner the Peece of Ordnance hurteth not those which stand aside, nor those which stand aslope from his mouth but those alone which stand directly against the true point of his levell : though sometimes the wind of the fhot ouerthroweth one, and the splinters (beeing accidents) mayne and hurt others. But

40 principally where the Peece doth refemble the Thunderclap, as when the ships are boorded. For then, although the Artillerie be discharged without shot the fury of the fire, and his piercing nature is such, as it entreth by the seames, and all parts of the ships sides, and meeting with so fit matter as Pitch, Tarre, Oaombe, and fometimes with powder, presently convertetli all inco flames. For anoyding whereof, as also the danger and damage which may come by Pikes and other inventions of fire, and if any thip be oppressed with many ships at once, and subject by them to be boorded; I hold it a good course to firike his fire and mayne yards close to his decke, and to fight with sprit-laile, and my son, and top-failes loose : so shall hee bee able to hinder them from oppressing him. Some haue thought it a good policie to launce out some ends of masts or yards by Policies to se the Ports or other parts : but this is to be vied in the greater ships, for in the leffer, though they unide boor-

50 be neuer fo ftrong, the waight of the bigger will beate out the opposite fides, and doe hurt, and dings. make great spoile in the lesser. And in boording, ordinarily the lesser ship hath al the harme, which the one flup can doe voto the other.

Here is offered to speake of a point much canuassed amongst Carpenters, and Sea Captaines, diversity maintained, but yet undetermined : that is , whether the race or loftie built (hip, be best for the Merchant, and those which imploy themselves in trading: I am of opinion, that the race ship is most convenient; yet so, Dispute conat bat every perfect frip ought to have two decks, for the better frengthening of bersiche better succouring of trade of her people; the better preserning of her Merchandeze and victuall, and for her greater safette from Sea and stormes. But for the Princes ships, and such as are imployed continually in the Warres, to bee Concerning built loftie I bold very necessarie for many Reasons. First, for Maiestie and terrour of the Enemie; the Prince his

60 Secondly, for harbouring of many men: Thirdly, for accomodating more men to fight: Fourthly, flips. for placing and ving more Artillerie; Fiftly, for better frengthning and securing of the ship; Sixt-5, for over topping and subsecting the Enomie; Seventhly, for greater sufficient and despecte of the super and company. For it is plaine, that the super much three decker, or with two and an halfe, shewes more pompethen another of her burthen with a decke and halfe, or two deckes, and

breedeth great terror to the enemy, discourring her selfe to be a more powerful ship as she is , then the other which being indeed after of force , seemeth to be but a Barke, and with ber low building hideth ber burthen. And who doubteth that a decke and a halfe cannot barbonr that proportion of men, that two deckes. and two deckes and a halfe can accommodate to fight, nor carrie the Artillerie fo plentifully, nor fo com. modiously. Neither can the ship be so strong with a decke and a halfe, as with two deckes, nor with two as with three nor carrie ber Mafts fo tant, nor foread fo great a clue, nor contrine fo many fights to answere one another for defence of offence. And the advantage the one bath of the other, experience daily reacheth.

Courfes for boording,

Difuse of engines of Anti-

That which hath beene foren of the danger of the Artillerie in boording is not to be wrested nor inter-Artillery after preted to cut off veterly the vie of all Artillerie after boarding, but rather I bold nothing more connection ent in Ships of Warre, then Fowlers and great Rases in the cage workes, and Murderers in the Cobridge 10 beads, for that their execution and speedse charging and discharging us of great moment. Many I know have left the vse of ibem, and of sandry other presentions, as of shreehookes, stones in their tops, and are ming them, Pikebolts in their males and diners other engines of Antiquitie. But open what inducement I cannot relate, unlesse it be because they never knew their effects and benefit, and may no doubt be used without the inconnensences before mentioned in great Ordnance. As also such may bee the occasion, that without danger some of the great Artillery may be used, and that with great effect, which is in the discretion of the Commanders and their Gunners, as hath beene formerly feene and daily is experimented In the Revenge of her Maiestes, good experience was made, who sunke two of the Spanish Armado lying In these boordings and skirmishes divers of our men were saine, and many hurt, and my selfe 30

Sir R.H. woun- amongst them received fix wounds; one of them in the necke very perillous; another through the arme perifning the bone, and cutting the finewes close by the Arme-pit; the rest not so dangerous. The Matter of our thip had one of his eyes, his note, and halfe his face thor away. Matter Henry Courton was flaine; on these two I principally relied for the prosecution of our voyage, if God by ficknes, or otherwife should take me away. The Spaniards with their great Ordnance lay continually playing vpon vs, and now and then parled and inuited vs to forrender our felues a Buena Querra. The Captaine of our ship, in whose direction and guide, our lives, our honour, and welfare now remained; feeing many of our people wounded and flaine, and that few were left to fultaine and maintaine the fight, or to reift the entry of the enemy (if hee should agains boord vs) and that our contraries offered vs good pertido: came vnto me accompanied with tome others, and began to relate the flate of our ship, and how that many were hurr and slain, and scarce any men appeared to trauerie the Artillery, or to oppose themselues for defence if the enemy should boord with vs againe. And how that the Admirall offered vs life and liberty, and to receive vs a Buena querra, and to fend vs into our owne Countrey. Saying, that if I thought it fo meet, hee and the reft were of opinion that wee should put out a slag of truce, and make some good composition. The great loss of blood had weakned me much. The torment of my wounds newly received made me faint, and I laboured for life, within fhort space expecting I should give vp

But this parly pierced through my heart, and wounded my foule; words failed mee where with to expresse it, and none can conceive it, but hee which findeth himselfe in the like & agonie: yet griefe and rage ministred force, and caused me to breake forth into this reprehension

and execution following.

Great is the Croffe, which almightie God bath suffered to some upon mee; that assaulted by our profossed enemies, and by them wounded (as you see) in body, lying gasping for breath) those whom I reputed for my friends to fight with me, those which I relied on as my breshren to defend me in all occasions. Those whom I have nourifeed cherified foftered and loved as my children to succour me, beloe me, and to sustained my rejutation in all extremities, are they who first draw their swords against me, are they which wound my beart, in giving me up into mine enemies hands whence proceedeth this ingratitude? whence this faminesse of heart? whence this madnesse? is the cause you sight for, uninit? is the bonor and love of your Prince and Country buried in the duft? your (west lines are they become loath ome unto you? will you exchance \?) your liberty for thraldome, will you confent to fee that, which you have sweat for, and procured with fe great labour and adventure at the dispose of your enemies? can you content your selves to suffer my blood spils before your eyes? and my life bereft me in your presence? with the blond and lines of your deere brethren to be unrevenged? is not an honourable death to be preferred before a miferable and flaush life? The one fulfaining the honor of our Nation of our predecessors, and of our sectie; the other sonominious to our felues, and reproachfull to our Nation. Can you be perswaded that the enemy will performe his promise with you that never leaneth to breake it with others when be thinketh it advantagious? and know you not, Perfidinglinesse that with him all is consenient that is profitable? Hold they not this for a maxime; that, milla fides ell often found in fruanda cum hercticis. In which number they account us to be. Haue you forgetten their faith violated with my father, in S. Iohn de Vluz, the conditions & capitulations being firmed by the Vicetoy & twelve 63 Hoftages, all principall personages given for the more securitie of either partie to other? Have you forgotten their promise broken with Ishin Vibao, & bis company in Florida, having conditioned to give them shipping and victuals to carry them into their country? immediately after they had delinered their weapons & arms. had they not their throats cutibane you forgotten bow they dealt with John Oxenham, & bis Company,

CHAP.S.S. 5. English valour bolding out against the advantage of the enemy. 1407

in this Sea, reclding upon composition? and how after a long imprisonment, and many miseries (being carried from Panama to Lyma) and there hanged with all his Company, as Pyrates, by the Instice? And can rea front how daily they abuse our noble natures, which being void of malice, measure all by sinceritie. but to our losse? for that when we come to demand performance, they stop our mouthes: Either with laring the inquition upon vs , or with delinering us into the hands of thetordinary lastice, or of the Kines Mmillers. And then orged with their promises, they shrinke up to the shoulders, and say, That they have wom no further power out os. They forrow in their bearts, to fee their promife is not accomplished; but now they cannot doe us any good office, but to pray to God for us, and to intreat the Ministers in our be- The tell of balle. Came wee into the South fea to put out flags of truce? And left we our pleasant England, with all this confe-10 her contentments, with intention or purpose to a maile our selues of white rags?

The Captaine and Company were perswaded to resolution; and in accomplishment of this promife and determination, they perseuered in sustaining the fight all this night, with the day They refolme and night following, and the third day after. In which time the Enemy neuer left vs day nor to fight out. night, beating continually upon vs with his great and fmall shot, Sauing that every morning, an houre before breake of day, hee edged a little from vs to breath, and to remedie such defects as The Enemy were amife; as also to consult what they should doe theday and night following. This time of breathch, interdiction we imployed in repairing our Sayles and Tacklings, in stopping our Leakes, in fishing and woolling our Masts and Yards, in mending our Pumpes, and in fitting and prouiding our felpes for the day to come : though this was but little space for so many workes, yet gaue it The English re-

30 great reliefe and comfort vnto vs, and made vs better able to endure the defence : for otherwise paire their our hip must of force have suncke before our surrendrie, having many shot under water, and our defects, Pumpes that to pieces every day. In all this space, not any man of either part tooke rest or sleepe,

and little fustenance, besides Bread and Wine.

In the second dayes fight, the Vice-admiral comming voon our quarter, William Blanch, one of our Masters mates, with a luckie hand, made a shot vnto her with one of our sterne Peeces; it car- Vice admits ls ried away his maine Mast close by the deck wherewith the Admirall beare up to her to see what harme thee had received, and to give her fuch foccour, as thee was able to fpare : which we feeing, were in good hope that they would have now left to moleft vs any longer, having wherewithall to entertaine themselves in redressing their owne harmes. And so we stood away from them close 30 by at wee could : which wee should not have done, but profecuted the occasion, and brought our omitted. felues close vpon her weather gage, and with our great and small shot hindered them from repairing their harmes: if we had thus done, they had beene forced to cut all by the boord, and it may bellying a hull, or to le-wards of vs) with a few thot we might have tunke her. At the leaft, it would have declared to our enemies that we had them in little estimation, when able to go from them, we would not ; and perhaps beene a cause to have made them to leave vs.

But this occasion was let flip, as also, that other to fight with them, sayling quarter winds, or before the wind : for having flood off to Sea a day and a night, we had scope to fight at our pleafure, and no man haning fea roome is bound to fight as his enemy will with difaduantage, being able otherwise to deale with equalitie : contrariwise, every man ought to seeke the meanes hee

🗘 can, for his defence and greatest aduantage to the anoyance of his contrary.

Now we might with our fore-faile low fet have borne vp before the winde, and the enemy of force must have done the like, if he would fight with vs. or keep vs company and then should we have had the advantage of them. For although their Artillery werelonger, waightier, and many more then ours, and in truth did pierce with greater violence; yet ours being of greater bore, and carrying a waightier and greater that, was of more importance and of better effect for finking and spoyling : for the smaller shot passeth through, and maketh but his hole, and harmeth Their effects. that which lyeth in his way; but the greater shaketh and shinereth all it meeterh, and with the splinters, or that which it encountreth, many times doth more hurt, then with his proper circumference : as is plainely seene in the battery by land, when the Saker, the Demy-coluerin, the 50 Coluerin, and Demi-canon (being peeces that reach much further point blanke then the Canon) are nothing of like importance for making the breach, as is the Canon; for that this thot being ponderous pierceth with difficultie, yea worketh better effects, tormenting, shaking and ourr-

and so hide themselves in the Wooll or Rampire. Befides (our ship being yare and good of steeridge) no doubt but we should have plaied better with our Ordnance, and with more effect then did our enemies; which was a greater terrour being able to fight with leffe disadvantage, and yet to fight with the most that could be imagined, which I knew not of, neither was able to direct though I had knowne it ; being in a manner fensielle, what with my wounds, and what with the agony of the furrendry propounded, for that Errors in fight. 60 had feldome knowne it spoken of, but that it came afterwards to be put in execution.

throwing all; whereas the others, with their violence, pierce better, and make onely their hole,

The General not being able to succour his Vice-admiral, except he should veterly leave vs. gave them order to shift as well as they could for the present, and to beare with the next Port, and there to repaire their harmes. Himfelfe presently followed the Chase, and in short space fetched vs vp, and began a fresh to batter vs with his great and small shot. The Vice-admirall (having Aaaaaaa

long, is omit

E.ferings. ynarmed.

to excelle.

faued what they could) cut the rest by the board, and with Fore-sayle and Myson came after up allo, and before the fetting of the Sun, were come voon our broad fide, we bearing all our Sayles. and after kepe vs company, lying upon our weather quarter, and anoying vs what shee could.

Here I hold it necessary, to make mention of two things , which were most presudicial unto us , and the pricespall causes of our perduion, the errours and faults of late dayes, crept in amongst those who fol-Learned from low the Sea, and learned from the Flemings and Easterlings. I mush that by our misfortunes others the flemings & would take warning, and procure to redresse them as occasions shall be offered. The one, is to fight manmed where they may fight armed. The other, is in comming to fight, to drinke themselves drunke. Tea. forme are fo mad , that they mingle Pender with Wine to gine u the greater force, imagining that it gisome are so man, that they mange a some and sale feare and doubt. The latter is, for the most part to a. To dri ke true, but the former is false and beastly, and altogether against reason. For though the nature of mine with moderation , is to comfort and regime the heart, and to foreifte and strengthen the Birit : net the immoderate ve thereof worketh quite contrary effects. In fights, all recents which adde courage and spirit, are of great regard to be allowed and vied; and few

a draught of wine to be given to every man before be come to action, but more then enough is pernicious for exceeding the meanes, it offendeth, and infeebleth the sences, connerting the strength (which should refist the force of the enemy) into weakenesse: it dulleth and blindeth the understanding, and consequently depraueth any man of true valour. For that hee is desenabled to indge and apprehend the occasion, which may bee offered to affault and retire in time convenient, the raynes of reason being put into the bands of passion and desorder. For after I was wounded, this pimium bred great disorder and inconsenience in our 20 thip, the pot continually walking, infused desperate and foolish hardinesse in many, who blinded with the

Folly of the

furpatieth vs

perance.

fume of the liquor, considered not of any danger, but then, and then would stand at hazard; some in vans glory vaunting themselves ; some other rayling upon the Spaniards ; another inviting his companion to come and fland by him; and not to budge a foote from him : which ind: fcreetly they put in execution, and cost the lines of many a good man, flaine by our enemies Muskestiers, who suffered not a man to shew himselfe but they presently overthrew him with freed and watchfulnesse. For presention of the seconderrour , although I had great preparation of Armour, as well of proofe, as of light Corfelets, yet not a man would vie them, but esteemed a pot of wine, a better defence, then an armour of proofe : which truly was ereat madrelle, and a lamentable fault, worthy to be besided from awongst all reasonable people, and well to be weighed by all Commanders. For if the Spaniard furpaffeth us in any thing, it is in his temperance to and suffering: and, where he hash had the bester hand of vs, is hash beene (for the most part) through our onely in temowne folly, for that wee will fight unarmed with him being armed. And although I have beard many wen maintaine, that in Supping armour is of little profit; all men of good understanding, will condemne such desperate ignorance. For besides, that the sleightest armour secureth the parts of a mans bodie (which it courrest) from pike, sword, and all band weapone : it likewife greath boldresse and courage; a man armed, gineth a greater and a weightier blow, then a man enarmed, he standeth faster, and with greater difficultie is to be overthrowne.

The v'e & profit of arming, Spanifle.

Armes more

necessary by

Sca, then at

And I neuer read, but that the glistering of the armour bath beene by Authors observed, for that (as I imagine) his show breedeth terrour in his contraries, and despairs to himselfest be be marmed. And exactly objet- therefore in time of warre, such as denote themselves to follow the profession of Armes (by Sea or by 40 Land) ought to couet nothing more then to bee well armed, for as much as it is the second meanes, next Gods protection, for preserving and prolonging many mens lines Wherin the Spanish nation descrueth commendation about others, every one from the highest to the lowest, putting their greatest care in providing faire and good Armes. Hee which cannot come to the price of a Corflet , will have a coate of Mayle, a lacket, at least, a Buffe-ierkin, or a prince Coate; Andhardly will they bee found without it, alben they line, and serue (for the most part) in extreame bot Countries.

Whereas I have knowne many bred in cold Countries, in a moment complaine of the waight of their Armes, that they smoother them and then cast them off, chuling rather to be host thing to with a bullet, or lanched through with a pike, or thrust through with a smood, then to endure a little travaile and suffering, But let mee eine these lazie ones this leffon that hee that will goe a war fare, must resolue bimselfe to fisht, 50 and he that putteth on this resolution, must be comented to endure both heate and weight, first, for the safeguard of his life, and next for subduing of his enemy; both which are bazarded and put into orest danger, if hee fight unarmed with an enemy armed. Now for mine owne opinion, I am resolved that armour is more necessary by Sea, then by Land, yea, rather to be excused on the shoare, then in the ship. My reason is , for that on the shoare the bullet onely hurteth, but in the ship . I have seene the shinters bill and hurt many at once, and jet the foot to have passed without touching any person. As in the Galeon, is which I came out of the Indies, in Anno 1597 in the rode of Tarcera, when the Queenes Maiefiel Sups, under the charge of the Earle of Esiex, chased us into the roade, with the plinters of one shot, were stame, maymed, and fore burt, at the least a dozen persons, the most part whereof had beene excused if they

And doubtlesse, if these errours had been forescene, and remedied by us, many of those who were slaine and burt, had beene on foot, and wee enabled to have sustained and maintained the fight much beiter and longer; and perhaps at last had freed our selues. For if our enemy had come to boord with us, our elofe fights were such as wee were seemre, and they open mute us. And what with our Cubridge heads, one anlivering the other, our batches upon bolts, our brackes in our Deckes and Gunner roome, it was inpossible to take us as long as any competent number of men had remained, twentie persons would have suffixed for defence, and for this such hips are called Impregnable, and are not to be taken, but by surrender nor to be our come, but with boording or finking, as in vs by experience was verified; and not in ve alone, but in the Revenge of the Queenes Maiestie, which being compassed round about with all the Ar- The Revenee made of Spaine, and boorded fundry times by many at once, is faid to have funke three of the Armado avenged. by ber fide.

Asbird and last cause of the losse of sundry of our men, most worthy of note for all Captaines, owners. The third and Carpenters: was the race building of our flip; the onely fault flee bad, and now adare; held cause, 10 for a principall grace in any bip : but by the experience which I have had , it feemeth for fundry reasons Race thips of versepresuducial for (bips of Warre. For in fuch, these which tackle the farles of force must bee open the deches, and are open without felter or any defence eyet here it will bee obieled, That for this inconnentence waste clothes are provided, and for want of them it is vinall to lace a bonnet, or some such shadow for the men: worthily may it bee called a hadow, and one of the most pernitions customes that can bee vied Wast-clothes, for the hadow or defence, being but of linnen or woollen cloth emboldneth many, who without it not to victuil would retire to better securitie, whereas now thinking themselves unseene, they become more bold then as other deviotherwise they would, and thereby shot through, when they least thinke of it. Some Captaines observing this errour, have fought to remedie it in some of his Maiesties ships, not by altering the building, but by denising a certaine defence made of foure or fine inch planks, of fine foot bigh, and fixe foote broad, run-

20 ning upon wheeles, and placed in such parts of the skip, as are most open. These they name Blenders, and made of Elme, for the most part, for that it smuers not with a shot, as Oake and other Timber will doe, which are now in vie and service, but best it is when the whole side hath one blender, and one armour of proofe for defence of those, which of force must labour and be aloft,

This race building, first came in by ouermuch boming in of our ships, and received for good, under colour of making our hips thereby the better fea-ships, and of better advantage to bull and try : but in my sudgement it breedeth many inconveniences, and is farre from working the effett they pretend by difinabling them for bearing their cage worke correspondent, to the proportion and monid of the shop, making them tender sided, and unable to carry sagle in any fresh gaile of winde, and diminishing the play of their Artillers, and the place for accommodating their people to fight, labour, or rest. And t am none of 30 those who hold opinion, that the ouer-much homing in , the more the better, is commodious and easier for the ship, and this is out of the experience that I have lawred, which with forcible reasons I could prove, to be much rather discommodions and worthy to be referenced. But withall I bald it not necessarie to dis-course here of that particularitie, but leave the consequence to view of winderstanding, and so surcease.

All this fecond day, and the third day and night, our Captaine and company fultamed the fight, not withit anding the difaduantage where they fought: The enemy being euer to windwards, and wee to lee-ward, their shot much damnifying vs, and ours little annoying them, for tage of Ships whenfoener a man encountereth with his enemie at Sea, in gayning the weather gage, hee is in toke ward. poffibilitie to finke his contrarie, but his energy cannot finke him; and therefore he which is forced to fight with this disaduantage, is to procure by all meanes possible to shoote downe his con-

40 traries Masts or Yards, and to teare or spoyle his tackling and sayles : for which purpose, Billets of some heavie wood fitted to the great Ordnance, are of great importance. And so are Arrowes And the best of fire to be shot out of Slur-bowes, and Cales of small shot loyned two and two together, with remedie. pieces of Wyer of fine or fixe inches long, which also shot out of Muskets are of good effect for tearing the layles, or cutting the tackling. Some are of opinion, that Croffe-barres and Chaine- Croffe-barre, shot, are of moment for the spoyling of Masta and Yards, but experience daily teacheth them not and Chamshot to bee of great importance, though neere at hand, I confesse, they worke great execution : but missiked. the round that, is the onely principall and powerfull meane to breake Mast or Yatd. And in this our fight, the Admirall of the Spaniards had his Fore-mast shot through, with two round The Spaniards shot, some three yards beneath the head; had either of them entred but soure inches Fore-Mass

go further into the heart of the Matt, without all doubt it had freed vs , and perhaps put them into thice thor our hands.

The third day, in the after-noone, which was the two and twentieth of lune, 1594, according to our computation, and which I follow in this my discourse, our sayles being torne, our Mastes all perished, our Pumpes rent and shot to pieces, and our ship with sourceme shot vinder water, and feuen or eight foot of water in hold; many of our men being flaine, and the most part of them (which remained) fore hurt, and in a manner altogether fruitlesse, and the enemy offering still to receive vs a buena querra, and to give vs life and libertie, and imbarkation for our Countrey. Our Captaine, and those which remained of our Companie, were all of opinion that our best course was to surrender our selues before our ship sunke. And so by common consenta-60 greed the second time, to send a servant of mine Thomas Sanders, to signific vnto mee the estate of our ship and company : and that it was impossible by any other way to expect for hope of de- The Company liuerance or life, but by the miraculous hand of God in ving his Almightic power, or by an hotunate to nourable furrender, which in euerie mans opinion was thought most convenient. So was I deli- come to com-

ted by him to give also my consent, that the Captaine might capitulate with the Spanish Gene- position.

rall, and to compound the belt partide he could by furrendring our felues into his hands, woon condition of lite and libertie. This hee declared vinto mee, being in a manner word of fence, and out of hope to live or recover : which confidered, and the circumstances of his relation, I answered as I could, that he might judge of my flate, ready every moment to give vp the Ghoft, and vnable to discerne in this cause what was convenient, except I might see the present state of the Ship. And that the honour or dishonour, the wel-fare or misery, was for them, which should be partakers of life: At laft, for that I had fatisfaction of his valour and true dealing, in all the time. he had ferued me, and in correspondence of it, had given him (as was notorious) charge and credit in many occasions, I bound him, by the love and regard he ought me, and by the faith and duetie to Almighty God, to tell me truely, if all were as he had declared. Whereunto he made in answere, that he had manifested vinto me the plaine and naked truth, and that he tooke God to witnesse of the same truth : with which receiving satisfaction, I forced my felse what I could to periwade him to animate his companions, and in my name to intreate the Captaine and the rest to personere in defence of their libertie, lines, and reputation, remitting all to bis discretion: not doubting, but he would be tender of his duetie, and zealows of my reputation, in preferring his libertie, and the libertie of the Company abone all respects what soener. As for the welfare boped by a surrender, I was altogether unlikely to be partaker thereof, Death threatning to deprine me of the benefit, which the enemie offered; but if God would be pleased to free vs, the toy and comfort I should receive, might perhaps give mee force and firength to recover bealth.

Which answere being delivered to the Captaine, he presently caused a flagge of truce to be an out in place of our Enfigne, and began to parley of our furrendry with a Spaniard, which Don Beltran appointed for that purpose, from the poope of the Admirall, to offer in his name, the conditions before specified; with his faithfull promise and oath, as the Kings Generall, to take vs a buena querra, and to fend vs all into our owne Countrey. The promife he accepted, and faid, that under the same he yeelded, and surrendred himselfe, Ship and Company, Immediately, there same vnto me another servant of mine, and told me, that our Captaine had surrendred himselfe and our Ship; which understood, I called unto one Inan Gomes de Pineda, a Spanish Pilot, which was our Priloner, and in all the fight we had kept close in hold, and willed him to goe to the Generall Don Beltran de Castro from me, to tell him, that if he would give vs his word and oath, as the Generall of the King, and some pledge for confirmation, to receive vs a buena querra, and to give vs our lives and liberty, and prefent passage into our owne Countrey, that wee would surren. der our felues, and Ship into his hands : Otherwife, that he should neuerenioy of vs, nor ours any thing, but a refolution every man to dye fighting.

With this Message I dispatched him, and called vnto me all my Company, and encouraged them to facrifice their lines fighting and killing the enemy, if hee gaue but a fillip to any of our companions. The Spaniards willed vs to hoise out our boate, which was shot all to peeces; and so was theirs. Seeing that he called to vs to amaine our failes, which wee could not well doe, for that they were flung, and we had not men enough to hand them. In this parley, the Vice-admirall comming vpon our quarter, & not knowing of what had past, discharged her two chase peeces at vs, and hurt our Captaine very fore in the thigh, and maimed one of our Masters Mates, cal # led Hugh Mares, in one of his Armes, but after knowing vs to be rendred, he fecured vs : And we fatisfied them that we could not hoise out our boate, nor strike our tayles, the Admirall laid vs 2bourd, but before any man entred, John Gomes went vnto the Generall, who received him with great curtesie, and asked him what we required; whereunto hee made answere that my demand was that in the Kings name, he should give vs his faith and promise, to give vs our lives, to keepe the Lawes of faire warres and quarter, and to fend vs prefently into our Countrey; and in confirmation hereof, that I required some pledge, whereunto the Generall made answere; that in the Kings Maiesties name his Master, he received vs a buena querra, and swore by God Almighty, and by the habit of Alcantara (whereof he had received Knighthood, and in token whereof, he wort Gloue fent for in his breaft a greene croffe, which is the enfigne of that Order) that hee would give vs our lives to with good entreatie, and fend vs as speedily as he could into our owne Countrey. In confirmatir,

The Exglish

on whereof, he tooke off his gloue, and fent it to me as a pledge. With this mellage Iohn Gomes returned, and the Spaniards entred and tooke possession of our Ship, every one crying buena querra, buena querra, oppor immaniana por ti: with which our Company began to fecure themfelues.

The Generall was a principall Gentleman of the ancient Nobilitie of Spaine, and brother to the Conde de Lemos, whose intention no doubt was according to his promite; and therefore confidering that some bad intreaty and insolency might be offered vnto me in my Ship, by the common Souldiers, who feldome have respect to any person in such occasions, especially in the case I was, whereof he had enformed himielfe; for preuention, he fent a principall Captain, brought 60 vp long time in Flanders, called Pedro Almeres de Pulgar, to take care of me, and whilest the Ship were one abourd the other, to bring me into his Ship : which he accomplished with great humanity and courtefie; defpiing the barres of Gold which were shared before his face, which hee might alone have enjoyed, if he would: And truely he was, as after I found by triall, a

true Captaine; a man worthy of any charge, and of the noblest condition that I have knowne

The Generall received me with great courtesseand compassion, even with teares in his eyes. The mildnesse and words of great consolation and commanded mee to bee accommodated in his owne Cabbine, of a Generall where hee fought to cure and comfort mee the best hee could; the like hee vied with all after victoric. our hurt men, fixe and thirtie at leaft. And doubtleffe as true courage, valour, and refolution on, it requifite in a Generall in the time of battell. So humanitie, mildneffe, and courtefie after

Whileft the fhips were together, the Maine-maft of the Daintie fell by the board, and the peoto plebeing occupied in rantacking and feeking for spoile and pillage neglected the principall; whereof enfued that within a flort space the Daintie grew so deepe with water, which increase fed for want of prepention, that all who were in her defired to fortake her, and weaved and cried for faccour to be faued, being out of hope of her recoverie. Whereupon, the Generall calling to- The Daintie in gether the best experimented men hee had, and consulting with them what was best to bee danger of done : it was resolued, that Generall Michael Angel should goe aboord the Daintie, and with Perishing. him threescore Mariners, as many Souldiers; and with them the English men, who were able to labour to free her from water, and to put her in order if it were possible : and then to recouer Per rice the Port of Panama for that of those to wind-wards it was impossible to turne vp to any of them, and neerer then to leward was not any that could supply our necessities and wants, which 20 lay from vs East, North-east, aboue two hundred leagues.

Michael Ansel, being a man of experience and care accomplished that hee tooke in hand, al- Michael Angel though in cleering and bayling the water, in placing a pumpe, and in fitting and mending her recourreth the Fore-faile he fpent about fix and thirtie houres. During which time the Ships lavalla hull: but this worke ended, they fet faile and directed their course for the Iles of Pearles : And for that the Dainie failed badly, what for want of her Maine-faile, and with the advantage which all the South Sea ships have of all those built in our North Sea. The Admirall gave which not withfranding (the wind calming with vs as wee approached neerer to the Land) twelue daies were ipent before wee could fetch fight of the Ilands, which to the Land) twente water representation of the leagues West South-west from Panama, and run Many Ilanis: 30 to the Southwards neere thirtie leagues. They are many and most inhabited, and those which haue people haue some Negros, slaues vnto the Spaniards, which occupie themselues in labour

In times past many enriched themselves with that trade, but now it is growne to decay. The Fishing for manner of fifthing for Pearles is, with certaine long Pinnaffes or small Barkes, in which there goe Pearles. foure, five, fix, or eight Negres, expert swimmers and great dieuers, whom the Spaniards call Bufor, with tract of time, vie, and continuall practife, having learned to hold their breath long under water for the better atchieuing their worke. These throwing themselves into the Sea, with certaine instruments of their Art, goe to the bottome and seeke the Bankes of the Oysters in which the Pearles are ingendred, and with their force and Art remove from their foundation, in which they spend more or lesse time, according to the resistance the firmnesse of the ground affordeth. Once losed, they put them into a bag winder their armes, and after bring them vp into their Boats, having loaden it they goe to the shoare, there they open them and take out the Pea les : they lie wnder the vetermost part of the circuit of the Oyster in rankes and proportions, under a certaine part which is of many pleights and folds, called the Ruffe, for the fimilitude it hath voto a Ruffe. The Pearles increase in bignesse, as they bee neerer the end or loynt of the Oyster. The meate of those which have these Pearles is milkie, and not verie wholsome to be eaten. In Anme 1 83; in the lland of Margarita, I was at the dregging of Pearle Oysters, after the manner we dreg Oysters in England, and with mine owne hands I opened many, and tooke out the Pearles of them; some greater, some lesse, and in good quantitie.

of the Land, or in fishing for Pearles.

30 They are found in divers parts of the world, as in the West Indies, in the South Sea, in the East Therefaces Indian Sea, in the Straits of Magellane, and in the Scottift Sea. Those found neere the Poles are more perfect, but are of a thickecolour, where such as are found neere the line are the Poles are are found. not perfect, but are of a thickecolour, whereas such as are found neere the line are most orient and transparent : the curious call it their water , and the best is a cleere white shining , with sierie flames. And those of the East India have the best reputation, though as good are found in the West India: the choice ones are of great valew and estimation, but the greatest that I have heard of, was found in these llands of Pearles; the which King Philip the second of Spaine, gaue to his daughter Elizabeth, wife to Albertus, Arch Duke of Austria, and Gouernour of the States of Great Pearle. Flanders, in whose possession it remaineth, and is called, la Peregrina, for the rarenesse of it, being

60 as big as the pomell of a Poniard. In this Nauigation, after our furrender, the Generall tooke speciall care for the good intreatie The Generall of vs, and especially of those who were hurt. And God so bleffed the hands of our Surgions (be-honourable vfides that they were expert in their Art) that of all our wounded men not one died, that was aline fage, towards the day after our furrendry, and many of them with eight, ten, or twelue wounds, and some with the ficke and more. The thing that ought to moue vs to give God Almightie especiall thankes and praises wounded,

was, that they were cured in a manner without Instruments or Salues : For the Chests were all broken to pieces; and many of their Simples and Compounds throwne into the Sea; those which remayned, were fuch, as were throwne about the ship in broken pots and bagges, and fuch as by the Divine Providence were referred, at the end of three dayes, by order from the Generall, were commanded to be fought and gathered together. These with some Instruments of small moment, bought and procured from those, who had reserved them to a different end, did not onely ferne for our cures, but also for the curing of the Spaniards, beeing many more, then Starifo Surgie those of our Company. For the Spanifo Surgeons were altogether ignorant in their profession, and had little or nothing wherewith to cure. And I have noted, that the Spaniards in generall are nothing fo curious, in accommodating themselves, with good and carefull Surgeons, nor to fit to them with that which belongeth to their profession, as other Nations are, though they have greater need then any, that I doe know.

> At the time of our furrender, I had not the Spanish Tongue, and so was forced to vie an Interpreter, or the Latine, or French; which holpe mee much for the vnderstanding of those, which ipake voto me in Spanifo; together with a little frattering I had of the Portugall.

Through the Noble proceeding of Don Beltran with vs., and his particular care towards mee, in curing and comforting me, I began to gather heart, and hope of life, and health, my ferunts which were on foot, aduited me ordinarily of that which past, But some of our enemies, badly inclined, repined at the proceedings of the Generall; and faid, he did ill to vie vs fo well; That we were Lutheran; and for that cause, the faith which was given vis, was not to be kept nor performed: 20 Others, that we had fought as good Souldiers, and therefore deferued good quarter. Others, nicknamed vs with the name of Corfarios, or Pirats; not differning thereby that they included themselues within the same imputation. Some were of opinion, that from Panama, the Generall would fend vs into Spaine; Others faid, that he durst not dispose of vs, but by order from the Vice-roy of Porn, who had given him his authoritie. This hit the naile on the had,

To all I gaue the hearing, and laid up in the store-house of my memory, that which I thought to be of substance, and in the store-house of my consideration, endeauoured to frame a proportionable resolution to all occurrents, conformable to Gods most hely Will. Withall I profited my felte of the meanes, which should bee offered, and beare greatest probabilitie to worke our comfort, helpe, and remedie. And to, as time ministred oportunitie, I began, and endeauoured tofa- to tishe the Generall, and the better fort in the points I durft intermedole. And especially to perfwade (by the best reasons I could) that wee might bee sent presently from Panama: Alleaging the promife given vs, the cost and charges enturing, which doub leffe would bee such as deserved confideration and excuse : besides that, no www hilest hee was in place, and power, and authoritie in his hands, to performe with vs. that he would looke into his honour, and profit himfelfe of the occasion, and not put vs into the hands of a third person; who perhaps being more powerfull then himselfe, he might be forced to pray and increate the performance of his promile; whereunto he gaue vs the hearing, and bare vs in hand, that he would doe, what he could.

The Generall, and all in generall, not only in the Peru, but in all Spaine, and the Kingdomes thereof

(before our furrendry) held all Englishmen of Warre, to bee Cortarios, or Perats; which I laboured to 10

reforme, both in the Peru, and also in the Counsels of Spaine, and amongst the Chieftaines, Soulditti,

and better fort, with whom I came to have conner fation; Alledging that a Pirate, or Corlatio, is be,

Miferifion of the terme Pi-Tars.

What a Pirate

which in time of peace, or truce foyleth, or robbeth those, which have peace or truce with them : but the English have neither peace nor truce with Spaine, but warre; and therefore not to bee accounted Pirate. Besides, Spaine broke the peace with England, and not England with Spaine; and that by Ymbargo, which of all kinds of defiances, is most reprodued, and of least reputation. The ransoming of prisoners, and that by the Canon, being more bono, able, but aboue all, the most bonorable is with I rumpet and Herald, to proclaime and denounce the warre by publike defiance. And (o if they flouid condemne the English for Pirats, of force, they must first condemne themselnes. Moreover, Pirats are those, who range the Seat without licence of their Prince; who when they are met with, are punified more severely by their cure for Lords, then when they fall into the hands of strangers : which is notorious to be en ore severely prosecuted in England (in time of peace) then in any the Kingdomes of Christendome. But the English buse all license, either immediately from their Prince, or from other thereunto amiborized, and so cannot in any sense be comprehended under the name of Pirats, for any kostilitie undertaken against Spaine, or the

The euftoma of Spaine for

pany should be intreated according to that manner, which they have ever vied lince the beginning of the warre: without making further inquisition. Then if he were rich or poore, to see if he were able to give 4 ransome, in this also they are not very curious. But if this Spanish sip should fall a thwart his King! (0 Armado, or Gallies, I make no doubt but t'ey would hang the Captaine and his company for Pirats. Al reason is, for that by a special Law it is enacted : that no man in the Kingdomes of Spaine, may arme any ship, and goe in warfare, without the Kings special licence and commission; upon pame to be reputed a Pirate, and to be chaftered with the pun frment due to Corlarios. In England the cafe is de ren

And so the state standing as now it doth; if in Spaine a particular man should arme a ship, and goe in

warfare with it against the English, and happened to be taken by them: I make no question, but the com-

CHAP.S.S. S. Buena Querra discussed Musket arrowes not Weed by Spaniards. 1412

for the warre once proclamed, every man may arme that will, and bath wherewith; which maketh for our oreaterexemption, from being comprehended within the number of Pirats.

With thele, and or like Arguments to this purpose (to avoid tediousnesse) I omit I convinced all those whom I heard to harpe upon this string; which was of no small importance for our good entreatie, and motiues for many, to further and fauour the accomplishment of the promise lately made vnto vs.

One day after dinner (as was the ordinary custome) the Generall, his Captaines, and the better fort of his followers, being affembled in the Cabbin of the Poope in conference, an eager contention arose amongst them, touching the capitulation of Buena Querra and the purport there-

to of. Some faid, that onely life and good entreatie of the prisoners, was to be comprehended there- A disputation. in others enlarged, and restrained it, according to their humours and experience. In fine my o-concerning pinion was required, and what I had seene and knowne touching that point: wherein I pawfed Buene Quertai. a little, and ful pecting the Worft, feared that it might be a baite laid to catch me withall, and fo excused my felte: faving that where so many experimented Souldiers were joyned together my younging gement was little to be respected; whereunto the Generall replied : That knowledge was not alwaies incident to yeeres, (chough reason requireth, that the aged should be the wifest) but an Art acquired by action, and management of affaires. And therefore they would bee but certified, what I had feene, and what my judgement was in this point, ynto which feeing I could not well excuse my selfe, I condescended ; and calling my wits together, holding it better, to

20 shoot out my bolt, by yeelding vato reason, (although I might erre) then to stand obstinate, my will being at warre with my confent, and fearing my deniall might bee taken for discourtesie. which peraduenture might also purchase mee mislike with those, who seemed to wish mee comfort and restitution. I submitted to better judgement, the reformation of the present affembly . The Resolute. faying, Sir, under the capitulation of Buena Querra, (or faire warres) I have ener understood, and so it bath beene observed in these, as also in former times, that preservation of life, and good extreatie of the prisoner, have beene comprehended: and further by no meanes to bee veged to any thing contrary to his conscience, as touching his Religion, nor to be seduced, or menaced from the allegeance due to his Prince and Country : but rather to ransome him for his moneths pay. And this is that which I have knowne practifed in our times, in general amongst all Civill and Noble Nations. But the English, baue enlar-30 ged it one point more towards the Spaniards rendred a Buena Querra, in thefe warrest baue ener deline. The noble red toems, which have beene taken upon such compositions without ransome : but the conetousuesse of our viage of the

age bath brought in many abuses, and excluded the principal Officers from partabing of the benefit of But abused in this primiledge, in leaning them to the discretion of the Viltor, being many times poorer, then the common this dayes, Souldiers their qualities considered, whereby they are commonly put to more, then the ordinary ransome, and not being able of themselves to accomplish it, are forgotten of their Princes, and sometimes suffer with this, Dow Bettram faid, This ambiguitie you have well refolued; And like a worthy Gen-pon 2 three

tleman (with great courtesie and liberalitie) added; Let not the last point trouble you : but be of good latisfied and comfort, for I heere gine you my word anew, that your ransome (if any shall be thought due) shall be but answereth. 40 a couple of Grey-bounds for me; and other two for my Brother, the Conde de Lemes, And this I fineare to you by the babit of Alcantera. Provided alwayes, that the King my Master leave you to my difpose, as of right you belong voto me.

For amongst the Spaniards in their Armadoes, if there bee an absolute Generall, the tenth of all is due to him, and he is to take choise of the best : wherein other Countries, it is by lot, that the Generals tenth is given ; And if they be but two ships, hee doth the like, and being but one, the is of right the Generals. This I hardly believed, vntill I faw a Letter, in which the King willed his Vice-roy, to give Don Beltran thankes for our ship and Artillery, which hee had given to his Maiestie. I yeelded to the Generall, most heartie thankes for his great fauour, wherewith he bound me euer to feeke how to ferue him, and deferue it,

50 In this discourse Generall Michaell Angell demanded, for what purpose served the little shore Shore arrowes Arrowes, which we had in our ship, and those in so great quantitie : I satisfied them, that they for Muskers. were for our Muskets. They are not as yet in vie among it the Spaniards, yet of fingular effect and execution as our enemies confelled: for the vpper worke of their ships being Muskets proofe, in all places they passed through both sides with facilicie, and wrought extraordinary disasters, which caused admiration, to see themselves wounded with small shot , where they thought themselues secure; and by no meanes could find where they entred, nor come to the sight of a-

Hereof they proued to profie themselves after but for that they wanted the Tampkings, which ate first to bee driven home, before the Arrow bee put in and as then understood not the fecret, Tamphis is a 60 they rejected chem, as wncertaine, and therefore not to bee vied, but of all the lhot vied now a familipiece of dayes; for the annoying of an Enemie in fight by Sea; few are of greater moment for many re. wood urned fire the which I hold not contamine a season of the spects: which I hold not convenient to treate of in publike.

A little to the Southwards of the Hand of Pearle, betwixt feuen and eight degrees, is the great Pecce. River of Saint Buena Ventura, It falleth into the South Sea with three mouthes, the head of

Iohn Oxnams Voyage to the South Sea. What the Symarous are.

Their habitation.

Their affiflance.

Iobs Oxnam capitulateth

with them.

His folly, Breach of promile. His purfuit.

La Pacheta.

The Generall

certifieth the

Audiencia of

The great ioy

his fucceffe.

of the Saa-

niarde.

which, is but a little diffant from the North Sea. In the yeare 1975, or 1976, one John Orner of Plimonth, going into the Well Indies, joyned with the Symatons. Thele are fugiting Negroes. and for the bad intreatie which their Mafters had given them , were then retired into the Mountaines, and lived upon the spoyle of such Spaniards, as they could master, and could never bee brought into obedience, till by composition they had a place limited them for their freedome. where they should live quietly by themselves. At this day they have a great habitation neere Panama, called Saint lago de los Negros, well peopled, with all their Officers and Commanders of their owne, faue onely a Spanife Gouernour.

By the affittance of these Symarons, hee brought to the head of this River, by piecemeale, and in many Journeyes a small Pinnace, hee fitted it by time in warlike manner, and with the so choice of his Companie, put himfelfe into the South Sea, where his good happe, was to meete with a couple of thippes of trade, and in the one of them a great quantitie of Gold. And an mong ft other things two pieces of speciall estimation, the one a Table of masty Gold, with Emralds, fent for a present to the King; the other a Lady of singular beautie, married, and a mother of children. The latter grew to bee his perdition : for hee had capitulated with these Symatons, that their part of the bootie, should be onely the prisoners, to the end to execute their malice youn them fuch was the rancour they had conceined against them, for that they had beene the Tyrants of their libertie.) But the Spaniards not contented to have them their flaves: who lately had beene their Lords, added to their feruitude, cruell intreaties. And they agains to feede their infatiable reuenges, accustomed to roait and eate the hearts of all those Spaniards, whom at any time they could lay hand upon.

John Oxnam (I say) was taken with the love of this Lady, and to winne her good will, what through her teares and periwasions, and what through feare and detestation of their barbarous inclinations; breaking promife with the Symarons, yeelded to her request, which was to give the prifoners libertie with their fluppes; for that they were not viefull for him; notwithflanding Oxnam kept the Lady, who had in one of the reftored shippes, either a Sonne, or a Nephew. This Nephew with the reft of the Spaniards, made all the hafte they could to Pamana, See the Storie and they vied fuch diligence, as within few houres, some were dispatched to seeke those . who before, This is little thought fo quickly to bee ouertaken. The purfuers approaching the River, were doubtfull added of later by which of the afore-remembred three mouthes, they should take their way. In this wavering intelligence. one of the Souldiers efpied certaine feathers, &c.

Comming in fight of the Ilands of Pearles, the winde beganne to fresh in with vs, and wee profited our felues of it : but comming thwart of a small Iland, which they call La Pacheta, that lieth within the Pearle Hands, close aboord the Mayne, and some eight or tenne leagues South and by West from Panama, the winde calmed againe.

This Iland belongeth to a private man, it is a round humocke, contaying not a league of ground, but most fertile. Insomuch that by the owners industrie, and the labour of some few laues, who occupie themselues in manuring it; and two Barkes, which he employeth in bringing the fruit it giveth, to Panama; it is faid to be worth him every weeke, one with another, a barre of filuer; valued betwixt two hundreth and fiftie, or three hundreth Pezos : which in a English money, may amount to fiftie or threescore pound : and for that, which I saw at my being in Panama, touching this, I hold to be true.

In our courfe to fetch the Port of Panama, we put our felnes betwixt the Ilands and the Main which is a goodly Channell, of three, foure, and fine leagues broad, and without danger; except a man come too neere the shoare on any side; and that is thought the better course, then to got a Sea-board of the Ilands, because of the Iwife running of the tides, and the advantage to stop the ebbe: As also for fuccour, if a man should happen to be becalmed at any time beyond expectation : which happeneth fometimes.

The fewenth of July wee had fight of Perice; they are two little Hands, which cause the Port of Panama, where all the shippes vie to ride; It is some two Leagues West North-west of the of Citie, which hath alfo a Pere in it felfe for imall Barkes, at full Sea, it may have fome fixe or feuen foot water, but at lowe water, it is drie.

The ninth of July wee anchored under Perico, and the Generall prefently adulfed the Asdiencia, of that which had fucceeded in his Iourney: which understood by them, caused Bonfires to be made, and every man to pur Luminaries in their houles; the fashion is much vied amongstithe Spaniards in their featts of ioy, or for glad tidings; placing many lights in their Charches, in their windowes, and Galleries, and corners of their houses; which being in the beginning of the night, and the Citie close by the Sea shoare, shewed tovs (being farre off) as though the Citie had beene on a light fire.

About eight of the clocke all the Artilerie of the Citie was shot off, which wee might 6 discerne by the flash of fire, but could not heare the report : yet the Armado being aduled thereof, and in a readinesse, answered them likewise with all their Artilerie: which taking end (as all the vanities of this earth doe). The Generall fetled himfelfe to dispatch aduice for the King , for the Vice-roy of Pern, and the Vice-roy of Nona Spana, for hee alio

and beene certified of our being in that Sea, and had fitted an Armado to feeke vs. and to guard his coaft.

But now for a farewell, (and note it) Let mee relate vnto you this Secret; How Don Bel. Note. tran shewed mee a Letter from the King his Master, directed to the Vice-roy, wherein hee gaue him particular relation of my precended Voyage; of the hippes; their burden; their red by Siam for munition; their number of men, which I had in them, as perfectly as if hee had feene all with Gold his owne eyes; Saying vnto mee: Hereby you may discerne, whether the King my Master have friends in England, and good and speedy aduice of all that passeth. Whereunto I replyed; It was no wonder, for that hee had plenty of Gold and Silver, which worketh this and more strange to effects; for my Iourney was publique and notorious to all the Kingdome, whereunto he replyed, that if I thought it fo convenient, leave should be given me to write into England to the Queens Maiestie my Midresse, to my Father, and to other personages, as I thought good ; and leaving the Letters open; that hee would fend fome of them, in the Kings Packet, others to his Vncle Don Rodrico de Castro, Cardinall and Archbishop of Senill, and to other friends of his: Not making any doubt but that they would bee speedily in England. For which I thanked him, and aceented his courtefie, and although I was my felie vnable to write, yet by the hands of a feruant I have this of mine. I wrote three or foure copies of one Letter to my Father, Sir John Hawkins. In which Letter trans-

I briefly made relation of all that had fucceeded in our Voyage. The disparches of Spaine and New Spaine, went by ordinarie course in ships of aduice : but 20 that for the Pern was fent by a kinfman of the Generals, called Don Francisco de la Cuena, Which being dispatched, Don Beltran hasted all that ever he could, to put his ships in order, to returne the discourse to Lyma. Hee caused the Daintie to be grounded and trimmed, for in those Ilands it higheth of the whole and falleth fome fifteene or fixteene foot water.

And the Generall with his Captaines, and some Religious men being aboord her, and new naming her, named her the Vifitation; for that thee was rendred on the day, on which they celebrate the Visitation of the Virgin Maie. In that place the ground being plaine, and without to magnifie wantage (whereby to helpe the tender fided and sharpe Ships) they are forced to shoare them on their Spanish either fide. In the middelt of their folemnitie, her props and shores of one fide fayled and so worth either fide. In the middelt of their intentitie, her props and thores of one fide rayled and to The Dainie, thee fell ouer upon that fide findenly, intreating many of them (which were in her) very badto Iv. and doubtleffe had fhee beene like the thips of the South Sea, fhee had broken out her bulge : Differion but being without Mafts and emptie (for in the South Sea, when they bring aground a shippe, they leave neither Maft, Balaft, nor any other thing abourd, befides the bare Hull) her ffrength was such, as it made no great showe to have received any domage, but the feare shee put them all into was not little, and caused them to runne out of her faster then a vace.

In these Ilands is no succour, nor refreshing; onely in the one of them is one house of straw, and a little fpring of small moment. For the water which the Shippes vie for their provision, they fetch from another Hand, two leagues West North-west of theie; which they call Tabaga, having in it some fruit and refreshing, and some few Indians to inhabite it.

What succeeded to mee, and to the rest during our Imprisonment, with the rarities and parti-40 cularities of the Perm, and Tierra firms, my Voyage to Spains, and the successe, with the time I fpent in prison in the Pers, in the Torcers, in Souil, and in Madrid, with the accidents which befell mee in them; I leave for a fecond part of this discourse, if God give life, and convenient place and reft, necessarie for so tedious and troublesome a worke; desiring God that is Almightie, to give his bleffing to this and the rest of my intentions: that it and they may be fruitfull, to his glorie, and to the good of all: then shall my defires bee accomplished, and I account my felte most happie. To whom be all glory, and thankes from all eternitie.

CHAP. VI.

d briefe Note written by Master IOHN ELLIS, one of the Captaines with Sir RICHARD HAWKINS, in his Voyage through the Strait of MAGE-LAN, begunne the ninth of Aprill, 1593. concerning the (aid Straite, and certaine places, on the coast and Inland of Peru.



He second of Februarie, 1 592, wee fell with the Land of Terra Australia, in 500 degrees fiftie fine leagues off the Straite of Magelan, which Land lay Balt and by North, or East North-east from the Straite, which is a part of Terra Australia : from which Land wee entred the Straite vpon the West South-west course : then we ran ten leagues Weft North-weft, other ten leagues Weft South-weft, then eight leagues South-weit, and came to an anchor on the starboord side, in a hooke where

you may moore any ship in twelve fathomes water. From thence wee ranne South-west and by Bbbbbb

n:fb, and pringed by them ; action, much agreeing with where they luft Santa Maria,

Valpar.fo.

South seven leagues, where we came to an Iland called, Penguin Iland, and tooke in five or five tunnes of Penguins, and flayed them, and falted them. Thence twelve leagues South South. west, and found good riding in twelve tathoms, fine fand: from thence to Port Famine, the new Towne of Pedro Sarmento, fine leagues South-west. Then West North-west fixteene leagues, where we anchored in good riding. Then North-west and by West, till wee came to the River of Geneuers, on the starboard side eight leagues. Then five leagues North-west. Then North-welt and by West thirtie leagues, till wee came out of the Straite, which is in length one hundred and eleven leagues. The mouth or entrance of the Straite is in thirtietwo degrees and an halfe, and the Out-let is in the same heigth. The middle is in fittle foure degrees

and a terce. After wee were come out of the Straite wee went away North-west and by North fortie Mocha. leagues into the Sea ; then North, vntill wee came to the Iland of Moche, which is in thirtie

eight degrees and thirtie minutes, where we had good trade with the People. This Ile is three leagues long, where great reliefe, of Mutton, Mais, and other things may bee had from the Indiane. This Ile is twelve leagues from the mayne Land. From thence wee went North, and patt by the He of Saint Marie: from thence vnto Valparato, which flandeth in thirtie three degrees, into which Hauen I went with our Boate, and tooke foure shippes, in which wee had Wines, and other good prouition : and there wee remayned the space of twelve dayes. And in this time I went on shoare , and tooke five houses , which were full of Wine , and other good things: And in this time there came a shippe by the Harbour, which the Generall went to a

take, but hee did not : yet [with twelve men did take her, and within one houre the Generall came to vs. The shippe had clothes of Cotton for men to weare, of the Indian making, and tome Gold.

Gold. in the bottome of the Bay, where they make excel-Vaiparaile is a Port and a lent Wine. From thence eighteene leagues into the Land is Saint lage , a great Towne of Spaniards. From thence wee paffed to Arisa, which is in twentie degrees, as I take it. All Arica. Pi/co.

this Coast lieth North and South. From thence wee passed to Pifco and Chimcha, where the Chinchs. Generall, and the Maiter Hugh Cornello, went to goe on shoare, but they did not. Heere wee Sixe of the met with fixe of the Kings thippes, which came to feeke vs : but at that time wee efcared Kings Stips. them. These places are in fourteene degrees and an halfe. From thence wee passed by the Ci. w tie of Lima, which is in twelve degrees and an halfe. From thence by Paira, which is an Ha-Lima. Paita. uen, and a Towne, and standeth in five degrees. From thence wee passed by the Equinocally Atacame, Baia de Sante

Line, and went to Asacame, where wee were taken, the two and swentieth of Line, 1994. This place is in one degree to the Northward of the Line. There is from thence some eight leagues, a Bay called. The Bay of Saint Matthew. From thence were very carried vnto Panama, which is in nine degrees so the Northward of the Line : where wee were held Prifoners. From Panama wee were returned to Parta, and so to Lama. Lama is neere as bigge as London within the walls; the houses are of Lome baked, for want of Stone. There are neere twentie thousand Negros in Lima. There are in it of Horsemen an hundred Launces, and an hundred Carbiners, at a thousand Ducats a man by the yeere. From Lima I went to Gnamanea, 4 which is a good Citie fixtie leagues from Lime, to the South-eaft. Twel-e leagues from Lime Eastward it raineth, but neuer at Lana. Twentie leagues more Southerly, towards Gnama-

ga , at Paricacco , which is a Mountaine, it is as cold as in England in our Winter: But none will dwell there, because of the cold. Then is the Valley of Choose having Hills on both fides, and a River in the middeft. The Valley is eighteene leagues long, and well peopled, and hath divers Townes: it is fortie leagues from Lime, and to through that I travelled to Gnamanga.

From Gnamanga wee passed towards Cusco on hard wayes cur out of the Rockes by Gnamacape, with great difficultie by the wayes there are Tamboes or houses to lodge people, and some Villages. Then wee came to Cufco, which is a Citie about the bigneffe of Brifton , without a 19 wall, having a Cassle halfe a mile off on the side of an Hill, builded with stones of twentie tuns weight firangely iowned without morter. From Lima they trade to Cufco all that comes out of Spaine. They of Quito trade to Cufco, with wollen Cloth and Cottons: for Quito hath abuse dance of theepe about it, and is a great Citie. They drive theepe to Lima twentie thouland in a Flocke, and be halte a yeere in the Pallage.

Betweene Cuico and Potosi there is continuall trade, and the Lords or Cacionoes of the Niturals will entertaine you in the way, feed you in Silver veffell, and give you very good lodging,

and if they like you, they will guide you with three or foure hundred Indians. In Porofi there are at worke neere an hundred thouland Indians, which the Cacianoes bring in

for fo many daves to worke the Mynes; and then other Cacronoes bring in as many more. I have also two Letters writter by Thomas Sanders fernant to Sir Richard Hawkins, written to Sir Io in Hawkins out of the prison of Saint Lucar; in one of which bee maketh a large relation of Rer Too, Lucas, Sir 10 in Hawkins out of the prigon of Sann Lucas, when by with mention of one Master Lucas, condemned by the Holy House to the Gallies, and sent to Nombre de Dios, in which Veyage het died: on

CHAP. Sir R. H. bi Dfage. Sir Iohn Hawkins bis Pardon from K. Philip. 1417

of the other I have hither added this transcript touching the viage and respect which Sir Richard Hawkins found in Peru.

I wrote in like fort of my Masters health, and of his entertaynment in his taking, and in This is pare the Citie of Lima by the Vice-king of the Countrey, and how hee was beloued for his valour, of another by all braue men in those parts, the which I learned by many which came from thence . as well Letter, rich as poore, and many Negroes, ieruants to Merchants, which came from thence, and were there when hee came. Hee was received by all the best in the Countrie, carried by them to a Princely house all richly hanged, the which hee had to himselfe, with a great allowance from the King, befides many prefents from the Queene: but within fixe or feuen dayes hee was carto ried by the Fathers to the Holy Houle, not as a man to be executed, but to reft there would the heard from the King what should be done with them. &c.

Having occasion here to mention Sir John Hawkins, I thought good, in memorie of his name, to expresse a Tardon from the Spanish King Philip the second, to birn, and to the Master George Fitzwilliams, and the rest of their companie, both for the forme thereof, (being here printed from the Originall, superscribed and subscribed with the Kings owne hand) and to bew the strict prohibition of Trade in the Indies.

EL REY.

DOr quanto por parte de Iuan Aquins y Iorge Fitzwilliams Ingleses por si yen nöbre de todos los demas 🕻 Ingleses que han y do y estado en su compania, enlo que de yuso sedira, nos hasido hecha relaceon que noenbar gante lo que por nos esta prohibido yordenado paraque ningun estrangero yque no sea natural destos nostros Reynos, nauegue, trate, us contrate enla carrera de las Indias, ni enlos puertos y lugares dellas. Los susudos ban entrado y nanegado, tratado y contratado enla dicha carrera y puertos y lugares della, y porque su intencion no ha sido dermirnos ni offender ni damnissicar, a nostros Vasallos, y por que acua, y persone in the construction of the con terra, nos han pedido y supplicado que vsando da clemencia y de beniquidad conellos bixiesemos merced do perdonalles la culpa y penas en que anian incurrido, y nos por inft as canfas y confirationes que aello nos muenen y por les bazar merced lo anemas tenido por bien. T por la presenze les pardonamos y remitimos todas y qualesquier penas en que por razon de auer entrado y namegado enla dicha carrera de las Indixi y tractado y corractado enlos puertos y lugares dellas hasta agora ayan incurrido, y queremos que en la dicha razonno puedan er acufados ni molestadas, ni por esta razon ni cansa puedan contra ellos proceder los del unestro conceso de las Indias, ni los suezes do la casa dela contratazion, ni otros algunos. Perque no. Bra merced y voluntad es de les remittr como les remitimos todas las dichas penas, y de les librar, como les libramos y damos per libres y quitos delliu, bien assi como ficuellas no buniseran caydo ni incurrido, no embargantes qualesquiera lejes, ordenanças, provisiones y cedulas que en razon delo sufo dicho ayamos becho y dado, con quales quiere clausulas que enellas aja, o, bauer pueda, las quales todas paraen quanto 10 alo suso dicho las abrogamos y deregamos , aniendelas aque per expressadas & insersas de Verbo ad verbum, quedando en futuer en viper quante alademas. El que dicho perdon, gracia y remission qui-remos que se entienda y esienda no solo alos doos suan Aquins y lorge Fuzuvillums, pero a todos los demas snoleses queensu compania sauydo conque esto sea y se entienda ser enrespecto delo passado, pero que por esto no seanisto permitirles ni darfeles licencia paraque de aqui adelante puedan sin nuestra expressa y

YELREY.

Por mandado de su Mag. S. Antonio Gracian.

V. Md. perdonea Iuano Aquins Ingles y afus companneros le pena enque incurriente o perauer nanegade, y contratado enlas Indeas contra las ordenes de V. Md.

particular licencia, nauegar tratar y contratar enla dicha carrera, y que se lo besieren, demas de incurrir

en las penas contenidas en nuestras lejes ordenanças, cartas y pronisiones, este pardon y gracia sea y aya-

deser ninguno y de ningun valor y effecto, y mandamos alos del nostro conseio delas Indias y alos nostros

Inexes y Officiales de la cafa dela contratacion y a otras quales quier luexes y lufticias que affilo guar-

den y cumplan fecha enel monastero de Santt Lorenço el real a diez dias del mes de Agusto, anno del

Bbbbbb 2

Someor de mill y quinien tos y setenta y un annos.

CHAP.

Cuf.o.

Mateo.

Panama.

Gnamenga.

Paita.

Lima.

Petof.

Mafter Luc.rs

CHAP. VII. A briefe Relation of an * Englishman which had beene thirteene yeeres Captive to the Spaniards in Peru, &c.

* I found this paper amongs others of Mafter Hahl, with. our the name of the Author. Lima. Payea,

Acapulca.

Mexico.

Atrizco. Angeles. Pera Cruz-

Spint I, de

He eleuenth of October, 1602. we departed from the Citie of Lyma, and that dev

wee fet Tayle from the Callon, in the Contadora, Captaine Andrea Broche. The fifteenth of October wee came in o Payta, and there watered, and tooke in fresh victuals; and fet fayle from thence the foure and twentieth of the fame, for to The fourteenth of December we came to an anchor in Acapuica, we were becalmed in 17. degrees and an halfe, foure and twentie dayes, and were fet with the current into

23. degrees to the Northward, we came all the coast alongst from Colyma and Nanydad to Acatulica. The twentieth of December we came from Acapulca, with fixe Mules: and on Christman Day in the morning we came to Zumpanga, a Towne of Indians; where wee remayned all that day being betweene this Towne and Acapulca thirtie leagues, no Towne betwixt. The laft of December wee came to Quirna vaca a Towne in the Marquesado of Hernan Cortes, thirteene leagues from Mexico. The first of Ianuarie we came into the great. Citie of Mexico, where we remayned until the 20

fenenteenth, at which time we came from Mexico, in the evening, and came two leagues that night. The next day we came to Irazing, which is feuen leagues from Mexico, where wee remayned two dayes. The fine and twentieth of Ianuarie wee came to Pueblo de los Angelos, pala fine in our way the Vulcan being from Mexica twentie leagues, and thorow Chullula. Thethirtieth of Innuarie I went to Atrizes, where we were fixe dayes, being fine leagues from Mexics. The fixteenth of Februarie we came from the Pueblo de les Angelos, with fourteene Carts, fine

or fixe temes of Oxen in a Cart, for to come to the Citie of Vera craz. The leventh of March, 1603. wee came into the Vera cruz, the new Towne, where wee remayned vntill the eight of Aprill, flaying for a fhip of aduife.

Tuesday the eight of Aprill, we set sayle from Saint Ino de Ullna, in a Barque of aduise called, w the Saint Lazaro, the Captaines name was Diego Garces, being of the burden of thirtie tunhes. the Pilot named Diego V yedall, we were eight and twentie persons. 1603. The nine and twentieth of Aprill we had fight of the Mariyrs, and were in two fathomes water, off them we faw no more nor no other, while we fell with Alla Rocha in Barbarie, which was the 14. of June.

The fixteenth of Iune wee had fight of Chiprone, and Cales, that night we came into S. Lucar. The feuenteenth of June in the morning, the Kings Officers came aboord of vs for the Kings Letters, and the Letters of the Mexico Fleet : where I heard newes of our good Queene Elizabethi death, and our King lames his comming to the Crowne in peace, Heere I was discharged , and had my libertie given me, fo I went to Symil the nineteenth day, where I remay ned vntill the one and twentieth of September: at which time I came to Wellus in the Condado.

The fift of November I came from Wellus in the George of London. Mafter Inano Whary, the thip was Mafter Hangers. I arrived at the Reculluers the fewenth of December, 1602, being fince my departure from England thirteene yeeres and nine moneths of captiuitie for the which the Lord be praised, and make me thankfull all the dayes of my life. Amen.

CHAP. VIII.

The Relation of ALEXANDRO VRSINO concerning the coast of Terra Firma, and the secrets of Peru, and Chili, where he had lived foure and thirtie yeeres. He first Towne inhabited of the Spaniards is Saint Iohn in the Ile of Portovicco, it

Saint Dominto.

is a very poore Towne. They have no Bread, but in flead thereof they vie 2 certaine Rootecalled Cazane. There is in the Towne about fixtie Spaniards, and oa Fort. In Saint Domingo there is a very strong Fort with aboue eightie great Preces of Ordnance. It is one of the fairest Cities in all the Indies: there are aboue feuen hundred Spaniards in it. It is a Bilhoprike. There is next the Towne of Monte Christo, wherein there are about eightie Spannards. There is a small Fort. Then Ocoa, which is a very good Port, where the Fleere both comming and going, doe put in for fresh water and 60 wood, and other necessaries. Then Porto de Plata, a small Towne, with a little Fort, about seuentie or eightie Spaniards. Porto Reale, a dishabited Towne, but a very good Port. There is nothing else in the He of Spagnola, of any importance. There are about 22000. Negros, men and women, flaues.

From Saint Domingo to Iamaica, an hundred leagues in this Ile there is but one Towne, which Iamaica. fundeth three leagues within the Land. There are in it about fiftie Spaniards. In all these places they make Sugar in great abundance, but especially at Saint Domingo there are about eightie Ingenies, or Sugar houles. They have neither Silver, nor Gold. They eate of the forefaid Roote for Not one nature Bread in every place. The lle of Spaniola is inhabited onely by the Spaniards, there is not one Naturall of the Countrey.

From lamaica to Cartagena one hundred leagues. This Cartagena is a faire Citie, a very strong entagena. Fort in the Hauen mouth and Artilerie in three parts of the Towne. A Bishoprike. They have neither Silver nor Gold : there are about 150. Spaniards. Next to this is Tula inhabited of the 10 Spaniards about fortie or fiftie : it is eighteene leagues from Cartagena alongft the coaft.

Then Santa Martha, a Citie with a imall Fort, about 100, Speniards: there they gather great Saint Mariba, quantity of Gold very fine : they are a fierce people. Santa Martha is fiftie leagues from Cartagena longft the same coaft. Vpon the same coaft is Nombre de dier about seuentie leagues from Nombre de dier. Cartagena, they have no Fort but upon the haven fide there lyeth foure peeces of Artillary there are in it about fixthe Spaniards. It is vinder the gouernment of Panama, Then Veragna, about fementie or eightie Spaniards : they gather great store of Gold aboue a million and a halfe yearely. V non the fame coast about one hundred leagues from Veragua, fleth a towne called Coffarices, coffarices, inhabited onely of the naturals : they gather great flore of Gold.

Ouer against Nombre de Dies on the other Sea of Sur lyeth the Citie of Panama, eighteene Panama 20 leagues diffant from thence : there is an Audience, and a Prefident, and an Archbilhope there are about four ehundred Spaniards; it is a very rich towne, full of treasure : all the Gold and Silver that com neth out of those parts into Spaine, commeth by that towne: they have no Fort but foure preces of Or inance that I ye vpon the Hauen; but to returne to the coast of the ocean Sea. From Carragena Eastwards there is a River called Rio de Labache, vpon this River a prettie towne, with two hundre ! Spansards, where is gathered great abundance of Pearle . about one million euery yeare : there is a little Fort.

A little beyond that you come to Baxemete, which is in the government of Valenzaula, and Venduela. Barbaruta, three leagues within land. Then Toom five leagues within land. Then Margarita with a strong Fort, in all these places is gathered most fine Gold. Nombre de Dies, Cartagena, Santo ta Martha, Tulu Rio de Labathe, Veragua, Barbaruta, thefe haue bin spoiled two or three times by the Frenchmen.

Margaria is the vemost Towne of the Spaniards upon that coast, from whence passing into the Countrie, about foure dayes journey we came to Granade, a towne in the government of Va- Granade. lanzanola, from thence to Trugillo, which is the vemost towne of that Progince. So to Villetta, where beginneth the Nuevo Regno de Granado, Vele Pampelona, Ocagna, Tinza, a proper Citte with foure hundred Spaniards, Santa Fe del Nuevo Regno di Granada, the principall Citie of the Kingdome, fine hundred Spaniards an Archbishop, a President, and an Audientia; Tocayma, Ayuage, Cariago, Arma, Caramanta, Santa Fe di Antiochia, Anzerma, Cali, Buga, Popaya, 2 gouernment. Armage Mocoa, Scanze, Timana, La Plata, Nena, Pasto. The end of the new Kingdome 40 of Granada. In all their Cities is gathered great abundance of Gold.

Quito the first Citie of the Kingdome of Poru. There is a Prefident, an Audience, and a Bishop. Quite. Riobamba, the Gouernment of the Squifer, Auila, Baena, Acedenia, Tombamba, Guaiaguill 2 Port towne in Mar del Sur, la Panca de Santa Helena, Porto, visio in Spanift, Manta in Indian, Parta, Port Townes, Colibamba. The gouernment of lobn di Salma, Sarigra, Saint lacomo de las Valles, Santa Maria de las neves, Valladelid, Combinama, Zaem, in thefe fix townes is gathered the greatell quantitie of Gold and the finest of all the Country of Porn, Chachapaia, Moiobamba, Guanico vpon the Sea, Malabrigo, the port of Tragillo. Trugillo is two leagues within the port of Reque, Santa, Casma, Guagnara, Chancai, Lima, Cagnette, Ica, Camana, (Aerquipa, Quilea and Chali, ports of Areguna) Arica, all these are upon the Sea coast of Peru, Guamanga and Guancanallica, where they gather all the Quick-filuer aboue fine millions enery yeare : the Citie of Cofee, the chiefe 50 Citie of the Kingdome of Peru, Chogunge, Choquifaca, Potoffi, and Porco, where all the Silver is gathered in the Kingdome of Pers. And this is the end of the Kingdome of Pers. In the Pro-

uince of Tuquema, subject to Peru, Tuquema the principall Citie of the Province. Saint Ia- Tucana como de las Torres, Arrian, Calchaqui. In the Province of Chirignana, subiect to Pern: Santa cruze de la Sera. In the Prouince of Chili alongst the coast; Tarapaqua, 110, Copiapa, Co- Chili. quimba , la Serena, S. Iacomo , La conception , Cuyo, la Imperiala, Paraifo, Valdinia, Oxorno. From Margarita or Barburata to Santa Fe del numo regne di granada is 300.leagues by land, the ordinary way. From Santa Fe to Cuito 250, leagues. From Quito to Lima 300. leagues. From Lima to Chognifaca, or Potoffi, or Porce 300 leagues. From Potoffi to Copiago chie e Citie of Chili 6) 500, leagues. And thefe are ordinary travailed waies.

There are in Potoff and Porco 300, mines of the Spaniards, and 5000 of the Indiant. The Silver Potoff and that is for the King (which is supposed to be two millions) and all the rest that is sent into Spaine Pace. is brought upon Sheepes backes unto Arica or Port of Pern from thence by Sea into Lima, A Sheepe will carry 100.li, three leagues in one day.

laden at Cartagena yearely the Kings and as much of otherMerchants Arequipa,

Cusco.

The Gold that is gathered in Chili, the Kings part which is about a million, and of others a million and a halfe is brought by Sea vnto Lima. All the Gold and Silver that comes to Lima is about twelve millions from thence it comes to Parama, from Panama by land to Nombre de Dior, from thence by Sea to Cartagena, The Gold that comes out of the new Kingdome of Granada and the Province of lobndi Salina is brought by a River to Cartagena. So that at Cartagena there is laden out of those parts for Spaine every yeare of the Kings about five millions, and as much of other Merchants.

In all the Country of Chili there are not about 1200, Spaniards. In Arica 100, Spaniards, A. regnipa is 17. leagues diffant from Chuli or Quilea the ports : it hath about 200. Spaniards. In Lie ma 1000. Spaniards. In Seutu 100. Spaniards. In Trugillo 200. it is a very wealthy towne (the Port of it Malabrigo two leagues from Trugillo. The Citie of Cufco is bigger then Rome : there is a Bishop and about 1000. Spaniards. They have the Inquisition in Lima, In Payer which is the harborough for all the Fleete for fresh provision; there are 100 men. Porto Vicio, is also another harborough where the Fleete taketh in fresh victuals. There are not three Spaniards in the towne. but about fine leagues of there is a small towne called Mante, where there are but 50. Spaniards In Panama aoo. In February the Silver comes from Potoffi and Porco to Lima: about the fame time the Spips returne from Chili to Lima with Gold.

In Aprill they fet forth from Lima foure Ships, and in fifteene dayes they arrive at Panama. From the point Saint Helen to Copsago it never raineth : this dry tract extendeth from the Sea coast into the Country in some places 40. miles, in some places 50. and in fundry parts of the 40 Country it is to hot that no man can endure it, and within fixe miles of that place to cold againe, that it is inough to kill any man. This thrange tract extends 1200. leagues. In the Citie of Lima and Trugillo there grow Oranges, Pomgranets, Citrons and Melons, bigger farre then those

La Lama de Camanais a very fertile scile, yeelding abundance of graffe, which beginnethat Camana and paffeth by Quilca towards Chuli eight eene leagues from Camana. The lame Loma, is in some part within a mile of the Sea and in some other places a league off from the Sea. The fame Loma is in breadth in some places halfe a league, and in other places a league, which is the greatest breadth that it be areth.

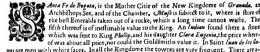
Betweene this Loma de Camana and the Sea, is nothing growing but barren fands and ftones. And within the faid Loma, is also barren for the space of eight or ten leagues. And in all the faid circuit both of the Long, and from it to the Sea, and also in rowards the land the faid diffance of eight or ten leagues it neger raineth. But farder into the Land where the hils and mountaines are, there it raineth and sometimes snoweth.

A di 24. Luglio 1981. Aleffandro Orfino Romano antico dico che fon de tempo de cinquanta uno agnos. lo fon fiado Trenta quatro agnos nel regno del Peru, e ho cammado todo el regno.

CHAP. IX.

Notes of the West Indies, gathered out of Pedro Ordonnes de Cauallos a Spanish Priest, bis larger observations.

Emeralds.



Ansa Fe de Bogasa, is the Mother Citie of the New Kingdome of Granada, an Archbishops See, and of the Chamber, Maso is subject to it, where is store of the best Emeralds taken out of a rocke, which a long time cannot waste. The fifth thereof is of ineffimable value to the King. An Indian found there a stone which was fent to King Phillip, and his daughter Clara Eugenia, the price where- 19 of was about all price, nor could the Goldsmiths value it. In Saint Juan de los la-

boue 14000. Negros which worke in the Mines there. In Onite two things are deere, Wine, which is worth eight Rials a quart, if brought from Lima, and twelve from Spaine: and Affes, of which one hath beene worth 1:00. Pelos. and that for the flore of Mares in those parts. It is a prouerbe, What is dearest in Quito? An Alle. In Li-

ma no houses are covered with roofes, bee they never so large, because they never have raine. No Citie in Indiais richer then it. Out of Potofi are yeerely gathered great treasures. Ouer the top of this Mountaine alway

Potafi and the hangs a cloud, even in the cleerest dayes, as it were marking and pointing out the riches there- 62 of. It rifeth in forme of a Pyramis, three leagues high, enuironed with cold ayre. At the foot is the Citie Potoli, inhabited by twentie thousand Spanish men, and ten thousand women, as many Negroes and foure thouland Indians. Within fix leagues about is no pasture of graffe, to that toit, Wood, and Corne are brought from other places. The entrance and Myne-workes are to

dangerous, what they which goe in , vie to take the Sacrament of the Altar , as if they went to their death, because few returne. The Earle of Villar made a proclamation, that all the Indiens should have leave and libertie to labour in this Myne, and to have foure Rulls 2 day for each mans worke, which they were before forced to doe for nothing ; fince which the King hath received greater profit. The King receiveth thence yeerely eight or ten millions of Silver. The metalls lie two hundred Stades " (or mans heights) beneath the earth. Raine is "The Latine very needfull for the Myne-workes, which viually falls about Christmasse. Then the President of word is Stade. Chareas comes thicher (as alfo to have care of the Quick-filter) that in Februarie and March they which in ordimay be readic for Lima. Chile hath two Bishoprickes, of Chile and Saint lago. It brings forth the naryfinfe were to fruits of Callile, greater then Spaine it f. Ife. There are many Gold Mynes, if the Auracan Indians could be compelled to the workes, which doe our men great harmes. I went into Chile from facica. Pers, and thence returned to Quito.

Mexico is as great as Simil. There dwell in it three thousand Spaniards, many more women, Mexico. two hundred thousand Indians, twentie thousand Negros. The Natives are capable of Arts and Diffinline. They very much honour Priefts, Monkes, and Regulars, and when the Bell rings Rond to to Sermon, the Indian Boyes run vp and downe the streets croffing their fore-heads. When they Prieffs, goe out of the Church, they cry, Bleffed be our Lord lefus Chrift, and bleffed bee his Mother Saint Marie; the Priest answeres, For euer, and they, Amen. They are liberall Almes-giners; to mee Deare Maste, faying Maffe, I remember they gave an hundred Duckets. D. Martin Cortez Marqueffe of the 20 Vallee, was author of this reuerence to Priefts by his owne example, which would stand still bare

headed, till a Priest were past, and sometimes would goe forth to meet him and kisse his hand. Hides. In New Spaine is such store of cattell, that one man often kills one thousand Beenes, and as many Goates, and fends their hides into Spaine. The Magurie tree or Cabuya yeelds Wine, Vineger, Mayer tree Hony, Beds, Threads, Needles (out of the prickles of the leaves) Tables and hafts of Knines befides many medicinable vies. From Mexico to Acapulpo the Hauen on the South Sea, are ninetie leagues, and well inhabited.

The Vice-roy is President at the Court at Lima, and Gouernor and Captaine Generall of that The Vice: ov Territory and of Charcas and Quito. He hath fortie thousand Duckets salary, and the charges of of Poru. Warre are paid by the King. The Territory of Lima containeth in circuit three hundred leagues. Callao. 30 Callao is the Port, two leagues from Lima, the chiefe in all the South Sea, where the Vice-toy vfeth to abide much for furnishing the Fleets which carry the treasure.

The Mynes of Ornes are given over for want of Quck-filder, or as force fay, left the linkabitants of Potofi should remove thither. Gnaconelica bath rich Silver Mynes, which yeerely weeld eight thouland Quin: als. But fome Mountaines falling have ftopped the mynings. Saint Process of Quito is vnder the line very temperate, three hundred leagues from Lima. There is a Chancery. Bishop, Deane, and Vniuersitie. The Territory of this Court extends two hundred and fixtie leagues. Neere the Citie are many burning Hills.

There is a twofold government in the Indies, one of Spaniards, which is the same with that of Indian govern-Spaine; the other of Indians. The Spaniards in these parts neither plow the ground, nor worke in mint. 40 the Mynes, especiall there where they are accounted gentlemen, Scarcelly shal you find any Spanishyouth, which will betake himselfe to the service of any man, except the Vice-roy. They trade with Merchandise, are set ouer the Kings Rents, Garrisons, and Myners.

The Indians are base minded. They solemnize the Feasts of the Sacrament, Easter, and Midsomerday, with Dances, Muficke, Processions, and in the Temples religiously. On Mandy Thursday they are all chastised. In guilds they are observant. On a certaine day they are compelled to fitten & state. render account of all their goods and poffettions. They procure Maffes at Funeralls. They are generally wittie, liers, and ffrong drinkers. They will drinke two or three dayes together cloffy. and sometimes a whole weeke. Their Feaths are hie the Negros with songs and dances. With these Rites they say they pray for the dead. They never make an end, till they have spent all, and

50 then they returne to their labours. They are very expert in the Arts which they learne, although it be writing or reading, which yet is not granted them to learne. They pay yeerely to their Gouernours a certaine tribute of Silver and other things, after they are eighteene yeeres old, till fiftie. The Commendator receiveth these things, conditionally to maintaine a Priest and a Corrigidor, and to pay the tenths to the Church. Tuis and other places are there given for two liues, the sonne or eldest daughter succeeding. The Corrigidors amongst the Indians are prohibited merchandile. A Vilitor is appointed in enerty Court to goe to the places of that Precinct to en- Inflice itines quire of affaires, and to decide controuerlies.

The number of Meffices is great, which wander vp and downe poore and beggarly, nor give Mefitos. their minds to learne any handicrafts. It were good they were forced to labour.

A Councell celebrated at Lima, 1583, in the third Seffion, Chap. 22. approved of the Pope and Indian Provinour King, decreed that whereforeur one thousand Indians are found together, a Teacher and Priest ciall Councell. should be set ouer them. The Indians Priests wie at the Kings charges to carrie with them many religious men : and the Lefuites by the supreme Councell of India, with aduite of the BB. are commanded to fend many thither for the Bishops affistance.

14000. Negret Wine and Affes deare.

Ecclefiafficall

The Rents and Tenths of Bishoprickes are decided into four parts, one of which goeth to the Bishop, a second to the Deane and Chapiter, so as the Deanes proportion is 150, the dienities 130. the Canons 100. The third and fourth part are divided into nine fhares called Ninths, of which two returns to the King, and are besto wed on the buildings of Cathedrall Churches; and ther ninth and halfe on the Fabrickes, another ninth and halfe on the Hofpitall buildings, the fourth remayning are paid to the Vicars, Singers, Organists and other Church Officers. What remayneth is ipent on the Fabrickes. All are laid out by the Bishops order. In my in gement it were very good if every Bishoprick had Seminaries and Colledges wherein the children of their

Caciques and chiefe men might be educated, to be maintayned by the Caciques. The Bishopricke of Cuses is 200. leagues long and 70. broad : that of Lima is greater by the Is

one halfe, as is that allo of Quite. Whereupon the Bilhops of the New World writ to the Kine that it were better to make them more Bishoprickes, each of which shall yet retaine 20000. Pezos. Euery feuenth yeere ordinarily is a Prouinciall Synod in Pers, to which the Bilhoppes come, some by Sea, some by Land 400. or 600. leagues, the wayes not admitting Coaches. Some have fought for Vniverficies in fome places to bee erected (as those of Quito) at least for Divinitie, and the liberall Arts and Indian Tongue : the Profesiors to have foure or 5000. Ducketsa piece yeerely. There is no question but of the Indians many learned men may adorne the Schooles and Pulpits.

The Kings Revenue out of the West Indies is twelve Millions yearely growing out of the fifth Kines Reuenus 12. Mil- of Gold and Silver, great Meltings, Customes of Ports, Indian Tributes, sale of Offices, the Cru- 20 lions from ten zade, Tribute of Rents, Quickfiluer, Fines of Courts, and the ninth part of Eccletiafticall Rents. Popes Buls and Collations of Benefices Ecclefiasticall and Secular are subject to the King, and ordered by his fupreame Councell of the Indies

CHAP. X.

Relation of the new Disconerie in the South Seamade by PEDRO FERNANDEZ GIROS Portugez 1609. with his Petitions to the King, one Englished, another in Spanish.



His man being a famous Pilot was fent with two ships from Pera to discouer the Ilands of Salomon. After hee had taken his course in the height of the Straitsof Magellanne, little more or leffe, he did discouer a mayne Land, and sayled eight hundred leagues vpon the Coast, vntill he came to the height of fifteene degrees to the Southward of the Equinoctiall Line where hee found a very fruitfull and pleafant Countrey and well peopled, abounding with Pearles, Gold and Silver,

great flore of Limons; Orenges and other Fruites excellent good, and in great quantitie : great store of Goats, Hogges, Geele, Partridges, Conies and Fowle, Pepper and Spices. The Countrey is very temperate and healthfull, great store of fish of many different forts; full of wood and so goodly high Trees for thipping; very good pasture, ground for Corne and Cattell.

The men of the Countrey are some tawnie, and some white of good disposition, more civil and politike then the Indians of Perwand News Hifpania.

There is in the Coast a Bay of some ewentie leagues into which there fals two great Rivers out of the Countrey, which is the place where they purpose to settle their first Plantations. There are many Ilands in the same Coast both great and little, plentifull they are all and well

This Captaine Giroz shall be presently fent unto Pers, with order and Commission to take up twelve hundred men and shipping with other necessaries for the Voyage to inhabit, and as many more shall be fent the yeere tollowing from None Hispania, and for the whole businesse he 50 is to receive five hundred thousand Duckers.

Walfingham Grefley.

The Copie of a Petition presented to she King of Spaine, by Captaine PETER FERDINAND de Quir, touching the Discourrie of the fourth part of the World, called Terra Australis incognita : and of the great riches and fertilite of the same : Printed with licenfe in Siuill, An. 1610.

SIR. *Perhapsi is an one of those and the state of the state o later, which followeth in Spoulfs, contaying more particulars then this bath: Or elfo it may be of Luyia Vary, &c.

nies, vnto the Land which your Maiestie hath commanded to bee discouered in the parts of Miss, vincomita. And yet to this houre no resolution is taken, neither have I received any aniwere or hope, whereby I might reit affured to obtaine my dispatch, although I have attended fourteene moneths in your Court, and haue imployed fourteene yeeres in this Difcouery without any profit or other respect but the benefit thereof; with which, notwithstanding infinite contradictions, I have gone 20000. leagues by Land and by Sea, and have diminished and finke my estate, I haue trauelled with many affictions in my person, and suffered such strange and extraordinary croffes that they feeme almost incredible to my felfe; and all, that fo Religious an undertake should not unworthily be abandoned. In regard whereof, I do most humbly be-

10 feech your Maiestie in the bowels of the divine charitie, that you would be pleased to take order. that I be not depriued of the fruits of this Defigne, which with fuch instance I doe defire, and which with fo much inftice are due vnto my continuall paines and trauell : nor that I bee debarred from the effects of 10 confiderable and well grounded a request, whose principall scope is the elory of God, and of your Maiestie, and from whence infinite benefits are likely to iffice forth. which will live as long as the fabrick of the World shall subsift, and after the dissolution thereof will remaine to all Eternitie.

1. Touching the extent of these Regions newly discouered, grounding my indeement on that which I have seene with mine owneeyes, and voon that which Captaine Lemes Paez de Torres Admirall of my Fleet hath represented vnto your Maiestie, the length thereof is as great as all

20 Europe and Afia the leffe, vnto the Sea of Bachn, Perfia, and all the Iles, atwell of the Ocean, as of the Mediterranean Sea, taking England and Island into this account. This vnknowne Countrey is the fourth part of the Terrettriall Globe, and extendeth it felfe to fuch length, that in The printed trey is the fourth part of the leftertrain Globe, and extended it lefte to mentergy, that in discourse (so I probabilitie it is twice greater in Kingdomes and Seignories, then all that which at this day doth call it rather acknowledge fubication and obedience vnto your Maiestie; and that without neighbourhood ei- than translati. ther of Tarkes or Moores, or of any other Nation which attempteth warre vpon confining Coun- on) in English treves. The Land which we have discourred, is all feated within the Torrid Zone, and a great tract cais it the fith thereof reacheth vnto he Equinoctiall Circle; the breath may be of 90. degrees, and in some part but the places a little leffe. And if the fuccesse proue answerable vnto the hopes, they will be found Anthe fourth, tipodes vnto the better part of Africke. vnto all Europe, and to the greater portion of Afric. But perhaps acyou must observe, that as the Contreves which we have discovered in 19 degrees of latitude, are counting the better then Spaine, fo the other which are opposed so their elevation, must by proportion and East Indies for analogie prooue tome terrestriall Paradife.

2. All those quarters swarme with an incredible multitude of Inhabitants, whereof some are and this the white, others blacke and in colour like Mulatos, ortraifer Mairen, and others of a mingled com- fourth, reckoplexion. Some weare their haire long, blacke, and feattered, others have their haire cripfed and ning all the thicke, and others very yellow and bright. Which divertise is an apparant argmument that there first knowne is an apparant argument, that there is commerce and communication among it them. And this first confideration together with the bountie which Nature hash bestowed on the foile, their inex- Description of

perience of Artillery and Guns, and their viskilfulnesse in labouring in Mynes, with other sem- the peopleblable circumstances, doth induce mee to inferre, that all the Countrey is well peopled. They know little what belongeth to artificiall Trades; for they have neither fortifications nor walles, and live without the awe of Kings or Lawes. They are a simple people cantoned into partialities, and exercise much disagreement amongst themselves. The Armes which they vie are Bowes and Arrowes, which are not poisoned or steeped in the juice of venemous herbes, as the custome is of many other Countreyes; They doe also carrie Clobs, Truncheons, Pikes, Dartes to hurle with the arme, all which are framed only of wood. They doe couer themfelues from the wafte or girdling place down to the halfe of their thighs, they are very fludious of cleanlineffe, tractable. cheerefull, and wonderously addicted to bee gratefull vnto those that doe them a courtefie. as I have experienced many times. The which doth build in me a beliefe, that with the affstance of 50 God, if they may be gently and amiably intreated, they will bee found very docible and easie of

mannage, and that we shall without much worke accommodate our selues vinto them. And it is most necessary to observe this way of sweetnesse, especially in the beginning, that the Inhabitants may be drawne along to this fo holy and fatting an end, whereof we ought to take a particular care and zeale, aswe'l in small things, as in matters of more importance. Their houles are built of wood, couered with Palme-tree leaves; they have Pitchers and Veffels made of earth, they are not without the my flerie of weauing, and other curiofities of that kind. They worke on Marble, they have Flutes, Drummes, and wooden Spoones, they fet apare certaine places for Oratories and Prayers, and for buriall places. Their Gardens are artificially fenered into beds, bordered and paled; Mother of Pearle and the shels which containe Pearle, they have in much

vie and estimation, of which they make Wedges, Rasors, Sawes, Culters, and such like Instruments: They also doe make thereof Pearles and great Beads to weare about their neckes. They that doe dwell in the Hands, have Boats very artificially made, and exceedingly commodious for See of their fayling, which is a certaine argument that they confine upon other Nations that are of a more Boarsin Maires polified and elegant behaulour. And this also they have of our husbandry, that they cut Cocks Voyag . and gold Boares.

Vies of the

1444

2. Their bread is viually made of three forts of Roots, which grow there in great abundance. Neither doe they imploy much labour in making this bread, for they do onely roft the Roots vntill they are loft and tender. They are very pleasant to the tafte, wholfome and nourishing, they are of a good leng. hethere being of them of an Ell long, and the halfe of that in bigneffe. There is great store of excellent fruits in these Countreyes. There are fixe kinds of Plane Trees, Almond Trees of foure forts, and other Trees called Obs., resembling almost in fruit and greatnesse the Melacatones; store of Nuts, Orenges and Limonds. They have moreover Sugar-canes, large in fize and in great plentie, they have knowledge of our ordinarie Apples; they have Palme-trees without number; out of which there may easily bee drawne a juyce, which will make a liquor alluding much to Wine, as also Whey, Vineger, and Honey, the kernels thereof are exceeding to fweet. And they have fruits which the Indians call Cacos, which being greene doe make a kinds of twine, and the pith is almost like in taste vinto the Creame of Milke: When they are rine they ferue for meate and drinke both by Land and Sea : And when they wither and fall from the Tree, there sweateth out an Oyle from them , which is very good to burne in Lampes, and is medicinable for wounds, and not unpleafant to be eaten. Of their rindes or barks there are made Bottles, and other like Veffels, and the inner skin doth ferue for calking of ships. Men doe make Cables and other Cordage of them, which are of sufficient strength to draw a Canon, and are fit for other domesticke vies. But that which is more speciall, they do there vie the leaves of Palmetrees, which they amaffe together, to make fayles of them for Veffels of small bulke and burthen. They make likewile fine thinne Mats of them, and they do ferue to couer the house with a out, and for hangings within. And of them they doe likewise make Pikes, and other forts of weapons, as also Oares to row with, and Vtensils for the house. You are to note, that these Palme-trees are their Vines, from whence they gather their Wine all the yeere long, which they make without much coft or labour. Amongst their herbage and Garden fruites; Wee have feene Melons, Peares great and little, and fundry forts of pot-herbes. And they have also Beanes. For fleth, they are stored with a great number of Hogs which are as tame as ours : they have Hennes, Capons, Partriges, Duckes Turcles, Pigeons, Stock-doues, and Goats, as one of my Captaines did fee. And the Indians themselves have given vs notice of Cowes and Oxen. There are also fundry forts of fish, Harghi, Perfereyes, Lize, Soles, Trowts, Shads, Macabifes, Cafanes, Pampani, Pilchard, Thorn-backes or Skate-fish, Cuculi, Congers, Porposes, Rochets, Muscles, Lobiter, & and many other, the names whereof I cannot now remember. But it is probable that there are duers other kindes, fince those which I have recounted were taken hard by our ships. And your ripe and ferious confideration of that which I have represented voto you, a man may easily collect, that fuch plentifull and different varieties of all things, may yeeld great and fingular delights. There is stuffe for Marchpanes and sweet Confections of all forts, without borrowing any Spice for the composition of them elsewhere. And for my Mates the Mariners, besides those particulars which I have before fet downe, there will bee no want of Gammons, Sawfages, and other falt meates which Hogges doe yeeld; neither of Vineger, Spiceries, and other Sawces that ferue for delicacie, and to awake the appetite. And you must oberue, that many of these things, are the same with those which we have in our parts, and possibly they are there in greater abun- a dance; by all which it is easily to be coniectured, that this Countrey is fit for the production of all that which groweth in Europe.

4. The Riches which I have feene in those parts, are Silver and Pearle; another Captaine in his Relation, doth report that he bath teene Gold, which are the three most precious Darlings that he and are cherished in the bosome of Nature : wee have also both seene much Nutmegs, Mace, Ginger, and Pepper. There is also notice of Cinamon: and it is likely that Cloues may be found in those parts, tince so many other forts of Spiceries and Aromaticall drugges doe prosper there; and that the rather, because these Countryes Ive very neere the parallell of the Iles of Terrenatte, Bachian, and the Moluccos. There are likewife materials for all forts of Silke, and wee haue seene Anise-seed, and excellent good Ebonie, as also other kindes of wood proper for the 50 building of as many thips as one will defire, and thatfe to make fayles for the fame. Three forts of materials there are wherewithall to make Cordage, and one of them is very like vinto our Hemp-Moreover out of the Oyle of Cocos, whereof I have already made mention, there is a kind of bis tuminous stuffe extracted, called Galagala, which may be well vied for Pitch. They make also a kind of Rolen with which the Indians pitch their Boats, which they call Piraguas. And ince there are Goats and Kowes in those parts, without question we shall have Goat-skins, Leather, Tallow, and flesh in full abundance. The Bees which we have seene there doe make proofe, that there will be no scarcitie of Honey and Waxe. And there is good appearance to discouer many other things which are not yet knowne, to fay nothing touching the forme and frite of the Countrey. Vnto all which it that bee adioyned, which the indultry of man may contribute to 60 those parts, fince there is such abundance of commodities which the Country it felte doth yeeld, and tuch hope to transport thither those things which grow with vs(the best and choisest which Peru and New Spaine bring forth, I have refolved to transferre thicker) it is to bee hoped, that this will to enrich that Countrey, that it will be able to nourish and furnish not only the Inhabi-

tants of the lame, and those of America, but give an accession vnto Spaine it selfe both of Riches and extent of command : and this may bee accomplished after the manner which I have projected, and will vnfold vnto those which shall lend an affilting hand for the guiding and confummation of this worke. Now by that Land which we have alreadie difcouered outwardly and along the shoares, without entrance into the inward parts, we doe conceine a certaine Argument, that as much Riches, Commodities, and greatheffe may bee hoped from thence, as wee have already in their Countreyes. And you may bee pleafed to understand, that my principall ayme was to take a view only of thefe ample Regions which we have discoursed : for hy reason of many ficknesses which have weakened me, and some other chances whereof I will at this time 10 make no mention, I was not able to furuay all which I defired, neither could I ma full moneth have feene all that, which I was of my lelte inclinable to view. You are not to make your indgement of the Indians that inhabit thefe Countreyes, according to the honour of the people here. or conceive them to bee affected with the fame defires, pleasures, necessities, or estimation of things that we are: But you are to make account that they are a people whose care is flidicully placed vpon this, that they may live easily in this World, and paffe their dayes with the leaft paine and perturbation they can. And this is indeed their practife, for they do nor bestow them-

felnes on those things, which with such vexation and torment we here labour to obtaine. e. There are found in this Country as many commodities, both for the support and delectaeion of the life of man, as may bee expected from a foyle that is Manurable, pleafant and verie 20 remperate. It is a fat and fertile Land, wherein many places clay is found, which will propue of excellent vie to build houses, and to make Tiles and Brickes, and will ferue for what focuer is vfually made of earth. There is Marble and other good ftones, wherewith if there bee occasion there may bee built fructures of greater State and Magnificence. The Country abounded him wood, fit for all workes and vies, whereunto the fame is commonly put. There are spacious and goodly plaines, and fields that are divided and interlaced with Brookes, Trenches, and Rivers, There are great and high Rockes, fundry Torrents, Rivers great and little, on which water-mile for Corne may with much commodiousnesse built and placed, as also Engine to moke Sugar. Tucking-mils, Forges, and all other Infrumencs which in their vie toe require water. We have found Salt-pits there, and which is a note of the fertilitie of the foile, there are in many places Canes whereof some are five or fixe handfuls thick, with fruit answerable to that proportion. The top of that Fruit is verie small and hard, and the skinne thereof is exceeding sweet. There are

alfo flints for fire, equall in goodnesse with those of Madrid. The Bay of Saint lames and Saint Philip, hath twentie leagues of banke, and is without mudde; into which there is a fure and fafe entrance both by day and night, It is sheltered and couered with many houses, which in the day time we have feene afarre off to fend forth fmoke, and in the night flore of fire. The Haven called The true Croffe, is of that spacious capacitie, that it is able to containe a thousand thips. The P. delayed bottome as I have faid is without mud, and bath a blackish colouted fand where withall it is co- cruz. nered. There are no gulfes or deepe pits, but an affured and easie anchorage in what part focuer you will, from forty to halfe a fathome; and it is betweene the mouthes of two Rivers, the one

40 whereof is as great as that of Guadalquinir, and hath mud of a fathome deepe, ouer which our shallops and boats did passe. For the other River, when our Skiffe went to water there, they Rivers, found the entrance fafe & easie. And a man may from the very mouth of the river take in as much fresh water as he will. The place where ships may be violaded hath three leagues of grauell, mingled with little flints blackish and very heavy, which will serue for ballast for ships. The bank is Araight and united, on which much green graffe doth grow and prosper, and that makes me to conceine that the Sea doth not beate or rage thereupon, I observe that the Trees are straight, and the branches not dismembred, which is a token that there are no tempests there. Touching the Port, besides the commodities which I have alreadie discoursed of, there is one of marvellous pleasure and contentation. And that is, that at the dawning of the day you shall heare from a 50 Wood which is neere at hand, a fweet and various harmonie of a thoutand Birds of all forts, a-

mong which we could diffinguish the Nighting les, Black birds, Quailes, Gold-finches, Swallowes almost without number Parrochitos, and one Parret wee marked there, and or accres of fundry other kinds, even downe to Grashoppers, and Field-crickets. Every Morning and Evening we received a most odoriferous sweet imell, sent vnto our nostrels from the infinite diversitie of Flowres and Herbes which grow there, amongst which wee oblessed the blossemes of Orange and Bafill. All which (with a number of other varieties) doth make vs thinke that the Aire is cleere and healthy, and that the nature of the place is of a good temperature. The Hauen and the Bay are therefore of the greater estimation, because they have the Neighbourhood of fo Great Hands. many goodly Hands that are there, and especially of those seven, which are faid to have two hun-

60 dred leagues of extent; and furely one of them (which is some twelue leagues distant from the Hauen) is fiftie leagues in circuit. In briefe Sir, I doe affrme vnto your Maiestie, that you may give command to have a goodly and great Civie built in this Port and Bay which are 15, degrees Bayin 16 deg. and fortie minutes of the Southerne El uation, and those that shall inhabit there, shall have plen- 40 minutes, tie of riches, and all other conuenisncies which they can defire. Time will shew and discouer

all thefe commod ties and in this place there may be made the discharge and valcading of all the wares and merchandizes of the Countries of Chiur, Peru, Panama, Nicaraqua, Guatamala, News Spaine, Terre naste, and the Philippines, all which Countries are under the command of your Maiellie. And if you shall acquire vnto your selfe the Dominion of these Seigniories which I doe now preient, I doe make to great an efteeme of them, that belides their being the Key of all the reft, they will (in my opinion) proue another (hing or Iapan, and equalize the other rich Hande which are on this fide of Afia, in trafique of curious and precious merchandizes, to fpeake no. thing of the augmentation and extent of your power, and the establishment which you may make vato your felfe of your Dominions, by the accession of so great a Countrie, That which I have given voto your view in my discourse, is of much stendernesse, in regard of that which I to doe probably conceine of this land, the which I am ready to make appeare in the prefence of Man thematicians. Neither will I vexe this paper to demonstrate voto you, that these Countries will be able to nourth two hundred thousand Spaniards. In summe, this is Sir, the world whereof Spaine is the Center, and that which I have related, is the nayle by which you may judge of the whole body, which I pray you to take into your observation.

6. You may judge by that which I have already represented, what the goodnesse and tempe-

rature of the ayre is: whereunto this may be added for a further tellimonie, that although all

our Companie were ftrangers, yet neuera one of them was ficke, aloeit they were in continual travell and labour, and did fometimes (weate, and fometimes take wet. They dranke water fafting, and fed many times on that which the earth did there bring forth. Neither had they any 20 regard to keepe themselves from the " Serenes, nor from the Moone or Sunne, which indeede in those parts is not ouer-vehement. Onely about midnight, they covered themselves with Wooll. which fals eueand did lye and repose themselves thereupon. And for the Inhabitants, they are commonly healry night in great (almost) thie, and many of them very aged, although they have nothing but the bare earth for their palgreat amount of the which is an argument of the whole comnected and purenesse of the loyle. For if it were a wet Gions to those and weeping ground, or had any viciousnesse in the mould, they would raise their lodgings which are 2- higher from the earth, as they doe that line in the Philippines, and other Countries which I have viewed. And this is further confirmed by their Flesh and Fish, which although it be vnsalted, are, as moe-fore observed yet will it keepe sweete and without corruption two dayes and more. And the Fruits which in praire Voi. are brought from thence are exceeding good, as we had proofe by two that I tooke care to bring 30 alone with mee, although they had not their full maturitie and growth when I gathered them from the Tree. We have not feene any barren and fandie ground, nor any Thiftles or trees that are thornie, or whose rootes doe shew themselves, no Marishes or Fennes, no Snow vpon the Mountaines, no Snakes or Serpents, no Crocodiles in the Rivers, no Wormes that vie with vi to hurt and confume our Graine, and to worke vs fo much displeasure in our houses, no Fleas, Caterpillers, or Gnats. This is a Prerogative that hath the advantage of all the priviledges that nature hath bestowed on other places, and is worthy to be compared, or rather preferred before any delicacie of the Countries of India, tome of which are abandoned and vnhabited, meerely by

reason of these incommodities, and of sundry others that are distattfull vnto the Inhabitants, as

my felte haue oftentimes beene witnesse.

7. These (Sir) are the greatnesse and goodnesse of the Countries which I have discourred, of which I have already taken the possession in the name of your Maiestie, and vnder your Royall Banner, as appeareth by the Acts which I keepe fafely in my power, whereunto I proceeded after this enfuing manner. First (Sir) we erected a Croffe, and built a Church in honour of our Ladie of Loretto. Then we caused twentie Masses to be celebrated there, and our troopes made hafte thither to gaine some Indulgences, granted on Whitfunday. We also made a folemne Proceffion, and observed the Feast of the blessed Sacrament, the which was carried in Procession, your Banner being euer displayed, and marching before it, through a great circuit of Countries, which were honoured with the presence of the same. In three severall places we set up your Title, in energy one of which we prepared and erected two Columnes, with the Armes of your Ma- 50 ieste tricked and garnished thereupon: so that I may with good right affirme, that since this will challenge to be one of the Parts of the world, the Impresse of Plus oltra is accomplished, and because it ilretcheth vnto the continent, whether it be forward or behinde it skills not, the bounds of your Dominions are with much spaciousnesse enlarged. Now all this which I have performed, receiveth its roote from this the faithfull zeale which I beare vnto your Maiestie, that to all the Titles which you already doe possesse, you may adioune this which I represent, and that the name de la Austrialia del Spiritu fanta, may bee blazoned and spread out the face of the whole world to the glory of God, who hath revealed this Countrie, and hath given mee the grace to guide my course thither, and to returne to the presence of your Maiestie, before whom I doe present and prostrate my selfe with the same affection and zeale 60 vnto this worke which I had before, and which hath growne vo with mee as it were from my cradle, and for the nobleneffe and worth thereof, I doe still tender and cherish the same with the

8. I dee confidently beleeve, that your Maieslie doth wie fo much produce in your Councels,

and are so magnanimous and full of Christian pietie, that you will (with your best care) embrace ail the conducements which may further the habitation of these new-discouered Countries. And the principall reason to put a tye and obligation vpon we not to leave them abandoned is in. regard that this is the fole ordinary way to establish the knowledge of God, and fai h amongst them, and to bring to passe that his name may be adored and called vpon, where the Divell viura peth to much reuerence and insocation. And this ought to be embraced with the more readineffe, because it is the channell to conuey and disperse all abundance of commodities among it your fubiccets. And hereby you shall be eased of many disturbances and vexations, which will affuredly be put voon you in case the Enemies of the Church of Rome should enter and nestle there, no and should vent their erronious doctrines among it them, whereby they would connert all the bleffings which I have hitherto recounted vnto you, into affored incommodities and mifchiefes, and would arrogate voto themselves the names of the Lords of the Indias to the veter ruine and defolation of those Countries. I make no question but your Maiestie well weigheth, of what importance this danger, of which I speake, may proue, and what cuill consequence some other hazards may carrie with them, which are either at this time imminent, or may succeede hereafter. And if this hould happen, it would coft you in umerable thoulands of gold and men, before you shall be able to give a remedy vnto the same. Acquire therefore Sir, whiles that occasion is offered you (that one day you may parchase heaven vnto your selfe) acquire (I say) with a little money which you milplice voon Perm, a neuer-dying reputation, and this New-world with all so the benefits which it reacheth out voto you. And fince there is none that craueth a reward for thefe good tidings, that is brought you concerning fo great & fingular a bleffing, which God hath bin pleased to locke vp vitill your happie time, I am he Sir, that doe demand it, and my humble request ynto you is onely this, that you would be of that gracious nesser onee, as to dispatch and rive me mine answer; for the Gallions are readie to hoife faile, and I have much way to goe. and many things must be fitted and disposed for the voyage. There is no houre passeth, which carrieth not with it an affured loffe both in regard of fpirituall and temporall bleffings, the damage whereof can never be made up or repaired.

If vpon a bare suspicion Christopherus Columbus did pursue his designe with so much obstinacie, you are not to account it ftrange in me, if the things which I have beheld with mine 20 eyes, and touched with mine hands, doe put some kinde of confirming voon mee to be im-

portunate.

Let it therefore please your Maiestie, amongs so many expedients which you have at hand, to feuer and put apart some one for the accomplishment of this worke, that after all thefe languishments. I may at length meete with the facceffe of my defires. I doe affure you that you will finde my propolitions most just, and that I shall be of fufficiencie to give you fatisfaction in all things, This, Sir, is a great worke, amongst which the Divell doth bandie himielfe with all the puissance hee may: And it is not consonant to reason, to abandon these Countries to his tyrannic and power, whereof, know your Maiestie is Defender.

Here followeth another Petition or Declaration in Spanish, which I have not translated, that the 40 Originall may be of more authoritie; and have added for further explanation and notice of particulars. I had thought also to have given the other in Spanish, and had accordingly prepared it, but for the English Readers fake, have corrected the once printed Copie by it, and not troubled vou with both.

🗜 L Capitan Pedro Fernandez de Quiros : Xa be dicho a V.M. que de la parte del Sur, esta oculta Lla quarta parte del Glono, y que el descubrimiento que en ella biza, lo es de vente y tres is las, cuy es nombres son. La encarnacion. San Iuan Bantista. Santelmo, Las quatro Coronadas San Miguel Archangel.La conversion de san Paulo. La Dezona. La Saguaria. La Fuostina.La del Pereorino. Nuestra 50 Sennora del Socorro. Monterrey. Tucopia. San Marcos. El Vergel. Las Lagrimas de san Pedro. Los portales de Belen. El Pilar de Zaragoça, San Raymundo. Ila is la de la Virgen Maria. Y suntamente de aquel las tres partes de tierra llamada la Austrialia del Espiritu santo : en laqual tierra se ballo la Babya de san Felipe, y Santiago, y puerto de la Veracruz, adonde estunimos surtos con los tres navios 3 Navies. treinta y seu dias. Entiendiose ser todus tres una gran tierra, y sus altas y dobladas Serranias, y aquel Rio lo dan rio Iordan por su grandez a pare ce que osseguran la de latierra, como de todo mas largo consta por una informacion quehize en Mexico, con diez testigos delos que fueron comigo, a la qual me remito. Mande V. M. que sea vista, y que se haga una innta de Matematicos, y Pilotos, y personas platicas, pues al presente las ay muy insignes en esta Corte, y la causa lo merece, y a V. M. le importa muchissimo. Aduierto que cita inito macion la hiziera, con todas quantas personas vinie ron de la ior-60 nada si fuera bien admitida la ofrenda que para esto bize, o sue ra ayudado, o yo pudiera, que no me oblique a impossibles, y me veo obligado a ellos.

Digo pues sennor que en una ista que se llama Taumaco, que al parecer dista de Mexico mil y do. Taumaco ista. zientas y cincuenta leguas, estuumos surtos diez dias, y que el sennor de aquella islaas, cuyo nombre es Tamay, hombre de razon, buen cuerpo, talle, y color algo moreno, los osos hermosos, la nariz afilada, las

broad in the

Illy versa erande tierra que se llama Manicolo.

barnas, y los cabellos crecidos, y crespos, y a su modo grane, nos ayudo con su gente y embarcaciones, aha. zer a guada, lenna, de que en aquella sazon estanamos muy necessuados. Este tal vino a verme a la Nac y dentro en ella le exemine, en la manera signiente. Lo primero le mostre su isla y la mar, y nuestra: nau. I gente, apunte a todas partes del Orizonte, y hize otras ciertas fennas, y con ellas le pregunte, si ania visto nausos. 7 hombres como los nuestros, 7 a esto dixo que no. Preguntele si jabia de otras tierras lexas o cerca nobladas o despobladas, y luego que me entendio nombre a mas de tetenta Illas, y a una grande tierra que se llama Manicolo: posennor las fui escriniendo a todas tentendo presente la guia de nauegar, para laber bazia el rumbo que cada una demorana, que viene a ser de aquella su isla a la parte del Smeste. Suo Sudeste, o Este, y Nordeste; y para que yo entendiesse quales oran las pequennas, bazia pequennos circu-Sudefic, o esfer y two users; y pur myen y transmission of the state o bazia mayores circulos, y las mismas demostraciones : y por aquella gran tierra abrio ambos los braces. sinboluerlos a iuntar, mostrandoque prosegnia. I para dar a entender quales eran las lexanas, è estaum de alli mas cerca, mostrana el Sol de Lenante a Poniente, recostana la cabeça sobre una mano, certama los osos , y contana por los dedos las noches que en el camino se dormia, y por semeiancas dezia, quales gentes eran blancas, Negros, Indios, y mulatos, y quales estanan mezelados, y quales ran sus amigos, y enemigos, y que en algunas istas es comia carne humana; y para esto hizaque mojo dia subraco, mostrando claro querer mal à estagente, y deste, y de otros moder al parecer, se entendio quanto dixo, 7 se lo repeti tantas ve zes, que mostro, cansarse dello. T dando con la mano hazia el Sur Sudeste, y otras partes, dio bien a entender quantas mas tierras ania. Mestro desseo de bolner a su casa, dile cosas que llenasse, y se despedio de mi, aandome paz en el carrillo, y con an

El signiente dia fui a su pueblo, y para mas bien enterarme delo que Tumay declaro, llene comigo muchos Indios a la playa, y teniendo en la mano el papel, y presente la agusa de marear : a todas fus presuntando muchas vezes porlas tierras a que Tumay pujo nombre, y en sodo conformaron todos, y discos noticia de otras pobladas, todas de gentes de los referidos colores, y inntamente de aquella grande tierra, in la qual con propriet sennes dixeron que auia Bacas, ò Bufalos : y para dar a emerder que auia perros ladrauan, y por çallos y gallinas, cantanas, y por puerces gruunian. T affi detta mauera dezaan lo que que. ruan, y responduan a quanto se les preguntana : y porque les mostraron pettas en el boton de con reservo, dieron a entender las ausa. Todas estas preguntas y diligencias, biz seran otros de mi compannia este dia, otras vezet a estos, y a otros Indios, y fiempre dixeron lo mifmo, y por esto fo entendio fer gente que tra- 20 taverdad.

Quando fali desta ista de Tammaco, biza e coper quatro muy gallardos ludos, los tres se becharon a nado, y el que quedo, y despues se lama Peitro; declaro en el puerto de Acapaco, y por el camino, y enla cindad de Mexico adonde murio junendole vista et Marques de Montes claros lo siguiente, sia nunca variar, annque se le pre gunto en diuer se tiempos, y por muchas personas, y de muchos modos, y se le negawan, y contraderian (sis diches.

Lo primero dixo Pedro, ser naturalde suassila que se llama Chicayana, mayor que la de Taumaco adonde de ballamos, y que de la una a la otra ay quatro dias de camino, de sus embarcaciones, y que Chicayana es tierra rasa y muy abundante de los frutos y a referidos, y que la gente della es de su bue na color de Indio, cabello suelto y largo, y que se labran como el lo estana, poco enel rostro, ombros, y pechos, y que se tambien ay hombres blancos que tienen les cabellos rubios, y muy largos, y que ay mulates, cuyo cabello no e: frisado, ni de todo suelto, y que el era texedor, y soldado fleshero, y que en su lengua se llamana Luca, a muger Layna, fu hlio Ley.

Dixo mas, que en aquella su isla ay muchas Ostras, como de las que vi sus conchas, y traxe algunas, que aqui tengo de tres tamanuos. El primero, es el comun de la Margarita; el segundo mayor al doble; y el tercero de palmo, mas y menos de diametro, y que a todas estas Ostras llaman Totofe, y que en ellas fe hallan perlas, a las quales llaman Futiquilquil : y por esto le mostre las conchas, y el las tomo en las manos, y en ellas fue mostrando las partes a do se crian. T preguntado quantas eran, y de que tamanno, dixo, que en vnas se ballan mas, y en otras menos; y para dar a entender el grander dezia que las ay como arena, y como fal, y como pedrezitas, y como cuentas de rofarios, y como botones como tenia en un coleto, 150 otras mayores, y que se pescan en enenos de medio estado de fondo, de piedras y arena, y que son muy gran des los trechos de mar, que alli tienen pocofondo, y que el mismo sin cabullirse las sacana con la mano, y las ponia en sie Canoa, y que folo las quieren para comer su sarne, a la qual llaman Canofe, y que la conchas les firmen para haz er auz nelos cucharas, y otras cofas, y que las perlas no les firmende nads.

Dixo mas, que ay en esta misma isla de chicayana otra suerte de ostrat, a la qual llaman Taquila: 3 para dar a entender su tamanne, sennale el grandor de una buena rodela: y por bazer seme increpble la mucha camidad que deco de todas perlas, y la grandeza destas Taquilas, le pregunte si nacian dentro en los cocos, o en los arboles, o en las pennas, o en la zierra, o por fuera de las conchas dixo que no se ballan ino en le suelo del mar, y deutro en ellas las perlas, y que las oftras las unas estan recostadas a sodos lades, y otras enbestas y abiertas hazia arriba, y que si en algunas destas ostras entran la mano que se cierra, y luego 60 go dixo no aymano, y que a esta cansa las sacan con palos, y con lazadas de cuerdas, y que tienen grande y muy buena carne que ellor comen , y no bazen caso de las perlas, y que las vezes que las He made ewo queria el mismo las pescana, y las llenana a su casa. T como el Otro Viage yo mismo ci a las Indios de la isla de Santacruz, traer del enello colgadas muchas patenas mayores y menores,

todas de conchas de nacar, entendi fer leque Pedro de zia, lo mismo de las patenas, y a esta causa no hazia mucha cuenta deste dicho: mas viendo que unas vezes se enoiana, y otras con muy grande abines trabaiana por darse a entender, por esto le mostre un guijarro negro y redon do, del tamanno de uniterwela temprana, y le pregunte si en su tierra ania per las assi como aquella, dixo que no, porque aquel oniarroeraneoro, y las perlas blancas como papel, y que quando las mirana al Sol, que la vistimbre dellas le dana en los osos, y affi hazas con ellos como fi las traviera presentes. Y preguntado fi las ania tan orandes coma el referido omigaro, dixo que otras ania chiquitas como el guijarro. Y luego sunto la cabeca del dedo pulgar con la del indice en forma de circulo, y alli con ou dedo de la otra mano, fue fema lando may ores r menores perlas, y que en cada hostia no ay mas de una sola : y con todo temiendo ser lo que dezia las pate-

10 nas de mi sospecha, le pregun te si eranchatas, o redondas, o de otras formas. No me entendo por este len qua ge. Luego hize como que queria poner el guy arro en el fuelo a fon de correr : y afficomo lo vio, dizo con aran demostración, que anando las echa nan en el fuelo ynan rodando por manera que a mi entender dio claramen ta fer perlas redondas, y de los tamannos referidos, y que fu bijo trabia al cuello una dellas; y que el mismo la horado con puedra blanca, y delgada, y que el fondo de adonde las sacana es de dos estados mas y menos, y que en fiu conchas dan de comer a los puertos. Preguntele fi las grandes conchas tienen el milmo luft e que tienen las ordinarias que le moftre dizo que fizodas estas y otras preountas le bize muy trocadas. y como en su tierra se llaman los arcabuzes, y otras de nuestras cosas, dixo que no las ay nor manera que fiempre respondio fin fospechas, y folo dio nombre con mucha resolucion a las cosas que ellos tienen, yo afirmo por verdad que no entends escrimir la grandeza, ni el mucho numero que dizo aner de

20 toda suerte de perlat , por parecerme noticia nunca orda : mas considerando que naturaleza es po derosa para criar como ya se ban visto grandes perlas, y de las comunes tan gran suma en el rio de la Hacha. Margarita, y Cubagua : y yo porfie tanto en inquirir esta su declaracion, pareciome dener dezir lo que este Indio me dixotantas vezes, y a otras muchas personas, que no con menos cuy dado le examinaron, y en suma yo hago las dilegencias, y escrino como hombre que tengo de morir.

y no sé quando.

Dixo mas, que de la isla de Taumaro a tres dirs de camino, y de Chicayana ad os; ay otra isla mayor que Guatoso isla. las dos dichas, que se llama Guay topo, poblada de gente tan blanca, como lo es en comun la nuestra, y que basta los hombres tienen rubios los cabellos mas y menos, y tambien negros, y que se labran las barrigas, y a su mbel todo en rueda, y que todas tres istas son gente amiga, y de una lengua, y que u san darse 30 la vec en los carrillos, y que tienen por sennat de enemigos quando buyen los rostros, y que en esta isla ay muchos oftrales de los tres generos menores, en grandes trechos de mar, de fendo affi coma el de Chica yana, y que tienen muchas perlas. Y preguntado si el ania estado en ella, dixo que no. Luego le bolui a preguntar como fa bia lo dicho, y lo como deffa manera que de nquella ifla falio em nauto gran de los sinyos, con mas de cincuenta personas, a buscar conchas de Carer, de que o san bazer çarcillos, y otros inguetes que cualçan de las oreus, a otra isla poblada que lleman Mexitaylay, que estando a vist a della. Ces dio un vicato contrario que les obligo a buscar su isla, de la qual estendo cerça, bolnio el viento a ser contrario, y que andando en estas bueltas se les acabo el bastimento, a cuya falta murieron quarenta personas de bambre y sed, y que el estana en la Isla de Tammaco, quando este nauso aporto alli con solos siete

bombres muy blancos, excepto eluno que era moreno, y con tres mugeres blancas, y bermofas como E-40 Spannolas, que tenian los cabellos rubios, y muy largos, y que sodas tres venian cuburtas de cabeçasbasta los pies con vuos como mantos az ules, o Negros, ymuy delgados, a que llaman fosfoa, y que de todas estas diez personas, solo quedô vino el Indio Olan, al qual los nuestros quando alli lo viero en Tanmaco, san blanco y tan bermeio. le llama ron el Flamenco, como queda referido, y que este Indio Olan y otros le contaron quanto ba dicho, de aquella isla de Guay tupo, y que el musmo vio ve nir a se isla de Chicayana, otro nanio de aquellos de dos vasos cargado de gente blanca y bermosa, y con muchas y muy lindas muchachas, y dio a entender contando por los dedos de diez en diez, ser por todos ciento y diez per-

Dixomas, que de etra isla que se llama Tucopio, que es a donde los dos Indios se ceharon a nado, como queda referido, a cinco dias de su nauegar, ay aquella gran tierra Manicolo, poblada de mucha gente lo-SC ray mulata en grandes pueblos, y para dar a entender su tamanno, sennale el de Acapulco, y otros may-

ores, y por esto le pregunte si ania pueblos tan grandes como Mexico, dixo que no, mas que muchas gentes, y que son su amigos, y no comen carne humana, ni se entienden las lenguas, y que es tierra de muy altas ferra nias, y grandes rios, y que alzunos dellos no se pueden vadear, sino passarse en canoas : y pue para ir de la ista Tucopia a aquella sierra, quando sale el Sol les queda a la mano izquierda, que viene a fer del Sur para el Sudeste. Dico que si que si esto es assi como lo dixo, que viene bien con la cordillera do sierras que se vieron si corriendo a la buelta del Poniente, como esta dicho en su lugar, quando fusmos desgarrando. Mucho encarecio Pedro la grandeza po placion y fertilidad, y otras cosas desta tierra, y que el y otros ludios fueron a ella en una de fus embarcaciones, a bufcar un tronco de un grande arbol, do los muchos que ay en ella, para hazer una piraqua, y que vio alli un puer so, y dio a entender sermayor, y

60 de boca mas cerrada que lo es el de la Babia de san Felipe y Santiago, y que el mirô su sondo ser de arena, y suplay a Del astre como el otro ya dicho, y que tiene dentro quatro rios y mucha gente, y que per la cesta de aquella tierra andunieron hazia el Poniente mas camino que ay de Asapulco a Mexico sin verle sin, y se bulmeron a su ssa. Admierto que como yo ania visto aquella ssa de Tucopia dixe adrede que sabia aner en ella muchas oftras y perlas, y que dixo que no ay fino mucho fondo, y que es affi verdad porque lo hize

Fono funo Isla

Pilen.1fla.

Pupan Ifla.

Dixo mas, que de Taumaco atres dias de camino, y con viento fresco a dos, ay otra isla que se llima Fonofono, partida en muchas illus pequennas y rofas, y por esto a causela le dixe, que ama en ellas orandes rios : pues grandes rios en silas pequennas, y rafas, no los puede auer, dixo que no fino poços, y que for todas mus fertiles, y mus pebladas de gentes loras, Indios y mulatos, muy alsos en demafia, y tanto que con ser algomas alto que 70, sennalo en una pared todo quanto pudo alcançar con los dedos, estendidos braco y ma no y dixe fer aquella su eltura, y que son sus amigos mas no de su lengua, y que en estas illas ar grandes trechos de mar, de poco y de mucho fondo, communchas de muchas hofiras, y que el milmo las faco para comerlas, y que te man perlas de los tamannos que tiene dicho, excepto las Taquilas, o que ar alli un muy buen puerto : y tambien dixo que cerca destas ifias ay otra que fe dize Pilen, y otra Nupan, y que tienen lo mismo de comidas gentes y persas y de oydas y no de vissa, dio nombre a otras muchas iffas, y de todas dixo lo dicho. Admertefe, que en tedas las Indias en folo la Margarita, en el rio de la bacho, se ha sacado y va facando la mulestud de las perlas que se sabe, de xo las pocas v no tan buenas de Panama, y digo que si es assi como est a dicho, que muchos numeros se pueden esperar de adonde diela noticia, alli por ler muchas estas partes, como par la grandoza de los mares que dixo sienen poco fondo, mas se admierte que solo dixo de las oitras que alcançan a ver los ous, y solo con las manos cogen sin zabuirfe, quedando fiempre referuadas las dos, quairo, ocho, y mas braças como or fe pefcan en fa

En Marcio llere a Pedro per des veces a cafa de un broudador de petelas, y a má ruego le mostro de teolo les generos comunes : affe emo lo vio fe degen muchos, y due con gran el mostrator y encençamento, y due que fairer a y muchos petela y mas bianchea que aquellas. Al girale may o uno barrueco, o affecto, y grandes y abromados, bien mai e gilo, y discupte aquello no era busao, y que en fairera ausa mesor. Mas sidirencia bien el Maldet mayor del puerto de Acopulo, dan Pedro Flores, puer la mojiro vua cadena de muchos i artas de predez, y le preguno fi, on fai terra ausa de aquellas cadenas disca que co. La gordina de muchos i artas de petelas, y le preguno fi, on fai terra ausa de aquellas cadenas disca que co. La gordina de muchos i artas de petelas, y le preguno fi, on fai terra ausa de aquella cadenas disca que co fi, on mas que no estambo por aduelas, y fe pueda prefumir que a faita de brocas, y de taladros, so fe aproue-chan de la perda y de las combes a form faita de brocas, y de taladros, so fe aproue-chan de la perda y de las combes a form faita per la mesor petença y de la mismo de bordar.

Pouro gran tierra. Dixo meu, que en Taumaco es va Índie gram piloto 3 que fabe las nombres de muchas iverras, estas queste hetitado muchas ivez est, que de va Grantivita que fe llame Pouto mos poblada, cu y a gente ence, cludios, algenos son amigos sa yos este mos beltegos y guerres os entres, i traxo a fa sila de Taumace va pagaga yo de pecho y cuello colorado, y cierta si secha con puntas a sorma de cuchillo, y que en simson las vos, y las tenios, y deo a entender que les querias para ence ales mater mas facilmente, por este la mismo las vos, y las tenios, y deo a entender que les querias para en el as mater mas facilmente, por este la mossiva vos consecuentes que en consecuente que en la composição de las puntas tan blancas como ella, amecha y exest se contradive este delos, y sempre mas se assumo des que este desta para en con a casa municas sectoras entre se desta manera como esta de desta por la composição de las Endos Postas que la data vame en la Babara de las Estas Postas que la data vame en la Babara de las Estas Postas que la data vameda se tentas entre se entre da come en la Babara de las Estas Postas que la data menta se tentas entre se entre da come en la Babara de las Estas Postas que la data menta se entre de las para entre e

Adaurtis, que en la banga as jon teur jumento, a come con consentante de persona est per peladas, que a cas que terranen dos partes ten germéns, cada von dellas como entra nevez, y que en la cuidad de Mexico vu don Franciso Pacheco ducenno de minas, y un Diego Jomez, de Moluma las viermo en mi mi posada, y el von dellos un gonificano lanco de cois de plada, por glos inlemanos lungo assad de un ensiguador que lo pujo en un crifol, y ella por sus razones le dio tamos suego que el crifol se desfondo, y assimo se vior a da toda via, yo me auna quedado con la vira parte que el ensigado regumo y a sissimo se vierba de la martino se con la vira parte que el ensigado regumo y a estis se se con esta el consenso de la vierba de la martino se vior pueda en junteron se sistenda al martino se con la vierba por la vierba se la vierba de la martino se vierba de la vierba de vierba de la vierba de vierba de la vierba

Estas piedras ania mostrado a Pedro, y asse como las vio, dixo que en los cerror de Tanmaco a y muchas dellas, y que se la mora Traque, y que subien las aye na apullo gen enterna Manicolo, y y que sobi a Induo Ia quieren, los vues para laberas se, vores para inniexes se con ellas y do misso dixo Paulo de sistierra, que es la Bahia de san Eelipe, Santage de adoude se traxeron, y dixee mineros que adoude y suitives, a metales, y que por la misse se se desperan la mina de plata y ovo de S. Lusa de la muna Estoma, y las de avague de Guancauelica del Pira. Ta daverto, que dexir Pedro que vio sicolis con puntas de plata, parece que por reacon de la poca que se bailo en aquel poco metal que tan a cus se servicio del sirvos de la servar a cus se situa se por la displició ne de la terra y a clino ser para los dels truodes se situa se recergue puede se aficio con o dexis.

Adaustra (e mas que Pedron despues que sapo darse a extender en uns sira lingua, conserm o contedio que aixeron los Indios de Tammaco, y esto esti en la tierra grande, como en las muchas sistas muchas sistas para las contras en pulsanta labrada; y par labra varas costres, la que con cabellos rubos, negros, siria cinceres por esta en la como en la com

esperar meior a en todo lo apuntado. Aduiertase que la primera vez que el Adelantado Aluaro do Mendassa, sue y descubrio las 1, as que

fulo comen la carne affeodo las oftras, y que el tegundo viage que bizo el mismo e Adelantado, desen. The second bris de nuevos la jula de Santacraz, domáe mirro, y que co esta y amino viamecha concisa, y auxilia Voisica muchos de nuevos la jula de Santa Miguelislo, y que este desen para el tenta de la carectera de la constanta de la carectera de la carectera de la carectera de la constanta de la carectera, que instantado o que desen dela constanta de la carectera, que instantado o que desen desen de la carectera que la carectera, que instantado o que desen desen de la carectera de la carectera de la carectera que instanta do que desen desen de la carectera de l

U. M. en effs. Dixo mas Pedro que al diablo llaman Terna, y que habla con los Indios de un palo. sin ser visto, y que a el mismo, y asados ellos de noche, y muchas vezes, les palpana los rostros, y los pechos con cosamuy fria, y que queriendo saber lo que era no hallauan nada : y esto dezia mostrando cierto recato y temor dan do bien a entender se cosamala y para ellos bien aborrecible; y tanbien dixo a otros que no ami, que antes que a su tierra sueramos, na el diablo les ania dic ho que los aniamos de ir a matar. Mostrana muchos desses de bolner a su tierra, para dezir al semor de Taumaco, todo el bien que le auiamos becho, y que lo e an otros Indios (su companneros, ellos mismos se hecharon de las naos a nado, que nosotros no les hizimos ningun mal. I tambien mas, para dezir a todos (us naturales quan buena cola es fer Christiano, y que a el despues que lo era, el diablo no le hablo, ni le o yo, ni de noche le palpo, y para traer su hijo, y ventrse a vinir con no sorros. I tamcien dixo, que en su ila de Chicayana, ay perros grandes como los nuestros. ane los llaman Ticuri. y que ay muchas anas como las de Europa, mas que no las sabien comer : y una fruta quiso dezir mançanas porque las vio, y mucho gengibre, y que en su tiempo baze buen frio,con ser en tan poca altura. Timas dixo, que a los que matan bonbres los aborcan, y que nuestros cauallos son buenos para andar en ellos, mas no para fer fernido de los bonbres. Era Pedro al parecer de edad de venticinco annos, y en aquella sazon que declaro sabia poco de la lengua Castellana, y a esta causa costo mucho trabaso esta su declaración, porque se le ha negado y repeti do muchas veges, y parece que si viniera diera 30 mas razon que ba dado: mas yo creo que es mas paracreer lo que esta dicho, que no lo fuera. Si llegara a ser se ladino, con que yo y todos quanto le trataro le teniamos por hombre de verdad, y de verquença. Va dia entro en la y glesia de San Francisco de Mexico, ypor ver en ella muchos Crucifixos dixo, que como ania alli tantos Diofes, fi le dezian que no ania mas que un felo Dios Fuele respondido ser todos retratos del verdadeao Christo. Y con esto, y con lo demas que se le dixo parecio satisfacerse y los frayles que le oyeren se alegraron por ser pregunta de hombre que sabia discurrir; y finalmente Domingo de Ramos murso : yo fio de la misericordia de Dios, que pues por unen estranno modo le trazo al bautismo, y a morir confessado, y olea, le y en tan sennalado dia, y son muestas de buen Christiano, que ha sido para darle su fanta gloria Y este fue su dichoso fin, del qual deuo estar muy consolado, y parece que su diuma Mage-And va ordenando, que casí no ay amedios humanos para, acabar Aquella Tu tan grande obra, o alme-20 nos que falten Aquellos en que mas estrine, o puedo estrinar.

El ciro Indio se llamana Paulo, era muchacho de hasta ocho annos, decolor toro, cabello frisado, tenia muy hermosis, com muy hermosis, memor condicion, s tanta que todos quantos le trataron le querian macho, por se tan docil, agradable: sabi como estero las que todos quantos le trataron le querian macho alegras, bautrado p buen Christiano le leuco Dios el dia dela Ascenson i dana razon del Demonio, y que so ilamanas s'hadanas, y de como babla em oles sindais sin servido, s tambien la dana de perros mayores; machoris y de von animal como gato, de van granderio bazia la parte de spueblo que en Aquella su tierra a mucha gente guerrera, comiga avuade ostra, y queno se come curne bumana : y esto se deste creer porta mucha que tienen de puercos, y gallinas, y tanta otras comidas, pues el comer se carro bumana entre otras gentes; parece proceder de la este cludad de si tierra; o de la vostitutad de su moradore: y porque erra 50 minos y silanas ostrano como controlo con controlo de la vostituta de las tierras, o de la vostitutad de su moradore: y porque erra 50 minos y silanas ostrano con controlo con con controlo con con controlo con con

le que pude iunter de les longues de Petro y Taulo, le que dezir, que es muy pronunciable.

Pertodo lo divio fe vue clearamente, que folo ba anidodo grandes partes de iteras a partadas defia
Europa, y de la Africa, y Afie : la primera es la America, que deficiebro, Christolael Colon, y la fegunda y postrera del mondo, es la que vi, y pretendo poblar, y acabas de deficiebro; Para V. M. Esta
grandesa deus de fer abreçada, al jope rener tanto de Dios, como por fer dar principa vara tar que
obra, y de tautos, y tan grandes lienes, que ninguma otra de su genero puede ser mus, ni santo al presente.

adeliuse, como lo padre mossira se si son y ocupantado.

Si indo pues este caso tan adminable quento suenta, y osendo, tan empennada mi concioncia. I serme sueste que que per abrevier, prometo a D. M. de pudieve lugar con ella, e por suente de le tenera, a vor. para mas abitgar a V. M. a lo que vas obiquado le turis el titulo de Rey Catolico, y disso sor de la Fe, recuerdo, quan Real, y semanda merced de Dios es esta, megada a todos los Reyes del mando, y islo a V. M. concedada, cuyo sondo, ò resm. es suerça carsar grandes invaitas, y a la nessa de coloni ella V. M. concedada, cuyo sondo, ò resm. es suerça carsar grandes invaitas, y a sue esta coloni ella V. M. concedada, cuyo sondo, ò resm. es suerça carsar prandes invaitas, y a sue esta coloni ella V. M. concedada, cuyo sondo, ò resm. es tenerça carsar al mestro que esta sondo sue en con comercio con corsos de alonas, y redumidas por la persona de Christo, servicio de alonas, y redumidas por la persona de Christo.

IS. Grados.

The first Voy.

£ 000003

CHAP. II. Policie to deny planting Wine and Oyle in New Spaine.

con la esperanea que queda de quantas se han de saluar andando tiempos , siendo la saluación de una sola de tanto precio, que si necessario fuera el mismo Christo viniera, a dar la vida por ella. T con esto quedo Sennor bien entendido de quanto valor es este becho, y quantos premios dara Dios, por auerlo (contanto amor y fersior) intentado; y quantos mas grados de gloria tendra. V. M. si da fin a esta obra de tanta piedad y miler scordia, y tan digna de recebir en la memoria de las gentes: aduirtiendo que no fera con tanto valto de dineros, ni de bombres, ni con Aquellos estragos, ruynas, y escandalos, que suele auer para anerioar el derecho de muy pequennos estados, sino poner debaxo de la proteccion Real con medios todos muy fuanes, y in tificados, quanto los puedo mostrar una tan gran parte de toda la tierra poblada, pera en ella lembrar bienes, y costellos frutos que yo espero en Dios han de ser muchos, muy duices, muy ricos, y mur duraderos: y lolo quiero por paga de tanto quanto tanto vale, que V.M. crea la mportancia del cafo, to y quanto conusene loque pido, y que en todo trato verdad, y que es animo de vender todo lo paffado, presente, y venidero por un precio, y este es Sennor de valde.

A note of Australia del Espiritu Santo. Written by Master HAKLYYT.

S Imon Fernandez, a Filos of Lisbone, told me Richard Hakluyt , before other Portugals in London, the eighteenth of Murch 1604. That he having beene in the Citie of Lima in Petu, did perfeelly understand, that joure Sops and barkes departed from the Said Citie of Lima, about the yeare 1600, 20 in the moneth of February toward the Philippinas. Their Generallwas a Meltizo, that is to fay, the Sonne of a panier', and an Indian woman. And that feeking to make way toward the Philippinas, they were divinen with strong Northerne winds to the South of the Equinoctial Line, and fell with divers rich Con trejes and llands, as it femeth, not farre from the lles of Salomon. One chiefe place they called Monte de Plata, for the great abundance of filmer that is like to be there. For they found two crownes worth of filner, as he reported, in two handfuls of dust. And the people game them for Iron as much, and more in quantitie of filuer. They report that this place is two moneths fayling from Lima, and as much backe agame.

Concerning this Voyage also: the Licentiate Luis de Tribaldo, a Gentleman of qualitie in the Conde de villa Mediana, the Spanish Ambassadours house, told me Richard Hakluyt, that two yeeres past he faw at Madrid, a Captaine of quality fuing for license to conquer this place, & that be obtained the same. And that divers religious men and Fathers were to goe to convert them to Christianitie. They arrived at their returns from this Voyage at Peru, in the moneth of August.

CHAP. XI.

The Historie of LOPEZ VAZA Portugall (taken by Captaine WI-THRINGTON at the River of Plate, Anno 1586. with this Discourse about him) touching American places, discoueries and occurents; abridged.

Part of this Discourse was M. Hak out of interred that -

Ona Hift ania was called so by the Spaniards, when they made Discouery of it, for that it was like the Country of Spaine, though the people of the Country termed the Land after their owne Countrey Language (some one partafter one, some after another) the most part of the people called it Eucata. This Countrey hath fundry great Provinces in it, to fruitfull of all kinde of necessaries in it for man, that there is neither Africa, Afra, nor Europe, that is better ; for that of fulle- 10

have added & nance for mans bodie there lacketh no store, as Wheat and all other Graines, all beafts necessary for man to eate or to vie, with great store of Silkes, Mynes of Gold, Siluer, Stones, and Pearle. The Countrey is very well inhabited, fo that it is thought there is no part of the Worldbetter. uing outsuch The King of Spame because hee hath many other Countries under him, hee doth little esteeme of as before have this Countrey, but doth take out of it all things that are for his profit, having vied those people with great crueltic, and taking of them much Tribute; this Land hath many Ports in the North Sea, and much more in the South Sea, the principall Ports in the North fide is Saint Inan de Lua-At this place doth he discharge the Armadas that come from Spaine, and from this place they carrie their Merchandize to the great Citie of Mexico: which Citie is fixtie leagues within the Land, and knowne by the Parithes in the same, to have a hundred and fittle thousand faire hou- 60 ies of Indians, and fix thousand faire houses the Spaniards have in it.

The feare and reverence that they vie towards the Spaniards is fuch; that one Spaniard may goe among a thousand of them, and thrike the chiefelt of them and vie his pleasure, without any word given by the Indians to the contrarie, fuch is the feare that thefe filly people have of the

Spaniards. But now, thankes be to Almightie God, the Indians of that Country and Kingdome are become Christians : yet notwithstanding now and then the old men, having not forgotten their former Law, doe vie their Idolatry, which being knowneare very cruelly corrected by the Friers for the same offence. The people of this Kingdome are of a sharpe wir, and good underflanding, for what foeuer it be, Sciences or other Arts, thele people are very apt to learne it with fmall inftructing, the Indians of this Countrie doe make great flore of Woollen Cloth and Silkes, Silkes and to that they now beginne to carrie of these Silkes for Spame. And have all other things necessarie clothes. that any other Kingdome of the Christians have, onely Wine and Oyle, which the King of Sazine denieth to have made there, but fuch as commeth from Spaine, because of his customes, denied 10 notwithstanding the King doth allow them to plant Vineyards for to eate of the Grapes. This Vineyards Land is greatly commended not for that about mentioned, nor yet for the Gold and Silver Mynes Ports and that it hath, but for the great number of Ports for shipping it hath in the South Sea, where they shipping. make many great ships, with the which ships they have traffique with them of Peru, and Parawna, and then they have a Trade to the Philippinas, and to the Hands of Molnecas and China, fo that the commodities which the Portugall carrieth for Portugall out of the East Indies, are likewife brought to the Citie of Mexico, by reason of their shipping, although not in so great quantitle, as they carry for Liftone, not for that they of Mexico either want Thipping or abilitie, but because the Spaniards would conquer it with the Sword as he hath done other Linds, and not by the way of Traffique, as the Portugall loth, the principall Port from whence this Merchandize 20 doth come, is called Aguatorke, in the Coast of China on the North fide.

After the Conquett of this Kingdome of Mexico, the order how the Spaniard did divide this Land, was this. The principall Cities they refined to the King of Spaine, and to the Generall of this Conquett, who was renowmed Ferdinando Curtie, they affigned vnto him a great Valley, or Cornanate Valas we call it a low Land betweene two Mountaines, which was called Cornovake, by which, Val-leyley he had the name of Marquesse of the Valley, where there were great Townes, in which some houses in this affirme to be about 400000. hre houses; whereby the rent was to him better worth then three Valley. hundred thousand Duckets by the yeere. These Rents were confirmed to him and his for ever.

The other part of the Land that remayned, was parted among the reft of the Captaines and Souldiers which were at this Conquest, fome had a hundred thousand Duckets by yeare, and 40 other fortie thouland Duckets, and tome fittie thouland Duckets, and hee that had least had rea thousand Dickets by the years, so that now there are very few which have this Rent , for that they are most of them dead, so that great part of the faid Rents are fallen into the Kings hand, wherefore there are many infurrections against the King, which cost many a mans life.

And now to proceed farther along the Coast, which is a Land full of great Mountains, and very hot with much raine, for which caule it is a very viholfome Country, where breedeth all notiome wormes and beafts, therefore there are very few Indians dwelling there, and no Spaniards, so that the Countrey is almost desolate. The first Land that is inhabited by the Spaniards along the Coast, is called Veragua, this is the most richest Land of Gold then all the rest of the Indies : therefore it is inhabited with Spaniards. In this place the people are alwayes ficke, and it raineth Gold. 40 continually, and the Land yeeldeth no fruit, lo that all their fustenance commeth from other

places, all which necessities the Spaniards suffer with great patience for the couetousnesse of the Gold , the which Gold they get out of the Rivers with the helpe of a number of Negroes. I doe verily beleeve that if this Land were now the ancient Romanes , or elfe the Egyptians, they would furely make a channell from the end of this Riner de Carinas (which A Channell to iffueth from the Lake of Nicaragua) to the South Sea, for that there is no more but foure bemade, leagues betweene the Sea and the River, to that there they might Trade to the Moluccas, and to the Coast of China, to would it be fooner and easier done then the long and troublesome Voyages of the Portugals, and fooner made, then to goe through the Straits of Magellan; which is almost vnpofinle to palle thorow.

From this Land of Veragua vnto the Hand of Margereta , the Coast along is called the firme Tera finna. 50 Land, not for that the other places are not of the firme Land, but because it was the first firme Land that the Spaniards did conquer after they had path the Hands. This Land is very hot, and hath much raine, and for this cause is very vnhealthfull, and the most vilest place of all the rest, is Nombre de Dies cailed Nombre de Dios: which is the first place inhabited after you have passed Veragua. There first may be in Nombre de Dios: about foure hundred houses, and hath a very good Port for shipping. The cause why the Spaniards inhabited here in this place, was for that it should bee the way by Land to the South Ses, and for the Trade of Pern, that is from hence vnto the Citic of Panama Panama. eighteene leagues. And Panama standeth on the Coast of the South Sea. To this Towne of Nombre de Dies doth come all Spanish thipping, and there discharge them, then put they the 60 goods into small Barkes that goe vp a River to a house which is called , The bouse of Crosses,

where the small Barkes doe discharge the goods againe. And then they put it on Mules to to carrie it to Panama, which is feuen leagues from This house of Crosses, all which they doe with much labour and great charge, because the Land hath great store of raine, and full of Mountaines, and very vnhealthfull, therefore they often want victuals, for the victuals they have come

published by concayning the whole, I bin by others

The Ports. Mexico.

o Sitteralia Districted febre Oxenh.m. which you haue be are more com-Visire mide

with the de-

cras.

from Pern, and Nona Hilbania. This Towne of Numbre de dios, fince they have had the traffice out of Spaine, are growne maruellous rich, and very well inhabited, but in fhort time the people "Here follow- left the Towne, laung onely the Merchants, because of the vnhealthfulnesse " thereof. The King of Spaine hearing of the affaires of Drake and Oxenbam, fent cut of Spaine three

hundred Souldiers which should make warre against those Negros that had aided the Englishmen which were flaues vinto the Spaniards, but runne away from their Mafters, and loyned with the Englishmen, thinking that way to be revenged of the Spaniards crueltie. But when these three hunared Souldiers were arrued in the Countrie, at their first comming they tooke many of the Negros, and did on them great inflice; according to their faults committed, but afterwards the Souldiers were a long time before they could get one Negro. Which newes being fent vnto the King by his Captaines, as alto how the Countrie was tull of Mountaines and Rivers, and very unhealthfull, infomuch that his Souldiers died, he did write to his Captaines to make agreement with those Negros, to the end the Countrie might bee in quiet. And the Negros inhabited two places where the Spanuards willed them, to was the Kings pardon proclaimed to all those Negros. from the time that they fled from their Mafters into the Mountaines vinto that prefere day, on condition that all those Negros that did runne from their Masters that day forward they should be bound to bring them dead or aline; but if they brought them not, that then they should bay for them, and to make all quiet in the Mountaines : and on these conditions all things were Meso Fosness concluded and agreed upon. So the Negros dwell in great Townes, where they have Spaniards for their Teachers, and a Spaniard for their Judge; and with this they hold themselves very well an contented, and are obedient vnto their Rulers. The King of Spaine hearing that Englishmen, as well as Frenchmen, have vied that Coast, hee

Same Evench thins taken by two Gallies. Fr. Drake with 24. fhips.

caufed two Gallies to be made, and well appointed, to keepe the Coaft; the first yeere that they were made, they tooke fixe or feuen French shippes, and after this was knowne, there vied few Englishmen, or French men of warre, to come on the Coast, vntill this yeere 1586, that the aforefaid Francis Drake came with a strong Fleet, of about four eard twentie ships, and did such harme as it is well knowne to all Christendome : but God sparing the King of Spaines life, he will sufficiently provide to keepe his Subjects from the invasions of other Nations.

Cartagena .

Now, to goe forward with our begunne worke, the first People that is in this Coast, being past Nombre de Dios, is called Cartagena, it is a healthfuller Countrie, and a greater Towne then to the other, and a better Countrie, with plentie of Victuals, and a very good Port for shipping, passing any of the rest, and is called Carragena, for that it resembleth very much the Citie of Care tagena in Spaine : there are in it about foure hundred fire houses in the Citie; it is very rich by reason of the ships staying there when they goe or come from Spaine. And if the ships chance to winter before they goe home, then they lie at Cartagena: also it is greatly enriched by the Merchandife that here they doe discharge, for to carrie to the new Kingdome of Granada; and much New Granada. Gold commeth from the faid Kingdome vnto Cartagena. This new Kingdome of Granada, is two hundred leagues within the Land. From Cartagena to this Kingdome they cannot travell by Land, because of the Mountaines, and standing waters, which lie in their way, so that they carrie their goods up a River, called The great River of Magdalene: they can goe with their to Barques up this River but twentie leagues, yet the River is both large and very deepe, but there runneth a great current, fo that the Barques discharge the goods at a place in the River, called Branco de Malambo, into small Canoas which rowe close by the shoare side.

great Riner. The River of B-ance de Ma-

Magdalena a

There is a passage by the New Kingdome, and Popayan, from Cartagena to Pern, by Land, which is about fine hundred leagues, fo that taking the two hundred leagues, which they goe vp the River, the other three hundred leagues is a Countrie well inhabited, and quiet travelling, fo that oftentimes the Poils paffe to and fro, but because the way is long, the Merchants doe not trauell that way but when they are forced thereunto, if any forraine Nations should take and keepe the South Sea, the King might have his treature brought to this place from Peru, and to into Spaine. For in times palt there was a rebellion in Peru by the Spannards, against the King, 50 and thorow thele Prouinces he fent his power to supprelle them.

Santa Marta is a very poore Towne, because it bath beene often robbed of the Frenchmen,

and hath no trade, but by a few Indians that dwell about them. Here beginneth the great Moun-

taines conered all with fnow, which compaffeth all the Countrie of India and Pern, vntill you

come to the further end of the Straites of Magelan, their Mountaines are feene with the fnowe

upon them about thirtie leagues into the Sca, in the bottome of this Wilderneffe, or Mountains,

Land that is joyning to it is full of Mountaines, and the Inhabitants are very many, and withall

of a good courage, and they vie to poison their Arrowes, to that in flriking of a man, hee can-

Great Mountaines couered with inowe.

Tagrona Valley, there is a Valley called Tagrona, which is the richest place that is knowne: but because the

70, Tands, Santa Domingo.

notefcaye death. Therefore it beth vnco: quered, and many Spanife Captaines there have 60 On this Coast of The Firme Land, there are at one fewentie Hands of Sante Domingo, and Cuba Cuba and Porta and Porto Rico, although it be not very great, yet it is inhabited by the Spaniard; the rest of all the Hands have beene inhabited by Indians, where was good store of Gold, and Pearles, and

Emeral's: but the Spaniards have deltroyed all those Indians from off the Earth, and in many of those Hands is nothing of any value, therefore I have small cause to intreat of them: but Santa Domingo is an Iland of great bignesse, and hath beene very full of people and rich Mines of Gold and Pearles, but now all is waited away; for it was as full of people as any place of that hienelle in the world, yet now are there none left, for they were men of so hard a heart . that they killed themselves, rather then they would serve the Spaniards. It happened on a time, that 2 Spaniard called certaine Indians to goe to worke in the Mines, which kinde of labour did most grieue them, and would rather doe violence on themselues, then to goe; which the Spaniard to keepemen perceiving, he faid voto them, feeing you will rather hang your felues then to goe and worke, alue. will likewise hang my selfe, and goe with you, because I will make you worke in the other

world : Eur the Indians hearing this, faid, wee will willingly worke with you, because you shall not goe with verto vinwilling they were of the Spanards companie: fo that of all the Inhabitants of this lland, there was none elcaped death, but onely these few, which was by the meanes of

this Spaniard for elfe they would have hanged themfelues alfo.

There is neere this Iland another Iland greater then Santa Domingo, called Caba; it is like cuba. vnto Santa Domingo, athough there is not fuch flore of Sugar; the chiefest place in this Hand is called Labanana, and is a very good Harbour : thefe people are very rich, by reason of the thip- La banana, ping that doth touch there, which are bound for Nona Hoffania and Peru, therefore there is a Cattle in this Harbour kept with Spanifs Souldiers; for there is no other Cattle in all the Land, 20 nor Souldiers but onely here, and in Florida. There is also another Hand inhabited with Soaniards, neere voto this, which is called Porto Rico: it is but little, and every way as plentifull as Porto rico.

the other two are.

I will follow my Dicourie of the Port Townes along the Coast of the maine Land, and pas- The Port fine once the Hand of Margareta, there are no Townes inhabited by the Spaniards, till you come to Fernanbote, which is on the Coast of Brafill: yet betweene the Hand and Fernanboke, there is Fernanbote. the great Rmer of Maranoyn. This River is one of the greatest in the world, it was first found The River of when as the Spaniards did feeke out the other Coaft, but none can goe into this River because of Maranon. the great current that commeth downe; and withall there are many shelues of fand lying about the mouth of it, whereby it was long before that the Riches which is in the Riper was

knowne, which time that the Land of Pers was conquered; at which time a Captaine called Gonfalo Piziarro, entring into the Countrie of Pern, came into a Land which they named La Cane- La Canela, la, because there tame from thence great store of Cinnamon , but not altogether so good as that which commeth from the Indies. Proceeding further into the Countrie, he came to a great Ri- The great Riner, where he faw many of the Countrie people come vp in Canoas , bringing Gold to buy and uer of Meranfell with the Spaniards. The Captaine feeing this, was defirous to fee the end of this River, but "on. could not travell by Land because of the Mountaines, wherefore he made a small Pinnace, to goe fee from whence thele Indians brought their Gold; and he fent in this Pinnace, a Captaine under him, called Orillans, with thirtie men, the which went downe the River, but could not returne to their Captaine Picarro, because of the great current which was very strong against them, 4º and forced them to passe the River, and enter into the Sea, and so came to the lianu of Marga- Margareta at

reta: but as they pailed the River, they found it well inhabited with Indians, and to have good Iland, ftore of Gold. There men with their Pinnace were passing downe this River a yeere and a halfe; for the River lieth very crooked, which maketh a long way by water, and the Spaniards never durit land, because they saw the Countrie so full of people; but tooke many Canoas, where they had good flore of Victuals, and some Gold. Now this Captaine Orillana comming vnto Margareta with this good newes and riches, hee determined with himfelfe, not to returne againe vn to his Captaine Pizarro, which fent him, but tooke his way from hence to the King of Spaine, and prefented him with the Gold that he brought out of the River. Whereupon the King fent him with a Fleet of ships, and fixe hundred men, to inhabite the faid River: but because of

to the great current, and shoald that are in this River, he left the most part of his men, and ships, and with thole that remained, hee went vnto certaine Hands hard by the River, and built him Pinnaces: but the Countrie being very vnhealthfull, hee himfelfe died, and many of his men, and the rest that remained, went every one the way that pleased him best,

The fame of this River was straightway spred thorow Spaine and Portugall, so that a Gentleman of Portugall, called Leus de Melo, which asked licence of Don Inan the third, then King of Poringall, that he might goe and conquer this faid River: for from the mouth of this River to the mouth of this River of Plate, is that part of America, which the Kings of Portugal doe hold according to the partition that the Kings of Spaine and Portugal both made betweene Brafill con themselues ; fo that the King of Portugall hauing this River in his part, hee gaue it to the said quered.

60 Lem de Melo, to conquer: who taking ten ships, and eight hundred men, among which there were many Gentlemen, and comming to the mouth of this River, hee loft all the shippes faving two fayle, and in one of them that were faued was Leus de Melo, also the most part of the men that were in the ships were faued and got to shoare, and so went along vinto the Hand Margaresa, from whence they were disperfed throughout all the Indies. Thus thele two fenerall Flee's

of thips being call away, by fuch will fortune, never any Captaine after, would give the attempt to con other this faid River. Yet from the new Kingdome of Granade, before spoken of two or three Captaines have gone by Land to difcouer it.

Pedro de Orque, None of all these came to any plaine discouerie till few yeeres past, a Capraine of the Conn. trie of N : narre, called Pedro de Orane, who came into the Countrie of Peru, neere the place where before Capraine Pizzero had first difcouered, and had with him about feuen bundred men. all Spaniards, which was maruell that he could have so many, and amongst them there were many ny G. ntlemen, and old Souldiers of Pers, which cauled many mutinies and infurrections, With all there men ne came to the head of this River, (all the matters that come from the Mountainer or Pers. and the Rivers which runne within the Land from fixteene degrees, and the Line, runne w all v. to this River, which caufeth it to be fo great.) Now at the head of this River, the Captaine Pedro de Orzana ma le niceene Pinnaces, with many Canoas, in which he carried about two thous fand Indians to helpe him, with many Horles and other provision, for to inhabite there foris was not politible for him to carrie all his prouition by Land, for that the Mountaines bee very great, and betweene them many small R uers, which issue out of this great River about twentie langues into the Land. So this Captaine having all his things in good order, went downe this River with all his men, and came to a plaine Countrie from the Mountaines, where the Indiane diddwell, and there held a Counfell, determining in that place to build a Towne, and to fortile it very firong, because he would leave all his stude, there and such men as were not Souldiers. So they began to make the faid Towne, and worke on it all the Winter, where because it raineth a much, and is with all very hot, whereby ficknesse did beginne to rife among them, and also want of Victuals; wherefore his men began to murmure. These men came all out of the Land of Pers. which is the fruitfulleft Land in all the World, and most richeft; therefore these men were the more given to have their fill of Bread and Meat, then to lay their bodies to labour, which was the caule: that although the Countrie in which they were, was very fruitfull , and also they faw with their eyes, the Gold that was there, as also how up in the Countrie it seemed much better then the place in which they were, notwithfranding they murmured, and would needs returns for Pers, from whence they came. There was among thele men a Souldier of Bifea, called Lopez de Agira, a very little man of

Loper de Azira his mutinie.

body, and was lame of one of his legs, but very variant, and of good experience in the warres (this man was one of the principall mutiners in Peru, and therefore given vivally thereunto) this fellow asked the Souldiers, what they went to feeke in those Wilderneffes where as they went brought, for faid he, if you feeke riches, there is enough in Perm, and there is, faid hee, Breid, White Flesh, and faire Women to that it were better to goe this her and conquer that, and take it out of the hands of the Spaniards, for that would easily be done; for that all the Souldiers, & poore men of Pers would turne vnto them, and that were a better way then to goe and conquer the faunge people in those Mountaines, so that they once having the government of Pers, that then the King of Spaine should agree with them, if not fail he, we shall not lacke them that will fend ws fuccour for to have the riches that is in the Land of Pers. By thefe pertivations hee brought many Souldiers to be of his minde; and agreed with a young Gentleman of Simil, called Dos # Fernando de Gosman, the which was in loue with a yong woman, that the Captain Pedro de Orzas The Captaine or Offene had, and therefore he did the fooner agree with Lope de Agire to fulfill his intent. Ont night, the Captaine being afleepe in his bed, theie Souldiers entred into his Bed-chamber, & flabbed him with their Daggers, as also they floe all the Captains friends, and they made a great cite, faying, Line the King, line the King, wherwith all the Campe was in an vprore. Then Lope de Agus made vnto the So. Idiers a long Oration, & got them all to confent with him fome by force fome because they durst not say to the contrarie, and others with their good will, in the end they all agreed vnto his determined purpole. So they made the gentleman their head, and Lope de Agne was made Captaine, this done, and because the people should the better hold their opinion, hee did as great a villanie as euer any Spaniard did, for hee made an Altar, on which hee and all the Souls for diers did denie their feruice vnto the King of Spaine, and fo as people without a King, they choic the faid Don Fernando to be their King, and did vnto him homage.

Fernando de Gafman cholen King.

These matters being finished, they agreed among themselves which should be the best way for them to goe to Peru, for they could not goe up the River from whence they came, for the great current, and also it they should goe thorough the land, they should be very weake for want of Horiemen, therefore they determined to goe downe the River. Then faid this Lope de Agire, that they would carry nothing with them, but the Pinnaces and Souldiers which should fight, and that it were beit to leave behinde them, all the Indians that they brought from Peru, with the women, and ficke men, vnto which their Generall Don Fernando would not agree, for that he greehearing this, and longing to bechiefe Gouernour him life over all, and taking vnto him thirtie of his owne Countrie men, of his own disposition, he fodainly killed Don Fernando, whom not twentie daies before hee had fworne to obey. But now by his fubtile working, and being

knew that when they were gone, the people of the Countrie would kill them all. Lope de A. 6. withall eloquent in his talke, he cauted the people to make himselfe Governour, and made the

people belieue that all these cruelties were done to sue themselues, but the tyrannie of this man did not end here (he was of the Countrie of Bifca, a land loyning vnto France, therefore I rather believe that he was a Frenchman then a Spaniard, for that in the heart of a Spaniard there is not Haid concein fo much crueltie as this man had.) Now he being ready to goe his way, he determined not to of Frenchetu. carrie with him any Gentleman or other of high degree, and therefore hee flew all those which city by Span, hee did know to be of high degree or Gentlemen, and then departed onely with the common Souldiers, and left behinde him all the Spanish women and ficke men, with all other

If I should rehearse all the cruell murders of this wicked man one by one, I should be over much to tedious vnto you; onely I fay in as few words as I may, that this man proceeded downe the River, and had with him onely foure hundred men, but before he passed this River, and came to Margareta, he had no more left but two hundred and thirtie men, for the rest hee had done to death, and left afhore among the people of the Countrie: he vied this tirannie because hee al- Nothing to waies flood in feare of his life, for that if he had feene but two Souldiers talke together, hee proceeding thought that he had alwaies confulted on his death, and therefore hee yied the order about faid, from an ill now he never went any way but that they had in his companie thirtie Bifcains of his owne will conficence, and minde, for to execute his cruell defire: As these Souldiers with their Captaine came downe the River, they faw many Canoas with Gold in them going to and fro, and people on both fides the River, where in their passage many times they landed and got good store of Gold, and

Now did they see also that which Oryllana had reported, which was that there were Ama- R. Amazone zones, women that fight in the warre with Bowes and Arrowes, but these women fight why so called, to helpe their husbands, and not by themselves as Orillana reported from the company of men. Note the truth there were of these women in diners parts of the River, and law the Spaniards fight with their hath mocked husbands, and came and helped them, and shewed themselves more valuant then their husbands, men touching and therefore is named the Rouer of the Amazones : the Spaniards intent onely was to paffe Amazone in A. downe the River, and therefore never fought to know the Countrie within the land; yet tooke fa, Africa and they good itere of Gold, and put it into one of the Pinnaces where he went himielte, which America. None Pinnace at the mouth of the River was cast away, but he himselfe escaped, because as yet he had by credible 30 not made an end of his bloudie minde. But comming to the Hand of Margareta, the Gouer- repostablene nour thereof thought he had beene one of the Kings Captaines, received him with Pinnaces, and foundbut wasbrought to him good ftore of vict sals, but he put him to death prefently and landed on the I. like wines, and lands, and tooke it and two Shippes that were in the Ilands, and tooke perforce one hundred nimamians. and fiftie men to goe with him, and others that went willingly, with good flore of victuals Historyfon at and many Horses, and then returned to the maine land, saying that with his small force Margarita. hee would fubdue the whole Indies; thinking that all the old Souldiers and poore people in seeing of him would all turne to his side, and take his part, and so hee went deceived in his owne conceit, for he had not gone two dayes lourney up in the Land, when the Captaine of new Granade came against him with a power of men , but Lope de Agire hoping that the 40 other Souldiers would have come all vnto him, whereby his strength might bee the more; but hee was deceined, for his owne men left him and tooke the Kings Captaines part. Now feeing himfelfe defficute of his Souldiers, and voide of all helpe, he then fnewed himfelfe more cruell then did the tyrant Nero, for this man killed his owne daughter, being but fixteene yeeres of Love de Agree then did the tyrant Ners, for this man killed his owne daughter, peing out exteen years of age, which he brought with him from Term, for that the fhould not be made the bed of Villains, age, which he brought with him from Term, for that the flower has been discussed by the bed of the b nor be called the daughter of a Traitor: these words he vied vnto her, after he had given her her is flaine. d-aths wound : but before hee could finish this cruell deed, the Sould ers came vpon him , and euc him in pieces; yet his daughter did die of her wound in that place, and thus you have heard the emil end of this cruell man, for hee was the cause likewise that the King would never suffer to have this River discovered, so that the riches restert to this day vinknowne that is in Greatriches this River.

Now having ended with this River of Marannon, all the Coast between this River and the Ri- the River of uer of Plate, is called the Coast of Brasil, taking the name of the wood in the Countrie, which Maragnon. is called Brafill wood (for there is great store of it.) Brafil was first found by Pedro Arnales (a - Briff). brall in the second time that the King of Poringall sent his ships for the East Indies, and so tooke possession of this Land, for the King of Partugall. The King Don Emanuel, having newes hereof, fent ships for to discouer the whole Countrie, and found it to be the Land of America, which ioyneth to the West Indies; wherefore there was some controuerie betweene him and the King of Spaine, but in the end being both kinfmen, and great friends, they agreed that the King of Portugal fhould hold all the Countrie that he had discovered, the which was as I have faid, from 60 the Rouer of Marannon to the Rouer of Plate, although the Spaniards fay that it is no further then the lland of Santa Catalina, and hereupon there have beene many contronerfies, betweene the Portugals and Spaniards and many men flaine.

There came in the years 1587, into this River of Plate two English Ships and a Pinnace of the Section flories honorable the Earle of Comberland, being bound for the straights of Magelanor, and anchored ten fap. i.s.

CHAP.II.

Paraga now i habred by Saniards Fernamback hash 3000. houses.

As Ilhas bath

reo, houles.

port called la Para Ina, which few yeares patt, the Frenchmen hearing of the troubles that were in Portugall, came to this place, and made there a Fort, and fo the French Ships came energy verse thither to lade Bratill wood. But they of Fernambucke with the helpe of the Spaniards went and burnt fire thips within the Port, and tooke the Fort, but fome of the Frenchmen ranne into the Mountaines, and others flaine, to that the Spaniards doe there inhabit to this day. Now to returne vnto Fernambocke, inhabited by a Portugall Captaine called Eduarte Coelio, this is the orea tell Towne in all that Coast, and hath aboue three thousand houses in it, with seventie Ingenios of Sugar, and great flore of Brafill wood, and good flore of Cotton, yet are they in great want of victuals, for that all that they have commeth out of Portugal, and from other places thereon .. the Coaft. It is a barred Harbour, and for small Barkes, this place belongeth yet to the Sonne of Eduarte Coelio. Palling hence is the Cape of Saint Augustone, and next to that is the River of Saint Bayastown be- Francisco, which is alto a great River, Betweene this and the Bayba, it is all a Wildernesse, inhabia longing to the ted with cruell Sauage people; for whom focuer they take they kill to eate. The Towne of Bone King for hee belongeth to the King, and therefore the Gouernour that gouerneth all the Coast along, is in this gaue most part Towns of Baya, and also the Bishop; it is a Towns of a thousand houses, and hath tortie Ingenios or trus Country to Gentle. of Sugar, and much Cotton, but no Bratill wood. The Sea runneth vp fourteene or fitteene men because leagues, where they get some yeares good store of Ambergreece; here there is plentie of victuals. they found no and although it be hot, it is a healthfull Country, and holesome aires. The next Coast is called Las Ilhas .: t is a small Towne not about one hundred and fiftie houses, there are but three I igenios of Sugar, the most part of these people are labouring men, and carry victuals to Fernandoct in three small Barkes; this people belong voto a Gentleman called Leucas Geralde. From hence, the next to this Towne is called Porto Sequero : this hath four fmal Townes, and

leagues within this River, at a little Hand hard by the Hand called Seall Hand, &c. There is a

Paris Sequeto are in all about three hundred houses, it belongeth to a Gentleman called Vasco Fermandes Conh th toure fmall rownes. Rio de Ienero hash aco. houtes. Villagaon ns

tenio : from hence they goe to the River of lenero, which hath about three hundred houses. In this place also the Frenchmen inhabited first, whose Captaine was called Monsieur de Villegaran, het made here a Fort, and planted good Ordnance thereon, and lades enery yeers great fore of Brafill from thence, and had great friendship with the Sauage people, which ferued him very well. Fortisken. Of But the King of Portugal fent a power of men aganft the Frenchmen , and first tooke the French him and it you thips by Sea, and then landed, and befieged the Fort, and in time tooke them with the Captains, and because the French Captaine was a Gentleman, and neuer hurt the Portugals, therefore they gaue thirtie thousand Duckets for his Ordnance, with all things that they had in the Fort, and to fent him for France, and the Portugals inhabited the River. There is not at this prefent but two Ingenios, and great flore of Brafil-wood, with plentie of victuals. From this River of Ienero, they go along the Coast of Saint Vincent, which hath foure Townes, the greatest is called Santos, and hath foure hundred houses, there are here three Ingenios, buta

The Coaft of Saint Vincent harh toure townes. Two English fhips by Fenton and Ward.

very poore Country. About few yeeres past there came two English thins into this Harbor, which were going for the Straits of Magellanes, who being in this Port, there came thither three of the King of Spaines thips, and fought with the Englishmen, but the Englishmen funke one of them, and therefore the King commanded a Fort to be made, because that no English shippes that were bound to the Straits should not victuall there, the which Fort standeth on the mouth of the Harbour, this Countrey belongeth to a Gentleman called Martin Alonfo de Soufa, this is the laft lahabitance in all the Coast of Brafill; this faid Coast is very full of Mountaines, and raineth much therefore they cannot goe from Towne to Towne by Land. All the dwellings in this Country are by the Sea fide, yet the Portugals have many times travelled up in the Countrie a hundred and fiftie leagues, but finding no profit, inhabited in no place. The Coast from Saint Vincent is all full of Mountaines, till you come to the Iland of Saint Ca-

See fuo. in

Breed of to.

Saint Unicent, salina, from this Iland till you come to the Straites of Magellanes, is very plaine and with-The River of Plate was discovered by Solis, and after by Sebastian Cabot , which went one ? hundred and fiftie leagues vp in it and built a Fort; after by Don Pedro de Mendoza, who having lost eight fhips, died in the way homewards : the poore men which hee left behind him for very hunger, died the most part of them, for that there about were very few Indians, and therefore small store of victuals, but onely lived by hunting of Deere and fishing. Of all the men that this Don Pedro left behind him, there was living no more but two hundred men, which in the flip. Boats went up the River, leaving in this place called bonas arres, three Mares and Horfes. But it is a wonder to fee, that of thirtie Mares and feuen Horfes which the Spaniards left in this place, that in fortie yeeres these beafts have so increased, that the Countrey is twentie leagues up full of Horses, whereby one may see the pasture, and fruitfulnesse of the Countrey. The Spaniards that went up this River, were three hundred leagues up, and found the Country & full of Indians, where were great store of victuals, and the Spaniards dwelt among them as their friends, and the Indians did gue their Daughters to wife vnto the Spaniards, and fo they dwelt in one Towne together, which the Spaniards called La Afcention, which standeth on the North fide of the River. Thefe forefaid Spaniards, were twentie yeeres in this place, before any of them

in Spains heard of these poore mens dwelling in this Ruer. But the Spanierds now waxing old, and fearing that if they were dead, that then there Sonnes which they had in this Country, which were very many, thould like without the knowledge of any other Christians; determined among themselves to make a ship, and so to send newes into Spaine, with Letters vnto the King, of all things that had passed within the River among them. Vpon this newes the King sent them three (hips, with a Bishop, Friers and Priests, and more men and women to inhabit with all kind of cattell. When this fuccour was come, they inhabited in two places more on the North fide of the River, and travelled three hundred leagues beyond the Afcenfion , but found neither Gold nor Silver, but returned backe againe to Afcenfion: the people are fo multiplyed in this Citie, that to it is now one of the greatest Ciries in all the Indies, and hath about two thousand houses, it is a fruitfull Countrey of all kind of victuall, and there is Sugar and Cotton, from this Citie of Afcension, one hundred and fiftie leagues toward the Rivers mouth, there is another Towne, which they call Santa Fee. Also five yeeres past, they have inhabited agains the Towns of Bonos Arres Santa Fee. on the South fide, because they would have some Trade with them on the Coast of Brafil, but Bones Aprel there fortune was such, that the first time that they went to Brafill, and would have returned to the River of Plate againe, they were taken by two fhippes of England, that were going to the Straits of Magellanes. The Coaft along from this River to the Straits of Magellanes, is a Land which hath not beene discouered, neither by Seanor Land, saving only certaine Ports which

they have feene going to the Straits. 20 The next that lought to passe the Straits after Magelanes were two shippes of Genea which came to the mouth of the Straits, and with a great fforme were put back againe, and one of them whose Master was called Pancaldo, put into the River of Plate, and was cast away about Bonos Arres, and to this day there is part of the thip to be feene, and fome of the men are yet living in the River among the Spaniards, and the other thip went home to Genea againe. Also there was a Bishop of Placencia in Spaine, coueting Riches, made a fleet of foure ships to passe the Straits, and so to goe vnto the Molucess, and getting license of the Emperour, he fent his ships to the Straits, and had very faire wind til they came thither, and entring the Straits twentie leagues, the storme of Westerly windes tooke them, and droug three of them ashoare, and the other went into the Sea, and the storme being past, hee returned into the Strait to feeke his companions, and found 30 many men going on the shoare side, but the ships were heaten all in pieces, and they on the Land called vnto the thip. But the Captaine feeing that his thip was but little, and had im.ll flore of victuals, he would not goe to them alhoare, but went on his Voyage, and paffed the Straits, and because he was alone, he would not goe to the Molnegas, but went to the Coast of Pers vnto the Citie of Lone, where the thip is yet vnto this day, the men that were in the Straits, where the three thips were cast away, were to the number of two hundred and fiftiemen, whose Captaine was called Queras, being Kinsman to the Bishop of Placentia, it is fortie yeeres fince their men Captaine were left there, but neuer heard of vnto this day. A yeere after this, certaine Merchants of the Quers, Quieds Groine in Galizas, fet forth other three thips, which thip also came to the Straits mouth, where one of them was cast away withall the men, and the other returned for Spaine, also I have had in-40 telligence that there bath beene certaine Portugal thips, which have come to the mouth of the Straits, and loft two of their Pinnaffes which they fent to know the Land, and so the ships returned, and after these other two French ships were sent from the River of lenero, by Mensioner de vollagagnen over for the Straits, but when they came into the height of fortie five degrees, they put backe againe by a great storme of contrary winds. After all this the Gouernour of Chile, called Don Garcia de Mendoza Sonne to the Marquesse of Tanera, would also disconer the Straits from the South Sea, and fent from Chili two thips with a Captaine called Latherelio; but the danger to feeke the Straits by the South Sea, is more then by the North Sea, because all the stormes on the North Sea, come from the Land, and in the South Sea the wind and stormes came all out of hauchs and the Sea, and forceth the ship on the shoare, so that these two ships were lost in fiftie degrees. The Cand Bet, a in 50 feeking of the Straits of Magelenes is fo dangerous, and the Voyage fo troublesome, that it is other English almost vnpossible to be obtained, so that for the space of thirtie yeeres, no man made account of and Ducio oy-

the Straub be-Captaine Drate carried from the Coast of Perm, eight hundred fixtie fixe thousand pieces of tore,

filter, which is eight hundred fixtie fixe Kintals at a hundred pound waight, the Kintall, and enery Kintall is worth twelve hundred Duckets of Spaine, which is a Million, thirtie nine thoufand and two hundred Duckets, befides this, he carried away a hundred thousand pieces of Gold, which is ten Kintals, and every Kintall is worth fifteene hundred Duckets of Spaine, which amounteth to a hundred and fifthe thouland Duckets, besides that which hee had in the ship that was not cultomed, which I doe not know of, as well Pearles, Precious stones, and other things of great value, besides the money he had in coine, with all this he went towards Noua Hispamia and at an Iland which is before you come there called The Iland of Cockles, he discharged all The Iland of things out of his ship and graved her there, and remayned there fittle dayes, from hence he went Cochets along the Coast of Hispania, where he tooke many thips laden with Spices, Silkes, and Veluets: favine Hand but no Gold nor Silver, for here is none on this Coaft.

it, till of late veeres one Francis Drake an Englishman, &c.

of Caria.

Pedre Sarmiento was fent to the Straits with two thips, and at the Straits met with a storme

Fiftie degrees fige minutes.

and he not knowing how, nor which way in a night he was put into the Straits, the other thin runne more into the Sea, and came into fittie eight degrees, the fforme being pall, he found many Hands forming to the maine Lands, and fo returned with faire weather all along the shoare, and neuer found any other way to enter the Straits, but only that which Magellanes did discourwhich is thought to be otherwise by the fayings of others, which affirme the Straits to be full of Ilands, to the Southwards,

Pedro Sarmiento entred the Straits, where his men were in a mutinie, and would have return ned for Lima, but he hanged one of them, and so went on his Voyage for Spaine, and sold the King that there were two narrow points in the Straits, where he might build a Fort, and that the Straits was a very good Countrey, and had great flore of Riches and other necessaries, and very well inhabited with Indians. Vpon whose words, and for that there were more things ma. king teadie in England to paffe the Straits; The King fent Diego Floris de Valdes with three and D. F. de Valdes twentie ships, and three thousand five hundred men, as also the Governour of Chili, with five hunhis diaduen- dred old Souldiers new come out of Flanders. These thips had the hardest hap of any ships that went out of Spaine fince the Indies were found , for that before they came from the Coaftof Spaine, a storme tooke them and cast away fine of the shippes, and lost in them aboue eight hundred men, and the rest put into Calls, notwithstanding the King sent them word that yet they should proceed : and so did with fixteene faile of thips, for that other two ships were so shaken with the ftorme that they could not goe, and in the fixteenth faile Pedro Sarmiento was fentto bee Gouernour in the Straits, and had committed vnto him fine hundred men for to ftay in the 2 Straits: he had also all kind of Artificers to make his Forts and other necessaries, with great flore of Ordnance and other Munition.

This fl. et because it was late, did winter on the Coast of Brasili in the River of Ieners, and from hence they went where the Winter was past, and about the height of fortie two degrees they had a florme, fo that Diego Flores beat vp and downe about two and twentie dayes, in which time he had one of his best ships sunke in the Sea, and in her three hundred men and twentie women, that went to inhabit the Straits, and also most part of the munition that should bee lestin the Straits. In the end the storme grew so great, that the ships might not indure it any longer, but were put back agains voto an Iland called Saint Catalina, and there he found a Barke, wherein were certaine Friers going for the River of Plate, which Friers told him of two great thipsof England, and a Pinnaffe that had taken them, but tooke nothing from them , nor did them any harme, but only asked them for the King of Spaines thippes. Now Diego Flores knowing that thefe English thippes would goe to the Swaits, hee also was determined to goe to the Straits, ale though it was the moneth of February, and choosing ten ships of the fifteene that were left, hee fant three ships that were old and shaken with the storme, he put in them all the women and sick The Riper of men that were in the fleet, and fent them to the River of Ienero : and left two other thips which were not for the Sea at the Hand, and he with the other ten ships returned agains for the Straits. Now the three ships in which the licke men and women were, came to the Port of Saint Vincent, where they found the two English ships, so they would have the Englishmen gone out of the Harbour, and hereupon they fell at right, and because that these three ships were weake with the foule weather that they had, as also the men were the refuse of all the fleet, the Englishmen cashy put them to the worst, and sunke one of them, and might have funke another if they would, but they minded not the destruction of any man; for it is the greatest vertue that can be in any man,

Port of Saint

Vpon this the Englishmen went from this Port to Spirito Santto, where they had victualifor their Merchandize, and fo returned home to England, without doing any harme in the Country. lobn Drake went from them in the Pinnaffe (the cause why I know not) but the Pinnasse

that when he may doe hure, he will not doe it.

Iohn Drakes

came into the River of Plate, and within five leagues of Scale Iland, not far from the place where the Earle of Cumberlands ships tooke in fresh water, this said Pinnasse was cast away vpona ledge of Rockes, but the men were all faued in the Boate. They were eighteenemen, and went 50 ashoare upon the North shoate, and went a dayes journey into the Land, where they met with the Sauage people, these people are no man-eaters, but take all the Christians that they can, and make them there flaues, but the Englishmen fought with them, and the Sanages flie five Englishmen, and tooke the other thirteene aline, which were with the Sauges about fifteene moneties. But the Master of the Pinnaste, which was Richard Fairemeather, beeing not able to indure this mifery that hee wasin, and having knowledge that there was a Towne of Christians on theother fide of the River, he in the night called John Drake, and another young man which was with them, and tooke a Canoa which was very little, and had but two Oares, and so passed to the other fide of the River, which is about nine leagues broad, and were three dayes before they could get ouer, and in this time they had no meate, and comming to land, they his you a high way 65 that went towards the Christians and feeing the footing of Horfes, they follow it, and at last came to a House where as there was Corne sowed, and there they met with Indians which were Servants vnto the Spaniards, which gave them to eate, and clothes to cover them, for they were all naked; and one of the Indians went to the Fowne, and cold them of the Englishmen, fo

the Captaine fent foure Horlemen, which brought them to the Towne behind them, then the Captayne clothed them, and prouded for them lodging, and Iohn Drake fate at the Captaines Table, and so intreated them very well, thinking to fend them for Spaine, But the Vice-roy of Peru hearing of this, fent for them, fo they fent him lohn Drake, but the other two they kept, because that they were married in the Countrey. Thus I know no more of their affaires. But you this newes, there were prepared fiftie Horfemen to go ouer the River, to feeke the reft of the Englishmen and Spaniards, that were also among these Sanage people, but I am not certains

where they went forward or noc. But now let vs returne to Diego Flores, who palled from the Hand of Santa Catalina, towards the

to Straits in the middle of February, and comming in the height of the River of Plate, hee fent the Gouernour of Chili, with three ships vp the River Bonas Arres, and so to go over land to Chili. Of these three ships they lost two, but faued the men and the other provision, and the third returned for Spaine. Then Diego Flores with the other feuen thips came as high as fiftie two degrees, which is the mouth of the Straits, and because it was the end of March, which is the latter end of Summer, to that the Countrey was full of flow, and withall a further fforme came, that he could not fee Sarmiento and his men ashoare but returned the second time to the Coast of Brasil, to the River of lenero, where he heard newes of the English thips, by the two thips that elcaped from the Englishmen, whereupon hee left his Lieutenant Diego de Ribera, and Sarmiento, that they might the next yeer returne for the Straits. So Diego de Flores with foure thips which hee had 30 left, and other foure which the King had fent to fuccour him , went all along the Coast to seeke for the Englishmen, but could not find them, for they were gone directly for England, to he went

vnto a Port called Parayna, where he found five French thips, and burnt three, and tooke two, and also the Fort that the Frenchmen had, and put in Spannards, and the Frenchmen runne into the Mountagnes to the Sauages, this done, he returned for Spaine. And his Lieutenant Diego de Ribera, and Sarmiento had the next yeere fuch good fortune, that they arrived fafely into the Straits with all their thips, and to fet a hore foure hundred men, and because the thips Boat could not land being once laden, the ship that had all the victuals and munition, that ship they runne ashbare in a Bay, and as the water did ebbe they tooke all things out of her, this beeing done, Diego de Ribera left Sarmiento with foure hundred men, thirtie women, and a flip with victuals 30 for eight moneths, and with the other three returned, being in the Straits but eight dayes.

Now Pedro Sarmento made a Towne at the mouth of the Straits on the Northfide, and put Ped a Samitor therein a hundred and fiftie men, and from hence hee went by Land, and fent the ship further in- 10 builded to the Straits, and fiftie leagues within the Straits at the narrowest place of all, where is a very within the good Port, here he made another Towne, which he named the Towne of King Philip, and also Two rownes. would have made a Fort, and planted Ordnance for the defence of the Scraits, but the Snow and in the Scraits, the Winter was fo great, that hee could not proceed in it; but hee tooke about fine and twentie Nombre de le-Mariners into the thip with him, and taid, hee would goe fee how the other people did; and fo fus and Philips came to the Straits mouth to the Towne, and after hee had beene there a day or two with them, Citie, he faid, that a fforme put him from the Straits by force, and broke his Cables (but his men faid to 40 the contrary, that he himselfe cut his Cables: God knoweth the truth) and so he came to the Ri-

uer of lenero: and not finding any fuccour there came from the King, hee went to Fernambocke, asking aide of the Captaine for victuals, the Captaine incontinent, laded his thip with victuals and clothes for the men, fo that having these things, hee tooke his way for the Straites, but betweene the Cape of Saint Angustine, and the Baya, the wind came out of the Sea, with fuch violence, that it torced the flip to runne ashore, where Sarmiento had three of his men drowned, and he with the rest hardly escaped; the ship was lost, and all that was in her. And then he came by Land to the Bara, and the Governour of Brafill, bought a Barke that was there in the Harbour, and lading her with victuals and clothes for the men, hee having this provision, with divers other more that were needfull for his men, he tooke his Voyage for the Straits, and comming as high as fortie foure degrees, he met with a fidden florme, and was forced to throw all ouer-board 50 that he carried, and was yet in the end compelled togetime for the River of lenero; where hee flayed for faccour from the King a whole yeere; but there came not fo much as a Letter for him. for the King was fore grieved at Pedro Sarmiento, because he told him that in the narrowest place of the Straits it was but a mile over, but Diego de Ribera and others told the King that it was ahouse a league broad, that if a fhip came with wind and current. all the Ordnance in the World could not hurt them, whereby the King thought that Pedro Sarmiento had deceived him, in making him to lofe formany men, and to be at fogreat a charges to no effect. Also the Governour of Sarmier a wa

miento went in his thip for Spaine, which he came last in from the Straits, and it is faid, that he was " Rad go 60 taken by Englishmen, and lo carried for England. It is reported that this Sarmenty is the be ft Ma- Barkes. tiner riall Spane, and hath fayled farthett. After all this, the Captaine of the River Jenero, lent This circuit a small ship with victuals for the Straits, but was also put backe in fortie degrees. Three all the was with Diffeourry that hath beene of the Straits of Maneianes, as well by the Spaniards, as other Nati- 1880. ons, vano this years 1586. It is four yeares fince thele poors and miferable Spaniards were life 1983-

Baya, feeing the King wrote not to him, would give Sarmiento no more faceour, wherefore Sar- taken by Six

Dadada a

The Land that heth from the Straits to the Coast of Chili, no man hath travelled it by land. because of the great Mountaines of Snow that Iye in that Countrey, as also I may well say, that it hath not often beene done by Sea, for that all the fhips that have paffed that way, have at the Last gone thirtie leagues of the shore, because of the shoalds, and many little Hands that lie of the mayne land, and therefore there is nothing knowne what is in that Countrey. The first Inhabitance that you have after you palle the Straits, is on the Coaft of Chili, and is called Caftre, it is the worst place of all the Coast, for that in it there is small store of Gold, and little victuall, and very cold; this place is compaffed with many shoalds, so that it is a Port but for small Barkes. It The next to this is Baldinia, but before I palle any further, I will declare vnto you the fituation of Chili.

This Coast lieth North and South, and is in length about a hundred leagues; and it is not in breadth aboue fine and twentie leagues at the most, there runne from the great Mountaines into the Sea great store of Rivers, which maketh many Valleyes, and is the fruitfulless land in the World, for that it bath bread, wine, and other victuals great flore. These Rivers bee very richof

Gold, and for to shew you in few words all that this Province hath : I say, that this land lack-How chi'l was eth nothing, but might be called Paradife, but for that it lacketh only one thing, and that is first discovered peace. This land was first discovered in this order, after the Spaniards had conquered the Kins. dome of Peru, as hereafter I will fhew vnto you, they found in this Kingdome of Peru great a flore of Gold, and asking the Indians from whence it came, they answered from Chils, wherefore Don Diego de Almagro, which was one of the Captaines that conquered Peru, went vpon this newes toward Chils with three hundred Horsemen. Now he must go round about the Mountains of Snow, which way the Indians that were his guides, did carrie this Captaine, because they should die all of cold. Yet the Spaniards, although they lost some of their Horses, came to the first Inhabitance of Chile, called Copiago: which is the first plain land in the entring of the Prouince but from hence he returned backe againe for Peru, because he had newes that the Indians had rifensgainst the Spaniards, & enclosed them sopon which newes he returned without going any farther into the Countrey, Now this Captayne Don Diego de Almagro, beeing flaine in the Warresof Peru, after his death, another Captayne called Don Pedro de Baldinia, with foure hundred Horsemen went vnto Chili, and with small labour he ouercame halfe the Country, which were

Pedro de Valsubject to the Kings of Pern, for they of Chili, knowing that Pern was overcome by the Spaniards, they straight way yeelded the Land vnto the Spaniards, but the other halfe which was the richest, and the fruitfullest part, so had God made the men the valiants and most furious that shall be found among all the Sawage people in the whole Land:

El Estado de The Province which they inhabit, called El Estado de Aranco, is but a small Province about twentie leagues in length, and is gouerned by ten principall men of the Countrey, out of which ten they choose the valiantest man for their Generall in the Warres. The Kings of Pers in times past could never conquer this part of Chile, nor yet any other Kings of the Indians. The weapons

vsed by these people of Araneo are long Pikes, Halberds, Bowes and Arrowes: they also make of them lacks of Seale-skinnes , and Head-pieces : in times past the heads of their Halberds and Pikes were of Braffe, but now they have gotten store of Iron. They pitch their battels in manner like the Christians : for putting their Pikemen in rankes, they place Bowmen among them, and marshall their troupes with discretion and great valour. Now the Spaniards comming vnto this Prouince, fent word vnto them by other Indians, faying, that they were the children of God, and came to teach them the Word of God, and that therefore they ought to yeeld themselves vnto them; if not, they would shoot fireamong them and burne them. Thefe people not feating the great words of the Spaniards, but defiring to fee that which they had heard reported, met them in the field, and fought a most cruell battell : but by reason of the Spaniards great Ordnance and Calculers, they were in the end put to flight. Now these Indians thinking verily that the Spa- 70 wiards were the children of God, because of their great Ordnance which made such a noise, and breathed out such flames of fire, yeelded themselves vnto them. So the Spaniards having divided this Province, made the Indians to ferue their turnes, for getting of Gold out of the Mynes, which they enjoyed in fuch abundance, that he which had least had twentie thousand Pezos, but

Captaine Baldinia himfelfe had three hundred thousand Pezos by the yeere. The same of these riches in the end was fored as farre as Spaine; from whence foone after reforted many Spaniards Villanueua de to the land of Chile, whom Captaine Baldinia caused to inhabit fixe Townes: to wit, Villanueus de la Serena, called in the Indian Tongue Coquembo; the second Sant lago, which the Indian call Mapocha; the third, La Conception, called by the Indians Penco; the fourth , La Imperial; the fift, Imperial, Baldis Baldissa; and the fixt, La Villa Rica. Also he built a Fort in the middle of all the land, wherein 60

he put Ordnance and Souldiers : howbeit all this their good fuccesse continued not long : for the Indians in fort time perceiung that the Spaniards were but mortall men as well as they, determined to rebell against them : wherefore the first thing that they did, they carried graffe into the faid Fortfor the Spaniards Horfes, and wood also for them to burne, among which grand the InCHAP.II. Spaniards discomsited by a stratagem. Arauco. Atacama.

dians conveyed Bowes and Arrowes, with great Clubs. This done, fiftie of the Indians entred the Fort betooke themselves to their Bowes, Arrows and Clubs, and stood in the gate of the fast the rolling a figure vinto other of their Nation for helpe, they wanne the Fort, chili, against and flue all the Spannards. The newes of this overthrow comming to the Towne of Conception, the Spannards. where Captaine Baldinia was, he presently set forth with two hundred Horsemen, to seeke the Indians: taking no more men with him, because hee was in haste. And in a Plaine hee met the Indians; who comming of purpole alto to feeke him, and compassing him about, slue most part of his companie, the rest escaping by the swittnesse of their Hories: but Baldana having his Horie flaine voder him was taken alue. Whom the Indians wished to be of good courage, and to feare 10 nothing; for the cause (siid they) why wee haue taken you, is to give you Gold enough. And

having made a great banquet for him, the last service of all was a Cup full of melted Gold, which The death of the Indians forced him to drinke, saying, Now glus thy felfe with Gold: and so they killed him. This Ba'dinia. Baldinia was a most valiant man, who had beene an old Souldier in the Warres of Italie, and at the facking of Rome.

Voon this discomfiture the Spaniards chose for their Captaine, one Pedro de Villa grande; Pedro de Villa who affembling all the Spaniards in Chila, and taking with him ten pieces of Ordnance, marched grands. against those Indians; but with so bad successe, that hee lost not onely the field, and many of his men, but also those ten Peeces of Ordnance which he brought. The Indians having thus gotten the victorie, went itraightway against the Towne of Conception, from whence the Spaniards

20 fled for feare, and leit the Towne delolate. And in this manner were the Spaniards chaled by the Indians out of the Countrie of Arance. But newes hereof being brought to the Marquelle of Cannete, Vice-roy of Pern, he ient his fonce Don Garcia de Mendoza, against those Indians, with a great power of Horsemen, and Footmen, and store of Artilene. This Nobleman having subdued Chili againe, and flaine in divers battels aboue fortie thouland Indians, and brought them the second time under the Spaniards Subicction, newly erected the faid Fort, that stood in the midit of the Land, inhabited the Towne of Conception againe, and built other Townes for the Spaniards: and to leaving the Land in peace, he returned for Pern. But ere he was cleane departed out of the land, the Indians rebelled again, but could not do fo much mischiefe as they did before, because the Spaniards tooke better heed vnto them. From that time vntil this present, there hath beene no peaceat all ; for not withflanding many Captianes and Souldiers have done their vttermoft, yet can they not bring that People wholly in fubicction. And although the Spaniards haue in this Prouince eleuen Townes and two Bishoprikes, yet haue they little enough to main- 11. Towns, and haue in this Prounce eleuen I ownes and two Binoprikes, yet haue they fittle enough to many a Biftoprikes tayne themselves, by reason of the Warres; for they ipend all the Gold that the Land yeeldeth in chik.

in the maintenance of their Souldiers : which would not bee fo, if they had peace; for then they might worke in all their Mines. Thus having spoken somwhat of the situation of Chili, and of the troublesome conquest there. A description of, I will return to my former discourse where I lett, Baldwia therefore being of 150 bours, of the Townes

hath twice beene burnt and spoyled by the Indians; so that now it is waxen poore, but before the Badding. Indians facked it, it was very rich : and it standeth vo a River foure leagues from the Sea. Pal- The Province 40 fing from hence you come to the plaine Countrie of Aranco, being fituate over against the Iland o Aranco, over La Mocha, on which Iland the Indians that inhabite belong to the maine Land.

Hauing passed this Plaine of Aranco, the next Towns of the Spaniards that you come vnto, is situate in 38. La Concepcion which hath beene the greatest and the richest Towne in all Chili; but by reason degrees and a that the Indians have burned the same source times, it is now growne very poore, and hath small half flore of people: rt containeth about fome two hundred houses. And because it adiovneth vpon La Concepcion, the Plaine of Aranco, where there valiant Indians bee, therefore this Towne is enuironed about with a ffrong wall, and bath a Fort built hard by it : and here are fine hundred Souldiers contimually in Garrison. Betweene this place and Valparizo, the Indians call the Coast by the name Valearizo, of Mapacha. Sant lago it felfe standing fine and twentie leagues vp into the Countrie, is the Port of S. lage 50 principall Towns of all Chili, and the leat of the Gouernour; it conflicts of about eight hun-finderin 31.

dred houses. The Port of Valparizo whither the goods come from Lima by shipping, hath about d gr. 40 min. twentie houses standing by it. The next Towne neere the Sea fide beyond this is Coquimbo, Coquimbo, the which standeth two leagues up into the Land, and containeth about two hundred houses. Next dethin 29 deg. vnto Coquimbo flandeth a Port-towne, called Copiapo, inhabited altogether by Indians which ferue the Spaniards: and here a Gentleman which is Gouernour of the Towne hath an Ingenio for Sugar : at this place endeth the whole Prouince of Chili. Here also the Mountaines ioving hard vpon the Sea, are the cause why all the Land betweene Capiano and Pers, contayning one hundred and fixtie leagues, lieth defolate.

The first Towns on the Coast of Pern, called Atacama, is inhabited by Indians which are flaues A description 60 vnto the Spaniards. But before I palle any turther I will here also declare vnto you the first Dil of Pera. couerie of Peru, with other matters there o b. longing, and then will I returne to the Sea-coalt againe: and to the end you may understand me the better, I will beginne with Panama. After that the Spaniards had inhabited the North tite of this mayne Land, passing over the Mountains they discouered the South Sea : where because they found Indian people with Gold and Pearles,

1443

Sant lago La sia, LaVilla Rice, :he firft

Calita.

Boldinia.

Coriaso.

they built a Towne eighteene leagues to the West of Nombre de Dios, hard vpon the Sea fide and called it Panama. From hence they discourred along the Coast of Nuena Espanna: and for that Nuena Espanna was at the same time inhabited by Spaniards, there beganne a trade from thence to Panama: but from Panama by Sea to the Coast of Pers they could not trade in a lone time, because of the Southerly windes blowing on this Coast almost all the yeere long, which are a hinderance to ships fayling that way: and by Land the passage was impossible, in regard of Mountaines and Rivers : Yea it was fifteene yeeres before they passed the Illand of Persis. which is but twentie leagues from Panama. There were at this time in Panama two men, the one called Francisco Pizarro, borne in the Citie of Traxillo in Spaine, a valiant man, but withall poore; the other, called Diego de Almagro, was very rich. These men got a companie vinto them, and prouided two Carauels to difcouer the Coast of Perw. and having obtayned licence of the Gouernour of that place, Francisco Pizarro set forth with the two foresaid Caranels, and an hundred men; and Diego de Almagro stayed in Panama, to fend him Victuals and other nocessaries. Now Francisco Pizarro sayling along the Coast, met with contrary windes and raine. which put him to great trouble; and hee began also after a while to lacke victuals, for hee was fayling of that in eight moneths, which they now passe in fifteene dayes, and not knowing the right course, heeranne into every River and Bay that hee saw along the Coast; which was the chiefe cause that he stayed so long on his Voyage: also thirtie of his companie died by reason of the vnhealthfulneffe of the coast. At last he came to an Iland called by him Isla del Gallo, being fituate from the maine Land fixe leagues. From hence he fent one of his ships to Panama, for a 19 new supplie of victuals, and of men : which ship being departed, fortie of his men that remayned behinde made a mutinie, and palled vp into the Countrie, meaning to returne by Land to Panama, but in the way they all perished, for they were neuer heard of vntill this day. So that

Tumbez.

Francisco Picarro was left upon the faid lland onely with thirteene men : who although her had his ship there, in which he might haue returned, yet would hee rather die then goe backe; and his thirteene men also were of his opinion, notwithstanding that they had no other victuals, but fuch as they had from the maine Land in the night feafon. Thus hee continued nine moneths, before any succour was brought him from Panama: but in the end his ship returned with fortie men onely, and victuals: whereupon hee profecuted his Voyage, till hee came to the first plaine Countrie of Pern, called Tumber, where hee found a Fort, made by the King of to Perm, against the Indians of the Mountaines, Wherefore Pizarro, and his men were very glad, in that they had found a People of so good understanding and discretion, being rich also in Gold and Siluer, and well apparelled. At this Port of Tumbez, hee tooke thirtie thousand Pezos of Gold in trucke of Merchandise, and having two few men to proceed any further, he carried two Indians with him, to learne the Language, and returned backe for Panama. Vpon this Discourrie, Francisco Pizarro thought it expedient to travell into Spaine, to crave of the King the Conquest of this Land. Whither being come, the King granted his request. And with the money which he carried ouer with him, he hired a great number of men, with a Fleet of shippes, and brought alfo along with him foure of his Brethren, very valiant and hardy men. And being come to Panama, he straightway went on his Voyage for Peru, being accompanied with his Partner, φ Diego de Almagro. They fayled first to the Hand, called Isla de Gallo ; where Francisco Pizare, and his Brethren went on Land, and left Diego de Almagro in the ships. And the whole number which afterward landed on the mayne Land were lixtie Horsemen, and one hundred and twentie Footmen, with two great Field-peeces. But before we proceed any further, wee thinke it not amiffe to describe vnto you the situation

Spaniards of a River fo named by the Indians, where they first came to the fight of Gold, From which River standing under the Line, till you come to Copiago, the first Towne on the Coast of Chile, thretcheth the Land of Perw, for the space of eight hundred leagues : vpon fixe hundred whereof, from Atacama to Tumbez, did neuer drop of raine fall, fince the Floud of Neab; and 50 yet is it the fruitfullest Land for all kinde of victoals, and other necessaries for the sustentation of The cause why mans life, that is to bee found in all the world besides. The reason why it raineth not in this Land, is because it being a plaine Countrie, and very narrow, and lowe, situate betweene the Equinoctiall and the Tropike of Capricorne, there runneth on the Well frontier, not about twenty leagues from the Sea called Mar del Sur, Eastward thereof, a mightie ridge of high Mountaines couered with Inowe; the heigth of which Mountaines fo draweth the moiltare of the cloudes vnto it felf, that no raine talleth vpon the Vallies of Pers. From these Mountains inue great store of Rivers into the South Sea, with the waters whereof drawn by certaine fluces and chanels, they moutten their Vineyards and Corne-fields, and by this meanes the Land is so exceeding fruitfull Betweene thele Mountaines and the Mountaines of Chil, that firetch vnto the Straites of Ma- 60 gellin, Letha Plane of fixtie leagues ouer, being fo cold, that it yeeldeth no Wheat, but good Hore of other vict als. This Countrie of Peru is full of people well apparelled, and of civil behauseur. Is bath many mines of God, and more of Siluer, as also great store of Copper, and Tinne-mines, with abundance of Saltpeter, and of Brimftone to make Gun-powder. There are

of Pers, and the naturall disposition of the Inhabitants: This Countrie was called Pers, by the

of all others, for the vie of man: howbeit the Spaniards fince their first comming have replenifhed this Countrie with Horses, Kine, Sheep and Goars, and likewise with plenty of Wheat. So that in few words, this Land hath abundance of riches and victuals, and is the healthfulleft place in the world. There were in times past Kings of this Land which were mighty Monarchs, whose Dominions stretched twelue hundred leagues, and their Lawes were very civill, faue that they were worshippers of the Sunne. At what time the Spaniards first entred this Land, there to were two Brethren of the bloud Royall, which strong who should have the Kingdome, the one called Mango Inga, and the other, Atabalipa. Now Mango had possession of all the Mountaines Atabalipa and and the Land within them: and Atabalipa was Lord of all the Sea-coast, and of the Vallies in the sailed tuate between the faid Mountaines and the Sea. The Indians feeing the Spaniards at the first arrive Galbar, in woon their shoare, called them Vira coche, which in their Language fignifieth, The fome of the Sea. Arise. Alfo Atabalipa the Indian Prince fent vnto them to know what they did in his Land, and what they fought for; the Spaniards made answer, that they were the messengers of a great Lord, and that they came to speake with the Prince himselfe : who fent them word, that they should come with a very good-will; and fo Atabahpa flayed for them at a Citie called Caxamalca, being thirtie leagues diffant from the Sea fide. Whither being come, they found the Indian Prince fit. 20 ting in a Chariot of Gold, carried upon mens shoulders, and accompanied with aboue sixtie thousand Indians all ready armed for the warres. Then the Spaniards told them that they were fent from an Emperour (vnto whom the Pope had given all that Land) to convert them vnto the Christian Faith. Whereunto Acabalina answered, that he would gladly be friends with the Emperour, because he was so great a Monarch, but in no case with the Pope, because he gaue to

likewise Cartell of all forts, among which there is a beast, in shape somewhat resembling a Ca-

another that which was none of his owne. Now while they were thus in talke, the Spaniards discharging their two Field-peeces, and their Caliners, fee voon the Indians, crying, Sant lago. The Indians hearing the noise of the Ordnance, and small thot, and seeing the fire, thought that flames of fire had beene come downer from Heaven vpon them; whereupon they fled, and left their Prince as a bootie for the Spa-

30 mards. Whom they at the first intreated very gently, wishing him not to feare, for that their comming was onely to feeke for Gold and Silver. During the time of Atabalipas imprisonment, his Captaines had flaineshis Brother Mange, and had fubdued all the Mountaines, and plaine Countries. Vpon which newes Atabatipa told the Spaniards, that if they would refeafe him, hee would give them all that they should demand. This communication having continued a whole day, at length a Souldier named Soto faid vnto Atabalipa; what wilt thou give vs to fet thee free? The Prince answered, I will give whatforeer you will demand. Whereto the Souldier replied, Thou shalt give vs this house full of Gold and Silver, thus high, lifting vp his sword. and making a stroke voon the wall. And Acabalips faid, that if they would grant him respite to fend into his Kingdome, he would fulfill their demand. Whereat the Spaniards much marvel-

40 ling, gaue him three moneths time, but hee had filled the house in two moneths and an halfe : a matter scarce credible, yet most true: for I knowe about twentie men that were there at that time, who all affirme, that it was aboue ten millions of Gold and Silver. Howbeit, for all this, they let not the Prince goe, but thought that in killing of him they should become Lords of the whole Land, and fo the Spaniards on a night ftrangled him. But God the righteous Iudge feeing this villanous act, fuffered none of those Speniards to die by the course of nature, but brought them to cuill and thamefull ends.

Vpon the newes of these great riches, there came store of people out of Spaine, and inhabited many places in this Countrie. The King in recompense of the good feruices of the two forefaid partners, appointed Diego de Almagro Gouernour of halfe the Land, and Francisco Pizarro of the other halte, whom also he made a Marquesse. But these two consorts in parting of a Land

50 belonging vinto other men, fell at variance and sharpe warre betweene themselues: and at length Pixarro having flaine Almagro, got all the Land into his owne hands. Howbeit, this profession tie of Pizarro continued not long : for a baltard-sonne of Diego de Almagro, to bee reuenged of his fathers death, flue Prarre, for which act he lost his head. In this controversie betweene these two partners were flaine, also two brothers of Pizarro, and the third was carried priloner into Spaine, and there died in Prison : but the fourth, called Gonfalno Pizarro, rebelled with the whole Countrie, and became a cruell Tyrant, vanquishing many of the Emperours Captaines in battell, and possessing the Countrie in peace for two yeeres; howbeit, being in the end ouercome, hee loft his head like a Traitour. And thus died they all an euill death, that were causes of the 60 death of that innocent King Atabalipa. And yet there are mutinies raifed oftentimes by the Spa-

niards, but the Indians never rebelled, after they had once peace granted vinto them. The Indian people of this Land, are parted among the Spaniards, some being flaues vnto the Gentlemen that conquered their Land, other fome to others, and the refidue to the King : and thefe Indian; pay each man for his tribute feuen Pezos of fine Gold, which is about ten Ducats and an halfe, There

mell but no bigger then a Steere of a yeere old; they ferue to carrie burdens, their flesh being Peru, called good to eate, and their wooll apt for many purpoles. This beaft is accounted the most profitable Llamas.

The Pronince of Tucuman. Cordona.

Acari.

Al Calao.

Lima

Same.

Paita.

Nine Bifton- are in this Countrie aboue fortie Cities and Townes inhabited by the Spaniards: also they have ricks, and one here erected nine Bishopricks and one Archbishopricke. Now after this Countrie was fully conquered and brought in good order, certaine Spaniard.

being defirous to difcouer the land on the other fide of the Inowie Mountaines, found a very wholefome Countrie, and there inhabited. The faid Province fituate behinde the Mountaines is called The Province of Tucuman, wherein are five townes inhabited by the Spaniards, the last of them called Cordona, from which towns vnto Santa Fee lituate vpon the River of Plate it is feuentie leagues. This towne of Santa Fee was built in that place, to feeke a way to Peru by the River of Plate. And from hence downe the faid River to Buenos Agres are 120.leagues, and from Buenos Ayres vinto Seal-sfland you have 40.leagues. Now having out down all that I know concerning the Countrie of Perm, and of the way from

the River of Plate vinto Tucuman, I will returne vinto Atacama the Southermost town voon the coast of Pern, where I left. From this towne of Acacama till you come to Arica, all the coast is inhabited by Indians tubiect vnto the Spaniards. But fince Captain Drake was here, they have built Towers by the Seatide, whereon, seeing any faile that they doe miftruft, they prefently make Smoakes, and so from Tower to Tower they warne all the Country. Hauing before spoken of Camana. Arica all that I can I will now proceede to the next Port called Camana being a Towne of Spemiards, and containing about two hundred houses. Here they make store of Wine, and hauez-

bundance of Figges and Reifins. The next Towne called Acars containeth about three hundred houses, and here is made the best and greatest store of Wine in all Pers. From hence passing along 29 the coast you come to El Calao the Port of Lima confisting of about two hundred houses; and here was a frong Fort built fince Captaine Drake was voon the coaft. The Citie of Line flanding two leagues within the land, and containing two thousand houses, is very rich, and of more trade then all the Cities of Pers befides, and this Citie is the feate of the Viceroy, the Archbifton and the Inquitition.

Next vnto this Handeth a small towns of the Spaniards by the Sea fide called Santa and next vnto Santa is another imall towne of Christians called Cannete. From hence they faile vnto a rich Connete Citie called Truxillo, being one of the principall townes of Permand containing about five hun-Truxille. dred houses. Then followeth Pana which hath to the number of two hundred houses. Leaung this towne they passe to Gnaisquil which standeth fortie leagues up into a great Bay or Riner, 10 Gusiaquil at the entrance of which River standeth Tumbez, a towne of the Indians, All this coast along Tumbez. from Atacama to Tumbez it never raineth, as I have before faid : fo that all the houses in their townes are not tyled, but covered with boards to keepe off the heate of the Sunne, for they feare Salfaperilla. noraine at all, Guaiaquil is the first place where it raineth, and here they gather Salfaperila. Here Ships built at is also great store of timber, and at this place they build many Ships. Hence they taile along the Guaraquil. coast to a small and poore towne called Puerto Viero, which in times past hath beene rich with Purte Vieis 2 Emralds : but now fince the leftones in regard of their plenty are growne nothing worth, this place where towne likewise is waxen very poore. Below this Village francet hanother called La Buend Emralds a-Venture : but whofoeuer goe thither must needes meete with enall fortune, the place it felte is La Buchaven so waterish and vinholesome. Here abide not aboue twentie men, who serue onely to transport 40 goods into a Citie standing fiftie leagues within the maine, in a Prouince called La governacion La governacion de Popaian. From Buena ventura and Popaian till you come to Panama there is no other towne, by de Posaian. region of the high Mountaines, the manifold Rivers, and the viholetomenetle of the Countrie, in Negros fled fro this place doe inhabit the Negros that run from their Maiters, and voon these Mountaines was their Mafters. Oxenham the English Captaine and his men taken as is before mentioned. Beyond their Mountains standeth the Citie of Panama, being a rich place, by reason that all the treature which commeth from Perm is brought thither, and it consisteth of about foure hundred houses. The coast run-

ning along betweene this Citie and Nucua Espanna is called Cofta rica. Next vnto Costa rica, which is a Mountainous and detolate place, lieth the coast of Nicaragua, being inhabited by the Spaniards, and having many good ports belonging to it and is frequenced with trade of Merchandize; but having no knowledge of the fituation thereof, nor of the towns therein contained, I furceafe to speake any more of it.

A certaine Viceroy of Nuena Espanna called Don Luis de Velasco caused certaine Ships to be The discovery built for the discovery of the Malucos and of the coast of China: which Ships in failing : hitherof the Philipp- ward from certaine Illands, eightie leagues diffant from the maine land, which the Spaniards, according to the name of their King, called The Philippinas : and having conquered one of their lands called Manilla, inhabited with a barbarous kinde of people, they built a fort and a towne thereupon, from whence they have trade with the people of China. Vnto their Illands they have four great Ships that vitually trade, two of them continually going, and two comming: so that fuch Spices and Silkes as the Portugals bring home out of the Est Indies, the very same doe the Spaniards bring from these Islands and from China, for Mexico the chiefe Citie of Nuena Espanna. The principall Port townes of the coast of Nuena Espanna are Guatules, and Acapulco.

All the Viceroyes and Gouernours that the King of Spaine fendeth for Pers and Nuena Ef-

CHAP.II. Iles of Salomon discouered, their bounds pudiscouered. Great storme. 1447

panna haue a custome, for the obtaining of his favour, to feeke and discouer new Countries. But the greatest and most notable discovery that hath beene from those parts now of late, was that of the Isles of Salomon, which were found in manner following. The Licenciate Castro being The discourse governour of Perm, fent forth a Fleete of Ships to discover certaine Islands in the South Sea, vpon of the Isles of the coalt of Pern, appointing as Generall of the fame Pleetea kiniman of his, called Aluares de Salomen, Mendanio, and Pedro Sarmiento as Lieutenant, and in the Viceadmirall went Pedro de Ortega. This Fleete departing forth of the hauen of Lima, and failing 800, leagues Westward off the coast of Pern, found certaine Islands in eleven degrees to the South of the Equino Ctiall, inhabited with a kinde of people of a yellowish complexion, and all naked, whose weapons are Bowes and Ar-10 rowes, and Darts. The Beafts that they faw here were Hogs and little Dogs, and they found some

Hens. Here also they found a muster of Cloues, Ginger, and Sinamon, although the Sinamon Cloues. Ginwere not of the best; and here appeared vnto them likewise some shew of Gold. The first Island ger and Sinzthat the Spaniards disconered, they named Santa Izabella; and here they built a small Pinnace. mon. with the which, and with their Ships Boate they found out betweene nine and fifteene degrees of Southerly latitude, rleuen great Illands, being one with another of eightie leagues in compasse. The greatest Island that they discourred was according vnto the first finder, called Guadalcanal, The Isle of on the coast whereof they failed 150. leagues, before they could know whether it were an Island Guadalcanal. or part of the maine land : and yet they know not perfectly what to make of it, but thinke that it may be part of that continent which stretcheth to the Streights of Magellan ; for they coasted 20 it to eighteene degrees, and could not finde the end thereof. The Gold that they found was voon

this Island, or maine land of Guadalcanal, whereas they landed and tooke a towne, finding small graines of Gold hanged up in the houses thereof. But because the Spaniards understood not the language of the Countrey, and also for that the Indians were very flout men, and fought continually against them, they could neuer learne from whence that Gold came, nor yet what store was

These Indians vie to goe to Sea in great Canoas, that will carrie one hundred men a piece, wherein they have many conflicts one against another : howbeit unto the Christians they could doe no great hurt; for that with a small Pinnace and two Falcons a few may ouercome one hundred of them. At this place foureteene men mistrusting nothing, rowed to land, to take in fresh 30 water whom on the fodaine certaine Indians in foure Canoas fet vpon, tooke the Ships Boate, and flew all the men therein; wherefore a man cannot goe on flore too flrong, nor yet be too warie in a strange land. Hereupon the Spaniards went on shore in their Pinnace, and burnt the Towne, and in this towne they found the small graines of Gold before mentioned. They were discovering of these Islands from one to another about foureteene moneths, at the end of which time (because that your the coast where they were, the winde continuing still in one place, might be an occasion of longer tarrying) they consulted which way to returne. Southward they

durit not goe for feare of great tempelts which are that way vivall : wherefore fayling to the North of the line, they fell with the coaft of Nuena Espanna; on which coaft they met with such terrible stormes, that they were forced to cut their mains maits ouer-boord, and to lye nine moneths beating it vp and downe in the Sea before they could get into any harbour of the Christians. In which time, by reason of euill government, and for lacke of victuals and fresh water, most of the men in their Admirall dyed; for five whole dayes together they had neither water Abundance of nor meate : but in the other Ships they behaued themselves so well, that the greater part of good vietuals them came fafe vnto the land. He that paffeth the Straits of Magellan: or faileth from the coast vpon the isles of Chili directly for the Malucos, must needes runne in fight of some of these Islands before spoken of. At which Illands lying to conveniently in the way to the Malacos, you may furnify your Anewrich felfe with plenty of victuals, as Hogs, Hennes, excellent Almonds, Potatos, Sugar-canes, with trade for Gold divers other forts fit for the fustenance of man in great abundance. Also among these Islands you shall have some quantity of Gold, which the Indians will give you in trucke for other commodi-50 ties. For the Spaniards in their discovery of these Islands, not seeking nor being desirous of Gold, brought home notwithstanding 40000, pezos with them, besides great store of Cloues and Gin-

ger, and some Smamon also, which is not so good as in other places. The discouerer of these Iflands named them the Illes of Salomon, to the end that the Spaniards Supposing them to be those of Salomon, Isles from whence Salomon fetched Gold to adorne the Temple at lernfalem, might be the more defirous to goe and inhabit the fame. Now the fame time when they thought to have fent colonies vnto these Islands, Captaine Drake entered the South Sea; whereupon commandement was given, that they should not be inhabited, to the end that such Englishmen, and of other Nations as passed the Straits of Magellan to goe to the Maluces, might have no succour there, but such so as they got of the Indian people.

A Town burns

Panama. Ofta rico.

bound.

THEA.

of Nicarasua.

The Iffaref

CHAP. XII.

Briefe extracts translated out of IEROM BENZOS, three Bookes of the New World, touching the Spaniards cruell handling of the Indians, and the effects thereof.

He ferued \$4. year es in the Span (b. Indian expeditions. C.3. C.3+



Nno 1641. Ierom Benzo went from Millaine to Smill in Spaine, and thence to the New World, where he was entertained of the Spaniards, and practifed with them the huntings of the Indians; which they did by lurking in couerts, till fome of the Natiues came within their reach; by bribing the Cacikes with trifles to procure captines, and other meanes. Peter Chalice came while we were thereto Amaracan with about 4000. flaves, and had brought many more, but with la-

bour, wearineffe, hunger, and griefe, for lofe of their Countrie and friends, many had perifhed in the way. Many also not able to follow in the Spaniards swift march, were by them killed to preuent their taking armes. A milerable spectacle to see those troopes of slaves naked, with their bodies rent, maimed, flarued: the mothers dragging or carrying on their shoulders their Indians spoiled, chil iren howling, the neckes of all, armes and hands chained; not any growne Maide amonest them which the spoilers had not rausshed, with so profuse lust that thence grew contagion and pernicious difeafes. The Sp milb horfemen in those warres vied quilted lackes with Launces and Swords; the footemen, Sword, Shield, and Croffe-bow, with lighter lackes. The moisture and

great dewes made Pecces vnferuiceable in those parts. The Illanders in Hispaniola leeing no hope of better, or place for worfe, killed their children, and then hanged themiclues. The women by the juice of a certaine hearbe caused abortions, that they might not procreate flaues to the Spaniards; others hanged themselues, as their husbands had done: some threw themselves from the tops of steepe hils, o hers into the Sea and Rivers; fome started themselves, and others with sharpe stones ripped and rent out their entrals: sothat of two millions there found at first, now scartely one hundred and fiftie perions remaine. Is this to convert Sauages to the Christian faith! The fame altogether hath happened in Cuba, Iamaica. Porto Ricco, and other places. Yea whatfoeuer flaues haue beene after carried into the I-3 flands, to preuent their defolation, though in incredible multitudes, have almost all perished with miferie. Once, in whatfoeuer places the Spaniards have displaied their colours, by their examples of crueltie they have left to the Natives eternall monuments of implaca-

L.3.C.1. Negro: lucs

Law of Bayon diuclish de-

After the native Islanders were killed with too much labour, the Spaniards procured slaves from Guinnee in great multitudes, and vied their feruices in the Mines; which being exhault, they employed them in Sugar-mils, and in breeding of Cattell. Some of the Spaniards are to cruell, that it a flaue hath not brought his diarie or day-foot, or otherwise hath angred his imperious Mafter, he strips him naked to cloath him with stripes (according to the Law of Bain, as they call it, denifed I thinke by some cruell Dinell) his hands and feete bound, and the prostrate sp flaue tied to some crosse timber, with a rod or roape he is beaten till the bloud issue from all parts: after which the Mafter droppeth fealding Pitch or Oyle over all that wretched corpes, and then washed with Pepper of the Countrie and Salt mingled with water, he lies on a boord in a sheete or blanket till his Mafter thinkeshim fit for labour. Others make a hole in the ground and thee fet him, his head onely excepted, all night long, which these Phistitians doe to cleanse and cute the vicers of corrupt bloud. If any dye in these torments, his Maiter hath no other punishment but to pay the King another for him. These cruelties caused the Negroes to flie and wander to boat, till gathering head together they grew dreadfull to the Spanife Ilanders, whom they (when they got any into their hands) repaied with like cruelties. While, I was in that Hand, their ar-Armie of 7000 mie was faid to containe 7000, men, infomuch that the Spaniards feared to be driven out by 50 thele Moores and Negros. And when as An. 1545, the Prelident Cerate viged Cefars Edict for the Indians liberie, the Iland was almost brought to a difert, not about 1100. Spaniards remaining therein ! which (the ftrangers increasing) were in danger to Loofe at once their his with the Hand. And the wonted meanes of getting wealth failing therein, few Spaniards are willing to flay there.

Oxenbans ftc-

c. 11.

Indians,

Numbre de Dios, in regard of the heate and moilture immoderate, is vnholefime, as also forthe See Drakes and Weiterne Marish or Fenne, whence are frequent funerals of the inhabitants. Not farre from it to the East, some fugitive Negros keepe in the woods, which have thine many Spariards, and have entred into league with the Indians, hooting likewife poiloned Arrowes, and killing all the Spaniards which they can get. Gotierez a Spanish Captaine going up the River of Suera, feathed 60 the Caethes of Suera and Chiuppa, and faid that he came thither to reduce them from their Idolatry and the Direls tyrannie, and to thew them the truth; namely, that Isfus Clerift the Some of God came from heaven to redeeme mankinde: and that he had brought a Price with lim. for no other purpose but to instruct them in Christianitie. It herefore (land he) errors your titues to the beneat

the Dinine Law, and to acknowledge the fourraigntie of Chatles the fifth, Cafar, King of Spaine, and Monarch of the whole world. The Indians antiwered nothing, and returned home. The next day the Gouetnour fent for two other Caciques by a Spaniard, which truffing on his promife, came, and were bound in his Chamber with hard viage. They had before given him 700. Duckets ; now he picked a quarrell with them, and extorted from one 2000. Duckets, wrought in the formes of fieres, Fishes, Birds, and other creatures : which the Gouernour seeing smaller then his expectation, caused a great fire to be kindled, and a cheft to be brought forth, threatning to burne him, if in foure dayes he did not fill it with Gold fix times; which hee promiting to doe, found meanes to eleane. Other Caciter of the Countrie hearing hereof, burned their houses, cut downer 10 their truite trees and corne, and feating a wildernesse to the Spaniards, fled to the Mountaines. The other Cache yet in durance, having beene often threatned with death except hee brought the Gold demanded, the Gouernour commanded to be cast to the Dogs : hee answered, that bee could not but marnell at the Governours vanitie, which had fo often threatned that which be had rather should be performed, then to line so miferable a life & contrary to his expectation, which had woluntarily come to him upon his promise. Hee added, that he meruailed much what kinde of creatures Christians were, which executed fuch mischiefes where some they same, and that the earth could longer beare and

nourith (nch crnell beafts to patiently.

But at last the Governour carried him prisoner in a miserable expedition, where at a turning the Gouernour demanding of a captine Indian, whether way would bring him to some Indian 20 habitation, he answered, he could not tell; whereupon he commanded his Negro slaues to kill him, which was done. Then he demanded of the Cacite, and having like aniwer, gaue like fentence. He presently threw downe his burden, and prepared his head to the fatall stroke, with fuch patience , that the Gouernour remitted it, and gave him his life. Three flarued Spaniards were there left, and after killed by the Indians. The Gouernour commanded the Does to be killed for food, keeping the prouisions left to himselfe. I gave my part to another, because of the Hungry March wormes therein; and went to the Gouernour, hoping to receive fomewhat of him, who fent me to the roots of trees to feed thereon. Then faid another Spaniard; Sir Gonernour, if wee may not have together in good and had fortune, warre you alove. Hereupon hee divided three pounds of Cheele into foure and thirtie parts amongst vs. Two dayes after, the Indians suddenly let on vs. 30 and flue the Gouernour as hee was doing his eafement. I with anothers Helmet escaped that showre of stones, wherewith it was then exceedingly battered; and the rest being staine, with

two others fied thorow a troupe of Indians making way to the Hills top, where wee found the Priest, with two others which had escaped by flight in the beginning of the fight, and after that, foure and twentie others joyned themselves to vs. The Indian perfixed vs. armed with our owne weapons, and dauncing about vs, cried in the Spanish tongue, Here is Gold Christian, bere is Gold. Two which had lurked in the Woods till the Indians were gone, told vs, that the Indians had carried away the head, hands and feet of the Gouernour, and of two Negres, the reft being spoyled were throwne into the River. If we had had but foure Horses (these they feare more then all armes) they had neuer adventured on vs. On foot the Spaniards are commonly overthere and times they had recent assertion and the state of the state o That which hath carried the Spaniards into those Prouinces, is onely courtousnesse, whatfo-

ener profession they pretend of Christian Faith. Neither will any of them stay in any place Examples of where Gold is not found. Antonius Sedegnus died with thought after three yeeres travell in couetoufnelle. where Gold is not found. Antenine Sedegma died with thought after three yeares trauet in Sedegma and Paris with feuen hundred men, not finding this golden Sun-finie, fiftie onely of his men returbis 700 men. ning. Soto Spent in Florida, what he had gotten in Pers. He threatned fifteene Cacikes, to burne Sotos acts in them, except they brought him to the place whence they had their Gold. These promised any Florida. thing to preuent present execution, and after twelve dayes wandring were sent away with their hands cut off. When he told a Cacike which vifited him with a Prefent, that he was a Christiana to the fonn of God, Creator of Heaven and Earth; and came thither to teach them the Divine Law: If the God, faid the Cacite, bids thee robbe, kill, burne, and commit all mischiefe, wee can nei- Pam, Hanace, ther beleeve Him, nor bis Law. Soto finding no Mine, died at last of the bloudy Fluxe. The like may be faid of Narnaez, twelue of whose companie fell mad with famine, and fell to biting and tearing each other. Of fixe hundred which hee carried forth, scarcely ten returned, which at Mexico reported that with breathing they had cuted the ficke, and had raifed three dead men to life. But I craue pardon of their holinesse, and shall easier beleeve that they killed four eliving men, then that they raifed halfe a dead one. Cortez fet forth by Velafquez gaue him no accounts

at all. Peter Aluarado left by Cortez at Mexico, fell upon the Indians amidft their dances , and flue them. And when Cortex had returned from the defeat of Narnaez, and befirged Mexico, Cortex and Al. 60 the Mexicans gathered all their Gold and Silver, and threw it into the Lake, and by no torments ustate. could bee compelled to confesse where it was; although Cortex tortured the Kings Scribe to death, and put the King also to vaine tortures for that purpose. Some fay that Cortex stran-

When I first trauelled in Nicaragua, I was entertained by a principall Cacike of those parts,

salled Gonzallus, a man of scuentie yeeres of age, and well skilled in the Spanish Tongue. Hee Indiana conceit one morning, litting neere him, fixed his eyes on my face, faid, Christian, what are Christians? they require Maiz, Honie, Silke, a Garment, an Indian Woman to lie with; they demand Gold and Silver, Christians will not worke; they are Gamsters, Dicers, lend and blasphemous. When they goe to Church to beare Masse, they back bite the absent, and they strike and wound each other. Hee concluded, that Christians were not good. I said, they were the bad, and not the good, which did fuch things : hee replied, Where are those good? for I never yet faw any but bad. I asked, why they fuffered Christians to enter their borders. Hee answered, Honest friend, thus it is : When the same of the cruelty of Christians, which where some they came, filled all with fire, sword and robbers, differof the streets of Columns of the street of t Councell, of all our friends, and generally decreed rather to die then to yeeld our felnes subjects to the Christians. When they badentred our Borders, wee made head against them, but most of ve after lone fight terrified by the Horses, fled. And wee sent two mellengers to destre pardon, and peace; with no other purpese but to game time to re-enforce our firengib. Wee carried them many presents, entertained them with dances, and within three dayes fell on them againe, but with ill successe; we seeke peace agains, and after that by common confent decree rather to die then to ferne the Christians, and to kill him who. Court foull fire from the battell. Tour wee take Armes. But our Wines come weeping to us, and befeech verather to ferne the Christians, then to die Samefully : atherwise, to kill them first, with their children, that they may not after loffe of their bufbands, come into the power of those bearded and cruell man. aren, was suc; may not more my bearts, and wee voluntarily submitted our persons and goods to the 20 greedy Christians. Some yes, prounked by wrongs, rebell; but were punished grienously by the Christians. ans, not frame the very Infants. Others also which were innocent, were made flames; and wee were then possessiber of our wines, nor children, nor any thing else. Many impasient bereof, killed their children , others hanged, and others familhed themselves : till the King of Caltues Proclamation, by

The Indians, especially the sonnes of their Cacikes which can write and reade, confesse Gods Commandements good; but wonder that wee, of whom they have them, doe not keepe them. and vie thus to lay. Ho fir Christian , God forbids to take bie Name in vaine, and then continually for enery cause, bee it mener so light, swearest and forswearest. God sayth, Thon shalt not beare falle per curry cause, oce is merer per infort, primer but flander, and fleade end. Oed commands to love your go winesse: but you Christians dee nathing but slander, and fleade end. Oed commands to love your go meighbours as your scluer, and to for give one another: You oppresse the parts, are regorous to your Denters, and if there be any poore Christians, you give them nothing, but fend them for reliefe to our boulet. ver, and 5 tours et any poor cultivaries, you goe to be the christians God, for the they are comes bitter, for this they have flabshed ver, and done fo many mifchiefes, for this they are never quiet, but diee, blass being, emfe, quarell, fielde, committ rapes, and too bhass being being are never quiee, bit.
There are Monkes which perpetrate those things openly by day-light, which others would

which wee were made free, made an end of those miseries.

Monkes and

bee ashamed to doe by night. And a Franciscan publikly preached, that there was neither Priest, nor Monke, nor Bishop in india, worthis the name of a good man. For they all had given themselves so couetousnesse, and still went to the wealthie Countries, and avoided the poorer. For these words he was apprehended, and carried to Guatimala. I have also heard Priests discour- 40 fing together, that they came out of Spaine into India for gaine, and nothing elfe, A Caffee fonne, when hee was a childe of great towardnesse, proued afterwards very lewd; and being asked the reason, laid, Since I was made a Christian, I have learned to sweare by the name of God, and by the Crosse, and by the words of the holy Gospell, and to biaspheme by the life of God; and I denie him, nor doe I beleene. I have further learned to play with the Die, and never to peake truth. I have alfogot mee a Sword to make frayet, and now want nothing to line like a Christian, but a Conceibut, which timene to frang home forth. I once reproved an Indian, for dicing and blashemie: Wee, faith he, learned these examples of your selves. And the Indians which are so lewd, are such vival. ly as have beene brought up by fome Spaniards which studie nothing elfe. These for the most Span Miracles, part, are the Miracles which the Spaniards have done amongst the Indians.

Many other Indians being demanded whether they bee Christians, answere, they are, because the Bishop hath crossed and blessed them, they have built a Church, set up there our Ladies Image, and gotten a Bell. I asked one whether he were a Christian : What, faid he, would you have me bee a Bishops servant ten or twelve yeeres, and keepe bis Mule? Others asked thereof, fay, that 2 Priest washed their heads soure or fine times, &c. Hee reciteth the Letter of Didacin Lopez de Zunega, and other passages of Spannards vices.

Lib.3. c.1. Triumuirate.

In the third Booke Benzo relateth the Acts of the Spaniards in Pern. Francis Pizarro, Diego Almagro, and Fernard Luques a Prieft, enter into a league of Triumuirate for the Southerne Difcoueries, and therein to share equally, both the care, charge and gaine. They procure ships, and convenient provisions, and with two hundred and twentie Souldiers, Pizarro and Almagra, in 62 the yeere 1526. one a little after the other, fet fayle for Panama. Pizarro hauing fayled three hundred miles, goeth on land, and is repelled by the Indians, himfelfe wounded, and many flaine. Hereupon he returneth to Panama. Almagra went vp a River in another Region, and was kinda ly entertayned, and brought thence three thousand Duckets of Gold, with which in his re-

turne he came neere to the place where Pizarro had received his bad entertainment, and him felfe turne necessity and the series and many of his Souldiers. Being comme to Panama with Second in fight with them loft one of his eyes, and many of his Souldiers. those showes of Gold, they redintegrate their delignes, and with two hundred Souldiers, and Voyage, many Indian flaues fetting layle, landed in another place, where they also were beaten backe to their thips, and many flaine. Thence they went to the Ile Gorgon, a small and defart Hand fixe 1.Gorgon, leagues from the Continent. The Golden hopes would not permit them to give over that which this strength could not enable them to winne, and therefore Almagro is lent to Panama to gen enforce and encreale their numbers. Hee returned with eightie nue Spaniards, and found Pis Third espedianters. zarre, and the rest almost starued. Being refreshed they set layle, and againe landing were reto pelled with the loffe of fome Souldiers, and went to a defart Hand, which they called Cack-Hand, for the thape of the Cape or Promontorie. Almagre againe returneth to Panama for more

Souldiers to bee reuenged on there Indians. Most of the Spaniards cursing their conetouinesse, would have returned with him, but were not permitted, no not to write to their friends; which yet tome clotely did complayning of the Countrie, the leaders and their defignes. Pedro de las Russ was then newly Gouernour at Panama, and hearing hereof prefently fent one to Gocke-Hand, cott Hand, to Pizzero that hee should not detay nearly there against his will, whereupon they all faue fourteene departed. These lived on fish till Almagro came, who also could bring no supply by rea-

At last they agreed to sayle by the shoare, and search if any riches there presented themselves. Fourth expe-20 They fayled hoe hundred miles, and came to Chira, a Prouince of Peru, and there going on shoare dition. tooke forme cattell, and Indians to learne the Spanish Tongue. Then returning to Tambez, when no Spaniard had so much courage, Peter of Candise (a Greeke borne in Candis) adventured to goe Peter of Candis on shoare, which he did, armed with a two-hand Sword. This spectacle of a bearded man was no little wonder to the Natiues. The Gouernour vied him kindly, leading him into the Fortreffe, wherein was a Temple to the Sunne, full of Aupendious riches. At the gate hee found certaine beafts like Lions, and two Tigres, but harmleffe. And when the Gouernour would have given him at his departure certaine pieces of Gold, hee feemed to contemne them vtterly, fo to diffemble the true cause of his comming. Then comming abourd he related what hee had seene: and they with joy returned to Panama.

Hereupon Pizarrois fent to Spaine, by Almagro and Luquez, to obtaine of Cefar the conquest Capa of that Province, for which purpose they borrowed zeco. Duckets. He not withfranding makes the fute in his owne name and accordingly obtayning commission, returned with his brethren Fernandez, Gonzales, John, Pizarri, and Martin de Aleantara, Hence grew a quarrell, his partners efteening him perfidious, till Game compounded the matter twixt him and Almegro (Las. ques being excluded, and therefore afterwards furnamed, The Foole) that Almagre (hould employ his wealth, and therefore participate in the honours, fwearing each to other, and taking the Sacrament thereupon. Thus Picarro went from Pasana with 150. Souldiers, and many Hories, Tith Voyage leauing Almagro thortly to follow. Hee came to Colonchia, thence to the Hand Pana, where hee Pana now was well entertained till rapes and robberies made the Natiues take Armes, which was to their Saint tage 40 greater loffe, the Spanards getting the victorie. Thence Pizarre went to the Continent of Tame

bez, fiftie miles dittant, Where the Natives refused his friendship, and sought to oppose him: but he by night entred the Riuer, and being guided by vnpassable wayes made a great slaughter of them, spoyled the Citie, and robbed the Sunnes Temple. Atababba King of Peru, was then at Caffiamalea, who hearing that a ftrange bearded Peo. Caff.

ple had robbed his Subiects, fent to Prearro, threatning him, if he continued thus or there. Pi. Atabe zarro answered, that hee was sent by his Emperour to succour those which defired his friend- Malesaja. thip, nor might he fafely returne to him, except hee had first scene his Royall person, and declared to him things good both for his body and foule. Thus hee trauels thorow Chira, and by the Lords in the way is fued to for friendship, which hated Atabalba. Meeting with a nauigable to River, he layd the foundation of a Colonie there called Saint Michaels, and shared the spoyles saine Mithels. amongst his followers. Atabaliba derided their paucitie, and sends to them, if they loued their

lives to be gone. But he proceeded to Caffiamales, and thence fent meffengers to the King (then two miles oif) to fignifie his defire of acquaintance. Fernand Pistere told him, that hee was brother to the Leader who was sent from the Pope and Cefar, to defire his friendship, and therefore defired audience, having some speciall matters to deliver to him, after which hee would bee gone. The King aniwered, hee would first have him depart his confines. The night following they prepared themselves for fight. The next day the King was in Pompe carried on mens shoulders, guarded with five and twentie thousand Indians. Friar Vencent de valle virids a Do- Prier Vincente minican, carrying in the one hand a Crosse, in the other a Breuiarie, went to him, and by an In- embasiage, not

60 terpreter, fignified that hee came to his Excellency by the mandate of the Imperiall Maieflie, in Gods name. and that with the authoritie of the Roman Bishop, Vicar of the heavenly Saviour, which hath given to Cefer the Lands before vakmowne, and now first discovered, that hee might fend this ther learned and godly men, to preach his most holy Name publikely to those Nations, and to "So he calls free them from Diabolicall errours. Having thus faid, he gave to the King, the Law of God ", and his Bremary.

fayth, that he had created albthings of nothing, and beginning with Adam and Ene, tells how Christ had assumed slesh in the wombe of the Virgin, and died on the Crosse, after which he rose againe, and ascended into Heauen. Then auerring the articles of the resume tion and of enerls. Ring life, he sheweth that Christ appointed Peter bis first Vicar for the government of the Church. and that this power succeeded to his successors the Popes, declaring lattly the power and wealth of Cafar the King of Spaine, Monarch of the whole world. Therefore the King should doe as be. same him, if he accepted his friendship, and became his tributarie and vassall; and if lastly hee refected his falle gods and should become a Christian, Which if he would not doe voluntarity, let him know, that be should thereunt o be compelled by force and armes.

The King answered, that not viwillingly hee would accept the friendship of the chiefe Mo- to narch of the world, but for a free King to pay tribute to a man whom hee had neuer feene, fee med scarsely honest or inst. As for the Pope, the must needs appeare to be a foole, and a shameless. man, which was so bountifull in giving that which is none of his owne. Touching Religion. he denied that hee would alter that which hee professed; and if they beleeved in Christ, whom they confessed to have died on the Crosse, they also beleeved in the Sunne which never died. And how (fayth he to the Frier) doe you knowe that the Christians God created all thingsof no. thing, and died on the Croffe. The Frier answered, that hee was taught it by his Booke, and withall reached it to him, which he looking on, faid, it faid nothing to him, and threw it to the ground. The Frier presently tookevp his Booke, and cried amaine to the Spaniards, Gee to Christians, oce to, and make them fmart for fo hainous a deed, the Goffels are derided and throme a. 10 way. Kill thefe Dogs which fo flubbornly despife the Law of God.

Presently Przerro gives the signe, and leades forth his men. The Gunnes amaze the Indiana. asalfo the Horfes, Drummes and Trumpets. Eafily are they hereby, and terrour of their Swords chafed, and Atabalba himtelfe taken by Pizarro, which commanded the footmen: without hurt or flaughter of any Spaniard. Ferdinand his brother, Captaine of the Horfe, made a great flaughter among the Indians, sparing neither age nor fexe, and filling the wayes with Carkaffer. The Priet alfo all the time of the battell animated the Spaniards, admonithing them to vie the thrust rather then the Broke with their Swords, for feare of breaking them.

The next day Pizarro visits his prisoner, and giveth him good words, who grieved with his The next day rezerro vines an principle, and Sold and Silver veffels (fo that they st should not breake them) as should fill up the roome as high as a man could reach. But when halft fo much was not brought in a moneths space, they perswaded Pizarro to kill him. The King excused himselfe by the length of the way, that it could not come in so some. If they would fend to Cufee, they might fee them folues cause to credit him. Sete is fent thicher with two Spemiards, which met Indians all the way laden with treasure. Almagra came to the sharing of Pizare notwithflanding retayned his former purpose to kill him, that so hee might entry

Cap.56

the Countrey. Atabaliba defired to bee fent to Cafar, which hee refuied. And none that consented to his death, came to a prosperous end, When Pixarre had told him of the Sentence, hee exclaimed bitterly, and then turning with his denotions to the Sunne, hee expo 40 stulated with Powers for breaking his eath, not onely to restore him to libertie wpon his ranfome, but to depart out of his Countrie: but hee commanded his Negros to execute him, which with a cord faitned to a flicke, and wrung about his necke was toone dispatched. Then marched hee to Cafeo, and was encountrered by Quifquiz, Atabalibu Captaine, whom hee ouerthrew, and entred Cufco by force, and got there more prey then before by Asabaliba. The Souldiers tortured the Inhabitants to confesse their treasures ; yea some killed the Indians in sport, and gaue them to their Dogges to eate. After this hee begannethe Cite of Kings, on the River of Lima, and made Almagro Governour of this new Province. Cafar also gaue him primiledge to bee Marshall of Pern, and to conquer three hundred miles further then Pizarros conquest, for himselte. Hence arose suspicions and icalousies of Pizar- 19 ro to Almagre, and after some quarrels Almagre is sent to Chili by Pizarre, so to ridde his hands honourably of him. New Oathes also pailed. Hee passeth ouer the snowy Hills, where divers both Men and Horles were frozen to death. Picarre receiveth foone after, the ritlect Marqueffe, from Cafar.

Mango Inga, brother of Atabaliba, whom Francis Pizarro in those broyles had crowned, was by Fernandez Pizarro taken and committed to chaines in Cufco: and vpongreat promites by his brother lohn freed: who feeing the Spaniards tooke a courfe of robbery rather then wants rebelled, flue many Spamards at their Mines, and fent a Captaine to Cufco, which tooke it, and flue lobn Pizarro, with some Spaniards. The Spaniards againe recoursed it, and againe lost it Mango belieging it with an hundred thousand Indians, which burnt it, and slue the Spanieds, 53 The Marquelle fent Diego Pizarro, with feuentie Spaniards, against Mango; but not one of them was left to carrie tidings of their deftruction. About the fame time Morgonius had like faccelle

with his Spanis Band, going to relieue Cusco. Gongales Tapia wastent with eightie horse, but

he and most of his were flame neere Guamanga. Gaeta another Captaine with his fiftie Spani

ands ranne the same fortune. The Marquesse sends Godoies with fortie Horse, but he being affavled, and feeing his men flaine, fled, and brought newes to Lima. Then did the Marqueile fend Peter Lerma with fiftie Horfe, and followed himselfe, and slue many of the Indians in battell; two hundred Horles, and foure hundred Spaniards, had beene loft, neither could hee heare of his brethrenany thing. He sent therefore to Cortefe, to Truxille, Nicaragua, Panama, to Alonso Aluarado, who first came to his fuccour with three hundred Spaniards, the most Horsemen. He overthrew Tizoia (Mangos chiefe Commander) with 50000. Indians, and againe in another battell. Means while Almagro (whom the Marqueffe thought to bee dead) returneth out of Chili.

which had not answered his expectations, the fame whereof caused Mange, fearing to be hem-To med in of all fides, to leave Cufer, (delpairing to recover his efface) with twenty thousand Indians, fetling himselfe on the Mountaines over Guamanga. When Gafca the Prefident fent for himafter, promifing him peace, he refuied, as warned by Acabalibas example. Almagro would have entred Cules in his owne right, as Governour, which Fordinand Picture refused till he had leave from the Marqueffe. But he by night entred, and imprisoned both Gonzales and Ferdinale Pizarro. The next day hee was proclaimed Governour, according to the Imperial commission. He hearing of Alwarado, and fearing his comming, fent to him Mellengers which Alwarado itaved but was foone after taken by Almagro in his Tents.

Then doth hee returne to Cuico pompous, swearing to cast out all the Pizarrifts. Aluarado and Gonzales corrupting their keepers get out of prison, and acquaint the Marquelle with thele 20 things, who prouided five hundred men to march against him, but the case was compromitted. Ye; did the Marquesse fer men to murther Almagro by the way as hee should come to the place appointed, which tooke no effect, hee being warned thereof. After this they are reconciled, Onthis going before and after, which foone after were broken, and brake out into open warres, in which Almage was taken, fentenced to death, which no pleading, appeale, interceffion Almage put to could reverfe; but he was first strangled in prison, and then beheaded by Ferdinand Pizarro, who death had before beene his prisoner, His Father is not knowne; hee left a Sonne by an Indian Concubine, bearing his owne name Diego.

The Marquesse sent his Brother Ferdinand to Spaine, with the processe of Almagro, and the Kings hers, In the meane time one Rada a friend of Almagro, with yong Diego ha for confining to against the Marquelle, who contemning their meannesse, was by them saine in his owne house with his halfe brother Martin de Alcientara: Diego Almagio invades the government, and makes all to (Weare to him till Gold had otherwife prouided. Her gotth to Cufes, and there layeth Garcia Alumade, who had the best Sortells, and would have done as much for him.

Gefar hearing of these browles fent the Licentiate Paces di Cafire thither with commission. betwick whom and Diege was fought a bloudy battell, three hundred slaine, on Cafari fide one Vacca de Cafro hundred and fifthe. Dago fleeth to Cufee, but by Rodering Salazar, on whom hee had bestowed cuts off Diego. many benefits, was betrayed to Passa, who cut off his head.

About this time the Decree for the Indian libertie was promulged and Blafen Numer Vela made Vice-roy of Pers, who arriving at Numbre de Dios, A. 1544, there met with many Spa- Vice-roy Vela.

40 mards which had gotten much by the fale of Indian flaves; hee committed to the Officers, and would have conficated their money, as against the late Law; which being done by him in a place out of his iurifdiction, it was upon interceffion restored. Going to Panama hee causeth the Indians to be freed, at Tumbez he meets with a Priest and a servant of Gonzales Pszarro, which had beene in the battell against Almagro, and hanged them both. He executed a Frier allo which had taxed the securitie of Casar Edick, and ill rewarding those which had served him. And whileshe Capata would remit nothing of vemost rigour, he procured the hate of all, which after brake forth into a rebellion. He committed Vacca de Castro into prison, whereupon the Spaniards choic Gonzales Pizzarro their Leader, Gouernor, and Procurator generall of the Person Prouinces. The Vice-roy also put the Kings Factor to death, whose brother the Licenciat Carnaial sware to be avenged of him. The Vice-roy after this was taken and imprisoned, but soone after sentenced to be sent back 50 to Spaine by Aluarez, who at Tumbez freed him. His brother Vela Nunnez leeking to raife forces Cap. 12 for him was taken and executed. Civill wars grew hot, a battel was fought betwint Pizarro and the vnfortunat Vice-roy there taken, whom Carnaial in reuenge of his brothers death canfed to

be done to death. Gasca, a man of great subtilty, was sent to appeale those affaires; who made the Indians to cap. 22. beare the carriages of his Armie on their thoulders, chained on a rowe, to present their flight; fome fainting under the weight of their burthens, others with extreme thirft. Those which could not march with the Armie the Spaniards freed by cutting off their heads, to avoide the

delay of the chaine: or if they were tied with ropes, they rannethem thorow with their wea-60 pons: of some they cut off the legs, of others the nose, or armes. Gonzales Pizarro the chiefe of the Rebels, overcame Centenns in one battell, but in another was taken by Galca, and executed; and after him his Camp-maiter Carnaial, a cruell man, which would deride his owne Countrimen, when he executed them; bidding them, because they were Gentlemen horsemen. chule, which tree they would hang on. Gafea ordained that the Indians should pay tribute to

Ferd, (ent ro in prifon. The Marquelle

Mango Inca

his acts. * The Cirie:

fome fay they held the Castle. Spanift dif-

1454 Spaniards called Viracocha and bated. Peru Language and Letters. L 1 B.V II.

their Lords onely of such things as the Gountrie yeelded. For before, the Spaniards forced them by tortures to bring them Gold: if any not having it fled those torturers into the Woods, the Soundards hunted them out with Dogs, and many to found were tornewith Dogs, others hanged themiclues. Once; the men of Pers conceived to hard an opinion of the Spaniards, and of their era lies, that they not onely denied them to be the former of God, but thought that they were not borne into the world like other men, supposing that so sierce and cruell a creature could not be prescreated of man and woman. They sailed them therefore Viracochie, that is, Sea froth, as if they thence had received originall. Nor can any alter this their opinion fo deeply rooted. but God Almightie; taying, The winder overthrowe trees and houses, fire burnes them, but thefe Viracochie denoure all toings, in attably facting Gold and Silver, which as Jone as they have getten, they to play away at Dice, warre, will one awarber, robbe, blaffberne, wickedly for fine are and device God, never peake strust; and vestbey have poyled of our Counsese and fortunes.

Laitly they curie the Sea, which hath brought to the Land fo fierce and dreadfull an iffue. If Lasked for a Christian, they would not answers, nor looke on mee. But every while could lay. There goeth a Urracochie. They hid their ansient treatures, that the Spaniards should not finde them; laying, that all which they got, in comparison of the chisklen, was but as a graine of Maiz to a dilhfull. Some they buried in the Earth, and some cherk theew into the Sea. &c. Some city outled in the series and the series are series and the series and the series are series and

Observations of things most remarkable, collected out of the first part of the Commentaries Royall, written by the Inca GARCILASSO DE LA VEGA, Naturall of Cozco, in nine Bookes, Of the Original, Lines, Conquests, Lawes and Idolatries of the Incas, or Ancient Kings of Peruhand and and the

His Authors of the blend of the Incree or as about call thous Ingas, Emperent of Fig. Grouper (9, 100 tenns of 100 february 10 febr Paruan occurrente, Of he Floridan Hilleria wee have analy bonrowed a few motes,

bringing on an Stage a Portugall, spenningle of that leaves, is an income parties, our near Ait or Booker, our of the uther I purposed uper citier above, that them might have a Perusa, fleake of Pour. but the Worke growing fo great, and wee having out of Acottagend for many other spreferred formuch before, fearing to clay the Reader with fulnelle fimbich map, if not bere fatte fiel, goo to the Anthour) have principally collected fuch things, as estimated for had necessitive for fully enformation received and decement their Readers, whom this a surface sorrelisticates of better missingence. Before, the bee fernes to bold counterpose, so drawing things from their original, with our Mcxican Pitture-

Tongue. Three pronunciations.

Monie.

L.8.c. Z.

Ex Descritions. THe Language generall of Pers, both three manner of pronunciations of fome tylladles much Octobe 18/16 different from the Spanish, in which variety of pronunciation lieth the different figures. tions of the same word. One way in the lips, another in the palate, and the third in the throat. The accent is almost alway in the last tyllable but one; sildome so the tyllable before that, and never in the last of all, as some ignorant of the Tongue have affirmed. That Language of Cuzco b.4, f.g i. x. L. doth allowant thefe letters following, b, d, f. g, i contonant, the fingle I (they wie the double if as on the other fide they pronounce not the double rr, in the beginning or midst of a word, 32 but alway fingle) and a : fo that of the Spanish Alphabet they want eight letters, accounting the fingle I, and double rr. Hence they hardly pronounce Spanish words in which their letters are. Neither is there any plurall number, but certaine particles which fignifie pluralitie, otherwife the fingular ferues for both numbers.

In my time about 1560, and twentie yeeres after, in my Countrie there was no money coyned, but they reckoned by weight, the marke, or owner; as in Spaine they reckon by Duckets, fo in Pera by Pezos or Cattellans, euery Pezo of Silver being foure hundred and fiftie Marauedies,

and reduced to Spanish Duckets, enery fine Pezos are fixe Duckets.

The first Brook A Not 1484. Alonfo Sanchez of Huelua, in the Countie of Nuclia, traded in a small ship from 60 of the fifthpart. A Spaine to the Canaries, and thence to Madera. In this his triangular trade, hee was one day taken with a tempelt, which carried him twentie and eight or nine dayes hee knew not whence nor whither, and then the tempest ending, hee arrived at an He (which fome thinke to bee Hi-(Baniola) where he went on land, and tooke the height. Hee wrote all occurrents, and after 2

CHAP.13. First voiage to America and Peru. Names and traditions of Peru. 1455

tedious voyage arrived at Tercera, but five of seventeene being lett, which all died there (ipent This Spanishrewith their ill passage) at Christopher Colon or Columbia his house, which gave him that heart and port some of courage to the difcourry of the New World.

ourige to the discours, and 1513, discoursed the South Sea, & was thereof made Adelantado, there deny see and the conquest of those Regions granted him by the Catholike Kings. He made three or four [up.ca.1.6.4. Ships for discourty, one of which passed the line to the South, failing along the coast; and seeing To. 1,2,1 have an Indian Fisherman at the mouth of a River, foure of the Spaniards went ashore faire from the here guennis

place where he was, being good runners and fwimmers to take him.

The Indian margading what kinde of creature the Ship under faile might be, was taken in the the particulars to mids of his mule and carried a shipboord. They asked him by signes and words (being somewhat are so full and refreshed after that dreadfull furprize and bearded fight) what Countrie that was, and how cal- plaine in this refreihed after that dreadfull Jurprize and bearded ngnt) what Countrie that was, and now can author where-led. The Indian not violeritinding what they demanded, answered and told them his proper as Geman Suita name, faying Beru, and added another word, faying Pelu: as if he should have faid, if yee aske neither in the me what I am, my name is Bern, and if you aske me whence, I was in the River, Peln being the man, nor time. common name of a River in that language. The Christians conceived that hee had vinderstood hor place, &co common name of a River in that language. The Christians conceived that nee that vincettood is agreed on: them, and answered to the purpose; and from that time Anno 1515, or 1516, they called by fee Gim 22. the name of Peru that great and rich Empire, corrupting both names, as they vie in Indian words. 613. Some later authors call it Piru. After the discouery of the Incas Kingdome the name still conti- Name of Peru nued, howfoeuer the Natines to this day (feuentie two yeares fince the conqueit) will not take whence and 20 it in their mouthes, although they speake with Spaniards and understand them; neither have how, they one generall name for all those Provinces, as Spine, Italy, France with vs. but call each by

its proper name; and the whole Kingdome they called Tanantinfism, that is to lay, the fourth may below part of the World. That River alto where they tooke the Indian, was after by the Spaniards called read or china.a Pern. Tucatan received the name from like accident, the first discourrers asking the place, the In- name no: ther dian answering telletan, telletan, that is, I understand you not, which they vinderstood of the pro- knowne, &c. per appellation, and corruptly called the place Tucatan.

From Panama to the Civie of Kings, the failing is very troublesome, by reason of Southerne windes which alway runne on that coast, as also of many currents: these forced the Shippes in Sir F. Dr. ete that youage to make large boords of fortie or fiftie leagues into the Sea, and then againe to land- teacher of na-30 ward; vutil Fraceis Drake an Englipman (which entred by the Magellas (trait 1 779.) taught been them a better course of folios sun or three honder Heavy the Magellas (trait 1 779.) taught

them a better courie of failing two or three hundred leagues into the Sea, which the Pilots beforedurst not doe, being searcfull of calmes, if they were once one hundred leagues from land,

otherwise also vincertaine and ignorant.

Touching the original of the Incas Kings of Perm, this author affirmeth, that when hee was a childe, his mother reliding in Cafeo her Countrie, enery weeke there came to vilite her some of Atabasica or her kindred which had escaped the tyrannies of Asasbualloa, at which time their ordinary dif Atabalpa his course was alway of the originall of their Kings, of their Maiettie and great Empire, Conquetts, cruekies. and Gouernment : fuch discourses the Incas and Pallas hold in their vilitations, bewailing their loiles. Whiles I was a boy I reioyced to heare them as children delight to heare tales, but being 40 growne to fixteene or feuenteene yeares of age, when they were one day at my Mothers in this

discourse, I spake to the ancientest (my Mothers Vncle) desiring him to tell me what he knew of their first Kings, feeing they kept not memory of their antiquities, as the Spaniards vie in writing, which by their Bookes can tell all their antiquities and changes which have happened fince God made the World. I defired him to tell me what traditionary memorials he had or their Originals. He willing to satisfie my request, recounted to me in manner following, adusting mee to lay vo thele layings in my heart.

In old times all this region was untilled and overgrowne with bushes, and the people of those times sixed Indian tibles as wilde beafts, without religion or policie, without towne or boufe, without tilling or fowing the ground,

without raiment, for they knew not how to worke Cotten or Wooll to make them garments. They lived by nals. two and two, or three and three, in caues and holes of the ground, eating graffe like beafts, and rootes of trees, and wilde fruits, and mans flelb. They concred themselves with leaves, and barkes of trees, and skins of Beafts, and others in leather. Once they lined as wilde heafts, and their women were in common and brutish. Our Father the Sunne (this was the Incas manner of speech , because they derined their pedegree from the Sunne; and for any besides the Incas to say so, was blash bemie, and incurred stoning) seeing men live in this fashion, tooke pittie on them, and sent from beauen a Sonne and a Daughter of his owne, to instruct men in the knowledge of our Father the Sunne, and to worship him for their God; to give them lawes also and precepts of humane and reasonable course of life in civill fashion, to dwell in houses and townes, to husband the earth, to fowe and fee, to breede cattle. With thefe ordenances our father the Sunne placed these his two children in the lake Titicaca, eightie leagues from Cuico; and gave them a

60 barre of Gold two fingers thicke, and halfe a yard long, for a figne that where that barre frould melt with one blow on the ground, there ther thould place their residence and Court. Laster, bee commanded that when they had reduced the people to ferue him, they Bould uphold them in instice with clemencie and gentlenesse, behaving themseines as a putifull Father dealeth with his tender and beloved children, like as he bimselfe gaue them example in giving ligh; and heate to all the world, causing the seedes and grass

1456 Inca-traditions of Manco Capac & Mama Ocllo the first Incas, LIB, VII.

to grow, and the trees to fruelifie, the cattle to encrease, the seasons to be faire, and encompassing the world once enery day: that they hould imitate him, and become benefactors to the Nations, being fent to the earth for that purpole. Hee constituted also and named them Kings and Lords of all the Nations which they fould mistruit and civilize.

After these instructions he less them, and they went up from Titicaca translling to the North, still as ther went firshing with that barre of Gold, which never melted. Thus they entred into a resting place feuen or eight leagues Southwards from this Citie Culco, now called Pacarec Tampu, that is, morning ileepe, and there flept till morning, which be afterwards caused to be peopled, and the inhabitants boalt greatly of this name, which the Inca imposed. Thence they translled to this valley of Cuico, which was then a wilder wildernesse, and flaid first in the billocke, called Huanacanti, in the midft of the Citte; and to there making proofe, bis Golden Barre easily melted at one stroake, and was no more scene. Then said our Incato his Sister and Wife, In this Valley our Father the Sunne commands vs to make our aboades and therefore O Queene and Sister, it is meete that each of us goe and doe his endeuour to affemble and draw bither the people to instruct and benefit them as our Father the Sunne hath enioned vs. From the billocke Huanacauri our first Kings went each to gather together the people. And because that is the the first place on which they were knowne to have set their feets, and thence to have gone to doe good to men; wee builded there a Temple to worship our Father the Sunne, in memorie of this benefit

The Prince went to the North, and the Princesse to the South : to all the men and women which they The Prince went to the 19010, and the 17 their Father the Sunne had sent them from heaven to found in those wilde thickets, they space, saying that their Father the Sunne had sent them from heaven to 20 become instructors and benefactors to all that dwell in that land, to bring them from a brutifi life to cimilitie, with many other words to like purpose. Those Sanages seeing these two persons attired and adorned with ornaments, which our Father the Sun had given them, and their eares bored and open, as their de Cendants have continued, and that in their words and countenance they appeared like children of the Sun, and that they came to give them sustenance; they gave them credit, and reverenced them as children of the Sun, and ob ayed them as Kings, and calling other Sanages and acquainting them berewith many men and women came together and followed our Kings whether they would conduct them. Our Primces gane order that some frould be occupied in providing victuall in the fields, least hunger should force them backe to the Mountaines; others in making cottages and boules, the Inca instruction them bow Cules or Cores they foodld doe it. In this manner this our Imperial Citie began to be peopled, being divided into two fift inhabited halues, Hanan Cozco and Harin Cozco, that is, the high and the low Cozco, these which the King 30 drew thitber dwelling in the high, those which followed the Queene in the low. One halfe had not more primitedges then the other, but they were all equall; but those names remained as a memoriall of those which each had attracted onely those of high Cozco were as the elder, and the other reduced by the Queen as the second sons of the same parents; or as the right band and left. In like fort the same division was beld in all the great townes and small of the Empire, by the high linages and the low, the high and Moreoner, the Inca taught themen to doe the offices pertaining to their fexe, as to till the Land, to

fowe feedes (freming them which were profitable) teaching them to make instruments for that purpofe, to make trenshes for the water, & c. The Queene on the other fide taught the women to worke in Cotten and 10 Wooll, and to make garments for their husbands and children, with other boufhold offices. Thefe Indians thus civillized, went thorow the hilt and wilde places to fearch out others, and acquainted them with thefe affaires, telling them what the children of the Sun had done for them, Shewing for proofe thereof their Vie of Armes, new garments, and meates, and so brought much people buther, that in fixe or seuen yeares the Inca bad trained many to armes for their defence, and to force those which refused to come to him. He taught them Bowes and Arrowes, and Clubs, &c. And to be fort, I fay that our first Father Inca reduced all the East to the Riner Paucattampu, and Westward conquered eight leagues to the great Riner Apurimac, and nine leaques Southward to Quequetana. In thu Region our Inca caused to people aboue a bundred Townes, the greater of them of one hundred bouses.

These were our first Incas, which came in the first ages of the World, of whom all the rest of us have to The Incas Em descended. How many yeares have passed since our Father the Sunne sent the le his first children, I cannot The incas Empire duteda - precifely fay; we hold that it is about 400. yeares. Our Inca was called Manco Capac, and our Coya, pure united a ... Pour and Ocilo Huaco, brother and fifter, children of the same Sunne, and the Moone, our progenitors. Valera bath 5: thinke I have given the clarge account of that which then defiredly, and because I would not make the cry, I have not recited this storie with teares of bloud fied by the eyes, as I feed them in my griened heart, to fee our Incas come to an end, and our Empire loft.

This relation I hauefaithfully translated from my mother tongue, which is that of the lace, to the Spanill, which is farre shore of the Maiestie of the stile, nor so significantly as that language affordeth, and have abbreviated some things which might make odious the discourse. It is enough that I haue deliuered the truth of their conceit, as befits an Historian. Other like things 60 the faid Inca told me in those visitings and discours: at my mothers house, which I shall recite in their due places.

The common people of Perm recite other fables of their Originals, the Collafum which dwell to the South from Cozeo, and the Cuntifuju, which dwell to the West; fabling that after the

CHAPIZ. Fabulous antiquities, Manco Capacs Townes, Lawes, Alts and Arts. 1457

floud, the waters cealing, there appeared a man in Tahnacann Southwards from Culco, so mightie that he duided the World into foure parts, and gave them to foure men which hee called Kings, to Manco Capac, the North; the South to Colla; to Tocay, and Pinabua the East and Welf, and fent each of them to their gouernments, &c. Those of the East and North haue another tale, that foure men and foure women in the beginning of the world came out of a rocke by Parcartampu, all brethren and fifters, the first of which was Manco Capac and his wife Mama Seefup, 1060.

Oello which founded Cofco (which fignifieth a nauell) and fubiceted those Nations: the second Ayar Cachi or falt; the third Ayas Vehn (a kinde of Pepper) the fourth Ayar Sanca, that is, mirth and contents. Their fables they allegorife allo, and fome Spaniards would here finde the To eight perions which came forth of Noahs Arke; wherewith I meddle not, nor with the other fables which other Indian Nations have of their progenitors; there being no honourable stocke Conceirs of which is not derived from some Fountaine, or Lake, or Lyon, Tigre, Beare, Eagle, Centur or the originals other Birds of pray, or Hils, Caues, &c. But I by the faid Incar relation, and of many other In- of all check facas and Indians of those townes which the laid Inca Manco Capac peopled, in the space of twenty yeares which I there lived, received notice of all that I writ: for as much as in my childen hood they related their stories to me, as they wie to tell tales to children; and after being grown

the old, telling me how their Kings proceeded in peace and warre, and how they handled their fubicets : and as to their owne Sonne they recounted to me all their Idolatrie. Rites, Ceremonies. 20 Sacrifices, Feafts, and Superstitions, much whereof I have seene with mine eyes, it being not wholly left when I wastwelue or thirteene yeares old, who was borne eight yeares after the Spaniards had gotten my Countrie. I also purposing to write a storie of their things, did write to my Schoolerellowes for their helpe to give me particular information of the scuerall Provinces of their Mothers, each Countrie keeping their annals and traditions; which reporting my intent to their Mothers and kindred, that an Indian, a childe of their owne land, ment to write a Historie thereof, fearched their antiquities, and fent them to me; whereby I had notice of the conquests and acts of every Inca.

in age they gaue me large notice of their Lawes and gouernment, comparing this Spanish with

Manco Capac to the East of Cofco, peopled thirteene townes of the nation called Poques, to the West thirtie, with the Nations Masca, Chilqui, Papuri; twentie to the North of foure peo-

30 ples, Majn, Cancu, Chinchapucyu, Rimac tampu: 38.01.40. to the South, 18. of which were of the Nation Ayarmaca, the others of the Quespicancha, Muena, Vrcos, Quennar Huaruc, Cauinna, This Nation Caninna, believed that their first Parents came out of a certaine Lake, to which they work fay the foules of the dead have recourfe, and thence return into the bodies which are borne. They had an Idoll of dreadfull shape, which Manco Capac caused them to leave, and to worship the Sun, as did his other vallals. These townes from 100. housholds the greater, and 20. or 25, the lesse, grew to 1000. families, and the leffe to 3. or 400. The tirant Atauhualipa for their priviledges which the first Inca and his descendents had given them, destroyed them, some in part, others wholly. Now a Viceroy hath remoued them out of their ancient scituation, joyning five or fixe townes together in one place, and feuen or eight in another, a thing fo odious and inconvenient spenish altera-

40 that I ceale to mention it . Manco Capac to reduce the abuses of their women, ordained that adultery should be punished

with death, as like wife murther and robberie : hee enjoyned them to keepe but one wife, and to Mances lawes. marrie in their kindred or tribe that they should not be confounded, and that they should marrie from twenty yeares vpwards. He caused them to gather together tame and harmelesse cattle in flockes and heards to cloath them; the Queene teaching their women to spin and weave, Hee taught them to make the shooe which they call V futa. He set a Curaca (or Cacique) ouer each seuerall Nation, chusing them to that dignitie which had taken most paines in reducing the Sauages, the mildest and best minded to the common good, to inftruct the rest as fathers. He orda:ned that the fruits which were gathered in each towne should be kept together, to give to each 50 man as he had neede, till lands were disposed to each in proprietie. Hee taught them how to build a Temple to the Sunne, where to facrifice and doe him worthip as the principall God, and to adore him as the Sun and Moone, which had fent them to reduce them to civilitie. He caused them to make a house of women for the Sunne, when there should be women sufficient of the Suns Nunnery bloud royall to inhabit it; and propounded all things to them in the name of the Sun, as inioy-

ned by him; which the Indians simply believed, adoring them for his children, and men divine Manco and his fuccessours were their haire poled, vsing to that purpose Rasors of flint, a Poledheads. thing so troublesome, that one of our Schoolefellowes seeing the readinesse of Scissers faid, that if your Fathers the Spaniards had onely brought vs Sciffers, Looking-glaffes, and

that if your rathers the spanisher had onely brought Silver in our Land. They weare Combes, wee would have given them all the Gold and Silver in our Land. They weare their eares with wide holes caused by art to grow into a strange and incredible widenesse, whereupon the Spaniards called them Oreiones, or men with great eares. Hee ware on his head as a Diadem or royall entigne a kinde of Ribben of many colours, which compaffed his head foure or five times a finger breadth, and almost a finger thicke. These three were Fillers. Mances

Enfignes of dienitie.

e Mancos deuses, the llaute or ribband, the wide hole in the care, and polling, as a kinde of Royaltie; and the first Primledge which the Inca gave to his Vaffals was to weare the fillet or ribband like the Inca, but theirs of one colour only, his of many. After some time, hee vouchfafed (as a great fauour) the polling divertified in Provinciall differences of the Eare-fathions (which was a later and greater fauour) both for the boaring and Eaning, or Iewell there

eulea and the Neighbours Incas by priniledge, which none elfewere except of the Royall Dia-

The Inca growing old, affembled his principall Vaffals in Cufco, and in a folemne fpeech told them, that he intended to returne to Heauen, and to rest with his Father the Sunne which called him. (which was practifed by all his fucceffors, when they perceived themselves neere death) and now at his departure he minded to leaue them his chiefe fauour, to wit, his Royall Title, commanding that they and their D. Gendants should be Incas without difference, as having beene his first jubiects which he loued as children; and hee hoped that they would likewife ferue his Reyall bloud. Sicceffor, and augment the Empire : hat their wines alfo should be called Pallas, as those of the Royall bloud, Only he refer ed the Royall Head-rire to himfelie and his Descendents the Kings which was a fringe or lace coloure ', excending from one fide of the fore-head to the other. His firmame Cap to fignifieth rich (which they understood of the mindes vertues) and mightie in armes. The name Inca lignifieth Lord, or generally those of the Royall bloud. For the Caraca, though great Lords, might not viethat Title. The King is diftinguished from all others by the appellation Capa, Capa Inca lignifying the only Lord, as the Grand Signier among the Turkes. They fuled him alfo Huarchacurak, that is, Benefactor to the poore. They called them alfo Intip cha- m rm, the Sonnes of the Sunne. Manco Capac leigned, tome fay thirtie yeeres, others fortie. Hee had many children by his Wite Mana Oello Huaco, and by his Concubines (laying it was good to multiply children to the Sunne.) He called his Vaffels also of the better fort, and recommended his Heire as by Testument in way of discourse to them, and to the rest of his children their loue and feruice of the Vaffals, and to the Vaffals their loyaltie to their King, and obedience to the Lawes. Then difmiffing the Vallals, hee made another speech in secret to his children, that they should alway remember that they were children of the Sun, to worship him as their God, and to maintaine his Lawes giving others examples therein; also to be gentle to the Indians, to uphold them in luftice without oppression : that they should recommend these thires to their posterities in all generations, faying, that they were the people of the Sunne, which he left vn- to to them as his Teltament; to whom he was now going to reit with him in peace, and from Heauen would have a care to succour them.

Marce die:h. Sinchi Raca fuccredeth.

Curacas.

Mancos Fune-

Thus died Manco Capac, and left his Heire Sunchi Roca the eldeft brother, and begotten of Cons Mama Ocilo Haaco his wife and lifter. Belides the Heire, those Kings left other somes and daugh ters which married amongst themselves to keepe the Royall blow entire, which they tabulouly believed to be divine, and of others humane, alchough they were great Lords of Vaffals. called Curacas. The Inca Sinche Roca married with his eldeit litter, af er the manner of his parents, and of the Sunne and Moone, thinking the Moone to be fifter and wife to the Sunne. The Ince Manco was lamented by his Vaffals very heavily, the Obsequies continuing many moneths They embalmed his corps to preferue it among it them, and worshipped him for a God, Senne 40 of the Sunne, offering many Sacrifices of Rammes, Lambes, Birds, Graines, &c. contessing him Lord of all those things which he had left.

The name Inca descended to all the posteritie by the Male Line, not by the Female; all of this ranke were also called Trip churin (children of the Sunne) and Augus, or Infanta, which Title they kept till their Marriage, and then were called Inca. The lawfull Queene was called Cora; alio Mamanchie, that is, Our Mother. Her daughters were likewife called Coya; the Concubines and other wives of the blood Royall, were called Palla, which fignifieth a woman of Royall bloud, Concubines which were not of Royall bloud, were called Mamacuna, Mother. All the Royall Daughters were called Nufla, and if not of Royall Mothers, the name of the Prounce was added as Colla Nusta, Quitu Nusta. The name Nusta continued till they were married, and \$3 then they were stilled Palla.

The fecond Booke.

Amautas, the learned Peru-Pachacamac the name of

He first Incas and their Amantas (which were their Philosophers) by light of Nature acknowledged God the Creator of all things, which they called Pachacamac (the Sunne they held to be a vitible Gou) Pacha lignifieth the World, and Camac to quicken, of Cama, the Soule, as if Pachacamac, were the foule or quickner of the Vniverle. This name they had in fuch veneration that they durift not mention it; and if they were by occasion forced thereto, they did it with holding downe the head, and bowing the bodie, lifting up their eyes to Heatien, and calling them downe to the ground, lifting vp their hands open straite from the shoulders, giving smacks or lip-motions to the ayre (Rites performed only to him and the Sunne) holding Pachacamac in 60 August mZ. ret. more internall reverence then the Sunne, whom they named commonly on any occasion. They fail that he gave life to the World, but they knew him not, for they had never feene him, and iw ie V acent therefore neither built Temples, not offered Sacrifice to h m; but faid they worshipped him in de valle variai, that they held the Sun for God, the earth for Mother, & Pachacamar for Creator of all.

their minds, and held him for the waknowne God. The Spaniards, which tooks him for a Deuill and knew not the generall Language, found out another name for God, Tier Uira-cecha, which Tiraraha and mether I, nor they know what it meaneth : and if any should aske mee how I in my Language fush hey had would call God, I would answee, Pachacamac : nor is there in that generall Language any o. no proper ther name for him. And all those which Authors report are corrupted of other Languages, or name tor God.

deuted by them. The Lucas in Cazco kept a Croffe of Marble, White and Garnation, which they call lafee Critisline. They know not how long they had at Anno 1 , 50. Hert it in the Veftry of the Cathesiral Church of that Cities The Croffe was fquare, three quarters of a yard lond and

to these fingers thicke , and so much in breadth , all of some piece well wrought. They the Spaniards kent in one of their Houlds Royall, in a some which they call Hance, a holyplace, came. They did not adokent, but hald it in generable efteemes deither for the goodlineffe , or for some other respect which they knew not. The lucas and all Nations Shired to them, knew not what it was to fweare : you have heard of chein respect to the name Pachacamee. The Witnesless were salestanely demanded in waightie cates by the Indge, Doef then Notwesting. primife to sell sputh to the line a? swisch he promiting, the tudge gave him a care at for lying or concealing. They exceedingly feared to lye, and strhey were found to doe it; were grieuoufly punithed, and in cases of great importance, with death, as having lied to the drive: for to they toake to the ludge as if it were to the med whom they worthipped for God. Befides Pachacamac, the 20 Sunne, and Moone (as his wirband: fifter) and starres, they were forbidden by Law to adore Acollaby this

any thing. Pachacamae the supreme God had no Temples ordinarily, yet in a Valley called Pa- will be better any times. A Temple dedicated to that vintagivne God. The Spaniard attribute many other winderfield & Gofs to the Loca through ignorance of their Rives in the first and second age, and of their lan-corrected. guage; and not knowing the dates fight fourious of the word Hance, which in the last ivillable pronounced high in the roofe of the mouth figurierh an idell. It fignified also chings facred in which the Denill gane answeres, also things conferreted as effetings to the Sunne; Temples likewife and Chappels and Sepulchres whence the Peuill fpake; they gave that name all to all Huaca and the things eminent and imperexcellens in their kind, as the fame R Trees, occ. On the contrary they exists there called the filthieft and most months bus things Hasen; which might cause horrour, as the great of voknowne 30 Snakes of fue and twerrie of shirtie foot long. Hutes was applied to all things also which go out to the Seani. of the common courle, as to a woman which had Twinnes, making great Fealth, and firbwing and occision

flowers in the Greet with Dances and Song stor such her fruitfulntifie. The fame name they gate to heepe which had Twinner (for virally there the the the het and in their Sacrifices rather Twins rate. offered a Twinze Linbe, if thewhad it, then another likewife to ah Hege With two yolkes, to shole which had in their birth any member more or leffethen vitually as if one had in toes on his foot, a horne lip, &c. alfo to Roussainer which yeelded extraordinary fource of waters, to the rapke of the inowice Hills which ranne thorowall Pera to the Mayelane Straits, to all extraordinary Mountaines Neither did they (as the Spaniardi fay) hold thefe for Gods, nor worship thein, but for their eminence held them in the venerable refpect. The fame word Huaca pro-40 nounced with the last fyllable in the inner part of the throat, fignifieth to weepe; a thing vitall

in that Language, for the same word in differing pronuntiation, to fignifie things different. As for the Idoll Tangatanga, which one Authour faith they worthipped in Chiaquifaca, and ration is the that the Indiang fail it was three in one, and one in three : I know no fuch Idoll, nor is there any Sume, & worsuch word in the general Language of Perachut the Promince it one hundred and eightie leagues thip or reucfuch word in the general Language of Persons the Frontiness one hundred sind eighter leagues react of the from Cozeo, and the Spaniards corrupt all the words they take in their mouthes. It is likely that Inte. the Indians to Batter with the Spaniards, when they heard them preach of the Trinitie pretended Acola raxed. tome fuch likenesse of beliefe. The like I hold concerning their confessions, all which was inven- See before in ted by the Indians to currie failour with the Spaniards. I speake this as an Indian which know the Acotta page naturall condition of the Indians: and I fay that they had no Idoll with the name of the Trinitie, 1041, 66.

nor had any fuch word in their Language.

50 They believed the immerialitie of the foule, that the bodie was of earth, and called it Allow- Their beliefe camafea, that is quickenedearth. They beleeved another life after this, with punishment for the oithe foule. bad and reit for the good. They disided the Viniverio into three Worlds, Heaven called Hanan pacha, or the high World, whither they faid the good men went to bee rewarded for their vertues : this World they called Hurin pacha, the World below: the third von pacha, the centre of the Earth, called, also Cuparpa buacin, that is, the house of the Denill. The life in Heaven they faid was quiet, free Three Worlds from troubles, as that of the inferior World, which we call Hell full of paine and trouble without any rest or content, whereas this present life participated of both. Amongst the loyes of the other life they did not reckon carnall delights nor other vices, but quietneffe of the minde only

63 with reft of the bodie. They believed the Refurrection vinuerfall, not glory nor paine, but to Refurrection this same temporall life. They made great reckoning of their haire which they polled or combed from their heads, to lay it vp in some place, or ma hole of the wall, and if another Indian had seene it felne thence, he would take and lay it up fafe. I have often asked the caule, and they Have superwould tell mee that wee were to return againe to live in the World (they have no word for the fitting

* He feemeth

cheis

Peru dict.

tres befor al arre

or Officers.

Persona no Man caters. principall, next Rammes, and then barren Ewes; Conies, all Birds which were for meate. and Sewet, or Tallow; Corne and Pulle to the Herbe Cuca, and fine garments (which they burned inftead of Incense; their drinkes also, as that made of water and Maiz; and in their ordinarie meales when they have eaten and are about to drinke (for they never drinke whiles they are eating) they put their finger in the midft of the firth veficil, and looking up to Heaven with reve- to rence, they turne vp as it were, with a fillip, a drop of that drinke, offering it with thankfulnes to the Sunne, for that hee hath given them to drinke, "and kiffing wife mooued their lios twice or thrice to the aire, which with them is a figne of adoration; and then drinke off the self without more Ceremonies. This I have feene them often doe. Yet did not the Indiane of the fecond age (which began and ended with the Incar government) offer the bloud or fielh of men. but prohibited the eating thereof, wherein Historians haue bin deceived, it beeing true indeed of fome Regions before the conquest of them by the Incas. Neither did they facrifice either men or children when their Kings were ficke, as one Historian writeth; for they held them not for difeales, as those of the common people; but esteemed them as Messenges of their Pather the Sunne,

which came to call his Sonne to reft with him in Heaven; and those were their ordinary spee-

Acol: and others taxed. Incat conceit of fickneffe.

ches, when they were to die. When they entred into their Temples, the principall of those which went in, put vo his hand Eybrow-rite, to his eye-browes, as if he would pluck off some of the haires, and whether he plucked off any or no, he puffed to the Idoll in figne of adoration and offering; this they did not to their Kings but only to their Idols, or Trees, or places where the Deuill gaue answeres, Their Priests and Witches did the like, when they went into their corners or fecret places to conferre with the Denill. This I dolatry I have also frene them performe.

Priefts of Peru.

The Priests of the house of the Sunne in Coace, were all Incar of the Royall bloud : for other feruice of the Temple were Incas of those which were such by printledge. They had a High or Chiefe Prieft, which was Vncle or Brother to the King : or at least legitimate of the bloud. The 30 Priefts had no peculiar Vestment. In other Prounces where were Temples (which were many) the Natines were Priefts, the Kinfmen of the Lords of those Countries; notwithflanding the politzarothers principall Prieft (or Bilhop asit were) was to bee an Inca, that to they might hold conformitie, had asit were? As Director Person Warre they had Inof Rites with the Metropolitan : for in all preeminent Offices of Peace or Warre, they had Incas their Superiours. They had many houses of Virgins which observed perpetuall Virginitie without going out of their house; and others of the Concubines for the King.

Pricits.

All their Lawes Civill and Sacred were attributed to Manco Gapac, faying, that hee had left and perfected fome himselfe, the others for his Successors to accomplish in their times : so to give All Ordinan- authoritie to all, as from the Sunnes Ordinance. And though fome of the Incar were great Lawces arributed makers, yet no memory is left of any particulars under their name, but all is attributed to the 40

to Mante. Division of

The Incas decided their Empire into foure parts : they called it Tauantinfuya, that is, the foure parts of the World. Hereof Cozes was the Centre, which in that Inca-language lignifieth the Nawill of the Earth, or Land. The East-diution they called Antifurn of the Province Anti(a name Anti, called by alio given to the Rew of Snowie Mountaines in the East) the West Cuntifagu, the North Chm-Acofu, Ander. chafuyu; the South Collafuyn; each name derived of some Province therein so called, and continued to the furtheil extent that way, as Collafuna to Chali, fixe hundred leagues from Colla, and

Chinchasun to Quin soure hundred leagues from Chincha to the North. They ordained that in every Towne great or small of their Empire, the Inhabitants should be registred by Tithings, and one of them should take charge of the other nine, as a Decurian or Ti- 50 Tithings and thingman, called Chunca Chancapa. Five of thele Decurions had another Superiour, which had the charge of fittie. Ouer two of those was another Superiour or Centurion. Fine Centuries were subjected to one which had charge of five hundred, and two of those charges had a Chili-

Tithingmen. See the like with vs in Lamb .pranb. of Kent. Orders of Of-

arch or Captaine of one thousand : higher they went not. The Tithingman gave account to the Governour of those in his charge, to provide them Seed Chunga Camaju, or Bread corne, or Wooll, or House-reparations, or other necessaries. He also was to informed thir faults to the Judges, which according to the greatnesse of the offence were also dinerlified in order for dispatch of luftice, and to take away need of Appeales, except in cases betwixt one Prouince and another, for which the Incasent a special Judge. If the Decurion neglected to informe, the fault was now made his owne, and hee corrected for it : as also in the other case of 60 proussion. Hence there were no Vagabonds nor idle persons. The Father was corrected which did not educate or correct his children; the children also were punished in correspondence of their age : and the Tithingman was to informe of both. The ludges punished them, they faid, not for the fact, but the fault in transfertling the Incas commandement which they respected as Gods.

They had no purse-punishments, Fines or Confifcations; for to leave them poore, Washut to Penalties. sine them more albertie comuse. It any Chanca rebelled and deferued death; his fohrie fucceded No fines. not withflanding to his States. In water they had Natines for Captaines ouer their counc Gountrimen, habing memotorotheir Superiours. The Judge durft not arbitrate, but execute the Law . at life bee deal for breaking the Royall commandement. " This feueritie of the Officers anchof the Lawes which for light offences inflicted death, produced rather gentle then Nothing more crattl and barbatous flow daring to transgresse vio that all that Empire, extended thirteene hung mercial then dred leagues; and wonfilting of, to many Nations and Languages, was governed by one Law, as if fewerine vaichiad besne que houte, ohe ratische caule chey held the fame diune, and from the Sunnes bridge in the same divine, and from the Sunnes bridge in the same divine bridge in th

10 nance by the locals and the second And alte Litwibreaker was abereiore accounted facrilegions and accomfed informed that fome baueprooued accused by their own o conferences have made confessions without other actiliers, fearing to bring fauers or mens publike plagues annte State/as Difeatetos Dearths, which they foughteospreuent by appealing God with their deaths. And I conceine, that from thefe publike confellions, the Spanith Hillorians have weiter chat the Indian of Port had confession in secret like Christians, and Confession to get barfains appropriated : which is falle, for in Printhey had no other then Hime mentioned and the rels, and con-Indians which told the Spaniards thus, aniwared to to their questions, as they thought might best sequently pleafe chema Heither had they any Appealer Civill or Criminall. Every Fowne had a ludge, warres then and for highermatters they went to the Superiour Judge in the Mother Citie. The Semences of when & where 20 ordinary Judges; were every moneth related to the Superioth Tudges; and theirs to others their they have not Superiours, which were in the Court in diners degrees according to the qualitie of Cales. The Su- beene. preame were the Prefidents or Vice-royes of the foure parts of the World. This report was made No auricular to examine Sentences which had paffed, and if they were found vniuft, the Authors were feuere-

ly punished. The manner of sendring these reports to the lines, and to those of his Counsell, was by knothin lines of duers colours, which ferued them as it were Ciphers ! for the knots of fuch ludgements or fireh colours declared the offences, and certaine threads of druers colours fastned to the lines, examined. flogwed the publishment. This was their Arithmetike in which they were expert and certaine. Quippes. forme applying themselves to nothing elie. If any Provinciall controversie could not be decided by those whom the King tent, is was suspended till his Visitation of those parts , and then hee 30 himfelfe would fee, heare and fentence.

The Tithingmen allo gaue account enery moneth of all which were bottle or died, and like- Monethy and wileas the end of the yeere; fuch as perifhed in the warres; they also relided. The like Officers yeartly acand Orders were in the Campes of warre, as in the Townes of peace. They permitted not to counter. facke the Townes which they conquered by force. For every of those foure divitions of the Empite the Incaliad Councels of Warre, of Infice; of necessary businesse. These had subordinate Officets in divers degrees which rendred accounts of all to the Supreme Councell. Each had a Pre- But foure prifident or Micessey swhich received those accounts, and rendred the fiffer to the King. These lors. were Includegitimate, of great experience in Warre and Peace. And these source only were Counfellors of State.

Roca succeeded his Father Mango: he was called Simbi, that is , valiant; excelling in manly Roca Incahis feates of Activity, Running, Leaping, casting stones or Dirts, Wrestling, any of his time. His acts. Fathers Oblequies beeing finished, hee sought to augment his Empire, affembled his Curacas to that end, and put them in minde of that which his Father had faid to them, when he would returne to Heauen, commanding the conversion of the Indians, to the knowledge and worship of the Sunne; whereunto he was now obliged by his place, and for the profit of the bordering Nations which had need thereof. They promifed all readinesse, and he made his expedition to Collasmy and perswaded with faire words, the Nations Puchina and Chanchi, being simple and cre- Indian credulidulous of enery neueltie (as are all the Indians) and fo proceeded without violence twentie tie. leagues that way to the people Chuncara, irrall things following his Fathers example. Hee also 50 brought in other Nations on each hand; some affirme a great many. He is thought to have reigned thirtie yeeres : and then professing that he went to rest with his Father the Sunne, hee left Lio-

que Tupanqui his sonne to succeed him, and a numerous Iffue besides. His name Lloque Fignifieth Lloque Tupanleft handed (for so he was) Tunarani was added for his vertues, and signifieth, thou shalt account or quiche third reckin, to wit, his great exploits and good parts. If any thinke the word may imply a well the linea. recounting of vices, let him know that in that Language it is not fo, the fame Verbe not beeing flexible to cuill transition which is vied to good, nor to good which may be applyed to cuill; but their elegance enforcetha change of the Verbe in change of the object. The name Tupanqui, as Grammer. that of Capac were for their merits given to three other Incas. He reduced under fubication proceeding by the Collasurs, the people Cama by perswasions. The Ayavari refused and fought with 60 him, and after fortified themselves and indured many skirmlihes, but by fiege and famine were

After that he went to Pucara, which was a Fortreffe builded by him : and fent to the Pancarcalla and Hatancolla, which liftned to his proposition, being a great Nation, or rather a multitude of Nations, which had many fables of their originall, fome from a Fountaine, others from a

Caue, others from a River. They worthipped a white Ramme as their principall God, being Lords of much cattell. They faid that the first Ram in the world about, made more reckoning of them then other Indians, and had multiplied their Cattell. They offered to that Ram Lambs and tallow in Sacrifice, All of them agreed in this Ram deitie, in other their gods differing, bue now exchanged all for the Sunne. Afterwards Tuienen, and Chuengen, and Harin Pacalla Were fullilled by him. Now to intermixe somewhat of the Sciences which the later had. Their Attrologie and and natural Philosophie was little, by reason their America or Pohylo-

Of the Peruan Aftrologie,

Dreames of Ecclipies.

fonher, wanted letters. They better understood morrall learning, and left it written in the practile of their lawes. They oblerued the folitices and equinoctials by certaine towers. The Moneand Moneth they called Quilla, the yeare busts. The eclipies of the Moone they attri-bated to her fickneffe, fearing that the would dye and fall from heaven, and kill all below. and to therefore they founded Trumpets, Cornets, Drums, and such Instrumencs as they had, beating, and making their Dogs also to houle, thinking her affectioned to Dogges, for a certaine feruice which they fable done by them, and therefore imagine the would respect them, and awake our of her fleepe caused by ficknesse. The ecclipse of the Sunne they say happenerh for some offence done against him, for which he is angrie. The spots in the Moone they fable to have come of a Fox: which being in love with the Moones beautie, went to heaven, and touching her with his forefee: eleft thate foule memorials. They make their children to cry Mama Cuilla, Mother Moone doe not dye left all perift. The men and women cry likewife in her ecclipte with horrible noise: when the recouers her light, they tay Pachacamae hath cured her and commanded her not to dye, that the world should not perish; and give her great thankes. All this I have seene with mine eyes. The lightning and thunder they adore not for gods, but honour and efteeme them as the Sunnes feruants retrient in the ayre, not in heaven. Like account they make of the Ramebow, which the Kings Incar placed in their armes and foutchion. In the house of the Sunne was a roome for each of them. They made no Prognostications nor Predictions by signes of the Sunne, Moone, Comets, but by their dreames often and strange, and by their facrifices. The Sun every evening fet in the Sea, and with his heate dried up much of the water, and fwam vader

the earth thorow it to the East. For Phisicke they vied purging and bleeding, but had no skill of Vrines or Pulse: some rootes and hearbes they made medicinable vse of, especially of

In Geometrie they had some skill for partitions of their grounds, but nothing for speculations

and so much Geographie, as with plats or pictures to expresse the Nations. I have seene one of

Culco, and the confines admirably artificiall. Arithmeticke they practifed with knots, as is faid,

and with graines of Maiz, and fmall ftones, making perfect accompts. Musicke they had in forme

tu es of art; with divers Instruments, as Pipes proportioned to a confort, and flutes and songs.

The Amentas also had some practice of Poetrie, and composed Comedies and Tragedies. The

Sometimes also

Pachacamac

To this office

Viracocha

Thou fendit forth haile.

Thou lends forth fnow.

The worlds maker,

Hath thee placed

And authorifed.

Thunder and lightning. Runnow.

Dream-diuina-

Medicine.

Chorography. Arnhmeticke.

Mulicke.

Poctry.

Actors were not base persons, but Incas and the Nobilitie, sonnes of the Cararas. The argument was the acts of their ancestors. Their were represented before the King and Lords at Court. They had no base or dishonest parts intermixed. They made Verses short and long with measuring the syllables without rimes, I have given an inflance; the argument is (like that of la- 10 piter and lune in our Poets) the daughter of a King had a pitcher full of water to moisten the earth, which her brother brake, and with the blow caused thunders and lightnings. They were found in knots and particoloure threads, being very ancient. The words are thus in Pernan and Eng-

in bondake verfes.

lifb, the fyllables also in like number and meeter Fairest of Nimphes, Cumac Nusta Thine owne Brother, Totallay quim This thy Pitcher Pujunuj quita Now is breaking; Paquir Cayan Whose hard striking Hina Mantara Синин низнани Thunders, lightens, And throwes fire-bolts. Ylla pantac Camri Nusta But thou fweet Nimph, Thy faire Pitcher Unuya Quita Para Munqui Powring, rainest:

Now for Handicrafts, the Goldsmiths (of which they had so many) knew not to make an anule of Iron, nor of other meetall; nor to cast Iron, although they had Mines thereof. They vfed for anuites certaine hard fromes, of a pale greene colour, which they plained and imported with rubbing one against another. They were rare and precious. They knew not how to make hammers with handles of wood, but wrought with inframents made of Copper and Laton mingled, in forme of a Dye, of feuerall fizes, which they held in their hands to firike with as area 60 doe with stones. They had no Files nor Chiffels, nor Bellowes for easting of mettals, but wfed Pipes of Braffe, halfe a yard long or leffe, and joyned eight or tenne together as there was neede. Neither had they skill to make tongues. And yet did they make maruellous workes. Their Carpenters were as much to feeke or more, hauing no fron tooles, but an Axe and a Hatcher and

Chich manaui

Riti munqui

Pacha rurac

Pacha camao

Vira coch a

Cay besapas

Churafungui

Cama fungui.

those of Braffe; no Saw, nor Augre, nor Plainer, nor Nailes, but fastned all things with lines or ropes of a kinde of heath, Neither were their Masons in better case: they vied a certaine blacke Masons. from not to cut but to beate their stoneworks with force of their armes, and yet have left incredible Monuments of their art. The lefuster and other Religions have instructed the wouth fince in other arts, in Dialogues and Comedies of Scripture. One Iesuite in praise of our Lady the Virgin Mary composed a Comedie in the Aymara tongue, the argument was Gen. 3. I will Note. virgin comary composed a Comment and between the feed and her feed: She (to the Romiffer reade and make of it this remarkeable vie) [ball break; ib) bead, &c. A dialogue of the faith was recited at Potoch before 1 2000. Indians, and another of the Sacrament at the Citie of Kings beto fore innumerable, the Indian youth acting and pronouncing with fuch feemely gestures as much affected the Spaniards. The Licentiate Inan Cuellas read the Latin Grammet to the Mestizos of Cozco, with good fruite.

Mara Capae followed his predecessors examples, and went forth with 12000 men (the for-mer expeditions had beene with less company, as of 7000 and so vpwards as the state en-Booke. creafed) and couering his couetoufnesse and ambition with pretence of conuerting people to his religion , came to the disemboking of the great lake Titicaca, and made Boates for transport- This iesson ing his army. He brought wnder by faire meanes the Tiahnanacu, which people had admirable the Spaninas buildings. One was a hand-made Mount admirable high, founded on stones ioyned with moran ter, none could tell for what caufe. In one roome thereof flood two figures of Giants cut in flone

with long garments downe to the ground, with coverings on their heads, well worne with age. Admirable There was also a huge wall of stones so great that it may breede wonder what force of men might buildings. Pebe able to bring or raile them where they are, feeing that in a great distance there are no quar- dro de Cisona. ries. There are other braue buildings, great porches or frontals, in diners places each made of cherchane eti ries. There are other braue buildings, great porches or trontais, in divers places each made or this it in his one flone in all the foure parts; yea to greater admiration some of these are set on flone, of which owned to fome are thirtie foote long, and fifteene broad, and fixe in front, and these stones fo great, and the more largely. porches are of one peece; nor can it be imagined with what inftruments they were wrought. The Naturals fay they are ancienter then the Ineas times, and that they imitated thefe in building the fortreffe of Cozeo; and knew not who made them, but have a tradition that they were ao all made in a night. It feemeth that they were neuer finished, but were onely beginnings of what the founders intended. Diego de Alcobaças Priest, my Schoolefellow, & borne in the same house

that I was, being also my totter brother, and a Preacher to the Indians; which hath beene there, wrote to me that in that Region Tiabnanaen fast by a lake called Chaquinita, there stands a marueilous house, with a faire Court fifteene yards square, compassed with a high wall, on one side whereof is a great hall 45, foote long, and 22, wide, couered like the house of the Sunne in Casce. This Court with the wals and floore, hall, roofe, porches, and thresholds of two doores (the one of the hall, the other into the court) is all made of one peece wrought in one rocke : the wals of the hall and of the wall are three quarters of a yard thicke. The roofe though it feeme of that ch is of stone. They say it was dedicated to the Maker of the World. There are also many stones cut at in shapes of men and women, so naturall as if they were alme drinking with cups in their hands,

fome litting, some on their feete, others as it were passing, others with children in their armes, and 1000, other postures. The Indians lay that for their finnes, and for stoning a man which palfed thorow that Prouince, they were converted into flatues. But to returne to our Inca, he lubdued many Nations or pettie habitations; fuch as would not be wonne by perswasions, hee maftered with feege and hunger. Battels were very rare. Hee died having raigned about thirtie yeares, and was bewailed a yeare after the cuftome. His Sonne Capac Tupanqui succeeded, the Capac Tupatqui

His first care, after his Diadem affured, was to visite his Kingdome; in which visitation hee fpent two yeares, enquiring into the courses of his Ministers and Gouernours. After this hee 50 Went up from Cozco with 20000. men, and went Westward. Hee caused a Bridge to be made in the River Apprimac at Huacachaca, lower then that of Aceha. Hee passed over it to the faire Province Tanabura, which gladly received him; thence to Aymara, there being betwixt those two Prouinces a Region dishabited of thirtie leagues; which passed, he found at the hill Mucanfe much people of that Province (which is thirtie leagues long, fifteene wide, rich of Ofyer Bridge, Minesof Gold, Silver Lead and Cattell) to encounter shim. But he fought rather to befeege them on the hill, having purposely sent men about, and by hunger forced them to composition after a moneths fiege. Having pacified the Armaras, hee proceeded to Cotapampa and Cotanera of the Nation Quechna; and after to the Vallie of Hacari, great and fertile. Hee made another expedition, leaving his Brother his Lieutenant of his Kingdome, and the foure Mafters 60 of his Campe his Councellours, chusing others to ferue him; and went to the Lake of Paria, where two Gwacas at contention , made him arbitrator , and themselves his subjects in the diuifion Collafurn. Thence thorow a fpicious Countrievnpeopled, but full of Cattell and hot Springs; hee came to the Provinces Tapacri and Cochapampa. Hee made another Bridge in the water-passage of Tuicara, The former of Huacachasa was made of Olyers, this of Bull-

Ffffff

Handierafes.

rulhes there growing, of which they made foure cables as big as a mans legge, reaching from one fide to the other; on which they laid great bundles of the same matter as bigge as an Oxe. from ly tied together and to the Cables: over these bundles they made two other cables which they faftened firely with the bundles: wpon these they laid other little bundles as bigge as a mans arme, wouen into each other and with the cables; these were as the causey of the Bridge. This Bridge is thirteene or foureteene foot broad, and about one hundred and fiftie paces long. They renewed it enery fixe moneths. Often vie made readinesse and quicke dispatch. They remoued it as they faw occasion. The In. a passed further to Chapanta, thorow a dishabited Countrey : this with fine other great Provinces he subjected, and then returned to Cozco, and rewar-

Remouing of people from one place to

The Kingdome now reached one hundred and eighty leagues from Cafes Southwards, and Westwards to the Sea, sixtie leagues one way, and eightie another ; to the East thirteene, to the South-east fortie. He adorned the houses of the Sunne which Manco Capac had founded, and that of the Virgins, with other great workes. After this he fent the Prince Roca with an army of 20000, men, by the way of Chinchasingu Northwards from Cuzco, which had continued ata flay tince Manco Capac, but feuen leagues from the Citie, the Country beyond being rough and enpeopled. He entred into the rich Countrey of Sura, which gently received him, as didalfo the next called Agucara, which was in enmitte with the former. The like successe hee had in Rucana, Nama (ca, and other Vallies to Arequepa eightie leagues outright, and foureteene in breadth. The Inca transplanted people from those parts to Aparimae, both being hot Regions. Old Inca Capac Tupanqui after the ethings dyed, leaving about eightie children (fome of them left one hundred, fome two hundred, and fome about three hundred) and his Sonne Rees (ucceeded. Let vs now speake of Cozco and the holies thereof.

Many children Religious reputation of

One of the principallest Idols of that Empire was Cofco, the Imperiall Citie, which the Indi. ans worthipped as a thing facred, because it was founded by Inca Manco Capac, and because it was the house and Court of the Incar their gods. If an Indian in the way met another which Cozco and the came from Cozco, though otherwise equall, and now he himselse were going thither, he gave him Inperactious holies therein. respect therefore as his superiour for having beene there; how much more if he were a neere dweller, or Citizen there? The like was in Seedes, Pulie, or what focuer was brought from Cozco, more efteemed for that cause then those of other parts in other respects as good. To hold it

full in reputation, the Kings adorned it with fumptuous buildings, of which the principall was the Temple of the Sunne, every Inca increasing it, which is said to be builded by Tupanqui, because he enriched it, being before founded by Manos. The Chappell or shrine of the Sunne was that which is now the Church of Saint Dominge (although not the fame altogether) wrought of polished stone. The high Altar (that we may so call it, for they knew not how to make an Altar) stood to the East, the roofe was thatched (for they could not make tile.) All foure wals were couered from the top to the bottome with Plates of Gold. In the East or high Altar stood the

Rich hangings figure of the Sunne, made of one planke or plate) of Gold, twice as thicke as the other plane on the wals; the face round with rayer and flames of fire, all of a peece. It was fo great that it to Suanes image. tooke vp all the end from one wall to the other. Neither had they any other idols in that or any other Temple but this : for indeede (whatfoeuer others fay) they worshipped no other gods but the Sunne. This Idoll fell by lot, in the Spanish Conquerours sharing, to one Marcin Serra, whom I knew and left aline when I came to Spame, who loft it at play in a night, whence they faid Prouesbially, bee had placed away the Sunne before it was up. Hee was street chosen the ordinary Alcalde of the Citie many yeares, and grew to abhoore play very much. But by such a share falling to one man, may be guessed the exceeding riches of that Citie. On the one fide and on the other of that Image were the deceased bodies of the Kings, placed according to their antiquitie, as children of the Sunne, embalmed (wee know not how) Bodiesof Kings fo that they seemed alive. They were set in their seates of Gold placed on plankes of gold, 50 holding their faces to the people. Onely Huapna Capac was placed before the figure of the Sunne with his face to it : as his best beloued sonne, whom they worshipped in his life time

Инаупа Сарас.

for his vertues. These corpes the Iudians did hide with the rest of their treasures, the most of which is not yet knowne. Anno 1959, the Licentiate Polo tound fine of them, three of the Kings, and two of the Queenes. The principall doore looked to the North, as it fill abides. That and the other leffe doores were lined with plates of Gold, in manner of a Porch. Without the Temple, on the top of the wats ran all alongst a chamfred worke of gold, in forme of a Crowne, about a yard broad, round about the Temple. Beyond the Temple was a Cloister of foure squares (one of which was the Temple) round 20

ArichCloifter bout the top whereof was such a crowne of chamfered gold, as is before mentioned, about a Fine Chappels yard broad, inftead of which the Spaniards have fet vp one of white plainer. There were 63 iquares, or seuered Chappels standing by themselues, couered like a pyramis, which made the Moone Chap- three other fides of the Cloifter. One of them was dedicated to the Moone, all which and the doores thereof was covered with places of Silver. Her Image was placed therein like that of the Sun, with a womans face in a planke of Silver. Thither they went to visite her, and to commend

CHAP.13. Rich Chappels of Moone, Starres, Thunder, Rainbow: Priests.

themselves to her as the wite and sister of the Sunne, and mother of the Incas, and all their generation; and called her Mamaquillia, Mother Moone: but offered no Sacrifices to heras to the Sunnes On each hand of the Moones image were the bodies of the Queenes deceafed ranked in order of their antiquitie. Mamaoello Mother of Huayna Capac flood before the Moone face to Chappell of face, for producing such a Sonne. The next roome to that of the Moone, was dedicated to the Venus & Stars. Planet Venus, and to the seuen Starres, and to all the Starres in common, which they held to Charpellof be the seruants of the Moone, and therefore placed them about their Lady to be ready at hand Starres size. for any feruice. The next roome was lined with filuer also, and the porch of filuer. The roofe Chappell of was made with refemblances of Starres great and small, like the starrie streament. The next shunder, hight-10 to this of the Starres was dedicated to the Thunder and Lightning and Thunderbolt, all ning and bolt, which were fignified in one word Tlaps. They worshipped them not for gods, but held Chappellor Rainchow. them for feruants of the Sunne. They made no picture thereof. The fourth roome or Chappell

was dedicated to the Rainebow, which they effeemed feruant to the Sunne; this roome and the former were all garnished with gold. On the golden plankes of this was the Rainebow painted. When they law a Rainebow in the skie, they couered their mouth with their hand, faying, that if their teeth were vincouered they would confume. The fifth building was for the chiefe Priests, and the other Priests which serued in the Temple, not to eate or drinke in. but for confultation about their Sacrifices: it was garnished with gold from the top to the

The chiefe Priest was called Villac Vmn, that is, the Priest which speaketh, namely to the people, Priests what the Sunne hath given him in charge, or divels, or dreames, or other divinations have foretold. Three of those fine roomes remaine, the Gold and Silver except. Those of the Moone and Starres are downe. Every file had foure Tabernacles without, which had like workes on them in stone, as within of metcall. Not onely the wals but the floores of those Tabernacles also was of Gold. The Images were alto pouldered with Gemmes, Turkesses, and Emeralds; for they had no Diamonds nor Rubies. There were twelve doores to the Cloiffer, and as many Tabernacles or shrines, besides that of the Moones Chappell and of the Starres, these were of S luer, the reft were all plated ouer with Gold in forme of Porches. They had also in the house of the Sunne Women might many other roomes or chambers for the Priefts and feruants of the house, which were Incas of not enter. 30 priviledge: For none but an Inca might enter into that house; nor any woman, no not the wines Moneable or daughters of the King. The Priests semed their courses by weekes, which they reckoned by weekes, the quarters of the Moone : in which space they departed not out of the Temple day nor night. The Porters and all inferior officers were of the fame townes which ferued in the Kings house; Seruitors, there being no difference made in the two houses of the Father and the Sunne, but that one had Sacrifices, Bromen, the other no Sacrifice in it, equall otherwise in Maiestie. For severall Sacrifices they Foundames

had severall roomes. In the house were fine Fountaines of water which runne chence in pipes of Gold : the Pillars were some of stone, others of Gold hollow, others of Silver ; there they washed the Sacrifices. Onely one of these Fountaines were left to water the garden of the Couent, till 1558, when it being occasionally broken, no Indian could tell whence that water came, or 40 how tohelpe it. Such traditions of facred things it feemes were kept by their Priefts, and now loft, Occasion seuen moneths after found the water, which they amended without further search of the Fountaine, the pipes lying very low.

This Garden was in the Incas time a Garden of Silver and Gold, as they had in the Kings and filure. houses, where they had many forts of Hearbes, Flowers, Plants, Trees, Beafts great and small, wilde tame, Snakes, Lizards, Snailes, Butterflies, small and great Birds, each fet in their place. They had Maiz, Quinua, Pulle, Frust-trees with the fruite on them all of Gold and Silver, refembling the natural!. They had also in the house heapes of wood, all counterfeit of Gold and Golden coun-Silver, as they had in the house royall : likewise they had great statues of men and women, and terfeits, children, and many Pirms or Troffes for corne, every day inventing new fashions of greater Ma-50 iestie, vfing yearely on the Sunnes chiefe festigities to present him so much Silver and Gold wrought into counterfeit formes. All the Veffell (which was infinite) for the Temples fernice, Pots, Pans, Tubs, Hogheads, was of Gold and Silver, even to the Spades, and Pickaxes for the All reffels and Garden. Like to this Temple of Cozco were others in many Prouinces of that Kingdome, in influments of which every Comma indevoured according to his power to have fuch riches of Gold and Silver. Gold.

But the most famous was that of Tricaca. This might for Gold and Silver compare with that of Coxoo. It is an Iland in the mids of a Lake of the same name, where their fables tell that after the floud, the Sunne first shined; and after that, he exposed his Sonne and Daughter (as ye have heard) to civillize the world. In these Rich Temple respects it was holden for a place sacred thorow all that Empire, and a Temple was built therein, all lined with plates of Gol., dedicated to the Sunne. All places fibiect to the Empire, yearely offered Gold and Silver and Precious stones, in thanks giving to the Sunne for his benefits there done them. This Temple had the fame Service as chat at Cozco. Of the offerings of Gold and

Silver was fuch a quantitie flored in the He, befides that which was wrought, that it is more

matter of wonder then credit. Blus Valera faith, that the Indians reported that there was enough Fiffff 2

Gardenof gold

and that he should never want bread all dates of his lite.

to build another Temple from the foundation, and when the Spaniards came, they threw it all In the Valley of Orcos, fix leagues Southwards from Cuzco is a little Lake aboue a mile abour.

but very deepe, into which the report was that much of Cnzco treasure was throwne. Some raing for trea- Spaniards agreed to be at colt to emptie it, Anno 1557, but having entred fiftie paces into their mains worse, by which they had thought to have conucied the water into the River Tucay, they were encountered with a rocke, which feeking to make way thorow, they brought forth more fire then stone, and were enforced to giue ouer. The Indians are thought to have hidden infinite treatures. But for that barren rockie Ice the Incas were at further coft to couer the stone with good earth, that it might beare Mayz (which growes no where in that cold Region) of which a 10 little quantitie grew, and by the King was offered to the Sunne in his Temple, and to the chofen Virgins in (#200, which were to fend it to other Monasteries and Temples, one yeare to one. and another to another, that they might have of that graine which feemed to have come from heauen. They fowed it in Gardens of the Sunnes Temple, and made fuch adoe about keeping and b. frowing it, that that Indian thought himfelte a happy man which had a graine of that Maiz,

were in it old arily 1500. Nunnes. Some of them were ancient, called Mamacuna, that is,

Mothers which take charge, or core of the reft. Some were as Abbeffes, others as teachers of the

Nousces both in rices and nandiworkes, as to ipin, weave and low; others were porters, or pro-

unders of necessaries. They haved in perpetual closure to their dying day, neither might they

fprake with any man, or fee any man or wom an, but those of their owne house. Onely the

Cors and her daughters might have leave to enter and conferre with them. By them the Inca

but for the Queene, or to receive Nounces. They had twentie Porrers, which men might not

patie the second gate under paine of death. They had fine hundred Girles for service of the Mo-

natherie, daughtets to thole which the first Inca had priviledged to be Inca. These also had their

Manacunas. The principall exercise which the women of the Sinne did, was to make all the

garments and robes that the Inca or his Copa did weare, and those fine robes which were offered to the Sunne. The King himfelfe might not give those Garments to any of his Curacae which

were not of his bloud. They made also the Bread for the Sacrifices to the Sunne at the great

All the Vtenfils of the house, even to Pots and Pans, were of Gold and Silver, as in the house

of the Sunne. They had such a Garden also as the other, of golden Plants, Birds and Beatls, O-40

bedience and Virginitie was perpetuall, under paine of burying quicke. Any man which should

defloure, must not onely dye himfelfe, but his wife, children, kindred and neighbours. Such the

Law, but there was neuerfound cause of execution. Like to these of Cuzco, dedicated to the

admitted e ofe of the bloud Royall, pure, and mixed, and daughters also of the Curacas as a great

fauour. Also some of the fairest of the common people to be concubines for the Inca, and not for

the Sunne, but kept with like vigilance. Their life waslike the other, and their maintenance

from the Inca. Their workes the Inca might impart with others, and themfelues alfo he might

take out for his Conculines, which then might not returne againe, but either ferued the Queene or were tent into their Countries with great credit. Those allo which were old in these houses to

might have like licente. Those that were dedicated for the King present, when hee was dead,

were called Manacumas, and were inftructers of those Concubines which entred for the

Enery of these houses had a Governour, which must be an Inca: a steward and othersoff en

featts Raymi and Sittua, called Zanen, and the drinke which the Inca then dranke.

fencto know how they did, and whereof they had neede. The principall gate was not opened 30

Superfictious

The fourth Houses of Var-

The Inc. at had houses of Virgins retired in many Provinces, touching which the Spanish Hitternas have been edectived. I will speake of the house at Cusco called Aclashus, that is, the loufe of the chofen, to wit, for their beartie, or Hocke, to ferue the Sunne. Thefe lived not in the 20 Temple of the Sume, but ciffant a ffreete from it, a row of houses going betweene them. For ne ther might men enter where the Nuns were, nor women where the Priefts were. It was neceffary that these women hould be of regall bloud, without any mixture of either side. There

1500. Nuns.

Facerding ftr. keneffe.

Nunsworkes.

Robes for

perfume.

Gelden Gar-P. rpetuall vir-

Other Nunnes Sunne, were other Nunnes and houles in principal! Provinces of the Kingdome. In which were

Mamieumzi

All the vessels were of Gold and Silver, as in the houses of the Sunne and of the King, so that all the Gold and Silverin the whole Kingdome was spent in manner in the Sunnes ferrice, and or thole which were effeemed his descendants. The Curacus were flinted what veilels of Place they might haue for their owne vie, which was but little. They might neuer be bestewed ono-Sparifbaurhors ther men, which had beene choien women for the Inca; for they held it a profanation of that which was holy; yea to be a flue to the Inca was more efteened then to be wife of another Lord. efteeming him as next to the Sunne; wherein some Spanish authors have beene deceived, yet did he reward his great men with women, but they were the daughters of other Curucus of Captaines, which held this for a fauour done them that he should eitheme their daughter is 4 iewell, which with his owne hand he would bestow. Sometimes (but feliome) hebestor rates

some of the Caracas his owne Daughters which were (as they esteemed such as were not of the wholebloud) battards, which hee had by women not of his Inca-kindred, which was holden

Befides thefe, there were many other of Royall bloud which lived retired in their owne hou- Another fort fes with vow of Virginity, though not inclosed in any Monastery : which tooke libertie to goe of Nunnes. out to visit their kindred neere them in their ficknesse or travell. Such were highly reputed and were called Oclio, a facred name : and if they loft their chaftitie, were burned aliue or caft to the Lyons Denne, One of these very old I knew, which visited my Mother, beeing her Grandfatherstifter. Willowes in the first yeere of their widow-hood kept very close; those which had Widowis to no children married againe; but those which had, continued continent all their lines : in which

refrect the Lawes allowed them many priviledges, and the tillage of their grounds before the

CHEACAS OF THEAT And for matter of Marriage in Coace, once in a yeere or two, the King affembled all the youth Marriages. of both Sexes, of his owne Linage, the Males of twentie to foure and twentie, the Maids of eighteene and fo to twentie (he permitted them not fooner to marry) and called them forth, fuch a man and such a maide, and having towned them with his owne hand, delivered them to their Parents : after which the Marriage Feath was folemaized by the new Parents, two, foure, or fixe dayes. These were legitimate wises and the most honoured. The day following his Officers did the like for the Citizens, observing the distinction of High and Low Cozco. The Governour 30 in each Division with the Caracas did the like in their governments, the Inca never wirrping but affifting the Caracas Iuriforction. Those of one Prounce might not marry with those of another, wards, not inbut observed the Rites of the Tribes of Ifrael : nor might they goe to live out of their Provinces termarrying,

or out of their owne Townes, or the Wards of the fame Towne.

In defect of children by the lawfull Wife, the Inheritance by Law fell on the eldeft of the mance. bloud lawfull, as from Huafear :o Manco and never to Baftards : for which Lawes take Atabueloe destroyed all the Royall bloud, hee being a Bastard. Others might not marrie their fifter, but the lace only. The Prouinces differed in some cases, the elder Sonne of the lace succeeding, in other places all the brethren after each other, and somewhere the best esteemed of the Sonnes. Divers cu-

Such viages were before the Incas times, and not broken by them.

30 The Inca made a great Feast at the wayning of the cohieft Son, which was at two yeeres old or vowards, & they first cut off his haire with a flint-razor, the Fathers beginning, each following in his dignity; then did they name him and offer presents. The fame was imitated by the Curacas Care of Inand the people. Their children were brought vp without any dainty niceneffe. Affoone as they fants. were born they washed them in cold water, and then put them in blankets. They gave them the breaft but at morning, and noone and night, thrice a day, how much focuer they cried, left they should be gluttons. But of I fould follow our Author in honfrold affaires, I fould be too long.

Inca Roca their fixth King puriued his Northerne Conqueits to Chanca, a valiant Nation, Inca Roca the which fay they descended of a Lyon, and therefore worthipped the Lyon for God. I have seene

them in their Feast of the Sacrament twelve of them like Herenles, attired in a Lyons skinne. He 40 proceeded to the end of the Prouince Autabuarila and thence to Bramarca and Hancobualis and Villes, Sulle, and Viunfulls. After that he tent his Sonne the Prince Tabuarhuarac to Antifugu of the East, where fince Mance Capac they had done nothing. They say that when this Prince was borne, he wept bloud, and fo his name ngnifieth. Other Historians haue herein beene decei- Acoffe and oued. He tooke with him fifteene hundred Warriours , and three Campe-mailers. Hee went to ther, fay that Hamfes (Which was after, the lot of my Father Garculaffe de la Vega) and thence to the Vallies it was thorow where the herbe Caca groweth, so much esteemed by them: and beyond it to Cannac-buay which rivite. bath five leagues of delicent almost perpendicular, and striking terrour to the beholders : how cuca. much more to them which goe downe, the way winding like a Snake? In these Provinces of the Steep & deepe Antis they worthipped Tygres and great Snakes five and twentie or thirtie foot in length, called descent of the Marn, which doe no harme, being as fome lay, charmed to that innocence by a great Magi-

50 cian. They worthinged also the herbe Cuca or Coca as the Spaniards call it. In this Expedicion the Prince added thirtie leagues to the Empire, but ill peopled. The Inca Roca leaving the Prince his Deputie, went with thirty thousand to the Conquett of Chareas : and added fittle leagues square to his Sourreigntie : after which he dyed and his Sonne Tahuar Huacac succeeded. Rocas Tahuar Huacac Lawes and Schooles which he is faid first of all to have founded in Cozco, for the Arts aforesaid, the seventh I omit. He was wont to fay that Pachacamac must needs be a great King which had such a house linea. as the glorious Heauens to dwell in : alto, that if he were toworship any thing below, he would Apophibegmen worthip a wife and understanding man: Yet faith he, that which beginneth, groweth, dieth ir-

recoverably, ought not to be worthipped. 60 Tahnar Huacar or weep-bloud, for the ill distinings of that accident at his birth, stayed a good While in visiting his Kingdomes before hee thought upon Conquests. Yet at length hee sent his Brother Inca Marta with twenty thousand South-westward, which conquered from Arequesa to Tacama. After this he minded a more haughtie Defigne to conquer Caranca and other Regi- Tabun buscat ons in the Divition Collafuyu valiant people, but was foone called to other thoughts by the ill acts.

Tribes, towns;

Lawes of Inhe

Fiffff 3

Beare of his Seance

demeanour of his eldest Sonne, whom therefore hee purposed to dishert for his cruell conditions. He caufed him to line with the Shepherds which kept the Cattle of the Sunne in Chita, which he did, carrying himfelte like a Shepherd three yeeres and a halfe. He came one afternoone to his Fathers house and sent to speake with him, who sent him word that he should goe thicker where he had placed him, having incurred death by breaking his precept. Hee fent word that hee came with a mellage from as great a Lord as himfelfe, which when he had deliuered he would returne. He manuelling what Lord that should be, admitted him to his presence, and heard him tell that A vision of the at moone that day, as he was feeding the Sunnes cattell, there flood a man, before him in a ftrange

habit and forme, having a beard on his face aboue a span long, and clothed to the foot, with anwhichowne creature failtened to his necke. He faid (that be was the Sonne of the Sanne and brother les of Manco Capac the first Inca, and therefore to them all: that hee was named Viracocha Inca, and came from the Sunne our Father to gine him aduife that the most of the Proninces of Chinchaluyu; both [ubiects and others, were in armes and comming with a mightie Armie to destroy the Imperiall Ciooto juouetta ana sooti, mee en armes onna commune una a conquesta attine te uniterio tota imperio ele-tic COCO: that therefore be floudd preuent and proude in time. And fores thom not, for un badifi-ener adurefità un'il factour these au my field and blond. After these words hee vanished away. His ener adurefità un'il factour these au my field and blond. Father chid him and would not beleeve him. Three monethes after came newes of the Rehellion of many Nations which had killed their Gouernours, and had aftembled thirty thousand Souldiers in demand of Cozco: Hancebualla was their Generall. This was the first Rebellion of the Propinces which the Incas had conquered, and was fo judden to Tabuer Huacae that hee fled out of Cozce with a few followers, with purpose to secure himselfe in Collassyn. The Citizens were readie to fice each his way, till some thinking of the Prince (whom vpon that Dreame or Vition they called Viracocha Inca, his former name is vnknowne) gaue him intelligence thereof, He gathered what forces he could, and followed his Father to whom having prefented in a pithy forech, the milerable leaving of the house and holies of the Sunne, and of the Sunnes Virgins to fuch prophane Enemies, hee bid those which loued an honourable death before a shamefull life to follow him : which foure thousand of the Royall bloud did, to whom others from all parts affembled. Hauing fet order in Cozeo, hee went with eight thousand resolute Warriours to meete the enemy which had now passed the River Aparimac.

He next day came newes of 20000 men, comming to his aide from Cantifaya, which 30 hee attributed to Viracetha which had promifed him fuccour in all diffress; this bred him. respect, and confidence to the businesse with the Indians. He entertained these supplies toy fully, which told him of other fine thouland comming two dayes behind. To thefe hee lent word to Embulcado themselues in a place appointed, that so in the fury of the battle they might come forth vn-xpected. This they did and much daunted the enemies, especially when with shours and cryes manifold small troupes came in alto which were of such as had fied from Cozca, who hearing of the Princes relolation made head as they could and made the Rebels thinke that they should neu. r fee an end of their enemies. A brute was alto railed, and sumoured in both Campes that Virachoca turned stones and trees

into men, to fight for the Prince. The battle continued eight hours with fo much bloud, that 40

a Brooke in the Plaine rame therewith. Twentie thouland were flaine on both fides, twelve

and his Son not about him, beleeuing but two Gods the inuifible and visible as is said; the Indians

telling Fables to pleafe the Spaniards, and fome things for want of the Language were not rightly

understood by the Spaniards. The Prince after the Victory fent three Messengers, the first to

the house of the Sunne (for in all things they dealt with him as if he had beene a bodily man, fet-

Advantage by

Acolla taxed, thousand of the Rebels side besides their Generall and Campemasters taken.) Father Acosta hath Sec [49, 1060. much of this Viracocha, but altogether fabrilous. For the Indians efteeme him next to the Snine,

Their dealing

Why the Spacalled Viraco-

b Acofafaith they came by Sea, in con-

ting him meate and drinke, &c.) the other to the house of the Virgins, the third to his Father. He dealt very mildly with the Rebels and their wines and children, pardoning them and protiding for the Widowes and Orphans. Hee was received with great libilee in (ozeo, and thence 52 went to the Straits of Muyna, to visit his Father which feemed malcontent. They spake some words in private, and the Prince came forth and faid that his Father would not returne to Cozco. This (whether true or falle) was enough, and in vaine had he now gainfaid it; fo that a Pallace of pleasures was there built for the Pather to spend the rest of his dayes, his Sonne taking the Diademe. This Vision of Virachoca with a heard and clothed to the foot, whereas the heardlelle Natines are clothed but to the knees, was the cause that the Spaniards at their first comming were called Virachoca: and for that they tooke and killed the Tyrant Asabuallya, which had flaine Hussear the right Heire, and wrought fo many cruelties. Which caused that fix Spaniardiacalled because lone, of which was Soto and Bares, went to Cozes two or three hundred leagues without harms. They called them also Incas, Sonnes of the Sunne. That which some fay, b that they were cal- 60 hed Vorachuea, because they came by Seasfaying that the word signifieth the fat(or fourime) of the for mme or the Sea, they are deceived : for Viracheen is the Sea of far, or tallow (Vira, febo; cocha, mar) to that it appeares to be a proper name, and not compounded, I conceiue further that the Artillery was the cause that they were called Viracheca.

CHAP. 12. Temple, Conquests, Aqueducts, improving, dividing tilling of lands, 1452

This luca Uiracocha by his victorie and vision was so esteemed, that in his life time they worthipped him as a God ient by the Sunne for reparation of things amiffe , reverenced him Beyond his predecessors. He built a Temple for memoriall of that Vision to Diracacha in Cacha, therein Viretarhas initating, as much as was possible, the place where hee faw the fame, and therefore without a Temple. more; it was an hundred and twenty-foot long, and eighty wide, of those fairely wrought, with foure doores, the Easterne onely open, with his figure in a Chappelly formewhar refembling those Images which were make of the Apostles. The Spaniards destroyed it, as they did other famous worker which they found in Peru, icariely any Monument remayning : which they did to fearch for steafure vinder them. He made alto two hoge Birds called Continues (to great; that Condines or o some have beene found with the extremes of their wings extended, fine Varas, or specific vanis. Contors, huge afunder) they are fowlesof prey, fo fierce, that their dammes breake their talons, take beake for Strong, that ar once they will breake the hide " of a Cow. Hee made the picture of these two " curo, pet-Birds, one representing his father in my florie fleeing from Corce, the other Unacoche, He fought haps it should to gratifie his Commanders and Subicets, and fought new conquests. Hee fent Pahnac may to Inco his brother against Caranca, Thaca, Lips, Chicha and Ampara. Their two last worthstoped the ranke of Hills for their heigth , and for the Rivers which they yeeld. These were all subjet Oted : and Eastward to the Sierra, or fnowy Hill, Sonthwards to the firtheil Province of Chara cas two hundred leagues from Cozco. So that the Sea and the Hills on each hand, and South-

ward the Defarts betwint them and Chill, bounded the Empire. Northwards het went with 20 thirty thousand warriours to Huamanea, and other Nations which hee fubiected. Hee made a tour tourist it water-pallage twelve foot in the channell, to run an hundred and twenty leagues from betwint Huge Aque. Paren and Picay to Rucana; and another thorowall the dinifion Cuntifugu from South to. North one hundred and firty leagues from the high Sierras to the Quechuas: which may be ranked with the Wonders of the world confidering the Rockes they brake thorow without infiruments of steele, and onely by stones with force of hands. Neither know they to make arches, but were . driven to goe about. The Spaniarde have fuffered them all to perifh : as they have permitted two third parts of those which were to water the Corne grounds to be lost also.

E nbaffadours came from Tuema (the Spaniards call it Tuemnan) to the Juca, offering vaffalage, Tuema, whom hee made to drinke in his prelence (an inestimable fauour) and promised somuelt better 20 respect as his course deserved. Hancobnalls notwithstanding all his kinde viage, left his Countries to got feeke new and the Inca fent Colonies to the Chances. This Inca they fay had a forttelling of the Spaniards comming. Hee died, and left his sonne Pachacines luca his home. It is suppored that he raigned aboue fiftie yeeres. Anno 1,60. I faw his body in Cozes, in the posfestion of Licenciate Polo, with foure others : this with white haires, the fecond of Tapas thes See fup. Acoust Tupanqui, the third of Huayna Capac, which two were heavy but not white: the two other were Queens; Mama Runtu wife to Viracocha and Mama Oslo mother of Huana Capar. They were fo

whole that there wanted not haire eie-brows nor haire on the eie-lids. They had their garments, ribands, & diadems, as while they lived. They were fet as the Indians vie with their hands across on their breatts, the right hand ouer the left, their eyes downwards, as looking on the ground, 40 and seemed as if they had beene aline, and full fieshed. The lindians would never tell the Spaniards their embalming arte. They weighed so little, that they were easily carried to the Gentlemens houses which desired to see them. The Indians by the way kneeled to them with sighs and tears.

When the Inca had conquered any Province, and fetled the government, hee improved the lands which would beare Mayz, fending Enginers to that purpole for conueyance of waters, Manner of image without which they fowed no Mayz in those hot Countries. They also made plaine the fields, allotting and layd them in figures, the better to receive the water. They made plaine the Mountaines lands. which were capable of feed, as it were in scales or steppes, one plaine subordinate to another, therefore called Andenes. Having thus improved the Land, they divided it, to each Towne their fhare by themselves; each subdivided into three parts, one for the Sunne, a second for the King. The Sunne, and the third for the Naturals; with that prouition, that alway the Naturals should have suffi-50 cient, and if the people increased, the Sunnes and Incar part were lessened, that they should not want. The like division they made of the grounds which needed not such watering towed with other feels. The Andenes commonly belonged in greatest part to the Sunne, and the Inca. The

Mayz grounds they fowed every yeere, heartning them with dung, as Gardens. They first husbanded the Sunnes grounds, next that of Widowes and Orohanes, and of the Order of tile old and ficke, all which were holden for poore, and had peculiar men in every Towne appoin. lage. ted Officers for that purpose. They had feed alto, if they wanted, out of the Store-houses. Each man was tied to husband enough for prouision to his owne houshold. The lands of those which Care of Wiferued in the warres were provided as those of the poore; their wives for that time being re-

60 spected as widowes. And if any were flaine in the warres, great care was had of his children. After thetelands, each man tilled his owne, one helping another in courfe; then those of the Curaca, which were last cultivated in enery Towne. In Huayna Capacs time, one of the Chachapuyas was hanged for tilling the Curacas land his kiniman, before the widowes, and the Gallowes was fet up in the Curacas land, where hee had transgressed the Incas precept. The last of

1470 Order of tillage, tribuses of labour or Lice; Prefents, Store-boufes. LIB.VII

Workes in with feftmall alacritic. Incas abour.

Spade.

all was the Incas lands, which thought his good to be grounded on the prosperitie of his Subiects. There and those of the Sunne were common workes which they did with their best ornaments and rayment, with spangles of Silver and Gold, and feathers on their heads, as on feathers fitual dayes; with fongs in breaking vp their ground, in praise of their God and Prince. One. Anden neere Cozco, being the first in the Kingdome which was dedicated to the Sunne, wastlaled onely by Incas and Palles of the bloud Royall with a great feast in their beast iewels, making Some of Harli, that is, of triumph. Their Plough (or Spade rather) was of wood, a yard long. plaine before and pointed, round behind, foure fingers thicke; halte a yard from the point was a firrup of two pieces of wood taftned to the principall, in which he fet his foot, leaping and a natural ing it forcibly into the ground up to the filtrup. They went in companies, feuener eight me together, and digged up turtes of incredible bignetie. The women went besides them to helps with clieir hands to lift up the earth, and weed out the rootes, and to cheare them with Songs. The Land was divided to each man according to the number of his familie, and to the Cmaca in greater proportions : likewife the water and other things necessary.

Tributes of Labour.

Wames.

The principall tribute which they payed was this labouring the grounds of the Sunne and Inca, gathering their fruits, and keeping them in places appointed. Of their owne private lands they payd nothing. Other tributes were their making of clothes, shooes and armes for expense in watte, to which end they had wooll of the Cattell of the Sunne and Inca, which were innimetable in the Hills, and Cotton in the Plaines. The poore were sied to give on certaine daves · Lowie-tribute- to many pipes of Lice fo to acknowledge fubication, and to keepe themselues cleane. The Roy-

Scotteemen, all kindred, Prieits, Ministers, and Curaius were tribute-free; the chiefe Captaines to Centurions, the Iudges, Officers and Souldiers in time of feruce, young men under 24, and old men aboue co. and all women and maidens: Their labour was not imposed but voluntary. Gold, Silver and Gemmes were not reckoned tribute, nor treasure, nor price of other things bought uer no money, and fold, or of mens labour. Onely they efteemed them for beautie, and thereof made voluntary presents for the Temples, Nunneries and houses Royall. For they might not visite a Superious

without a Prefent. The Caracas in the principall feafts must visite the Inca, and made him Prefents of these or other things of account, as materials for buildings, Lyons, Tigres, Beares, Parots, Monkies, great Snakes, or any other thing faire, fierce, great or strange. The King had in every Towne two places, one to keepe his goods for the feruice of the Sunne and himfelfe, ano 30 ther for prouifion against deare yeeres; besides others for high-wayes, &c. Wooll was distributed every two yeeres, as any had need for garments for them and theirs, fo that none needed to

Hospitals.

conquelts.

begge, neither had they any beggars in later times. I neuer faw Indian man or woman in my time that begged but one old woman named I fabell, which did it more to goe from housew Innes and tra- house, as a Griptie or Luggler, then for any need. The lucas also caused to build publike Innes for entertainment of Strangers, which had all necessaries free out of the Kings Store-houses: and & any were ficke, they were likewile prouided for. None trauelled in private affaires, but in the Kings businesse. When any new con quest was made, they recorded on their quipus the quantitie, Course in new qualitie, fite and other conditions of the lands of each Prounce, Towne and Diuision, that order might accordingly be taken. The Mines were given to the Caracte. Salt, Fift and Cotton were so common, none to applie any part to himselte, but to gather what hee needed. Each man might plant trees in his owne ground and enjoy them at his pleafure. The lands were divided as you

The Sixth Booke. Supendious buildings and

THe fertice and ornament of the houfes Royall of the Iseas may freme to have exceeded any Kings of the world in some things. The buildings of their Houfes, Temples, Gardens, and Baths were adorned with stone fairely wrought, and let to close that the joynture could not bee feene. Many of them had melted Lead or Silver or Gold for the joyning, which cauted the totall destruction of them all, by the Spaniards feeking for those metals. They had the counterfeits in Gold and Silver of herbs which growe on walls, as if they had beene the plants there 50 growing: and likewise the relemblances of Mice, Butterflies, Snakes great and small, Lizards Their houles, feeming to moue; the Iness chambers were lined with Gold, with figures of Men, Women, Birds, all knowne Beafts wilde and tame, all in their naturall figure and largenefic in Gold and Silver; the Incu Chaires of state were of folid Gold, without backes, having a great square Table of Gold ouer them. All the veffels of service both for Table, Butterie and Kitchin, small and great, were of Gold and S luer, and that in all the Kings houses, so that when her sourneyed in progresse they did not remoue them from one house to another, as likewise in the Prounces where he had occasion to march with his Armies, or to vitite his Kingdomes. Hee had in them also of like metals many Granaries and Repositories not to keepe Graine, but to expresse

Carmente Cieça, Zavate, Gemera,and o.her Spa-

Hee had flore of rich garments, the Inca never ving to weare one thing twice, but guing of the food them once worne, to his kindred. The bed-furniture was of the wooll of the Vicunna, to hire, gious treatures that King Philips Beds are thence turnished. Feather beds they had not, but had fuch Mandes layd ouer and under them. Tapitire was tupplied with linings of Gold and Silver on the walls. CHAP.13. Golden Gardens and Woodstackes. Court-officers. Hunting; posts. 1471

Their prouisions for diet were abundant, they preparing for all their kindred and feruants: the hours were from eight to nine in the morning, and in the evening lightly by day-light. Their drinking lafted till night, for whiles they eate they drinke not.

Their Gardens and Orchards had all the fairest trees and plants planted, and many others Gardens, Oscounterfeited of Gold or Silver; as Mayz with the leaves, stalkes, roots, and reedy tops of gold chards and and illuer mixed, and foin other herbs and flowers; fome comming forth, fome halfe growne, Baines, some ripe; with counterfeits of Lizards, Butterflies, Snakes, Foxes, wilde Cats (for they had none tame) Birds of all forts and pollures, fet on trees and plants; Decre, Lious, Tigres, and whattoeuer creatures the Land had, fet in due places. Their Baths had great veffels in 10 which they bathed themselves, of gold and filver, and water pipes of the same. They had also wood-flackes counterfeited thereof. The most of which treasures the Indians hid from the couctous Spansards, vinwilling that others should bee served with that which was for the service

The feruants and officers for Water, Fewell, and the Kitchin, for the Table of state (for the Seruants and Women and Concubines provided for the Inca himfelie, Butlers, Porters, Keepers of the Ward, Officers, robe, lewels, Gardens, and in other Offices, were not particular persons: but for enery Office they had two or three Townes affigned, whose charge it was to fend men of abilitie and truft, by dayes, weekes, or moneths changed in courfe : and this was their tribute; the whole Towne being punished in any defect. These Townes were within fixe or feuen leagues of Cozco, being

20 thole which Manco the first Inca had reduced from Sauages to Townes of civilitie, and thele were Incar by proulledge, and had the title and attire according. The Incar huntings were at Huntings. certaine times of the yeere with twentie or thirtie thousand men, one halfe going on the right hand, the other on the left, circling in twen ie or thirtie leagues, bringing in whatfoeuer wilde beafts in that compasse, and killing all they pleased. Every foure leagues they had Posts , swift Posts. runners for fudden mellages, called Chafquis, eicher by word or quipus. But now wee will re-

Pach source having finished the folemnities visited his Kingdome, to examine the courses of Pachscutee, his Gou-mours : and then fet forth his brother Capac Tupanqui with an Armie, which paffed the night ince, thorow the Province Sanfa, corruptly by the Spaniards, called Xanxa, which professe to be de- Sanfa Dog-30 scended of a man and a woman which came out of a Fountaine; their Townes were lke For-

treffes: they worthipped the fig tre of a Dog, and did eate Dogs flesh sauourly. They had also an Holl like a man, in wi ich the Deuill spake. This people called Huanca were subiccted, the Tarma and Pumpu also and Chucurpu, Ancara, Huayllas (in which Province he grieuously punifined Sodomites, a finne before vnknowne to the Indians) after which conquests hee returned to Cozeo, having guned fixtie leagues North and South in that Expedition, continuing three Benefite and yettes. Pathamete was built in making Lawes, building Temples, founding Houfes for elect or peropaine of chofin University in the Principes (which was to make find) Principes. Circums and Natural of Numerica and cho for Ungins in the Provinces (which was to make fuch Provinces, Citizens and Naturals of Sun-temples Cozeo) in erecting Fortresses also in his frontiers, and Royall Palaces in the most delectable places, and Store-houtes to keepe prouitions against yeeres of dearth. He spent three yeeres in visi-

40 ting his Kingdome, and after tent his brother Inca Capac Tupangui with his fonne the Prince Inca Tupanqui, knighted that yeere after their manner, and fittie housand men by Chinchusus to Peruan Knighte Pincu, Huaras, Piscopampa, Cunchucu, which being tubiceted, hee proceeded to Huamachucu, where they worshipped particoloured stones, and facrificed mans flesh, which was in that conquest altered. After that they came to Cassamerea (famous for the taking of Atahualpa by the Spaniards) where they first stood out and after yeelded, and there was founded a Temple for the Sunne, and a house of Virgins, which after grew one of the chiefe in the Kingdome. In re- Forme of Pt. turning they subdued the Tanious, and were with festivall pompe entertained in Cozco, each Na. 1448 trumphe tion in the Citie gracing the folemnitie, fingled in their feuerall bands with warlike Musike, adding Songs of triumph: betwixt the Generall and the Prince went the Inca Pachacutec, till

50 they came to the limits of the Temple of the Sun, and then they put off their shooes, except the Shoo error Inca which at the doore of the Temple was vnshod also, where entring, adoring and rendring monic. praises for the victories, they returned to the Market place where they folemnized the feath with longs, dances, and good cheere. Each Nation arose from their place and tung and danced before the Inca after their Countrie guile. This continued a moneth.

After this the King with his fonne and brother went to the conqueft of the Vallies Pifce, River mine Tea, Chincha, which Countries hee enriched with a Ruer from the Sierres, tuning the course cae of the Ica, Courcha, Which Countries hee enriched with a Ruer from the Sierra, turning the countries which naturally went Eastward into the West, to water the grounds. All those Nations for Sea worship. fine hundred leagues space worshipped the Sea, besides the particular Idols of each People, and ped. called it Mamacocha, or Mother Sea, for her plentie of fifth, which three gains them to eate. They Pachacomaco 60 worthipped allo the Whale for the monthros greatnesse. In another expedition the Vallies Rung Temple, and buanac, Huaren, Malla, Chilea, all subiect to one Prince, were subdued, the Inca besieging and fa- Oracle 12.4 milling their Armie. Then palled they to the Vallies of Pachacamae, Rimae, Cancay and Huaman, which also hid one King, called City maness. The Spaniards corruptly call Rionac. Lima: Pachucamac had the name of the inmulible God, neither had they any Temple to him in all Pern

Cursmancy refused tubiection to the Incas demands in name of the Sunne, faying his Pachacamac was the Creator and prefereer of all, and therefore greater then the Sunne, to whom they had erected a Temple, where they offered the best things they had, and held him in such reue-Rices of Pacha- rence, that when the King entred his Temple to worth p him , he did not dare to looke on him, Io samer Temple but he and the Priest went backwards with their shoulders towards the Idoll : and that hee also adored Rimac which fore-told things to come; and Mamacocha, the Sea. The Inca fent him word that they also in their hearts worthipped Pachacamac, but without Temple or Sacrifice. because they knew him not, and were fearefull to pronounce his name. Many other words of perswasion passed, and peace was concluded, on condition that they should worship the Sunne. as did the Incas, and make him a Temple apart as to Pachacamae; that they should take away their Idols in the Temple of Pachacamac, and worth p him without Statue; and that they should cease humane Sacrifices : that a House of Virgins should be erected in the Valley of Pachacamae: that Cursmanen should remaine in his Loruship, acknowledging the Inca Lord Soueraigne, and obeying his Lawes, and that Rimacs Oracle should still bee in estimation. And thus Royall af- 20 faires, and those of greatest moment were after consulted of in Pachacamacs Temple, vulgar bulin fles were remittes to Rimac. Pachacutec having beene a great King and Priest and Cantaine, enriched the Temple of the Sunne, courring the walls with plankes of Gold, as also the Shrines, and or the Cloutter. Where the Idoll of the Sunne was, there is now the bleffed Sacrament, and in the Cloitter are Processions, and yeerely Festivals in the Couent of Saint Dominge. Hee fent his some in another Expedition, who comming to the Valley, entred Pachacamaes

Temple, but without Sacrifices or verball Oritons, onely professing mentall adoration. He vi-

fited also the Temple of the Sunne with rich offerings, and then the Idell Rimae : and after mar-

ched to Huamac, where Chimu a great Lord reigned : from thence to Truxille in the Vallies Par-

munca, Hualims, Santa, Huarapu and Chimu. Here while Chimu would admit no new Gods, a 20

bloudy warre followed, which at last ended in his vasfallage. The Inca now having enlarged his

estate aboue an hundred and thirty leagues North and South, and in breadth from the Hills to

the Sea forme fixtie or feuenty leagues, fell to founding Townes, Temples, Store-houses, and reformed the Empire, ennobled the Schooles, augmented the Schoole-masters, caused all the Ca-

races and all Officers to learne the (wico Language (as common) and much enlarged (ozco. Hee

reigned about fiftie yeeres, or as others, aboue fixtie, and left Tnea Tupanqui his successor . leaving

about three hundred fonnes and daughters. The Spanish Authours confound the father and the fonne. Many of his sentences and lames are recorded by the authour, here omitted: as likewise the

transplanting of Colonies, order of bringing up the Curacas beires in the Court; the common or Court Tongue; the description of Cozco, the Schooles, and the three Royall Palaces, Almes, &c. for all these \$10

Cozco was another Rome, in which the Sunne had foure Festivall folemnities observed, the

I remat the curious to the Authour, fearing blame for this our length. Tet their chiefe Feast of the Sun,

principall in Iune, which they called Truip Raymi, as it were The Sunnes Eafter, and absolutely

Raymi, in acknowlegement of the Sunnes Deity ouer all, and his being Father of the laca,

Manco and his descendants. All the principall Captaines which were not then in the warres

came to it, and all the Curacus, not by precept but of deuotion, in adoration of the Sunne, and

veneration of the Inca. And when age, ficknesse, distance or butinesse in the Kings affaires de-

tained them, they fent their formes or brethren with the chiefe of their kindred to that folem-

ther; yet in this Featt proper to the Sunne, the King himfelte, as first-borne of the Sunne, was

the principall Solemnizer. The Curacas came in their greatest brauerie, and best deuises; some

like Hercules, in Lions skinnes with their heads in the Lions head-skinne, as boafting of descent

from a Lion : Iome like Angels, with great wings of a Cuntur fourteene or fifteene foot dillant

in the extremes ftretched out, as descended of that Fowle; some with vizors of most abomi-

nable and deformed formes, and those are the Tuncas; others with golden and filter ornaments;

and others with other inventions. Every Nation carried the armes which they yield in fight, 25

nitie. The King did performe the first ceremonies as Chiefe Priest: for although they had a high 50

rites of triall and installing of Knights, I have added.

fundand.

Common Tongue,

See of their Frafte in

Acofta.

Corco as Reme. mother of fuperfittions.
Raymi, hat is, the Feaft.

Generall affembly.

The King was chiefe Priest at Priest alwaies of the bloud Royall, Brother or Vncle to the King, legitimate by Father and Mo-

Faft of three tie, or accompanying with their wives all that time. The Fast ended, or the night before the

Bowes and Arrowes, Dirts, Slings, Clubs, Lances, Axes, &c. the pictures also of what soeuer exploits they had done in the feruice of the Sunne or Incm. Once; all came in their best accoultre. 69 ments and branerie that they were able. They prepared themselves to this festivitie with a rigorous Fast, in three dayes eating nothing but a little white raw Mayz, and a few herbs with water; not kindling a fire in the Ci-

Feath the Priests Incas made ready the Sacrifices and Offerings , which every Nation is to prorealt the Fileto and of the Sunne make that night a great quantity of dowe of Maiz called cancer, Bread fefficial. whereof they make little loues as bigge as a common Apple. Neyther do thefe Indians euer cat their Maiz made into breadbut at this Feath and at another called Cuna; then eating two or three bits at the beginning of the meale; their ordinary meales in flead of bread have care parched or boyled in graine. The Virgins of the Sunne prepare this bread for the Inca, and those of his bloud; for the reit, innumerable other women are appointed, which make it with Reli-

gious case.

In the morning early the face goeth accompanied with all his kindred, a mixed according to Aderation of 10 their age and dignitie, to the chiese flerest of the Citie called Hauespain: and there expect the the sifing sun. Sunne rifing, all barefooted, looking to the East with great attention; as soone as he peepes forth, fall on their elbowes (which is as kneeling here) adoring him with their armes open, and their hands before their faces, giuing killes to the ayre (as in Spaine it is the vie to kille a mans owne hand, or the Princes garment) to acknowledging him their God. The Caracas fet themselues in Festivall and another freet next thereto, called Coffipses, and make the same adorston. After this the King Drinke, it is the same another freet next thereto, called Coffipses, and make the same adorston. After this the King Drinke, the same and the same adorston the same and th of drinke, the one in his right hand, as in the name and fteed of the Sunne, as if he did drinke to his kindred (this was their greatest courteste of the Superior to the Inferior, and among it friends, to give them drinke) and powres it into a pipe of Gold, by which it runneth into the house of

20 the Sunne. After this he drinketh part of that in his left hand, giving the reft to the Incar in 2 fmall Cup,or out of the same vestell (this fanctifying or giving versue to all that is brought forth) enery man crinking a draught. The Curaem drinke of that which the women of the Sunne have bare-foot made. This done, they went all in order to the House of the Sunne, and two hundred paces before they came at the doore, they put off their shooes; only the King stayed till hee came at the doore. Then the Inca and his entred in and adored the Image of the Sunne, as naturall Sonnes. The Curacus abode in the street before the Temple. The suca offered with his owne hands the Oblations's veffels in which he had done that ceremony; the other lucas gaue their veffels to the Priefts (for they which were not Priefts, might not doe the Prieftly office, alchough they were of the blow.) The Priests having received the lacas offered vessels, went forth to receive those of the Ca-30 reces which brought them in order of their antiquity, as they had bin fubitect to the Empire; they

gaue also other chings of Gold and Silver, with Sheep, Lizards, Toads, Snakes, Foxes, Tigres, Li-rings. one, variety of Birds, and whatforuer most abounded in their Countries. The offerings ended, they returned to their fireets in order. Then the lucas Priefts, bring forth great flore of Lambes, barren Ewes and Rams of all colours (for freep in those parts are of al colours, as Horses in these all being the Cattle of the Sun. They take a black Lambe (which they efteeme the holiest colour for Auguries. Sacrifices and the Kings weare commonly black) and offer that first for Soothfaying (a thing wied Black faireft. by them in all things of moment in peace and warre, looking into the heart and lungs for prog- Soothfaying noffications) they let the head to the Eath, not tying any of his feet, open him alius (being hold, field, den by these or four ladieur) and that on the left fide, to take out his heart and entrals with Kites thereof. 40 their hands, without cutting. The best Augury was if the lungs mooued when they were taken

forth: the worst, if the Sacrifice in the opening arose on the feet ouercomming those which held it. If one producd valuckie, they assayed another of a Ram, and another of a barren Ewe; if all procued valueky they gave over keeping the Feart, and faid the Sunne was angry for some fault. which they had done, and expected wars, Dearth, Murrayne, &c. After this Augury, they opened not the other Sacrifices abue but out off their heads, offering the bloud and heart to the Sun.

The fire which they vied must bee new, given them, as they faid by the hands of the Sunne, which they did by the force of the Sunne beames finning thorow a Iewell which the High Prieft Holy fire. sheld in his hand (as by a burning Glaffe) on Cotton. With this fire they burned the Sacrifice and rofted that dayes fielh : and carried thereof to the Temple of the Sunne, and to the house of Vir-50 gins to keepe all the yeers. And if the Sunne did not thine, they made fire with motion of two

mooth round flickes; but this absence or refusall of the Sunne they esteemed valucky. All the fieth of those Sacrifices was rosted openly in the two streets aforesaid; they parted it among it the Inca, Curaca, and common people which were at the Feast, giving it with the bread canen. After this they had many other Viands: and when they had done eating they fell to drinking, in Festival eating which vice they exceeded, though now the Spaniards example have that way done good, and and drinking, this vice is infamous among it them. The Inca litting in thate lends his Kinfmen to the principall in his name to make them drinke, first the valorous Captaynes, next the Caracas which have not bin Commanders in war, then to Cozeo-lucas by priviledge: the manner was this; the Inca which brought the drinke faid, she Capa Inca fonds thee banketting drinke, and I come in his name to drinke

60 with thee. The Captaine or Caraes tooke the Cup with great reuerence and lifted vp his eyes to the Sunne, as giving him thankes for such a favour, and having drunke, returned the Cup to the Inca with shew of adoration, not speaking one word. Hee tends to the Captaines in generall; but to some speciall Curacas only; the rest the Incas in their owne name, and not in the Kings, cause to drinke. The Cups were holden in great veneration because the Capa Inca had touched

1473

Manner of Knights.

them with his hands and lips. After this beginning they fell to freer drinking one to another. and after that to dancing, the Fealt continuing nine dayes with great iollity, but the Sacrifices held but the first : and after they returned to their Countries.

Now for their Knights, till they had that order, they were not capeable of the dignities of warre or peace. The youths of the Royall bloud (for none elfe might be in election) from fixteen yeeres old vpwards, first made experiments of themselves in rigorous tryals, whether they could indure the hard Aduentures of warre. Euery yeere, or each other yeere, these noble youths were thut yo in a house where old Masters examined them. They were to fast seven dayes strictly. with a little raw Come and water, to try their endurance of hunger and thirst. Their Parents and brethren allowated for them to intreace the Sunne to fauour them. They which could not 14 fuffaine this falt, were rejected as vnfufficient. After this they heartned them with meate. and tryed their activitie in running of a certaine Race a league and halfe long, where was a Banner fer. which he that first came at was Captaine of the rest; others also to the tenth were subordinate. ly honoured. Their next tryall was in skirmish, one halfe to keepe, the other to get a Fortz and they which were now keepers, were another day befiegers, where eagernesse and emulation fometimes coft some their liues in that ludicrous warre. Then followed wreftling betwixt eguals, leaping, throwing small and great stones, also a Launce and a Dart, and other Armes, shoos ting, casting with a sling, and exercise in all weapons of warre. They caused them to watch ten or twelue nights as Centinels, comming fuddenly on them at vncertaine houres, shaming those which they found fleeping. They tryed with wands how they could indure ftripes, beating them 10 cruelly on the armes and legs (where the Indians goe bare) and if they made any lad remonstrance of forrow they rejected them, faying how would they beare their enemies weapons ? They were to bee in manner vnsensible. A Fencer also made semblance with a two hand Club called Macana, another while with a Pike, to hit or ftrike them, and if they shrugged , or in their eves or body made show of feare, they were rejected. Next they made triall whether they had skill to make their armes of all forts, and shooes called Vata, like those which the Franciscans

After all these, the Captaines and Masters of these Ceremonies tell them of their pedigree from the Sunne, the noble Acts of their Ancestors, and instruct them in courage, clemency and mildenelle to the poore, with other parts of morality. The Heire apparant indured no leffe rigorous to tryals then others, except in running for the Banner, and all that tryall time (which was from one New Moone to another) he went in poore and vile habit to teach him to pity the poore. These things done, the King solemnly attended, made a Speech to them, and each on their kneet receiued at his hand the firit Enfigne of dignity, which was to boare a hole in their eares.

The New Knight kiffed his hand, and the next person to the Inca put off his Vintas, and put him on gallant shoots of Wooll. Then did he goe to another place, where other Incas put him on breeches, as the token of manhood, which before he might not weare: after which they put on his head two kinds of flowres, and a leafe of another herbe which will long keepe greene. No other men might werre those flowres. The Prince had the same Entignes, and differed only in his yellow tringe of Wooll (which none but he, and that first after his tryall, might weare) and 45 an Axe of Armes with a kinde of laueline aboue a yard long; which when they put in his hand, they faid Aucumapac, that is, for tyrant Trayters. The Kings fringe was coloured; he ware befides on his head two feathers of a Bird called Coreguenque, which are faid to bee but a Male and a Female, in one place only called Pillacannia. Their they weare vpon their fringe: and every new Successor must have new. When the Prince is Knighted all of the bloud Royall adore him as

The feventh Інса Тирапциі The Music in-

T Nea Tupanqui bestowed three yeeres in visiting his Kingdome, and afterwards resoluted on a difficult deligne, namely to paffe the Anta Eastward from Cozco, that having traversed those high Hils, he might find paffage by some Rivers running thence Eastward: for the Hils them- 50 the renth Inca. felues fill covered with Snow raine and falling were impaffable; mooned by a tradition of many Habitations and Countries in those parts. One of which was called Musu (by the Spaniards, Moxes) to which he might enter by a River in the Antis divided into five, which all make the River Amarumayu; which I suspect to fall into the River of Plate, the greatest River knowns after Orellana, With this determination he fent to cut a great quantity of that stuffe which the Spaniards call Higuera, wherein they fpent two yeares, making thereof a kind of Boats, so many as received ten thouland Souldiers with their provisions, each holding thirtie, fortie, fiftie more or leffe, with their prouisions in the midft. Thus went they downe the River, and had great encounter with the Chancha which lived on both fides the River, all painted and naked with feathers on their heads armed, with Bowes and Arrowes. They were reduced to fubiection, and 60 fent presents of Poppenjayes, Monkies and Huacamayas, Waxe and Honey, which they continued till the death of Tupac Amara the last of the Incas, whom the Vice-roy Francis de Toledo

A Colonie of these was planted neere Tono, some fixe and twenty leagues from Cozco. They

proceeded in their Conquest till they came at Musu two hundred leagues from Cozco. These hearing their Relations of the Incas conquests and deuotions, and Viracochas vision, were content to accept of their friendship, and confederacie, but not to acknowledge valiallage. They permitted them to make a plantation there, and gaue them their Daughters for Wives, being now Peruan Colons not about a thousand left, the rest wasted in the ill wayes and warres. They fent an Embassage in the Musius alfo to Cozes which were well entertained and inftructed in all their Rites. Thefe Peruans would Countrie, have returned into their Countrey about the time of Huayna Capacs death ... but hearing of the Spanish cor quest, stayed.

Anno 1 564. One Diego Aleman a Spaniard hearing of Gold in those parts, with twelve others Spanish atto went on foote with an Indian Curaca for his guide (the ill wayes admitted no Horses) and ha- empts fruuing travelled into the Mulm Countrey after eight and twentie dayes, were fet vpon and tenne frace. Spannards killed, Dugo himielte taken, and two only escaped in the darknesse of the night. The Indians made Diego their Captaine (of a Captine) against their enemies. About this Golden prize the Spaniar de after fell into contention, divers having gotten the grant, and many were flame by their emulous Competitors, and fo made an easie prey to the Chunchu. Three they took and after two yeeres dismilled them. One of them was a Frier and Priest whom they requested at his departure to fend for their conversion which was not done. But let vs returne to Inca

After this Expedition to the Mafin, hee resolved on the Conquest of the great Province 20 Chiribnana, which is voon the Antis Eaftward from Charcas, And because the Countrey was Chiribnana. vaknowne, he fent Spies which brought word that it was a wretched Countrey, wilde Moun- A Sanage beaffe taynes, miry Marishes, Lakes and Bogs, vnprofitable for Seed and Husbandry, and the Naturals brutish worse then beatls without Religion or worship of any thing, without Law. Townes. or Houses, and eating mans fielh, hunting to that end the Neighbour Provinces, and drinking their bloud, without difference of fexe or age; eating also their owne when they dyed, and we en they had eaten their flesh, they layd the bones together and mourned for them, burying those Relikes in Rockes or hollow Trees. They were clothed in skinnes, and abstayned not from fifters. mothers, daughters. Good Inca Tupangui (fo they vied to call him) hearing this, faid they were more bound to the Conquest, to the end to civilize them; for therefore our Father the Sun hath

Hee fent tenne thousand men which spent two yeeres, and returned without having ef- Invasions of feded their Deligne by reason of the ill condition of the Countrey. Neyther had the V ce-roy the Incas and Don Francis de Tolodo any better fuscelle in the like attempt. Anno 1 572, in which by reason of Santards 10 the badnesse of the waves vnpassable for Mules, his Litter was carried on mens shoulders, whom the Chiribnanas followed with cryes threatning to eate them. Such terrour they cause to the borderers, that an hundred of them will flee from ten: yet this little conversation with those which the Inea fent, inftructed them to leave eating their dead friends, and to dwell in houses

The good King Inca Tupanami after this , proceeded to another purpole of conquering Chili, Chili dif. care

40 and from Atacama fent Spies to discouer it, and the difficulty of the wayes: which pasted the red-Deferts and left markes in the way left they should loofe it at their returne, there beeing eachty leagues of Wildernesse from Atacama to Coparapa, which is a little Prouince well peopled, from which to Cuquimpu are other eightic leagues vnpeopled. These having given advice to the Inca. he fent ten thousand men of warre vn ler the command of Smebirnes with provisions necessary; and after them fent ten thousand others both to succour them, and to terrifie the enemy. When words would not perswade the men of Copayapa to receive the command of the Lord of the foure Sudued parts of the World, they came to skirmillies and after to composition, upon the comming of the fecond Army, The Inca hereupon levied other ten thousand, and tent them to follow the tormer which marched eighty leagues, and after many troubles came to another Valley or Prounce called Cuanimpu, which they jubdued. And fo proceeded conquering all the Nations which are

50 fill you come to the Valley of Chile, whereof that whole Kingdome takes the name. This exploit was fixe yeeres in hand, the Inca still tending fresh supplies of men and provisions of armes. clothes and other necessaries, to that he had fiftie thousand men of warre in Chils. They went fitty leagues further Southwards to the River of Maulli, ftil vfing faire meanes rather then cru-l- Brele at Putie to reduce them. And thus the Empire was adjunced about two hundred and fixty leagues rumanes. beyond Atacama: yet ambition looking further, they paffed the River Maulli with twenty thousand men. Three dayes they fought cruelly till halte of both fides were flame; the three dayes following they were content to fit till in expectation, and after that departed from each other without further accomplishment. Maslis was now the Southerne boundarie, and 60 the Inca having intelligence fent them word rather to cultivate and order what they had got-

ten then to feeke new Conquests. Thus they fortified the Frontiers and attended the admi- Spanishads in nistration of Indice, and building Houses for the Sunne and the King. Diego de Almagro was the first Spaniard which discouered Chili, but haung purchased nothing Almagros Di-

An old Chili Captaine his by draucoha.b Spaniards.

Others fav. molten gold downe his throate. Later accidents in Pers and Chili. Prodigious flowers of fand & aibes

> zen of lago in * Noze the A-Vaucans armes

the Spaniards.

residivia de-

but the fight and innumerable troubles in the way, he returned to Pern, which was the cause of the generall Rebellion of the Indians of Peru, and of the difcords and Civill warres of the Spa-P. d. Valibilit, niards. Pedro de Valdinia, made the next Dilcouerie, and happily conquered them, but as vn. happily was put to death by the Arancars his vallils, after hee had raised his profits to a hundred thouland Pezos yeerely, which yet did but enlarge his appetite. The Arancans had affembled twelve or thirreene thouland, notwithstanding which numbers Valdinia still had the better, by reason of the Horsemen, ten of which would breake thorow a thousand Indians, which therefore would not deale with the Spaniards in the Plaines but kept the Hils. A certaine old Cantaine hearing hereof, would needs goe thither to fee what that Military my flerie might be, that taine hearing nercor, would need specificate to many thoulands. He called a Councell, and asked one hundred and fiftre men should hold under so many thoulands. He called a Councell, and asked to if the Spaniards were mortall and made of flesh, subject to humane infirmities of wearinesse and fleepe; and likewife of their Horfes; which being affirmed, hee taught them another course of battle, dividing all their thousands into so many bands single, each of which should fight, and doe what they could, and when they were wearie should conuay themselves away, and give place to another Regiment; meanewhile to recollect themselves into their ranke againe, and to refresh themselves: to likewise should the second and third and all of them doe in their order. Thus they fought and fled, and still feemed to the Spaniards both broken and whole. they having often broken the bands, which yet kept fill neere the number which they hadat fift. This troubled them, their bodies and horses yeelding to wearinesse by long continuance from morning till afternoone : and then Valdinia commanded his men that they should re- 20 coyle by degrees, making a defensive warre till they might recover certayne Straits, where they might eatily by the strength of the place bee defended. This was heard by one Philip a Philip berray- Chili Servant of the Governours (by his Indian name, Laurram) who fled to his Countrimen. ethiis Mofter, and told them this his Mafters intent. Whereupon they fent fome Regiments to make good that place, fo that about Sunne-fet the Spaniards thinking to fecure themselves there, came to the Sunne-fet and irrecoverable night of their Fates. The Governour and a Frier were taken, the rest slaine : three Indians fled and carried newes of this difaster. Ualdinias death is dinerfly told; fome fay that that Philip killed him, fome that another Captayne did it with a Clubbe whiles others by his promifes were wonne to give him libertie. Francie de Rieros which then was a Captayne in Chili, from the reports of 20 Indians, tels that the Chilois made dances all night, at the end of each dance cutting off a piece of the flesh of both their Priloners and eating it before their faces, Notwithflanding they doe not ordinarily eate mans flesh. This was Anno 1553, and ever fince the Rebellion hath continued : at which time Don Sebastian rebelled in Potos and Francis Hernandes Giron in Cozco, Rebellions later then those of the Pizarrifts and Almagrifts.

I might adde to thefeaffaires of Chile, the great Earth-quakes, A. 1600. in Peru, at Arequesa the rayning of fand, as also of ashes about twenty dayes from a Vulcan breaking forth; the ashes falling in places aboue a yard thicke, in some places more then two, and where lest aboue a quarter of a yard, which buried the Corne-grounds of Maiz and Wheat, and the boughes of Trees They tell also were broken and fruitlesse, and the Cattle great and small dyed for want of patture. For the 40 fand which rained couered the fields thirty leagues one way, and aboue forty another way round about Arequepa. They found their Kine dead by five hundred together in feverall Heards, and Seep. 1930. whole Flookes of Sheepe and Heards of Grates and Swine buried. House fell with the weight of the fand, others cost much industry to faue them. Mighty Thunders and Lightnings were heard and feene thirty leagues about Arequepa. It was fo darke whiles those shownes lasted that A Letterwitt- at m dday they burned Candles to fee to doe their bufinesse. This from Perm: from Chile they tenby a Citi. Write that the Rebellion of Arauco groweth enery day stronger. On Wednesday the source and twentieth of Nonember 1599, there came in the morning upon the citie of Valdinia, about fine thousand Indians 6. Matermoet 3 yu. there is more in the more reportant of the content of the bordering places, and of the places adopting to Imperial Pica, and Purent, three thoughand borfferen and the rest four, [seeing of them Harcabuse men, and two bundred in coster of Maule (Cots.) 50 They came unperceived having fet double Espials on the citie. They came in Squadrons ranked in order; for they brew that the Spaniards were afterpe, and had but foure men in their Corps de gard, and to walke the round. They were blinded with their fortune some twentie dayer before having beaten the lindians from their Fort in Vega, and the Marishes of Paparlen, slaying many that for eight lesques a bout no Indian durft be feene. Thus entred they the freets of that unhappy citie, and fired the beufet; then tooke the gates, and in two boures space with fire and Sword destroyed the Towne , and wanne the Fort and Artillery, killing foure bundred Spaniards of both Sexes; Sacked three bundred thousand Pezor of floile, consuming all the rest. The shipper of Vallano, Villaroell, and another of Degode Roias, were at anchor in the River, and if some had not escaped in Canoas to carry them newes, they had runne the like fortune. The Spaniards fenerity a little before made them this cruell, hauing fold fo ma- (0 ny of their wines and children for flanes to Merchants, which carried them out of their Countries, bo ing baptized, and basing kept Priests fiftie yeeres. Now first, they destroyed the Churches, and brace the Images in pieces. Ten dayes after Coronel Francisco del Campo, came with three bundred men for

CHAP. 13. Span. diftressed in Chili. Cosco Fort wonder of the New World. 1477

from his Excellence from Petu, to succour those Cities. Having seene this lamentable destruction, he from the Execution from and Villarrica, and fad Ymperiall, of which bee know nothing but that it had Ymperiall timibeene besteged a yeere by the enemies, having nothing to cat but dead Horses, Cats, Dogges, and Hides. fiel. But first be succoured Oforno, to which the victorious enemies had gone from Valdiuiz. Newes came at the Jame time, whiles I was writing, that those of Ymperiall were dead with famine, all faue twentie whom hunger forced to a worfe destine, to one to the Indians. Lord baue mercy on vs. Amen. March 1600. from Saint lago.

Faiber Diego de Alcobazi (whom I haue before mentioned) writ to me, Anno 1601, that the Indi- Another letter ans were growne of such dexteritie in warres, that every Indian on borfebacke with his Lance, durit 1601. 10 fally out on any Spanith Souldier, were be neuer forvaliant : and enery neere many goe from Perushither Indians valous. but none returne. They have facked two Townes, and killed all they found in them, carrying away the women and daughters and fernants : and lastly, they killed in an Enboscada the Governour Loyola, which Governour was married to a daughter of Don Diego Sayritupac the Inca, which went from Villacapampa, be. Loyda flaince, fore your Worlhip went to those parts. God have mercy on the dead, and give remedie to the living. Octier things he writ fo irkefome, that I forbeare to recire, as of the plagues of Arequepa, one of which Dearth, was that Wheate was worth that yeere ten or eleuen Ducats, and Maiz thirteene. Anno 1602. the difafters of Arequepa, continued as the Jejuites have written. Anno 1604. Padre Maeftro Francisco de Castro gaue mee this turther Relation of Chili. Of thirteene Cities which are in this

Realme of Chili, the Indians baue destroyed sixe, viz. Valdini, Imperiall, Angel, Sancta Cruz, Sixe Town destroyed. 20 Chillan and Conception. They wasted and consumed therein, the Houses, Churches, Denotion, Beantie of the fields; and yet the greatest misery is , that the In hans have nathered heart and courage for greater poyles and destructions of Cities and Monasteries. They have bent their minds to mischiefe and cunning fratagems. They belieged the Citie Otorno, and confuming the Spanish forces, they retired to Oforto Forc a Fort in which they have held them as it were in a continual fiege, the befreged fustagning themselves taken. with feeds and herbes. In one of the fieges which that Citie sustained, they broke the Images: in the Last they killed the Centinels, and safely entred and seised the Fort, the Spaniards not perceiving, and whiles they were busie in shorle, the Spaniar is came on them, and got from them the women and Nunt. The last Unitory of the Indians, was the taking of Villarrica, with great flaughter of Spaniards, firing Villarrica tak it in foure parts. They killed all the Friers of Saint Domingo, Saint Francis, and our Lady of Pitte; ken,

and the Clergie men: they captined all the women which were many, and of a good account. Now let vs returne to the Inca Tupangus, who now determined to ceasie further invading and conquest, His Realme now extending a thousand leagues. He made many Fortrest's and Temples to the Sunne, and Nunneries, and Royall Palaces, and Conueyances of water. Especially hee bestowed paines on the Fortrelle of Cozco, for which his Father had brought great flore of ftones. He visited his Kingdome to see with his eyes the necessities thereof that he might remedie them, which he did with fuch care, that he merited the furname of Pione. After which heedyed full of Trophees, having enlarged his Earpire to farre to the South, and a hundred and

forty leagues Northwards. Tupac Inqua Tupanqui his eldest Sonne succeeded. The Fortresse of Cozco which hee built may Tupanqui inca 40 feeme a worke of Deuils rather then men, the flones (or Rockes rather) in three circuits about his acts and being fo many and great, the Indians auring heither Iron nor Steele to cut or worke them, nor death, Oxen, nor Cares to draw them, but all done with force of men with great Cables, and that thorow vneuen wayes in rough Mountains. Many of them they brought ten, twelue, fitteen leagues; Forreste of particularly that from which the Indians call Sajenfea, that is, mearied, which was brought fif- Core arme teene leagues, and palled the River Tucay little lelle then Guadalquinir at Corduba. The most came worke. from Murna, fine leagues off. Many of them are fo close, that feat fly the place where they are Sec (80, 1956. joyned can be differend, which required the lifting vp and often ferling one ftone vpon another, Acolini Reahaving neither Square, nor Rule. Nor could they make Cranes or any fort of Engine to helpe tion. them. It feemes that the Ireas thought hereby to expresse their magnificence and power, and

50 the skill of their workmen. This Fortreffe was built on a Hill on the Northfide of the Citie. fo fleepe that way that it could not be alkulted, and therefore one wall ferued on that fide two hundred fathomes long. They had no morter but vied a kind of coloured clay fafter then it. On the other parts they made three wals one before another, each about two hundred fathomes, in forme of a halte Moone; there were itones in them, but fuch as were admirably great. A Prieft of Montilla having beene in Peru and feene them, told me that hee could not imagine how they The wonders could be laid but by the blacke Arc. And indeed this in respect of the want of Art may be faid or the world to exceed the feuen Wonders of the World : for it is easie to conceine how the Pyramides of nor fo wonder-Egypt and wals of Bubylon might be made, which here is not. Eurry wall in the midd had one Fortreffe. gate which had one ftone elenated the breadth and height thereof. Betwixt one wall and ano-

60 ther was about thirty foot : the battlements were about a yard high. The height I cannot exactly tell. Within those wals were three firong Forts, the middlemost called Moyor Marca, or the round Fort, in which was a Conduct of good water brought farre off under ground, the In-One round dians knew not whence : it was knowned only to the lecaland tome chiefe Councellors. In this Fort and two the Kings remained when they went to visit the Fortrolle, and the wals were all adorned with square,

Gggggg 2

gold

Labyringh.

gold and filter and counterfeits of beafts, and birds, and plants, enchafed therein, which ferued for Tapefiry. The second Fort was called Paucar Marca, the third, Saellac Marca, both square, with Roomes for Souldiers which must be Incas of priviledge, for no other Nation might enter. it being the house of the Sunne for warre, as Temples were for Prayer. The Captaine was of the bloud Royall legitimate. They had under earth passages from one Fort to another very artificiall with Labyrintian windings and turnings inextricable but by a Thread. When I was a Boy I often faw the ruines thereot, but none of vs durft enter the Vaults further then wee had

The whole worke was of stone, some polished, some rude. They had to draw the great Stone Serenica twenty thouland Indians with Cables, one halfe before, the other behind; in one vne- In uen pailage it killed three or foure thouland Indians. They call it mearied, because they were wearie and neuer layd it in the building. The Architect was Calla cunezus. The Spaniards not only doe not repaire the Fortreile, but pull it downe to build their private houses, every of their houfes in the Citie beeing therewith adorned. In such manner have they call so great Maiesty to the ground. The three wals stand because they cannot ruine them for their greatnesse, yet some part they demolished to seeke the Chaine of gold which Huayna Capac made. This Inca beganne this Fortreffe which continued fiftie yeeres before it was finished.

The eighth Tupac Inca Yupanquithe 11. King of Peru.

He Great Tupac Inca Yupanqui (his name Tupac fignifieth Resplendent or Illustrious, for such were his Acts) after the accomplishment of Tolemnities concerning his Fathers Funerals, and and his owne Coronation, which confumed one yeere; vilited his Kingdome, the better to know and to be knowne of his Subiects, and for better execution of Justice by his Officers and Judges, in which he fpent foure yeeres. This done, he leuted forty thousand Souldiers to proceed in the sourse of his Fathers, which palliated their ambition of Souereigntie and Dominion, with reducing men from Barbarifme and beastiality to Civility and Religion. He marched to Cassamarca, and entred the Prouince of Chachapuya. Eastwards from Cassamarca, a Countrey of valiant men and very faire women. They worthipped Snakes, and the bird Cuntur was their principall God. It then contayned aboue fortie thousand Families, Their chiefe Armes were slings, and they wore a kinde of fling-net for their head tyre (bee cals both by the name honda.) Beyond them are the Huacrachucu a fierce and warly Nation, which weare on their head a blacke leash of Wooll 30 with white flyes here and there, and for a feather a piece of a Deeres horne: these worshipped · in those times Snakes, and kept them pictured in their Temples and houses. These lay in the way to the former, and much bloud was loft in fight on both fides; whereupon the Inca, after their ancient custome, fought to reduce them by faire meanes, intimating that hee came more to doe them good as they had done to other Nations, fuffering the Curasas to rule still; then to rule ouer them, feeking no more but that they should worship the Sunne, and leave their barbarousnesse. He divided his Armie, and sent some to take the most commodious places, so that they were forced to feeke peace. He stayed there, the Countrey being rainy, till the next Summer, and fent for twenty thouland men more , inftructing the Huncrachucus meane while in his deuotions and Lawes, and to conuay away the waters, and make the grounds fit for feed to their so

The next Summer hee entred the Province Chachapaya, where notwithstanding the wonted

gentle message he was incountred with a cruell warre. This Prouince was fiftie leagues long, and

twenty broad, reaching to Maynpampa, which is thirtie leagues long. The Hils were craggie,

and in places very steepe and snowie; three hundred which he fent to spie, were drowned in the

fnow, not one escaping. The prowesse and numbers of the Inca brought all by degrees to subje-

Rion, Pias, Charmac caffa (an open passage of the inowie Hill, very dangerous where the three

hundred were loft) Cuntur Marea, Cassa Marquilla, all Mountaynous and craggie places, till hee

came to Rayminampa, so called of a Feast which he folemozed there to the Sunne in his Campe,

being a faire Valley; and thence to Muyupampa, where Ancohualla entred as is before laid in Vi- 52 racochas time, tather then he would bee a subject to the Inca; these and Casenjunca now yeel-

ded. The next Summer hee marched on to Huancapampa, a great Nation, but divided amongit

every one as himselfe pleated. These he tamed by hunger (starting such as came not in) and gave

them Mafters to instruct them in husbandry , and how to clothe themselves, to water their

fields, and to plant Townes, to that it became one of the best Prouinces in Peru. More to

ennoble it, hee after built there a Temple and house of Virgins, prohibiting the eating of

mans fleth, and gaue them Priests and men learned in the Lawes to instruct them. Afterwards he

added three great Provinces, Cassa Ayahnaca and Callua to his Signory, which lived civilly, having

Huervechucus

Busnespanies. themselves, naked and warring not for wealth but women, worthipping Birds, Beatts, Plants,

Three civill

Нивпаси от

Townes and Fortrelles, and a kind of Republike or free State, having their meetings and choice 60 of Gouernours. These Conquests ended, he spent long time in visiting his Kingdom, and be iding Temples, Nunneries, Store-houses, Aquaducts, especially taking care of the Fortreffe at Cozco. Some yeeres this way spent, hee marched Northward to Huanucu, which containeth many difunited Nations, whom he easily conquered, and planted I ownes there, being a fertile Coun-

trie, and temperate, making it the chiefe Province of many others in those Confines. He built Pedrade Circa there a Temple for the Sunne, and a houle of choicen Virgins, twenty thousand Indians personmino feruices in coarfe to those two houses. He went next to the Prouince Cannars, which ware also, he calls it their haire long, tied on a knot in the Crowne. By these head-tires in the time of the Incas, each Guanus, and Indian was knowne of what Nation he was; which in my time they continued, but now they is hithere was fay all is confounded. These Cannaris before this worshipped the Moone as chiefe Derty, and great Trees and Stones in the fecond place; but now were brought to the Incas Sunne-religion, of great flones and their Countrie ennobled with a Temple, Nunnerie, Palaces, Water-paffages, &c. The Na cunningly tion Quillacu is belowe the Cannari, the most miserable of Nations, neither having good land, placed; neere to nor aire, nor water, whence grew a Prouerbe applied to couctous milers, bee is a very Quillacu: on these the Inca imposed a tribute of Lice, that is they might learne to be cleanly. Tupac Inca &c. The angus and his sonne Huayna Capac much ennobled those Provinces of the Cannaris, and of Cannaris. Tumpampa, with building Royall houses, adorning the Lodgings in flead of Tapeftry with coun. Quillacu. terfeits of Herbs, Plants and Creatures of gold and filter, the Porches chased with Gold and inlayed with Emeralds and Turqueiles: a Temple alio of the Sunne enchaled with Gold and Sil- calls it Thomeuer, the Indians custome being to make oftentation of service to their Kings, and to flatter them bamba, and is filling their Temples and Palaces with all the treatures they were able (in Pots, Pannes, and o- large in this ther vellels of gold and filuer and much coftly raiment.) Having returned to Cozco, his ambition Point.

not long after brought him backe to Tumpampa, where he gained many Prouinces unto the con-20 fines of the Kingdome of Quitu, viz. Chanchan Moca, Quefaa, Pumallacia, (that is, the Land of Lions, by reason of the store there, being also worshipped for Gods) Tiezampi, Tiu cassa, Capampi, Vrcollasu and Tincuracu, barren and barbarous Regions, which heient Masters to teach Ciuilitie and Religion. Atter that, he made another expedition with fortie thousand men to Quin, Quin, the name of the Kingdome and King. It is feuenty leagues long and thirtie broad, fertile and

rich. They worthipped Deere, and great Trees. The warre continuing long, he fent for his tonne Huanna Capac to come with twelve thoufand men more to exercise him in warre. Huayna Capac tignifieth from a childe rich in magnant. moss exploits. Capac was a title given to things of greatest eminence. And this seemed præeminent in him that he neuer denied any woman any fute, wing to them gentle compellations of Hugna Capaci 30 Mother, Sifter, Daughter, according to their age, &c. Tugas Inca returned to Cozeo, and left his sonne to dispatch the warre, which was three yeeres before Quan was reduced, befide two yeeres which his father ipent : the reason whereof was the Incas cultome to gaine not by fire and

fword, but as they could make the Natiues for sake it; which had this effect, that their conquett was more durable, and their vaffals bare them better affection. At the end of those fine yeeres the King of Quitu cied, and the people subjected them to Huayna Capac, which vied them gently. He palled on to Quillacenca, that is, Iron-nofe Province (fo called for their boring the Quillacena, nostrils, and wearing lewels thereat) a vile, brutish, lousy People, without Religion, eating any carion. They were easily subjected, as likewise the next Prouince of like condition Pastu, and Otamalla a People more civill and warlike, and Caranque a barbarous Nation which worthip-40 ped ligres, and Lions, and great Snakes, in their Sacrifices offering the hearts and bloud of men which they ouercame in warre : thefe he civillized allo.

Tupac Inca was busie in his Fortresse at Cozco, keeping twenty thousand men at worke therein with great order and emulation of each Nation to exceed other. Huajna Capac returning, was received with great triumph, : and becaute he had no children by his eldett Sifter Psilen Huaco. he was secondly married to his second Sister Rana Octio, the Incas still ving that marriage in imi- Huayna Capaci tation of Manco Capac, and for certainty of the bloud on both fides. King Tupac, and his Councell ordained that both should be lawfull Wines, and holden for Queenes, and not for Concubins. Hee married also Mama Rucu, his Vocle Amara Tupacs eldest daughter the next in bloud to the former, having no third Sifter of whole bloud. By Rana Oello he had Huafear Inca; and by

50 his Cousin-german, Manco Inca. Tupac Inca drawing neere to death called together his children (which were about two hundred) and made the wonted discourse or Testament, commending Tupa Incar peace and inflice and care of their vaffals to them, and to shew themselves indeed the children of the Sunner: recommending to the Prince, the reducing and conqueit of the Sauages to the service of the Sunne, and a politike life, and to follow the example of his Fore-fathers, and to chathife the Huilleausleas which had flaine his Captaines in rebellion. Hee faid h. was now going to another life, his father the Sunne calling him to reft with him. Thus died Tupac Inca, tamous for the benefits done to his Countrie, therefore called Tupac Yara, Illustrious Father. By Mama Oello he had fixe fonnes; the elicit, Huayna Capac: the fecond, Augus Amara Tupac Inca; the third, Quehuar Tupac; the fourth, Huallpa Tupac Inca Yupangus (my mothers grand-60 father;) the fith, Triu Inca Rimachi; the fixth, Agus Masta. They embalmed his body which

Haw Anno 1549, as if it had beene aline. The rest of this eighth Booke the Authour hath frent in description of the creatures of principall note of those parts, in which out of Acosta, and others baning beene redious already, we will not here trouble the Reader.

for whom he made twenty dayes feath; began to propound great and rare deuties to himfeife. One was a Chaine of gold, much fought but neuer feene by the Spaniards. The Indians vie much dancing, and are as eatily diffinguished one Nation from another by their dances, as by their head-tires. The Inca had a grave kinde of dancing in meatures, men alone without women, hand in hand, finging in then foft paces, three hundred or more in a folemne feast, the Inca himselfe lometimes dancing with them: at other times they danced about, still comming necrer to that Royall centre. This holding of hands in a ring gaue occasion to make the golden Chaine, that they might cance by it without touching hands, as I have heard the fore-mentioned old Inca, (my mothers Vicle) discourse. Hee told mee that it contained the length and Io bredth of the great fireet of Cozco, which is feuen hundred foot, and the bignesse of euery linke A gold chaine thereof was (he faid) as bigge as his wrett. Augustin de Zarate calls it Maroma, a Cable, trom of incredible the report of Indians then huing, and fayth, it was as much as two hundred Indians could lift) Much have the Spansards lought for this and other treatures, whereof they could never finde any toot-print. Prince Inis Cust Huallya (that was his name before, and fignifieth Huallya the Sunne of reioneing) was in memorie of that which was made to honour his birth called Hualcar, an r added to Huasea (which fignifieth a Rope, their Language not differencing a Chaine from a Rope) by which addition Huafear might be without fignification, and anoyde the ill found of a Rope, which was added to his former name at his maining and polling Feast, when hee was two yeeres

old. After that hee leuied fortie thouland Souldiers, and went to Quitu, in which Voyage hee 20

Thence he went to the Plaines, and made conquest of the Valley of Chimu (now Trueille) and

Chacma, Pacasmayn, Canna, Collque, Cintu, Tucusi, Sayanca, Mutupi, Puchin Sallana, bestowing

much cost to conuey water, and benefit his new conquelts. After some time spent at Quis, hee

leuied another Armie of fifty thousand, and conquered Tumpiz (a vicious, luxurious People,

and Sodomiticall, which adored Tigres and Lions, and facrificed the hearts and bloud of Men)

and Chunana Chintuy, Collouche, and other confining places. Hee made a faire Fortresse in Tum-

pic, and fet there a Garrison : he built a House of the Sunne, and another of Virgins : and after

that entred into the Prouince Huancanillea, which had killed those Masters which his Father

him, which durft doe no other, with all the chiefe men, to whom one of the Mafters of the

Campe made a Speech of their treaton and bad demerits: Notwithstanding the Inca ving his

naturall clemency, and making account of his title Huacchacuyac (The benefactor or louer of the

poore) both pardoned all the common people, and would fo farre remit the better fort which had

beene doers in that businesse, that though all had deferred death, yet one onely of tenne whom

the lot should designe to execution, should die : and of the Caraca, and Captaines, each should

lose two teeth in the upper iaw, and as many in the lower, both they and their descendants, in

memorie of fallitying their promile to his father. They which feared that all should palle the

that tooth-loffe, and did likewife to their fonnes and daughters, as if it had beene a fauour. One

of that Nation I knew in my fathers hoafe at Cozce, which largely recounted the premilles.

fword were content, and the whole Nation would needs both men and women participate in 40

The Inca fpent much time in vifiting his Kingdome from Quite to Charcas, about feuen hun-

ured leagues, and tent Vifitors to Chil, whence his father had drawne much Gold. This done,

he railed an Armie of fifty thousand men of the Northerne Preuinces, and having visited the

Temple of Pachacamae, and caused the Priests to consult with the Oracle, which promised pro-

speritie to his delignes, and the like at Rimac; hee passed thorow thole Vallies to Tumpiz, and

fent to the Iland Pana, twelue leagues in compaffe, the Lord whereof was called Tampalla, a man

which kept many women and boyes for his luft; besides the Sea, their common Deitie, they wor-

mands, but after killed and threw ourrboard his men as they were conveying them to the Con-

tinent, and facrificing fome of them, which the Inca feuerely reuenged, both on them, and on

their confederates in the Continent, and commanded them to keepe the memorie of that dif-

mall execution in mournfull longs; enjoying them to obey his Gouernour which kept the Fer-

treffe of Tumpiz. From Tumpiz he proceeded in vifitation of his Kingdome to the Chichas, with

intent to doe the like in the Southerne part, and fent Prefents fine garments to the Gouernours,

Curacas, Captaines and Royall Officers, according to the cultome of the Incas. But hearing

that the Chachaphyas were in rebellion (to whom hee fent Messengers, which received ill viage and answers) he made a Bridge, and marched ouer the River, and came to Caffu marquilla, with

thip Tigres and Lions, and facrificed the heart and bloud of Men. Thetereceiued the Incar com- 50

Tupac Inca Tupanque had fent to infruct them. Hee commanded all the Curacus to come before 30

tooke for his Concubine the eldest daughter of King Quitu aforefaid, which was there kept in

the House of the chosen, or Nunnerie; and by her had Atahuallan, and other children.

Ta He mighty Huayna Capac, after other things fee in order, having a fonne (Huafear) borne.

Atabuallyss mother. Further conquests. Vallies in the

length and

greatnelle.

Huafcar as

Roper.

Plaines iub. ducd. Tumpiz or

Tumbez lubducd. Huancauilea punifhed.

El unechacumac a title of the

Their treason.

Drerylongs.

Ciarva; uyas

purpose to destroy them. The people nor being able to hold out, fled into the Mountaines, and others more wifely knowing his gentle disposition, procured a Matron of their Countrie, which had beene Concubine to Tupac Inca Tupanqui to meet him with a multitude of feminine supplicants, which so well played her pitifull part in a perfesative speech seconded with cries and lamentations of that chorus of women, that the Tues relented, taking her vp from the ground, called her Mamanchic (our mother) granted her request, and gave her commission to make an end of the bulinelle, tending fome volarmed lineas with her to that purpole. The Chachapinas in rememi rance Thinkinhelle. of this fact encompalled the place where thee had met the Inca, with three walls, not permitring the foot of man or beaft to touch so holy ground: the vttermost wall of clay, the second of Rose unpolished, the inmost of polished stone, which the conetoninesse of the Spaniards overthrew, as they did other the best buildings, to search for treasure.

Huanna Capac went to Manta (in which Countrie stands the Port which the Spaniards call Marta. Puerto Vieto) which worthipped the Sea and Fillies, Tigres, Lions, and great Snakes, and a Puerto Vieto. no mongft other things a great Emerald, which they lay, was little leffe then an Effriches egge. deuctions, In their greater Feafts they shewed it publikely; the Indians came from farre to adore it, and facrifice to it, and to prefent it with small Emeralds, as daughters to the mother; the Pricits and Cacike, telling them that this was the most agreeable offering. Thus were many Emeral Is 22-

thered here together, where Don Pedro de Aluarado and his companions (one of which was my father Garculaffe de la Vega) found them in the conquelt of Pern, and brake most of them on an Anuil, laying (like bad Lapidaries) that if they were precious flones they would not breake with the greatest blowes, and if they brake they were but Glaste. But their goddesse-Emerald Emerald the Indians had conveyed away before, neither could it fincebe found by any industrie. The people of Manta were open and shamelelle Sodomites, and in their marriages the Bridegrooms kins-20 men and friends had first hanfell of the Spoule. They flayed the Captines which they tooke in Warre, and filled the skinnes with aftes, and hanged them vp at the doores of their Temples, and in their feasting and dancing places. These with the Apichians, Pichinfli, Sana, and other

Nations confining on the Coast, he subjected. These were more brutish then the Mantans, and not onely saced their faces with stones, but deformed their children with laying one boord on the fore-head, and another in the necke, to keeping them in presse from day to day, till they were foure or fue veeres old, to make them broad-faced, shauing away the haire of the crowne Platter-faced and necke, and letting it growe on the fides, making it curle and bush out to more monitrofitie, From these he went to Saramifia and Paffan, vnder the Equinoctiall Line, where they wor- Burbarous

fhipped nothing at all, and had neither Towne nor House, but hued in hollow Trees, went na-30 ked, vied women in common, neither did their luits flay there; had their faces quartered into foure coloures, yellow, azure, particoloured and blacke, their haire, long, curled and full of filth, (I faw them with mine eyes when I came for Spaine) and are the fauagest people that can bee imagined. Huayna Capac would none of them, but faid, let vs returne, for those are not worthie to have vs to be their Lord. The Indians have a tradition that at the Point of Saint Elena Gianes. See there came in Boats of Rulhes, huge Giants higher then common men from the knees vpwards, Jup in Acoffa. their eyes as bigge as Success, and other members proportionable; they had no women with pegicos, or, them, and were clothed in beafts skinnes, or naked. They fetled themselues there, and digged Welis admirably deepe in the Rocke, yeelding very coole water. One of them did eate more then fiftie men; and were forced to get fish for their diet. They killed the women of 40 the Countrie in vling them ; were great Sodomites, and were therefore at last by fire from Heauen confumed, leaving onely fome bones of them as memorials, which have beene, and still are there found. Anno 1550, there were as great bones found at Mexico. In this Point of Saint Elena, neere to Puerio Unio, are certaine Fountaines of pitchie substance fit to calke thips, boi- Bituminous

ling out very hot. Huayna Capac one Rayms or Feathday of the Sunne, looked up to the Sunne, which the high Reuerence to Priest, one of his Vincles, told him was vulawfull. But soone after hee looked up againe, and the Sunne, againe was reproued by the Priest: but he answered, Answere mee to these questions ; I am your Lord, and which of you dares bid meerife and goe a long lourney? None, faid he, would bee to mad. And if any the greatest Curaca be commanded by me to goe from hence to Chili, will he not doe it? The 50 Priestanswered, that none would disobey him in any thing. Why then I fay (faid the Inca) that Wise apopta-

our Father the Sunne must needs have a greater and mightier Lord then himselfe, which commands him theyme. See enery day to take (uch a lourney: for if he were a superiour Lord, he would some time or other rest himfelfe. The Carangues rebelled and were feuerely chaftifed, and 2000, of them beheaded in a Lake, and therefore called Tahnarcocka, or Sea of blond. After this, with much griefe that he was forced to fuch therpe medicines, he went to Onen, and finding his Sonne Atabuallya, wittie, wife, war- 2000 perhans like, and comely of perionage (as vivally were the Incas and Pallas) hee much affected him, and including all thill would have him about him, and fo handled the matter, that with content of his Brother His- which were afear, he fet him in possession of the Kingdome of Quita, and other Provinces, guing him expe- fline in the afcar, he let him in pullelion of the Kingdome of Dinin, and other Proninces, gining of the ware.

timented Captaines and part of his Armie, the better to fecure himfelfe, and to pacific the vn
disharlia pur 60 fettled new-gained Prounces in his Fathers life time, to that end transplanting Nations from one in possession.

Region to another. Huayna Capac made two famous Royall wayes, the one along it the Hills within Land, the other Provinother by the Sea-fide, From Cozco to Quien are fine hundred leagues by the Sierras, rockie and cestablued by craggie way, which hee made plaine, breaking downe the high, and exalting the lowe places

fometimes fifteene or twenty stades or mans heights, that a Cart might have gone on them rill the wars of the Indians and Christians much endammaged them. By the Plaines he made another workers of later difficultie, making mud-wals to hold in the way, forty foote breade with a high cause the me works both in the Vallies, and in the fands, driving flakes therein to know the way which is there fo mourable and changeable, the like space of 500.leagues.

Builed in these affaires and great workes he had newes of the Spaniards (those which Rases Names de Balbox arti discouerer of the South Sea, had ient upon discourry 1515, who, as before is tail, appoled the name Pers) which filled him with wonder and care. Hee lived after this in

peace eight yeares, and dyed Anno 1 522, having saigned two and fortie yeares, not minding the Prophefies and profecueing of further conquerts after the had heard of the Spanife Ship, by realon of a Prophefie Io or ancient Oracle which the Incas had, that after to many Kings a ftrange Nation should come and deliroy their Kingdome and Idolatry. Three yeares before that Ship was feene, as they were Prodicies fore- celebrating the Sunnes feitinall folemnity, an Eagle Royall, which they call Anca, purfued fine figurying the or fixe kiftrels and as many small haukes, which fet vpon the Eagle and beate her, so that having Lift, or the Im no way to escape, the fell in the market place among it the Incas, as feeking helpe at their hands. They tooke her and did what they could to relieue her; but within few dayes she died; an augurie feeming to prefage some difafter to that ftate. There were also greater earthquakes then the ordinary (to which Perm is vivally lubiect) and the Sea often fwelled over the shores: the

aire no leffe terrified them with comets. The Moone in a cleere night had three circles round ahour her very great, one of bloud, the middlemost blacke, the vemost of smoake. Lingua a diviner 20 told the Inca; Onely Lord, know that thy mother the Moone aduleth thee that Pachacamac threatneth the royall bloud, and to fend great plagues on thine Empire; the first circle fignifying the blouds warre which fall follow when thou art gone to rest with thy Father the Sunne, betwixt thy posteritie, that in few yeares it shall altogether faile: the second shewer the destruction of our Religion and republique and alienation of thy Empire, which shall turne all into smoake as is signified by the third circle. Inca was troubled, but put it off laying, thou haft dreamed thefe fooleries last night, and failt my Mother hath fent me fuch intelligence. But the Soothfayer answered, he might fee it with his owne eyes, and confult with other diumers, which he did, and found the same fight and answere : hee yet made feemings not to belieue, faying hee did not beleeve the Sunne would permit that to happen to his progenie, He offered notwithstanding many Sacrifices to him, and appointed the 30 Soothfayers in all parts to confult with their fenerall Oracles, especially with Pachacamac and Rimac, whole aniwers were cofcure and doubtfull. Their things I heard of two Captaines of Huayna Capacs guard, then eightie yeares old, and baptifed, speaking hereof with teares. Die luan Peshuia, and Chanca Rimachi, as also of Cushhualpa that old Inca, and of my Mother and her Brother Don Fernando Huallpa Tupac Inca. Huanna Capac one day bathing himselfe came forth cold, and found himselfe deadly sicke,

Huayna Capacs fickneffe and laft will, or furech before bis death.

made a testamentall discourse, saying, thathe was now going to beauen to rest with his Father the Sunne, which called him out of the bath, ever fince which time be was so indisposed of body: when I am dead you hall burie my body as is weed to be done with Royall bodies, my heart and entrals in Quitu. in token of the loue which I beare it; my body you shall carrie to Cozco to lay it with my ancestors, I com- 10 mendyou to my Son Atahuallpa whom I fo much loue, who remaineth for Inca in my place in this Kingdome of Quitu, and in all the reft which be shall conquer by armes to augment his Empire. And for you the Captaines of my armie, I charge you in particular to ferue bim with that fealty & love which you one to your King, in all and every thing doing what he shall command you, which shall be the same that I shall reneale to bim by order of our Eather the Sunno. Ilikewife commend unto you instice and clemencie towards the Vasfals, that the Title of Louer of the poore given onto us, be not loft; and that in enerything you doe lice the Incas, Sounes of the Sunne. Having made this speech to his children and kinimen, he called the rest of the Captains and Curacas which were not of the bloud royall and game them in charge fealty and fernice due to their King, and at last concluded : It is many yeares fince that by The Prophetic renelation of our father the Sunne, we hold that when twelve Kings are passed of his Sonnes, there shall 50 come a new and unknowne people into those parts, and shall gaine and subject to their Empire all our King. domes and many others. I suspect that they shall be of those whom we know to have gone along ft the coast of our Sea : they hall be a valiant Nation which every way hall exceede you. We well know that in mes is compleat the number of twelve Incas. I certifie you that a few yeares after my departure from you. that new Nation fhall come and fulfill that which our Father the Sunne hath floken, and frall eaine our Empire and rule ouer it. I command you that yee obey and ferue them as men which enery way feat have advantage of you: whose Law skall be better then ours, and their armes more mightie and mumcible then yours. I leave you in peace, for I goe to rest with my Father the Sunne which

Cufbualles his that speech.

Empire.

All this the Indians held in great veneration, and fulfilled every for thereof. I remember that 60 one day that old Inca ipeaking in prefence of my Mother, and rehearing these things, and the Spaniards entrance, and their conqueit : I asked him how, their Countrey being fo rough, their people so warlike, and their number so many, they lost their Empire to so few Spaniaras. Heavfwering me, repeated the foretelling or prophetie of the Spanards aforeignd, and faid t' at the

Inca had commanded them to obey and serve them, for every way they should have the advantage of them. And for that obicction of cowardife, he aniwered me. These words which our Inca faid unto us, being the last that ener be spake to us, were more powerfull to subject us and quite our Empire. then the armes which thy Father and his companions brought into this Land. Thus died Huayna Capac; Ruayna Capacs his body was embalmed, and carried to Cozco; his heart interred in Quita. His funerall folem- death. nis body was and mourning continued a yeare, according to the custome of the Inca Kings. Her lett 2- Indianthate to houe two hundred ionnes and daughters; fome Incas affirme about three hundred to exaggerate Atabashe tot the crueltie of Atabnallpa, which flew them almost all; who therefore was so odious, that causes sollowthe Spaniard, having put him to death, were thought men fent from their God the Sun to take ing-

to vengeance on the destroyer of his seede. And when they brought Cockes and Hens with them Cock conceits into Peru, they hearing the Cockes crowing faid, that in perpetuall infamie of that tyrant and whereby it apabhominable memory of his name, they pronounced it in their crowing, laying Atabuallya, and pearein that would answer the Cockes crowing with reckoning the name Atabually a: wherein the children they had no imitated them in those times, so that if they had heard a Cocke crowe, they would recrow in like tune the name of Asuhallpa: a thing which I my selfe and other boyes my Schoolefellowes, children of Spaniards by Indian women haue often done, together with the Indian children. They named likewise on such occasion his principal Captains, whose names were of so many syllables, Challenchima, Quillifeacha and Ruminnani. The Spaniards thought they did this for his honour, faying the Cockes made this honorable mention of him: fo Blas Valera writeth, which received it

20 of the Indians of Quitu his naturall subjects, which applied to a good mention that which those of Conce denifed in eaill, for his cruelties there done.

Huanna Capac being dead, his two Sonnes Huascar and Atabuallpa raigned quietly for the space Huascar the of foure or flue yeares, one in Cozco, the other in Quite. After which Huafear began to thinke thirtcenth, and with himselfe that he had done ill in consenting to his father in the matter of Quita, which now last tree Empewas his brothers; whereby he was barred vp allo from further conquests; the other three waies rour. being locked up by the Antis, the Sea and Chili; fo that his brother might by new conquefts make himfelfe greater then he : and whereas now his file was Capa Inca (onely Lord) in time, the other might both equall and exceede him. Thefe things more and more troubling him, hee Huafcars meffent a Messenger to his brother, saying; that by the ancient constitution of the first Inca Manco Ca- sage to Atabu-

30 pac, the Kinadome of Qutu, and all the Prominces which he possessed to the crowne and Em. alsa.

pire of Cozco, which howsoener he had quitted to him upon his Fathers command, yet was it more by force then inflice, being to the loffe of the crowne and preindice of the successors; and therefore neither ought his Father to command it, nor was be obliged to fulfill it. Tet seeing he had ginen consent, he was content upon these two conditions; first that he should adde nothing to his Empire; secondly, that hee Should doe him homage and fealtie, as his vallall and fendatarie. Atabuallya received this mellage with great humilitie and feeming fubmition, and three dayes after returned answere, that in his heart he had alwayes reknowledged vasfallage; being returned to the Inca by Post, he was much Hisanswer and content, fending reply, that he againe confirmed that estate to his Brother conditionally, that by luch a time he should make his personall homage at Cozco. Atabnallpa answered hee was a 40 happy man to understand such the Incar pleasure, that he would doe it by the time fet him; but

for greater folemnitie, he did befeech his Maiestie to give him leave that all the Provinces of his eftate should come with him to celebrate in Cozco the obsequies of Huayna Capac his Father, with rites agreeable to those of Quitwand the other Provinces, which ended, hee and his would doe their due homage.

All this did Huafear grant, and Atabualla made vie of to his project of foueraigntie. He fent proclamation to all his Prouinces, that all men feruiceable should in such a space make ready to with forces to goe to Cozco to celebrate his Fathers obsequies, and to performe the homage to the Monarch affault Hugher Husicar Incs, and that therefore they should fet forth in theirbest ornaments and brauery for voder preice greater folemnitie. But privily he fent to his Captaines to leuie the best Souldiers which should of obsequies carry their armes closely; for he more minded executions then exequies. He commanded them to Huayna Ca-50 to march in bands, fine or fixe hundred together, one band two or three leagues after the other : pac. and when they came within ten or twelves dayes journey of Cozea, that they should joyne to-

gether, the laft doubling their journies to overtake the former. In this manner Atahuallpa fent about 30000, men, most of them old Soldiers of his Fathers, with shoise Captaines, and appointed two Camp-mafters or Generals, Challeuchima and Quizquiz. Hunfear relying on the loyal - Hunfears fecutie of his Subjects, and his Brothers faire promiles, not onely suspected no treaton, but prouided rine. them necessaries. Atahuallpa vied this distimulation, knowing himselfe of vnsussicient power to warre openly on his brother. But some of the experimented Gouernors and Captaines, as they paffed, could not but refent and difguit this courie; and fignified to much to the Inca, who thus

60 awakened out of his dreame, fent to gather forces in the South pars and East and West : to Chinchafuru he fent not, which were the best Soldiers, because of these forces marching thorow their Countrie. The other through long peace were unaccultomed to armes, of which were leuised as Seo medicina boue 20000, the rest being too remote for a sudden businesse.

Atahualleas men passed the River Apprimae without contradiction, and embattelled them-

Ill conscience tearefull, and

racocha.

Dan Melchiar next in bloud

felues in three fquadrons, fo marching to Villacunca within fix leagues of Cozco. He himfelfeahode full in the confines of his Kingdome, there to observe the successe of this battel, wherein he placed his chiefe truft, by reason of the negligence of the other fide, & the courage of his old souldiers. These thought the shortest way the surest, before more forces might be assembled by twist Atabaill. Hus fear. and within two or three leagues Weltwards from the Citie was the battell fought. in which one fide fought to get, the other to keepe the Inca, whose vnbappy fate made him prisner to Atabually as men as he was fleeing thence with 5000, which were all in monner flaine in presence, some by the enemies, some by themselves seeing their Lord prisoner. Many also not willing to enjoy liberty after he was taken, offered themselues prisoners. They set a sure guard about the Emperours person, and sent to proclaime his taking thorow all the Empire, lest other 10 forces should come to his succour; sending word alto to their Master Atabuallya. Hee vied his chyandoidi. victory most cruelly ; for diffembling that he would restore Huasear to the Kingdom, he summoned all the Incas in the Empire, and all the Rulers and Officers to appeare at Cufco by fuch a day, to capitulate on certaine Articles to be observed betwirt the two Kings, that they might hue together in loue like brethren. Thus all the Incar, except those whom sicknesse, age, or remotentale hindred, came thither, whom Asabuallya cauled to be put to divers and cru-

For he knowing that he was not of the Incas bloud legitimate, that is, by the Cora or fifter of the King, nor yet of the whole bloud, to to challenge the inheritance by Father and Mother. removed these rubs out of the way of his ambition; yea all those who were of the halfe bloud, 20 though further from claime, yet lest they might imitate his example, he caused also to be slame. Not contenting himselfe with the death of his two hundred brethien and litters, the children of Huanna Capac, he proceeded to the Vincles, Coulens, and all, whether legitimate or baftards: fome he cauled to be beheaded, some hanged, some were cast into Rivers with weights at their neckes, some cast from high precipices. All which were done before he had passed Sansa, nintie leagues off the Citie. Yea they brought forth Huafear to fee thete difmall executions, that he might dye in the death of energy of his kinfmen. The Curacus Captaines and Nobility they brought forth being the rest of the prisoners bound, to the Valley of Sacfabnana, and made a long lane of them, thorow which they made poore Huafear to paffe couered with mourning weedes. and having a roapeabout his necke : they feeing their Inea in this cafe, fell downe with criesto 30 doe him reuerence, and were therefore. I une with Ha chers and Clubs before his face. After this the cruelty passed to the women and children of the bloud royall, Atabuallya commanding to take them all (but those in the house of Virgins) which were brought to the field Tahuarpampa, or blondie field, a name confirmed by the cruell executions, by starting, hanging, and diversified torcures on that tender fexe, and innocent age. E ery quarter of the Moone they renewed these cruelties, from which some were yet suffered to escape, of which number were my Mother and her Brother then eleuen yeares of age or vader, which they fent away in difguiled habits of the common people; for all degrees might they be knowne by their habit.

Of the August or Infants Royall wines eleaped, were Paulin and Tith the Sonnes of Huayna ry eitheiteas. Capar. Den Carlot the fonne of Paulla, married with a Spanish woman, by whom hee had Den 40 Million for a substitution of the subst Melchior Inca, which in the yeare 1602. came into Spaine to receive rewards promifed for the feruices of his Father and Grandfather in the pacification of Peru, Anne 1604. I received a letkept in Spane. ter of Valladolid that he was allowed 7500. Duckets of renenue in the Citie of Kings, and that Atabasiloss fon he multibring his wife to Spaine, that the Indians which are his inheritance shall be fet ouer to the Crowne, and that he shall no more passe to the Indies. This is the chiefe of the bloud of the Incas, by the male line descended of Huayna Capae. Of Atarnallpa I knew one Sonne and two flerity wifted. Daughters, one of which Donna Angelina by Marquelle Pigarro had a Sonne called Don Irancifco, he died a little before I came co Spaine: the next day, before his buriall many Incas came to my Mothers, and amongst others her old Vnele, who faid that Pachacamae had preserved himmany yeares to feeanend of all his enemies; and inflead of mourning much, reloyed; 50 whereof I demanded the reason why we should be glad for the death of our Kinsman! he biting his mantle (which with them is a token of great a ger) laid, What, wouldft thou be the kinfman of an Auca, fonne of an Auca (that is, a tyrant trattor) which destroyed our Empire, killed our linea, confumed our blond and linage, which did fo many cruelties fo differing from the nature of the Incas! I could eate him raw without fauce now he is dead : for his Father the traitor Ataivallya was not the fon of Huayna Capac our Inca, but foune of Quitu Indian, which with his mother wrought treason to our King; otherwise he would never have done, no not imagined such things to his enemies, much life to his kindred , fay not therefore, he is our kinfman, thou wrong ft thy kindred to reckon to it fo cruell a tyrant, ere. This Francisco whiles he hued, feeing the hatred which the Incas, and all whee Indians bate dissisted Alabas him, had little to doe with them, and came little abroad, they full calling him Auca. His Fa-60 ther destroyed the Officers and Servants of the Kings house, and the Townes whereof they were, being by Manco Inca priviledged Incas, of tome a third, of others a fifth or a tenth part. Hee named also and committed great mischiefes on the Cannaries, & slew 70000.0f them, because they would not fullieft themselves to him at the beginning of his rising, whereby there were laid to remaine fifteene times as many women as medCH AP. 13. Incas posteritie, their miserie, Friers speech, Atahualpas answer. 1485

In the end of the yeare 1603, the Incas of Pern Witt to Don Melebior Carlos Inca, and to me, nall their names desiring vs to make supplication to his Maiestie, to command that they should Mistrable state be exempted from tributes which they paid, and other vexations which they fuffer no leffe then of the locas in other common Indians. They fent painted in white Chis taffats the Tree royall from Manco Pers. Capac to Huaina Capacs some Paulla, in their ancient habit, with the coloured ribbon of their heads, and eare-rings in their eares, with Partifans instead of Scepters in their hands. Their phrate was much mixt with Spanish for now they are all Spaniolized. They rehearfe much mi-Private was much a which cause I doe not here record it. They write with much confidence Incar and their that the Kine would not onely relieue them, if he were made acquainted, but reward them, as posteride lito the posterity of Kings. At the lide of every Kings picture they let those of his posteritie, with wing in April the title Capac Aylla, or the Royall flocke, difting withing each Kings descendents. Of Manco Ca. 1603. pace posterity there remaine 40. Incas : of Sinebi Roca 64. of Lloque Tupanqui 63. of Capac Tupan-

qui 56, of Maria Capac 35. of Inca Roca 50. of Tahuar Huacac 51. of Viracocha Inca 69. of Pachacutes and his Sonne Tupanqui put together 99. of Tupac Inca Tupanqui 18. of Huayua Capac 22. Their two laft generations (as neerer the Crowne) Arabnallpa with great diligence destroyed. The whole summers 567, persons, all descended by the male line; for of the female they made no such account, except they were Sonnes of the Spaniards which conquered the Land; for those they call Inew also, beleeuing that they descended of their god the Sunne. This writing was figned by eleuen Incas, agreeing to the eleuen deicents, each for all of his race.

CHAP. XIIII.

The Suppliment of the History of the Incas, briefely collected out of the Authors second part, or Generall Hiflory of Peru.



riginal and tues of the faces. In his fecond part, entituded the General History of Parts, breakers the Sand A. D. Chern Hus have we run thorow the Authors first part, or Commentaries Roiall, of the oof Peru, he relates the Spanish Acts, Discoueries, and conquests there; part of which in Benzo, Vaz, and others ye have feene already, and the Spanish Authors have related the same at large. I will briefely touch a few things to perfect this Friet Vincents our flory of the Incas. In the taking of Atabuallya he relateth at large the Ora- freech to Ata-

tion of Frier Vincent de valle viidi. First, touching God, his creation of the world, and of man. Secondly, Touching Adams tinne and Christs redemption on the Crosse. Thirdly, his power gi- Note the late uen to the Apostler, and ouer them and all Christians to Peter and his successor the Pope. Fourth- ter part of this ly, the Popes gift of all those Countries to the Emperour, Lord of the world, to the end to bring Friers Oranithem to the Christian faith. Fifthly, the Emperours authorifing Francis Pizarro as his Embal- on : tor which them to the Christian tatth. Fitthly, the Emperous authoriting transis Fixerro 25 his Emoals and fador and Lieutenant, that these Realines might receive that benefit, and that he might begin alliance inserted it at and confederacie betwirt the Emperours Maietie and the Inca, in such fort that his whole Kingdome large. should become tributarie, and the Inca become his subject and wholly deliner on his Kingdome and renounce the administration thereof, as other Kings and Lords have done. Secondly, after such peace and friendship, and subjection voluntary or by force, bee was to give obedience to the Pope, and receive the faith of Carilt quite abandoning his superst stion of Idols, invented by the Divell. All which, O King, thou art to take well in worth as being very profitable to thee and thine : and if thou deniest, know that thou shalt be compelled by warre, fire and bloudshed, and all thine I dols skall beethrowne downe to the thou shalt be compelled by warre, fire and blondined, and an inine lants fram occurrowere down to the Strange ground. And we will constraine thee with the Sword, that leaning thy false Religion whether thou will preaching of or no, thou halt receive our Catholike Faith and pay Tribute to the Emperour giving up thy Kingdome Christianita to him. But if thou Shalt obstinately resist, know for most certaine, God will suffer, at of old Phatao and all his Army perified in the Red Sea, that thou likewife and thine Indians (hall bee destroyed by our

This Oration was kept by the tradition of Quipus (or Quipos) which are the knot-records of Caffamarca where the deede was done : the words of trinity and other Christian Mysteries were not well understood, and therefore ill deliuered by the Interpreter : that language still wanting proper tearmes for them, and being forced to Indianize Spanish words for that purpose. Atabuallpar antiwere was, with great griefe for thole last words, of Pharao and destruction, lay- Autualica and ing, Atac (an interiection of forrow) and first complained of his Interpreter, and that this mi- fwer, nacing melfage was contrary to the former which they had fent him , that their Prince and they ,60 might feeme tyrants to to goe about destroying the world, killing and robbing those which had done them no wrong : or elie that they might feeme the feruants of Pachacamac which had fent them to their destruction; which if it be so, he and his were ready to offer themselves to what-

foeuer pleased them, not for feare of their minaces or armes, but to fulfill his father Huayna Ca-

pace command at the houre of his death, that they should serve a branded Nation more valuant

1486

then they, which was to come and bring them a better Law and Customes. But if this bee fo. Pachacamae is pitifull and mercifull, whom they oughe to imitate, and not to beginne with robberies and cruelties as they had done in Tampiz, and the confines. It feemed strange, he faid. to him, that the Emperour should bee Lord of the World, and yet the Pope should make him a new grant; and then also is the Pope greater then he, and Lord of the world. Againe hee had the wed no reason why hee should pay tribute onely to Charles; which rather hee thought was due to Gid, as Creator, or to Adam the first man, or to Christ the best man, or to the Pope which hath power to give his Kingdome and person to another, of all which he in his speech had difcourfed. And it he had any right ouer him, it had beene meet, fi. ft to have fignified it to him. before menacing of warre, fire, and flaughter, &c. The Spaniards impatient of this long diff. In course fell to rifling the Indians, others to robbing an Isoli Temple of the Silver plates; and comming forth to fight, the Inaians raised a great shout. But the Inca with a great voice comman-

geance *, as some have written, with other things against the Pope and the death of Christ, Five

thousand Indians were flaine, and no Spaniards hurt, but the Generall by one of his owne, flight-

tent to Cozco, which at Saufa in the way had light of Huafear, there kept prisoner; who by an

his progenitors: whereas Atahuall, a had little treasure but what be tooke from Churches. They aniwe-

red, that they must first goe to Cozes whither they were fent; and in the meane time Atabuallus

has intelligence of these passages. Hee subtilly to found the Spaniards, how they would take the

death of his brother, fained himfelfe very forrowfull for that hee had heard one of his Captaines

promifed to right and revenge the euill on him which had done it. He feeing that Picarre tooke

it in no worse part, sent a speedy Post to dispatch him so suddenly, that the Spaniards could not

Huafcar at his death foresold) by the unsust instice of the Spaniards, many of which protested by word

and writing against that ernelty, in vaine. His corps were carried to Quite to be interred, where vnder pretence of more honourable Obsequies, Ruminnam one of his Captaines (following his

examples) wrought a great treason; made a feast to Quillifeache brother of Atahualha, and o-

ther great men, whom having made drunke vnawares with the drinke Sora, a heady liquour for-

bidden by Law, hee flue, with Challenchima the Generall, and the Sonnes and Daughters of

Asabuallya, and all that might stand in the way of his ambition. Hee buried aliue the Chofen

Virgins, which smiled at his reports of the Spaniards (interpreting it to lust, being done ra-

ther to please him) causing to vodermine and cut the Hills to execute that dismall fate

more terribly. After some bickerings with the Spaniards, hee fled to the Antis, and there peri-40

tell but that it had beene done before. His owne death followed after (as before is recited and to

ded that they should not smite nor hurt the Spaniards, though they tooke or killed the King. Frier an ' crue'l Spaneards which Unicent made a plautible Speech to the Spiniards, in fauour of the Indians; but they could not heare him for the crie : neither did the King cast the Booke on the ground, or the Frier crie vennot relifting. Sothey which were there, and Goly, in the taking of Atabualipa. When he had agreed on his ranfome, which was never wholly mara, Benzo, Herr , &c. but paid, for want of time to accomplish it 1: (4605670. Duckers of it came in) Soto and Barco were the later Inquifiors feem fignes defired aide of the Spaniards to reftore him to his Empire, promifing three times as much as Atahuallya had done, better able to performe it, as having and knowing where to fetch the treasures of Vincents furie. " See contra, cap.vlt. Bualcare prom.fes to the Spanars, Hudfar flaine, had killed him, and refused to eate, making shew of much griefe. Pizarro comforted him, and

Fasie victorie

Atabuallo4 flaine.

cruelties.

Manco Inca.

the Empire of

Rome with Au-

gullus and Au-

Constantinovle

withtwo . 07-

Manco impri-

flantines.

Marco Inca Brother of Huascar, came to the Spaniards at Cozco, to demand the repossession of the Empire, by inheritance due to him. They made him faire semblance : and he offered to gan and ended with Moses; as promote the Gospell (according to his Fathers tellament, as a better Law) and the Spanish affaires. Articles were agreed on, and they granted him a Diadem with great folemnitie, bu: fo farre thort of the wonted, that the old men cried as fall for the want of that, as the yong boyes shouted for joy of this. When afterwards he propounded the accomplishment of those Articles guffu'u, and of which had beene made betwixt the Spaniards and the Indians, that the Naturals might line in quiet, and knowe what feruice to performe to the Spaniards, with the reall restitution of his Empire: the Gouernour Pizarro, and his brethren excuted themselves by the broyles and flines 50 which had growne amongst themselves, which hitherto permitted not the accomplishment. They further expected antiwer from the E pperor their Lord, of whom he might hope for al good, (the Articles being good for both parts) to whom they had given account of the capitulations, his brother Hernando being shortly to returne with answere. But when he was a rived at Tumpiz, the Ma: queffe tooke occasion to rid himselfe of the Incar importunitie, and with many faire words increated him to returne to his Fortreffe till things might be perfected : which he doing, they held him there Prifoner, fearing his haughty courage. The Indians leeing their Inca Prifoner, were much grieurd, but he comforted them, laying, that he and they ought to obey the Spamards, for to Huayna Capac had commanded in his Testament, and that they should not be westy till they had beene the last iffue of these things. Hee hoped that this his imprisonment would 60 turne into greater liberalitie with him, thele Unacochas being a Nation comne from Heaven.

The Marquelle difmifled himfelfe of the Inca, whose person and guard hee commended to his brethren Isan and Gonzalo, and went to the Citie of Kings, to people and enlarge it. The Inch Mance with much objequiousnelle to all the Spaniaras, and many presents of Gold, Silver, CHAP.14. Mancos speech, atts, agains Spaniards, death. Don Diego Inca. 1487

Gemmes, Fruits, &c. making no thew of griefe for his imprisonment, obtayned his libertie: which he had laboured the rather, hearing that Honando Pizarro was comming to gouetne in Mancoren. Which he has release to goe to Tucay, which was the Garden of the Kings, to which place he largement and furnmoned his Captaines, and complained of the Spaniards breach of promile, in not performing taking Armes. the Capitulations which they had made with Tits Autanchi, his brother, and that they had laid him in prilon with Iron fetters: that he had perceived their ill mindes from the beginning but fuffered it to inflifie his cause with God and with the world, that none might object to him the diffurbing of the peace. But now he could no further relieon their vaine promifes, well knowing that the Spaniards (hared the Land amongst themselves in Cufeo, Rimac, and Tumpiz, where-10 by it well appeared that they intended not the restitution of the Empire to him: and that he was loth to make further triall of their fetters, and therefore required their best aduice, intending with Armes to recouer his right, truiting in Pachacamac, and his father the Sun, that they would not herein for lake him. They told him, that he might looke for like reward at the hands of thole

Strangers as Atabualha had found, notwithstanding the payment of his ransome: and it was Pachacamaes great grace, they had not dealt with his Royall Perion likewife, &c. Thus Mance railed forces, fo that 200000. Indians came to Cozeo, and shot Arrowes with fire An Armicof

on them on all the houses of the Citie generally, without respect of the Royall houses, only they socood, Indiana referred the Temple of the Sunne, with the Chappels within it, and the house of the Virgins : corce burnt which two they ipared (thogh their wealth was gone) not to commit any facrilegious aft against

20 their Religion. Three Hals alto they referued wherein to make their feasts in time of raine, one of which was in the house that had belonged to the first Inca, Mance Capac. (The author proceedes in the particular fights and feege of the Spaniards, too long here to rebente.) In divers places they killed feuen hundred Spaniards. But at last Manco was driven to forfake the Countrey b by the b When Almas inequality of the Spaniards horfes, Guns and other offentiue and defentiue armes, against which go returned they had no experiments to make refiftance. In the civill-vacuill broiles and warres of the Spa- Alumado with miards in Peru, some of them fled to Manco Inca to avoide the Viceroies feuerity, one of which other Spaniards was Gomez Perez a cholericke man, which playing at Bowles with the Inca, would fland fo camein, thifely on measuring of his cast, and the earnest folly of play, that forgetting all good manners, he one day vied the luca as if he had beene an ludias flaue; wherewith the luca prouoked gave him 30 a blow with his fift on the breaft, whereupon Gomez with his Bowle ftrooke the Inca on the

head fo great a blowe, that hee fell downe dead. Whereupon the Indians fet on the Spaniards, Gomez an vin which first fled into the house to defend themselves there, but were fired out; and the Indian; grareful proud hauing killed them with enraged furie, had purpoled to eatevp their fielh raw: but after left spiniord. them to the birds and wilde beats, for foode. Thus died Mazes by the hands of those whom fine. hee had preserved from death , and had kindly vised in those wilde Mountaines of Uilca campa, which hee had chosen for his securitie. I was present, when some Incas present at the act, with teares recounted this to my Mother, which came afterwards from these Moun- Sami Tupes taines with the Inca Sayri Tupac, the some of that whfortunate Prince , by order of the Vice- his sonne. ry Mendoza, Marqueffe of Canete. This Vice-roy vied (to periwade that comming in of

40 the Inca) the Ladie Beatriz his Fathers Sifter, which fo wrought with his Guard, hee being then too young to take the Diademe, that vpon promise of certaine conditions hee came and rendted himselfe to the Vice-roy, and after went to Cufe, and was baptifed by the name of Don Diego, together with his wife Cufci Huarcay, grandchilde to Huafcar Inca, Anno 1558. Shee was a faire woman, but somewhat pale, as are all the women of that Countrie, about fixteene yeeres olde. I went in my mothers name to visite the Inca, and to kiffe his hand, which vied mee courteoully, and two small vessels of gilt Plate were brought forth . of which he dranke one, I the other. He spent his time, one day visiting one part, and another, another part of the Citie. Hee adored the Sacrament, calling it Pachacamae, Pachacamae. He went thence to the Valley of Tucay, and there remayned till his death, which was about three yeeres 50 after, leaving no issue but a daughter, which was married to Marsin Garcia de Lorola. His bro-

ther Tupac Amaru tooke the Mountaines. Francisco de Toledo second sonne to the Earle of Oropesa, being Vice-roy, determined to bring Tupac Amatu from the Mountaines of Villea camps the Prince Topac Amaru, the lawfull Heire of that Em- his tragedic, pire, after his faid brothers death without iffue male. Hee fought to doe it by faire and gentle perswasions sending Messengers to that purpose, promising him maintenance from his Maieftie for his person and familie. His kindred and friends told him that his brother had received fmall recompense from them, or society with them, and therefore counselled him not to goe, it being better for him to live there, then to die with his enemies. The Spaniards counselled the Vice-roy to force him, alledging that his Indians robbed the Merchants, hoping also by his im-

prisonment to recouer the treasures " which his progenitours had hidden. Such robberies were " Hincille le indeed committed in his father Mancos time , but feldome , they being forced thereto of ne- cryma. ceffitie for want of victuals , which the Mountaines yeeld not. But after his death there was no fuch matter. The Vice-roy Tene Martin Garcia Lojola, with two hundred and fiftie Souldiers well prouided against the Inches The firength of those passages was abated, and the wayes Hhhhhh

plained after the iffue of Sayri Tupac, fo that the Prince Tupac Amaru fied, and the Sagamiards purfued, and hee being guilty to himselfe of no crime, yeelded himselfe with his wife. two fonnes and a daughter, and all his Indians, looking for no ill measure, but maintenance at The Vice-roy framed a processe against the Prince, and against all the Incas of his kindred and

Bloudy Vice-

against the Mestizos begotten of that stocke by the Spansards, some of which were condemned to be tortured, that fo they might finde some clearer matter against them. One of their mothers came to the prilon, and cried out that they had got that reward, for that their Fathers had conquered the Countrey, for which their Children should be all hanged. Why did they not as well kill their Mothers, for whose sinnes Pachacamac had suffered this, which had beene traytors to lo the Inca for love of the Spaniards; with other outcries of vengeance in this world, and the next from Gods hand. Thus went thee crying in the fireet, which made the Vice-roy furcease his purpole, & he proceeded not to put any to death; but banished them to line a lingring death in divers pares of the world, out of that, which their Fathers had conquered. Some he fent to Chili (one of which was the lonne of Barco aforelaid, which had beene with Hualcar) others to the new Kingdome of Granada, to the Iles of Barlonent, to Panama, to Nicaragua, and some hee fent to Spaine, one of which was I wan Arias Maldonado, who lived there an exile ten yeeres, and recounted these things to mee; her after got leave of the supreme Councell of the Indies to returne to Pers, for three yeeres to recouer his goods, and then to returne to Spaine, there to end his dayes. All the rest perished in ban shment. The Indians of the bloud Royali, which were sixe and thirtie of the principall of the bloud Royall, he exiled and confined to the Citie of Kings, and with them the two formes and daughter of the poore Prince, the eldeft not ten yeeres old: the Arche bishop of Rimac or The Kings, pitied the young girle, and brought her vp : the two sonnes with three and thirtie more died in little about two yeeres, comming out of a cold hilly Countrie to the hor Plaines by the Sea. The three remayning were Don Carlos my School-fellow, sonne of Don Christonall Paully, and two others, which were fent home to their houses, but died all in a veere and halfe after. Of Don Carlos fonne we have faid before, that hee came into Spaine in hope of great rewards which in Pers were promifed him. He died Anno 1610. at Alcala de Henares of griefe to fee himfelfe flut vp in a Monastery, and left one some with three daughters. The sonne died being a childe of little more then a yeere old, and so the Rent granted by the

Don Melchiars the laft Incas

Contractation house at Simil to his father ceasiled. Now for the Prince Tupac aforefaid (to returne to him) they fentenced him to lofe his head, which was executed, the Crier proclayming his treason and tyrannes against the Catholike Maiestie of King Philip the second, King of Spaine, and Emperour of the New Word. They told the inca that he was fentenced to lofe his head, without any particular cause mentioned : hee answered hee had done nothing worthis of death , that the Vice-roy might fend him prisoner to Spaine, to kiffe the hands of his Soueraigne King Philip, which would be fecuritie enough. And if his tather were not able with 200000, Indians, to tubicat 200. Spaniards in Cozco, what needed the Vice-roy now feare any new commotion? The religious haitened to infiruct him for baptiline, to which he was willing, he faid, his Grandfather Huayna Capae having commended the 40 Christian Law, as better then theirs: He was Christened by the name of Don Philip, with as much griefe of thole which were prefent, as was icy made at the baptifing of Saits Tupae. The Spamigral did not imagine that the fentence thould be executed, being focontrarie to humanitie, and disagreeable to the Maiethe of King Philip. It was performed on a Scaff ld in the chiefe Street of Cozes. Many fought to petition the Vice-roy, which knowing their errand, would admit none to audience. They let the Prince on a Mule, with a rope about his necke, his hands tied, one going before, to proclaime his treaton. He not understanding Spanife, asked the Friers, and hearing that he proclaimed him Anca, called him to him, and faid to him, Say not fo, for thou knowest it is a Ire, and I never die or thought treason, as all the world knoweth; but say, that I must die for the Viceroys pleasure, and not for my faults against bim or the King ; I appeale to Pachacamac, that this is true. 50 The multitude crying and lamenting, they feared some stirre, there being 200000, scules allem-- bled in the streets, bey hasted to set him on the Scaffold. The Priests prayed him to still the clamours and out-cries of the people. Hee stretched out his arme with his hand open, which hee layd on his eare, thence letting it fall by degrees to his thigh; whereupon followed a fulden filence, as if there had not beene a man left in the Citie. Which made the Spaniards to wonder, and the Vice-roy among to there which flood at a window to fee the execution. Thus died the Inca with great magnanimitie, as the Incar have beene in such cases accustomed, he worthipping the Images of our Saujour, and of the Virgin, as the Priests taught him.

He is bapti'ed ... The Vice-roy returned with great wealth, and with 500000, Pezos in sold and filter, and Philip going to kiffe the Kings hand, he bad him get bim to bis boufe; be bad not fent bim to Peru, to kill 60 Vice-roys tuft: Kings, but to ferne Kings. The Councell of Indies receiving information against him arrested all his treature aforefuld, which filled him with fuch griefe that hee died within few dayes at er-Loyola, which had taken him, and was husband to his brothers daughter, was jent generall to Chili, where the Araucaus having spies on him, when hee had fent moit of his Souldiers to gat-

CHABAS. Description of Caxamalca, and of Atahuallpa. F. Vincents charity. 1489

rifons, with voices of birds and bearts gaue fignes to their fellowes, which came in with a great Areacon policy power of Indians, and killed him and all his Spaniards. Anno 1603.

Ower or insumon, and animal and are the lineas Historie of the Incas; the Spaniards (whose acts hee principally bandleth in his second part) bane enough of their owne to relate their acts, some of which also principally, and others have gone before, to them how they conquered and used their conquests of and in the New World. The greatnesse of that State, and strangenesse of the rising, proceeding, and rutne of the Incas, made mee the larger, though all this be not fo much in words, as one of the fenenteene Bookes, ont of which it is gathered. It may bee of good vie, both to underfland the Spanish Indian Historians, as Acosta, &c. and in many things in which for want of Language, and acquaintance with the Incas, they 10 bane received and delinered errours, to amend them : and in this kinde, for antiquities, is a iewell, such as no other Peru Merchant bath fit to fale. If I have feemed confused, and without exact method, I base followed my Author, who fetting forth the former part, Anno 1608, published the other, 1617. bassing receised of some later occurrents better intelligence. Wee will now lease this Inca-Spanistd, and waning received of some later occurrents octier intemprete, rec min now seame tous ance-spaniato, and briefly received from the Spanish Afters and Authors, what passed in those first and great mutations. Ramulio published these three following Discourses at large, which wee have thus contracted.

CHAP. XV.

Briefe Notes of FRANCIS PIZARRO his conquest of Peru, written by
4 Spanish Captaine therein employed.



Certaine Spanish Captaine, whose name is not added to his Tractate writeth, that in Februarie 1531. he went with Pizarro from Panama, who arrived, and flayed three moneths at Tumbez, and thence went to Tangarara, and founded Saint Michaels, where he heard of Atabalipa or Atabaalpa, and his warres with his brother Cufco: who fent a Spie thither, and as hee marched, prefents, to Pizarro. Hee with cortures learned of two Indians what and where Atabalipa was. They

marched on (he fayth) to Caxemalca, a Citie foure miles in circuit, entred with two Gates. On caxemalca of 30 one fide of the Citie is a great Palace walled about, with a great Court planted with trees. This Caffameres dethey call the Honje of the Sunne, whom they worthip, putting off their Shooes when they enter. And fuch there are in every great Towne. There were two thousand houses, in streets straight as a Line, the walls of strong stone, three paces (or fathoms) high; within are faire Fountaines of water, and in the midft a greater ftreet then any in Spaine, walled about; before which is a Fortreffe of ftone, with itaires from the Street to the Fort. On one fide of this Street is the Palace of Atabalipa with Gardens and Lodgings, the houses all painted with diners colours : in. one roome were two great Fountaines adorned with plates of Gold, in one of which runnes water fo hote that a man eannot indure his hand therein, the other being very cold. The people are neate, the women are honest, weare a wrought Girdle on their long garments, about that a 40 Mantle which couereth them from the head to the midft of the thigh. The men weare white Frockes without fleeues. The women in a Palace made Chicha for the Armie. After the Armies Chicha is a

Frockes without fleenes. The women in a Palace made Uniona for the Armie. After the Armie approached, a Frier of the Order of Saint Dominite, went and told him that the Christians were mide of Maize mide of Maize his friends. The (acique (Arabalipa or Arabualipa) answered, that first hee would have them Frier Pincent. reftore all that they had taken in his Land, and after hee would doe as hee should see cause. The This is denied Frier with a Booke in his hand, beganne to speake to him the things of God; hee demanded the by Incavega, booke, and the Father gaue it him, and he threw it downe about his people. The Indian Inter- because (it booke, and the Father gaue it him, and he threw it downe about his people. The Thank Intera feemes) the preter ranne and tooke it up and gaue it the Father, who fuddenly returned, crying, Come forth thing feemes Christians, come forth, and fet on these Enemies, Dogs, which will not accept the things of God, whose odious, rather Prince bath throwne on the ground the Booke of our holy Law. Thereupon the Gouernour founded then falle; and 50 the Trumpets, and gaue a token to the Gunner to discharge the Ordnance, and the Spaniards on he might not the Trumpets, and gaue a token to the Gunner to discharge the Grunner, and the Spaniaris of tell tales offenfoot and horsebacke rushed on with such furie, that the Indians hearing the dreadfull thunders fine to Spanish of the Artilerie, and seeing the force of the Horses, fled: the Gouernour went directly to the eares:expecial Litter in which Atabalipa was whom hee tooke, many Indians whose hands were cut off bea- ly to the Friers ring the same Litter on their shoulders. Sixe or seuen thousand were slaine besides many which which authorihad their Armes cut off, and other wounded.

Atabalipa, by an Indian, fent to the other Indians, that they should not flee, for hee was still to the prefice alive in the Christians hands, whom hee commended for a good Nation, and commanded his to ferue them. He was about thirtie yeeres old, a personable man , somewhat groffe, with thicke Atthalija taferue them. He was about thirtie yeeres old, a personable man, somewhat good, with the ken; descripting, and eves incarnate with bloud; his speech grave. The next day the Spaniards got fifte tion of his personable man, somewhat got fifte them; description of his personable man, somewhat got fifte them; description of his personable man, somewhat got fifte them; description of his personable man, somewhat got fifte them; description of his personable man, somewhat goods, and so the somewhat got fifte them; description of the somewhat got fifte t 60 thouland Pezos of Gold(each worth one Ducket and two Carolines) and feuen thouland Markes fon. of Silver, and many Emeralds, where with the Cacique feemed content : and faid, that he would giue him as much Gold as would fill a roome to luch a marke, higher then a tall man could reach A Markeis in by a spanne, the roome being twenty flue foot long, and fifteene broad. The Gouernour asked these discourhow much Silver hee would give ? he faid, that hee would have tenne thousand Indians, which les 8. ounces.

Hibbhbb 2

* Thele first no Cance and chiefe Citie Cuico.

should make a partition in the midst of the Palace, and fill it with vessels of Silver of divers forts. all which he would give for his ransome. The Governour promised him his libertie on this condition, and to worke no treason against the Christians. Fortie dayes were set, and twentie malfed in which came no Gold. Then we learned that he had taken his brother Cufco " his brother entiers of Peru by the father, a greater man then himfelfe. He had told fome, that Atabalipa promifed the Gold call both Huay- which he had, and hee would give the Christians foure times as much as the other had promifed: which being told to Atabalipa, he caused him suddenly to bee dispatched. Hee killed another of Husser by the his: which I my felfe faw, and all that went with Hernando Pizarro. I faw the head with the skinne, the fielh drie, and the haires on, and his teeth closed, and betwixt them a Pipe of Sil- to uer, and on the top a Cup of Gold fastned to the head, with a hole going into it. His Slaues put Chicha into the Cup, which ranne by the mouth into that pipe, whence Atabalina drunke. Anno 1833. the Gouernour gaue his brother Hernando leaue to goe with a Companie of Spa-

niards to Guamachuce, and there he found an hundred thousand Calliglians of Gold, which they brought for Atabalipas ransome. Diego Almagro came with an hundred and fiftie men to our fuccour. Because the Gold came so slowly, Atabalipa willed the Gouernour to send three men to Culco, laying the blame on his imprisonment, which made the Indians not to obey him. These Christians were carried by Indians in Hamacas, a kinde of Litters, and were ferued. They arrived at Xanxa, where was Chilicuchima, a great Captaine of Atabalipa, the same which had taken Culco, which had all the Gold at his command. He gave the Christians thirty burthens of Gold, an of which each weighed an hundred pounds. They faid it was little, and he gaue them fine burthens more, which they fent to the Gouernour by a Negro, whom they had brought with them. They went on to Cufco, where they found Quizquiz, a Captaine of Atabalipus, which made Tourney to Lucie account of the Christians. He laid that if they would not restore his Master for that Gold he would give, he would take him out of their hands : and fent them prefently to a Temple of * In the infide, the Sunne, couered with plates of Gold. The Christians without the helpe of any Indias (for The the mind, 8c. See [up. in they refused, faying they should die, it being the Temple of the Sunne) with Pickaxes of Brasse the Inca Vigas disfurnished the same, as they told vs afterwards, and spoyled the Temple. Many Pots and veffels of Gold were also brought (which there they vied for their cookery) for ransome of their Lord Atabalipa. In all the house, there was such store of Gold, that it amaled them. They were 30 amazed to see one seat in their house of Sacrifices which weighed nineteene thousand Pezos of Gold: in another where old Cufco lay buried, the pauement and the walls were covered with plates of Gold and Siluer, which they did not breake, for feare of the Indians displeasure, nor many great earthen Pots there, couered with Gold likewise. In that House were two dead and embalmed, neere to whom stood a woman with a Maske of Gold on her face, which fanned away the winde and Flies. Shee would not let them enter with their shooes on ; they went in and tooke much Gold, but not all, for Atabalina had intreated them, because there lay his Father. They found there a great house full of Pots and Tubs, and veffels of Silver. They would

Poore thifts for horie thooes.

relation.

chacamac, in the former relation. This Idell perhaps was that which the Natives had kept trom before the lasas conquest. forthen they worthipped ' none, Efetts trearife of this Voyage is in

Gouernour Francis Pizarro, and fet a guard on it. Quer the Rivers as they passed, they found two Bridges together, one open for the vulgar, the other shut for the passage of great men. Hernando Pizarro travelling over the Mountaines with his Horse, where the way was made with hands in many places as a Scale or Staires, which ware off his Horse shooes, commanded the Indians to shooe his Horses with Gold and Silver, and so came to the Citie, bigger then Rome, called Pachalchami *, where in one filthie chamber Temple of Pa. was an Idoll of wood, which they faid, was their God which gives life to all things, at whose feete were many Emeralds faltned in Gold. They have him in such veneration, that none may ferue nor touch him, nor the walls of the house, but such, as they say, are called by him. It is certanie, that the Deuill there speakes to them, and tells them what they should doe. They come 50 300. leagues off to him, and offer him gold, filuer, and iewels, giving it to the Porter which goeth in and returnes them an answer. They which serve him must be pure and chaste, abstaining from eating, and women. All the Countrie of Catamer payeth him tribute. The Indians feared that the Lioil would have deflroyed the Spaniards: which neverthelelle entred without femple, and brought very little Gold thence, for the Indians had hidden it all; they found the places whence they had carried great store; so that they got not about 30000, Pezos, & of a Cacike 10000, more. Chilicuchima fent them word, that he had ftore of Gold for them at Xanxa, but deceived them.

have brought much more then they did, but that they were alone, and aboue two hundred and

fiftie leagues from other Christians: but they shut it vp, and sealed it for his Maiestie, and the 40

They brought him and other great men to Atabalipa, which put coarse Cloth on them before their entrance, and did him great reverence, lifting up their hands to the Sunne, with thankes that they had feene their Lord, and came by little and little neerer him, and killed his 60 hands and feet, who shewed great signes of Maiestie, and would not looke any of them in the face. They tied Chilenebima to a stake, and fet fire to him, to extort a confession of old Cuscos Gold from him, which (much burned first) faid that Quizquiz had it in keeping : and that old Cuses, though dead, was still observed, and had victuals for before him; and told of another P2CHAP. 16. Pizarros acts, Golden Sbares: iron instice to Atahualpa.

uilion, where were great veffels, from whence the Gouernour fent and fetched much Gold. The Christians came from Cofco with aboue an hundred and ninety Indians laden with Gold. Some welfels were fo great, that twelve Indians had much adoe to bring them. The Governous melted all the small pieces, which I can well tell, for I was keeper of the house of Gold, and saw it melted, and there were about nintie Plates of Gold: there were in that roome two hundred great tankards of Silver and many small, with pots and other peeces very faire. I thinke I Canterla But weighed of the Silver cooo. Markes. There were also in the same roome eighty tankards of Gold, and other great preces : there was alfo a heape higher then a man of those places or very fine Gold; and to fay truth, in all the roomes of the house were great hils or heapes of Gold 10 and Silver. The Governour put them together and weighed them before the Officers, and then shole fome to make the shares for the company. The Gournour fent the Emperour a prefent of 100000, pesoes in fifteene tankards, and foure pots, and other rich peeces. Euery footman had 4800. peloes of gold, which made 720%. Duckets, and the Horsemen twice as much. besides other aduntages. Before the finaring he gue selmanges company 25000, pefore, and 2000, Others fly pefors of Gold to thoir which had staid as Saint Methods: and much gold to all that came with 100000. the Captaine, two or three great Cups of gold a peece to the Merchants, and to many which had gotten it, leffe then they deserued, I fay it, for fo it fared with me. Many presently, amongst which I was, demanded leaue to returne to Spaine, and fine and twenty obtained it. When Atabalipa heard they would carry the gold out of the Country, he fent for men to come Atabalipas pre-20 and affault the Gouernour. A few dayes before two Sonnes of old Cofee came thither and lodged with the Gouernour, one of them was naturall Lord of the Countrey. Vpon newes of for- " Manceces comming, they brought Atabalipa by night to a stake to burne him alive, by the command of the Gouernour ; but he faid he would be a Chriffian; whereupon after Baptil me they thrangled him that night, and the Countrey was quiet. The Gouernour made the eldeft Sonne of old Cufee Lord of the Country, which caufed great toy to the Natines. Wee arrived in Smil, January the fifteenth 1 5 34.

CHAP. XVL

The Conquest of Peru and Cusco, called New Castile, and directed to the Emperour by FRANCISCO de XERES, Secretary to Captaine FRANCIS PIZARRO which conquered them.

Rancis Pizarro lived in Panama which the Governor Pedrarias de Auila had peopled. He was Sonne of Captaine Gonzale Pizarre of Trugille: hee obtained li- Pizarre becence of Pedratias to goe vpon new discourries; and having bestowed a good part ginning, of his effate in a Ship and necessaries, he departed from Panama Nouember the foureteenth 1524, with one hundred and twelve Spaniards, and fome Indians: Land of Ham

feuentiedaies after they went on land, which after they named Of Hunger, with gre. eightie men, the rest being dead, and sent she Ship to the Mand of Pearles neere Panama for victuals, hoping of their returne in twelue dayes, which continued forty feuen, they living on the Seas wilde prouitions meane whiles, whereby twenty dyed, and the rest were very weake. A Cow hide which they had for feruice of the Ship, they had shared among ft them and eaten before the Ship returned. Then did they proceede on the Voyege, and came to a Towne which the inhabitants had forlaken, where they found ftore of proussions: and the next day the Countrie Pizers wounpeople fet on them, eatily ouerthrew ours being weake, gaue the Captaine feuen wounds very ded-50 dangerous, and left him for dead; flew five, and wounded feuenteene of the reft : whereupon

they returned for Panama, and he stated at Chuchama to refresh and cure himselfe. A little before Diego de Almagro his companion was gone for his fuccour with a Ship and feuenty men; and landing at the place where Pizarro was beaten, was there affaulted and loft one of his eyes; many ded. Christians were wounded, but for all that they fired the towne, and put the enemy to flight: failing thence, they came to a great River which they called Saint Iohns, and found there some thew of Gold, and returned, and found Pizarro in Chuchama.

Almagro was sent to Panama, where Pedrarias milliked and croffed this designe which had proved hitherto fo vaine; but he with much adoe returned with one hundred and ten men to Pia Three yeares Zarro, with whom fiftie of the former remained of both companies, one hundred & thirty being troubles. 60 dead. In two Ships they fet forth and fpent three yeares in great trauell; hunger killed the most of them, that fiftie onely remained: not finding neuertheleffe any good Countrie. Then it was their hap to finde great hopes of Gold and riches, comming to Cancebi, and tooke fix men to cack Lland, learne their language. Almagro was fent for more men to Panama, whiles Pizarro flaied at Cock-Hand, But some had written to the Governour to be freed from thence. The Governour fent

Habbbbb 3

couery arrued at Panama. Pizarre was fent into Spaine to get graunt of the Countrey, which in large Commission hee obtained, and after his returne departed from Panama with three Ships, and 180 men, and 27. Horie. In thirteene dayes he arrived at the Port of Saint Matthew, which was as much as before Understand of he could doe in two yeares, and landing there, found all the Country in armes. They marched till they came to a great towne called Coache, which they fuddenly affaulted, and there got in Gold. to the value of 1,000. Castellines, and 7,0 pounds of Silver, and many Emeralds, which they weight, as by then knew not and therefore for imall triffes exchanged them with the Indians. Thence the Go- to m :rk:s eight ounces, oy ca-fellines Peros. vernour fent backe for men and horfe to Panama and Nicaragna. He went with his Spaniards to the Isle Puna, rich and populous, which subsected themselves, and because it was winter. staid there. Thole Indians rebelled and raifed forces. Hee tooke the Cacique (hauing vinderstanding hereot)and made great flaughter of the Handers, and having beheaded ten principall men. he fet free the Cacique to call together the Handers, which had fled to Tumbez Pizarro went thence to Tumbez, where he found the Indians in armes. Three which lad gone in the Boates were robbed and flame, but Tumbez and many other places rued it. May 16. 1532. he departed from Tambez and was well received in many places to which he

gave notice that he came to bring them in subjection to the Emperor, and to the knowledge of the holy Catholik fai hito which many of the Caciques yeelded. Comming to a good River, which he found to haue a good Port, he planted a Colonie fixe leagues from the Sea, and catted it Saint Michaels. At Chira he found that the Cacique of that Towne, and another of Almotaxe had confivired to kill certaine Christians; hee tooke them both with their chiefe men and burned them aline, sparing the Cacique himselfe of Chira, whose fault was left, and giving him Almotaxe also. This execution was creadfull to the whole Country. There he shared the Gold which the Caciques, and the men of Tumber had given them, and paid the Marriners their fraight. He departed thence the foure and twentieth of September 1932. having newes of A: abaliga at Caxamala Picoresarmy. c4: 55. abode at Saint Michaels, and with the Governor remained 62. horsemen and 102, footmen!

As he marched he received better intelligence of Atabalips, and of Cufce, in which old Cufce

lay interred in a place which had the roofe and wals coursed with Gold and Siluer. Hee fenta 30 Captaine to Casas and Guaramba, with certaine horse and soote. He learned of the way (which he paffed betwix: thefe two townes, the latter of which had a faire ftone Caftle) that it reacheth from Cufco to Queso aboue 200 leagues, fo broad that fix hertemen may ride abreft, with water passages all alongst for travellers to drinke, and houses for their lodging every dayes sournes with Atabalicas pre- this Captaine returned an Indian with a prefent from Atabalica, of two Fountaines of flone and two burtness of dried Ducks (which is the fashion of that Country) fignifying his great delire to fee the Governour at Caxamalea. All the way from the River of Saint Michaels to Chimeba is a Vallie well peopled, hath the way made by hands, walled on both fides with trees in many places let for fliadow, made by old Cufes. The people line much after one manner. They a facrifice their children, and fprinkle the bloud on their Sepulchers, and daube their Idols faces therewith. 40 Their Serifices goe dancing and finging to their death. The Temples are compafied with ftone wals and feated in the highest part of the Citie. He fent an Indian meffenger to Atabalipa with words of greatest kindenesse. Leaning the Chinchs way, he tooke that which goeth to Cassanalauthorderieth ca, and alcended a great Mountaine, the horsemen leading votheir horses, sometimes mounting as it were by flaires, there being no other way; till they came to a forcrefle of Stone, walled with and founded on the rocks. As they proceeded in this Mountaine, they found it very cold. The wa-Spanners dent . feel fuch impu- ters on the top were very cold that without heating they could not drinke them, and they les up their tents and made fires when they flaid, because of the cold.

Here came mellengers with ten Sheep for a prefent from Atabalipa, which told Pizarre of the great victories which he had had against his brother. But hee answered that his Emperour was 50 King of Spaine, and of the Indies, and Lord of the whole world, it had many formants which were greater Lords then Atabalipa ; and be had fent him into these Countries to draw the people to the knowledge of God & to his subjection; and with thefe few Christians, faid he, I bane ouercome greater Lords then is Atabalipa. If he will have friendship I will belpe bim in bis wars & leave him in bis estate, but if he choose warre, I will doe to him as to the Cacikes of Puna and Tumbez. The Indian which Pizarro had fent returned from Canamaica and related that Atabaina there abode with an armie, and would have flame him, had hee not faid that the like should be done to his Messengers, then being with the Spaniards: that he could not speake with him, but an Vncle of his, which had enquired of the Christians and their armes, all which he extolled to the vtmost.

The Gouernor came to Caxamalea the fifteenth of November \$ 32. Atabalipa fent other mel- 60 fengers with prefents. Fernando Pizarro was fent to his campe with another Captain, which did his meffage to him, but he did not once looke on him, but was answered by a principall man; till the other Captain fignified that he was brother to the Gouernor; & then the tyrant lifted vp his eyes and obiected the reports of their ill viage of his Casiques, but for his part he would be friend

Saint Michaels

founded.

Cacite and o-

thersburned.

pounds by

Long high-

before the Incar conqueft. But our Inca this and Cafu Spaniards deui tations of fodomy and humane factifices &e to couer their cruelties

> Catamaka Firlinand Pie

in ail places.

CHAP. 16. Conferences of Span. with Atabalipa, Battell, prisoner, ransome.

to the Christians, taking them to be good men. They promised helpe against his enemies, He laid, he would employ them against a Cacique which had rebelled, together with his Soldiers, Pizarre answered, ten of their worlemen woul i be enough to deltroy him without helpe of your Indire answeren, and and and have mount of choosing the would the next day ice his Brother, and Aubulpa laughed and bad they should drinke, laying he would the next day ice his Brother, They to excule drinking, faid they taited but he importuned them, and women came forth with veffels of gold tull of drinke of Mayz. Hee looked on them without speaking a word, and they went againe and brought greater veilels of gold, whereof they dranke, and were licenced to depart. There feemed to be 30000, men in the Campe; they stood without their tents with lances without right in their hands, ike to Pikes. The next morning, being Saturday, came a Meftinger from Atabali- otthe Indian to palaying that he would come to fee him with his people armed. He aniwered, that he should vie Brane bragge his pleature. The Governour had placed his horie and foote courtly in great houles that they thould not firre forth till opportunity feued(the figne being given, and the Orunance thereupon acd where non discharged) then to rush out luddenly from Jivers pares & askule the Indians. And leeing Asabaupa finkeith as be flaid to long, till neere night, he tent aM. ffenger to hun, fignifying his defire to fee him, Hereupon filet store. he moued to the cown with his armie in iquadrons, finging & dancing, richly adorned with g.hd disables russ and filuer. The Gouernors purpose was to take him alue, & therefore expected his entrance into that walled or closed three of Caxamales, which the Indians had for laken with the fortrelle, & left quined, as Fig. to him.lt was late before he came into the town, and being come into the freete he made a stand. enrollmente The Governor lent Frier Vincent to him with a Cit ffe in one hand, and a Bible in the other, be- wites in the 20 ingentred where Atabahpa was, he laid by an Interpreter, I am a Prieft of God, and teach the nearthap, yet

vs, and is written in this Booke. And therefore on Gods behalfe, and of the Christians, 1 pray you after they had to become their friend; for God commands it, and it shall be well for you; and come to speake made him a with the Gouernor which expect you. Atabaliga asked for his Booke, which he gave him that. Chaff on Gree He not knowing which way to open it, the Frier firetched forth his hand to doe it, and he with great diddine bit him on the arme, and at last opened it himselfe. And without wondring at the the Specified; letters or paper, as other Indians vie, cast it away fine or fix pices from him: and to the words for their cruelwhich the Frier had faid to him, he answered with great pride : I well wot what thou hast done ties to the lain this younge, and how thou but handled my Carpurs, and taken away their goods. The First and first and the Grant has no did done this but found had been suitable to the Grant has no did done the but found had been suitable to the Grant had no did not not be the found to the found to the found had been suitable to the found to did naural 30 (were title Christians have not done this, but some ladious without the Governours knowledge, drafts, although who knowing it caused them to make rethrusion. Asabaipa replied, I will not depart hence till had had in Athey bring it all to me. The Frier carried this answer to the Godernor, and that he had throwne rabalipes death the holy Scripture on the ground; who prefently fet on the Indentioned came to the litter where died milerably. Atabalpa was and tooke him by the left arme, crying Saint lames, S. lames. The Ordnance plained fuffered the the trumpets found-dythe horie and foot fet forthy he Indiana fled, the horiemen purfuing & flay- wars, &che na ing, the footmen killing all in the streete, the Governour got a wound on the hand in faung his methalocespriloner. In all this hurliburly there was not an indeas which lifted up his armes against the Chrismian, Robleds, Biant, Picarro bid his priiner not be amafed at his captinity, for with these Corolling, though few. I have subsected greater Lords then thou art to the Emperor, whose vasfall I am, who is Lord whom God

40 of Spaine, and of all the world; a d by his order I am come to conquer these lands that you may plaged for en come to the knowledge of Gos, &cc, adding many words of their pitie to the conquered and his rannies to the good parts and act. The Spaniards had no harme, onely one horfe had a fmall wound: whereupon He had been the Gouernor thanked God for the bmiracle. The Sun was down before they began, and the batteli lafted halfe an houre, 2000. Indians were killed, besides those which were wounded, and Effectes dif-3000. taken. In the free of Caxamalca, Pizarre caused to build a Church for the Masse, and fortie course of the fied the place against all occurrents.

Assisting promifed for his ranfome to fill a roome 22. foot long, and 17. wide, with gold vp as highas the middle of the roome, higher by one halfe then a mans height, in pots and other veilels, plates & peeces; and the fame roome twice filled with filter, in two moneths space. But so much #### [and b. not comming in fo foone, the Gouernor fent three men to Cufes, February 15. 1533.commanding that in their

50 one of them in the name of his Maiefty, & prefence of a Notary, to take possession thereof. A Negro which went with them returned, Aprill 28. with 107 burthens of gold, and seven of files, ed gold of 14. May 25. Fernand Pizarro came to Caxamalca with Chuicucima, May the thirteenth, the Nota carasst 7. and ry returned from Culco with relation that they had taken possession, & had found 30. great Cities by the abunin the way besides small. He said that there was a Pallace with plates of gold, fouresquare, each dence thereof fquare containing 350, pales from corner to corner, 700, of which they had taken away, each of which waighed soo. Cafulians : from another house the Indians had taken as much as 20000. ming, pride & Castilians, which they rejected because the gold was base. He faid that Chische was there with othervices; he 30000.men for guard of the Citie. They brought 178, burthens of gold, each as much as foure Is aith that the 60 diens bare on their necks, to that it could not come thicher in a moneth by reason of requiring to three lent to many Indians to carry it. It was the thirteenth of June before the gold came from Cajes, we the fooles & heir was two hundred burthens & twenty fine of Silver, After this came fix ie burthens of bale gold, behauler caus taken from wals of houses, it was shared on S. lames his day. The nith being taken out for his fathe Incluses

Starif mirae Confirms things dunne, and come likewife to instruct you that which the great God hath raught thered, & that

Maiefly, every horfeman had 8880. Cathlians in gold, and g62, markes in filter, such marke being to vade value eight ounces. The tootemen had halfe to much, tome more and tome leffe, as the Gou. mour

* A Maske is 8. ounces and a Calilian is a Pez which containeth in this Peruacconnt after Insa Vega 450. Marauediz: ewery 5. Peans being fix Duekers: about feuen fhillings Miferable com

valued their merits. The Emperours fifth was 262259. Castilians of Gold and \$1610. Markee

He fet apart a quantity for those of Saint Michaels, and for those which came with Alma. ere, and the Merchants, and all the Marriners, Prices of things were according: a Horse was commonly told for 1500. Castilians of Gold; a vessell of tex quarts (Becali) of wine for fixtie Castilians, I paid fortie for foure quarts : a paire of shooes for forty, as much, or fiftie for a sword. I paid twelve for halfean ounce of had Saffron : ten for a sheet of Paper to write; nothing feemed cheape but Gold and Silver, infomuch that they would not fland to weigh their Gold, but gaue it in malle; and if hee gaue not twice the quantitie, hee cared not. Debtors & went from house to house with Indians laden with Gold to pay their debts. Atabalipa beeing accused of to Treason by another Cacique, that he sought to rayle forces in Quito, was therefore sentenced tobe burned, and brought forth to execution, where he taid he would be a Christian, and Frier Vincent baptized him and comforted him at his death; the Gouernour commanded he should not be burne but strangled, which was executed on a Saturday, about the same houre that he was taken. One of his Brothers was made Lord by the Gouernour in prefence of the Caciques, with great folemnitie, they litting up their eyes to the Sunne with thankes for giving them a naturall Lord. Fernando Pizzaro was tent to Spaine, and fome others had license, many flocking thither, hearing of

Herera Dec. 5.1.3. Sanb that Atahuallpa had defired his libertie because his ransome was paid and his promife fulfilled (as Pizzero himselfe by found of Trumpet acknowledged) which being deferred bis " Captaines offered bim to free bim by force. Atahualpa refused and commanded them to serve the Christi. ans. The Yanaconas a flauth hand of people, defiring to free themselmes from the Oreiones and Incas in those broiles rayled fulse newes that Armies were rayled to affants the Spaniards. Pizarro feeing the Atahualpa flood in his way, and hindered bis foundation of a Spanish Empire in these parts, which could not be without the diffipation of that of the Incas, nor that without Atahualy as death . Yefto tenia nor infto, pues era prouechiofo, He beld it suft becanfe it was profitable: Hee fluke to the Inca complaining of insurrection which be answered was but the rumour of his enemies, that he had paid his ransome or Pizzaro made frem (diffembling bie purpose) of great feare of the enemies (which caused the Spaniards to urge and important Acabalipas death (and to speake as you have read in them) whereupon Pizatto bad sufficient colour for his Designe, making shew that the Treasure paid in name of a ransome was " not for the Incas libertie, but left the Indians Should bide it. Frier Vincent confented alfo, and fo be mu fentenced to be burned, Oc. Hee addeth out of Seneca , Profperum ac toelix icelus virtus vocatur. Thus the Kings Chronicler , faring alfothat Pernand Pizarro was Atahualpas friend, and his brother did it after his departure. He died in Prifor, and all the rest (of whose names Hetcia giveth a Catalogu) were flaine and murthered in small warres, or came to illends. Yea, fill the warres continue in Atauco, to the death of many Spaniards, bofides the civil marres of Giron, de. in Peru after that of the Pizztrifts. God is inst, and therefore Pizasto the Mumberer of Atahualpa (a cruell Muriberer allo) was mourthered, and so bee that murthered Pizarro, and so forwards; the Serpents iffue and Generation of Hell proceeds from murther to murther the Deuill himselfe being a Murtherer from the beginning. Once, Peru alone with Chili (both subietts to the Incas Empire) bath more advanced the Spanish Treasure then all the New World besides : neither is there any so likely may to supplant that Cattilian-American greatnesse, as by the Araucos.

CHAP. XVII.

Relations of Occurrents in the Conquest of Peru after FERNAND PIZARROS departure written at XAVXA, Iuly 15. 1524. by PEDRO SANCHO, Notary Generall in the Kingdomes of New Castile, and Secretary to the Governour FR. PIZARRO, subscribed by the faid Gouernour himselfe and others, and Sent to his Maiestie.

En or twelue dayes after Fernand Pizarres departure, two Spaniards came from Cueso with Gold, part whereof was melted being finall and fine pieces, takenous of the wals of a certaine houle in Cufes, being aboue fue hundred wedges or plates of Gold, the finall weighing foure or flue pounds a piece, the greater ten or twelst.

All the wals of that Temple had beene couered with them, They brought a chaire. or throne of most fine Gold, weighing eighteene thousand Pezos, and a Fountayne of Gold of 60 excellent workmanship, and the mould in which it was cast; and many other pieces, pots and veffels : which all mounted to two Millions and a halfe, and beeing melted into most fine Gold came to be one Million 320000. Pezos and vowards : out of which his Maiesties fifth was taken, about 260000. Pezos, they made it vp 270000. Of Silver there was 50000. Markes, his Ma-

iesties part 5000, the rest was shared amongst the company according to their qualities and merits. After this, the Gouernour made an act before a Notary, in which he acquitted Atabalipa of his promife to the Spaniards, for to much as the house would hold, and cauled it to bee published in Caxamaloa by the found of a Trumpet, acquainting Atapalipa himselfe therewith by an Interterpreter, declaring withall that for his Maietites service and security of the Countrey, he would fill detay ne him with a guard, till more Spaniards came for his fecurity : specially confidering that hee had taken order for leuying of men of warre to assault the Spaniards, which hee had no meanes to avoid but by keeping him fast, and his Captayne Generall Chilichnehima. A few dayes after the Indians renealed the Treatons of that Tyrant, notwithstanding all his good viage by the 10 Gouernour and Spaniards, which was preuented by his death: his fentence of burning by reason of his Baptisme being executed with strangling, and after his death some part of his clothes and flesh were butned. It was late in the Evening, and the next morning he was solemnely buried in the Church, as if he had beene the chiefe Spannard in the Campe: which gave much latisfaction to his principall Caciques and Captaines.

This done, in prefence of many Commanders and Cacikes he gaue them a Lord in the name of b Other Incas the Emperour, a Sonne of Guaynacaba (Huayna Capac, or as the Spaniards vie to call him Guai- madesone calthe Emperour, a Sonne of Gusynacaba (Husyna Capae, or as the Spaniaras vie to call into Gusta led Atabalipa, nacapae) called Atabalipa, b to whom the Empire was due, and placed him in his Seat, they all to ferue the offering the Rites of vaffallage to him, to wit, a white feather, according to their custome. The Semiards turn. new Inca faited three dayes for the deceafed, thut up from all locietie but his Pages, and after Without them 20 came forth honourably attired and attended with about fifty Cacites and Captaines there pre- (as in the confent, and did eat to ether on the ground (for they vie no Tables) after which, he offered a white Feather in token of his vassallage to the Emperour. The Gouernour received it and embraced could, being so him with much loue, and concluded a peace, taking the names of the Cacrkes, and the Countries femouses under their command, and intimated that he was fent by his Emperour to give them knowledge have perfected of the true God, Father, Sonne, and Holy Ghoft, and what they should observe for their saluation; and that that God and his Vicars left on earth(for he alcended to Heauen their toremayne in wied the Cuso glorie) had given those Provinces to the Emperour to take charge thereof, who had fent him to ceams against instruct them in the Christian Faith, and to bring them vinder his obedience : and caused his those of Quite, Committion to bee read and interpreted to them. They all acknowledged the Emperour for and laftly to Commilion to bee read and interpreted to them. I ney all acknowledged the Emperous total to their supreme Lord, and next under him their Lord Atabasipa, and in signe thereof litted up the Spenish (each of them twice) the Royall Banner. All this act was entred into writing with testimonies, subjection. Af-

and great Feafts were made by them. At this time the Gouernour ceased the partition of the Gold and Silver amongst the Spaniards, and Acadelina gaue the Gold of the Fitths Royal to the Treasurer of his Maiesty, which was thing but saicarried to Xanca where the Gouernour intended to plant a Colonie of Spaniards, having intelligence of the good Countrey thereabouts. He provided him of Indians for carriages, and fent a Captaine with ten Horsemen to inhabit Saint Michaels till ships came, and after that to returne ing aims by to Xanxa. He heard that some of Atabalipas Captaines had flaine Gariticus his Brother, which any way to egrieued much both the Gouernour and the present Atabalipa. He as he marched heard of divers recethes spanish 40 which were vp in Armes against him, fine leagues from Xanxa, whereupon he put Chilachachima Second shain chaines, by whose meanes the report was that they had done it. They went and adiouned ring. themselves to Quizquiz. When he came to Xauxa, none of his Spaniards were willing to abide Garitto flaine: there because the Countrey was in Armes, yet he left a Colony of eighty men with Officers. About this time died Atabalipa of lickneffe, of poylon given by Chilichachima, as was reported, who fought to have the rule remaine in Quite, and not in Cufce. The Governour bad them pro- the first, auidea Successor. Calichuchima would have Aticee Sonne of Atabilipa, but others and the Gouer- saint cuice: nour liked better of a Brother of Atabalipa (Sonne of Guanacapa.) He came to a Towne where lo airer his he found much Siluer in great sheets of twentie foot long and one broad, a finger thicke. They doubt, it was received intelligence of a skirmish with the enemy by another band of Spaniards, in which eighteene horses were hurt and one slaine; in another the Spaniards had the victory. The Governour nued against 50 caused Chilichuchima to be burned, who refuted to become a Christian, and called upon Pachaca- the Izem there mac. After this he marched to Casco, which hee entred on Friday the fifteenth of November feeling to ad-

1533. And the next day made that Sonne of Gusynacapae their Lord, being the right heire, and aboue Cufce.& commanded the Cacikes to obey him. Incontinently the New Cacite (or Inca) gave order to affemble forces against Quizquiz; in tabalipato the foure dayes fine thousand were comne together well armed, with whom the Gouerneur tent a Sourcegnite.

Captaine with fiftie Florie, remayning himfelfe for the guard of the Citie. Thefe having done fomewhat against the enemy, were forced to returne by the ill mountanous palages. The Cacique having faited three dayes, and performed and received the Rites of validlage (before mentio-63 med in his Fredereffor)at the Gouernours request levied greater forces, fo that above five and twen. Third sharing tie thousand went with the Spaniards, which made a Brilge of three hundred and fixtie focte of gold and long, broad enough for two Horlemen to paffe abreaft, and paffed to Bileas. Some of them went to the fuccour of Xanna which had obtayned good fuccesse against their enemies.

The Governour after this caused all the Gold to bee melted by experienced Indians, which a- ingold,

ter which they

Acath & mcB

mounted to 580200. Pezos and vowards of good Gold. The Emperours fifth was 116460. Pe zos and vpwards. The Silver was meked, and weighed 215000. Markes, of which 170000 and vpwards was good, in Vessels and Barres, the rest alayed with other Metals. The fifth wasdeducted thence for his Maieftie. Amongst other things there were sheepe of fine Gold very great and ten or twelue Statues of women in their iuft bigneffe and proportion, artificially composed of fine Gold. They performed like veneration to them as if they had beene aline, clothing. adoring, giuing them to eate and talking with them. There were others of Siluer in the fame thature. All this Treasure was shared betwint those of Cusco and the Spaniards of Xanna.

In March 1534, the Gouernor affembled all the Spaniards, and made a folemne act of the form-Cule a Spanifib dation of a Towne and possession taken in the midst of the chiefe street, by the name of the noble and great Citie of Cusco: bounds were set out for a Church, and priviled ges allotted to such as within three yeeres should come thither to dwell. About twelve thousand married Indians were defigned to the Prouince of Collao, to his Maiefties Mynes of Gold in those parts. After this he departed with the Cacique towards Xanxa. There he had newes of two hundred

and fiftie comme from Parama to Saint Michaels, feuenty of them horlemen, and of Almarador

ardsenter Peru.

landing with foure hundred men, and one hundred and fiftie horfemen, Hauing ouerthrowne his enemies, he tooke order for founding a Church in Xanxa, and fent some Spaniards with an Army of Indians to pursue the enemies. There is a Mountayne of Snow which continueth from Caramalea to X inxa, where Snow lyeth all the yeere. The people are more civill and better Souldiers. On the other fide the Mountayne (Eastward) they are Sauge people feeding on fruites, having fmall flore of Maiz. All their Tribute was Feathers. From Xauxa to Cufco the Countrey enlargeth it selfe from the Sea. Collao is a plaine Countrey and cold, and hath many Rivers where gold Country de- is taken. The Mountaynes continue from Tumbez to Xanxa, and thence to Cufes, if the way bee not made by hands, footmen could not passe, much lesse horiemen : and they have many houses c Immaionare, full of Braffe to worke evp the same. All the rough Mountaynes are wrought like flaires dof ftone. There are some places where foure or fine mens heights, the way is wrought and made up with stone worke; in others it is cut out of the stone. There are places of entertainment ine-

uery Countrey, and by the way one within two or three leagues of another, made for the Lords which visit the Countrey : and every twenty leagues principall Provinciall Cities where the tributes of smaller places are kept. All those great Townes have store-houles full of the Countrey to

Commodities. There are store of cattle and pastures with their Pastors. The Citie of Cufco might be worthy the fight if it were in Spaine, full of great mens houles,

Description of all Lords and Caciques, having houses there. The most of those houses are of stone, and some are Cufco, asit was halfe of ftone : the ftreets are ftraight in right croffes, and narrow ; in the midft runneth a Conthe most pare çarro. The Fortresse

duit of water inclosed with stone on each side of which a horseman may passe and no more. The Citie is situate on the top of a Hill, and many houses are built on the side of it, and others below on the Plaine. The Market place is iquare, paued with small stones. About it are source houles of Lords of Hone painted and wrought; the best of which was Guainacabas: the gate is of white and red Marble, and of other colours, and hath faire Terrasses. On the sides of the City ranne two Rivers, w. ichrife a league higher, ouer which are Bridges. Vpon a Hill hard and roughis 40 a very faire Fortreffe of earth and itone, with great windowes towards the City. Withinit are many Roomes, and one principall Towre in the midft of foure or five circuits e one higher then another; the Lodgings within are small, the stone very fairely wrought and so close loyned that there is no shew of morter, and as smooth as planed boords. It hath to many Roomes and Towres that a man is not able to view them all in a day. Many Spaniards which have beene in Lumbardie and other strange Kingdomes, say that they have never seene such a building as this Fortresle, nor Cattle more strong. There may abide within five thousand Spaniards. It cannot be undermined being feated on a Rocke. On the City fide which is a ragged Hill, is but one wall, on the other fide three, one higher then another, the inmost being lighest. The goodliest spectacle are these encompassing circuits, being of stones so great, that no man would imagine them layd 50 there by the hands of men , as great as pieces of stonie Mountaynes and Rockes; some being of the height of thirty f spannes, and and as much in length, and none is so little but it is more 1050. Acolla faith he then three Cart-lodes. The Spaniards preferre them before the buildings of Hercules or of the Romanes. They are reverfed & that they cannot be battered in plano, but in the flipping h turnagaines which goe outwards, made of the felfe-same stone. Betwixt wall and wall is earth laid to broad that three Carts may goe abreaft. They are made like three fteps, the fecond beginning on the height of the first, and the third on that of the second. All this Fortresse was a h Sguincio de :- Store-house of Armes, Clubs, Launces, Bowes, Arrowes, Axes, Shields, Cotton Mandilions quilted, and other armes and garments for Souldiers, gathered from all parts of the Empire, colours of divers forts and Metals. From this Fortreife may bee feene many houses. In the Val-60 which is compassed about with Hils are about 100000. houses; many of them houses of pleafure of the Sourreignes Lords and Caciques, others are Store-houses full of Wooll, Armes, Metrals, Clothes and fuch things as the Countrey yeeldeth; there are Horles where the Tributes are kept, and there is one, where are about 100000, dried Birds, of whole Feathers they make

f Seefun. pag. mea.ured 38. foot long, g Voltati.

earments. And there are many houses for that purpose. There are Shields, Targets, Plates of Braile to couer houles, and incredible flore of prouitions for Warre. Euery Sourceigne Lord deceased hath his owne house of these goods and Tributes which they had in their life (for by their Law the Successor may not inheret it) their Gold, Silver, and Clothesapart. They worthip the Sunne and have made him many Temples, and of all things they offer somewhat to the Sunne. Two Spannards were sent to Colao, and were forty dayes in the journey. They say it is well peopled, mountaynous, and out of measure cold : fo subject, that having many cattle, no man dares kill any without licente, though neuer fo great. There is a great Lake (Titicaca) in the midft of the Province, in which are two Ilands, in one of which is a Temple of the Sun in great to veneration, where they offer Gold and Silver and other things. There are about fixe hundred Isdians which serue there, and a thousand women. The Mynes of Gold are beyond this place, some of ten some twenty, and that of Guarracabo is forty fathome deepe, darke and narrow, in which one alone at once, entreth, none following till he be comne forth. Other Mynes they pursue no further then a mans height, that he may reach the earth to another : which made fome fay that all the fields were Gold Mynes. Guainacapa is honoured as if hes were aline, and his bodie is brought forth into the ffreet with Musicke and Dances, and there are fome day and night attending him to chase away the flyes. The Lords that come to the Citie, goe first and salute him, and then the King. To these Fearlts 100000, soules affembled. Had it not beene for the quarrels betwixt those of Quite and those of Cuses, the Spaniards could not have entred into Cuses, nor have Note this 20 it, And the Mountaynes are such that ten men may defend ten thousand. Many Horses fell downe and brake their neckes. The Spaniards themselves marvell at what they have done, and how they are still alive. It hath false out well that this Sonne of Guainacaba was made their Lord, for whose love other Lords have giuen their obedience to the Emperour. He is very friendly to the Christians. July 15. 1534. in Xanxa Subscribed Francisco Picarre, &c. The end of the senenth Books. VOY-



OYAGES LAND-TRAVELS IN FLORIDA,

VIRGINIA, AND OTHER PARTS OF THE

NORTHERNE AMERICA FRENCH Plantings, Spanish Supplantings; English VI R-

GINIAN Colonies, and to the Ilands Azores.

THE EIGHTH BOOKE.

C'H A P. L

30 A Relation of A L V AR O N V N E z called Capo di Vaua, *concerning that which bappened to the Fleet in India, whereof PAMPHILO.

NARVAEZ Was Gouernour, from the yeare 1527. Intill the yeere 1 \$ 3 6. Who returned onto Small with three of bis companions only: translated out of RAMV-SIO, and abbreniated.

Ramu(vel 1

Their Fleet; and admirable and unheard of tempest: their entrance into Florida : the Lakes, trouble some passages, incounters, disastrous successe, building Boats for returne.



H E fixteenth day of June, in the yeare 1527, the Gouernour The Gouernoon Pamphilo di Narnaez departed from the hauen of Saint Lucar of the Fleete. of Barrameda, with power and commandement from your Maiestie to conquer and gouerne the Provinces, which lye from the River of Palmes vnto the Cape of Florida, all in the firme land. And the Fleete which the Gouernour brought with him The officers owere fiue Ships, wherein fix hundred men went. The Officers, uer the Flecte. because I am to make parti ular mention of them in this Booke, were thete: Capo de Vana Treasurer, Agozino Pronoss Marti-all, Alonso Enriquez Auditor, and Alonso de Solie Factor, and

an, Atonjo Emeriqueo Auditoi, and Atonjo ac odit Pattor, and overfeer for his Maiestie. And besides, there was for Commitary, a Frier of the order of Saint Francis, called Frier Giomanni, Ichn Gottierrez, and with him foure other Friers of the fame Order. 60 We arrived first at the lland of San Dominica, where we stayed but force five dayes, to pro-

uide our felres of certaine necessary things, and principally of Hories. There we left more then S. Dominue.

an hundred and forty of our men, which would stay by promise and agreement which they of an hundred and forty or our men, which would not yet of the Village made with them. Departing thence, we arrived at Saint lage or Giacomo, which is The hance of an haven in the lland of Cuba, and reposing our iclues there certaine dayes, the Captaine furnish ed himselfe with men, munition, and horses. It happed in that place, that a Gentleman, called

Anhauen cal.

The Trinitie. Governour to give him certaine victuall, which he had in the faid towne of the Trinitie, which is an buildred leagues off from the faid port of Saint Iago. Whereupon the Governour departed with all the Fleete, towards that towne. But arriving halfe the way at an hauen which they call the Caue of Santa Cruz, it feemed good vnto the Gouernor to abide there, and fend one Shin onely to receive those vietuals, and so he appointed one Captaine Pantoxa to goe thither with or Saint (183 his phip, and that for the greater fecurity, I also should goe with him, and he remained still there with the toure Ships : we having now gotten another in the Iland of Saint Domenica. Being arrived with our five Ships at the haven of the Trimitie, the Captaine Pantoxa went with Valanez. Porcalle to receive the victuals at the towne, which was one league diffant from the hauen. One houre after I was landed, the Sea began to be outragious, and the Northwinde was fo ftrong,

Vafques Parcalle, neete vnto the towne of the Trimtie, which is in the fame Hand, offered the

or to upeff, no that the Boates durit not goe aland, nor could they with the Shippes in any fort put to the

Prefages.

table both at contrary fide; the winds being in the prowe, whereupon with very great trausale, with Sta and Land. two contrary feafons, and with much raine they continued all that day, and the Sunday The night approaching, the Sea and tempest began so much to increase, that it no leffe tormented those on the land then them at Sea; tor all the houses fell downe, and all the Churcies, and wee were entorced to goe feuen or eight men embracing one another arms in arme together, to be able to relift the winde, that it might not carry vs away, and to avoide the ruine of the houles, flying vnto the Forrest, the trees gave vs no leffe cause of feare, then the houses had given vs : because they falling held vs in continual feare, the that they would kill vs. In this tempest and danger wee passed all the night, without finding any part or place, where for one halfe houre onely wee might fland fecure : but principally, the midnight before wee heard noyles and great crying, and the found of Belies, Flutes, and Drummes, and other inftruments, which continued vntill the more ning, that the tempest ceased. In those Countries so fearefull a thing had never beene seene. whereof I caufed a teltimoniall and true certificate to be made, which I have fent vnto your

the tempest.

On Munday morning we went downe to the hauen, and found not the Ships there, but faw fome of their furniture in the water; whereby we knew that they were cast away. And so we purpoied to goe along the coast, searching if we might finde any thing, but finding nothing, 30 we determined to fearch by the Mountaines, and having gone about a quarter of a league of from the water fide, wee found the Boate of a Ship fet vpon certaine trees; and further beyond, ten leagues along the coast they found two perions of my Ship, and certaine couerings and rootes of houses. And those two men were to actually transfigured and changed with weatherbeating, both of the shore, and of the Sea, that they could not know who they were, we found also a Friers habit, and a Conerlet torne in peeces, and found no other person or thing any more. Threefcore men were loft in those two Ships, and twenty horses, and those that remained aline were thirty persons onely, who the same day we arrived in that haven, went aland together with the Captaine Pantage. Wee remained in such manner for certaine dayes, with much trouble and great necessitie, because the sustenance and prouision of that people, was all an loft, and destroyed, with certaine wilde Beatls, and the Countrey remained in such fort that it moved great compassion in the beholders, the trees being falne, the mountaines burned, and remaining without leaves, or graffe, and so we passed untill the fift day of November, that the Gouernour of our Fleete came thither to vs, with his other foure Ships, who also themselves had palled great dangers and torments, and were efcaped, because in good time they had retired themselves vato some place of satety.

Fifth of No-

The men which he had brought with him, and those that he found there, were so much affright ted, and terrified with the loffes and dangers past, that they resolved to imbarke themselves no more in the winter, and befought the Gouernour that he would fuffer them to repose and relt themselues in those places; he perceiung their mindes, and the defire of the inhabitants, did so, 50 and gaue me the charge of the Ships, and the men, which should goe with me to winter at the The baisen of hauen of Xaqua, which is twelve leagues diffant from that place, and to going thither, we stated Sagua, or Xa jua. vntill the twentieth of February following. At this time the Gouernour came thirther vnto vs. with a Brigantine which he had gotten at the Trinitie, and brought with him a Pilot, called Mirnelo, who (as they faid) was a man very well practifed, and an excellent Pilot for all the coast of the North. Befides that, the Gouernour lets on the coaft of the Liffart Captaine Aluaro della Querda, with a Ship which the Gouernour had procured there, and lett forty men with him, and

twelve other with the horse. Two dayes after the Gouernour came vnto vs, wee imbarked our felues, and were (in the whole) foure hundred men, and fourescore horses in foure Ships, and one Brigantine. The Pi- 60 lot which we had newly taken, brought the Ships through the quicke fands, which they call Canerres, to that the day following we found our felues on dry land, and so remained fine dayes, the keele of the Ships oftentimes friking voon the ground. At the end of those fine dayes, 2 ftorme from the South brought fo much water vpon the fands, that wee might come out, although not without much danger. Departing thence, we arrived at Gnanignanico, where another tempelt affailed vs fo fiercely, that we frood in great danger to be lost: at the head of the Gumigianico. currents we had another, where we staid three dayes. And these being ouerpasted, we went acurrents we nau another, which and with a contrary winde, we went till wee came within The Cape of hour the Cape of Saint Interny, and with a contrary winde, bour the Cape of the Hanana, and flanding the day following to put in there, a Southerne gale S. Anthony. of winde tooke vs, which droue vs farre from the land, so that wee crossed ouer by the coast of The Hamens. Florida, and arrived the twelfth of Aprill, at the land of Martes; fo coafting the way of Florida, Martes. voonholy Thursday in the same coast, we ancored in the mouth of an open roade, at the head whereof we faw certaine houses, and habitations of the Indians.

10 The fame day Alonfo Euriquez the Auditor went out of the Ship, and landed upon an Iland which is in the same open roade, and called to those Indians, who came and abode with vs a good space, and by way of ransome gaue him fish, and certaine peeces of Deeres flesh. The day following, which was good Friday, the Gouernour imbarked himfelfe with as many men as the Boates could carry, and we went to the Villages or houses of the Indiant, which wee had seene. which we found all emptie and defolate, because that night the people were gone in their Canoes. One of thole houles was very great, and able to containe more then three hundred perfons, the other were much leffer, and there we found a little Bell of Gold within the Nets. The Great boufes fons, the other were much letter, and there we round a next day, the Gouernour advanced the Enfigne for your Maielty, and tooke possession of the keepers. Village in your royall name, and presented the Commissions and was received, and obayed as Golden Rell. 40 Gouernout, according to your Maiefties appointment. And so in like manner, we presented our The fift to me

other prouitoes vnto him, which he accepted, and obeyed according to the contents thereof, and taken in Floris prefently caused the rest of the men to be shipped, and the horses, which were not about two da, in the Emand fortie, because the other, through the many tempests, and beating of the Sea, and length of perors name, time, were dead. And these sew that remained, were so weakeand wearied, as at that time we could doe little feruice. The day following, the Indians of those places came vnto vs, and although they spoke vnto vs, yet notwithstanding we understood them not.

The Governour commanded that the Brigantine should goe coasting the way of Florida, and fearch for the hauen, which the Pilot Marnelo faid he knew, but was now aftonished, and knew not in what part we were, nor where the hauen was; and the Brigantine was appointed, that if

30 they found not the hauen, to croffe ouer to the Hamana, and finde the Ship wherein Alsiare della Querda was, and having taken in some victuall, to returne to finde it. The Brigantine being deing departed, we returned to enter into the Village of the same people where we had bin before, with fome other more, and we coafted the gulfe which wee had found, and having gone about foure leagues, we tooke foure Indiani, and shewed them Maiz, because vntill that day wee had not yet feene any token thereof: they faid, they would bring vs where it grew, and so they brought vs to their Village, which was not farre from thence, at the head of the gulfe, and there they shewed valuted Marz, which was not yet ripe to be gathered. There wee found many chelts of the Merchants of Castie, and in every one of them was the body of a dead man, all which were coursed with Deeres skins painted. The Commissary thought, that it was a kinde 40 of Idolatry, so he burned the chefts with all the bodies. We also found peeces of webs of cloath,

and Pennacchi, which they had gotten out of None Hift aniela, and certaine * mosters of Gold. Whereupon we demanded of those Indians by signes, from whence they had such things. They Samples by fignes, shewed vs: that very farre from thence there was a Prouince, called Apalachen, where- The Prouince in there was great quantity of Gold. Departing from thence, wee went further, carrying for apalache. guides those foure Indians which we had first taken, and so ten or twelve leagues off from that place, wee found another people of fifteene houses, where was a goodly Plaine sowed with Maiz, which now was ready to be gathered, and we found some also dry. There we abode two

May the first, the Gouernour caused two pound of Biscuit, and halfe a pound of Porke to be 30 giuen to euery one of them who were to goe with vs, and fo we departed, to enter within the land. The fumme of all them who went, was three hundred men in all, among whom was the Commissary Frier lobn Scinarez, and another Frier, called Frier lobn de Palis, and three Clarkes, and the Officers. Forty of vs were on horsebacke, and so with that provision which wee had brought, wee went fifteene dayes without finding any other things to eate, except Dates, like those of Andaluzia. In all this time we found not any Indian, nor faw any house, nor place inhabited : and in the end we found a River, which wee passed with much danger and trouble, by fwimming, and vpon rafts, and staied a day to passe ouer it, because it ranne with much sury. Having passed to the other side of the River, two hundred Indians came against vs, and the Gouernour went before, and after he had spoken to them by signes, they made much signes againe 60 vnto vs. that we should in one our selves with them, taking fine or fixe, who brought vs vnto

their houles which were about halfe a league off, and there wee found great quantity of Maiz, which flaod now ready to be gathered. After some fearch of the Countrey to the Sea, wee departed from that place, alwayes (as we went) inquiring for that Prouince, which (the Indians faid) was called Apalachen, and brought for guides, them that we had taken, and fo went forward

· Casique gni-

untill the feuenteenth of lune, and found no Indians that durft abide our comming. There, ay Ca. eer 1 Lord 2- signe came vnto vs, whom an Indian carried vpon his necke, and hee was couered with a Deeres skinne painted, and brought with him many people, who went before him playing vpon certaine Fintes made of canes, and so came wnto the Gouernour, and abode with him an houre, and we ganehim to vinderstand (by fignes) how that we went to Apalachen, and by those fignes which he made vs, it feemed he ment to fignifie that hee was an enemy to them of Apalachen. and would side vs against them. We gave him Crownes, Bels, and such other things, and he gave the Gonernour the skin which he wore voon him, and fo turned backe againe, and we followed presently after him. That evening we came vnto a River, which was very deepe and very broad. and ran very furiously, and not presuming to passe ouer it vpon rafts, we made a Canos, and staied one whole day to passe ouer it : so that if the Indians would have injured vs, they might eafily have disturbed our passage, and yet although they holped with best they could, wee had Strong fream, much trouble. One of our Horiemen, called lobu Velasquez, a native of Cuellar, because he would

not flay, tooke the River with his Horse, and the current of the River being very strong . cast him from his Horfe, who catching hold on the raines of the bridle, drowned himielte, together with the Horse. And those Indians of that Lord, called Dulcancellin, found the Horse, and told ve where we should finde him in the Riuer below : and so they went to search for him, whose death King or Gazigue much discontented vs. because vntill that time there was not one man of our company wanting. The Horse gaue many their suppers that night. And so having passed that River, the day following we came vnto the people of that Lord, who fent vs fome of their Maiz. The next day we

Toubleforse

Countrey.

departed, the Indians being fled. The Gouernour left by the way an ambufcado of certaine Horiemen, which as those Indians passed by, issued out vpon them, and tooke three or foure. who before lerued vs for guides, and they brought vs through a very troublesome Countrey to trauaile, and maruelous to behold, where were huge Mountaines, and very high Trees, whereof fo many were fallen to the ground, that they intangled and stopped the way, in such fort that we could not palle without going farre about, to our great trouble; and of those trees that were fallen, the greater part were clett from one end to the other, through the thunderbolts that fall

Trees clefe wich thunder-Apalasben.

there, great tempests being alwayes in that place : with this trouble wee marched untill the fix and twentieth day of lune, at which day we came within the fight of Apalashen before they of the Towne perceived vs. We rendered great thankes vnto God, feeing our felues fo neere vn- 20 to that place, and supposing that to be true which had been spoken, and hoping we should there end our great travailes which wee had passed, as well for the long and cuill journey, as for the great famine which we had fuftained. Because, although we fometimes found Maiz, vet for the most part we went fix or eight leagues without finding any. And there were many amongstvs, that through hunger and wearinesse had wounded their shoulders with continual wearing of their armes, besides the other calamities they daily incountered.

- The Governour commanded me to take with me nine horse, and fiftie foote, and enter the towne, which the Controler and I did, and found none but little children, and women, because at that time the men were not there, but going a little way from those places, the Indians came, and began to fight, and floot at vs. and flow the Controllers horse; but in the end they fled, and 40 left vs, There we found great quantity of Maiz which flood ready to be gathered, and had fufficient, of which was Jay, remaining. We found there many skinnes of wilde beafts taken by hunting, and some garments of thred little and nought worth, wherewith the women couer some

parts of their person. They had many Mils to grinde Maiz. Among these people there were forty little houses, low built, and in close places, for feare of the great tempetts to which that Countrey continually is accustomed. The houses are made of straw of stubble, and compassed about with Mountaynes pefts in thofe standing thicke together, and great Trees, and many Seas of water, where so many and so great Trees are false, that they trouble every thing, and cause that no man is able to travell there with-

out great incumberance.

The land from the place where we di barked vnto this people of Apalachen, for the most part is plaine, and the foyle confifteth of hard and folid fand, and throughout all the fame many great Trees, and famous Mountaines are found, where Nut trees are, and Labrani, and other, which they call Laguidambares: there are also Cedars, Sauine-trees, Holme-trees, Pines, Okes, and low Palme-trees like those of Cafile. Throughout all that Country there are many great and little Lakes, and fome are very trouble fome to paffe, at well for the great depth thereof, as also by reafon of the many trees, which are fallen there. The ground or bottome of them is fand : and thole Lakes which we found in the Prouince of Apalachen, are much greater then all the other which we had found untill then. There are many fields of their Maiz in this Province; and the houles are scattered through the Plaine, like those of Gerbe. The bealts which we saw there are Deere 60 of three forts, Conies, Hares, Beares, and Lions, and other, among which we faw one, that carrieth her young in a bagge, which thee hath in her belly, where thee carrieth them all the time that they are little, vntill they be able to goe, and feeke their meate themselves. And if by chance

yong in abag, the young fand feeking food without the damme, and people come vpon them, fhee flyeth not

CHAP. I.S. 1. Moleflations by Indians in Apalachen, Aute, Florida.

before the have gathered them into her bagge. The Countrey is very cold there; and there are many good pastures for flockes.

There are also many lotts of Fowle, Godings in great abundance; Geele, Duckes, Hetons, Fowles, Black-birds, and others of diners forts, and there we law many Falcoms, Ger-falcons, Sparrows

hawkes, and many other force of Birds. Two dayes after we came to Apalachen, the Indians that were fled returned vnto vs in peace, demanding their children, and we gaue them all, except one Cazique of theirs; whom the Gonernour retayned, which was the occasion to cause them to depart offended; who the day sollowing returned as enemies, and affailed vs with fuch tury and fuddenneffe, that they came to To let fire to the house where we were : but io soone as wee came forth, they fled and retired them. felues vnto the Lakes, which were very neere thereunto. Whereupon by realon of them, and the Come which was very thicke there, we could not doe them any hurt, face that we killed one man only. The day following, other Indians of another people, which was on the other fide, came to vs and affailed vs after the fame manner , that the other had done before , and fled likewise : and one of them also was slaine. We abode there fine and twentie dayes, in the which we caused three to enter within the Land, and found it very poorely peopled, and hard trauelling, in respect of the troublesome passages, Mountaynes and Lakes which are there. Wee demanded of the Cazique whom wee had retayned, and of the other Indians whom wee had brought with

vs, who were borderers and enemies to them of Apalachen, the qualitie and condition of that 20 Countrey, of the people, the victuall, and other things about it, who all plainly answered vs, that the greatest people of all that Countrey, were they of Apalachen, and that further beyond it was without people, and very poore, that all that Countrey, and theirs were ill peopled, and that the Inhabitants were much dispersed, and that going further forth, exceeding great Lakes are found, Mountaynesstanding thicke together, and mighty Defarts, and without Inhabitants. Wee asked them of the Countrey which lay toward the South, what people and fuffenance it had, who answered vs, that going from thence towards the Sea nine dayes journey, were a people called Aste, and that the Indians of that place had much Maiz, and that there were small Pulle, which are like to our Ciches and Gourds, and that being so neere to the Scaffsh was there

to be found : and that they were their friends.

30 Seeing the pourty of the Countrey, we agreed to depart from them, and goe to ferke out the Sea, and that people of Ame, whereof they told vs. And so at the end of five and twenty dayes after we came thither, we departed. The first day we passed those Lakes and troubletome passages, without feeing any Indian. But the second day they came vpon vs , at a Lake which was very ill to paffe: lo that the water tooke vs vp to the breaft, and many Trees were falhe there, fo that we being in the middelt thereof, the Indians affayled vs, they being hid behind the trees that we might not fee them : and others were voon the trees that were falne, and beganne to shoote at vs in such lore, that they wounded many men and horses, and tooke the guide from vs which we had brought, they suddenly cast themselves into the Lakes and wounded fifteene men and horses. The Gouernour seeing this, commanded them on horsebacke to dismount, and as Indian Solution 40 faile them on foot, and fo they did, and the Auditor difmounted with them, and affayling them

put them all to flight, so that they entred into a Lake, and thus wee gained the passage of them. In that skirmish tome of our men (whose good armes they carried prevayled not) remayned Strong arwounded: and some of them swore, that they saw two Okes, each of them as great as a mans legge, that through from fide to fide with the Arrowes of the Indians. Which therefore is not a thing that wee should wonder at, seeing the force wherewith they deliuer them, and I my sette haue seene an Arrow at the foot of an Elme, which entred an handfull in.

As many Indians as we faw in Florida, vntill wee came to that place, are all Archers, tall of flature, and goe naked, and feeme to them that fee them afarre off mighty Giants. They are maruelloufly well fet, pleafant, and of much firength and agilitie. The Bowes they vie are as thicke Men of tall &m asa mans arme, of eleuen or twelue spannes long, and they shoot two hundred paces off, and so rure, good 50 straight and levell, that they never shoote and misse. Having got over that passage, about one archers.

league from thence, we came to another Lake of the fame fort, faue that it was halfe a league long, which was much worfer then the former. This we quietly passed, and without disturbance of the Indians: because they having spent all the munition of their Arrowes, in that first affault, it remayned not in their power to be able to affault vs afresh. The next day following going ouer another fuch pollage, I who went in the Vantgard descryed the Sauage people, and gaue intelligence to the Gouernour who came in the Rereward, and so going well ordered and prouided, they could not offend vs, and as loone as we were come forth into the Plaine, they came alwayes following vs. Whereupon turning about and dividing our felues into two parts, we flue two of

60 them. Auellaneda turning about ranne to helpe his boy, the Indians smote him with an Arrow on the tide of the Cuiras, and the flroke was such, that the whole Arrow almost went through behind the head, so that he suddenly dyed, and we carried him dead vnto Ame. We came to Ante, the ninth day after our departure from Apalachen: and found all the people of that place fled, having burned their houles. There we found much Maiz and Gourdes, and certaine Pulle which fiiiii 3

The River · Madelma.

were then readie to be gathered. So we reported our felues two dayes there, and after the Gonernour prayed me, that I would goe to discouer the Sea, seeing the Indians said, it was so necreand we alto had discourred it as we went, by a very great River, which wee found by the way : and called it the River of Madalena. I was lent to discover the Sea. The day following we departed from Aute, and marched all that day vntill wee came where I had beene before : the way was very troublefome, because the Hories were neither able to carrie them that were feeble, nor knew we what remedy to take, because they were enery day worse then other. Having proqued many remedies, we all agreed in one sudgement, to put a very hard thing in execution, and that was to make Boats for ya to goe from thence. It feemed a thing impossible to all, because some of vs knew not how to make them, and wee had neither Iron Tooles, nor Forge, nor Ockam, to Pirch, nor Ropes, nor finally, any thing of to many, which were needfall in fach an exercife : and about all we had not proution of victuall for to long time while they should be made. The day following it pleased God, that one of our men came, who said, that hee would make certains Pipes of wood, and that with the skinnes of wild bealts, certaine Bellowes should bee made to blow, And finding vs at a time, wherein what thing foener he would, which had the leaft colour. or shadow of remedie, seemed sufficient; we said, that he should make them, and so we agreed. that of the Stirrops, Spurres and Croffd-howes, and other things of Iron which were among ve. Navles, Sawes and Hatchets should be made; and other Tooles of Iron, seeing they were so need. full. And we tooke for remedie, to have fome food while this should be put in execution, that four entries should be made into Ante, with all the Horse, and others that could goe thither and that every third day one Horfe fleuld be killed, to be divided among them that wrought in the making of the Boates, and them that were ficke. The entries were made with as many men and horses, as was possible, who brought thence about source hundred Staras of Maiz, although not without controuerfie and contention, with those Indians. We caused many Palmitialio to be

gathered, that with the woolley part and barke thereof, twifting and drawing them in length

of September next fine Boates were finished, of two and twenty Cubits spiece, and we stopped

And we vied to great deligence therein, that beginning the fourth of August, the twentieth

Ockam of

Hard thifr.

the chinkes, and calking with Ockam of the Palmiti; and pitched them with a certaine Gumme. which a Greeian called Don Theodoro, brought from certaine Pine-trees, and with the same barke of the Paimiti, and of the traines and haire of Hories we made cordage and tackling . and made favles of our fhires, and of the Sauine trees which were there, we made fuch Oares as we thought necessary; and such was that Countrey, whereinto our sinnes conducted vs , that no stones were found there, to ballast the Boates, nor faw wee any throughout all that Countrey. Wee likewise flayed the whole legges of horses, and sewed the skinne together, to make bottles to carrie water.

we might be able to vie them in Head of Ockam for the Boats.

No ftones.

In this means time, tome of our men went to gather Tamarinds in the Strond of the Sea, where the Indian at two feuerall times wherein they incountred them, flue ten Christians, fo necreto our Tents, that we faw them, and could not helpe them, and found them that through from fide Strong fhot. to fide, with Arrowes, fo that although our men had excellent Armour, they were not able to refift their strokes, those Indians shooting with fuch dexteritie and force, as aforesaid. And our Pilots faid and fwore, that from the flat shoare which we called by the name of the Crosse, vnto this place, we frad gone about two hundred and fourescore leagues, little more or lesse, and in all that Milerable fire- Countrey we faw no Mountaines, nor had any notice by any meanes, that there were any, and before that we imbarked, besides those which the Indians had slaine, there were more then forty other men dead through ficknesse and famine.

colic of the Speniards in this Voyage.

The two and twentieth day of September, they ceased to eate horses, so that only one remayned, and on that day wee imbarked in this order. In the Governours Boate went nine and fortie men, and in the other which hee gaue to the Auditour and Commissary, went as many more. The third, he gaue to Captaine Alonzo del Castiglio, and Andrea Durante, with eight and forty men, and another he gaue vnto two other Captaines, the one called Telles, and the other Pigualofa, with feuen and forty men, and the fift he gaue to the Controller and mee, with nine and forcy men. And after the victuals and furniture, and other things were shipped, they arose no more then a fourth part about the water, and beside this we were so streighted, that we could not guide nor turne in the Boats. Necessitie was so powerfull, that it made vs adventure to goe in this manner, and commit our felues vnto fo dangerous a Sea, without having any one amone vs. who knew the art of Nauigation.

Spiaggia de

That flat shoare from whence we departed, is called the shoare of the Horses, and we went seuen dayes through those gulies with the water vp to the girdle, without feeing any figne of the Coait; and at the end of those seuen dayes, we arrived at an Iland which standeth neere vnto the Land. My Boat went before, and we saw fine Canowes of Indians comming, who forlooke 60 them all, and left them in our hands feeing vs come towards them. Our other Boates went before, and lighted upon certane houses in the same Iland, where they found many of their Egges and Thorn-back were dry, and greatly releeved vs in the necessitie wherein we were.

After this, we went further, and two leagues from thence we palled a Strait which that Iland

maketh with the Land, and called it the Strait of Saint Michael, because we passed it woon that The Strait of maketh whether care, out of that Strait, we arrived at the Coast, wherewith the fine Ca- Saint Michael nowes which I had taken from the Indians, we removed fome things out of our Boars, making

them fast and joyning them to ours, so that they arose two handfuls about water, and therewithall we turned to goe along the Coat by the way of the River of Palmes, thirst and famine al- R. of Palmes. wayes increasing : because the victuals were very scant, and almost at an end, and we wanted water, because the bottles which we had made of the skinnes of horses, became suddenly purified and mustic, and were good for nothing, and many times wee entred into certaine gulfes and flat

shoares, which went farre within the Land, and found them all shallow and dangerous. And so 10 we went thirty dayes, and fometimes found some Indian fishers , a poore and milerable people : and at the end of thele therry dayes, when our necessitie for want of water, was extreame, 20ing to the Coast, one night we perceived a Canow comming, and feeing her wee expected that the would have arrived; but although we called voto her the would not come nor behold vs, and becaufe it was night we followed her not, but held on our courle. When day began to appeared we faw a fmall lland, and went thither to fee if wee would find any water there, but wee labous red in vaine because there was none. While wee staved there, a mightie tempest atose voon vs. whereupon we abode there fixe dayes, not daring to put out to Sea againe, and hauing paffed fue dayes without drinking, our thirst was so great, that we were forced to drinke the Sca-water, and some dranke so largely that fine of our men dyed suddenly. We went out the same way,

20 which we had seene the Canow goe, the night before we departed thence. This day we saw our Miserable felues many times drowned, and io cast away, that there was none of vs, who did not assure him. felfe of death. But it pleased our Lord God, who in the greatest necessities wieth to shew his fanour, that about Sunne fer we weathered a point which the Land maketh, where wee found it very calme and quiet. Heere many Canowes came towards vs, and the Indians that were in them, spake vnto vs, and without wondring at vs returned. They were a people of a great bodie and well fet, and carried neither Bowes nor Arrowes, Some of vs followed them vnto their houses, which stood neere vnto the water side, and leaped aland, and before the entrance of the houses, we found many pots of water, and great quantitle of fish, and the Lord of that Countrey offered it all wno the Gouernour, and taking him by the hand, brought him to his houfe (their houses are of Mats very well made.) And after we entred into the house of their Cazaque or

Lord, he gaue vs much fish, and we gaue them bread of Corne which we brought, and they ear it in our presence, and demanded more, which we gate them, and the Gouernour gave the Casiane many small trifles, and abiding with him in his house, about halfe an houre within night, the Indians affaulted vs, and the rest of our men, who road very ill, beeing cast vpon that Coast, they affaulted alfo the honie of the Casique where the Governour was, and with a ftone imote him on the face : and tooke the Cazique. But he having his men to neere escaped away, and left a Mantle of his of the skinnes of the Martinet Sables, which in my judgement are the best of all Rich Furres & the World, and have a fcent whereunto the fcent of-Ambergrife, and Muske is not compara- fweete Mariole ble : and the scene thereof was smelt very farre off. We saw also other but none like vnto that. Zibelline.

Now feeing the Gouernour wounded, we fet him aboord, and caused him to bring with him the greater part of the men vnto the Boats : and fifty of our men only remayned on land, to fight with the ladians, who that night affaulted vs three times, and with fo great violence, that every time they made ve retyrea ftones caft, fo that there was not one of our men, that was not

After this we returned to imbarke our felues, and fayled three dayes: and having taken a little water, as much as the few vefiels we had, were able to carrie, wee returned to fall into the same necessitie wherein we were first. And going on our Voyage, we entred into a Strait, where abiding we law a Canow of the Indians comming, and as we called vnto them, they came, and the Governour to whose Boat they were necrest, demanded water of them, who offered it him 50 if he would give them veffels wherein to carrie it: fo a Greeke Christian, called Theodoro, of whom

mention is made before, faid that he would goe with them. And although the Gouernour, and many other laboured to diffwade him, yet he would needs goe thither, and carried a Negro with him, and the Indians left for hoftages two of their men.

Those Indians returned in the Euening, and brought vs our vessels without water, but brought not our two Christians againe: and those two men of theirs, who remayned for pledges, as soone as they spake voto them, would have call themselves into the water, but our men who had them in the Boat held them, and so the other Indians fled and left vs much confounded and forrowful, for the two (bristians which we had loft.

The morning following, many other Canoas of the Indians came vnto vs, demanding their two 60 companions which they left vs for hostages. The Governour answered, that he would give them vnto them, fo that they would restore vs our two Christians. Five, or fixe Lords came with those people, and it feemed to vs, that they were of a very good disposition, and of greater authority, and retinue, then all the reft wee had found hitherto, although they were not of fo tall a fta- Desciption of ture as the other before mentioned. They wore their haire loofe, and very long, and were co- their indiana.

1300

Current.

uered with mantles of Martinets, of the same fort whereof we spake before, and some of them were made of a very itrange fashion, having certaine laces of the worke of Lions skinings, which feemed very faire. They prayed vs, that we would goe with them, and they would give vs one two Christians, and water, and many other things: and many Canoas came continually voon vs, endeauouring to take the mouth of that passage, and so therefore, because the place was very dangerous, we went out to Sea, where we stayed with them vntill noone, But, not being wile ling to reftore our Christians, and therefore we also would not restore their two hostages, they began to cast stones at vs with slings: making shew also that they would shoot at vs, although we law not about three or foure Bowes among them. And while wee continued thus: a fresh gale of winde beganne to blowe, and they went their way. So, we fayled all that day vntill the Io euening, at what time my Boat that went before, discouered a point which the Land made, and at the other end I faw a River : then I anchored at a fmall Iland, which maketh that point to flay for the other Boats. The Gouernour would not come neere it, but put into a flat shoare vesy neere thereunto, where many small Ilands were, and there wee all met together, and tooke fresh water within the Sea, because the River ranne into the Sea continually, and with great violence. And that wee might bee able to bake a little Maiz which wee brought, because for two dayes before, we had eaten it raw, we went aland on that Iland, but finding no wood there, we agreed to goe vnto the River, which was behind the Point one league from thence. And as wee went, the current of the River was fo great, that by no meanes it suffered vs to arrive, but droue vs backe from the Land.

ð. I I.

Mifery pur fues them at Sea, and betrayes them to the Indians: thetr miserable lines and death.

Reke fayled foure dayes, every one eating halfe a handfull of raw Maiz a day by ratement. At the end of these foure dayes, a tempest tooke vs, which made vs recouer the Boat of Captaine Telles, and through the great mercy which God shewed to some of vs, 30 we were not wholly drowned. And being Winter, and exceeding cold, and so many

dayes wherein we had fustained hunger, with many blowes which wee received from the Sea. the day following the men began very much to faint, in such manner, that when the Sunne went downe, all those that were in my Boar, were fallen one vpon the other, so neere vnto death, that few of them had any fense, and among all them there were not five that could fland on their feete, and when night came there remained no more but the Master and my telfe that could mannage the Boat, and two houres within night the Master said vnto mee, that I should take charge of my Boat, because he was in such case, that he held it for certainty, that hee should die that night. And fo I tooke the rudder, and midnight being past, I went to see if the Master were dead, who faid vnto me, that suddenly he was better, and that hee would guide the Boat vntill 40 day. Then furely I found my felfe in such state, that much more willingly I would have receiued death, then fee fo many men before me in that manner wherein they were : and after the Master tooke charge of the Boat I rested my selfe a little, but very vnquietly, because at that time nothing was further from me then sleepe. And about the morning me thought that I heard the noise and roaring of the Sea, because being a very lowe Coast it raged much, whereupon when I heard this, I called to the Master, who answered me, that he supposed we were now neere vnto the Land; and founding, we found our felues in feuen fathome, and he thought it fit, that we should abide at Sea vntill the day appeared. And so I tooke an Oare and rowed to the Lands fide, which we found one league diffant, and put the stearne to the Sea. And being neere to the Land, a wane tooke vs, which can the Boat backe againe into the Sea as farre as a man might 50 well fling a stone, and with the great blowe which it gaue, almost all the men who remained there as dead, received their fenfes againe, and feeing vs fo neere vnto the Land, beganne to arife and goe on their hands and feete. And having landed, wee made fire in certaine trenches, and boyled some of the Maiz which wee had brought, and found raine-water: and with the heate of the fire, the men beganne to recouer and take ftrength; and the day that we arrived there, was

After the men had eaten, I commanded Lopez de Ouiedo, who was the best able, and itrongest of all the reft, that he should goe close to any tree of them that were there at hand, and climing vp into one of them, he should discouer the Land where we were, and see if hee could have any knowledge thereof. He did fo, and faw that we were in an lland, and found certaine poore Cot. 60 tages of the Indians, which flood felitary, because those Indians were gone vnto the field. And so he tooke a pot, a young whelpe, and a little Thorn-backe, and returned vnto vs. About halfe an houre after, an hundred Indian Archers came fuddenly vpon vs. who though they were great, yet feare made them feeme to be Giants: and they flood round about vs , where the first chree

were. It had beene a vaine thing amongst visto thinke that there were any to defend vs, because there were learce fixe that were able to nie from the ground. The Controller and I came towards them, and called voto them, and they came neere voto vs, and wee endeauoured the best we could, to secure them; to we gaue them Crownes and Bells, and every one of them gave mee an Arrow, which is a token of friendship, and they told vs by signes that they would returne water vs in the morning, and bring vs somewhat to eate, because at that time they had nothing.

The next morning at the breake of day, which was the houre whereof the Indians had (poken, they came vinto vs, and brought vs much fish, and certaine Roots which they eate, and are like vato Nuts, fome bigger, and some lesse, which they digge valer the water with much trou-10 ble. At the evening they returned againe, and brought vs more fish, and some of the same Roots, and brought also their wives and little children with them that they might see vs : and so they returned rich in Crownesand Bells which we gaue them, and the next day they returned to vi-

fite vs with the same things, which they had done before. Then feeing we were now prouded of fish, of those roots, and water, and other things which we could get, we agreed to embarke our selues, and proceed on our Voyage: so wee digged the Boat out of the fand, where it was fast moored, and were constrained to strippe our selues naked, and indured great labour to launch her into the water. Being embarked, about two Crof-bow thors within the Sea, there came fuch a wave of water that it washed vs all, and being naked, and the cold extreme, wee let goe the Oares, and another blowe which the Sea gaue vs , ouer-

20 turned the Boat, whereupon the Controller and two other went out to escape by swimming: but the cleane contrary befell them, because the Boat strucke them under water, and drowned Three drowthem. That Coast being very faire, the Sea cast vs all aland on the same Coast, all tumbled in nedthe water, and halfe drowned, so that we lost not a man, but those three, whem the Boat Snote which water. Wee which remained aliue were all naked, having loft all that which wee had. which although it were but a little, yet was it much for vs at that time : and being then Nouember, and the cold very extreme, and being in such case, that a man might easily tell all our bones, we feemed to be the proper and true figure of Death. As for my felfe, I am well able to fay, that from the moneth of May pait, I had not eaten any other thing then parched Maiz, and fometimes I was in fo great necessitie, that I have eaten it raw, because although the Horses were 30 killed while they made the Boats, yet I could neuer eate them, and I did not eate fish ten times. I forake this, that every one might confider, how we could continue in that case, and about all, the North wind blew that day, to that we were neerer with death, then life. It pleafed God, that

feeking the brands of the fire which we had made before wee embarked, wee found light there, and so making great fires, we stood crauing mercy from our Lord God, and pardon of our sinnes. with many ceares, enery one of vs griening not onely for himfelfe, but for all the reft, that hee faw in the fame state. At the fetting of the Sunne, the Indian supposing that we had not beene gone, came to finde vs, and brought vs somewhat to eate, but when they saw vs thus, in so differing an habite from the first, and in such strange manner, they were so afraid, that they turned backe againe: but I went towards them, and called them, who beheld mee with much feare. 40 Hereupon I gaue them to understand by fignes, that the Boat was cast away, and three men drowned, and there they themselves saw two dead, and the rest of vs that were now remayning

were going the high way to death. The Indians feeing the misfortune which had befallen vs, and the lamentable case wherein we Humanitie of

were, with fo great calamitie and miferie, came among ft vs, and through great griefe and com- Sausges. paffion which they had of vs, beganne mightily to weepe and lament, and that from the heart, infomuch that they might be heard farre from thence, and they thus lamented more then halfe an houre. And furely, seeing these men so depriued of reason, and so cruell after the manner of brute beafts, so bewayled our miseries, it canted that in me, and all the rest of our men, the compattion and confideration of our miferies should be much more increased. The mournfull lamen-Tation being Iomewhat appealed, I demanded of the Christians, whether they thought it fit, that I should intreate those Indians to bring vs to their houses, whereunto some of them that were of Nona Spagna, answered me, that I should not speake a word thereof, because if they brought vs home to their houses, they would have facrificed vs to their Idols. Now feeing there was no

other remedie, and that, what other way focuer, death was more certaine and more neere, I cared not for that which they faid, but prayed the Indians, that they would bring vs to their houfes, and they thewed vs, that it pleafed them very well, and that wee should tarrie a little, and they would doe as much as wee defired, prefently thirty of them laded themselves with wood, and went vnto their houses, which were farre from thence: and wee remained with the reft, vntill it was almost night, and then they tooke vs, and conducting vs, we went with much an-60 guish and heatinesse vinto their hou es. And because they feared lest through the extreme coldneffe of the way any of vs should die, or swound and faint, they had prounded, that by the way foure or five great fires should bee made, fome small space distant each from other, and at every one of them they warmed vs, and when they faw that we had taken a little strength and heate,

they brought vs to another, with fo great care, that they did not fo much as fuffer vs to fet our

feete on the ground, and after this manner we were brought vnto their houses: where we found that they had prouided an house for vs, & many fires therein, and about one house after we were come thither, they beganne to dance and reioyce, which continued all the night. Although mongst vs there was neither ioy nor sleepe, expecting when they would have facrificed vs. In the morning they returned to give vs fith, and rootes, and vfed vs fo well, that wee fomewhat affured our (elues, and loft some part of the feare of facrificing.

In those dayes wherein wee abode there, I faw a small Net, with one of those Indians, and knew that it was not any of them which wee gaue them, and demanding whence they had it. they answered me by fignes, that other men, such as we were, gaue it them, who abode behind that place. I feeing this, fent two Christians, and two Indians, to shew them those men, and be- 10 ing gone, they met with them very neere, who came to feeke vs out, because the Indians of those places had told them of vs. These men were Captaine Andrea Dorante, and Alonso del Cafiolio. with all the men of their Boat. And being come vnto vs, they were afraid to behold vs in that manner wherein we were, and were very forrowfull that they had not any thing to give vs. bea cause they had no other garments, then those which they wore. And they abode there with vs. and told vs, how on the fift day of that fame moneth, their Boat had croffed ouer, one league and an halfe from thence, and that they had escaped without losing any thing.

Wee all agreed together, to trimme that Boat of theirs, and that all fuch as had ftrengh, and abilitie to doe it, should goe therein, and that the rest should remaine there vntill they recovered: and that when they were able, they should goe along the Coast, and waite there till God should an conduct them with the rest of vs vnto a Land of the Christians. And as we determined, so wee did, and before we lanched the Boat into the water, Tamera an Horseman of our companie died: and the Boat which we thought should carrievs, she also made her end, and was not able to vohold her felfe, but was fuddenly drowned. Whereupon being in that manner aforefaid, and naked, and the weather so vnseasonable to trauell, and passe ouer Rivers and Gulfes by swimming, and having no victuall, or any fustenance, nor meanes to carrie them, we determined to doe that which necessitie and force compelled vs vnto, that is to say, to winter there. And wee likewise agreed, that foure of our luftieft and flrongest men should goe to Pannee, supposing it neere voto that place. And that if it should please our Lord God, that they arrived there, they should give intelligence that we were there, and tell them of our necessitie and miseries. They who went 20 were very great swimmers, the one was called Alnaro Ferrante, a Portugall, who was a Carpenter, and a Mariner, the second was called Mendos, and the third Figeros a native of Toledo, and the fourth wasborne in Zaffra, and they carried an Indian with them of the Iland of Ania.

These foure Christians being departed, within few dayes after there came such unseasonable

weather of cold and tempelts, that the Indian could not finde the roots, and out of the channels where they were wont to fifth, they digged no fruit at all, and things falling out fo vnhap-pily, many people began to die: and five Christians who were in Xamo, ypon that Coast, came to fuch excremitie, that they eate one another, vntill there remained but one onely, because there was none to eate him. Their names are thefe Siera, Diego Lopez, Corral , Palatio, Gonzalo Ruis. eare one anne The Indians were fo altered through this accident, and tooke fo great an offence, that without 40 ther, for hundoubt, if they had knowne it in the beginning, they would have killed them all, so that all wee had beene in very great danger. Finally, in a small time, of fourescore men (which wee were in all) there remained onely fifteene. After this mortalitie, a certaine infirmitie of the stomacke happened to the Indians, through the which halfe of them died, and they beleeved that wee neffe and morwere the men that killed them: and holding it for an affured truth, they contended among themselves to kill all those few of vethat were remaining: and now comming to put it in execution, an Indian which I had, faid vnto them, that they should not believe that we were those that killed them; for if we had such power, we would have procured, that so many men of our owne should not have died, which they had seene dead, without any abilitie of oursto remedie and helpe them, and that now wee were very few remaining, whereof none had done 50 them any prejudice or harme : wherefore it were better that they fuffer vs to line. Thus it pleafed our Lord God, that the rest followed his counsell and judgement, and so ceased from that pur-Hand Malhado.

pose. Wee called this Iland the Iland of Malhade. The people which wee found there, are of a great stature, and well set, and have no other weapons but Bowes and Arrowes, with the which they are exceeding readie and quicke. The Pierced paps, men have one of their paps pierced from the one fide to the other, and there are some who have them both pierced, and in the hole which they make, they carrie a Cane acrosse, of the length of two spannes and an halfe and two fingers thicke. They likewise have the nether lippe bored, and within the same they carrie a piece of a thin Cane, about halfe a finger thicke. The women indure much drudgerie and labour. The habitation which they make in that Iland, is from Octo- 60 ber vntill the end of Februarie, and their food is the rootes aforefaid, digged under water in Nouember and December. They have Weares, but have no fish but at this time, and before that they eate roots. At the end of Februarie they goe into other Parts to feeke food : because the roots beginne then to growe, and are not very good. This Nation , about all other parts of the

world, lose their children, and viethem beit. And when it happeneth that any one of their worth, some dath of the father, mother, and kindred, with all the people lament him, and the mour- Mouraing for children dieth, the father, mother, and kindred, with all the people lament him, and the mourning and lamentation, continueth one whole yeere, so that every day before the Sunne attieth, children, the parents beginne first to lament, and after them all the people, and they doe the same at noon, and in the morning : and the yeere being ended, they accomplish their Funerals, and honoutable rites of Buriall, which they performe vnto the dead; and then they wash themselves. and thit all the apparell which they wore. They bewayle all their dead in this manner, except the aged, whom they alterne not, for, fay they, that they have now paffed their time; and are Age dieffecno more good tor any thing, but occupie the earth, and take away the maintenance from Infants medwhom they burne, and while the fire flameth they stand all dancing with great joy, and make burned.

to and little children. They vie to bury the dead, vileffe they be fuch as are Phylicians among them. Phylicians powder of the bones : and when the yeere is past, wherein they performe the honourable rites, vnto their dead, they all tumble, and wallow vpon the earth, and give that powder of the bones to the kinsfolke, to drinke in water. Euery one haue their proper and peculiar wives. The Phyficians are they that have most libertie, who may keepe two or three wives, and among them there is great friendship and conformitie. When any marrieth his daughter, hee that taketh her, bringeth vnto the wite, whatfocuer he taketh by hunting or fishing, even vnto the day wherein he is esponfed unto her, who carrieth it unto the houle of the father, without daring to take or eate any thing thereof: and afterward they bring food to the house of the father-in-law for 30 him to cate, and in all this time, neither father-in-law nor mother-in-law enter into their house, nor are they to enter into their house, nor the houses of their kindred. And if by chance they meete each other in the way, they goe a Crol-bow shot off one from the other, and so long time as they thus goe farre off, they hang downe their heads, and cast their eies on the ground; for

they hold it a wicked and an euill thing to be feene, and to be spoken vnto. The women haue libertie to conuerse with the fathers-in-law, and other kinsfolke ; and they of that Hand have Filinicand this custome more then fiftie leagues within the Land. They have another custome, and that is this, that when any of their brethren or children die,

for three moneths they prouide nothing to eate for them of the house where they died, but let them die through hunger, if the kinsfolke and neighbours prouide them not fomewhat to eate. 20 Whereupon, at the time that we were there, many people dying, there was very great famine. In the most part of the houses, because they strictly observe their eustomes and ceremonies : and they who prouded food for them, it being a very hard time, could finde but a little. And voon this occation, those Indians that had mee went out of the Hand, and in their Canoas passed ouer vnto the firme Land, vnto certaine flat shoares, where they had many Oysters : and for three moneths in the years they eate no other thing, and drinke very bad water. They have great fearcicle of wood, and great multitudes of Flies: their houses are made of mats spread wpon the fh lls or Oyiters, and ouer them they sleepe voon the hides of beafts, which yet they have not but by a chance. And so we continued vntill the middle of Aprill, that wee went to the Sea-

coalt, where wee cate Mulberries all that moneth, wherein they end their sports, and felti-40 uall iollitie.

In that Iland whereof I have spoken, they would make vs Physicians, without examining They are made vs, or demanding the titles of our profession, and because they heale the infirmitie with blowing Physicians. wpon the difeated , and cure them with that , and with their hands : they would that wee also should doe the like, and serue them in any thing whatsoeuer. But wee laughed thereat, saying it was a left and mockery, and that weeknew not how to heale, whereupon they tooke away our food, vntill we did that which they faid. And feeing our vnbeliefe, an Indian faid vnto me, that I knew not what I faid, because stones and herbes that growe in the fields have vertue, and that he with an hot itone, laying it voon the stomacke, cured the paine; and that wee who are men, mult of a certaintie have greater vertue, then all other things of the world. In the end, feeing Learned argus 50 our selues in so great necessitie we were constrained to doe it, yet not hoping to helpe any at all : ment,

the manner and meanes which they observe in curing is this, that seeing themselves sicke they fend for the Physitian, to whom (after they are cured) they give all that they have; and besides procure other things from their kindred to give them. The cure which the Phylitians doe vnto them, is to cut certaine gashes where the disease or griefe is, and sucke it round about. They seare Manner of it also with fire, which among them is held a verie profitable thing, and I have proved it and it curing. fucceeded weil. After this, blowing in the place where the griefe is, they suppose the disease thereby to be removed. The meanes whereby we cured them, was to bleffe them and blow vpon them, and fay a Pater noster and an Ano May, and pray the best we could voto our Lord God, that he would give them their health, and put it into their hearts to vie vs well. It pleased his

60 mercy that all they for whom he praied, as soone as wee had bleffed and hallowed them, taid vnto the rest that they were found and well : and for this they vied vs verie curteously and left eating themielues to give it vnto vs , and gave vs skins and other trifling things. The famine was to exceeding great in that place, that many times I continued three dayes withou. eating any thing at all , and to did they alto , infomuch as I thought it impefible to bee

gallantry. The Indians

Indian fick.

poore life.

able to line : although afterward. I found my felfe in fatre greater famine and necessitie, as I shall bereafter fpeake.

The Indiane who had Alonfo del Caftiolio, and Andrea Dorante and the reft that remayned line : being of another Language, and other parentage, passed ouer to another part of the firme Land, to eate Oviters where they abode vntill the first day of Aprill, and presently after they returned voto an Iland neere voto it about two leagues, for that it yeelded more water, and the Hand is halfea league ouer and five in length. All the people of that Countrey goe naked, and the women only have some parts of their bodie couered with a certaine kind of Cotton which they gather from certains trees, and the Damfels couer themselues with the skinnes of wild beaffe. The people differ much one from another in their Garments. There is not any Lord or Catione to among them, and all they who are of one Family and Hocke goe together. Two forts of Language ges dwell there, one of them that are called Capaques , and the other Han : they have a custome. that if at any time they fee fuch as they know, they fland halfe an houre lamenting, before they freake ; and after that, he that is vifited arifeth first and giveth voto the other whatforver hee possesseth, and he receiveth it : and a little after he goeth away with that Garment, and sometimes after they have received it, they depart without speaking a word.

Lamentable falurations.

> After Dorante and Castiglio returned to the Hand, they gathered together all the Christians. who were fomewhat difperfed, and found them fourteene in all I (as I faid) abode on the other fide in the mayne Land, whither my Indians had brought me, and where a great fich nelle tooke me. Now when the Christians knew that, they gave the Mantle of Martinets (which weehad 20 taken from the Cazique as aforefaid) vnto an Indian that he might bring them where I was, to fee me; and fo twelve of them came, because the other two were so weake, that they feared to bring them with them. And when they were come to the firme Land, they found another of our men, called France sco del Leon, All these thirteene went along the Coast, and as soone as the Indians who kept me were gone, they aduifed mee, and told mee that I eronimo a Alaniz, and Lope & Oniedo, were yet remayning in that Iland. My infirmitie hindered mee that I could not tollow them, and to I faw them not otherwise, and I was of necessitie to flaw with those same Indians of the Hand more then a yeere. But by reafon of the great travell and paines whereunto they put me, as also their euill ysage of me, I determined to flye from thence, and passe ouer vnto them, who abide in the Mountaines and firme Land, whom they call the Indians of Corn. 30 60, because I could not indure the life, which I led with the other. For among many other painfull labours, I was compelled to digge Roots under the water, and among the Canes where they grew under the ground. And herewith I had my fingers to spoyled, that a straw that should have touched me, would baue drawne bloud; and the Cares being full of folinters tare mee in divers parts, among which I was to goe with the Garment aforefaid, which I wore. Whereupon I endequared to goe from thence vnto those other, and with them I continued somewhat better. And because I made my selfe a Merchant, I was carefull to performe that office with the best knowledge I had. And for this cause they gave mee food, and vied mee well, and prayed mee to goe from place to place for fuch things as they needed, because in respect of the Warres which they continually make among them felues, there is neither trauelling, nor much trading among 40 them : fo that now with my trafficke and Merchandile, I went throughout the whole Countrie as farre as I would, and travelled along the Coaft, fortie or office leagues. The principall trafficke I had, were pieces of shels of the Sea, and their hides, and shels wherewith they knit a certaine fruit like vnto Beech maft, with the which they prouide for their dancings and festivall sports: and this is the greatest thing of price among them, and crownes of the Sea, and such other like things. And this is that which I carried within Land, I afterward carried hides in exc. ange, and red Ocre with the which they anoint and die their faces, and their haire: I also carried flint flores to make Arrow heads and Glue, and stiffe Canes to make Arrowes : and certaine flockes which they make of Decres haire to died, that it remayneth coloured. And this office greatly analed me, because I had libertie to goe whither I would, and was not bound to doe any thing, for I was 10 not a flaue, and whitherfoeuer I went they vied mee well, and gaue mee fomewhat to eate in respect of my Marchandiza, but that which most imported mee, was, that going thus I scarched, and faw how I might goe further; and among them I was very well knowne. And fuch as knew mee not delired my company, and procured meanes to know mee for the fame which I had among them. I continued about fix yeeres with them in that Countrie alone, and naked as they all goe.

Queuenes and

I got Lope de Onieda to travell with me to feeke out the Christians : but hearing by the Indians that only three were left of our company, he left me : and I remained alone with those Indians, who were called Quenenes, and they with whom Lope went, were called Dragnanes. Two daies after Lope de Ouiedo was gone, the Indians who kept Alonfo del Caffiglio, and Andrea Dorante 60 came vnto the place, as those other Indians had foretold vs to cate of certaine Nuts, wherewith they maintaine themselves, grinding certaine graines with them two monethes in the yeere, without eating any other thing; although they have them not every yeere, because some yeeres they grow, and some not. They are of the bignesse of those of Galiera, and the trees are very

great, and are there in great number. Being now neere vnto the place where they lodged, Andrea Dorante came forth to fee who it was, because the Indians had now told him that a (briftian was come. And as foone as he faw me, he remained much aftonished, because they supposed I had beene long tince dead, for lo the Indiani told them. Wee gave God heartie thankes to fee one another, and that day was one of them, wherein wee had the greatest joy and pleasure

And after comming where Castiglio was, they asked mee whether I would goe, I answered, that my purpole was to palle into the Land of the Christians, and that I went feeking and fearching how I might doe it. Andrea Dorante answered, that long fince hee intreated Castiglio and to Effeusmico, that we might go further, but they durft not venter to do it, because they could not wimme, and greatly feared the Rivers and Gulfes which they were to passe over, there being many in those Countries. Wherefore feeing it had pleased our Lord God to preserve mee among to many dangers and difeates, and in the end to bring mee into their company, they determined to flie, and that I should carrie them ouer the Rivers and Gulfes which wee found, And they aduettized mee, that by no meanes, I should let the Indians know that I would goe further, because they would presently kill me, and that for this cause I was of necessitie to stay with them fixe monethes, which was the time in the which those Indians went into another Countrie to cate Tune.

Thefe Time are certaine Fruits of the bignefie of an Egge, red and blacke, and of a very good Time, fruits of 20 tafte. They eate them three monethes in the yeere, wherein they eate no other thing, and be- India. cause at the time when they gathered them, other Indians beyond would come with Bowes to contract and barter with them, we (when they returned) might escape from our Indians, and goe with them. With this determination I remained there, and yeelded my felfe a flaue vnto

an Indian, with whom Derante abode. These Indians are called Mariane, and Caffiglio remained with other of their Neighbours, called Isuales. And whole we continued there, they reported vnto mee, that after they were come Isuales.

out of the Hand of Malbado voon the Sea Coast, they found the Boat wherein the Auditor and the Friers croffed ouer, and that pairing thote Rivers which are foure, and very great : the many currents tooke the Boat wherewith they went to Sea, and foure of them were drowned, the rest 30 with much labour passed the Gulfe : and that fifteene leagues surther they found another, and as fooneas they met together there, two of their companions died in the time that they had trauelled fixtie leagues, and that all the rest were yet at the point of death, and that all that journie they had eaten nothing but Creui'es and Herbs of the wall, and comming to this last Gulfe, they faid, that they found Indians who flood eating of Mulberies, who when they faw the Chris fines they went vnto the other end, and so they standing still and deutifing meanes to passe the Gulfe, an Indian and a Christian came vnto them, and being come, they knew it was Figheroa, one of the foure we had fent before from the Hand of Mathado, who recounted vnto them in what manner he and his companions came to that place where two of them and one Indian died all through cold and famine, because they were come thither in the hardest time of the yeere: 40 and that the Indians had taken Figheros himfelfe and Mondes , which Mondes fled afterwards, travelling the best hee could towards Pannes; and that the Indians followed after him and flue him. And that abiding thus with those Indians, hee underflood that with the Marianes there

was a Christian, who had passed to the other side, and he found him with them whom they call Queuenes. Which Christian was Gernaudo d' Esquinel, a Native of Badaiez, who came in the company of the Commiffary, and that from Efguines, he widerflood what end the Gouernous had, together with the Auditor and the reft : telling them how the Auditor and the Friers had lanched their Boat into the Rivers, and comming along the Coalt, the Governour landed his people, and went with his Boat untill they came unto that great Gulfe, where he turned to take in his men, and paffe ouer to the other fide, and returned for the Auditor and the Friers, and all the orft. And he declared, that being thus imbarked, the Gouernour revoked the authoritie of his Lieutenant, which the Auditor had, and gaue that charge vnto a Captaine that went with him, called Pantoffa, And that the Gouernor stayed that night in his Boat, & would not come on Land, and the Matter abode with him, and one Page who was not well, and they had neither water nor any thing to eate in the Boat : fo about midnight fo hard a gale of winde from the North tooke them, that it droue the Boat into the Sea before any one faw it, for he had nothing to releeue him but one fint stone, and they knew not that he had any other thing besides. And when the men who remained on the land faw this, they went along the Coast, and finding the water so rough, they made floats with much trouble and paines, and to paffed ouer vnto the other fide. And going further they came to the point of an Hill at the water fide, and found Indians there, who

60 when they faw them comming put their things into their Canowes, and passed over to the other fide of the Coast. So the Christians feeing what the time was being in November, abode in that Mountaine becaute they found water, wood, and certaine Creuifes there, where through cold and famine, by little and little, they beganne to die. And beside this, Pantoffa who remained Lieutenant, vied them very ill, and not being able to indure it, the Sergeant Maior Brother of

The Somiards

A crue'l cu-

flome of he

Indians, who

while they

vie to kill their

fleep, and cast

children (as

foone as they

the dogges to

eate them, be-

cau'e they

would not

marrie them

to their ene-

mics not ro

zhe:rkindred.

P enutious

therbeaftly

mine which

Valanez Porealle, who came in the fleete from Cuba, Mafter of the Campe, revolted from Pantell 4, and fmote him with a piece of wood, with the which blow hee died, and fuch as died became the mortels of the other, and the last that died, was the Sergeant Major, and Efaune did the like, and eating him, maintained himfelfe vntill the first of March, that an Indian one of them who fled from thence came to fee if they were all dead, and after brought Efquinel away from thence with him, who being in Subjection to this Indian Figheroa spake with him, and understood all this of him which wee have before declared, and prayed him to come with him. that they might goe together towards Panico : but Efquinel would not doe it, faying, that her underflood by Friers that Pamico was behind them, and to he remained there, and Figheros went to the Coast where he vied to abide.

All this Figheron reported vnto vs, by the relation which Efquinel made vnto him, and fo from hand to hand it came vnto me. Whereby hee might fee and know the end which all that fleete had, and the particular mitchances which happened to euerie one of the reft. And hee further faid, that if the Christians at any time should goe through those parts, it might bee, that they thould fee Elquinel, b. caute hee knew that hee was fled from that Indian with whom hee abode, vnto the other which are called Marianes, who were their Neighbours. And to having ended his Dilcourfe, he and Afteriano, were about to goe vnto the other Indians that were further beyond, but those Indians who kept them perceiving them, went forth and came to give them many Baltinadoes and spoiled Asturane, and wounded him on the arme with an Arrow, but yet in the end they fled, and the other Christians remained : and procured thole Indians to take them an for flaues, although abiding with them and feruing them, they were as early intreated as ever any flaues were or other men of the World. Because of fixe which they were, not being contented continually to buffet, and cudgell them, and placke off their beards with the skinge, only for their prittime and recreation and only for going from one house to another, they killed three, who are those of whom I spoke before, to wit, Diego Dorante, Valdenieso, and Diego de Heina: and the other three that remained, expected that they also should make the like end, and not being able to indure that life, Andrea Dorantes fled to the Marianes, who were they with whom Esquinel abode, and they themselves reported that they had kep: Esquinel there, who afterward would have fled, because a woman had dreamed that hee should kill a childe of hers; the Indians porfued him and flue him; and they afterward shewed Andrea Dorante his Sword, 30 Crowne, Booke, and other things which he had,

They have this custome also even to kill the same male children while they sleepe, and when the female children are borne, they leave them for the Dogs to eate, and cast them away in those places. And the reason why they doe it is this, because they say that all they of the Country male children are their enemies, and make very great warres with them. Wherefore if by chance they should marrie their Daughters, their enemies should be the more increated, who would subject them, and hold them all in captinitie. And for this cause, they would rather kill them, then have any borne of themselves to become their enemies. Wee demanded of them why they married them not among themiclues, who answered, that it was a beastly thing to marrie them voto their kinare botne) to dred, and that it was much better to kill them, then guie them for wives vnto their kinsfolke 40 and enemies. And they obserue this custome, and other of their Neighbours also called laguanes, and no other of that Countrie, but they observe the same. And when they take wives, they get the women of their enemies, and the price which they pay is the best Bow that they can get, with two Arrowes. And if peraduenture they have not a Bow, they give a Net of the widenelle of a mans arme, and as much more in length. Dorante abode with them, and not long after fled from them. Caftiglio and Effenamico came into the firme Land to the laquanes. All they are Archers, and well ter, although they be not fo great as the other which we left behind, and have all their paps and their lips pierced like them. Their food principally are roots of two or three forts, which they feeke throughout the whole Countrie, which are very hard and puffe up fuch as eat them. They flay two dayes to roaft them, and many of them are very bitter, and withall they 50 dig them with much paines, but the famine in those Countries is so great, that they cannot live The Indians in without them 1 and they goe two or three leagues to feeke them. They fometimes kill any wil e this Prounce beast whatsoever, and at certaine times take fish, but this is so little, and their hunger to great, Vipers, and o. that they eat Frogs, Ants Egs, Wormes, Lizards, Salamanders, Serpents and Vipers, which with their ftinging kill men : they also eat earth, wood, and what souer they can get the dung of wild things, by reabeaits, and other things which I leave to report, and I certainly believe, that if there were flones in that Country they would eat them. They keep the sharpe bones of fishes and Serpents, which continually is they eat to grind them all afterwards, and so eate that powder. The men load not themselves nor carrie bardens, but the old men and women do all this, who are least efteemed among them, they

beare no fuch loue to their children as the other doe, whereof I have spoken before. There are fome among them , who wie that finne which is against nature. Their women are very fufficient, and able to indure labour, for of the foure and twentie houres of the day and night, they have but fixe houres of rest, and all the greater part of the night they spend in heating their Ouens, to dry those Rootes which they eate. And when the day beginneth to appeare,

CHAP.I.S.2. Nimble Hunters. Troublesome flies. Intendment of flight crossed. #512

they beginne to draw water, and carrie wood unto their houses, and give order for other things which they want,

nion they want. The greater part of them are great Theenes, because although among them they are well di- Theenes. uided, yet if the Father or the Sonne turne but wheir heads about, the one taketh from the other whathouer he canget. They are great and monthrous Liers and great Drunkards, and for that purpole they drink: a certaine kind of drinke. They are fo well vied to runne, that without repurpose ties, or thanding still at all, they runne from Morning vntill the Euening following Indians which a Deere, and in this manner they kill many, following them untill they tire them, and some- runne a whole a Deere, and in the Their houles are of Mats fet vpon foure Arches, and they take them vp dayto take a times take them aline. Their houles are of Mats fet vpon foure Arches, and they take them vp dayto take a deep times take them aline. They four archive a like they aline to be the sale of the times take them affice. There daies to feeke food. They fow nothing at all to be able to ring him with haue fruit thereof, and are a very pleasant and cheerefull people, and not with standing the great running, est-

hunger they indure, they cease not to dance and sport themselves.

The best time which they haue is when they care Tune, because then they have no hunger, himaline in and pale all that time in dancing, and eate day and night all the time they have them. They the chair. wring them, open them, and fet them to dry, and beeing thus dried they hang them up in Gar-lines. lands like figges, and keepe them to eate by the way, when they returne thence: they also dry Dogs fife. their Pils and make powder of them. Many times while we were with them, it is tell out, that Tamestime, we continued four daies without eating any thing, because it was not there to be had; to make vs merrie they told vs, that wee should shortly haue Tune, and should eate many of them and 20 drinke their juice, and fill our bellies very well, and that wee should be verie cheereful and con-

tented, and without any hunger. And when they told vs this, it was full or fixe monethes to

the time of Tune.

And when the time came, wee came to eate Tune, and by the way wee found many flies of three lorts, very milchieuous and noisome, and all the rest of the Summer they put wato much Fliestroubletrouble. And to defend vs from them we made fires of rotten and moult wood, that it might not some, burne but make a smoake, but this defence put vs to another trouble, for all the night wee did nothing elfe but complaine of the smoake which came into our eyes, and also of the great heate Noiseme rewhich the much fire gaue vs , and wee went out to fleepe by the fide thereof, and if at any time medic. we could fleepe, they remembred vs with their baltinadoes to returne and make the fires barne. 30 They who dwell further within the Land, vie a remedie for these flies, as intollerable as this and

worfe, that is to fay, they goe with fire-brands in their hands burning the Fields and the Woods and the world and wherefoeuer they meete with them, to make the flies to flie away ; and fo also they vie to digue wnder the earth for Lizards, and other fuch like things to eate them, they vie aliotodall Deere; compating them with many fires. Which they also doe to take away food from the beatls, that they might be constrained to goe from thence to find it, where they would have them. For they neuer tettle themselues to dwell, but where wood and water are, and sometimes they load themfelues all with this prouision, and goe to feeke Deere, which (most commonly) abide where Deere mant there is neither water nor wood : and the day they came thither they killed Deere, and some o- dry placesto ther hunting game fuch as they could get, and confumed all the water and wood in preparing awaid Hung-40 them to be eaten, and in the fires which they made to hunt the flies, and tarried till the next day

to take some thing to carrie with them by the way. When they depart they goe so miserably vexed with flyes, that they seeme to have the disease of Lazarus, and in this manner they expell hunger two or three times in the yeere with fo great

paines as hath beene faid : and because I have proved it. I date affirme, that there is no travell in the World found like vnto this.

They found Oxen there and I faw them three times, and eate of them : and (as I thinke, they Oxen of that are of the bignesse of those of Spaine. They have little hornes bee the Moresche cattle, and very Countrie. long haire, and some of them are ash-colour, and others blacke, and in my judgement they have better haire and much thicker then those of our Countries. Of those which are not great, they 50 make Garments to couer them, and of the greater they make shooes and Targets and these came from the North further through the Land vnto the Coast of Florida, and extend themselves farre within the Land more then foure hundred leagues. And in all this way, through the Vallies by which they come, the people that dwell there, come downe and eat of them, and fend great ftore

of hides into the Countrie. When the fixe moneths were ended, wherein I abode with the Christians, hoping to put the determination made betweene vs in execution, the Indians went to eate Tune, which might bee fome thirtie leagues from thence, and being now readie to flie from them, the Indians with whom we abode, fell at variance among themselves about a woman, and bestetted and beate her, and broke her head : and for the great hatred and anger they conceived, they tooke their houses, and 60 every one went vnto their place. Whereupon it was necessarie, that all the Christians who were

there, should separate themselves with them, so that by no meanes wee could meet together againe untill the next weere : and in this time I passed much miserie, as well for the great famine I indured, as for the cuill viage, and had entertainment those Indians gave mee which was such, that I was faine to flie three times from those Masters that kept me, who all came diligently to Kkkkkk 2

feeke me that they might kill me, but it pleased our Lord God, not to suffer them to find mee. and to preferue me from their hands through his infinite mercie.

As soone as the time of Tane returned, wee Christians found our selves together agains in the fame place where we were before, and having now joyned together to flie from thence, and anpointed the day, that very felfe fame day the Indians separated vs, and every one went vnto their place, fo I faid vito the (bristians, that I would expect them at the Tune, vitill the Moone were full, and that day when I find this voto them, was the first of September, and the prime of the Aloone. And further I affored them, that if they came not within that time, I would go thence alone and leave them. And fo we separated our schoes, and every man went with their Indians. and I flaved with mine vntill the thirteenth of the Moone; and my determination was to flie to thence vnto the other Indians, when the Moone should be full. On the thirteenth of the faid moneth. Andrea Dorante and Estenamico came vnto me and told me, that they had left Castielio with other Indians, whom they call Canagadi, who dwelt neere thereabout, and that they had paffed many mileries, and had loft their way. And that the day before our Indians removued from their place, and were gone towards the place where Caffielio abode to joyne themselves with them who kept him, and make themselves friends having beene enemies and at warres, even vn. till that day: and in this manner allo we recourred Caffiglio. In all the time that wee eate the Tome wee were thirstie and for remedie wee dranke the juice thereof, which wee powred in a trench which we made in the Earth, and when it was full, we dranke thereof vntill we were a tisfied: it is sweet and pleasant, and of the colour of new wine boyled, and this they doe became there are no other veffels there wherein to put it. There are many forts of Tune, among which fome are verie good, although all feemed good vinto me, and hunger gaue mee no time to bee able

ches. For although they have Rivers there, neuertheleffe, because they never have any certaine and fetled place of abode, they have no particular water knowne to them, or appointed place where to take it. Throughout the whole Countrie there are many great and goodly fences, and of excellent patture for flockes and herds of cattle, and it would be a very fruitfull Countrie if it were manured, and inhabited by a people which had reason and knowledge. We saw no Mountaines in all that Countrie all the time we flayed there. Those Indians told vs , that furtherbeyond there were another people, called Cameni, who live toward the Coast, who had slaine all the men which came in the Boat of Piguelofa and Telliz, and that they were all so weakeand ficke, that although they killed them, they did not any way defend themfelues, and to they made an end of them all, and they shewed vs their Garments and Wespons, and that the Barke remayned there on the other fide. This is the fift Boat which made up the account, because wee What became have alreadie faid, that the Sea carried away the Boat of the Governour, and that of the Andtour and the Friers was seene cast athwart the Coast, and Efquinel declared the end of them. The two wherein Caftiglio, my felfe, and Dorante went, we have alreadic faid, that they were

The greatest part of all this Nation drinke raine water, gathered together in certaine Tren-

ò. III.

Their flight from the Indians to others, wonderfull cures, backe and belly cares: their trauells thorow the Country, and hungry adventures. Divers peoples and their customes.

drowned at the Hand of Mathado.

Fter we were removed from the place, about two daies journey from them, wee recommended our felues vnto our Lord God, and went flying thence, hoping that although 30 the time of the yeere were now late, and the Tune ended, yet with the fruits that re-

mained in the fields, wee should be able to trauell a great part of the Countrie. And io going that first day with much feare that the Indians would have tollowed vs, wee faw certains Imoakes, and going towards them after the evening we faw an Indian, who when hee faw vs fled without tarrying for vs. Whereupon we prefently fent the Negro vuto him, who when he faw him alone stated for him. The Negro faid voto him, that we came to feeke out those people that made those smoakes, so he answered, that their horses were neere that place, and that hee would guide vs thither, and to we followed him and hee went running to give notice of our comming-And about fun-fet we faw the houses, and about two crosse-bow shoots before weecame thither, we found foure Indians who stated for vs and courteously entertained vs. Wee told them in the language of the Mariames that we came to feeke them, who feemed to be glad of our company, and to they brought vs to their houses, and placed Dorante and the Negro in the house of a Phifittan, and me and Cafinglio, with certaine others. These people have another language, and are called Ausuares, and are they who yied to bring the Bowes vnto those our first matters, and to

contract with them: and although they be of another nation and language, yet they understand the language of them with whom we first abode; and they themselves also that selfe same day came into that place with their houses. The people presently offered vs much Tune, because they knew vs both that we had healed them. The verie fame night that we came thither certaine Indians came into Castiglio, and told him

that they had veriegreat paine in their heads, intreating him that he would heale them : and after he had bleffed them and recommended them vnto God, in the verie same instant they faid that they were well, and that the paine was gone. So they went into their houses and brought Curre very vs much Tune, and a piece of flesh of a wilde beast, which we knew not what it was. This being wonderfull. 10' published among them, many other diseased people came that night that he should heale them, yet true. and euerie one of them brought a piece of Venison, and they brought so many that we knew not Beato (which where to put them. We yeelded great thankes vnto God, who to continually euerie day increa- trauelled tourfed his mercie and his grace towards vs. Thus when the cures were ended, they began to dance the ludies with and fing their rimes, and make their sports vitill the next day at the rifing of the Sunne, and this the Spaniards feltiuall iollitie continued three daies by reason of our comming thither. Afterward wee asked from 1541.) them of the Countrie beyond, and of the people and victualls that are found there, and they an faith that of its fwered vs. that throughout all that Countrie there was much Twee, but that they were now ended and that we should find no people, because after they had gathered the Tune, eueric one company sears returned to their houses, and that it was a verie cold Countrie, and verie few skinnes were by tenreturned,

Seeing this, and confidering that the Winter, and cold time of the yeere was come we agreed to winter with them. And at the end of fine daies, after we came thither they departed thence, by breathing and went to leeke other Tune, where other people were of other Nations and divers languages: on hem curee and having "ravelled five daies tourney with much hunger, because neither Time, nor other fruits the fickerailed are foun! by the way , wee came to a River and fet up our houses there, and after went to seeke certaine fruits of a tree like vnto a fig tree, and there being no high way in all those places, I flaied longer then the rest in finding them, and so they returned to their houses, and I remained alone, and comming to seeke our men that night I had almost lost my selfe: and it pleased God that I pardon me, with

found a tree vnder the which there was a fire, and at that fire I pafed the cold of that night. In esfire beleeve ao the morning I loaded my felfe with wood, and taking two fire brands I returned to feeke them. and went in this manner five daies, alwaies with my fire and burden of wood, because if my fire should have beene extinguished in places where there had been no wood (as in many places there is none) I was to kindle other fire brands and not to remaine without fire, because I had no other remedie against the cold, being as naked as ever I was borne. And in the night I had this reme- Ben. 1. 2. 2. 13. die, that I went to any small plat of ground befer with trees neere vnto the River, and there a- I permit one hode before the Sun went downe and made a trench in the ground and put much wood therein, ons, more tor which they vie to doe of certaine trees, whereof in those places there is great anundance, and knowledge of put many shokes together of such as were falne and drie, and about that trench I made foure fiers the Countrey, a croffe, and thought to come from time to time to renew the fiers, and had made certaine bun-then for credit 40 dels of itraw, whereof in those places there is much, and therewith I couered me in that trench, and in this manner defended my selie from the cold of the nights: and on a certaine night and which you shall

the fire lite on the straw which covered mee while I was sleeping in the trench. So the fire befind in Ca/as of gan to burne verie fiercely, and although with much furiel leaped out, yet the token of the dan- another nager which I had passed remained in my haire. In all this time I eate not one morfell nor found ture. These any thing to eate, and going thus fcorched and finged much bloud iffued from my feet, and God vied great mercie towardes mee that in all this time the North winde blew not, for otherwise to connert the there had beene no remedie but I must needs haue died. At the end of my fine daies I came to a peorle to God, River fide where I found my Indians, who together with my Christians held me for dead, and al. and therefore River lide where I found my Indians, who together with my Corifficant new for dead, and are not like to wates thought that some viper had itting me. And when they found me they greatly rejoyced to have any difee me, but principally the Christians, who faid vnto me, that vntill that time they had travelled uine begin-50 with much hunger, and for that cause they came not to seeke mee, and that night they gave mee ning, but re

of the Tune which they had. The day following we departed thence, and went vnto the place either sally where much Time was, wherewith we all fatisfied the great hunger which we had, and we Chriflians gave many thankes vnto our Lord God, who left vs not without remedie.

The next day many Indians came to vs in the morning, and brought five ficke men with them, the Father of who were lame and verie ill, and they came to feeke Caffiglio that he might healethem, and eue- falhood. And ry one of them that were difeased gaue him their Bowes and Arrowes, which he received, and at why may they ry one of them that were difeated gaue him their Bowes and Arrowes, which is the letting of the Sun he bleffed them, and recommended them vnro God, and wee all belong he to the Deuill. him with the best denotion we could that he would give them health, seeing wee saw there was either a lies it 60 no other remedie but to doe the best we could that those people might helpe vs, that so we might never done or

willish Arts to maintaine rapine and superstition, which are here mentioned the eff. As thereof ? Acosa tells of a great miracle-Worker in the Ladies, a vicious man, and hanged for knaueries. This Comet-Head the Author is also by Schmidd before, recorded for a bad man in his acts stehe Ruce of Plate, I will conclude with S. Aug de vnit, Esc. e. 16. Removement ils, vet figments mendation; hominum vel pertenta fallacium fpiricuum &c. Kkkkkk :

dead men. &c. Bur. faith hec. that they billed

1516 Indians cured by Christians. Dead raifed. Diabolical Superstition, LIB, VIII

be able to get out of that miferable life ; and his infinite goodnesse dealt so mercifully with ve that when the morning came they all arole as found and strong, as if they had never had any difeafe. This caused them much to wonder, and likewise to render infinite thankes vnto cor Lord, and that we more entirely acknowledged his great goodnesse, and had assured hope that he would deliner vs. and conduct vs vnto the place where we might better ferue him. And for my felie. I can boldly speake, that I alwaies had an affured trust in his mercie, that hee would raise me from that captiuitie, and to I alwaies faid to my companions. When the Indians were gone. and carried away their ficke men healed, wee went thence, where the other abode eating Time. and these are called Cacalenches and Maticones, who are of another language, and together with them were other called Coaiss and Sufolas , and on the other fide others called Ataiss, and they to maintaine warres with the Sufolas, and they shot every day amongst them : and because in those places they talked of nothing elfe but of miracles which our Lord God wrought by our meaner they came from many parts to feeke vs that we might heale them, and at the end of two daies wherein we stated there, certaine Indians of Sufolas came vnto vs and intreated Castiglio that hee would goe to cure one that was wounded and other ficke men, faying, that among them there wisone who was readie to die. Castiglio was a verie fearefull Physitian, especially when the cures were grieuous and dangerous, and beleeued that his finnes would have caused that all the cures should not succeed well. The Indians faid vnto mee, that I should goe to heale them, hecause they wished mee well, and remembred that I had sometimes healed them where the nots grew, and that for the fame they had given me nuts and hides : and this was when I cameto 10 iowne my felfe with the Christians; wherefore I agreed to goe with them, and Dorante and Effe.

And when we were come neere vnto the Cottages which they have, I saw the sicke man whom we went to cure, who was now dead, and about him stood many people lamenting, and his house plucked downe, which among them is a signe that the master thereof is dead. So when I came I found his eyes distorted, and that he had no pulle, and had all the tokens of a dead man, and as it feemed to mee it was fo, and Dorante affirmed the same vnto me. I tooke vo the matt which he had vpon him to couer him, and the best I could I prayed vnto the Lord, that he would give mee grace to give health vnto that ficke men, and to all the rest that had need thereof. And after I had bleffed him and blowne vpon him many times, they brought me his Bow and gaze it youto me, and a cheft of Time; and brought me to cure many other who were ill at ease with gold. dinesse, and gave me two other chests of Tune, which I gave voto our Indians which came with vs, and having done this wee returned vnto our lodgings; and our Indians to whom I gauethe Tame remained there, and at night returned to their houses also, and faid, that hee who was then dead whom I had cured in their presence, arose vp and was well, and walked, and eate, and spoke with them; and so all the rest which I cured remained found without any seuer, and very cheerges opinion be full. This caused very great admiration and seare, and throughout that whole Countrey they speake of nothing elfe. All they to whom this report went came to seeke vs, that we might healt them and bleffe their children: and when the Indians who abode in the company of our men, who that they killed were the Catalenebi were to go thence, they gaue ve all the Tune that they had for their journey, so without leaving any for themselves, and gave vs fire-stones of an handfull and an halfe in length with the which they cut, and among them they are held in great estimation. They intreated vs that we would remember them, and pray vnto God that they might alwaies be in health, and we promifed them to doe it, and with this they went away the most contented men in the world, having given vs all the best of that which they had. So we staied with those Indians Anamares eight moneths, and this account we made by the Moone. In all this time many people came to feeke vs and faid certainly that wee were the children of the Sunne. Dorante and the Negro vntill then had not healed any, but through the great importunitie of fo many people which flocked treether from all parts we became all Phylitians, although for the affurance to undertake every cure I was most noted amongst them all, and we never undertooke to cure any who told vs 50 not that hee was found and well: And they had so great confidence in vs, that they thought they could not be healed but by our hands, and they beleeved that as long as wee flaied with them not one of them could die.

or formit of the Indians.

A dead man

not rather to

he embraced

the liuing; as

this author alfo

reports of his

in the end of

this booke.

Children of

the Sunne.

All become

Physicians.

Catalenches

Sufales and

Indians

MATICAREL.

Carios.

Diabolicall

They, and those who are further behind them, declared a very strange matter vnto vs, and by the fignes which they made it appeared that it fell out fifteene or fixteene yeeres fince; and this An euill thing it is, they fay, that a man went about that Countrey (which they call an Enill thing) which was of a little bodie and had a beard, although they could never cleerely fee his countenance. And when he came to any house all their haire, who were within stood vpright and they trembled, and prefently at the doore of the house appeared a flaming fire-brand, and then that man entred into the house and tooke from them what soeuer he would, and gaue them three great cuts vpon 60 the Hanke with a fire-frone very sharpe, as broad as a mans hand, and two handfulls long, and put his hand upon those gathes and drew out their bowells, and cut them about an handfull, and that piece which he cut he put upon the coales to broile : and prefently gaue them three other cuts in one arme, and then smote them where he had lanced them, and disloynted their arme and a

CHAP.I. S.3. Indians Slaves to Satan. Leather babit. Shawing of skins good food, 1517

little after returned to let it agains and put his hand upon their wounds, and they fay that they became foddenly whole. And that many times while they danced that Emili thing appeared among them, lometimes in the habite of a woman , and at another time like a man. And lometimes he tooke away an house or a cottage, and tooke it vp on high, and a little after fell downe againe together with it and gaue a great blow. Moreover they told vs that they give him meat, but he neuer eateth; and that they asked him whence he came, and in what part his house was slo he shewed them a cleft of the earth , and faid that his house was wnder that. At these things which they told vs we laughed exceedingly, and made a left thereof : who feeing wee beleeved it not they brought vs many of them whom that man had taken, and we faw the fignes of the cuts IO which he had given them in the places which they had told vs. Wherefore wee faid vnto them that he was a wicked man, and after the best manner we could we gave them to understand, that if they would beleeue in our Lord God, and become Christians as we were, they should not need to feare him, and that he durit not come to doe those things vato them : and that they should hold it for a certaintie, that while wee staied in that Countrie hee durit not appeare there, with this they remained verie well contented.

Thete Indians told ws that they had feene Anstariano and Figheron, with others who abode on the coall beyond, whom we called those of the Fig-trees. All this Nation knew not the times by the Sunne nor Moone, nor keepe any account of the moneths or the yeere : but know the difference of the times according as the fruits come to be ripe, and by the mouing of the fiftes and Their compa-20 appearing of the Stars, wherein they are verie wife and well experienced. With them we were taxion of times alwaies well intreated, although we were faine to dig that which we had to eate with our owne hands, and carrie our burdens of water and wood. Their houses and sustenance are such as the other have behinde them, although they have much greater hunger, because they have neither Maiz, mast, nor Nuts. We went alwayes in leather like them, and in the night wee courred our selves with Decreskins. Of eight moneths which we stated with them, in fix of them we indured much hunger, because the fish was not yet found. And at the end of that time the Tune be-

gan now to grow ripe, and before thole Indians perceived vs wee went further vnto the other, called Maticones.

They were one dayes journey from thence, whither I and the Negro came, and at the end of 30 three dayes I tent the Negro to bring Dorante and Castiglio, and when they came wee departed all together, with those Indians, who went to eate certaine small fruites of certaine trees, wherewith they maintaine themielues ten or twelue dayes, vatill the Time come. And there other Indians joyne with them, called Arbadaes, and among them we found many ficke, weake, and fwollen, info much as we greatly maruelled thereat. And the Indians with whom wee came, returned againe the same way, and we laid we would remaine with those other, for the which they fignified that they were greatly displeased, and so we abode in the field with them. neere wnto those hortes. And when they law vs, they withdrew themlelues, and after they had reasoned a little, every one of them tooke one of vs by the hand, and brought vs to their houses. With Hungers perthem we indured greater hunger then with the other, so that in the whole day we eate but two ambulation.

40 handfuls of those fruits which were greene, and had so much juice, that they burned our mouthes; and therebeing great fearcitie of water, they caused much thirst to them that eate them. And the famine being fo great, wee were faine to buy two Hogges of them, and in exchange thereof, wee gaue certaine Nettes, and other things, and one skinne wherewith I co-

I have already faid, that throughout all that Countrey we went maked, and not being accustomed vato it before, we changed our skins twice in the yeare, after the manner of Serpents. And Apparell, the Sunne and the weather cauted many great fores to arile vpon the brefts & shoulders of some ofvs, which put vs to great paine, in respect of the burdens which wee carried, that were very

heavie, and made the cords to flick in our armes. And the earth was fo rough and lagged, that ma-50 ny times when we gathered wood, when we had made an end of digging, the blound ran down from many parts of our bodies, by reason of the thornes and briers wherewith wee met, which tore vs whereforuer they touched vs. On a time I happened to feeke wood, and after it had drawne much bloud from me, I could not carrie it on my shoulder, nor traile it along the ground; when I found my felfe in this torment, I had no other remedy nor comfort, but to thinke on the paffion of our Lord Iefus Chrift, and of the bloud which he fhed for me, and confider how much greater the torment might be , which hee fuffered through the crowne of thornes, then that which I indured. I contracted with those Indians, making Combes, Bowes, Arrowes, and Nets for them. Wee also made Mats, which are things whereof they have very great neede, and although they know how to make them, they will make none for feeking foode to eate the meane while, for when they fet themselves to worke, they sustaine very great hunger. At other times they made me shaue skins, and make them thin, and the greatest prosperity that I had among them, was the day when they gaue mee any hide to shaue, because I shaued it much, and

eate those shauings, and that sufficed me for two or three dayes; yet it hapned, both with these

and the other whom we lett behinde, that when they gave vs a prece of flesh, wee eate it raw,

Famines Dif-

for if wee had boiled it . the first of them that came would have taken it, and eate it. wherefore wer thought it had not beene well done to put it to that danger; and befides. wee were none of them that would bethinke our sclues whether wee should rather eate it sed

This was the life we led with these Indians, and that little sustenance which we had we one it by small trifles which we made with our hands. After we had eaten these Dogs, supposing that we had fome little itrength to be able to goe further, we recommended our felues vnto our Lord God, that he would guide vs, and freed our felues from those Indians, who brought vs vnto other of their language, who dwelt neere thereunto; and fo as we went it rained all that day, and befide that, we loft the way, and were to flay at a very great Mountaine, where wee gathered to many leaves of Tune, and bakd them that night in an Ouen which we had made, and put fo much fire to them, that in the morning they were ready to be eaten, and after wee had eaten them, we recommended our felues vnto God, and went from thence, and found the way which we had loft. And having passed the Mountaine, we found other houses of the Indians, and being come thither, we faw two women and certaine little children that went on that Mountaine. who feeing vs were afraid, and fled to call their Indians, who went through the Mountaine, And being come, they staid to behold vs behinde certaine trees, fo wee called vntothem, who ranne with much feare, and after we had spoken vnto them, they told we that they had indured great famine, and that neere vnto that place many of their houses stood, and said, that they would bring vs thither : and so that night we came where fiftie houses were, and they were all amazed to behold vs. and stood assonished through exceeding seare; and after they were somewhat comforted, they came neere vnto vs, and laid their hands vpon our faces and bodies, and after put them your their owne faces and bodies. So we flaied that night, and when the morning came, they brought the difeated that were among them vnto vs. intreating vs that wee would bl. fie them, and gave vs fuch as they had to eate, which were the leaves of Twee and greene Time rofted or dry, and for the good intercamment they gave vs, and because they parted with that little which they had willingly, and were contented to be without meate themselves to give it vnto vs, we abode with them certaine dayes. And while we thus flaied, other Indians, of them that were farre beyond, came thither, and when they would be gone, weefaid to the former Indians, that we would goe with the other, which much displeased them, and so we left them 30 forrowing for our departure, at they which they conceined great difpleafure.

Sine Cerere & libera friges iucket lithe age of twilet yeares,

From the Hand of Malbado, all the Indians which we faw in that Countrey, Obferue this for a common custome, that if they perceive their women to be great with childe, they lye not with them, vitill two years be paffed, after the children be borne, to the which they gitt The Indians let fucke, vntill they be of the age of twelve years, that they are now of understanding to provide foode for themselves. We demanded of them, for what reason they did thus nourish them, who answered vs, that they did it for the great famine which was in that Countrey : where, as wee our felues faw, they were faine to continue fometimes three or foure daves without eating, and therefore they let them facke, that in that time they might not dye through hunger, and it notwithstanding some should escape, they would become too delicate, and of little strength. If by 40 chance it happen that any among them be ficke, they let them dye in those fields, if he be not a childe, and all the reft that cannot goe with them remaine there, but for a childe, or a brother of theirs, they lay them upon their neckerand fo they carry them.

They have all this custome to be seperated from their wives, when there is no agreement be-

tweene them, and the both they and the may marry againe with whom they pleate. And this

No deadly

is viual among the yonger fort; but fuch as have children neuer forfake their wives. And when they contend with other people, or be at variance one with another, they buffet and brate each Outer with cude Is vntill they be very weary, and then they part, and lometimes the women part them, going betweene them, because the men come not in to part them : and what choller or passion somer they have, they fight not together with their Bowes and Arrowes. And after 50 they have purferted and cudgelled each other, the braule being ended, they take their houses and women, and goe to live in the fields, seperated from the reft, vntill their anger and choller be past : and when they are now pacified, it is not needefull that others interpose themselves to make peace and friendship, because in this manner they make it themselves. And if they who be at variance have no wives, they goe to other of their neighbours, who although they were their enemies, receive them courteously, and doe them much flattering kindnesse, and give them fuch as they have, fo that when their choller is pait, they returne rich vnto their people. They are all warlike people, and vie as great fubrilty to defend them from their enemies, as they would Vicot Hories, doe, if they had bin brought up in lialy, and incontinuall warre. The hories are they that onely ouercome the m, and which the Indians generally feare. They who are to fight with them, must be 60 very wary that they know not that they be faint or cowardly, and while the battaile continueth, they are to vie them the worst they can. For if they perceive them to be timerous or cowards, it is a people that very well knoweth the time to avenge themselves, and to take courage and strength from the feare of their enemies. When they are shot in the warres, and have spent

CHAP. I.S.3. Sundry Nations of Malhada, New manner of brewing. Arrowes, they returne euery one their way, without any pursuit of the enemy, although the one part be few, and the other many, and this is their cultome. They goe many times away thot

cleane through with Arrowes, and dye not, if they touch not the bowels or heart, nay, they quickely heale them. They ice and heare, and haue the sharpest sences, I thinke, of any men in Quickesenses. the world. They are very well able to endure hunger, thirst, and cold, as they who are more aca minted there with then any other.

In the lland of Malbada there are two languages; the one called Causques, and the other Han. Names of the In the firme land, afront that Iland, are others called Carruce, who take their name from the Nitions of In the firme land, atront that Hand, are others called Latrico, who take their hand a those parts.

Mountaines where they line. Further, vpon the Sea coast are others, called Deguenes, and a Me'tada.

10 front them, are others called Mendica. Farther upon the coast are the Queuenes, and afront Canones. these within the firme land are the Marsanes, and going further vpon the coast are other, called Garnes. Gusticones, and afront those within the firme land the legunzes, at the end of them are other, cal- Dequenes. led Ataus, and behinde them other called Acubadaos, and of these there are many along this Mandica. bankefurther. Other called Quioles, liue on the coaft, and afront them within the firme land are the Augustes, and with their the Malsacones vnite themselves, and the Cultalentebes, and other Gannes. called Sufolm, and other called Comos, and further upon the coalt abide the Cumoles, and on the 1192222. fame coalt beyond are others, whom we called them of the Figures. All these Nations have ha- Assist, and bitations, and people, and divers languages. Among them there is one language, in the which, deubedas. bitations, and people, and divers languages. Among them tuere is one language, in the which, when they lay vato men, looke there, they lay arraes, and to the Dogs, they lay Xo. and in all Ausumes, and 20 that Countrey they make themselves drunke with a certaine smoake, and give what sources they Mailacons.

Like wife they drinke another thing which they take from the leaves of trees, like voto the Sufalus Comoto Mulberry trees, and boile it in certaine veffels on the fire, and after they have boyled it, they fill comoits, the veffels with water, and fokeepe it over the fire, and when it hath beene twice boiled, they poure it out into certaine veilels, and coole it with halfe a goord, and when it gathereth much fome, they drinke it as hot as they are able to fuffer it, and while they put it out of the veffell, and vntill they drinke it, they stand crying, who will drinke. And when the women perceive these exclamations, they presently settle themselves, not daring once to move, although they finde that they are very well belousd. And if by chance any of them moue, they accompt her

30 shamelesse, and cudgell her, and with much choller and anger cast away the water or drinke which they have made: and if they have drunke it, they womit it out againe, which they doe very easily. The reason of this their custome, they say is this, that if when they will drinke of that water, the women moue themselves from the place where they heare that voyce, some bad thing might be put into that drinke, which entring into the body, in fhort space would cause them to dye. And all the time, that that water is boyled, the veffell must be well closed and flut, and if peraduenture it flould stand vincouered, and any woman should come and passe by, they cast it away and drinke no more of it. It is of the colour of Sastron, and they drinke it three dayes without eating, and every day they drinke one * amphora, and an halfe. And when the *A veffell conwomen haue their naturall purgation, they prouide no meate but for themselves, because no o-40 ther person will eate of that which she carrieth. In the time that I continued among them, I saw gathous.

a most brutish and beastly custome, to wit, a man who was married to another, and their be cer- Sodomy. taine effeminate and impotent men, who goe cloathed and attired like women, and performe the office of a woman; they carry no Bowes, but beare very great and waightie burdens : and among them we faw many such effemmate persons, as I haue faid, and they are of greater lims and taller then the other men.

After we departed from them whom wee left lamenting, wee were with the other at their houses, and were very well intertained of them, who brought vs their children that wee should touch their hands, and fo they gave vs much Meale of Mefquiquez. These Mefquiquez are certaine Fruits, which when they are on the Tree are very bitter, and are of the same fort that the fruite of Indian

Garate are, and they eate them with the earth, and with it they are very fweet and good to eat. The manner how they prepare them is this; they make a Trench in the Earth of what depth they please, and after they have cast the truit into this Trench they bruize and breake them very well, with a piece of wood as great as a mans legge, and three Cubits long, and after they are mingled with the earth of the Trench, they take other that are fitted, and put them into the faid Trench, and returne to bruize them a little more, and after put them into a veffell like vnto a basket, and cast to much water thereon, as is sufficient to couer it, that the water may rise to the top, and hee that hath bruized them, tafteth them in his mouth, and if hee thinke they be not iweet and pleatant, he demandeth earth and mingleth it therewith. And this he doth vntill he find it sweet, and so afterward they prepare themselves to sit round, and every one putteth in his

60 hand, and taketh as much as he can, and the feeds or kernels of those Fruits, and so the huskes they cast upon certaine hides, and he that hath brussed them gathereth them together, and returneth afterward to put them all in a basket, and cafteth water vpon them, as at the first, and to they returne to wring out the myce and water to long as it will drop. And likewise they returne to put the feedes and huskes whon the hide, and fo in this manner they doe three or foure

1520

The Tempin

Brailians vie

times for everie bruifing : and they that are found at this banquet, which because it is veriegreat. remaine with their bellies much puffed vp through the earth and water which they drinke; and of this the Indians made vs many great featls, and vied much dancing and iollitie among themsclues, for fo long time as we stated there. And when we slept in the night, fixe men watched with great diligence and care, at the doore of the cottage where we abode, not ceasing to come in voto some of vs till the Sunne arose.

And when we would depart from them, certaine women of other people who lived further beyond came thither, and being informed by them where their houses were, wee departed to. wards those parts, although they earnestly entreated vs that we would not depart for that day. because those houses were very farre from thence, and that there was no way to goe thither, and to that the women who came were weary; but refting themselves vnto the next day, they would afterwards goe with vs, and conduct vs thither. But we dispatched our selues thence, and went away ; and a little after those women who came thicher with certaine others of the former Indians, came after vs : but there being no beaten way nor path, we prefently loft our felues, and fo went foure leagues, at the end whereof we came to drinke at a water, where wee found the women that followed vs, who told vs what great paines and travaile they had taken to finde vs. Departing thence, and bringing those women tor our guides, wee passed a River somewhat late. and the water tooke vs vp to the breft, and might be as broad as that of Simill, and it ranne very Brongly. And at the fetting of the Sunne we came to an hundred houses of the Indians, who before we came, went all forth to receive vs with fo vehement shouting and loud exclamation, 10 that it was a fearefull thing, and gaue great blowes with their hands upon their thighes, and fuch Marakas or Rieles, and brought hollow guards with stones within them, which is the instrument of their greatest iolhave like con- little & loort, and never vie them but for their dancings, and for medicine; and none dare to take them in his hand but they. And they fay that these guords have vertue and come from heaven, because they grow not in those Countries, nor doe they know from whence they come, valelle the Rivers bring them when they overflow. And the feare and confusion of them was so great, that friging to come neerest vinto vs and touch vs, they so thrunged vs, that it was a wonder that they had not killed vs : and not fuffering vs to fet our feete on the ground, they carried vs

> make their festivall sports any more with vs for that night. They palled all that night, among themselves, in sports and dancing, and the day following, at a good houre, they brought vs before all the people of that place, that we might touch and blelle them, as we had done to the rest with whom we abode. And after this, they gave many arrowes to the women of another people, who were come with them. The next day we departed thence, and all that people went with vs. And when we came to the other Indians, we were very well entertained, as of the other; and they gaue vs fuch as they had, and Deere which they had kile led that day. Among their Indians we law a new custome, to wir, that they who were first with vs, tooke the Bowes & Arrowes, Shooes and Crownes (if they had any) from them who came to vs to be healed, and after they had thus taken them away from them, they brought them before 40 vs, that we should heale them, and being healed, that we should have them, to they departed ve-

vnto their houses, and bare vs so aboue ground, and the presse of people so thrunged vs, that we

entred into the houses which they had prepared for vs, and would not content that they should

rie well contented, and faid that they were whole.

After this, we departed from them, and went vnto other, of whom we were verie courteoutly received, and they brought vs their difeafed persons, who when we had bleffed them, faid they were cured, and he that was not whole, beleeved that we could cure him, & for that which others told them whom we had healed, they made fuch great sport and dancing, that they suffered vs not to sleepe. Departing from them, we went where many other houses were, and where another new custome began, to wit, that entertaining every one of vs very well, they who came with vs, tooke all their substance from them, and rifled their houses, without leaving them any kinde of thing, which displeated vs verie much, feeing them fo ill vied who fo curreoutly received vs, 50 and also fraring that least this might be the occasion of some alteration, or offence among them. But not being able to remedy the fame, and chastise those that did it, wee were then to surfer it, vntill we faw we had more authoritie among them. And fo, even they themselves who lost their wealth, feeing we were displeased, comforted vs, faying, that we should not conceine any displeasure thereat, considering they were so well contented that they had seene vs, and that they had bestowed their substance very well, and would hereafter be paid of others who were ex-

Blinde and fouint-tyed people.

The next day they brought all their people before vs, the greatest part whereof are squinteyed, and other of the same people are blinde, whereat we greatly maruelled : they are well set, and of good behaulour, and whiter then all the rest that we had seene untill then. There we be- 60 gan to fee Mountaines, which feemed to extend themselves towards the Sea, from the North, and by the relation which the Indians made, I suppose they are fifteene leagues from the Sea, We departed thence with thole Indians towards the Mountaines, whereof I now spake. And they brought vs where some of their kindred were, for they would not bring vs but to their kinsfolk,

because they were vowilling that their enemies should receive so great a benefit, as they thought it was to leevs. And when wee were come thither, they that came with vs spoiled the other. who knowing the custome had hid certainethings before we came thither. And after they had received vs with much joy and gladnesse; they tooke out that which they had hidden, and prefented it vitto vs, and they were Crownes, Magra, and certaine small plates of Silver, We, according to our custome, gaue them all presently to the Indians that came with vs, and having given vs that which they had, they began their dancing and festivall iollitie, and sent to call other people neere thereabouts, that they might come to fee vs, who came all about the eurning, and brought vs Garlands, Bowes, and other triffing things, which for the most part we disuded ato mong those other Indians. And the day following, we being desirous to depart, they would all bring vs to their friends, who remained on the top of the Mountaines, faying that there are many houses and people, that they would give vs many things: but because it was out of our way we would not goe thither, and therefore tooke our journey through the plaine neere vnto the Mountaines, which we supposed should not be very farrefrom the coast. All those people are very poore and miferable, wherefore we held it better to croffe ouer the land, because the people that dwelt further into the Country were better conditioned, and would views better, and we were certainely perswaded, that we should finde a more populous Countrey, and of better fustenance. And lattly, we therefore did it, because croffing ouer the land, we saw more particularities, so that if it should please our Lord God to bring some of vs out of that Countrey, an and to conduct vs into the land of the Christians, wee might be able to make relation and report

The Indians seeing that we were determined to goe whither they would not, told vs. that there was neither people nor Time, nor any other thing to eate, and therefore praied vs that we would flay there for that day, and so we did. Then they fent two Indians to discouer the people that way which we purpoted to goe, and the next day we departed, carrying many of them with vs, and the women went laden with water, and our authoritie was fo great among them, that none durft prefume to drinke without our leaue. Two of their Phificians gaue vs two Gourds, and from that time we afterward began to carry Gourds with ve, joyning this ceremony to our authority, which among them is very great. They who accompanied vs, rifled the 40 houses: but the houses being many, and they but few, they could not carry all away, but should have bin forced to have loft the halfe, and so we went thence through many Mountaines; entring within the land more then fittie leagues, at the end whereof we found fortie houses, and among other things which they gaue vs, Andrea Derante had a thicke and great Bill of cop- Copper Bell per, with a visage ingrauen in it, which they seemed greatly to esteeme, saying that they had ingrauen. gotten it of their other neighbours : who being demanded whence they had it, they faid, that they brought it from the Northward, and that it was much worth, and greatly effeemed there. Whereupon we knew, that from what place soeuer it came, the art of casting and melting of mettals must needes be there. And hereupon we departed the day following, and croffed ouer a Mountaine of fix leagues; and the itones which were there, were of the scumme of Iron, so and late in the evening we came to many houses, seated on the fide of a most pleasant River, and the Lords of the same came into the middle of the high way to receive vs with their clildren in their armes, and gaue vs many small plates of Silver, and Antimonie made in powder, Plates of Plates wherewith they annoint their faces, and gaue vs many garlands, and many mantles of the hides

of Kine, and laded all them that came with vs with such as they had: they care Tame, and

They told vs, that in the place where the Bell was made, were many plates of that mettall under ground, and that that Bell among them was a thing greatly effeemed, and that houses were built there, and wee supposed that it was the South Sea, for we alwayes knew that that Sea was alwayes richer then that of the North. So we departed from them, and went South Sea through fo many forts of Nations, and divers languages, that the memory of man is not able to 50 reckon them, and one people alwayes spoyled the other, and so both they that lost, and they who gained remained well contented. Through those Valleyes where we palled, every one of

them carried a flicke or cudgell of three handfuls long, and they went all in troopes, and if any Hare arofe, whereof there are many in that Countrey, they turned her fuddenly, and so many Pletfanthurcudgels fell upon her, that it was a maruellous matter to behold, and in this manner they made ung. her goe from one to another, fo that in my judgement it was the goodlieft hunting that could be imagined, because fometimes they came even into their hands. And when wee ferled our felues at night, we had fo many of them that were given vs, that every one of vs carried eight or ten, and fuch as carried Bowes, appeared not among vs, but went apart through the Mountaines to to feeke deere, and when they came in the evening, they brought five, or fix for every one of vs, and many Fowles, and Quailes, and other hunting game; and finally, what focuer all these people tooke, they presented before vs , not daring to touch or take thereof for themselves, although they should dye for hunger (because they accustomed so to doe, since they came with vs) vn. lefe they had first bleffed the same. The women carried many Mats, with the which they made

1522

Superflicious fanctitying

When that was done, wee commanded them to bake those Deere and Hares, and whatsoener else they had taken; which is very quickly done in certaine ouens which they make for the same purpole. Then we first tooke a little of every thing, and gave the rest to the principall and chiefa men of the people to divide it among them all ; and when every one had received his part, they came vnto vs that we should blow vpon it and blesse it, for otherwise they durst not presume to eate thereof. And many times we brought with vs three or foure thousand perions; whereupon it was a great trouble to vs to blow vpon and bleffe the meate and drinke of every one of them : and for every other thing of theirs which they would doe they came to vs to aske leave ; whereby it may be confidered how great the incumbrance and trouble was which wee endured. The women brought before vs the Tune, Frogs, Wormes, and whatfoeuer elie they could get ; because although they should bee readie to die through hunger, they would not have eaten any thing which they had not received from our hands. And to going with them wee passed over a great River which came from the North parts, and having travelled over certaine Plaines of thirtie leagues, wee found many people who came very farre off to receive vs , and came forth anto the way whether wee were to paffe, and received vs after the fame manner that the other From thence forward they observed another manner of receiving vs, as touching saccage and

fooling. For they that came forth into the high-way to bring vs any thing, were not spoiled of in them who came with vs ; but after we were entred into their houses, they of their owne accord offered vs whattoeuer they had and the houles also. Wee gaue all vnto the chiefe and principall. to the intent that they should disude it among them; and alwaies they who remained to spoiled followed vs , whereby the number of people greatly encreased through defire to bee satisfied of their loffes. And they faid vnto the relt that they should beware how they hide any thing . because it could not be but we should know it, and cause them all suddenly to die. The teare and frighting wherein they put them were to great, that the first dates they abode with vs they stood alwaies trembling, not preluming to speake, nor to lift vp their eyes to heaven. They guided vs aboue eightie leagues through a defert Countrey, and very rough mountaines which were fo dry, that there was no hunting game there whereby to fulfame our great hunger. In the to end having passed over a very great River, where the water tooke vo to the breit, many of those who came with vs began to lament, through the exceeding great hunger and travell which they had endured through those mountaines, which were extreame rough and troubletome to refle. The same people brought vs vnto certaine plaines, and at the end of those mountaines much people came farre off to receive vs, as the former had done, and gave fo many garments afterward to them that were with vs , that because they could not carry them they left the halfe behinde them; fo that we told those Indians that brought them, that they should take them againe that they might not be lost: who answered, that they would not doe it for any thing, because it was not their custome after they had once given a thing, to returne afterward to take it agains and

Many gar-Foolish libera

A riner.

Women-

fo they suffered them to be loft. Then we told them that we would goe toward the place where the Sunne went downe, who faid that in those places the people were verie farre off. But wee commanded them to lend to understand that wee were comming, yet they excused themselves the best they could; saying, that they were their enemies, and that they were viwilling we should goe thither; but not daring to doe contrarie to our will, they fent two women thither, whom both the one and the other their enemies kept prisoners. And they fent these, because the women may well negotiate with the men even in the warres : and we followed them, and rested our selves in a place where wee determined to expect them, but they flaied fine daies before they returned, and the Induar faid that they should find no people. Wee told them that they should bring vs toward the North, whereupon they gave vs the lame aniwere, that is to fay, that in those places there were no peo- 10 ple but farre off, and that there was nothing there to eate nor water to bee found; yet notwithitanding all this we continued obstinate, and faid, that we would goe thither, although they alwaies excused themselves the best they could and for this cause wee were angrie, to that one night I arose and went out to sleepe in the open fields apart from them, but they came presently where I was, and neuer flept all that night with much feare, and speaking vnto me they taid that if we would not continue any longer angrie, they would bring vs whether we purposed to goe, although they were certainly affured to die by the way. Neuertheleffe wee alwaies fained that we were yet angrie, and because their feare was not removed, a verie strange accident happened, that is to fay, that on the verie same day many of them became sicke, and the day following eight of them died. Whereupon through all the Countrey where it was knowne, they were 10 60 afraid of vsthat when they faw vs they feemed even todie as it were for feare. So they be fought vs that wee would not continue angrie any longer, and that wee would not caule any more of them to die, certainly perfwading themselves that wee killed them onely with our will and defire. We prayed our Lord God that hee would relieue vs, and so all those that were ficke began

to recouer: at which time wee faw a verie maruellous thing, to wir, that the fathers, brethren. and wines of them that died were exceedingly griened to fee them fo ficke, but after they were No lamenting dead they showed not any signe or token of sorrow, nor did wee see them lament nor speake one for the dead to the other, nor make any other figne, nor durst they come neere vnto them vntill we commanded them to burie them : And for the space of fifteene daies and more that we abode with them. we neuer faw one ipeake to the other, nor any of their little children either laughed or cried, and if any of them lamented they carried them verie farre from thence : and with verie sharpe teeth they gashed and cut them from the shoulders to the legs : so feeing their crueltie and being angrie thereat. I demanded why they did it, they answered me, that they did it to chastife them for la-10 menting before me. Al their fears which they have of vs, they yet put into the heads of those who came lately to know vs. because they should give vs whatsoever they have, for they know that we tooke nothing for our felues, but gaue euerie thing to them. This was the most obedient people, and best conditioned that we found in all that Countrie, and commonly they are well dispofed. Those that were ficke, being recovered and restored vnto health, and wee having continued there three daies, the women that we had fent came vnto vs, and faid, that they had found verie few people, because they were gone to the kine, which was now their time. Then we commanded them that were weake to remaine behinde, and those that were well to come with vs : and that two daies journey from thence those two women should goe with two of our men,

to cause the people to come forth to the highwaies to receive vs. And so the morning follow-20 ing all those that were the luttieft departed with vs, and after three daies journey wee fetled our felues, and the day following Alonfo del Castiglio and Estenanicco the Negro, together with those two women for their guides ; and that who was their prisoner brought them vnto a River which ranne within a mountaine where a people abode, among whom their father was ; and these were the first houses that wee saw, which had the forme and manner of Houses artis-

There Castiglio and Estenanices arrived, and after they had spoken with those Indians, at the end of three dayes Castiglio returned to the place where they left vs, and brought fine or fixe of those Indians, and faid, That hee had found houses of people and of artificiall 20 building, and that the people eate pulle and gourds, and that hee had feene Maiz there.

There wee abode one day, and the next wee departed, they bringing vs with them to other built houses, where wee did eate of the same food that they eate. And after from thenceforth there was another custome, that they who knew of our comming came not forth into the high-way to meete vs as the other did; but wee found them in their houses, and they did nothing elle for vs. And they were all fitting, and all held their faces towards Other grange the wall, hanging downe their heads with their haire over their eyes, and all their clothes behaviour, were hanged vpaloft in the middle of the house, and from thence forward they began to give vs many mantles of hides, and they had not any thing which they gave vs not. It is a Nation of thebest and goodliest proportion of bodie that euer wee saw there, and of a more Goodly peclively spirit and agilitie, and that vinderstood vs better, and answered vs to what soener wee

demanded them , and wee call them , The people of the Kine , because the greater part of the Kine which dye in those Countries is neere thereabouts, and vp that River more then fiftie leagues, they goe killing many. These people goe all naked, after the manner of those whom wee found first. The women goe couered with certaine Deere skinnes; and fo doe some few men also, and particularly the aged, who are not serusceable for the warrese It is a verie populous Countrey; and being demanded why it did not fowe Maiz, they faid, They did it because they would not leese that which they should sowe for two yeeres since their water failed, and the feafons was fo dry, that they all loft the Maiz that they had fowed, and that they could not by any meanes be affured to fowe, vnleffe first it had rained very much; and they prayed vs to fpeake vnto the Heauens that they might fend downe raine : they

50 boyle pulse in this manner. They fill a great pot halfe full with water, and put many of those flones in the fire, which will quickely burne, and when they feeth them on fire they take them vp with certaine tongs of Wood, and cast them into that water in the gourd vntill they make it boyle with that fire of those flones; and when they perceive that the water boyleth , they put in that which they have to boyle , and all this time they doe nothing elie but take out one stone and put in another fired redde hot to make the water

Kkkkkk

d. IIII.

cially built.

CHAP.I.S.4. People of little understanding. Great feare of the Christians.

They come to the South Sea, and travell through a plentifull Countrey, till they meet with Spaniards ; whose crueltie and manner of connerting Sanages is related.

d. IIII.

They come to the South Sea.

Barren Coun-

E went Westward on our journy, & crossed over all the land vntil we came forthat the South Sea, and the feare wherein they had put vs of the great famine which we were to paffe(as furely we paffed it for feuenteen daies rogether, as they had told vs) was not able to divert vs from our intended purpole. Throughout all that Country vp the Riner, they gaue vs many Mantles of the hides of Kine, and wee did not eate of those their fruites.

but our fultenance was every day a piece of the fat of Deere, of the bigneffe of a mans hand. which for this necessitie wee prounded alwaies to haue in a readinesse, and so wee passed all those fenenteene daies iourney, and at the end of them wee croffed ouer the River, and tranel. led other seuenteene daies more to the West, through certaine plaines and verie great mountaines which are found there : and there wee met with a people; who the third part of the veere eate no other thing faue the powder of ftraw, and because wee paffed that way at that featon of the yeere wee also were constrained to eate it, vntill having finished those daies iourney wee found fetted houfes, where there was great quantitie of Maiz, and of that and Maale they gaue vs enough, and Gourds, and Pulie, and Mantles of Bombafin Cot. 20 ton, withall which we laded them whom wee had hyred there, who returned the most contented men in the world. Wee yeelded many thankes vnto God who had brought vs thither. where we found tuch plentie of fustenance.

Among these houses they had some that were of earth , and all the rest were of mats

waies found fetled houses and much sustenance of Maiz and Pulse; and they game vs ma-

ny Deeres skinnes and Mantles of Bombafin Cotten, better then those of New Spaine;

and gaue vs also many Garlands, and certaine Corall which grow in the South Sea, and

focuer they had, and vnto Dorante they gave Emeralds made into Arrow heads, and with

those Arrowes they make their sports and festivall iollitie, seeming to mee very good. I deman-

ded of them whence they had them, who told me that they brought them from certaine very

high mountaines, which lye towards the North, and that they got them by exchange and

barter for quills and Parrats feathers, and there were many people there and very great hou-

fes. Among them wee faw the women more honourably and honeftly vied, then in any

other part of India which wee had feene. They weare certaine smockes of Bombasin Cotton

which reach to the knee and ouer them : foft fleeues of certaine folds or plaits of Deere skinnes

without haire which touch the ground, and they perfume them with certaine roots which

should touch and blesse them, and they were so importunate herein that they put vs to much

make them very fine, and so they vie them very well : they are open before and tied toge- 40 ther with filken strings. They goe shod with shooes. All this Nation came vinto vs, that we

many Turkie stones which come from toward the North. And finally they gave vs what- 20

liue on the powder of graw.

People which

A plentifull Countrey with and from thence wee passed more then an hundred leagues into the Countrey, and also houses and corne.

Corall and Turkeffes. Emeralds.

Defire of the

Conceit that trom heauen.

Many lingua-

trouble; because the sicke and the whole would all goe from ys blessed : and it often happened that of the women that came with vs ; some were delivered, and as soone as the children were borne they brought them vnto vs, that wee should touch and blesse them. They accompanied vs vntill they left vs with another Nation, and among all these people they held it for a certaintie that wee came from Heauen : because all the things which they have not, and know not whence they come : they fay , that they descend from Heauen. For so long time as wee went with them, wee trauelled all the day without eating vntill night, and wee eate to little that they were aftonied to fee it. They neuer knew vs wearie, and furely wee 50 were so accustomed to trauell that we were neuer weary. We had great authoritie among them, and they held a reuerent opinion of vs, and to preferue the the same wee seldome spake vnto them. The Negrowas the man that alwaies spoke and informed himselfe of the way that wee would goe by the direction of the people that were there, and touching every other thing which we defired to know. We passed through divers languages, and our Lord God favoured vs withall, for they alwaies understood vs and we understood them, and if we demanded any thing of them by fignes they answered vs as if they should have spoken our language and wee theirs. For although we, understood fix languages, we could not thereby prevaile with all, because wee found more then a thousand differences of language. Throughout all these Countries they who have warre among themselues, became suddenly friends that they might come vato vs and receive vs, 60 and bring vs whatfoever they had. Dorante had fixe hundred Deeres hearts given him, whereupon we called it the people of

Hearts. Through this Countrey, entrie is made into many Provinces which thand upon the South Sea, and if they that defire to goe thither enter not from hence, they are loft, because the Coast

hath no Maiz, to that they are faine to eate the powder of beetes, straw, and fish, which they take in the Sea with floates, because they have no Canowes, nor any Boat. The women cover their prinities with herbs and straw : they are a people of little understanding and miserable; We supposed that neere vnto the Coast by the way of those people which way wee went, it is more then a thousand leagues of a populous Countrey, and that they have much prouision wherein they A thousand live, for they fowe Pulie and Maiz three times in the yeere. We faw three forts of Deere there, leagues of a one as great as the biggeft fleeres of Castiglia. The houses of all those people for habitation are populous cottages. They have poylon of a certaine kind of tree of the bignesse of an apple trees and they doe no more but gather, the fruit and anoint the Arrow therewith, and if they have no fruit they Great Deerc. to breake of a bough, and with a certaine milkie juyce which it hath they doe the fame. There are many of these trees that are so poysonous, that if the leaves thereof be bruised and cast into any Poisonous are standing poole and not running water, all the Deere and whatsoever other beath that drinketh thereof fuddenly burit afunder. Wee abode three daies with these people, and about one daies journy from thence there was another people, where such showres of raine came powring downe

woon vs, that by reason the River which was there was so growne we could not passe it, and so we continued there fifteene daies.

In this meane time, Castielio law the buckle of a Spanish girdle about an Indians necke, and an Iron key fewed together with it, which he tooke from him : then we demanded what that thing was, and they aniwered, that it came from heaven; and questioning further with them who 20 brought tliem, they answered, that certaine men brought them which had beards like vinto vs. who came from heaven; and comming to that river with Horses, brought Lances and Swords, Newes of and two of them passed ouer with their Lances. Afterward, as sunningly as we could, we asked Spaniardi, them what became of those men, so they answered vs, that they went to the Sea. Wee went through many Countries, and found them all dispeopled and not inhabited, for the countrie people went their way flying through the mountaines, not daring to keepe their houses nor labour for feare of the Christians. It greatly discontented vs, seeing the Countrie verie fruitfull and exceeding pleasant and full of water and goodly rivers, and to see them afterward so solitarie and Speniards. fcorched, and the people so feeble and weake fled away and all hid, and because they sowed not in so great famine, they maintained themselves onely with the barkes of trees and roots. Wee 30 had our part of this famine in all this journey, because they could not fo well prouide for vs being fo enally hired, that it feemed they would all die. They brought vs couerings and beades, which they had hid for feare of the Christians, and gave them vnto vs. and declared how at other times the Christians had entred and passed through that Countrie, and had destroied and burned the people, and carried halfe the men away, and all the women and little children, and that such as

were able to efeape out of their hands fled away. Wee feeing them fo affrighted that they could

not be fecured to fettle them felues in any place, and that they neither would nor could fowe nor

labour and manure the Countrie; nay, they rather determined to fuffer themselves to die which feemed better vnto them, then to expect to bee so ill intreated with so great crueltie as they had beene untill that time : and they feemed to bee greatly pleased with vs. Notwithstanding wee 40 feared that being come vnto them who were vpon the Frontiers, and in warre with the Christians least they would vie vs cruelly, and make vs pay for that which the Christians had done vnto them. But God being pleased to conduct vs where they were, they began to feare and reverence vs. as the former had done and fomewhat more, whereat we did not a little maruell. Whereby Gentlenesse it may cleerely appeare, that to allure this Nation to become Christians, and make them obedi- fiver then ent to the Imperial Maieftie, they ought to be gently and curreoufly vied, and this is the onely crueltie. and most certaine way of all other. They brought vs to a people that abode on the top of a mountaine, where they were faine to climbe up by reason of the exceeding roughnesse of those places. where we found many people gathered together for feare of the Christians. These people receiued vs with great good will and kindnesse, and gaue vs whatsoeuer they had, and aboue two

50 thousand burdens of Maiz, which wee gave vnto those miserable and samished people who followed vs and conducted vs thicker : and the day following wee dispatched foure Medengers through the Countrie, as we yied to dor, to the intent that they should assemble and gather together as many people as they could, vinto one people which abode three daies journey off from thence; and having done this, wee departed with all the people that were there, and alwaies found the trackes and tokens where the Christians had lodged, and about midday wee found our Messengers, who told vs that they could not meet with any people, because they were all gone and fled, and hidden in the mountaines, leaft the Christians thould either kill them or make them flaues. And that the night before they had feene the Christians ; they themselves standing behinde certaine trees to behold what they did, and they faw that they led certaine Indians

60 in a Chaine tied.

From this place, which is called the River of Petman, voto the River where Diego di Guzman P. Petwan. arrived, where we understood of the Christians, may be some four effort leagues and from thence where the waters flaied vs, twelue leagues: and from thence to them whom we called the people of the Harts, fine leagues : and from thence to the South Sea, were twelve leagues. Through- De Cart.

Show's of

1526

out all that Country whereforeer wee found mountaines, wee faw great show and tokens of Gold, Iron, Antimony, and Copper, and other mettalls. In those places where the setled house are, in James it is very hor. From thence towards the South of the vnpeopled Country, vnto the North Sea, it is a very naughtie Countrey and poore, where wee endured incredible famine, and they who inhabit there are a most cruell people, and of a very enill nature and behaviour. The Lidians that have fettled houles, and the rest also make no account of Gold, nor of Silver, nor know for what purpose it may ferue.

He feetle th

I tooke the Negro and eleven Indians with mee , and following the Christians by the tracke which they found, I went to three places where they had lodged, and the first day I trawilled ten leagues, and in the morning following found foure Christian Horle-men, who wonde- to red much to fee me fo strangely attired, and in the company of the Indians, and when they faw me they made a stand, and beheld me a good space, so much astonished that they dust not speake to me nor aske mee any queltion. Wherefore I spake vnto them, intreating them to bring me where there Captaine was; and to we went about halfe a league where Diego de Alcarac abode. who was their Captaine, and after I had ipoken vnto him, he told me that hee was in verie will cafe be saufe he had beene there many daies and could not take any Indian, and that he had not amy prouision to depart, because they began to be in great necessitie and famine there. I told him that Dorante and Castielio were temaining behinde, who abode ten leagues from thence, with many people who had conducted vs : Whereupon he presently sent three Horse-men, and fiftie Isdians of those they brought, and the Negro returned with them to guide them; but I remained to there, and requested him to make me a testimonial of the yeere, moneth, and day that I came into that place, and so he did. From this Riner, vnto the people of the Christians called Saint Mi. chael, which pertaineth to the jurisdiction of that Prounce, which they call Nona Galitia, are After fixe daies were past Andrea Dorante, and Arlonzo del Cafesglio came vnto vs., with those

who came for them, and brought about fixe hundred persons with them , which were of them whom the Christians had caused to climbe into the mountaines, and hide themselves in the Countrey; and they, who wntill then were come with vs brought them, and accompanied with the trey; and trey, who would then we come we are sounded from an account with the Christians, and they had dispatched away all the other people which they had brought thitter, and came where I was. Alerase intreated me that I would fend to call the people who abode at 30 the Ruser fides, and had fled into the mountaines, and that they should command them to bring them victualls although it were not needfull, because of their owne accord they brought vsa much as they could, and so we presently sent our Messengers to call them : whereupon fix hundred persons came who brought we all the Maiz they had, and they brought it in certaine pipkins couered with clay, wherein they had hid it winder ground, and they brought vs whatforuer they had b-fides: but wee would not takeany thing faue victualls to eate, but gave all the rest to the Christians to be duided among them. And after this we had much controuerfie with them; becaste they would have made those Indians slaves whom wee brought with vs : And through this displeature and disdaine at our departure, we left many Twelf Bowes which we brought, and many Budgets and Arrowes, and among them fue of Emerands, which we eremembred not and to fo we lost them. We gaue the Christians many Mantles of the hides of Kine, and other things which we brought, and much adoe with the Indians to cause them to returne to their houses, and to secure them and make them sowether Maiz. They were not willing to goe but with ys, votill they left vs with other Indians as the custome was : for otherwise if they returned without being lest with others, they feared leaft they should die, and comming with vs they feared not the Christians nor their Lances. This thing greatly displeased the Christians, who caused an Interpreser to speake vinto them in their owne language, and tell them that wee were the very lame men, who for a long time had beene terrified and loft, and were a people of meane condition and of small force, and that they were Lords of the Countrey whom they were to serue. But the I do us made lettle no no account of all this, for that among themselves they said one to ano-19 ther tout the Christians lied, because we came from the place where the Sunne rifeth, and the other Circlisms from the place where the Sunne went downe and that wee healed the ficke, they killed the a that were found; and that wee went naked and without garments; they clothed on har backe and with Lances, and that wee had not any couetous or infatiable defires: fo that whatto uer was given vs, wee prefently gaue it vnto others and had nothing our felues ; and Cre Christians intend nothing elie, but to rob and steale whatsoever they find and give nothing to any : and after this manner those Indians gave their judgement of vs, centuring allow actions cleane contrary to that which the Christians doe. And thus they answered the Christians in their language, and did the like to others in a language which was among them which we understood, and choice that we were call Primbairin; which wee had found yield for about the space of foure 62 hundred leagues of the Countrey where we traudled, fo that we found no other language for the space of four hundred leagues and more. Finally, it was not possible for vs to make those sudsess ischeeue that we were any of thole other Christians; yet with much adoe, and through our perfivation we made them returns vnto their houles, commanding them to rest satisfied, and bring

Fertile Countrey. Great proffers: Hell threatned. CHAP. 1.5.4.

backe their people to lowe and till the ground, which because it was so desolate, became now full of woods, albeit of it owne nature lurely, it were the best Country and more fertile and ahundant then any in all those Indies: for they sowe three times in the yeare, and have many fruites, and many goodly Rivers, and other very good waters. There are many fignes, and great tokens of Mines of Gold and Silver. The people are very well conditioned, and serve the Chris fliant, that are their friends, with a very good will : they are much better disposed then the people of Mexico ; and finally, it wanteth nothing to make it an absolute Countrey. The Indians heing di patched, they told vs, that they would doe as much as they had commanded and bring backe their people, if the Christians would suffer them to continue: whereupon I said and certo tainely affirmed, that if they did it not, the Christians should be much to blame. And after wee had fent them away, the Constians fent vs with an Aleado, named Zebrero, and with him three other Christians, whereby it appearets how much the imaginations of men were deceived, in that we went to fecke liberty among the Confident; and when wee had thought to have found it, the oute contrary befell vs, and by seperating vs from the conversation of the Indiant, they brought vs through desolate Mountaines, because we should not see what they did, nor their will yigge; for they had determined to goe to affault the Indians, whom wee fent away fecured Sauage infide and in peace; and fo they did as they imagined; they brought vs two dayes through those Moun- Iny o' Chiffe caines, without water, and without any beaten way or path, monuch as we thought we should be were the large burtle for thirst whereast from of our mendial demandment within the charge to the control of the control of the charge burtle for thirst whereast from of our mendial demandment within the charge to the charge burtle to the charge burtle to the charge to the have burit for thirit, whereof feuen of our men died, & many friends which the Christians brought Sauages.

30 with them, could not cometall the next day at noone, where we found water : and we transiled with them about fine and twenty leagues, at the end whereof, we came vnto a people of the /mdiant, which were in peace, and there the Alcado, who brought vs, left vs, and went three leagues further to a people called Caliazzan, where Melchier Diaz, the Sergeant Major, and Captaine of that Prounce abode. As ioone as he knew of our comming, hee prefently came the fame night to finde vs out, and lamented much with vs, highly praising our Lord God, for his exceeding mercy cowards vs, and spake vnto vs, and vied vs very well, and in the behalfe of the Gouernour Numer de Gueman, and himielte, offered vs whatfoeuer hee had or could procure. and began to speake much of the cuill viage wherewith Alexae and the rest had vied vs, for that we held it for cereame, that if hee had bin there, that which was done vnto vs had not 30 bin done, and that night being pasted, we departed for Anhacan, and the Sergeant Major intrea-

sed we earneftly to fray there, and that wee might doe great feruite vinto our Lord God, and to wour Maieflieibecaufe the Countrie was desolate, without manuring, and altogether defroyed, and the Indians went and hid chemielues, dying through the Mountaines, vn willing to come and flay with their people, and that we should fend to call them, and command them in the name of our Lord God, and of your Maiesty, to come and inhabit the Plain, and till the Countrie. But this feemed a troubletome matter vnto vs to put it in execution, because wee had not any of our Indiwas, or those wine were wont to accompany vs, to helpe and further vs in fuch like offices. Notwithfranding we thoughe good to proue two of our Indians which we had prisoners there, who were of the fame Country, and were found with the Christian's when we first came among them,

40 and faw the people that accompanied vs, & vnJeritood by them the great authority & dominion which we had had throughout all those Countries, & the miraculous things which we had done in healing the difeafed, and many other things, and with thefe we fent others of the fame people which were also with them, to call the Indians that abode in the Mountains, & those of the river Parachan, where we had found the Christians, And we willed them to tell them, that they should come vnto vs. because we would speake with them; and so secure them that went, and the other who should come, we gaue them a great gourd, of those which we caried in our hands, which was a principall token and speciall argument of great state, and with this they went and travailed seuen daies, and in the end came and brought with them three Lords of those who had fled into the Mountaines, who were accompanied with fitteene men, who brought vs Crownes, Turkies, and plumes of Feathers; and the melfengers told vs; that they had not found them of the River

50 from whence we came, because the Christians had caused them to flye into the Mountaines : So Melchior Diaz willed the Interpreter to fpeake vnto thole Indians in our behalte, and fay vnto them, that we were come from God, who abideth in heamen, and had tranailed through the world nine Monnet of yeares, faying voto all shem that we found; that they should beleeve in God, and ferue him, because he is Spouther action Lord of all the things in the world, and that he gineth a reward and paiment unto the good, and perpetual dins. pumisment of hell fire vinto the wicked : and that when the dood men dy e, he taketh them up into beauen, where afterwards they sall wener dye any more, nor suffer hunger or cold, by endare any other necessisie; but findle there greater glory then can be imagined. And they who will not beleene nor obay him, shall be throwne downe under the earth in the company of Dinels, into an exceeding huge fire which never

6 hall have end; but continually and eternally torment them. And besides that, if they will become Christians, wad ferme Gidufter the manner that we will tell them, the Christians shall hold them for breibres, and who them very well; and that we would command that they should not doe them any burt, nor take their Countrie from them, but become their good friends. And if they would not doe it, the Christians should effethem very cruelly, and carry them for slaves into farre and remote Countries. To this L11111 2

Ingratefull

. THE BIG.

they answered the Interpreter, that they would become very good Christians, and serue God. And demanding of them, whom they adored, and to whom they facrificed, and of whom they asked water for their feede time, and health and fafety for themselues; they answered, the they praied voto a man which is in heauen, and being demanded how they called him, they faid Aguar; and they believed that he created all the world, and the things therein. Then wee questioned them further, whence they knew that, who answered, that their Parents told them fo, and that of a long time they understood it, and knew that he fent water, and all other good things. So wee caused the Interpreter to tell them, that hee whom they called Aguar, we called God, and that they also should call him so, and serue him, and adore him, as we had appointed, and they should finde it very good for them. They answered, that they understood all ve- in ry well, and that they would doe fo; wherefore wee commanded them to descend from the Mountaines, and that they should live secure and in peace, and dwell in the Country, and build their houses, and among them make a house for God, and fet a Croffe at the entry thereof like vnto that which we had there : and when the Christians should come, they should goe to meete them with the Croffe, without Bowes and weapons, and conduct them to their houses, and give them such as they had to eate, and so they would not doe them any harme, but would become their friends: and the Captaine gave them some of the Mantles, and yied them very well. So they departed, carrying with them the two Indians, which before were prifoners, whom we had fent as Meffengers, and all this was done in the prefence of the Secretary of the Gouernour, and many other witnesses. Now when the Indians were returned, all 20 the rest of that Province, who were friends vnto the Christians, came to see vs. and brought vs Crownes and Feathers, and wee commanded them to make Churches, and fet Croffes there, because vitill then they had not made them, and wee made them bring the children of the principall Seigniory to Baptile them : whereupon the Captaine prefently made a vowe and promife vnto God, neither to make nor causeany entry to be made vpon them, nor take slaves or people in those Countries, which we had secured, and that he would observe this, vntill your Maiefty or the Gouernour Nunez di Guzman, or the Viceroy in his name, should provide better for the feruice of our Lord God, and of your Maiefty.

Christianity shall not be so difficult a matter to bring in, because two thousand leagues which we traugaled by land and Sea, and other ten moneths, after we came out of captuitie, we traugiled w: thout ftay, and neuer found Sacrifices nor Idolatry. In this time, we croffed ouer from one Sea to another, and by the notice, which through much diligence wee procured to have, from the one coast to the other, wee suppose it to be about two hundred leagues broad and more, and wee understand that on the coast of the South Sea are Pearles and great riches, and that all the best and richest are necrethere abouts. We abode in the towne of Saint Michael, vntill the fifteenth of the moneth of May, and the occasion why we staied there so long was this, because from thence vnto the Citie of Compostella, where the Gouernour Namez de Guzman made hisrefidence, it was 100.leagues distance; and the Country was not inhabited & enemy, and it was fit, that other people hould go with ve to conduct vs, among whom there were forty horiemen, who accompanied vs about fortie leagues, and from thence forward, fix Christians came with vs, who 40 brought five hundred Indian flaves, and being come to Compostella, the Governour Nunez receined vs very curteoufly, and gaue vs fuch as he had to cloath vs, which apparell for many dayes, I was not able to carry, and wee could not sleepe but on the ground. And so after tenne or He alfo de cri- twelue dayes wee departed for Mexico, and came thither on Saint lanes his euen, where the Viceroy and the Marquelle of the Valley kindely intreated vs , and gaue vs apparell and whattoeuer they had.

To the Reader.

Aptaine Soto was the some of a Squire of Xerez of Badaioz. Hee went into the Spanish Indies when Peter Arias of Auila was Gonernour of the West Indies: And there be was without any thing else of his owne, sane his Sword and Target: and for his good qualities and valour, Peter Arias made him Captaine of a troope of hor semen, and by his commandment he went with Fernando Pizarto to the conquest of Peru : where (as many persons of credit reported, which were there present) as well at the taking of Atabalipa, Lord of Petu, at at the affault of the Citie of Cuico, and in all other places where they found resistance, where some the was present, be surpassed all other Captaines and principal persons. For which cause, besides his part of the treasure of Atabalipa, he bad a good share : whereby in time hee Booke: which gashered an hundred and fourescore thousand Duckets together, with that which fell to his part; which 60 being no part be brought into Spaine : whereof the Emperour borrowed a certaine part, which he repaired againe with of Florida dif- 60000. Rials of Plate in the rent of the Silkes of Granada, and all the reft was delivered him in the Concourty, I have tractation boufe of Stuil. From Stuil be went to the Court, and in the Court, there accompanied him John Danusco of Siuil, and Lewis Moscoso D'aluarado, Nunno de Touar, and John Rodriguez Lobillo.

200, leagues betwixt the coast of the South Seas.

He could not weare apparell for many daics the ground. beth his voiage to Spaine,

Except John Danusco, all the rest came with him from Peru; and enery one of them brought sourceene or Except John Danulco, at the rest came with own strong returning the energy one of toem or rengest source teem or None of those of fifteen thousand Duckets: all of them went well and costs, apparelled. And although Sotto of his owne men prospeced men prospeced Present town and therall, get because that was the first time that he was to shew himselfe in the Court, be which were mainre was not and went accompanied with those which I have named, and with his servants, and many guilty of Acad Bent franchly, and went accompanied with those which were Pent Francis, and and the married with Donna Habella de Bouadille, daughter of Peter Arias belija or Ausather which reforted unto him. He married men Donna Inquesia at Bouautte, mangiors of the file of C. ba, and halpas death:
of Auila, Earle of Punno en Roitto. The Emperour made him the Gonernour of the Isle of C. ba, and halpas death:
but by civil of Aulia, Larie of Luthus of Florida; with a title of Marquesse of certaine part of the lands that bee wars or other-

proma conquer.

The History partly for better knowledge of ibose parts of the world and partly for the profit of Virmend Andio
to ginian adventurers, and a sewerers, I have here publified for briefer then the author on Portuguic and it happened to out of him Master Hakluyt) had done; and added this to that of Neruaz. Cabeza de Vaca the Anther of that at this time had come to the Court to beg the conquest of Florida : but feeing Don Ferdi- Cabezade Vaca nando de Soto bad gotten it already for his outbes fake, be faid, he might tell nothing of that which they was the Gouernanco de Jou una gusen mour of the R. would know. Soto made him great offers : and being agreed to goe with him, because he would not give uer of Place. him moves to pay for a Ship, which be had bought, they brake off, and be went for Gonernour to the Rsnim money to pay for mount, and the spindola, and Baltalar de Gallegos went with Soto. Thefe with Sete into mer of the same and enroled, which Soto lived and accepted of, and did accompany him into Flo- Florida. The rida; which were in all fix hundred men. He had aiready hough seven Shipa, and had all necessary pro- in his large sto-

misson abourd them. ston about them. In the yeare of our Lord 1538, in the moneth of Aprill, the Adelantado delinered his Shippes to the sign containing Captaines which were to goe in them. They arrived at Saint lago in Cuba on Whisfunday. The Citie he had tooo. of 1200 hath eightie houles which are great and well contrined. The most part have the wals made of men with him. boords, and are covered with thatch; it hath some bowses builded with lime and stone, and covered with tiles. It hath great Orchards and many trees in them, differing from those of Spaine: there be Figge. Great Figs. trees which beare Figges as big as ones fift, je low within, and of small tafte; and other trees which beare fruite which they call Aranes, in making and bigneffe the to a small Pineapple : it is a fruit very sweete Anance. fruite which they call Ananes, in making and vigneise the to a small true apple : us a new very sweets Great Pine-in taste: the shell being taken away, the hernell is like a pooce of fresh cheefe. In the granges abroad in apples. the Countrie there or other great Pincaples, which grow on low trees, and ore just to "Alestree: they are of a very good finell and exceeding good safes. Other trees doe beave a frame, which they call 30 Mameis of the bigueffe of Peachet. Thu the Islanders doe hold for the best fruit of the country. There Mameis, an

is another fruit which they call Guayabas like Filberds, as bigge as figges. There are other trees as excellentimite birb as a faurline, basing one onely flock without any bourge, and the leases as long as a salting dort:

Gusyabas,

and the fruit is of the birnelle and fullion of a Cucumber, one bunch bearest tracts or their, and as they ripen the tree bendeth downwards with them: they are called in this Countrie Plantanes, and are of a Plantanes. good tafte, and ripen after they be gathered, but these are the better which ripen upon the tree it selfe: they beare fruit but once, and the tree being cut downe, there spring up others out of the but, which beare fruit the next yeare. There is another fruit, whereby many people are sustained, and chiefty the sames, which are called Batatas. These grow now in the Isls of Terzera, belonging to the Kingdome of Portugall, Batatas, or and they grow within the earth, and are like a fruit called lname, they have almost the taste of a Chest- Poracos. 40 nut. The Bread of this countrie is also made of rootes which are like the Batatas. And the flocke whereon

those rootes doe grow is like an Elder tree : they make their ground in little billocks, and in each of them The Castani they thrust foure or fine ftakes; and they gather the rootes a yeare and an halfe after they fet them. If any toot, one, thinking it is a Batata or Potato root, chauce to eate of it nener fo little, be is in great danger of death; which was seene by experience in a Soldier, which as some as he had caten a very little of one of those roots be died quickly. They prace the fe voots and frampe them, and founds them on a thing like a prefer the imperious that commends from shorm is of an emit front. The Bread is of little taite and leff fulfiance. Of the fruits of Spaine there are Figs and Oranges, & they beare fruit all the yeare because the foile is very ranke and Horics. fruitfull. In this Countrie are many good Horfes, and there is greene graffe all the yeare. There be many wilde Oxen and Hogs, whereby the people of the Island is well furnished with flesh : Without the townes a-

50 broad in the Countrie are many fruits. And it bappeneth sometimes that a Christian goeth ont of the way and is lost fifteene or twenty daies, because of the many paths in the thicke grows that crosse to or fro made by the Oxen: and being thus loft they fuit aine themselnes with fruits and palmitos: for there be many great groues of Palme trees through all the Island; they yeelde no other fruite that is of any profit. The like of Cuba is 300 leagues long from the East to the West, and is in some places 30 in others 40 leagues from The length North to South. It hath fix towns of Christians : to wit, S. Iago, Baracoa, Bayamo, Puerto de Princi- or Cuba. pes, S. Espirito, and Hauana. Enery one bath betweene thirty and forty housholds, except S. Iago and Hauana, which have about fixtie or eightie houses. They have Churches in each of them, and a Chaplen which confesset bem and faith Masse. In S. 1290 is a Monasterie of Franciscan Friers : it hathbut few Friers, and is well provided of almes, because the Commerce is rich : The Church of S. Iago hash bonest renemen, 60 and there is a Curat and Probends and many Priests, as the Church of that Citie, which is the chiefe of

all the Island. There is in this Countrie much Gold, and few saues to get it: For many have made away themselves , because of the Christians evill Viage of them in the Mmes . A Steward of Valques A wittie stra-Porcallo, which was an inhibitour in that Island, understanding that his slaues would make away themfelues, flated for them with a cudgell in his hand at the place where they were to meete, and told them,

This Preface is contained more at large in the fixe first Chapters of

that they could weither doe nor thinke any thing, that bee did not know before, and that bee came thither to kill him felf: with them, to the end, that if he had ved them hadly in this World, hee might ve them. worfe in the World to come: And this was a meane that they changed their purpofe, and turned home a. gaine to doe that which be commanded them.

CHAP. IIa

FERDINANDO de SOTO his Voyage to Florida and Discouerie of the Regions in that Consinent: with the I rauels of the Spaniards foure yeeres together therein, and the accidents which befell them: poritten by a Portugall of the Company, and bere contracted.

SOTOS entrance into Florida, taking of IOHN ORTIZ one of Naruaz his company, comming to Paracoffy, and divers other Caciques, with accidents

N Sunday the eighteenth of May, in the yeere of our Lord 1539. the Adelantado

or President departed from Hanana in Cuba with his fleet, which werenine vef-

fels, fine great shippes, two Carauels, and two Brigantines : They sayled seuen

Pasca de Spirito Santo (which we call Whitfon Sunday) they faw the Land of 30

a dayes with a profeerous wind. The five and twentieth day of May, the day de

Floride : and because of the shoalds, they came to an anchor a league from the

Trea Garcilaffe de la Veza hath writ en a fto y of chis youage. He faith Sate had with him 950. fouldiers, had enterrais ned for the conquest of Florida, and This Aurhor hath but 600.

> The Towns lu:.c.

Towne of

Villa

shoare. On Friday the thirtieth of May they landed in Floreda, two leagues from a Towne of an Indian Lord, called Vena, They fet on Land two hundred and thirteene Horfes, which they Dendes Mari-ners, which he brought with them, to vnburden the ships, that they might draw the lesse water. He landed all his men, and only the Seamen remained in the things, which in eight daies, going vo with the tide euerie day a little, brought them vp voto the Towne. Affoone as the people were come on shore, he pitched his Campe on the Sea fide, hard you the Bay which went vp vnto the Towne. And pretently the Captaine Generall Vafques Percallo with other leuen Horlemen foraged the Countrie halte a league round about, and found fixe Indians, which refifted him with their Arrowes, from Saint La- which are the weapons which they vie to fight with all : The Horiemen killed two of them, 40 and the other foure escaped; because the Countries cumbersome with Woods and Bogs, where the Horses stacke fast, and fell with their Riders, because they were weake with travelling spon the Sea. The same night following the Gouernour with an hundred men in the Brigantines came vpto the lighted vpon a Towne, which he found without people, because, that assoone as the Christians had light of Land, they were descried, and law along the Coast many smokes, which the Indians had made to give advice the one to the other. The next day Luys de Mofcofo, Master of the Campe fet the men in order, the Horsemen in three Squadrons, the Vantgard, the Batalian, and the R-reward : and so they marched that day, and the day following, compassing great Creekes which came out of the Bay : They came to the Towne of Vena, where the Gouernout was, on Sunday the first of June, being Trinitie Sunday. The Towne was of seuen or eight houses. The 50 Lords house frood neere the shoare vpon a very high Mount, made by hand for strength. At another end of the Towne flood the Church, and on the top of it flood a towle made of wood with gilded ries. Here we found some Pearles of small value, spoiled with the fire, which the Indians doe pierce and ftring them like Beads, and weare them about their neckes and hand-wrifts, and they efteeme them very much. The houses were made of Timber, and covered with Palme

From the Towns of Voica the Gouernour fent Alcalde Maior Baltafar de Gallegor with fortie Horièmen and eightie Footmen into the Countrie to fee if they could take any Indoes: and the Captaine lobn Rodriguez Lobillo another way with fiftie Fuotmen. lobn Rodriguez Lobillo returned to the Campe with fixe men wounded, whereof one died, and brought the toure ladae 60 women, which Baltafur Gallegos had taken in the Cabbins or Cottages. Two Iraques from the Towne; comming into the plaine field, he espied ten or eleven Indians, among whom was a Chris Bian, which was naked and foorched with the Sunne, and had his armies razad after the manner of the Indians, and differed nothing at all from them. And alloone as the Horsemen law them

they ranne toward them. The Indians fled, and some of them hid themselves in a Wood, and they overtooke two or three of them which were wounded and the Christian seeing an Horseman runne vpon him with his Lance, began to crie out, Sirs, I am a Christian, slay here not, northe lindians, for they have faved my life. And straight way hee called them, and putchem out offeare, and they came forth of the Wood vnto them. The Horsemen tooke both the Christian and the Indians up behind them; and toward night came into the Campe with much ioy; which thing being knowne by the Gouernour, and them that remained in the Campe, they were re-This Christians name was John Ortiz, and hee was borne in Smill, of Worthipfull Parentage. Inha Ortiz, and

10 He was twelve yeares in the hands of the Indians, He came into this Countrie with Pamphilade, ued 12 years, Hewas twelue yeeres in the hands or the smanns The terms into this Countries with a mong the Names and returned in the ships to the lland of Cube, where the Wife of the Governoor Pam-Plantages of the Narnace, was and by his commandement with twentie or thirtie other in a Brigandine, Veita and Mareturned backe againe to Florida: and comming to the Port in the fight of the Fowne, on the shoare they faw a Cane sticking in the ground, and riven at the top, and a Letter in it cand they. Nature, beleeued that the Gouernour had left it there to give advertitement of himfelfe when hee refolued to goe up into the Land : and they demanded it of four eor flue Indians, which walked along the Sea shoare : and they bal them by signes to come on shoare for it : which against the will of the rest lobs Ortic and another did. And associated were on the Land, from the houfes of the Towne issued a great number of Indians, which compassed them about, and tooke them

20 in a place where they could not flee; and the other which fought to defend himselfe, they prefently killed upon the place and tooke lobn Ortiz aline, and carried him to Veine their Lord. And those of the Brigandine fought not to land, but pur themselves to Sea, and returned to the the lland of Cuba. Vesta commanded to bind lohn Orriz hand and foot vpon foure stakes aloft vpon a rafe, and to make a fire vnder him, that there he might bee burned : But a daughter of his defired him that he would not put him to death, alleaging, that one only Christian could do him neither hurt nor good, telling him, that it was more for his honour to keepe him as a Captine. And Ucus granted her request, and commanded him to bee cured of his wounds : and affoone as he was whole, he gaue him the charge of the keeping of the Temple : because that by night the Wolves did carrie away the dead corples out of the fame : who commended himselfe to God and

30 tooke you him the charge of his Temple. One night the Wolues gate from him the corples of a little child, the Sonne of a principall Indian; and going after them he threw a Dart avone of the Wolves, and strooke him that carried away the corps, who feeling himselfe wounded, left it, and fell downe dead neere the place; and hee not woting what he had done, because it was night, went backe agains to the Temple : the morning being come, and finding not the bodie of the childe, he was very lad. Alloone as Vous knew thereof, he resoluted to put him to death; and fent by the tract, which hee faid the Wolues went, and found the bodie of the childe, and the Wolfe dead a little beyond; whereat Voita was much contented with the Christian; and with the watch which heekept in the Temple, and from thence forward effeemed him much. Three yeeres after he fell into his hands, there came another Lord called Mocogo, whodwelleth two

49 daies journey from the Port, and burned his Towne. Vens fled to another Towne that he had in journie from another Sea Port. Thus Iohn Ortizloft his office and fauour that he had with him. These people Vina being worth ppers of the Deuill, are wont to offer vp vnto him the lines and bloud of their Indian or of any other people they can come by: and they report, that when hee will have them Humane Sadoe that Sacrifice vnto him, he speaketh with them, and telleth them that hee is athirst, and crifice. willerh them to facrifice vnto him. Iohn Ortiz had noticeby the Damofell that had deliuered him from the fire, how her father was determined to facrifice him the day following, who willed him to flee to Mocogo : for the knew that he would vie him well : for the heard fay, that he had asked for him, and faid he would be glad to fee him: and because he knew not the way, she went with him halte a league out of the Towne by night, and fet him in the way, and returned be-

50 cause the would not be discourred. Iohn Ortiz travelled all that night, and by the morning came A Rivers vnto a River, which is in the Territorie of Mococo. Three or foure Indians carried the newes to their Lord : who came forth a quarter of a league from the Towne to receive him; and was very glad of him. He caused him presently to sweare according to the custome of the Christians, that he would not runne away from him to any other Lord : and promited him to entreate him very well; and that if at any time there came any Christians into that Countrie, he would freely let him goe, and give him lease to goe to them : and likewife tooke his oath to performe the fame according to the Indian custome. He dwelt with Mossco nine yeeres, with small hope of seeing any Christians. Alloone as our Gouernour arrived in Florida, it was knowne to Mococo, and Braightway he fignified to lobn Ortiz, that Christians were lodged in the Towne of Veita. And

60 Mosogo gaue him ten or eleven principal Indians to heate him company and as they went to the P. rt where the Gouernour was, they met with Baltafar de Gallegos, as I have declared before. Affoone as hee was come to the Campe, the Gouernour commanded to give him a fute of appatell, and very good Armour, and a faire Horie; and enquired of him, whether hee had notice of any Countrie where there was any Gold or Siluer ! He answered, No, because hee neuer went

Para:071 30. leagues from Parte de Stirito Santo.

Paracoli.

Cale.

ten leagues compasse from the place where he dwelt : But that thirty leagues from thence dwele an Indian Lord, which was called Parocoffi, to whom Mosogo and Voica, with all the rest of the Goaft payed Tribute, and that he peraduenture might have notice of some good Countrie: and that his Land was better then that of the Sea-coalt, and more fruitfull and plentifull of Maiz Whereof the Governour received great contentment; and faid that hee defired no more then to find victuals, that he might goe into maine Land, for the Land of Florida, was fo large, that in one place or other there could not choose but bee some Countrie. The Carique Morogo came to the Port to vifit the Gou mour.

The Gouernour answered him, That although in freeing and sending him the Christian, he had - professed his honour and promise, yet he thanked him, and held it in such esteeme, as it had no Id comparison; and that he would alwayes hold him as his Brother, and would fauour him in all things to the vtmost of his power. Then he commanded a shirt to be given him, and other things wherewith the Cacique being very well contented, to his leave of him, and departed to his

- was owne Towne. From the Port de Spirito Santo where the Gouernour lay, he fent the Alcalde Maior Baltalas de Gallego: with fittle Horlemen, and thirtie or fortie Footmen to the Prouince of Paracoff, to view the disposition of the Countrie, and informe himselfe of the Land farther inward . and to fend him word of fuch things as he found. Likewise he sent his ships backe to the Hand of Cs. ba, that they might returne within a certaine time with victuals. Vasques Porcallo de Fisnerea. which went with the Gouernour as Captaine Generall; (whose principall intent was to fend flaues from Flarida, to the Iland of Cuba, where he had his goods and Mynes) having made some In-rodes, and freing no Indians were to be got, because of the great Bogges and thicke Woods that were in the Countrie, confidering the disposition of the same, determined to returne to Caba, And shough there was some difference betweene him and the Gouernour, whereupon they neither deals nor connerfed together with good countenance, yet notwithstanding with louise words hee asked him leave and departed from him. Baltafar de Gallegos came to the Paracolli: There came to him thirty Indians from the Cacique, and faid, that their Lord was ill at eafe, and therefore could not come, but that they came on his behalfe to fee what he demanded. Hee asked them if they knew or had notice of any rich Country where there was Gold or Silver. They told them they slid : and that toward the West, there was a Prouince which was called Cale; and that others that inhabited other Countries had warre with the people of that Countrie, where the most part of the yeere was Summer, and that there was much Gold : and that when those their enemies came to make warre with them of Cale, these Inhabitants of Cale did weare hat of Gold, in manner of Head-pieces. Baltafar de Gallegos, feeing that the Cacique came not, thinking all that they faid was fained, with intent that in the meane time they might fet themfelues in laftetie, fearing, that if he did let them goe, they would returne no more, commanded the thirtie Indians to be chained, and fent word to the Gouernour by eight Horsemen what had paffed whereof the Gouernour with all that were with him, at the Port de Spirato Santo received great comfort, supposing that that which the Indians reported, might be true. Hee left Captains Calderan at the Port, with thirtie Horfemen and feuentie Footmen , with prouision for two go weeres, and himselfe with all the rest marched into the mayne Land, and came to the Paracossi, at whole Towne Batafar de Gallegos was : and from thence with all his men tookethe way to Cale. He passed by a little Towne called Acela, and came to another called Tocaste : and from thence he went before with thirtie Horsemen, and fiftie Footmen toward Cale. And passing by a Towne, whence the people were fled, they faw Indians a little from thence in a Lake; to whom the Interpretor spake. They came vnto them and gaue them an Indian for a guide : and hee came to a River with a great current, and vpon a Tree, which was in the midft of it, was Aiwift Riuer. made a Bridge, whereon the men pailed : the Hories fwamme over by a Hawfer, that they were pulled by from the otherfide: for one which they droue in at the first without it, was drowned, From thence the Gouernour sent two Hossemen to his people that were behind, to make halle 50 after him; because the way grew long, and their victuals short. He came to Cale, and found the Towns without people. He tooks three Indians which were Spies, and tarried these for his people that came after, which were fore vexed with hunger and euill wayes, because the Countrie was very barren of Maiz, low, and full of water, bogs, and thicke woods; and the victuals, which they brought with them from the Port de Spirito Santo, were fpent. Wheretoeuer any Towne was found, there were some Beets, and he that came first gathered them, and sodden with water and falt, did eate them without any other thing; and fuch as could not get them, gather red the stalkes of Maiz and eate them, which because they were young had no Maiz in them. When they came to the River which the Governour had passed, they tound Palmitos vpon low Palme-trees like those of Andaluzia. There they met with the two Horsemen which the Go- 62 uernour fent vnto them, and they brought newes that in (ale there was plentie of Maiz; at which newes they all reioyced. Affoone as they came to Cale, the Governour commanded them

to gather all the Maiz that was ripe in the field, which was furicient for three moneths. At

the gathering of it the Indians killed three Christians, and one of them which were taken told

the Governour, that within feuen dayes journey, there was a very great Province, and plentifull of Maiz, which was called Apalache. And prefently hee departed from Cale with fiftie Horsemen, and fixtie Footmen. He left the Master of the Campe Luys de Moscoso with all the rest of the people there, with charge that he should not depart thence untill he had word from him. And because hitherto none had gotten any slaves, the bread that every one was to eate, hee was faine himfelfe to beate in a Morter made in a piece of Timber with a Pettle, and some of them Trauelling did fift the flowre through their fhirts of Mayle. They baked their bread vpon certaine Tile- Souldiers fhifts shares which they fet ouer the fire. It is so troublesome to grinde their Maiz, that there were for bread. many that would rather not eat it, then grind it: and did eate the Maiz parched and fodden.

The eleuenth day of August 1539, the Gouernour departed from Cale; hee lodged in a little The elementh day of August 1539, the Course and Charles and the third day at Vinama, and Trava.

Townecalled Tiara, and the next day in another called Posano, and the third day at Vinama, and came to another Towne, which they named the Towne of Eaill peace; because an Indian came in Polano. came to another Towne, which they named the Towne of Lanu peace, level of the Cacique, and that he with his people would ferue the Gouernour, The Towne of and that if he would let free eight and twentie persons, men and women, which his men had tathe night before, he would command provision to be brought him, and would give him a guide to infructhim in his way : The Gouernour commanded them to befet at libertie, and to keepe him in fafegard. The next day in the morning there came many Indians, and fet themselves round about the Towne neere to a Wood. The Indian wisted them to carrie him neere them : and that he would speake vnto them, and affure them, and that they would doe what soeuer he comman-

ao ded them. And when he faw himfelte neere vnto them he brake from them, and ranne away fo (wiftly from the Christians, that there was none that could overtake him, and all of them fled into the Woods. The Gouernour commanded to loofe a Greyhound, which was alreadie fleshed Greyhound on them, which passing by many other Indians, caught the counterfeit Cacique, which had ef- catchesh the capel from the Christians, and held him till they came to take him. From thence the Gouer-fugitive. nour lodged at a Towne called Cholupaha: and because it had flore of Marz in it, they named it Cholupaha. Villa forta. Beyond the fame there was a River, on which he made a Bridge of Timber, and tra- A River. uelled two daies through a defert. The feuenteenth of August, he came to Caliquen, where hee Caliquen. was informed of the Province of Apalache: They told him that Pamphilo de Narnaez had beene there, and that there he tooke shipping, because he could find no way to goe forward: That there 30 was none other Towne at all; but that on both fides was all water. The whole company were verie fad for these newes; and counselled the Gouernour to goe backe to the Port de Spirite San-

to and to abandon the Countrie of Florida, left he should perith as Warnaez had done : declaring. that if he went forward, he could not returne backe when he would, and that the Indians would gather vp that small quantitie of Maiz which was left. Whereunto the Gouernour answered, that he would not goe backe, till he had feene with his eies that which they reported : faying, that he could not beleeve it, and that wee should be put out of doubt before it were long, And he fent to Luys de Moscoso to come presently from Calo, and that hee tarried for him heere. Luys de Mofcofo and many others thought, that from Apalache they should returne backe; and in Calo they buried their Iron Tooles, and divers other things. They came to Calignen with great trouao ble; because the Countrie, which the Gouernour had passed by, was spoiled and destitue of Maiz.

After all the people were come together, he commanded a Bridge to bee made over a River that passed neere the Towne. Hee departed from Calignen the tenth of September, and carried the A River. Cacique with him. After hee had trauelled three dayes, there came Indians peaceably, to visit their Lord, and enery day met vs on the way playing vpon Flutes: which is a token that they yle, that men may know that they come in peace. They faid, that in our way before was there a Cacique, whose name was Vzachil, a Kinsman of the Cacique of Caliquen their Lord , wayting for him with many prefents, and they defired the Gouernour that hee would loofe the Cacique. But hee would not , fearing that they would rife , and would not give him any Guides, and fene them away from day to day with good wordes. 50 He travelled fine daies, passed by some small Townes, came to a Towne called Napetnea, the fif- Some small teenth day of September. There were thirtie or fortie Indians flaine. The reft fled to two very Townes.

great Lakes, that were somewhat distant the one from the other: There they were swimming, Mapetucaand the Christians round about them. The Calienermen and Croffe-bowmen shot at them from the banke; but the diffance being great, and shooting afarre off, they did them no hurt. The Gouernour commanded that the tame night they should compasse one of the Lakes, because they were fo great, that there were not men enow to compaffe them both : beeing belet, affoone as night that in, the Indians, with determination to runne away, came I wiraming very foftly to the banke; and to hide them blues, they pur a water Lilly leafe on their heads. The Horfemen affoone as they perceived it to ftirre, ranne into the water to the Horses breafts, and the Indians fled a-

6) gaine into the Lake. So this night passed without any rest on both sides. Iohn Orriz perswaded them, that feeing they could not escape, they should yeeld themselves to the Governour : which they did, enforced thereunto by the coldnesse of the water; and one by one, hee first whom the cold did first ocercome, cried to lobn Ortiz, desiring that they would not kill him, for he came to put himfelfe into the hands of the Gouernour. By the morning watch they made an end of yeel-

Indian Subtlety,

Totale.

Another

Towner

A Lake.

Caie.

A new Conipiracie,

ding themselves : only twelve principall men, being more honourable and valorous then the reft refolved rather to die then to come into his hands. And the Indians of Faracoffi, which were now loofed out of chaines, went fwimming to them, and pulled them out by the haire of their heads, and they were all put inchaines, and the next day were divided among the Christians for their feruice. Being thus in captilitie, they determined to rebell; and gaue in charge to an Indian, which was Interpretor, and held to bee valuant, that affoone as the Gouernour did come to speake with him, hee should cast his hands about his necke, and choake him. Who, when he faw opportunitie, laid hands on the Gouernor, and before he cast his hands about his nocke, he gave him fuch a blow on the notirils, that he made them guth out with bloud, and presently all the rest did rise. He that could get any weapons at hand or the 1 andle wher withhe Io did grind the Maiz, fought to kill his Mafter, or the first hee met before him : a..d hee that could get a Lance or Sword at hand, bestirred himselse in such fort with it, as though he had vsed it all his life time. One Indian in the Ma ket place enclosed betweene fifteene or twentie Footmen. made away like a Bull with a Sword in his hand, till certaine Halbardiers of the Gouernor came. which killed him. Another gat vp with a Lance to a loft made of Canes, which they build to keepe their Maizin, which they call a Barbacea, and there he made fuch a noy fe, as though tenne men had beene there defending the doore : they flue him with a partifan. The Indians were in all about two hundred men. They were all fubdued. And some of the youngest the Gouernour gaue to them which had good chaines, and were carefull to looke to them that they gat not away. All the test becom named to be put to death, being tyed to a stake in the midst of the Market place: 10 and the Lidians of the Paracoffi did shoot them to death.

Two bundred Ingiam tag.n.

A Ruer.

Haralant a great Towns. VruchiL. * Aboboras.

The Gove nour departed from Naprines the three and twentieth of September : hee lodged by a React, where two Indians brought him a Bucke from the Cacique of Vzachil. The next day he pailed by a great To was called Hapalaya; and lodged at Vzachil, and found no people in it, because they durit not tarrie for the notice the Indians had of the flaughter of Napetuca. Hee found in that Towns great store of Maiz. French Beanes and * Pompions, which is their food, and that wherewich the Christians there tuftained themselves. The Maiz is like course Millet. and the Pumpions are better and more fauourie then thole of Spaine, From thence the Governour fear two Captaines each a fundry way to feeke the Indians. They tooke an hundred men and women; of which aswell there as in other places where they made any inrodes, the Captain 30 chose one or two for the Gouernour, and divided the rest to himselse, and those that went with him. They led thefe Indians in chaines with Iron collars about their neckes; and they ferued to carrie their fluffe, and to grind their Maiz wand for other feruices that fuch Captines could doe. Sometimes it happened that going for wood or Maiz with them, they killed the Christian that led them, and ranne away with the chaine : orhers filed their chaines by night with a piece of ftone, wherewith they cut them, and vie it in flead of Iron. Those that were perceiued paid for themselves, and for the rest, because they should not dare to doe the like another time. The women and young boyes, when they were once an hundred leagues from their Countrie, and had forgotten things, they let goe loofe, and so they terued; and in a very short space they vaderflood the Language of the Christians. From Vzachil the Gouernour departed toward Apalach, 10 and in two dayes sourney, he came to a Towne called Axille, and from thence forward the Indians were careleffe, because they had as yet no notice of the Christians. The next day in the morning, the first of October, he departed from thence, and commanded a Bridge to be made our a

A Riner. Directure.

Axille.

Olieberas. Ann. 14 . 17 6 14-

or the body The Sea.

River which he was to paffe. The Gouernour passed upon Wednesday, which was Saint Francis his day, and lodged at a Towns which was called Vitachneo, fubicat to Apalache: he found it burning; for the Indians had fet it on fire. From thence forward the Countrie was much inhabited, and had great flore of Maiz. He pissed by many Granges like Hamlets. On Sunday the fine and twentieth of October, he came to a Towne, which is called Uzela, and vpon Tuelday to Anaica Apalace, where the Lord of all that Countrie and Prouince was refident : in which Towne the Campenalter, whose office it is to quarter out and lodge men, did lodge all the company round about within a league and halte a league of it. There were other Townes, where was great store of Maiz, Pompions, French Beanes, and Plummes of the Countrie, which are better then thele of Spans, and they grow in the fields without plantin. The victuals that were thought necessary to passe the Winter, were gathered from thele Townes to Anaica Apalache. The Governour was intotmed, that the Sea was ten leagues from thence. He presently sent a Captaine thither with Horiemen and Footmen: And lixe leagues on the way he found a Towne, which was named Ochete, and to came to the Sea, and found a great tree felled, and cut it into peeces, with takes let up like mangers, and law the skuls of horfes. He returned with this newes. And that was held for certains, which was reported of Pamphilo de Narwaez, that there he had builded the barkes where with he went out of the land of Florida, and was cast away at Sea. Presently the Governour fent Iohn Danufco with thirty horiemen to the port de Spiritu Santo, where Calderan was, with order shat they should abandon the port, and all of them come to Apalache. He departed on Saturday the feuenteenth of Nouember. In Ozachil and other towner that flood in the way hee

found great store of people already carelesse. He would take none of the Indians for not hindring himselfe, because it behooved him to give them no leasure to gather themselves together; Hee passed through the Townes by night, and rested without the Townes three or some houres. In The Port de ten daies he came to the Port de Spirito Sauto. Hee carried with him twenty Indian women, Spiritus and which he tooke in Tears, and Potano, neere wnto Cale, and fent them to Donna Ifabella, in the two nie from Afa-Carauchs, which he fent from the Port de Spirito Santo to Cuba. And he carried all the footemen labe. in the Brigandines, and coatting along the shoare, came to Apalache. And Calderan with the horsemen, and some crossebow-men on foote went by land; and in some places the Indians set vpon him, and wounded fome of his men. As foone as he came to Apalache, prefently the Go-

to uernour fent fawed plankes and spikes to the Sea side, wherewith was made a Piragna or Barke, wherein were embarked thirty men well armed, which went out of the Bay to the Sea, looking for the Brigandines. Sometimes they fought with the Indians, which passed along the harbour in their Canoes. Vpon Saturday, the twenty nine of Nouember, there came an Indian through the Watch undiscouered, and fee the Towns on fire, and with the great winds that blew two parts of it were confumed in ashort time. On Sunday the twenty eight of December came lobn Dannico with the Brigandines. The Gouernor fent Francisco Maldonado, a Captain offootmen, with fiftie men to discouer the coast Westward, &to seeke some Port, because he had determined to goe by land, &difcouer that part. That day there went out eight horiemen by commandement of the Gouernour into the field, two leagues about the Towne to feeke Indians : for they were 20 now so emboldened, that within two croffebow shot of the campe, they came & slew men. They

found two men and a woman gathering French Beanes: the men, though they might have fled, ver because they would not leave the woman, which was one of their wives, they resolved to die fighting : and before they were flaine, they wounded three horfes, whereof one died within a few daies after. Calderan going with his men by the Sea-coast, from a wood that was neere the place, the Indians (et upon him, and made him forfake his way, and many of them that went with him forfooke fome neceffary victuals, which they carried with them. Three or foure dayes after the limited time given by the Governor to Maldonado for his going and comming, being already determined and resolued, if within eight dayes he did not come, to tarry no longer for him, hee came, and brought an Indian from a Province, which was called Ochus, fixty leagues Westward Ochus sixtie 30 from Apalache, where he had found a good Port of good depth and defense against weather. And leagues West

because the Gouernor hoped to finde a good Countrie forward, he was very well contented. And he fent Maldonado for victuals to Hanana, with order, that hee would tarrie for him at the Port of Ochm, which he had discoursed, for he would goe seeke it by land : and if he should chance to flay, and not come thither that fummer, that then he should returne to Hanana, & should come againe the next summer after, and tarry for him at that Port: for he said he would doe none other thing but goe to feeke Ochus. Francisco Maldonado departed, and in his place for Captaine of the Chap. 11. footemen remained lobn de Guzman. Of those Indians which were taken in Napetuca, the treasurer Ishn Gartan had a wong man, which faid, that he was not of that Countrie, but of another far off toward the Sunriving, and that it was long fince he had travelled to fee Countries; and that his

40 Countrie was called Tapaba, and that a woman did gouerne it: and that the Towne where shee was refident was of a wonderfull bignesse, and that many Lords round about were tributaries to her ; and some gaue her clothes, and others Gold in abundance : and he told, how it was taken out of the Mines, and was moulten & refined, as if he had feene it done, or the Diuell had taught Abundance of it him. So that all those which knew any thing concerning the same, said that it was impossible Gold. to give fo good a relation, without having feene it: And all of them, as if they had feene it, by the fignes that he gaue, beleeved all that he faid to be true.

On Wednesday the third of March, of the yeere 1540, the Gouernour departed from . naire Apalache to feeke Tupaha. He commanded his men to goe prouided with Maiz for fixtie leavies of defert. The horizmen carried their Maiz on their horfes, and the footemen at their fides : because the Indians that were for service, with their miserable life that they lead that win- Death of Is-50 ter, being naked and in chaines, died for the most pare. Within foure dayes iourney they came diassifiauer. to a great River : and they made a piragua or ferrie boate, and because of the great current, they

made a cable with chaines, which they fastened on both sides of the River; and the ferrie boate went along by it, and the horfes fwam over, being drawne with capftans. Having paffed the River, in a day and a halfe they came to a Towne called Capachiqui. Vpon Friday, the eleventh of March, they found Indians in armes. The next day five Christians went to feeke morters, which the Indians have to beate their Maiz, and they went to certaine houses on the backe-fide of the Campe environed with a wood; and within the wood were many Indians which came to fpie vs; of the which came other fine and fet vpon vs. One of the Christi-

60 ans came running away, giving an alarme vnto the Campe: Those which were most ready anfwered the alarme. They found one Christian dead, and three fore wounded. The Indians fled vnto a lake adjoyning neere a very thicke wood, where the horses could not enter. The Gouera nour departed from Capachiani, and passed through a detert. On Wednesday the twenty one of the moneth he came to a Towne called Tealli : And from thence forward there was a diffe-Mmmmmm

A graffe like

lours.

Achefe.

rence in the houses. For those which were behinde vs were thatched with straw, and those of Toalli were covered with reedes, in manner of tiles. These houses are very clenly. Some of them had wals daubed with clay, which shewed like a mudwall. In all the cold Countries the Indiana have every one a house for the winter daubed with clay within & without, and the doores is ve. ry little; they flut it by night, and make fire within, to that they are in it as warme as in a flone: and fo it continueth all night that they neede not cloathes; and besides these, they have others for Summer; and their kitchins neere them, where they make fire and bake their bread; and they have barbacoas wherein they keepe their Maiz; which is an houle fet up in the aire upon four fiakes, boorded about like a chamber, and the floore of it is of cane hurdles. The difference which Lords or principall mens houses have from the rest, besides they be greater, is, that they have to great galleries in their fronts, & under them feates made of canes in manner of benches and round about them they have many lotts, wherein they lay vp that which the Indians doe give them for tribute, which is Maiz Deeres skins, and mantles of the Countrie, which are like blankets: they make them of the inner rinde of the barkes of trees & some of a kinde of grasse like voto nettles. which being beaten, is like vnto flaxe. The women couer themselves with these Mantles; they put one about them from the waste downeward; and another ouer their shoulder, with their right arme out, like vnto the Egyptians. The men weare but one Mantle vpon their shoulders after the same manner; and haue their secrets hid with a Deeres skin, made like a linnen breech. which was wont to be vied in Spains. The skins are well corried, and they give them whatcolour they lift, so perfect, that if it be red, it feemeth a very fine cloath in graine, and the blacke is 16 Excellent comost fine : and of the lameleather they make shooes; and they dye their Mantles in the same colours. The Gouernor departed from Toalis the foure and twentieth of March : he came on Thurfday at evening to a small River, where a bridge was made whereon the people passed, and Bent Fernandez a Portugall fell off from it, and was drowned. As soone as the Governour had passed A fmall River the River, a little diffance thence he found a Towne called Achefe. The Indians had notice of the Christians; they leaped into a River: some men and women were taken; among which was one that understood the youth which guided the Gouernour to Tapaba : whereby that which he had reported was more confirmed. For they had pasted through Countries of divers languages, and fome which he understood not. The Gouernour fent by one of the Indians that were taken to call the Cacique, which was on the other fide of the River. He came. The Governour told him that he was the Soune of the Sunne, and came from those parts where hee dwele, and travelled through that Countrie, and fought the greatest Lord, and richest Province that was in it. The Co-Sato pretends sique told him, that farther forward dwelt a great Lord, and that his dominion was called Ocen. so be the Son He gaue him a guide and an Interpreter for that Province. The Governour commanded his Isof the Sunne. dians to be fet free, and trauelled through his Countrie vp a Ruer very well inhabited. Hee de-Mannerof Spa. parted from his Towne the first of Aprill; and left a very high crosse of Wood set up in the midwell inhabited. niands praying. dest of the market place : and because the time gaue no more leasure, hee declared to him onely, that that croffe was a memoriali of the fame, whereon Chrift, which was God and man, and created the heavens and the earth, fuffered for our salvation : therefore he exhorted them that they (hould reuerence it : and they made shew as though they would doe so. The fourth of A-40 prill they passed by a Town called Altamaca, and the tenth of the moneth he came to Ocate. The Cacique fent him two thousand Indians with a present, to wit, many Conies, & Partridges, bread of Maiz, two Hens, and many Dogs: which among the Christians were effected as if they had beene fat Wethers, because of the great want of fielh meate and Salt, and hereof in many place, and many times was great neede; and they were so scarie, that if a man fell sicke, there was nothing to cherrish him withall; and with a fickneffe, that in another place easily might have been remedied, he confumed away till nothing but skinne and bones were left : and they died of pure weakenerie, some of them saying, If I had a slice of meate, or a few cornes of Salt, I should not dis. And because they were thus scanted of fielh, when fix hundred men that went with Sois, came to any Towns, and found thirty or forty Dogs, he that could get one and kill it, thought him-

Ocute. Conics, Partei ges, Hens, Dogges

Atemaca-

to carrie burdens : he palled through a Towne, the Lord whereof was name i Cofaqui, and came to a Prouince of an Indian Lord, called Patofa. This Countrie, from the first peaceable Cacique, voto the Province of Patofa, which were fiftie leagues, is a fat Countrie, Beautifull, and very fruitfull, and very well watered, and full of good Rivers. And from thence to the Port de Spirito Santo, where we first arrived in the land of Florida (which may be 350. leagues, little more or leffe) is a barren land, and the molt of it 60 groups of wilde Pine-trees, low and full of lakes, and in some places very high and thicke groups, whither the Indians that were in armes fled, so that no man could finde them, neither could any

telfe no small man : and he that killed it, and gaue not his Captaine one quarter, if he knewit,

he frowned on him, and made him feele it, in the watches, or in any other matter of labour that

was offered, wherein he might doe him a displeasure. On Monday, the twelch of Aprill, the Gouernour departed from Oeme: The Cacique gave him two hundred Tamenes, to wit, Indians

In the Towne of Parofa, the youth which the Gouernour carried with him for an Interpte

tour and a guide, began to fome at the mouth, and tumble on the ground, as one possessed with the Divell: They faid a Golpell over him; and the fit left him. And he faid, that foure daies journie from thence toward the Sunne riling, was the Province that hee spake of. The Indians of Patofa faid, that toward that part they knew no habitation; but that toward the Northwest. they knew a Prouince which was called Coco, a very plentifull Countrie, which had very great Townes in it. The Cacique told the Governour, that if he would goe thither, he would give him guides and Indians for burdens; and if he would goe whither the youth foake of, that hee would likewife give him those that he needed: and so with louing words and offers of courtesse, they tooke their leaves the one of the other. He gave him feven hundred Indians to beare burdens. He tooke Maiz for foure dayes journie. He trauelled fix daies by a path which grew narrow more and more, till it was loft altogether: He went where the youth did lead him, and passe two Rivers Rivers. which were waded : each of them was two croflebowshot ouer : the water came to the farrops. and had so great a current, that it was needefull for the horsemen to stand one before another. that the footemen might passe aboue them leaning vnto them. He came to another River of a greater current and largeneffe, which was passed with more trouble, because the horses did swim. Another great at the comming out about a lances length. Having passed this River, the Governour came to a ter River. groue of Pinetrees, and threatned the youth, and made as though hee would have cast him to the does because he had told him a lye, saving it was but foure daies journie, and they had travelled nine every day feven or eight leagues, and the men by this time were growne wearie and weake. and the horses leane through the great scanting of the Maiz. The youth faid, that he knew not where he was. It faued him that hee was not cast to the dogs, that there was neuer another whom Ishn Ortiz did understand. The Gouernour with them two, and with some horsemen and footemen, leaving the Campe in a grove of Pinetrees, travelled that day five or fix leagues

to feeke a way, and returned at night very comfortleffe, and without finding any figne of way or towne. The next day, the Gouernour fent other foure with as many horsemen that could fwim, to paffe the Ofe and Rivers which they should finde, and they had choise horses the best that were in the Campe. The Captaines were Baltafar de Galleges, which went vp the River; and lobn Danufco, downe the River : Alfonfo Romo, and Iohn Rodriguez Lobillo went into the inward parts of the land. The Gouernour brought with him into Florida thirteene Sowes. The great in-30 and had by this time three hundred Swine: Hee commanded enery man should have halfe a create of swine bound of Hogs flash energy day; and this he did three or foure dayes after the Maiz was spens.

With this small quantitie of flesh, and some sodden hearbes, with much trouble the people were fullained. John Danufco came on Sunday late in the evening, and brought newes that hee had founda little Towne twelve or thirteene leagues from thence; he brought a Woman and a Boy that he had tooke there. With his comming and with those newes, the Governour and all the rest were so glad, that they seemed at that instant to have returned from death to life. Vpon Monday, the twenty fix of Aprill, the Gouernour departed to goe to the Towne, which was called Aymay; and the Christians named it the Towns of Relufe. He left where the Campe had lien at the toote of a Pinetree a letter buried, and letters carued in the barke of the Pine, the 40 contents whereof was this: Digge here at the foot of this Pine and you shall finde a letter, And

this he did, because when the Captaines came, which were fent to feeke some habitation, they might fee the letter, and know what was become of the Gouernour, and which way hee was gone. There was no other way to the Towne, but the markes that Iohn Dannico left made vpon the trees. The Gouernour with some of them that had the best horses came to it on the Monday : And all the rest inforcing themselves the best they could, some of them lodged within two leagues of the Towne, some within three and foure, every one as he was able to goe, and his strength served him. There was found in the Towne a storehouse full of the slowre of parched Maiz; and fome Maiz, which was distributed by allowance, Here were foure Indians taken, and none of them would confesse any other thing, but that they knew of none other habitation. The Gouernor commanded one of them to be burned; and prefently another confessed, that two daies An Indian big

50 iournie from thence, there was a Prouince that was called Cutifa-Chiqui. V pon Wednesday came ned for his the Captaines Baltafar de Gallegos, Alfonfo Romo, and John Rodriguez Lobillo: for they had found the letter, and followed the way which the Gouernour had taken toward the towne. As soone as they came, he departed toward Cetifa-Chiqui. In the way three Indians were taken, which faid, that the Lady of that Countrie had notice already of the Christians, and stated for them in a Towns of hers.

Within a little while the Lady came out of the Towne in a Chaire, whereon certaine of the principall Indians brought her to the River. She entred into a Barge which had the Scerne tilted ouer, and on the floore her mat ready laied with two custions vpon it one vpon another, where (0 the far her downe; and with her came her principall Indians in other Barges, which did wait vpon her. She went to the place where the Gouernour was. She prefented vnto him great flore of A great concloathes of the Countrie, which the brought in other Canoes; to wit, Mantles and Skins; and donof Pearles tooke from her owne necke a great cordon of Pearles, and cast it about the necke of the Gouernour; entertaining him with very gracious speeches and courtesie, and commanded Canoes to

Mmmmmm 2

Cofaqui. Patofa.

An excellent fitte leagues. Barren CounThey paffe the Riuer.

Walnut trees. Mulbery trees for filke. The Sea two dayes journ.c Man-les of the backes of trees. Mantles of Feathers. Pearles found in graues,

Three hundred nintic two pounds of Pearles found.

This Towne was but two daicaionenie from the hanen of Santa Helena. In the yeers and a halfe,

> chiaha two lue daies iournie from Santa He lena: and Coffe feuen daies iournic from chiaha: at which towns of Cofte, they had an Oxe hide.Chap. 16.

and hath goodly Medows by the Ruers. Their woods are thin, & full of Walnut trees & Mulberry trees. They (a.d the Sea was two daies journy from thence. Within a league & halfe about this Towne were great Townes dispeopled, and overgrown with grasse; which shewed that they had been long without inhabitants. The Indians faid, that two yeers before there was a Plague in that Countrie, and that they removed to other Townes. There was in their store-houses great quantity of Clothes, Mantles of yarne made of the barkes of trees, and others made of Feathers, white. greene, red, and yellow, very fine after their vie, and profitable for winter. There were also many Deeres skins, with many compartiments traced in them, and some of them made into hofe. Io flockings, and shoors. And the Lady perceiving that the Christians esteemed the Pearles, aduifed the Gouernour to fend to fearch certaine graves that were in that Towne, and that he should finde many : and that if he would fend to the dispeopled Townes, he might loade all his Horses. They fought the groues of that Towne, and there round foureteene rooues of Pearles, and little Babies and Birds made of them. The people were browne, well made, and well proportioned. and more civill then any others that were seene in all the Countrie of Florida, and all of them went sho and cloathed. The youth told the Gouernour, that he began now to enter into the land which he spake of: and some credit was given him that it was so, because hee vinderstood the language of the Indians: and he requested that he might be Christened, for he faid he defired to become a Christian: He was Christened, and named Peter; and the Gouernour commanded 30 him to be looled from a chaine, in which vitill that time he had gone. This Countrie, as the Indians reported, had beene much inhabited, and had the fame of a good Countrie. And as it feemeth, the youth which was the Gouernours guide, had heard of it, and that which hee knew by herelay, he affirmed that he had seene, and augmented at his pleasure. In this Towne was found a Dagger and Beades, that had belonged to Christians. The Indians reported, that Christians ans had beene in the hauen, which was two dayes fournie from this Towne, many yeares agoe. He that came thither was the Gouernour, the Licenciate Lucas Vufquez da Ayllon, which went Itis in 33,deg. to conquer this Countrie, and at his comming to the Port hee died; and there was a dissilion, quarrel; and flaughters betweene some principall men which went with him, for the mincipall government: And without knowing any thing of the Countrie, they returned home to Hif- 20 pariola. All the Company thought it good to inhabit that Countrie, because it was in a tempesate climate : And that if it were inhabited, all the Ships of New Spaine, of Peru, Santa Martha, and Tierra firme, in their returne tor Spane, might well touch there: because it was in their way; and because it was a good Countrie, and fixed ht to raise commoditie. The Governour, fince his intent was to feeke another treafure, like that of Atabalipa Lord of Peru, was not contrated with a good Countrie, nor with Pearles, though many of them were worth their weight in Gold. And if the Countrie had beene divided among the Christians, those which the Indians had fished for afterward, would have beene of more value : for those which they had, because they burned them in the fire, did leele their colour. The Gouernour answered them, that viged him to inhabit, Trac in all the Countrie, there were not victuals to furfaine his men one moneth; and that it was needefull to refort to the Port of Ocm, where Maldanado was to ftay for them : and that if no richer Countrie were found, they might returne agains to that when locuer they would; and in the meane time the Indians would fow their fields, and it would be better furnished with Maiz. He inquired of the Indians, whether they had notice of any great Lord farther into the land. They told him, that twelve daies journey from thence, there was a Prouince called Chiaba, fubiect to the Lord of Coga. Prefently the Governour determined to feeke that land. And being a sterne man, and of few words, though he was glad to fift and know the opinion of all men, yet after he had deliuered his owne, hee would not be contraried, and ale wayes did what liked himselfe, and so all men did condescend vnto his will.

He Gouernour departed from Cuisfa Chiqui the third day of May. And because the Indiens had revolted, and the will of the Ladie was perceived, that if thre could, thee would depart without giuing any Guides or men for burdens, for the wrongs which the Christians had done to the Indians: (for there neuer want fome among many of a bate 63 fort, that for a little gaine doe put themselves and others in danger of vndoing.) The Governour commanded her to be kept in fafegard, and carried with him, not with fo good viage as fine deferued for the good will the shewed. And he carried her on foot with his bond-women to looke vnto her. In all the Townes where the Gouernour pasted, the Lady commanded the Indians to

д. I I. Sotos fursher Disconeries in Florida and manifold various Aduen-sures sill bee came so Tulla.

CHAP. 2. 3. Indians food. A Ladies deceit, Medowet foune with Maiz.

come and carrie the burdens from one Towne to another. Wee passed through her Countriean hundred leagues, in which, as wee faw, thee was much obeyed. For the Indians did all that thee commanded them with great efficacie and diligence. In Seven dayes space the Governour came Chalaque seven to a Province called Chalaque, the poorest Countrie of Maiz that was feene in Florida. The In. dayes journie diens fed voon Roots and Herbes which they feeke in the fields, and voon wilde beatts, which they kill with their Bowes and Arrowes : and it is a very gentle people, All of them goe naked, and are very leane. There was a Lord, which for a great Prefent, brought the Gouernour two Deeres skinnes : and there were in that . Countrie many wilde Hens. In one Towne they made 700, Hens. him a Present of seven hundred Hens, and so in other Townes they sent him those which they to had or could get. From this Prouince to another, which is called Xualla, hee spent five dayes :

here he found very little Maiz; and for this cause, though the people were weared, and the horses very weake, hee stayed no more but two dayes. From Ocute to Cutifa-chiqui may bet dayesoff. Some bundred and thirtie leagues, whereor eightie are Wilderneffe. From Cutifa-chiqui to Xualla, two hundred and fiftie, and it is an Hilly Countrie. The Gouernour departed from Xualla toward Guarule : he passed very rough and high hils. In that rourney, the Lady of Cuifa-chiani (whom the Gouernour carried with him, asis aforefaid, with purpofe to carrie her to Guarule, Rolleh and because her Territorie reached thither) going on a day with the bond-women which lead her, high his

went out of the way, and entred into a Wood, laying, thee went to eafe her felfe, and fo fiee deceiued them, and hid her felte in the Wood; and though they fought her they could not find her. 30 She carried away with her a little cheft made of Canes in manner of a Coffer, which they call Peraca, full of vabored Pearles. Some which could judge of them, faid, that they were of great value. An Indian woman tint waited on her did carrie them. The Gouernour not to discontent her altogether, left them with her, making account that in Guazule he would aske them of her,

when he gaue her leave to returne : which Coffer flice carried away . and went to Zualla with three flaues which fled from the Campe, and one Horseman which remained behind, who falling ficke of an Ague went out of the way, and was loft. This man, whose name was Alimanos, dealt with the flaves to change their euili purpofe, and returne with him to the Christians : which two of them did; and Almamos and they ouertooke the Governour fiftie leagues from thence in a Province called Chiaba; and reported how the Lady remayned in Xualla with a flave of Andrew 30 de Vasconcellos which would not come backe with them, and that of a certaintie they lived as

man and wife together, and meant togoe both to Caufa-chiqui. Within fine dayes the Gouer- Guand fine nour came to Guarule. The Indians there gave him a Present of three hundred Dogges, because dayes off. they faw the Christians efteeme them, and fought them to feed on them : for among them they are not eaten. In Guanule, and all that way, was very little Mair. The Gouernour fent from thencean Indian with a meffage to the Cacique of Chiahn, to defat him to gather some Maiz thither, that he might reft a few dayes in (biaha. The Gonernour departed from Guanule, and canalogue two in two dayes fourney came to a Towne called Canafagua. There met him on the way twentie dayes fourney in two dayes fourney came to a lowne called Canajagan. I have like the many and those very good, off. from Cutifa-chiqui thither, and fo forward in other Prouinces, and also Nuts and Plums. And Mulberie rees

no the trees grow in the fields without planting or dreffing them, and are as bigge and as ranke, as to make filke. though they grew in Gardens digged and watered. From the time that the Gouernour departed from Canalagna, he journed fine dayes through a Defert; and two leagues before he came to Chiaba, there met him fitteene Indians loaden with Maiz, which the Cacique had fent; and they told him on his behalfe, that he waited his comming with twentie Barnes full of it; and farther. that himfelfe, his Countrie, and fabiects, and all things else were at his service. On the fift day of Iune, the Gouernour entred into Chiaba: The Cacique voided his owne houles, in which hee lodged, and received him with much ioy.

There was in this Towne much Butter in Gourds melted like Oyle: they faid it was the fat The fat of

of Beares. There was found also great store of Oyle of Walnuts , which was cleere as Butter, Beares. 50 and of a good taste, and a pot full of Honie of Bees, which neither before nor afterward was Oyle of Walfeene in all the Countrie. The Towne was in an Iland betweene two armes of a River, and was hope of Bees. feated nigh one of them. The River duideth it felfe into those two branches two Crosse-bow fliaba seated shotaboue the Towne, and meeteth againe a league beneath the same. The plaine betweene in an Iland. both the branches is fometimes one Croffe-bow shot, sometimes two Croffe-bow shot over. The branches are very broad, and both of them may be waded ouer. There were all along them very good Medowes, and many fields fowne with Maiz. And because the Indians stayed in their Towne, the Governour only lodged in the houles of the Cacique, and his people in the fields; where there was ever a tree, every one tooke one for himselfe. Thus the Campe lam separated one from another, and out of order. The Governour winked at it , because the Indians were in

60 peace, and because it was very hot, and the people should have suffered great extremitie, if it had not beene fo. The hories came thither fo weake, that for feebleneffe, they were not able to carry their Masters : because that from Cutifa-chiqui, they alwayes travelled with very little Provender, and were hanger-statued and tired ever tince they came from the Defert of Ocate. And be- The Defert of saufe the most of them were not in case to vie in battell, though need should require, they fent Ocute, chap. 8. Mmmmm 3

Thirtie dayor

Mines of Cop-

per and Gold

in Chifca 10-

Hatchets of

Copper hol-

ward the

North.

them to feed in the night a quarter of a league from the Campe. The Christians were therein great danger, because that it ac this time the Indians had fet voon them, they had beene in emil case to have defended themselves. The Governour rested there thirtie dayes, in which time, becaute the Countrie was very fruitfull, the horses grew far, A Cacique of a Prouincecalled Caste came to this Towne to wist the Gouernous. After he had offered himselfe, and paffed with him fome words of tendring his feruice and courtefie; the Gouernor asking him whether he had notice of any rich Countrie! he laid, yea 2:00 wit, that toward the North, there was a Pronince named Chiferand that there was a melting of Copper, and of another metal of the fame colour, faire that it was finer, and of a far more perfect colour, and far better to the fight; and that they wied it not fo much, because it was forter. And the selfe fame thing was told the Gouernour in Course 49 chiqui; where we law some little Harchers of Copper, which were faid to have a mixture of Gold But in that part the Countrie was not wel peopled, and they faid there were Mountaines. which the horfes could not patie; and for that cause, the Gouernour would not goe from Catifachique directly thither : And he made account, that travelling through a peopled Countrie, when his men and horses should bee in better plight , and hee were better certified of the truth of the and One Chiffais direct thing, he would return toward it, by Mountaines, and a better inhabited Countrie, whereby he ly North rom might haue better paffage. He fent two Christians from Chiaba, with certain Indians which knew the Countrie of Chifea, and the language thereof to view it, and to make report of that which they should find; where he told them that he would tarrie for them.

In feuen dayes he came to Coste. The second of July he commanded his Campe to be pitched

him, there went from the Campe certaine Footmen to the Towne to feeke some Maiz, and not

which is with in two daies of Sans Helesa.
Two Christians two Crosse-bow shor from the Towne : and with eight men of his guard he went where hee fent from Chia found the Cacique, which to his thinking received him with great love. As he was talking with bato leeke Chifca. Coffe feuen dayes from Chiaha,chap.14.

A wife Stra-

contented with it, they ranfacked and fearched the houses, and took what they found. With this despite the Indians began to rife and to take their armes : and some of them with cudgels in their hands, ranne woon fine or fixe Christians, which had done them wrong, and beat them at their pleafure. The Governour feeing them all in an vprore, and himfelte among them with fo few Christians, to escape their hands vied a stratagem, farre against his owne disposition, being, as he was, very franke and open : and though it grieued him very much that any Indian should bee so bold, as with reason, or without reason to del pife the Christians, he tooke vp a cudgell, and tooke # their parts against his owne men ; which was a meanes to quiet them : And prefently hee tent word by a man very secretly to the Campe, that some armed men should come toward the place. where he was; and he tooke the Cacique by the hand, ving very milde words vnto him, and with some principall Indians that did accompany him, he drew them out of the Towne into plaine way, and vnto the fighe of the Campe, whicher by little and little with good differtion the Christians began to come and to gather about them. Thus the Governour led the Canque, and his chiefe men vntill he entred with them into the Campe : and neere vnto his Tent, het commanded them to be put in safe custodie; and told them , that they should not depart without giuing him a guide and Indians for burthens, and till certaine ficke Christians were come, which he had commanded to come down the River in Canoes from Chiaba; and those allo which he had fent to the Prouince of Chifea: (for they were not returned; and he feared that the Indians had flaine the one, and the other.) Within three dayes after, thole which were fent to Chifca re-Those which turned, and made report, that the Indians had carried them through a Countrie fo poore of Maiz, feeke chifeare- and to rough, and ouer fo high Mountaynes, that it was impossible for the Armie to travell that way; and that feeing the way grew very long, and that they lingred much, they confulted to returne from a little poore Towne, where they faw nothing that was of any profit, and brought an Oxehide, which the Indians gave them, as thin as a calues skin, and the haire like a foft wool, betweene the course and fine wooll of sheepe. The Cacique gaue a guide, and men forburdens, and departed with the Governours leave. The Governour departed from Coste the ninth of luly, and lodged at a Towne called Tals. The Cacique commanded prouision necessary for two dayes, while the Gouernour was there,

High Mouneaines. A little poore Towne. An Oxe Hide with hairelike wooll.cap.ais. fairh foe Tali, one day from Coffe. Many Townes of cogs. Coja. Iuly 26.

were fent to

Many great Townes. Many Plum-... ees of diuers

and round about him many Indians playing vpon Flutes, and finging. There was in the Barnes, and in the fields great store of Maiz and French Beanes: The Countrie was greatly inhabited with many great Townes, and many sowne fields, which reached from the one to the other. It was pleasant, fat, full of good Meadowes vpon Rivers. There were in the fields many Plum-trees, as well of fuch as grow in Spame, as of the Countrig: and

to be brought thither; and at the time of his departure, he gave him foure women and two men,

which he had need of to beare burthens. The Gouernour travelled fixe dayes through many

Townes lubiect to the Cacique of Coca : and as he entred into his Countrie many Indians came

vnto him every day from the Cacique, and met him on the way with meffages, one going, and

another comming. He came to Coca vpon Friday, the fixe and twentieth of July. The Cati-

que came forth to receive him, two Croffe-bow fhot from the Towne in a chaire, which his print-

cipall mengarried on their shoulders, fitting upon a cushion, and couered with a garment of Mar-

terns, of the falhion and bignetle of a womans Huke: hee had on his head a Diadem of feathers,

CHAP. 2.S. 2. The Gouernors departure from Coca. Women given for carriages. 1541

wild tall Vines, that runne wp the trees; and befides thefe, there were other low Vines with bigge and sweet Grapes; bartor want of digging and dreffing, they had great kernels in them. Two fores of bigge and inter Grapes, but the Casiques, because they should not absent the mielius, Note. and carried them with him, till he came out of their Countries: because that carrying them along with him, he looked to find people in the Townes, and they gaue him guides, and men to carrie burdens; and before hee went out of their Countries, hee gaue them license to returne to their houses, and to their Porters likewise, affoone as hee came to any other Lordshippe, where they gave him others. The man of Coca feeing their Lord detained, tooke it in euill part, and revolted, and hid themselves in the Woods, a well those of the Towne of the Caeigue, as those 10 of the other Townes of his principall fubiects. The Gouernour fent out foure Captaines, every one his way to feeke them. They tooke many men and women, which were put into chaines: They beeing the hart which they received, and how little they gained in absenting themselves,

came againe, promiting to doe whatfoener they were commanded.

The Gouernor relted in Cope fine and twentie dayes, He departed from thence the twentieth 20. of August. of August to fecke a Province called Tafcaines: he carried with him the Cacique of Coca. Hee or August toreen at towns called Tallimachase, the people were fled : hee lodged halfe a great Towns. league far ther neere a Brooke. The next day he came to a Towne called Trana, fubiect to Coca. Tima He stayed there sixe daves because of a River that passed by it, which at that time was very high; Agreet River. and alloone as the River furfered him to paffe, he fet forward, and lodged at a Towne named VI. Villahais.

20 libabali. There came to him on the way, on the Caciques behalfe of that Prouince, ten or twelve principall tadiens to offer him his feruice; all of them had their plumes of feathers, and Bowes and Arrowes. The Gouernour comming to the Towne with twelve Hortemen, and tome Footmen of his Guard, leauing his people a Croffe-bow shot from the Towne, entred into it, hee found all the Indians with their weapons : and as farre as he could gheffe, they feemed to have fome euill meaning. It was knowne afterward, that they were determined to take the Cacique of Cosa from the Gouernour, if he had requested it. The Gouernour commanded all his people villabels well to enter the Towne, which was walled about, and neere vnto it passed a small River. The wall, led about. aswell of that, as of others, which afterward wee faw, was of great posts thrust deepe into the ground and very rough, and many long railes as bigge as ones armes laid acroffe betweene them, and the wall was about the height of a Lance, and it was daubed within and without with clay,

and had loope-holes. On the other fide of the River was a Towne, where at that present the Cacique was. The Gouernourient to call him, and he came prefently. After he had passed with the Gouernour fome words of offering his services, he gave him such men for his carriages as he necded, and thirtie women for flaues. In that place was a Christian loft, called Mangano, borne in Salamanca, of noble Parentage, which went aftray to feeke for Grapes, whereof there is great flore, and those very good.

The day that the Governour departed from thence, he lodged at a Towne fubicet to the Lord 80 de Gregor of Vllibabali: and the next day hee came to another Towne called Toaf. The Indians gave the Ta-A. Gouernour thirtie women, and fuch men for his carriages as hee needed. He trauelled ordinarily

49 fine or fixe leagues a day when he transled through peopled Countries : and going through De- Hee transled ferts, he marched as fail as he could, to either the want of Maiz. From Toafs, patting through order at the co fome Townes fubicat to a Casique, which was Lord of a Prouince called Tallife, he travelled fine or a leagues dayes: He came to Tallife the eighteenth of September: The Towne was great, and fittuated rallife a great neere vnto a maine River. On the other fide of the River were other Townes, and many fields Towne. fowne with Maiz, On both fides it was a very plentifull Countrie, and had ftore of Maiz: they Septem. 18. hadvoided the Towne. The Gouernour commanded to call the Cacique; who came, and be. A mine timer tweene them passed some words of loue and offer of his seruices, and he presented vnto him fortie Indians. There came to the Gouernour in this Towne a principall Indian in the behalfe of the Cacique of Tascaluca.

After hee had refled there twenty dayes, hee departed thence toward Tafealuea. That day when he went from Tabife, he lodged at a great Towne called Calife. And the next day passed Calife a great by another, and came to a small Towne of Tascalaca; and the next day hee camped in a Wood Towne. two leagues from the Towne where the Cacique refided, and was at that time. And he fent the Mafter of the Campe, Lays de Moscoso, with fifteene Horsemen, to let him knowe how he was comming. The Cacique was in his Lodgings under a Canopie : and without doores, right against his Lodgings, in an high place, they ipread a Mat for him, and two Cushions one vponanother, where he fate him downe, and his Indians placed themselves round about him, somewhat diffant from him, to that they made a place, and a voide roome where hee fate : and his chiefelt men were necreft to him, and one with a shadow of Deeres skinne, which kept the Sunne from him,

60 being round, and of the hignesse of a Target, quartered with blacke and white, having a rundell in the middeit : aferre off it feemed to be of Taffara, because the colours were very perfect. It was fet on a small staffe stretched wide out. This was the deute which he carried in his warres. He was a man of a very tall stature, of great limmes, and spare and well proportioned, and was much feared of his neighbours and fubiects. Hee was Lord of many Territories and much people:

In his countenance he was grave. After the Matter of the Campe had spoken with him, he and thole that went with him courfed their Hories, pranting them to and fro, and now and then toward the place where the Cacique was, who with much granitie and diffimulation now and then lifted up his eyes, and beheld them as it were with diffaine. At the Gouernours comming the made no offer at all to rile. The Gouernour tooke him by the hand, and both of them fate down together on a feate which was under the Cloth of Estate.

Canoas demanded of the Indians, Fine Christians flaine. LIB.VIII

When he departed from thence, he determined to carrie him along with him for some causes. and at two dayes fourney he came to a Towne called Piache, by which there paffed a great River. A great River. The Governour demanded Canoas of the Indians: they faid, they had them not, but that they would make Rafts of canes and drie timber, on which hee might paffe well enough; And they made them with all diligence and speed, and they gouerned them; and because the water went very flowe, the Gouernour and his people passed very well.

Virginia.

From the Port de Spirito Santo to Apalache, which is about an hundred leagues, the Gouer-Sois traucis, nour went from East to Welt: and from Apalache to Cutifa-chiqui, which are foure hundred whereby it ap- and thirtie leagues, from the South-west to the North-east: and from Cuifa-chiqui to Xualla. perfeth that her iourneved which are about two hundred and fiftie leagues, from the South to the North: and from Xnalle not farre from to Tascaluca, which are two hundred and fittie leagues more, an hundred and ninety of them he travelled from East to West, to wit, to the Province of Coca: and the other fixtie from Coca to Tascaluca, from the North to the South.

Hanne passed the River of Piache, a Christian went from his companie from thence to setke a woman-flaue that was runne away from him, and the Indians either tooke him captine, or flue him. The Gouernour viged the Cacique that he should give account of him, and threatned him. that if he were not found, he would never let him loofe, The Cacique fent an Indian from thence to Mauilla, whither they were travelling, which was a Towne of a principall Indian and his fubiect, faying, that he fent him to aduite them to make ready victuals, and men for carriages. But (as afterward appeared) he fent him to affemble all the men of warre thither, that hee had in his Countrie. The Gouernour trauelled three dayes, and the third day he paffed all day thorow a peopled Countrie: and he came to Manilla vpon Monday the eighteenth of October. 18.0f October. He went before the Campe with fifteene Horlemen and thirtie Footmen. And from the Town came a Christian, whom he had tent to the principall man, three or foure dayes before because m he thould not abient himfelfe, and also to learne in what fort the Indians were : who told him, that he thought they were in an euill purpose: for while he was there, there came many people Manilla walled into the Towne, and many weapons, and that they made great hafte to fortifie the wall. Lags

de Molcolo told the Governour, that it would bee good to lodge in the field, feeing the Indian were of such disposition : and he answered, that he would lodge in the Towne, for he was wesry of lodging in the field. When he came neere vnto the Towne, the Cacique came forth to receine him with many Indians playing vpon Flutes and finging : and after hee had offered him-Three mantles felfe, he presented him with three mantles of Marterns. The Governour, with both the Cariques, and feuen or eight men of his guard, and three or foure Horsemen, which alighted to accompanie him, entred into the Towne, and fate him downe under a Cloth of Estate. The Cacique of Ta. 43 fealuca requested him, that he would let him remaine in that Towne, and trouble him no more with travelling: and feeing he would not give him leave, in his talke hee changed his purpok, and diffemblingly fained that hee would speake with some principall Indians, and role vp from the place where he fate with the Gouernour, and entred into a house, where many Indians were with their Bowes and Arrowes. The Gouernour when he faw he returned not, called him, and he answered, that he would not come out from thence, neither would hee goe any further then that Towne, and that if he would goe his way in peace, hee should presently depart, and should not feeke to carrie him perforce out of his Countrie and Territorie.

A gowne of

Baltafar de Gallegor, which stood by, tooke hold of a Gowne of Marterns which hee had on; and he cast it over his head, and left it in his hands: and because all of them immediatly began 50 to stirre, Baltafar de Gallegos gaue him such a wound with his Coutilas, that hee opened him downe the backe, and prefently all the Indians with a great crie came out of the houses shooting their Arrowes. The Gouernour confidering, that it he taried there, he could not cicape, and it he commanded his men to come in , which were without the Towne, the Indians within the houles might kill their Horles, and doe much hurt, ranne out of the Towne, and before he came out, he fell twice or thrice, and those that were with him did helpe him vp againe; and hee and thele that were with him were fore wounded : and in a moment there were fine Christians slaine in the Towne. The Gouernour came running out of the Towne , crying out , that every man thould stand further off, because from the wall they did them much hurt. The Indians feeing that the Christians retired, and some of them, or the most part, more then an ordinarie pace, shot 60 with great boldnesse at them, and strooke downe such as they could ouertake. The Indians which the Christians did leade with them in chaines, had laid down their butthens neere vnto the wall: and alloone as the Governour and his men were retired, the men of Maxilla laid them on the Indians backes againe, and tooke them into the Towne, and loofed them prefently from their

chaines, and gaue them Bowes and Arrowes to fight withall. Thus they possessed themselves of all the Clothes and Pearles, and all that the Chriftians had, which their flaues carried. And All the clothes because the Indians had been calwairs praceable untill wee came to this place, some of our men and Pearles of becaule the swarpons in their fardels and remained vnarmed. And from others that had entred the had their weapons in their fardels and remained vnarmed. Towne with the Gouernour they had taken Swords and Holbards, and fought with them. When the Gourmour was gotten into the field, he called for an Horfe, and with some that accompanied him, he returned and the two or three Indians: All the reft retired themselves to the Towne, and that with their Bowes from the wall. And those which presumed of their nimbleneffe, fallied forth to fight a itones cast from the wall : And when the Christians charged them, to they retired themselves at their leasure into the Towne, At the time that the broyle beganne,

there were in the Towne a Firer, and a Prieft, and a fernant of the Gouernour, with a womanflase: and they had no time to come out of the Towne: and they tooke an house, and so remained in the Towne. The Indians become Mafters of the place, they shut the doore with a field gate: and among them was one Sword which the Gouernours feruant had, and with it he lie himfelfe behind the doore, thrusting at the Indians which fought to come into them : and the Frier and the Prieft ftood on the other file, each of them with a barre in their hands to beate him downe that first came in. The Indians feeing they could not get in by the doore, beganne to vicouer the houle top. By this time, all the Horfemen and Footmen which were behind, were

come to Manila.

As some as the battell and the rereward were come to Manilla, the Gouernor commanded all A consultation thole that were best armed to alight, and made foure equadrons of Footmen. The Indians leeing of the Indians those that were best armed to alight, and made foure iquations of production in the Amana to the same how he was letting his men in order concluded with the Cacique that hee should goe his way, their Cacique. faying vnto him, as after it was knowne by certaine women that were taken there, that he was but one man, and could fight but for one man, and that they had there among them many principall Indians, very valiant and expert in feates of Armes, that any one of them was able to order the people there. The Gouernour was informed how there went men out of the Towne, and he commanded the Horfemen to befet it , and fent in every squadron of Footmen one Souldier with a fire-brand to fet fire on the houles, that the Indian; might have no defenfe : all his men being fet in order, he commanded an Harquebuse to be shot off. The figne being given, the foure 30 fquadrons, every one by it felte with great fury, gave the onfet, and with great hurt on both

fides they entred the Towne. The Prier and the Prieft, and those that were with them in the house were faued, which cost the lives of two men of account, and valiant, which came thither to fuccour them. The Indians fought with fuch courage, that many times they draue our men out of the Towne. The fight laited to long, that for wearinesse and great thirst many of the Christians went to a Poole that was neere the wall, to drinke, which was all stained with the bloud of the dead, and then came againe to fight, The Gouernour feeing this, entred among the Rootmen into the Towne on horiebake, with certaine that accompanied him, and was a meane that the Christians came to fet fire on the houses, and brake and overcame the Indians, who running out of the Towne from the Footmen, the Horsemen without draue in at the gates againe, 40 where being without all hope of life, they fought valiantly, and after the Christians came among them to handy blowes, feeing themfelues in great diffresse without any succour, many of them fled into the burning houses, where one vpon another they were smothered and burne in the fire.

The whole number of the Indians that died in this Towne, were two thousand and five hundred, Thedeath of little more or leffe. Ot the Christians there died eighteene; of which one was Don Carlos, bro- 2500, Indiante ther in law to the Gouernour, and a Nephew of his, and one Iohn de Gamez, and Men Rodriguez Portugals, and loba Vazquez de Villarons de Barca Rota, all men of honour, and of much valour : the reit were Footmen. Belides those that were flaine, there were an hundred and fiftie wounded with feuen hundred wounds of their Arrowes : and it pleafed God that of very dangerous wounds they were quickly healed. Moreouer, there were twelue Horles flaine, and feuenty hurt, 30 All the Clothes which the Christians carried with them to clothe themselves withall , and the

ornaments to fay Maffe, and the Pearles, were all burnt there: and the Christians did fet them on fire themselves; because they held for a greater inconvenience, the hurt which the Indians might doe them from those houses, where they had gathered all those goods together, then the loffe of them. Here the Gouernour understood, that Francisco Maldonado waited for him at the Port of Ochufe, and that it was fixe dayes journey from thence; and he dealt with John Orsiz to keepe The Port of it tecret, because her had not accomplished that which hee determined to doe; and because the Ochuse 6, dayes Pearles were burnt there, which he meant to have fent to Cuba for a flew, that the people hea- journey from ring the newes, might be defirous to come to that Countrie.

From the time that the Gouernour entred into Floreda, untill his departure from Manilla, 60 there died an hundred and two Christians, some of ticknesse, and others which the Indians slue. He stayed in Manilla, because of the wounded men, eight and twentie dayes; all which time he lay in the side. It was a well inhabited and a fat Countrie, there were some great and walled wall down. Townes: and many houses scattered all about the fields, to wit, a Cros-bow shot or two, the 18 o Nou.mone from the other. Vpon Sanday, the eighteenth of Nouember, when the hurt men were ber,

knowne to be healed, the Gouernour departed from Manilla. Euery one furnished himselfe with

Maiz for two dayes, and they travelled fine dayes through a Defart: they came to a Province

called Pafallara, vnto a Towne, named Taliepatana: and from thence they went to another, cal-

league up the River. In the morning there entred into it thirtie men well armed. The Indiane

perceiped what was attempted, and those which were necrest, came to defend the passage. They

to the shoare, they fled away into the Groues of Canes. The Christians mounted on Horsebacke.

and went up the River to make good the paffage, whereby the Governour and his companie

passed the River. There were along the River some Townes well stored with Maiz, and French

Beanes, From thence to Chicaga the Gouernour travelled five dayes through a Defart. He came

to a River, where on the other fide were Indians, to defend the passage. He made another Barge

in two dayes: and when it was finished, the Gouernour fent an Indian to request the Carigue

to accept of his friendship, and peaceably to expect his comming : whom the Indians that were

on the other fide the River flue before his face, and prefently making a great shout went their

refifted what they could, till the Christians came neere them; and feeing that the Barge came to

led Cabulto: necre vnto it ranne a great River. The Indians on the other fide cried out, threatto make a Barge within the Towne, because the Indians should not perceive it : it was finished in foure dayes, and being ended, hee commanded it to bee carried one night ypon fleds halfe a

Cananava'es.

Some Towns. A River.

December 17, way, Hauing paffed the River, the next day, being the feuenteenth of December, the Gours

Snowe and

Conies.

A walled Towne.

nour came to (bicaca, a small Towne of twentie houses. And after they were come to Chicaca, 20 they were much troubled with cold, because it was now Winter, and it snowed, while mest of them were lodged in the field, before they had time to make themselves houses. This Countrie was very well peopled, and the houles scattered like those of Manilla, fat and plentifull of Maiz. and the most part of it was fielding : they gathered as much as sufficed to passe the Winter. Some Indians were taken, among which was one whom the Cacique efteemed greatly. The Gouernour fent an Indian to fignific to the Cacique, that hee defired to fee him and to have his friendthip. The Cacique came vnto him, to offer him his person, Countrie and Subjects, and told him, that he would cause two other Cacagnes to come to him in peace; who within few dayes after came with him, and with their Indians: The one was called Alimanu, the other Nicala, They gaue a present vinto the Gouernous of an hundred and fiftie Conies, and of the Countrie gar- 30 ments, to wit, of Mantles of skinnes. The Cacique of Chica ca came to visite him many times: and fometimes the Governour fent to call him, and fent him an Horfe to see and come. He complained vnto him, that a Subject of his was rifen against him, and deprived him of tribute, requesting his aide against him, for he means to seeke him in his Countrie, and to punish him ac-An Indian fira- cording to his defert. Which was nothing elfe but a fained plot. For they determined , as foone as the Gouernour was gone with him, and the Campe was divided into two parts, the one part of them to fet vpon the Gouernour, and the other vpon them that remained in Chicaga. Hee went to the Towne where he vied to keepe his residence, and brought with him two hundred Indians with their Bowes and Arrowes. The Gouernour tooke thirtie Horsemen, and eighte Footmen, and they went to Saquechuma (for fo was the Province called of that Chiefe man, 40 which he faid had rebelled.) They found a walled Towne, without any men; and those which went with the Cacique fet fire on the houses, to diffemble their treason. But by reason of the great care and heedfulnesse that was as well in the Gouernours people which hee carried with him, as of those which remained in Chieaca, they durft not affault them at that time. The Gopernour inuited the Cacique, and certaine principall Indians, and gaue them Hogs flesh to eate. And though they did not commonly vie it, yet they were to greedy of it, that every night there came Indians to certaine houses a Crof bow shot from the Campe, where the Hogs lay, and killed, and carried away as many as they could. And three Indians were taken in the manner. Two of them the Gouernour commanded to be shot to death with Arrowes; and to cut off the hands of the other; and he fent him so handled to the Cacique. Who made as though it grieved him 10 that they had offended the Gouernour, and that he was glad that he had executed that punishment on them. He lay in a plaine Countrie halfe a league from the place, where the Christians lodged. Foure Horiemen went a stragling thither, to wit, Francisco Oforio, and a firmant of the Marqueffe of Afterga, called Reynofo, and two feruants of the Gouernour, the one his Page cale led Ribera, and the other Fuentes his Chamberlaine: and these had taken from the Indians forme Mantles, wherewith they were offended, and forfooke their houses. The Gouernour knew of it, and commanded them to be apprehended; and condemned to death Francisco Oforio, and the Chamberlaine as principals, and all of them to loffe of goods. The Friers and Priefts and other principall persons were earnest with him to pardon Francisco Osorio his life, and to moderate his lentence, which he would not grant for any of them. While he was ready to command them 60 to be drawne to the Market place to cut off their heads, there came certaine Indians from the Cacique, to complaine of them. Iohn Ortiz, at the request of Baltafar de Galleges and other perfons, changed their words, and told the Gouernour, that the Cacique faid, heehad notice how his Lordship held those Christians in prison for his sake, and that they were in no fault, neither

had they done him any wrong, and that if hee would doe him any fauour, hee should fee them free, And he told the Indians; that the Governour faid, he had them in prilon, and that he would punish them in such fort, that they should be an example to others. Hereupon the Gouernour commanded the prisoners to be loosed. As soone as March was come, he determined to depart from Chicaes, and demanded of the Cacique two hundred men for carriages. Hee fent him anfwere, that he would speake with his principall men. Vpon Tuesday the eighth of March, the March, 1541 Governour went to the Towne where he was, to aske him for the men : he told him, he would fend the next day. As foone as the Gouernour was come to Chicaga, he told Lurs de Mojes lo the Camp-mafter, that hee milliked the Indians, and that hee should keepe a strong warch that 10 night, which he remembred but a little, The Indians came at the fecond watch in foure fourdrons, every one by it felte, and as toone as they were deferied, they founded a Drum, and gave the affault with a great crie, and with fo great celeritie, that prefently they entred with the foots, that were formewhat diffant from the Campe. And when they were perceived of them Chiene from which were in the Towne, halfe the houses were on fire, which they had kindled. That night his his his he three Horsemen chanced to be scouts, two of them were of bife callings and the worst men in all the Campe, and the other, which was a Nephew of the Gouernour, which vntill then was held for a tall man, shewed himselfe there as great a coward, as any of them : for all of them ranneaway. And the Indians without any relitance came and let the Towne on fire; and taried behind the doores for the Christians, which ranne out of the houses, not having any leafure to 20 arme themselves; and as they ranne hither and thither amazed with the noise, and blinde, with the Imoke and flume of the fire, they knew not which way they went, neither could they light vpon their weapons, nor fad lie their Horfes, neither faw they the Indians that thot ar them. Many of the Horfes were burned in the Stables, and those which could breake their hal eregat loofe. The diforder and flight was fuch, that every man fled which way he could, without irauing any to relift the Indians. But God (which chafftieth his according to his pleaf re , and in the greatest necessities and dangers sustaineth them with his hand) so blinded the Indians, that they faw not what they had done, and thought that the Horses which ranne look, were men on Horsebacke, that gathered themselves together to fet spon them. The Governour onely rode on Horsebacke, and with him a Souldier called Tapia, and fer voon the Indians, and firiking the 30 first he met with his Lance, the Saddle foll with him, which with haste was cuill girde i, and to hee fell from his Horse. And all the people that were on foot were fled to a Wood out of the Towne, and there affembled themselves together. And because it was night, and that the Indiese thought the Horfes were men on horsebacke which came to fer woon them, as I faid before, they fled a and one onely remay ned dead, and that was hee whom the Governour flue with his Lance. The Towne lay all burnt to albes. There died in this hurliburlie eleven Christsans, and fiftie Horfes; and there remay ned an hundred Hogges, and foure hundred were burned. It any The increase perchance had faued any clothes from the fire of Manilla, here they were burned, and many were of Hogs. clad in skinnes, for they had no leafure to take their Coates. They indured much cold in this place, and the chiefest remedie were great fires. They spent all night in turnings without sleepe: 40 for if they warmed one fide, they freezed on the other. Some invented the weaving of certaine Mats of drie Iuie, and did weare one beneath, and another aboue : many laughed at this denice, whom afterward necessatie inforced to doe the like. The Christians were so fooyled, and in such want of Saddles and weapons which were burned, that if the Indians had come the fecond night, they had ouercome them with little labour. They removed thence to the Towne where The Towne the Cacique was wont to lie, because it was in the champaine Countrie. Within eight dayes at- where the Cac ter, there were many Lances and Saddles made. There were Ash-trees in those parts, whereof cique lay.

Vpon Wednesday the 15.0f March, 1541. after the Governout had lodged eight dayes in a Plaine, halfe a league from the place which he had wintered in, after he had let vp a forge, and 50 tempered the Swords which in Chicaga were burned, and made many Targets, Saidles, and Lances, on Tuefday night, at the morning watch, many fudians came to affault the Campe in three fquadrons, every one by themselves: Those which watched gave the alarme. The Governour with great speed set his men in order three squadrons, and leaving some to defend the Campe, went out to entounter them. The Indians were ouercome and put to flight. The ground was champaine and fit for the Christians to take the advantage of them; and it was now breake of day. But there happened a diforder, whereby there were not past thirtie or fortie Indians fline: and this it was: that a Frier cried out in the Campe without any infl occasion, To the Campe, To the Campe: Whereupon the Governour and all the rest repaired thicher, and the Indians had time to faire themselves. There were some taken, by whom the Governour informed himselte

they made as good Lances as in Bifcay.

60 of the Couatrie, through which he was to palle. The flue and twentieth of Aprill, hee departed Aprill 27. from Chicaga, and lodged at a small Towne called Alimanu. They had very little Maiz, and Alimana. they were to passe a Defart of seuen dayes journey. The next day, the Gouernour sent three Captaines every one his way with Horiemen and Footmen to feeke provision to paffe the Defart. And John Danules the Auditor went with fifseene Horlemen, and fortie Footmen that

1.d colours.

way that the Gouernour was to goe, and found a strong Fort made, where the Indians staved for him, and many of them walked on the top of it with their weapons, having their bodies. B'acke, white, thighes and armes okered and died with blacke, white, yellow and red, ilriped like vnto panes. fo that they shewed as though they went in hose and doublets; and some of them had Plumes. and others had hornes on their heads, and their faces blacke, and their eyes done round about with itreakes of red, to teeme more herce.

Iohn Danusco sent three horsemen to advertise the Governour hereof. He came presently for his intent was to drive them from thence, faying, that if he did it not, they would be embold. ned to charge him another time, when they might doe him more harme. Hee made the horfemen to alight, and fet his men in foure Equadrons : The figne being given, they fet vp the Is- Is dians, which made refiftance till the Christians came neere the Fort, and assoone as they faw they could not defend themselues, by a place where a Brooke passed neere the Fort, they ran away. and from the otherfide they fhot fome Arrowes : and because at that instant wee knew no ford for the horfes to passe, they had time enough to get out of our danger. Three Indians were flaine there, and many Christians were hure, whereof within few dayes, there died fifteene

A Defert of feuen dayes. A Towns of

The Gouernour was inforced to depart presently toward Quizquiz, He trauelled seuen daves through a Defeit of many Marishes and thicke Woods : but it might all bee trauelled on horsebacke, except some Lakes which they swamme ouer. Hee came to a Towne of the Prouince of Quizquiz without being descried, and tooke all the people in it before they came out of their an There came to the Campe fixe principal Indiane, and faid, they came to fee what people they

were, and that long agoe, they had beene informed by their fore-fathers. That a white people

should subdue them and that therefore they would returne to their Cacique, and bid him come

prefently to obey and ierue the Gouernour : and after they had prefented him with fixe or feuen

ges, and good fituation of ground to incampe in. Prelently he removued himfelfe thisher. They

made houfes, and pitched their Campe in a plaine field a Croffe bow fhot from the River. And

thither was gathered all the Maiz of the Townes, which they had lately passed. They began

presently to cut and hew downe Timber, and to saw plankes for Barges. The Indianscame

presently downe the River : they leaped on shoare, and declared to the Gouernour, That they

were fubiects of a great Lord, whose name was Aquixo, who was Lord of many Townes, and

gouerned many people on the other fide of the River, and came to tell him on his behalfe, that

the next day he with all his men would come to fee, what it would pleafe him to command him.

The next day with speed, the Cacique came with two hundred Canoes full of Indians with their

with shields in their hands, wherewith they detended the Rowers on both sides, and the men of

Warre flood from the head to the sterne, with their Bowes and Arrowes in their hands. The

Canoe wherein the Cacique was, had a Tiltouer the fterne, and hee fate vnder the Tilt; and fo

w-re other Canoes of the principall Indians. And from under the Tilt where the chiefe man fat,

he gouerned and commanded the other people. All loyned together, and came within a flones

Bowes and Arrowes, painted, and with great plumes of white feathers, and many other colours, 40

Duiz Just. An old Prophelie.

skins and Mantles which they brought, they tooke their leave of him, and returned with the other, which waited for them by the Brookes fide. The Casique neuer came againe nor fent other message. And because in the Towne where the Gouernour lodged, there was small store of Maiz, Ano ber he removed to another halfe a league from Rio Grande, where they found plentie of Maiz: And Towne. Ri G ande.or he went to fee the River, and found, that neere wnto it was great store of Timber to make Bar- 30 Re- de E piritu Santo

Lord on the Weft fide of Rio Grande. 200, Canoes,

ot Prunes.

Goodly great Foure Barges

cast of the shoare. From thence the Cacque faid to the Governour, which walked along the Riuers fide with others that wayted on him, that he was come thither to vifit, to honor, and to obey him; because he knew he was the greatest and mightiest Lord on the Earth; therefore hee would fee what he would command him to doe. The Gouernour yeelded him thankes, and requested him to come on thoure, that they might the better communicate together. And with-19 out any answere to that point, bee feat him three Canoes, wherein was great store of filh and loaues, made of the substance of Prunes like vnto Brickes. After hee had received all, hee thankellhim, and prayed him againeto come on shoare. And because the Caciques purpose was, to fee if with diffimulation he might doe some hurt, when they faw that the Gouernour and his men were in readinesse, they beganne to goe from the shoare : and with a great cry, the Crossebowmen which were ready, that at them, and flue fine or tixe of them. They retired with great order: none did leave his Oare, though the next to him were flaine, and shielding themiclues, they went farther off. Afterward they came many times and landed : and when any of vs came toward them, they fled vnto their Canoes, which were very pleafant to behold: for they were very great and well made, and had their Tuts, Plumes, Pauefes, and Flagges, and with the mul- 60 titude of people that were in them, they feemed to be a faire Armie of Gallies. In thirtie dayes space, while the Gouernour remayned there, they made foure Barges. Assoone as those that They palle o palled first, were on Land on the other fide, the Barges returned to the place where the Gount uer Rie Grande. nour was : and within two houres after Sunne riling , all the people were ouer. The River

was almost halfe a league broad. It a man stood shill on the other side, it could not bee differned, whether hee were a man or no. The River was of great depth, and of a firong current: the water was alwayes muddie : there came downe the River continually many trees and timher, which the force of the water and fireame brought downe. There was great flore of fifth in it or fundry forts, and most of it differing from the Iresh water fish of Spaine, as hereafter shall Having passed Ro Grande, the Governour travelled a league and an halfe and came to a great

Towne of Aquixo, which was dispeopled before hee came thither. They estied thirtie Indiana comming ouera plaine, which the Cacque fent to discouer the Christians determination : and to alloone as they had fight of them, they tooke themselves to flight. The Horsemen pursued them, and flue tenne, and tooke fifteene. And because the Towne, whither the Gouetnour went, was neere vnto the River, hee fent a Captaine, with as many men as hee thought fufficient to carrie the Barges vp the Riuer. And because in his travelling by land, many times hee went farre from the Ruer to compasse the creekes that came from it, the Indians tooke occasion to fer voon them of the Barges, and put them in great danger, because that by reason of the great current, they durit not leave the shoare, and from the banke they shot at them. Assone as the Guernour was come to the Towne, hee prefently fent Croffe-bowmen downe the River, which came to refeue them : and vpon the comming of the Barges to the Towne, hee commanded them to be broken, and to faue the Iron for others, when it should be needfull. He lay there 30 one night, and the day following, he fet forward to feeke a Province, called Pacaba: which he

was informed to bee neere vnto Chifes, where the Indians told him there was gold. Hee paffed Pacaba neers through great Townes of Aguixo, which were all abandoned for feare of the Christians. Hee vino Chica. understood by certaine Indians that were taken, that three dayes journie from thence dwelt a Gress townes, great Cacique, whose name was Casqui. He came to a small River, where a Bridge was made. by which they paffed : that day ti'l Sun-fet, they went all in water, which in fome places came to the wafte, and in forme to the knees. When they faw themselues on dry land, they were very glad, because they feared they should wander vp and downe as forlorne men all night in the water. At noone they came to the first Towne of Cajque : they found the Indians careleffe, be- The first rowne caufe they had no knowledge of them. There were many men and women taken, and store of ot cape.

20 goods, as Mantles and skinnes, as well in the first Towne, as in another, which stood in a held halfe a league from thence in fight of it; whither the Horsemen ranne. This Countrie is higher, drier, and more champaine, then any part bordering neere the River, that vntill then they halleene. There were in the fields many Walnut-trees, bearing foft shelled Walnuts, in fashion Walnut trees like builets, an lin the houses they found many of them, which the Indians had laid up in store. with lost their The trees diff red in nothing elle from those of Spaine, nor from those which we had seene before. but onely that they have a fraller leafe. There were many Mulberie trees and Plum trees, which bare red Plums like those of Spaine, and other g'ay, fomewhat differing, but farre better. And Many Molbes bare red Plums like those of Spaine, and other gray, tomewhat differing, but large better. And the trees are all the trees are all the trees are all the trees are all the years to truitfull, as if they were planted in Orchards : and the Woods Plant trees, were very thinne. The Gouernour truelled two dayes through the Countrie of Cafqui, before 40 he came to the Towne where the Cacique was; and the most of the way was alway by Cham-

paine ground, which was tull of great Townes, fo that from one Towne, you might fee two or Many great three. Hee fent an Indian to certifie the Cacique, that hee was comming to the place where hee Towner. was, with intent to procure his friendihip, and to hold him as his brother. Whereunto hee antweeted. That he should be welcome, and that he would receive him with speciall good will, and accomplish all that are Lord hip would command him. He fent him a Present vpon the way; to wit, skinnes, Mantles, and fish : And after these complements , the Gouernour found all the Townes as he palled, inhabited with people, which peaceably attended his comming, and offered him skinnes, Mantles, and fish. The Cacique accompanied with many Indians came out of the Towne, and stayed halfe a league on the way to receive the Gouernour.

Within a while after both of them vied words of great offers and courtelie the one to the other, and the Cacique requested him to lodge in his houses. The Governour, to preserve the peace the better, excused himselfe, faying, that hee would lodge in the fields. And because it was very hot, they camped neere certaine trees a quarter of a league from the Towne. The Ca- The chiefe eique went to his Towne, and came againe with many Indians finging. Afloone as they came to the Gourmour, all of them profrated themselves vpon the ground. Among these came two Indians that were blind. The Cacique made a speech : that seeing the Governour was the Sonne of the Sunne, and a great Lord, he belought him to doe him the fauour to give fight to those two blind men. The blind men role vp presently, and very earnestly requested the same of the Gouernour. He answered, That in the high Heanens was bee that had power to give them health, and Spanish Indian

60 what some they could aske of him; whose sermant he was: And that this Lord made the Heavens and Preaching. the Earth, and man after his owne likenesse, and that bee suffered upon the Crosse to saue Mankind, and rose againe the third day, and that he died as he was man, and as touching his Dininite, he was, and is immortall; and that he of cended into Heaven, where hee flandeth with his armes open to receive all Such as turne unto him : and straight way hee commanded him to make a very high Groffe of wood,

longing to

which was let up in the highest place of the Towne; declaring unto him, that the Christians worthweed the same in resemblance and memorie of that whereon Christ suffered. The Gouernour and his men kneeled downe before it, and the Indians did the like. The Governour willed him, that from thenceforth he should worship the same, and should aske whatsoever they stood in need of . of the Lord that he told him was in Heauen. Then he asked him how farre it was from thence to Pacaba: He faid, one dayes journie, and that at the end of his Countrie, there was a Lakelike a Brooke which falleth into Rio Grande, and that hee would fend men before to make a Bridge whereby hee might passe. The same day that the Governour departed thence, hee lodged at a Towne belonging to Cafqui: and the next day he pailed in light of other Townes, and came to A Townebethe Lake, which was halfe a Croffe-bow shot oner, of a great depth and current. At the time of to Cofqui. his comming, the Indians had made an end of the Bridge, which was made of timber, laid one tree after another : and on one fide it had a course of stakes higher then the Bridge, for them that passed to take hold on. The Cacique of Casqui came to the Gouernour, and brought his people

with him. The Governour fent word by an Indian to Cacique of Pacaha, that though he were enemie to the Cacique of Cafqui, and though he were there, yet hee would doe him no diferace nor hurt, if hee would attend him peaceably, and imbrace his friendship; but rather wouldincreate him as a Brother. The Indian, which the Gouernour fent, came againe, and faid, that the Cacique made none account of that which he told him, but fled with all his men out at the other file of the Towne. Prefently the Gouernour entred, and ranne before with the Horsemen, that way, by which the Indians fled; and at another Towne diffant a quarter of a league from thence, an they tooke many Indians : and alloone as the Horiemen had taken them, they delivered them to the Indians of Calqui, whom, because they were their enemies, with much circums pection and rejoycing, they brought to the Towne where the Christians were : and the greatest griefe they had, was this, that they could not get leave to kill them. There were found in the Towne many Mantles, and Deere skinnes, Lions skinnes, and Beares skinnes, and many Cats skinnes. Many came fo farre poorely apparelled, and there they clothed them telue : of the Mantles, they made them Coates and Callocks, and iome made Gownes, and lined them with Cats skinnes; and likewife their Caffocks. Of the Decresskinnes, some made them also Ierkins. Shirts, Hose and

Shooes: and of the Beare skinnes, they made them very good Clokes: for no water could

Voon Wednesday the nineteenth of June, the Gouernour entred into Pacaba: He lodged in

the Towne, where the Cacique vied to refide, which was very great, walled, and befet with

Towres, and many loope-holes were in the Towres and Wall. And in the Towne was great

flore of old Maiz, and great quantitie of new in the fields. Within a league and halfe a league

were great Townes all walled. Where the Governour was lodged, was a great Lake, that came

neere voto the wall; and itentred into a ditch that went round about the Towne, wanting but

a little to environ it round. From the Lake to the great River was made a weare by the which

the fish came into it; which the Cacique kept for his recreation and sport ; with Nets that were

was no want perceived. There was also great flore of fish in many other Lakes that were therea-

bout, but it was foft, and not fo good as that which came from the River, and the most of it was

different from the fresh water fith of Spaine. There was a fish which they called Bagres: the

third part of it was head, and it had on both fides the gils, and along the fides great prickes like

found in the Towne, they tooke as much as they would : and tooke they never fo much . there 40

Targets of raw pierce them. There were Targets of raw Oxe Hides found there; with which Hides they ar- 30 Ove hides Pacaha, a verie great Towne belet with

Great walled Townes.

Nets found.

The divers

teeth beneath and aboue.

Oxen toward the North of Pacaba. This is like Quinera,

toward the South.

very sharpe Aules : those of this kind that were in the Lakes were as bigge as Pikes : and in the River, there were some of an hundred, and of an hundred and fiftie pounds weight, and many of them were taken with the hooke. There was another fish like Barbels; and another like Breames, headed like a delicate fish, called in Spaine Besugo, betweene red and grey. This was thereof most esteeme, There was another fish called a Pele fish : it had a fnowt of a Cubit long, and at the end of the upper lip it was made like a Peele. There was another fifth like a Westerne Shad : And all 50 of them had scales, except the Bagres, and the Pele fish. There was another fish, which somtimes the Indians brought vs, of the bigneffe of an Hogge, they call it the Pereo fish : it had rowes of From thence he fen: thirtie Horsemen, and fiftie Footmen to the Province of Caluça, tofee Gold & Cop- if from thence he might travell to Chifca, where the Indians faid, there was a worke of Gold and Copper, They trauelled feuen dayes journie through a Defert, and returned very wearie, eating greene Plums and stalkes of Maiz, which they found in a poore Towne of fixe or feuen A pooretowne houles. From thence forward toward the North, the Indians faid, That the Countrie was very Great flore of ill inhabited, because it was very cold : And that there were fuch flore of Oxen, that they could keepe no Corne for them : and that the Indians hued vpon their flesh. The Governour 60 feeing, that to ward that part the Countrie was so poore of Maiz, that in it they could not bee fulfaine!, demanded of the Indians, which way it was most inhabited : and they faid, they had notice of a great Protince, and a very plentifull Countrie, which was called Quigante, and it was

the Towne, where the Carque vied to keepe his Refidencie : on the way hee fent him 2 Prefent The grant of many Manties and Skinnes, and not daring to flay for him in the Towne, hee absented him - I owne feet felfe. The Towne was the greatest that was seene in Florida. They tooke many men and women. Now seeing the hurt which they fustained for their Rebellion, they came to see what the Governour would command them, and pasted to and from any rimes, and brought Prefents of Cloth and Fish. The Cacique and his two wines were in the Cloth lodging of the Gouernour loofe, and the Halbardiers of his Guard did keepe them. The Gouernour asked them which way the Countrie was most inhabited? They said, that toward the 10 South downe the River were great Townes and Casiques, which commanded great Countries, and much people : And that toward the North-weit , there was a Prouince neere to certaine Coffee neere Mountaines that was called Coliggs. The Governour and all the rest thought good to goe first to to certains

Colleges: faying, that peraduenture the Mountaines would make some difference of toile, and Mountaines that beyond them there might be some Gold or Silver: As for Quigante, Casqui, and Pacaba, they were plaine Countries, fat grounds, and full of good Medowes on the Rivers, where the Indians fowed large fields of Maiz. From Tascainea to Rio grande, or the great River, is about three hundred leagues: it is a very low Countrie, and hath many Lakes. From Pacaba to Qmgente may bee an hundred leagues. The Gouernour left the Casigne of Quigante in his owne Towne : And an Indian, which was his Guide, led him through great Woods without any way 30 feven dayes journie through a Defert, where at every lodging, they lodged in Lakes and Pooles in very thould water : there was such flore of fifth, that they killed them with cudgels; and the A new was to Indians which they carried in chains, with the mud troubled the waters, and the fifth being therewith, as it were, altonied, came to the top of the water, and they tooke as much as they listed. The Indians of Colleges had no knowledge of the Christians, and when they came so neere the Colleges. Towne, that the Indians faw them, they fled vp a River, which passed neere the Towne, and A River.

Some leaped into it; but the Christians went on both fides of the River, and tooke them. There were many men and women taken, and the Cacique with them. And by his commandement within three dayes came many Indians with a Prefent of Mantles and Decres skinnes, and two Oxe hides: And they reported, that flue or fixe leagues from thence toward the North, there Two oxe hides were many of these Oxen, and that because the Countrie was cold, it was cuill inhabited : That Store of oxen the best Countrie which they knew; the most plentifull, and most inhabited, was a Province toward the called Cayar, lying toward the South. From Sugnate to Coligea may be fortie leagues. It was a North fat foile and fo plentifull of Maiz, that they caft out the old, to bring in the new. There was alfo great plentie of French Beanes and Pompions. The French Beanes were greater , and better then thote of Spaine, and likewife the Pompions, and being roafted, they have almost the taste

of Cheffinuts. The Cacagae of Coligon gave a Guide to Cayas, and flayed behind in his owne Towne, We travelled five dayes, and came to the Province of Palifema. The house of the Caci- The Province que was found courred with Deeres skins of divers colours and workes drawine in them, and with of Patiferna. the fame in manner of Carpers was the ground of the house covered. The Carigne left it so, that 40 the Gouernour might lodge in it, in token that hee fought peace and his friendship. But hee durst not tarrie his comming. The Gouernour, feeing he had absented himselfe, sent a Captaine with Horsemen and Footmen to seeke him : Hefound much people, but by reason of the roughneffe of the Country, he tooke none faue a few women and children. The Towne was little and feattering, and had very little Maiz. For which cause the Gouernour speedily departed from thence. He came to another Towne called Tatalicoya, he carried with him the Caeigne thereof, Tatalicoy

the Province of Caya, because they had informed him that it was well inhabited : He threatned the Cacique, charging him to tell him where he was ; and he and other Indians which were taken to neere about that place, affirmed that this was the Towne of Cayde, and the belt that was in that Country, and that though the houses were distant the one from the other, yet the ground that was inhabited was great, and that there was great store of people, and many fields of Maiz. This Towne was called Tonco : he pitched his Campe in the best part of it neere vnto a Ruer. Tonico.

The same day that the Gouernour came thither, he went a league farther with certaine Horsemen, and without finding any, he found many skinnes in a pathway, which the Carigne had left there , that they might bee found, in token of peace. For fo is the cultome in that

The Gouernour rested a moneth in the Province of Cayas. In which time the horses fattened and thrined more, then in other places in a longer time, with the great plentie of Maiz and the 60 leanes thereof, which I thinke was the best that hath beene seene, and they dranke of a Lake of very hot water, and somewhat brackish, and they dranke so much, that it swelled in their bellies A Lake of hot when they brought them from the Watering. Untill that time the Christians wanted Salt, and and fomewhat when they brought them from the watering. Vitill that time the Coristians wanted Sair, and there they made good flore, which they carried along with them. The Indians doe carrie it to oscient the store of Sair. ther places to exchange it for Skins and Mantles. They make it along the River, which when made at Conac Nonnan 2

I 549 The Governour tooke his journie toward Quigante. The fourth day of August, hee came to Quigante.

which guided him to Cayas. From Tatalicoya are foure dayes journie to Cayas. When he came

to Cares, and faw the Towne feattered; he thought they had told him a lye, and that it was not cares

it abbeth, leaveth it you the vpper part of the fand. And because they cannot make it, without much find mingled with it, they throw it into certaine baskets which they have forther purpole, broad at the mouth, and narrow at the bottome, and fet it in the Aire vpon a barre, and throw water into it, and fet a small Veilell under it, wherein it falleth : Beeing itrained and fer to boyle youn the fire, when the water's fodden away, the Sale remayneth in the bottome of the Pan. On both files of the River the Countrie was full of fowne fields , and there was flore of Alaiz.

Many Oxe hides with wool on them, se folkas. theeps wool, Gemara Hiller. Gener, 649, 145. Many Oxen toward the North. The great eloquence of the

Immediately the Gouernour with certaine Horsemen and fifty Footmen, departed toward Tulls, hee found the Towne abandoned : for the Indians durit not tarrie his comming. The Cacrome came, and eightie Indians with him. He brought a Preient of many Oxe hides: which, to because the Countrie was cold, were very profitable, and served for Couerlets, because they were very foft, and woolled like sheepe. Not farre from thencee toward the North were many Oxen. The Christians law them not, nor came into the Countrie where they were, because those parts were exill inhabited, and had small store of Maiz where they were bred. The Cacique of Talle made an Oration to the Gouernour, wherein he excused himselfe, and offered him his Country, Subjects, and person. Aswell this Cacique as the others, and all those which came to the Gouernour on their behalfe, deliuered their meffage or speech in so good order, that no Oratour could veter the fame more eloquently.

His departure to Autiamque, ORTIZ his death and disasters following: SOTO takes thought and dieth. Moscosco succeedeth. They leave Florida, and arrive at Panuco.

A winter of

He Governour informed himselfe of all the Countrie round abour; and vnderstood, that toward the West was a Sattered dwelling, and that toward the South-east were great to Townes, especially in a Prouince called Austanague, ten daies south-east which might be about eightie leagues; and that it was a plentifull Countrey of Maiz. And because Winter came on, and that they could not trauell two or three moneths in the yeere for cold, waters, and frow ; and fearing, that if they should flay fo long in the scattered dwelling, they could not be fusteined ; and also because the Indians faid , that neere to Aurianque was a great water, and according to their relation, the Gouernour thought it was some arme of the Sea: And because hee now defired to send newes of himselfe to Casta, that some supply of men and horses might be ient vnto him : (for it was about three yeeres, fince Donna Ifabella, which was in Hawand, or any other person in Christendome had heard of him, and by this time hee had lost two hundred and fifcie men, and one hundred and fiftie horses) he determined to winter in Autiam- 40 que, and the next Spring, to goe to the Sea Coaft, and to make two Brigantines, and fend one of them to Cuba, and the other to Nuena Effauna, that that which went in fafetie, might give newes of him: Hoping with the goods which he had in Caba, to furnish himselfe againe, and to attempt the Discouerie and conquest toward the West: for he had not yet come where Cabeca de Vaca had beene. Thus having ient away the two Caciques of Cayas and Tulla, hee tooks his journie toward Antiamque: He trauciled fine dayes over very rough Mountaines, and came to dayer tournie a Towne called Quipana, where no Indians could bee taken for the roughnesse of the Countrie: and the Towne being betweene Hils, there was an ambuli laid, wherewith they tooke two Indians; which told them, that Autianque was fixe dayes journie from thence, and that there was another Province toward the South eight dayes journie off, plentifull of Maiz, and very well 50 peopled, which was called Guahate. But because Autianque was neerer, and the most of the

Duipana, fine from Tulla.

Guahate.

Cateneja.

Autiamane fixe dayesiournie

and came no more, nor any other message from the Casique. The next day the Christians went to the Towne, which was without people : they tooke as much Maiz as they needed. That day they lodged in a Wood, and the next day they came to Antiamque. They found much Maiz 60 laid vp in flore, and Franch Beanes, and Walnuts and Prunes, great flore of all forts. They tooke fome Indians which were gathering together the stuffe which their wives had hidden. This was a Champaine Countrie, and well inhabited. The Governor lodged in the best part of the Towne, and commanded prefently to make a fence of timber round about the Campe diffant from the hou-

Indians agreed of it, the Governor made his journie that way. In three dayes are came to a

tooke the Indians carelelle, he tooke many men and women prisoners. Within two dayes af-

ter the Gouernour came to another Towne called Catamaya, and lodged in the fields of the

Towne. Two Indians, came with a falle meflage from the Cacique to know his determination. He had them tell their Lord, that hee should come and speake with him. The Indians returned

Towne called Anaixi. He sent a Captaine before with thirtie Horsemen, and fiftie Footmen, and

tes, that the Indians might not hure them without by fire. And meaturing the ground by paces, he appointed every one his part to doe according to the number of Indians which he had: prefently the timber was brought by them; and in three dayes there was an inclosure made of very high and thicke posts thrust into the ground, and many rayles hid acrosse. Hard by this Towne pasted a River, that came out of the Province of Cayon; and above and beneath it was ve. A River, ry well peopled. They stayed in Auttanque three moneths with great plentie of Maiz, French Three months Beanes, Walnuts, Prunes, and Conies: which vntill that time they knew not how to catch, abode in A-And in Autiamque the Indians taught them how to take them : which was; with great fpringes, tiamore, which lifted up their feet from the ground: And the fnare was made with a ftrong string, where-10 unto was faitned a knot of a cane, which ranne close about the necke of the Conie, because they

should not snaw the string. They tooke many in the fields of Maiz, especially when it freezed or fnowed. The Christians stayed there one whole moneth so inclosed with snowe, that they Frost and snow went not out of the Towne: and when they wanted fire-wood, the Governour with his Hori- A moneth of men going and comming many times to the Wood, which was two Cref-bow flot from the faow. Towne, made a path-way, whereby the Pootmen went for wood. In this meane space, some Indians which went loofe, killed many Conies with their Giues, and with their Arrowes. Thefe Conies were of two forts, some were like those of Spains, and the other of the same colour and Conies of two

fashion, and as bigge as great Hares, longer, and having greater loines. Vpon Monday the fixt of March, 1542, the Gouernour departed from Antiamque to feeke March 6. 20 Niles, which the Indians faid was neere the Great Riner, with determination to come to the Sea. 1542. and procure some succour of Men and Horses: for he had now but three hundred Men of warre, and fortie Horses, and some of them lame, which did nothing but helpe to make up the number : and for want of Iron, they had gone aboue a yeere vnshod : and because they were wied to it in the plaine Countrie, it did them no great harme. John Ortiz died in Antiamque; which The death of grieued the Gouernour very much: because that without an Interpreter he feared to enter farre the great mile into the Land, where hee might bee loft : whereby it often happened, that the way that they of him, being went one day, and sometimes two or three dayes, they turned backe, and went aftray through their Interprethe wood here and there. The Gouernour pent ten dayes in trauelling from Autiamque to a ter. Prouince called Ayays; and came to a Towne that flood neere the River that paffeth by Cayas Ayays.

A River,

30 and Autiamque. There her commanded a Barge to bee made, wherewith hee paffed the River. When he had passed the River, there fell out such weather, that foure dayes he could not travell for Snow. As ioone as it gaue over fnowing, he went three dayes sourney through a Wildernesse, Great snow as and a Countrie so lowe, and so full of Lakes and euill wayes, that he travelled one time a whole bout the twenday in water, fometimes knee deepe, fometimes to the ftirrup, and fometimes they fwamme. He came to a Towne called Tutelpinco, abandoned, and without Maiz: there passed by it a Lake, Tutelpinco. that entred into the River, which carried a great streame and force of water.

The Gouernour went a whole day along the Lake feeking passage, and could finde none, nor any way that did paffe to the other fide. Comming agains at night to the Towns he found two peaceable Indians, which shewed him the passage, and which way hee was to goe. There they 40 made of canes, and of the timber of houses thatched with canes, rafts wherewith they palled Rifts wherethe Lake. They trauelled three dayes, and came to a Towns of the Ferritorie of Nilos, called with they par-Tiante. There they tooke thirtie Indians, and among them two principall men of this Towne. The Gouernour fent a Captaine with Horsemen and Footmen before to Niles, because the In- Tiante. dians, might have no time to carrie away the provision. They passed through 3.or 4. great Towns; 3. or 4. great and in the Towne where the Cacique was refident, which was two leagues from the place where Towness the Gouernour remained, they found many Indian; with their Bowes and Arrowes, in manner as though they would have stayed to fight, which did compasse the Towne; and as soone as they faw the Christians come neere them without mifdoubting them . they fet the Caciques house on fire, and fled ouer a Lake that paffed neere the Towne, through which the Horses could not paffe.

The next day being Wednelday the nine and twentieth of March, the Gouernour came to March age Nilco: he lodged with all his men in the Caciques Towne, which flood in a plaine field, which Nilco. was inhabited for the space of a quarter of a league : and within a league and halte a league were other very great Townes, wherein was great store of Maiz, of French Beanes, of Walnuts, and Very great Prunes. This was the best inhabited Countrie, that was seene in Florida, and had most store of The best Maiz, except Coca, and Apalache. There came to the Campe an Indian accompanied with o- Countrie of thers, and in the Caciques name gaue the Governous a Mantle of Marterns skinnes, and a Cor- Florida. don of Pearles. The Gouernour gaue him a few small Margarites, which are certaine Beades Marterns much esteemed in Peru, and other things, wherewith he was very well contented. He promised A cordon of to returne within two dayes, but never came againe; but on the contrary the Indians came by Pearles, night in Canoas, and carried away all the Maiz they could, and made them Cabins on the other

This River which passed by Nilco, was that which passed by Cayas and Autiamoue, and felt A River faling into Rio grande, or the Great River, which paffed by Pachaba and Aquixo, neere voto the Prouince of Gnachoya. Within few dayes the Governour determined to goe to Gnachoya, to learne Nnnnnn 3

Guschora

there whether the Sea were neere, or whether there were any habitation neere, where he mishe relieus his companie, while the Brigantines were making, which he meant to lend to the Land of the Christians. He came to Guacheya vpon Sunday the seuenteenth of Aprill; hee lodged in the Towns of the Cacique, which was inclosed about, and feated a Crof-bow shot distant from the River. Here the River is called Tamalifen; and in Nilco, Tapatu; and in Coga, Mico; and in Foure names the Port or Mouth, Ri. of Kie grande.

The Cacique of Guachers brought with him many Indians with great flore of Fish, Dogges. Deeres skinnes, and Mantles. Hee asked him whether he had any notice of the Sea. Hee aniwered, no, nor of any Townes downe the River on that fide. The Governour thought that the Cacique lyed vnto him, to rid him out of his owne Townes, and fent lohn Danufco with eight Horsemen downe the River, to see what habitation there was, and to informe himselfe, if there were any notice of the Sea. He trauelled eight dayes, and at his returne he faid, that in all that time he was not able to goe aboue fourteene or fifteene leagues, because of the great creekes that came out of the River, and groves of Canes, and thicke Woods that were along the bankes of the River, and that he had found no habitation. The Governour fell into great dumpes, to The Gournor fee how hard it was to get to the Sea : and worfe, because his Men and Horfes enery day diminifalleth ficke of fhed, being without fuccour to fuffaine themfelues in the Countrie : and with that thought hes fell ficke. But before he tooke his bed, he fent an Indian to the Cacique of Quigalta, to tell him. that he was the Child of the Sunne, and that all the way that he came all men obeyed and ferued him, that he requested him to accept of his friendship, and come vnto him; for he would be very glad to fee him: and in figne of loue and obedience to bring fomething with him of that which in his Councrie was most esteemed. The Cacique answered by the same Indian :

A most winte cique of Qui-

That whereas he faid, that he was the Childe of the Sunne, if he would drie up the Riner hee would beleene bim : and touching the rest, that he was wont to visit none : but rather that all those of whom fuer of the Ca- bee had notice did vifit him, ferned, obeyed and paid him tributes willingly or perforce: therefore if hee defired to fee him, it were best be should come thither: that if he came in peace, hee would receive him with speciall goodwill; and if in warre, in like manner be would attend him in the Towne where he was, and that for him or any other he would not forinke one foote backe.

By that time the Indian returned with this antiwere, the Gonernour had betaken himselfe to bed, being suill handled with Feuers, and was much aggricued, that hee was not in case to passe 30 presently the River, and to seek him, to see if he could abate that pride of his, considering the Riuer went now very strongly in those parts; for it was neere halfe a league broad, and 16.fathoms deepe, & very furious, and ran with a great current; and on both fides were many Indians, and his power was not now fo great, but that he had need to helpe himielfe rather by flights then force,

The Gouernour felt in himselfe that the houre approached, wherein he was to leave this prefent life, and called for the Kings Officers, Captaines and principall persons. Hee named Lags de Moscoso de Aluarado his Captaine generall. And presently he was sworne by all that were present, and elected for Gouernour. The next day, being the one and twentieth of May, 1542. Don Ferdinando departed out of this life, the valorous, virtuous, and valiant Captaine, Don Fernando de Soto, Gode Sato, the ar. uernour of Caba, and Adelantado of Florida: whom fortune advanced, as it vieth to doe others, 49 that he might have the higher fall. Hee departed in such a place, and at such a time, as in his fickneffe he had but little comfort : and the danger wherein all his people were of perifing in that Countrie, which appeared before their eyes, was cause sufficient, why every one of them had neede of comfort, and why they did not visite nor accompanie him as they ought to have done. Lugs de Moscoso determined to conceale his death from the Indians, because Ferdinando de Soto had made them beleeue, That the Christians were immortall; and also because they tooke him to be hardy, wife, and valiant: and if they should knowe that hee was dead, they would be bold to fet voon the Christians, though they lived peaceably by them. In regard of their difpolition, and because they were nothing constant, and believed all that was told them, the Adelantado made them beleeve, that he knew some things that passed in secret among themselves, 50 without their knowledge, how, or in what manner he came by them ; and that the figure which appeared in a Glasse, which he shewed them, did tell him whatsoeuer they practited and went about: and therefore neither in word nor deed durst they attempt any thing that might be pre-

A wittie ftratagem.

> As foone as he was dead, Luys de Moscoso commanded to put him secretly in an house, where he remayned three dayes: and remoung him from thence, commanded him to be buried in the night at one of the gates of the Towne within the wall. And as the Indians had feene him fick, and miffed him, fo did they suspect what might be. And passing by the place where he was buried, feeing, the earth moued, they looked and spake one to another. Lays de Moscoso vnderstanding of it, commanded him to be taken up by night, and to east a great deale of fand into the 60 Mantles, wherein he was winded vp, wherein he was carried in a Canoa, and throwne into the midft of the River. The Cacique of Guachoya inquired of him, demanding what was become of his brother and Lord, the Gouernor: Luys de Moscoso told him, that he was gone to Heauen, as many other timeshe did: Ind because he was to stay there certaine dayes, he had left him in his place.

The Cacique thought with himfelfe that he was dead; and commanded two young and well proportioned Indians to be brought thither; and faid, that the vic of that Countrie was, when any This is also the Lord died, to kill Indians, to waite voon him, and ferue him by the way: and for that purpose custome of the by his commandement were those come thither : and prayed Lays de Moscoso to command them to be beheaded, that they might attend and ferue his Lord and brother. Luns de Moscoso told him, that the Gouernour was not dead, but gone to Heauen, and that of his owne Christian Souldiers, he had taken fuch as he needed to ferue him, and prayed him to command those Indians to be looted, and not to vie any such bad custome from thenceforth : straightway he commanded them to be loofed, and to get them home to their houses. And one of them would not goe; to faying, that he would not ferue him, that without defert had judged him to death, but that hee

would ferue him as long as he lived, which had faued his life.

All were of opinion, that it was best to goe by land toward the West, because Mueus Espan- Their generals was that way; holding the Voyage by Sea more dangerous, and of greater hazard, because wanted by land they could make no ship of any strength to abide a storme, neither had they Master, nor Pilot, Westward. Compas, nor Chart, neither knew they how farre the Sea was off, nor had any notice of it; nor whether the River did make any great turning into the Land, or had any great fall from the Rockes, where all of them might be cast away. And some which had seene the Sea-chart, did finde, that from the place where they were, by the Sea-coast to Nuena Espanna, might be foure hundred leagues little more or leffe; and faid, that though they went somewhat about by Land 30 in feeking a peopled Countrie, if some great Wilderneffe which they could not paffe did not hinder them, by fpending that Summer in travell, finding provision to passe the Winter in some peopled Countrie, that the next Summer after they might come to fome Christian Land, and that it might fortune in their trauell by Land, to finde some rich Countrie, where they might doe themiclues good. The Gouernour, although he defired to get out of Florida in shorter time. feeing the inconveniences they layed before him, in travelling by Sea, determined to follow that

which feemed good to them all. On Monday the fifth of Iune, he departed from Guachoya. The Cacique gaue him a Guide to Iune 9. Chaquate, and stayed at home in his owne Towne. They passed through a Province called Ca- catalle. talie : and having passed a Wildernesse of fixe dayes Journey, the twentieth day of the moneth 30 he came to Chaguate. There he was informed of the habitation that was toward the West. They Chaguate. told him, that three dayes lourney from thence was a Province called Agnacay. The Governour came to this Towne on Wednesday, the fourth of July. He found the Towne without people, Aguacay

and lodged in it; he ftayed there about a day; during which, he made some roades, and tooke many menand women. There they had knowledge of the South Sea. The next day he came to a small Towne called Pate. The fourth day after his departure from Pate. Aguacay be came to the first habitation of a Prouince called Amage. There an Indian was ta- Amage. ken, which faid that from thence to Nagnatex, was a day and a halfes fourney; which they trauelled, finding all the way inhabited places. Hauing passed the peopled Countrie of Amaje, on Saturday the twentieth of July they pitched their Campe at noone between Amaye and Nagua-40 tex. The next day he came to the habitation of Naguatex, which was very feattering. Within Noguetex. foure dayes he departed thence, and comming to the River, hee could not passe, because it was The River growne very bigge; which feemed to him a thing of admiration, being at that time that it was, fable in August and fince it had not rained a moneth before. The Indians faid, that it increased many times after at Naguatax. that manner without rayning in all the Countrie. It was supposed, that it might bee the tide Coniccures that came into it. It was learned that the floud came alway from aboue, and that the Indians of of a Sea to the

all the Countrie had no knowledge of the Sea. Hee departed from Nagnater, and within three dayes lourney came to a Towne of foure or fine houses, which belonged to the Cacique of that Province, which is called Niffone: it was Niffone euill inhabited, and had little Maiz. Two dayes journey forward the Guides which guided the 50 Gouernour, if they were to goe Westward, guided him to the Bast, and somtimes went up and downe through very great Woods out of the way. The Gouernour commanded them to be hanged upon a tree : and a woman that they tooke in Niffoone guided him, and went backe againe to feeke the way. In two dayes he came to another miferable Towne, called Lacana: an Lacana Indian was taken in that place, and faid, that the Countrie of Nondacao was a Countrie of great Nandacae habitation, and the houses scattering the one from the other, as they vie to be in Mountaines, and had great flore of Maiz. The Cacique came with his men weeping, like them of Naguatex : for this is their vie, in token of obedience : he made him a present of much fish, and offered to doe what he would command him.

The Gouernour departed from Nondacao toward Soacatina, and in fine dayes journey came to 60 a Province called Aays. That day that the Governour departed from thence, the Indian that Aqua guided him faid, that in Nondacao he had heard fay, that the Indians of Soacatino had feene other Christians, whereof they were all glad; thinking it might be true, and that they might have entred into those parts by Nueua Espanna; and that if it were so, it was in their owne hands to goe out of Florida, if they found nothing of profit: for they feared they should lose themselves

Knowledge of

Twenty daies the South.

Guafce : here they found fome Turkie ftones,& mantles of Cotten

The River of Daycee: which feemeth to be Rio del oro.

No trauelling by land without an Inter-Dreter.

Gold, Silver and precious ftones in Flo-

Turkie stones and Mantles of Cotten wooll found in Gualco. 150 leagues betweene the River of Daycae, and Rio grande. The beginning of December. Raine with Northren

winde excee.

ding cold.

in some wildernesse. This Indian led him two dayes out of the way. The Governour comman ded to torture him. He faid, that the Cacique of Nondacao, his Lord, commanded him to guide them fo, because they were his enemies, and that he was to doe as his Lord commanded him. The Gouernour commanded him to be cast to the dogs: and another guided him to Soacatine, while ther he came the day following. It was a very poore Country ; there was great want of Maiz in that place. He asked the Indians whether they knew of any other Christians. They faid, that a little from thence toward the South they heard they were. He trauelled twentie dayes through a Country euill inhabited, where they fuffered great featsitie and trouble. For that little Mair which the Indians had, they had hidden and buried in the woods, where the Christians, after they were well wearied with trauell, at the end of their journey went to feeke by digging what they Io should eate. At last, comming to a Prouince that was called Guasco, they found Maiz, where with they loaded their horfes, and the Indians that they had.

The Indians told them there, that ten daies journie from thence toward the West, was a River called Darcas: whither they went fometimes a hunting and killing of Deere: and that they had feene people on the other fide, but knew not what habitation was there. There the Christians tooke such Maiz as they found and could carry, and going ten daies journie through a wildernelle, they came to the River which the Indians had told them of. Ten horsemen which the Gouernour had fent before, passed oner the same, and went in a way that led to the River, and lighted upon a company of Indians that dwelt in very little cabins; who, as foone as they faw them. tooke themselves to flight, leaving that which they had; all which was nothing but mi- 20 ferie and pouertie. The Countrie was to poore, that among them all there was not found halfe a pecke of Maiz. The horfemen tooke too Indians, and returned with them to the Ruer, where the Gouernour staied for them. He sought to learne of them what habitation was toward the West. There was none in the Campe that could understand their language. The Gouernour affembled the Captaines and principall persons, to determine with their aduice what they should doe. And the most part said, that they thought it best to returne backe to Rio grande, or the great River of Guachera; because that id Nilce and thereabout was store of Maiz; saying, that they would make Pinnaces that winter, and the next Summer passe downe the River to the Seaward in them, and comming to the Sea they would goe along the coast to Nuena Espanna. For though it seemed a doubtfull thing and difficult, by that which they had already alleadged, yet it was the last remedy they had. For by land they could not goe for want of an Interpreter. And they held that the Countrie beyond the River of Dayaco, where they were, was that which Cabeca de Vaca mentioned in his relation that he passed of the Indians, which lined like the Alarbes, banno no settled place, and fed upon Tunas and roptes of the fields; and wilde beafts that they killed. Which if it were fo, if they should enter into it and finde no victuals to passe the winter, they could not choose but perish. For they were entred already into the beginning of October : and if they flaied any longer, they were not able to returne for raine and inowes, nor to fuffaine themselves in so poore a Countrie. The Governour (that defired long to see himselfe in a place where her might fleene his full fleene, rather then to conquer and governe a Countrie where fo many troubles prefented themselves) presently returned backe that same way that he came.

When that which was determined was published to the Campe, there were many that were greatly grieved at it: for they held the Sea voyage as doubtfull for the enil meanes they had, and as great danger as the trauelling by land : and they hoped to finde fome rich Countrey before they came to the land of the Christians, by that which Cabeca de Vaca had told the Emperour: and that was this; That after he had found cloathes made of Cotten wooll, hee faw Gold and Silver, and stones of great value. And they had not yet come where hee had beene. For vntill that place he alwayes trauclled by the Sea coaft : and they trauelled farre within the land; and that going toward the West, of necessitie they should come where he had beene. For he taid, That in a certaine place he trauelled many dayes, and entred into the land toward the North. And in Guafco they had already found fome Turkie flones, and Mantles of Cotten wooll; which the 50 Indians fignified by fignes that they had from the West: and that holding that course they should draw neere to the land of the Christians. From Daycao, where now they were to Rio grando, or the great River, was one hundred and fiftie leagues : which voto that place they had gone Westward. They departed from Nilco in the beginning of December; and all that way, and before from Chilano, they endured much trouble; for they passed through many waters, and many times it rained with a Northren winde, and was exceeding colde, so that they were in open field with water ouer and underneath them: and when at the end of their dayes journey they found dry ground to rest upon, they gave great thankes to God. With this trouble almost all the Indians that served them died. And after they were in Mineya, many Christians also died : and the most part were ticke of great and dangerous difeases, which had a spice of the lethargie.

As soone as they came to Minoya, the Gouernour commanded them to gather all the chaines together, which enery one had to lead Indians in; and to gather all the Iron which they had for their prouision, and all the rest that was in the Campe : and to set up a forge to make mailes, and commanded them to cut downe timber for the Brigandines. And a Portugal of Couta, who

having bin a prisoner in Fet, had learned to saw timber with a long Saw, which for such purpoles they had carried with them, did teach others, which helped them to faw timber. And a Enquenisen poles they had carried with them, and the without him they had never come out of the herbe like Genoms, whosh is produced another that could make Ships but he) with foure or fine other Flaxe of the Riffaine Carpenters, which hewed his plankes and other timbers, made the Brigandines: And Countrie. ryo calkers, the one of Genna, the other of Sardinia did calke them with the tow of an hearbe The mighty like Hempe, whereof before I haue made mention, which there is named Enequen. And because increasing of the Hempe, warred before I have liked them with the flixe of the Countrie, and with the Man-there was not enough of it, they calked them with the flixe of the Countrie, and with the Man-there was not enough of it, they calked them with the flixe of the Countrie, and with the Man-there was not enough of it, they calked them with the flixe of the Countrie, and with the Man-there was not enough of it, they calked them with the flixe of the Countrie, and with the Man-there was not enough of it, they calked them with the flixe of the Countrie, and with the Man-there was not enough of it, they calked them with the flixe of the Countrie, and with the Man-there was not enough of it, they calked them with the flixe of the Countrie, and with the Man-there was not enough of it, they calked them with the flixe of the Countrie, and with the Man-there was not enough of it, they calked them with the flixe of the Countrie, and with the Man-there was not enough of it. tles, which they rauelled for that purpose. A Cooper made for every Brigandine two halfe hogs space, towit, 10 heads, which the Mariners call quarterers, because foure of them hold a Pipe of water. In the all March and moneth of March, when it had not rained a moneth before, the River grew fo big, that it came Aprillto Nilco, which was nine leagues off : and on the other fide, the Indians faid, that it reached other The grandconto Niles, which was nine leagues on; and on the other nue, the amount into the reached other nine leagues into the land. In the towns where the Christians were, which was formwhat high Indians spainfi ground, where they could best goe, the water reached to the stirrops. They made certaine rates the Coristinas. of timber, and laid many boughes vpon them, whereon they fer their horses, and in the houses Note well. they did the like. But feeing that nothing preuailed, they went up to the lofts : and if they went Thirty Indians out of the houles, it was in Canoes, or on horfeback in those places where the ground was highout of the houles, it was in Canoes, or on horieoack in those places where the ground was inguieft. So they were two moneths, 2 deould doe nothing, during which time the River decreated
have their not. The Indians ceased not to come vitto the Brigantines as they were wont, and came in Carricht hands 20 noes. At this time the Governour feared they would fet voon him. He commanded his men to cut off. rake an Indian fecretly of those that came to the Towne, and stay him till the rest were gone : The River inrate an instant secretly of contention came of the above, and tay mind in the few were gone and they tooke one. The Governour commanded him to be put to torture, to make him confells and they tooke one. The Governour commanded him to be put to torture, to make him confells and they tooke one. The Governour confells have the Confedence of Miles whether the Indians did practife any treason or no. Hee confessed that the Caciques of Nilco, whethe snows Gustboya, and Taguanate, and others, which in all were about twenty Caciques, with a great doe melt in number of people, determined to come vpon him; and that three dayes before, they would fend March &April, agreat prefeut of fish to colour their great treaton and malice, and on the very day they would A miraculous fend some Indians before with another present. And these with those which were our slaues, They faile which were of their confpirate alfo, thould fet the houses on fire, and first of all possesse them downe the felues of the lances which flood at the doores of the houles; and the Caciques with all their men Graude from 30 (hould be neere the Towne in ambush in the wood, and when they faw the fire kindled, should Mineya 17. should be neere the 1 owne in amount in the word, and when they law this life to be kept in a daiesbefore come, and make an end of the conquelt. The Gouernour commanded the Indian to be kept in a they came to chaine, and the felfe same day that he spake of, there came thirty ludians with fish. Hee commanded their right hands to be cut off, and Ihne them fo backe to the Cacique of Guacheya, whose thereof. This men they were. He fent him word, that he and the reit should come when they would, for he Author acdeired flotting more, and that he should know; that they taught not any thing which he knew countrib but deired flothing more, and that he hould know, that they taught not any tang winter he know 300 left, but not before they thought of it. Hereupon they all were put in a very great feare: And the Ca- 700al, 6 recks eign; of Nilco and Tagnamate came to excuse themselves; and a few dayes after came he of Gua. oneth 700, saychora. The Brigandin a being finished in the moneth of June, the Indians having told vs, That ing, that he ear the Reservence aled but once a yeare, when the Snowes did melt, in the time wherein I mentio- ned with him the Rustramereased but office a years, which is subject as the first and a long time, it pleases from catagogo and, it had already increased, being now in Summer, and having not rained a long time, it pleases the eaddeth, fed God that the flood came vp to the Towneto feeke the Brigandines, from whence they carried them by water to the River. Which if they had gone by land, had beene in danger of break- de Leen, the first ing and splitting their keeles, and to be all vidone; because that for want of Iron, the spikes discourrer of were flort, and the plankes and timber were very weake. They shipped two and twenty of Florida, loft were short, and the plankes and timber were very weakt. They imple a work and twelfed the himselse and the belt Horses that were in the Campe, the rest they made dried shell of; and dressed the somen. Lucas Hogges which they had in like manner, They departed from Mmoya the second day of Vasqueswas al-

There went from Minoya three hundred twenty and two Spaniards in feuen Brigandines, with about well made, faue that the plankes were thin, because the nailes were short, and were not pitched, nor had any decks to keepe the water from comming in. In flead of deckes they laid plankes, went with 400 So whereon the Marriners might run to trim their failes, and the people might refresh themselves Spaniards, of aboue and below. They failed downe the River feventeene dayes; which may be two hundred which nor aand fiftie leagnes journey, little more or leffe : and neere vnto the Sea the River is divided into boue foure efand fiftie leagnes sourney, little more of felle: and neere visit of the Sea the Richer's Schilder into caped, &c. Don-two armes; each of them is a league and a halfe broad. By the way the Indians fet on them: mailiabella Sotos

flew fome, and wounded many.

gricuous Moskitoes.

The eighteenth of July, they went forth to Sea with faire and prosperous weather for their with criefe. So voyage. They failed with a reatonable good winde that day and the night following, and the fatallhith Flonext day till euening long, alwaies in fresh water, whereat they wondred much; for they were rida beene to next day till eneming long, alwaies in trelli water, whereat they wondled meets, not they be spaint, that (I very farge from land. But the force of the current of the River is 6 great, and the coast there is hope) Diriginia. :60 fo shallow and gentle, that the fresh water entreth farre into the Sea.

may haue he They indured an intolerable storme first, and after that the torment of an infinite iwarme of greater downer

Moskitos which fell upon them, which as soone as they had stung the flesh, it so infected it, as for her English They failed 17. daies down the River, which is about \$52. leagues. Fresh water almost two daies filling in the Sea. As written

though

A cum of the Sealike Pitch called Copec.

1556

Another deep

They arrined Septemo, to. 311 Christians arrived at Par deg:cesanda

h dre on the Well lide of Fl rida. Ocute. Curifachiqui. Xuala. Chichs Coro. and Talife Tofcalues. Rio Grande.

Aquixo. Coligon. shough they had been even mous. For the fayles which were white feemed blacke with them Those which rowed, valeffe others kept them away, were not able to rowe. Having paffed the feate and danger of the storme, beholding the deformities of their faces, and the blowes which they gave themselves to drive them away, one of them hughed at another. They met all together in the creeke, where the two Brigandines were, which outwent their fellowes. There was found a skumme, which they call Copee, which the Sea casteth up, and it is like Pitch, wherewith in some places, where Pitch is wanting, they pitch their ships: there they pitched their Brigandines. They reited two dayes, and then eftiones proceeded on their Voyage. They failed two dayes more, and landed in a Bay or arme of the Sea, where they stayed two dayes.

From the time that they put out of Rio Grande, to the Sea, at their departure from Florida, 10 in the River of vatill they arrived in the River of Panaco, were two and fiftie dayes. They came into the River Pance, 1543. of Panuco the tenth of September, 1543. There arrived there of those that came out of Plorida.

three hundred and eleuen Christians.

From the Port de Spiritu Santo, where they landed when they entred into Florida . to the Province of Ocute, which may be foure hundred leagues, little more or leffe, is a very plaine Port de Spiritu Countrie, and hath many Lakes and thicke Woods, and in some places they are of wilde Pine. Santoisin 29. trees; and is a weakefoyle: There is in it neither Mountaine not Hill. The Countrie of Ochte is more fac and fruitfull; it hath thinner Woods, and very goodly Medowes upon the Rivers. From Ocute to Cutsfachiqui may be an hundred and thirty leagues : eightie leagues thereof are Defart, and have many Groves of wilde Pine-trees. Through the Wilderneffe great Rivers doe 24 palle. From Cutifachiqui to Xuala, may bee two hundred and fity leagues : it is all an hilly Countrie, Cuifachiqui and Xuala stand both in plaine ground, high, and have goodly Medowes on the Rivers. From thence forward to Chiaba, Cogs, and Talife, is plaine ground, drie and fat. and very plentifull of Maiz. From Xuala to Tafcaluga may be two hundred and fifty leagues. From Tascaluca to Rio Grande, or the Great River, may be three hundred leagues : the Countrie is lowe, and tall of Lakes. From Rio Grande forward, the Countrie is higher and more champaine, and best peopled of all the Land of Florida. And along the River from Agains to Pacaha, and Coligon, are an hundred and fifty leagues: the Countrie is plaine, and the woods thinne. and in some places champaine, very fruitfull and pleasant. From Coligon to Autiamque are two hundred and fifty leagues of hilly Countrie. From Antiamque to Aguacay, may bee two hundred and thirtie leagues of plaine ground. From Aguacay to the River of Daycao an hundred and twentie leagues, all hilly Countrie.

From the Port de Spiritu Sante Vnto Agalache, they travelled from East to West, and North west. From Cutifachiqui to Xuala from South to North. From Xuala to Coca from East to West. From Coca to Tafcalaga, and to Rio Grande, as farre as the Prounce of Quizquiz and Amire from East to West. From Aguixo to Pacaba to the North. From Pacaba to Tulla from East to West : and from Talle to Autiamque from North to South, to the Prounce of Guachoga and

Daycao, &c.

This Relation of the discouery of Florida was printed in the house of Andrew de Burgos, Printer and Geneleman of the house of my Lord Cardinall the Infant. It was finished the tenth of 40 February, in the years one thousand five hundred fiftie and seven, in the Noble and most loyall Citie of Enera.

CHAP. III.

Divers expeditions from Mexico and other parts of New Spaine and New Biskay, especially so the more Northerly parts of America, by divers Spaniards in a bundred yeares space.

Q. I.
The Relation of NVNNO di GVSMAN written to CHARLES the fift Emperour; translated out of R A M V SI O S third Tome, and abridged.



Croiles ere-

Writ fom Mechacen to your Maiestie (after I had written from Mexico) that I went thence with one hundred and fiftie horfemen, and as many footemen well armed, and with twelve small Peeces of artillery, and 7. or 8000. Indians our 60 friends, and all neceffaries for the discouery and conquest of the Countrey from the Terlichichimechi which continue with New Spaine. I arrived at the River of the purification of Saint Mary, to called, for palling it on that day. And because that Countrey was of the enemies, I determined to plant there three great Croffes, which I had

carried with me, well wrought and of good proportion, which after Maffe faid in Procession with Trumpets, the Captaines and I carried on our shoulders, and planted one on the River, and the fecund before a Church of the Purification, then begun to be builded, and the third before the way which I was to passe, "to the which Crosses with all denotion wee after made due prayer. "Alle quari, to This cone, the standerds of the Crosse began to be directed in the land of those infidels, which had or at the not beene done lince the Christians entred those parts. Incontinently some people met vs in which, peace, yeel ling themselues and promiting seruice. Meane while the Church was finished and walled about, that fireene or twenty horfemen might lodge within. There Maffe was faid, and a Sermon was preached; after which certaine ordinances were red for good orders to be kept in To the Armie. After this, on the feuenth of February possession was taken in your Maiesties name of that New Difcouerie, and on the foureteenth was made the request which is accustomed to

In regard of acculations made against Caconci Lord of Machuacan for rebellion and conspira- csconci Lord cie to have flaine vs. I marched against him and found the information true, besides other inormities in facrificing Indians and Christians, as he had vied to doe before he was a Christian, whereupon I condemned him to the fire, as may be feene in the processe made against him. Having executed this man and pacified the Countrie, I left a Spaniard in a fortreffe there built by the Indians, and trauelled fix daies in a Countrie not inhabited, three of them downe the River, leauing at every lodging place a Crosle. On the fixt day we came to the Province (minao, full of cuinao. 20 good Townes and abounding in victuals. The people had at first armed themselves for relistance. but when I fent Baring against them, they were all fled to the Mountaines. The light horse tooke some of the slowest not without making some defence. I fent them word not to be afraid, but to returne to their houses and give their obedience, which they refusing, I marched against them with three squadrons, and sent the Ouerfeer on one part, and Captaine Ognate on the other, and I was at their backes. The Ouerfeer found none but women and children. Ognate incountred with about one hundred men with their Bowes and Arrowes wounded fleightly two horses and three men, but many of them were slaine, others taken with women and children about five hundred, which I caused to be kept together, lest the Indiant should facrifice them after their wont. The Cacique was fied to the next Prouince, 10 called Cuinaquiro, of another figniorie and language. Because hee came not at my sending, I Cuinquiro. went to feeke him. Entring that Prouince where were many Townes, and great store of Wretchedhold

Maiz and Fruites, wee found many people dead, facrificed, which had out of the for- pitality. mer Prouince retired thither for feare of vs, with many peeces of flesh which they vse to cate. I fent many prisoners to their friends to let them see that I came not to flav them. The language of this people none of ours could understand. The Ouerseer encountred three hundred armed with Bowes and Arrowes, which the day before had killed foure of our Indians: they fet vpon ours finging, and killed a Horse, but having lost one hundred of their company, the rest escaped. I found my men cutting the Horie in preces, that the enemies might fee no figne of him, whereby they might know that a Horfe 40 could dye. I fent the Campe Mafter to discouer the foord : three Indians fet on him , one Courseious

of which had a two hand fword of wood, which gaue him two blowes, but the Indian was Indian. slaine. I moued forwards, and discouered many inhabited places. Another skirmish happened with the Indians wherein aboue one hundred of them were flaine. All the Countrie is full of Maiz, Kidney-beanes, Hens, Parrats, Palmitos: there growes much Cotten, and some shewes appeared of Gold and Siluer found with some of the inhabitants.

I procured the Cacique to come to me with all his principal men, whom I entertained with Spanishpreach-

much kindnesse, and made a speech to them, giving them to vinderstand what God was, and the ing to convers Pope, and what they ought to doe to be faued : and how the King of Castile was the Minister of God in Infidels. earth, and Lord of all those parts subject to him; and that to me in his royall name they were to reelde obedience and service; and that they should abstaine from sacreficing & adoration to Idels and Divels, which

5) they had butberto done, because God alone was to be worshipped, feared and served, and after him they ought to ferme and obey on earth the King of Castile. The Cacique answered that till that houre hee Indian simplihad never knowne any thing of that which I had spoken, nor had ever heard of any but me that citie, which I declared; but that he now conceived great pleasure to have vinderstood it, and that from benceforth he would hold for God the King of Castile, and would worship him. I answered that hee ought not so to doe, for the King of Castile was a mortall man as we our selves are, but that hee was Lord and Sourraigne ouer vs all, and given to vs of God to rule and governe vs, and we were to ferue and obey him. And God aboue, which created heaven and earth, and all things visible and inuitible, is he which ought to be worthipped, feared, and ferued about all things, for a much (O as he giveth vs, and of his hands we hold the life and being which we have, and he is able to take

it from vs at his pleafure. In this manner he stood adusted of that which he ought to doe, although their wit and capacitie be very small, and their will much disagreeing, by reason of their ancient custome of seruing the Duell. But feeing all things must have a beginning and labour, and herein especially

1557

the grace of God is necessary and the holy Ghost to be intused; it is to be believed and hoped of his infinite gentlenesseand mercy, that having directed your Maiestie to discouer this place and conqueit, in vertue thereof and good fortune, after that of God, all things shall be done profineroully, and he will fuffer to give to this Nation knowledge of the truth. And if it be not fortist denly done, yet the way shall be opened, and the Countrie connersed in, and in abited of Chris frant, which adore and laud his holy Name, where before, the Deuill was adored with fo many adolatries ; and the Baners of his most holy Crosle shall be fixed in all those Countries, that when he shall fend his Grace, those Nations may be prepared to receive it. I gaue to that Cacique all the people which I had taken, and they beganne to reinhabite their houses ; and after a most fumptious Croffe placed there, and possession of those Prounces taken in your Maiesties name, to I departed by the way of another Province called Cwifes, fituate on the other fide of a great Rie per iffing out of a great Lake, After a battell with this People, wherein we prevailed by our Artillerie, the Cacique fent a Melfenger to me, by whom I fent him word, that we came thirher to have them our triends, and to take p flession of that Countrie, in the name of the Kine of Caffele, Having obtayned provisions, and passing further, in an Iland in the River happened hard skirmish, in which divers were burt, many of theirs flame and taken, and the rest fled. The last which was taken, and which fought most couragiously, was a man in habite of a woman. Solomite pro- which confessed, that from a childe he had gotten his living by that filthinesse, for which I caufed him to be burned.

Returning to the Campe, I caused the principall Lords of the Countrie to come to me, and pa-20

cified them, giving them Lithes, reftor ng the prifoners, and bidding them returne to their ha-

Cuileo.

bitations : gruing them to understand on behalfe of the King of Caffile, That he was Lord and the Minister of God in Earth, in which God, the King and all men of the world are to believe, to adore. feare and ferne bim as God alone, maker and Creator of all things e and on Earth to be vallals, and to obey the commandements of the King of Caltile, as his Minister: and to mee in his Royall name, and that they should not worship Idols, nor eate mans stable. They answered me, that so they would doe, and their facrificing to ldols hitherto grew from hence, that they knew not what God was; and because the Deutil commanded them to observe those formes, and defired fielh and bloud of them, giving them to understand, that he was the Lord of all the world, whereupon for feare they had committed this errour, which hencetorth they would ceafe to doe. Great are the finnes a of all men buing, teeing God permits to great abominations to bee committed against his die Nore well this uine Maieitie, and that luch a multitude of toules are loft, and remaine blinde as brute beafts, and worle : for they follow their naturall course, which these have lost : although some me anely publifu the warre which is made upon them to be unjust, but also seeke to disturbe it, teing the mill worthic and holy worke, and of most merit, (with the punishing of that Nation) that nothing can be die in the fernice of God greater, how scener it be done by the hands of great sinners, and effectially by mile who am the greatest of all, fixee that nothing is hidden from his beate, and as the merciful and quere all good. I hope in his infinite clemency that he will receive my meane defire, and small paine and labout, worthie, holy, in diministion of my sinnes : and will permet by his infinite bountie and grace, and because your Maieste dith all for the feruice of God which it doth, whole charge it is to quide the enterprise in such manner, 49

that the beginning be with manifesting his Name, where before, that of the Encinie was serued wholly,

and adored. Bee it knowne to your Maiestie, that where some I come, I give all the people to under-

flandwhat God is, and who your Maieflie ss. The Towne about this place or ford of the River is

Departing toward the Prouince of Tonola, I fent the Querfeer to the Prouince of Cuy-

waccare, on the other fide of the River. The Seniory of that Province (for they had no par-

ticular Lord) fent Meffengers that they expected mee in peace, and would give mee what I

would how locuer Cosula, Cointla, and Cumaccaro, the three neighbour Prounces were fooles,

called Guanzebi, where a Croffe was planted.

Preaching by the Sword a mericorious fatisfactory worke.

Diginitie.

Guarrebi. Tonela a free State.

Cuinaccara. Coinla, and Coincla.

and refolued upon warre, These fought with vs to valiantly, that some one Indian would turne his head against a Light-horfeman, and taking his Lance with one hand, with the other would 50 lay on him with a club which they vie; others would lay hold on the Bridles, and those which haue beene in New Spaine, and other parts, teffine that more couragious Indians have not beene feene. They vie Bowes, Arrowes, Clubs, and two-hand Swords of wood, a Sling, and fome Targets. The most of them feare the Horses, holding opinion that they would eate them, and a thoufind of them have beene afraid of three Horsemen; yet neuerthelesse some are thus hare dy. The Countrie is temperate, they are great Sacrificers, have Silver, and some Gold: but l made thew not to care for it, and faid I had no need of Gold, but that they should ferue, and not facrifice as before. In the place of the victorie was erected a faire Church called. The mittorie of the Croffe, and a Croffe of fixtie foot long there crected. Zapatula received me in peace, Axi mocuntly people fled vet fent flore of victuals, as did also Intallan.

Zapatula. Aximecuntla. witie but in name and

Our Indians in our march had flaine and facrificed certaine women and children, the fignes Indian Christiawhereof I tound, it being a thing impossible to remedie, notwithstanding all the punishment inflicted, how focuer forme lay, they are good Christians. And let your Majeltie beleeve, that they doe at this pretent time as they did before, but fecretly. And for this, and for other just caules

which I have written to your Maiethe, there ought not fo much libertie be given them, nor more then that which is accustomed to their state and lining; for to doe otherwise, is to give occasion to them to be bad, and especially this People is of such nature, that they must be very much holden under, and made to teare, that they may be good Christans.

CHAP.3. S.1. Embaffadors with offers of peace. Croffes eretted

From Xalpa three Emballadors came to me, with offer of peace, subiection, and certaine Sil- feare. uer plates, and an Idoil made of Cotton, and full of bloud, and a Raior of itone in the midft. Xalpa wherewith they facrificed, which was burned in their fight, to their great amazement, who thought it would have destroyed all. Against Mandie Thursday a Church was erected of reeds in a day, and deuout Procellion was then made of more then thirtie Dilciplinants. On Eafter Tuef. Bloudy Pro-

to day I departed thence to Tepano, thence by Mount Amee to Teulinebano, a strong place, being Teulinebano all of stone cut round, where every Lord of the Prounce ought to have a house wherein to iacrifice: there had beenea great idoll of Gold, destroyed in other warres. The Palaces were of ftone engraven, some pieces of eighteene spannes, with great Statues of men, with other things like those of Mexico. The Courts of the Palaces were spacious, and faire, with Fountaines of good water. Thence I fent Captaine Verdugo to Xaltenango, thorow a Valley of fixe leagues, but the people were fled to the Mountaines. A Croffe was planted, and Masse said for the service of Xaltenango. God, there where the Deuill had fo long beene ferued, and had received to many Sacrifices, I divided the Armie, one part to goe to Mechacan (another Province , not that of New Mechacan on Spaine) neere to the South Sea I marched with the other to Guatatlan, and there planted a

20 Croffe on a Hill, and thence to Tetulan, accompanied with the Caciques of the Countrie: thence to Xalifeo. Heere the way was so bad that in fitteene dayes I rode not three, and many Xalifeo. I fent to the principall Lords of Xalifeo, to whom I made the request accustomed. They were

all retired to the Mountaines. Finding my felfe neere the Sea, I tooke poffelion thereof for your Maiestie. At Topique two of the Lords of Xalifeo came to me in peace, and to yeeld obedience, as three other Townes had done neere the Sea, where are faid to bee Mines of Gold. There I made Officers in your Maiesties name, as being a new D. scouerie and Conquest separate from New Spane, that there might be some to receive your Maiesties fiths. Two Croffes were ere-Sted in Xalifes and two in Tepeque, a place well watered, and very fertile. In marching from 30 thence a great and dangerous battell was given vs by the Indians wherein we obtained victorie. They wounded fiftie Horfes, of which onely fixe died (one Horfe I affure your Maieftie, is worth about fourt hundred Pezos) divers of the principall Commanders were wounded also. The next day I made a Procession with a Te Denn. Thence I passed the great River of the Trimitie, to come to Omiclan, the chiefe of that Prounce. The Countrie is very hot, and the River full of Crocodiles, and there are many venomous Scorpions. Here was erected one Church, and two Croffes. Aztatlas is three dayes journey hence where they prepare to give mee battell. From thence ten dayes further I shall goe to finde the Amazons, which some tay dwell in the S.a., some in Amazonian an arme of the Sea, and that they are rich, and accounted of the people for Goddeffes, and whit- Dreames. ter then other women. They vie Bowes, Arrowes and Targets: baue many and great Towness

40 at a certaine time admit them to accompanie them, which bring up the males, as these the female iffue, &c. From Omitlan a Prouince of Mecnacan of the greater Spaine, on the eighth of Iuly, 1530.

had thought but for prolimitie, here to have added Aluarados Conquests the other way from Mexico. Pet. Aluarados two of whole Letters are extant in Ramulio. The later of them is dated from the Citie of Saint Litters to Cold lago, which hee founded. Hee writes that bee was well entertained in Guatimala, and puffed alongit tefs which had with diners fortunes, four ebundred leagues from Mexico conquering; and let your Loraffin beleene this Discourse mee, this Countrie is better inhabited and peopled then all that which your Lordbip bath bitherto and Conguest. gonerned. In this Prounce I have found a Vulcan, the most dreadfull thing that ever was scene: Two worst ter-30 which casteth forth stones as great as a house, burning in light stames, which falling, breake in pieces, and coner all that fiery Mountaine. Threescore leagues before wee saw another Vulcan , which sends forth a fearefull smeake, ascending up to Heauen, and the body of the smeake encompasset baife a league. None drinke of the streames which runne downe from it, for the Brimstone sent. And effecially there comes thence one principal River, very faire, but so bot, that certaine of my companie were not able to passe it, which were to make out-roades into certaine places; and searching a Ford, found another cold River running into it, and where they met together, the Ford was temperate and passable. I befeech your Lordship to grant mee the fanour to bee Gonernour of this Citie, &c. From Saint 1220, Inly 28. 1524.

Christians for

The Voyages of Frier MARCO de Nica, Don FR. VASQUEZ de Coronado, Don Anto Nio de Espeio, and divers into New Mexico,

and the adjorning Coasts and Lands.

Las Ganara. bit.cen 6.212.

Toppa.

BHere arolesome strife betwixt Don Antonio de Mendoza Vice-toy of New Spaine, and Cortes, each striuing to exceed the other in New Discoueries, and complaining of each Cortes, each ftruing to exceed the other to that end into Spaine, Mendoza heaother to the Emperour. Whiles Cortex went to that end into Spaine, Mendoza heaother to the Emperour. ring formewhat by Dorantez, one of Narusez his companions in the former inland Discouries in from Florida, tent both Friet Marco de Niça, with Steph. a Negro of Dorantez, and afterwards Captaine Francis Valquez de Coronado, by Land as likewife Ferdinando Alarchon by Sea. Cortez alfo fent Francis Ollow with a Fleet of three ships for discoverie of the same Sea, commonly called the South Sea. The Voyages Ramufio hath published at large in Italian, and Matter Hablers out of him in Enelish. I'shall borow leave to collect out of them and Gomara, and F. Iuan Gonaler de Mendoza, and others, some breefe heads of things agreeing to our purpose for the berter knowledge of the Northerne America.

Francis Valquez de Coron ado Gouernour of Nueva Galicia, Anno 1539. Writes, that hee arrined in the Province of Topira, where the Indians were fled into the Mountaines for feare of the Christians. They have froutes of stone, store of Gold, Emeralds, and other Iewels; have strong to armour of Silver fashioned in shapes of beasts, worship herbs and birds, and sing songs to them. Neere thereto is another Pronince where the people goe naked. Their Priests which they call Chichimechas keepe in the woods without houses, and eate things given of almes by the people. Both men and women goe naked; the men tye their prime member to the knee; they have Temples couered with itraw, the windowes full of dead mens skulls. They have in a ditch before the Temple the figure of a Serpent of divers metals, with his tayle in his mouth. One every yeere is acrificed by lot, crowned with flowers and layd in that ditch, and fire put to him ; which his death he takes patiently, and the yeere following is worshipped with hymnes, and after that his head is fet vp with the reft. They facrifice their prisoners burning them in another

dirch without fuch ceremonies.

Impious pie-

kinde of Vni-Expedition of Don Francisco Vafquez. Ill wayes. Sheepe 25 big as Hories, with huge hornes.

Indian embroi-* I have a Map made in Mexi-60, 1585. which placeth Citala in 30.and an halfe, and de-Scribeum New Mexico, on Rio del Natte about 50. Townes with Spanish names , franding neere each other. from 32. to 33. and a little

Frier Marco de Niça went from Saint Michael in Culiacan, two hundred leagues from Mexir. monost no co, with Stephen the Negro, and other Indians, and came to Petatian, and thence paffed a Defar foure dayes, and came to certaine Indians, which made much of him, fought to touch his garments and called him Hagota, that is, A man comme from Heanen. Thence he travelled to Vacupa, fortie leagues from the Sea (of California) and thence to Cenola, which in thirty dayes journey : he learned that the people by the Sea have flore of Pearles, and Targets of Kow-hides. By the way An voknowne he had understanding of the Kingdomes of Totonteac and Acm. They shewed him an hide balte as big againe as the hide of an Oxe, and faid, it was the skinne of a beast which had but one home vpon his fore-head, bending toward his breast, and that out of the same goeth a point forward with which he breakes any thing that he runneth against. The colour of the hide was as 40 of a Goat-skinne, the haire a finger thicke. He paffed thorow two Defarts. The men of Canala flie Stepben the Negro. Frier Marke went within light of it, and fayth it is a faire Citie feated at the foot of a Hill. V pon this newes Captaine Vafquez aforefaid in Aprill, 1540. travelled with 400. Horlemen, and a great Armie of Spaniards and others, many of which died of famine both Indians and Horses. The wayes were so rough, that the Sheepe and Lambes which they carried for their prouision lost their hooses. The fixe and twentieth of May hee arrived in the Valley of Coracones, fine dayes journey from the Westerne Sea, and thence hee went to Chichileate, and with much fearlitie to Cenola, which is the name of a Prouince in which are feuen Cities neere together: their houses are of stone source or fine stories high; they wie Ladders in stead of staires, and have Cellers under the ground made for Winter in manner of Stoues. The feuen Cities are 10 but small Townes with in foure leagues together. In one were two hundred houses compassed with walls, and some three hundred other vnwalled. They goe for the most part naked, vie painted Mantles, seeme not witty enough to build such houses; have good quantitie of Turquesles, some Emeralds also and Granates; great Gunee Corkes; and feason (in Summer) as in Mexico; many bealts, as Tigres, Beares, Lions, Porkespicks, and certaine Sheepe as big as Horses, with very great hornes and little tayles. I have feene their hornes fo great that it is a wonder. I have feene the heads of wilde Goats, pawes of Beares and skinnes of wilde Boares. There is game of Deere, Ounces, and very great Stags, Hares, Conies. He sent the Vice-roy an embroideredgament of Needle-worke wrought by those Indians, and clothes painted by them with the pictures of the beafts of the Countrey. It is very cold in Winter, although it be in 37, de-62 grees and a halfe. The snow continueth feven moneths, in so much that the people vie surred Mantles, and other winter prouisions. The Souldiers seeing little here to bee had, were effended more. But the Prouince of with the Friers which had commended Sinols, and loth to returne emptie to Mexico, they procionis he maceeded to Acuco, and Cardense with his troope of Horse went thence to the Sea, Vasquez with keth to be ano-

the rest to Tiquez, on the banke of a great River. There they had newes of Axa and Quinira. They heard or a bearded rich King also called Tatareax, whom they would visit; they burnt a Towne, and lost thirtie Horses in their way, and spent 45. dayes in siege of a Towne, which dranke fnowe in itead of water and burned their goods to preuent the Spanish spoyle, then iffuorange into the force with their wives and children, few escaping: and divers Spaniards also were flaine, and 80, wounded, belides Horfes. They burnt the Towne and marched to Cienie, horfe and men pailing ouer the River vpon the Ice being in 37. degrees ; and foure leagues from thence met Strange Kine. with a new kind of Kine wilde and fierce, of which they flue 80, the first day for their prouifion. From Cicnic they went to Quinira neere 300. leagues, thorow woodleffe Plaines, making to heapes of Oxe-dung for way-markes against their returne. All that Plaine is as full of bunch-

backed Kine as Serena in Spaine of Sheeps, and no other people but the Herd-men. It hailed Great baile. one day stones as big as Oranges . At length they came to Quintra and there found King Ta- Melangok, tarrex, a hoary man, naked and with a braffe lewell at his necke; whereat not a little vexed to fee themselves gulled with reports of riches, and the Crosse worshipped, and Queene of Heaven, of which they law no figure, they returned to Mexico, and there arrived in March, 1542. Vafquez

fell from his Horse in Tiguez, and withall out of his wits.

and remouals.

Quarita is in 40. degrees temperate, well watered, and hath store of fruits. They are appa- Quinira descrirelled with Oxe hides, and Deeres skinne. They faw thips on the coaft with Alcatrazes of Gold bed out of Geand Silver in their Prowes, which they effected to bee of China, making fignes that they had Ships frene. an fayled thirtie dayes. Some Friers returned to Quinira, and were flaine. As for those bunchbacked Kine, they are the food of the Natiues, which drinke the bloud hot, and eate the fat, and often rauine the fleth raw. They wander in companies, as the Alarbes (and Tartars) following the pastures according to the sersons. That which they eate not raw, they rost, or warme rather at a fice of Oxe-dung, and holding the fielh with his teeth, cut it with Rafors of ftone. Thefe The bunch-Oxen are or the bigneffe of our Bulls, but their hornes leffe, with a great bunch on their fore- backed Oxen thoulders, and more haire on their fore-parts then behind, which is like wooll; a mane like a Herfes on their backe bone, and long haire from the knees downward, with flore of long haire at the chinne and throat, a long flocke also at the end of the males tailes. The Horses fled from them, of which they flue iome, being enraged. They are meat, drinke, shooes, houses, fire, velac fels, and their Mafters whole lubitance. Other creatures as big as Horles the Spaniards for their homes of fines fine wooll called Sheepe; one of their hornes ordinarily weighed fiftie pounds. There are also pounds. great Dogs which will fight with a Bull, able to carrie liftie pounds weight in their huntings Great Dogs a

No 1581. Frier Augustine Ruiz, with two other Friers, and eight Souldiers transled Ruiz his Voy-A Non 1581. Kriet or nungine ame, white the frame of the Mines of Saint Barbara to Les Tigues, two hundred and fifty leagues Northwards, age to Tigues. where, vpon occasion of one of the Friers being flaine, the Souldiers returned. The two Friers Ande Efrie 211 a Meffizo Itayed. Whereupon the Franciscans carefull of their two Brethren, procured An- his New Menttonio de Efteio, a rich Mexican, with Frier Bernardine Beltran, and others, licensed to follow him to fet routh on the faid Disconerie, in November, An. 1582. with an hundred and fifteene Horles, and store of prouisions. Hee passed the Conches, and the Passaguates, and Tobefos, and Immanos, (finding many Silver Mines in the way) and then came to people, which for want of Language they could not name, and heard by one of the Conches, of a great Lake, and Townes neere it. with houses of three or foure stories, but went not thither. Fifteene dayes they travelled thorow Woods of Pine-trees, and two thotow Woods of Poplars and Walnuts, fill keeping by the River of the North, as they called it, till they came to a Countrie which they called New Mexico. They came to ten Townes fituate on both fides the River, which vied them kindly. Their houses are of foure stories, well built, with Stones for Winter: their apparel of Cotton, and Deeres skinnes: both men and women ware Boots and Shooes with foles of Neats leather. Each house had an Oratorie for the Deuill, where they set him meate, for whose ease (as they se (av) they erect Chappels also in the high-way. Thence they came to Tiguas in which were fixteene Townes: in Poals they had flaine the two Friers, and now therefore fled to the Moun- Friers flaine. taines. They four d many Hennes in the Countrey, and many metals. Hearing that there were Hennes many rich Townes Eastwards, they trau-lied two dayes, and found eleuen Townes, and (as they thought) fortie thousand people. There are fignes of rich Mines. They heard of a Prouince

Quires, fixe leagues higher up the River, which they visited, and found five Townes. They faw Quires. there a Pie in a Cage, and certaine tirafuls or fhadowes, fuch as they vie in China, in which were Painted Vonthere a Pie in a Cage, and certaine titalois or shadowes, such as they vie in Long, in which were painted the Sonne, Moone and Statres. They found themselves in 37, degrees and a halfe. Four Note then etc. teene leagues more to the North, they came to the Cunames, which had hue Townes; the grea- neffe of Virgi-60 teft was Cia, with eight Market places, the houses plaistered and painted with divers colours, mis. the people many and more civil then any they had feene.

They travelled thence North-weltward to a Countrie which had seven great Townes, and in them thirtie thousand soules, Fifteene leagues further Westward they came to Acoma, a Acoma Towns of fixe thousand persons, seated on a Rocke fifty paces high, without any passage to it

0 000000 2

Sheepe with ges had in Frebulbers wowase.

but by staires hewen in the Rocke; all their water was kept in Citternes. They travelled hence foure and twentie leagues Westward to Zuny or Cibola, where Vasquez had beene, and erceted Croffes, still standing. Three Indians of his Armie were still abue here, which told Effeio, of a great Lake fixtie dayes journey thence, vpon the bankes whereof were many Townes which had flore of Gold. Whereupon, the reft returning, hee with nine companions determined to goe thither, and came to a populous Prouince, called Mobotze, and being well entertained hee perswaded the Indians to build a Fort, to secure them from the Horses, which hee said would otherwife eate them; which they did. Here he left some of his companie, and went to discourse certaine rich Mines, whereof he had heard, fine and fortie leagues Westward, which hee found rich of Silver. He had further intelligence also of that great Lake, and having travelled twelve leagues to Habstes and Tames, populous Provinces, being so few, they returned in July, 1,83, by another way, downer a Rivercalled, De las Vaccas, or Of Kine, an hundred and twenty leagues, fill meeting with store of those cattell, and thence to [mehos, and so to the Valley of Saint Rartholmew in New Bilcate

Bartholmen Cane writtrom Mexico, in May, 1590, that Redrige del Rio, Gouernour of New Cons Letter is Bifcay was fent by the Vice-roy with five hundred Spaniards to the conquest of Cibola. TOw for Cortex his three thips, they fet forth from Acapulco, the eighth of July, 1229, and

in Maft. Hakl. Francis de Ul-Las Voyage in the South Sea. California, F. Alerchous

layled along it the coast Northwards to Cape Roxo, (as they filled it, and so to the River of Saint Croffes, which coaft fome thought to bee part of the Continent, others to bee but broken 20 Lands or Ilands : and fayled fo farre in the tame, that I am loth to follow them, the particulars being both in Ramufio, and Matter Hakluys. Fernando Alarchon, Anno 1 540. was fent by Mendoza the Vice-roy, with two thips, who fayth, hee went to the bottome of the Bay (of Calie forma) and fayled up the River farre into the Countrie. I remit the defirous Reader to the Authours aforefaid. To mee, Ullas the Marquelles Generall feemes to make California nothing but Jlands, and to have fayled within a great way, and after out of them : this other amulous Difcouerer would feeme to finde it a Bay, and therefore goe'h vp the River; later Maps make it an Iland, as wee haue faid; a Letter 1:95. from Los Angelos, calleth them Ilands, and fayth, they are rich, and that the Vice-roy fent to conquer them. But I am Sea-ficke, and therefore returne to our Land-discouerers. In which wee haue a lesuite first, to entertaine you, and after 30 that, a Letter of Liter Newes of Onnates Discoueries in thole Northerne parts of America, All which may be of vie one day, when our Virginian Plantation (which blufheth to fee fo little done after eighteene yeeres continued habitation, with fo much coft, and fo many lives and livelihoods spent thereon) shall lift up her head with more viue alacritie, and shake her glorious lockes, and difparkle her triumphant lookes, thorow the inland Countries to the Westerne Ocean. And indeed for Virginias Take wee have to long held you in Spamib discourses, of whose Acts this Chapter had beene the laft, but that the leaven which leaveneth in fo great part the Spanish lumpe

may be knowne, to awaken English vigilance to prevent it in themselves (they had a faire caucat

1588.) and to avoide the like with others, I shall adde to these their Discoveries a Spanilo Tra-

the particular relations of which you have had already, and yeeld you the totall jumme for a

ueller, Frier, Bishop, to discouer their Discouerers ; which shall cast vp the American parcels, 49

conclusion to our Spanish-Indian Peregrinations.

S. III. Extracts out of certaine Letters of Father MARTIN PEREZ of the Societie of Iclus, from the new Misson of the Province of Cinoloa to the Fathers of Mexico, dated in the moneth of December, 1591. With a Letter added, written 1605. of later Ince my last Letters, dated the fixth of Iuly, among the Tamtecar, on which day wee Disconeries.

July 6. 1590.

Shepheards houses , Townes of Spaniards, and certaine Signiories, helping our neighbours by our accultomed duties, so that wee were alwaies full of businesse. Wee passed over in eight dayes the rough and hard and painefull Mountaine Tepefnan, feeing no liuing creature, fiue certaine Fowles. The caule whereof is, the force of certaine Muskitos, which trouble Horses, whereof is exceeding abundance in all the Mountaine, which were most notione to our Hories. 60 There met vs certaine Cuimechs, which are warlike Indians, which offered vs bountifully fuch as they had, without doing vs any harme. There are almost an infinite number of these, which wander difperfed up and downe, doing nothing else but hunt and teeke their food. And it was told vs, that three thouland of them were affembled in a part of the hill, which belought the

came into this Prouince of Cmolos, being guided by the Governour Rodergo del Ris, we passed and travelled through divers Cattles, Countrie Villages, Mines of Metall,

Gouernour, that he would cause them to be taught and instructed in the Christian Faith. Their Minifter, which was but onely one, came to visite vs. There met vs also a certaine Spanish Captaine, which had the gouernment of fix Castles or Countrie Villages in a part of the Mountime, who knowing well enough what the focietie ment by these missions, wrote voto the father Vilitor, requelting him to grant him one of the Fathers, by whose travell twenty thousand foules might be instructed, which he would recommend vnto him.

These and other Villages we pasted by not without griefe, because it was resolved already among vs, that we should stay in no other place, but in this Prouince. A few dayes before our comming thither we wrote to fix or legen Spaniards, which dwell there without any Prieft. to and heard Malle onely once a yeare, to wit, when any Priest, dwelling thirtie or forty leagues off, came vito them, to confesseand absolue them being penient; who being accompanied off, came vinto them, to conteste and absolute them being pentient; who being accompanied. The towneof with most of the chiefe Indians, met vs with exceeding great toy and gladnesse, about twenty leasues diffant from their dwellings, and accompanied vs vnto the second River of this Prouince, wherein the towns of Saint Philip and Iacob standeth. This Piouince is from Mexico at the second Riboue three hundred leagues, and is extended towards the North. On the right hand it hath the uer of Ginolea; Mountaines of the Tepesuanes, on the left hand the Mediterrane Sea, or the Gulfe of California: Kisbut 190. on another part is thretcheth euen to Cibola and California, which are Provinces toward the kazues indeed West, very great and well inhabited. On one side, which regardeth the North, new Mexico is but two dayes journey distant from the vetermost River of this Province (as we were enformed but two dayes fourney diffant from the ettermore killer or this Frontine (as we were enrormed) often writing to by the Gouernour) which is fo famous and renowned, and fo full of Pagan luperfittion, whereof of the writing of the Mexico.

They measure and divide the Province of Cinaloa with eight great Rivers which runne through the same. The reason of that diussion is this, because all the Castels and Villages of the inhabitants are fetled neere the bankes and brinkes of the Rivers, which are replenished with filh, and which in short space doe fall into the Mediterrane Sea, or Gulfe of California. The foyle is apt for tillage and fruitfull, and bringeth forth fuch things as are fowne in it. The ayre is cleere and wholefome. The Pefants and husband men reape twice 2 yeare, and among other things, store of Beanes, Gourds, Maz, and fuch kinde of Pulfe, whereof wee and they eate to plentifully, that there is no speech of the rising of the price 30 of things, or of Famine; may rather a great part of the old crop peritheth oftentimes, and

they call away then old Maiz, to make roome for the new. They have great flore of Cotten Gotten woolk Wooll, whereof they make excellent cloathes, wherewith they are apparelled. Their apparell is a peece of cloath tyed upon their shoulders, wherewith as with a cloak they couer their whole Their apparel; body, after the manner of the Mexicans.

True it is, that though they be all workemen, yet for the most part of the yeare they are not couered, but goe naked ; yet all of them weare a broad girdle of the faid Cotten cloath cunningly and artificially wrought, with figures of divers colours in the same, which the thels of Cockles and Oyfters toyned artificially with bones doe make. Moreover, they thrust many threds through their eares, whereon they hang earerings; for which purpose 40 they bore the eares of their children as foone as they be borne in many places, and hang earerings, round Stones, and Corall in them, so that each eare is laden with fiftie of these Ornaments at least, for which cause they alwayes sleepe not lying on their sides, but with their face vpward. The women are decently courted from their waste downeward, being all the rest naked. The men as well as the women weare long haire ; the women haue it Their beire hanging downe their shoulders, the men often bound up and tyed in diners knots: they thrust Corals in it, adorned with divers feathers and cockle shels, which adde a certaine beautie and ornament to the head. They weare many round Beades of divers colours about their neckes. They are of great stature, and higher then the Spaniards by a hand- Their great full, fo that as wee fate vpright vpon our horfes, without standing on tiptoe, they Stature.

50 easily could embrace vs. They are valiant and strong, which the warres which they Their valous, had with the Spaniards doe easily thew, wherein though they fuftained no small damages, yet were they not unrenenged, nor without the bload of their aduerfaries. When they would fight resolutely for their vetermost libertie, they denounced and appointed the day of battell. Their weapons are Bowes and poyloned Arrowes, and a kinde of clubbe of Their weapor, hard wood, wherewith they neede not to litrike twice to braine a man. They vie also tertaine short iauelins made of red wood, so hard and sharpe, that they are not inferiour to our armed speares. And as fearefull and terrible as they be to their enemies, to quet and peaceable are they among themselves and their neighbours, and you shall teldome finde a quarrellour or contentious perion. The Spaniards after certaine conflicts at length made friendship

60 with them, leaving their Countrie to them; but thole eight Spaniards, whom I mentio- Eight Spaniards ned before, line quietly among them : and though they be called Lords, yet are they huing in Cirocontented with fuch things as the Indians give them, offering no violence nor moleftation less

Vpon our comming into these Countries, the Indians flirred up with the fame of new men 0000003

Cuirechi wax-

p:ll.

Franciscans.

till they were friendly difmiffed by vs : neither neglected they the opportunitie offred voon the first occasion, to shew how greatly they affected the Christian religion; for assoone as we entred Resdineffero into the first Villages of this Prouince, the day following there affembled a great number of old hearethe Cof- and wong folkes to be baptized, which was a great comfore vnto vs; we christened full fourefcore boyes and girles; we raifed the mindes of the rest with good hopes, that assome as they Fours hundred were instructed with necessary doctrine, they should be partakers of the same Sacrament. Wee found foure hundred Christians, which having bin baptized by the Franciscane Fathers. Which came into these parts twelue yeares past, when at length they were slaine by the Inhabitants 10 were left destitute of a teacher; neither can all of them be instructed by vs, vnlesse some helpe be fent vs; for belides that the people are many, they also differ in language and tongues. al-

came by rlockes vinto our lodging, and witheffed their love, with exceeding great fignification

of good will, with falutation and words, which yet we understood not, staying so long with vs

(flune :here) twelue veares before. Difference of though there be two chiefe and most generall. We learne two tongues with great celeritie, which albeit they be not fo vulgar and general!

language. yet are they more necessary : and we have profited so much in three moneths, that wee could easily understand the Indians when they spake. Wherefore wee began to instuct in the Cate-

Inft:uction in the Catechilm And why doe

chilme, and with godly speeches to exhort the Nation, to keepe them within the compasse of their duetie, and to deliuer them of all feare : when they fee that they receive of vs the femice and formes of praying to God, not in a strange but in their owne language; the which together with the Catechifme they learne with great care and shortnesse of time. And now wee have 10 Christened about fixteene hundred, as well those of years as boyes; besides those source hunyou teach Bable in aft ange yeares neglected, had scarsely any shew of Christendone, but were married with Pagans after their Countrey fashion. From many of them we tooke away their Concubines, because such is the cultome of this Nation, that they take as many as they are able to keepe. Many of them we likewife married. There are also many more which defire to be baptized, but since the people be exceeding ma-

praying ? Sigreene hundred newly Christined. Concubines.

ny, and the workemen but two onely, we are not able to fuffaine the labour. The last of Nonember I visited the people of this tract or River, and in the space of twelve or thirteene miles, there are foure thousand Indians at the least, which vie Bowes and Arrowes, besides # women and children. Among these are certaine of bad name and fame, which have familiari'v and acquaintance with the Diuell, with whom they commit abominable and very horti-

Familiarity with the Divel ble finnes.

240, children Christened.

Many of them fled into the Mountaines, that their children might not be Christened, because the Diuell had reported abroad, that all they should die that were Baprized. Notwithstanding in feuen or eight dayes we Christened two hundred and fortie children. Necessitie enforced meto leave them, and to goe to another place, to helpe our neighbours : yet I am greatly denrous to returne moued with a certaine pitie, because I fee this people so strongly possessed by the Divell being viterly ignorant of the faith.

Thirreene Churches in

There are now thirteene Churches in these three Rivers, besides those which are erected by 4 little and little, neither have we any more holy Vestments for them, then those which we carry about with vs, and one other furniture of an Altar, which belongeth to the Spaniards : we have neuera Bell in any of these Churches. We furnished an Alter with one Croffe and certaine paper Images, which were brought hither from Culhnacan, because we want other furniture, which we lookefrom your Renerencies, and it will be very profitable, fince this Nation is so delighted

Cullyuscan. Petat'an in 25. degrees and a The Christia-

nity there

with outward ornaments. We celebrated the dedication of a Church at Petatlan, on the day of the conception of the Vira gin, the Mother of God. In the same I set up a certaine small Image consecrated to the conception of the bleffed Virgin: We went on Procession, wherein the Boyes sang the 72 Deum landamu in the volgar language: I added a Prayer, and then red Masse, because the singers are yet igno. rant of Song, and can ling nothing elie but Amen, with a rude and votuned voyce. Many of the Pagans were present, which were inuited to this holy day from other places, and were almost amazed beholding these first beginnings, wishing that the like solemnitie might be kept in their Villages. As farre as hitherto we are able to gather, the Indians the inhabitants of these and the neighbour Pagan Castles, where there is greater ftore of people, and lesse divertitie of languages, are quicke and prompe, tractable, and of easier conversion, then any that I have hitherto feene or knowne. I could with that I might fometime line prinately with my felfe, but fach is the concourle of commers, that they loue me not thus quiet, and though I be filent, yet they minister divers speeches, inquiring of our things, and rehearing their owne, and come to vs in the night to prayer. They are ingenious and docile, although they have no teacher, by whole 60 instruction this force of nature should be exercised. They have in Cattles and Countrey villages, in houses toyned neere the one to the other, and builded of chalke and timber, which they adore

Their houses

with Mats and couerings of reedes. In the marriages which they make, when they take many wines, it feemeth not inconvenient or indecent vnto them, to take their fifter, mother, or daughter, because they thinke that this maketh much for domesticall peace, and that thereby all emulation may be avoided. And though maketh much for doubt they have exceeding great regard of confanguinitie. They marriages. loue their children most tenderly for a certaine time, and teach them nothing else but such things as they know themselves, and never beate them nor chastite them for any thing, and so The badeduthey live like beafts. They marrie them at their time; and this is the forme of their marriage; cation of their they live like healts. They marrie them at their time; and this is the forme of their marriage; children.
The Parents of each partie meete together, and after conferences had between them, they dance forme of Maraccording to their Countrie custome, and giving hands returne home; if the Bridegroome or riages. Bride be voler age, they stay certaine moneths and sometime a yeare, neuer seeing one the other: afterward at time convenient the Father of the spouse glueth an house to his daughter and son in

law, with furniture thereto belonging.

They also make the Bridegroome a Knight, if he be of a worthy familie, with divers rites, Their forms whereof these be the chiefest ceremonies: They deliuer him a Bowe, and instruct him how to of making wie his new weapons; and to shew a signe of his industrie and abilitie, he is turned out to some Knights. yong Lyon or wilde heaft, which when he hath killed, he is advanced to some honour and dignitie, whereby he excelleth others which are not Knights. Among the things belonging to policie, this is one which they doe obserue; that they adopt other mens children for their owne; Adoption, but this adoption into another familie hath very feuere and dangerous ceremonies. for they thrust a sticke into their mouthes into the bottome of their throates, wherewith they are almost 20 choaked; if it fall out well, they vomit vp all the meate in their flomacke, and fo they paffe

ouer into the right of another man. Whatfoeuer time remaineth from labour and trauaile they Their quierfrend in a play, which is like to Dice, but confifteth of diversignes. They play with exceeding play. great moderation and patience of minde, being most cunning in this kinde of sport, no oath is heard among them, nor any contentions or brabling word, though they loofe their apparell and all that they have, and goe home naked, as sometime it falleth out.

When they be ficke, if the difeafe be fore and dangerous, they digge a place for their buriall, Their burials. and so metimes it standeth fine or fixe dayes open, which custome was very profitable to a certaine woman; for when I came into a certaine Village, and faw the ground digged very deeply, 20 knowing what the matter was, I came vnto her lying on her Couch and ficke, and ha-

uing instructed her in the Catechisme which I had written in the vulgar Tongue, in the principles of Christian Religion, I baptifed her, but the recoursed. Now the cause why they open the places of their burials is this, That prefently they may couer the bodie or aftes of him that is dead (for fomtimes they burne the bodies with all the house and household staffe.) They sprinkle the Sepulchre with a certaine dust, whereof they make a drinke, and bring meate with them, and after they have wept over the Grave, they make themselves drunke, the Kinsfolke of the dead making a Fealt for them that doe a fift them. And thefe be their Funerals.

The Vicar of the Church of Culiacan, which is fortie two leagues from Cinoloa, where the foresaid Fat iers line, in his Lecters fent to a certaine friend writeth after this manner : In Cina-60 the Fathers labour painfully in the Lord in converting the Indians with the Fath fo fruitfully and happily, that we all hold it for a Miracle. Neither can it be believed, both with what celeritie they have learned and speak the tongue of that Countrie, and with what facilitie and contentment. The Inhabitants come to bee baptized, and defire to bee inftructed in the Articles of our faith. Doubtleffe it is the worke of God; wherefore the Dinine Maieffie doth fauour and promote the fame.

A Letter written from Valladolid by LVDOVICVS TRIBALDVS To-LETVS to Master RICHARD HAKLVYT, translated out of Latine, touching IVAN de ONATE his Discoueries in new Mexico, five hundred leagues to the North from the old Mexico.

WHen you shall see the English returned home out of our Spaine, and can finde no Letters sent unto you from us, perhaps, and that worthily you will accuse us of breach of our friendship, and also as little mindfull of our promise. Yet we as free from this fault salute you most willingly. For it is not long lince we arrived here, that is to lay in this Court, a little after the departure of your Countrimen into England. Yet we made our iournie by Sea and by Land indifferent pleasantly and according to our defire. After we had rested our felues a small while, we defired nothing more then to visit An-60 drew Garfia Celpedes, a man for many respects linked unto us in most straight bands of friendship. He greatly resoyced of your good will toward him: And shewed me a certaine briefe yet very perspicuous Their busials, Relation of things atchiened by Don Ivan de Onate, among the Indians of New Mexico.

For therein is written, that he departed from old Mexico in the yeere 1 coo. with an Armie and carriages of fine thousand men, in which number boyes, women, youngmen and Souldiers 5000, lenti 199

Don Iven de Onate bis Erit

conleanues

are included. He carried also great store of victuals with him, slockes of Sheepe and Goates. Herds of Oxen and all things necessarie for life, also Horses and Armour, and other things which in these kind of Expeditions ought to be prouided. Therefore having travelled through diners Countries fine hundred leagues, hee found divers Nations by the way, noble for their builded Townes and reatonable civill manners. All which he received into the friendship of the King of Spaine, and they openly testified the same by publike instruments, and giving of their faith. And when with his company he came vinto a Towne very strong by situation of the place, built voon a most high and mightie Rocke, and was freely received by the Inhabitants, giving their right hands to each other, they courteoully supplied them with all things necessarie for their reliefe. and promised within a while after that they would furnish them with more, fufficient to make 10 a very long journie. When Onate had waited for this thing, at the day appointed hee ient his

taken. Acoma is in 22. de-rees, and

Treacherous

Another grearer Citie. Cibela is in 33. dearces. The Towne of Saint John. Sundry Mynes of gold and filuer newly found.

A fecond Difcontric 1602. The most famous River of Rie mas que ocho lezuas de The Lake of Conicas.

Auia unalaznua o lazo nuy euade. Anten. de Espeio. Afaireand goodly Citie.

Westerne coast Cape California, which ic feemes at this

Nephew by his lifter with a few Souldiers, who entring the Towne, came into the Market place. where almost all the multitude of the Townesmen were assembled together. Now while hee with his company was busie in buying of things, suddenly the Traitours from all parts rushed yoon him and his fellowes vnawares, and by most wicked treason cut off the Captaines head and fixe others: the rest being wounded hardly escaped by flight from fo great a multitude thataffaulted them, yet some of the enemies were flaine and thrust through. When speedily the same hereof came to Onate, taking with him a choice number of Souldiers, in a great turie he came vn. to the Towne, befiged it, and after a long fight by maine force he tooke the lame, flue most part. tooke the self, burnt the Towne and razed it to the ground, that no tokens might remaine of fo an great a wickednesse committed against him. The Townes name was Acoma: and none of our two third parts men was flaine in the fiege thereof. After this he eafily proceeded forward on his journie as he did before, till he came to a mightie

A mighty city. great Citie the inforced this City with the villages adiopning to sweare obedience to the King of Spaine, not altogether vinwilling, yet feared by the example and ruine of the towne that was defroyed. From hence he came to a greater Citie, which likewise after hee had obtained it by great friendship he fent certain men from thence to search out the oxen of Cibola, long since known by the report of one, (to wit of Valquez de Coronado) whether they were fuch indeed or no. Who when they had found a great multitude of these oxen, and would compasse them about, and force them into certaine inclosures or toiles, their enterprize prevailed but a little : they are so wild and to fo fwift. Yet after they had killed many of them, bringing ftore of them with them, as though they had bin Deere, returning to their company and General, to the great admiration of all men, they declared the wildnesse and innumerable number of these Oxen.

A freeward employing of themselves to keepe those things which they had gotten, they builded a Towne, which they called Saint Johns Towne, and entring into very great friendship with the people which they had lately discouered, after they had found certaine very rich Mynesof mous niner or the North dif- gold and filter, being laden with store of other riches, they determined to line pleasantly and couered. date- quietly, and to end their trauels, with fingular profit of the Inhabitants in the Christian Religinie de E filo uno on , and abitaring of their Idols, which in former time they worthipped most religiously.

At length within these two yeares, leaving his fellowes there, Onate undertooke a new Dif- 40 uerie toward that most famous River of the North, which at length he discovered, being everywhere courteously entertained by the Inhabitants. At last he came to the Lake whereof long fince, have gone many reports. This is the Lake of Conibas, on the brinke whereof hee beheld a farre off a Citie feuen leagues long, and aboue two leagues broad. The houses of this Citie were separated the one from the other, and trimly and artificially builded, adorned with many trees and most goodly Gardens; and often divided with streames running betweene them. Yet none of the Inhabitants did appeare. Therefore being not furnished with a sufficient Armie, he kept his Souldiers about him in a throng place, yet he fent certaine Horsemen into the Towne to view it: who after they had ridden by a certaine space through certaine exceeding faire streets of the Citie, and could fee none of the Citizens, at length came to an exceeding great Market place, 50 which was filled with an exceeding great company of men, fortified with Rampiers and other fortifications in manner of a Fortrelle. Therefore perceiuing themselves to be vnequall to so infinite a number, they retired backe to their fellowes without attempting any thing, and so returned home to their owne houses vinder the conduct of Onate, defferring the affaulting of so great a Towne vntill a more convenient time: and now they keepe those places diligently, which they of America dif- haue alreadie found, and doing violence to none of the Inhabitants, they live in all happinelle courted neere and profperitie.

Moreover, other newes is brought from New Spaine, to wit, that by the commandement of the Vice-roy, the Coaits of the South Sea toward Cape Mendocino are diffouered, and that extimewas more ceeding faire and large Hauens are found neere the California, which hithertono man knew, and 60 that Cailles are there to be builded and fortified, fit to withfrand the force of the enemie : which coursed to be liaw printed with the precise longitudes and latitudes, annexed wato them.

There is no newes come of the Voyage to the Iland lately found out toward Nowa Guives. If Brigs his Mag. any newes come, I will carefully adversife you thereof.

It remaineth, that I speake somewhat of the instruction which I promised you and now send with you to wit, that the lame was fent to the West Indies, and that according to the precepts therein contained, all things are observed very exactly, and written to the Councell of the Indes: and that Cespeder our triend having diligently read over these Writings, hath written an excellent Volume; but he hath not obtained leave to publish the same : for they will not have all these things particularly to come to light.

And thele be the things which I now thought good to write vnto you, my Haklayt, meaning to have written more, if there had beene any fresher things to have written of. Neither have & yet fought out all thole that might informe me of these new Discourries : for I could not yet doe to it by reason of the shortnesse of the time. I hope hereafter I shall have leisure : and I know you will commend mee for my friendship towards you. Farewell from Valladolid the Nones of

TO THE READER.

Fter fo many other Spanish Descourses and Descourses, I have added for a Spanish farewell this A of Birtincho new de las Calas a zealous Dominican Frier, after made Bishop of Chiapa, tonching the exceller committed by some Spaniards in the Continent and llands of America, from their first 20 Disconcrietill the years 1542 in which this was written; the rather beere annexed, as our conclusion of Spanish Relations. The occasion (it seemeth) was his godly zeale of connersing soules to lefus Christ from the power of E:hnike darkneffe, which was hindered by a worfe darkneffe in those which professed them [lues children of Light, and had the name and Sacraments of Christians. For it beeing then the custome, as von baue scene in Soto, and others before, to get so much of the American Regions in Partition, Commendim or a Comm fion from the King (then Charles the fifth Emperour) to discouer and pacifie, as their ftele bath it, that is, as the Popes Bull preferibeth, to bring into Spanish fibrection, and to conurt to the Christian Faith, fo much as their Commission limited, paying the fifth part of what-Somer they got to the Crowne; they abusing the Emperours lensite, and concealing their out-rages, proceeded in connerting, as that word is derined from convertere, not from convertere, and in such course 30 as this Author expresses, if he and other Dimines which made complaint thereof to the Emperous bea to be credited. Neither is it incredible for the maine part of the Historie (we fee their owne lournals infinnate as much in milder and closer termes flow some former his zeale flings forth fiery tearmes, and paints out their Acts in the blackest inke, and most Hoperbolicall Phrases. The Isue was the alteration of gonerament in the Indies, by the gentleneffe of the Kings of Spaine, which freed them from flauerie, and tooke better order both for their bothly and frimmall effate , at before wee that read in Herers. And if any shinke that I publish this in difference of that Nation; I answere. Entry Nation (We see it at bome) hath many enillmen, many Deuill men, Agame, I a be whether the Authour (himfelfe a Spaniard and Dinine) intended not the honour and good of his Countrie thereby : which alfowas effected, enil manners producing good Lames. And indeed it is as much bonour to this Bishop and the Bishop of Mexico, with 40 other Spaniards that flowed their zeale of reformation berein, at alfo to the Kings of Spaine which have effected it; as the doing it is fo ame to other Spaniards, and the generalitie here touched. The like abuses of Sauages in Bratili, you have feene by Portugals, complained of by lefuites, sup 1.7.c.2. For my part I bounner vertue in a Spaniard, in a Frier, in a lesuite : and have in all this voluminous storie not beene more carefull to flow the enil acts of Spaniards, Portugals, Dutch in quarrels twist them and vs, then to make knowne what soener good in any of them, when occasion was offered. And so farre am I from delighting to thrust my finger in fores (which yet I doe on necessitie , even with the English also) that I have left out many many innectines and bitter Epithetes of this Author, abridging him after my wont, and lopping of such superfluities, which rather were the fruit of his zeale, then the slowre of his History. I could atto have added the names of those which be here calleth Tyrants , the Captaines in those Expedi-50 tions: but he spared them, as then lining, and in Herera before you have them, which yet is angry with Ramusio for that wherein this storie doth excuse him, the concealment of their names being best commendation of fuch men. In shele prunings and comission of some things (in their owne places, before related) abone a third part is left out, and yet more then enough left to teffifie that Many heart ginen ouer to sometonsnelle or other vice, is a bottomielle Hell, wicked and deceitfull about all : who can fearch it?

The colours which the Spaniards pretended for such executions, were the Man-entings, Sodomies, Ido-

latries and other vices of Americans, perhaps made worfe in the telling, and certainly with worfe vices

in this fore punished by unsuffest Instice in respect of the Spaniards, whose unsuffice is neverthelesse most

inst in regard of God, which knoweth how to punish sinne by sinne, by Sinners. This Bookers extant in

Spanish, Latine, Dutch, and in English also printed 1 , 82, when as peace was yet between England and

60 Spaine, which English Copie I baue followed.

The Prologue of the Bishop Frier BARTHOLOMBW delas CASAS or CASAVS, to the most high and mightie Prince, Our Lord Don PHILLP Prince of Spaine.

Of high and mightie Lord, as God by his Providence hath for the guiding and commoditie of mankind in this World, in Realmes and Prounces, appointed Kines to be as Fathers, and as Homer nameth them Shepherds, and so confequently the most noble and principall members of Common-weales: fo can we not justly doubt by reason of

the good wils that Kings and Princes have to minister Justice, but that if there be any things a- to mile, either any violences or injuries committed, he only cause that they are not redressed, is, for that Princes have no notice of the same. For certainly if they kne w of them, they would imploy all diligence and indeuour in the remedie thereof. Whereof it feemeth that mention is mide in the holy Scripture, in the Pronerbs of Solamon, where it is faid, Rex qui fedet in folio In. deci diffipat omne malum intutu fue. For it is fufficien ly to be prefupposed even of the kindly and naturall vertue of a King, that the only notice that hee taketh of any mischiefe tormenting his Kingdome, is sufficient to procure him, if it bee possible, to roote out the same as beeing a thing

that he cannot tollerate even one only moment of time.

Confidering therefore with my felfe most mightie Lord the great mischiefes, damages and loffes (the like whereof it is not to be thought, were ever committed by Mankind) of fologe and 20 great Kingdomes, or to speake more truely, of this so new World of the Indies, which God and holy Church have committed and commended vnto the King of Cashile, to the end they might gouerne, connert, and procure their prosperitie as well temporally as spiritually. I therefore (I fay) being a man of experience, and fiftie y eres of age or more, confidering thefe cuits, as having feene them committed, at my being in those Countries : Also that your Highnesse lauing information of some notable particularities, might bee mooued most earnestly to defire his Maiestie. not to grant or permit to thole Tyrants fuen conquetts as they have found out , and which they doe to name, (whereunto if they might bee fuff, red they would returne) feeing that of themfelues, and being made against this Indian, peaceable, lowly and milde Nation which offendeth none, they be wicked, tyrannous, and by all Lawes either Naturall, Humane or Duine, veterly ! condemned, detefted and accuried : I thought it belt, least my felfe might become also guiltie, by concealing the loffe of an infinite number both of fouls & bodies which are fo committed, to cause a few of their dealings which of late I had feleded from among infinite others, and that might truly be reported to be printed, to the end your Highnesse might with more ease peruse and read them ouer, Alfo whereas your Highnesse Master the Archbishop of Toless, when hee was Bishop of Carebagenarequired them at my hands, and then prefented them to your Highnesse: penduenture by reason of such great Voyages as your Highnesse tooke voon you, both by Sea and by Land for matters of Estate wherein you have beene builed, it may bee you have not peruled, the ther have forgotten them, and in the meane time the rash and disordinate defire of those which thinke it nothing to doe wrong, to fined fuch abundance of mans bloud, to make defolate there is to large Countries of their naturall Inhabitants and Owners, by flaying infinite persons, either to purloine (uch incredible treatures, do daily augment, their Tyrants proceeding vnder alcounterfeit titles and colours in their inftant and importunate fute, namely, to have the faid Conquells permitted and granted vnto them : Which in truth cannot bee granted without transgreging the Law both of Nature and of God, and so contequently not without incurring mortall finne, worthy most terrible and everlasting torments: I thought it expedient to doe your Highnesse ferunce in this briefe Summarie of a most large Historie, that might and oughe to bee written of fuch flaughters and spoiles as they have made and perpetrated. Which I beteech your Highnesse to receive and reade over, with that Royall clemencie and courcefie, wherewith you wie to accept and perufe the workes of fuch your feruants, as no other defire, but faithfully to employ them-90 felues to the common commoditie, and to procure the prosperitie of the Royall Estate.

This Summarie being perused, and the vildnesse of the iniquitie committed against these poore innocent people, in that they are fline and hewed in pieces without defert, only through the auarice ambition of those that pretend to the doing of such execrable deeds, being considered. It may please your Highnesse to desire, and effectually to perswade his Maiestie todenicany whosoeuer shall demand or require so hurtfull and dete fable enterprises : yea, euen to burie any fuch fuite or petition in the infernall pet of perpetuall filence, thereby flewing fuch terrour and dillike as hereafter no man may bee fobold, as once to name or fpeake thereof. And this (most mightie Lord) is very expedient and necessarie, to the end God may prosper, preserve and make the estate of the Royall Crowne of Castile for ever to flourish both spiritually and temporally. 60 CHAP. IIIL

A briefe Narration of the destruction of the Indies by the Spaniards : written by a Frier BART. de las CASAS a Spaniard, and Bishop of Chiapa in America.

He Indies were discourred the yeere 1492. and inhabited by the Spanish the yeere next after enfuing : fo as it is about fortie nine yeeres fithence that the Spaniards Jome of them went into those parts. And the first Land that they entred to inhanext after enfuing: fo as it is about fortie mine years interectual inhabitions of them went into those parts. And the first Land that they entred to inhabite, was thig great and most fertilelle of Hispaniola, which containeth six humbire, was thig great and most fertilelle of Hispaniola, which containeth six humbire, was the great and infinite lles round about, and dred leagues in compasse. There are other great and infinite lles round about, and in the Confines on all fides: which we have feene the most peopled, and the fullest of their owne native people; as any other Countrie in the World may be. The firme Land lying off from this lland two hundred and fiftie leagues, and somewhat ouer at the most, containeth in length on the Sea Coast more then ten chousand leagues : which are alreadie discouered, and daily be discouered more and more, all full of people, as an Emmote hill of Emmots. Infomuch, as by that which fince, vnto the yeere the fortieth and one hath been discouered : It seemeth that God hath beliowed in that same Countrie, the gulfe or the greatest portion of Mankind.

God created all these innumerable multitudes in every fort, very simple, without subtletie, or craft, without malice, very obedient, and very faithfull to their naturall Liege Lords. and to the Spaniards whom they serve, very humble, very patient, very desirous of peace making, and pracefull, without brawles and strugglings, without quarrels, without strife, without rancour

or hatred, by no meanes defirous of reuengement.

They are also people very gentle, and very tender, and of an easie complexion, and which can sustaine no travell, and doe die very soone of any disease whatseever, in such fort as the very children of Princes and Noblemen brought vp amongst vs, in all commodities, ease, and delicatenelle, are not more foft then those of that Countrie : yea, although they bee the children of Labourers. They are also very poor folks, which possess from they are also very poor folks, which possess from the problem of the poor folks which possess from the poor folks and the poor folks which possess from the poor folks and the poor folks which possess from the poor folks and the poor folks which possess from the poor folks and the poor folks which possess from the poor to have much worldly goods, and therefore neither are they proud, ambitious, nor couetous. Their dier is fuch (as it leemeth) that of the holy Fathers in the Defert hath not bin more scarces Intercate the cast recommendation of the many control of the many that the many of the common fireight, nor left daintie, nor left improuss. Their apparelling is commonly to goe naked all fast their tham each parts alone courted. And when they be clothed, at the most, in is but a of a Mantle of Bombacie of an ell and a halfe, or two ells of linnen fquare. Their lodging is voon a Mat, and those which have the best : sleepe as it were voon a Net fastened at the foure corners, which they call in the Language of the Ile of Hiff aniela, Hamafas. They have their vnderitanding very pure and quicke, being teachable and capeable of all good Learning , very ant to receive our holy Catholike Faith, and to be instructed in good and vertuous manners, having leffe incumberances and disturbances to the attaining thereunto, then all the folfe of the world besides, and are so enslamed, ardent, and importune to know and understand the matters of the faith after they have but begunne once to tafte them, as likewife the exercise of the Sacraments of the Church, and the diuine Service : that in truth, the religious men have need of a fingular patience to support them. And to make an end , I have heard many Spaniards many times hold

faw in them. Vndoubtedly there folkes should bee the happiest in the World, if onely they knew God. Vpon these Lambes so meeke, so qualified and endued of their Maker and Creator, as hath bin faid, entred the Spanif incontinent as they knew them, as, Wolues, as Lions, and as Tigres most cruell of long time familhed : and have not done in those quarters these fortie yeeres past, nei-

this as affured, and that which they could not denie, concerning the good nature which they

So ther yet doe at this prefent, ought elle faue teare them in pieces, kill them, martyr them, afflict them, tormene them, and destroy them by strange forts of cruelties neuer neither seene, nor read, nor heard of the like (of the which fome fhall be fet downe hereafter) fo far forth that of about three Millions of foules that were in the Ile of Hilpansola, and that we have feene, there are not now two hundred natives of the Countrey. The Ile of Cubs, the which is in length as farreas Three Millions from Valledolid vitill Rome, is at this day as it were all waste. Saint Johns Ile, and that of Iamayor, both of them very great, very fertill, and very faire are defolate. Likewife the Iles of ed hath but Lucayos, neere to the leof Hipanisla, and of the North fide wnto that of Cubs, in number being 160000. aboue threefcorellands, together with those which they call the Iles of Geante, one with another, great and little, whereof the very worst is fertiler then the Kings Garden at Simil, and the

60 Countrie the healthsomest in the World : there were in these same Iles more then fine hundred thouland foules, and at this day there is not one only creature. For they have beene all of them 500000 loft in flaine, after that they had drawne them out from thence to labour in their Minerals in the lie of the Lunger. Hispaniola, where there were no more left of the Natives of that Iland. A ship riding for the space of three yeeres betwire all these llands, to the end, after the inning of this kind of Vin-

I 569

CHAP. 4. Bart. delas Cafas bis Booke of Cruelties done in the Indies

tage, to gleane and call the remainder of these folke (for there was a good Christian mound with pittie and compagion, to convert and win vato Chaift fuch as might be found) there were not found but eleven persons which I faw: other Iles more then thirty, neere to the Ile of Saint Jobn have likewise bin dispeopled and marred. All these lies contains about two thouland leagues of land, and are all dispeopled and laid waste.

As touching the maine firme land, we are certaine that our Spaniards, by their cruelties and curfed doings have dispeopled and made desolate more then ten Realmes greater then all Spaine. comprising also there with Aragon & Portugall, and twife as much or more land then there is from Senil to lerufalem, which are about a thouland leagues : which Realmes as yet vntochis prefer day remaine in a wildernesse and veter desolation, having bin before time as well peopled as the possible. We are able to yeelde a good and certaine accompt, that there is within the bace of the laid fortie yeares, by those said tyrannies and divellish doings of the Spanards, doen for water 12.0115 miles infly and tyrannously more then twelve Milions of foules, men, women, and children. And I doe verily believe, and thinke not to militake therein, that there are dead more then fifteene Millions of foules.

The cause why the Spanish have destroyed such an infinite of soules, hath beene onely, that they have held it for their last scope and marke to get Gold, and to enrich themselves in a short time. and to mount at one leape to very high estates, in no wife agreeable to their persons : or to fav in a word, the cause hereof hath beene their avarice and ambition. And by this meanes have died fo many Millions without faith and without Sacraments.

of the Ile of Hispaniola.

In the He Hisbaniola, which was the first (as we have faid) where the Spaniards arrived began the great flaughters and ipoyles of people: the Spaniards having begun to take their wives and children of the Indies, for to serue their turne and to vie them ill, and having begun to eate their victuals, gotten by their sweate and trauell; not contenting themselves with that which the Indians your them of their owne good will, every one after their abilitie, the which is algates very small, forasmuch as they are accustomed to have no more store then they have ordinarily neede of, and that fuch as they get with little trauell ; And that which might fuffice for three housholds, reckoning ten persons for each houshold for a moneths space, one Spanard would eat 10

Now after fundry other forces, violences, and torments, which they wrought against them: the Indians began to perceive that those were not men discended from heaven. Some of them therefore hid their victuals, others hid their wines and children, some others fied into the Montaines, to separate themselves a farre off from a Nation of to hard natured and ghastly conunfation. The Spaniards buffered them with their fifts and bastonades : pressing also to lay hands upon the Lords of the Townes. And these cases ended in so great an hazard and desperateness that a Spanife Captaine durit adventure to ravilh forcibly the wife of the greatest King and Lord of this Ile. Since which time the Indians began to fearth meanes to cast the Spaniards out of go their lands, and fet themselves in armes: but what kinde of armes? very feeble and weake to withfland or relitt, and of leffe defence. The Spaniards with their Horles, their Speares and Lances, began to commit murders, and firange cruelcies : they entred into Townes, Borowes, and Villages, sparing neither children nor old men, neither women with childe, neither them that lay In, but that they ripped their bellies, and cut them in peeces, as if they had beene opening of Lambes shut vp in their fold. They laid wagers with such as with one thrust of a fword would paunch or bowell a man in the middeft, or with one blow of a fword would most readily, and most deliverly cut off his head, or that would best pierce his entrals at one siroike. They tooke the little foules by the heeles, ramping them from the mothers dugges, and crushed their heads against the clifts. Others they cast into the Rivers laughing and mocking, and when so they tumbled into the water, they faid, now thift for thy felfe fuch a ones corpes. They put of thers, together with their mothers, and all that they met, to the edge of the fword. They made certaine Gibbets long and low, in fuch fort, that the feete of the hanged on, touched in a manner the ground, every one enough for thirteene, in honour and worship of our Sautour and his twelve Apostles (as they yied to speake) and setting to fire, burned them all quicke that were fastened. Vnto all others, whom they vied to take and referve alme, cutting off their two hands as neere as might be, and fo letting them hang, they faid; Get you with thefe Letters, to carry tydings to those which are fled by the Mountaines. They murdered commonly the Lords and Nobility on this fashion: They made certaine grates of pearches laid on pickforkes, and made a little fire underneath, to the intent, that by little and little yelling and despairing in thefe tor- 62 ments, they might give vp the Ghoit.

One time I law foure or fine of the principall Lords toafted and broyled upon these gredie tons. Also I thinke that there were two or three of these greditons, garnished with the like furniture, and for that they cryed out pittioufly, which thing troubled the Captaine that he could

not then fleepe: he commanded to ftrangle them. The Sergeant, which was worfe then the Hang manchas burned them (I know his marke and friende in Simil) would not have them firangled, but himselfe putting Ballets in their mouthes, to the end that they should not cry, but to Dogges. the fire, vntill they were foftly roafted after his defire. I have feene all the aforefaid things and others joinite. And foraf nuch, as all the people which sould flee, hid themselves in the Mountaines, and mounted on the tops of them, fled from the men to without all manhood, emptie of all pitic, behaving them as faunge beafts, the slaughterers and deadly enemies of mankinde : they caught their Hounds, herce Dogs, to teare them in peeces at the first view, and in the foace that one may fay a Credo, affailed and devogred an Indian seif it had beene a Swine. These Dogees to wrought great deft uctions and flughters. And fortimuch as fometimes, although feldome, when the Indians put to death some Spanisords upon good right and Law of the Enficer they make a Lawe betweene them, that for one Spanisord they had to flay an hundred Indians.

There were in this Ile Hiftaniola, fine great principall Realmes, and fine very mighty Kings, The Realmes vinto whom almost all other Lords obayed, which were without number. There were affecer- which were in taine Lords of other feuerall Provinces, which did not acknowledge for fourraigne any of thefe Kings : One Realme was named Magua, which is as much to lay, as the Kingdome of the plaine. This Plaine is one of the most famous and most admirable things of all that is in the world. For it contained fourescore leagues of ground, from the South Sea vnco the North sea, having in breadth fine leagues, and eight voto ten.

20 It hach on one fide and other exceeding high Mountaines. There entrethinto it about thirty thousand Rusers and Lakes, of the which twelve areas great as Ebro, and Duero, and Guadalque- Great Rivers mir. And all the Ruers which iffue out of a Mountaine which is towards the West, in number a- in Spaine. bout file and twenty thousand, are very rich of Gold. In the which Mountaine or Mountaines, rich in Gold. is contained the Province of Cibas, from whence the Mines of Cibas take their names, and from Cibas whence commeth the same exquisite Gold and fine of foure and twenty Karrets, which is so renowned in these parts. The King & Lord of this Realme was called Gnavionex, which had vinder him his Vallals & Lieges fo great and mighty, that every one of them was able to fet forth threefcore thousand men of armes for the service of the King Guerionex. Of the which Lords I have known forme certain. This Guarionex was very obedient and vertuous, naturally defirous of peace. and well affectioned to the denotion of the Kings of Caffele, and his people gaue by his commandement every housekeeper a certaine kinde of Drumfull of Gold : but afterwards being not able so fill the Dum, cut it off by the middeft, and gave the halfe thereof full. For the Indians of that He had little or none indultrie or practife to gather or draw Gold out of the Mines. The Cacione presented vnto the King of Castile his service, in causing to be manured all the lands from the I-Tabella, where the Spanib first lited, vnto the Towne of Saint Domingo, which are fiftie leagues large, on condition that he should exact of them no Gold : for hee faid (and hee faid the truth) that his Subjects had not the skill to draw it out. As for the manuring which he faid he would procure to be done : I know that he could have done it very eafily, and with great readineffe, and that it would have beene worth vnto the King every yeere more then three Millions of Caltil-Ans, befides that it would have caufed, that at this houre there had bin above fiftie Cities greater

The paiment that they made to this good King and Lord, fo gracious and fo redoubted, was to dishonour him in the person of his wife, an euil (briffian, a Captaine raushing her. This King could have artended the time and opportunitie to avenge himfelfe in levying fome armie; but he adusted to withdraw himfelfe rather, and onely to hide him out of the way, thus being banished from his Realme and state, into a Prouince of the Cignaios, where there was a great Lord his vaffall. After that the Spaniards were ware of his absence, and he could no longer hide himselfe: they make warre against the Lord which had given him enterrainment, and make great flaughters through the Countrey as they goe, till in the end they found and tooke him, thrusting him loden with chaines and irons into a Ship, to carry him to Caffile : which Ship was loft upon the The greatest 50 Sea, and there were with him drowned many Spaniards, and a great quantity of Gold, among & peece or Gold the which also was the great wedge of Gold, like vnto a great loafe, weying three thousand which ever fix hundreth Castillans. Thus it pleased God to wreake vengeance of matters so lewel and maillest. fo enormous.

The other Realme was called of Marien , where is at this day the Port at one of the bounds Maries of the plaine, towards the North : and it is farre greater then the Realme of Portugall, and much fertiler, worthy to be inhabited, having great Mountaines, and Mines of Gold, and Copper very rich. The King was called Gnacanagari, which had under him many great Lords, of the which I have known and feene fundry. In this Kings Countrey arrived first the old Admirall, 6) when he discourred the Indies, whom at that time that he discourred the Ile, the faid Guacanagari received fo graciously, bountifully, and curteously with all the Spaniards who were with him, in giving him all entertainement and fuccour, for at the very instant was the Shiplost (which the Admirall was carried in) that hee could not have bin better made off in his owne Countrie of his owne Father. This did I understand of the Admirals owne mouth: This King

Tortures,

Ambition.

Crueliy.

Pppppp

dyed, in flying the flaughters and cruelties of the Spaniards through the Mountaines, being defiroyed and deprived of his efface. And all the other Lords his tubic ets dyed in the tyrannie and fernitude that shall be declared hereafter.

The third Realme and dominion was Magnand, a Countrie also admirable, very healthfulk

and very fertile, where the best Sugar of the He at this day is made.

The King of this Countrie was named Caemabo, who furpated all the others in firength and flate, in granitie, and in the ceremonies of his feruice. The Spaniards tooke this King with great fubrilitie and malice, even as he was in his owne house, doubting of mothing. They conveied him afterwards into a Ship to carry him to Castile; but as there attended them fix other Ships in the port, all ready to hose vp faile : behold how God by his just judgement, would declare, that it. Io with other things, was an exceeding great iniquitie and vniult, by fending the fame night a tempeft, which finke and drenched that Natie with the Spaniards that were within. There died al-To with them the faid Caonabe, charged with bolts and itons.

The Prince had three or foure brothers valiant men, and couragious like himfelfe, who confu dering the imprisonment of their Lord & brother so against all equitie, together with the waste and flaughters which the Spaniards made in other Realmes, and specially after that they had heard that the King their brother was dead, they put themselves in armes to encounter the Spaniards, and to auringe the wrong; who on the other fide meeting with them on horsebacke; fo they rage in discomstures and massacres, that the one moytie of this Realme hath beene thereby

defolate and displopled.

The fourth Realme is the fame which is named of Xaragua. This Realme was as it werethe centre or middle point, or to speake of, as the Court of this lile, the diamond over all the other Realmes in language and polified speech, in policie and good manners, the best composed and ordered. For as much as there were many noble Lords and Gentlemen, the people also being the best made and most beautifull. The King had to name Bebecho, which had a fifter called Anacas-Ma. These two, the brother and fifter, had done great services to the Kings of Cafile, and great good turnes to the Spaniards, delivering them from fundry dangers of death.

After the deccase of Bebechio, Anacaona remained fole Souerzigne of the Realme. At a time came into this Realme the Gouernour of this He with threefcore Horfes, and more then three hundreth footemen (the horsemen alone had beene enough to spoyle and ouernane not this to He alone, but all the firme land withall :) And to him came, being called, more then three hundred Lords under affurance, of whom the chiefest, he fraudulently caused to be conueyed into a house of thatch, and commanded to set to fire. Now on this wife were these Lords burned all aliue: all the reit of the Lords, with other folke infinite, were imitten to death with their Speares and Swords. But the Soueraigne Lady Anacaona, to doe her honour. they hanged. It happened that certaine Spaniards, either of pittie or of couetoufneffe, having taken and detained certaine yong striplings to make them their Pages; because they would not haue them flaine, and fetting them behinde them on their horse backes; another Spaniard came behinde, which habbed them through with a speare. If so be any childe or boy tombled downe to the ground, another Spaniard came and cut off his legges. Some certaine of thele Indians which 40 could escape this crueltie so vnnaturall, passed ouer vnto a little He neere vnto the other, within an eight leagues. The Gouernour condemned all those which had pailed the water, to become

flaves ; because they had fled from their butcherie. The fifth Realme was called Higney, ouer the which raigned an ancient Queene named Higmanama, whom the Spaniards hanged vp. The people were infinite whom I faw burnt ahue, and rent in peeces, and tormented diverfly and Itrangely, and whom I faw made flaves, even fo many as they tooke aline. And now for as much as there are so many particularities in these Mallacres and destruction of those peoples, that they cannot conveniently be comprised in writing (yea I doe verily beleeue, that of a number of things to be ipoken of, there cannot be disciphered of a thousand parts one :) I will onely in that which concerneth the warres about 90 mentioned, conclude, auerre, and iustifie in conscience, and as before God, that of all others, which I ouerpaffe to speake of, or shall be able to speake of, the Indians never gave no more occasion or cause, then might a convent of good religious persons well ordered, why they should be robbed and flaine, and why those that escaped the death, should be retained in a perpetual captiuitie and bondage. I affirme yet moreouer, for ought that I can belieue or consecture, that, during all the time that all this huge number of theie Illanders haue beene murdered and made away veterly, they never committed against the Spaniards any one mortall offence, punishable by the law of man. And concerning offences, of the which the punishment is releved vnto God, as are defire of reuengement, harred and rancour, which these people might beareagainst enemies to capitall as were the Spaniards, that very tew perfons have beene attached with the 60 blemish, and lesse violent and forcible did I finde them, by the good experience I had of them, then children of tenne or twelue yeares of age. And I know for certaine and infallible, that the Indians had euermore most just cause of warre against the Spaniards; but the Spaniards never had any just cause of warre against the Indians, but they were all diabolicall and most varighteous

more then can be spoken of any tyrane that is on the whole earth. And I affirme the felre same for all their other acts and geits by them done throughout all the Indies.

The warres atchieued, and all the men done to death thereby, referued commonly the yong folke, women, and children (the which they departed among them, in giving to one thirtie, to another fortie, and to another an hundreth, or two hundreth, according as every one had the fauour of the head tyrant, whom they called the Gouernour) they gaue them to the Spaniards woon that condition and colour, that they would teach them the Catholike faith, they themfelues who tooke voon them this charge of foules, commonly all idiots, or vtterly ignorant pertons, barbarous men, extreamely couetous and vicious.

Now the carke and care that their had of them, was to fend the men vnto the Mines, to make them dreine them out Gold, which is an intollerable trauell; and the women they beltowed into the Countrie to their Farmes, to manore and till the ground, which is a fore trauell, even for the very men, the ableft and mightieft. They gave to eate neither to one nor other, nought faue graffes and fuch like things of no substance; in such fort as the milke of the breatts of the wines new delinered of their childebirth dried vp; and thus dried vp in a small feason, all the little creatures their yong children. Further, by realon of the separation and not cohabiting of the men with their wives, the generation ceased betweene them. The men died with toyle and fa- Gens fine genfmine in the Minerals: these the women died of the same in the fields. By these meanes were con- ratione series fumed and brought to their ends so huge a number of the folke of this Island. By the like might

10 be abolished and exterpate all the inhabitants of the world. As touching loding, they laid vpou them fourescore or an hundreth pounds waight, which

they should carrie an hundreth or two hundreth leagues : The Spanish also causing themselves to be carried in Lycers upon mens armes, or beds made by the Indiana, in fashion of Nets. For they ferned their turnes with them to transport their carriages and baggage as beaits, whereby they had upon their backes and shoulders, whalles and gals as poore galled beafts. Also as touching whippings, baltonading, buffeting, blowes with the fift, curling, and a thousand other kindes of torments, which they practifed open them during the time that they tramiled, of a truth, they cannot be recounted in a long leaton, nor written in a great deale of paper, and they should be euen to affright men withall.

It is to be noted, that the destruction of these Iles and lands, began after the decease of the most gracious Queene, dame Ifabel, which was the yeare one thousand fine hundred and foure. For before there were laid wait in this Ile, but certaine Prouinces by vniust warre, and that not wholly altogether, & these for the more part, or in a manner all were conceiled from the knowledge of the Queene (vnto who it may please God to give his holy glory) forasmuch as she had a great delire, and a zeale admirable, that those people might be saued and prosper, as we do know good examples, the which we have seene with our eyes, and felt with our bands. Further note here, that in what part of the Indies the Spanish have come, they have evermore exercised against the Indians, these innocent peoples, the cruelties aforesaid, and oppressions abominable, and inuented day by day new torments, huger and monstrouser, becomming every day more cruell, 40 wherefore God also gave them over to fall headlong downe with a more extreame downfall into a reprobate fenie.

Of the two Iles Saint Iohn, and Iamayca.

THE Spanish passed over the Ile of Saint lobn, and to the end of Iamaica which were like Gaza dens for Bees) 1500, letting before them the same end which they had in the Ile Hispaniola, and committing the robberies and crimes aforefaid, adioyning thereunto many great and notable cruelties killing burning rofting and cafting them to the Dogs : furthermore, after wards oppreffing, and vexing them in their Minerals and other travell, vnto the rooting out of those poore in- 600000. of a 50 nocents which were in thefe two Iles, by supputation fix hundred thousand soules ; yea I beleeue Million in S. that they were more then a Million, although there be not at this day in either Ile two hundred Ishnand Ispersons, and all perished without faith and without Sacraments.

of the Ile of Cuba.

TN the yeare 1711, they passed to the sle of Cuba(where were great Provinces, and great musti-Ltudes of people) they both began and concluded with them after the failtion afore spoken, yea worfe and farre more cruelly. There came to piffe in this Iland matters worth the noting: A Ca-60 cique, named Hathury, which had conneied himfelte from the He Hift aniola to Cuba, with many of his people, to avoide the calamities & practifes to vnnaturall of the Spanish: when as certain Indians had told him tidings that the Spaniards were comming towards Cuba, he affembled his men, Dances mide and befpake them : Now you know that the Spaniards are commaing on this fide, and yee know to Gold. allo by experience, how they have entreated such, and such, and the people of Hayti (meaning

Pppppp2

thereby Hift aniola) hither they come to doe the like here. Wot yee why they doe it? they and fwered, no, voleffe it be that they are by nature voide of humanitie. He replied: They do it noe onely for that : but because they have a God whom they honour, and doe demand very much and to the end to have from vs as well as others to honour him withall, they doe their vttermost to fabdue vs. He had then by him a little Cheft full of Gold and Iewels, and faid, Behold here the God of the Spaniards, let vs doe to him, if it lo feeme you good, Areres (which are wind. leffes and dances) thus doing, we shall please him, and he will command the Spaniards that they shall doe vs no harme: They answered all with a loud voyce: Well faid Sir, well faid. Thus then they denced before it, vntill they were weary, then quoth the Lord Hathney, Take wee heede how ever the world goe, if we keepe him, to the end that he be taken away from vs, in the end to they will kill vs; wherefore let vs caft him into the River; whereunto they all agreed, and fo they cait it into a great Riuer there.

His choife to

and why.

This Lord and Cacique went alwayes flying the Spanish, incontinent as they were arrived at the Jie of Cuba, as he which knew them but too well, and defended himselfe when he met them. In the end he was taken, and onely for because that hee fled from a Nati a so vinust and cruell. and that he defended himselfe from such as would kill him, and oppresse him even voto the death, with all his folke, he was burned aliue. Now as he was fafined to the stake, a religious man of Saint Francis order, a deuou: person, spake to him somewhat of God and of our Faith. which things this faid Lord had neuer heard of, yet might be fufficient for the time which the butchers gaue him, that if he would beleeve those things which were spoken to him, hee should 20 goe to heaven, where is glory and reft everlathing, that if he did not believe, hee should goe to hell, there to be tormented perpetually. The Lord after having a little pauled to thinke of the matter, demanded of the Religious man, whether that the Spaniards went to heaven; who an-Iwered, yea; fuch of them that were good. The Cacique antwered agains immediately without any further deliberation, that he would not got to heaven, but that he would goe to hell, to the any turener democration, that he would not got to nearest, but that he would got to nest, tother end, not to come in the place where fuch popel flouid be, and to the end not to fee a Nation for cruell. Loe here the prairie, and honour which God and our faith have received of the Spanieris.

which have gone to the Indies. One time the Indians came to meete vs, and to receive vs with victuals, and delicate cherre. and with all entertainment ten leagues of a great Citie, and being come at the place, they prefen- # ted vs with a great quantity of fish, and of bread, and other meate, together with all that they could doe for vs to the vttermoft. See incontinent the Divell, which put himfelfe into the Speniards, to put them all to the edge of the tword in my prefence, without any cause whatsour. more then three thousand soules, which were set before vs, men, women, and children. Isaw there fo great cruelties, that neuer any man liuing either have or shall fee the like.

3000.Saine.

Another time, but a few dayes after the premises. I sent mellengers vnto all the Lords of the Province of Hanana, affuring them, that they should not neede to feare (for they had heard of my credit) and that without withdrawing themselves, they should come to receive vs, and that there should be done vnto them no displeasure : for all the Countrie was afraid, by reason of the mischiefesand murderings passed, and this did I by the aduice of the Captaine himselfe. After 40 that we were come into the Prouince, one and twenty Lords and Caciques came to receive vs, whom the Captaine apprehended incontinently, breaking the lafe conduct which I had made them, and intending the day next following to burne them aline, faying that it was expedient so to doe, for that otherwise those Lords one day, would doe vs a shrewd turne. I found my felfe in a great deale of trouble to faue them from the fire; howbeit in the end they escaped. After that the Indians of this lland were thus brought into bondage and calamitie, like vnto those of the lie of Hispanola, and that they faw that they died and perished all without reme-

frying-pan in-

there hung themselues more then two hundred Indians: and in this fashion died an infinite There was in this He an officer of the Kings, to whom they gaue for his share three hundred Indians, of whom at the end of three moneths there died by him in the trauell of the Mines, two hundred and fixty: in such for, that there remained now but thirty, which was the tenth part. Afterwards they gave him as many more, and more, and those also hee made haucke of in like manner, and still as many as they gaue him, so many he slew, vntill he died himselfe, and that the

dy : some of them began to flye into the Mountaines, others quite desperate hanged themselves,

and there hung together husbands with their wives, hanging with them their little children. And through the crucitie of one only Spaniard, which was a great tyrant, and one whom I know, 10

Divell carried him away. In three or foure moneths (my selfe being present) there died more then fixe thousand children, by reason that they had plucked away from them their fathers and mothers, which they 60 fent into the Mines, I beheld also other things frightfull. Shortly after they resolved to climbe after those which were in the Mountaines, where they wrought also ghastly slaughters, and those laid waste all this lie; which we beheld not long after, and it is great pitie to see it so dispeopled and defolate as it is.

of Terra Firma, or the firme land.

TN the yeere 1514, there landed in the Maine a mischieuous Gouernour, Heenot onely wasted or diffeopled the Sea Coast, but sacked also great Realmes and Countries, making hauncks by flaving and murdering of peoples, infinite to be numbred, and fending them to Hell. He ouerranne and harried molt of the places in the Land, from Darien vpward, vnto the Realme and Provinces of Nicaragna within being, which are more then fine hundred leagues of the bett, and most fertile ground in the whole World, where there were a good number of great Lords, with to a number of Townes, Boronghes, and Villages, and store of gold in more abundance then was to be found on the earth vatili that prefent.

This Governour with his men, found out new forts of cruelties and torments, to cause them to discouer and give him gold. There was a Captaine of his, which slue in one walke and course which was made by his commandement, to rob and roote out more then fortie thousand soules. putting them to the edge of the Sword, burning them, and giving them to the Dogges, and tormenting them diversly : which also a Religious man of the Order of Saint Francis, who went with him, beheld with his eies, and had to name Frier Francis of Saint Romane.

The most pernicious blindnesse, which hath alwaies possessed those who have governed the Indians, in stead of the care which they should have for the conversion and saluation came to that paffe, as to command orders to ber fet do wne vnto the Indians to receive the faith, and render themselves vnto the obedience of the King of Castile, or otherwise to bid them battle with fire and Sword, and to flay them or make them flaues : he commanded (or peraduenture the theeues, whom he dispatched to doe the execution, did it of their heads) when they were purposed to goe a rouing and robbing of any place, where they knew that there was any gold, the Indians being in their Townes and dwelling houses, without mistrusting any thing the wicked Spaniards would goe after the guize of Theeues, vnto within halte a league neere fome Towne, Borough, or Village, and there by themselves alone, and by night make a reading, publication, or Proclamation of the faid Ordinances, faying thus, O jes, Caciques and Indians of this firme Land of fuch God and Kine a place : Be it knowne voto you, that there is one God, one Pope, one King of Caltile, which is Lord of abuled.

30 thoje Lands : make your appearance, all delay fet aside, berote dee him bomage, &c. Which if you hall not accomplife: Be it knowne unto you, that we will make warre upon you, and we will kill you, and make you flauer. Hereupon at the fourth watch in the morning, the poore Innocents, fleeping yet with their wives and children : these Tyrants set vpon the place, calting fire on the houses which commonly were thatched, and so burne vp all quicke men, women and children, more suddenly then that they could of a great many be perceived. They maffacred at the inftant those that seemed them good, and those whom they tooke priloners, they caused them cruelly to die vpon the Racke, to make them to tell in what places there were any more Gold then they found with them : and others which remained alive, they made them flaves, marking them with a hot Iron. fo after the fire being out and quenched, they goe feeke the gold in their houses. This is then the

40 deportment in thele affaires of this person, with all the bond of his vngodly Christians, which he trained from the fourteenth yeere, vnto the one and twentie, or two and twentieth yeere, fending in these Exploits fixe or moe of his Seruants or Souldiers, by whom he received as many shares, ouer and besides his Captaines Generals part, which hee leuied of all the Gold, of all the Pearles, and of all the Iewels which shey tooks of those whom they made their slaves. The iclie-fame did the Kings Officers, euerie one fending forch as many fernants as he could.

The Bilhop also, which was the chiefe in the Realme, he fent his fervants to have his share in the bootie: They spoiled more gold within the time, and in this Realme, as farre forth as I am able to reckon, then would amount to a Million of Ducates, yea, I beleeve, that I make my reckoning with the least. Yet will it be found, that of all this great theeuing, they never fent to 50 the King ought faue three thousand Castillans, having thereabout killed and destroyed aboue eight hundred thousand soules. The other Tyrant Gouernours which succeeded after, vnto the yeere thirtie and three, flue or at least wife confented, for all those which remained to flay them in that tyrannicall flauerie.

Amongst an infinite fort of mischiefes, which this Gouernour did, nor consented vnto the doing during the time of his government, this was one: To wit, that a Cache or Lord giving him, either of his good will, or which is rather to be thought for feare, the weight of nine thouland Ducates : the Spaniards not content withall, tooke the faid Lord, and tied him to a stake, setting him on the earth, his feet stretched up, against the which they fet fire to cause him to give them some more gold. The Lord fent to his house, whence there were brought, yet moreoner three 60 thousand Cashillans. They goe afresh to give him new torments. And when the Lord gave them no more, either because he had it not, or because he would give them no more, they bent his free against che fire, vitall that the verie marrow sprang out, and trilled downe the soles of his feete : to as hee therewith died. They have oftentimes exercised these kinde of torments towards the Lords, to make them gine them gold, wherewith they have also flaine them.

Prpppp 3

Another

Another time, a certaine companie of Spaniards, ving their thefts and robberies, came to: Mountaine, where were affembled and hid a number of people, having thunned those men to pernicious and horrible; whom incontinent entring vpon, they tooke about three or fourescore. as well women as maids having killed as many as they could kill. The morrow after, there affembled a great companie of Indians, to pursue the Spaniards, warring against them for the great defire they had to recouer their wives and daughters.

The Spaniards perceiving the Indians to approach so neere vpon them, would not so forme their prey, but Rabd their Swords thorow the bellies of the wives and wenches, leaning but one alone aline of all the fourescore. The Indians felt their hearts to burst for sorrow and griefe which they suffered, yelling out in cries and speaking such words: O wicked men, O yee the cruell to Spaniards: doe yee kill Las Iras: They terme Iras in that Countrie the women : as if they would fav. to kill women, those be acts of abominable men, and cruell as beafts.

There was about ten or fifteene leagues from loanams, a great Lord named Paris, which was very rich of gold : The Spaniards went thither, whom this Lord received as if they had beene his owne brethren, and made a Present voto the Captaine of fiftie thousand Castillans of his owne voluntarie accord. It feemed vnto the Captaine and the other Spaniards, that he which gaue fuch a great fumme of his owne will, should have a great treasure, which should be the end and easing of their trauels. They pretend in words to depart ; but they returne at the fourth watch of the morning, fetting youn the Towne which miltrufted nothing fet it on fire, whereby was burnt and flaine a great number of people, and by this meanes they brought away in the spoile fiftie, or an threefcore thousand Castillans moe. The Casike or Lord escaped without being slaine or taken, and leuied incontinent as many of his as he could. And at the end of three or foure daies ourraketh the Spaniards which had taken from him an hundred and thirtie, or fortie thousand Castillans, and fet upon them valuanly, killing fiftie Spaniards, and recouring all the gold which they had taken from him. The others taued themselves by running away, being well charged with blowes and wounded. Not long after, divers of the Spanife returne against the faid Cacite, and discomfite him with an infinite number of his people. Those which were not slaine, they put them to the ordinarie bondage : in fuch fort, as that there is not at this day, neither tracke nor token, that there hath beene living there either people, or fo much as one man alone borne of woman within thirtie leagues of the Land, which was before notably peopled and gouerned by 30 divers Lords. There is no reckoning able to be made of the murders which this Caitiffe with his companie committed in these Realmes which he so dispeopled.

of the Province of Nicaragua.

The yeare 1922, or twentie three, this Tyrant went farther into the Land: to bring vader his yoke the most fertile Prouince of Nicaragna, and so in thither he entred in an euill houre. There is no man which is able worthily and fufficiently to fpeake of the fertilitie, healthiomeneile, prosperitie, and frequencie, of those Nations that there were.

He fent fiftie Horiemen, and caused to flay all the people of this Province, (which is greater 40 then the Countie of Roffillon) with the Sword : in such fort, as that hee left aline, nor man, nor woman, nor old, nor young, for the least cause in the World : as if they came not incontinent at his command : or if they did not bring him fo many load of Maiz, which fignifieth in that Countrie bread Corne : or if they did not bring him fo many Indians to ferue him and others of his company: for the Countrie lay levell, as was faid, and no creature could escape his horses and deuillish rage. He sent Spaniards to make out rodes, that is to say, to go a theruing into other Prouinces : and gaue leave to those Rouers, to carrie with them as many Indians of this peaceable people as they lifted, and that they should serue them, whom they put to the chaine, to theend they should not give over the burdens of three or fourescore pounds weight, wherewith they loaded them, whereof it came to passe oftentimes that of foure thouland Indians, there returned 10 not home to their houses fix alive : but even fell downe starke dead in the high way : and when any were so wearie that they could march no forther for the weight of their burdens, or that fome of them fell ficke, or fainted for hunger or thirst, because it should not need to stand so long as to valocke the chaine, and to make the speedier dispatch, hee cut off the head from the shoulders, and to the head tumbled downe one way, and the bodie another. Now confider with your felues, what the other poore foules might thinke the whiles.

He was the cause that the Indians sowed not their grounds one whole yeeres continuance. So as now, when they wanted bread, the Spaniards tooke away from the Indians their Maiz, which they had in flore for proution, to nourish them and their children : whereby there died of famine more then twentie or thirtie thousand soules. And it came to passe, that a woman false mad with 60 the famine flue her Sonne to eate him.

They have discomfited and oppressed in this Province a great number of people, and hastened their death in causing them to beare boords and timber vnto the Hauen thirty leagues diffeace, so make thips with : and fent them to go leeke Honie and Wax amiddeft the Mountaines, where the Tigres denoured them : Yea they have laden women with childe, and women new delinered or lying in, with burdens enough for beafts.

The greatest plague which hath most dispeopled this Prouince, hath beene the licence which the Gourmour gaue to the Spaniards, to demand or exact of the Caciche and Lords of the countrie flaues. They did give them every foure or five moneths, or as oftentimes as every one could obtaine licence of the Gouernour fitte flues : with threatnings, that if they gave them not. Tribute flues, they would burne them aliue, or cause them to be eaten with Dogges. Now ordinarily the Indians doe not keepe flaues, and it is much if one Cacike doc keepe two, three or foure: Wherefore to ferue this turne, they went to their fubicets, and tooke first all the Orphelins, and afterto wards they exacted of him that had two children one, and of him that had three, two: and in this manner was the Cacicke faine to furnith thill to the number that the Tyrant imposed, with the great weeping and crying of the people; for they are people that doe loue (as it feemeth) tenderly their children. And for because that this was done continually, they dispeopled from the yeere 22. vnto the yeere 23. all this Realme. For there went for fixe or feuen yeeres foace. fine or fixe ships at a time, carryi g forth great numbers of those Indians, for to fell them for flaues at loanama and Peru: where they all died not long after. For it is a thing proued and experimented a thousand times, that when the Indians are transported from their naturall Countrey, they foone end their hues : befides that these give them not their sustenance, neither yet diminish they of their toile, as neither doe they buy them, for ought else but to toile. They have 30 by this manner of doing drawneout of this Prouince of the Indies, whom they have made flaves. being as free borne as I am, more then five hundred thousand soules, And by the Dewillish warres 500000. Tailore being as free borne as I am, more then hue hundred thousand sources. And by the Delinium water transported. which the Spanish have made on them, and the hideous thrashome that they have laid vpon 50000. Same them, they have broughe to their deaths, other fiftie or threefcore thouland perfons, and do yet daily make hauocke of them at this present. All these slaughters have beene accomplished within the space of fourteene yeeres. There may be left at this day in all this Provinces of Nicaragua. the number of about foure or fine thousand persons, which they also cause to die as yet every day.

of New Spaine.

peopled in the World, as I have alreadie faid.

N the yeere 1 < 17. was New Spaine discourred : at the Discourrie whereof were committed great diforders and flaughters of the Indians, by those which had the doing of that Exploite. The verre 1418, there went Spanish Christians (as they terme themselves) to rob and slay, not- In the somes withstanding that they said they went to people the Countrie. Sithence that yeere, 1918. vn. discourse of to this present yeere 1542, the vniust dealings, the violencie, and the Tyrannies which the Spa. Herez, you miards have wrought against the Indians, are mounted to the highest degree of extremitie : those may find the felfe-same Spaniards, having thorowly lost the feare of God, and of the King, and forgotten these first sizes themselues. For the discomfitures, cruelties, slaughters, spoiles, the destructions of Cities, pillages, ters, or as this ao violences, and Tyrannies which they have made in fo many Realmes, and to great have been fuch Author reckoand so horrible, that all the things which we have spoken of, are nothing in comparison of those neth, supplanand so horrible, that all the things which we have spoken or, are nothing in companion of those sers, which have beene done and executed from the yeere 1518. vnto the yeere 1542, and as yet at rather depopu-

through bondages and oppretious ordinarily and personall, having beene the Countrey the most

this time, this moneth current of September, are in doing and committing the most gateuousest, and the most abominablest of all: in such fort that the rule which weef set downe before is veriplewhole Profied: That is, That from the beginning they have alwaies proceeded from entil to worse, and have gone ba-yand themselves in the most greatest disorders and dentilish doings. In such wise, as that since the first entring into New Spaine, which was on the eight day of but was lother

Aprill, in the eighteenth yeere vnto the thirtieth yeere, which make twelne yeeres complete: doe more then the flaughters and the destructions have never ceasifed, which the bloudie and cruell bands of the the Author Spaniar de haue continually executed in foure hundred and fiftie leagues of Land or thereabout in haddonether spaniar as naue continuary executed in route numbered and intereseagues of Land of theretaeout in whiles many of compaffe, round about Maxico, and the Neighbour Regions round about, fuch as the which them lived: might containe foure or fine great Realmes, as great and a great deale farre fertiler then is Spaine. yea his mest All this Countrie was more peopled with Inhabitants, then Toledo, and Simil, and Vallodelid, and paffi nate and Sanagoce, with Barcelona. For that there hath not beene commonly in those Cities, nor neuer bitter innecwere such a world of people, when they have beene peopled with the most, as there was then in time I have tathe faid Country, which container hin the whole compaile more then 1800, leagues:during the time of the about mentioned twelue yeares, the Spaniards have flaine and done to death in the Storie, therein faid 450, leagues of Land what men, what women, what young and little children, more then also mollifyfoure Millions of foules, with the dint of the Sword and Speare, and by fire, during (I fav) the ing many 60 Conquests (as they call them.) Neither yet doe I here comprize those, whom they have flaine,

and doe flay as yet euery day, in the aforefaid flauerie and oppression ordinarie. Among to other Murders and Mattacres they committed this one which I am now to speake Of New Spains of, in a great Citie more then of a thirtie thoufind houlholds, which is called Cholula: that is, in particular, that comming before them the Lords of the Countrie and places neere adioyning, and first and

Binces. I could

gings in the Citie, in the houses and place of the Lord, or other principall Lords of the Citie:

the Spaniards aduited with themselves to make a massacre, or a chastile (as they speake) to the end, to raile and plant a dread of their cruelties in euery corner of all that Countrie.

cherie, to the end, that those poore and innocent Lambes should tremble for feare which they

Now this bath beene alwaies their cultomary manner of doing, in every the Regions which they have entred into, to execute incontinent upon their first arrivall, some notable cruell but-

Of the Province and Realme of Guatimala.

O fooner arrived hee into this faid Realme: but that hee beganne with great flaughter of to the Inhabitants. This notwithstanding the chiefe Lord came to receive him, being carried in a Lighter, with Trumpets and Tabours, reloycings, and difports, accompanied with a great number of the Lords of the Circe of Uhlaran, head Citie of the whole Realme, doing them also fertice with all they had, but specially in giving them food abundantly, and whatsoever they demanded befides. The Spanish lodged this night without the Citie, foratmuch as the fame feemed vnto them firong, and there might be thereby danger,

This Captaine called to him the next morrow the chiefe Lord, with other great Lords, who being come as meske theepe, he apprehended them all, and commanded them to give him certaine lummes of gold. They answering that they had none, forasmuch as the Countrie yeelded none : he commandeth incontinent to burne them aline, without having committed any crime

20 whatsoeuer, and without any other forme of Processe or sentence.

As the Lords of all these Prounces perceived, that they had burned their sourcespee Lords. onely because they gaue them no Gold, they fied all to the Mountaines, commanding their Subices to goe to the Spaniards, and to ferue them as their Lords, but that they should not discount them, nor give them intelligence where they were. With this, loe all the people of the Countrey, presenting them, and protesting to be theirs, and to serue them as their Lords: The Captains made answere that he would not accept of them, but that he would kill them if they told not where were their Lords. The Indians answered, they could not tell ought: but as touching themselves they were content, that they should employ them to their service, with their wives and children : and that they should vie their houses, and that there they might kill, or doe what-30 foeuer them pleated.

It is a wonderfull thing, that the Spaniards went to their Villages and Burrowes, and finding there thefe filly people at their worke, with their wines and children, neither middoubting any thing, they pierced them with their Boars-speares, and hackled them to pieces. They came to one Burrow great and mighty, which held it felle more affired then any other, because of their innocency: whom the Spanib laid defolate in a manner all whole, in the space of two houres. putting to the edge of the fword, children, with women, and aged persons, and all these which could not escape by fleeing.

The Indians aduited be weene them to digge certaine ditches in the middelt of the wayes, to make their Horses tumble into, and piercing their bellies with Pikes sharp led and brent at one 40 end, there bestowed of purpose, and courred over so orderly with greene turfe, that it seemed

there was no fuch matter. There fell in Horses once or twice: for the Spaniards afterwards could beware of them. But now to avenge them, they made a Law, that as many Indians as might bee taken alive, should be flung into the fame pits. Hereupon they cast in women with child, and women new deliuesed of child-birth, and old folke as many as they could come by, entill that the ditches were filled vp. It was a lamentable thing to behold the women with their children flabbed with thefe pickes. All besides, they sue with thrust of Speares, and edge of Sword. They cast of them alfo to fielh fraunching Dogs, which tare them and devoured them. They brent a Lord at a great fire of quicke flames: faying, they would herein doe him honour. And they perfifted in 50 thefe butcheries fo vnnaturall, about feuen yeeres, from the yeere 24. vntill the yeere 21.

The Indians which escaped, with all other of the Countrie seeing all the milehietes of the Spanifb, began to affemble, and put themselves in Armes: whereupon the Spaniards worke great discomfitures and saughters , returning to Guatimala, where they builded a Citie, the which Guatimala de-God of a just judgement hath reversed with three overwhelmings falling all three together: the frequed with one was with water, the other with earth, and the third with stones, of the bignesse of ten or twentie Oxen. By fuch like meanes all the Lords, and the men that were able to beare Armes being flaine: those which remayned, were reduced into the Diabolicall seruntude aforesaid, being made tributary flaues or villaines regardant, but giving for their tribute fonnes and daugha ters, for they will have none other kinde of bond-men. And so the Spaniards sending whole

60 thips laden with them to Pers, to lell them, with their other flaughters, have deftroyed and laid defart an whole Realme, of an hundred leagues square, or aboue, a Countrie the most blessefull, and peopled the most that might be in the world. For the Tyrant himselfe wrote hereof, that it was more peopled then Mexico; and herein he faid the truth. He hath done to death , with Foureor five his conforts and confreres, more then foure or five millions of foules in fifteene or fixteene yeeres millions fluxe

CHAP. 4. Bart, de las Casas bis Booke of Cruelties done in the Indies.

should have of them: in this wife they fent first to summon all the Lords and Noblemen of the Cisie, and of all the places subject vnto the same Citie: who so some as they came to speake with the Captaine of the Spaniards, were incontinent apprehended before that any body might perceive the matter, to be able thereupon to beare tidings thereof vnto others. Then were demanded of them five or fixe thousand Indians, to carry the lodings and carriages of the Spaniards: which Indians came forthwith, and were bestowed into the bale Courts of the Houses. It was a pitifull case to see these poore folke, what time they made them ready to beare the carriages of the Spaniard. They come all naked, only their fecret parts coursed, having every one you their shoulder a Net with a small deale of victuall : they bow themsclues every one, and hold their backes cowreddownelike a fort of the Lambes, prefenting themselves to the Swords: and thus being all affembled in the base Court, together with others, one part of the Spanish all armed befrowe themselves at the gates to hemme them in, whiles the rest put these poore Sheepe to the edge of the Sword and the Speares, in such fort, that there could not escape away one

asking them mercy and the fauing of their liues : they found in them no pitie nor compassion any whit at all, but were all he wed in pieces. All the Lords which were about and vinderneath, were all bound, the Captaine commanding them to be brent quicke being bound vnto stakes pitched into the ground. Howbeit one Lord, which might be peraduenture the principall and King of the Countrie faued himfelfe, and caft himfelie with thirtie or fortie other men into a Temple thereby, which was as good vnto them 20

onely person, but that he was cruelly put to death: fauing that after a two or three dayes you

might have feene come forth fundry all couered with bloud which had hid and faued themselves

under the dead bodies of their fellowes, and now prefenting themielues before the Spaniards,

as a Fort, which they call in their Language, Qeme: and there he defended himselfe a good part of the day. But the Spaniards, whose hands nothing can escape specially armed for the warre, cast fire po the Temple, and burned all those which were within.

From Cholula they went to Mexico. The King Motensuma fent to meet them a thousand of

presents, and Lords, and people, making ioy and mirth by the way.

After great and abhominable tyrannies committed in the Citie of Mexico, and in other Cities, before related, and the Country, ten, fifteene, and twenty leagues compasse of Mexico: this tyrannie and pestilence advanced it selfe forward, to waste also, infect, and lay desolate the Pronince of Panace. It was a thing to be wondred at of the world, of people that there were, and the spoyles and flaughters there done. Afterward they wasted also after the selfe manner, all the Province of 40 Tritepeke, and the Province of Ipelingo, and the Province of Column: each Province contayning more ground then the Realme of Leon and Castile.

This Captaine tyrant, with this gorgeous and pretended title, dispatched two other Captaines, as very tyrants and farre more cruell, and leffe pitifull then himfelfe, into great Realmes most flourishing, and most sertile, and full of people, to wit, the Realme of Guatimala, which lieth to the Seaward on the South fide, and the same of Naco, and Honduras, otherwise called Guaymura, which coafteth on the Sea on the North lide, confronting and confining the one with the other, three hundred leagues distance from Mexico. He sent the one by Land, and the other by Sea: both the one and the other carried with them a many of troopes to ferue on horsebacke

He which went by Sea, committed exceeding pillings, cruelties, and diforders amongst the people on the Sea-coatt.

The Provinces and Realmes of Naco and Honduras, which refembled a Paradife of pleasures: and were more peopled, frequented, and inhabited, then any Countrey in the world: now of late, wee comming along thereby, have feene them fo dispeopled and destroyed, that who to should fee them, his heart would cleave for forrow, ware hee never so flinty. They have flaine within these eleuen yeeres, more then two millions of soules , having not left in more then an hundred leagues of the Countrey square, but two thousand persons, whom they slav as yet daily in the faid ordinary bondage.

The great tyrant and Captaine, which went to Guatimala (48 hath beene faid, exceeded all) 60 from the Provinces neere to Mexico, (according ashimfelfe wrote in a Letter to the principali Tyrant which had fent him) diffant from the Realme of Guatimals foure hundred leagues (keeping the way by him traced) as he went, flue, robbed, burned and deftroyed all the Country;

The Mexicani

cruclties are

and therefore

here omitted.

whereforeuer he became, under the shadow of title about mentioned, faying; that they should

Shambles of

giuen for a

mans fleib.

This Tyrant had a cuftome, when as he went to make warre vpon any Citie or Prouince: to carrie thither of the Indians already vnder-yoaked, as many as hee could, to make warre vpon the other Indians: and as he gaue vnto a ten or twentie thouland men which hee led along no fuftenance, he allowed them to eate the Indians which they tooke: And so by this meanes hee had in his Campe an ordinary shambles of mans field, where in his presence they killed and rofted children. They killed men onely to have off from them their hands and their feete, which parts they held to be the daintiest morriels.

parts they held to be the daintert mosters.

He was the death of an infinite fort of the Indians in making of flips, the which hee transported after this rate great itore of Artilerie, which heeloded upon the shoulders of these poore to folke going naked: whereby I have seene very many fall down in the high way, by reason of their great burdens. He washed whole houldeds, by taking from the men their wires and daughters: the which afterwards he disperied in gitts to his Mariners and Souldiers to please them withall, who led them along with them in their Nauies. Hee stuffed all the ships with Indians, where they died for thirst and hunger. He made two Nauies, either of a great number of ships, with the which he consumed as with fire and lightning stashing from Heaven all those peoples.

Of new Spaine, and Panuco, and Xalisco.

A Feet the exceeding cruelties and flaughters aforefaid, and the others which I haue omitted, which haue beene executed in the Provinces of New Spains and Passuse: there came to Passuse a nother Tyrant, cruell and volbrideled, in the yetere 1 * 25. Who in committing very many cruelties, and in branding many for flaues, after the manner aforefaid, which were all free, and in fending very many thus laden to Cooks, and Hispanica, where they might best make metchandife of them, he atchieuced the delotation of this Province.

And it hath come to palle in his time, that there hath beene given for one Mare, eight hundred Indians ioules partakers of reason. And this man from this roome was promoted to be Prefident of Mexica, and of all the Province of New Spaine, and there were promoted with him other Tyrants, to the offices of Auditorships: in the which dignities they let forward also this to Countrie into so extreme a desolation, that if God had not kept them by meanes of the resistance of the religious men of Saint Francie Order, and if that there had not been prouded with all speed a Court of Audience, and the Kings Counsell in those parts friend to all verus, they had layd waite all New Spaine, as they have done the Block Niphanola. There was a man, amongst those of the companie of this Captaine, who to the end to encloke a Garden of his, with a wall: kept in his workes eight thousand Indians, without paying them ought, nor giving them to eate, in manner, hat they died, falling downe suddenly, and hee neuer tooke the more thought for the matter.

After that the chiefe Captaine which I spake of, had finished the laying waste of Panues, and that hee understood the newes of the comming of the Kings Court of Audience: hee addied as with himselfe to proceed farther into the innermost parts of the Realme, to fearch where hee might tyrannize at his eafe, and drew by force out of the Pronince of Maxice, fifteen or twentie thousand men, to the end, that they should carrie the loades and carriages of the Spaniards, which went with him, of whom there never returned against two hundred, the others being dead on the high-waves.

He came at the Prouince of Mechnacham, which is distant from Mexico fortie leagues, a Region as bliffefull and full of Inhabitants, as is that of Mexico. The King and Lord of the Countrey went to receive him with an infinite companie of people, which did vnto them a thousand feruices and curtefies. He apprehended him by and by, for that he had the bruit to be very rich of Gold and filuer : and to the end, that he should give him great treasures , he beganne to give 50 him the terments, and put him in a paire of flockes by the feet, his body firetched out, and his hands bound to a stake, he maketh a stashing fire against his feet, and there a boy with a basting fprinkle loked in Oyle in his hand, flood and bafted them a little and a little, to the end to well roft the skinne. There was in one fide of him a cruell man, the which with a Crof-bow bent, aymed right at his heart, on the other fide another which held a Dog fnarling, and leaping up as to runne vpon him, which in leffe then the time of a Credo, had beene able to have torne him in pieces: and thus they tormented him, to the end hee fliould discouer the treasures which they defired, vntill fuch time as a religious man of Saint Francis Order tooke him away from them, notwithstanding that hee died of the same torments. They tormented and slue of this fashion very many of the Lords and Cacikes in these Provinces: to the end that they should give them 60 Gold and Silver

At the tame time a certaine tyrant found, that certaine Indian; had hid their Idols, as their which had neuer beene better influefted by the Spannards of any better God, bee apprehended and detayned priloners the Lords, with I like time a state they would give them their Idols,

CHAP. 4. Bart, de las Calas his Booke of Cruelties done in the Indies,

fuppoing all this while they had beene of Gold or of Sidier! how beit they were not fo, wherefore he chattiled them cruelly and vniufly. But to the end he would not remay ne full trace of his
fore he chattiled them cruelly and vniufly. But to the end he would not remay ne full trace of his
forethe chattiled them cruelly and vniufly and they
redeemed them for foch Gold and Silver as they could find, to the end; to working them fore
Gold, as they had beene wont to doe aforetime.

This great Captaine paffed farther from Machinabans to the Province of Xalifar, the which Xalifar.

This great Captaine passed farther from Mechiaebam to the Province of Lauge, ene which was all whole most that of the pole, and most happie. Provit is one of the most fertilest and most admirable 'Construe of the Indian, which had Burrowes contayning in a manner scene leagues. As he entred this Countrey, the Lord with the Inhabitaints, according as all the Indians are accused to the Countre of the Mechanist and the Indians are accused to the Countre of the Indians are accused to the Indians and Indians are accused to the Indians are accused to the Indians and being not able to beate their owne children because of tracell and hunger, were taine to cast them from them in the wayes, whereof there died and formation are the Indians and the Indians and the Indians are accused to tracell and hunger, were taine to cast them from them in the wayes, whereof there died

an infinite.

An euill Christian taking by force a young Damsell-to abuse her, the mother withstood him?

An euill Christian taking by force a young Damsell-to abuse her, the mother withstood him?

and as shee would have taken her away, the Spaniard drawing his Dagger or Rapier, cut off her
hand, and slue the young girle with slashes of his weapons: because shee would not consent to

his appetite.

Among t many other things, he cauled vniuftly to be marked for fluers, four ethors and and flue.

Among t many other things, he cauled vniuftly to be marked for fluers, form of a yeere and a halfe old, bundred loules as free as they, men, women, and sucking babes, from of a yeere and a halfe old, vnto three or four eyeeres olds which notwiths drain align fluer or the mixed the mixed of other things that have not been elect downe in writing crise them with an infairte number of other things that have not been elect downe in writing.

ceine them with an innure number or other uning a nan had nothing them aline; and ca-His Scewards flue very many of the *Indians*, hanging them and burning them aline; and cafling fome vato the Dogs, cutting off their feet, hands, head and tongue, they being in peace; onely to bring them into a learc, to the end they should lerue him

Teis faid of him, that he hath deftroyed and burned in this Realme of Xalifos, eight littindeed 800. Towned 30 Burrowes, which was the cause that the Indians being fallen desperace, and teeing those which destroyed. 30 Burrowes, which was the cause that the Indians being the Melbert, and went into the Mountaines, shiping certaine Spaniands: howbest by good sight. And afterwards because of the wickednessand outrages of other tyrants now being, which passed by that way to destroy other Prominets (that which they call discovering) many of the Indians insembled, fortifying themateluse you certains Rockes. Vpon the which Rotkesthaspunish him made, and yet at this present, and after hoc make so many cruelicies, that they almost made an end of laying desolate all this great Country, slaying an infinite number of people.

of the Realme of Yucatan.

"He yeare one thousand fine hundred twenty and fix, was deputed oner the Realme of Tucatan another caitiffe Gouernour, and that through the lies and falle reports which himfelfe had made vnto the King : in like manner as the other tyrants vntill this prefent, to the end there might be committed vnto them offices and charges, by meanes whereof they might rob at their pleasures. This Realme of Tucatan was full of inhabitants; for that it was a Countrie in euery respect wholesome, and abounding in plentie of victuals, and of fruites more then Mexico; and fingularly exceeded for the abundance of Honie and Waxe there to be found, more then in any quarter of the Indier, which hath beene feene vnto this prefent. It containeth about three hundred leagues compaffe. The people of that Countrie were the most notable of all the In-50 dier, as well in confideration of their policie and prudencie, as for the vprightnesse of their life, verily worthy the training of the knowledge of God : amongit whom there might have beene builded great Cities by the Spanish, in which they might have lived as in an earthly Paradile, if to be they had not made themselves voworthy, because of their exceeding couetousnesse, hard hartednesse, and heinous offences: as also vinworthy they were of other moe blessings a great many, which God had fet open in thele Indies. This tyrant began with three hundred men to make warrevpon these poore innocent people, which were in their houses without hurting any hody : where he flew and ranfacked infinite numbers. Aud for because the Countrey yeeldeth no Gold, for if it had yeelded any, he would have confurmed those fame Indians, in making them to toyle in the Mines; to the end he might make Gold of the bodies and foiles of those for whom 60 Ielus Christ suffered death, he generally made slaues of all those whom he slew not, and returned the Ships that were come thither, vpon the blowing abroad and noyle of the felling of flaues, full of people bartered for Wine, Oyle, Vinegar, powdred Bacons flesh, Garments, Horses, and that that every man had neede of, according to the Captains estimate and judgement. He would let choose amongst an hundred or fittle yong Damosels, bartering some one of the fairest, and of

CHAP. 4. Bart. de las Casas his Booke of Cruelties done in the Indias

the best complexion, for a Caske of Wine, Oyle, Vineger, or for Porke powdred. And in like manner be would let choose out a young hantome Stripling among it two or three hundred for the foretaid Merchandize. And it bath becare feene, that a youth feeming to bee the Sonne of fome Prince, hath beene hartered for a Cheefe, and an hundred persons for an Horse. Hee comnued in these doings from the yeere twentie fixe, vatill the yeere chirtie three,

As these Samuards, want with their mad Dogges a foraging by the tracke, and hunting our the Indian men and women : An Indian woman being ficke, and feeing the could not afcape there Dogges, that they fhould not rent her as they did others sibee tooke a chard and hanged her felfa at a beame, having faltened at her foot a child the had of a weere old, and the had no honer done behold thefe Curres, which come and dispatch this infant, howbert that before it died, a Reliant

gious man a Frier baptized it.

When the Spanilb parted out of this Realme, one among to thers faid to a Sonne of a Lord of forms Citie or Province, that he should goe with him : the Boy answered, and faid, he would not for lake his Countrie, The Spannard replied : Goe with me, or elfe I will ent off thine earer. The young Indian perfitted in his hift taying, that he would not forfake his Countrie. The Spansard drawing out his Dagger, cut oil fait one, and then his other eare. The youngman abiding by it fall that he would not leave his Countrie : he mangled off also his Note, with the vppermoft of his line: making no more forepulcatie of the mater, then if he had given him but a philip. This damage ble wetch magnified himselfe, and vaunted him of his doings villanously vinto a reverend Religious person, saying : that hee tooke as much paines as her could, to beget the Indian women in wa great numbers with child, to the end, he might receive the more money for them in felling them great with childe for flaues.

In this Realme, or in one of the Prouinces of New Spaine, a certaine Spaniard went one day with his Dogges on hunting of Venison, or ele Conies, and not finding game, hee minded his Dogges that they should bee hungrie, and tooke a little tweet Babie which hee bereaued the mother of, and cutting off from him the armes and the legges, chopped them in small gobbets, giuing to every Dogge his Liverie or part thereof, by and by after these morfels thus dispatched be

caft also the rest of the bodie or the carkasse to all the kenell together.

Being now departed the Realme all the Devillish Tyrants, blinded with the concruspeffeof the riches of Pers, that reverend Father, Frier lames, with foure other Religious of Saint Franch cis, was moved in spirit to goe into this Realme to pacific them, and for to preach to them, and to winne vnto lefus Christ those which might bee remayning of the Butcheries and Tyrannos Murders, which the Spanish had beene per petrating feuen continuall yeeres. And I below that thefe fame were thole Religious perions, the which in the yeere thirtie foure, certaine le diens of the Province of Mexico, leading before them Meffengers in their behalfe, requested them that they would come into their Countrie, to give them knowledge of that one only God, who is God, and very Lord of all the wolld: according in the end to admit them with condition, that they should enter thems lues alone, and not the Spaniards with them, that which the Religious promifed them. For it was permitted them, yea commanded them fo to doe, by the Vice-toy of New Spaine, and that there should bee no kind of diff leafure bee done vnto them by the Spaine miards. The Religious men preached voto them the Got pell of Christ, as they are accustomed to doe, and as had beene the holy intention of the Kings of Caffile, that should have beene done. Howbeit, that the Spaniards in all the feuen yeares i pace past, had neuer given them any fuch notice of the truth of the Golpell, or so much as that there was any other King fauing himselie, that fo tyrannized over them, and destroyed them. By these meanes of the Religious, after the end of fortie dayes that they had preached vnto them, the Lords of the Countrie brought vnto them, and put into their hands their Idols, to the end that they should burne them. Afterallo they brought vnto them their young children, that they flould catechife them, whom they lout as the Apple of their eye. They made for them also Churches, and Temples, and houses. Moreouer, some other Proninces sent, and insited them, to the end that they might come to them al- 50 fo, to preach, and give them the vnderstanding of God, and of him whom they faid to beethe great King of Castule. And being perswaded and induced by the Religious, and did a thing which neuer yet before hath beene done in the lades. Twelve or fifteene Lords, which had very many fubiccts and great dominion, affembling enery one for his owne part his people, and taking their aduste and confent, of their owne voluntarie motion, yeelded themselves to the subjection, and tobe under the domination of the Kings of Caftile: admitting the Emperour as King of Spaint, for their Liege Souereigne. Whereof also they made certaine Instruments , by them configned, which I keepe in my charge, together with the Testimonies thereunto of the said Religious.

The Indians being thus onward in the way of the faith, with the great toy, and good hore of 60 the Religious Brethren, that they should be able to winne vnto Iesus Christ all the people of the Realme that were the refidue, being but a small number of the flaughters, and wicked wars Falfed : There entred at a certaine Coaft, eighteene Spaniards Tyrants on horiebacke, and twelve on foor, driving with them great loades of Idols, which they had taken in the other Prounces

of the Indians. The Captaine of those thirtie Spaniards called vnto him a Lord of the Countrie therabouts as they were entred, and commandeth him to take those Idols, and to differte them throughout all his Countrie, felling every Idoll for an Indian man, or an Indian woman, to make flaurs of them, with threatning them, that if he did not doe it, he would bid them battaile. That faid Lord being forced by feare, distributed those Idols throughout all the Countrie, and commanded all his fubicets, that they should take them to adore them, and that they should returne in exchange of that ware Indies and Indiffes tomake flaues of. The Indians beeing affraid. those which had two chldren, gaue him one, and hee that had three gaue him two. This was the end of this Sacrilegious Trafficke : and thus was this Lord or Cacique, faine to content thele 10 Spaniards : I hay not Christians.

One of their abominable Chafferers, named lobu Garcia, being ficke, and neere his death, had under his bed to packs of Idols, and commanded his Indif Maid that ferued him, to looke to it that the made not away his Idols, that there were for Murlimens, for they were good ftuffe; and that making vent of them, thee thould not take leffe then a flaue a piece for one of them with another : and in fine, with this his Testament and last Will thus denised, the Catiffe died.

The Indians perceiuing that, that which the Religious had promifed them, was as good as nothing : namely, that the Spaniards should not enter those Prouinces : and seeing the Spaniards which had laded thither Idols from other places, there to make vent of them, they having put all their Idols afore into the hands of the Friars, to the end they should bee burned, and to the end 20 the true God should be by them adored, all the Country was in a mutinie, and a rage against the Religious Friars, and the Indians comming vnto them, fay : Why bane you led unto us, in promifing us by deceits that there should not enter any Spaniards into these Countries? And why hame you burns our gods, feeing the Spaniards doe bring viother Gods from other Nations? Were not our Gods as good, as the Gods of other Proninces ? The Friars pacified them in the best manner that they could not knowing what to answere them : and went to seeke out those thirty Spaniards, to whom they declared the cuill which they had done, praying them to get them thence : which the Spaniards would not doe, but faid to the Indians, that those Religious men had caused them to come thither themselves of their owne accord, which was rightly an extreme malicious nesses. In the end the Indians deliberated to kill the Religious men: By occasion whereof, the Friers fled away 30 in a night, having advertilement of the cale by some of the Indians.

Of the Progince of Saint Marcha.

He Province of Saint Martha, was a Countrie where the Spaniards gathered Gold in all I plentie: the Land being with the Regions adiacene very rich, and the people industrious to draw out the Gold. Wherefore alto infinite Tyrants have made thither continually with their thips, ouer-running, and ranging along the Country, killing and spoyling those the Inhabitants. and ramping from them that gold that they had, with speedie returne ever to their thips, which went and came oftentimes. And so wrought they in those Provinces great wasts and slaughan ters, and cruelties horrible, and that most commonly on the Sea-coast, and certaine leagues within the Country. At what time there went Span b Tyrants to inhabite there. And for as much as the Country was exceeding rich as hath beene faid, there ever fucceeded Captaines one in anothers roome, every one more cruell then other : in fuch fore that it fremed that every one inforced himselfe, for the masterie in doing of euils. The yeere 1529, there went a great Tyrant, very resolute, with great troupes; but without any feare of God, or compassion of the nature of man, who wrought such waites and slaughters to great, that he exceeded all others that had gone before him, himfelfe robbing for the space of sixe or seven yeeres that he lived, great Treafures : after being deceased without confession, and fled from the place of his residence ; there succeeded him other murdering Tyrants and Theeues, which made an end of the rest of the people : that from the yeere 1 , 29. vnto this day, they have reduced into a Wilderneffe in those same go quarters more then 400. leagues of Land, which was no leffe peopled then the other Countries which we have spoken of,

Verily if I had to make a bed-roll of the Vngraciousnesses, of the Slaughters, of the Desolations, of the Iniquities, of the Violencies, of the Massacres, and other great Infolencies which the Spaniards have done, and committed in those Provinces of Saint Marsha, against God, the King, and against those innocent Nations : I should write an Historie very ample. But that may bedone if God spare me lite, hereafter in his good time tonely I will fet downe a few words of that which was written in a Letter by a Bishop of this Prounce, to the King our Souereigne : and the Letter beareth date the twentieth of May, 1541. The which Bishop amongst other

61 Words Speaketh thus : I fay , facred Maustie, that the way to redresse this Countrie, is that his Ma- Bishop of S. sestie deliner benout of the power of Stepfathers, and give unto her an hulb and which may intreate her Mathas Letas is reason, and ascording as spee deserveth: otherwise, I am surchereaster as the Tyrants which now tot to Charles base the government, doe torment and tormorle ber, he will soone take an end, Oc. And a little below the fith. be faith : Whereby, your Missite Shall know electely, how those which gonerne in those quarters due de-

(erue to be dismounted, and deposed from their gonernment, to the end, that the Common-weales may be relieued. That if that be not done, in mine aduise, they can never be cured of their diseases. His Matestie Ball understand moreover, that in those Regions, there are not any Christians but Denils , that there are no Sernants of God and the King, but Trastors to the flate, and their King. And in trush the greatest incumbrance that I find in reducing the Indians, that are in warre, and to set them at peace. too greatest incummerance tout t peace to the knowledge of our faith, is unnaturall and cruell entreath. which they that are in peace receive of the Spanish, being so deeply altered, and launced, that they have mothing in more hatred and borror, then the name of Christians, the which in all these Countries ther call in their Language, Yares, that is to fay, Deuils. For the afts which they committed here, are neither of Christians, nor of men which have the vie of reason: but of Deuils, Whereof it commethes 19 passe, that the Indies which dae see these behaviours to be generally so farre oftranged from all humanite, paye, som soe structure, as ned in the heads as in the members: they esteeme, that the Christians do bald these things for a Law, and that their God, and their King are the Authors thereof. And to endemour to per (wade them otherwise, were to endeasour in vaine, and to minister unto them the more ample matter, to deride and forme lesiss Christ and his Law. The Indians that are in war, feeing the intreatie wied toward the Indians that are in peace: would choose rather to die once for all, then to endure sundrie deaths, beeing under the command of the Spanish. I know this by experience, most vittorions

Cetar, Or.

He calleth the Indians in warre, those which faued themselves by flying into the Mountaines to from the fluighters of the mischieuous Spaniards. And hee calleth the Indians in peace, those to which after having loft an infinite of their people, by the Maffacres , have beene thralled into the Tyrannicall and horrible seruitude aforesaid, and whereof in the end they haue beene fined out, desolated, and slaine, as appeareth by that which hath beene faid by the Bishoppe, which notwithstanding speaketh but little, in comparison of that which

they have fuffered.

The Indians in that Countrie have accustomed to say, if when they are travelled and driven wo the Mountaines loden, they happen to fall downe, and to faint for feeblenesse, and for paine: for at that time they lay on voon them blowes with their feet and with their flaues, and they breake their teeth with the pummels of their Swords, to make them rife, and march on without taking of breath, with these words; Out open thee, what a Villaine are thou? they (Ifay) the Indians, for their parts are wont to fay, I can no more: kill me here right. I doe defire to die heere : and this they say with great fighes, and being scarce able to speake, for having ther heart drawne together, declaring a great anguish and dolour.

of the Province of Carthagene.

His Province of Carthagene, is situate under, and a fiftie leagues distant from the same of Saint Martha, towards the West, confining with the Projince of Cen, vnto the Gulph of Araba: which are a hundred leagues all along the Sea-side, and is a great Countrie within Land towards the South. Their Prouinces ince the yeere 1498. or ninetic nine, vis.) till now have beene euil entreated , martyred , massacred , desolated like vnto that of Saint Martha.

of the Coast of Pearles, and of Paria, and of the Ile of the Trinitie.

Rom the Coaft of Paris, vnto the Gulfe of Parisfacia, without forth, which are two hundred leagues: the Spanish have wrought great and strange destructions, rioting you that people, and taking aline as many as they could, to the end they might fell them for flaves: and oftentimes making them prifoners against the affortance and the promile of friendship made vn-to them. It cannot be well told, nor particularly exprest, the stundie kindes and greinous vexations, wrongs, hurts, and spoiles, which those people, indured at the Spaniards hands, from the yeere 1510. vntill this present. I will onely rehearse two or three acts, by the which it may be judged of the rest, innumerable and excessive, and worthy all torments and fire.

In the Ile of the Trinute, which is farre greater and more fertile then the Ile of Sicile, and ioyneth with the firme Land of the Coast of Paria, and where the people are the best disposed, and most enclined to vertue in their kind, of all the Indians, as they went, there a Captaine Rouer in the yere, 13 to accompanied with fixtie or feuentic other pette Theuses well appointed they published among the Indians by Proclamations, and other publishe Summons, that they should come and dwell and line with them in that Ile. The Indians received them as their owner bowels and babes : and as well the Lords as Subiects ferued them with exceeding readingle, 42 bringing them to eate from day to day, as much as might fuffice to feed, as many moe people. For this is the liberalitie of all these Indians of the new World, to bestow on the Spaniar droi all that they have in great abundance.

The Spanish build a great house of Timber in the which the Indians should dwell alrogether.

for the Spanish would have it so, that there should bee one only house for all, and no more to compaffe that, which they had alreadie premeditate to doe, and did it. When they laid the Thatch you the binding stages or sparres, and had alreadie couered to the height of two mens length, to the end that those that were within might not see those that were without, vnder colour to halten forward the worke, that it might bee the fooner dispatched, they fet a great number of people within, the Spaniards deciding themselves, the one part of them being beflowed without, compatting the house round about with their weapons, because of those that might get forth, the other part of them presse into the house : Thus laving hands on their Swords, they beganne to threaten the Indians naked as they were, to kill them if they did to firre, and then bound them. And those which fled they hewed them in pieces : Howbeit some of the Indians which fled, both of the hurt and not hurt, with others that had not come within the house, tooke their Bowes and Arrowes and assembled themselves in another house, about an hundred or two hundred persons : And as they kept the gate, the Spaniards fet fire on the house. and burned them aliue. After with their purchale, which might bee of an hundred or fourescore persons of them which they had bound they get them to the Ile of Saint Ishn, where they fold the one moitie, and thence to the Ile of Hispaniola: where they fold the other moitie. As Freprehended the Captaine for this notable Treason, at the same time, and at the samelle of Saint lobn, he made an answere: Sir, quiet your selfe for that matter. So have they commanded me to doe, and given me instruction which fent me : that if I could not take them by warre, 20 I should take them under countenance and colour of peace. And in truth the Captaine told mee that in all his life, he neuer had found Father nor Mother, but in this Ile of Trimite, in respect of the friendly cour elies the Indians had shewed him.

At another time, the Religious Friars of Saint Dominickes Order, beeing determined to goe preach, they received them as Angels comne from Heaven; and heard with great affection, attention, and willingn-fle fuch words as the Religious at that time were able to give them to vnderstand, more by lignes then otherwise, for they knew not the tongue. It came to passe that there arrived there another thip, after that the thip in which the Religious men came was departed thence, and the Spanish in this Veffell, keeping their Deuillish cultome, by suttletie without the knowlede of the Religious, carried away the Lord of the Countrie called Alfonfo: were it 30 that Friars had given him this name, or else others. For the Indians love and defire to beare the

name of the Christians, defiring incontinent that it may be given them even before they know any thing, that they may be baptized. They induced fraudulently this Don Alfon fo to come aboord their ship with the Ladie his wife, and other persons, making semblance to goe about to feath them. In the end there entred seventeene persons, together with the Lord and his Ladie: the Lord truiting that the Religious persons being entred into his Countrie, would keepe the Spaniards from doing any wrong : for otherwise hee would never have put himselfe in the hands of the Spanish. The Indians therefore thus being in the ship, the traiterous Spaniards hoised failes, and away they went to Hilbaniela with them, there felling them for flaues. All the Countrie feeing that their Lord and Ladie were carried away, they runne to the Religious men, purpo-40 fing to kill them. The poore men appealed the Indians in the best manner they could, saying that they would write to them at Hilp aniels by the first ship that went and would take such care and order in the matter, that their Souereigne should bee restored them againe with those that were in his company. God fent immediately a ship thither, and they wrote to the Spanish Relia gious men that were in the Ile of Hispaniola. They cry out, and call Heauen and Earth witnesse

had promifed the Iudians of the Countrie, that their Lord Don Alfonso, with others should come home with the rest within foure moneths, seeing that they came not neither in foure 50 nor eight made themselues readie to the death, and to give their life, which they had gaged before they came out of Spaine, if neede should bee, and in that fore the Indians tooke vengeance on them in killing them infilly, notwithstanding that they were innocent: Spanish Friera for because that they thought, that the Religious men had beene the occasion of this killed for o-

against them, both first, and fundrie times after: But the Iudges of the audience, would neuer

give them audience to doe them Iuftice, for because themselves had part in the bootie of the In. dians, which the Tyrants had to against all right and reason taken. The two Religious men, which

Treaton. Another time, by reason of the great Tyrannies and execrable acts of the curied ones, bearing the name of Christians, the Indians flue other two Religious men of Saint Dominickes Order, and one of Saint Francis. Whereof I can be a good witnesse for that I escaped at the time miraculously from the same death, of the which it should be a hard matter to intreat, and would be to amaze men, by reason of the grieuousnesse and horriblenesse of the case. Wherefore I will 60 not lay it abroad (for being too tesious) vitill his time, and at the day of judgement it shall bee more euident, when God thall take vengeance of the Theeueries so horrible and to abominable as are done by those which beare the name of Christians against the Indians.

Another time in those Provinces at the Cape of the Codera, (as they call it) there was a Towns, the Lord whereof was named Higneroto a name either proper to the person, or it may Qqqqqq 2

be common to the Lords of the place. This Lord was so bounteous, and his people so vertices and feruiceable, that as many Spaniards as came thither by fhip, they found there good entertainment, meate, lodging, all cheering, and refreshing. This faid Lord had also delivered many from death of those which were fled thither out of other Prouinces, where they had rioted and tyrannized, and come thither ficke, and halre dead for hunger, whom they refreshed, and afterward fent them away fate, to the Ile of Pearles, where there were Spansards, and might have flaine them if he had would, without that euer any should have knowne it. And shortly to fav the Spanish did call the Subjects of Higurrote, the House and Harbour of every body. A Catiffe Tyrant adulted himselfe to out-rage that people also, when as they thought themselves fure enough : and getting him to a ship, he had there innited a great number of people to come a la boord her as they were accultomed to doe, and to trust the Spanards. A great number of people being entred into her, men, women, and children, hee hoyled failes, and went to the Ile of Saint Jahn, where he fold them all for flaues. I came at the fame instant to the Ile of Saine John, and I faw the Tyrant, and understood what he had done. He had destroyed all that Townthin; whereby he did great harme to all other his fellow Tyrants, wonted to rob, and roue all along those Coasts, intomuch as they had in abomination this act to hideous, being bereft thereby of their Harbour, and house of retire, as ordinary and familiar viito them as it had beene their owne home and house.

Two Millions of foliacin-

They have fingled out at times from all this Coaft, the which was very well peopled, vnto the Iles of Saint John and Hispaniola, aboue two Millions of foules, feifed vpon by their purchases in 20 threning and robbing : which also every one of them they have flaine not long after, by thrufling them into the Minerals and other tormoiles, bendes the great numbers there were therealreadie before time, as we have abouefaid. It is a tried case, that they never convey away their shippings of Indians so robbed and pur-

chafed as I have laid, but that they cast the third part into the Sea, besides those which they slay,

fage at Sea,

when they will fort them to themselves for their chaffer. The cause is, that when as they will by all meanes attaine to the end which they have proposed to themselves: they have need of a great number of people, for to draw a great deale of money, according to the quantitie of the flanes; and they prepare but a very small deale of sustenance and water, to serue but a few perfons ; to the end that those Tyrants whom they cal Purneyours of the Prips should not spend them 30 much. And there is but even fearfe enough, faue to ferue the Spaniards turne which goe a roung and robbing : and there is alwaies wanting for the poore Indians. Wherefore also they die for hunger and thirst : and then there is none other remedie but to east them ouer the boord into the Sea. And verily a man among them did tell me, that from the Ile of Lucasos, where had been wrought great flaughters in this manner, vnto the I fle of Hilpaniola, which are fixtie or feuentie leagues there trended a ship all alongst, without that it had enther Compasse or Mariners Card being guided onely by the tracke of dead Indians carkasses floating upon the Seas, of them which had bin cast in. And after they be landed in the Ile, whither they bring them to make sale of them it is to make a heart to yearne of whofosuer, have he never fo lit le compation to behold them naked and familhed, fall downe and faint for hunger and thirst, women, and aged men, and 40

Manner of tharing.

> Afterwards they soone after separate them, as it were Lambes, the fathers from the children, and the wives from the husbands, in making troupes of them of ten or twentie persons, and so cast lots on them, to the end, thole Purneyours should take their share, which are those who doe rigge and furnish two or three ships for the Nauie of those Tyrants, seasing upon all they come by, and pulling the poore men out of their owne housen. And looke when the lot falleth upon the flocke where there were among them any old or ficke person, the Tyrant to whom the same the north white the Denil take the old Graybeard, why does thou give him mee, to the end I should goe burie him? And this sicke Rasad, what have I to doe that hee should fall out to my let: 10 (0)

the end, I (bould be his Physician to cure him? The tyrannie which the Spanish exercise ouer the Indians, to fish for Pearles, is one of the cruelleft things that is in the World. There is no hell in this life, nor other desperate state in this Pearle-fifting. World, that may be compared vnto it: although that the Trade of Gold finding, be in his kind, very grieuous, and very milerable. They let them into the Sea, three, foure, or fine fathome forth downeright under water, from the morning vatill Sun-fet, where they are continually flitting without flint, to plucke Oyfters, in the which are engendred the Pearles. They lurge vp aboue the waters, with a Net full of Oysters to take breath : where standeth readic a Specific Tormentor, in a little Cocke Boate, or a Brigantine, and if the poore wretches flay neuer johttle while to rest themselves t they all to be buffer them with their fists, and draw them by the haire into the water to returne to their fifthing. Their fullenance is fifth, and the fame very fifther the fame very fifth for the fame very fifth for the fame very fifth for the fame very fifther and the fame very fifther an which containeth the Pearles, and the bread Cacabi, or some Maiz, which are the kinds of bread of that Countrie : the one of very slender nourishment, the other is not easie to bee made into bread, of the which also, they neuer gue them their belly full. The beds that they lodge them in a nights, is to fet them by the heeles, their bodies recovling on the cold ground, in a paire of

flockes for feare of running away. Sometimes they are drowned in the Sea, and at their fifthing and travell picking of Pearles, and never rife vp againe about the water; because the * Bunches * Sharker and whirlepooles doe kill them and eate them.

It is impossible, that men should be able to live any long season wnder the water without taking breath, the continual cold piercing them, and to they die commonly, parbraking of bloud at the mouth, and of the bloudy fluxe, caufed by the cold. Their haires, which by nature are cole blacke, alter and become after a branded ruffet, like to the haires of the Sea-welues. The Salta peter breaketh out of their fhoulders, in fuch fort, that they feeme to bee a kinde of monfters in

the thane of men, or elfe fome other kinde of men. They dispatched in ridding about this in-10 fapportable travell, or rather to speake rightly, this devilish torment, all the Lucatan Indiani which were in the les, having favoured this gaines, and every Indian was worth white them a fittie, or an hundred Cattillans. They made an open Marc of them, notwithflanding it were inhibited them, by the Magistrate otherwise vimercifull : for the Lucagens were good swime more. They also, about their things have flaine a number of the people of other Provinces.

of the River Yuia pari.

Here runneth through the Province of Paris, a River named Tais Pari, more then two hundred leagues within land from the head. Thereentred the fame River, an volucky tyrant, & 20 orest many leagues voward, in the years 1 529, with four hundred men, or more a which there wrought great flaughters, burning alive, and putting to the edge of the tword, an infinite fort of Indians, which were in their lands and houses, doing hurt to no creature, and therefore secures and miftrulting nothing.

In the end hee died an evill death, and his Nauie was disparaged : albeit that other tyrants there were which succeeded him in his mischieuousnesses and tyrannies; and wer at this day this ther they goe, destroying, and flaying, and plunging into Hell the toules for whom the Sonne of God fhed his bloud.

Of the Realme of Venefuela.

He yeere 1 c26, the King our Soueraigne, being induced by finisher informations and per-I (wations damageable to the State, as the Spaniards have alwaies pained themfelues to conseale from his Maiette the damages and di honours which Gol and the foules of men, and his State doeth receive in the Indies: granted and committed a great R. alme, greater then all Spaine (Venefuela, with the government and entire jurifdiction) vnto certaine Dutch Merchants, with certaine capitulations and conventions accorded betweene them.

Thefefame entring the Countrey with three hundred men : they found the people very amiable, and meeke as Lambes, as they are all in those parts of the Indies, vntill the Spanish doe outrage them. These set upon them without comparison a great deale more cruelly, hen any of the other tyrants, of the which wee have spoken before: shewing themselves more vanaturall and fierce, then raging Tigres, or Wolues, or ramping Lions. There have layd defolate and deffroyed more then foure hundred leagues of most terrile land, and therein of Prounces exceeding and wonderfull, faire Valleyes to the breadth of forty leagues, and Bournes very great, full of people and of Gold. They hau: flaine, and wholly discomfitted great and divers Nations, fo farre forth as to abolish the Languages wonted to bee spoken, not leaving alive that could skill of them: valeffe some one or other, who had hid themselves in the caues and bowels of the earth, ficeing the dint of the (word, fo raging and plaguing. They have flaine destroyed, and tent to Hell by divers and strange manners of cruelties and vagodlinesies, more (I suppose) then foure or fine millions of foules : and yet at this prefent they ceaffe not to doe the tame by in- Foure or fine 50 finite outrages, spoyles and slaughters, which they have committed, and doe commit daily vnto in Venetuela.

Tuey tooke the Lord Soueraigne of all the Province, without all cause, onely to bereaue him of his Gold, giving him also the torture: which Lord vinbound himselfe, and eleaped from them into the Mountaines, wherefore also the Subjects rose, and were in a mutinie, hiding themselves vpon the Mountaines, amongst the hedges and bushes. The Spaniards make after to chafe them, and having found them, commit cruell maffacres, and as many as they take aline, they fell them in port fale for flaues. In Jiuers Prouinces, yea in all where they became before that they tooke the Soueraigne Lord, the Indians went to receive them with longs, and dances, and with prefents of Gold in great quantitie. The payment made them, was, to bee put to the edge of the o fword, and hewen in pieces. One time, as they went to receiue the Spanifo in the fashion aboutfaid : the Dutch Captaine tyrant caufed to bee put in a thatched house a great number of people, and hakled in pieces. And being on high, neere the top of the house, certaine beames, which divers had got voon, avoyding the bloudy hands and swords of those people (O mercileffe beaits) the deutlish man, fent to put to fire, whereby as many as there were, were burned

Qqqqqq 3

aline. By this meanes the Countrie remayned very defart, the people fleeing into the Mountaines, where they hoped to faue themfelues.

They came into another great Province, in the confines of the Province and Realme of Saint Martha, where they found the Indians peaceable in their Burroughs, and in their houses, doing their bulinelle: they continued a long time with them, eating their ftore, and the Indians ferued them, as if they had to receive of them their life and fafeguard, supporting their continual oppreffions, and vivall outragiousnelles, which are intolerable : besides that one Spanis glutton, eateth more in one day, then would suffice an whole houshold of more then ten Indians. They gave them at that time, a great quantitie of Gold, of their owne good-will, over and befides, other feruices innumerable, which they did voto them. At the end as thefe tyrants would in

depart the place, they aduised to pay them for their lodging, in this manner.

The Almaine tyrant Gouernour, commanded to take fuch Indians as they could, with their wives and children, and that they should shut them vp within an inclosure, lettingthem know. that who so would come forth, and be let goe free, that he should redeeme himselte at the pleafure of the vniuft Gouernour: in giving fo much Gold for himfelfe, fo much for his wife, and to much for every poll of his children. And yet to prefle them the more, he commanded to give them nothing to eate, witill fuch time as they had performed the quantitie of Gold inflicted them for their ranfome. Many fent to their houses for Gold, and bought out themselves as they were able, and those same were deliuered, and went abroad about their businesse to get their liuing. The tyrant fent certaine Spanish thieues and robbers, to goe take them against he second 20 time, after they had beene redeemed. They are carried to the percloie, and there wrung with hunger and thirth, to the end, that they should yet once againe pay for their freedome, And there were many among it them, which were taken and rantomed two or three fundry times. Others which had not to give, for because they had all they had, hee let them within the toyle die for hunger. And in this manner hath beene destroyed a Province very rich of people and gold, the which hath a Vale or Bourne of fourtie leagues, where hath beene brent a Burrough of the receit of a thouland housholds.

This Tyrant resolued with himselfe to pierce farther into the Countrey, with a great defire to discouer on that side, that Hill of Pers. By occasion of which accursed Voyage both hee and others carried forth with them, Indians infinite, loden with two or three quintals 30 weight, and being enchained. If any were weake and weary, fainting for hunger, or travelling, they cut incontinent his head off euen with the collar of the chaine that yoked them: because they should not need to vnhamper the others that went with the same collars about their neckes, and fo tumbled the head on the one fide, and the body on the other. And the lode of him that had so fayled was distributed and bestowed upon others. To tell of the Prounces, which hee hath layed defart, and the Townes and places which hee hath brent, for all the houles are thatched, and to number the Nations which hee hath slaine, and the cruelties, and murders particular, which hee had committed by the way, it would bee a thing fearfe credible: howbeit very true and wonderfull. In this same very course and steppes marched sithence the other tyrants, who came from the faid Venefuela, and others of the Province of Saint Marha, 40 with the felfe fame holy intention to discouer the same sacred golden Palace of Perw: and found the whole Countrie in length more then two hundred leagues fo burned, dispeopled, and spoyled, having beene before most notably peopled, and most fertile, as hath beene faid, that themfelues as very tyrants and fauage beafts as they were, wondered and itood aftonished to see the trackes of the destructions so lamentable, wheresoeuer he had passed.

All these things have beene given in eurolence with the depositions of many witnesses the Attorney of the Councell of the Indies, and the euidences are kept amongst the Records of the fame Councell: and yet have they never burnt alive, any of those execrable tyrants. Those Prouinces of Venesucla with the others which they have laid waste, and dispeopled more then fourchundred leagues forthright, as hath beene faid, is a region the most blissefull, and the richest 30 of Gold, and was the best peopled of any in the world : in such fort, that they have diffurned from the Kings Coffers, and occasioned the lose in this Realme of about two millions of sent, within feuenteene yeeres fithence by past, that these enemies of God and the King have begunne

to deltroy it : neither is there any hope that ever those losses will be repaired.

These seuenteene yeeres they have lent by Sea a great number of ships loden and stuffed with Indians, to make file of them as flaues at Saint Marsha, at the lles of Hiff aniola, and of Iamanes, and at Saint lebus Ile, moe then one million: and doe fend daily, as now this yeere 1542, the Court of the Audience Royall not withfranding established, for, and at Hiff aniela, right well iesing all this, and diffimuling to fee it, yea, fauouring and fupporting all the matter: as likewife they have had their eyes blinded at all the other tyrannies and ranlackings infinite, which have 60 beene done in all this coaft of the Firme land which are about four hundred leagues, the which hausbeene and now are under their ium diction, like unto Venefuela, and Saint Marsha: all which the faid Court might very well have empeached and remedied.

CHAP. 4. Bart. de las Casas his Booke of Cruelties done in the Indies.

Of the Proninces of the firme land, or quarter that is called Florida.

TNto these Provinces went three tyrants at three divers times fince the yeere 1510. or 1511. Lift there. Atthere to put in vre the acts which others, and two of them from among themselves have com- ter firm Lucas I there to put in vie the acts which others, and two of them to dish degrees, in no respect conmitted in other perions, higher then their ments in the Common-wealth could conceine, with Pampbilo de the bloud and destruction or their neighbours: and they are dead all three of an euill death, and Normace, with their houses likewile have beene destroyed with them, the which they had builded in times past. 400. And their nomes income mankind, as I can be a fufficient witheffe of all three, and their memory is hairthly Ferding with the bloud of mankind, as I can be a fufficient witheffe of all three, and their memory is nasido de soio now abolished from of the face of the earth, as if they had neuer beene in this world.

The fourth tyrant, that came last in the yeere 1538, cunningly adulted, and being fully fur- fome fay, and nished; it is three yeeressince there is no tidings concerning him. Sure he is one of the notori- they which is, oufest and beit experimented amongst them that have done the most hurts, mischieues, and de-leift, 600 enfructions in my Realmes with their conforts: wherefore I beleeue that God hath given him tied Florida, like end vnto the others.

of the River of La Plata, that is to fay, Of Silver.

20 C Ithence the yeere, one thousand five hundred, and two or three and twenty : certaine Cap-Draines made three or foure Voyages vp the River of Plata, where there are great Provinces Secheforein and Realmes, and Nations well ordered and endued with understanding. In generall wee vn- schmidtle derftood, that they have made there great butcheries and inuafions: but like as this Countey is farre discoasted from the Indies most samous, so we are not able, to quote the notablest points in particular.

Of the mighty Realmes, and large Provinces of Peru.

TN the years 1521, went another great tyrant with certaineother conforts, to the Realmes of 1 Pers, where entring with the fame title and intention, and with the fame proceedings as all the rest before gone, for a smuch as he was one of them, which had of long time been exercised in all kindes of cruelties and murders, which had beene wrought in the firme land, fithence the yeere 1510. hee tooke encouragement to accrue in cruelties, murders, and robberies: being 2 man without loyaltie and truth, laying wife Cities and Countries, bringing them to nought, and etterly undoing them by flaying the Inhabitairts, and being the cause of all the euils, which enfued in that Countrie.

He flue and laid waste at his first arrurall with a mischiese certaine boroughes, from whom he pillaged a great quantitie of Gold. In an Iland neere to the fame Prouinces, named Pagna, well peopled and plealant, the Lord thereof with his people received them as it had beene Angels 40 from heaven: and ix moneths after, when as the Spanish had eaten vp all their provision: They discouered also vnto them the corne which they kept vnder ground, for themselues, their wives. and their children, against a dry time and barren : making them offer of all, with trees plentitult to spend and eate at their pleasure. The recompence in the end which they made them, was to put to the edge of the Sword and Lance, a great quantitie of those people. And those whom they could take aliue, they made flives : with other cruelties great and notable which they committed, dispeopled as it were all that Ile.

From thence they make to the Prouince of Tumbala, which is in the firme land, where they flay and destroy as many as they could come by. And because all the people were fled as affrighted by their horrible acts, they faid that they made an infurrection, and rebelled against the King of Spaine. This tyrant had this policie, and kept this order of proceeding, that vnto all to those whom he tooke, or voto others which presented him with Gold and Silver, or other things which they had : he commanded them to bring more, vntill fuch time as he perceived that either they had no more, or that they brought him no more. And then he would fay, that he accepted them for the vaffals and lieges of the King of Spaine, and made much of them : and would cause it to be proclaimed at found of two Trumpets, that from thenceforth they would take them no more, and that they would doe them no manner harme at all: fetting it downe for good ande

lawfull, all whatioeuer he had robbed from them.

A few dayes after the King and Emperour of those Realmes, named Atabaliba, came accompanied with a number of naked people, bearing their ridiculous armour, not knowing neither 63 how Swords did carue, nor Speares did pierce, nor Horles did run, nor who or what were the Spaniards. Hee commeth to the place where they were, laying: Where are these Spaniards? Let them come, I will not stirre a foote, till they satisfie me for my Subjects whom they have flaine, and my boroughs which they have dispeopled, and for my wealth, which they have bereaued me.

Iuan Ponce de men were all

vou baue betore. Ot Soto An. 1542, when

The Spaniards fet against him, and flew an infinite fort of his people: they tooke him also in person, who came carried in a Litter borne vpon mens shoulders. They treate with him, to the Fifteene Milli- end that he should ransome himselfe. The King offereth to performe foure millions of Castillane. and performeth fifteene, they promife to release him: notwithstanding in the end, keeping nor Atsballpas ran- faith nor truth (as they neuer kept any in the Indies, vnto the Indians) they laid to his charge altogether vntruely, that by his commandement the people affembled. The King answered, that in all the Countrie there moved not a leafe of a tree, without his good will : that if there affem. bled any people, they were to beleeue that it was by his commandement, and as touching himfelfethat he was prisoner, and they might slay him.

All this notwithstanding, they condemned him to be burnt aline : but at the request of some 10 certaine, the Captaine caused him to be strangled; and being strangled, hee was burned. This King yn lerstanding his sentence, faid : Wherefore will you burne we? What trespaffe baue I done pee? Did not you promise me to set me at libertie, if I gave you the Gold? And have I not perfor. med more then I promised? Seeing you needes will have it so, send me to your King of Spaine: fpeaking other things, to the great confusion and detestation of the great wrongfulnesse that the Spaniards vied, whom in the end they burned. Here let be confidered the right and title of this warfare, the imprisonment of this Prince, the sentence, and the execution of his death, and the conficience, whereby they possesse great treasures, as indeede they have robbed in those Realmes from this King and other feuerall Lords infinite.

As touching the innumerable cruelcies, and notable, for the mischiefes and enormities withall 20 committed in the rooting out of those peoples by them, who call themselves Christians: I will here rehearfe some certaine, the which a Frier of Saint Francis order saw at the beginning, and the same certified voder his name and signe: sending them into all those quarters, and amongst others into this Realme of Castile, whereof Iretaine a Copie in my keeping, in the which it is

Teftimony of Frier Marke touching Pi-2079 and the

" A people of

those parte,

mer Ilands.

I Frier Marke, of the order of Saint Francis, commissivic oner the other Friers of the same Order in the Proninces of Peru, and who was one of the first religious men, which entred into the faid Proninces with the Spaniards : doe fay, bearing true testimonie of certaine things, the which I have seene with mine Spaniorasmuch eyes in that Countrie, namely, concerning the entreatie and conquests made oner the natural inhabitants first entred Per of the Countrie: first of all I am an ere witneffe, and have certaine knowledge, that those Indians of Peru, W are a people the most kinde bearted that hath beene feene among all the Indians, being courteous in conmer fation, and friendly unto the Spaniards. And I fam them gine to the Spanish in abundance, Gold. Silver, precious stones, and all that was asked them, and that they had, doing them all kinde of services lawfull. And the Indians nener yeelded forth to warre, but kept them in peace fo long time, as they game them not occasion, by their enill entreating of them and their cruelties, but contrarinife receined them with all amitie and honour in their boroughes, in giving them to ease, and as many flaves manual and womenkinde, as they demanded for their fernice.

Item, I am witnesse, that wethout that the Indians gaue occasion : the Spanish as foone as they were entred the land, after that the great Cacique Atabalipa, had given to the Spanish more then two miltions of Gold, and had put into their power the whole Countrie without relistance, incomment they bur 40 ned the faid Atabalipa, which was Lord of the whole Countrie. And after him they burnt his captains generall Cochilimaca, who had come to the Governour in peace with other Lords. In the like manner also a few dayes after they burned a great Lord named Chamba, of the Promince of Quito, without any fault at all, and without having given the least occasion that might be. In like manner they burned oninstin Schappera Lord of the Canaries". Also they burnt the feete of Aluis a great Lord among fi all those which were in Quito, and caused him to endure sundry other torments, to make him tell where was the Gold of Acabalina : of the which treasure, as it appeared, be knew nothing.

good warriors, Alfo they burnt in Quito Colopanga, who was Gouernour of all the Provinces of Quito, which upon not of the Can the request to him first made by Sebastian of Bernalcalar, Captaine under the Conernour, was come to them in peace: and onely because he gave them not Gold so much as he demanded of him, they harned him 10 with very many other Caciques and principall Lords. And for ought that I can under fland, the intent

of the Spaniards was, that there hould not be left aline one Lord in the whole Countrey.

Item, I certifie, that the Spaniards caused to assemble a great number of Indians, and locked them up in three great boufes, as many as could be pored in, and festing to fire, they burned them all, mubout that they had done the least thing that might be, or had given to the Spanish the least occasion theres · what soener. And it came to passe, that a Priest, who is named Ocanna, drew a yone Boy out of the fire, in the which he burned, which perceising, another Spaniard tooke from out of his hands the Boy and flung him into the middest of the flames, where he was refolked into ashes together with others. The which Spaniard returning the same day to the Campe, fell downe dead suddenly, and mine admict was, be

Item, I affirme, to have feene with mine owne eyes, that the Spanish have cut the bands, the nofer, and the eares of the Indians, and of their women, without any other cause or surpose, saue onely that so is came into their fantasie, and that in so many places and quarters, that it foodld be too tedious to the bearfe. And I have feene, that the Spanish have made their Mastives runne upon the Indians to rest them in pieces. And moreover, I have seene by them burnt so many houses, and whole boroughes, or townhips, that I am not able to tell the number. Also it is true, that they violently plucked the little infants fron the Mothers dagges, and taking them by the armes, did throw them from them as farre as they could: Together with other enormities and cruelties will bout any canfe which gave me aftonifiment to behold them, and would be to long to rehearfe them.

Item, I saw when they sent for the Caciques and other principall Indians, to come see them in place. and assurance to them made, promising them safe conduit : and incontinent as they were arrived, they burned them. They burned two whiles I was present the one in Andon, and the other in Tumbala; and I could never prevaile with them to have them delivered from burning, preached I unto them never fo much. And in God and my conscience, for ought that ever I could perceine, the Indians of Peru, never lift themselves up, nor never rebelled for any other cause, but for the entil entreating of the other side. as is manifelt onto enery one, and for infl canfe : the Spaniarus destroying them tyrannoully against all reafon and suffice, with all their Countrie, working upon them fo many outrages, that they were determined to die, rather then to fuffer much another time. Item, Ifar, that by the report of the Indians themfelmes, there is yet more Gold bidden then is come to light, the which because of the wninstices and cruelties of the Spaniards, they would not discouer, neither ener will discouer, so long as they stall be so enill entreated, but will choose rather to dye with their fellowes. Wherein God our Lord bath beene bighly trespassed against, and the Kings Maiestie enill served, baning beene defrauded in that, that his bigbnesse hath I it (uch a Countrie, as hath beene able to yeelde suftenance to all Caltile : for the recourse of which Coun-

20 tre, it willbe a matter of great difficultie, dispence, and charges. All these hitherto are the formall words of the faid religious person : the which are also rati- Bishop of Mexfied by the Bishop of Mexico, which witnesseth that the reverend Father hath to his know- itos tift mony. ledgeaffirmedall the about faid. It is here to be confidered, that the good Father faith, that he faw those things. For tha , that he hath beene fittie or an hundred leagues vp into the Countrie. for the space of nine or ten yeares, and at the very beginning, when there were not as yet but very few of the Spaniards : but at the ringing of the Gold, there were quickely gathered and Booked thicher foure or hue thousand, which shed themselves forth over many great Realmes and Prounces, more then five hundred or fixe hundred leagues, the which Countrey hath beene throughly destroyed, they executing still the selfe same practites, and others more bar-

an barous and cruell. Of a veritie, from that day vinto this prefent, there hath beene destroyed and brought to desolation moe foules then he hath counted ; and they have with leffe reverence of God or the King. and with leffe pittie then before, abolished a great part of the linage of mankinde. They have flaine voto this day in these same Realmes (and yet daily they doe flay them) moe then foure FoureMillions Millions of foules. Certaine dayes pailed, they pricked in shooting with darts of reedes to death flaine in Pers, a mightie Queene, wife of Eling, who is yet King of that Realme, whom the Spaniards by laying &c. hands upon him compelled to rebell, and in rebellion he perfifteth. They tooke the Queene his wife, and to as hath beene faid, flue her against all reason and justice, being great with childe as the was, as it was faid onely to vexe her husband withall.

of the new Realme of Granado.

VII lin the yeare 1539; there tooke their flight together fundry tyrants, flocking from Venesuela, from Saint Mariba, and from Caribagene, to search for the Perous: and there were also others which came downe from Pers it felfe to affay , to make a glade farther into the Countrie: And they found from beyond Saint Marthas and Carthagene three hundred leagues vo into the Countrie, fertile lands, and admirable Prounces, full of infinite people, kinde hearted like the rest, and very rich, as well of Gold as of precious stones, which they call Emeralds. Vnto the which Provinces they gave the name of New Granado: for because that the tyrant which came first into this Countrey, was a Granadan, borne in our Countrey. A Gouer-50 nour, for as much as he which robbed and flew in the new Realme of Granado, would not ad-

mit him for confort with him to rob and flay as did he : he procured an enquirie, and thereby euidence came in against him with fundry witnesses vpon the fact of his slaughters, diforders, and murders which he had done, and doth as yet vnto this day, the processe of which enquirie, together with the euidences was read, and is kept in the Records of the Countell of the Indies.

The witnesses doe depose in the same enquirie, that the said whole Realme was in peace, the Indians teruing the Spaniards, giving them to eate of their labour, and labouring continually, and manuring the ground, and bringing them much Gold and precious flones, fuch as are Emeralds, 60 and all that which they could or had: the Townes, and the Lordings, and the people being diitributed among it the Spaniards every one his share : which is all that they studie for, for that, that it is their meane way to attaine to their last end and scope, to wit, Gold. And all being subdued to their tyrannie and accultomed bondage, the tyrant the principall Captaine which commanded ouer that Countrey, tooke the Lord and King of the Countrey, and detained him pri-

1593

foner fix or feuen moneths, exacting of him Gold and Emeralds without cause or reason at all. The faid King, who was named Bogata, for feare which they put him in , faid that hee would give them an house full of Gold : noping that he should escape out of the hands of him which tormented him. And he fent Indians which should bring him Gold, and by times one after and ther, they brought in a great quantitie of Gold and precious stones. But because the King did not give an whole house rull of Gold, the Spaniards bid kill him; fithence that he did not accom-

Barr, de las Casas bis Booke of cruelties done in the Indies. LIB.VIII

plish that which he had promised.

King Buzata tentenced . executed.

The tyrant commanding that this King should be arraigned before himselfe: They sommon and accuse in this order the greatest King of all that Countrie, and the tyrant giueth sentence. condemning him to be racked and tormented, if he doe not furnish forth the house full of Gold. In They give him the torture and the strapado with cords; they fling burning fewet vpon his naked belly ; they lay on bolts vpon his feete, which were faftened to one stake, and gird his necke fait vnto another stake, two men holding both his hands, and so they set fire vnto his feete : and the tyrant comming vp and downe now and then, willeth him to have his death giuen him by little and little, if he made not ready the Gold. Thus they dispatched and did to death that Noble Lord in those torments, during the execution whereof, God manifelted by a figne, that those cruelties displeased him, in confurning with fire all the towne where they were committed. All the Spaniards to the end to follow their good Captaine, and having none other thing to doe, but to backle in peeces those poore innocents doe the like, tormenting with divers and fauge torments every Indian, both Cacique or Lord of every people or peoples, with all their 10 flockes, that were committed to their charges: those faid Lords with all their subiects ferning them, and giving them Gold and Emeraulds as many as they could, and as much as they had: Tormenting them onely to the end they should give them more Gold, and rich Minerals: thus they broyled and dispatched all the Lords of that Countrie.

For the great seare of the notorious cruelties that one of the pettie tyrants did vnto the Indians, there transported immielfe voto the Mountaines, in flying so great crueltie, a great Lord name! Daytama, with many of his people. For this they hold for their last remedy and refuge, if it might have prevailed them ought; and this the Spaniards call infurtection and rebellion. Which the Captaine head tyrant having knowledge of, he fendeth supplie of Souldiers vnto the faid cruell man (for whole cruelties fake, the Indians that were peaceable, and had endured to great tyrannies and mischiefes, were now gone into the Mountaines) to the end he should purfire them. Who, because it sufficeth not to hide them in the entrals of the earth, finding there a great multitude of people, flue and dispatched them, aboue fine hundred soules, what men, what women, for they received none to mercy. Also the witnesses depose, that the said Lord Datama, before that the Spaniards put him to death, came to the cruell man, and brought him foure or five thousand Castillans, the which notwithstanding he was murdered as as

Another time many Indians being come to serue the Spaniards, and seruing them with humilitie and simplicitie, as they are accultomed to doe, reputing them selves affored : behold the Captaine of the towne where they ferued, who commeth by night, commanding that those Indian 40 should be put to the edge of the sword, when they had supped, and whiles that they were a fleepe, taking their rest after the toyle which they fustained the day time. And this he did, for that it feemed him necessary to doe this massacre, to the end to engrave an awe of himself in the hearts of all the peoples of that Countrie.

Another time the Captaine commanded to take an oathe of the Spaniards, to wit, how many every one had in his feruice of the Caciques, and principall Lords, and Indians of the meaner fort; that incontinent they should be brought to the most open place of the Citie, where he commanded that they should be beheaded : thus were there at that time put to death foure or five hun-

dred foules. Moreoverthese witnesses depose concerning another of the pettie tyrants, that he had exer- 10 cifed great cruelties in flaying, and chopping off the hands and nofes of many persons, aswell men as women, and deftroying very much people. Another time the Captaine sent the selfe same cruell man with certaine Spaniards into the Province of Bogata, to be informed by the inhabitants what Lord it was, that was successour vnto the chiefe Lord , whom hee had made to die that cruell death in those torments spoken of before : Who running along the Countrie throughout many places, tooke as many Indians as he could come by, And for that he could not learne of them, what he was that succeeded that Lord, he mangled off some hands, he bid cast others, men and women vnto hungrie Mastines, who rend them in peeces. And in this manner have beene delitroyed very many Indians, and Indeffes. One time, at the fourth watch of the night, he went to ouerrun Caciques or Gouernours of the land, with many of the Indians, which were in peace, 60 and held themselves affured (for he had given them his faith, and allurance that they should receiue no harme nor damage) vpon credit whereof, they were come forth of their holes in the Mountaines, where they had beene hil, to people Plaine, in the which food their Citie: thus being common without suspition, and trusting the affurance made, he tooke a great number, as

well men as women, and commanded to hold out their hands ftretched against the ground, and himfelfe with a woodknife cut off their hands, telling them that he did on them this chastisement, for that they would not confesse where their new Lord was, which had succeeded in the charge of government of the Realme.

Another time for that the *Indians* gaue him not a coffer full of Gold, that this cruell Captaine required them: he fent men to warre vpon them: who cut off the hands and nofes of men and women without number. They cast others before their dogs being hunger bitten, and wied to

the feare of feeding on flesh, the which dispatched and denoured;

Another time the Indians of that Realme perceiving that the Spaniards had burnt three or 19 foure of their principall Lords, they fled for feare vp into a Mountaine, from whence they might defend themfelues against their enemies so estranged from all humanitie. There were of them by the restimonie of the witnesses foure or fine Indians. This about faid Captaine sent a great and notable tyrant, which exceeded farre most of those to whom he had given the charge to ransacke and waste, together with a certaine number of Spaniards, to the end that they should chastile the Indian rebels : as they would feeme to make them for that they were fled from a peftilence and flaughter fo intollerable. Well, so it is that the Spanife by force prevailed to get up to the Mountaine: for the Indians were naked without weapons. And the Spaniards cryed peace vnto the Indians; aftering them, that they would doe them no harme : and that they of their parts should not warre any longer. Streight way as the Indians frinted from their owne defence, the vile cru-20 ell man fent to the Spaniards to take the forts of the Mountaine, and when they should get them to enclose within them the Indians. They fet then like vnto Tygers and Lyons, voon these

lambes so meeke, and put them to the edge of the sword, so long that they were faine to breath and rest themselves. And after having rested a certaine season, the Captaine commanded that they fhould kill and cast downe from the Mountaine, which was very high, the refidue that were aliue; which was done. And these witnesses fay, that they saw as it were a could of Indians call downe from the Mountaine, to the number by estimation of seven hundred men toge-

ther, where they fell battered to peeces.

And to atchieue all his great crueltie, they fearched all the Indians that were hid among ft the bulbes : and he commanded to cut off their heads, at blockes ends; and fo they flue them and cafe 30 them downe the Mountaines: yet could not be content himselfe with those faid things so cruell, but that he woold make himfelfea little better knowne, augmenting his horrible finnes, when as he commanded that all the Indians men and women, which some private persons had taken aline (for every one in those massacres is accustomed to cull out some one or other mankinde and womankinde, to the end to become his feruants) should be put into a strawen house, saving and referring those, which seemed necessary to be employed in their service, and that there should be put to fire thus were there burned fortie or fiftie. Hee caused the reft to be flong to the carrion dogs, which rend them in peeces, and denoured them.

Another time the selfe same tyrant went to a Citie called Cotta, and tooke there a number of Indians, and caused to be difmembred by his dogges, a fifteene or twenty Lords of the principall. 40 and cut the hands of a great multitude of men and women : which faid hands he hanged one by another on a pole, to the end the other Indians might fee that which hee had done vnto them. There were to hanged one by another threescore and ten paire of hands. Hee flifed off besides

from many women and children their notes.

No creature living and reasonable, is able to decipher the mischieses and creel dealing of this fellow, enemy of God. For they are without number, neuer otherwise heard of, nor seene: those, I meane, which hee hath done in the land of Guarimala, and all about where he hath

The witnesses say for a surcharge, that the cruell dealings and slaughters which have beene committed, and are yet in the faid Realme of new Grenado, by the Captaines themselues in gerof fon, and by their confents given vnto all the other tyrants, wasters, and weeders of the nature of man, which were in his company, and the which hath laid all the Countrie wilde and waste, are fuch and fo excessive, that it his Maiestie doe not take some order therein in some time (albeit that the llaughter and discomfirure of the Indians is done onely to bereaue: nem of their Gold, the which they have none of, for they have furrendred all that which they had) they will in a short time make an end of them so in such fort, that there will be no mor Indians to inhabit the land, but that it will remaine in a wildernesse without being manured.

There are other great Prouinces, which bound vpon the faid Realme a new Grenado, which they call Popayin and Cali, and three or foure others, which contains more then fine hundred leagues of ground, which they have destroyed and desolated in the same manner, as they have 60 done others, robbing and flaying with torments, and the enormities afore spoken of. For the land is very fertile, and those that come from thence now daily, doe report, that it is a ruefull thing to lee so many goodly Townes burned and laid desolat, as they might behold passing vp and downe that way : fo as there, where there was work to be in one towne a thousand or two thousand households, they have not found fiftie, and the rest veterly ransacked and dispeopled.

And in some quarters they have found two or three hundred leagues of Land dispeopled and burned, and great Cities deliroyed. And finally, by that , that fithence into the Realmes of Peru. of the Province fide of Quito, are entred farre into the Countrey fore and fell tyrants, as farre as to the faid Realme of Grenado, and of Popayan, and of Cali, by the coast of Caribagene, and Arabe, and other accurled tyrants of Carthagene have gone to affault Quite, and moreover, afterwarde of the Rivers fide of Saint lobn, which is on the South fide, all the which have met to joyne hands together in this exploit: they have rooted out and dispeopled about fixe hundred leagues of land, with the loffe of an infinite of foules , doing ftill the felfe fame to the poore wretches that remaine behinde, howfoeuer innocent they appeare to be.

After the ends of the flaughters and maffacres of the warres, they bring the people into the horrible bondage about laid, and give them to the commandement of Deuils, to one an hundred Indians, to another three hundred. The commander Deuill commandeth, that there come before him an hundred Indians, which incontinent prefent themselves like Lambes. He causing forey or fifty amongst them to have their heads cut off: fayth vnto the other there prefent, I will ferue you of the fame fauce, if you doe not me good feruice, or if fo be, that you goe out of my fight without my leave. That for the honour of God, all they that have read this piece of worke. or shall give it a reading, consider now, whether this act, so hideous, fell and vnnaturall, doe not exceed all cruelty and in: quitie, that may bee imagined, and whether the Spaniards have any wrong offered them when a man calleth them Diuels, and whether were better, to give the Indians to keepe to the Deuils in Hell, or the Spaniards which are at the Indies.

After this I will rehearse another deuilish part, the which I cannot tell whether it beelesse 20 cruell and voide of manhood, then are those of fauage beatts: that is, that the Spanish which are in the Indies, dee keepe certaine Dogs most raging, taught and trained wholly to the purpofe, to kill and rend in pieces the Indians. That let all those that are true Christians, yea, and also those which are not fo, behold, if ever there were the like thing in the whole world : that is, to feed thole Dogs, they leade about with them wherefoeuer they goe a great number of Indians in chaines, as if they were Hogs, and kill them, making a shambles of mans flesh. And the one of them will say to another, Lend mee a quarter of a villaine, to give my Dogs some meate, untill I kill one next, altogether as if one thould borrowe a quarter of an Hogge or Mutton. There be others which goe forth a hunting in the morning with their curres, the which being re- to turned to cate, if another aske him : How have yee fped to day ! they answere, Very well: for I have killed with my Dogs to day, fifteene or twenty Villacoes. All these diabolicall doings, with others like haue beene proued in the fuits of Law, that the tyrants haue had one of them against another. Is there any case more ougly or vnnaturali?

I will here now deport me of this discourse, vitill such time, that there come other newers things, in vngraciouinesse more notorious and remarkable (if it so bee, that there can bee any more grieuous) or vntill fuch time as we may returne thither to behold them our felues anew, as we behold them for the space of two and forty yeeres continually with mine owne eyes : proteffing in a good confcience before God, that I doe beleeve, and I hold it for certaine, that the damages and loffes are fo great, with the deftractions and ouerthrowes of Cities, maffacres and 4 murders, with the cruelties horrible and ougly, with the rauins, iniquities and robbities, all the which things have beene executed amongst those people, and are yet daily committed in those quarters: that in all the things, which I have spoken and deciphered, as I was able the neerest to the truth: I have not faid one of a thousand, of that which has h beene done, and is daily a doing at this prefent, bee it that you confider the qualitie, or bee it, that yee confider the quantitie.

And to the end that all Christians have the greater compassion of those poore innocents, and that they complaine with me the more their perdition and deltruction, and that they detell the greedinelle, lottinelle, and felnelle of the Spamib: that all doe hold it for a moit vincoubte veri-What conner- tie, with all that hath berne abouefaid, that fithence the first Discouerie of the Indies until now, 15 fions & know- the Indias, neuer did harme vnto the Spanif in any place whereforeuer, vntill fuch time, that ledge of God they first rescued wrongs and injuries, being robbed and betrayed: but indeed did repute them to be immortal, supposing them to be descended from Heauen, and they received them for such, untill fuch time a that they gave it forth manifestly to be knowne by their doings, what they were, and whereto hey tended.

I will adioune hereunto this, that from the beginning unto this houre, the Spaniards have lad no more care to procure hat vnto those people should be preached the Faith of lefus Christ, then as if they had beene Curredogs, or other beaths: but in lieu thereof, which is much worldthey have forbidden by expressen eanes the religious men to doe it, for because that that seemed vnto them an higherance likely to be, to the getting of their Gold, and there riches which their 60 avarice foregiutted in. And at the day there is no more knowledge of God throughout the Indies, to wit, whether he be of timber, of the aire, or the earth, then there was an hundred yeeres agoe, excepting New Spaine, whither the religious men haue gone, which is but a little corner of the Indies : and to are they perished, and doe perish all with Faith, and without Sacraments.

I brother Bartholomen de las Cafas or Cafass, religious of the Order of Saint Dominicke, which by the mercy of God am come into this Court of Spaine, to fue that the Hell might bee withdrawen from the Indies, and that these innumerable soules, redeemed by the bloud of Iesus Christ. fhould not perifh for euermore without remedie, but they might know their Creator and be faned: also for the care and compassion that I have of my Countrey, which is Castile, to the end that God destroy it not for the great sinnes thereof, committed against the Faith and his honour, and against our neighbours: for certaine mens fakes notably zealous of the slory of God. touched with compassion of the afflictions and calamities of others, followers of this Court: howbeit, that I was purposed to doe it, but I could not fo foone have done it, because of my con-10 tinual occupations, I atchieued this Treatife and Summarie at Valencia, the eight of December, reas the force being mounted to the highest type of extremitie, and all the violences, tyrannies , deiolations , anguishes , and calamities abouesaid , spred ouer all the Indies , where there are Spaniards, although they be more cruell in one part then they be in another, and more fatage

Mexico and her confines are leffe euill intreated. In truth, there they cannot execute their outrages openly, for that there and not elfewhere, there is some forme of inflice, as slender as it is. For because that there also they kill them with deuilish tributes : I am in good hope, that the Emperour and King of Spaine, our liege Soueraigne Lord, Don Charles the fift of that name, who beginneth to have vinderstanding of the mitchiefes and treasons that there have beene and 20 are committed against those poore people, against the will of God, and his owne, (for they have alwaies cunningly concealed the truth from him) will roote out those cuils, and take some order for this new world that God hath given him, as vnto one that loueth and doeth iustice; whose honour and prosperous estate Imperiall, God almightie vouchsafe to blesse with long life, for the benefit of his whole vniuerfall Church, and to the faluation of his owne Royall foule. Amen.

After having couched in writing the premifies, I vnderstood of certaine Lawes and Ordinances, which his Maiestie hath made about this time at Barcellone, Anno 1 142, in the moneth of November, and the yeere following at Madrill: by the which Ordinances, there is order fet downe, as the case them seemeth to require : to the end, to cut off the mischieses and fins which are committed against God and our neighbours, tending to the veter ruine and perdition of this 30 new world, His Maiestie hath made these Lawes, after having holden many assemblies of persons of authoritie, of learning and confeience, and after hauing had disputations & conferences in Valladelid : and finally with the affent and adulte of all those others which have given their adulte in writing, and have beene found neerest approaching vnto the Law of Iefus Christ, and withall free from the corruption and foyle of the treasures tobbed from the Indians: the which treasures have foyled the hands, and much more the foules of many, overwhom those treasures and avarice have got the mafterie, and where hence hath proceeded the blinding, which hath caufed for to marre all without remorfe. These Lawes being published, the creatures of those tyrants, who then were at the Court, drew out fundry copies thereof (for it grieued them at the hearts : for that it feemed them that thereby there was a doore flut vp vnto them against their rauine and 40 extortion afore rehearded) and dispersed them into divers quarters of the Indies. Those which had the charge to robbe, root out, and confume by their tyrannies, (euen as they had never kept any good order but rather disorder, such as Lucifer himselfe might have held) as they read those copies before the new Judges might come to execute their charge, knowing it (as it is faid, and that very credible) by those who vntill this time have suported and maintayned their crimes and outrages, to be likely that fuch execution should be vied of those Lawes: they ranne into a mutinie in such wife, as that when the good Iudges were come to doe their duties, they aduised with themselves (as those which had lost the feare and love of God) to cast off also all shame, and obedience which they owe to the King, and so tooke vnto them the name of name of open and arrant traitors, behaving themselves as most cruell and gracelesse tyrants: and principally, 50 in the Realme of Pern, where presently this yeere 1443. are committed acts to horrible and frightfull, as never were the like, neither in the Indies, nor in all the world belides, not onely against the Indians, the which all or in a manner all are slaine, all those Regions being dispeopled: but also betwixt themselves by a just judgement of God, who hath permitted that they should be the Butchers one of an other of them. By meanes of the Support of this rebellion, none of the Samiardia all the other parts of this new World would obey those Lawes: But under colour of making supplication to his Maiesty to the contrary, they have made an insurrection as well as the others. For that it irketh them to leave their estates and goods which they have vsurped, and to vibinde the bands of the Indians, whom they detaine in a perpetuall captinitie. And there where they 60 ceale to kill with the fword, readily and at the inftant, they kill them a little and a little, by perfonall flaueries, and unjust charges and incolerable. That which the King could not hitherunto let: for because that they all, great and little, roue and robbe, some more, some lesse: some ouertly, and some couertly, and under the pretence of seruing the King: dishonour God, and

robbe the King.

Part of a Letter written by one which faw things

Ee gave licence to put them to the Chaine, and in bondage: That which they did: and the Cap.

Laine led after him three or foure drones of these persons enchanned: and in this doing, he procu. red not that the Country hould bee inhabited and peopled (as had beene convenient should have done) but robbing from the Indians all their victuals they had, the inhornes of the Country were reduced to (nch an extremutie, that there were found great numbers dead of famine in the high-wayes. And the fach an extremitie, that there were journing to.

Lidian's commine and coing to and fro the coast, laden with the carriage of the Spaniards, bee was the Te monland death by thefe meaner of about ten thoufand. For not one that arrived at the very coast escaped death : by reason of the excessive beate of the Countrey.

After this, following the same tract and way, by the which Iohn of Ampulia was gone, bee sent the Indians which be had purchased in Quito, a day before him, to the end they should discourt the bourges of the Indians, and should pillage them, that when be came with bu mayne be might finde bu bootie ready. And those Indians were his owne mates : of the which such a one had two hundred, such a one three bundred, and fuch a one a bundred; according to the bag gage that enery one of them bad: which Indians came to jeeld themfelues to their Masters with all that they had robbed.

After that the faid Captaine was returned from the coast, bee determined to depart from Ouito. and to goe feeke the Captaine Iohn de Ampudia, leaning thereto mee then two hundred of Footmen and Horsemen, among st whom were a great many Inhabitants of the Citie of Quito. Unto those Inhabit. tants the Captaine cane licence to carrie with them the Cacikes, that were escheated them in sharing. with as many Indians as they would. That which they did: and Alfonio Sanches Nuita carried forth with him bis Cacike, with moe then an hundred Indians besides: and in like manner Peter Cibo, and bis Coulin: and they led out more then an hundred and fifty with their wines: and fundry also feed out their children, because that in a manner enery one died for hunger. Also Moran Inhabitant of Popayan, carried out moe then two bundred persons. And the like did all the rest, Crizens and Souldiers, enery one after his abilitie: the Souldiers crawing that they might have licence ginen them to captine these Indians men and women, which they carried forth: the which was granted them untill the death of the Said captines, and shofe deceased, to take as many more.

When they departed out of the Pronince of Quito, they carried out moe then fixe thousand Indians, men and women, and of all those there never returned home into their Countrie twenty persons. For they died all through the great and excessive travell, which they made them indure in those broyling Comm true contrary to their nature. It happened at that time, that one Altonfo Sanches, whom the fuld Captaine fent for Chieftaine ouer a certaine number of men into a Pronince there, met with a good company of women, and young boyes laden with villuals : who flaved waiting for them without moning from the place to give them of that which they had, and having fo done, the Captaine commanded that they fould

be put to the Sharpe of the Sword. It came to passe also, that at the time that the faud Captaine came into the Province of Lili, to a Towne called Palo, neere vuto the great Riner, where bee found the Captaine Iohn de Ampudia, 30 which was gone before to discouer, and pacific the Countrie : the faid Ampidia kept a Citie by him promided of a Garrison, in the name of his Maiestie, and of the Marques Francis of Pizatto: and had fet over them for Governours ordinary, one Petre Solano of Quennoues, and eight Connfellours, and all the rest of the Countrie was in peace, and shared out amongst them. And as bee knew that the faid Captaine was in the faid Riner, bee came to fee him, with a great number of the Inhabisants of the Countrie, and peacefull Indians, laden with victuals and fruits. Shorely after also all the neighbour Indians came to fee him, bringing him food. There were the Indians of Xamundi, and of

Palo, and of Soliman, and of Bolo. Now because that they brought no Mahis which he would have, he sent a great number of Spaniards with their Indians, to goe fourch for Mahis: commanding them to bring some where sever they found so any. So went they to Bolo, and to Palo, and found the Indians men and women in their houles in peace and the faid Spaniards with those that were with them, tooke them, and robbed their Mahu then Gold, and Conerings, and all that they had, and bound many.

Wherefore, they seeing that the Captaine kept no Faith with them: all the Countrie arose and revolted from the Spanish, whereof ensued great damage, and God and the Kings Maiestic offended: and by this meanes the Country remayned dispeopled: for that the Olomas and the Manipos their enemiet, which are Mountaine people, and warlike, descended daily to take and rubbe them, when they perceived the Citie and places of their abode left defisiute. And amongst them bee who was the firinger, aid Crucil famine, eate up his fellow, for all died for famine. This done, the Captaine came to the Citie of Ampulia, where he was received for Generall. From this place they goe to a Citie called Tukilicui, from whence the Ca-60 cike of the place reelded forth incontinent in peace, a number of Indians going before him. The Captaine demanded Gold of him and of his Indians. The Cacike told him that hee had but a small deale, and that which he had fould be green him: and immediatly all beganne to give him all that they had. Whereupon the faid Captaine game unto energ of them a ticket, with the name of the faid Indian, for

a testimoniail that he had given him Gold: assirming that hee which should have never a ticket, should be cast to the Dogges to bee denomed, because be gave bum no Gold. Wherenpon the Indians for feare that they were put in, gane him all the Gold that they were able : and those which had none fied into the Mountaines and other Townes, for feare to bee flame. By reason whereof perished a great number of the natine Inhabitants of the Countries. And Shortly after, the fuel Captaine commanded the Cacke to fend two Indians to another (stre named Dagna, to will them that they foodid come in peace, and bring bim Gold in abundance. And somming to another Citie, bee fent that night many Spaniards to take the Indians, and namely of Tulilicui. So atthey brought the next morrow abone an bundred per fons : and all those which could be are burdens, they tooke them for themselves, and for their To Souldiers, and put them to the chaine, whereof they died all. And the faid Captaine game the little children unto the faud Cacike Tutilicus, that bee fould este them: and in truth, the skinnes of those chile

dren are kept in the house of the land Cacike Tulilicui full of albes: and so departed hee from thence without an Interpreter, and went towards the Prominces of Caltile, where bee soyned himselfe unto the Captaine Iohn de Ampudia, who had fent him to discouer another way, doing both of them great outrages, and much mischiefe unto the Inhabitants of the Countrie where they became. And the faid Iohn de Ampudia came to a Citie, the Cacike and Lord whereof called Bicacur, had caused to make certaine Duches to defend himselfe, and there fell into the same two Horses, the one of Antonie Rodondos, the other of Marc Marqueis. That of Marcos Marquis died, the other not. For which cause the faid Ampudia commanded to take all the Indians men and women that might be - and thereupon take and 20 layed together more then an hundred persons, whom they cast aline into those Ditches and sine them.

and brent withall more then an hundred boufes in the faid Citie. And in that manner met in a great Citie, where without summoning (the Indians being at peace, and without any spokesman to goe betweene them) they flue with their Speares a great number of them, making on them mortall warre. And as it is faid soone after they were met, the faid Ampudia told the Captaine what he bad done in Bitaco, and bow he cast formany into the Ditches: and the faid Captaine enswered, that it was well done, and that he for his part had done as much at the River Bamba, when hee entred the same, which is in the Prounce of Quito, and that be had flung into the Ditches moe then two hundred persons; and there they flared warring on all the Countrie. Soone after he entred into the Pronince of Bitu, or Anzerma: in making cruell warre with fire and blond till they came as farre as onto the Salt-boules. And from 30 thence be fem Francis Garcia before him to pillage, who made cruell warre on the natural Inhabitants

of the Countrie as he had done before bins. The Indians came was him two and two, making fignes, that they demanded peace on the behalfe of the whole Countrie: alledging that they would affoord him, all that he could reasonably demand, were it Gold, or Women, or Victuals, onely that they would not kell them, as indeed it was a troth. For themfetues afterwards confessed it to bee fo. But the faid Francis Garcia bid them get them packing : telling them moreaner, that they were a fort of drunkards and that beeunderstood them not, and foretwined bee to the place where the faid Captaine was, and they made a complet, to overrunne all the Pronince, making critell warre on all the Countrie, in spoiling, robbing and flaying all: and with the Souldiers, which bec brought with him, drew thence mee then two thousand faules, and all those died in the chaine. Before departing the place which bee had peopled, they 40 flue more then fine bundred per fous. And fo returned to the Pronince of Calili. And by the way if

any lade or Indesie, were weary, in such fart, that they could not passe any further, they did incontinently bead them, paring it off from the shoulders even with the chaine, to the end not to take the paines none; occus were, puring a vij ji om socjammers which went the same way should not make mise to bee sicke, and by this meanes died they all: and in the high-wayes were left all those people which hee made his purchase of out of Quito, and of Patto, and of Quilla Cangua, and of Paxa, and of Popayan, and of Lili, and of Cali, and of Anzerma, and a great unmber of people died. Alfo immedeatly upon their resurne to the great Citie, they entred into it, flaying all that they could: taking in that

day moe then three bundred per fons, &c.

Mong divers the remedies by Friar De las Cafae Bishop of the Royal Towns called Chiapa, 50 A propounded in the assemblie of fundry Prelates named Parsons, by his Malesties commandement gathered together in the Towne of Valladolid, the yeere of our Lord 1542, for order and reformation to be observed in the Indies: the eighth in order was this ensuing, which consistents vpon twentie reasons and motions.

The eight Remedie, is among all other principall and most in force, as without which all the rest are to no porpose, for that they all have relation thereunto, as every motion to his proper end, in whatfoeuer toucheth or is of any importance vnto your Maiestie, which no man can expresse: in as much as thereupon dependeth at the leaft the whole loffe or preferuation of the Indies. And the remedie that I speake of is this, that your Maiestie die determine ; decree , command ; and

60 folemnely in your fourraigne Courts ordaine by pragmaticall Sactions and Royall Statutes, that all the Indies as well already jubdued, as hereatter to be fubdued, may be inferted, reduced, and incorporate into the Royall Crowne of Castile and Lean, to be holden in chiefe of your Maiette as free lubiects and vaffals, as they are. Likewife that they be not given in commendant unto the Spaniards: but that it fland as an inuiolable conflictation, determination and Royall Law, that they never, neither at this time, neither hereafter in time to come, may bee alienated or taken from the faid Royall Crowne, neither that they be given, commanded, demiled in fee farme, by depost, commandement or alienation, either under any other title or manner whatsoeuer, and be difmembred from the Royall Crowne, for any whattoeuer the feruice or defert of any, either vp. on any necessitie that may happen, or for any cause or colour whatsoever that may be pretended. For the inviolable observation, or establishment of which Law, your Maiestie shall formally fweare by your Faith and on your Word and Royall Crowne, and by all other facred things. whereby Christian Princes doe visually fweare, that at no time neither your felfe, neither your fuccessours in these ten Dominions, or in the Indies, so farre as in you shall he, shall remoke the fame : and you shall further let do wne in expresse words in your Royall Will and Testament that Io this decree be euer kept, maintayned, and vpholden: also that to farre as in your felfe or in them shall be, they shall confirme and continue the same. And for proofe of the necessitie hereof there bee twenty reasons to be alledged : out of which twenty we have drawne and put in writing to many as may feeme to ferue to our purpofe.

Freeza out of the fecond reafon.

The Spaniards through their great avarice and couetouineffe to get, doe not permit anv re. ligious persons to enter into their Townes and Holds which they possesse, alledging that they receive double losse by them. One and the principall is, that religious persons doe keepe the Is. dies occupied when they gather them together to their Sermons, fo as in the meane time their worke is omitted, while the Indians being idle, labour not ; yea, it hath fo fallen out that the Indians being in the Church at the Sermon, the Spaniard comming in, in the face of al the people, 20 hath taken fifty, or an hundred, or so many as he hath needed to carrie his baggage and stuffe, and fuch as would not goe, he hath loden with thripes, fourning them forth with his feet, thereby, to the great griefe both of the Indians, and of the religious perfons troubling and molesting all that were prefent. &c.

Out of the third reafon.

The Spaniards are charged to inftruct the Indians in our holy Catholike Faith: whereupon on a time when we examined Iohn Colmeners of Saint Mariba, a fantasticall, ignorant, and foolish man, who had gotten a great Towns in commendam, and had a charge of foules, he could not tell how to bleffe himfelfe; and asking him what doctrine he taught the Indians committed to his charge, he faid, he gave them to the Deuill : also that it was enough for him to say, Per figning fastiin Cruces. How can the Spaniards that travell to the Indies, how noble or valuant forur they be, have any care of the soules, when the most of them are ignorant of their Creede and ten Commandements, and knowe nor the matters percayning to their owne faluation, neither doe travell to the Indies for any other purpose but to satisfie their owne defires and couetous affections, being for the most part vicious , corrupt, vinhonest, and disordinate persons: fo as her that would weigh them in an equalibaliance, and compare them with the Indians, should find the Indians without comparison, more vertuous and holy then them. For the Indians what infidels focuer they be, doe neuertheleffe keepe them to one and their owne wife, as nature and neceffitie teacheth, and yet we see some Spaniard have fourteene or more, which Gods Commandements doe forbid. The Indians devoure no mans goods, they doe no man wrong : they doe not vexe, trouble, or flay any, where themselves doe see the Spaniards commit all finnes, iniquities, 40 and treacheries, that man can commit against all equitie and instice. To be briefe, the Indians doe not believe any thing, but doe mocke at all that is shewed them of God, being in truth fully rooted in this opinion of our God, that he is the worft, and most valuat, and the most wicked of all Gods, because he hath such servants: also concerning your Maiestie, they thinks you the most vniust and cruell of all Kings, because you doe both fend thither and keepe here such evill Subiects, furpofing that your Maiestie doth feed vpon humane fiesh and bloud. .

Out of the

The Spaniards having authoritie to command, or particular interest in the Indies, cannot by fourth reason. reason of their great conetousnesse abstaine from afflicting, troubling, disquieting, vexing, or oppreffing the Indians, taking away their goods, lands, wives, or children, and ving among them many other kindes of iniquitie, for the which they can have no redreffe, fanction, or warrant at 50 your Maiefties chiefe Iuftice, because the Spaniards doe make them afraide : vea sometimes doe kill them; left they should complaine. They doe night and day mourne after their Gods, thisking them to be better then ours at whom they fulfame fuch harmes, while contrariwise of their owne they reape there so many commodities: and there is nothing that troubleth them so much as the Christians.

Out of the fifth reasons

Wee can show to your Maiestie ; that the Spaniards have within eight and thirty or firty yeers flaine of suff accompt, about twelve millions of your Subjects: I will not fay how mightily this world of people might have multiplied. This Countrey being the fertilest, whether for cattell, or mankinde, that is in the world t the foyle being for the most part, more temperate and fauoitrable to humane generation. All thefe innumerable persons, and all these 60 people have the Spaniards flaine, to the end to heare fway, governe, and command over the relt: and when in visual warres they have flame them; then doe they vie the rell, who justly have withflood them, in drawing Gold and Silver, yoking them together like healts, to make them carrie their burdens.

What plague of petitience, or mortalitie could there have fallen from heaven that had beene able to contime or make waite aboue 2500. leagues of flat Country, replenished with people, and would not have left either travailer or inhabitant ?

The Spaniards onely for their temporall commoditie, have blemished the Indies with the Out of the preatest infamie, that any man even among the most horrible and villanous persons in the world, fixth reason. could be charged withall, and whereby they have fought to take them out of the degree of mankinde : namely that they were all polluted with the abominable finne against nature : which is a wretched and falle flander. For mall the great Hes, Hifpaniola, Saint John, Cuba, and Lamaica: Also in the fixtie lles of Lucayos, which were inhabited with an infinite number of people, the fame was neuer thought vpon; in some other part there is a voice of a few: for whole lakes neuerthelesse all that world is not to be condemned. We may say as much of the eating of mans flesh, which likewise those places that I have named are free of; although that in other places thy doe it indeede. They be also charged with their Idolatrie. The Spaniards have portrosely and effectually hindered the teaching of the Law of God and Iefus Christ: with all other vertues among the Indians, and driven away the Religious persons out of Townes and Fortresles, least they should see and disclose their tyrannies ; yea, they have by their suill example, infected and correspeed the Indies, teaching them many odious behaviours and vices, which before they knew not, as blasp'eming the name of Ielus Christ, practifing of vsurie, lying, and many other abhominations wholly repugnant to their nature.

inations wholly repugnant to their nature.

The Spaniards doe sucke from the Indians the whole substance of their bodies, because they penthreason, hate nothing else in their houses. They make them spit bloud: They exhibite them to all dangers: They lay youn them fundry and intollerable trauziles: and more then all this, They loade them with torments, beatings, and forrowings: To be briefe, they spoile and consume a thoufand manner of waves.

Befiles all that the Indians doe indure in feruing and pleasing the Speniards, there is yet a Out of the butcher or cruell hangman, to keepe them in awe appointed in every Towne and place, and is eight reason. tearmed Estanciers or Calpifque: who hath authoritie to lay his clawes voon them, and to make them labour, and doe what the Lord Commander or chiefe thiefe will. So as if in hell there were no other torment, yet were this incomparable. This hangman whippeth them, he ladeth them 30 with ftripes, he batteth them with scalding grease, he afflicteth them with continual coments and travels, hee forceth and defloureth their daughters and wives, dishonouring and abosing them : he deuoureth their Hens, which are their greatest treasure, not because themselves doe eate them, but that of them they offer presents and service to their greatest Lord and chiefe tyrant : he vexeth them with innumerable other torments and griefes : and leaft they should complaine of fo many injuries and miferies, this tyrant putteth them in feare, faying ; that hee will accuse them, and say that he see them commit Idolatry. To be briefe, they must please and content about twenty difordinate and vnreasonable persons; so as they have foure Lords and Mafters. Your Maiestie, their Cacique, him that hath them in commendam, and the Estanciero of whom I laft spake, which Eftancure is to them more grieuous to beare then a quintall of lead, a-40 mong which we may also in truth adde all the Mochaches and Moores, that doe serue the Commander and Mafter, for they all doe moleit, oppresse, and rob these poore people.

It is greatly to be teared, least God will lay Spaine desolate, even for those horrible sinnes that Out of the this Nation hath committed in the Indies, whereof we doe enidently behold the fourge, and all tenth reasons the world doth fee and confesse that already it hangeth ouer our heads, wherewith God doth afflict and thew that he is highly offended in those parts through the great deftruction and waste of those Nations, in that of so great treasures have bin transported out of the Indies into Spaine (the like quantitie of Gold and Silver, neither King Salomon, neither any other worldly Prince euer had, law, or heard of) there is none left, belides that of that that was here before the Indies Note. were discovered, there is now none to be found, no neuer a whit. Hereof it commeth that things are thrife dearer then they were, the poore that have want doe fuffer great miferies : and your

Maiestie cannot dispatch matters of great importance. So long as Lares bare fway and ruled, that was nine yeares, there was no more care of teaching Out of the eleor bringing the Indians to faluation, neither was there any more labor employed, or once thought venthreafon, of to that purpose, then if they had beene Trees, Stones, Dogs, or Cats. He wasted great townes and fortrelles, he gaue to one Spaniard a hundred Indians, to another fiftie, to another more or leffe, as every man was in liking or favour, and as it pleafed him to grant. He gave children, and old men, women with childe, and in childebed, men of countenance and commons, the naturall Lords of the Townes and Countries, he parted them among those to whom hee wished most wealth and commoditie, ving in his Letters of command this speech following : To you such a 60 man, are ginen fo many Indians with their Cacique, them tou fe in their Mines and affaires. So as all, great and small, young and old, that could stand on their feete, men, women with childe, or in childebed, one or other, trauailed and wrought fo long as they had any breath in their bodies. He gaue leaue to take away married men, and to make them draw Gold, tenne, twenty, thirtie,

tortie, or eightie leagues, or farther. The women remained in farme houses and granges, in

Retter 3

great labours. So that the man and wife should not see one another in eight or ten moneths or a whole years. And at their meeting they were fo worne with labour and hunger, that they had no minde of cohabitation, whereby their generation ceased, and their poore children peruhed. because the mothers through hunger and trauaile had no milke wherewith to nourish them: This was a cause that in the sle of Cuba, one of vs being there, there perished in the space of three moneths for hunger 7000, shildren, tome desperate women strangled and killed their owne children, others finding themselues with childe, did eate certaine hearbes thereby to loose their fruit, so that the men died in the Mines, the women perished in the farme houses, their whole generation in a shore space decayed, and all the Countrey lay desolate. The said Gouernour, to the end without release to keepe them in continual labour, still gaue them away, and yetbe- 10 fides their great labors he suffered them rigorously, and very austerely to be misuted. For the Soa. miards that had them in command, appointed certaine hangmen over them, fome in the Mines. whom they tearmed Miniers, others in the Farmes, that were called Eftanciers : vnnaturall and pittileffe persons that beate them with staues and cords, boxing them, pricking them with needles, and full calling them dogges: neither did they ever flew any figne of humanity or clemensie, but all their dealings did confift of extreame severitie, riot, and bitternesse.

The Gouernour had also in the Spanish Townes and Forts, certaine of the most honorable and principall persons about him, whom he called Visitors, vnto whom also besides their other ordinary portions that he had given them, he gave in respect of their offices one hundred Indians to ferue them. These in the Townes were the greatest executioners, as being more cruell then the 20 reft, before whom Athnaziles del camoo brought all fuch as had bin taken in this chafe. The accufer, he that had them in command, was present, and accused them, saying : Thu Indian. or those Indians are dogs, and will doe no fernice, but doe daily run to the Mountaines, there to become lotterers and vagabonds: and therefore required that they might be punished. Then the Visitor with his owne hands bound them to a Pale, and taking a pitched cord, in the Gallies called an Eele, which is as it were an iron rod, gaue them so many itripes, and beate them so cruelly, that the bloud running downe divers p.rts of their bodies, they were left for dead, God is witnesse of the cruck-

ties committed among those lambs.

Throughout the yeare they never knew holiday, neither might be suffered from labour little or much. Befides that during all this toyle, they never had fufficient food, no not of Cacabi. Some \$ there were that through niggardineffe wanting meate to give them, would fend them two or three dayes abroad into the helds and Mountaines, to feede where they might fatisfie themselves with such fruite as hang on the trees, and then you the force of that which they brought in their guts, would force them to labour two or three dayes more without gining them any one morfell to eate. The Gouernour commanded they should be paid their day wages and expenses for any labour or feruice that they should doe to the Spaniard, and their wages was three Llankes every two dayes, which in the yeare amounted to halfe a Caffelin. Thus grew they into fickeneffe through long and grieuous trausiles, and that was foone caught among them. When the Spaniards perceived the sickenesse increase, so as there was no profit or service to be looked for at their hands, then would they fend them home to their houses, giving them to spend in some 49 thirty, forty, or eightie leagues trauaile, some halte dozon of Radish or Refortes , that is a kinde of nauet roote, and a little Cacabi, wherewith the poore men travailed not farre before they should desperately dye, some went two or three leagues, some ten or twenty, so desirons to ger to their owne home, there to finish their hellish life that they suffered , that they even fell downe dead by the wayes; fo as many times we found some dead, others at deaths doore, others groning and pittifully to their powers pronouncing this word, bunger, bunger. Then the Gouernour feeing that the Spaniard had in this wife flame halfe or two third parts of thele Indians, whom hee had given them in command, he came a fresh to draw new lots, and make a new distribution of Indians: still supplying the number of his first gift, and this did hee almost

Pedrarias entred into the firme land, as a Wolfe that had long beene statued doth into a flocke of quiet and innocent Sheepe and Lambs: and as Gods wrath and fourge, committing infinite flughters, robberies, oppressions and cruelties, together with those Spaniards whom he had leuis ed, and laid waite to many Townes and Villages, which before had bin replenished with people, as it were Ant hils, as the like was neuer seene, heard of, or written by any that in our dates have deale in Histories. He robbed his Maiette & Subiects with those whom he tooke with him, and the harme that he did amounted to aboue foure, yea fix Millions of Gold: hee laid aboue fortic leagues of land delart, namely from Darien, where he first arrived, vnto the Province of Nicaraga, one of the fruitfulleft, richeft and best inhabited lands in the world. From this curfed wretch sprang first the pestilence of giving the Indians in command, which afterward hath infected all 62 thole Indies where any Spaniards doe inhabit, and by wi om all these Nations are consumed; so that from him & his commands have proceeded the certaine waste and desolation that your Maiestie haue fullamed in these so great lands and dominions, since the years to04-

When we shall say that the Spaniards have wasted your Maieties, and laid you desolate soun

King lomes bigger then Spaine, you must conceine that we have seene them wonderfully peopled; and now there is no body left, because the Spaniards have slaine all the natural inhabitants by meanes aforeigned and that of the Townes and Houses there remainesh onely the bare wals ; even as it Spains were all dispeopled, and that all the people being dead, there remained onely the wals of Cicies, Townes and Caftels.

Your Maiestie have not out of all the Indies one marvedy of certaine perpetuall and fet rent, Our of the but the whole reuenewes are as leaves and thraw gathered upon the earth, which being once gathered vp doe grow no more : euen fo is all the rent that your Maiestie hath in the Indies, vaine and of as small continuance as a blast of winde, and that proceedeth onely of that the Spaniards 10 have had the Indians in their power; and as they doe daily flay and roft the Shhabirants, so must be

necessarily ensue that your Maiesties rights and rents doe wast and diminish.

The Kingdome of Spaine is in great danger to be lost, robbed, oppressed and made desolate by forraigne Nations, namely by the Turkes and Moores, because that God who is the most just. true, and foueraigne King ouer all the world, is wroth for the great finnes and offences that the Spaniards have committed throughout the Indies. But had chosen Spaine as his minister and infrument, to illuminate and bring them to his knowledge, and as it had bin for a worldly recomnence, belides the eternall reward, had granted her to great naturall riches, and discoursed for her fuch and to great fruitfull and pleafant lands,&c.

In as much as our life is short, I doe take God to witnesse with all the Hierarchies and thrones 20 of Angels, all the Saints of the heavenly court, and all the men in the world; yea, even those that shall hereafter be borne, of the certificate that here I doe exhibite: also of this the discharge of my conscience, namely that if his Maiestie granteth to the Spaniards the aforesaid divellish and tyrannous partition, not with Handing what loeuer lawes or flatutes shall be deuised, yet will the Indies in figre space be laid desarcand inspeopled, even as the Ile of Hispaniola is at this present, which otherwise would be most fruitfull and fertile; together with other the lles & lands aboue 2000 leagues about, besides Hispaniola it selfe and other lands both farre and neere. And for those finnes, as the holy Scripture doth very well informe, God will horribly chaftize, and peraduenture wholly fubuert and roote out all Spains. Anno 1542.

The summe of the disputation betweene Fryer BARTHOLOMEVY de las CASAS or CASAVS, and Doctor SEPVLVEDA.

Octor Sepulueda, the Emperours chronographer, having information, and being perfwa? Deed by certaine of thole Spaniards, who were most guiltie in the slaughters and wastes committed among the Indian people, wrote a Booke in Lavine, in forme of a Dialogue very eloquently, and furnished with all flowers, and precepts of Rhetoricke, as indeede the man is very learned and excellent in the faid tongue : which Booke confifted vpon two principall conclusions; 40 the one, That the Spaniards warres against the Indians, were as concerning the cause and equitie that moved them thereto, very just: also, that generally the like warremay and ought to be continued. His other conclusion, that the Indians are bound to submit themselves to the Spaniards, gouernment, as the foolish to the wife : if they will not yeelde, then that the Spaniards may (as he affirmeth) warre vpon them. These are the two causes of the losse and destruction of so infinite numbers of people : also that aboue 2000, leagues of the maine land, are by fundry new kindes of Spanish cruelties and inhumaine dealings bin left desolate in the llands : namely by Conqueits and Commands as hee now nameth those which were wont to be called

The faid Doctor Sepulueds coloureth his Treatile, under the pretence of publishing the title 50 which the Kings of Castile and Leon doe challenge in the government and vinuerfall loveraign; is of this Indian world; fo feeking to cloake that doctrine which he endeuouteth to difperfe and featter as well in these lands, as also through the Kingdomes of the Indians. This Booke he exhibited to the royall Councell of the Indies, very earnestly and importunately lying upon them for licence to print it, which they fundry times denied him in respect of the offence, dangers, and manifest detriment, that it feemed to bring to the Common-wealth.

The Doctor feeing that here he could not publish his Booke, for that the Counfell of the Inder would not suffer it, he dealt so farre with his friends that followed the Emperours Court, that they got him a Patent, whereby his Maiestie directed him to the royall Counseil of Castile, who knew nothing of the Indian affaires : vpon the comming of these Letters the Court and 60 Cou sell being at Aranda in Duero, the yeare 1547. Fryer Baribolomen de las Casas or Casain, Buhop of the royall towne of Chiapa, by hap arrived there, comming from the Indians, and hauing intelligence of Doctor Sepulneda his drifts and deuiles, had notice also of the Contents of his whole Booke; but understanding the Authors permitions blindenesse, as also the irrecoverable loffes that might enfue upon the printing of this Booke, with might and maine with flood it, difcouering diffeomering and reuealing the poyfon wherewith it abounded, and whereto it pretended.

The Lords of the Royall Countaile of Castile, as wife and just Judges, determined therefore to fend the faid Booke to the Vuiverfities of Salamanca and Alcala, the matter being for the most part therein Theologically handled, with commandement to examine it, and if it might be printed, to figne it : which Vniuerfities after many exact and diligent disputations , concluded that it might not be printed, as contayning corrupt doctrine.

The Doctor not so satisfied, but complaining of the Vniuersities aforesaid, determined, notwithflanding to many denials and repulles at both the Royall Countailes, to fend his Treatife to his friends at Rome, to the end there to print it, having first transformed it into a certaine Appe logie written to the Bilhop of Segonia, because the same Bilhop having peruled the Treatie and Bocke aforefaid, had brotherly and charitably as his friend by Letters reprooued and counfailed him. The Emperous vinderstanding of the Impression of the said Booke and Apologie, did immediately dispatch his Letters Patents, for the calling in and suppression of the same, commanding likewise to gather in againe all Copies thereof throughout Cafile. For the faid Doctone had published also in the Castilian Language a certaine abitract of the said Booke , thereby to make it more common to all the Land : and to the end . To that the Commons , and fuch as you derstood no Latine, might have some vie thereof, as being a matter agreeable and toothiomer fuch as coneted great riches, and fought wayes to clime to other estates, then either themselves. or their Predeceffors could neuer attaine voto without great coft, labour, and cares, and often times with the loffe and destruction of divers.

Which when the Bishop of Chiapa understood, hee determined also to write an Apologie in 20 the vulgar tongue, against the faid Doctors summarie in defence of the Indies, therein impuening and undermining his foundations, and answering all reasons, or whatsoeuer the Doctor could alleage for himselfe, therein displaying and setting before the peoples face the dangers, incomenieners and harmes in the faid doctrine contained.

Thus as many things pailed on both fides, his Maiestie in the yeere 1550, called to Valadelid. an Affembly of learned men, as well Dinines as Lawyers, who beging joyned with the Royall counfaile of the Indies should argue, and among them conclude, whether it were lawfull without breach of Iustice, to leuie warres, commonly tearmed conquests, against the Inhabitants of those Countries, without any new offence by them committed, their infidelity excepted,

Dector Sepulneda was furnmened to come and fay what he could, and being entred the Comfaile Chamber, did at the first Seision veter his whole minde. Then was the faid Bishop likewist called, who for the space of fine dayes, continually did reade his Apologie : but being somewhat long, the Diuines and Lawyers there affembled, befought the Learned and Reverend Father Deminicke Soto his Maiesties Contesor, and a Dominican Friar, who was there present . to reduce it into a Summary, and to make so many Copies as there were Lords, that is fourteene, to the end they all having fludied voon the matter, might afterward in the feare of God fay this

The faid Reu-rend Father and Master Soco, set downe in the faid Summary, the Doctors resfons, with the Bishops aniweres to the same. Then had the Doctour at his request a Copie deli-m uered him to answere : out of which Summarie he gathered twelue against himselfe, whereto he madetwelue answeres, against which answeres the Bishop framed twelue Replyes.

Doctor Sepulueda his Prologue to the Lords of the Affembly, beganne thus. Most worthy and Noble Lords, fith your Lordships and Graces have as Judges for the space of five or fixe dayes heard the Lord Bishop of Chiapa reade that Booke, whereinto he hath many yeeres laboured to gather all the reasons that either himselfe, or others could invent to prove the conquest of the Indies to be vniust, as seeking first to subdue barbarous Nations before we preach the Gospell vnto them, which have beene the viual course correspondent to the grant made by Pope Alexander the fixt, which all Kings and Nations have hitherto taken and observed: it is meete, and I doe so defire you, that I who take vpon me to defend the grant and authority of the Apostolike Sea, together 50 with the equitie and honour of our Kings and Nation, &c.

Out of which Replies, here followeth the Abstract of two that fland vs insteed. The report is vntrue that the Indians did yeerely facrifice in New Spaine twenty thousand persons : either one hundred or fiftie. For had that beene fo, we could not now have found there fo much people; and therefore the Tyrants have invented it, thereby to excuse and instific their Tyrannies : allo to detaine fo many of the Indians as escaped the oppression and desolation of the first Vintage, in bondage and tyrannie. But we may more truely fay, that the Spaniards during their abode in the Indses, have yeerely facrificed to their fo deerely beloued and reverend Goddelle Concronfinelle more people, then the Indians have done in a hundred yeeres. This doe the Heavens, the Earth, the Elements, and the Starres both testific and bewaile: the Tyranes, yea. the very Ministers of 60 these mischiefes cannot deny it. For it is evident how greatly these Countries at our first entrie fwarmed with people, as also how wee have now laid it waste, and dispeopled the same: wee might euen blufh for shame, that having given over all feare of God, wee will yet nevertheleste fecke to colour and excuse these our so execrable demeanours : considering that only for getting

Note, the Popes Bull is pretended: which, and our answere to it,

CHAP. S. Many Soules destroyed, Pellar eretted. Two Serpents.

wealth and riches, we have in fortie fine or fortie eight yeeres, wasted and confirmed more Land then all Ewope, yea and part of Asia, doe in length and breath containe, robbing and viurping voon that with all cruekite, wrong, and tyranne, which we have feene well inhabited with huwhen the warm with the same been flaine and deftroyed twentie "Millions of foules. lions deftroid

In the twelfib and last Reply as felloweth, The Spaniards have not entred into India for any de-In the twelfto and last Kepty as passwers, a ne openiarian induction content and procure the fact of the fire to exalt Gols honour, or for zeale to Christian Religion, either to favour, and procure the lion, which is faluation of their Neighbours, no, neither for their Princes feruice, whereof they doe fo vainely tobevnder brigge : but Couctoufieffe bath brought them, and Ambition hath allured them so the perpetu- flood of foms all dominion over the Indies, which they as Tyrants and Devils, doe court to bee parted among greater part, an dominion one and the planty and flatly, doe feeke no other but to expell and drue the Kings of not of all the to them; and to fpeake planty and flatly, doe feeke no other but to expell and drue the Kings of Indies, Yea, Caffel out of all that World, and them felius feizing thereupon, by Trannie to viurpe and take only in New ypon them all Royall Source entie.

Spaine, Handuvas. Guatimala.

Vonefuels, Peru, and the Coast of Peris, he reckoneth about 20. Millons: befides three Millions in Hispaniels, halfe a Million in the Venjung rers, and the Control in lamane, and Saint logar llands: 80000 in Tora Firms, in Nicarque, \$5,0000, that I men-Lacques, 000000 or tauta multitudes in Caba, Thrace, Florida, Kairje, Tutaten, Saint Martha, Carbatena, New Granado ; River of tion not the innumerable multitudes in Caba, Thrace, Florida, Kairje, Tutaten, Saint Martha, Carbatena, New Granado ; River of

CHAP. V.

Notes of Voyages and Plantations of the French in the Northerne America : both in Florida and Canada.



F the French Plantation in that part of Brafill by Villagaynon, which therefore Frier Themet called France Antarctike, you haue feene alreadie in Leriau. Besides the Erench baue almost from the first beginnings of the Spanish Plantation, with the Eroseb haue almost from the first organization of the Department of the Eroseb haue almost those Coasis, and taken many Spanish prifes: The Freekb as our of Out-method warte haunted those Coasis, and stelled some Indication for a time in the liberor ob-Northerne parts of the New World, and the soul, and the second

John Verranan a Florenine was ient Anno 1524. by King Francis thefirst, and Madame Regent his Mother, who is faid to have discourred from the eight and twentieth to the fittieth degree; (all which and much more had long before beene discouerd by Sir Sebastian Cabor for the Sir Seb, Cabor. King of England, who was the first that iet foote on the American Continent in behalfe of any Chriftian Prince Anne 1496, or 45 others 1497, and therefore the French reckoning talleth flort, fome of which Nation woon Verasimes Discouery challenge I know not what right to all that Coult, and make their New France neere as great as all Europe. To leave that, we are to do them Historical right in relating their actions in those parts. The Rives and Customes of Florida are related at large by Rene Laudenniere, by Master Haklays translated, and in his Workes published. Laudonniere was fent by that famous Admirall Chaffillon with John Ribalt, Anno 1562: who ar- Cap. Ribalt. 40 rived at Cape François in Florida in thirtie degrees and there erected a Pillar with the French Armess The Raier they called the River of May, having entred it on May day. In the Woods they found great store of red and white Mulberie Trees, and on their tops an infinite number of Silk wormes, Eight other Rivers they diffcoursed to which they gave the names of Some, Som. Silk-wormes me, Lope; Cherente, Garonne, Gironde, Belle, Grande, and after that Belle a Voire, and Port Royal: Pore Royal: In this last they anchored; the River at the mouth is three French leagues broad : hee sayled up 32 degrees. many leagues, and ereceted another like Pillar of flone. Ribat having built a Fort and furnished it wicht prouitions, called it Charles Bort, and left a Golome there vider Captaine Albers. Thefe found great kindnelle with their Indian Neighbourry till differeion happened amongst them. felues, the Captaine for a small fault hanging a Souldier and exercising feweritie surer the reff, Mutinie, Capt 50 which thereupon in a mutinie flue him, and having cholen a new Captaine, they built a Paintaffe Albert flaine. and furnished it as well as they could to returne for France, but surprized in the way wath calmes, and expence of their prouition, they first did eare their shooes and Buffe lerkins, and yet continuing tassified, they killed one of their fellowes called La Chere, and made cheere of him, and after met with an English Barke which releesed them, and fetting fomeon Land, brought the

rest to Queene Elizabeth. The caule of their not relecting according to promife was the Civil warres, which beeing compounded the Admirall procured the King to tend three Ships to Blorida under the command of the Author Rene Landonniere, which fet faile in Aprill 1964. Howencon hore at Dominica, The fecond in which lland his men killed two Serpents nine foote long; and as bigge statements logge, The Golonie. 60 two and twentieth of Iune, they landed in Floridation leagues about Cape Prangos; and afterin the River of May, where the Indians very joyently welcommed them, and yelle None Piller Stone Piller rected by Ribalt was crowned with bayes and baskers of Mill or Marziet at the foot, and they worthipp d. killed the lame with great reverence. One of Paraconff (or the King) his Sound preferred the , Captain with a wedge of filier. With another Parcenffy they law one old Fretier with the west toge,

yeeres old. The Vaffals are petty N'e-T. TREES, OF Lords of Vil-

·lages.

but living, and of his loines fixe generations descended, all present, so that the Sonne of the ele-Men nigh 300, deft was supposed two hundred and fiftie yeeres old. They planted themselves on this River of May, and there built a Fort which they called Carolina of their King Charles. Landonniere fent Outron his Lieutenant to fearch out the people called Thimages, whence that filler wedge had comne, and there heard of a great King Olata Ouae Utina, to whom fortie Kings were valide. Seturiona was laid to have thirtie, and to be enemie to Vina.

A tearefull lightning happened which burned fine hundred acres of ground, and all the fowler after which followed fuch a hear, that as many fish were dead therewith at the mouth of the River, as would have laden fiftie Carts, and of their putrifaction gricuous difeafes. The Sanger had thought the French had done it with their Ordnance. He got fome prisoners of Vimas lib. la iects which Saturiona had taken and fent them to him, fome of his men affifting Vina in his warres against Poranou one of his enemies, and returning with some quantitie of Silver Whiles things continued in good termes with the Sanages Mutinies and Conspiracies fell out

Mutinies.

among it the French, fome confpring to kill the Captaine, others running away with the Barke one of which robbed by Sca, and after was driven by famine to leeke to the Spaniardeat Hanne and when two other Barkes were a building, a third Contpiracie feized on the Captaine, detain ned him Pritoner, and forced him to subscribe their passe with these two Barkes. Away they wene and the next duifion was among the hem felues, one Barke departing from the others, One of them after divers Piracies came backe, and the chiefe mutinies were executed. Francis less the one of the other Barke was he which after brought the Spaniards thither to deftroy them. The

a. o hau luch a cuft...m:

Indians vie to keepe in the Woods Ianuarie, Februarie, and March, and line on what they take in huncing; fo that the French neither receiving their expected reliefe from France, nor from the Sanages which had no Corne, having before fold them what they had, fuffered grieuous famine: they relolued to build a vestell able to carrie them into France, the Sanages making aduntages of their necessities (according to the wonted perindiousnesse of those wilde people) whereupon they tooke King Vima Pritoner with his Sonne to get food for his ranfome. The famine was fo Civell famine. Tharpe that it made the bones to grow thorow the skinne, and when the Maiz by the and of May came to some ripenesse, food it selfe ouercame their weake stomacks. Some reliefe they had by Sit lobn Hawkens who came thicher with foure thips, guided by a man of Deepe which had been ! there in Ribalts Voyage, who also offered to transport hum, and fet them all on land in France. This he refuted, but made good aduantage hereof with the Sanages, telling them that this was his brother which brought him great reliefe and plentie, whereupon all fought his friendfhip, His men at last generally fearing to continue in that milery, wanting both apparell and victuall, and meanes to returne, to wrought with him, that not daring to give the Silver, and fuch things ashe had gotten in the Countrie (which might bring an English Plantation into thole parts) he bought a thip of Sir lohn Hawkins, who parely feld and parely gaue them provisions also of apparell and victuall for their returne; and as Landonniere acknowledgeth like a charitable man, faued

I we has preas kindnifle.

Third Flor dan Voyage by C.

Gold Mynes

Maffacre. Cap. Dome!T Geargnes: :0

Three Forts Spinish.

Whiles thus they were preparing to fet faile. Captaine Ribals came into the River with feven 40 faile foure greater and three leffe (whom the Admirall had fent, hearing that Landomiere lorded and domineered in cyrannicall and infolent manner) and was folemnely welcommed in the end of August 1 964. A while after, when as the Indians had filled Captaine Ribalt with golden hopes of the Myries at Apalatei, fome proofes whereof were found to be perfect gold, fixe great flips of Spaniards same into the River on the fourth of September, and madefaire thew to the French, which trulted them neuer the more, but let flip their Anchors and fled; being no way matchable but in swiftnesse of faile, whereby they escaped the pursuite of the Spaniards, and observed their courie fending word thereof to Captaine Ribalt. The High Admirall Chaftillon also had in his the French and last Letters written to Ribale, that he had intelligence out of Spaine, of Don Pedro Melender plantin Floris his Expedition to Florida, suft before his comming from France, Captaine Ribals embarkes him- 50 leite the eighbor September, pretending to goe feeke the Spaniards, which foone after came to Leke the French at their Fott, guided by Francis lean, before a Mutiner . now allo a Traytour, who showed the Captaine to the Spaniards. Notwithstanding their affault, Laudonniere made an elcape with some others over the Marishes into the ships, and so returned first into England. and after into France. Captaine Ribalt was surprized with a Tempest which wracked him vpon the Coath, and all his thips were cathaway, himfelte hardly escaping drowning, but not escaping the more then Rockie Spaniards which madacred him and all his companie.

This butcherie was revenged in a fourth Floridan Voyage made from France , by Captaine Gaurgues, Lanua 1567, who borrowed and fold to fet fortnehree thips, and entring the River Taseanecourn (which site French called Seine) he made league with eight Sausee Kings, which had 60 beene much stupighted by the Spaniards, and were growne as infrightfull to them. The Spaniards were accounted foure fundred iftong, and had divided themfelies into three Forts vpon the Riwer of allage the greatest begun by the French; two smaller neerer the Rivers mouth to fortine each thereof with swelue hundred Souldiers in them well prouded for Munition.

In Aprill 1568, he tooke their two Forts and flue all the Spaniards, the vindicative Sanages giung him vehement and eager affiftance, especially Oloscara, Nephew to Sasmiona. As they went to the Fort, he faid, that he should die there, and therefore delired Gonrewes to give that to his wife which he would have given himfelfe, that it might bee buried with himfor his better. Why the Sassa his wire which he would have Soules departed. This Fort was taken, the Spaniards fome flame, goods interred others taken, and hanged on the fame trees on which the French hung; flue of which on of the fe with them. Spaniards confessed he had hanged, and now acknowledged the Dinine Instice. In steed of the Writings which Melendes had hanged over them, I doe not this as to Frenchmen but as to Lutherans; Courgues let vp another, I doe not this as to Spaniards or Mariners, but as to Trainers, Robbers Infl requirall, n and Muriberers. The Fores he razed, not having men to keepe them, and in June following arrived in Rockel. Comming to the King with expectation of reward, the Spanift King had to poffessed him, that he was faine to hide himselfe. This Dominicke de Gourenes had beene an old Souldier, once imprisoned, and of a Captaine made a Gally-flaue by the Spaniards, and grew for his feruice in reputation with the Queene of England : he died Anno 1582. And thus much of the French Voyages in Florida, for Voginias like worthy to be knowne of the English. Now

for their more Northerne Voyages and Plantations. Mafter Haklurt hath published the Voyages of laques Cartier, who in Aprill 1534. departed from Saint Malo with two ships, and in May arrived at Newfoundland. On the one and twentieth of May they came to the lland of Birds a league about, to full of Birds as if they were towel ace and there, and a hundred times as many houering about it, some as bigge as layes, blacke and white liand or Finds with beakes like Crowes, lying alway on the Sea; their wings not bigger then halic ones hand, in 49 degr. is which makes that they cannot flee high. In lesse then halfe an houre they filled two Boats with 40, minutes, them. These they named Aparatz; another lesse Port, which put them elues under the wings of others greater, they called Godeta, a third, bigger and white, byting like Dogges they called Margauls. Though the lland be fourteene leagues from the Continent, Beares come thither to Margauls feed on those Birds. One white one as bigge as a Kow they killed in her swimming, and found forme cobe her good meate. Three such Bird Hands they also discourred the fine and twentieth of June, which Pergrant. they called the lands of Marganix. There also they found Morfes, Beares and Wolues, But thele Northerne Coasts are better knowne to our Countrymen : then that I should mention his 30 French names, which from Cabets time almost forty yeeres before had beene knowne to the

English. The next yeere Cartier fet forth with three ships to Saint Lawrence his Bay, and so to the Riuer of Hochelaga. They went to Canada, and to the Towne of Hochelaga. They faw the great and fwitt fall of the River, and were told of three more therein. The Scorbute that Winter killed fine and twentie of their men in their Fort: the rest recoursed by the vie the fap and leaves of a tree called Hameda, which was thought to be Saffafras. These reports of Canada, Saguenas, and Hochelaga, caused King Francis to fend him againe, Anno 1540. purpoting also to tend lobn Francis de la Roche, Lord of Robewall to be his Lieutenant in the Countries of Canada, Sagnena, L. of Rebene? and Hochelaga. Hee went Anno 1942, his chiefe Pilot was lohn Alphonso of Xantongne, whose 85 Notes, as also the Relation of that Voyage with three shippes, and two hundred persons, men, women and children, Matter Hablust hath recorded. He built a Fort and wintered there: and

then returned. These were the French beginnings, who have continued their Trading in those parts by yeerly Voyages to that Coast to these times, for fishing, and sometimes for Beauers skinnes and other Commodities. One Sanales is faid to have made two and forty Voyages to those parts. Sanaless 42. Marke Lescarbos hath published a large Booke called Nona Francia, and additions thereto, part Voya, esto of which we have here for better intelligence of those parts, added with Champleins Discourries. Newfounding.

CHAP. VI.

The Voyage of SAMVEL CHAMPLAINE of Brouage, made unto Canada in the yeere 1603. dedicated to CHARLES de Montmorencie, erc. High Admirall of France.



Edeparted from Honflew, the fifteenth day of March 1603. This day we put in- Their Voyago to the Roade of New Haum, because the winde was contrary. The Sinday fol. to Tadaular, lowing being the fixteenth of the faid moneth, we feet faile to proceed on our Voy. 680.71. age. The seventeenth day following, we had fight of lersey and Tarnsey, which are Hes between the Coaft of Normandie and England. The eighteenth of the laid

moneth, wee discryed the Coast of Britame. The nineteemth, at seven of the clocke at night, we made account that we were thwart of Ulhent. The one and twentieth, at feuen of clocke in the morning, we met with lenen ships of Hollanders, which to our judgement came from the

Indies. On Eafter day, the thirtieth of the faid moneth, wee were encountred with a great forme, which feemed rather to be thunder then winde, which lafted the space of seventeene dayes, but not to great as it was the two first dayes; and during the faid time we rather lost way then gained.

The fix eenth day of Aprill the forme began to cease, and the Sea became more calme then before, to the contentment of all the Company; in such fort as continuing our faid course you till the cighteenth of the fail moneth, we met with a very high Mountaine of Ice. The morrow A hanks of lee after we differied a banke of Ice, which continued aboue eight leagues in length, with an infinite A lanke of the number of other smaller peeces of Ice, which hindred our passage. And by the judgement of our iong in 45,de- Pilot, the faid flakes or Ice were one hundred or one hundred & twenty leagues from the Coun- Io erces and two try of Canada; and we werein45, degrees and two third parts; & we found passage in 44, deg. The second of May, at eleven of clocke of the day, we came voon The Banke in 44. degrees one third and deer, one part. The fixt of the faid moneth, we came to neere the land that we heard the Seabeate against the shore, but we could not descrie the same through the thicknesse of the fogge, whereunte there coasts are subject; which was the cause that we put farther certaine leagues into the Sea. fubicato fogs vntill the next day in the morning, when we descried land, the weather being very cleere, which was the Cape of Saint Marie. The twelfth day following we were ouertaken with a great flaw of winde, which lafted two dayes. The fifteenth of the faid moneth, wee descried the Isles of The Isles of S. Saint Peter. The fewenteenth following we met with a banke of Ice neere Cape de Raie, fixe leagues in length, which caufed vs to ftrike faile all the night, to avoide the danger we might in- 20 Abrake of Lee curre. The next day we fet faile, and deforted Capette Raie, and the Illes of Saint Paul, and Cape 6.ha; ues long de Saint Laurence, which is on the South fide. And from the faid Cape of Saint Laurence vnto Cape de S. Leu. Cape de Raie, is eighteene leagues, which is the breadth of the entrance of the great Gulfe of Canada.

The lame day, about ten of the clocke in the morning, we met with another Hand of Ice, which was about eight leagues long. The twentieth of the faid moneth, we discried an Ille, Antiand of lee which containeth fome five and twenty or thirty leagues in length, which is called the life of Assumption, which is the entrance of the River of Canada. The next day we descried Gachepe which is a very high land, and began to enter into the faid River of Canuda, ranging the South coast vnto the River of Mantanne, which is from the faid Gachepe fixtie five leagues; from the 19 faid River of Mantanne we failed as farre as the Pike, which is twenty leagues, which is on the South fide alfo: from the faid Pike we failed ouer the River vnto the port of Tadoufac, which is fifteene leagues. All these Countries are very high, and barren, yeelding no commoditie. The foure and twentieth of the faid moneth we cast anker before Tadonfae, and the fix and twentieth Gachere cooleg we entred into the faid Port, which is made like to a creeke in the entrance of the River of Saquenay, where there is a very frange current and tide, for the swiftnesse and depth thereof. where

The description formetimes strong windes do blow, because of the cold which they bring with them; it is thought on of the hat the faid River is five and forty or fiftie leagues vnto the first fall, and it commeth from the The Ruer of North North-west. The faid Port of Tadonjac is little, wherein there cannot ride aboue tenor Sagenaf falic h twelve Ships : but there is water enough toward the East, toward the opening of the faid River 40 of Sagenar along by a little hill, which is almost cut off from the maine by the Sea: The rest of the Countrie are very high Mountaines, whereon there is little mould, but rockes and fands full of woods of Pines, Cypresses, Fir-trees, Burch , and some other forts of trees of small price. There is a little Poole neere vnto the faid Port, enclosed with Mountaines couered with woods. At the entrance of the faid Port there are two points, the one on the Welt fide running a league into the Sea, which is called Saint Matthewes point; and the other on the South-east fide, containing a quarter of a league, which is called the point of all the Dinels. The South and South thence to the South-east, and South South-west windes doe strike into the faid hauen. But from Saint Mat-Sca shoare of themes Point, to the said Point of all the Dinels, is very neere a league : Both these Points are dry Canadais about at a low water.

which entring into the Sea, hath 100 miles, and up to the fals (which Voyage followeth) continue th a marucilous breadth, so that it may be for greatnesse reputed greater then any other River in our world, or in the Northerne parts of the New :full also of Lakes and Hands for greater magnificence,

"He feuen and twentieth day we fought the Sauages at the Point of Saint Matthew, which I is a league from Tadoufac, with the two Sauages whom Monfieur du Pour brought with frofts & wars. him, to make report of that which they had seene in France, and of the good entertainement which the King had given them. As foone as we were landed we went to the Caban of their great Sagamo, which is called Anadabijou, where we found him with some eightie or a hundred of his companions, which were making Tabagie, that is to fay, a Feath. Hee received vs very 60 well, according to the cultome of the Countrey, and made vatir downe by him, and all the Sanages fat along one by another on both fides of the faid Cabine. One of the Sauages which we had brought with vs began to make his Oration, of the good entertainement which the king had given them, and of the good viege that they had received in France, and that they might affire

the world to which they willied more good, then to the French. In fine, hee game them all to there is one which deuideth to every man his part in the fame diffies, wherein they feede very filthily, for when their hands be fattie, they rub them on their haire, or elfe on the haire of their dogs, whereof they have flore to hunt with, Before their meate was fodden, one of them role vp, and took a dog, & danced about the faid Kettels from the one end of the Cabin to theother: when he came before the great Segeme, he cast his dog perforce vpon the ground, and then all of them with one voice, cried, ho, ho, which being done he went and far him downe in his place; then immediately another role vp and did the like, and fo they continued untill the meate was fodden. When they had ended their Feaft, they began to dance, taking the heads of their enemies in their hands, which hanged voon the wall behinde them; and in figne of toy there is one or two 30 which fing, moderating their volce by the meature of their hands, which they beate voon their knees, then they reft fometimes, and cry, ho, he, ho; and begin againe to dance, & blow like a man 40 in the forefaid haven of Tadonfae, where our Ship was jat the break of day their faid great Sagamo came out of his Cabine, going round about all the other Cabins, and cried with a loud voice that they should dislodge to goe to Talenfac, where their good friends were. Immediately every man in a trice tooke down his cabin, and the faid grand Captain, fift began to take his cance, & carried it to the Sea, where he embarked his wife and children, & flore of furs, and in like manner did well neere two hundred canowes, which goe firangely; for though our Shallop was well manned,

Theheriumaka

CHAP.6. Faire Caftles. Manner of Dancing, Point of Saint Mathew. themselves that his said Maiestie wished them well, and defired to people their Countrey, and to make peace with their enemies (which are the Irecon) or to fend them forces to vanguish them.

He alio reckoned up the faire Castels, Palaces, Houses, and people which they had seene, and our manner of liuing. He was heard with to great filence, as more cannot be vettered. Now when nemies to de he had ended his Oration, the faid grand Sagamo Anadabijon, hauing heard him attentiuely nadabijon. he had ended his Oration, the faid grand Sagamo Anadabijon, hauing heard him attentiuely nadabijon. he folker Tobacco, and gaue to the faid Monfieur das Pons Granse of Saint Male, and to mee, and to certaine other Sagamor which were by him : after he had taken store of Tobacco, he becan to make his Oracion to alt, speaking diffinctly, resting sometimes a little, and then speaking againe, faying, that doubtletle they ought to be very glad to have his Maieltie for their great The Oration in friend: they answered all with one voyce, ho, ho, ho, which is to say, yea, yea, yea, He proceeding forward in his speech , faid, That he was very well content that his faid Malestie should people their Countrey, and make warre against their enemies, and that there was no Nation in understand what good and prefit they might receive of his faid Maiestie. When hee had ended his forech, we went out of his Cabine, and they began to make their Tabagie or Feaft, which they make with the fielh of Originac, which is like an Oxe, of Beares, of Seales, and Beuers, Orienac a which are the most ordinary victuals which they have, & with great store of wilde Fowle. They Beaft like as had eight or ten Kettelsfull of meate in the middelt of the faid Cabine, and they were fet one Oxe. from another some fix paces, and each one wpon a severall fire. The men fat on both sides the 20 houle (as I faid before) with his difh made of the barke of a tree: and when the meate is fodden.

that is out of breath. They made this triumph for a victory which they had gotten of the Irectio, A victorie se of whom they had flaine some hundred, whose heads they cut off, which they had with them for ten of the Irithe ceremony. They were three Nations when they went to war; the Effectioning, Algorinequins, con and Mountainers, to the number of a thousand, when they went to war against the freeze whom Affected they encountred at the mouth of the River of the laid Irocois, and flew an hundred of them. The war which they make is altogether by furprifes, for otherwise they would be out of hatt; othey The Riner of feare the faid Irocois very much, which are in greater number then the faid Mountainers, Efteche- the waste mins and Algormequins. The twenty eight day of the faid moneth, they encamped themselves The Ireen at

yet they went more fwift then we. There are but two that row, the man and the wife. Their Ca- Two hundred nowes are some eight or nine pales long, and a pace, or a pace & a halfe broad in the middeft, and Canowes, grow sharper & sharper toward both the ends. They are very subject to ouerturning, if one know not how to guide themsfor they are made of the barke of a Birch tree, ffrengthned within with little circles of wood well & handsomely framed, and are so light, that one man will carry one of

them eafily and enery Canowe is able to carry the weight of a Pipe; when they would passe our any land to goe to fome River where they have busines, they carry them with them. Their Cabins are low, made like Tents, couered with the faid barke of a tree, and they leave in the roofe about a Their Cabins foot spacevncoueted, wherby the light commeth in; and they make many fires right in the midit madel ketcate of their Cabin, where they are fometimes ten housholds together. They he vpon skins one by an- and couered other, and their dogs with them. They were about a thouland persons, men, women and children, with the barles The place of the point of S. Matthew, where they were first lodged, is very pleasant; they were at of trees. thebottome of a little hill, which was ful of Fir & Cypreffe trees: vpon this point there is a little Cypreffe trees

level plot, which discovereth far off, & vpon the top of the faid hill, there is a Plain, a league long, 60 and halfe a league broad, couered with trees; the foile is very landy, and is good pasture; all the rest is nothing but Mountains of very bad rocks: the Sea beateth round about the faid hil, which is dry for a large halfe league at a low water.

THe ninth day of June the Sauages began to make mersie together, and to make their feaft, as bumors, jamin I Thate faid before, and to dance for the aforefaid victory which they had obtained against fuperfittion & chest

The Ranke in

1606

S. alarie.

aboue eight leagues long. The lie of Af-Sumption. Gachepe. The River Mantinne. The Pike. Tadousac, from

into Camada. Thit of Sagebars Mapes. preffed to enter on the North fide of Canada about

fixtic miles. The great Sagamo their

The Deccis. Two Sauages brought out of France. Anadabijan,

Sauages which we brought with vs.

their enemies. After they had made good cheere, the Algonmegnins, one of the three Nations.

went cut of their Cabins, and retired themselves apart into a punishe place, and caused all their

women and girles to fit downe in rapkes one by the other, and flood themselves behinde, then

finging all in one time, as I have faid before. And fuddenly all the women and maidens began to

tinging all in one time, as a have had before. And judgenly at the women and majoran began of act of their Mantles of skins, and Hippyred themfollows flates naked, flowing their principles of cord act the heir set the hire of the Porke-pike.

Books-pike.

The principles of the Porke-pike of the Mantles of the principles of the Porke-pike.

The principles of the Porke-pike of the Porke-pi coured treatment was the second to they age at the teep, not reason of which then erfoone beginning against on ing, they let all their Manuelsay they did before. They goe to their manner not out of one place within they dance, and make certaine gestures and motions of the body, but lifting vp one foote and then another, Hamping vpon the ground. While they were dancing of Befour the Se-tion of the Seand wights, perweight and fail to the Mountainers and Exchanging and May 2. Sometimes he role and made a "peech and fail to the Mountainers and Exchangings by the how we reinjoye for the victory which we have obtained of our enemies ye must doe the like, that we may be contented: then they all together cred, ho, ho, to. Affoone as hee was returned to his place, the ereat Sagamo, and all his companions calf off their Mantels, being flarke naked faue their printties, which were courted with a little skin, and tooke each of them what they thought good, as Marachias, Hatchets, Swords, Kettels, Far, Flesh of the Orignac, Seales, in briefe, euery one 20 had a prefent, which they gave the Algoumequine. After all thefe ceremonies the dance ceased, and the faid Algoumequins both men and women carried away their prefents to their lodgings. They chole out allo two men of each Nation of the best disposition, which they caused to run, and he which was the fwiftelt in running had a prefent,

All their people are of a very cheerefull complexion, they laugh for the most part, henertheleffechey are formewhat melancholly. They speake very diffinedly, as though they would make themselves well understood, and they stay quickely bethinking themselves a great while, and then they begin their speech againe : they often vie this fathion in the middelf of their Orations in countaile, where there are none but the principals, which are the ancients : the women and

children are not prefent. All these people sometimes endure so great excremity, that they are al- 30 most confirmed to eate one another, through the great colds and mowes; for the Beats and These Sauages Fowles whereof they fuie, retire themselves into more hot chimates. I thinke if any would teach them how to flue, and to learne to till the ground, and other things, they would elearne very well; of I dilare you that many of them are of good indgement, and aniwere very well to the purpole to any thing that a man full demand of them. They have one naughty qualitie in them,

Their had quare which is, that they are given to revenge, and great lyars, a people to whom you must not give which is, that they are good and flanding on your owne guard. They promise much and per-too much credit, but with reason, and slanding on your owne guard. They promise much and per-forme little. They are for the most part a propie that have no Law, as same as I could see and enforme my selfe of the said great Gagame, who told me, that they constantly believe, that there is one God, which hath made all things: And then I faid vnto him, fince they beleeve in one 40 God onely, How is it that he sent them into this workl, and from whence came they? he answered me, that after God had made all things, he tooke a number of Arrowes, and thucke them in

the Sauages. the ground, from whence men and women grew, which have multiplied in the world vntill this prejent, and had their original on this felhion. I replied vnto him, that this which hee faid was ralle; but that indeed there was one God onely, which had created all things in the earth, and in the heavens : leeing all thele things to perfect, without any body to governe this world beneath, he tooke of the flime of the earth, & thereof made Adem our first Father As Adam fipt, God tooke a rib of the fide of Adam, & thereof made Ene, whom he game him for his companion; and that this was the truth that they and we had our original after this mariner, and not of Arrowes as they beleeved. He faid nothing voto me, faue, that he beleeved rather that which I faid, 10 then that which he told me. I asked him also, whether he beleeved not that there was any other

but one God onely, He told me, that their beliefe was, That there was one God, one Sonne, one Mother, and the Sunne, which were foure; yet that God was about them all; but that the Son They beleene was good and the Sunne in the firmament, because of the good that they received of them; but one God, one Son one Mothat the Mother was naught, and did eate them, and that the Father was not very good. I ther, and the shewed him his errour according to our faith, wherein he gaue mee some small credit. Idemanded of him, whether they had not freme nor heard fay of their ancellors, that God came into the

world. He told me, that he had neuer feene him, but that in old time there were five men which went toward the Sunne ferting, which met with God, who asked them, Whither goe ye They faid, we goe to feeke our liuing : God answered them, you shall finde it here. They went far- 60 ther, without regarding what God had faid unto them : which tooke a flone, and touch-

ed wo of them with it, which were turned into a stone: And hee said againe vnto the other three, Whither goe yee? and they answered as at the first : and God fail to them againe, Goeno further, you shall finde it here. And feeing that nothing came wnto them, they went far-

ther: and God tooks two states, and touched the two first therewith, which were turned ther: and God asked him again, whither go-into flaves; and the fits flaved and would goe no turther: And God asked him again, whither goeft thou! I goe to feeke my living : flay and thou shalt finde it. He stayed without going any further, and God giue him meate, and he did eaternereof; after lie had well fed, hee returned with other Sauages, and cold them all the former frome. He told them also, That another time there was a man which had itore of Tobacco (which is a kinde of hearbe, whereof they take the (moake.) And that God came to this man, and asked him where his Tobacco pine was? The man tooke his Tobacco pipe and gaue it to God, which took-Tobacco a great while a after hee had taken flore of Tobacco, God broke the faid pipe into many peeces : and the man asked him, why to half thou broken my pipe, and fieit that I have no more? And God tooke one which hee had,

and gausit him, and tata vinto him; loe here I gue thee one, carry it to thy great Sagamo, and charge him to keepe it, and if he keepe it well he shall neuer want any thing, nor none of his companions. The faid man tooke the Tobacco pipe, and gaue it to his great Sagamo. which as long as he kept, the Sauages wanted nothing in the world. But after that the faid Sagame loit long as he kept, the Sauages winted nothing in the words. Surface that any sugarment of this Tobacco pips, which was the occasion of great famine, which cometimes they have among time increases. this 1 obacco pro- whither he beleeu: d all this? he faid yea, and that it was true. This I beleeue is more the Sac

the saufe wherefore they lay that God is not very good. But I replied and told him, that God unges. was wholly good; and that without doubt this was the Diuell that appeared to these men, and that if they would believe in God as we doe, they should not want any thing needefull. That 20 the Same which they beheld, the Moone and the Starres were created by this great God, which

hath made heaven and earth, and they have no powerbut that which God hash given them. That we believe in this great God, who by his goo in fe hath tent vs his deare Sonne, which being conceived by the holy Ghoit, tooke humaine field in the Virginall wombe of the Virgin Marie, having bin thirty three yeares on the earth, working infinite miracles, raifing up the dead, healing the ficke, cafting out Dauels, giving fight to the blinde, teaching men the will of God his Father, to terue, honour, and worthip him, did thed his bloud, and fuffred death and paifion for vs, and for our tinnes, and redeemed mankinde, and being buried, he rote againe, he cefcended into hell, and ascended into heasen, where he fitteth at the right hand of God his Father. That this the beleefe of all the Christians, which beleeve in the Father, the Sonne, and he

30 holy Ghoft, which nevertheleffe are not three Gods, but one onely, and one onely God, and one Trinitie, in the which none is before or after the other, none greater or leffe then another. That the Virgin Mary the Mother of the Sonne of God, and all men and women which have fixed in this world, doing the commandements of God, and f. ffring martyrdome for his name lake, and by the permission of God haue wrought miracles, and are Saints in heaven in his Paradite, doe all pray this great divine Maiestie for vs, to pardon vs our faults and our finnes which we doe against his Law and his Commandements : and so by the prayers of the Saints in heaten, and by our prayers which we make to his divine Maiestie, he giveth that which we have neede of, and the Druell hatn no power ouer vs, and can doe vs no harme: That if they had this believe, they should be as we are, and that the Divell should be able to doe them no hurt, and should never wone 40 any thing necessary. Then the faid Sagamo told me, that he approued that which I faid. I asked him what ceremony they vied in praying to their God! He told me, that they vied none other ceremonies, but that every one praied in his heart as he thought good: This is the cause why I beleeue they have no law among them, neither doe they know how to worthip or pray to God,

and line for the most part like brute beafts, and I thinke in short space they would be brong it to begood Christians, if their Countrie were planten, which they defire for the most part. They have among them certaine Sauages which they call Pilotona, which speak with with speak with the Divell, which telleth them what they muit doe, as well for the warre as for other things; and if he should command them to put any enterprise in execution, either to kill a French man,

orany other of their Nation, they would immediately obey his commandement. Also they 50 beleeue that all the dreames which they dreame are true : and indeede there are many of them, which fay that they have feene and dreamed things which doe happen or shall happen. But to speake truely of these things, they are visions of the D well, which doth deceive and seduce them. Loe this is all their beliefe that I could learne of them, which is brutish and bestiall. All these people are well proportioned of their bodies, without any deformitie, they are well fet, and the They paint women are well shapen, fat and full, of a tawnie colour by abundance of a certaine painting with an Olius wherewith they rubbe themselves, which maketh them to be of an Oliue colour. They are colour. apparelled with skins, one part of their bodies is couered, and the other part vincouered; but in the winter they couer all, for they are clad with good Furres, namely with the skins of Originac, of skins. Otters, Beuers, Lea-boores, Stagges, and Deere, whereof they have store. In the winter when

the Snowes are great, they make a kinde of racket which is twice or thrice as bigge as one of Adeliceto go ours in France, which they falten to their feete, and to goe on the Snow without linking; for on the fnow otherwise they could not hunt nor trauaile in many places. They have also a kinde of Marriage, with a Racket. Which is, that when a Milde is foureteene or fifteene yeares old , thee thall have many fernants The marriage and friends, and the may have carnall company with all thole which the liketh, then after five of the Savages.

Sausges which the Diuelia

or fix yeares, the may take which of them the will for her husband, and fo they thall live topether all their life time, except that after they have lived a certaine time together and have no children, the man may forfake her and take another wife, faying that his old wife is nothing worth, fo that the Maides are more free then the married Women. After they be married they be chaite, and their husbands for the most part are realous, which give presents to the Father or Parents of the Maide, which they have married: loe this is the ceremonie and fashion which they vie in their marriages.

Their buriels after the Tartars manner. They beleeue

Touching their burials, when a man or woman dieth, they make a pit, wherein they put all the goods which they have, as Kettels, Furres, Hatchets, Bowes and Arrowes, Apparell. and other things, and then they put the corps into the grave, and cover it with earth, and fet flore 10 of great peeces of wood over it, and one stake they fet vp on end, which they paint with red on the top. They believe the immortality of the Soule, and fay that when they be dead they soe into other Countries to reioyce with their parents and friends. ty of the foule.

He cleventh day of Iune, I went some twelve or fifteene leagues vp Saguenay, which is a

faire River, and of incredible depth; for I beleeue, as farre as I could learne by conference

whence it should come, that it is from a very high place, from whence there defcendeth a fall of

water with great impetuolitie: but the water that proceedeth thereof is not able to make fuch

a Ruer as this; which neuertheleffe holdeth not but from the faid course of water (where the

which space are fortie five or fiftie leagues, and it is a good league and a halfe broad at the most, and a quarter of a league where it is narrowest, which causeth a great current of water. All

the Countrie which I faw, was nothing but Mountaines, the most part of rockes couered with

woods of Fir-trees, Cypreffes, and Birch-trees, the foyle very unpleasant, where I found not

a league of plaine Countrey, neither on the one fide nor on the other. There are certaine hils of Sand and Illes in the faid River, which are very high aboue the water. In fine, they

are very Defarts voide of Beafts and Birds; for Laffure you, as I went on hunting through places which feemed most pleasant voto mee, I found nothing at all, but small Birds which

are like Nightingales, and Swallowes, which come thither in the Summer; for at other times I thinke there are none, because of the excessive cold which is there; this River com- 30

meth from the North-west. They reported vnto me, that having passed the first fall, from

whence the currant of water commeth, they passe eight other fants or fals, and then they tra-

uaile one dayes journey without finding any, then they passe ten other sants, and come into a

Lake, which they passe in two dayes (euery day they trausile at their ease, some twelve or fif-

French Ships bring to the faid Mountainers. The faid Sauages of the North fay, that they fee a

by the North part between the lands; and in very deede it can be nothing elfe. This is that which

N Wednelday the eighteenthday of Iune, we departed from Tadou ac, to go to the Sault: we palled by an Ile, which is called the Ile da lieure, or the Ile of the Hare, which may be

fome two leagues from the Land on the North fide, and fome feuen leagues from the faid Tadon-

fac, and fine leagues from the South Coast. From the Ile of the Hare we ranged the North Coast

about halfe a league, vnto a point that runneth into the Sea, where a man must keepe farther off. 50

The faid point is within a league of the Ile, which is called the Ile da Condre, or the Ile of Fil-

berds, which may be some two leagues in length: And from the said Ile to the Land on the North

fide is a league. The faid He is somewhat even, and groweth sharpe toward both the ends; on the

West end there are Medowes and Points of Rockes which stretch somewhat into the River. The faid He is somewhat pleasant, by reason of the Woods which enuiron the same. There is store of

Slate, and the foyle is formewhat gravelly : at the end whereof there is a Rocke which firetcheth

I have learned of the River of Saguenay.

first fall is) vnto the Port of Tadonfac, which is the mouth of the faid River of Saguenay. in 20

The River of Saguenay, & his originall. Ch47 4. A v.o.ent fall

the immortali-

o. water.

A Mountainous Country.

The report of the beginning of the River of Saguenay. A Lake two daies iournie

teene leagues :) at the end of the Lake there are people lodged : then they enter into three other Rivers, three or foure dayes in each of them; at the end of which Rivers there are two or long. Three other three kinde of Lakes, where the head of Saguenay beginneth : from the which head or Riuers. foring, vnto the faid Port of Tadonfac, is ten dayes journee with their Canowes. On the fide Two or three of the faid Rivers are many lodgingings, whither other Nacions come from the North, to trucke with the faid Mountainers, for skins of Beuers and Marterns, for other Merchandiles, which the Likes, where n the head of Saguenay be-Sea, which is falt. I hold, if this be fo, that it is some gulfe of this our Sea, which difgorgeth it selfe ginneth. That is, 120. leagu es. People of the

North. A falt fea. Iourney to the fall and to certaine llands, arriual at Que bec. Chap.5. The Ifle of the Hare. The Ide of Filberds.

into the Sea about halfe a league. We passed to the North of the said Ile, which is distant from the He of the Hare twelue leagues. The Thursday following we departed from thence, and anchored at a dangerous nooke on the Northfile, where there be certaine Medowes, and a little Riuer, where the Sauager lodge 65 tomprimes. The field by weafful record the Co. 2 and 1 little Riuer, where the Sauager lodge 65 tometimes. The faid day wee ftill ranged the Coast on the North, vnto a place where weeput backeby reasons of the winds which were contrary vnto vs, where there were many Rockes and places very dangeous : here we stayed three dayes wayting for faire weather. All this Coatt is nothing but Mountaynes as well on the South fide as on the North, the most part like the Coast

CHAP. 6. Dangerous Rocks and Flats. Store of Vines. Saint Elov.

of the River of Saguenay. On Sunday the two and twentieth of the faid moneth wee departed to goe to the He of Orleans, in the way there are many Iles on the South shoare, which are low and concred with trees, shewing to be very pleasant, contayning (as I was able to judge) fome two leagues, and one league, and another halfe a league. About thele lles are nothing but Rocks and Flats, very dangerous to passe, and they are distant some two leagues from the mayne Land on the South.

And from thence wee ranged the Ile of Orleans on the Southfide : It is a league from the The Ile of Or-North shoare, very pleasant and levell, contaying eight leagues in length. The Coast on the Leagues South shoare is low land, some two leagues into the Countrey : the faid lands begin to be low oto uer against the saidlle, which beginneth two leagues from the South Coast : to passe by the North fide is very dangerous for the bankes of Sand and Rockes, which are betweene the faid lle and the mayne Land, which is almost all dry at a low water. At the end of the faid Ile I saw a fall of water, which fell from a great Mountaine, of the faid River of Canada, and on the top of the faid Mountaine the ground is levell and pleasant to behold, although within the said Countries a man may fee high Mountaynes which may bee fome twenty, or five and twenty leagues wichin the Lands, which are neere the first Sante of Sagnenay. We anchored at Quebec, which Queben is a Strait of the faid River of Canada, which is some three hundred pales broad : there is at this Straic on the North fide a very high Mountayne, which falleth downe on both fides : all the reft is a leuell and goodly Countrey, where there are good grounds full of Trees, as Okes, Cypreffes, 30 Birches, Firre-trees and Afpes, and other Trees bearing fruit, and wild Vines: Sothat in mine opinion, if they were dreffed, they would be as good as ours. There are along the Coast of the Diamante. faid Quebec Diamants in the Rockes of Slate, which are better then thofeof Alonfon, From the faid Quebec to the Ile of Condre, or Filberds, are nine and twenty leagues.

N Munday the three and twentieth of the faid moneth, we departed from Quebec, where the River beguneth to grow broad fometimes one league, then a league and an halfe or Of the point two leagues at most. The Countrey groweth still fairer and fairer, and are all low grounds, of S. crair, of without Rockes, or very few. The North Coast is full of Rockes, and bankes of Sand Jonathan Rockes and Bankes of Sand Jonathan without Rockes, or very few. The North Coast is full of Rockes and bankes of Sand : you must Batilean, of the take the South fale, about some halfe league from the shore. There are certaine small Rivers which Rivers, Rocks, 30 are not nauigable, but only for the Canowes of the Sauges , wherein there be many fals. Wee les, Lands, anchored as high as Saint Croix, which is diffant from Quebee fifteene leagues. This is a low Trees, Fruits, point, which rifeth up on both fides. The Countrey is faire and leuell, and the foyles better then Countries, in any place that I have feene, with plenty of wood, but very few Firre-trees and Cyprelies, which are trong There are in these parts great store of Vines, Peares, imall Nuts, Cheries, Goode-beries, red and Quebes vino greene, and certaine imali Roots of the bignesse of a little Nut, refembling Musheroms in taste, The 3. Rivers. greene, and certaine small Roots of the bigness or a sittle runs, retembring remarked in talle, Chap 6.
Which are very good roaded and fod. All this soyle is blacke, without any Rockes, faue that Saint Orbix. there is great flore of Slate: The foyle is very fote, and if it were well manured it would yeeld 15, leagues. g eat increase. On the Northilde there is a River which is called Batifcan, which goeth farre in- Ground Nuts. to the Countrey, whereby fometimes the Algenmequins come downe : and another on the fame The Ruce Ed-40 fide three leagues from the faid Saint Croix, in the way from Quebec, which is, that where Iac- ifcan ques Quartier was in the beginning of the Discouery which he made hereof, and hee passed no farther. The faid River is pleafant, and goeth farre vp into the Countries. All this North Coaft is

very leuell and delectable. On Tuesday the source and twentieth of the faid moneth, wee departed from the faid Saint Cross, where we stayed a tyde and an halfe, that we might passe the next day following by day light, because of the great number of Rockes which are thwart the River (a strange thing to behold) which is in a manner dry at a low water : But at halfe flood, a man may beginne to paffe fafely; yet you must take good heed, with the Lead alwayes in hand. The tyde floweth heere A goodly almost three fathomes and an halfe : the farther we went, the fairer was the Countrey. We went fome five leagues and an halfe, and anchored on the North fide. The Wednelday following wee

50 departed from the faid place, which is a flatter Countsey then that which we paffed before, full of great flore of Trees as that of Saint Croix. We passed hard by a little lie, which was full of An He full of Vines, and came to an Anchor on the South fide neere a little Hill: but beeing on the top thereof Vines.

There is at other little He three leagues from Saint Croix, toyning neere the South shore. Wee departed from the faid Hill the Thurlday following, and paffed by a little Ile, which is neere the Sixe forall North shoare, where I saw fixe small Rivers, whereof two are able to beare Boars farre vp, and Rivers. another is three hundred pases broad : there are certaine llands in the mouth of it; it goeth farre vp into the Countrey; it is the deepest of all the reit which are very pleasant to behold, the foyle 6) being full of Trees which are like to Walnut-trees, and have the same smell : but I saw no Fruit,

which maketh me doubt : the Sanages told me that they beare Fruit like ours. In passing further we met an Ile, which is called Saint Eley, and another little Ile, which is hard by the North shoare : we passed betweene the faid He and the North shore, where betweene the one and the other are some hundred and fiftie paces. From the faid Ile we paged a league and

Another (mall

A herrer remperame. 15 leagues.

be planted,

A great Lake. The head of Saguetay 106. leagues off.

into the Woods, the foile is good. The Friday following we departed from this Ile, coasting full the North file hard by the shoare, which is low and full of good Trees, and in great number as farre as the three Rivers, where it beginneth to have another temperature of the feafon . fomewhat differing from that of Saint Croix : because the Trees are there more forward then in any place that hitherto I had feene. From the three Rivers to Saint Croix are fifteene leagues. In this River are fixe Ilands, three of which are very small, and the others some five or sixe hundred in lland fi. to paces long, very pleasant and fertile, for the little quantitie of ground that they containe. There to is one lland in the middeft of the laid River, which looketh directly vpon the passage of the Ruer of Canada, and commandeth the other Ilands which lye further from the shoare, as well on the one fide as on the other, of foure or fine hundred paces : it rifeth on the South fide, and falleth fomewhat on the North fide. This in my judgement would be a very fit place to inhabit; and it might bee quickly fortified : for the situation is strong of it selfe,, and neere vnto a great Lake. which is about four leagues distant, which is almost inyned to the River of Saguenay, by the report of the Sauages, which travell almost an hundred leagues Northward, and passe many Saules. and then goe by Land some fine or fixe leagues, and enter into a Lake, whence the faid River of Saguener receiveth the best part of his Spring, and the faid Sauages come from the faid Lake to Tadoufac.

an halfe, on the South fide neere vnto a River, whereon Canowes might goe. All this Coaft on

the North fide is very good, one may palle freely there, yet with the Lead in the hand, to avoid

certaine points. All this Coast which we ranged is mouing Sand; but after you be entred a little

Moreover, the planting of The three Rivers would be a benefit for the liberty of certaine Nations, which dare not come that way for feare of the faid Irocois their enemies, which border vpon all the faid River of Canada. But this place being inhabited, we might make the Irocois and the other Sauages friends, or at least wife under the fauour of the faid Plantation, the faid Sauages might paffe freely without feare or danger : because the said place of The shree Riners is a passage. All the soyle which I saw on the North shoare is sandy. Wee went vp aboue a league A great course into the faid River, and could passe no further, by reason of the great current of water. We took a Boate to learch vp further, but we went not past a league, but we met a very Strait full of water, of some twelue paces, which caused vs that we could not passe no further. All the ground which I faw on the bankes of the faid River rifeth more and more, and is full of Firre-trees and 10 Cypresse Trees, and hath very few other Trees.

Great Lake di fcribed and River of the Irocois. Chap. 7. The Lake of Arzolefme.

15. leagues.

N the Saturday following, we departed from The three Rivers, and anchored at a Lake, which is four leagues distant. All this Countrey from The three Rivers to the entrance of the faid Lake is low ground, even with the water on the North fide; and on the South fide it is fomewhat higher. The faid Countrey is exceeding good, and the most pleasant that hitherto we had frene: the Woods are very thinne, so that a man may trauell easily through them. The next day being the nine and twentieth of Iune, we entred into the Lake, which is some fifteene leagues in length, and some seuen or eight leagues broad : At the entrance thereof on the South-A great River, fide within a league there is a River which is very great, and entreth into the Countrey some fix. 40 tie or eightie leagues, and continuing along the same Coast, there is another little River, which pierceth about two leagues into the Land, and commeth out of another small Lake, which may contains fome three or foure leagues. On the North fide where the Land sheweth very high, a man may fee some twentie leagues off; but by little and little the Mountaynes beginne to fall toward the West, as it were into a flat Countrey. The Sauages fay, that the greatest part of these Mountaynes are bad foyle. The faid Lake

hath some three fathoms water whereas we passed, which was almost in the middest: the length lieth East and West, and the breadth from North to the South. I thinke it hath good fish in it, of fuch kinds as we have in our owne Countrey. Wee passed it the very same day, and anchored about two leagues within the great River which goeth vp to the Sault : In the mouth whereof 50 are thirtie imall Ilands, as farre as I could difcerne; some of them are of two leagues, others a league and an halfe, & fome leffe, which are full of Walnut-trees, which are not much different from ours; and I thinke their Walnuts are good when they bee ripe : I faw many of them under the Trees, which were of two forts, the one small, and the others as long as a mans Thumbe, Store of Vines, but they were rotten. There are also store of Vines vpon the bankes of the faid Hands. But when the waters be great, the most part of them is couered with water. And this Countrey is yet better then any other which I had feene before.

The last day of Iune wee departed from thence, and passed by the mouth of the River The River of of the Irocois; where the Saunger which came to make warre against them, were lodged Their manner and fortified. Their Fortresse was made with a number of posts tet very close one to ano. 62 ther, which is yield on the one fide on the banke of the great River of Canada, and the of fortification with Askes. other on the banke of the River of the Irecois : and their Boates were ranged the one by the other neere the shoare, that they might she away with speed, if by chance they should bee surginfed by the Irocois. For their Fort is couered with the barke of Okes, and ferneth them for nothing elic, but to have time to embarke themselves. We went up the River of the Irocois some fine or fixe leagues, and could passe no farther with our Pinnasse, by reason of the great course of water which descendeth, and also because we cannot goe on Land, and draw the Pinnasse for the multitude of Trees which are vpon the bankes.

CHAP. 6. Wholfome River. Many Iles and fruitfull trees. Low Land.

Seeing we could not passe any further, we tooke our Skiffe, to see whether the current were more gentle, but going vp fome two leagues, it was yet ftronger, and wee could goe no higher. Being able to doe no more we returned to our Pinnaffe. All this River is some three hundred or foure hundred paces broad, and very wholfome. Wee faw fine Ilands in it, diffant one from the other a quarter or halfe a league, or a league at the most : one of which is a league long, which is 10 the necreit to the mouth, and the others are very small. All these Countries are coursed with Fine I ands. Trees and low Lands, like those which I had seene before; but here are more Firres and Cypresfesthen in other places. Neuerthelese, the foile is good, although it bee somewhat sandy. This River runneth in a manner South-west. The Sanages lay, that some fifteene leagues from the place where we were vp the River, there is a Sault which falleth downe from a very fleepe place, where they carry their Canowes to paffe the same some quarter of a league, and come into a Lake; most Southat the mouth whereof, are three Hands, and being within the fame they meete with more Hes: weft. This Lake may containe some fortie or fiftie leagues in agth, and some fine and twentie leagues A Lake some in breadth, into which many Rivers fall, to the number of tea, which carrie Canowes very far fortie or fittee in oreauth, into wince many thead of this Lake, there is another fall, and they enter againe in-

20 to another Lake, which is a sgreat as the former, at the head whereof the Irocou are lodged. They of the Irocou. fay moreover, that there is a River, which runneth vnto the Coaft of Florida, whether it is from The goodnesse the faid laft Lake some hundred, or an hundred and fortie leagues. All the Countrey of the Iro- and shortwise the faid last Lake some hundred, or an numerous and roster traggers and the temperate, without much terrof the case is formewhat Mountaynous, yet notwithstanding exceeding good, temperate, without much Country of Winter, which is very short there.

Free our departure from the River of the Irosou, wee anchored three leagues beyond the Their arrival A fame, on the North fide. All this Countrie is a lowe Land, replenished with all forts of at the Sault or trees, which I have spoken of before. The first day of July we coasted the North fide, where the Fallof the Riwood is very thinne, and more thinne then wee had feene in any place before, and all good land uer of Canada, 30 for tillage, I went in a Canoa to the South shoare, where I saw a number of Iles, which have thereof. Cha. 8. many truitfull trees, as Vines, Wal-nurs, Hafel-nuts, and a kinde of fruit like Cheft-nuts, Che-Fruitfull Trees ries, Oskes, Aspe, Hoppes, Ashe, Beech, Cyprelles, very few Pines and Firre-trees. There are of many lores. alio other trees which I knew not, which are very pleafant. Weefound there flore of Strawberries, Rasp berries Good berries red, greene, and blue, with many small fruits, which growe there among great abundance of graffe. There are also many wilde beafts, as Orignas, Stagges, Orignas are be-Does, Buckes, Beares, Porkepickes, Conies, Foxes, Beaners, Otters, Muske-rats, and certaine for faid to bee other kindes of beafts which I doe not knowe, which are good to eate, and whereof the Sauages haps Buffes. line. Wee passed by an Ile, which is very pleasant, and containeth some source leagues in length, Listertor, that and halte a league in breadth. I faw toward the South two high Mountaines, which she wed Orignaes are 4º some twentie leagues within the Land. The Sanages told mee , that here beganne the first fall Edans. of the foresaid Ruer of the Irocou. The Wednesday following wee departed from this place, Apleasant Ile, and fayled fome five or fixe leagues. Wee faw many Ilands: the Land is there very lowe, and Many Ilands.

these les are couered with trees, as those of the River of the Irocais were, The day following, being the third of July, we ranne certaine leagues, and passed likewise by July ?. many other Ilands, which are excellent good and pleasant, through the great store of Medowes Many more which are thereabout, as well on the shoare of the maine Land, as of the other llands: and all the Woods are of very small growth, in comparison of those which wee had passed. At length We came this very day to the entrance of the Sault or Fall of the great River of Canada, with The entrance fauourable wind; and wee met with an Ile, which is almost in the middest of the said entrance, of the Sault or 50 which is a quarter of a league long, and passed on the South side of the said le, where there was not past three, foure or fine foot water, and sometimes a fathome or two, and straight on the Anile. fudden wee found agains not past three or foure foot. There are many Rockes, and small Hands, whereon there is no wood, and they are even with the water. From the beginning of the forefaid Ile, which is in the middeft of the faid entrance, the water beginneth to runne with a great force. Although we had the wind very good, yet wee could not with all our might make any rentol water, great way: neuertheleffe wee paffed the faid He which is at the entrance of the Sault or Fall. When wee perceived that wee could goe no further, wee came to an anchor on the North shoare ouer against a small Hand, which aboundeth for the most part with those kinde of fruits which I have spoken of before. Without all delay wee made ready our skiffe, which wee had made of 60 purpose to passe the said Sault: whereinto the said Monsteur de Pont and my selfe entred, with Monsteur du certaine Sauages, which we had brought with vs to flew vs the way. Departing from our Pin- Pont no Monnace, we were fearfe gone three hundred paces, but we were forced to come out, and caule certain four du Cham. Mariners to goe into the water to free our Skiffe. The Canoa of the Sauages paffed early. Wee Planefearch met with an infinite number of small Rockes, which were even with the water, on which wee the Sank,

touched oftentimes.

the Irocois.

There

Two leagues. 30. ma! Ilands.

Wal nuts of Good Countrics.

Two crear Hands

There be two great Hands, one on the North fide, which containeth fome fifteene leagues in length, and almost as much in breadth, beginning some twelve leagues vp within the River of Canada, 2011g toward the River of the Irocom, and endeth beyond the Sault. The Hand which is on the South fide is some source leagues long, and some halfe league broad. There is also another lland, which is neere to that on the North fide, which may bee some halfe league long, and fome quarter broad: and another small Hand which is betweene that on the North fide, and another neerer to the South shoare, whereby wee passed the entrance of the Sault. This entrance being paffed, there is a kinde of Lake, wherein all thefe Ilands are, some fine leagues long and A kind of Lake almost as broad, wherein are many small Ilands which are Rockes. There is a Mountaine neere fom: s.leagues almost as proad, wherein sie than a the faid Sault which diffcouereth farre into the Countrie, and a little River which falleth from Io 3. of 4. Mount the faid Mountaine into the Lake. On the South fide are fome three or foure Mountaines, which freme to be about fifteene or fixteene leagues within the Land. There are also two Rivers ; one. which goe: h to the first Lake of the River of the Irocois, by which fometimes the Algounegains inuade them : and another which is necrevato the Sault, which runneth not faire into

LIBVIII.

South fide. Two Rivers.

The furie of the fall of

w.cer. The Stult a league broad.

rer about the Ten Sauks m.r. Temperate certaine mi-A draught of the Sauages. The first rethe Head of the River. A Riuer runtric of the Al-

> learnes. Another Lake of 4. lengues. Five other Saults. A Lake of 80. leagues long. Brack:fh water Ir feemeth hereby to srend Cash-60, leagues long, very brackith.

A Strait of 2.

geumequins.

A Like of 15.

At our comming neere to the faid Sault with our Skiffe and Canoa, I affure you, I neuer faw any threame of water to fall downe with fuch force as this doth; although it bee not very high, being not in some places past one or two fathoms, and at the most three: it falleth as it were steppe by steppe: and in enery place where it hath some small height, it maketh a strong boyline with the force and itrength of the running of the water. In the breadth of the faid Sault, an which may containe some league, there are many broad Rockes, and almost in the middest, there are very narrow and long Hands, where there is a Fail as well on the fide of the faid Hes which are toward the South, as on the North fide : where it is fo dangerous, that it is not polfible for any man to passe with any Boar, how small soener it be. We went on land through the Woods, to fee the end of this Sault : where, after wee had trauelled a league, weefaw no more The swift cur. Rockes nor Falls . but the water runneth there so swiftly as it is possible : and this current larent of the wa- feeth for three or foure leagues : fo that it is in vaine to imagine, that a man is able to paffe the faid Saults with any Boats. But he that would passe them, must fit himselfe with the Canoas of the Sauages, which one man may eafily carrie. For to carrie Boats is a thing which cannot be done in to fhort time as it should bee to bee able to returne into France, vnlesse a man would to winter there. And beside this first Sault, there are ten Saults more, the most part hard to passe. aire, and good So that it would be a matter of great paines and travell to bee able to fee and doe that by Boat which a man might promife himselfe, without great cost and charge, and also to bee in danger and states in the contravel in varie. But with the Canoas of the Sauges a man may travell freely and readily into all Countries, as well in the small asin the great Rivers: So that directing himselfe by the meanes of the faid Sauages and their Canoas, a man may fee all that is to be feene, good and bad, within the force of a yeere or two. That little way which wee trauelled by Land on the fide of the faid Sault, is a very thinne Wood, through which men with their Armes may march eafily, without any trouble; the aire is there more gentle and temperate, and the foyle better then in portor the place that I had seene, where is store of such wood and fruits, as are in all other places be- 40 fore mentioned : and it is in the latitude of 45, degrees and certaine minutes.

When we taw that we could doe no more, we returned to our Pinnace ; where we examined the Sauages which we had with vs, of the end of the River, which I caused them to draw with into the Coun. their hand, and from what pare the Head thereof came. They told vs, that beyond the first Suit that we had feene, they travelled fome ten or fifteene leagues with their Canoas in the Riuer, where there is a River which tunneth to the dwelling of the Algoumequins, which are some fixty leagues distant from the great River; and then they passed five Saults, which may containe from the first to the last eight leagues, whereof there are two where they carrie their Canoas to palle them : euery Sault may containe halfe a quarter or a quarter of a league at the most. And then they come into a Lake, which may be fifteene or fixteene leagues long. From thence they 50 enter againe into a River which may be a league broad, and travell tome two leagues in the fame; and then they enter into another Lake some foure or fine leagues long : comming to the end thereof, they passe fine other Saults, distant from the first to the last some fine and twenty or thirty leagues; whereof there are three where they carrie their Canoas to palle them, and thorow the other two they doe but draw them in the water, because the current is not there so ftrong, nor fo bad, as in the others. None of all these Saults is so hard to passe, as that which we faw. Then they come into a Lake, which may containe forme eighty leagues in length, in which Another Lake are many Ilands, and at the end of the lime the water is brackish, and the Winter gentle. At the end of the faid Lake they passe a Sault which is somewhat high, where little water descendeth : there they carrie their Canoas by land about a quarter of a league to paffe this Sault. From 60 thence they enter into another Lake, which may be some fixty leagues long, and that the water thereof is very brackish: at the end thereof they come vnto a Strait which is two leagues leagues broad. Another migo broad, and it goeth farre into the Countrie. They told vs, that they themfelues had pasted no farther; and that they had not feene the end of a Lake, which is within fifteene or fixteene

leagues of the farthest place where themselves had beene, nor that they which told them of it. had knowne any man that had feene the end thereof, because it is so great that they would not hizard themselues to sayle farre into the same, for feare lest some storme or gust of winde should hizara themiciaes to 17. They fay that in the Summer the Sunne doth fet to the North of the faid Lake, The Summer the Sunne doth fet to the North of the faid Lake, The Summer the Sunne doth fet to the North of the faid Lake, The Summer the Sunne doth fet to the North of the faid Lake, The Summer the Sunne doth fet to the North of the faid Lake, The Summer the Sunne doth fet to the North of the faid Lake, The Summer the Sunne doth fet to the North of the faid Lake, The Summer the Sunne doth fet to the North of the faid Lake, The Summer the Sunne doth fet to the North of the faid Lake, The Summer the Sunne doth fet to the North of the faid Lake, The Summer the Sunne doth fet to the North of the faid Lake, The Summer the Sunne doth fet to the North of the faid Lake, The Summer the Sunne doth fet to the North of the faid Lake, The Summer the Sunne doth fet to the North of the faid Lake, The Summer the Sunne doth fet to the North of the Summer the Sunne doth fet to the North of the Sunne doth fet to the Sunne doth fet to the North of the Sunne doth fet to and in the Winter it feeteth as it were in the middeft thereof: That the water is there excee- femation of a falt, to wit, asialt as the Sex water. I asked them whether from the last Lake which they had great Lake, frent, the water descended alwaies downe the Riter comming to Gafebepay? They told me, no; her faid, that from the third Lake onely it descended to Gaschepay: But that from the last Sault, water. which is fomewhat high, as I have faid, the water was almost still; and that the faid Lake

10 might take his course by other Rivers, which passe within the Lands, either to the South, or to Many Rivers the North, whereof there are many that runne there, the end whereof they fee not. Now, in running four the North, whereor there are many that runne there, the character what or they have not all Sault, and north, my judgement, if so many Rivers fall into this Lake, having so small a course at the faid Sault, Hadson River my rues seeds of necessitie fall out, that it must have his issue forth by some exceeding great River. may be one of But that which maketh me beleeue that there is no River by which this Lake doth iffue forth thefe. (considering the number of so many Rivers as fall into it) is this, that the Savages have not An exceeding feene any River, that runneth through the Countries, faue in the place where they were. Which great River. maketh me beleeue that this is the South Sea, being falt as they fay : Neuertheleffe we may not The fouth Sea. ome fo much credit thereunto, but that it must bee done with apparent reasons, although there be some small shew thereof. And this affuredly is all that hitherto I have seene and heard of the

20 Sauages, touching that which we demanded of them.

VV Ee departed from the faid Sault on Friday the fourth day of Iuly, and returned the Of Conda, and it men day to the River of the Irocois. On Sunday the fixth of Iuly wee departed from of the number thence, and anchored in the Lake. The Monday following wee anchored at the three Rivers. Lakes which it This day wee fayled fome foure leagues beyond the faid three Rivers. The Tuesday following passess by. we came to Quebec; and the next day wee were at the end of this Ile of Orleans, where the Satages came to vs, which were lodged in the maine Land on the North fide. Wee examined two July 4. or three Algoumiquins, to fee whether they would agree with those that wee had examined touching the end and the beginning of the faid River of Canada. They faid, as they had drawne Another reout the shape thereof , that having passed the Sault , which wee had seene , some two or three port of the ALleagues, there goeth a River into their dwelling, which is on the North fide. So going on for- gournequin Saward in the faid great River, they passe a Sault, where they carrie their Canoas, and they come uages.

to paffe fine other Saults, which may containe from the first to the last some nine or ten leagues, and that the faid Saults are not hard to paffe, and they doe but draw their Canoas in the most part of the faid Saults or Falls, faming at two, where they carrie them: from thence they enter into a River, which is as it were a kinde of Lake, which may containe some fixe or seven leagues: A River or and then they passe fine other Falls, where they draw their Canoas as in the first mentioned, fauing in two, where they carrie them as in the former: and that from the first to the last there are some twenty or fine and twenty leagues. Then they come into a Lake contaying some A Lake 150.

hundred and fifty leagues in length : and foure or fine leagues within the entrance of that Lake leagues long. there is a River which goeth to the Algormequins toward the North; and another River which A River on the goeth to the Irocois, whereby the said Algoumequins and Irocois make warre the one against the ing toward the other. Then comming to the end of the faid Lake, they meete with another Fall, where they carrie their Canoas. From thence they enter into another exceeding great Lake, which may A Riser on containe as much as the former: They have beene but a very little way in this last Lake, and the south fide. haue heard fay, that at the end of the faid Lake there is a Sea, the end whereof they haue not Anotherexfeene, neither have heard that any have feene it. But that where they have beene, the water is Lake. not falt, because they have not entred farre into it; and that the course of the water commeth A Sea, the end from the Sun-fetting toward the East; and they knowe not, whether beyond the Lake that whereof the

they have seene, there be any other course of water that goeth Westward. That the Sunne set- Sauages never teth on the right hand of this Lake: which is, according to my inagement, at the North-west, It seemed to little more or leffe; and that in the first great Lake the water freezeth not (which maketh mee lie fouthward. judge that the climate is there temperate) and that all the Territories of the Algoumequins are lowe grounds, furnished with small store of wood: And that the coast of the Irocois is Mountainous, neuertheleffe they are excellent good and fertile foyles, and better then they have feene any where elfe: That the faid Irocois relide some fifty or fixty leagues from the said great Lake. And this affuredly is all which they have told mee that they have feene: which differeth very little from the report of the first Sauages. This day wee came within some three leagues of the The Ile Coudres Ile of Condres or Filberds.

On Thursday the tenth of the said moneth, wee came within a league and an halfe of the Lieure or of Ile Du Lieure, or Of the Hare, on the North fide, where other Sauges came into our Pinnace, the Hare, among whom there was a young man , an Algonmequin, which had travelled much in the faid The thirdregreat Lake. Wee examined him very particularly, as wee had done the other Sauages. Hee told port made by vs, that having passed the faid Fall which wee had seene, within two or three leagues there is a agreat Travel

lea ues long.

A very great Whole falt A great and maine Sea. A River which goeth to the Alcoumequias.

River, which goeth to the faid Alecumequins, where they be lodged; and that passing vo the orear River of Canada, there are five Falls, which may containe from the first to the last some eight or nine leagues, whereof there beethree where they carrie their Canoas, and two others wherein they draw them : that each of the faid Falls may be a quarter of a league long : then they come into a Like, which may containe some fitteene leagues. Then they palle fine other Falk, which may containe from the the first to the last some twenty or fine and twenty leagues; where there are not past two of the said Falls which they p. se with their Canoas, in the other three they doe An exceeding but draw them. From thence they en. or into an exceeding great Lake, which may containe great Like 300 fome three hundred leagues in length : when they are paffed some hundred leagues into the faid Lake, they meet with an Iland, which is very great; and beyond the faid Iland the water is In brickish: But when they have passed some hundred leagues farther, the water is yet falter: and Brocks flowater. comming to the end of the faid Lake, the water is wholly falt. Farther he faid, that there is a More brackith Fall that is a league broad, from whence an exceeding current of water descendeth into the faid Lake. That after a man is passed this Fall, no more land can be scene neither on the one side nor on the other, but fo great a Sca, that they never have feene the end thereof, nor have heard tell. that any other have icene the fame. That the Sunne fetteth on the right hand of the faid Lakes and that at the entrance thereof there is a River which goeth to the Algoumequins, and another River to the Irocois, whereby they warre the one against the other. That the Countrie of the Irocos is somewhat mountainous, yet very fertile, where there is store of Indian Wheat and other fruits, which they have not in their Countrie: That the Countrie of the Algoumequins 20 is lowe and fruitfull. I enquired of them, whether they had any knowledge of any Mines! They told ys, that there is a Nation which are called, the good Irocois, which come to exchange for merchanufes, which the French thips doe give to the Algournequins, which fay, that there is A Mine of fine toward the North a Mine of fine Copper, whereof they shewed vs certaine Bracelets, which they had received of the fand Good Irocous; and that if any of vs would goe thither, they would bring them to the place, which should bee appointed for that butinesse. And this is all which I could learne of the one and the other, differing but very little; faue that the fecond which were examined, faid, that they had not tafted of the falt water : for they had not beene so faire within the faid Lake, as the others : and they differ some small deale in the length of the way, the one fort making it more short, and the other more long. So that, according to their report, from 10 the Sault or Fall where wee were, is the space of some foure hundred leagues wnto the Salt Sea. which may be the South Sea, the Sunne fetting where they fay it doth. On Friday the tenth of the faid moneth we returned to Tadoufae, where our ship lay.

leagues from the first Sault to the South

Ccs.

Their Voyage from Tadoufac to the lle "ercee: of many forts of Mines.

Chap. 10. to Fadoufac. Armouchides The defetiption of the Port of Gache-

The Bay of aduenture.

The Bay of Heate.

The River of Mautanne Trearcand Mi-The Kiuer Sea A Mine of Copper.

Sioone as wee were come to Tadonfac, wee embarqued our felues againe to goe to Gachegag, A which is diltant from the faid Tadonfac about tome hundred leagues. The thirteenth day of the faid moneth we met with a companie of Sauges, which were lodged on the South fide, almost in the mid-way betweene Tadonfae and Gachepay. Their Sagamo or Captaine which led and Courries, them is called Armouebides, which is held to be one of the wifeft and most hardy among all the Sauages: Hee was going to Tadoufac to exchange Arrowes, and the flesh of Orignars, which 48 found foundry they have for Beauers and Marterns of the other Sauages, the Mountainers, Effechement, and Algoumequins.

The fifteenth day of the faid moneth we came to Gachepay, which is in a Bay, about a league from Gabers and a halfe on the North fide. The faid Bay containeth some feuen or eight leagues in length, and at the mouth thereof foure leagues in breadth. There is a Ruer which runneth fome thirty leagues vp into the Countrie: Then we faw another Bay, which is called the Bay des Mollus, or the Bay of Cods, which may be some three leagues long, and as much in bredth at the mouth, From thence we come to the He Percee, which is like a Rocke, very fleepe rifing on both fides, wherein there is a hole, through which Shalops and Boats may paffe at an high water : and at a lowe water one may goe from the maine Land to the faid lie , which is not pait foure or fine co hundred paces off. Moreouer, there is another Hand in a manner South-east from the He Perces about a league, which is called the Ile de Bonne-admenture, and it may bee some halfe a league The II. de Bos. long. All thefe places of Gachepay, the Bay of Cods, and the Ile Percee, are places where mey make dry and greene Fish. When you are peffed the Ile Percee, there is a Bay which is called they Bay of Heate, which runneth as it were Welt South-well, some foure and twenty leagues into the land, containing some fifteene leagues in breadth at the mouth thereof. The Sauages of Canada fay, that up the great River of Canada, about fome fixtie leagues, ranging the South coaft, there is a small River called Mantanne, which runneth some eighteene leagues vp into the Countreys and being at the head thereof, they carrie their Canowes about a league by land, and they come into the laid Bay of Heate, by which they goe fometimes to the Ifle Percee. Allo 60 they goe from the faid Bay to Tregate and M. Jamichy. Running along the faid coast we passe by many Ricers, and come to a place where there is a River which is called Souricona, where Monfieur Prenert was to difcourr a Mine of Copper. They goe with their Conowes up this River three or foure dayes, then they passe three or foure leagues by land, to the faid Mine, which is

hard vpon the Sea thoate on the South ade. At the mouth of the faid River, there is an Inara vpou une sa moothe Sea; from the faid Illand vnto the Isle Percer, 18 fome fixtie or fe-Anlland. man 19115 and following the faid coast, which trendeth toward the East, 901 meete A Scar bementic response which is two leagues broad, and fine and twenty leagues long. On the Extitide of Cape arena with a service is called the like of Saint Learence, where Cape Breton is; and in this place a Na- and the maine tion of Sauages, called the Sauricais, doe winter.

Paffing the Strait of the lies of Saint Lawrence, and ranging the South-west Coast, you come to a Bay which is yneth hard vpouthe Myne of Copper. Pailing farther there is a River, which munch threaffere unfour elegues into the Country, which reacheth neere to the Lake of to the lessels, whereast the said Sauges of the South-west Confirmake warre whos therm, Ioward whereby the be an exceeding great benefit, if there might be found a parties on the Could of Floride Heefe to finage make the land great Lake, where the warner is tale; siwell for the Manigation of Thips, which libored not the sasta. bet librecht to lo munty penils anthey are in Canada, se for the (hortning of the way about titree hundred leagues. And at is mad certaine, the there are Rivers on the Goaff of Florida, which are not yet dricourned, which reeroe up arros to Gountries, where the folic is exceeding good and announter fertile, and very good Hauens. The Country and Coaft of Farida may had another temperature of the feat on, and may be amore tertile in abundance of fruites and other things, then that or Pregnate which I have feene : But at cannot have more even not better fayles, then those which we have

feene.

The Sauages say, that in the fortistid great Bay of Here there is a River, which runneth vp A River.

A Lakt owners wo some twentie leagues into the Coun rey, at the head whereof there is a Lake, which may be to agree in about ewentue leagues in compaile, wherein is little flore of water, and the Summer it is dried compaile. 40, where n they find, about a foot and an halfe under the ground a kind-of Metall like A metall like to iduor, which i showed theme, and that in another place neers the laid Lake there is a Myne of Siner. Copper. And this is that which I learned of the foreignd Savages.

VV E departed from the the the gase the ninteenth day of the faid moneth to returne to Ta-Our enume from the little doubles. When we wook avenue three begues of Capelle Vifuse, or the Biffungs Cape, percet to Tawe were encountred wish a florme which lefted two dayes; which forced vs to put roomer with dayer, with 30 agreat creake, and to tlay for faire weather. The day following we departed, and were encountable description tred with another storme : Being tosh to par roome, and thinking to gaine way wee touched on of the ite the North shore the sight and twentieth day of Laty ithe creeke willich is very had, because of the edges of Rockes which lie share. This creeke isin gas degrees and certaine minutes; The next day we anchored neeres River, swhich is alled Sant Uffergenier River, where at a fall Sea is Byes, and, fore three fathomes water, and a fathome and an halfe at a low vaster; this River goods fare which is alled Sant Uffergenier River. into the Land. As facre as I could fee within the Land on the Baft fhoare, there is a fift of water which entreth into the faid River , and falleth fome fiftie or fixtie fathomes downe, from whence commeth the greatest part of the water which descended downe. At the mouth thereof there is a banke of Sand, whereon at the abbe is but halfe a fa home water. All the Coaft to- thouse. 40 ward the East is mousing Sanda there is a point somehalfe league from the faid Rinet, which The River of

ftretcheth nalfea league into the See : and toward the Weft there is a small lland; this place is in Salm adapted stretcheth natical league into the net and toward the west there are a small than the passes of the fitted degrees. All chefe Countries are exceeding bad, full of First-trees. The Land here is some very bash what high, but notio high as that on the Southfide. Some three leagues beyond we paffed neere Countries. vnto another River, which feemed to be very great, yet barred for the most part with Rockes; Some eight leagues farther there are Pount which runneth a league and an halfe into the Sea, Apoint that where there is not paft a fathome and an halfe of water. When you are paffed this Point, there sunsoch iato is another about foure leagues off, where is water enough. All this Coast is low and tandie. Foure the fealeagues beyond this there is a creeke where a River entreth : many thips may paffe heare on the Agood Creek, Well fide : this is a low point, which runneth about a league into the Seasyou must runne along where many the Easterne shoare some three hundred paces to enter into the same. This is the best Hauen ships may rider

50 which is all along the North moare; but it is very dangerous in going thither, because of the flats and sholds of fand, which lye for the most part all along the theare, almost two leagues into the Sea. About fix leagues from thence, there is a Bay where there is an Isle of fand; all this Bay is A Bay. very shallow except on the East file, whereit hath about foure fathoms water : within the channell which entreth into the faid Bay, some foure leagues up, there is a faire creeke where a River ACreeke. entreth. All this coalt is low and sandie, there descende ha fall of water which is great. About fine leagues farther is a Point which ifretcheth about halfe a league into the Sea, where there is a creeke, and from the one point to the other are three leagues, but all are should, where is little water. About two leagues off, there is a strand where there is a good hauen, and a small River,

60 wherein are three Illands, and where Ships may harbour themselves from the weather. Three leagues beyond this, is a fandie point which remneth out about a league, at the end whereof there Two little for is a small I stee. Going forward to Lefquenius, you meete with two little low I slands, and a little Hands. rocke neere the thoare : thefe fand Hands are about halfe a league from Lafquenim, which is a ve- Lefquenim a ry bad Port, compassed with rockes, and dry at a low water, and you must setch about a little very bad Port,

Souricois-A great River weft coaff Great Rivers

A Mine of

Crecks, Potts

The River wh re he pales hill the whales. of Augus.

1618

point of a rocke to enter in, where one Ship onely can passe at a time. A little higher there is a River, which runnetha little way into the land. This is the place where the Basks kill she Whales: to fay the truth, the haven is starke naught. Wee came from thence to the forefaid ha-Our arrivall at uen of Tadon/ac, the third day of August. All thele Countries before mentioned are low toward Tedouf withe 30 the shoare, and within the land very high. They are neither so pleasant nor fruitfull as those on the South, although they be lower. And this for a certaintie is all which I have feene of this Mor-

Of the Atmanchiceis Sauages and of their monfirmus courfe of Mon-Gest de Present of Saint Male. touching the differencie of the South Well Coaft. Cb.12. nies which they viebefore they go to the

A Tour comming to Tadonfac, we found the Sanages which wee met in the River of the Ire-Acous, who met with three Canowes of the Iracon in the first Lake, which fought against tenne others of the Mountayners; and they brought the heads of the Iracese to Tadonfac, and monitories there was but one Mountayner wounded in the arms with the shot of an Arrow, who dreaming of fomething, all the other tenne must feeke to content him, thinking also that his wound thereby would mend if this Sange die, his Parents will reuenge his death, either vpon their Nation or voon others, or at least wife the Captaines must give Presents to the Parents of the dead, to content them; otherwise as I have said, they would be revenged: which is a great sault amone them. Before the faid Mountayners let forth to the Warre, they affembled all, with their richell apparell of Furres, Beauers, and other Skinnes adorned with Pater-notions and Chaines of divers colours, and affembled in a great publike place, where there was before them a Sagame whole name was Begenrat, which led them to the Warre, and they marched one behind another, with their Bowes and Arrowes, Mafes and Targets, wherewith they furnish themselues to fight and they went leaping one after another, in making many gettures of their bodies, they made many turnings like a Snaile : afterward they began to dance after their accustomed manner, as I have faid hetore : then they made their Peaft, and after they had ended it, the women ftripped themfelues itarke naked, being decked with their fairest Cordons, and went into their Canowes thus naked and there danced, and then they went into the water, and ftrooke at one another with their Oares, and beate water one upon another : yet they did no hurt, for they warded the blowes which they ftrooke one at the other. After they had ended all these Ceremonies, they retired themselves into their Cabines, and the Sameges went to warre against the Iracois. The fixt day of August we departed from Tadoufac, and the eighteenth of the faid moneth we

Their deparcure from Tadaylac Armon hiceis deformed Sa-

The Relation of the Copper Myne on the South Coaft.

Blacke painaing. An He wherein of Metall is is white being

> Other Mynes. The description of the place where the faid Myne

arrived at the He Perces, where wee found Manfierer Premers of Saint Male; which came from the Mune, where he had beene with much trouble, for the feare which the Sauges had to meet with their enemies, which are the Armenebicon, which are Sauges very monftrous, for the shape that they have. For their head is little, and their body short, their armes small like a bone. and their thigh like; their legges great and long, which are all of one proportion, and when they fit your their heeles, their knees are higher by halfe a foot then their head, which is a ftranse thing, and they seeme to be out of the course of Nature. Neverthelesse, they be very valuant and resolute, and are planted in the best Countries of all the South Coast : And the Souriesis do greatly feare them. But by the incouragement which the faid Monfieur de Preners gaue them, hee At brought them to the faid Myne, to which the Sanages guided him. It is a very high Mountaine, riling fomewhat ouer the Sca, which gliftereth very much against the Sunne, and there is great ftore of Verde-greafe islaing out of the faid Myne of Copper. He faith, that at the foot of the faid Mountayne, at a low water there were many morfels of Copper, as was otherwise declared Another Mine vnto vs, which fall downe from the top of the Mountaine, Palling three or four leagues further toward the South, there is another Myne, and a imall River which runneth a little way vp into the Land, running toward the South, where there is a Mountaine, which is of a blacke painting, wherewith the Sausges paint themselues : Some fixe leagues beyond the second Myne, toward the Sea, about a league from the South Coast, there is an Ile, wherein is found another kind of Metall, which is like a darke browne : if you cut it , it is white, which they vied in old time 50 for their Arrowes and Kniues, and did beate it with flones. Which maketh me beleeue that it is not Tinne, nor Lead, being so hard as it is; and having shewed them filter, they faid that the Myne of that He was like vnto it, which they found in the earth, about a foot or two deepe. The faid Monfieur Preners gave the Sanages Wedges and Cizers, and other things necessarie to draw out the faid Myne; which they have promifed to doe, and to bring the same the next years, and give it the faid Monfieur Presert. They fay also that within some hundred or one hundred and twentie leagues there are other Mynes, but that they dare not goe thither unleffe they have Frenchmen with them to make warre vpon their enemies, which have the faid Mynes in their possession. The faid place where the Myne is, standeth in 44. degrees and some few minutes, neere the South Coast within fine or fixe leagues : it is a kind of Bay, which is certaine leagues 62 broad at the mouth thereof, and somewhat more in length, where are three Rivers, which fall into the great Bay neere unto the He of Saint lobe, which is thirtie or five and thirtie leagues long, and is fixe leagues diftant from the South thoare. There is also another little River, which falleth almost in the mid way of that whereby Monfieur Preners returned , and there are as it were two kind of Lakes in the faid River. Furthermore, there is yet another small River which

CHAP.7. Oze and Sands. The great Sagamo Anadabijou. La Cadia.

goeth toward the Mountaine of the painting. All thefe Rivers fall into the faid Bay on the South-east part, neere about the faid lie which the Sauager lay there is of this white Metall. On A good Hauen the North fide of the fard Bay are the Mynes of Copper, where there is a good Hauen for fhips, at the Copper and a small Hand at the mouth of the Hauens the ground is Oze and Sand, where a man may run his ship on shoare. From the said Myne to the beginning of the mouth of the said Rivers is some fixtie or eightie leagues by Land. But by the Sea Coaff, according to my judgement, from the pallage of the He of Saint Laurence and the Firme Land, it cannot be past fifte or fixtie leagues to the faid Myne. All this Countrey is exceeding faire and flat, wherein are all fores of trees, which wee law as wee went to the first Sault up the great River of Canada, very small store of To Firre-trees and Cyprestes. And this of a truth is as much as Hearned and heard of the faid Mon-

The Efore we departed from Tadonfac, to returne into France, one of the Sagamoz of the Moun- Their returns. Brayners named Bechourat, gaue his Sonne to Monfieur du Pont to carrie him into France, Chap.13. and he was much recommended vinto him by the Great Sagamo Anadabijon, praying him to vie him well, and to let him fee that, which the other two Sanages had feene which we had brought backe againe. We prayed them to give vs a woman of the Process, whom they would have eaten: whom they gave voto vs, and we brought her home with the forelaid Sanage. Monsteur de Prenert in like manner brought home foute Sanages, one man which is of the South Coalt, one 30 Woman and two children of the Canadians.

The foure and twentieth of August, we departed from Gachepay, the ship of the said Monfieur Presert and ours. The second of September, we counted that wee were as farre as Cape Cone Rail. Rafe. The fift day of the faid moneth we entred vpon the Banke, whereon they vie to file. The Tac Banke. fixteenth, we were come into the Sounding, which may be fome fittle leagues distant from the inte founding, Ulbant. The twentieth of the laid moneth we arrived in New Hauen by the grace of God to all Vibant. our contentments, with a continuall fauourable wind.

CHAP. VIL

The Patent of the French King to Monsieur de Monts for the inhabiting of the Countries of La Cadia Canada, and other places in New France.



Enry by the grace of God King of France and Nauatte. To our deare and well beloned

the Lord of Mouts, one of the ordinarie Gontlemen of our Chamber, greeting. As our
greatest care and labour is, and hath alwayes beene, fince our comming to this Crowne, maintaine and conferue it in the ancient dignitie, greatnesse and splendour thereof, to ex-tend and amplise, as much as lawfully may bee done, the bounds and limits of the same. We being, of a long time, informed of the fituation and condition of the Lands and Ter-

ritories of La Cadia, moued abone all things, with a singular zeale, and demont and constant resolution. which we have taken, with the helpe and affiftance of God, Author, Distributour, and Protectour of all Kingdomes and Estates, to can etbe people, which doe inhabit the Country, men (at this prefent time) Barbarous, Atheists, without Faith, or Religion, to be connerted to Christianitie, and to the Beliefe and Profession of our Faith and Religion: and to draw them from the ignorance and unbeliefe wherein they are, Hauing also of a long time knowne by the Relation of the Sea Captaines, Pilots, Merchants and others, who of long time have haunted, frequented and trafficked with the people that are found in the Said places, how fruitfull, commodious and profitable may be unto us, to our Estates and Subjects, the 50 Dwelling, Possession, and Habitation of those Countries, for the great and apparent profit which may be drawne by the greater frequentation and habitude which may bee had with the people that are found there, and the Trafficke and Commerce which may be, by that meanes Safely treated and negotiated. We then for the fecauses fully trusting on your great wisdome, and in the knowledge and experience that you bane of the qualitie, condition and situation of the faid Countrie of La Cadia : for diners and fundry Nanigations, Voyages and Frequentaions that you have made into those parts, and others reere and bordering upon it: Affuring our selves that this our resolution and intention, being committed unto you. you will attentinely, diligently, and no leff-conragiously and valorously execute and bring to such perfection as we defire : Hane expresty appointed and established you, and by these Presents, signed with our owne hands, doe commit ordaine, make, constitute and establish you, our Lieutenant Generall, for to represent 60 our person, in the Countries, Territories, Coasts and Co fines of La Cidia To begin from the 40. degree unto the 46. And in the seme distance, or part of it, as farre as may bee done, to establish, extend and make to be newne our N me, Might and Authoritie. And under the same to subject, submit and bring to obedience all the people of the faul Land and the Borderers thereof: And by the meanes thereof. and all lamfull wayes, to call, make, in fruit, prouoke and incite them to the knowledge of God, and to the

1621

light of the Faith and Christian Religion, to establish it there: And in the exercise and profession of the same, keepe and conferne the said people, and all other Inhabitants in the said places, and there to command in peace, refe and tranquillise, as well by Sea as by Land : to ordaine, decide, and canfe to bee executed all that which you hall indee fit and necessarie to be done, for to maintaine, keepe and conferme the field places under our Power and Authoritie, by the formes, wayes and meanes prescribed by our Lawes And for to have there a care of the same with you, to appoint, establish, and constitute all Officers, as well in the affaires of Warre, as for Instice and Policie, for the first time, and from thence forward to name and present them unto us: for to be disposed by us, and to give Letters, Titles, and such Promises as shall be necestarie, &c.

Ginen at Fountain-Bleau the eight day of Nonember : in the yeere our Lord 1603. And of our 10 Resone the fifteenth. Signed Henry : and underneath by the King, Potier; And fealed upon finale labell with yellow Waxe.

The Voyage of Monsieur de Monts into New France, written by MARKE LESCARBOT.

The reft of

nifoes, &c.

And let not

Englishmen.

roome for

feare want of

habitations;

thefe being

other fearle

many inter-

ruptions, and

more frequen-

of Trade with

Sauages then

otherwife, I

haue omated

many digiel-

Sour and dif-

the Authour;

most ample Worke. His

Map but for

coft. I would

haue here ad-

ded. I haue

diuers by me which I take

more exact, [

am fure with

many many

particulers

wanting in

courles of

ged by the French in way

worthy the

A Onfieur de Monts having made the Commissions and Prohibitions before said . to Mbee proclaimed thorow the Realme of France, and especially thorow the Ports and maritine Townes thereof, caused two shippes to bee rigged and furnished, the one 20 thi Patentis under the conduct of Captaine Timothy of New-banen , the other of Captaine Morell of here for bre-Honfleur. In the first, hee shipped himielte, with good number of men of account, as uitie omitted : well Gentlemen as others. And for as much as Monfieur de Pourrencoure was, and had beene of with the Proa long time, delirous to tee thote Countries of New France, and there to finde out and choose fome it place to retire himfelfe into, with his Family, Wife and Children, not meaning to be the last trust should follow and participate in the glorie of so faire and generous an enterprize, would needs goe thither, and shipped himselfe with the said Monsieur de Monts, carrying with tions or Sauste him some quantitie of Armours and Munitions of Warre; and so weighed Anchors from Newbauen the feuenth day of March 1604. But being departed fomewhat too foone, before the Win- 20 ter had yet left off her frozen Weed, they found thore of Icie bankes, against the which they wery thin, the were in danger to strike, and so to be cast away.

The Voyage was long by reason of contrarie winds, which seldome hapneth to them that set out in March for the New-found lands, which are ordinarily carried with an East or Northerne ing, or planta- winde, fit to goe to these Lands. And having taken their course to the South of the lle of tion, having to Sand or Sablon, or Sand, for to shunne the faid Ives, they almost fell from Caribdae into Sey las, going to strike towards the faid He, during the thicke mists that are frequent in that Sea. In the end, the fixt of May they came to a certaine Port, where they found Captaine Roffignol of New-bauen, who did trucke for skinnes with the Sauages, contrary to the Kings Inhibitions, which was the cause that his ship was confitcated. This Port was called Le Port du Roffignol, ha- 10 uing (in this his hard fortune) this onely good, that a good and fit Harborough or Port, in thole

Coaits beareth his name. From thence coasting and discouring the Lands, they arrived at another Port, very faire, which they named Le Port de Moutton, by reason that a Mutton or Weather having leaped 0. uer-board and drowned himselfe came aboard againe, and was taken and eaten as good prize. Neere the faid Montton Port there is a place so replenished with Rabbets and Conies, that they almost did eate nothing elfe. During that time Monfieur Champlem was fent with a shallop to feeke farther off a fitter place to retire themselves, at which Exploit he carried so long, that deonly for knowliberating upon the returne, they thought to leave him behind: for there was no more victuals: ledge of those parts, prefenand they ferued them felues with that, that was found in the faid Roffignols thip, without which so sing the briefe they had beene forced to returne into France, and to to breake a faire enterprize at the very birth fumme of his and beginning thereof; or to starue, having ended the hunting of Conies, which could not still

All New France in the end being contained in two ships, they weighed Anchors from Port de Mostton, for to imploy their time, and to discouer Lands as much as might before Winter. Wee came to Cape de Sable, or the Sandie Cape; and from thence we failed to the Bay of Saint Marie, where our men lay at Anchor fireene dayes, while It the Lands and passages as well by Sea as by River might be descried and knowne. This Bay is a very faire place to inhabit, because that one is readily carried thither without doubling. There are Mynes of Iron and Siluer; but in no great abundance, according to the triall made thereof in France. A Priest losing his way in the Woods 60 was milling fixteene dayes. Whereupon a Protestant was charged to have killed him be-

both his Mappe and Discourse show that the French discoursed not so neers Virginia, as Hudsons River; and that the French P'antations bute beene more Northerly farre, then our Northerne Vinginia, and to the Southerne, not a thadow in comra fracefe ft. and numbers.

cause they quarrelled sometimes for matters of Religion. Finally, they sounded a Trumpet thorow the Forreit, they shot off the Canon diners times, but in vaine: for the roaring of the Sea, stronger then all that, did expell backe the found of the faid Canons and Trumnets. Two, three and foure dayes palled he appeareth not. In the meane-while the time haftens to depart, so having tarried so long that hee was then held for dead, they weighed Anchors to goe further, and to fee the depth of a Bay that hath some fortie leagues length. and fourteene (yea eighteene) of breadth , which was named La Baye Francoife, or the Langue Fran-

CHAP.7. Bay fortic leagues in length. Spaniards exceeding cruelties.

In this Bay is the passage to come into a Port, whereinto our men entred, and made some

10 abode, during the which they had the pleasure to hunt an Ellan, or Stagge, that croffed a great Lake of the Sea, which maketh this Port, and did swimme but easily. This Port is ennironed with Mountaines on the North fide : Towards the South bee small Hills, which (with the faid Mountaines) doe powre out a thousand Brookes, which make that place pleasanter then any other place in the World : there are very faire talles of waters, fit to make Milles of all forts. At the East is a River betweene the faid Mountaines and Hilles, in the shippes may faile fifteene leagues and more, and in all this diffance is nothing of both fides the River but faire Medowes, which River was named L' Equille, because that the first fish taken therein was an Equille. But the laid Port, for the beautie thereof was called Port Royall. Monfieur The River of de Pontrincourt having found this place to bee to his liking demanded it, with the Lands L'Equille.

20 thereunto adjoyning, of Monsieur de Monts: to whom the King had by Commission, before inferted, granted the distribution of the Lands of New France from the fortieth degree to the fixe and fortieth. Which place was granted to the laid Monstear de Poutrincourt , who fince hath had Letters of confirmation for the same of his Maiestie, intending to resire himselfe this ther with his Family, and there to establish the Christian and French Name, as much as his power shall stretch, and God grant him the meanes to accomplish it. The Port contayneth eight leagues of circuit, besides the River of L' Equille. There is within it two Iles very faire and pleasant: the one at the mouth of the faid River, which I deeme to bee of the greatneffe of the Citie of Beauvais: The other at the fide of the mouth of another River, as broad as the Riter of Oife, or Mane, entring within the faid Port: The faid lie beeing almost of the greatnesse of the other: and they both are wooddie. In this Port, and right ouer against the

former Ile, wee dwelt three yeeres after this Voyage. We will speake thereof more at large From Port Royall they failed to the Copper Myne, whereof wee have spoken before else- A Copper

with the itone, very faire and very pure, such as is that which is called Rozette Copper. Many In the as and with the itone, very faire and very pure, fuch as is that which is called Roberts Copper Myne there the Copper Myne there is the fecond might bea Golden Myne : which is very probable. For if those excrements that Nature expelleth forth be fo pure, namely, small pieces that are found vpon the granell at the foote of the whole Volume Rocke, when it is low water, there is no doubt that the Metall which is in the bowels of the untranslated. 40 earth is much more perect, but this is a Worke that requireth time. The first myning and working is to have Bread, Wine and Cattle, as we have faid else-where. Our felicitie confisteth not in Mynes, specially of Gold and Silver, the which serne for nothing in the tillage of the ground, on, nor to Handicrafts vie. Contrariwise, the abundance of them is but a charge and burthen, that keepeth man in perpetuall verquiet, and the more he hath thereof, the leffe rest enjoyeth he, and

his life leffer affured vnto him. Before the Voyages of Peron great riches might have beene fet vp in a small place, in stead Note. This that in this our age by the abundance of Gold and filter the fame is come at no value nor effeeme. French Author One hath need of huge Chefts and Coffers to put in that , which a small Budget might haue was a Romifb contained. One might have travelled with a Purfe in ones fleeue, and now a Cloke-bagge and a which yet 50 Horie must expressly be had for that purpose. Wee may suffly curse the houre that greedie Aua- fpeakes thus

rice did carrie the Spaniard into the West, for the wofull events that have ensued thereof. For freely of the when I consider that by his greedinesse he hath kindled and maintayned the Warre thorow all Seasiards. Christendome, and his onely studie hath beene how to destroy his Neighbours (and not the Turke) I cannot thinke that any other but the Deuill hath beene the Authour of their Voyages. And let not the pretence of Religion be alleaged vnto mee : for (as wee haue faid elicwhere) they have killed all the of-fpring of the Countrey with the most inhumane torments that the Deuili hath beene able to excogitate. And by their cruelties have rendred the Name of God odious, and a name of offence to those poore people, and have continually and daily blafphemed him in the midft of the Gentiles as the Prophet reprocheth to the people Efty saveris. 60 of Ifract. Winesse him that had rather bee damned, then goe to the Paradise of the Spa-Hallmer, fee

Among these Copper Rockes there is found sometimes small Rockes covered with Diamonds fixed to them. I will not after them for tine, but that is very pleating to the fight. There are also certaine shiring blue itones, which are of no lesse value or worth than Turkie Stones. Turkie stones. Tttttt 2

where, It is a high Rocke betweene two Bayes of the Sea, wherein the Copper is contoyned Myae.

caule

Monsieur de Champdore our guide for the Nauigations in those Countries, hauing cut within a Rocke one of those stones, at his returne from New France hee brake it in two, and gave one part of it to Monsieur de Monts, the other to Monsieur de Poutrincourt, which they made tobe put in Gold, and were found worthy to be presented the one to the King by the faid Poutrincourt, the other to the Queene by the faid de Monts, and were very well accepted. I remember that a Goldsmith did offer fiteene Crownes to Monfieur de Pourrincours for that hee prefented to hie

New France, Bay of Saint Marie, Common place, LIB.VIII.

Vines.

The commogingbythe

This River is one of the faireft that may be feene, having store of Hands, and swarming with files. This last yeere 1608, thy laid Monsieur de Champdore, with one of the faid Monsieur de Monte his men, hath beene tome fiftie leagues vp the laid River : and doe witneffe that there is great quantitie of Vines along the shoare, but the Grapes are not so bigge as they be in the Countrie of the Armonchiquois: There are allo Onions, and many other forts of good hearbs. As for Great Grapes
among the Aramong the Arof Cedar Trees. Concerning fishes the faid Champdore liath related vinto vs, that putting the Abundance of Kettle ouer fire, they had taken fish sufficient for their Dinner before that the water was hot. Moreover this River, firetching it felre tarre within the Lands of the Savages doth marvellously (horten the long travels by meanes thereof. For in fixe dayes they goe to Gafbepe , comming to the Bay of Gulte of Chaleur, or heate, when they are at the end of it, in carrying their Canowes fome few leagues. And by the fame River in eight dayes they go to Tadon fac by a branch of the firme which commeth from the North-well. In such fort that in Port Royall one may have within fifteene or eighteene dayes newes from the Frenchmen, dwelling in the great River of Canada. by these wayes: which could not be done in one moneth by Sea, nor without danger.

The He of S. Creix tw mie leagues from S. Johns Riner.

Leaving Saint Johns River, they came following the Coast twentie leagues from that place, to a great River (which is properly Sea) where they fortified themselves in a little Iland seated in the middest of this River, which the faid Champleine had beene to discouer and view. And seeing it throng by nature, and of easie defence and keeping, besides that the season beganne to slide away, and therefore it was behoouefull to prouide of lodging, without running any farther, they refolued to make their abode there.

As they began to vitit and fearch the Hand, Monfieur de Champdore (of whom we shall henceforth make mention, by reason he dwelt foure yeere in those parts, conducting the Voyages 20 made there) was fent backe to the Bay of Saint Mary, with a Mine-finder, that had beene car-Reminer othe ried thither for to get some Mynes of tiluer and Iron, which they did. And as they had croffed Bay of S.M. 77, the French Bay, they entred into the faid Bay of Saint Marie, by a narrow Straite or paffage, man was foul which is betweene the Land of Port Royall, and an Iland called the Long lle: where after some abode they going a fishing, Monsieur Anbri (the Priest before lost) perceined them, and beganne The Long le. with a feeble voice to call as loud as he could; and put his Handkercher, and his Haton a fiaues end, which made him better to be knowne. During thele fixteene daies hee fed himfelfe but by (I know not what) small fruits, like vnto Cheries, without kernell (yet not so delicate) which are fearfly found in those Woods. They gave him food by measure, and brought him backe againe to the company at the Hand of Saint Croix, whereof every one received an incredible ioy 40 and confolation.

Saint Croix,

The fruitfulneffe of the

The Iland in compatie.

Store of Mulcles.

Before we speake of the ships returne into France, it is meete to tell you how hard the lle of on of the fle of Saint Croix is to bee found out, to them that were never there. For there are fo many fles and great Bayes to goe by, before one be at it, that I wonder how ever one might pierce to farre for to finde it. There are three or foure Mountaines, imminent about the others, on the fides: But on the North fide, from whence the River runneth downe, there is but a sharpe pointed one, aboue two leagues diffant. The Woods of the maine Land are faire and admirable high and well growne, as in like manner is the graffe. There is right ouer against the Hand fresh water brooks, very pleasant and agreeable, where divers of Monsseur de Monts, his men did their bulinesse, and builded there certaine Cabanes. As for the nature of the ground it is most excellent and motta- 50 bundantly truitfull. For the faid Monfieur de Monts, having caused there some piece of ground to bee tilled, and the same sowed with Rie (for I have seene there no Wheate) hee was not able to tarrie for the maturitie thereof to reape it; and notwithflanding, the graine, fallen, hath growne and increased so wonderfully that two yeeres after we reaped and did gather of it as faire, b'gge and weightie, as in France, which the foile had broughe forth without any tillage : and yet at this prelant it doth continue still to multiply every yeere. The faid Hand containeth some halfe halie a league a league of circuit, and at the end of it on the Sea fide, there is a Mount or small Hill, which is (as it were) a little He seuered from the other, where Monsieur de Monts his Canon was placed : There is also a little Chappell built after the Sauage fashion. At the foot of which Chappell there is such store of Muscles as is wonderfull, which may bee gathered at law water, but they 60 are imall.

Now let vs prepare and hoife vp failes. Monfieur de Poutrincourt made the Vovage into thele parts with lome men of good fort, not to winter there, but as it were to feeke out his feate, and find out a Land that might like him. Which he having done, i ad no need to folourne there any longer. So then the ships being ready for the returne, he shipped himselfe, and those of his companie, in one of them.

Monstear du During the foresaid Nauigation, Monsseur du Monts his people did worke about the Fort; Pourimourt which he leated at the end of the Iland, opposite to the place where he had lodged his Cannon. into France, Which was wifely confidered, to the end to command the River vp and downe. But there was an The building Which was writely connected, to the end to command the court vp and downlessed the fact of the at the lie of incontenience, the fail Fort did lie towards the North, and without any shelter, but of the s. Cross. trees that were on the Ile shoare, which all about he commanded to be kept, and not cut downe.

The most vegent things being done, and hoary snowy Father being come, that is to say, Win-Three discomter, then they were forced to keepe within doores, and to live every one at his owne home: du-modities in to mag which time, our men had three special discommodities in this Iland, videlicet, want of S. Croix. wood, (for that which was in the faid lie was spent in buildings) lacke of fresh water, and the continuall watch made by night, fearing some surprise from the Sauages, that had lodged themfelues at the foot of the Lid Hand, or some other enemie. For the malediction and rage of ma- Wickednesse ny Christian is such, that one must take heed of them much more than of Infidels. At thing of anny christian which princethe me to locake: would to Godl were a locat in this reford, and that I had no could find. which grieueth me to ipeake: would to God I were a lyar in this respect, and that I had no caute to foeake it! When they had need of water or wood, they were constrained to crosse ouer the River, which is thrice as broad of every fide, as the River of Seine. It was a thing painfull The River of and tedious, in such fort, that it was needfull to keepe the Boat the whole day, before one Roan. might get those necessaries. In the meane while the cold and snowes came voon them, and the to Ice fo ftrong, that the Sider was frozen in the veffels, and every one his measure was given him Vaknown fickout by weight. As for Wine it was distributed but at certaine dayes of the weeke. Many idle nesses, vir. the fluggish companions dranke snow-water, not willing to take the paines to crosse the River. Scotbute or Briefly, the voknowne ficknesses like to those described voto vs by lames Quartur, in his Rela-Scuruse, the Briefly, the volknowne ficknesses like to those described vinto vs by sames Marter, in his Aciagreatest plague
tion, affailed vs. For remedies there was none to bee found. In the meane while the poore ficke
of Nauigations

of let, proceeding from a rotten flesh which grew and ouer-abounded within their mouthes; fications and of let, proceeding from a rotten field which grew and ouer-abounded within their mounts. Garifons be-and when one thought to root it out, it did growe againe in one nights space more abundantly fieged, where than before. As for the tree called Annedda, mentioned by the faid Quartier, the Sauages of their want of treffs 30 Lands knowe it not. So that it was most pitifull to behold every one, very few excepted, in diet and of bathis miferie, and the miferable ficke folkes to die, as it were full of life, without any possibilitie dily labour, or this miterie, and the miterable ficke roikes to die, as it were tuil or inc, without any pointonite who had to be fuccoured. There died of this fickenfect thirty fixe, and thirty fixe or forty more that were too much active fixed with it, recoured themselves by the helpe of the Spring, as soone as the comfortable thing, which is the control of the spring and the spring are sooned to the spring as soone as the comfortable thing, which is the spring and the spring are spring as the spring feason appeared. But the deadly season for that sicknesse is in the end of Ianuary, the moneths grosse aires in of February and March, wherein most commonly the ficke doe die, enery one at his turne, ac- the Countries cording to the time they have begunne to be ficke: in fuch fort, that he which beganne to be ill ourrgrowne cording to the time they have begunne to be inker: in multiport, that he which beganne to with wood, or in February and March, may escape, but he that shall ouer-haste himselfe, and betake him with manshes, with manshes, to his bed in December and Ianuary, he is in danger to die in February, March, or the beginning bogs and vn-

Monsieur de Poutrincours made a Negro to be opened, that died of that sicknesse in our Voy- ters are chiefe age, who was found to have the inward parts very found, except the stomacke, that had breedersthere-

wrinkles, as though they were vicered.

As for the food, this fickneffe is caused by cold meates, without suyce, groffe and corrupted, and for the food they are the first support of the first support of the first support of the disease.

One must then take heed of falt meates, smoally, musty, raw, and of an entil fent, likewise of of this disease, dried fishes, as New-found-Land fish, and stinking Rayes : Briefly, from all melancholy meates, the chiefe which are of hard digefting, are easily corrupted, and breed a grosse and melancholy bloud. I points whereof which are of hard digetting, are easily corrupted, and breed a grote and metancholy bloud. I would not (for all that) bee fo forupulous as the Physicians, which doe put in number of groffer effect for and metancholy meates, Becues fielh, Beares, wilde Boares and Hogs flith (they might as well benefice our adde vnto them Beauers flesh, which notwithstanding wee have found very good) as they doe English Colo-50 among the files the Tons, Dolphins, and all those that carrie Lard: among the birds, the Hernes, nies in America.

Dieleg and Illander was birds for internal and account of the control of the contro Duckes, and all other water birds: for in being an ouer-curious observator of these things, one deubrinot mamight fal into the danger of staruing, and to die for hunger. They place yet among the meats that ny hundreds are to be shunned Bisket, Beanes and Pulse, the often ving of Milke, Cheese: the grosse and harth bise hereby Wine, and that which is too small, white Wine, and the vie of Vinegar: Beere which is not gerified. well fodden, nor well feummed, and that hath not Hoppes enough. Alto waters that runne thowell iodden, nor well fourmed, and that hath not Hopper enough. Also waters that runne those of the dead row rotten wood, and those of Likes and Bogges, ftill and corrupted waters, such as is much in and sicke. Holland and Frizeland, where is observed that they of Amsterdam are more subject to Palifes and Dangerous flifning of finews, then they or Roserdam, for the abouefaid caute of flill and thepy waters: which ment's, besides doe ingender Dropties, Dysenteries, Fluxes, quartaine Agues, and burning Feuers, swel- The opening belides doe ingender Drophes, Dytenteries, Fluxes, quartaine Agues, and beling trades, of a dead lings, vicers of the Lights, shortnesse of breath, ruptures of children, swelling in the veines, body. fores in the legges : finally, they wholly belong to the Jifeafe whereof we speake, being drawne What food by the Spleene, where they leave all their corruption.

Sometimes this fickneffe dothalto come by a vice which is even in waters of running Foun. Inddifea'e, taines, as if they be among, or neere Bogges, or if they issue from a muddy ground, or from a Badwaters. Tettet 3

creatures did languith, pining away by little and little, for want of fweet meates, as Milke or and new Planfpoon-meate for to furfaine their ftomackes which could not receive the hard meates, by reason tailons, Forti-

Plin.li.25.0.3.

Stomaccacè.

Scelatitie.

an herbe.

place that hath not the Sunnes aspect. So Plane reciteth that in the Voyage which the Prince Cafar Germanicus made into Germanie, hauing given order to his Armie to paffe the River of Rhome, to the end to get fill forward in the Countrie, he did fet his campe on the Sea Shoare, vnon the coast of Frizeland, in a place where was but one onely Fountaine of fresh water to bee found, which not withflanding was to pernicious, that all they that dranke of it loft their teeth in leffe than two yeeres space, and had their knees so weake and dissoynted, that they could not beare themfelues. Which is verily the ficknesse whereof wee speake, which the Physicians doe call Stomaccace, that is totay, Monthes fore ; and Scelotyrbe, which is as much to fay, as the shaking of thighs and legges. And it was not possible to finde any remedie, but by the meanes of an herbe called Britannica, or Scuruy griffe , which besides is very good for the sinewes, against Io Britannica, or the fores and accidents in the mouth: against the Squinancie, and against the biting of Ser-Scuruy graffe, pents. It hath long leaurs, drawing in colour a darke greene, and produceth a blacke roote. from which liquor is drawne, as well as from the leafe. Strabo fayth, that the like case hanpened to the Armie that Elim Gallim brought into Arabia, by the commission of Augustus the Emperour. And the like also chanced to King Saint Lewes his Armie in Egypt, as the Lord

Fountaine of fresh water. Woodden Pantophles or Pattins. LIB.VIII.

Strabo. Monfieur de The Gouitres

of Saure What are is

Winder.

Next to waters, the aire is also one of the Fathers and Ingenderers of this ficknesse, in boggy against health, and warrish places, and opposite to the South, which is most often ramy. But there is yet in New 20 France another bad qualitie of the aire, by reason of Lakes that be thicke there, and of the great rottennesse in the Woods, whose odour the bodies having drawne vp, during the rames of Autumne and Winter, early are ingendred the corruptions of the mouth, and iwelling in the legges before spoken, and a cold entreth vosensibly into it, which benummeth the limbes, shifneth the finewes, constraineth to creepe with crutches, and in the end, to keepe the bed. And for as much as the windes doe participate with the aire, yea are an aire running with a more vehement force than ordinary, and in this qualitie have great power over the health and ficknesses of men, This noisome qualitie of winde proceedeth (in my judgement) from the nature of the Countrie thorow which it paffeth , which (as wee haue faid) is full of Lakes, and those very great, which bee (as it were) flanding and flill waters. Whereto I adde the exhalation of the rottennesse of woods, that this winde bringeth, and that in so much greater quantitie, as the Northwest part is great, large and spacious.

de Ionuille reporteth Other effects of bad waters are feene neere vnto vs, to wit, in Sauor, where

the women (more than men, because they are of a colder constitution) have commonly swel-

lings in their throats, as bigge as Bottles.

Seafons.

The feafons are also to be marked in this difease, which I have not seene nor heard of, that it begins to worke, neither in the Spring time, Summer nor Autumne, vnleffe it be at the end of it, but it Winter. And the cause thereof is, that as the growing heate of the Spring maketh the humours closed up in the Winter to disperse themselves to the extremities of the body, and so cleareth it from melancholy, and from the notione humors that have beene gathered in Winter: fo the Autumne, as the Winter approacheth, draweth them inward, and doth nourish this melancholy and blacke humour, which doth abound specially in this season, and the Winter being come he weth forth his effects at the costs and gricte of the poore patients. I would adde willingly to all the aforeful causes the bad food of the Sea, which in a long Voi-

age brings much corruption in mans body. This ficknesse proceeding from an indigestion of sude,

groffe, colland melancholy meates, which offend the flomacke, I thinke it good (fabmitting

my telfe to better judgement and aduice) to accompany them with good fawces, be it of Butter,

Badford and di commoditics of the Sea. Aduice for the ficknesses of New France.

Good Wine.

Herbes in the Spring time.

Stoues. Beddington in Survice at Sir

Oyle, or Fat, all well i piced, to correct as well the qualitie of the meate, as of the bodie inwardly waxen cold. Let this be faid for rude and groffe meates, as Beanes, Peafe, and fift: for he that shall care good Capons good Partridges, good Ducks, and good Rabets, may be affured of his health, or elfe his body is of a bad constitution. We have had some sick, that have(as it were) raised vp from death to life : for having eaten twice or thrice of a coolice made of a Cocke, good Wine taken according to the necessitie of nature, 15 a soueraigne preservative for all sicknesses, and particularly for this. The young buds of herbs in the Spring time be also very soueraigne. And as for that which concerneth the exteriour parts of the body, we have found great good in wearing woodden Pantaphles, or Patins with our shoots, for to avoide the moistnesse. The houles neede no opening nor windowes on the North-west side, being a winde very dange-

rous: but rather on the East fide, or the South. It is very good to have good bedding (and it was good for mee to have carried things necessary co this purpose) and about all to keepe himselfe neate. I would like well the vie of Stoues, such as they have in Germanie, by meanes whereof they feele no Winter, being at home, but as much as they please. Yea, they have of Gardins Such them in many places, in their Gardens, which doe so temper the coldnesse of Winter, that in Thaue feene at this rough and sharpe feason there one may fee Orange-trees, Lymmon-trees, Fig-trees, Pom- 60 granat-trees, and all fuch forts of trees, bring forth fruit as good as in Prouence.

The Sauages vie iweatings often, as it were every moneth, and by this meanes they preserve themselues, driving out by sweate all the cold and euill humours they might have gathered. of the Sausges But one fingular preservative against this perfidious ficknesse, which commeths of stealingly, and

which having once lodged it felfe within vs, will not bee put out, is to follow the counfell of him that is wife amonit the wife, who having confidered all the afflictions that mangine to A mery bear him felieduring his life, hath found nothing better then to reiorce bimfelfe, and doe good, himselieduring his life, hath found nothing better then to reinjee himselfe, and dee good, and the green per creative take plassive in his owne worker. They that have done fo, in our companie, have found themselves against the well by it: contrariwile lome al waies grudging, repining, neuer content, idle, have beene found Scurus. out by the same disease. True it is, that for to enjoy mirch it is good to have the sweetnesse of fresh Eciel 3, 12,221 meares, Fleftes, Fiftes, Milke, Butter, Oyles, Fruits, and fuen like, which wee had not at will manes of (I meane the common fort : for alwairs some one, or other of the companie did furnish Menfieur de Poutrincourt, his Table with Wilde-fowle, Venison or fresh Fish) Andit wee had halfe

to a dozen Kine, I beleeue that no body had died there. dozen mine, a believe the median for the accomplishment of mirth, and to the end one may Necessition of take pleafure on the worke of his hands is every one to have the honest companie of his law- houng women full wife: for without that, the cheere is neuer perfect; ones minde is alwaies upon that which into the Counone loues and defireth; there is still some forrow, the body becomes sull of ill humours, and so trey. the fickneffe doth breed. And for the last and soueraigne remedie, I send backe the Patient to the tree of life (for so one may well qualifie it) which lames Quartier doth call Anneda, yet vn- Tree of life. knowne in the coaft of Port Royall, vnletle it bee, peraduenture the Safafras, whereof there is Safafras. quantitie in certaine places. And it is an affured thing, that the faid tree is very excellent. But Monfier thems Monfieur Champlain, who is now in the great River of Canada, passing his Winter, in the this present on same part, where the said Quartier did winter, hath charge to finde it out, and to make proui- yecre 1609. in

1625

THe rough season being passed, Monsteur de Monts, weatied with his bad dwelling at Saint The discourse Croix, determined to leeke out another Port in a warmer Countrie, and more to the South: of new Lands And to that end made a Pinnace to bee armed and furnished with victuals, to follow the coast, by Monsteur de And to that end made a Pinnace to bee armed and furnined with victuals, to route with additional field and discourring new Countries, to seeke out some happier Port in a more temperate aire. Hee lous tales and made in this Yovage but about an hundred and twenty leagues, as wee will tell you now. From reports of the Saint Croix to fixty leagues forward, the coast lieth East and West: at the end of which fixty Riverand saileagues is a River, called by the Sauages Kumbeki. From which place to Malebarre it lieth ned Towneof 30 North and South, and there is yet from one to the other fixty leagues, in right line, not follow - Noremberg. North and South, and there is yet from one to the other many leagues, in right line, not ronow ing the Bayes. So farre firetcheth Monfisur de Monts his Voyage, wherein hee had for Pilot leagues from leagues from in his Veffell . Monsieur de Champdore. In all this Coast so farre as Kunbeki, there are ma- S. croix. ny places where shippes may bee harboured amongst the llands, but the people there is not so frequent as is beyond that : And there is no remarkable thing (at least that may bee seene in the outside of the Lands) but a River, whereof many have written fables one after another.

I will recite that which is in the last Booke, intituled, The uninerfall Historie of the West Indies, Printed at Donay the last yeere 1607. in the place where hee speaketh of Norombega: For in reporting this, I shall have also said that which the first have written, from whom they

haue had it.

Moreouer, towards the North (layth the Authour, after bee had spoken of Virginia) is Norom- Fabulous sales bega, which is knowne well enough, by reason of a faire Towne, and a great River, though it is not of the River found from whence it bath his name: for the Barbarians doe call it Aguncia : At the mouth of Norombetta. this River there is an Iland very fit for fishing. The Region that goeth along the Sea, doth abound in filb, and towards New France there is great number of wilde heafts, and is very commodisms for hunting; the Inhabitant: doe line in the fame manner as they of New France.

If this beautifull Towne hath euer beene in nature, I would faine knowe who hath pulled it downe : For there is but Cabins heere and there made with pearkes , and couered with barkes of trees, or with skinnes, and both the River and the place inhabited is called Pempte- Pempteent goet, and not Agguncia. The River (fauing the tide) is fcarce as the River on that coaft, be-

50 cause there are not Lands sufficient to produce them, by reason of the great River of Canada, which runneth like this coast, and is not fourescore leagues distant from that place in croffing the Lands, which from elfe-where received many Rivers falling from thoir parts which are towards Norombega : At the entrie whereof, it is so farre from having but one 1land, that rather the number thereof is almost infinite, for as much as this River enlarging it selfe like the Greeke Lambda A, the mouth whereof is all full of Iles, whereof there is one of them lying very farre off (and the formost) in the Sea, which is high and markable about

But some will say that I equiuocate in the situation of Norombega, and that it is not placed Obication where I take it. To this I as I wer, that the Author, whole words I have a little before alleaged, is in Aniwer. 60 this my futicient warrant, who in his Geographicall Mappe, hath placed in the mouth of this River in the 44, degree, and his supposed Towne in the 45, wherein we differ but in one degree, which is a small matter. For the River that I meane is in the 45. degree, and as for any Towne, there is none. Now of necessity it must be this river, because that the same being passed, and that of Kinibete, (which is in the fame high) there is no other River forward, whereof account should be

made, till one come to Virginia. I say furthermore, that seeing the Barbarians of Norombega doe

Kinibeki.

The Bay of Marchin. The ground manured. Vines.

Malebarre.

Etechemins. The Armouchi-

of the Armou-

The arrivall of Monfieur du Point. 1605.

Trafficke with the Sauages. Benera Otters,

Hand Mils.

liue as they of new France, and have abundance of hunting, it must be, that their Province be sean our new France; for fiftie leagues farther to the South-well there is no great game, bethe woods are thinner there, and the Inhabitants fetled, and in greater number then in No.

The River of Norombega being passed, Monsieur de Monts went still coasting, vntill he came to Kinibeli, where a River is that may shorten the way to goe to the great River of Canada. There is a number of Sauages Cabined there, and the land beginneth there to be better peopled. From Kinibeki going farther, one findeth the Bay of Marchin, named by the Captaine his name that commandeth therein. This Marchin was killed the yeare that we parted from New France 10 1607. Farther is another Bay called Chonakoet, where (in regard of the former Countries) is a great number of people : for there they till the ground, and the region beginneth to be more temperate, and for proofe of this, there is in this land store of Vines, Yea, euen there be Ilands full of it (which be more fubicat to the injuries of the winde and cold) as we shall say hereafter. There is betweene Chonatoes and Malebarre many Bayes and Iles, and the Coast is fandy. with shallow ground, drawing neere to the faid Malebarre, fo that scarce one may land there

The people that be from Saint Johns River to Kinibeki (wherein are comprised the Rivers of Saint Croix and Norombega) are called Etechemins. And from Kinibeki as farre as Malebarre and and Armoneope farther, they are called Armonebiquois. They be traitors and theeues, and one had neede to take 20 heede of them. One of them from a man of Saint Males tooke a Kettell, and ran away speedi-The twiffmeffe ly with his bootie. The Malonin running after, was killed by this wicked people : and although the fame had not hapned, it was in vaine to pursue after this theefe ; for all these Armonchiquois are as fwift in running as Grayhounds; as we will yet further fay in speaking of the voiage that Monfieur de Pontrincourt made in the same Country, in the yeare 1606.

The Spring feafon being paffed in the Voyage of the Armonebiquois, Mounfieur du Pont, fur-

named Grane, dwelling at Honflenr, did arrive with a company of some forty men, for to ease the faid Monfieur de Monts and his troope, which was to the great toy of all, as one may well imagine : and Canon thots were free and plentifull at the comming, according to custome, and the found of Trumpets. The faid Monfieur de Pont, not knowing yet the frate of our French men, did 10 thinke to finde there an affured dwelling, and his lodgings ready : but confidering the accidents of the strange sicknesse, whereof we have spoken, he tooke advice to change place. Monsieur de Monts was very defirous that the new habitation had beene about 40. degrees, that is to fay 4. degrees farther then Saint Croix : but having viewed the Coast as farre as Malebarre, and with much paine, not finding what he defired, it was deliberated to goe and make their dwelling in Transmigrati. Port Royall, vntill meanes were had to make an ampler discouery. So every one began to packe on from S. Croix up his things: That which was built with infinite labour was pulled downe, except the Storehouse, which was too great and painefull to be transported, and in executing of this, many voyages are made. All being come to Port Royal they found out new labours: the abiding place is cholen right ouer against the Iland, that is at the comming in of the River L'Esquelle, in a place 40 where all is covered over, and full of woods as thicke as possibly may be. The Moneth of September did already begin to come, and care was to be taken for the valading of Monsieur du Pont his Ship, to make roome for them that should returne backe into France. Finally, there is worke enough for all. When the Ship was in a readinesse to put to failes, Monsieur de Monts hauing feene the beginning of the new habitation, shipped himselfe for his returne with them that would follow him. Notwithstanding many of good courage (forgetting the griefes and labours passed) did tarry behinde, amongst whom were Monsieur Champlaine and Monsieur Champdore, the one for Geographie, and the other for the conducting and guiding of the voiages that should be necessary to be made by Sea.

The Winter being come, the Sauages of the Countrey did affemble themselues, from farre to 50 Port Royall, for to trucke with the Frenchmen, for such things as they had, some bringing Beauers skins, and Otters (which are those whereof most account may be made in that place) and also Tabagua is a Ellans or Stagges, whereof good buffe be made: Others bringing flesh newly killed, wherewith fausgetearnes they made many good Tabagies, or feafts, living merrily as long as they had wherewithall. They neuer wanted any Bread, but Wine did not continue with them till the feafon was ended. For when we came thither the yeare following, they had beene about three Moneths without any Wine, and were very glad of our comming, for that made them to take agains the tafte of it.

The greatest paine they had, was to grinde the Corne to have Bread, which is very painfull with hand-mils, where all the firength of the body is requifite. This labour is fo great, that the 62 Sauages (although they be very poore) cannot beare it, and had rather to be without bread, then to take to much paines, as hath beene tried, offering them halfe of the grinding they should doe, but they choofed rather to have no corne. And I might well beleeve that the fame, with other things, hath beene great meanes to breede the ficknesse spoken of, in some of Monfieur

CHAP.7. An enterprise aschieued. The Bay of Hoate. Mists and Colds.

du Pont his men : for there died fome halfe a dozen of them that winter. True it is, that I finde a The number defect in the buildings of our Frenchmen, which is, they had no ditches about them, whereby the of the deadwaters of the ground next to them did run vader their lower-most roomes, which was a great Fault in their waters of the ground next to them did the what their hower-more to their health. I adde besides the bad waters which they wied, that did not run from

a quicke foring, but from the neerest brooke. The winter being passed, and the Sea naugable, Monsieur du Pont would needes atchieue the The surniture The winter being palied, and the Sea naugable, Moniteur an Pont Would needed attended the of Mouleur an enterprise begun the years before by Monsieur de Monts, and to goe seeke out a Port more Southerly, where the ayre might be more temperate, according as he had in charge of the faid Mon- the diffeourty fieur de Monts. He furnished then the Barke which remained with him to that effect. But be- of new lands. so ing fet out of the Port, and full ready, hoilted up failes for Malebarre, he was forced by contrary winde twice to pur backe againe, and at the third time the faid Barke strake against the rocks at the entry of the faid Port. In this diffrace of Neptune, the men were faued with the better part of prouision and merchandise; but as for the Barke it was rent in peeces. And by this mishap the Voyage was broken, and that which was so defired intermitted. For the habitation of Port Royall was not judged good. And notwithstanding it is, on the North and North-west sides, Gaples of dea well theltered with Mountaines, diffant fome one league, some halfe a league from the Port and lay in establish the River L'E [quelle. So we fee how that enterprises take not effect according to the delires of ing the dwelmen, and are accompanied with many perils. So that one must not wonder if the time be long ling place of in establishing of Colonies, specially in lands so remote, whose nature, and temperature of aire the strenchment an is not knowne, and where one must fell and out downe Forrests, and be constrained to take heed, not from the people we call Sauages, but from them that tearme themselues Christians, and vet haus but the name of it, curied and abhominable people, worse then Wolues, enemies to God

This attempt then being broken, Monfieur da Pont knew not what to doe, but to attend the fuccour and furply that Monfieur de Monts promifed parting from Port Royall, at his return into France, to fend him the yeare following. Yet for all events he built another Barke and a Shallop for to feeke French Ships in the places where they vie to dry fift, fuch as Campfean Port, Englib Port, Misamiches Port : the Bay of Chaleur (or Heat) the Bay of Mornes or Coddes, and others in great number, according as Monfieur de Monts had done the former yeare, to the end to 20 Ship himfelfe in them, and to returne into France, in case that no Shippe should come to suc-

Bout the time of the before mentioned Shipwracke, Monfieur de Monts being in France, The third vor-A knowing Monfieur de Pontrincourt his defire, he wrote voto him, and fent a man of purpole age made by to give him notice of the Voyage that was in hand. Which the faid Monfieur de Poutrincourt ac. Monfieur de cepted of. He was no fooner come to Paris, but that he was forced to depart, not having scarle Postrinears. time to prouide for things necellary. And I having had that good hap to be acquainted with him fome yeares before, he asked me it I would take part in that bu'ineffe ?

Being come to Rochell, we found there Monfieur de Monts, and Monfieur de Pontrincourt, that were come in Poste, and our Ship called the Ionas, of the burthen of one hundred and firtie tuns, ready to passe out of the chaines of the Towne, to tarry for winde and tide. The tyde I fay, be- Rochel cause that a great Ship laden, cannot come to sea from Rochell, but in spring tydes, woon the new and full Moone, by reason that in the Towne roade there is no sufficient depth. I believe, that after fo many trials, none would have ventured to goe plant Colonies in those parts, that Countrey being fo ill spoken of, that every one did pittie vs, considering the accidents happened to The courage them that had beene there before. Notwithitanding Monfieur de Monts and his affectates, did of Monfieur de beare manfully this loffe.

The Saturday, Whitfon eue, the thirteenth of May, we weied our anckers, and failed in open Sea, fo that by little and little we loft the fight of the great Towers and Towne of Rochell, 13. of May then of the lles of Rez and Oleron, bidding France fare-well. It was a thing fearefull for them that were not yied to fuch a dance, to fee them carried ypon so moueable an element, and to be at every monent (as it were) within two fingers breadth to death. We had not long failed, but Meetings of that many did their endeuour to yeelde up the tribute to Neptune. In the meane while we went Ships, foll forward, for there was no more going backe, the planke being once taken up. The fixteenth of May we met with thirteene Holanders, going for Spaine, which did inquire of our voiage, and io held their course.

About the eighteenth day of Iune, we found the Sea-water, during three dayes space, very warme, and by the same warmth, our Wine also was warme in the bottome of our Ship, yet the ayre was not hotter then before. And the one and twentieth of the faid Moneth, quite contra- Great cold. 60 ty, we were two or three dayes to much compatted with Miftes and Coldes, that wee thought our felues to be in the moneth of lanuary, and the water of the Sea was extreame cold. Which continued with vs vntill we come upon the faid Banke, by reason of the faid Mists, which outwardly did procure this cold voto vs. When I locke out the cause of this Antiperistage, Lattribute cause of the L. it to the Ices of the North, which come floting downe vpon the Coast and Sea adioyning to ces of New.

Meaus and his

New-found-land, and Labrador, which we have faid elsewhere, is brought thither with the Sea. by her naturall motion, which is greater there, then elfewhere, because of the great space it bach to run, as in a gulie, in the depth of America, where the nature and lituation of the vinuerfall earth doth beare it eafily. Now these Ices (which sometimes are seene in bankes of ten leagues length, and as high as Mountaines and hils, and thrice as deepe in the waters) holding, as it were, an Empire in this Sea, drive out farre from them, that which is contrary to their coldnesse, and confequently doe binde and close on this fide, that small quantity of milde temperature that the Summer may bring to that part, where they come to feate and place themselves.

Before we come to the Banke, which is the great Banke where the fishing of greene Codneerethe great fishes is made (to are they called when they are not dry, for one must goe aland for the drying of 10 them) the Sea-faring-men, befides the computation they make of their courfe, have warnings when they come neere to it, by Birds, which are knowne : euen as one doth them of these our parts, returning backe into France, when one is within one hundred or one hundred and twenty quest, fisploies leagues neere it. The most frequent of these Birds, towards the said Bankes, be Godes, Fou-

quets, and other called Happe toyes. The Banke whereof we speake, are Mountaines grounded in the depth of the waters, which are railed up to thirty, fix and thirty, and forty lathams, neere to the upper face of the Sea. This Banke is holden to be of two hundred leagues in length, and is eighteene, twenty, and twenty foure leagues broad, which being paffed, there is no more bottome found out, then in these parts, vitill one come to the land. The Ships being there arrived, the failes are rowled vp, and there 20 filling is made for the greene-fish. There is farther off, other Bankes, as I have marked in the faid Map, woon the which good fifthing may be made : and many goe thither that know the places. When that we parced from Rochel, there was (as it were) a Forreit of Ships lying at Chef de Bois (whereof that place hath taken his name) which went all in a company to that Country, preuenting vs (in their going) but onely of two daies.

The fishing of

Haning seene and noted the Banke, we hoisted up failes and bare all night, keeping still our Coast to the West. But the dawne of day being come, which was Saint lohn Baptifts Eue, in Gods name we pulled downe the failes, passing that day a fishing of Cod-fish, with a thoufind mirths and contentments, by reason of fresh meates, whereof we had as much as we would, having long before wished for them. Monsieur de Pontrincourt, and a yong man of Retel named 30 Le Fleure, who by reason of the Sea-ficknesse were not come out from their beds nor Cabines. Hap-foyrs, why from the beginning of the Nauigation, came vpon the hatches that day, and had the pleasure not onely of fishing of Cod, but also of those Birds, that be called by the French Marriners Hapfoyes, that is to fay, Liuer-catchers, because of their greedinesse to denoure to liners of the Colfishes that are cast into the Sea, after their bellies be opened, whereof they are so couetous, that though they fee a great Powle ouer their heads, ready to firike them downe, yet they aduenture themselves to come neere to the Ship, to catch some of them, at what price soeuer. And they which were not occupied in filhing, did paffe their time in that sport. And so did they, by their diligence, that we tooke fome thirty of them.

In this filhing, we lometimes did take Sea-dogs, whole skins our Ioyners did keepe carefully 40 Sea dogsskins to smooth their worke withall. Item, fishes called by Frenchmen Merlus, which be better then Cod, and sometimes another kinde of fish, called Bars : which diversity did augment our delight. They which were not buse in taking neither Fishes nor Birds, did passe their time in gathering the hearts, guts, and other inward parts (most delicate) of the Cod-fish, which they did Excellent fawmince with lard and spices, and with those things did make as good Bolonia Sauliges, as any can

figes made The weather in those Se 18 contrary then in ours.

The causes of M:ft, on the Weft Seas.

wards of Cod. be made in Paris, and we did ease of them with a very good stomacke. From the eighteenth of Iune untill we did arrive at Port Royal, we have found the weather quite otherwise to that we had before. For (as we have already faid) we had cold mists or fogs, before our comming to the Banke (where we came in faire sunshine) but the next day, we fell to the fogs againe, which (a farre off) we might perceive to come and wrap vs about, holding vs 30 continually priloners three whole dayes, for two dayes of faire weather that they permitted vs : which was alwayes accompanied with cold, by realon of the Summers absence. Yea euen divers we have frene our telues a whole fennight, continually in thicke fogges, twice without any thew of Sunne, but very little, as I will recite hereafter, And I will bring forth a reason for fach effects which feemeth vinto me probable. As wee fee the fire to draw the moistneile of a wet cloth, opposite vnto it; likewife the Sunne draweth moistnesse and vapours both from the Sea and from the land. But for the diffoling of them, there is here one vertue, and beyond those parts another, according to the accidents and circumstances that are found. In these our Countries it raileth vp vapours onely from the ground, and from our Rivers: which eartily vapours, grolle and waighty, and participating leffe of the moift elloment, doe cause vs a hot aire, and the 62 earth discharged of those vapours, becomes thereby more hot and parching. From thence it commeth, that the faid vapours, having the earth on the one pirt, and the Sunne on the other, which heateth them, they are easily diffolied, not remaining long in the ayre, voloffe it be in winter. when the earth is waxen cold, and the Sunne beyond the Equinoctial line, farre off from vi-

From the same reason proceedeth the cause why Mists and Fogs be not so frequent, nor so long in the French Seas, as the New-found-land, because that the Sunne, passing from his rising, about the grounds, this Sea, at the comming thereof, receiveth almost but earthly vapours, and by a long foace retaineth this vertue to diffolue very foone the exhalation it draweth to it felfe, But when is commeth to the middelt of the Ocean, and to the faid New-found-land, having elevated and affumed in fo long acourse a great abundance of vapours, from this moist wide Ocean, it doth not forafily diffolue them, as well because those vapours be cold of themselves, and of their nature, as because the element which is neerest under them, doth simpathize with them, and preferneth them, and the Suane beames being not holpen in the diffoluing of them, as they are voon the to earth. Which is even feene in the land of that Countrie, which (although it hath but small heate, by reason of the abundance of woods) notwithstanding it helpeth to disperse the Miss and Rogges, which be ordinarily there, in the morning, during Summer, but not as at Sea, for about eight a clocke in the morning they begin to vanish away, and serie as a dew to the

round.

The eight and twentieth day of Inne, we found our felues vpon a small banke (other then the Land makes. great Banke whereof we have (poken) at forty fathams. From that time forward, we began to The discourt defry land-markes (it was New-found-land) by hearbes, mosses, showers, and peeces of wood, of s. Petersithat we alwaies met, abounding the more, by io much wee drew neere to it. The fourth day of lands. Lily, our tailers, which were appointed for the last quarter watch, descried in the morning, ve- Plaine disco-30 ry early, cuery one being yet in bed, the Iles of Saint Peter. And the Friday the feuenth of the Land. faid Moneth, we discourred, on the Larboord, a Coast of land, high raised vp. Euen our Dogs did thruit their nofes out of the Ship, better to draw and smell the sweet ayre of the land, not being able to containe them felues from witnessing, by their gestares, the loy they had of it. We dread within a league neere voto it, and (the failes being let downe) we fell a fishing of Cod, the fibure of the Binke beginning to faile, They which had before vs made voyages in thoseparts, did sudge vs to be at Cipe Breton. The night drawing on, we flood off to the Sea-ward : the Cap Breton did sudge vs to be at Cape Breton. The night drawing on, we flood off to the Sea-ward: the The Bay of next day following, being the eight of the faid moneth of Iuly, as we drew neere to the Bay of Campleau. Cama seam, came, about the evening, mitts, which did continue eight whole dayes, during the Eight daies. which we kept vs at Sea, hulling still, not being able to goe forward, being resisted by West and 30 South-well windes. During thele eight dayes, which were from one Saturday to another, God Gods favour (who hath alwayes guided these voyages, in the which not one man hath been lost by Sea) shewin dangers ed v: his speciall fauour, in sending vnto vs, among the thicke fogges, a clearing of the Sunne, which continued but halfe an houre : And then had we fight of the firme land, and knew that we were ready to be call away vpon the rockes, if wee had not speedily stood off to Sea-ward. Finally, vponSaturday, the fifteenth of July, about two a clocke in the afterdoone, the skie began to falute vs, as it were, with Cannon shots, shedding teares, as being forry to have kept vs Calm weather. fo long in paine. So that faire weather being come againe, we law comming ftraight to vs (we Morueilous obeing foure leagues off from the land) two Shallops with open failes, in a Sea yet wrathed. This dours comthing gaue vs much concent. But whill we followed on our sourie, there came from the land ming from the 40 odors vncomparable for sweetnesse, brought with a warme winde, so abundantly, that all the land. Orient parts could not procure greater abundance. We did stretch out our hands, as it were to take them, so palpable were they, which I have admired a thousand times since. Then the two Shallops did approach, the one manned with Sanages, who had a Stagge painted at their failes, The boording the other with Frenchmen of Saint Maloes, which made their fishing at the Port of Camfeau, but

mire, at the first fight, their faire shape, and forme of visage. One of them did excuse himselfe, for goody men. that he had not brought his faire beuer gowne, because the weather had beene foule. He had but one red peece of Frize vpon his backe, and Matachiaz about his necke, at his wrifts, about the Matachiaz be elbow, and at his girdle. We made them to cate and drinke. During that time they told vs all carkanets, nekthat had passed, a yeare before, at Port Regal whither we were bound. In the meane while they laces bracelets so of Saint Maloe came, and told vs as much as the Sanages had. Adding that the wednesday, when girdles. that we did thun the rockes, they had feene vs, and would have come to vs with the faid Saua- During the ges, but that they left off, by reason we put to the Sea : and moreover that it had beene alwayes milisar Sea, it faire weather on the land : which made vs much to maruell : but the caule thereof hath beene is faire weather shewed before. Thete Frenchmen of Saint Maloe were men that did deale for the affociates of on land.

Monfieur de Monts, and did complaine that the Baskes, or men of Saint lohn de Lu (against the

uers skins. They gaue vs fundry forts of their fifthes, as Bars, Marlis, and great Fletans. rs skins. They gaue visualty lorts of their filles as Bars, Marinis, and great rictans.

At the parting, fome number of ours went aland at the Port of Camplean, as well to fetch vs of fome or our 60 some wood and tresh water, whereof we had neede, as for to follow the Coast from that place company, soto Port Royall in a Shallop, for we did feare leaft Monfieur de Pont should be at our comming this ing aland. ther already gone from thence. The Sanages made offer to goe to him thorow the woods, with The Sanages do promife to be there within fix dayes, to aduercife him of our comming, to the end to cause his ways finall thay, for as much as word was left with him to depart, valelle hee were fuccoured within the time.

the Sanages were more diligent, for they arrived first. Having neuer feene any before, I did ad- The Sanages

King his Inhibitions) had trucked with the Sanages, and carried away about fix thousand Bea-

fixteenth day of that moneth, which he failed not to doe : notwithflanding our men defirous to fee the Land neerer, did ninder the fame which promifed vs to bring vnto vs the next day the faid wood and water, if wee would approch neere the Land, which wee did not, but followed

Mifts. Calmes.

Port au Mou-

Tuefday the feuenteenth of July, wee were according to our accordinged manner, furnized with milts and contrarie wind. But the Thursday wee had calme weather, fo that whether it Port ou Roffe. Were milt or faire weather wee went nothing forward. After this calme wee had two daves of fogges. The Sunday the three and twentieth of the faid moneth, wee had knowledge of the Port Du Roffignoll, and the same day in the afternoone, the Sunne shining faire, we call Anchor at the mouth of Port du Mouton, and we were in danger to fall upon a should, being come to two to hargrower fathomes and a halfe depth. We went aland seventeene of vs in number, to fetch the wood and in the Landar water, whereof we had need. There we found the Cabins and Lodgings, yet whole and vabroken, that Monfieur de Monts made two yeeres before, who had foloutned there by the space of one moneth, as we have faid in his place. We faw there, being a fandy Land, store of Okes, bearing Acornes, Cypreffe trees, Firre-trees, Bay-trees, Muske-rofes, Goofe-berries, Purllen, Rafpics, Fernes, Lysmachia, (a kind of Sammonee) Calamus odoratus, Angelica, and other Simples, in the space of two houres that wee tarried there. Wee brought backe in our ship wilde Perze, which we found good. We had not the leiture to hunt after Rabets that be there in great numher not farre from the Port, but we returned abourd as foone as we had laden our felices with water and wood : and fo hoifed vp failes. Tuelday the flue and twentieth day we were about the Cap de Sable, in faire weather, and 20

Le cap de Sable. Long Iland. The Bay S. Mary. to Port Roral.

made a good journey, for about the evening we came to fight of Long Ile, and the Bay of Saint Marie, but becaute of the night we put back to the Seaward. And the next day we caft Auchor at the mouth of Port Royall, where wee could not enter by reason it was ebbing water, but we gaugtwo Canon shot from our ship to salute the faid Port, and to advertize the Frenchmen that we were there. Thursday the seuen and twentieth of July, we came in with the sloud, which was not with-

out much difficultie, for that we had the wind contrarie, and gufts of wind from the Mountains,

which made vs almost to strike vpon the Rockes. And in these troubles our ship bare still con-

neffe of it, and the Mountaines and Hils that incironed it, and I wondred how fo faire a place did

remayne defert, being all filled with Woods, feeing that fo many pine away in the World,

which might make good of this Land, if onely they had a chiefe Governour to couduct them

thither. We knew not vet, if Monsteur du Pont was gone or no, and therefore wee did expett

that hee should send some men to meete vs ; but it was in vaine : for hee was gone from thence

twelve dayes before. And whileft we did hull in the middeft of the Port Memberton, the grea-

What! You ftand here a dining (for it was about noone) and doe not fee a great flip that com- 40

meth here; and we know not what men they are: Suddenly these two men ranne vpon the

Bulwarke, and with diligence made readie the Canons, which they furnished with Pellets and

touch Powder. Memberton, without delay, came in a Canow made of Farkes of trees, with

a Daughter of his, to view vs : And having found but friendship, and knowing vs to be French-

men, made no alarme. Notwithstanding one of the two Frenchmen left there, called La Taile,

came to the shoare of the Port, his match on the cocke, to know what we were (though he knew

it well enough, for we had the white Banner displayed at the top of the Mast) and on the sudden

four evolley of Canons were that off, which made innumerable echoes: And from current, the

Fort was falured with three Canon shots, and many Musket shots, at which time our Trumpe-

uing God thankes, in feeing the Saurges Cabins, and walking thorow the Medowes. But I can-

not but praile the gentle courage of thele two men, one of them I have alreadie named, the other

is called Miquelet : which deferre well to be mentioned here, for having to freely exposed that

lives in the conternation of the welfare of New France. For Monfieur du Port haung but one

Barke and a Shallop, to feeke out towards New-found-land, for French shippes, could not charge

himfelie with fo much furniture, Corne, Meate, and Merchandiles as were there : which he had

bin forced to cast into the Sea(and which lead bin greatly to our prejudice, and wedid feare it ve-

ry much) if thefe two men had not adventured themfelves to tarrie there, for the preferring of

ter was not flacke of his dutie. Then we landed, viewed the houle, and we peffed that day ingi- 50

trarie, the Poope before, and sometimes turned round, not being able to do any other thing else. 20

Difficulties in comming in.

The beautie of Finally, being in the Port, it was vnto vs a thing maruellous to fee the faire diffance and large-

Sagames figni- tell Sagamos of the Souriquois (fo are the people called with whom we were) came to the French heth Capraine Fort, to them that were left there, being only two, crying as a mad man, faying in his Languages

Praises of the two Frenchmen Fort of Port Royall.

The tilling of the ground. The meeting du Pent.

those things, which they did with a willing and toyfull minde, The Friday, next day after our arrivell, Monfieur de Pourrincourt affected to this Enterprize 60 as for himfelfe, put part of his people to worke in the tillage and manuting of the ground, whilest the others were employed in making cleane of the Chambers, and enery one to make readie that which belonged to his Trade. In the means time those people of ours that had left ys at Campfeau, to come along the Coaft, met (as it were miraculoully) with Monfeur du Pont,

among Hands, that bee in great number in those parts. The faid Monfieur de Pout, at this hanpic and fortunate meeting, returned backg so fee we in the Port Royall, and to ship himselfe in the longe, to returne into France. As this change was beneficiall vnto him, fo was it vnto vs . by the meaner of his hips that hee left with va. For without that, wee had beene in fuch extremitie that we had not beene able to goe nor come any where, our thip being once returned into France. Her arrived there, on Monday the last of luly, and tarried set in Port Roy all, vntill the eight and twenty of August. All this moneth we made merry.

At the very beginning, we were deficous to fee the Countrie up the River, where wee found Medowes, almost continuall about twelve leagues of ground, among which, brookes doe runne to without number, which come from the Hills and Mountaines adiopning. The Woods very shicke on the water shoates, and so thicke, that fometimes, one cannot goe thorow them. In the passage to come forth from the same Fort, for to gonto Sea , there is a Brooke, which talleth from the high Rockes downe, and in falling disperseth it selfe into a small raine, which is very delightfull in Summer, because that at the foote of the Rockethere are Caues, wherein one is courted, whilst that this raine falleth forpleafantly : And in the Cane (wherein the raine of this Brooke falleth) is made, as it were, a Rain-bowe, when the Sunne fhineth : which hath Theforme of a given me great cause of admiration.

Within fifteene leagues of our dwelling; the Countrey, thorow which the River L'Equille der a Cauc. paffeth, is all plaine and euen. I have feene in those parts many Countries , where the land is 20 all eyen, and the fairest of the world. But the perfection thereof is , that it is well watered. And for witnesse whereof, not onely in Port Royall, but also in all New France, the great River Greateste of Canada is proofe thereof, which at the end of foure hundred leagues is as broad as the greatell Rivers of the world, replenished with Iles and Rockes innumerable: taking her beginning leaves from from one of the Lakes which doe meete at the streame of her course (and so I thinke) so that it the mouth. hath two courses, the one from the East towards France: the other from the West towards It springs from

the South Seas: which is admirable, but not without the like example found in our Europe, a Lake. For the River which commeth downe to Trent, and to Verone proceedeth from a Lake which produceth another River, whole course is bent opposite to the River of Line, which falleth into the River Danbe. So the Nile iffueth from a Lake that bringeth forth other Rivers, which dif-

30 charge themfeluesinto the great Ocean.

Let us returne to our tillages for to that must wee apply our selves : it is the first mine that Which is the must bee fought for, which is more worth than the treatures of Atabalina: And hee that hath first mine, Come, Wine, Cattell, Woollen and Linnen, Leather, Iron, and afterward Cod-fifh, he needeth nanther treatures, for the necessaries of life. Now all this is (or may be) in the Land by vs described: vpon which Monsteur de Pontrincoure having caused a second tillage to be made, in fifteene dayes after his arrivall thither, he fowed it with our French Corne, as well Wheat and Rie, as with Hempe, Flaxe, Turnen feed, Radice, Cabages, and other feeds: And the eight day following, he faw that his labour had not beene in vaine, but rather a faire hope, by the production that the ground had already made of the feedes which shee had received. Which being shewed 40 to Monkeur du Pont, was vnto him a faire subject to make his relation in France, as a thing altogether new there. The twentieth day of August was already come, when these faire shewes August 20. were made, and the time did admonish them that were to goe in the Voyage, to make ready. Whereunto they beganne to give order, fo that the five and twentieth day of the fame moneth, after many peales of Ordnance, they weighed anchor to come to the mouth of the Port, which

is commonly the first dayes iourney.

Monsieur de Monts being desirous to reach as farre into the South as he could, and seeke out a Cause of the place very fit to inhabite, beyond Malebarre, had requested Monsieur de Poutrincourt to passe Yoyage made farther than yet he had done, and to seeke a convenient Port in good temperature of aire, making no greater account of Port Royall than of Saint Croix, in that which concerneth health. mouchiausis.

50 Whereunto the faid Monfieur de Pontrincourt being willing to condescend, would not tarrie for the Spring time, knowing he should have other employments to exercise himselfe withall. But feeing his fowings ended, and his field greene, refolued him felfe to make this Voyage and Dilcouerie before Winter. So then hee disposed all things to that end, and with his Barke anchored neere to the longs, to the end to get out in companie.

The eight and twentieth day of the faid moneth each of vs tooke his course, one one way, Parting from and the other another, diverfly to Gods keeping. As for Monsieur du Pont he purposed by the Port Royall. Way to fet vpon a Merchant of Roam, named Boyer, who (contrary to the Kings inhibitions) was in those parts to trucke with the Sauages, notwithstanding bee had beene deliucred out of prison in Rochell, by the consent of Monsieur de Pontrincourt, under promite hee should not goe

thither; but the faid Boyer was already gone. And as for Monfieur de Pourrencourt, hee tooke his course for the Ile of Saint Croix, the Frenchmens first abode, having Monsieur de Champdore for Mafter and Guide of his Barque: but beeing hindered by the winde, and because his Barque did leake, hee was forced twice to put backe againe. In the end hee quite passed the Faire Ric Bay Françoife, and viewed the faid He, where hee found ripe Corne, of that which two yeeres found at

before S.Croix.

Vuuuuu

Their meaning is to plant beyond Malebarre to the louthward, A ditch profitibly made. What flore of workmen and lab pirers in Muffels Lobfters, Crabs.

> Good prouifign of wilde

What quantity of Bread and Wine.

* A kinde of Stag, or red Deere. The liberall nature of the Sausges. What carth is in the Medowes.

Ellans in the

not, if there bee any ground, there are Woods. Et vs returne to Monfieur de Posserincourt, whom we have left in the Ile Saint Croix. Having 50 made there a reuiew, and cherished the Savages that were there, hee went in the space of foure dayes to Pemptegoet, which is that place to famous vnder the name of Norombega. There needeth not fo long a time in comming thither, but hee tarried on the way to mend his Barke: for to that end he had brought with him a Smith and a Carpenter, and quantitie of boords. Hes crossed the Iles, which bee at the mouth of the River, and came to Kimbeki, where his Barke was in danger , by reason of the great streames that the nature of the place procureth there. This was the cause why hee made there no stay, but passed further to the Bay of Marchin, which is the name of a Captaine of the Sauages, who at the arrivall of the faid Monsterr de Poutrincourt, beganne to crie out aloud Ho He: whereunto the like answere was made vnto him. Hee replied, asking in his Language, What are yee? They answered him, Friends: And thereupon 60 Monsteur de Pourrincoure approaching, treated amitie with him, and presented him with Knines, Hatchete, and Matachiaz, that is to fay, Scarles, Karkenets and Bracelets made of Beades, or Quills made of white and blue Glaffe; whereof hee was very glad , as also for the confederacy Confederacy that the faid Monfieur de Pourincours made with him, knowing very well that the fame would

before was fowed by Monfieur de Monts, which was faire, bigge, weighty, and well filled. Hee sent vnto vs some of that Corne to Port Rejall, where I was requested to stay, to looke to the house, and to keepe the rest of the companie there, in concord. Whereunto I did 20ree (though it was referred to my will) for the allurance that wee had among our felues, that the veere following wee should make our habitation in a warmer Countrie beyond Malebarre, and that wee should all goe in companie with them that should bee fent to vs out of France. In the meane while I employed my lelfe in dreffing the ground, to make inclosures and partitions of Gardens, for to fowe Corne and Kitchin herbes. Wee caused also a Ditch to bee made all about the Fort, which was very needfull to receive the waters and moiftneffe , that beforedid runne vnderneath among the rootes of trees, that had beene fallen downe: which peraduenture did make the place vnhealthfull. I will not fland in describing heere, what each of our other workmen and labourers did particularly make. It sufficeth, that wee had store of Ioyners, Carpenters, Maions, Stone-caruers, Lock-imithes, Taylors, Boord-fawyers, Mariners, &c. who did Their exercise exercise their Trades; which (in doing their duties). were very kindly vsed, for they were at and manner of their owne libertie for three houres labour a day. The ouerplus of the time they bestowed it. in going to gather Mussels, which are at lowe water in great quantitie before the Fort. or Lobfters, or Crabbes, which are in Port Royall, under the Rockes in great abundance, or Cockles. which are in every part in the oze, about the shoares of the faid Port: All that kinde of fish is taken without Net or Boat. Some there were that fometimes tooke wilde-fowle, but not being skilfull, they spoyled the game. And as for vs , our Table was furnished by one of 20 Monfieur de Monts men, who prouided for vs in fuch fort that wee wanted no fowle, bringing vito vs, fometimes halfe a dozen of birds, called by Frenchmen, Outards (a kinde of wilde Geefe) fometimes as many Mallards, or wilde Geefe, white and gray, very often two or three dozen of Larkes, and other kindes of birds. As for Bread, no body felt want thereof, and euery one had three quarts of pure and good Wine aday. Which hath continued with we as long as wee haue beene there, fauing that, when they, who came to fetch vs, in flead of bringing commodities vnto vs, helped vs to spend our owne. For our allowance, wee had Peale, Beanes; Rice, Prunes, Raifins, crie Codde, and falt Flesh, besides Oyle and Butter. But whensoeuer the Sauages, dwelling neere vs, had taken any quantitie of Sturgions, Salmons, or imall fiftes; Item, any Beuers, * Ellans, Carabous (or fallow Deere) they brought vnto vs halfe of it: and 30 that which remained they expoled it sometimes to sale publikely, and they that would have any thereof did trucke Bread for it. Wherein is to be noted a thing that now I remember. It is, that being necessary to cut turfes

to couer the Piles of wood, heaped to make the faid Coales, there was found in the Medowes three foote deepe of earth, not earth, but graffe or herbes mingled with mudde, which have heaped themselues yeerely one vpon another from the beginning of the world, not having beene mooued. Neuerthelesse the greene thereof serueth for pasture to the Ellans, which wee have many times seene in our Medowes of those parts, in herds of three or source, great and small, fuffering themselues sometimes to bee approached, then they ranne to the Woods : But I may fay moreouer, that I have feene, in croffing two leagues of our faid Medowes, the fame to bee 43 all troden with trackes of Ellans, for I knowe not there any other cloven footed beafts. There was killed one of those beafts, not farre off from our Fort at a place where Monfieur de Monis having cauled the graffe to bee mowed two yeetes before, it was growne agains the fairest of the world. Some might matuell how those Medowes are made, seeing that all the ground in those places is couered with Woods. For Letisfaction whereof, let the curions Reader knowe, that in high Spring tides, specially in March and September, the floud couereth those shoares, which hindereth the trees there to take roote. But every where, where the water overfloweth

Pauty incourts discouery. Pemptegoet the true name of the fabulous Norombega. Kiniveki.

The Bay of

bee a great aide and support vnto him. Hee distributed to some men that were about him, amono a great number of people, the Presents that the faid Monsieur de Poutrincourt gaue him. to whom hee brought flore of Originac, or Ellans flesh (for the Baskes doe call a Stagge, or El. Originac or Ellan, Orignac) to refresh the companie with victuals. That done, they fer fayles towards Cho- lan: Champlein subset, where the River of Captaine Olmechin is, and where the yeere following was made the like Oxen. warre of the Souriquois and Etechemins, under the conduct of the Sagamos Memberton, which The Rings of I have described in Verses, which Verses I have inserted among the Muses of New France. At Olmechin. the entry of the Bay of the faid place of Chonakoet there is a great Hand, about halfe a league Port De Chonacompasse, wherein our men did first discouer any Vines (for although there bee some in Ansland of 10 the Lands neerer to Port Royall, notwithstanding there was yet no knowledge had of them) Vines

which they found in great quantitie, having the trunke three and foure foote high, and as bigge as ones fift in the lower part, the Grapes faire and great, and fome as big as Plummes, or leffer : but as blacke , that they left a staine where their liquout was spilled : Those Grapes, I fav. lving ouer bushes and brambles that growe in the same Hand, where the trees are not so thicke as in other where, but are fixe or feuen rods distant assunder, which causeth the Grapes to be ripe the fooner; having befiles a ground very fit for the fame, gravelly and fandy. They tarried there but two houres : but they noted, that there were no Vines on the North fide, even

as in the Ile Saint Croix are no Cedar trees, but on the West side,

From this Iland they went to the River of Olmechin, a Port of Chanakoet, where Marchin The River of 20 and the faid Olmechin brought to Monsieur de Poutrincours a prisoner of the Souriquois (and there-Olmechin. fore their enemy) which they game vinto him freely. Two houres after, there arrived two Sa- The galantuages, the one an Etelhemin, named Cheondun, Captaine of the River Saint lobn, called by the neffe of the Sauages Organdi: The other a Souriquois, named Messamoet, Captaine or Sagamos of the River of Port De la the Port De la Heue, where this priloner was taken. They had great store of Merchandises Heue. trucked with Frenchmen, which they were comming to veter, that is to fay, great, meane, and small Kettles, Hatchets, Kniues, Gownes, short Clokes, red Waste-coates, Bisket, and other thines: whereupon there arrived twelve or fifteene Boats, full of Savages of Olmechine fubie. The Savages Etion, being in very good order, all their faces painted, according to their wonted custome, when

they will feeme faire, having their Bow and Arrow in hand, and the quiver, which they laved faces. 30 downe aboord. At that houre Messames beganne his Oration before the Sauages: shewing The Oration them, how that in times pait, they often had friendship together : and that they might easily of Meffamoti. ouercome their enemies, if they would have intelligence and ferue themselves with the amitie of the Frenchmen, whom they saw there present to knowe their Countrey, to the end to bring commodities vnto them hereafter, and to fuccour them with their forces, which forces he knew. and hee was the better able to make a demonstration thereof vote them, by so much that hee which spake, had before time beene in France, and dwelt there with Monsieur de Grandmont. Governour of Bayonne, Finally, his speech continued almost an houre with much vehemency and affection, with a gefture of body and armes, as is requifite in a good Oratour. And in the end Mellamost afhe did cast all his merchandises (which were worth about three hundred crownes, brought into festion to the

40 that Countrie) into Olmechin his Boat, as making him a prefent of that, in affurance of the love Frenchmen. hee would witnesse vnto him. That done the night hasted on, and every one retired himselfe. and liberality But Meffamoet was not pleased, for that Olmechin made not the like Oration vnto him, of Meffamoet, nor required his present: For the Sauages have that noble qualitie, that they give liberally, ca. The Sauages fling at the feet of him whom they will honour, the Prefent that they give him : But it is in be liberall. hope to receive some reciprocall kindnesse, which is a kinde of contract, which wee call, without name, I give thee, to the end thou shouldest give mee. And that is done thorow all the world. Therefore Meffamoet from that day had in minde to make warre to Olmechin. Notwithstan. A Corn-counding, the next day in the morning he and his people did returns with a Boate laden with that trie, Beance, Pumpions, and which they had, to wit, Corne, Tabacco, Beanes and Pumpions, which they diffributed here Grapes,

50 and there. Those two Captaines Olmechin and Marchin have fince beene killed in the warres. In whose stead was chosen by the Sauages, one named Bessabes, which since our returne hath Bessabes. beene killed by Englishmen: and in stead of him they have made a Captaine to come from with- Englishmen. in the Lands, named Asticou, a grave man, valiant and redoubted, which, in the twinkling of Asticou, an eye, will gather up a thousand Sauages together, which thing Olmechin and Marchin might alfodoe. For our Baikes being there, presently the Sea was seene all couered ouer with their Boates, laden with nimble and lufty men, holding themselues vp straight in them: which wee cannot doe without danger, those Boates being nothing else but trees hollowed. From thence Canoas, Monsieur de Poutrincourt following on his course, found a certaine Port very delightfull, which Avery good

had not beene seene by Monsieur de Monts: And during the Voyage they saw store of smoke. Port. 60 and people on the sheare, which inuited vs to come aland : And seeing that no account was made of it, they followed the Barke along the fand, yea most often they did outgoe her, so swife. The existing of are they, having their Bowes in hand, and their Quiners vpon their backes, alwaies finging and the dim withdancing, not taking care with what they should live by the way.

Monsieur de Poutrincourt hauing landed in this Port, behold among a multitude of Sa-

uages a good number of Fifes, which did play with certaine long Pipes, made as it were with Canes of Reedes, painted ouer, but not with fuch an harmonie as our Shepheards might doe: And to flew the excellency of their arte, they whilled with their nofes in gambolling, accorand as this people did runne headlong, to come to the Birke, there was a Sunge which hurt ding to their fashion.

A Sausze wounded.

and mops a-

himselfe grieuously in the hecle against the edge of a Rocke, whereby hee was enforced to temayne in the place. Monsteur de Pourrincourt his Chirurgion, at that instant would apply to this burt that which was of his Arte, but they would no permit it, vntill they had first made their mouthes and mops about the wounded man. They then layed him downe on the ground, one of them holding his head on his lappe, and made many bawlings and tingings, whereunto to Their mouthes the wounded man answered but with a Ho, with a complayning voice, which having done they bout him that veelded him to the cure of the faid Chirurgion, and went their way, and the Patient alfoatier hee had beene dreffed: but two houres after he came againe, the most jocund in the world, hauing put about his head, the binding cloth, wherewith his heele was wrapped, for to leeme the The day following, our people entred farther into the Port, where being gone to see the Ca-

they brought more of them than one would, emulating one another; and for recompence of this

their kindnesse, there was set on their foreheads a Fillet or Band, of paper, wet with spittle, of

that we did make the Wine which wee did drinke. Wee would have made them to eate of that

Grape, but having taken it into their mouthes, they spitted it out, so ignorant is this people of the best thing that God hath given to Man, next to Bread. Yet notwithstanding they have no

want of wit, and inight be brought to doe fome good things, if they were civilized, and had the

vic of Handy-craus. But they are fubtile, the cuish, traiterous, and though they bee naked, yet

One cannot take heed of their fingers, for if one turne neuer to little his eyes afide, and that they

man ed to trucke the Tabacco they had for our merchandifes.

was hurt.

bins of the Sauages, an old woman of an hundred or fixfore yeeres of age, came to caft at the The Prefents feete of Monstew de Poutrincourt, a loafe of bread, made with the Wheat called Mobis, then veof a Sauage ry faire Hemps of a long growth; Item, Beanes, and Grapes newly gathered, because they had igene Frenchmen eate of them at Chanakeer. Which the other Sauages feeing, that knew it not, 20

woman. Hempe very Beanes. Quantitie of The impacts which they were very proud. It was fixed them, in preffing the Grape into a Glaffe, that of

fpie the or postunitie to fteale any Knife, Hatchet, or any thing clie, they will not miffe nor 10 fayle at it; and will put the theft betweene their buttockes, or will hide it within the land with their foot to current g v, that one shall not perceive it. Indeed I doe not wonder if a proture the dr. dr. ple poore and naked be t. ceuth , but when the heart is malicious, it is viexcufable. This people is fuch, that they wuit use hindled with terrour: for if through loue and gentleneffs one gue them too free access, they will practile some surprise, as it hath been known in divers occamouchiqueis. fions heretotore, and will yet here-after be feete. And without deterring any longer, the fecond Note how the day after our comming thither as they law our people buse awashing Linnen , they came some Armouchiquois must be deale fitty, one tollowing another, with Bowes, Arrowes and Quiners, intending to play some bid withall part, as it was consectured upon their man er of proceeding; but they were presented, some of our men going to meet them, with their Muskets and Matches at the cocke, which made some 40

This the only w y to ciulize them and hang out onto going to meet unit, which has been partied in, having put downe their weapons, came them, may ruth of them runne away, and the others being compaffed in, having put downe their weapons, came mem, nay nutt of commentary of the state of an Iland, where our men were, and making a friendly flew, determ and they to a Peninfule, or finally head of an Iland, where our men were, and making a friendly flew, dethroat, as in the Virginian maffacre ap. pear-th. Sufpicion for the comming of Glmechin.

The trouble of garments.

Corne fowed, planted.

and to plant Vines.

100. Boats of

As they were a deliberating to palla farther, Olmeebin came to the Barke to fee Monfieur de Postrincours, where haung carried certaine hours, either in talking or eating, hee faul, that the next day an hundred Boates should come, contayining every one sixe men; but the comming of fuch a number of men, being but troubleforce, Monfieur de Poutrincours would not tartie for them; but went away the same day to Malebare, not without much difficultie, by realm of 5 Peril of holds the great streames and shoulds that are there. So that the Barke having touched at three footst water onely, we thought to be cast away, and wee beganne to violate her, and put victuals into the Shalop, which was behind, for to faue vs on Land: but being no rull Sea, the Barke came affore within an houre, All this Sea is a Land operflowed, as that of Mount Saint Michaeli, a

The next day the Copraine of the faid place and Port, came into Monsseur de Pontrincourts Barke to feehim: weedid martiell to see him accompanied with Olmechin, feeing the way was

manuellous long to come thither by Land, and much thorter by Sea. That gaue cause of had iu-

spicion, albeit hee had promifed his love to the Frenchmen. Notwithstanding they were gently

received. And Monfieur de Poutrincourt gave to the laid Olmechin a complete garment, where-

with being clothed, hee viewed himfelfe in a Glasse, and did laugh to see himselfe in that order.

hee was returned vnto his Cabins, he distributed it to fundry of his men , to the end that one

alone ffould not be overpeftered with it. Now during the time of the laid Monfieur de Pourin-

court was there, buy g in doubt whether Monstew de Monts would come to make an habitation

on that Coast, as her wished it, her made there a piece of ground to be tilled, for to lowe Come

Bit a little while after, teching that the same hindred him, although it was in October, when 90

fanday ground, in which, all that resteth is a plaine slat Countrey as farre as the Mountaines. which are seene fifteene leagues off from that place. And I am of opinion, that as fatre as Virginia. Note. it is all alike. Moreouer, there is here great quantity of Grapes, as before, and a Country very Great antiquifull of people. Monfieur de Monts being come to Malebarre in an other trason of the yeare, ty of Grapes, eathered onely greene Grapes; which he made to be preserved, and brought some to the King. But it was our good hap to come thicher in October, for to fee the maturity thereof. I have here Hereubon before shewed the difficulty that is found in entering into Malebarre. This is the cause why chap.7. Manheur de Pontrincourt came not in with his Barke, but went thither with a Shallon onely.

which thirty or forty Sauages did helpe to draw in ; and when it was full tide (but the tide doth 10 not mount here but two tathams high, which is (eldome feene) he went out, and retired himselfe Two fathames into his faid Barke, to passe further in the morning, as soone as he should ordaine it.

He night beginning to glue place to the dawfing of the day, the failes are hoifed vp, but it was but a very perilous naugation. For with this small Vessell they were forced to coast Danger. the land, where they found no depth : going backe to Sea it was yet worle; in fuch wife that they did ftrike twice or thrice, being raifed vp againe onely by the waves, and the rudder was broken, which was a dreadfull thing. In this extremity they were confirmined to cast anker in the Sea, at two fathams deepe, and three leagues off from the land. Which being done, Daniel Hay (a man which taketh pleature in thewing forth his vertue in the perils of the Sea) was tent 20 towards the Coast to view it, and fee if there were any Port. And as he was neere land he faw a Sauage, which did dance, finging, 70, 70, 70, he called to him to come neerer, and by fignes ask- Oigoudi, or S. ed him if there were any place to retire Ships in, and where any fresh water was. The Sauge Iobni Riucr. bauing made figne there was, hee tooke him into his Shallop, and brought him to the Barke. Sauages of wherein was Chkondun Captaine of the River of Oigouds, otherwife Saint Johns River: who undryNavione being brought before this Sauage, he vnderstood him no more than did our owne people: true it one another, is, that hy fignes he comprehended better then they what he would fay. This Sauage shewed the places where no depth was, and where was any, and did fo well indenting and winding here and there, alway the led in hand, that in the end they came to the Port thewed by him, 20 where small depth is; wherein the Barke being arrived, diligence was vied to make a forge A force and for to mend her with her rudder, and an Ouen to bake Bread, because there was no more an ouen adde-

Bicket left.

Fifteene dayes were imployed in this worke, during the which Monfieur de Poutrincourt, ac. A croile fet ip cording to the laudable cultome of Christians, made a Croffe to be framed and fet vp vpon a greene Banke, as Monsieur de Monts had done two yeeres before at Kimbels and Malebarre. Now among these paineful exercises they gave not over making good cheere, with that which both the Sea and Land might furnish in that part. For in this Port is plenty of Fowle in taking of which many of our men applied themselves: specially the Sea Larkes are there in so great flights that Monsieur de Poutrincourt killed eight and twenty of them with one Caliuer shot. Abundance of As for fifthes, there be fuch abundance of Porpeles, and another kinde of fifth, called by Frenchmen Larkes & fifth & 40 Soufleurs, that is to fay, Blowers, that the Sea feemes to be all couered over with them. But they had not the things necessary for this kinde of fishing, they contented themselves then with shel-fish, as of Oyites, Skalops, Periwincles, whereof there was enough. The Sauages of the Shel-fish.

other fide did Bring fish, and Grapes within baskets made of rushes, for exchange with some of Grapes After certaine daves, the faid Monfieur de Poutrincourt, seeing there great assembly of Sausges. came ashoare, and to give them some terrour, made to march before him one of his men, flourish- The trial of ing with two naked iwords. Whereat they much wondred, but yet much more when they faw French weathat our Muskets did pierce thicke peeces of wood, where their Arrowes could not fo much as pons before fcratch. And therefore they neuer affailed our men, as long as, they kept watch. And it had beene so good to found the Trumpet at every houres end, as Captaine lames Quartier did. For (as Mon- Good influence)

fewr de Pourrincourt doth often lay) One must never lay bast for theenes; meaning, that one must don. neuer give cause to any enemy to thinke that he may surprise you: But one must alwayes shew that he is mistrusted, and that you are not assessed, thiefely when one hath to doe with Saugees. which will never fet you him that resolutely expects them; for soone after they killed soure of Our men which were careleffe. They named this Port, Port Fortune.

Counfell being taken, it was refolued to returne into Port Royall: Monsieur de Pontrincourt befides all this, being yet in care for them whom he had left there, fo they came agains for the third time into Port Fortune, where no Sauage was feene. V pon the first winde, the faid Monsieur de Pontrinconre weighed anker for the returne, and being mindfull of the dangers passed he fai-60 led in open Sea : which shortned his course, but not without a great mischiefe of the rudder, Penila

which was againe broken; in such fort, that being at the mercy of the waites, they arrived in the end, as well as they could a monght the Hands of Norombega, where they mended it. Monstenr The arrivall of de Pourincourt artiued in Port Royall the foureteenth day of November, where we received him Monteur de

tide onely.

Resolution for

Posts incorr.

The flate of C wor. How they foct their winter. Coales. The vie of the Compaffe in land voiages.

The inflitution of the Order Bontemps

is as Pie-corner, or iuch a Cookeplace in London.

Store of Stur-

gions. Betore in chap.113. The viage of the Sauzges.

The Sausges haue care of the Frenchmen.

Bad winde.

The flate of Win or wea-

Snow is profi-

Frofts when they area

And as the skie is feldome covered with clouds towards New-found-lands in Winter time, fo are there morning frotts, which doe increase in the end of Ianuary, February, and in the begin-

The publike reloycing being finished, Monsieur de Pontrincourt had a care to see his corne, the greatest part whereof he had lowed two leagues off from our Port, by the River L'Esquelle; and the other part about our faid Pore : and found that which was first fowen very forward but not the laft, that had beene fowed the fixth and tenth dayes of Nouember, which notwithstanding did grow under the Snow, during Winter, as I have noted it in my fowings. It would be a tedious thing to particularife all that was done among it vs during Winter: as to tell how the faid Monfieur de Poutrincourt caused many times coales to be made, the forge-coale being spent : That he caused waies to be made thorow the woods: That he went thorow the Forrests by the guide of the Compatie, and other things of fuch nature. But I will relate that, for to keepe vs merry on the Company, and victuals, there was an order established at the Table of the faid Monstear to de Poutrincourt, which was named L'ordre de bon temps, the order of good time (or the order of mirth) at first invented by Monsieur Champlein, wherein they (who were of the same table) were

every one at his turne and day (which was in fifteene dayes once) Steward and Cater. Now his

care was that we should have good and worshipfull fare, which was so well observed, that (although the Belly-gods of their parts doe often reproach vnto vs that we had not La Rue aux Ours of Paris with vs) we have ordinarily had there, as good cheere as we could have at La Rue CARGE BUT COSTS and Ours, and at farre leffer charges. For there was none, but (two dayes before his turne came) or Beare River. was carefull to goe ahuncing or hihing, and brought some daintie thing, belides that which was of our ordinary allowance. So well, that at breakfast we neuer wanted some modicom or other. of fish or fiesh; and at the repait of dinners or suppers, yet lesse; for it was the great banquet, 20 where the Gouernour of the feath, or Steward (whom the Sauages doe call Atollegi) nauing made the Cooke to make all things ready, did march with his Napkin on his shoulder, and his flaffe of office in his hand, with the colour of the order about his necke, which was worth ahous four crownes, and all of them of the order following him, bearing every one a dish. The like allo was at the bringing in of the Fruit, but not with fo great a traine. And at night after grace was faid, he refigned the Collar of the Order, with a cup of wine, to his fuccefour in that charge, and they dranke one to another. I have heretofore faul that we had abundance of Fowle, as Mallards, Outards, Geele gray and white, Partridges and other Birds: Item, of Ellans or Stage

flesh, of Caribous or Deere, Beuers, Otters, Beares, Rabbets, Wilde-cats or Leopards, Nibsches, and fuch like, which the Sauages did take, wherewith we made as good diffes of meate, as in the 30 Cookes shops that be in La rue aux Ours, Beare streete, and greater store; for of all meates none is fo tender as Ellans flesh (whereof we made good pasties) nor so delicate as the Beauers-taile. Yea, we have had sometimes halfe a dolen Sturgions at one clap, which the Sauages did bring to vs, part whereof we did take, paying for it, and the rest was permitted them to sell publikely, and to trucke it for Bread, whereof our people had abundantly. And as for the ordinary meate brought out of France, that was distributed equally, as much to the least as to the biggest. And the like with Wine, as we have faid. In fuch actions we had alwayes twenty or thirty Sauages, men, women, girles and Boies, who beheld vs doing our offices. Bread was given them grate, as we doe here to the poore. But as for the Sagamos Memberton, and other Sagamos (when they came to vs) they fat at table eating and drinking as we did : and wee tooke pleafure in feeing 40 them, as contrariwise their absence was irkesome vnto vs; as it came to passe three or source times that all went away to the places where they knew that game and Venison was, and brought one of our men with them, who lived some six weekes as they did without Salt, without Bread

and without Wine, lying on the ground ypon skins, and that in snowie weather. Moreover they had greater care of him (as also of others that have often gone with them) than of themfelues, faying, that if they should chance to dye, it would be laid to their charges to have

Such government as we have spoken of, did serve vs for preservatives against the Country dif-Preterration against Samy eafe. And yet foure of our died in February and March, of them who were of a freefull conditional state of the same state of the s on fluggish. And I remember I observed that all had their lodgings on the West side, and looking 30 towards the wide open Port, which is almost four leagues long, shaped ouale-wife, besides they

We had faire weather almost during all the Winter: for neither raines nor fogges are so frehad all of them ill bedding. quent there as here, whether it be at Sea or on the land : The reason is, because the Sun-beames, by the long distance, have not the force to raise vp vapours from the ground here, chiefely in a

Countrey all wooddy. But in Summer it doth, both from the Sea and the Land, when as their and Mills be force is augmented, and those vapors are dissoluted studently or slowly, according as one approachkarfem water eth to the Equinoftiall line. Rames being in those parts rare, in that sealon, the Sunne likewife shineth there very faire, after the fall of Snowes, which we have had feuen or eight times, but it is easily melted in open places, and the longest abiding have beene in February. Howiseuer it be, the Snow is very profitable for the fruits of the earth, to preferue them against the isoft, and to ferue them as a for-gowne.

CHAP. 7. Pleasant sport. Want of Garden Hearbes. Quantitie of Gumme.

ning of March, for vntill the very time of January, we kept vs still in our doublets: And I reming of Marien, as Anday, the foureteenth day of that moneth, in the afternoone, wee forted out felues finging in Municke vpon the River L'Efquelle, and in the same moneth wee went to fee our tenes two leagues off from our Fort, and did dine merrily in the Sun-shine : I would not for all Conformity Conference was a milde in these pares were like vnto this, For as that winter was as milde in these parts, of weather in thefe laft Winters of the yeares 1607, 1608. have beene the hardest that ever was seene; it hath East and West alfo beene alike in those Countries, in such fort, that many Sauages died through the rigour of the Fraces. also beene alike in those Countries, in such sort, that many saudges also through the The great weather, as in these our parts many poore people and trauellers have beene killed through the Frost 1607. Samehardneise of Winter weather. But I will say, that the yeare before we were in New France, to the Winter had not beene fo hard, as they which dwelt there before vs haue testified vnto me. Let this suffice for that which concerneth the winter feason. But I am not yet fully satisfied in Let this time to that which each the felfefame parallell the featon is in those parts of New Wherefore is France more flow by a moneth than in thefe parts, and the leaves appeare not vpon the trees but the feation late towards the end of the moneth of May: valeffe wee fay that the thickneffe of the wood and greatnesse of Forrests doe hinder the Sunne from warming of the ground; Item, that the Country where we were is iovning to the Sea, and thereby more fubicat to cold, And besides that, this land having never beene tilled is the more dampish, the trees and plants not being able easily to draw fap from their mother the earth. In recompence wherof the Winter there is also more flow.

as we have heretofore fpoken. 20 The cold being passed, about the end of March the best disposed amongst vs strided who should Dressing of best till the ground, and make Gardens, to sowe in them, and gather fruits thereof. Which was Gardens. to very good purpole, for wee found great discommodity in the Winter for want of Garden to very good purpole, for wee found great discommodity in the Winter for want of Cartering Good crop hearbes. When every one had done his towing, it was a marveilous pleasure in seeing them daily from the grow and fpring vp, and yet greater contentment to vie thereof io abundantly as wee did : io ground. that this beginning of good hope made vs almost to forget our native Countrie, and especially when the fish began to haunt fresh-water, and came abundantly into our brookes, in fuch innu. Abundance of merable quantity that we knew not what to doe with it.

Whilelt fome laboured on the ground, Monsteur de Poutrincourt made fome buildings to be The care of prepared, for to lodge them which he hoped should succeede vs. And considering how trouble- Monsieur de 30 fome the Hand-mill was, he caused a Water-mill tobe made, which caused the Sauages to ad- Pourrincourt in fome the Hand-mill was, he cauled a water-min robe made, which came not into the spirit of men from the prouising for mire much at it. For indeede it is an invention which came not into the spirit of men from the the that should first ages. After that, our workmen had much rest, for the most part of them did almost nothing. the that should first ages. But I may fay that this Mill, by the diligence of our Millers, did furnish vs with three times The building more Herrings then was needefull vnto vs for our fustenance. Monstenr de Pontrincourt made of a water-mile two Hogheads full of them to be falted, and one hoghead of Sardines, or Pilchers to bring into Abundance of France for a shew, which were left in our returne at Saint Maloes, to some Merchants.

Among all their things the faid Monsieur de Poutrincourt did not neglect to thinke on his returne. Which was the part of a wife man, for one must neuer put so much trust in mens promifes, but one must consider that very often many disafters doe happen to them in a small moan ment of time. And therefore, euen in the Moneth of Aprill, he made two Barkes to be prepared, a great one and a small one, to come to seeke out French-ships towards Campseau, or Newfound-land, if it should happen that no supply should come vnto vs. But the Carpentry-worke being finished, one onely inconvenience might hinder vs, that is, we had no Pitch to calke our Great ouct-Vessels, This (which was the chiefest thing) was forgotten at our departure from Rochel. In fight. this important necessitie, the said Monsieur de Pontrincoure adussed himselfe to gather in the Monsieur de woods quantity of the gumme issuing from Firre-trees. Which he did with much labour, go. Poutrincourt ing thither himselfe, moit often with a Boy or two: so that in the end hee got some hundred his inuentron. pounds weight of it. Now after these labours, it was not yet all, for it was needefull to melt and purifie the same, which was a necessary point and voknowne to our ship Master Monsieur de Champ-dore, and to his Marriners, for as much as that the Pitch we have, commeth from Nor-

50 moge, Suedland, and Danzick. Neuerthelesse the faid Monsieur de Pourrincoure found the meanes to draw out the quintessence of these Gummes and Firre-tree barkes : and caused quantity of Brickes to be made, with the which he made an open furnace, wherein he put a limbecke made with many kettles, joyned one in the other, which hee filled with those gummes and barkes: Then being well coursed, fire was put round about it, by whose violence the gumme enclosed within the lembecke melted, and dropped downe into a bason; but it was needefull to be very watchfull at it, by reason that if the fire had taken hold of the Gumme, all had beene loft. That was admirable, especially in a man that neuer faw any made. Whereof the Sauages being aftenied, did say in words borrowed from the Basques, Endis chaue Normandia, that is to say, that ges call all 60 the Normans know many things. Now they call all Frenchmen Normands, except the Baf. French men

ques, because the most part of fishermen that goe afishing there, be of that Nation. This remedie No mands. came very fiely vnto vs, for those which came to feeke vs were fallen into the fame want that

Newes out of

witten to

Monfuur de

Postrincours.

The focietie

and why.

Monsteur de

The Eaglib

10 Virginia

HITTING OUT

THE Sunne did but beginne to cheere the earth, and to behold his Miftris with an amorous alpect, when the Sayamor Memberton (after our Prayers solemnely made to God, and the their returne. break-falt driftibuted to the people, according to the custome) came to give vs advertisement that he had seene a sayle vpon the Lake, which came towards our Fort. At this joyfull new es every one went out to fee, but yet none was found that had fo good a fight as he, though he be aboue a 100. yeeres old; neuerthelesse we spied very soone what it was. It was onely a small Bark under the charge of a young man of Saint Maloes, named Chenalter, who beeing arrived at the Fort, deliuered his Letters to Monsieur de Poutrincourt, which were read publikely. They did The contents write vato him, that for to helpe to laue the charges of the Voyage, the thip (being yet the loof the Letters nat) should stay at Campfeau Port, there to fish for Cods, by reason that the Merchants affociate 10 with Monfeur de Monts, knew not that there was any fishing farther then that place: Notwirh. ftanding if it were necessary he should cause the ship to come to Port Royall. Moreover, that the societie was broken, because that contrary to the King his Edich, the Hollanders, conducted by of Monsteur de a traiterous Frenchman, called La lenness, had the yeere before taken up the Beuers and other Matts broken, Furres, of the great River of Canada. Notwithstanding, after that Monstean de Poutrincours. had a long while mused hereupon, he said, that although he should have no bodie to come with him. but onely his family, hee would not forfake the enterprize. It was great griefe vnto vs to abandon (without hope of returne) a Land that had produced vnto vs fo faire Corne, and fo many faire his retalution. adorned Gardens. All that could be done vntill that time, was to find out a place, fit to make a Nation going fetled dwelling, and a Land of good fertilitie. And that being done, it was great want of courage to giue ouer the enterprise, for another yeare being passed, the necessitie of maintayning an with a zealous habitation there, should be taken away, for the Land was sufficient to yeeld things necessarie tor intent to plant true religion & life. This was the cause of that griefe which pierced the hearts of them which were desirous to fo to increase fee the Christian Religion estabisshed in that Countrey. But on the contrary, Monsieur de Christs bleffed Monts, and his affociates, reaping no benefit, but loffe, and having no helpe from the King , it flock,no doubt wasa thing which they could not doe, but with much difficultie to maintayne an habitation in he will bee their leader.

Monsieur de Monts is enuied.

Robbing from

The Sauages

Salmons.

Affembly of Sauages a Filthy trading.

thoje parts. Now this enuie for the Trade of Beauers with the Sauages, found not onely place in the Hollanders hearts, but also in French Merchants, in such fort that the priviledge which had beene giuen to the faid Monfieur de Monts for ten yeeres was reuoked. The vnfatiable avanice of men 30 is a strange thing, which have no regard to that which is honest, so that they may rifle and catch by what meanes locuer. And thereupon I will fay moreouer, that there have beene fome of them that came to that Countrey to fetch vs home, that wickedly have prefumed so much as to strip the dead, and steale away the Beauers, which those poore people doe put, for their last benefit, you them whom they bury, as we will declare more at large in the Booke following. A thing that maketh the French name to be odious, and worthy ditdaine among them, which have no fuch fordid qualitie at all.

Fifteene dayes after, the faid Monfieur de Poutrincourt fent a Barke to Campfeau, with part of our Workmen, for to beginne to pull downe the house. In the beginning of lune the Sauges, about foure hundred in number, went away from the dwelling that the Sagamos Memberson had 49 newly made, in forme of a Towne, compassed about with high pales, for to go to warres against the Armonebiquois, which was at Chonakoes some eightie leagues distant from Por: Royall, from whence they returned victorious.

Monsieur de Poutrincours being not willing to depart thence, vntill hee had seene the issue of his expectation, that is to fay, the ripenesse of his Corne, hee deliberated, after that the Sauges were gone to warres, to make Voyages along the Coast. And because Chandler was desirous to the Coalt of gather fome Beuers, he fent him in a small Barke to the River of Saint Isbn, called by the Sausges, Onigondi, and to the He Saint Croix: And he, the faud Monsteur de Poutrincourt, wentina inallop to the Copper Myne. I was of the laid Chenalier his Voyage : we croiled the French Bay to goe to the faid Riner, where, as ioone as wee arrived, halfe a dozen Salmons newly takin, 10 were brought to vs : we soiourned there foure dayes, during which, we went into the Cibins of Sagamos (bkondun, where we law some eightie, or a hundred Sauages, all naked except their privile members, which were a making Tabagy (that is to fay, a banquetting) with the meale that the faid Cheualier had trucked with them for their old skinnes full of Lice.

The Towne of Onigondi (to I call the dwelling of the faid Choudur) was a great inclosure vpon an Hill, compassed about with high and small Trees, tied one against another, and within it many Cabins, great and small, one of which was as great as a Market Hall, wherein many housholds retired themselves: And as for the same where they made their Tabagee, it was somwhat leffe. A good part of the haid Sauages wete of Gachepe, which is the beginning of the great Ruer of Canade; and they told ve, that they came from their dwelling thirter in fixe dayes, which 60 made me much to maruell, feeing the distance that there is by Sea, but they shorten very much their wayes, and make great Voyages by the meanes of Lakes and Rivers, at the end of which being come, in carrying their Canowes three or four leagues, they get to other Rivers that have a contrary courfe. All these Sauages were come thither to goe to the warres with Membersonagainst the Armonebiquois.

When we returned to our Barke, which was at the comming in of the Port, halfe a leasue off from thence, sheltered by a causis that the Sea hath made there, our men, and specially Capitaine Champdore, that conducted vs, were in doubt, lest some mischance should happen vnto vs. and baunge seene the Sauages in armes, thought it had beene to doe vs some mischiefe, which had beens very easie, for we were but two, and therefore they were very glad of our returne. After Thesubiltie which, the next day came the Wizard or South-fayer of that quarter, crying as a mad man to- of an Asimeia wards our Barke. Not knowing what he meant, hee was sent for in a Cock-boat, and came to or Sauge parley with vs, telling vs that the Armouchiqueis were within the Woods, which came to affaile Southfayer, Paney, and that they had killed some of their folkes that were a hunting: And therefore that we to should come aland to assist them. Having heard this discourse, which according to our judge-

ment, tended to no good, we told him that our journies were limited, and our victuals alfo . and that it was behouefull for vs to be gone. Seeing himselfe denied, he said that before two yeeres were come about, they would either kill all the Normans, or that the Normans should kill them. We mocked him and told him that we would bring our Barke before their Fort to ranfack them all: but we did it not, for we went away that day: And having the wind contrarie, we sheltred our selves vnder a small lland, where we were two dayes : during which, some went a shooting at Mallard for prouision; others attended on the Cookerie: And Captaine Champdore and my felfe. went along the Rockes with Hammers and Chiffels, feeking it there were any Mynes. In doing whereof we found quantitie of Steele among the Rockes , which was fince molten by Monfieur

30 de Poutrincourt, who made wedges of it, and it was found very fine Sceele, whereof he caused a Knife to be made, that did cut as a Razor, which at our returne he shewed to the King,

From thence we went in three dayes to the Ile Saint Croix, being often contraried with the winds. And because we had a bad coniecture of the Sauages, which we did see in great number, at the River of Saint lobs, and that the troupe that was departed from Port Royal was yet at Menane, (an Ile betweene the faid Port Royall and Saint (row) which we would not truft, we Menane. kept good watch in the night time: At which time wee did often heare Seales woyces, which Good watch. were very like to the voice of Owles: A thing contrarie to the opinion of them that haue faid Seales voices, and written that fishes have no voice.

Being arrived at the Ile Saint Croix, we found there the buildings, left there all whole, faving The arrivall in Being arrived at the He Saint erox, we found there are buildings, lett there are whost saint the le of Saint 30 that the Store-house was vincouered of one fide. Wee found there yet Sacke in the bottome of a croix. Pipe, whereof we dranke, and it was not much the worfe. As for Gardens, wee found there The flate of Coale-worts, Sortell, Lettuces, which we vied for the Kitchin. Wee made there also good Pa- the fame, fties of Turtle Doues, which are very plentifull in the Woods, but the graffe is there so high that Turtles, one could not find them when they were killed and fallen in the ground. The Court was there, full of whole Caskes, which some ill disposed Mariners did burne for their pleasures, which thing when I saw, I did abhorre, and I did iudge, better then before, that the Sauages were (being lesse ciuilized) more humane and honeiter men, then many that beare the Name of Christians, having The Sausge civilized) more humane and honeiter men, then many that over the Name of Chintan statum of better na-during three yeeres, spared that place, wherein they had not taken so much as a piece of Wood, sure then ma-

nor Sale, which was there in great quantitie, as hard as a Rocke. Going from thence, we cast Anchor among a great number of confused Iles, where wee heard Anumber of fome Sauages, and wee did call to make them come to vs. They answered vs with the like call. Iles, Whereunto one of ours replied, Onen Kiran? that is to fay, What are yee? they would not difcouer them selues. But the next day Oagimons, the Sagamos of this River, came to vs, and wee knew it was he whom we heard. Hee did prepare to follow Memberton and his troupe to the warres, where he was grieuoully wounded, as I have faid in my Verses vpon this matter. This Osomont hath a Daughter about eleven yeeres old, who is very comely, which Monsieur de Poutrincourt desired to haue, and hath oftentimes demanded her of him to give her to the Queene, promiting him that he should never want Corne, nor any thing elfe, but he would never condist. The love of

cend thereto. Being entred into our Barke he accompanied vs, vntill wee came to the broad Sea, where hee towards their Being entred into our Barke ne accompanied vs, vntill wee came to the broad Sea, where nee children.

put himfelfe in his shallop to returne backe; and for vs we bent our course for Port Royall, where Arrivall into we arrived before day, but we were before our Fort, init at the very point that faire Aurora be- Port Royall. gan to thew her reddie cheekes upon the top of our wooddie Hils; every bodie was yet afleepe, and there was but one that role vp, by the continuall barking of Dogges; but wee made the reft foone to awake, by Peales of Musket-shots and Trumpets found. Monsieur de Poutrincourt was but the day before, arrived from his Voyage to the Mynes, whither we have faid that hee was to goe, and the day before that, was the Barke arrived that had carried part of our Workmen to Campleau. So that all being affembled, there rested nothing more then to prepare things neces-

fary for our shipping. And in this butinesse our Water-Mill did vs very good feruice, for other- vice of a Vo wife there had beene no meanes to prepare Meale enough for the Vovage, but in the end wee tor mil had more then wee had need of, which was given to the Sauages, to the end to have vs in re-

Vpon the point that we should take our leane of Port Royall, Monsieur de Pontrincourt fent his. The defert of When the point that we thought take our leane or Port Mayan, always at Point at Point on of the Port men, one after another, to find out the ship at Camplean, which is a Port being between feven declarates

faire Cod.

The Rain-bow appearing in

the water.

Port Sauslet. 42. Vovages made in New-Fund-land. Good filling.

Exceeding faire Corne. Faire Wheate.

The Sauages returne from the warres. The Sautges teares at the going away of the Frenchmen. Meale left behinds. Monsieur de

The departing from Now France.

Poutrincourt his

going away.

The fight of Harueft of New France, thewed to the

Being at Paris, the faid Monsieur de Poutrincourt presented to the King with the fruits of the Land from whence he came, and especially the Corne, Wheate, Ric, Barley and Oates, as being

or eight Hands where ships may be sheltered from windes : and there is a Bay of aboue fifteene leagues depth, and fixe or feuen leagues broad. The faid place being diffant from Port Rorall aboue one hundred and fiftie leagues. For victuals, wee wanted for no fish, for in halfe an houres Abundance of fishing we might take Cod enough for to feed vs a fortnight, and of the fairest and fattest that e. uer I faw, being of the colour of Carpes; which I have never knowne nor noted, but in this part of the faid Cap de Sable; which after we had passed, the tide (which is swift in this place) brought Port dela Hene vs in fhort time as farre as to the Port De La Hene, thinking that wee were no further then the Port de Monton. There we tarried two dayes, and in the very same Port wee saw the Codsbite at the Hooke. We found there store of red Gooseberies, and a Marcassite of Copper Myne: we also made there some trucking with the Sauzees for skinnes.

From thence forward we had wind at will, and during that time it happened once, that being voon the hatches, I cried out to our Pilot Monsieur de Champdore, that we were readie to strike. thinking I had feene the bottome of the Sea; but I was deceived by the Rain-bow which did appeare with all his colours in the water, procured by the shadow, that our Boare-spright layle did make over the fame, being opposite to the Sunne, which assembling his beames, within the hollownesse of the same sayle, as it doth within the Cloudes, those beames were forced to make a reperberation in the water, and to thew forth this wonder. In the end wee arrived within foure leagues of Campleau, at a Port, where a good old man of Saint lohn de Lus, called Captaine Sauglet, received vs with all the kindnesse in the World. And for as much as this Port (which is little, but very faire) hath no name, I have qualified it in my Geographicall Mappe, with the 20 name of Saualet. This good honelf man told vs that the same Voyage was the two and fortieth Voyage that he had made into those parts, and neuerthelesse the New-found-land-men doe make but one in a yeere. He was maruelloufly pleated with his fifting; and told vs moreouer that hee tooke every day fiftie Crownes worth of fish, and that his Voyage would bee worth one thoufand pounds. He payed wages to fixteene men, and his veffell was of eightie tuns, which could carrie 100000 dry fishes.

Wee were foure dayes there, by reason of the contrary wind. Then came we to Camplean, where we tarried for the other Barke, which came two dayes after vs. And as for Monfieur de Postrincourt, as soone as he saw that the Corne might be reaped, he pulled vp some Rie, root and all, for to shew here the beautie, goodnesse and vnmeasurable height of the same. Hee also made 30 gleanes of the other forts of Seeds, as Wheat, Barley, Oates, Hempe, and others for the same purpofe, Delighting my selfe in this exercise, God hach ble Bed my poore labour, and I have had in my Garden as faire Wheate as any can be in France, whereof the faid Monfieur de Poutrincourt gaue ynto mee a gleane, when hee came co the laid Port de Campseau. Hee was readie to depart from Port Royall, when Memberton and his company arr ued, victorious ouer the Armouchiquois. At the inflant request of the faid Memberisu he tarried yet one day. But it was pitious to fee at his depirting, those poore people weepe, who had beene alwayes kept in hope that some of ours should alwayes tarrie with them. In the end promile was made vito them, that the yeere following housholds and families should bee sent thither, wholly to inhabit their Land, and teach them Trades for to make them live as wee doe, which promise did somewhat comfort them. 49 There was left remayning ten Hogs-heads of Meale, which were given to them, with the Corne that we had fowed, and the possession of the Manour it they would vie it, which they have not done. For they cannot be constant in one place, and line as they doe. The eleventh of August the faid Monsieur de Poutrincourt departed, with eight in his compa-

nie, from the faid Port Royall, in a shallop to come to Campfean : A thing maruellously dangerous to croffe fo many Bayes and Seas in to small a veffell, laden with nine persons, with victuals necessarie for the Voyage, and reasonable great quantitie of other stuffe. Being arrived at the Port of Captaine Sanalet, he received them all as kindly as it was possible for him : And from thence they came to vs, to the faid Port of Campfeau, where we tarried yet eight dayes. The third day of September, we weighed Anchors, and with much adoe came wee from among the Rockes, 50 that be about the faid Campfean: Which our Mariners did with two shallops that did carrie their Anchors very farre into the Sea, for to vphold our ship, to the end she should not strike against the Rockes. Finally, being at Sea, one of the faid shallops was let goe, and the other was taken into the longs, which belides our lading, did carrie 100000, of fish, as well drie as greene. Wee had reasonable good wind untill we came neere to the Lands of Europe: But we were not overcloyed with good cheere, because that they who came to fetch vs, presuming we were dead did cramme themselves with our refreshing commodities. Our Workemen dranke no more Wine, after we had left Port Royall: And we had but small portion thereof, because that which did ouer abound with vs; was drunke merrily in the company of them that brought vs newes from France. The fixe and twentieth of September wee had fight of the Sorlingnes, which bee at the 62 Lan is end of Cornewall in England, and the eight and twentieth thinking to come to Saint

Postrincourt had bred tenne Outards, taken from the fhell, which hee thought to bring all into France, but five of them were loft, and the other five he gave to the King , who delighted much in them 1 and they are at Fountaine Bellean; Vpon the faire shew of the fruites of the faid Coun- Outerds, of trey, the King did confirme to Mangenr de Monts the priviledge for the Trade of Beners with wild Grefe the Sauages, to the end to give him meanes to establish his Colonies in New France. And by this prefined to occasion he lent thither in March last, Families, there to beginne Christian and French Common. Privilege of wealths, which God vouchfafe to bleff: and increase. weatens, when God vouchate to overle and increase.

The faid finish being returned, we have had report by Monfeur de Champdore, and others, of need to Monthly the faid to the Countrie which we had left, and of the wonderfull beautie of the Countrie which we had left, and of the wonderfull beautie of the Countrie which we had left, and of the wonderfull beautie of the Countrie which we had left, and of the wonderfull beautie of the Countrie which we had left, and of the wonderfull beautie of the Countrie which we had left, and of the wonderfull beautie of the Countries which have for increased that it was increased their is an increased that it was increased the countries. Never from the Cardina, which have for increased that it was increased the countries.

the most precious thing that may be brought from what Countrey focuer. The faid Monsieur de

ther fix or feuen barrels of the Corne that we had fowed and had yet one left, which he referred for the Frenchmen, whom he looked for, who arriging thee faluted with three Musket floors and fince our come Bonfires. When it was laid to his charge that he had raten our Pidgeons; which wee left there, shence. he fell a weeping, and embracing him that told it him, faid, that it was the Macharas, that is to It is very dam fay, the great Birds which are Eagles, which did eate many of them , while wee were there, gerous to Moreover, all great and small, did inquire how we did, naming every one by his owne name, teach the Sawhich is a witnesse of great loue. From Port Royall, the laid Champdore went as farce as Chanakouer, the beginning of the Ar-

mouchiquois Land, where hee pacified that Nation with the Erschemins, which was not done without folemnitie. For as hee had begun to speake of it, the Captaine, who is now insteed of Olmechin, named Aftikon, a grave man and of a goodly presence, how savage soever hee be , dea manded, that some one of the faid Etechemins should be sent to him, and that he would weat with The Saugage him, Oagmont, Sagamos of the River Saint Croix, was appointed for that purpose, and he would wisdomes not truft them, but vuller the affurance of the Frenchmen, he went thither. Some Prefents were made to Aitikon, who, upon the speech of peace, began to exhort his people and to shew them the causes that ought to induce them to hearken voto it. Whereunto they condifcended, making an exclamation at every Article that he propounded to them. Some five yeeres agoe Mouliest de Monte had likewise pacified those Nations, and had declared onto them, that he wouldbee enemie to the first of them that should begin the Warre, and would pursue him. But after his returns into France, they could not contains themselves in peace. And the Armenchiques did kill a Souriquois Sauage, called Panoniae, who went to them for to trucke Merchandize, which he tooke at the Store, house of the faid Monlieur de Monts. The Warrenbour mentioned happened by reason of this said murther, vnder the conduct of Saganos Minibezion: the said Warre was Manuer Charles made in the very fame place, where I now make mention, that Monfieur de Champdore did treate ples is now in the peace this yeere. Monlieur Champlein is in another place, to wit, in the great River of Canada, the River of neere the place where Captaine lames Quartier did winter, where hee hath fortified him felfe, Canada. having brought thither housholds, with Cattle and diversionts of fruit-trees. There is store of Fruit-trees. and Vines, and excellent Hempe, in the same place where he is, which the earth bringeth forth of it vines,

gence of the faid (bamplem. As for Monsieur de Pontrincoure, his desire is immutable, in this resolution to inhabit and a- Monsieur de dorne his Pronince, to bring thither his family, and all forts of Trades necessary for the life of his resolution man. Which, with Gods helpe hee will continue to effect all this present yeere 1609. And, 1602. as long as hee hath vigour and thrength, will protecute the fame, to live there under the Kings obeviance.

The Author hath written another large Booke of the Rites of the Sanages of those parts, which I have omnted, partly because Champlein in the former Chapiter bath ginen us large inftructions of the same, and because in our Virginian, and New England, and New-tound-land, our men will relate the like; and because I seeke to bee short, howsoener my Subject causeth mee to bee voluminosu.

Benera confinstaces the wie

felfe. He is not a man to be idle, and we expect thortly newes of the whole Dircouerie of this Hempe. great and vncomparable River, and of the Countries which it washeth on both sides, by the dili-

CHAP. VIII.

Collections out of a French Booke, called Additions to Nova Francia: containing the Accidents there, from the yeere 1607. to 1611.

his tending of

Note the inrention of the French.

Keber 40. leag. about Saguenty

Onsieur de Monte hauing his priviledge prorogued for one yeare, with some affect. aces, tent vato his Gouernment three Ships, furnished with men and vienals. And foral much as Monfieur de Pourrencoure hath taken his part on the maine Sea. 10 and for the delige that Monfieur de Monts hath to pierce through the Land to the Welterne Sea poaff, to the end he should not be an hinderance visco him, and to be able thereby to reach our day, to China, he determined to fortifie himselfe in a place of the Riule of Canada; which the Sanages call Kebee, forme fortie leagues about the River

of Sagnenay. There it is narrower, being no broader then a Canon will carry : and fo, by that reason, the place is commodious to command, through all that great River. Monfieur Champlein, else Kings Geographer, very skilfull in Sea matters, and who delighteth maruelloufly in these enterprises, tooks vpon him the charge of conducting, and gouerning this first Colonie. fent to Kebec. Where being arrived, it was needefull to make houses for him, and his compano: wherein there was no toyle wanting, fuch as we may imagine, as was the labour of Cap- 24 raide lacques Quartier, at his arrivall in the place of the faid Riner, where he wintered and fo Mensieur de Monss, in the Ile of Saint Croix; whereby did islue vnknowne sicknesses, which tooke away many men : for there was not found any Timber ready to be put in worke, nor any huldings to lodge the workemen in they were driven to fell downe the wood by the roote, to cleare the ground, and to lay the first foundations of a worke, which (with the beloe of God) shall he the fubicet of many wonders.

A confpiricy.

But as our Franchmen haue oftentimes bin found mutinous in fuch actions; fo there were some among these, which did confpire against the said Champlein their Captaine, having deliberated to put him to death, first by potton, afterwards by a traine of Gunpowder; and after, hauing piliered all, to come to Tadonfier, where Barker and Rechell Ships were, to make their returne in an item to these parts. But the Apothecary, of whom the poyson was demanded, disclosed the matter. Whereupon, Information being made, one of them was hanged, and some others con-Exemplary per demand to the Gallies, which were brought backe into France, in the Ship, wherein Monfess du Pone of Honficur was Commander.

nishment.

The naturall

The people being lodged stone store of Corne was fowed, and a number of Gardens were made, where the ground did reflore plentifully, the feedes received. This Land bringeth forth, naturally, Grapes in great quantity: the Walnut-trees are there in abundance, and Chefinuttrees allo, whole fruite is in the forme of an halfe moone; but the Walnuts are with many corners or edges, which be not divided. There is also great store of Pumpions, and very excellent Hempe, wherewith the Sauages make fifthing lines. The River there doth abound with as much 40 fift, as any other River in the world. It is thought, that Bevers, are not here fo good, as you the coast of the Etechemins and Souriquois; yet notwithstanding, I may say very well, that I have Blacke Fox: 4 feene skins from thence of blacke Foxes, which feeme to exceede Sables, or Marterns.

The winter being come, many of our Frenchmen, were found greatly afflicted with the fickes neffe, which is called the Scuruie, whereof I have spoken elsewhere, Some of them died thereof, for want of present remedy. As for the tree called Annedda, so much renowned by lacques Quartier, it is not now to be found. The faid Champlein made diligent fearch for the fame, and could have no newes thereof: and notwithflanding this dwelling is at Kebec, neighbouring on the place, where the faid Quartier did winter. Whereupon, I can thinke nothing elfe, but that the people of that time, have bin exterminated by the Iroqueis, or other their 50

The Spring time being come, Champlein having had a long time a minde to make new discoueries, was to choose, either to make his way to the Iroquou, or to goe beyond the fall of the great River, to discouer the great Lake, whereof men ion hath bin made heretofore. Notwithstanding, because the Southerly Countries are more pleasant, for their milde temperature; he resolued himselfe, the first yeare, to visite the Iroques. But the difficulty confisted in the going thither; for we are not able of our felues to make those Voyages, without the affiffance of the Sauages. These Countries are not the Plaines of Champaigne, nor of Vatan, nor the ingratefull wood of Limofin. All is there covered with woods, that seeme to threaten the clouds. And ac that time his company of men was but weake, as well by reason of the former mortality, as of 62 the infirmities of lickneffes, which were yet continuing. Notwithstanding, being a man, who is aftonished with nothing, and of a gentle conversation, knowing wisely how to acquaint, and accommodate himfelfe with thole people, after having promifed them, that when the land of the Iroquois, and other Countries should be discouered, the great French Sagamos (meaning

CHAP.8. River of the Irocois. Challenge to combat. Agreement with Captaines. 1643

our King) would give them great rewards : he invited them to goe to warre against the faid Iroquoz, promiting (for himfelfe) that he would take part with them. They (in whom the defire quant, promiting cot and who delight in nothing more then in warre) paffe their word vnto him, or reusing themselves about one hundred men, for that effect, with whom the faid Champlein venand arms timeles, accompanied with one man, and one of Monsieur de Monte his footemen. So they tures numeries, accompanies Barkes, and Canoes, along the great River, as faire as the Their Voiage bean their voyage in the Sauges Barkes, and Canoes, along the great River, as faire as the to the Irequest. entring into the River of the Iroquois : wherein being entred, within certaine dayes, they went yn ynto the Lake of the faid Iroqueis. But one may demand with what did fo many people line. in a Countrie where no Innes are? I wonder as much at that as others doe; for with them there to is not any meanes of living, but by hunting; and in that, they doe exercise themselves through the woods in their trauailes. Champlein and his men, were forced to hueafter their manner. For although they had made prouision of Bread, Wine, and Meate, out of the storehouse, the same Their arrival could not have lerved them, to make accompt of, Finally, being come into the faid Lake, they at the Lake were many dayes a croffing of it (for it is about fixtic leagues of length) without gluing know- which is fixtis ledge of their being there, and to the laid Champlein had time to view their Tillage, and the faire leagues long. llands, that ferue for an ornament to their great extension of water. These people are much like Faire llands in to the Armonchiquois, in their fashion of living. They sowe Indian Maiz and Beanes, and have the Lake. quantity of faire Grapes, whereof they make no vie: and very good rootes. Euery Family have and their exertheir ground round about their dwellings; Forts also, yet no Townes, made with buildings of cife. 20 three of foure flories high, fuch as they have in new Mexico (a Countrie fituated much farther Houses of

In the end, our men being discouered, the alarum was given among the Iroqueit, who affem- The alarum abled themselves. And as the Iroquois did approach, Champlein, who was armed with a Musket. mong the Irocharged with two bullets, would have fet himfelte forward to aime, to make at one of the forwarded of the Iroquois, who did braue it, challenging his enemies to the combat. But the Sa- The Prudence nages of Kebec told him in their language, no, doe not fo, for if they once difcouer you, not beof the Saugees. ing accustomed to see such folkes, they will forthwith runne away, and make no stand; so shall we loofe the glory which we expect of this charge; withdraw your felfe therefore behinde our formost ranke, and when we shall be neere, you shall advance your selfe, and shoote at those two 30 feathered fellowes, whom you fee the formost, in the middest of the troope; which was found good, and executed by the fail Champien, who with one flot laid tem both to the ground, as the lattitude do not be the state of the sta ne nautrement vino.

Mediorder, aftonished at fuch a noise, and death so vnexpected. Vpon this feare, the men of Kedisorder, aftonished at fuch a noise, and death so vnexpected. Vpon this feare, the men of Kefiftie of the
fried of the heads they brought backe, to make therewith merry feafts, and dances, at their returne, accor-

ding to their cultome. These things so passed, Champlein tooke againe his course towards ancient France, where he arrived in October 1609, having left the government of New France to a good reverent old man called Captaine Pierre. And for as much as the accidents of the former fickneffe, were feared to Gapt. Pierre. 40 come; the winter following, Captaine du Pons of Honfleure (a man very well worthy to hold Captalu Pogt.

ranke among the Heroes of the laid Prounce, for haung bin the first that came to the Fals of the great River, after lacques Quartier, having also wintered in Port Royall, and almost every yeare, made voyages to those parts, for the reliefe of them that were there) gaue aduse, that wood should be ready cut downe, for those that should tarry there all the winter, and thereby to free them from painfull toyles. That helpe hath bin of fuch force, that befides this, hauing their buildings made, they have left no infirmitie nor mortality. So he returned, and with him the faid None died, nor Champlein, and those that would returne.

In the meane while, preparations were made for another voyage, against the returne of the faid Champlein, to the end to profecute his discoueries, and confequently, to relieue the faid Captaine Pierre. He tooke againe for the fecond time the Lieutenancy of the faid Monsseur de Monts, new Vorage. 50 for the government of Kebee, and feeting out in the beginning of March, was forced divers times to turne backe, by reason of contrary windes; which made him to arrive late, as did also Monfeur de Poutrincourt, of his part. And neuertheleffe, in that small time, which hee had in those A Lake of an parts, he exploited a great pecce of worke, having gone this yeare, as farre as a great Lake, hundred jeags

of an hundred leagues in length, which is beyond the Fals of the great Riuer of Canada eigh-Haung then reviewed the state of all things at Kebee, and learned what occurrences had past. Agreement to fed there, fince his departure; he made an agreement with the Captaines of the faid place, and goe to war, owith them of Tadoussac, to goe on warfare about the Fall of the faid River, promising them to great Like.

60 procure an hundred Frenchmen, to affift them in the extirping of all their enemies: and that they should have as many of their owne men, of their side, which they liked very well. But the day appointed being come, and the Frenchmen not come, he excused the matter vpon the weather, which had beene boiltrous for Sailers: and for want of whom, hee told them, that himselfe would goe with them, and follow their fortunes. They feeing they could doe no better, accepted

champlein his

Lib.3.c3p.22.

Champleins

1644 Lake 100.leag. in length. Beasts great and small. Sanages Baptized. LIB. VIII.

A Battell.

Sauages Hill hunting for proussion for the kitchin. And they travailed so farre, that after having paffed the Fals, they crossed some Lakes, and in the space of eighty leagues, came to that other Lake, which we have faid to be of an hundred leagues in length: where (as the faid Champlein hath recited vnto me) they were presently set vpon by the Sauages of the Country, and it was behoonefull vnto them, to fland in good order, & well to derend themselves, after the said Chame plein had received a blow on the chine bone, whereof he is not yet fully healed. Since, he made a confederacy with other Nations of those parts, farther distant from the mouth of the Lake, who promifed him, that the next yeare following (which is this yeare 1611.) they would conduct

of his offer, and went together with some other Frenchmen more, along the same faire River : the

him with all afforance, as for as the fartheit end of the fail Lake. He, for his part, promifed them to faire, and shewed them as well as he could, the greatnesse of our King, and of his Kingdome, and for to make them certaine thereof, he tooke with him a yong man, fonne of a Captaine of those parts, called Sanignon, a man of a good shape, strong, vigorous, and of great courage, whom he hath brought into France to make report, vpon his returne, of that which he hath feene. This Country(by the report of the faid Champlein) is one of the fairest Countries of the world, much tilled. A faire Coun- abounding with chase Deere, and Fish, Vines, Hempe, good Roots, Walnut-trees, Chestnut-trees.

Plantrees and others. There are flore of Beuers along this Lake, but the Inhabitants doe burne them, as here wee Beners burnt.

burne Hogges : and to by that meanes, that haire and wooll, which we goe fo farre of and with fo many perils to leeke for, is loft. There are Bearls great and fmall, differing from ours, and Hor- 20 fes, as the faid Sauignon hath shewed vs, by the neighing. But I dare not give for current that which Monfieur de Monts hath recited voto me, that their Nations haue tame Beares, which Merueilous they teach, to carry them upon trees for want of ladders. They have Forts, fuch as they of Vir-

Forts & towns nia haue, which are great inclosures with trees, loyned together in forme like a Pale, and within those inclosures are houses made, two or three stories high. The lower and higher parts doe ferue for the men when they mult defend themselves from the affalts of their enemies. For in the lower parts there are big Bowes, for the bending of which, the ftrength of fix men is required, and Strong bowes. they have Arrowes, that knocke downe men. Aboue, they have murthering holes, or battlements, from when e to fling or cast stones, and also to shoote with Bowes, when they will his their enemies a farre off. In the middle roomes are the women, which faile not in doing 30 that helpe which their fexe may affoord. And in this middle flory, they lay up their Corne

and other prouisions.

Hope for the Champlein promileth vs neuer to give over vntill he have pierced as farre as to the Western Sea. Baffage to or that of the North, to open the way of China; in vame by for many thought for. As for the China. Western Sea, I beleene that at the farther end of the greatest Lake, which is very far beyond that Some great River runging whereof we looke of in this Chapter, there will be found fome great River, which will fall into Westward into the same, or issue from it (as doth that of Canada) and never into the said Westerne Sea, And as the Westerne for the Northerne Sea, there is hope to come neere to it by the River of Saguenay, there being but Sca.

The Northern small distance from the head of the faid River, to the faid Sea.

It is now fit to speake of Monsieur de Poutrencourt, a Gentleman of long time resolute in these 40 actions, who having made his preparation at Diepe, fet faile the 25, of February 1610, with a Atedious Na. number of honeit men, and Artificers. This Naugarion hath bin very tedious and trouble tome: for from the beginning they were driven within light of the Azores, and from thence, almost continually beaten with contrary windes, by the space of two moneths a during which time (as idle people doe commonly occupie their (pirits in ea:11) some, by (ecret practiles, durst conspire against A confpiracy. their Captaine, whom notwithitanding, the faid Pourrincourt, according to his accustomed cle-

mency, did pardon. Having made a review of that coaft, he came into Port Royall, where he brought much con-Their arrivall at Por Royall. folation to the Sauges of that place. As for the buildings, they were found all whole, except the

Buildings and covering, and every parcell of houshold stuffe, in the same place where they were left. houtholdftuffe The first care that the said Monsieur de Poutrmourt ha , was for the ciliage of the ground, and to dispose it to receive the seede of corne, for the yeare following; which being finished, hee Pillage of the would not neglect that which belonged to the (pritualty, and whereunto the chiefest aime of his trangales did tend, which was, to procure the faluation of those poore fange and barbabarous The fift Chris people. After necessary instruction given, they were baptized upon Saint Iohn Baptist his day,

ftmings made the foure and twentieth of June, 1610. to the number of one and twenty perions; to every one in New France, of which was given the name of some great or notable person of these parts. 1. Memberton great Sagamor, being aboue an hundred yeares of age, was baptized by Sir leffe Fleche Priette, and named by Monsteur de Poutrincourt, Henry, after the Kings name.

Prince, Ruler, 2. Actaudinech, third Sonne of the laid Henry Memberton, was by the faid Pourrincourt, named 60 or Cantaine. Paul, after the name of Pope Paul. 3. The wife of the laid Henry, was named by the hid Pour trincourt, after the Q renes name, that is to lay. Marie. 4. Mombertocoichic, alias Iudas, elier forme to Memberton, being about fixety yeares old, was also captized, and by Monfieur de Birncour, named Lewes, after the name of my L ru the Daulphin, &c.

Memberton, chiefe Sagamos of these Countries, moued with a religious zeale (but without knowledge) faith, that he will denounce open wars against all them that will refuse to become

Shortly after these spirituall regenerations, Monsieur de Poutrincours his son was sent backe. A returne ininto France to take a new charge: In doing whereof, he certified the Queene, what had bin done to France, in those Christenings; whereby the received a marueilous contentment. But this one things is to in those distributed the Nauigation were tedious in going, yet in the returne it was very short; for being come to the fishing banke, which is fiftie leagues on this side New-found-land, he was brought in afortnight into France, in which time they commonly make their returne. Vpon the To Banke they heare the newes of our good Kings death, whose soule resteth with God, and whose posterity we pray God to blesse.

The Author reports another Voyage 1611. by the Lord of Saut Iust; but I have hafte to the English Plantation for whole lake thele are published: there being no great matter of history of thole parts therein. As for the Articles of a Societie concluded, and the names of those which entred therein, till we have greater effect thereof, I shall not trouble you with the recital thereof.

CHAP. IX.

The first plantation of English Colonies in Virginia briefely mentioned.

😭 Ir Walter Raleigh, a man more famous then happy, had obtained of Queene Elizabeth, of glorious memory, a Patent for discouring and peopling of vnknowne The first Voypares not actually possessed by any Christian Prince, dated March 25. A. Reg. 26. and possition The 27. of Aprill 1884 the let forth two Barkes wider the command of Maiter taken. Phillip Amadas, and Master Arthur Barlow, which arrived on that part of A- Virginia namerica, which that Virgin Queene stiled Virginia, and thereof in her Maiesties med so by Q.

an name tooke possession July 12, and having taken view and liking of the Country, and had con- Elizabeth. ference and trade with the Sauages, obseruing aboue foureteene seuerall sweete smelling timber trees, and many other commodities; they returned with two of the Sauages, Wanchefe and Mantee, and arrived in England in September.

Aprill 9. 1585. Sir Richard Greeneuile was fent by Sir Walter Raleigh with a fleete of feuen Second Vovfaile, which landed in the Ile of Saint John Port Ricco, May 12. and there fortified themselves, age and built a Pinnace. The Spaniard promifed to furnish them with victuals, but did not, where- Sir R. Greenwile. upon they tooke two Frigates. In Hispaniola they had friendly greetings and trade, June 26 they

anchored at Wocoken, where by the vulkilfulnesse of Fernando the Master, their Admirall strooke on ground and funke. In the 2r. of July, the Generall returned for England, and tooke a Spanish Ship of three hun-

dred tunne richly laden by the way, boording her with a Boate made of the boords of Chefts, which as foone as hee had boorded her fell in funder and funke at the Ships fide. In the Comtrie was a Colonie, left under the government of Master Ralph Lane, viz., Master Philip Amadas, Malter Hariot, Malter Alton, Mafter Edward Stafford, Mafter Prideox, Captaine Vaughan, and aboue a hundred others. Master Lane writ from his new Fort in Virginia, that if Virginia had Kine and Horses in reasonable proportion, no Countrie in Christendome were comparable to it. They discourred from Roaneak to the Chesepians, aboue one hundred and thirty miles, to Chamamock North-Welt as farre. The Sanages confpired against the English, the principall was Pemisapan, who lost his head in the quarrell, in the beginning of June 1586, and Sir Francis Drake 50 comming thither from the facke of divers Spanish Townes, to visite the Colony, on the nine-

teenth, tooke the Colony with him in his victorious Fleete, and brought them into Engla id. The fame yeere had Sit Walter Raleigh prepared a flup of a hundred tun, fraught with projetion Third Voyage. for the Colonie, which fetting forth late, arrived at Hartoraske immediatly after the departure of the Colonie, which having fought in vaine, the returned with her provisions for England. About Fourth Voya fortnight after her departure, Sir Richard Greenenile, Generall of Virginia, accompanied with a fortnight after her departure, Sir Rehard Greeneuite, Generall of Vrginia, accompanied with three Ships arined there, and neither hearing of the Slip, nor of the Colonie which the hald less three Ships arined there, and neither hearing of the Slip, nor of the Colonie which the hald less three they eare before; after long and vaine learch, he left fifteene men to hold polletion of the fire. Countrie, in the Ile of Romonk, furnished for two yeares, and returned, by the way making spoyle on the Townes of the Azores, and there taking divers Spaniards. Master Thomas Hariot Master Thomas

fubscribed allo by Mafter Ralph Lane, extant in Mafter Hacklun his third Tome. In the yeare 1587. Sit Walter Raleigh, continuing his purpose of Plantation, sent another Co- Fifth Voyage lonie of one hundred and fiftie persons, vnder the government of Mafter Iohn Worte; to him he and third Coappointed twelue Affiffants, vn:0 whom he gaue a Charter, and incorporated them by the name lonic.

6) writa large History of the Men, Beatls, Fishes, Fowles, Plants, and Commodities of Virginia, Harret,

Hories.

Sca.

Istember 10#;

CHAP.II. Saint Maries Hand, Sauages shew themselues; store of fish.

1647

of Gonernour and Affifants of the Citie of Raleigh in Virginia, Thefe arrived on July 23. 2t Hatoraike, where they went on thore to feeke the hitceene men left there the yeare before, withintent after to plant at the Bay of Chefepiok, according to Sir Walter Raleigh his directions, there to make their feate and Fort, By Mantes they learned how the Sauages had fecretly affaired the fitteene English, and flaine fome, the other being forced to flee, it was not knowne whither. Mantes was Christened, and by Sir Walter Raleighs direction, made Lord of Rosmont. Miltris Dare the Gouernours daughter was delivered of a daughter, which was baptifed by the name

En: "Thborne

The Company were very important with the Gouernour, to returne for England, to Supply their detects; to which, with much vn willing neffe he yeelded, Aug. 27. and Octob. 16. arrived 10 in Ireland, and after in England.

Anno 1590, the faid Matter lohn White put to Sea with Ships, and two Pinnaces, with purpole Si: a Voyage. for Virginia, where they anchored at Hateraik in 36. 20. Aug. 15. They found some of the goods (fuch as the Sauages could not make vie of) and tokens as if they were at Croatoan; but the winds violence permitted no further fearch, and they returned to the Azores, and after to England atriving at Plimmouth, Octob. 24.

Maffer BARTHOLOMBUV GOSNOLDS Letter to his Father, touching his first Voyage to Virginia, 1 602.

MT duetie remembred, &c. Sir, I was in good bope that my occasions would have allowed mee so much libersie, as to have come unto you before this time; otherwise I would have written more at Large concerning the Countrie from whence we lately came, then I did: but not well remembring what I baue already written (though I am affured that there is nothing fet downe disagreeing with the truth) I thought it fittest not to goe about to adde any thing in writing, but rather to leave the report of the rest till I come my felfo , which now I hope shall be shortly , and fo some as with conseniency I may. In the meane time, not with flanding whereas you feeme not to be fatisfied by that which I have already written, concerning some especiall matters, I have here briefely (and as well as I can) added these few lines for 30 your further fattifailion: and first as touching that place where we were most resident, it is in the Latitude of 41 degrees, and one third part; which albeit it be fo much to the Southward, jet is it more cold then those parts of Europe, which are scituated under the same paralell: but one thing is worth the noting, that notwithstanding the place is not fo much subject to cold as Eagland is, yet did me finde the Spring to be later there, then it is with us here, by almost a moneth : this whether it bapned accidentally this last Spring to be fo, or whether it be fo of course, I am not very certaine; the latter seemes most likely, whereof also there may be given some sufficient reason, which now I omit: as for the Acornes we law gathered on heaves, they were of the last yeare, but doubtlesse their Summer continues longer then ours. We cannot gather by any thing we could observe in the people, or by any triall we had thereof our selves but that it is as healthfulla Climate at any can be. The Inhabitants there, as I wrote before, being of tall 40 stature, comely proportion, strong, altime, and some of good yeares, and as it sould seeme very healthfull, are sufficient proofs of the nealthfulnesse of the place. First, for our selves (thankes be to God) we had not a man fiche two dayes together in all our Voyage; whereas others that went out with us, or about that time on other Voyages (especially such as went upon reprisall) were most of them insetted with sideresse, whereof they lost some of their men, and brought home a many sicke, returning notwithst anding long before ws. But Verezzano, and others (as I take is, you may reade in the Books of Disconeries) doemore particularly intreate of the Age of the people in that coast. The Sassafras which we brought we had upon the Ilands ; where though we had little disturbance, and reasonable plenty : yet for that the greatest part of our people were imployed about the fitting of our house, and such like affaires, and a few (and these but cafie labourers) undertooke this worke, the rather becanfe wewere informed before our going forth, that 50 a tunne was sufficient to clos England) and further, for that we hadrefolned upon our returne, and taken view of our victuall, we sudged it then needefull to vic expedition; which afterward we had more certaine proofe of ; for when we came to an anker before Portsmouth, which was some foure dayes after we made the land, we had not one Cake of Bread, nor any drinke, but a little Vinegar, left : fr:hefe and other reasons, we returned no otherwise laden then you have heard. And thus much I hope shall suffice till I can my felfe come to give you further notice, which though it be not fo foone as I could have wifet, yet I hope it shall be in convenient time. In the meane time craning your pardon, for which the vergent occasions of my stay will ploade, I humbly take my leane. 7. Septemb. 1602.

Your dutifull Sonne.

BARTH. COSNOLD.

CHAP. XI.

The Relation of Captaine Gosnots Voyage to the North part of Virginia, becaume the fixe and twentieth of March, Anno 42. ELIZABETHE Reginæ 1602. and delivered by GABRIEL ARCHER, a Gentleman in the faid Voyage.

He faid Captaine did fet fayle from Famonib, the day and yeere aboue written accompanied with thirtie two persons , whereof eight Mariners and Saylers, twelue purpoling vpon the Discouery to returne with the ship for England, the rest remayne there for population. The fourteenth of Aprill following, wee had fight of Saint Maries an Hand of the Afforis.

The three and twentieth of the same, beeing two hundred leagues Westwards from the faid lland in the latitude of 37, degrees. The water in the mayne Ocean appeared yel- Ocean fee-

low, the space of two leagues North and South, where founding with thirtie fadome Line, wee ming yellow, found no ground, and taking vp some of the faid water in a bucket, it altered not either in colour or talte from the Sea Azure.

The feuenth of May following, we first saw many Birds in bignesse of Cliffe Pidgeons; and 20 after divers other as Pettrels, Cootes, Hagbuts, Pengwins, Mutres, Gannets, Cormorants, Guls, with many elfe in our English Tongue of no name. The eight of the same the water changed to a yellowish greene, where at seventie fadome we had ground. The ninth, wee had two and twentie fadome in faire landie ground, hauing voon our Lead many glittering Stones, somewhat heavie, which might promise some Minerall matter in the bottome, we held our selves by computation, well neere the latitude of 43. degrees.

The tenth wee founded in 27. 30. 37. 43. fadome, and then came to 108. fome thought it to be the founding of the Westermost end of Saint Iohns lland, vpon this banke we saw sculs of fish in great numbers. The twelfth we hoyied out halfe of out shallop, and sounding had then eightie fadome without any current perceined by William Strete the Master, one hundred leagues Westward from Saint Maries til we came to the foresaid foundings continually passed fleeting by

we reward from Sainte and to have their moueable course towards the North-east, a matter to set Sea-oare, which seemed to have their moueable course towards the North-east, a matter to set fometubile inuention on worke, for comprehending the true cause thereof. The thirteenth, wee founded in feuentie fadome, and observed great beds of weedes, much woode and divers things effe floating by vs, when as we had smelling of the shoare, such as from the Southerne Cape and Smell of the

Andulazia in Spaine.

The fourteenth, about fix in the morning we descried Land that lay North, &c. the Northerly pare we called the North Land, which to another Rocke vpon the fame lying twelue leagues Weft, that wee called Sauage Rocke, because the Sauages first shewed themselves there, five Sauage Rocke. leagues towards the faid Rocke is an out Point of woodie ground, the Trees thereof very high 40 and itraight, from the Rocke East North-east. From the faid Rocke, came towards vs a Bifeay shallop with faile and Oares, having eight perions in it, whom we supposed at first to bee Chrifrans diffressed, But approching vs neere, wee perceived them to bee Savages. These comming Savages. within call hayled vs , and wee answered. Then after signes of peace , and a long speech by one of them made, they came boldly aboord vs being all naked, faving about their shoulders certaine loofe Derre-skinnes, and neere their wastes Seale-skinnes tyed fast like to Irih Dimmie Troufes. One that lecemed to be their Commander wore a Wastecoate of blacke worke, a paire of Breeches, cloth Stockings, Shooes, Hat, and Band, one or two more had also a few things made by some Christians, these with a piece of Chalke described the Coast thereabouts, and could Their behause name Placentia of the New-found-land, they spake divers Christian words, and seemed to voicer-

50 fland much more then we, for want of Language could comprehend. These people are in colour fwart, their haire long votyed with a knot in the part of behind the head. They paint their bodies, which are ftrong and well proportioned. These much defired our longer stay, but finding our selues short of our purposed place, we set faile Westwards, leaving them and their Coast. About fixteene leagies South-west from thence, wee perceived in that course two small Ilands, the one lying Eastward from Sanage Rock, the other to the Southwards of it, the Coast we left was full of goodly Woods, faire Plaines, with little greene round Hils about the Cliffes appearing vnto vi, which are indifferently railed, but all Rockie, and of shining stones, which might have perswaded ws a longer stay there.

The fifteenth day wel ad againe fight of the Land, which made a head being as wee thought 60 an Hand, by readin of a large found that appeared Westward betweene it and the Mayne, for comming to the Wet end thereof, we did perceive a large opening, we called it Shole-hope: Neere Shile-hope. this Cape we came to Auchor in fifreene fadome, where wee tooke great store of Cod-fish, for Which whater red the name, and called it Cape Cod. Here wee faw fouls of Herrings, Mackerels Care Cod. and other Imail find in great abundance. This is a low fundie shoare, but without danger, also wee

Xxxxxx 3

came to Anchor agains in fixteene fadome, faire by the Land in the latitude of 42. degrees. This Cape is well neere a mile broad, and lieth North-east by East. The Captaine went here ashoare and found the ground to be full of Peafe, Strawberies, Hurtheries, &c. as then vnripe., the fand alfo by the fhoare fomewhat deepe, the fire-wood there by vs taken in was of Cypreffe, Birch. Wich-hazell and Beech. A young Indian came here to the Captaine, armed with his Bow and Arrowes, and had certaine plates of Copper hanging at his Eares, hee shewed a willingnesse to helpe vs in our occasions.

The fixteenth, we trended the Coast Southerly, which was all champaine and full of graffe. but the Ilands somewhat wooddie. Twelue leagues from Cape Cod, we descried a point . with fome breach a good diffance off, and keeping our loffe to double it, wee came on the furden into to shoale water, yet well quitted our felues thereof. This breach wee called Tuckers Terror . voor his expressed feare. The Point we named Point Care, having passed it wee bore vp againe with the Land, and in the night came with it anchoring in eight fadome, the ground good. Thefee uenteenth, appeared many breaches round about vs, fo as wee continued that day without remooue.

Diuers llinds. Sauages

Pengwins.

Point Care.

The eighteenth, being faire we fent forth the Boat, to found ouer a Breach, that in our course lay of another Point, by vs called Gilberts Point; who returned vs foure, five and feuenfadome ouer. Also a Discouery of divers llands which after prooued to bee Hils and Hummocks. dittinet within the Land. This day there came vnto the thips tide divers Canoas; the Indiani apparelled as aforefaid, with Tobacco and Pipes Heeled with Copper, Skins, artificiall ffrings and 20 other trifles to barter, one had hanging about his necke a plate of sich Copper in length a foor, in breadth halfe a foot for a breft-plate, the Eares of all the rest had Pendanis of Copper. Also one of them had his face over painted, and his head stucke with feathers in manner of a Turkey Cocks traine : There are more timerous then those of the Sau ge Rocke, yet very theeuith.

The nineteenth, we paffed ouer the breach of Gilberts Point in foure or fine fadome, and anchored a league or somewhat more beyond it; betweene the last two Points are two leagues, the

interim, along shoale water, the latitude here is 41. degrees two third parts.

The twentieth, by the ships side we there killed Pengwins, and law many sculs of fish. The Coast from Gilberts Point to the supposed Iles lyeth East and by South. Here also we discoursed two Inlets which might promise fresh water, inwardly whereof we perceived much imoake, as 30 though some population had there beene: This Coast is very full of people, for that as we trended the same Sauages Hill runne along the shoare, as men much admiring at vs.

The one and twentieth, we went coasting from Gilberts Point to the supposed Iles, in tenne, nine, eight, seuen, and fixe fadome close aboord the shoare, and that depth lyeth a league off. A little from the supposed Hes appeared vnto vs an opening, with which we stood sudging it to bee the end of that which Captaine Gofnoll descrieth from Cape Cod, and as hee thought to extend some thirtie or more miles in length, and finding there but three fadome a league off, we omitted

to make further discouerie of the same, calling it Shole-hope.

From this opening the Mayne lyeth South-welf, which coasting along we saw a disinhabited

Manthest Fac. Iland which so after wards appeared vnto vs.: we bore with it, and named it Marthast Frequent, 40 from Shole-bepe it is eight leagues in circuit, the Iland is five miles, and hath 41. degrees and one quarter of latitude : the place most pleafant; for the two and twentieth, we went ashoare, and found it full of Wood, Vines, Goofeberie bushes, Hortberies, Raspices, Eglentine, &c. Heere we had Cranes, Hearnes, Shoulers Geefe, and divers other Birds which there at that time vpon the Cliffes being fandie with some Rockie stones, did breed and had young. In this place we saw Deere, heere we rode in eight fathome neere the shoare, where wee tooke great store of Cod, as before at Cape Cod, but much better.

The three and twentieth wee weyed, and towards night came to Anchor at the Northwest part of this lland, where the next morning off, red vnto vs fast running thirteene Sauages apparelled as aforelaid, and armed with Bowes and Arrowes without any feare. They brought 10. 50 bacco, Deere skins and some sodden fish. These offered themselves vnto vs in great familiaritie, who feemed to be well conditioned. They came more rich in Copper then any before. This I-

land is found, and hath no danger about it. The foure and twentieth, we fet faile and doubled the Cape of another Iland next vnto it, which wee called Doner Cliffe, and then came into a faire Sound, where wee roade all night, the next morning wee fent off our Boate to difcouer another Cape, that lay betweene vs and the Mayne, from which were a ledge of Rockes a mile into the Sea, but all aboue water, and without danger, we went about them, and came to Anchor in eight fadome, a quarter of a mile from the shoare, in one of the stateliest Sounds that ever I was in. This called wee Gofnolls Hope; the North banke whereof is the Mayne, which stretcheth East and West. This lland Captaine Gof. 60 noll called Elizabeths Ile, where we determined our abode : the diffance betweene every of thele Ilands is, viz. from Marthaes V meyard to Douer Cliffe, halfe a league ouer the Sound, thence to Elizabeths lle one league distant. From Elizabeths lle vnto the Mayne is foure leagues. On the North tide neere advoying voto the Hand Elizabeth, is an Het in compaffe halfe a myle full

of Cedars, by me called Hills Hop, to the Northward, of which in the mouth of an opening on Hills Hee. the Mayne appeareth another the like, that I called Haps Hill, for that I hope much hap may be Haps Hill.

The figurand twentieth, it was that we came from Gofnolls Hope. The fix and twentieth, we trimmed and fitted vp our Shallop. The feuen and twentieth, there came vnto vs an Indian and two womens the one we supposed to be his Wife, the other his Daughter, both cleane and strate hodied, with countenance iweet and pleafant. To these the Indian gaue heedfull attendance for that they shewed them in much familiaritie with our men, although they would not admit of a-

ny immodest touch.

The eight and ewentieth we entred counfell about our abode and plantation, which was concluded to be in the West part of Elizabeths Iland. The North-east thereof running from out our ken. The South and North standeth in an equall Parallel. This Iland in the Westernde admitteth fome Increekes, or fandie Coues, fo girded, as the water in some places of each fide meeteth , to which the Indians from the Mayne doe oftentimes refort for fishing of Crabs. There is eight fadome very neere the shoare, and the latitude here is 41. degrees 10. minutes, the tread. h tiem Elegabeths 1's Sound to Sound in the Welter part is not palling a mile at moit, altogether vnpeopled and dil inhabited. It is ouer-growne with Wood and Rubbish, viz. Okes, Ashes, Beech ; Wal nut, 10 minut a Weech-halfe, Saffafrage, and Cedars, with divers other of vnknowne names. The R Wilh is comban wild Pezze, young Sallafrage, Cherie trees, Vines, Eglentine, Goose-berie bushes, Hawtmorne, an Honiflickles, with others of like qualitie. The herbs and Roots are Strawberies Rafgis, Ground Nuts, Alexander, Surrin, Tantie, &c. without count. Touching the fertilitie of the levele by our owne experience made, we found it to be excellent for fowing fome English pulse it iprowted out in one fortnight almost halte a foot. In this Iland is a stage or Pond of tresh water, in circuit two miles, on the one fide not diffant from the Sea thirtie yards, in the Centre whereof is a Rockie Islee, contayning neere an Acre of ground full of wood, on which wee beganne our Fort and Fort eggs

place of abode, disposing it selfe to fit for the same. These Indians call Gold Was ador, which argueth there is thereof in the Countrey. The nine and twentieth, we laboured in getting of Sassafrage, rubbishing our Ittle Forter Islet, new keeling our shallop; and making a Punt or Flat bottome Boate to passe to and tro our in Fortouer the fresh water, the powder of Saffafrage in twelue houres cured one of our Company that had taken a great Surfet by eating the bellies of Dog-fish, a very delicious meate.

The thirtieth, Captaine Gofnoll with divers of his company went voon pleasure in the shale lop towards Hills Hap to view it, and the Sandie Coue, and returning brought with him a Canca that foure Indians had there left being fied away for feare of our English which we brought into

The one and thirtieth, Captaine Golnoll desirous to see the Maine, because of the distance, bee fet tayle ouer; where comming to anchor, went ashoare with certaine of his companie, and immediatly there presented vn to him men women and children, who with all curteous kindnesse entertayned him, giving him certaine skinnes of wilde beafts, which may be rich Furres, Tobac-4000, Turtles, Hempe, artificiall Strings coured, Chaines, and fuch like things as at the inwant Theger they had about them. These are a faire conditioned people: On all the Sea coast along we found Mussell shells that in colour did represent Mother-of-pearle, but not having meanes to dredge, could not apprehend further knowledge thereof. This Maine is the goodhest Continent that euer we faw, promiting more by farre then we any way did expect : for it is replenished with faire fields, and in them fragrant Flowers, also Medowes, and hedged in with stately Groues, being furnished also with pleasant Brookes, and beautified with two maine Rivers that (as wee judge) may haply become good Harbours, and conduct vs to the hopes men fo greedily doe thirst after. In the mouth of one of thele Inlets or Rivers lieth that little Ile before mentioned, called Happer Hill, from which vnto the Westermost end of the Maine, appearing where the other Inlet is, I account some five leagues, and the Coast betweene bendeth like a Bow, and lyeth East 50 and by North. Beyond thefe two Inlets we might perceive the Mayne to beare up South-weft. and more Southerly. Thus with this tafte of Difcouery, we now contented our felues, and the fame day made returne vnto our Fort, time not permitting more spating delay.

Thefirst of Iune, we employed our felues in getting Sassafrage , and the building of our Fort. The fecond, third and fourth, we wrought hard to make readie our house for the provision to bee had ashore to sustaine vs till our ships returne. This day from the Mayne came to our ships side a Canoa, with their Lord or chiefe Commander, for that they made little stay only pointing tothe Sunne, as in figne that the next day hee would come and visit vs, which hee did ac-

cordingly. 60 The fifth, wee continued our labour, when there came vnto vs ashoare from the Mayne sittle Sauages, flout and lustie men with their Bowes and Arrowes, amongst them there seemed to be one of authoritie, because the rost made an inclining respect vinto him. The ship was at their comming a league off, and Captaine Gofnoll aboord, and so likewise Captaine Gilbert, who almost neuer went alhoare, the company with me only eight persons. These Indians in hastie manner

Elizabethi Ile.

came towards vs. fo as we thought fit to make a stand at an angle betweene the Sea and a fresh water, I mooued my felfe towards him feuen or eight steps, and clapt my hands first on the fides of mine head, then on my breaft, and after prefented my Musket with a threatning countenance. thereby to fignifie vnto them, either a choice of Peace or Warre, whereupon hee vfing mee with mine owne figures of Peace, I stept forth and imbraced him, his company then all fatedowne in manner like Grey-hounds voon their heeles, with whom my company fell a bartering. By this time Captaine Gofisell was come with twelve men more from aboord, and to shew the Sauare Seignior that he was our Captaine, we received him in a guard, which he passing thorow, saluted the Seisnior with ceremonies of our falutations, whereat he nothing mooned or altered himselfe. Our Capraine gaue him a straw Hat and a paire of Kniues, the Hat awhiles hee wore, but the IO Kniues he beheld with great maruelling, being very bright and sharpe, this our courtese made them all in love with vs.

The fixt being raine, we fpent idlely aboord. The feuenth, the Seignier came againe with all his troupe as before, and continued with vs the most part of the day, we going to dinner about noone, they fate with vs and did eate of our Bacaleure and Mustard, dranke of our Beere, but the Mustard nipping them in their noses they could not indure : it was a sport to behold their faces made being bitten therewith. In time of Dinner the Sauages had ftolnea Target wherewith acquainting the Seignier, with feare and great trembling they restored it againe, thinking perhaps we would haue beene reuenged for it, but feeing our familiaritie to continue, they fell a fresh to roatting of Crabs, Red Herrings, which were exceeding great, ground Nuts, &c. as be- 20 fore. Our Dinner ended, the Seignier first tooke leave and departed, next all the rest saving foure that stayed and went into the Wood to helpe vs digge Sassafrage, whom we defired to goe abourd

vs, which they refused and so departed.

The eighth wee divided the victuals, viz. the thips fore for England, and that of the Planters. which by Captaine Gilbert; allowance could be but fixe weekes for fixe moneths, whereby there fell out a controuer sie, the rather, for that some seemed secretly to vinderstand of a purpose Captaine Gilbert had not to returne with supplie of the issue, those goods should make by him to be carried home. Belides, there wanted not ambitious conceits in the mindes of some wrangling and ill disposed persons that ouerthrew the stay there at that time, which vpon consultation thereof had, about fine dayes after was fully refolued all for England againe. There came in this 30 interim aboord vnto vs, that flayed all night, an Indian, whom wee vied kindly, and the next day fent ashoare hee shewed himselfe the most sober of all the rest, wee held him sent as a Spie. In the morning he filched away our Pot-hookes, thinking he had not done any ill therein; being ashoare wee bid him strike fire, which with an Emerald stone (such as the Glasiers vie, to cut Glaffe) he did. I take it to be the very fame that in Latine is called Smiris, for ftriking therewith vpon Touch-wood that of purpose hee had, by meane of a mynerall stone vsed therein, sparkles proceeded and forth with kindled with making of slame. The ninth, wee continued working on our Store-house for as yet remayned in vs a defired resolution of making flay. The tenth, Captaine Gofinol fell downe with the ship to the little life of Cadars, called Hill happe, to take in Cedar wood, leauing mee and nine more in the Fort, onely with three meales meate, 40 wpon promise to returne the next day. The eleventh, he came not, neither sent, whereupon I commanded source of my companie to

feeke out for Crabbes, Lobsters, Turtles, &c. for fustayning vs till the ships returne, which was gone cleane out of fight, and had the winde chopt up at Southewest, with much difficulty would shee haue beene able in short time to haue made returne. These foure Purveyers, whom I counselled to keepe together for their better safety divided themselves, two going one wayes and two another, in fearch as aforefaid. One of thefe petie companies was affaulted by foure Sauage assault Indians, who with Arrowes did shoot and hurt one of the two in his side, the other a lusty and nimble fellow, leapt in and cut their Bow-ftrings whereupon they fled. Being late in the euening, they were driven to lie all night in the Woods, not knowing the way home thorow the 50 thicke rubbish, as also the weather somewhat stormie. The want of these fortowed vs much,

as not able to coniecture any thing of them vnlesse very enill.

The twelfth, those two came vnto vs againe, whereat our ioy was encreased, yet the want of our Captaine, that promifed to returne, as aforesaid, strooke vs in a dumpish terrour, for that hee performed not the same in the space of almost three dayes. In the meane wee sustayned our felues with Alexander and Sorrell pottage, Ground-nuts and Tobacco, which gaue nature a rea-fonable content. Wee heard at last, our Captaine to lewre vnto vs, which made such musike as fweeter neuer came vnto poore men.

The thirteenth, beganne fome of our companie that before vowed to flay, to make revolt: whereupon the planters diminishing, all was given over. The fourteenth, and fix. 63 teenth wee spent in getting Salafrage and fire-wood of Cedar, leaving Houle and little Fort by ten men in nineteene dayes sufficient made to harbour twenty persons at least with their neces-

The feuenteenth, we fet fayle, doubling the Rockes of Elizabethi Iland, and paffing by Douer

CHAP.11. Cranes, Hernsbowes, and Geese. Lakes of fresh water.

Cliffe, came to anchor at Marthaes Vineyard being fine leagues diftant from our Fort, where we went ashoare, and had young Cranes, Herneshowes, and Geele, which now were growne to pretie bigneffe.

The eighteenth, we fet fayle and bore for *England*, cutting off our Shalop, that was well able Returned to land fine and twenty men, or more, a Boate very necessary for the like occasions. The winds doe raigne most commonly vpon this coast in the Summer time, Wetterly. In our homeward course wee observed the forelaid fleeting weeds to continue till we came within two hundred leagues of Europe.

The three and twentieth of July we came to anchor before Exmenth.

CHAP. XI

Notes of the same Voyage taken out of a Tractate written by IAMES Ros SIER to Sir WALTER RALEIGH, and of MACES Vovage to Virginia.

Lizabeths Iland is full of high timbred Oakes, their leanes thrice fo broad as ours : Ce. Oakes Cedatsi dars, firaget and tall; Beech. Elime, Holle, Wal-mat trees in abordance, the first as Beech. Elime, beige as ours, as appeared by those wee famul onder the trees, which had lien all the rece, thereis year own at hered; Halse-must trees, the leafe, have and beyerfe not trees, the different formats in E. John has the All-ha hands the hirty. differing from ours in England, but the stalke beareth the blossomes or finit at the end

thereof, like a clufter of Grapes, forese or fiftie in a bunch; Saffafras trees great plen. Saffafrastrees, tie all the Ilandoner, a tree of high price and profit; also divers other fruit-trees, some of them with Divers other frange barkes, of an Orange colour, in feeling foft and smooth like Velnet: in the thickest parts of these trees.

Woods, you may fee a furlong or more round about.

On the North-west side of this Iland, neere to the Sea-side, is a standing Lake of fresh water, almost three Englith mites in compaffe, in the musle whereof shants woods ground, an are in quantities on an A Lake three mites about; and the share the Lake is shall of small Torisifes, and exceedingly frequented with all forts of fowles before re- small Torioifes beared, which breed, one lowe on the banks, and others on lowe trees about this Lake in great about. dence, whose young ones of all forts wee tooke and eate at our pleasure: but all these fowles are much Abundance of dance, whose young ones of an loves were tooke and east at our premare; but an torge founds are much bigger than ours in England. Also, in enery lland, and almost enery part of enery lland, are great bigger than fore of Ground-nuts fortie together on a string, some of them as bigge as Hennes egges; they growe not ours in Engtwo suches under ground : the which Nuts wee found to bee as good as Potatoes. Alfo, diners forts of land. bell-fifb, as Scalops, Muffels, Cockles, Lobsters, Crabs, Oisters, and Wilkes, exceeding good and very Ground nuts. meat. But not to cloy you with particular rebearfall of fuch things as God and Nature bath bestowed Shell fifth, on these places, in comparison whereof, the most fertile part of all England is (of it selfe) but barren; weewent in our Light-borfman from this lland to the Maine, right against this Iland some two miles 40 off, where comming allocare, wee frood a while like men ranished at the beautic and delicaty of this sweet The exceeding logie; for besides diners cleere Lakes of fresh mater (whereof wee Saw no end) Medowes very large, beauty of the and full of greene graffe; enen the most wooddy places (I peake onely of such as I saw) doe grows so Great Lakes. and full of greene graffe; even the most woods) places (I peake outs) of your most and you can be added to define the day, one tree from another, upon greene graffle ground, onemotes they for than the Plainte. Lings Medons as f Nature would from her felfer done bet power, artificial. Hard by, we expired four Indians.

The state of the state and comming up to them, at first they expressed some feare; but being emboldned by our courteous vlage, and some trifles which we game them, they followed us to a necke of Land, which wee imagined had beene Sewered from the Marnet but finding it otherwise, wee perceined abroad Harbour or Riners mouth, A broad Riverwhich came on into the Mayne; and because the day was farre spent, we were forced to returne to the Iland from whence we came, leaning the Disconery of this Harbour, for a time of better lessure. Of A good Har-10 the goadnesse of which Harbour, as also of many others thereabouts, there is small doubt, con-bout. sidering that all the Hands, as also the Maine (where wee were) is all Rockie Grounds and broken

Now the next day, wee determined to fortifie our felues in a little plot of ground in the middest of the Lake abone mentioned, where wee built an honfe, and concred it with (-dge, which grew about this Lake in great abundance; in building whereof, wee spent three weekes and more: but the second day after our comming from the Maine, wee effied eleven Canoas or Boats, with fifty Indians in them., II. Canoas comming toward us from this part of the Maine, where wee two dayes before landed: and being loath with so Indiane they should discouer our fortification, were went out into the Sea side to meets them; and comming some_ in them. what neere them, they all fate downe upon the stones, calling aloud to us (as wee rightly ghessed) to doe the like, a little distance from them : having fate a while in this order, Captaine Goineld willed mee

to goe unto them; to fee what countenance they would make; but as some as I came up unto them. one of them, to whom I had owen a Knife two dayes before in the Maine, knew mee (whom I also very well remembred) and smiling upon me, spake somewhat unto their Lord or Captaine, which sate in the midst Their Captain of them, who presently rose up and tooks a large Beuer skinne from one that stood about him, and gaus

Their purpole

came towards vs, fo as we thought fit to make a stand at an angle betweene the Sea and a fresh water, I mooued my felfe towards him feuen or eight steps, and clapt my hands first on the fides of mine head, then on my breaft, and after prefented my Musket with a threatning countenance. thereby to fignific voto them, either a choice of Peace or Warre, whereupon hee vfing mee with mine owne fignes of Peace, I stept forth and imbraced him, his company then all sate downe in manner like Grey-hounds voon their heeles, with whom my company fell a bartering. By this time Captaine Gofnell was come with twelve men more from aboord, and to shew the Sauare Sciencer that he was our Captaine, we received him in a guard, which he passing thorow, saluted the Seignior with ceremonies of our falutations, whereat he nothing mooned or altered himfelfe. Our Captaine gaue him a straw Hat and a paire of Kniues, the Hat awhiles hee wore, but the 10 Kniues he beheld with great maruelling, being very bright and sharpe, this our courtese made them all in loue with vs.

The fixt being raine, we fpent idlely aboord. The feuenth, the Seignier came againe with all his troupe as before, and continued with vs the most part of the day, we going to dinner about moone, they fate with vs and did eate of our Bacaleure and Mustard, dranke of our Beese. but the Mustard nipping them in their noses they could not indure : it was a sport to behold their faces made being bitten therewith. In time of Dinner the Sauages had stolnea Target wherewith acquainting the Seignier, with feare and great trembling they restored it againe, thinking perhaps we would haue beene reuenged for it, but feeing our familiaticie to continue, they fell a fresh to roalting of Crabs, Red Herrings, which were exceeding great, ground Nuts, &c. as be- 20 fore. Our Dinner ended, the Seignier hift tooke leave and departed, next all the reft fauing foure that staved and went into the Wood to helpe vs digge Sasiafrage, whom we defired to goe abourd

vs, which they refused and so departed.

The eighth wee divided the victuals, viz. the thips flore for England, and that of the Planters, which by Captaine Gilberts allowance could be but fixe weekes for fixe moneths, whereby there fell out a controuer sie, the rather, for that some seemed secretly to understand of a purpose Captaine Gilbert had not to returne with supplie of the iffue, those goods should make by him to be carried home. Besides, there wanted not ambitious conceits in the mindes of some wrangling and ill disposed persons that ouerthrew the stay there at that time, which vpon consultation thereof had, about fine dayes after was fully refolued all for England againe. There came in this 30 interim aboord vnto vs, that stayed all night, an Indian, whom wee vied kindly, and the next day fent afhoare hee fhe wed himfelfe the moft fober of all the reft , wee held him fent as a Spie. In the morning he filched away our Pot-hookes, thinking he had not done any ill therein; being ashoare wee bid him strike fire, which with an Emerald stone (such as the Glasiers vie, to cut Glaffe) he did. I take it to be the very fame that in Latine is called Smiris, for firiking therewith vpon Touch-wood that of purpose hee had, by meane of a mynerall stone vied therein. sparkles proceeded and forthwith kindled with making of slame. The ninth, wee continued working on our Store-house for as yet remayned in vs a defined resolution of making stay. The tenth, Captaine Gososs fell downe with the ship to the little Het of Cedars, called Hill happe, to take in Cedar wood, leauing mee and nine more in the Fort, onely with three meales meate, 40 wpon promise to returne the next day. The eleventh, he came not, neither fent, whereupon I commanded foure of my companie to

feeke out for Crabbes, Lobsters, Turtles, &c., for fustayning vs till the ships returne, which was gone cleane out of fight, and had the winde chopt up at Southwest, with much difficulty would shee haue beene able in short time to haue made returne. These foure Purveyers, whom I counselled to keepe together for their better safety divided themselves, two going one wayes and two another, in fearch as aforesaid. One of these petie companies was assaulted by foure Sauage affault Indians, who with Arrowes did shoot and hurt one of the two in his side, the other a lufty and nimble fellow , leapt in and cut their Bow-strings whereupon they fled. Being late in the euening, they were druen to lie all night in the Woods, not knowing the way home thorow the thicke rubbith, as also the weather somewhat stormie. The want of these forrowed vs much,

as not able to coniecture any thing of them vnlesse very enill.

The twelfth, those two came vnto vs againe, whereat our joy was encreased, yet the want of our Captaine, that promifed to returne, as aforefaid, ffrooke vs in a dumpish terrour, for that hee performed not the same in the space of almost three dayes. In the meane wee sustayned our felues with Alexander and Sorrell pottage, Ground-nuts and Tobacco, which gave nature a reafonable content. Wee heard at lait, our Captaine to lewre vnto vs. which made fuch musike as fweeter neuer came vnto poore men.

The thirteenth, beganne some of our companie that before vowed to slay, to make revolt: whereupon the planters diminishing , all was given over. The fourteenth , fifteenth , and fix- 63 teenth wee spent in getting Salafrage and fire-wood of Cedar, leaving Houle and little Fort by ten men in nineteene dayes sufficient made to harbour twenty persons at least with their necesfary provisione

The feuenteenth, we fet fayle, doubling the Rockes of Elizabeths Iland, and paffing by Douer

CHAP.11. Cranes, Hernsbowes, and Geese. Lakes of fresh water.

Cliffe, came to anchor at Marthaes Vineyard being fine leagues diffant from our Fort . where we went ashoare, and had young Cranes, Herneshowes, and Geete, which now were growne to pretie bieneffe.

retie Dignesse. The eighteenth, we let layle and bore for *England*, cutting off our Shalop, that was well able Returned to land fine and twenty men, or more, a Boate very necessary for the like occasions. The winds doe raigne most commonly upon this coast in the Summer time, Westerly. In our homeward course wee observed the forestaid fleeting weeds to continue till we came within two hundred leagues of Europe.

The three and twentieth of July we came to anchor before Exmonth.

CHAP. XL

Notes of the same Voyage taken out of a Tractate written by I A M E S Ro-SIER to Sir WALTER RALEIGH, and of MACES Voyage to Virginia.

Descap Lizabeths Ilandis full of high timbred Oakes, their leanes thrice fo broad as onrs : Ce... Oakes.Cedatsi Lieuteits lland is julio b tight tembred Unter, their lettus thrice fo broad at ours; Ce. Dischedictif dear, firugist and tall; Beech, Elme, Holle, o'Almet trees in abundance, the first as Beech, Elme, to buge as ours, as appeared by those wee found under the trees, which had lies all the trees, which had lies all the trees. Cherrie trees, the least- have and byperse not trees, the arrives of the art of of

tie all the Iland ouer, a tree of high price and profit; also diners other fruit-trees, some of them with Diners other frange barkes, of an Orange colour, in feeling foft and smooth like Veluet: in the thickest parts of these

Woods, you may fee a furlong or more round about.

Woods, you may jee a foreing or more vonn avons.

Outs & Nothowelf field of this Iland, mere is the Sea-fide, is a flanding Lake of field water, almost three lines English miles is compaffe, in the miss theoreof flands a woody ground, on acre in quantitie, or not miles about 30 about: the Lake is field of final Tortoffer, and exceedingly frequenced with all first of fronte before zer. Small Tortoffer, and exceedingly frequenced with all forest of fronte before zer. Small Tortoffer, and the state of the stat bewied, which breed, some lowe on the bankes, and others on lowe trees about this Lake in great abundance, whose young ones of all forts wee tooke and eate at our pleasure: but all these fowles are much Abundance of dance, whose young ones of all sorts wee tonce and sate at our presumer. Out an torse juntes are much bigger than ours in England. Also, in enery iland, and almost enery part of enery iland, are great bigger than flore of Ground-nuts fortie together on a ftring, some of them as bigge as Hennes egges; they growe not ours in Engtwo inches under ground : the which Nuts wee found to bee as good as Potatoes. Alfo, diners forts of land. Bull-fifb, as Scalops, Muffels, Cockles, Lobfters, Crabs, Oifters, and Wilkes, exceeding good and very Ground mus. meat. But not to cloy you with particular rebear fall of fuch things as God and Nature bath bestowed Shellish. on these places, in comparison whereof, the most fertile part of all England is (of it selfe) but barren; wee went in our Light-bor (man from this lland to the Maine, right against this Iland some two miles off, where comming ashoare, wee stood a while like men ranified at the beautie and delicacy of this sweet The exceeding off, where comming allower, wee freed a white the men ranged at the beastire and activaty of two meets. In executing flee, for befold ainers clear class of field meter (wheree we as we not a). Medowns very large, beausy of the and full of greene graffe; cause the most woods places (I flowly early of fisch at I faw) doe grown for time Linds, and find for greene graffe; cause, fourther the most woods places (I flowly early of fisch at I faw) doe grown for the state that the class of the state of and comming up to them, at first they expressed some feare; but being emboldned by our courteous vsage, and some trisles which we game them, they followed us to a necke of Land, which wee imagined had beene fewred from the Mayne; but finding st otherwise, wee perceined abroad Harbour or Riners mouth, A broad Riner. which came up into the Mayne : and becanse the day was farre spent, we were forced to returne to the I. land from whence we came, leasing the Disconery of this Harbour, for a time of better lessure. Of A good Har-10 the goadnesse of which Harbour, as also of many others thereabouts, there is small doubt, con- bout. sidering that all the Hands, as also the Maine (where wee were) is all Rockie Grounds and broken

Now the next day, wee determined to fortifie our felues in a little plot of ground in the middest of the Lake abone mentioned, where wee built an honse, and concred it with sedge, which grew about this Lake in great abundance; in building whereof, wee spent three weekes and more: but the second day after our comming from the Maine, wee efficed eleven Canous or Boats, with fifty Indians in them, 11. Canoas comming toward us from this part of the Maine, where wee two dayes before landed: and being loath with so indicate they should discouer our fortification, wee went out into the Sea side to meete them; and comming some in them. what neere them, they all fate downe upon the stones, calling aloud to us (as wee rightly ghessed) to doe the like, a little distance from them : basing fate a while in this order, Captaine Golinold willed mee

to goe unto them; to fee what countenance they would make; but as foone as I came up unto them, one of them, to whom I had given a Knife two dayes before in the Maine, knew mee (whom I also very well remembred) and failing upon me, spake somewhat unto their Lord or Captaine, which sate in the midst Their Captains of them, who prefently rose up and tooks a large Bener skinne from one that stood about him, and gane

o flav bru-

CHAP.II.

it unto me, which I requited for that time the best I could: but I, pointing towards captaine Gofnold. made fignes unto him, that hee was our Captaine, and defirom to bee his friend, and enter league with bim, which (as I perceived) be understood, and made figures of iny: whereupon Captaine Gosnold. with sherest of his companie, being twenty in all, came up unto them; and after many signes of gratulations (Captaine Golnold presenting their Lord with certaine trifles which they wondred at, and highly effec. med) wee became very great friends, and fent for meat abourd our Shalop, and game them fuch meater as wee had then ready dreffed, whereof they misliked nothing but our Mustard, whereat they made many a soure face. While wee were thus merrie, one of them had conneighed a Target of ours into one of their a jours face. It miss were were some merits, one of their canons, which were suffered, onely to true whether they were in subjection to this Lord, to whom we made Genes (by Shewing him another of the same likenesse, and pointing to the Canoa) what one of his com- to name had done: who suddenly expressed some feare, and speaking angerly to one about him (as wee perceimed by his countenance) canfed it presently to be brought backe againe. So the rest of the day wee thent in trading with them for Fures, which are Beaners, Luzernes, Marterns, Otters, Wilde-cat skinnes, very large and deepe Furre, blacke Foxes, Conie skinnes, of the colour of our Hares, but somewhat leste. Deere skinnes very large, Seale skinnes, and other beafts skinnes to us unknowne.

They have also great store of Copper , some very red, and some of a paler colour ; none of them but

have Chaines, Eare-rings, or Collars of this metall: they bead some of their Arrowes berewith much

like our broad Arrow heads, very workmanly made. Their Chaines are many hollow pieces semented

Red Copper in abundance. Chaines.

Scuerall fores

Furres.

together, each piece of the bignesse of one of our reeds, a singer in length, ten or twelve of them toge. ther on a string, which they weare about their neckes; their Collars they weare about their bodies like 20 Collars. Bandelieres a bandfull broad, all bollow pieces, like the other, but somewhat (horter, foure hundred pieces Drinking cups in a Collar, very fine and enenty fet together. Besides these, they have large drinking Cups made like Sculls, and other thinne plates of Copper, made much like our Boare-freare blades, all which ther lo little of Copperesteeme, as they offered their fairest Collars and Chaines for a Knife, or such like trifte, but wee seemed little tores and it; yet I was defirous to understand where they had such store of this mettall, and made liones to one of them (with whom I was very familiar) who taking a piece of copper in his hand, made a hole Mines of with bis finger in the ground, and withall pointed to the Maine from whence they came. They fire fire Copper. Mineral Bones in this manner; enery one carrieth about him in a Purse of tend Leather, a Minerall stone (which I take to be their Copper) and with a flat Emerie stone (wherewith Glasiers cut glasse, and Cutlers glass blades) tred fast to the end of alittle flicke, gently bee friketh upon the Minerall flone, and within a ftroke or 30 two, a harke falleth upon a piece of Touch-wood (much like our Spange in England) and with the least parke he maketh a fire presently. Wee had also of their Flaxe, wherewith they make many strings and Flaxe. cords, but it is not fo bright of colour as ours in England : I amperfueded they have flore growing opon the Maine, at alfo Mines, and many other rich commodities, which we, wanting both time and meanes

could not possibly discouer. Thus they continued with vs three dayes, enery night retiring themselves to the furthermost part of our llund two or three miles from our Fort: but the fourth day they returned to the Maine, pointing fine or fixe times to the Sunne, and once to the Maine, which we understood, that within fine or fixe dayes they would come from the Maine to us againe: but being in their Canoas a little from the shoare, they made buge cries and shouts of soy unto us, and wee with our Trumpet and Cornet, and casting up our 40 caps into the aire, made them the best farewell wee could: yet fixe or seven of them remayned with ve behinde, bearing us companie enery day in the Woods, and beloed us to cut and carrie our Sassafras, and

others that we have seene; so for shape of body and louely famour, I thinke they excell all the people of

eye-browes and baire blacke, which they weare long, tyed up behinde in knots, whereon they pricke feathers of fowles, in fastion of a Crownet: some of them are blacke thinne bearded; they make beards of

the haire of beafts: and one of them offered a beard of their making to one of our Saylers, for his that

and close about their neckes. They pronounce our Language with great facilitie; for one of them one

day jutting by mee, upon occasion l' spake smiling to him these words: How now, firrha, are you so

fawcy with my Tobacco ? which words (without any further repetition) be suddenly spake fo plame

Indians apt for Some of them lay abourd our (hip. These people as they are exceeding curteous, gentle of disposition, and well conditioned, excelling all

fervice. Saffafras. A goodly peo America; of stature much higher than wee; of complexion or colour, much like a darke Oline; their good condi-

grew on bu face, which because it was of a red colour, they indeed to be none of his owne. They are quicke 50 eyed, and stedfast in their lookes, fearelesse of others barmes, as intending none themselnes; some of the Their apparell. meaner fort ginen to filebing, which the very name of Sausges (not weighing their ignorance in good or enill) may easily excuse: their garments are of Deere skinnes, and some of them weare Furres round

and distinctly, as if hee had beene a long Scholer in the Language. Many other such trials wee had, Their women which are here needlesse to repeat. Their women (such as wee san) which were but three in all, were but lowe of stature, their eye-browes, haire, apparell, and manuer of wearing, like to the men, fat, and very well-fanoured, and much delighted in our companie; the men are very dutifull to-60 wards them. And truly, the wholfomnesse and temperature of this Climate, doth not onely argue this people to be answerable to this description, but also of a perfect constitution of body, active strong, health-The goodnesse full, and very wisty, as the fundry toyes of theirs cunningly wrought, may easily witnesse.

of the Climate For the agreeing of thu Climate with vs (I fpeake of my felfe, and fo I may infily doe for the rest of

our companie) that we found our health and strength all the while we remayned there, so to renew and encrease, as notwithstanding our diet and lodging was mone of the best, yet not one of our companie (God be thanked) felt the least grudging or inclination to any disease or sicknesse, but were much fatter, and in better bealth than when we went out of England : but after our Barke had saken in fo much Sastafras. Cedar, Furres, Shinnes, and other commodities, at were thought connenient; some of our companie that had promifed Captaine Gosnold to stay , having nothing but a saving voyage in their mindes. made our companie of Inhabitants (which was small enough before) much smaller ; so as Captaine Gosnola seeing his whole strength to consist but of twelve men, and they but meanly prouided , determined to returne for England, leaning this lland (which be called Elizabeths lland) with Their returne, en as many true forrowfull eyes, as were before delirous to fee it. So the eighteenth of Inne, being

Friday, we weighed, and with indifferent faire winde and weather came to anchor the three and twentieth of luly, being also Priday (in all, bare fine weekes) before Exmouth.

Your Lordships to command. IOHN BRERETON.

A briefe Note of fuch commodities as we faw in the Countrie, notwithstanding our small time of stay.

Rees. Saffafras trees, the roots whereof at three fhillings the pound are three hundred thirty 10 I fixe pound the tunne. Cedars tall and ftraight, in great abundance; Cypres trees, Oakes, Wal-nut trees great ftore, Elmes, Beech, Hollie, Halle-nut trees, Cherrie trees, Cotton trees, and other fruit-trees to vs vnknowne. The finder of our Saffafras in these parts, was one Maiter Robert Meriton.

Fowles, Engles, Hernstiawes, Cranes, Bitters, Mallards, Teales, Geefe, Pengwins, Ofpreis and Hawkes, Crowes, Rauens, Mewes, Doues, Sea-pies, Black-birds with carnation wings. Beaffs. Deere in great flore, very great and large; Beares, Luzernes, blacke Foxes, Beauers,

Otters, Wilde-cats very large and great, Dogs like Foxes, blacke and sharpe noted; Conies. Fruits, Plants, and Herbes. Tabacco, excellent tweet and ftrong; Vines more plenty than in France, Ground-nuts, good meate and alto medicinable; Strawberries, Raip-berries, Goofeberries, Hurtleberries, Peafe growing naturally, Flaxe, Iris Florentina, whereof Apothecaries make fweet balls; Sorrell, and many other herbes wherewith they made Sallets.

Fibes. Whales, Tortoifes, both on Land and Sea; Seales Cods, Mackerell, Breames, Herrines, Thornbacke, Hakes, Rock-fish, Dog-fish, Lobsters, Crabbes, Mussels, Wilkes, Cockles, Scallops, Oviters.

Snakes foure foot in length, and fixe Inches about, which the Indians cate for dainty meate, the skinnes whereof they vie for girdles.

Colours to die with, red, white, and blacke.

courfe may come to light.

Messals, and Stones. Copper in great abundance, Emerie stones, for Glasiers and Cutlers, Alabafter very white, Stones glittering and flining like Minerall itones; Stones of a blue met-P talline colour, which we take to bee Steele oare; Stones of all fores for buildings; Clay, red and white, which may proue good Terra Sigillata.

A briefe Note of the sending another Barque this present yeere 1602. by Sir WALTER RALEIGH, for the fearching out of his Colonie in Virginia.

C Annel Mace of Weimonth, a very fufficient Mariner, an honell fober man, who had beene at Orginia twice before, was employed thither by Sir Walter Raleigh, to finde those people which were left there in the yeere 1587. To whole fuccour he hath fent fine feuerall times at his owne charges. The parties by him fet forth, performed nothing; some of them following their owne profit elsewhere; others returning with friuolous allegations. At this last time, to anoide all excuse, hee bought a Barke, and hired all the companie for wages by the moneth : who departing from Weimouth in March lait, 1602, fell fortie leagues to the South-westward of Hataraske, in 24, degrees or thereabout; and having there spent a moneth; when they came along the coast to seeke the people, they did it not, pretending that the extremitie of weather, and losse of some principall ground-tackle, forced and seared them from searching the Port of Hataraske, to which they were fent. From that place where they abode, they brought Saffa-60 fras, Radix Chine, or the China Root, Beniamin, Caffia lignes and a rind of a tree more ilrong than any Spice as yet vnknowne, with divers other commodities, which hereafter in a larger dil-

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

A Voyage fet out from the Citie of Bristoll at the charge of the chiefest Merchants and inhabitants of the faid Citie with a small Ship and a Barke for the discourie of the North part of Virginia, in the yeere 1603. under the command of me MARTIN PRINGE.

Pon many probable and reasonable inducements, vsed vnto sundry of the chiefest 10 Marchants of Brisloth by Maller Richard Habinet Probandam of Sciences fimes the Cathedrall Church of the faid Citie, after diners meetings and due confulcation they resolved to set forth a Voyage for the farther Discouerie of the North part of Unginia. And first they sent the said Master Hablust accompanied with one Matter lobn Angell, and Matter Robert Salters (which had beene

in the faid Discouerie the yeere before with Captaine Bartholemew Gosnold) to obtaine permissilineth neither on of Sir Walter Raleigh (which had a most ample Patent of all those parts from Queene Elizais hiszcale beth) to entermeddle and deale in that action. Leave being obtained of him under his hand and dead to this now a Minfter Seale, they speedily prepared a small ship called the Speed-well in burthen about fiftie tunnes. and bath both manning the same with some thirtie men and Boyes, wherein went for Master and chiefe Com- 28 mander in the Voyage one Martin Pring, a man very sufficient for his place, and Famund lones his writing to mee tellified his at- Mate, and Robert Salterne about mentioned, as their chiefe Agent, with a Barke called the Diffection to Vir. couerer, of fix and twentie tunnes or thereabout, wherein went for Mafter William Browne, and Samuell Kirkland his Mate, both good and skilfull Mariners, being thirteene men anda Boy in gin:a. M.Pring whose all in that Barke. The aforelaid thip and Barke were plentifully victualled for eight monethes, Voyage to the Est Indies are and turnished with slight Merchandizes thought fit to trade with the people of the Country, as in the former Hars of divers colours, greene, blue and yellow, apparell of coarie Kerfie and Canualle readie made, Stockings and Shooes, Sawes, Pick-axes, Spades and Shouels, Axes, Hatchets, Hookes, Knucs, Sizzers, Hammers, Nailes, Chissels, Fish-hookes, Bels, Beades, Bugles, Looking-glasses Thimbles, Pinnes, Needles, Threed, and such like. They set faile from Kingrode the twentieth 30

April 10, 1603.

day of March.

we rowed up ten or twelue miles.

M. Salterne vet

We fet faile from Milford Hanen (where the winds had flayed vs a fortnight, in which frace we heard of Queene Elizabeths death) the tenth of Aprill 1603. In our course we passed by the Iles of the Agores, had first fight of the Poke, and afterward of the lland of Cherno and Flores, and after we had runne some fine hundred leagues, we fell with a multitude of small flands on the of June, which Ilands wee North Coast of Virginia, in the latitude of 43 . degrees, the They discouer found very pleasant to behold, a Jorned with goodly graffe and fundry forts of Trees, as Cedars, Spruce, Pines, and Firre-trees. Heere wee found an excellent fishing for Cods, which are better many linds. then those of New-found-land, and withall we saw good and Rockie ground fit to drie them vp-Good fifting on : also we fee no reason to the contrary, but that Salt may bee made in thele parts, a matter of 40 no small importance. We sayled to the South-west end of these Ilands, and there rode with our ships under one of the greatest. One of them we named Foxe Iland, because we found those kind of beafts thereon. So passing through the rest with our Boates to the mayne Land, which lieth for a good space North-east and South-west, we found very tale riding among them, in fixe, seuen, eight , ten and twelue fathomes. At length comming to the Mayne in the latitude of 43. degrees and an halfe, we ranged the same to the South-west. In which course we found foure Inlets, the most Easterly whereof was barred at the mouth, but having passed over the barre, wee ranne vp into it fine miles, and for a certaine space found very good dep h, and comming out againe, as we failed South-weltward, wee lighted vpon two other Inlets, which vpon our learch we found to pierce no: farre into the Land, the fourth and most Westerly was the best, which 53

place.

In all their places we found no people, but fignes of fires where they had beene. Howbeit we beheld very goodly Groues and Woods replenished with tall Okes, Beeches, Pine-trees, Firre-trees, Haiels, Wich-haiels and Maples. We faw here also fundry forts of Beafts, as Stags, Deere, Beares, Wolues, Foxes, Lufernes, and Dogges with sharpe nofes. But meeting with no Saliatras, we left these places with all the forelaid Hands, shaping our course for Sanage Rocks, discouered the yeere before by Captaine Gofnold, where going upon the Mayne we found people, with whom we had no long convertation, because here also we could find no Sassafras. Departing hence webare into that great Gulfe which Captaine Gofnold ouer-shot the yeere before coasting and finding people on the North fide thereof. Not yet fatisfied in our expectation, we left them 60 and failed ouer, and came to an Anchor on the South fide in the latitude of 41. degrees and odde minutes: where we went on Land in a certaine Bay, which we called Whisfor Bay, by the name of the Worshipfull Master Iohn Whitfon then Maior of the Citie of Brifost, and one of the chiefe Aduenturers, and finding a pleasant Hill thereunto adiovning, wee called it Mount Aldworth,

Sautge Rocke.

for Master Robert Aldworths sake a chiefe furtherer of the Voyage, aswell with his Purie as with

his trauell. Here we had sufficient quantitie of Sassafras. At our going on thore, vpon view of the people and fight of the place, wee thought it conuenient to make a small baricado to keepe diligent watch and ward in, for the aduertizement and forcour of our men, while they should worke in the Woods. During our abode on shore, the The people people of the Countrey came to our men sometimes ten, twentie, fortie or threescore, and at one vifit them, rime one hundred and twentie at once. We vied them kindly, and gaue them divers forts of our meanest Merchandize. They did eat Pease and Beanes with our men. Their owne victuals were

most of fish.

mote of annie to whole homely Musicke The Sameet they tooke great delight, and would give him many things, as Tobacco, Tobacco-pipes, Snakes take great deskinnes of fixe foot long, which they vie for Girdles, Fawnes skinnes, and fuch like, and dan-light in mult ke ced twentie in a Ring, and the Gitterne in the middest of them, ving many Sauge gestures, finging Ie, Ia, Ia, Ia, Ia, Ia: him that first brake the ring, the rest would knocke and cry out vpon. Dances. Some few of them had places of Braffe a foot long, and halfe a foote broad before their breafts. Their weapons are Bowes of fine or fixe foot long of Wich-hafell, painted blacke and yellow, Weapons the ftrings of three twifts of finewes, bigger then our Bow-ftrings. Their Arrowes are of a yard and an handfull long not made of Reeds, out of a fine light wood very smooth and round with three long and deepe blacke feathers of some Eagle, Vulture, or Kite, as closely fastened with 20 some binding matter, as any Fletcher of ours can glue them on. Their Quiners are full a vard lone, made of long dried Rushes wrought about two handfuls broad aboue, and one handfull be-

neath with prettie workes and compartiments, Diamant wife of red and other colours. We carried with vs from Bristoll two excellent Mastines, of whom the Indians were more a. The great vie

fraid, then of twentie of our men. One of these Mastines would carrie a halfe Pike in his mouth. And one Mafter Thomas Bridges a Gentleman of our company accompanied only with one of these Dogs, and passed fixe miles alone in the Countrey having lost his fellowes, and returned fafely. And when we would be rid of the Sauages company wee would let loofe the Massiues, and saddenly with out-cryes they would slee away. These people in colour are inclined to a swart, tawnie, or Chestnut colour, not by nature but accidentally, and doe weare their haire brayded in foure parts, and truffed vp about their heads with a small knot behind : in which haire of theirs they flicke many feathers and toyes for brauerie and pleasure. They couer their Ornaments, prinities only with a piece of leather drawne betwixt their twifts and fastened to their Girdles behind and before : whereunto they hang their bags of Tobacco. They feeme to bee fomewhat icalous of their women, for we faw not past two of them, who weare Aprons of Leather skins before them downe to the knees, and a Beares skinne like an Irifh Mantle ouer one shoulder. The men are of stature somewhat taller then our ordinary people, strong, swift, well proportioned, and given to treacherie, as in the end we perceived.

Their Boats, whereof we brought one to Bristoll, were in proportion like a Wherrie of the River Thefathion of of Thames, seuenteene footlong and soure foot broad, made of the Barke of a Birch-tree, farre their Boats, exceeding in bigneffe those of England: it was fowed together with strong and tough Oziers or

twigs, and the feames couered ouer with Rozen or Turpentine little inferiour in fweetneffe to Excellentfweet Frankincense, as we made triall by burning a little thereof on the coales at fundry times after Rozen and our comming home: it was also open like a Wherrie, and sharpe at both ends, saving that the beake was a little bending roundly vpward. And though it carried nine men standing vpright, yet it weighed not at the most aboue fixtie pounds in weight, a thing almost incredible in regard of the largenesse and capacitie thereof. Their Oares were flat at the end like an Ouen peele, made of Ash or Maple very light and strong, about two yards long, wherewith they row

very (wiftly : Paffing vp a River we faw certaine Cottages together, abandoned by the Sauages, and not farre off we beheld their Gardens and one among the rest of an Acre of ground , and in Their Gardens the same was sowne Tobacco, Pompions, Cowcumbers and such like; and some of the people Corne and had Maiz or Indian Wheate among them. In the fields we found wild Peafe, Strawberries very plants. faire and bigge, Goole-berries, Raipices, Hurts, and other wild fruits.

Hauing spent three Weekes upon the Coast before we came to this place where we meant to flay& take in our lading, according to our instructions given vs in charge before our setting forth, we pared and digged up the Earth with shouels, and lowed Wheate, Barley, Oates, Pease, and fundry forts of Garden Seeds, which for the time of our abode there, being about feuen Weeks, although they were late fowne, came up very well, giving certaine testimonie of the goodnesse of the Climate and of the Soyle. And it feemeth that Oade, Hempe, Flaxe, Rape-feed and fuch like which require a rich and fat ground, would prosper excellently in these parts. For in divers places here we found graffe about knee deepe.

As for Trees the Country yeeldeth Saffafras a plant of fourreigne vertue for the French Poxe, and as some of late have learnedly written good against the Plague and many other Maladies; Vines, Cedars, Okes, Ashes, Beeches, Birch trees, Cherie trees bearing fruit whereof wee did eate, Hafels, Wich-hafels, the best wood of all other to make Sope-ashes withall, Walnut-trees, Maples,

Maples, holy to make Bird-lime with, and a kinde of tree bearing a fruit like a small red Pearsplum with a crowne or knop on the top (a plant whereof carefully wrapped vp in earth, Mafter Robert Salterne brought to Briffoll.) We found also low trees bearing faire Cheries. There were likewife a white kind of Plums which were not growne to their perfect ripeneffe. With die uers other forts of trees to vs vaknowne.

The Beafts here are Stags, fallow Deere in abundance, Beares, Wolues, Foxes, Lufernes, and (iome fay) Tygres, Porcupines, and Dogges with sharpe and long noses, with many other forts of wild beafts, whose Cales and Furres being hereafter purchased by exchange may yeeld no smal gaine to vs. Since as we are certainly informed, the Frenchmen brought from Canada the value of thirtie thouland Crownes in the yeere 1 604. almost in Beuers and Otters skinnes only. The 12 most vivall Fowles are Eagles, Vultures, Hawkes, Cranes, Herons, Crowes, Gulls, and great store of other River and Sea-fowles. And as the Land is full of Gods good bleffings, fo is the Seareplenished with great abundance of excellent fish, as Cods sufficient to lade many ships, which we found upon the Coaft in the moneth of June, Seales to make Oile withall, Mullets, Turbuts, Mackerels, Herrings, Crabs, Lobsters, Creuises, and Muscles with ragged Pearles in them. By the end of July we had laded our small Barke called the Discouerer, with as much Sassa-

fras as we thought sufficient, and sent her home into England before, to give some speedie con-

Barke fent

ten; ment to the Aduenturers : who arrived fafely in Kingrode aboue a fortnight before vs. After their departure we so bestirred our selues, that our shippe also had gotten in her lading, during which time there fell out this accident. On a day about noone tide while our men which vied an to cut downe Sassafras in the Woods were asseepe, as they vied to doe for two houres in the heat Danger of the of the day, there came downe about feuen tore Sauages armed with their Bowes and Arrowes, and enuironed our House or Barricado, wherein were toure of our men alone with their Muskets to keepe Centinell, whom they fought to have come downe vnto them, which they vtterly refuted, and stood vpon their guard. Our Master likewise being very carefull and circumspect having not past two with him in the shippe put the same in the best desence he could , lest they should have invaded the same, and cauted a piece of great Ordnance to bee shot off, to give terrour to the Indians, and warning to our men which were fast asleepe in the Woods: at the noyse of which Peece they were a little awaked, and beganne a little to call for Foole and Gallot, their great and fearefull Mastines, and full quietly laid themselues downe againe, but beeing 30 quickned vp eftsoones againe with a second shot they rowsed vp themselues, betooke them to their weapons and with their Mastines, great Foole with an halfe Pike in his mouth drew downe to their thip : whom when the Indians beheld afarre off, with the Maffine which they most feared, in diffembling manner they turned all to a ieft and sport, and departed away in friendly manner : yet not long after, euen the day before our departure, they fet fire on the Woods where wee wrought, which wee did behold to burne for a mile space, and the very same day that wee weighed Anchor, they came downe to the shoare in gleater number, to wit, very neere two hundred by our estimation, and some of them came in their Boates to our ship, and would have had vs come in againe : but we fent them backe, and would none of their entertainment.

About the eighth or minth of August, wee left this excellent Hauen at the entrance whereof 40 we found twentie fathomes water, and rode at our case in leuen fathomes being Land-locked, the Hauen winding in compasse like the shell of a Snaile, and it is in latitude of one and forty de-

grees and five and twentie minutes. This by the way is not to be forgotten, that our Captaine fell fo much to the Northward because he would find high grounds, where commonly the best Hauens are: which also fell out to his expectation. We also observed that we could find no Sassafias but in landie ground. In our returne we brought our felues into the latitude of eight and thirtie degrees about the Acres for certaine causes, and within fine weekes space came from our Port of Virginia, into the Soundings of England, but there being long encountred with Easterly winds, we came at length into Kongrade, the fecond of October 1603. The Difcouerer was out fine moneths and an halfe. The 30 Speedwell was out fixe moneths upon the Voyage.

A Relation of the Voyage made to Virginia, in the Elizabeth of London, a Barke of fiftie tunnes by Captaine BARTHOLOMEW GILBERT, in the yeere 1603. Written by Master THOMAS CANNER a Gentleman of Bernards Inne his companion in the same Voyage.

VPon Wednesday in Easter weeke, the seuenteenth of Aprill after, I had taken my leaue of fome few of my louing and deere friends in Bernards Inne, I rode toward Southampton, there to bespeake Bisket and some other proution for our Barke, wherein Master Bartholomen Gibert went as Captaine, which had beene in Frema the yeere before with Captaine Bartholomen Gofnold, After our businesse was dispatched here, wee carae into Plimmonth, from whence wee out forth the tenth of May. And the fix and twentieth of the same, we were in the latitude of 22. degrees, hoping to have had fight of the Ile of Madera, whereof we miffed, in which course we met with two or three English men of watre, The first of Iune, we were in the latitude of 27. degrees, and haled ouer toward the llands.

of the Well Indies, and the fifteenth of this moneth toward night wee faw Land. Mafter Gilbert and the Master Henrie Suite dwelling within the Iron Gate of the Towre of London, tooke it to be the Bermudae : being very neere the shore they founded many times and had no ground, at the last they found good ground in fourteene or fifteene fathomes. There weecast Anchor-In To the morning we weighed, and founded still as we trended by the shoare : but after wee were past a Cables length from our Road, we had no Land againe in forty or fifty fathomes : we kept flill by the shore not yet being certaine what Iland it was. The sixteenth in the morning, wee spied the people comming from the shore, who when they came neere, cried out for barter or trade: when they came close aboord, they made fignes and cried out to fee our colours, which we prefantly put forth in the maine top, and told them we were Ingleses, Amigos, and Hermanos, that is, Englishmen, their friends and brothers. Afloone as they understood we were Englishmen, they were bolder to come neere: we threw them a Rope, and one came aboord vs: wee traded with them for some Tobacco, Pine-apples, Plantanes, Pompions and such things as they had : wee saue them Bugles, Kniues, Whistles, and fuch toyes. Here we kept close by the shore. When this 30 Canoa had traded with vs, and vttered all they had and drunke of our Beere, beeing kindly vied they departed; and then prefently after diuces Canoas came, we traded and vied them as the first. They trade as One of them told vs that Iland was Santa Lucia, We bestowed all that forenoone shaking in the Santa Lucia. wind (for we had no ground to Anchor) neere the shore to trade with them. Then wee set our counfe for Saint Vincent, but finding a current against vs and the wind very scant, we doubted we should not fetch it, and that if we did, peraduenture we might bee put to the leeward of Dominice, and to confequently of Menis or Mienes; for which Iland we were specially bound for to cut Lignum vita, in the fame. Therefore Mafter Gilbert thought good to let Saint Vincent alone. although in it is the best Tobacco of all the Hands, yet in the end hee put roomer for Dominica. Dominica. whereof we had light the sementeenth of June, and came close to the shore; and presently one 30 Canoa came aboord, as at Santa Lucia, being fent with two men belike to discouer vs, and to see what entertainment they should have, we vied them kinely and so dismissed them. There came

more full of men, with divers of their commodities. The nineteenth in the morning being Sunday, we anchored in a good Road at Menis, and af- Ottomis. ter went on shore to feeke Lignam vitz, Master Gibert, with the Master and divers of the company fought farre into the Woods, but found none but one little Tree, and here and there where one had bin cut : fo we were in doubs to find enough heere to load our ship, a just plague vnto vs for prophaning the Sabbath in trauelling about our worldly bufineffe, when there was no neceffitie. This day in the Euening some went out with the Boate vnto the shore, and brought on boord a Tortoyle fo big that foure men could not get her into the Boate but tied her fast by one Great Tor-Dege water the Boat, and fo towed her to the ship, when they had her by the ship, it was no easie toyle.

matter to get her on boord,

young one.

The next day we went on thore agains to fearch another part of the wood for Lignum vita: Lignum vita. and then God be thanked we found enough. This day at night we opened our Tortoyle, which had in her about 500. Egges, excellent sweet meate, and so is all the whole fish. Vpon Tuefday in the morning we went all on thore fauing the Carpenter and Thomas , and Matter Gilberts man to fell wood, and this day we felled good frore. All the reft of this moneth and three dayes more we continued here every day labouring fore, first in fawing downe the great trees, and fawing them againe into logs, portable out of the thicke wood to the Sea-shoare, so in the Boates, and so to the flup : where M. Gilbers his paines profited double as well in example as in worke, for hee 59 was neuer idle, but either fearthing out more trees, or fetching drinke for the Labourers, or doing one thing or other : fo that in this just fortnight that wee stayed here, wee had gotten on boord fome twenty tuns. Within a few dayes after the Tortoy le was eaten God fent vs another. One of these fishes were sufficient meat for twentie men for three or foure dayes if it could bee prelerned, but in that Climate no falting can preferue it about two dayes, hardly to long. Now the wood growing thinne, and hardly to be found on this lland, he thought it best to stay no longer here, but to goe for Virginia, to learch for better ftore. And fo voon Sunday the third of July in the afternoone we weighed Anchor, and failed North-west and by North, and that night passed by Saint Christopher, and another little Hand. Munday the fourth in the morning we had fight of S. Christopher. the lland, we went into the Woods to fearch for Lionum vite, but found none but one tree, which he cut and went on boord, we fought also for fresh water, but found none : At Euening went on Abundance of shore into the bottome of the Bay to dray the Net; and there we gat good store of fine iresh fish, Tortoyies. and much more, enough to have laden our Boat we should have gotten, if at every draught we had not had in the Net a Tortoyle, which fill brak through and so carried away the fifth with them. At one draught among the reft we had two in the Net, a young one and an old on : the Net held the

CHAP. 12. Store of Munition. Dangerous Rockes, Miraculous deliuerance.

1650

They diffme

Wee weighed and went through betweene the two Hands into the mayne Ocean, toward our long deired Countrey Unginia, distant three hundred and fiftie leagues from vs. Wee layled North North-west.

The feuenth, we ran ftill North-west and North and by West. The eight, weekept the same course. The ninth, we kept still the same course. The winde beganne to vere some thing to the Southward, which had beene conftant still, from the Hands of the Canaries, vnto the Hands of The Westerne the West Indies. And now began the winde to draw towards the West, and then is it as conwinds begin. frant there. The reason I deferre to longer confideration. The current setteth out of the Gulfe of

Mexico, and from the mayne shore. Sunday the tenth, we kept still the same course, and had now but a small gale almost becalmed. In The eleventh, we continued the same course with the same small gale we went North. Tuesday the twelfth we kept the same courie, if any at all, for, for the most part we were becalmed.

Wednefday the thirteenth, the calme continued, the Sunne being extremely hot in the calme. Thursday the fourteenth, the calme continued as hot as before. These dayes we ayred our Newland, fish called Poore lobn, which proued ill done. For after it was ayred, it rotted the sooner. being burnt in the fame. On Friday the fifteenth, God fent vs a reasonable gale. The fixteenth and feuenteenth, the calme came againe. Munday, we had a good gale, and went North and by West, and North North-west. The nineteenth, twentieth, and one and twentieth , we had an excellent gale, and ranne North North-west. Then we cast out the Lead and looked out for land, but found no ground nor faw no land, and therefore we much doubted that the current had fet vs 20 very farre to the leeward of the place which wee were bound for, being the Chefepian Bay: but Ground in 30. that could not be knowne till it pleated God to bring vs to land. In the afternoone about fixe of the clocke we cast out the Lead againe, and had ground in thirtie fathomes, whereof we were

glad and thanked God, knowing we could not be farre from land. Saturday the three and twentieth in the morning, about eight of the clocke wee law land in the height of 40, degrees and odde minutes, very fine low land, appearing farre off to bee full of tall Trees, and a fine tandie shoare, but a great siege : we saw no Harbour, and therefore coasted along to feeke one to the Northward, the wind being at West.

Sunday the foure and twentieth, the wind being about the North-east we beat hard to fetch An Headlind, an Head-land, where we thought we faw an Harbour : but when we came up with it, weeper- 20 ceiued it was none, and all our labour loft. And therefore the wind beeing now more full in our teeth at the North-east, wee considered it were better to pue roome, so that if the winde should fland, then we should fetch the Bay of Chefepian, which Master Gilbert fo much thirsted after, to feeke out the people for Sir Walter Raleigh lete neere those parts in the yeare 1587, if not, perhaps we might find some Road or Harbour in the way to take in some fresh water : for now wee had none aboord.

On Munday the fine and twentieth of July at night wee came neere the mouth of the Bay : the cheffin but the wind blew to fore, and the Sea was to high, that the Mafter durft not put in that night

into the Sea : and fo continued next day. On Wednesday the seven and twentieth, at night the winde came faire againe, and wee bare 40 againe for it all night, and the wind pretently turned againe. Thursday the eight and twentieth, confidering our extremitie for water and wood, victuals and beere likewtle confuming very falt, They departed we could no longer beate for it, and therefore ran roomer, determining for this time to feeke it

Ea@wardfrom the mouth of the Chefepioc grance of a Ri-

Captaine Gil-

Friday the nine and twentieth, being not farre from the shoare, which appeared vnto vsexceeding pleasant and full of goodly Trees, and with some shew of the entrance of a River, our Captaine Bartholomen Gilbert accompanied with Malter Thomas Canner a Gentleman of Bernards Inne, Richard Hareson the Mafters Mate, Henry Kenton our Chirurgion , and one Derricke a Dutchman, went on shore in the Boate from the ship which lay aboue a mile from the land, and with their weapons marched up into the Countrey, leaving two youths to keepe the Boate : but 50 shortly after the Indians fet wpon them, and one or two of them fell downe wounded in fight of pers and source more fline by our yong men that kept the Boat, which had much a doet of faue themselues and it. For some of the Indians roming downe to them, would have haled it on thore, which notwithstanding they faued, and with heavie hearts gat vnto the ship with the losse of their Captain and foure of their principall men. Thus being but eleven men and Boyes in all in the ship, though our want of water and wood were great, yet wee durst not adventure the loss of any more of our imall company in this place; Therefore our Master Henry Sute tooke his course home for England by the Ies of the Acores, and fell first with the Pike, and afterward entring into our Chanell, had first fight of Portland, and thence came up the River of Thames unto Raseliffe, about the end of September 1603. finding the Citie most grieuously infeded with a terrible plague.

CHAP. XIII.

Extracts of a Virginian Voyage made An. 1605. by Captaine GEORGE WAYMOVTH, in the Arch-angell. Set forth by the Right Honorable HENRY Earle of South-hampton, and the Lord THOMAS ARVNDEL, written by TAMES ROSIER.

Pon Easter day, the last of March, the winde comming at North North-east: a- March. bour fue of the clocke after none, we weighed anchor and put to Sea from the Eafter day wee Downes, [in the Name of God] being very well victualled, and furnished with put to See. Munition and all necessaries; our whole companie being nine and twenty perfons, of whom I date boldly lay, few Voyages have beene manned forth with better Sea-men energilly in respect of our few lands.

better Sea-men generally, in respect of our small number. Munday the thirteenth of May, about eleven of the clocke in the fore-noone, our Captaine judging we were not farrefrom Land, founded; and we had foft oze in an hundred and fixty fa- Sounding wee thome: at foure of the clocke after noone wee founded againe, and had the like oze in an hun-found ground,

dred fa:home.

From ten a clocke that night till three a clocke in the morning, our Captain tooke in all Savles 20 and lay at hull, being defirous to fall with the Land in the day time, because it was an voknown Coalt, which it pleased God in his mercy to grant vs, otherwise furely we had runne our Shippe vpon the hidden Rockes, and perished all : for when we set sayle, we founded in an hundred fathom; and by eight a clocke, having not made about five or fixe leagues, our Captaine vpon a funden change of water, supposing verily he saw the sand : presently sounded, and had but fine May 14-Land fathome : much maruelling because wesaw no Land, he sent one to the top, who descried a whitilh fandy Cliffe, which bare West North-west about fixe leagues off: but comming neerer within three or foure leagues, we faw many breaches still never the Land. At last we espied a great breach ahead vs right along the shoare, into which, before we entred, our Captaine thought best to hoise out his Spip-boat and sound it : which if hee had not done, wee had there ended our 30 Voyage, together with our lines: for he bare up the Ship as neere as he could after the Boate, vntill Mafter (am his Mate being in the Boat, weffed and caffed to him to winde about and fland off, for in this breach he had very shoald water, two fathome vpon Rockes, and sometime

they supposed they saw the Rocke within three or foure foot, whereon the Sea made a very high ftrong breach, which we might discerne (from the top) to rafine along as wee fayled by it, fixe or feuen leagues to the Southward : and we law no end thereof. Wherefore we were conftrained to put backe againe from the Land; and founding (the weather being faire) wee found our felues embayed with continual Shoalds and Rocks, in a most vincertaine ground; as by judge- A dangerous ment of our Captaine and whole companie, they had neuer knowne the like; from fine and fixe place of rocks farhome, at the next cast of the Lead wee should have fifteene and eighteene fathome all hard and shoulds.

4c Rocke ouer many which (by the vnipeakable goodnesse and mercy of God towards vs) wee palfed. For if we had bare in with it but the day before (which was exceeding tempeftuous) or in the night, we could by no meanes have escaped the danger. But God so bleffed vs, that we had weather and winde as faire as poore men could wish, in this diffreste, whereby we both perfectly differred enery breach, and with the winde were able to turne, where wee faw most hope of fatest passage. Thus we parted from the Land, which wee had not so much before defired : and at the first fight reloyced: as now wee all loyfully praised God, that it had pleased him so mirroloufly to deliuer vs from fo imminent danger of death before our eyes. Our Captaine Latitude 41. found himfelfe in the latitude of 41 degrees and an halfe. Here we found great store of fith, and degrees and

Lw many Whales, as we had done two or three dayes before.

Wee flood off that night and all the next day, being Wedneflay: but the winde ftill conti-So ming for many dayes betweene the points of South South-west and West South-west, so as we could not by any possible meanes make any way to the Southward in regard of our great want of water and Wood (which was now spent) wee much defired Land, and therefore fought for it, where the winde would bett tuffer vs to re reth our felges.

Thursday the fixteenth day of May, we stood directly in with the Land : and we much marwelled that we descried it not : wherein wee found our Sea Charts very falle laying our Land Sea-charts where none was, for though we bare in directly with it according to them: yet in almost fifty tale. leagues running we found none.

Friday the fenenteenth of May, about fixe a clocke at night, wee deferred Land, which bare 60 from vs North North-east: but because it blew a great gale of winde, the Sea very high and neere night, not fit to come vpon an vnknowne couft, our Captaine flood off till two of the clocke in the morning being Saturday and Whition Eie: then standing with it againe, wee de- Land descried. clocke in the morning being Saturday and Whitlon Ete: then nanding with reagaine, were designed in the gight a clocke in morning, bearing North-east from vs. It appeared a meane high made nelland. Land, as we after found it, being but an Iland of no great compasse: but I hope the most fortunate

CHAP.

named this S.Georges liafid.

Great plenty

of fifh.

Mountaines.

Voon Whitfunday wee came into an

Penteroft Har-

Clay.

Our Pinnace Lanched. Varietie of

Wee fished.

The fraise of the Hands.

Trees. Turpentine plentifull, for

that ever men discovered, as shall appeare by the sequell. About twelve a clocke that day, wee came to an anchor on the North tide of this Iland in forty fathome water, about a league from shoare. This Iland is woody, growne over with Firre, Birch, and Beech, as farre as we saw alone Our Captaine the shoare, and so likely to be within. On the Verge growe Gooseberries, Strawberries, wilde Peafe, and wilde Rose bushes. The fresh water iffued down the rocky Cliffes in many places : and much towle of fundry kindes breed vpon the shoare and Rockes. While wee were at shoare one men aboord with a few hookes got about thirty great Cod and Haddocke, which gaue ws a tafte of the great plenty of fish which we found afterward, wheresoeuer we went vpon the coast.

From hence we might discerne many Blands, and the maine Land, from the West South-west to the East North-east; and North North-east from vsa great way as it then feemed (and as we 10 the M ine and after found it) vp into the Maine, we might discerne very high Mountaines, although the Maine feemed but lowe Land, which gaue vs a hope, that it might pleafe God, to direct vs to the Difcourry of some good, although wee were driven by windes tarrefrom that place, whether both by our direction and delire, we euer intended to shape the course of our Voyage.

The next day being Whitfunday, because we rode too much open to the Sea, and windes, wee waved anchor about twelue a clocke, and came along to the other Ilands more adjoyning to the Maine, and in the Road directly with the Mountaines, about three leagues from the first Hand where we anchored. When we came neere vnto them (founding all along in a good depth)our Captaine manned his Ship-boat, and fent her before with Thomas Cam one of his Mates, whom he knew to be of good experience, to fearch and found about and between the Hands for a place 20 fafe for our ship to ride in. In the meane while we kept aloofe at Sea, having given order to them in the Boat, by a token to weffe in the ship if he found a convenient Harbour, which it pleased God to fend vs, farre beyond our expectation in a most fase birth, defended from all winders in an excellent depth of water for thips of any burthens in fix, feuen, eight, nine and ten fathome voon a clay oze, very tough, where is good moring, even on the Rocks vpon the Cliffefide.

We all with great admiration praised God, who had from so apparent danger miraculously delipered vs, and directed vs vpon this day (vpon which he fent the chiefe promifed Director of all goodnesse vnto his Apostles and Disciples)into such a place, wherof here before we reade none to goodnesse vato his Apolities and Direction, and then which neither our selves could wish, or Nature affoord more secure. In remembrance whereof, our Captaine named it Pentecost Harbour.

Whitfun Munday the twentieth day of May, by three a clocke in the morning, our Captaine caused the Shalop to be carried ashoare: where while some were busied about her, himselfe set others to worke in digging Wels to receive the water, which we found issuing downe out of the Land in many places, and rifing amidft the rocky Cliffes. In digging (amongft other things) we found in some places (and not deepe) clay ground, blue, red and white, to make Bricke or Tile, fit for building. This day our Pinnace was fitted together and lanched, in small time with two or three hookes were fifted fufficiently for our whole companie three dayes, with great Cod, Hadocke, and fome Thornbacke. Towards night we drew with a small Same of 20, fathom iust by the hoare, where we got about 30, very good Lobiters, many Rockfish, some Plaise, and other fmall fishes very good; and fishes called Lumpes, very pleasant to taste. And this wee generally 40 observed, that all the fish of what kind soever we tooke, were well fed, fat, and in tast very sweet.

Wednesday the two and twentieth of May, our Captaine went ashoare with our men, where wee felled and cut wood for our thips vie, cleanfed and fooured our Wells. Wee likewife digged a small plot of ground, wherein among some Garden feeds (which most the birds destroyed) we fet Peale and Barley, which in fixteene dayes grew eight inches, and so continued euery day growing more than halfe an inch: although this was but the crust of the ground, and farre inferiour to the mould we after found in the Maine,

All the next day we labored hard to make vp our wood, because our Captaine intended not to fore, or spend any more time in that of our Voyage. This day our Boat fished againe as before, because wee still were much retreshed with the fresh fish.

Friday the foure and twentieth of May, after we had made an end of cutting wood, and carrying some water aboord our ship. Our Captaine with sourteene that and Pike marched about, and thorow part of two of the Ilands, one of which we ghelfed to be foure or fine miles in compasse, and a mile broad. Along the shoare, and some space within where the wood hindereth not, growe plentifully,

Rashberries, Gooseberries, Strawberries, Corane trees, Rose bushes, wilde Vines, Angelica a ioueraine herbe, many other fruits wee knew not. All within the Hands, growe wood of fundry forts, fome very great, and generally all tall : Beech, Birch, Alh, Maple, Spruce, Cherrie tree, Ewe, Oake great and firme, with fo fine graine and colour, as our Captaine, and men of best experience, had neuer seene the like. But the First trees great and small are most abundant, which 65 I name last, as not the least of excellent profit : for from it issuesh Turpentine in maruellous plenty, and so sweet as our Chirurgeon and others affirmed they neuer saw so good in England. Wee pulled off much Gumme congealed on the outfide of the Barke which gaue an odour like Frankincense. This would be a very great benefit for making Tarre and Pitch.

CHAP.13. A very fruitfull Hand, Furres and Skins, Good Tobacco. We staied the longer in this place, not onely because of our good Harbour (which is an excellent comfort) but also because every day we found the Hand, more and more to discover water

his pleasant fruitfulnesse, inlomuch, as many of our company wished themselves settled here. Alfo our men found abundance of great Mussels among the Rockes; and in some of them ma- Peack. ny small Pearles. In one Mussell (which we drew vp in our Same) was found sourceene Pearles, whereof one was of pretty bignesse and orient, in another aboue fifty small Pearles; and if one had had a Dragge, no doubt we had found some of great value, seeing these did certainely shew that here they were bred: the shels within all glistering with mother of Pearle.

Thursday the thirtieth of May, the Captaine with thirteene departed in the Shallop, leauing

10 the Ship in a good harbour.

Divers Canoas of Sauages came to vs. The shape of their body is very proportionable, and Their shape of well countenanced, not very tall, nor bigge, but in flature like to vs; they paint their bodies body. with blacke, their faces some with red, some with blacke, and some with blew. Their closwhen olacke, then lates one thins, hanging downe to their knees before and behinde, made things. falt together vpon the shoulder with a leather string; some of them weare sleeues, some buskins of leather tewed very thin and foft. Some weare the haire of their skins outward, some inward; they have befides a peece of skin, which they binde about their waste, and betweene their legges to couer their prinities. They fuffer no haire to grow vpon their faces, but vpon their head very long and very blacke, which behinde they binde up with a string on a long round knot, some 20 of them have haire all curled naturally. They feemed all very civill and very merry, thewing tokens of much thankfulneffe for those things we gave them; which they expresse in their lan- Of good eakens of much thanktuintene to the things with the same of the same

good invention, quicke understanding, and ready capacity. Their Canoas are made of the barke of Beech, strengthned within with ribbes and hoopes of Their Canoas wood, in fo good falhion and with fuch excellent ingenious art, as our men that had beene often very artificially in the Indies, faid they farre exceeded any that ever they had seene. The chiefe of them told me by fignes, that they would goe fetch Furres and Skins, and pointed to be with vs againe by that time the Sunne should come somewhat beyond the midst of the firmament.

time the summe induse come ionitewina, ocyonic identification of the animatica.

Animatical content is day we described our Pinnace returning towards vs. Our Captaine had About time discoured vp a great Ruer, trending all almost into the Maine, Vntill his reInfles letten. turne our Captaine left on shoare where they landed, in a path (which seemed to be frequented) shoare, a Pipe, a Brooch, and a Knife, thereby to know if the Sauzges had recourfe that way, because they could at that time see none of them, onely a Beast a farre of, which they thought to be

The next day being Saturday, and the first of June, wee traded with the Sauages all the fore. Wee gaded 2 Deere. noone upon the Shoare, where were eight and twenty Sauages, and because our Ship rode nigh, with the Sauswe were but fine or fixe, where for Kniues and other trifles, to the value of foure or fine shillings. we had forty good Skins, Beuers, Otter, and other which we knew not what to call them. Our trade being ended, many of them came aboord vs, and eare by our fire, and would be very merry 40 and bold, in regard of our kinde vlage of them. Our Captaine shewed them a strange thine.

which they wondered; His Sword and mine having beene touched with the Loadstone, tooke They wondered vo their Knife and held it falt when they plucked it away; and made their Knife turne being arthurffed of laid on a blocke : and giving their Knife a touch with his Sword, made that take vp a Needle, the Loadstone which they much marueiled at. This we did to cause them to imagine some great power in vs. and for that to love and feare vs.

When we went a Shoare to trade with them in one of their Canoas, I faw their Bowes and Arrowes, which in their fight I tooke vp and drew an Arrow in one of them, which I found Their Bowles to be of a reasonable strength, able to carry an Arrow fine or fix score strongly; and one of them tooke it and brew as we draw our Bowes, not like the Indians. Their Bowe is made of Beech in

50 falhion of our Bowes, but they want nocks, onely a string of leather put through a hole at one end, and made fait with a knot at the other. Their Arrowes are of a much greater fize then our and longer, feathered with three feathers tyed on, and nocked very artificially, headed with a long shanke bone of a Deere, made very sharpe, and some Iron heads, with two sangs in manner of a harping Iron. They have likewise Darts headed with sharpebone, one of which I darted Darts, among the Stones and it brake not. Thefe they vie very cunningly to kill Fish . Fowle,

They gaue vs the best welcome they could, spreading Deere skins for vs to sit on the ground Tobacco exby their fire, and gaue vs of their Tobacco in our Pipes, which was most excellent, and so gene- cellent the Sarally commended of vs all to be as good as any we ever tooke, being the simple Leafe without unger gave vs to any composition, very strong and of a pleasant sweete taste; they gave ve some to carry tocur Captaine, whom they called our Balhabe, neither did they require any thing for it; but we would

receive nothing from them without remuneration. Here we faw their women, who flood behinde them, as defirous to fee vs, but not willing to Wefawthi: be feene, for before when focuer we came a Shoare, they retired into the woods; whether it Women

were it regard of their owne naturall modesty being naked, or by the commanding islousie of their husbands, which we rather sulpected; for it hath beene an inclination noted alwayes generally in Sauages, wherefore we would by no meanes feeme to take any special notice of them. They were very well fauoured, low of stature, and exceeding fat; they had two little children very far, and of good countenance, which they loue tenderly, all naked, except their legges. which were couered with thin leather buskins, faitned with firaps to a Girdle about their walte. which they gird very itreight, and is decked round about with little round peeces of Copper. To these we gave Chaines, Bracelets, and other trifles, which the Savages seemed to accept with great kindneffe.

Acour comming away, we would have had those two that supped with vs to goe aboord and to fleepe, as they had promiled our Captaine; but it appeared their company would not fuffer them, whereat we might easily perceine they were much grieued : but not long after our denarture they came with three more to our Ship, figning to vs, if one of our Company would goe lye a Shoare with them, they would flay with vs. Our Captaine would command none : but Griffin, one of them we were to leave in the Countrey, by their agreement with my Lord the Riche Honorable Count Arundell (if it should be thought needefull or convenient) went with them in their Canoa; and three of them stayed aboutd vs. Whom our Captaine and whole Company very kindely vfed, himfelfe faw their lodging prouided, and them lodged in an old Saile vpon the Orlop, and because they most feared our Dogs, they were tyed vp whensoener any of them

Ceremonies of the Sauages

Griffin which lay on Shoare, reported vnto me their manner, and (as I may tearme them) the Ceremonies of their Idolatry, which they performe thus. One among them (the eldeft of the company as he indeed) rifeth right up, the rest fitting still, and todainely cryed, Bowh, wanth; then the women fall downe, and lye vpon the ground, and the men altogether answering the fame, fall a stamping round about with both feete as hard as they can, making the ground shake, with fundry loud outcries, and change of voyce and found; many take the fire thickes and thrust them into the earth, and then relt filent a while, of a fudden beginning as before, they looke round about, as though they expected the comming of fomething (as lice verily supposed) and continue stamping till the yonger fort fetch from the Shoare Stones, of which every man take one, and first beate upon them with the fire sticks, then with the Stones beate the ground with 30 all their strength : and in this fore (as the reported) they continued about two houres. In the time of their Pauole, our watch aboord were finging, and they figned to him to doe fo, which he did, looking and lifting up his hands to heaven : then they pointed to the Moone, as if they imagined hee worshipped that, which when he with fignes denied, they pointed to the Sunne riling, which hee likewife difliked, lifting up his hands againe, then they looked about, as though they would fee what Starre it might be, laughing one to another. Afterithis ended, their wises fe- they which haue wives take them a part, and withdraw themselves severally into the wood all night. The next morning, as soone as they saw the Sunne rise, they pointed to him to come with

cretly.

Their Tobacco Pipe.

company houering about our Ship, to whom (because it was the Sabbath day, I signed they should depart, and at the next Sunne rising wee would goe along with them to their houses, which they understood (as we thought) and departed : three of their Canoas coursing about the Iland, and the others towards the Maine. This day about fine a clocke afternoone, came three other Canoas from the Maine, of which some had beene with vs before, and they came directly aboord vs, and brought vs Tobacco, which we tooke with them in their Pipe, which was made of earth very strong, but blacke and short, containing a great quantity. Some Tobacco they gaue to our Captaine, and some to me, in very civill kinde manner : we requited them with Bread and Peafe. When we came at Shoare, they all most kindely entertained vs, taking vs by the hands, as they had observed we did to them abourd in token of welcome, and brought vs to 50 They saue vs tit downe by their fire, where fat together thirteene of them. They filled their Tohacco Pipe, Tobacco in a which was then the short claw of a Lobster, which will hold ten of our Pipes full, and we dranke Pipe of a Lob- of their excellent Tobacco as much as we would with them; but wee faw not any great quantity to trucke for, and it feemed they had not much left of old, for they spend a great quantity yearely by their continual drinking : they would tigne vnto vs that it was growne yet but a little aboue ground, but it would be high, with a leafe as broad as both their hands; and often would (by pointing to one part of the Maine Eastward) figne vnto vs that the Bashabe (whom wee take to be their King, or some great Commander) had plenty of Furres and much Tobacco.

them to our Sup, and having received their men from vs, they came with all their Canoas and 40

fters Claw.

Maile Booles

and Griffia.

At our departure they made figne, if any of vs would flay there a shoare, some of them would 60 goelye aboord with vs : at which motion Mafter Booles, teruant to the Right Honorable Count Arundell, being delirous to fee the manner of the torelaid Ceremonies, stated with them, and had Griffin with him ; and three of the Sauages lodged with vs, in manner as the night before.

Early the next morning being Munday, the third of June, when they had brought our men a

boord, they came about our Shippe, earnestly by signes desiring we would goe with them along to the Maine, for there they had Furres and Tobacco to traffique with vs. Wherefore our Captaine manned the Shallop, with as many men as he could well, which was but fifteene with the Rowers, and we went along with them : two of their Canoas they fent away before, and they which were abound vs all night kept company with vs to direct vs. This we noted as we went along, they in the Canoa with three Oares, would at their will goe a head of vs and about vs, when we rowed with eight Oares ftrong; fuch was the switterfle by reason of the lightnesse, and exquisite composition of their Canoa and Oares.

When we came neere the point, where we saw their fires, where they intended to land, and to where they imagined some few of vs should come on Shoare with our merchandise, as wee had accustomed before : when they had often numbred our men very diligently, they scoured away to their company, not doubting we would have followed them. But when wee perceived this, and knew not either their intents, or number of Sauages on the Shoare, our Captain after confultation flood of and weffed them to vs, determining that I should goe a Shoare first to take a view of them, and what they had to traffique, if he whom at our first light of them seemed to be of

most respect, and being then in the Canoa, would stay as a pawne for me. When they came to vs (notwithstanding all our former courteses) he veterly refused, but would leave a yong Sanage, and for him our Captaine lent Griffin in their Canoa, while we lay hulling a little of. He at his returns reported, they had there affembled together, as he numbred them, two hundred foure-20 score and three Sauages, enery one his Bowe and Arrowes, with their Dogges, and Wolves which they keepe tame at command : and not any thing to exchange at all, but would have 1835 suages which they keepe tame at command: and not any thing to exchange at an, our would have allembled in a drawne vs farther vp into a little narrow nooke of a Riger, for their Furres as they trecherie.

We began to alter our opinion of them, and to joyne them in the ranke of all Sauges, who Diffoolition of hane beene by all trauailers and in all discouries found very treacherous, neuer attempting mischiefe, vntill (by some remisnesse) fit opportunity affordern them certaine ability to execute the Purman Mafame. Wherefore we humbly gaue God thankes, who had given vs vnderstanding to preuent heit dealness this, and thereby warning to foresee and prepare our selves against the like danger. And after found courses good aduife taken, our Captaine determined, lo foone as we could to Ship fome of them, leaft (be-30 ing suspicious we had discoursed their plots) they should absent themselves from vs, which sure-

ly they had done, if we had not laid hold of the next occasion. Tuesday came to the Ship, there were two Canoas, and in either of them three Sauges, of whom two were below at the fire, the other flaied about the Ship for victual! : and because we could by no meanes entice them aboord, we gaue them a Can of Peate and Bread, which, they carried to the shoare to eate, but one of them brought backe our Can againe presently, and staied aboord with the other two, for he being yong of a ready capacitie, and one wee most defired to bring with veinto England, had received exceeding kinde viage at our hands, and therefore was much delighted in our company: we shipped him, and foure others, two Canoas, with all Canoas, and their Bowes and Arrowes, which is the chiefe substance they possesses.

Saturday the eight of Iune, our Captaine being defirous to finish all businesse about this Harbour, very early in the morning with the Pinnace coafted fine or fixe leagues about the Hands ad- Qur Captaine joyning, and founded all along whereforer he went: helikewife diligently fearched and foun- founded aded along before the mouth of the Harbotr, shout the Rocks which flow themselves at all times, Rockes and are an excellent breach of the waster in as ma See concerns in to offend the Markov Title. and are an excellent breach of the water, fo as no Sex can come in to offend the Harbour. This mouth of die he did to instruct himselfe, and thereby able to direct others that shall happen to come to this Harbour. place : for every where both neerethe Rockes and in all founding about the Ilands, wee never found leffe water then foure or fine fathome, which was very feldome, but feuen, eight, nine, and ten fathome, is the continual founding by the shoare, in some places much deeper, vpon clay Oaze or foft Sand.

This day about one a clocke afternoone, came from the Eastward two Canoas abourd vs, Two Canoas wherein was he that refused to stay with vs for a Pawne, and with him fix other Sauges, whom to the about we had not feene, who had beautified themselves after their manner very gallantly, though their visitem the cloathing was not different from the former, yet they had newly painted their faces very deepe, Balance some all blacke, some red, with stripes of blew ouer their upper lip, note, and chin. One of them ware a kinde of Coronet about his head, made very cunningly of a substance like stiffchare, co- Their Ornaloured red, broad, and more then a handfull in depth, which he fo much effeemed, as he would ments of galnot for any trucke exchange the same : other weare the white feathered skins of lome Fowle round about their head, Ie wels in their eares, & Bracelets of fittle white round bone, fallened together upon a leather firing. These made not any shew that they had notice of the other before ta-

60 ken but we understood them by their speech & signes, that they came sent from the Balkabe, and that his defire was, we would bring vp our Ship (which they call a Quiden) to his house, being as they pointed upon the Maine towards the East, from whence they came, and that hee would exchange with vs for Furres and Tobacco: but because we had no desire to discouer any further that way, and now making what speeds we could up the River; wee let them understand; that

We caught fitte

if their Balbabe would come to vs, hee should be very welcome, but wee would not remove

1664

Tuefday, the eleventh of June, we paffed up into the River with our Ship about fix and tweninto the River ty miles; of which (were it not of necessitie I must report somewhat) I had much rather not to with our Ship, write, then by my relation to detract from the worthinesse thereof, not being sufficient in words to expresse the abundant vtilitie and sweete pleasantnesse it yeeldeth. For the River besides that it is fabiect hereafter by Shipping to bring in all traffiques of Merchandife.

The first and chiefest thing required for a Plantation, is a bold Coast, and faire Land to fall

The profits of with. The next, a fafe Harbour for Ships to ride in.

the River. Saint Georges

The breadth

of the River

The first is a speciall attribute to this Shoare, being most free from Sands or dangerous Rockes 10 in a continuall good depth, with a most excellent Landfall as can be defired; which is the first Hand, named Saint Georges Hand. For the fecond, by judgement of our Captaine, who knoweth most of the Coast of England, and most of other Countries (having beene experienced by implyments in discourries and trauailes from his childehood) and by opinion of others of good judgement in our Ship. Here are more good Harbours for Ships of all burthens, then all England can afoord : And farre more secure from all windes and weathers, then any in England, Scotland, Ire-Lind. France, Spaine, or any other part hitherto discouered, whereof we have received any relation: for (befiles without the River in the channell and Sounds about the Ilands adjoyning to the Mouth thereof, no better riding can be defired for an infinite number of thips) the River it felfe as it runneth vo into the Maine very nigh fortie miles towards the great Mountaines, beareth in 20 for almost 400 breadth a mile, fometimes three quarters, and halfe a mile is the narrowest, where you shall neuer have vider foure or five fathom water hard by the Shoare, but fix, feuen, eight, nine, and ten The ground is fathom at a low water. And on both fides, every halfe mile, verie gallant Coues, some able to Once & Clay. containe almost a hundred Sayle, where the ground is excellent foft oaze with a tough clay voider for Anker hold; and where Ships may lye without either Anker or Cable onely mored to the Shoare with a Hazur. It floweth, by their judgement, fixteene or eighteene foote at a high wa-Docker graue ter. Here are made by nature most excellent places, as Dockes to graue and Carine Ships of all burthers, fecured from all windes, which is such a necessary incomparable benefit, that in few places in England, or in any other parts of Christendome. Art with great charges can make

and Carine Ships. Salmonsand fore of filb. The Land.

The Wood.

e:h.

It yeeldeth plentie of Salmons, and other fiftes of great bignesse, and assuredly great probabilitie of better things therein to be found, feeing about the Ilands wee had fuch certaine hope of Pearle and Oare. Besides all these commodities innatine to this River, the bordering Land is a most rich neighbour trending all along on both sides, in an equall Plaine, neither Mountainous nor Rockie, but verged with a greene bordure of graffe, doth make tender vnto the beholder of her pleafant fertility, if by clenfing away the woods, thee were connected into Medow. The Wood it beareth is no shrubbish, fit onely for fewell, but good tall Firre , Spruce, Birds, Beech, and Oake, which in many places is not fo thicke, but may with small labour be made feeding ground, being plentifull like the outward Hands with fresh water, which streameth downe in

with what admiration wee all confented in ioy; many who had beene erauellers in fundry

Countries, and in the most famous Rivers, yet affirmed them not comparable to this they now

beheld. Some that were with Sir Walter Raleigh, in his Voyage to Guiana, in the Discourry of

many places. As we passed with a gentle winde vp with our Ship in this River. Any man may conceine

This River

tale folum & C.

We marched wp into the land about three miles.

fore Ontingene, the Ruer Orienogue, which eccoed fame to the worldscares; gaue reasons why it was not to be Before the Ri. compared with this, which wanteth the dangers of many Shoakls and broken grounds, whereperorette Ris-uer Ris Grande, with that was encombred. Others preferred it farre before that notable River in the West Indias, called Rio Grande: some before the Rivers of Burdana, Orleance, and Brest in France, Naunce, and the River of Rhoane : which although they be great and goodly Rivers, yet it is no detraction from them to be accounted inferiour to this, which not onely yealdeth all the aforesaid pleasant 50 profits, but also appeared infallibly to vs free from all imagined inconveniences. I will not preferre it before our River of Thames, because it is Natale folum, Englands richest treasure, but wee all did wish those excellent Harbonrs, good Drepes, in a continuall convenient breadth, and fmall tide gates, to be as well therein for our Countrie good, as wee, found them here (beyond our hopes) in certaine for those to whom it shall please God to grant this Land for habitation; which if it had with the other inseperable adherent Commodities here to be found; then I would boldly affirme it to be the most rich, beautifull, large, and secure harbouring River that the world affordeth; for if man should wish, or Art invent, a River subject to all conveniencies, and free from all dangers, here they may take a view in a Plat-forme framed by Nature, who in her perfection farre exceedeth all Arts inuention.

ran vp to the Codde of the River, where we landed, leaving fix to keepe the Shallop till our returne, Ten of vs with our Shot, and some armed, with a Boy to carry Powder and Match, march ed yp into the Countrie towards the Mountaines, which we deferied at our first falling with the

Land, and were continually in our view. Vnto some of them the River brought vs so neere, as we judged our felues when we landed, to have beene within a league of them, but we found them not, having marched well nigh foure miles up in the Maine, and passed three great hils; wherefore because the weather was parching hot, and our men in their Armour not able to travell farre and returne to our Pionalle that night, we resolved not to passe any further, being all very weary of fo tedious and labourfome a trauell.

CHAP.13. Good and fertile ground. Armor and Shot. Goodly River.

To this marchive pulled ouer very good ground, pleasant and fertile, fit for pasture, having Good Pasture. but little wood, and that Oake. like tands left in our Pattures in England, good and great fit timber for any vic; fomesmall Birch, Hazell and Brake, which might in small time be clanfed with few men, and made good errable Land; but as it is now will feede Cattell of all kindes with

Rodder enough for Summer and Winter. The foyle is good, bearing fundry Hearbes, Graffe, and Stawberries, in many places are low thickets, like our Copiffes of small Wood: And it doth all resemble a flacely Parke, wherein appeare some old trees with high withered tops, and other flourthing with hining greene boughes : till we came to the Hils vpon which doe grow excee- Timber trees ding tall, threight, and excellent great timber of fundry kindes, mast for Ships of foure hundred tonnes, and at the bottome of every hill, a little run of fresh water; but the furthest and last we came unto ran with a great streame able a driue a small Mill. Wee might fre in some places, Deere, where Deere and Hares had beene; and by the rooting of ground we supposed wilde Hogs had Hares ranged there, but we could descry no Beast, because our noise still chaled them from vs.

We were no sooner come aboord our Pinnasse, returning towards our Ship, but wee espied a Canoa comming from the further part of the Cod of the River Eastward, which hasted to vs; wherein with two others was he whom we accounted chiefe of his Company; and his comming was very earnestly importuning to have one of our men to goe lye with their Balhabe or Captaine (as they now tearmed him) who was there ashoare (as they figned) and then the next A plot of the morning he would come to our Ship with Furres and Tobacco. This we perceived to be onely a Sausges. meere device to get possession of any of our men, to ransome all those we had taken; which their naturall pollicy could not fo shaddow, but we did easily discouer and preuent.

These meanes were by this Sauage practised, because we had one of his kinsmen prisoner, as

we judged by his most kinde viage of him, being aboord vs together.

10 Thursday, the thirteenth of lune, by two a clocke in the morning / because our Captain would take the helpe and advantage of the Tide) in the Pinnace with our Company well provided and furnished with Armour and Shot both to defend and offend : we went from our Ship vp to that We searched part of the River which trended West into the Maine, to search that, and wee carried with vs part of the River a Croffe to erect at that point; which, because it was not day-light, we left on shoare vntill our uer, returne backe, when we fet it vp in manner as the former. And this we diligently observed, that Weser vp and inno place either about the llands, or vp in the Maine, or along the River, wee could differne other Croffe. any token or figne that ever any Christian had beene before; which either by cutting wood, digsing for water, or letting up Croffes (a thing neuer omitted by any Christian travailours) wee figure that the should have perceived some mention left.

80 But to returne to our River, vp into which we then rowed by estimation twenty miles. What before profit or pleafure is described and truely verified in the former part of the River, is wholly doubled in this; for the breadth and depth is fuch, that any Ship drawing feuenteene or eighteene foote water might have passed as farreas we went with our Shallop, and by all our indgements much further, because we left it in so good depth; which is so much the more to be esteemed of greater worth, by how much it trendeth further vp into the Maine : for from the place of our Ships riding in the Harbour, at the entrance into the Sound, to the furthest point wee were in this River, by our estimation was not much lesse then threescore miles. From each Banke of this River, are divers branching streames running into the Maine, whereby is afforded an vnspeaker- Conveniency ble profit, by the conveniency of easie transportation from place to place, which in some Countion. tries is both very chargeable, and not fo fit, by Carriages on Wane or Horlebacke, Here wee faw 50 ftore of Fish, some leaping aboue water, which we in ged to be Silmon, for they were great. All Salmon and

along is an excellent mould of ground, the wood in most places, especially on the Easterne fide, great plency very thin, chiefely Oake and small Birch, bordering low vpon the Riuer, all fit for Meddow and pleasant Pasture ground. And in that space wee went, wee had on both sides the River many plaine places of cleere Meddow, some of three or foure acres, some eight or nine, so as we sudged in the whole to be betweene thirty and forty acres of good graffe, and where the Armes ronne into the Maine, there likewife went a space on both sides of the cleare graffe, how farre we knew not. In many places we might fee pathes Beafts had made to come downe to watering. And we all concluded (18 I verily thinke we might rightly) that we should never see the like River in

60 euery degree equall, vntill it pleafed God we beheld the fame againe : for the further we went, the more pleasing it was to every man, alluring vs fill with expectation of better; fo as our men (although they had with great labour rowed long, and eate nothing) for we carried with vs We were all no votuall but a little Cheefe and Bread, yet they were fo refreshed with the pleasant beholding thereof, and so loath to tortake it, as some of them affirmed, they would have continued this Ruers.

ypon the Hils-

Hogges.

1665

The Hand

where we wa-

rered is named

Infula Santa

fect objerus-

Temperature

tion on the

of climate.

Rocke.

willingly with that onely fare and labour two dayes; but the Tide not fuffering vs to make any longer itay (because we were to come backe with the ebbe) and our Captaine better knowing what was fit, then we; and better what they in labour were able to endure, being very loath to make any desperate hazard, where so little necessitie required, thought it best to make returne. because whether we had discouered, was sufficient to conceiue that the River ranne very farre into the Land : for we passed fixe or seuen miles altogether fresh water (whereof we all dranke) forced yo by the flowing of the Salt, which after a great while ebbe where we left it, by bredth and depth of Channell was likely to runne by estimation of our whole companie an vnknowne way further. And as our Captaine verily thought (although hee then concealed it) might polfibly make a paffage into (or very nigh) the South Sea: which hee neither had commission nor to time now to scarch, but hath left that till his next returne : if it shall so please God to dispose

Friday the fourteenth of June early, by foure a clocke in the morning with the Tide, our two Boats, and a little helpe of the winde, we warped our shippe downe to the Rivers mouth: and there came to an anchor about about eleuen a clocke. Afterward our Captaine in the Pinnace. fearched the founding all about the mouth and comming into the River, for his certaine infirm-

Stion of a perfect delcription.

The next day being Saturday, we weighed anchor, and with a briefe from the Land, we favled un to our watering place, and there stopped, went ashoare, and filled all our empty caske with

Our Captaine vpon the Rocke in the middest of the Harbour made his certaine observa-Crucis, becaufe there were tion by the Sunne, of the height, latitude, and variation exactly upon all his Instruments: our Erit Croffe 1. Aftrolabe. 2. Semilphere. 3. Ring-instrument. 4. Croffe staffe. 5. And an excellent Com-Our Gapcaine pas, made for the variation. The latitude he found to be 43. degrees 20. minutes, North. The variation, 11. degrees 15. minutes, viz. one point of the Compas Westward. And it is so much made his perin England at Lime-bouse by London, Battward. The temperature affoorded to vs no speciall alteration from our disposition in England: somewhat hotter vp into the Maine, because it lieth open to the South, but scarse yeelding a sensible difference to any of vs. The aire so wholsome, as I suppose, not any of vs found our lelues at any time more healthfull, more able to labour, nor with better flomachs to fuch good fare, as we partly brought, and partly found.

Sunday the fixteenth of lune, the winde being faire, and because wee had fet out of England vpon a Sunday, descried the Hands vpon a Sunday, and (as we doubted not) by Gods appointment, happily fallen into our Harbour vpon a Sunday : fo now befeeching him with like prosperitie to blesse our returne into England: and from thence (with his good-will and pleasure) to haften and fortunate our next arrivall here. Wee fet fayle and quit the Land vpon a Sunday.

Tuesday the eighteenth day of June, being not runne aboue fine and thirty leagues from Land, and our Captaine for his certaine knowledge how to fall with the Coast, having founded every watch, and from fifty fathom had come in good deeping to feuenty, and so to an hundred. This day, the weather being faire, after the foure a clocke watch, when he thought not to have found ground, before founding in aboue a hundred fathom, we had ground in foure and twenty fathom. 40 Wherefore our Sayles being downe, one of our men prefently cast out a hooke, and before hee indged it at ground was fished and haled wp an exceeding great and well fed Cod: then there were cast out three or foure hookes more, the fish was so plentifull and so great, as when our Captaine would haue fet fayle, we desired him to fuffer them to take fish a while, because wee were fo delighted to feethem catch fish so great, so fast as the hooke came downe, some playing with the hooke they tooke by the backe. And one of the Mates, with two hookes at a Lead, at fine A fifty banke. draughts together haled up ten fifthes all were generally very great, some were measured. This cauled our Captaine not to maruell at the shoalding: for he perceived it was a fish-banke, which (for our farewell from the Land) it pleased God in the continuance of his bleffings to give vs knowledge of.

Sunday the fourteenth of July about fix a clocke at night we were come into founding in our Channell: but for want of fight of the Sunne and Starre, to make a true observation: and with contrary windes we were constrained to beate up and downe till Tuesday the sixteenth of July, when by fine a clocke in the morning wee made Sylly: from whence hindred with calmes and fmall windes. Vpon Thuriday the eighteenth of July about foure a clocke wee came to anchor fafe ly in Dartmonth, which Hauen haply (with Gods affiltance) wee made the laft and firk Harbour in England, as the Termini of our Voyage.

A briefe Note of what profits we found the Countrie yeeld: in the small time of our stay there.

Trees. Oake, of an excellent graine , flaight, and great timber ; Elme , Beech , Birch , very tall and, great of whole Barque they make their Canoas; Nut-halle, Halle, Akler, Cherry tree, Ath.M ple, Ewe, Spruce, Atp, Fir in great abundance; many other fruit trees which we know not. n, na pie, Eagles, Hernshawes, Cranes, Duks great; Geefe, Swans, Penguins, Shark, Crow, Rauen, Kite, Soga, Mewes, Doues, Tortles, birds of fundry colours; and many other fowles vnknown.

Beafts. Deere red and fallow, Beare, Wolfe, Beauer, Otter, Hare, Conie, Matterns, Sables. Hogs, Porkelpines, Polcats, Cats, wilde great, Dogs some like Foxes, some like our other beafts the Sanager ligne vinto vs with hornes and broad eares; which we take to be Olkes or Loshes.

Filhet, Whales, Porpoile, Seales, Cod, very great; Haddocke, great; Herring, Platie, Thornbacke, Rock-fish, Lobster, great ; Crabbe , Mussels , Cockles , Wilks , Cunner-fish , Lumpe-fish, Whiting: the Sauages figne vnto vs that they have Tortoife very great.

Plants, Fruits, Herbs. Tobacco, excellent, sweet and strong; Vine, wilde; Strawberries, Raspberries, Gooseberries, Hurtleberries, Corant trees, in abundance; Rose bushes; Peale, which the Sauges figne to be very great in the Maine; Ground-nuts; Angelica, a most foueraigneherbe; and an herbe that ipreadeth like Camomell , and imelleth like iweet Marjoram , great plente. Good Dies, which appeare by their painting, which they carrie with them in bladders,

Words which I learned of the Sauages, in their Language

Sonne or Moone, Kefus. Cod-fish, Biskesore. A fish with hornes, Manedo. Lobster, Shoggab. Rock fish, Shagarocke, Cockle-fish, Hesucke, Muskell, Shoorocke, Cunner-fish, Tattaucke, Crabbe. Wustoralia, Porpoite, Muscopeinck, Plaife, Anego. Tortoile, Romeanecke. Peale, Ushcomono. Tobacco, Tomoch. A leafe, Mebeere. A weed, Calherufb. A Firre tree, Seteoch. A ftone, Nabscurt. 20 A Bowe, Shoanor. An Arrow, Tobood. Barke of a tree, Mashquere. Water, Shamogoon. Sand, Cheemuch. Crowe, Cagagoofe, Haire, Meffer or Meris. A board, Nuomur. A Beare, Rog foo. Beaver. Paneah. Otter, Nymemano. Rat, Sanuke. Polcat, Pocamka. Cat, Pufnick. Fallow Deere, Coribo, Hogge, Madofo, Red Deere, Moofurr. Tkey tell vs of other beafts, which they call, Ta-(anus, Pilho, Narfim. Teeth, Ibider. A hand and finger, Breecke. A Naile of the hand, Culbe. Alegge, Codd. Afoot, Muffeete. Plum-tree, Epfegan. Strawberry, Pulboa. Goofeberry, Shewanor. Cherry tree, Efregononino. Corant tree, Asheemena. Rashbetrie, Kisheemy. A tippe, Metoan, Fire, Squida. The maine Land, Bemoquianche. Sea, Shonbbe. Father, Wado. Sonne, Ufto. Wane of the Sea, Toboogg. Pitch and Tallow, Poco. Wilde Role, Minubeck. Birch, Pagnar. Sword, Edgemente, Montaine, Machaele, Winde, Packenfon, Blod, Paghgeun, Red Paint, Woman, Blacke Paint, Cogolio, A Dogge, Revolute, A Ship or Boat, Quiden, An Orre, Wuttoboganor. A Garnepo Fly, Chuffuab. Bread, Paune, Raine, Songoran, A note, Peech-ten. An Axe or Hatchet, Tomaheegon, A Knife, Quodogon, Oake, Askabeffe, White Bone, whereof they have Chaines , Girdles , Bracelets , Speefone. The Checke Canoah. A Shirt or Coat, Tenoganuke, The Chinne, Queb, An Eye, Sheefack, Eylid, Memon. Forehead, Scottoquab. An Eare, Famwucke. A fish-hooke, Makeecon. A Rainbow, Shimogon.

The Names of their chiefe Gouetnours, whom they call Sagomob. 1. Bashabez. 2. Abatuckquifte. 3. Bdahanedo, one of them we have. 4. Abokeefuffick. 5. Shurokinit. 6. Pfaheno. 7. Menteelmet, 8. Ageemohuck. 9. Mawermet. 10. Chanacoboin. 11. Amilquir. 12. Muafacoromoreete. Thefe dwell vpon the Maine, and weare an ornament of white bone vpon their head; and Chaines, and Bracelets, and Girdles, and have their skinne garments laced with them.

The Names of our Virginians. Edahanedo, Brother to the Baftabes. Amooret, his Erother. Satacomoah . Maneduck . Scikaworrowfe.

Thus have I given thee the proceedings of Virginia and New Englands Discourie: for the origimall beginning of the Discouerie, Sir Sebattian Cabot was the first Discouerer both of it and the rest of the Continent of America. The first Plantation was more Southerly by the charges of Sir Walter Raleigh: as before is showed. The next yeare New Patents were obtained of his Maiestie, for a donble Plantation in these parts. I trouble not the Reader with the whole Patent, both because it hath sustained dissersified alteration, dissission and subdississon, and because I more minde things there done, than bere; for which cause I have also omitted the Articles and instruction two dayes after dated, signed, 50 and fealed, with the Prince Seale for the government of the faid Plantation, of both which I bane the Copies by mee; I onely bere gine thee the beginning of the first Patent, April 10. 1606.

CHAP. XIIII.

The description of the Ilands of Acores, or the Flemish Ilands, taken out of Linschoten, with certaine occurrents, and English acts.



He Iles of Açores, or the Flemish Ilands are seven, that is, Tercera, Saint Mary, Linsote. 07. Saint George, Gratisfa, Pice, and Paisael. There are yet two Hands called Florer anne lianis, and Corse, which are not contained under the name of Agores: but yet at this W yealed day are under the government of the fame Hands, fo that they are in all, account. ted nine llands. They are called Agores, that is to fay, Sparhawkes or Hawkes, because that in their first discouery, they found many Sparhawks, in them, wherof they hold the name, although at this day there is not any there to bee found. They are also

called the Flemilh Hands, that is, of the Netherlanders, because the first that inhabited the same

were Netherlanders, whereof till this time there is a great number and off-spring remayning,

that in manner and behauiour are altogether like Netherlanders, and there is yet in the fame

Iland a running water, that iffueth out of a Hill, and fo runneth into the Sea, whereas ver

those issues or off-springs of Netherlanders inhabite, and is called Aribera dos Framenges, that is.

CHAP.14.

Tercera.

the Flemile River.

1668

The principall Hand of them all, is that of Tercera, called Infula de Iefus Christus of Terce-74. It is betweene fifteene or fixteene miles in compasse, and is altogether a great Cliffe of Land, whereby in it there is little roome; for it is as it were walled round about with Cliffes: but where any ftrand or fand is, there standeth a Fort. It hath no Hauens nor entrance of waters. Io for the fecuritie and fafety of the shippes, but onely before the chiefe Towne called Anera. where it hath an open Hauen, which in forme is like a Halfe-moone, by the Portugalt called Anora, whereof the Towne hath her name. It hath on the one fide in manner of an elbow flicking forth, two high Hills, called Brefil, which stretch into the Sea, so that afarre off they feeme to bee divided from the Iland. Those Hills are very high, fo that being vpon them . a man may fee at the least tenne, or twelue, and sometimes fifteene miles into the Sea, being cleare weather. Vpon thefe Hills there iland two fmall ftone Pillers, where there is a Centinell placed, that continually watcheth to fee what shippes are at Sea, and so to aduertise those of the Iland : for that as many shippes as he seeth comming out of the West, that is from the Spanish Indies, or Brasilia, Cabo verde, Guinea , and the Portugal Indies, and all other waves ly- 20 ino South or Welt, for every shippe bee setteth a Flagge vpon the Pillar in the West, and when the (hippes which hee descrieth, are more than fine, then hee setteth vp a great ancient, betokening a whole Fleete of shippes. The like hee doth upon the other Pillar, which standeth in the East, for such shippes as come from Portugall, or other places out of the East or North parts, these Pillars may bee easily seene in all places of the Towne, by reason of the highnesse of the Hills, fo that there is not one shippe or sayle that is at Sea, or maketh towards the Iland , but it is presently knowne throughout all the Towne, and ouer all the whole Hand : for the watch is not holden onely upon those two Hills jutting into the Sea, but also upon all corners, Hills and Cliffes throughout the Iland, and as foone as they perceive any shippes, the Governour and Rulers are presently aduertised thereof, that they may take such order therein as neede requireth. 20 Vpon the furthest corner into the Sea Handeth a Fort, right against another Fort that answer reth it : fo that those two Forts doe shut and defend the Mouth or open Hauen of the Towne, where the shippes lie in the Road, and so no shippe can either goe in or come forth, without the licence or permission of those two Forts. This Towne of Angra is not onely the chiefe Towns of Tercera, but also of all other Townes within the Hands thereabouts. Therein is resident, the Bishop, the Gouernour for the King, and the chiefe place of Judgement, or tribunal Seate of all the llands of Acores.

Three miles from this Towne lieth another Towne towards the North, called Villa de Praya, (for Praya is as much to fay, as Strand) because it lieth hard by a great strand, and for that cause there is little traff que thither, as not having any convenient place for shippes to come at 40 it : yet sometimes there commeth some one, that by reason of contrary winde cannot get beangra descried fore the Towne of Angra, and so by constraint discharge their goods in that Towne, which from thence are carried by Land to Angra, and yet some part thereof is spent and vfed there. It is walled and well houled, but not many people in it, and fuch as are in it, doe get their liuings most by husbandry : for there are very faire Corne lands. The lland is Wines small, likewite very fruitfull and pleasant, ir hath much Corne and Wine, but the Wine is not very good to carry into other Countries thereabouts, because it is small and will not long continue, so that it is vied in the Countrey by the common people : but such as are of wealth, for the most Commodities, Part drinke Wines of Madera, and Canaria. It aboundeth in Flesh, Fish, and all other necessaries and meates for mans bodie, wherewith in time of need they might helpe themselues. Oyle 50 there is none, but it commeth out of Portugall. Also Salt, Pots, Pans, and all kind of earthen

Veffells, Chalke, and such like are brought thither out of other places, for there they are not to bee found : for fruits they have (besides Peaches of divers kindes, and in so great abundance that is is strange) Cherries , Plums, Walnuts, Haste-nuts, Cheinuts, but those not very good : of Apples, Peares, Oranges and Lemons, with all fuch like fruits there are fufficient. Of all forts of Hearbes and Plants, as Coleworts, Radishes, and fuch like they have at their certains times of the yeere. They have likewife in that Iland a certaine fruit that groweth under the earth, like Radishes or other roots, but the Leaues or Plants are Trees like Vines, but different leaues, and groweth longwife vpon the ground : it beareth a fruit called Batatas, that is very good, and is fo great that it weigheth a pound, some more, some lesse, but little esteemed : and 60 yet it is a great sustenance and food for the common fort of people. It is of good account in Portugall, for thither they vie to bring it for a Present, and those of the Hand by reason of the great abundance doe little esteeme it. There is also another kind of stuffe that is fowed like Corne, and is a fruit : it groweth upon the root of the graffe or leaus, and is round and as bigge

242 great Peafe, but not fo round : in eating it tafteth like Earth-nuts, but harder to bite : it is likewife a good meate, and much esteemed in other places: but by reason of the great quantitie thereof, it is most vied to facten their Hogges, and is called funfai. There is also in the Iland a certaine Plant, which is found in all places thereof in the open fieldes: it groweth as high as a man, and beareth no fruit, onely the roote thereof is a fubstance, of the thicknesse of A roote sit to a mans two filts, and in thew as if it were naturall golden haire, and in handling like foft Silke, be worten. which is vied there to fluffe and fill their Beddes in flead of Wooll and Feathers : and I doe certainly believe, if any man of vnderstanding would take it in hand, it would well be wouen. The principallest traffique of this Hand, is their Woade, such as wee vie for dying (whereto of much is made in that Iland, and is fetched from thence by Englishmen, Scots, and Frenchmen, in barter for Cloathes and other wares, who continually traffique into that Iland: and although by reason of the warres, the Englishmen are forbidden to traffique thither, yet under the names of Scots and Frenchmen, they have continuall trade there. The Hand hath not any wilde beafts or fowles, but very few, fauing onely Canary birds, which are there by thoufands, Canary birds. where many Birders take them, and thereof make a daily living, by carrying them into divers places. It hathalfo wonderfull many Quailes , which they call Codornifen: of tame fowles, as Hennes, and Gynnie Hennes are there likewise great store. Hunting is there little vied , but onely for Conies, which are very great : Hares, Harts, Partridges, Venilon, and fuch like, are not there to be found, because of the little respect and care the Inhabitants have to breed any such 30 things. Fish is very plentifull, and of divers kindes, and very good: in Summer there is great flore taken, for in Winter they can hardly brooke the Seas. The chiefe moneths of Winter Winter. weather for raine and ftormes are, Ianuarie, Februarie, March and Aprill, and also the moneth of September is commonly very flormy: all the other moneths it is commonly good weather; The Countrey is very hilly, and in some places wooddy, full of bushes and trees: it is hard to trauell, because their wayes for the most part are stony, so that for a mile, or a mile and a halfe together, men can see no ground , but onely stones, which for sharpnesseand fastion shew like Stones. pointed Diamants, whereby one can hardly treade vpon it, left it fhould cut through both shoots and feet : and yet it is all planted with Vines , fo full and thicke , that in Summer time you can hardly see through it, for that the rootes thereof doe growe betweene the stones: so that a man 30 would thinke it impossible that any thing should growe therein; and which is more, in some places it feemeth impossible for a man to treade voon it, being so wilde and desart as it sheweth, and nothing but hard itones and Rockes. On good ground their Vines will not growe, but onely in the wilde and stony places: and for that cause they are much esteemed.

The good groundes and plaine fieldes, which in some places are very many, especially by Villa da Praya, are fowed with Corne and Woade, and they have fo much Corne, that they neede not bring any from other places: although that besides their Inhabitants, and naturall borne llanders, they have continually with them fourteene Companies of Spaniards, which are all fedde and nourished by the Corne that groweth in the Countrey , vnlesse there chance to come a hard and unfruitfull yeere, as oftentimes it doth, for then they are forced to helpe so themselves with forraine Corne, and that especially because of the Souldiers that lie in the Iland: and yet it is strange, that the Corne, and all other things in the Iland continue not aboue one yeere, and that which is kept aboute a yeere is raught, and nothing worth. And therefore Corne willian to keepe their Corne longer than a yeere, they are forced to burie it in the earth for the space of but a yeere. foure or fine moneths together, to the which end enery Townesman hath his Pit at one end of the Towne in the common high-way, which is appointed for the purpole, and every man fetteth his marke upon his Pit-stone : the Corne is but lightly buried in the earth : the holes Corne busied, within are round, and the toppes thereof fo wide that a man may creepe in, whereunto there is aftone purpolely made to couer it, which shutteth it vp very close. Some of the Pittes are so great, as that they may hold two or three lastes of Corne, some greater, and some smaller, as 50 every man bath his provision: and as soone as the Corne is reaped, and fanned (which is in July) euery man putterh his Corne into those Pittes, laying flraw vnder and round about it, and then they fill it full, or but halfe full, according as their quantitie is, and fo ften it vo with the stone, which they couer with earth, and so let it stand vntill Christmas, when every man that will fetch home his Corne: some let it lie longer, and fetch it by little and little, as they vie it: but the Corne is as good when they take it out, as it was at the first houre that they put it in: and although that Carts, Horses, and men doe commonly passe over it, and also that the raine raineth

spoiled : and when it hath beene thus for a long time buried in the earth, it will continue the 60 whole yeere through, and then they keepe it in Chifts, or make a thing of Alats, like a Ccope, to preserue it in, not once stirring or moouing it, and so it continueth very good. The greatest commoditie they have in the Land, and that serueth their turnes best, is their Oxen: and I beleeue they are the greatest and fairest that are to bee found in all Christendome, Gre : Oxe. - with Zzzzzz 2

vpon it, yet there entreth not any drop of raine or moisture into it: and if the Corne were not

buried in that manner, it would not continue good about four moneths together, but would be

Fruits.

Batatas.

with vomeafurable great and long hornes. Enery Oxe hath his fenerall name like men and Called by their

LIB.VIII.

although there bee a thousand of them in a heard, and that one of them bee called by his name. he pretently commeth forth voto his mafter that calleth him. The Land is very high, and agic feemeth hollow : for that as they passe over a Hill of itone, the ground foundeth voder them as if it were a Seller, fo that it feemeth in divers places to have holes under the earth, whereby it is much jubic of to Earthquakes, as also all the other llands are: for there it is a common thing, and all those llands for the most part have had Myne of Brimstone, for that in many places of Tercer a, and Saint Michael, the imoake and fauour of Brimftone doeth fhill iffue forth of the ground. and the Countrey round about is all findged and burnt. Allo there are places wherein there are Fountainer and Wells, the water whereof is so hot that it will boyle an egge, as well as if it

Ho: Springs. hung ouer a fire. In the Hand of Tercera, about three miles from Angra, there is a Fountaine in a place cal-Gualua Spring led Gualua, which hath a propertie, that all the wood which falleth into it by length of time

interftone.

converteth into from as I my felf, by experience have twied. In the fame Foundaine by the roote of a tree, whereof the one halte runneth under that water, and is turned into as hard from as if it were Steele: and the other part of the roote (which the water toucheth not) is fill wood and root, as it should be. The Iland hath great store and excellent kinds of wood, free Cedars comcially Cedar trees, which growe there in to great numbers, that they make Scutes, Carts, and other groffe workes thereof, and is the commonest wood that they vie to burne in those Coun-

Sanguinbo wood. White and vellow woods.

tries, whereby it is the wood that with them is least efteemed, by reason of the great quantity 20 thereof. There is another kinde of wood called Sanguinbo, and is very faire of a red colour, and another fort that they call white Wood, being of it felfe as white as Chalke: other that is perfect yellow, and all naturall without any dying; and therefore there are divers good workemen in Tercera, that are skilfull in loyners Occupation, and make many fine pieces of worke, as Deskes, Cupboords, Chiffs, and other fuch like things, whereof many are carried into Porms gall, and much efteemed there, as well for the beauty of the wood, as for the workmanihip. And specially the Spanife Fleet, which ordinarily refresh themselves in that Iland, doe carrie much of it from thence a for it is the best and finest that is made in all Spaine and Portugall, although it bee not compar ble to the Deskes, and fine workmanihip of Nurembereb, and thole Countreves : but for Wood is excelleth all other Countreves , for that they have in the Spanish 20 Fleete, besides their owne kindes of woods, at the least a thousand forts of wood of all colours that man can imagine or deuise, and so faire, that more fairer can not bee painted. There is a certaine kinde of wood in the Iland Pico, fituate and lying twelve miles from Terce-Texe a kind of 74, called Texe, a most excellent and princely wood, and therefore it is forbidden to bee cut, but onely for the Kings owne vie, or for his Officers. The wood is as hard as Iron, and hath a colour within, as if it were wrought, like red Chamlet, with the same water, and the older it is, and the more yied, the fairer it is of colour, fo that it is worthie to bee efteemed, as in

wood as hard

Inhabitants.

Souldiers.

Strangers.

truth it is. All those Ilands are inhabited by Portugals: but fince the troubles in Portugall, there have beene divers Spanish Souldiers fent thither, and a Spanish Governour, that keepe all the For's and 40 Caftles in their polieffions, although the Portugali are put to no charges, nor yet hardly vied by them , but are rather kept fhort, fo that not one Souldier dareth goe out of the Towne, with our licence; and therefore men may quietly travell throughout the Iland, both day and night, without any trouble. Likewise they will not suffer any stranger to travell to see the Countrey : and this order was not brought up by the Spaniards, but by the Portugals themselves, before their troubles, (for they would never permit it :) and which is more, all strangers that came thither were viually appointed a certaine streete, wherein they should sell their wares, and might not goe out of that ftreete. Now it is not fo ftraightly looked vnto, but they may goe in all places of the Towne, and within the Iland, but not about it, to view the Coast: which notwithstanding was granted vnto vs , by the Gouernour himselfe , who lent vs his 50 Horses to ride about, and gaue vs leave to see all the Forts, which at this time is not permitted to the naturall borne Handers, neither are they fo much credited. Wee rode twice about the Hand, which hee granted vs I-aue to doe, by meanes of certaine particular friendih:p wes had with him : neither could the Portugals hinder ve therein , because were were in the Kings feruice, as Factors for the Kings Pepper, and for that, they accounted vs as naturall borne Portugals: for the Gouernour would willingly have had mee, to have drawne a plot of the whole Iland, that hee might have fent it to the King : wherein I excused my felfe : yet I made him the Towne with the Hauen, comming in, and Forts of Angra; which hee fent voto the King, the like whereof you may in this Booke behold ; for the which the Gouernour was greatly affected vaco mee, and thewed mee much friendship. Wee had in our Lodging a French Net - 60 chant and a Scot, that willingly would have gone with vs, to fee the Iland, but could not be fulfered : for the Portugals thinke that they would take the proportion thereof, and to teeke to deteate them of their right.

But returning to our matter, the Hands are very good, and holesome ayre, and the diseases that are most common in those Countries, though not very plentifull, but onely here and there that are mort common in the defendation of the days that taketh them, and maketh The avec. a one, are one negative, or halfe lame of their limmes, or of fome one limme: and another ficksieffe, that is called O Sange, that is, a certaine bloud, that haftely commeth spon a man. as a fwelling in the eyes, or other places of the face, or of the body, and is as red as bloud, for (as they (av) it is nothing elle but meere bloud : these are two difeases like the plague, and are commonneft fickneffes in those Countries, which grow by reason of the great windineffe of the Hands, that are subject to all stormes and foule weathers, and are whrealonable moist, which is one of that are more to an infinite difeases : for the windes are there to ftrong and dangerous, that they Strong windes

confume both the Iron and the Steele of their houses, and bring them into powder: for I have feene Iron grates in the Kings Custome house, as thicke as a mans aime, and the windowes of hard free stone, which were to confumed by the winde, that the Iron in some places was become as thin as a firaw, and the ftone in like fort; and therefore in those Countries they vie to make their Roofes and Painthoufer of stones, which they digge in the water, out of fands woon the Sea coatt of those Hands, whereon the winde hath not fo great a power to confirme it : and yet that Customehouse had not beene made aboue fix or seuen yeares before, at the most.

In this Iland belides the two Townes, there are divers great Villages, as Saint Sebalians. Saint Barboran, Altares, Gualua, Villa nona, with many other Parifhes and Hamlets: fo that for the 20 moit part it is built and inhabited, fauing onely the places that are wilde and full of Woods, which can hardly be trauelled, much leffe inhabited. Their most traffique is (as I said before) the wood that groweth in those Countries, I meane for such as deale in Merchandise, and the workemen that make it : but the rest waite for the flee:es that come and goe to and from the Spanish and Portugal Indies, from Brafilia, Cabo, Verde and Guinea : all which Countries doe commonly come vnto Tercera to refresh themselues, as lying very fitty for that purpose : so that all the inhabitants doe thereby richly maintaine themselves, and fell all their wares, as well handy workes as victuals vnto those Ships : and all the Hands round about doe as then come vnto Tercere with their wares, to fell it there. For the which cause the Englishmen and other strangers keepe continually about those Hands, being affured that all Ships for want of refreshing must of 30 force put into those Hands, although at this time many Ships doe avoide those Hands, to the great

discommodity of the Ilands and the Ships.

Fion Tercera Southeast, about seuen and twenty or eight and twenty miles, lyeth the lland of Saint Michael, which is about twenty miles long, and is likewife full of Townes and Villages S. Michael, inhabited by Portugals, for ayre and all other things like vnto Tercera. The chiefe Towne is called Panta del Gada, where there is great traffique of English, Scots, and Frenchmen, onely (as in Tercera) because of the woad, which is more abundant in that Iland, then in all the rest of them: for that every yeare there is made aboue two hundreth thousand Quintals of Wood. It hath likewife great abundance of Corne, fo that they helpe to victuall all the Ilands that are round about them. It hath neither Hauens nor Rivers, but onely the broad Sea, and haue leffe fafegard and 40 defence then those which are of Tercera: but there they lye not vader the commandement of any Fort : fo that many fet fayle with all the windes, and put to Sea, which in the road of Tersera they may not doe: and therefore the strangers Ships had rather fayle to Saint Michaels, for there they can not be constrained to doe anything, but what they will themselves to doe, There is also a company of Spaniards in a Castle that standeth by the Towne of Punta del Gade.

which is made by the Spaniards for the defence and maintenance of the fame towne. Prom the Hand of Saint Michaels Southwards twelve miles, lyeth the Island Santa Maria, Saint Me which is about ten or twelue miles compasse, & hath no traff que but onely of pot earth, which the other Hands fetch from thence. It hath no Woad, but is full of all victuals like Tercera, and inhabited by the Portugals. There are no Spaniards in it : because it is a stony Country, like Ter-5c errs, and hard to boord : whereby the inhabitants themselves are sufficient and able enough to defend it. While I remained in Tercera, the Earle of Cumberland came thither, to take in fresh

water, and some other victuals; but the inhabitants would not suffer him to have it, but wounded both himfelfe and divers of his men, whereby they were forced to depart without having any From Tercera North Northwest about seven or eight miles, lyeth a little Iland called Gratis-

fa, and is but five or fixe miles in compaffe, a very pleafant and fine Iland, full of all truits and all other victuals, fo that it not onely feedeth it jelfe, but also Tercera, and the other Ilands about it, and hath no other kinde of Merchandife it is well built and inhabited by Portugals, and hath no Soldiers in it, because it is not able to beare the charge. The Earle of Cumberland while 1 lay Earle of Cumberland 60 in Tercera, came vnto that Iland, where himselfe in person, with seuen or eight in his company berland. See

went on land, asking certaine Beafts, Hens, and other Victuals, with Wine and fresh water, which suplease. they willingly gaue him, and therewith he departed from thence, without doing them any hurt: for the which the inhabitants thanked him, and commended him for his curtefie, and keeping of his promife.

Sains George.

From Tercera Well North-west, eight or nine miles, lyeth the Hand of Saint George, It is about twelve miles long, but not about two or three miles at the furtheft in breadth at is wooddy and full of hils: it hath no speciall traffique, but onely some Woad, and yet very hitsle of it. The inhabitants line most by Cattell and tilling of the Land, and bring much victuals to fell in Tercera : it hath likewife many Cedar trees, and other kindes of wood, that from thence are brought vnto Tercera, and fold vnto the Loyners, which for that occasion dwell onely in Tercera.

Farael.

From Saint George Well South-well feuen miles, lyeth the Hand called Fayael, which is feuenteene or eighteene miles in compafie : it is one of the beit llands next vnto Tercera, and Saine Michaels est aboundeth in all forts of victuals, both fleft and fift, fo that from this Iland the most part of victuals and necessaries commeth by whole Caruels vnto Tercera: it bath likewife to much Wood, fo that many English Ships doe traffique thither, The principall road and place is the Towne called Vitta dorta: there the Shipa like wife doe lye in the open Sea under the Land. as they doe before all the other Hands aby this Towns there lyeth a forerelle, but of small importance; and because the inhabitants of themselves doe offer to defend the Iland against all enemies, the Soldiers discharged from thence, which before that time lay in the Fort, complaining that they were not able to maintaine nor lodge them. The fame time that the Earle of Camberland was in the lland of Gratiofa, he came likewife to Fayael, where at the first time that hee came, they began to refult him, but by reafon of fome controuerfie among them, they let him land where he rafed the Castle to the ground, and sunke all their Ordnance in the Sea. taking with him certaine Caruels and Ships that lay in the road, with provision of all things that hee 10 wanted; and therewith departed agains to Sea. Whereupon the King caused the principall actors therein to be punished, and fent a company of Souldiers thither againe, which went out of Tercera, with all kinde of warlike munition, and great flot, making the Fortrelle vp againe, the better to defend the lland, trufting no more in the Poringals. In that I land are the most part of the Netherlanders off-fpring, yet they vie the Portugals language, by reason they have beene so long conversant among them, and those that vied the Durch tongue are all dead: they are great-

Fajael taken taken by Earle

Pica.

Tercera South-well and by Well twelve miles, lyeth the Iland called Pico, which is more then fifteene miles in length. It is so named of a high Mountaine that standeth therein called Pres, 30 which is to high, that fome thinke it is higher then the Pico of Canaris. When it is cleare weather, it may as perfectly be seene in Tercera, as if it were not halfe a mile from thence, and yet it lyeth about twenty fine miles from it : for it is at the furthest end of the Hand towards Fayael. The top of it is seene cleare and bright, but the nether part is coursed with clouds, and with the Horizon, whereby the Hand is much spoken of. It is very fruitfull of all kindes of victuals, like Fayael, and hath great store of wood, as Cedars & all other kindes, and also the costly wood Teixo. There they build many Caruels and small Ships; and from thence, by reason of the abundance of wood, they ferue the other Ilands with wood. It is also inhabited as the rest are their chiefe traf-

From Fagael Southeast three miles, and from Saint George South-west foure miles, and from

ly affected to the Netberlanders and strangers.

Pleafant Oranges,

From Tercera Westward to the Iland named Flores are seventy miles: it is about seven miles compasse, it is also inhabited by Portugals, & hath no speciall merchandise, but onely some wood, it is full of Cattle, and other necessary prouitions, and lyeth open to all the world, & to whoseper will come thither, as well Englishmen as others : for that the inhabitants have not the power to refift them. A mile from thence Northward, lyeth a little Iland of two or three miles in compasse called DeCorno. The inhabitants are of the same people that dwell in Flores. Between those two Ilands and round about them, the Englishmen doe commonly stay, to watch the Ships that 50 come out of the West: for those are the first Hands, that the Ships looke out for and descry, when they faile vnto Tercera, wherby the inhabitants do but little prosper, because they are at the pleafure & commandment of all that will come vnto them, and take their goods from them, as oftentimes it hapneth. Yet for all their pouerty, not to loofe both lands and goods, they must content themfelues, and faile with enery winde,

fique being Cattle & husbandry. It hath much Wine, & the best in all those Ilands, and it hath the

Tercera for a present, as being there very much esteemed, and in my judgement they are the best

that ever I tafted in any place, Angra, in the Hand of Tercera is the chiefe Towne and Ruler over

fauorest & pleasantest Oranges that are throughout all Portugall: so that they are brought into 40

The He of Tercera lyeth under thirty nine degrees, in the same height that Lisbone lyeth; and is distant from Lisbone lying right East and Westewo hundred and fifty Spanish miles.

Of certaine notable and memorable accidents that happened during my continuance in Tercera: in which are related many English fleetes, Sea-fights and Prizes.

"He fecond of October Anno 1,89, at the Towne of Villa dan Praya, in the Iland of Tercera, two men being in a field hard without the towns were killed with lightning. The ninth of

the fame month there arrived in Tercera 14. Ships, that came from the Spanish Indies, laden with Cochenile, Hides, Gold, Siluer, Pearles, and other rich wares. They were fifty in company, when they departed out of the Iland of Hanana, whereof, in their comming out of the Channell, eleuen fink in the fame Channell by foule weather, the reit by a fforme were feattered & fenerated one from the other. The next day there came another Ship of the lame company, that failed close vnder the Hand, fo to get into the Road; where the met with an English Ship, that had not about three call Peeces, & the Spaniard twelve. They fought a long time together, which we being in the Iland might fland & behold: wherupon the Gouernor of Tercera tent two Boats of Musketiers to helpe the Ship; but before they could come at her, the English Ship had those her under water, and to we faw her finke into the Sea, with all her failes vp, and not arry thing feelle of her about the water. The Englishmen with their Boate laued the Captaine and about thirty others with him, but not one peny worth of the goods, & yet in the Ship there was at the leaft to the value of 200000. Dicats in Gold, Silver, and Pearles, the reft of the men were drowned, which might be about 50. persons, among the which were some Friers and women, which the Englishmen would not saue; Those that they had faued they set on land; & then they failed away. The 27.of the fame month, the faid 14. Ships having refreshed the clues in the Hand, departed from Tercera towards Sivil, and comming vobs the coalt of Spaine, they were taken by the Englift Ships, that lay there to watch for them, two onely excepted which escaped away, & the rest were wholly carried into England. About the same time the Earle of Comberland, with one of the Queenes Ships, and fine or fix

20 more, kept about those Hands and came oftentimes so close under the Hand, and to the Road of Anera, that the people on land might easily tell all his men that he had aboord, and knew such as walked on the Hatches: they of the lland not once flooting at them, although they might easily have done it, for they were within Musket shot both of the Towne and Fort. In these places he continued for the space of two Moneths, and failed round about the Hands, and landed in Gratiofs and Farael, as in the description of those Ilands I have already declared. Here he tooke divers Ships and Carvels, which he fent into England: fo that those of the Hand durft not once put forth their heads. At the fame time about three or foure dayes after the Earle of Cumberland had beene in the Iland of Fayael, and was departed from thence, there arrived in the faid Iland the number be of Fayael fix Indian Ships, whose Generall was one Inan Dorym: and there they discharged in true. to the Iland fortie Millions of Gold and Silger. And bauing with all speede refreshed their Ships, fearing the comming of the Englishmen, they fet faile, and arrived fafely in Saint Lucas, not meeting with the enemy, to the great good lucke of the Spaniards, and hard fortune of the Englishmen; for that within leffe then two daies, after the Gold and Silver was laden again into the Spanile Ships, the Earle of Comberland failed againe by that Hand; fo that it appeared that God

would not let them haue it, for if they had once had fight thereof, without doubt it had beene theirs, as the Spaniards themselves confessed.

In the moneth of November, therearnized in Tercera two great Ships, which were the Admirall and Viceadmirall of the Fleete laden with Silver, who with flormy weather were seperated from the Fleete, and had beene in great torment and diffresse, and ready to finke; for they were an forced to vie all their Pumps ; fo that they wished a thousand times to have met with the Englibmen to whom they would willingly have given their Silver, and all that ever they brought with them, onely to faue their lives. And although the Earle of Cumberland lay still about those Ilands, yet they met not with him, so that after much paine and labor they got into the Road before Angra, where with all speed they vnladed, &discharged aboue 5. Millions of Silver, all in peeces of 8. and 10, pound great : fo that the whole Ray lay couered with plates & Chefts of Silver, Fine Millions. full of Ryals of eight, most wonderfull to behold : each Million being ten hundred thousand Ducats befides Pearles, Gold, and other ftones, which were not registred. The Admiral & chief commander of those Ships and Fleete called Alnaro Flores de Quinones was licke of the Neapolitan diteale, and was brought to land, whereof not long after he dyed in Symilia. He brought with him the Kings broad Scale and full authority to be Generall & chiefe commander vpon the Seas, and 50 of all Fleets or Ships, and of all places & Hands, or Lands wherefoeuer he came : whereupon the Gouernor of Tercera did him great honor, and betweene them it was concluded, perceiuing the weaknelle of their Ships, and the danger of the Englishmen, that they would fend the Shipsempty with Soldiers to conuey them, either to Simil or Lisbone, where they could first arrive, with adulte Pato his Maiefly of all that had path, and that he would give order to fetch the Silver, with good

and lafe contoy, Wherepuon the laid Aluaro Flores staied there, under colour of keeping the Silver, but specially because of his disease, and for that they were afraid of the Englishmen. This Aluaro Flores had alone for his owne part abone fifty thouland Ducats in Pearles, which he shewed vnto vs, and fought to fell them, or barter them with vs for Spices, or bils of exchange. The faid two 6 Ships fet faile with three or foure hundred men, as well Soldiers as others, that came with them and not one man faued. The Vice-admirall cut downe her Mast, and ranne the Ship on ground out of India, and being at Sea had a ftorme, wherewith the Admirall burft and funke in the Sea,

hard by Sentunal, where it built in peeces, some of the men fauing themselves by swimming, that brought the newes, but the reft were drowned.

CHAP.14.

In the fame moneth, there came two great thipsout of the Spanish ludies , and being within halfe a mile of the Road of Tercera, they met with an Englift shippe, that after they had fourthe long together, tooke them both. About leven or eight moneths before, there had beene an Englif thip in Teregra, that under the name of a Frenchman came to traffique in the Hand, there to Tade wood, and being discourred was both ship and goods conficated to the Kings vie and all the men kept prifoners : yet went they vp and downe the ffreets to get their liuings, by labourine like flaues, being in deed as fafe in that Iland, as if they had beene in prifon. But in the enduron a Sanday all the Sailers went downe behind the Hils called Brefill . where they found a Fifher. boat, whereinto they got, and rowed into the Sea to the Earle of Comberlands thip, which to their great fortune chanced at that time to come by the Hand, and anchored with his thips about to halfe a mile from the Road of Angra, hard by two small Hands, which lye about a Bales shoe from the Hand, and are full of Goats, Buckes, and Sheepe, belonging to the Inhabitants of the Iland of Torcers. Those Saylers knew it well, and thereupon they rowed voto them with their Boats, and lying at Anchor that day, they fetched as many Goats and Sheepe as they had neede of : which those of the Towne and of the Hand well faw and beheld, yet durit not once go forth. fothere remayned no more on Land but the Mafter, and the Merchant, of the faid Englifb (hip. This Mafter had a Brother in Law dwelling in England, who having newes of his brothers imprisonment in Tercera, got licence of the Queene of England, to fet forth a ship, therewith to fee if he could recouer his losses of the Spaniards, by taking tome of them, and so ro redeeme his brother, that lay priioner in Tercera, and he it was, that tooke the two Spanish thippes before the 20 Towne. The Master of the ship aforesaid, standing on the shore by me, and looking voon them. for he was my great acquaintance, the faipss being taken, that were worth three hundred thoufand Duckets, he tent all the men on Land faving only two of the principall Gentlemen which he kept abourd, thereby to ransome his brother; and sent the Pilot of one of the Indian thins that were taken, with a Letter to the Gouernour of Tercera : wherein he wrote that hee should deliuer him his brother, and he would fend the two Gentlemen on Land; if not, he would faile with them into England, as indeed he did, because the Gouernour would not doe it, saying that the Gentleman might make that fuite to the King of Spains him felfe. This Spanish Pilot we bid to Supper with vs, and the Englishmen likewise, where hee shewed vsall the manner of their fight, much commending the order and manner of the Englatemens fighting, as also for their courteous 30 vling of him; but in the end the English Pilot bkewife ftole away in a French ship, without paying any ransome as yet.

In the moneth of innuary 1590, there arrived one ship alone in Treers, that came from the Spanish Indiers, and brough newes, that there was a fleet of a hundred ships which pur out from the Firme Land of the Spanish Indiers, and by a storme were driven vypon the Coast called Florida, where they were all cast away, she having only escaped, wherein these were great riches, and many men lost, as it may well be thought is to that they made their account that of two hundred and twentie ships, that for certaine were knowned to have pur out of None Spaines, Santo Domongo, Hannon, Capo verde, Brafilia, Goines, che. In the yeare 1980, to layle for Spaine in Partuagal, there were not about fourteene or sittene of them arrived there in safetie, all the rest being 49 and the safety of th

either drowned, burft or taken. In the same Moneth of January, there arrived in Tercera fitteen or fixteene ships that came from Simila, which were most Flie-boats of the low Countries, and fome Brittons that were arrested in Spaine: these came full of Souldiers, and well appointed with munition, to lade the filter that lay in Tercera, and to fetch Aluares de Flores, by the Kings commandement into Spaine. And because that time of the yeerethere is alwayes stormes about those Hands, therefore they durit not enter into the Road of Tercera, for that as then it blew fo great a fforme, that some of their thips that had anchored, were forced to cut downe their Masts, and were in danger to bee lost : and among the reft a ship of Biscay ranne against the Land, and was stricken in pieces, but all the men faued themselves. The other ships were forced to keepe the Sea, and separate themselves one from the other, where winde and weather would drive them, vntill the fitteenth of March : for that in all that time they could not have one day of faire weather to anchor in, whereby they indured much miserie, cursing both the silver and the Hand. This storme being past, they chanced to meete with small English thip of about fortie tunnes in bignesse, which by reason of the great wind could not beare all her failes: fo they fet vpon her, and tooke her, and with the English flagge in their Admirals sterne they came as proudly into the Hauen , as if they had conquered all the Realme of England : but as the Admirall that bare the English flagge vpon her flerne, was entring into the Road, there came by chance two English thips by the Hand, that paid her fowell for her paines, that they were forced to cry Miferwordia, and without all doubt had taken her, if the had beene but a mile further in the Sea : but becaute the got under the Fortreffe, which al- 62 to began to shoot at the Euglishmen, they were forced to leave her, and to put further into the Sea, having flaine five or fixe of the Spaniards. The Engliformen that were taken in the small thip were put vhder hatches, and coupled in holts, and after they had beene Prifoners three or fouredayes, there was a Spanife Enfigne-bearer in the fhip, that had a brother flaire in the fleet that came for

England, who as then, minding to reuenge his death, and withall to shew his man-hood to the English Captiuses, that were in the English shippe, which they had taken, as a storefaid, tooke a Ponyard in his hand, and went downer under the Hatches, where sinding the poore Englishmen itting in bolts, with the same Ponyard he stabbed sixe of them to the heart: which two others of them perceiving, clasped each other about the middle, because they would not bee must ered by him, tirre withems there were an other were drowned. This sat was of all the Spaniar with mind distinct and very ill taken, so that they carried the Spaniard prisoner with Lishmen, where being artical, the Rings of Spaniar willed the should be sent into England, that the Queene of England might will him as she thought good: which senence his striends by intreasting to the foreurs of the should be shou

ther more specific hips, which followed the Spanish Admiráll, till hee had got vnder the The fame two English hips, which followed the Spanish Admiráll, till hee had got vnder the Fort of Treters, as I had before, par into the Sea, where they met with an other Spanish shape heng of the fame sheet, that had likewise been scattered by the storm and was only million, for the reltary in the Road this small ship the Englishmen tooke, and sent all the men on shorting any of them tout if they had knowne, what had beene done who the forefaid Emotheric store in the store of the s

20 glib Captines, I beleeue they would foone have revenged themielues, as afterward many an innocent foule payed for it. This fine thus taken by the Englishmen, was the fame that was kept
and conflicated in the Iland of Teretra, by the Englishmen that got out of the Iland in aftherboat (as I faid before) and was fold winto the Spannards, that as then came from the Indies, wherewith they failed to Saint Lucas, where it was also arreited by the Duke, and appoined to goe
in company to feeth the filter in Teretra, because it was a finipe that layled well: but among
the Spannards fleete it was the meaneth of the Company. By this meanes it was taken from the
Spannards i, and carried into England, and the Owners had it againe; when they leaft
spousht of it.

The nineteenth of March, the aforefaid fhips, being nineteene in number, fet faile, having fagor. The nineteenth of March, the aforefaid fhips, being nineteene in number, fet faile, having fagor proution of necessary and good to fight valiantly toth: latt man, before they would yeeld or lofe their riches; and although they fet their course for Saint Loway, the wind draw them wroth Lisbows, which (as it feemed) was willing by his force to helpethem, and to bring them thither in fafetic: although Massia de Flores, both against the wind and weather would perforce haue failed to Saint Loway, but being constrained by the wind, and importunitie of the Sailtres, that protested they would require their loffes and damages of him, he was content to faile to Libbow: from whence the filter was by Land carried into Sainta. At Cape Saint Vincons, there lay a Fleet of twentie English shippes, to w.tch for the Armada, io that it they had put into Saint Loway, they had fallen right into their 3 hands, which if the wind had ferred they had done. And therefore they may fay that the wind

a) hands, which if the wind had ferued they had done. And therefore they may lay that the wind had lent them a happie Voyage: for if the Englithmen had met with them, they had firely beene ingreat danger, and possibly but few of them had escaped, by reason of the scare wherewith they were possessed, and the scale to make the Spaniard out of heart, to the contrarie to give the Englishmen more courage, and to make them bolder for that they are victorious, shout and valiant: and seeing all their enterprises due take lo good effect, that thereby they are become Lords and Masters of the Sea; and need care for no man, as it well appeareth by this burse Discourse.

In the month of March 1590. There was a Blafing Starre with a taile feene in Tercera, that continued four nights together, stretching the tayle towards the South.

In the month of Mry, a Caruell of Figuel arrived at Torcers, in the Hauen or Road of Asgra, ladem with Oxen, Sheepe, Hennes, and all other kinds of wichals, and full of people, which
by a forme had broken her Ruther, whereby the Sea calt her about and therewith he limke, and
in her were drowned three children, and a Frier France/ean, the reft of the men faued themselves
by fiviaming, and by helpe from the short, but all the Cartle and Hennes came drowned to land;
the Frier was buried with a great Procession and Solemnitie, effecting him for a Saine, because
he was taken by deal with his Book between his armes; for the which cause every man came
to looke on him as a Miracle, guing great Offerings to say Malfes for his soule.

The first of August, the Governor of Treera, received adulie out of Peringal and Spaine, that two yeeres before the date of his Letters, there were Lyled out of England twelve great hip pes 60 well appointed, which tull relolution to take their journie, seum of them into the Peringal Indus, and the other fine to ON Malacea: of the which fine, two overe cut away in pushing the Straits of Magellanes, and three Lyled to Malacea: but what they had done there, was as then not knowne. The other seum pushed the Cope de bons Sperauza, and arrived in Indus, where they put into the Coult of Walabares, but let them goe againe; and two Turk-sh Gallies, that came

out of the Straits of Mecca or the Red Sea, to whom likewife they did no hurt. And there they laded their fhips wis Spices, and returned backe againe on their way : but where or in what place they had laden , it was not certainely knowne , fauing onely that thus much was written by the Gouernour of India, and fent over Land to Venice, and from thence to Madrill.

Six M.Frobilher.

The feventh of August, a Nauie of English ships was feene before Tercera, beeing twentie in number, and fine of them the Queenes thips : their Generall was one Martin Frobifber, as wee after had intelligence. They came purposely to watch for the fleet of the Spanish Indies, and for the Indian thips, and the thippes of the Countries in the West : which put the Handers in great feare, specially those of Fayses, for that the Englishmen sent a Trumpet to the Governour to aske certaine wine, flesh, and other victuals for their money, and good friendship. They of Fried did not onely refuse to give eare voto them, but with a shot killed their Mossenger or Trumpetter: which the Englishmen tooke in suil part, fending them word that they were best to looke to themselues, and stand upon their guard, for they meant to come and wisit them whether they would or no. The Gouernour made them answere, that he was there, in the behalfe of his Maiestie of Spaine and that he would doe his best, to keepe them out, as he was bound : but no thing was done, although they of Fanel were in no little feare, fending to Tercera for aide, from whence they had certaine Barkes with Powder and Munition for warre, with some Bisket and other necellary prouition.

The thirtieth of August, we received very certaine newes out of Portugal, that there were eightie ships put out of the Carunho, laden with Victuals, Munition, Money, and Souldiers, to goe for Britaine to aide the Catholikes and Leaguers of France, against the King of Nauarre. At the fame time, two Netherland Hulkes, comming out of Portugal to Tercera, beeing halfe the Seasouer, met with foure of the Queenes shippes, their Generall beeing Sir lobn Hawkins, that flaved them, but let them goe againe, without doing them any harme. The Netberlanders reported, that each of the Queenes ships had eightie Peeces of Ordnance, and that Captaine Drake lay with forcie thins in the Englifb Channell, watching for the Armie of Carunho : and likewife that there lay at the Cape Saint Vincent tenne other English thips, that if any thips escaped from the Ilands, they might take them. Those tidings put the Ilanders in great feare, lest if they failed of the Spanish fleete, and got nothing by them, that then they would fall vpon the Hands, be- 20 caule they would not returne emptie home, whereupon they held straight watch, sending ad-

uife voto the King what newes they heard.

The first of September, there came to the lland of Saint Michael a Portugall thip, out of the Hauen of Pernanbuce, in Brafilia, which brought newes that the Admirall of the Portugall fleet, that came from India, having miffed the Hand of Saint Helena, was of necessitie constrained to put in at Pernanbuco, although the King had expreily under a great penaltie forbidden him foto doe, because of the Wormes that there doe spoile the ships. The same ship wherein Bernaldine Ryboro, was Admirall, the yeere before 1589. Sayled out of Liftone into the Indies, with fine thips in her company, whereof but foure got into India, the hit was never heard of, so that it was thought to be cast away : The other foure returned fafe againe into Portugal, though the Ad- 40 mirall was much spoiled, because he met with two English ships, that fought long with him, and

flue many of his men, but yet he escaped from them.

The fift of the same moneth, there arrived in Tercera, a Caruell of the Iland of Corno, and brought with her fiftie men that had beene spoyled by the Englishmen, who had fet them on shore in the Hand of Corno, being taken out of a shippe that came from the Spanish Indies, they brought tydings that the Englishmen had taken foure more of the Indian ships, and a Caruell with the King of Spaines Letters of aduite for the thips comming out of the Portugal Indies, and that with those which they had taken, they were at the least forty English ships together, so that not one Barke escaped them, but fell into their hands, and that therefore the Portugall ships comming out of India, durit not put into the Hands, but tooke their course underfortie and forcie two de- 50 grees, and from thence failed to Lifton, flunning likewife the Cape Saint Vincent, otherwife they could not have had a prosperous iourney of it, for that as then the Sea was full of English thips. Wherupon the King admied the fleet, lying in Hanana, in the Spanish Indies ready to come for Spaine, that they should flay there all that yeare till the next yeere, because of the great danger they might fall into by the Englishmen, which was no small charge and hinderance to the fleet, for that the ships that lie there doe consume themselves, and in a manner eare vp one another, by reason of the great number of people, together with the scarcitie of all things, so that many thips choic rather, one by one to adventure themselves alone, to get home, then to stay there : all which fell into the Englishmens hands, whereof divers of the men were brought into Tercera, for that a whole day we could see nothing else, but spoyled men fet on shore, some out 60 of one ship some out of another, that pittie it was to see, all of them cursing the Englishmen, and their owne fortunes, with those that had beene the causes to prouoke the Englishmen to fight, and complayning of the finall remedie and order taken therein by the King of Spaines Officers.

The nineteenth of the fame moneth, there came to Tercera a Caruel of Lifen, with one of the

Kings Officers, to cause the goods that were faued out of the ship, which came from Malacea, (for the which we stayed there) to be laden, and lent to Lifton. And at the same time there put out of the Carunda one Don Alonfo de Baffan, with fortie great ships of warre to come vito the Ilands, there to watch for the fleet of the Spanish and Portugal Indies, and the goods of the Malaces hip being laden, they were to convoy them all together into the River of Life on : but being certaine dayes at Sea, alwayes having a contrary wind they could not get who the Hands: only two of them that were feattered from the fleet, they prefently returned backe to feeke them : in the meane time the King changed his minde, and caused the fleet to stay in India, as I said before: and therefore he fent word wnto Don Alongo de Baffan, that hee should return again to the Cato ranks, which he prefently did (without doing any thing, nor once approching neere the llands, listing only the two forefaid thips, for he well knew that the Englifemen lay by the Hand of Cormobut he would not wifit them : and to be returned to the Hausn of Carmba, whereby our goods that came from Malacca, were yet to thip, and cruffed up againe, forced to flay a more fortunate

time, with patience perforce. The three and twentieth of Ochober, there arrived in Toceras Carvell, with aduise out of

Portingal, that of fine thips, which in the yeere 1 550. were laden in Lift on for the Indies, foure of them were turned agains to Portingall, after they had been four moneths abroad, and that the Admirall, wherein the Vice-roy called Mathia de Alburkerke lailed, had only gotten to India, as afterward newes thereof was brought ouer Land, having beene at the least eleven monethes at 20 Sea, and neuer faw Land, and came in great milery to Malacea. In this ship there died by the 280. mendie way two hundred and eightie men, according to a note by himselfe made, and lent to the Carway two numerics and the sames and furnames of enery man, together with a description of his by one mans Voyage, and the mifery they had indured : which was only done, because he would not lose the vanite. gouernment of India: and for that cause he had sworne either to lose his life, or to arrive in India as indeed he did afterwards, but to the great danger, loss and hinderance of his company, that were forced to buy it with their lines, and onely for want of prouision, as it may well bee thought: for he knew full well that if he had returned backe againe into Portingall, as the other thips did, hee should have beene casheered from his Indian Regiment, because the people began alreadie to murmurre at him, for his proude and loftie minde. And among other things that 30 the wed his pride the more, behind aboue the Gallery of his thip, he caused Fortune to be painted. and his owne Picture with a staffe standing by her, as it were threatning Forume, with this Possie, Quero que vencus, that is, I will have thee to overcome: which beeing read by the Cardinall and other Gentlemen (that to honour him aboord his thip) it was thought to be a point of exceeding folly. But it is no strange matter among the Portingalle, for they aboue all others must of force Let the Foole peope out of their fleenes, specially when they are in authoritie : for that ! knew the faid Mathias de Alberkerk in India, being a Souldier and a Captaine, where he was e-

Reemed and accounted for one of the best of them, and much honoured, and beloued of all men. as behaving himfelfe courteously to every man : whereby they all defired that he might be Viceroy. But when he once had received his Patent with full power and authoritie from the King to DeVice-roy, hee changed so much from his former behaviour, that by reason of his pride, they all began to feare and curie him, and that before he departed out of Lifton, as it is often feene in ma-

ny men that are advanced vnto state and dignitie.

The twentieth of Ianuary, Anno 1591, there was newes brought out of Portingall into Tercers, that the Englishmen had taken a thip, that the King had fent into the Portingal Indies, with admie to the Vice-roy, for the returning agains of the fours thips that should have gone to India, and because the ships were come backe againe, that ship was stuffed and laded as full of goods as possible it might be, hauing likewise in ready money five hundred thousand Duckets in Rials of eight, besides other wares. It departed from Lisbone in the moneth of November 1590. and met with the Engliftmen, with whom for a time it fought : but in the end it was taken and carried 50 into England with men and all, yet when they came there the men werelet at libertie, and returned into Liftone, where the Captaine was committed Prifoner: but hee excufed himselfe, and was released, with whom I spake my selfe, and he made this report vnto me. At the same time also

they tooke a thip that came from the Myne laden with Gold, and two thips laden with Pepper, and Spices that were to faile into Italie, the Pepper onely that was in them, being worth 178000. Duckets: all theleships were carried into England, and made good prize.

In the moneth of July , An. 1591, there happened an Earth-quake in the Hand of S. Michaell, which continued from the fix and twentieth of July to the twelfth of August : in which time Earthquake no man durft flay within his house, but fled into the fields, fasting and praying, with great for- most terrible. tow for that many of their houles fell downe, and a Towne called Villa Franca, was almost cleane razed to the ground all the Cloysters and houses shaken to the earth, and thereia some people flaine. The Land in tome places rose vp, and the Cliffes removued from on place to another, and some Hils were defaced and made even with the ground. The Earthquake was softrong. Promptes. that the flips which lay in the Road, and on the Sea, shaked as if the World would have turned

round : there iprang alio a Fountaine out of the earth, from whence for the space of four dayes,

1678

Sir Richard

Hat Tom. 1.

This Storie

There were

Shippes the

Si: Richard

counfeiled

(which had

and thought

to made way

thorow their

made fome

foring loofe

neffe of the

the winds of

there flowed a most cleare water, and after that it ceased. At the same time they heard such thunder and noise under the earth, asif all the Dinels in hell had beene affembled together in that place, wherewith many died for feare. The Hand of Tercera shooke foure times together. to that it feemed to turne about, but there happened no misfortune voto it. Earthquakes are common in those Ilands, for about twenty yeares past there happened another ear house. where in a high Hill that lyeth by the same towne of Villa Franca, fell halfe downe, and covered all the towne with earth and killed many men.

. The fine and twentieth of August, the Kings Armada, comming out of Farel arrived in Teres. ra, being in all thirty Ships, Biskaies, Portugals, and Spaniards : and ten Dutch flye-boates, that were arefted in Lisbone to ferue the King, besides other small Ships Pataxos, that came to ferue to as mellengers from place to place, and to discouer the Seas. This Nauie came to flay for and conuoy the Sinps that thould come from the Spanifo Indies, and the flye-boates were appointed in their returns home, to take in the goods that were faued in the loft Ship that came from Malacea, and to convoy it to Lisbone.

The thirteenth of September the faid Armado arrived at the Hand of Corne, where the Ene-Isomen with about fixteene Ships, as then lay, staying for the Spanish Fleete: whereof some or the most part were come, and there the English were in good hope to have taken them. But when they perceived the Kings Army to be ftrong, the Admirall being the Lord Thomas How. and, commanded his Fleete not to fall your them, nor any of them once to seperate their Shippes Greenuile. See from him, valelle he gaue commission to to doe : notwithstanding the Vice-Admirall, Sir Rich- 20 and Greenfield, being in the Ship called the Remenge, went into the Spanish Fleete, and that apenned by Sir mong them, doing them great hurt, and thinking the rest of the company would have followed : which they did not but left him there, and failed away; the cause why they could not know: which the Spaniards perceiving, with leven or eight Ships they boorded her, but the withflood but fix of thefe them all, fighting with them at the leaft twelve houres together, and funke two of them, one Queenes; and being a new double Flie-boate of twelve thouland tunnes, and Admirall of the Flie-boates, the other a Biscaine: But in the end by reason of the number that came upon her, she was taken, but Greensile ftaid to their great loffe; for they had loft in fighting, and by drowning about four hundred men; and to recouer his of the English were flaine about a hundred, Sir Richard Greenfield himselfe being wounded in his men on thore; braine, whereof afterwards he died. He was borne into the Ship called the Saint Paul, wherein 30 93.of his men were ficke. He was the Admirall of the Fleete Don Alonfo de Barfan : there his wounds were dreit by the Spascorned to five nife Surgeons, but Don Along himselfe would neither fee him, nor speake with him; all the as the Mafter reft of the Captaines and Gentlemen went to vifite him, and to comfort him in his hard fortune, wondring at his courage and flout heart, for that he flewed not any figne of faintneffe nor change ing of colow. But feeling the houre of death to approach, he spake these words in Spanish, and beeneberter) faid; Here dye I Richard Greenfield, with a toyfull and quiet minde, for that I have ended my life at a true Souldier ought to doe, that hath fought for his Countrey, Queene, Religion, and honour, whereby my Soule most toyfull departeth out of this body, and shall alwayes leave behinde it an enertasting fame fquadrons, and of a valiant and true Soldier, that hath done his duette, as hee was bound to doe. When he had hnished these or such other like words, he gaue up the Ghost with great and stout courage, and no man 40 till the greatcould perceive any true figne of heavineffe in him.

This Sir Richard Greenfield was a great and a rich Gentleman in England, and had great years-S. Philipof 1500 ly reuenewes of his owne inheritance : but he was a man very vnquiet in his minde, and greatly tuns being in affected to warre; in so much as of his owne private motion he offered his fervice to the Queene. him, becalmed He had performed many valiant acts, and was greatly feared in these Ilands, and knowne of every man; but of nature very severe, so that his owne people hated him for his fiercenesse, and spake very hardly of him : for when they first entred into the Fleete or Armado, they had their wenge could not feele her failes great faile in a readinesse, and might possibly enough haue failed away; for it was one of the best nor helme, and Ships for faile in England; and the Master perceiuing that the other Ships had I for them, and followed not after, commanded the great faile to be cut, that they might make away : but Sir Rich-50 by the S. Philip ard Greenfield threatned both him, and all the rest that were in the Ship, that if any man laid hand vpon it, he would cause him to be hanged, and so by that occasion they were compelled to fight, and in the end were taken. He was of to hard a complexion, that as hee continued among the Spanish Captaines while they were at dinner or supper with him, hee would caroule three or foure Glasses of Wine, and in a brauery take the Glasses betweene his teeth, and crash them in peeces, and swallow them downe, so that often times the bloud ran out of his mouth without any harme at all vnto him : and this was told me by divers credible persons that many times flood and beheld him. The Englishmen that were lest in the Ship, as the Captaine of the

had first about roo found men to fustaine to the brunt. Yet the endured fifter ne houtes fight, fifteene Armadas by turne, 800, thot, 60 many entries, 53. failes of men of warre, and 10000, men to doethis. After all this, Sir R. Grecafield now wounded, commanded to bee " up the Ship but the Captaine intreating to the contrary, he Miler was fent, vinknowne to Sir R Greenfield, to treat a compolition with a an the Generall, who yeelded their lives to be faued, and to be fint for England, the better fort to pay raniome but free meane time from orifon and Gallie. Almost 1000,01 the enemies were staine in this fight. Thus have I given you the birds of Sir Walters report aife, to make this florie compleate. Soldiers,

Souldiers, the Master and others were dispersed into divers of the Spany Bhips that had taken them, where there had almost a new fight arisen betweene the Bifcaines and the Portugals; while each of them would have the honour to have first boorded her, so that there grew a great noise and quarrell among them, one taking the chiefe Ancient, and the other the Flagge, and the Captaine and enery one held his owne. The finips that had boorded her were altogether out of order and broken, and many of their men hurt, whereby they were compelled to come into the Hand of Tercers, there to repaire themselves: where being arrived, I and my chamber-fellow, to heare fome newes went abourd one of the Ships being a great Biscaine, and one of the twelue Apofiles, whose Captaine was called Bertandono, that had bin Generall of the Biscaines in the fleete to that went for England, He feeing vs, called vs vp into the Gallery, where with great curtefie

hereceized vs, being as then fet at dinner with the English Captaine that fat by him, and had on a lute of blacke Veluet; but he could not tell vs any thing, for that he could speake no other language but English and Latine, which Bartandono also could a little speake. The English Captaine that he might come on land with his weapon by his fide, and was in our lodging with the Englisoman that was kept priloner in the Hand, being of that thip whereof the failers got away, as I taid before. The Gouernour of Tercera bad him to dinner, and fhewed him great curtefie. The Matter likewise with licence of Bartandono came on land, and was in our lodging, and had arthe leaft ten or twelve wounds, as well in his head, as on his body, whereof after that being at Sea, betweene Lishone and the Ilands he died. The Captaine wrote a Letter, wherein he de-20 clared all the manner of the fight, and left it with the English Merchant that lay in our lodging,

to find it to the Lord Admirall of England. The Englash Captaine comming to Lisbone, was there well received, and not any hurt done vnto him, but with good condoy fent to Sentunal, and from thence tayled into England, with all the self of the Englishmen that were taken

The Spanish Armie stated at the lland of Corno till the last of September, to assemble the rest of the Fleete rogether: which in the end were to the number of one hundred and forty fayle of Ships, parely comming from India, and parely of the Army, and being altogether ready vnto faile to Tercera in good company, there foldinly role to hard and cruell a storme, that those of the Great florme, Hand did affirme, that in mans memory there was neuer any fuch feene or heard of before : for

30 it seemed the Sea would have swallowed up the Hands, the water mounting higher then the Cliffes, which are to high that it amafeth a man to behold them : but the Sea reached aboue them, and living fifthes were throwne vpon the land. This ftorme continued not onely a day or two with one winde, but seven or eight dayes continually, the winde turning round about, in all places of the compale, at the leaft twice or thrice during that time, and all alike, with a continuall storme and tempest most terrible to behold, even to vs that were on shore, much more Greathurs, then to fuch as were at Sea : fo that onely on the Coasts and Clifts of the Hand of Tercers, there were about twelue Ships cast away, and not onely upon the one side, but round about it in every corner: whereby nothing elfe was heard but complaining, crying, lamenting, and telling here is a ship broken in peeces against the Chiffes, and there another, and all the men drowned : so that

40 for the space of twenty dayes after the storme, they did nothing else but fish for dead men, that Reseggereues. for the space of twenty dayes after the storme, they did nothing encourt and for dead men, that god with the continually came driding on the shore. Among the rest was the English ship called the Renenge, solded about that was call away youn a Chiffe neere to the Hand of Tereers, where it brake in a hundred pee- 100.0therships ces, and funke to the ground, having in her fewenty men Galleges, Bifcaines, and others, with of the Spaniards some of the captine Englishmen, whereof but one was laued that got vp vpon the Cliffes aliue, attending her and had his body and head all wounded, and he being on thore brought vs the newes, defining to fates: as great be fhriuen, and thereupon prefently died. The Reusage had in her diuers faire Braffe Peeces, that were all funke in the Sea, which they of the Hand were in good hope to weigh vp againe the next Summer following. Among these Ships that were calt away about Tercera, was likewite a Flie-boate, one of those that had bin arested in Portugal to serue the King, called the White

50 Done. The Master of her, was one Cornelins Martenson of Sebiedam in Holland, and there were in her one hundred Souldies, as in every one of the rest there was. He being over ruled by the Captaine, that he could not be Master of his owne, fayling here and thereat the mercy of God, as the storme drove him, in the end came within the fight of Tercera: which the Spaniards perceiuing, thought all their fafety onely to confish in putting into the Road, compelling the Mafter and the Pilot to make towards the Hand, although the Master refused to doe it, saying, that they were most fure there to be cast away, and veterly spoiled; but the Captain called bim drunkard, & Heretick, and striking him with a staffe, commanded him to do as he would have him. The Mafter feeing this, and being compelled to doe it, faid: well then my Mafters, feeing it is the desire of you all to be cast away, I can but loose one life; and therewith desperately he failed to-60 wards the shoare, and was on that side of the lland, where there was nothing effe but hard stones

and Rockes, as high as Mountaines, most terrible to behold, where some of the Inhabitants stood with long ropes and corke bound at the end thereof, to throw them downe wnto the men, that they might lay hold vpon them and faue their hues; but few of them got fo neere, most of them being call away, and smitten in peeces before they could get to the wall. The Ship failed in this Aaaaaaa

his failes; fo nenge could not was boorded and foure others. Thefe were bearen feucrall Armadas affailed her. All her Powder was fpent to the laftbarreilmor

manner (as I faid before) towards the Hand, and approaching to the shoare, the Master being an old man, and full of yeares, called his Sonne that was in the ship with him, and having imbra ced one another, and taken their last farewell, the good old father willed his Sonne not to take care for him, but feeke to faue himfelte : for (faid he) fonne, thou art yong, and may have fome hope to face thy life, but as for me it is no great matter (I am old) what become of me, and therewith each of these shedding many teares, as every loning father and kinde childe may well confider : the ship fell vpon the Cliffes and brake in peeces, the Father on the one side, the some on the other fide falling into the fea, each laying hold upon that which came next to hand, but to no purpose; for the sea was so high and furious, that they were all drowned, and onely sourceteene or fifteene faued themselves by swimming, with their legges and armes halfe broken and 10 out of ioynt; among the which was the Masters sonne, and soure other Duich Boyes : the rest of the Spaniards and failers, with the Captaine and Mafter were drowned: whose heart would not melt with teares to behold fo grieuous a tight, specially considering with himselfe that the greatell cause thereof was the bealtlinesse and intolency of the Spaniards, as in this onely example may well be feene : whereby may be confidered how the other ships sped, as we our selues did in part behold, and by the men that were faued did heare more at large, as also some others of our Countrimen that as then were in the like danger can well witnesse.

On the other Hands the loffe was no leffe then in Torcera; for on the Hand of Saint George there were two Ships cast away : on the Iland of Pico two Ships : on the Iland of Gratiofa three thips, & betides those there came everywhere round about divers peeces of broken thips, & other 20 things fleeting towards the Hands, wherewith the Sea was all couered most pittifull to behold. On the Hand of Saint Michael, there were foure Ships cast away, and betweene Tercera and Saint Michaels; three more were funke, which were feene and heard to crie out, whereof not one man was faued. The rest put into the Sea without Masts, all torne and rent : so that of the whole Fleete and Armado, being one hundred and forty ships in all, there were but thirty two or thirto three arrived in Spaine and Portagall, yea and those few with so great milery, paine and labour. that not two of them arrived there together, but this day one, and to morrow another next day the third, & fo one after the other to the number aforefaid. All the rest were cast away you the Tlands, and overwhelmed in the fea: whereby may be confidered what great loffe and hinderance they received at that time : for by many mens judgements it was effected to be much more 30 then was left by their Armie that came for England, and it may well be thought, and prefumed. that it was no other but a just plague purpolely lent by God vpon the Spaniards, and that it might truely be faid, the taking of the Remenge was justly revenged vpon them, and not by the might or force of man, but by the power of God, as some of them openly faid in the life of Tercera, that they believed verily God would confume them, and that he tooke part with Latherans and Heretickes: faying further, that so soone as they had throwne the dead body of the Viceadmirall Sir Richard Greenfield ouer-boord, they verily thought that as he had a diuellish Faith and Relion, and therefore the Divels loved him, to he presently funke into the bottome of the Sea, and downe into Hell, where he raifed up all the Dinels to the revenge of his death : and that they brought to great flormes and torments upon the Spaniards, because they onely maintained the 40 Catholike and Romifb Religion : fuch and the like blafphemies against God, they ceased not openly to viter, without that any man reproued them therein, nor for their false opinions, but the most part of them rather said and affirmed, that of truth it must needes be fo.

and so. others of the Indian Ficete.

Note.

Caiaphus pro-

God taketh

part with Lu-

So then the

gares of hell

preuaileth a-

sainft their

phelieth.

therans.

As one of those Indian Flee: es put out of Nona Spaigna, there were fine and thirty of them by forme and tempelt call away and drowned in the Sea, being fiftie in all, so that but fifteene escaped. Of the Fleete that came from Santo Domingo, there were foureteene cast away, comming out of the Channell of Hanana, whereof the Admirall and Viceadmirall were two of them : and Two Shipsof from Terra Firma in India, there came two ships laden with Gold and Silver, that were taken treasure taken by the Englishmen, and before the Spanish Armie came to Corno, the Englishmen at times had taken by the English, at the least twenty ships, that came from Saint Domingo, India, Brafillia, &c. and all fent into 50 England. Whereby it plainly appeareth, that in the end God will affuredly plague the Spaniands, having already blinded them, to that they have not the fence to perceive it, but ftill to remaine in their oblinate opinions; but it is loft labour to thrine against God, and to trust in man, as being foundations erected upon the fands, which with the winde are blowne downe and operthrowne, as we daily fee before our eyes, and now not long fince in many places have eutdently observed; and therefore let every man but looke into his ownc actions, and take our Low-Countries for an example, wherein we can but blame our owne sinnes and wickednesses, which doth fo blinde vs, that we wholly forget and reject the benefits of God, continuing the feruants and yoke-flaues of Sathan. God of his mercy open our eyes and hearts, that wee may know our onely health and Sauiour Iefus Christ, who onely can helpe, gouerne, and presente vs, and gue vs 60 a happy end in all our affaires. By this destruction of the Spaniards, and their euill successe, the lading and shipping of the goods that were faued out of the ship that came from Malacca to Tercera, was againe put off ; and therefore wee must have patience till it please God to fen. la fitter time, and that we receive further adule and order from his Majestie of So aine.

All this being thus past, the Farmers of Pepper and other Merchants that had their goods in Tersers, which were taken out of the loft flip that came from Malacta, feeing that the hope of any Armada, or any ships in the Kings behalfe to be sent to fetch it, was all in vaine : they made request vnto his Maiesty, that he would grant them licence enery man particularly to ship his goods in what shiphe would at his owneaduenture, which in the end, after long suite, was granted, ypon condition that every man should put in sureties, to deliner the goods in the Customehouse at Lisbone, to the end the King might be paied his custome, as also that the goods that should be deliuered vnto them in Tercera, should all be registred; whereupon the Farmers of Pepper, with other Merchants, agreed with a Flufringer, to fetch all the Cloues, Nutmegs, To Mace, and other spices and goods that belonged vnto them, the Pepper onely excepted, which as then the King would not grant to lade. The same Ship arrived in Tercers about the last of Nouember, and because it was somewhat dangerous, being the latter end of the yeare, we laded her with all the speede we could, for as then the coast was cleare of Englishmen. To be short, this Flushinger being laden with most part of the goods, fauing the Pepper that was left behinde, we fet faile for Lisbone, passing some small stormes, not once meeting with any ship, but onely vpon the coast where we saw ten Hollanders, that sailed with Corne towards Ligorne, and other 11122 places in Italie, and fo by Gods helpe vpon the fecond of Ianuary, Anno 1 592. we arrived in the River of Lisbone, being nine yeares after my departure from thence, and there I staied till the month of July, to dispatchs such things as I had to doe, and voon the feventeenth of the fame month, I went to Sentuual, where certaine Hollanders lay, with whom I went for Helland. The end of the eight Booke. ENG-A22222 2

CHAP. 14. Request made to the King of Spaine, River of Lisbone.



ENGLISH PLANTATIONS, DISCOVERIES,

ACTS, AND OCCURRENTS,

IN VIRGINIA AND SVMMER ILANDS SINCE THE YEERE

1606. TILE 1624.

THE XIXTH BOOKE.

CHAP. I.

Part of the first Patent granted by his Maiestie for the Plantation of Virginia, Aprill the tenth 1606,



MES by the grace of God, Gre. Whereas our lawing and welldipofed Subsects, Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Sümmers;
Knightz Richard Hakluyt Clerke, Prebendary of Wessemilers,
Knightz Richard Wingssield, Thomas Hannam, Rawleigh Gilbert Esquires, William Parker, George Popham, and diness athers of our lawing Subsects have been humble Suisors-vanithers would ownch fafe vote them our License to make Habitation, Plantation, and to deduce a Colonie of sandry of our people into
that part of America; commonly called Vinginia; and wher parts
and Territories in America, either appertayming outo vs., or which
now are not attually polified by any Coristian Princeor people, fitante thying and being all along the Sac Cassib Stevenen therrite some

degrees of Northerly latitude from the Equinoctial Line, and forthe fine degrees of the same latitude, and in the mayne Land betweene the same thirtie foure and fortie fine degrees, and the Ilands thereunto adtacent within one hundred miles of the Coast thereof. And to that end, and for the more speedie accomplishment of the faid intended Plantation and Habitation there, are desirous to deside themselves into 50 two severall Colonies and Companies, the one consisting of certaine Knights, Gentlemen, Merchants and other Aduenturers of our Citie of London and elsewhere, which are and from time to time Shall be inned unto them, which doe desire to beginne their Plantations and Habitations, in some fit and convenient place betweene thirtie foure and fortie one degrees of the faid latitude, all along \$2 the Sea Coast of Vitginia, and Coast of America aforesaid. And the other consisting of sundry Knights, Gentlemon, Merchans, and other Aduenturers of our Cities, of Briftoll and Exeter, and of our Towns of Ply mmouth and other places which doe toyne themselves unto that Colonie, which desire to beginne their Plantations and Habitations in some fit and convenient place betweene thirtie eight and fortie five degrees of the said latitude: all alongst the faid Coast of Virginia and America, as that Coast lyeth. We greatly commending and graciously accepting of their desires to the furtherance of so Noble a worke, which may by the providence of Almighie God bereafter tend to the glorie of his Divine Maiestie, in propagating of Christian Religion, to such people as jet line in darknesse, miserable ignorance of the true knowledge andworship of God, and may in time bring the Infidels and Sauages (lining in those parts) to burnane civilitie and to a fettled and quiet government, doe by thefe our Letters Patents graciously accept of, and agree to their humble and well intended desires, And doe therefore for us our Heires and Successours

The first Colony to bee planted betw:xt 24.86 41. degrees of Nor:blaticude. Tory to have all the Lands. &c. for the space of tiftie miles West South-weft from the place o: their firft plannings, and The like East North-cuft with all Hands againft hem, 100. wihin the Land, &c. None to inhabir on the ou: their fpeciali licence in

writing, &cc.

grant and agree that the faid Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Summers, Richard Hakluyt, and Edward Maria Wingfield, Aduenturers of our Cute of London, and all fuch others as are or shall be igned unto them of that Colome fall be called the first Colonie, and they shall and may beginne their faid first Plantation and Seate, of their first abode and Habitation at any place upon the faid Coast of Virginia or America, where they shall thinke fit and connenient, betweene the faid thirtie foure and fortie one degrees of the said latitude. And that they shall have all the Lands, Woods, Soyle, Grounds. Hauens, Ports, Rivers, Mynes, Minerals, Marishes, Waters, Fishings, Commodities, and Hereditaments what somer, from the faid first seate of their Plantation, and Habitation by the space of fiftie miles of English Statute measure all alongst the said Coast of Virginia and America, towards the west and South-west as the Coast lyeth, withall the Hands within one hundred miles directly over against the 10 Same Sca Coast: And also all the Lands, Soyle, Grounds, Hauens, Ports, Rivers, Mynes, Myneralls. Woods, Marihes, Waters, Fishings, Commodities, and Hereditaments, what seener from the saidplace of their first Plantation and Habitation for the space of siftee like English miles at alongst the said Coast all Mynes, &c. of Virginia, and America, towards the East and North-east as the Coast theth, together with all the la lands within one hundred miles directly oner against the same Sea-coast. And also all the Lands, Woods. Soyle, Grounds, Haums, Ports, Rivers, Mynes, Mynerals, Marifees, Waters, Fistings, Commodities, and Hereditaments, what seemer from the same, fiftie miles every way on the Sea Coast direlly into in the Sta ouer the manne Landby the space of one bundred like English miles. And shall and may inhabit and remarne there, and shall and may also build and fortific within any the same for their better safeguard and defence, according to their best discretions, and the direction of the Conneell of that Colonie. And that 20 no other of our Subiects [hall be permitted or suffered to plant, or inhabit behind or on the backeside of them towards the mayne Land, without the expresse license or consent of the Councell of that Colonic. Dacklide with thereunto in writing first had or obtained. And we doe likewise for vs our Heires and Successors, by these presents, grant and agree that the Said Thomas Hanham, Rawleigh Gilbert, William Parker, and Groese Popliam, and all others of the Towne of Plimmouth in the Countie of Devon, or elembere, which are or Shall be toyned unto them of that Colonie Shall be called the second Colonie, and that ther Ball and may begin their faid first Plantation and Seate, of their first aboad and Habitation at any Place upon the faid Coast of Virginia and America; where they shall thinke fit and connenient betweene thirtie eight and fortie fine degrees of the same latitude, and that they ball have all the Lands, Soyle, Greunds, Hauens, Ports, Riners, Mynes, Minerals, Woods, Marifhes, Waters, Fiftings, Cem. 30 modifies, and Hereditaments, what souer from the first Seate of their Plantation and Habitation. br the Bace of fiftee like English miles, as a aforefaid, all along It the faid Coaft of Virginia and America towards the West and South-west, and towards the South as the Coast lieth: And all the Hands within one hundred miles directly oner against the same Sea Coast. And also all the Lands, Soyle, Grounds, Hauens, Ports, Riners, Mynes, Mynerals, Woods, Marifies, Waters, Fishings, Commoduies, and Hereditaments what some from the said place of their first Plantation and Habitation for the space of siftie like English miles all alongit the faid Coast of Virginia and America towards the East and Northeast, and towards the North as the Coast tyeth, and all the Hands within one hundred miles directly over og ainst the same Coost, and also all the Lends, Soyle, Grounds, Hauers, Posts, sheres, Woods, Affret, 40 Affret also Mariflet, Waters, Fishings, Commodities and Heredisaments what source, from the same 40 fiftie miles e. very way on the Sea Coast deretty into the mayne Land, by the frace of one hundred like English miles; and Shall and may inhabu there, and shall and may also build and fortific within any the fame, for their better safeguard according to their best discretions, and the direction of the Counces of that Colonic, and that nane of our Subjects shall be permitted or suffered to plant or inhabit behind, or on the backe of them towards the mayne Land, without the expresselections or consent of the Councell of that Colonie in writing thereunto first had and obteined. Provided alwayes, Go. It followerh that neither Colonie shall plant within one hundred miles of each other; also

that each Colonie shall have a Councell of thirteene persons to rule and be ruled according to Articles fee downe and confirmed under the Prinie Seale (which I haue, but for breuitie omit, as alto the rest of this Patent) the Seales of each Colonic appointed, the digging of Mynes granted to in the fame, and on the backfide of their Colonies within the mayne Land, paying the fit of Gold and Silver, and the fifteenth of Copper to the King; libertie to carrie all Subjects (not refirained) which will goe with them. Of coyning for the Colonies vie there, of repelling enemies, of flaving thips which trade there without leave, were too long to reherte, feeing this Patent

hath beene often altered and renewed.

CHAP.

CHAP, II2

Observations gathered out of a Discourse of the Plantation of the Southerne Colonie in Virginia by the English, 1 606. Written by that Honorable Gentleman Master GEORGE PERCY.



NSaturday the twentieth of December in the yeere 1606, the fleet fell from London, and the fift of lanuary we anchored in the Downes; but the winds continued contrarie fo long, that we were forced to flay there some time, where wee suffered great stormes, but by the skilfulnesse of the Captaine wee suffered no great

lolle or danger. The twelfth day of February at night we faw a blazing Starre, and presently a The next day ftorme. The three and twentieth day we fell with the Hand of Mastanenio in the West Indies. Cap. Smith was suspected The foure and twentieth day we anchored at Dominico, within fourteene degrees of the Line, 2 for a supposed very faire Hand, the Trees full of sweet and good smels inhabited by many Sausge Indians, they Mutine, were at first very scrupulous to come aboord vs. Wee learned of them afterwards that the Spa- thoughneuer niards had given them a great overthrow on this Ile, but when they knew what we were, there no in his matter, 20 came many to our ships with their Canoas, bringing vs many kindes of sundry fruites, as Pines, minica. Potatoes, Plantone, Tobacco, and other fruits, and Roane Cloth abundance, which they had gotten out of certaine Spanifb thips that were cast away vpon that Iland. We gaue them Kniues. Hatchets for exchange which they esteeme much, wee also gaue them Beades, Copper Iewels which they hang through their nofthrils, eares, and lips, very strange to behold, their bodies are all painted red to keepe away the biting of Muscetos, they goe all naked without couring : the haire of their head is a yard long, all of a length pleated in three plats hanging downe to their wastes, they fuffer no haire to grow on their faces, they cut their skinnes in diuers workes, they are continually in warres, and will cate their enemies when they kill them, or any stranger if they take them. They will lap vp mans spittle, whillt one spits in their mouthes in a barbarous Brutifun fleof 30 fathion like Dogges. Thele people and the rest of the Ilands in the West Indies, and Brasill, the Dominicant. are called by the names of Canibals, that will eate mans flesh, these people doe poylon their Arrow heads, which are made of a fifthes bone: they worship the Deuill for their God, and have no other beliefe. Whilest were mayned at this Iland we law a Whale chased by a Thresher and Fight betwist a Sword-fish: they fought for the space of two houres, we might fee the Thresher with his slayle a Whale, the layon the monstrous blowes which was strange to behold in the end these two fishes brought the Thresher and

Whale to her end. The fixe and twentieth day, we had fight of Marigalanta, and the next day wee filled with Guadaluta. a flacke faile alongst the Ile of Guadalupa, where we went ashore, and found a Bath which was Bath very bot. to hot, that no man was able to stand long by it, our Admirall Captaine Nempore caused a piece 40 of Porke to be put in it : which boyled it foin the space of halfe an houre, as no fire could mend it. Then we went aboord and failed by many Ilands, as Mounferot and an Iland called Saint Chrifopher, both vnhabited about; about two a clocke in the afternoone wee anchored at the lle of Menis. There the Captaine landed all his men being well fitted with Muskets and other conuenient Armes, marched a mile into the Woods; being commanded to stand vpon their guard, fearing the treacherie of the Indians, which is an ordinary vie among it them and all other Sanages on this Ile, we came to a Bathsfanding in a Valley betwirt two Hils; where wee bathed our Bath at Meile. felues and found it to be of the nature of the Bathes in England, some places hot and some colder: and men may refresh themselves as they please, finding this place to be so convenient for our men to avoid dileafes, which will breed in to long a Voyage, wee incamped our felues on this fle fixe 50 dayes, and spent none of our ships victuall, by reason our men some went a hunting, somea sou-

ling, and some a fishing, where we got great store of Conies, fundry kinds of fowles, and great Commodities plentie of fish. We kept Centinels and Courts degardat every Captaines quarter, fearing wee there. should be affaulted by the Indians, that were on the other fide of the Hand : wee law none nor were molefled by any; but iome few we faw as we were a hunting on the lland, They would not come to vs by any meanes, but ranne swiftly through the Woods to the Mountaine tops; to we loft the fight of them : whereupon we made all the halte wee could to our quarter , thinking there had beene a great ambuilt of Indians there abouts. We past into the thickest of the Woods where we had almost lost our selves, we had not gone above halfe a mile amongst the thicke, but we came into a most pleasant Garden, being a hundred paces square on enery side, having many 60 Cotton-trees growing in it with abundance of Cotton-wooll, and many Guiacum trees: wee faw the goodliest rall trees growing to thicke about the Garden, as though they had beene fet by

Art, which made vs maruell very much to fee it. The third day, wee fee faile from Menis : the fourth day we failed along by Castinia and by Aprill. Saba: This day we anchored at the He of Virgines, in an excellent Bay able to harbour a hundred

CHAP.2. Croffe fet pp at Chesupioc Bay. Strange manner of Dancino.

1687

Tortoiles.

Ships : if this Bay food in England, it would be a great profit and commoditie to the Land. On this lland wee caught great flore of Fresh-fish, and abundance of Sea Tortosses, which served all our Fleet three daies, which were in number eight fcore perfons. We also killed great store of wille Fow le, wee cut the Barkes of certaine Trees which tafted much like Cinnamon, and very hot in the mouth. This I and in some places hath very good g. and, straight and tall Timber. But the greatest discommoditie that wee have seene on this I and is that it hath no Fresh-water, which makes the place void of any Inhabitants.

Sidenia water vowholfome.

Voon the fixt day, we let faile and paffed by Becam, and by Saint Iohn deportorico. The fenenth day, we arrived at Mona : where wer watered, which we flood in great need of, feeing that our water did fmell fo vildly that none of our men was able to indure it. Whilft fome of the Say- Io lers were a filling the Caskes with water, the Capraine, and the rest of the Gentlemen, and other Soldiers marched up in the Ile fixe myles, thinking to find some other provision to maintaine our victualling; as wee marched we killed two wild Bores, and faw a huge wild Bull, his hornes was an ell betweene the two tops. Wee alto killed Guanas, in fashion of a Serpent, and speckled like a Toade under the belly. There wayes that wee went, being to trouble fome and ville going upon the sharpe Rockes, that many of our men fainted in the march, but by good fortune wee lost none but one Edward Brooker Gentleman , whole fat melted within him by the great heate and drought of the Countrey : we were not able to relieve him nor our felues, to he died in that great

Rd. Brookes faint with thirft.

Moneta.

The ninth day in the afternoone, we went off with our Boat to the Ile of Moneta, some three 20 leagues from Mona, where we had a terrrible landing, and a troublesome getting up to the top of the Mountaine or He, being a high firme Rocke flep, with many terrible sharpe stones : After wee got to the top of the lle, we found it to bee a fertill and a plaine ground, full of goodly graffe, and abundance of Fowles of all kindes, they flew ouer our heads as thicke as drops of Hale; be-Store of fowles fides they made fuch a noife, that wee were not able to heare one another speake. Furthermore, wee were not able to let our feet on the ground, but either on Fowles or Egges which lay to

thicke in the graffe : Wee laded two Boats full in the space of three houres, to our great

The tenth day we fet faile, and difimboged out of the West Indies, and bare our course Northerly. The fourteenth day we passed the Tropicke of Cancer. The one and twentieth day, 2- 30 bout five a clocke at night there began a vehement tempest, which lasted all the night, with winds, raine, and thunders in a terrible manner. Wee were forced to lie at Hull that night, because we thought wee had beene nearer land then wee were. The next morning, being the two and twentieth day wee founded; and the three and twentieth and foure and twenteth day, but we could find no ground. The five and twentieth day we founded, and had no ground at an we were ansuared fathom. The fix and twentieth day of Aprill, about four a clocke in the morning, wee night, and by descried the Land of Virginia: the same day wee entred into the Bay of Chesupine directly, without any let or hinderance; there wee landed and discourred a little way, but wee could find nothing worth the speaking of, but faire meddowes and goodly tall Trees, with such Fresh-waters funning through the woods, as I was almost rauished at the first light thereof.

the ftorme were forced neere the fhoare,not knowing. where we were. They land in

At night, when wee were going aboard, there came the Sauages creeping vpon all foure, from the Hills like Beares, with their Bowes in their mouthes, charged vs very desperately in the faces, hurt Captaine Gabrill Archer in both his hands, and a fayler in two places of the body very dangerous. After they had ipent their Arrowes, and felt the sharpnesse of our shot, they retired into the Woods with a great noise, and fo left vs.

The feuen and twentieth day we began to build vp our Shallopithe Gentlemen and Souldiers marched eight miles vp into the Land, we could not fee a Sauage in all that march, we came to a place where they had made a great fire, and had beene newly a rofting Oyfters : when they perceived our comming, they fled away to the Mountaines, and left many of the Oysters in the fire : we eat some of the Oysters, which were very large and delicate in tafte.

The eighteenth day we lanched our Shallop, the Captaine and some Gentlemen went in her, and discouered up the Bay, we found a River on the Southside running into the Maine; we entered it and found it very shoald water, not for any Boats to swim : Wee went further into the Bay, and faw a plaine plot of ground where we went on Land, and found the place five mile in compasse, without either Bush or Tree, we saw nothing there but a Cannow . which was made out of the whole tree, which was fine and fortis foot long by the Rule. Vpon this plot of ground we got good flore of Muffels and Oyfters, which lay on the ground as thicke as flones : wee opened some, and found in many of them Pearles. Wee marched some three or fouremiles further into the Woods, where we law great smoakes of fire. Wee marched to those smoakes and found that the Sauages had beene there burning downe the graffe, as weethought either to make their 60 plantation there, or else to give signes to bring their forces together, and to to give vs battell. We past through excellent ground full of Flowers of divers kinds and colours, and as goodly trees 25 I have feene, as Cedar, Cipreffe, and other kindes : going a little further we came into a little plat Strawberries, of ground full of fine and beautifull Strawberries, foure times bigger and better then outsin England, All this march we could neither see Sauage nor Towne. When it grew to be towards night we food backe to our Ships, we founded and found it shallow water for a great way, which nue we out of all hopes for getting any higher with our Ships, which road at the mouth of the River. Wee rowed ouer to a point of Land, where wee found a channell, and founded fix, eight, ten, or twelve fathom: which put vs in good comfort. Therefore wee named that point of Land, Cape Point Comfort.

The nine and twentieth day we fet up a Croffe at Chefapine Bay, and named that place Cape Henry, Thirtieth day, we came with our thips to Cape Comfort; where wee faw fue Sauages running on the shoare; presently the Captaine caused the shallop to be manned, so rowing to the 10 (hoare, the Captaine called to them in figne of friendship, but they were at first very timessome,

until they faw the Captain lay his hand on his heart: vpon that they laid down their Bowes and Arrowes, and came very boldly to vs, making fignes to come a shoare to their Towne, which is called by the Sauages Kecoughtan. Wee coafted to their Towne, rowing ouer a River running Kecoughtan. into the Maine, where these Sauges swam ouer with their Bowes and Arrowes in their months.

When we came ouer to the other side, there was a many of other Sauges which directed vs

to their Towne, where we were entertained by them very kindly. When we came first a Land they made a dolefull noise, laying their faces to the ground, feratching the earth with their nailes. We did thinke that they had beene at their Idolatry. When they had ended their Cere-20 monies, they went into their houses and brought out mats and laid voon the ground, the chiefest of

the fate all in a rank: the meanest fort brought we such dainties as they had, & of their bread which they make of their Maiz or Gennea wheat, they would not fuffer vs to eat valeffe we fate down, which we did on a Mat right against them. After we were well satisfied they gane vs of their Ta- Tobacco. bacco, which they tooke in a pipe made artificially of earth as ours are, but far bigger, with the bowle fashioned together with a piece of fine copper. After they had feasted vs. they shewed vs. in welcome, their manner of dancing, which was in this fashion : one of the Sauages standing in the midit finging, beating one hand against another, all the rest dancing about him, shouting, howling, and stamping against the ground, with many Anticke tricks and faces, making noise like so many Wolues or Deuils. One thing of them I observed; when they were in their dance they kent

30 firoke with their feet iust one with another, but with their hands, heads, faces, and bodies, every one of them had a feuerall gesture : so they continued for the space of halfe an houre. When they had ended their dance, the Captaine gave them Beades and other trifling lewells. They hang through their cares Fowles legs : they shave the right side of their heads with a shell, the left side they weare of an ell long tied up with an artificiall knot, with a many of Foules feathers flicking in it. They goe altogether naked, but their prinities are coursed with Beafts skinnes befer commonly with little bones, or beafts teeth : fome paint their bodies blacke, fome red, with artificiall knots of fundry lively colours, very beautifull and pleafing to the eye, in a braver fashion then they in the Weit Indies .

The fourth day of May, we came to the King or Werowance of Paspihe : where they enter-40 tained vs with much welcome; an old Sauage made a long Oration, making a foule noile, vtte- A longoration ring his speech with a vehement action, but we knew little what they meant. Whilst we were in company with the Passibes, the Werowance of Rapahanna came from the other side of the Riper in his Cannoa : he feemed to take displeasure of our being with the Passibes : he would faine have had vs come to his Towne, the Captaine was vnwilling; feeing that the day was fo far fpent

he returned backe to his ships for that night. The next day, being the fift of May, the Werowance of Rapabanna fent a Meffenger to have vs come to him. We entertained the faid Meffenger, and gane him trifles which pleafed him: Wee manned our shallop with Muskets and Targatiers sufficiently : this faid Messenger guided vs where our determination was to goe. When wee landed, the Werowance of Rapabama came

50 downers the water fide with all his traine, as goodly men as any I have feene of Sauages or Chriflians : the Werowance comming before them playing on a Flute made of a Reed, with a Crown of a Reed. of Deares haire colloured red, in fashion of a Rose fastened about his knot of haire, and a great Plate of Copper on the other fide of his head, with two long Feathers in fashion of a paire of Hornes placed in the midft of his Crowne. His body was painted all with Crimfon, with a Chaine of Beads about his necke, his face painted blew, besprinkled with filuer Ore as wee thought, his eares all behung with Braflets of Pearle, and in either eare a Birds Claw through it befet with fine Copper or Gold, he entertained vs in to modelt a proud fashion, as though he had beene a Prince of civill government, holding his countenance without laughter or any fuch ill behaulour; he caused his Mat to be spred on the ground, where hee sate downe with a great Ma-

iellie, taking a pipe of Tabacco: the rest of his company standing about him. After he had rested a while he rofe, and made fignes to vs to come to his Towne : Hee went formost, and all the rest of his people and our selves followed him vp a steepe Hill where his Palace was settled. Wee passed through the Woods in fine paths, having most pleasant Springs which issued from the Mountaines : Wee also went through the goodliest Corne fieldes that euer was seene in

any Countrey. When wee came to Rapabannes Towne, hee entertained vs in good humanitie. The eight day of May we discourred up the River. We landed in the Countrey of Apama. tica, at our landing, there came many fout and able Sauages to refift vs with their Bowes and Arrowes, in a most warlike manner, with the swords at their backes belet with sharpe stones and pieces of yron able to cleave a man in funder. Amongst the rest one of the chiefest standing before them croffe-legged, with his Arrow readie in his Bow in one hand, and taking a Pipe of To-

bacco in the other, with a bold verering of his speech, demanded of vs our being there, willing vs to bee gone. Wee made fignes of peace, which they perceived in the end, and let vs land in

The twelfth day we went backe to our ships, and discourred a point of Land, called Archers to Hope, which was sufficient with a little labour to defend our selves against any Enemy. The foile was good and fruitfull, with excellent good Timber. There are also great store of Vines in bigneffe of a mans thigh, running vp to the tops of the Trees in great abundance. We also did fee many Squirels, Conies, Black Birds with crimfon wings, and divers other Fowles and Birds of divers and fundrie collours of crimfon , Watchet, Yellow, Greene , Murry , and of divers other hewes naturally without any art vfing.

We found store of Turkie nests and many Egges, if it had not beene disliked, because the ship could not ride neere the shoare, we had fetled there to all the Collonies contentment,

The thirteenth day, we came to our feating place in Paspihas Country, some eight miles from the point of Land, which I made mention before: where our shippes doe lie so neere the shoare that they are moored to the Trees in fix fathom water.

Their Planta-

Land giuen.

The fourteenth day we landed all our men which were fet to worke about the fortification, and others some to watch and ward as it was convenient. The first night of our landing, about midnight, there came some Sauages sayling close to our quarter: presently there was an alarum giuen; ypon that the Sauages ran away, and we not troubled any more by them that night. Not long after there came two Sauages that feemed to be Commanders, brauely dreft, with Crownes of coloured haire vpon their heads, which came as Messengers from the Weromance of Paspibe; telling vs that their Werowauce was comming and would be merry with vs with a fat Deare. The eighteenth day, the Werowance of Paspina came himselfe to our quarter, with one hundred

Sauages armed, which garded him in a very warlike manner with Bowes and Arrowes, thinking 30 at that time to execute their villany. Paffiha made great fignes to vs to lay our Armes away. But we would not truft him fo far : he feeing he could not have convenient time to worke his will, at length made fignes that he would give vs as much land as we would defire to take. As the Sausges were in a throng in the Fort, one of them Role a Hatcket from one of our company, which fujed him doing the deed : whereupon he tooke it from him by force, and also strooke him over Thefe Sanages thearme : prelently another Sauage feeing that, came fiercely at our man with a wooden fword, are naturally thinking to beat out his braines. The Weromance of Pafpiba faw vs take to our Armes, went fud-

great heeues. denly away with all his company in great anger.

The nineteenth day, my felfe and three or foure more walking into the Woods by chance wee espied a path-way like to an Irish pace : wee were desirous to knowe whither it would bring 40 vs; wee traced along some foure miles, all the way as wee went, having the pleasantest Suckles, the ground all flowing ouer with faire flowers of fundry colours and kindes, as though it had beene in any Garden or Orchard in England. There be many Strawberries, and other truits vnknowne : . wee faw the Woods full of Cedar and Cypreffe trees, with other trees, which iffues out sweet Gummes like to Balsam: wee kept on our way in this Paradife, at length wee came to a Sausge Towne, where wee found but few people, they told vs the rest were gone a hunting with the Weromance of Paspiha: we stayed there a while, and had of them Strawberries, and other things; in the meane time one of the Sauages came running out of his house with a Bowe and Arrowes and ranne mainly through the Woods: then I beganne to militust some villanie, that he went to call fome companie, and fo betray vs, wee made all the hafte away wee could: 50 one of the Sauages brought vs on the way to the Wood fide, where there was a Garden of Tobacco, and other fruits and herbes, he gathered Tobacco, and distributed to every one of vs, so

wee departed. The twentieth day the Weromance of Pastiba fent fortie of his men with a Derre, to our quarter: but they came more in villanie than any loue they bare vs: they faine would have layne in our Fortall night, but wee would not fuffer them for feare of their treachery. One of our Gentlemen having a Target which hee trufted in, thinking it would beare out a flight flot , hee fet it vp against a tree, willing one of the Sauages to shoot; who tooke from his backe an Arrow of an elle long, drew it strongly in his Bowe, shoots the Target a foote thorow, or better: which was strange, being that a Pistoll could not pierce it. Wee feeing the force of his Bowe, 60 afterwards fet him vp a iteele Target; he shot again, and burit his arrow all to pieces, he presently pulled out another Arrow, and bit it in his teeth, and feemed to bee in a great rage, to hee went away in great anger. Their Bowes are made of tough Hafell, their firings of Leather, Their arrowes their Arrowes of Canes or Hafell, headed with very sharpe stones, and are made artificially like

abroad Arrow: other some of their Arrowes are headed with the ends of Decres hornes, and are feathered very attificially. Pafibia was as good as his word; for hee fent Venifon, but the Sawle came within few dayes after.

At Port Cotage in our Voyage vp the River, we faw a Savage Boy about the age of ten yeeres. Yellow haired which had a head of haire of a perfect yellow and a reasonable white skinne, which is a Mira- Virginian. cle amongst all Sauages.

This River which wee have discovered is one of the famous of Rivers that ever was found by River of Pobaany Christian, it ebbes and flowes a hundred and threescore miles where ships of great burthen tan.

may harbour in fafetie. Wherefoeuer we landed upon this River, wee faw the goodlieft Woods 10 as Beech, Oke, Cedar, Cypresse, Wal-nuts, Sassafras and Vines in great abundance, which hang in great clusters on many Trees, and other Trees vnknowne, and all the grounds befored with many tweet and delicate flowres of divers colours and kindes. There are also many fruites as Strawberries, Mulberries, Risberriesand Fruits vnknowne, there are many branches of this River, which runne flowing through the Woods with great plentie of fifh of all kindes, as for Sturgeon all the World cannot be compared to it. In this Countrey I have feene many great and large Medowes * having excellent good pasture for any Cattle. There is also great store of Deere both Red and Fallow. There are Beares, Foxes, Otters, Beuers, Muskats, and wild beafts

The foure and twentieth day wee fet up a Croffe at the head of this River, naming it Kings 20 River, where we proclaimed Iames King of England to have the most right vinto it. When wee Wee came had finished and set vp our Crosse, we shipt our men and made for lames Fort. By the way wee downe the Ricame to Pobasans Towre where the Captaine went on shore suffering none to goe with him, hee uer. presented the Commander of this place with a Hatchet which hee tooke joyfully, and was well

But yet the Sauages murmured at our planting in the Countrie, whereupon this Weromance made aniwere againe very wifely of a Sauage, Why should you bee offended with them as long as they hurt you not, nor take any thing away by force, they take but a litle waste ground, which doth you nor any of vs any good.

Ifaw Bread made by their women which doe all their drugerie. The men takes their pleasure in hunting and their warres, which they are in continually one Kingdome against another. The Bread how manner of baking of bread is thus, after they pound their wheat into flowre with hote water, made, they make it into paste, and worke it into round balls and Cakes, then they put it into a pot of feething water, when it is fod throughly, they lay it on a smooth stone, there they harden it as well as in an Ouen.

There is notice to be taken to know married women from Maids, the Maids you shall alwayes Diffind habit fee the fore part of their head and fides shauen close, the hinder part very long, which they tie of Maids and in a pleate hanging downe to their hips. The married women weares their haireall of a length, Wines. and is tied of that fallion that the Maids are. The women kinde in this Countrey doth pounce and race their bodies, legges, thighes, armes and faces with a sharpe Iron, which makes a stampe 19 in currous knots, and drawes the proportion of Fowles, Fish, or Beasts, then with paintings of fundry lively colours, they rab it into the stampe which will never be taken away, because it is

dried into the flesh where it is fered. The Sauges beare their yeeres well, for when wee were at Pamonkies, wee faw a Sauge by Sauge 160. their report was about eight score yeeres of age. His eyes were sunke into his head, having neuer yeeres old. a tooth in his mouth, his haire all gray with a reasonable bigge beard, which was as white as any Bearded. fnow. It is a Miracle to fee a Sauage haue any haire on their faces, I neuer faw, read, nor heard. any haue the like before. This Sauage was as luftie and went as fast as any of vs, which was ftrange to behold.

The fifteenth day of Iune, we had built and finished our Fort which was triangle wife, having three Bulwarkes at every corner like a halfe Moone, and foure or five pieces of Arullerie mounted in them, we had made our felues fufficiently ftrong for thefe Sauzges, we had also fowne most of our Corne on two Mountaines, it iprang 2 mans height from the ground, this Countrey is 2 fruitfull foile, bearing many goodly and fruitfull Trees, as Mulberries, Cherries, Walnuts, Ceders, Cyprelle, Saffatras, and Vines in great abundance.

Munday the two and twentiesh of lune, in the morning Captaine Newport in the Admirall Cap. Hempers departed from James Port for England.

Captaine Newport being gone for England, leaving vs (one hundred and foure persons) verie bare and feantie of victuall-, furthermore in warres and in danger of the Sauages. We hoped after a supply which Captaine Newport promised within twentie weekes. But if the beginners of this 60 action doe carefully further vs. the Country being fo fruitfull, it would be as great a profit to the Realme of England, as the Indies to the King of Spaine, if this River which wee have found had beene discouered in the time of warre with Spaine, it would have beene a commoditie to our Realme, and a great annoyance to our enemies. The feuen and twentieth of July the King of Ra-Pahama, degranded a Canoa which was reftored, lifted up his hand to the Sunne, which they

worthing as their God, befides he laid his hand on his heart, that he would be our speciall friend. It is a generall rule of these people when they swere by their God which is the Sunne, no Chris flian will keepe their Oath better voon this promife. These people haue a great renerence to the Sunne aboue all other things at the rifing and fetting of the same, they fit downe lifting vp their hands and eyes to the Sunne making a round Circle on the ground with dried Tobacco, then they began to pray making many Deuillish gestures with a Hellish noise foming at the mouth flaring with their eyes, wagging their heads and hands in fuch a fashion and deformitie as it was

The fixt of August there died Iohn Afore of the bloudie Flixe. The minth day died George Flowre of the swelling. The tenth day died William Bruster Gentleman, of a wound ginen by the Sauages, and was buried the eleventh dav.

The fourteenth day, lerome Alikeck Ancient, died of a wound, the same day Francis Midwinter, Edward Moris Corporall died fuddenly.

The fifteenth day, their died Edward Browne and Stephen Galtbrope. The fixteenth day their died Thomas Gower Gentleman. The feuenteenth day, their died Thomas Mounflie. The eighteenth day, there died Robert Pennington, and John Martine Gentleman. The mnetcenth day. died Drue Pregafe Gentleman. The two and twentieth day of August, there died Cantaine Bartholomen Gofnold one of our Councell, he was honourably buried, having all the Ordnancein

the Fort shot off with many vollies of imallshot. After Captaine Gofnols death, the Councell could hardly agree by the diffention of Captaine 20 Kendall, which afterward was committed about hainous matters which was proved against him.

The foure and twentieth day, died Edward Harington and George Walker, and were buried the fame day. The fixe and twentieth day, died Kenelme Throgmerine. The feuen and twentieth day died William Roods. The eight and twentieth day died Thomas Stoodie, Cape Merchant.

The fourth day of September died Thomas lacob Sergeant. The fift day, there died Beniamin Beast, Our men were destroyed with cruell diseases as Swellings, Flixes, Burning Feuers, and by warres, and some departed suddenly, but for the most part they died of meere famine. There were neuer Englishmen left in a forreigne Countrey in such miserie as wee were in this new disconcred Virginia. Wee watched enery three nights lying on the bare cold ground what weather forener came warded all the next day, which brought our men to bee most feeble wretches, our to food was but a imall Can of Barlie fod in water to fine men a day, our drinke cold water taken out of the River, which was at a floud verie falt, at a low tide full of flime and filth, which was the destruction of many of our men. Thus we lived for the space of five moneths in this miserable diftreffe, not having fine able men to man our Bulwarkes vpon any occasion. If it had not pleafed God to haue put a terrour in the Sauages hearts, we had all perished by those wild and cruell Pagans, being in that weake effate as we were; our men night and day groaning in enery corner of the Fort most pittifull to heare, if there were any conscience in men, it would make them harts to bleed to heare the pittiful murmurings & out-cries of our fick men without reliefe energy night and day for the space of fixe weekes, some departing out of the World, many times three or foure in a night, in the morning their bodies trailed out of their Cabines like Dogges to beburied : in this fort did I fee the mortalitie of diners of our people,

Gods good-

It pleased God, after a while, to send those people which were our mortall enemies to releeue vs with victuals, as Bread, Corne, Fish, and Flesh in great plentie, which was the setting rp of our feeble men, otherwise wee had all perished. Also we were frequented by divers Kings in the Countrie, bringing vs ftore of prouision to our great comfort.

The eleuenth day, there was certaine Articles laid against Master Wing field which was then Prefident, thereupon he was not only diplaced out of his Prefident ship, but also from being of the Councell. Afterwards Captaine Iobn Rascliffe was chosen Prefident.

The eighteenth day, died oue Ellis Kmistone which was started to death with cold. The same He was a made the waste of the state of the

William White (having lived with the Natives) reported to vs of their customes in the morning by breake of day, before they eate or drinke both men, women and children, that be aboue tenne omitted being yeeres of age runnes into the water, there washes themselues a good while till the Sunne riseth, more rully fer then offer Sacrifice to it, strewing Tobacco on the water or Land, honouring the Sunne as their downein Gap. God, like wife they doe at the fetting of the * Sunne,

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

The description of Virginia by Captaine IOHN SMITH, inlarged out of his written Notes.



Tryinia is a Countrie in America, that lieth betweene the degrees of 34.* and 44. The Latitude of the North Latitude. The bounds thereof on the Raif ide are the age of the America. of the North Latitude. The bounds thereof on the East fide are the great Orean. By Juere Pa-On the South lieth Florida: on the North Nona Francia. As for the West thereof, tens this is on the South lieth Florida: on the North North Francia. As for the West Chief on extended turther to the limits are vinknowne. Of all this Countrie we purpose not to speake, but on the to the south so ly of that part which was planted by the Englishmen in the years of our Lord, degree, &c. 4.66. And this is under the degree 32, 22, and at The removatour of this 1606. And this is under the degrees 37. 38. and 39. The temperature of this

Countrie doth agree wel with English constitutions being once seasoned to the Countrie, Which appeared by this, that though by many occasions our people fell ricke; yet did they recour by verie small meanes and continued in health, though there were other great causes, not only to have made them ficke, but even to end their dayes, &c.

The Summer is hot as in Spaine; the Winter cold as in France or England. The heate of Sum- The temper mer is in June, July, and August, but commonly the coole Breefes asswage the vehemencie of the rature. 20 heate. The chiefe of Winter is halfe December, lanuary, February, and halfe March. The cold is extreme sharpe, but heere the Proucibe is true, That no extreme continueth long. In the yeere 1607. was an extraordinary Frost in most of Europe, and this Frost was found as extreme in Virginia. But the next yeere for eight or ten daies of ill weather, other fourteene daies would be as Summer.

The winds here are variable, but the like Thunder and Lightning to purifie the Aire, I have The winds. seldome either seene or heard in Europe. From the South-west came the greatest guits with Thunder and heate. The North-west winde is commonly coole, and bringeth faire weather with it. From the North is the greatest cold, and from the East and South-east as from the Bar-

madas, fogges and raines. 30 Sometimes there are great droughts other times much raine, yet great necessitie of neither, by reason we see not, but that all the varietie of needrull Fruits in Emrope may bee there in great

plentie by the industry of men, as appeareth by those we there planted. There is but one entrance by Sea into this Country, and that is at the mouth of a verie The entrances goodly Bay, the widenesse whereof is neere eighteene or twen-ie miles. The Cape on the South fide is called Cape Henrie, in honour of our most Noble Prince. The shew of the Land there is a

white Hilly Sand like vnto the Downes, and along the hoares great plentie of Pines and Firres. Che Henry. The North Cape, is called Cape Charles, in honour of the worthy Duke of Torke. Thelles before Cape Charles. it are named Smiths Iles, because be first of ours set foot on them. Within is a Countrey that may Cap. Smith. have the prerogative over the most pleasant places of Europe, Asia, Africa, or America, for large 40 and pleafant nauigable Rivers, Heaven and Earth never agreed better to frame a place for mans habitation being of our constitutions, were it fully mannured and inhabited by industrious people. Here are Mountaynes, Hils, Plaines, Vallies, Riuers and Brookes, all running moit plea. The Country, lantly into a faire Bay compassed but for the mouth with fruitful & delightiome Land. In the Bay and Rivers are many Hes both great and small, some woodie, some plaine, most of them low and not inhabited. This Bay lieth North an South, in which the water floweth neere two hundred miles, and hath a Channell for one hundred and fortie miles, of depth betwixt feuen and fifteene The Bay. fadome, holding in breadth for the most part ten or fourteene miles. From the head of the Bay atthe North, the Land is mountainous, and to in a minner from thence by a South-west Line; So that the more Southward, the farther off from the Bay are those Mountaines. From which 50 fall certaine Brookes which after come to fine principall Nau gable Riners. These runne from the

North-west into the South-east, and so into the West side of the Bay, where the fall of every Riuer is within twentie or fiftgene miles one of another. The Mountaines are of divers natures, for at the head of the Bay the Rockes are of a composi- The Mountionlike Mil-stones. Some of Marble, &cc. And many pieces of Christall we found as throwne taines. downe by water from the Mountaines. For in Winter these Mountaines are couered with much Snow, and when it diffolueth the waters fall with fuch violence, that it caufeth great inuniations in the narrow Vallies, which vet is fearce perceived being once in the Rivers. Thefe waters

wash from the Rockes such glistering tinctures that the ground in some places seemeth as gilded, The soile. where both the Rockes and the Earth are fo plendent to behold, that better sudgements then ours 60 might have beene postanded, they contained more then probabilities. The velture of the Earth in most places doth manifeitly proue the nature of the foile to be luftle and very rich. The colour of the Earth we found in divers places, refembleth Bole Armones, terra sigillata adlemnia, Full. r. Earth, Marle, and divers other fu happearances. But generally for the most part the Earth is a blacke fandie mould, in some places a fat slimie clay, in other places a very barren grauell. But the best

best ground is knowne by the vesture it beareth, as by the greatnesse of Trees or abundance of Weeds. &c.

The Vallies.

The Countrie is not mountainous nor yet low, but fuch pleasant plaine Hils and fertile Vallies, one pretily croffing another, and watered fo conueniently with their fweete Brookes and Christall Springs, as if Art it selfe had deuised them. By the Rivers are many plaine Marishes con-

Plaines.

tayning fome twentie, fome one hundred, fome two hundred Acres, fome more, fomeleffe. Other Plaines there are few, but only where the Sauages inhabit; but all ouer-growne with Trees and Weeds, being a plaine Wildernesse as God first made it. On the West lide of the Bay, we said were fine faire and delightfull nanigable Rivers, of which we will now proceed to report. The first of those Rivers and the next to the mouth of the Bay 10

The River Powhatan.

hath his courie from the West and by North. The name of this River they call Perhatan according to the name of a principall Countrie that lieth vpon it. The mouth of this River is neere three miles in breadth, jet doe the shoales force the Channell so neere the Land that a Sacre will oner shoot it at Point blanke. This River is navigable one hundred and fiftie miles as the Channell goeth; the boales and foundings are heere needlesse to be expressed. It falleth from Rockes farre West in a Countrie inhabited by a Nation that they call Monacan. But where it commeth into our Dif-

coverie it is Powhatan. In the farthest place that was diligently observed, are Falles. Rockes. Shoales, &:. which makes it past nauigation any higher. Thence in the running downeward. the River is enriched with many goodly Brookes, which are maintained by an infinite num-The branches, ber of imall Rundles and pleafant Springs that disperse themselves for best service, as doe the 24

the North fide is the River of Chickahamania, the backe River of James Townes; another by the

make that place very pleasant to inhabit, their Corne fields being girded therein in a manner as Peninfulaes. The most of these Rivers are inhabited by severall Nations, or rather Families, of the name of the Rivers. They have also in every of those places some Governour, as their King, which they call Werowances. In a Peninfula on the North fide of this River are the English planted in a place by them called lames Towne, in honour of the Kings most excellent Maieste, voon which fide are also many places under the Werowarces. The first and next the Rivers mouth are the Cecouphians, who besides their women and chill

veines of a mans bod e. From the South there fals into this River ; First; the pleasant River of Anamatuck : next more to the East are the two Rivers of Quiyough cohanocke. Alittle farther is a Bay wherein fallech three or foure pretie Brookes and Creekes that halfe intrench the Inhabitants of Warraskoyac; then the River of Nandfamund, and laftly, the Brooke of Chifaptack. From

Ceder Ile, where we lived ten weekes upon Oisters, then a convenient Harbour for filher-boats or small Boats at Keconghian, that so conveniently turneth it selfeinto Bayes and Creekes that

tames Towne. The feuerall

dren, have not nast twentie fighting men. The Paspabeges on whose Land is seated the English Colonie, some fortie miles from the Bay have not past fortie. The River called Chick chamania Inhabitants. neere two hundred. The Weanocks one hundred. The Arrowhatocks thirtie. The place called Powhatan, some fortie. On the South fide this River the Appamatucks have fixtie fighting men. The Quirougcohanocks, five and twentie. The Warraskojacks fortie. The Nandamunds two hundred. The Chesapeache are able to make one hundred. Of this last place the Bay beareth the 49 name. In all their places is a feuerall Commander, which they call Werowance except the Chick-

Free State.

hamanians, who are gouerned by the Priefts and their Afiftants of their Elders called Caw came wassoughes. In Summer no place affoordeth more plentie of Sturgeon, nor in Winter more abundance of Fowle, especially in the time of Froft. There was once taken fiftie two Sturgeons at a draught, at another draught fixtie eight. From the latter end of May till the end of June are taken, but young Sturgeons of two foot or a yard long: From thence till the midit of September, of two or three yards long and few others. And in foure or fine houres with one Net were ordinarily taken seuen or eight : often more, feldome lesse. In the small Rivers all the veere there is good plentie of small fish, so that with Hookes those that would take paines had sufficient.

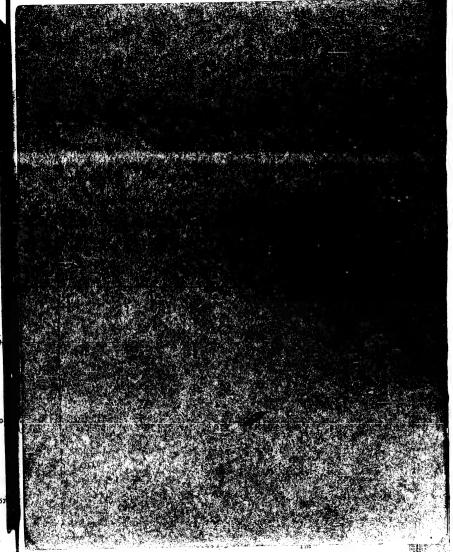
R. Pamaunhe.

Fourteene miles Northward from the River Powbatan; is the Kiver Pamaunke, which is nani- 50 gable sixtie miles, but with Catches and small Barkes, twentie or thirtie miles farther. At the ordinary flowing of falt water, it divideth it lelfe into two gallant branches. On the South inhabit the people of Toughtanund, who have about fixtie men for warres. On the North branch Mattapa-The Inhabiment, who have thirtie men. Where this River is divided, the Countrie is called Panamauske, and nourisheth neere three hundred able men. About five and twentie miles lower on the North fide of this River is Werawocomoco, where their great King inhabited when Captaine Smith was deliuered him prisoner; yet there are not past fortie able men. But now he hath abandoned that, and liueth at Orapakes by Youghtanund in the Wildernelle; tenne or twelue miles lower; on the Southfide of this River is Chikiack, which hath fome fortie or fiftie men. Thefe, as alio Apa-

K. Pobatan.

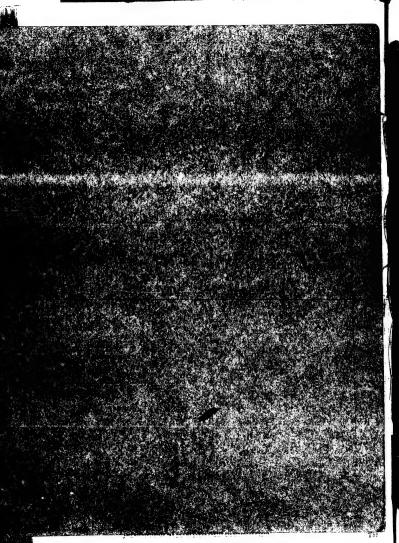
Payanhatank R.

matuck Irrobatocke, and Powbatan, are their great Kings chiefe Alliance and Inhabitance. The 62 reit (as they report) his Conque is. Before we come to the third River that falleth from the Mountaines, there is another River (some thirtie miles nauigable) that commeth from the In-land, the River is called Payankstanks, the Inhabitants are about fome fortie feruiceable men.



the most civill to give entertainment.

the Bay in their Barge.



River inhabited on both fides. Strange people in attire.

The third naugable River is called Toppabarock. (This is naugable some one hundred and thir- Totalban ch R. tie miles.) At the top of it inhabit the people called Mannaboackes amongst the Mountaines. but they are about the place we deferibe. Vpon this River on the North fide are feated a people The Inhabicalled Cutatowomen, with thirtie fighting men. Higher on the River are the Moranghtacunds, tans. with eightie able men. Beyond them Toppahanecke with one hundred men. Farre aboue is another Cuttatawomen with twentie men. On the South, farre within the River is Namtaus heacund having one hundred and fiftie men. This River also as the two former, is replenifhed with fifh and fowle.

The fourth River is called Patawomeke, and is fixe or feven miles in breadth. It is nanigable Preprinte B. one bundred and fortie miles, and fed as the reft with many fweet Rivers and Springs . which fall from the bordering Hils. These Hils many of them are planted, and yeeld no lesse plentie and varietie of fruit then the River exceedeth with abundance of fish. This River is inhabited on both fides. First on the South fide at the very entrance is Wightecomote, and hath some one hundred and thirtie men , beyond them Sekacawone with thirtie. The Onenmanient with one hundred. Then Paramomeke with one hundred and fixtie able men. Here doth the River dwide it felfe in to three or foure continuent Rivers. The greatest of the least is called Outrough trendeth Northwest, but the Rouer it seife turneth North-east, and is still a nauigable streame. On the Westerne fide of this bought is Tanxenent, with fortie men. On the North of this River is Secomocomoco with fortie men. Some what further Potangeo with twentie. In the East part of the bought of the River, is Pamacacack with fixtie men; After Mayomances with one hundred, And laftly, Nacotehtanke with eightie able men. The River tenne miles aboue this place maketh his passage downer a low pleasant Vally ouer-shadowed in many places with high Rockie Mountaines; from

whence diffill innumerable fweet and pleafant Springs. The fire River is called Partnaunt, and is of a leffe proportion then the reft; but the channell Partnaunt R is fixteene or eighteene fadome deepe in tome places. Here are infinite skuls of diners kinds of fish more then eliewhere. Vpon this River dwell the people called Acquintanackinak, Pawinwant and Mattapanient. Two hundred men was the greatest fireneth that could be there perceined. But they inhabit together, and not to differ fed as the reft. There of all other were found

bogges incironed with high Mountaines. There is one that commeth due North three or foure dayes journey from the head of the Bay, and fals from Rockes and Mountaines, upon this River inhabit a people called Safquefahanoche. They are feated two dayes higher then was raffage for the Discouerers Barge, which was hardly two tunnes, and had in it but twelue men to performe this Discourry, wherein they lay about the space of twelve weekes upon those great waters in those vnknowne Countries, having nothing but a little Meale or Oat-meale and water

Thirtie leagues Northward is a River not inhabited, yet navigable : for the red Earth or Clay Bolte R. refembling Bole Armoniack, the English called it Bolus. At the end of the Bay where it is fixe The head of or feuen miles in breadth, there fall into it foure finall Rivers , three of them iffuing from divers

to feed them; and scarce halfe sufficient of that for halfe that time, but that by the Sauages, and by the plenty of fifth they found in all places, they made themselves provision as opportunity ferued ; yet had they not a Mariner er any that had skill to trimme their Sayles , vie their Oares, or any businesse belonging to the Barge, but two or three. The rest being Gentlemen, or as ignorant in such toyle and labour, yet necessitie in a short time by their Captaines diligence and example, taught them to become so perfect, that what they did by such small meanes, I leave to the centure of the Reader to judge by this Discourse and the annexed Map. But to proceed, fixtie of those Salquelabanocks, came to the Discouerers with Skinnes, Bowes, Artowes, Targets, Beades, Swords and Tobacco-pipes for Prefents. Such great and well proportioned men. are fellome seene, for they seemed like Giants to the English, yea, and to the Neighbours, yet seemed of an honest and simple disposition, with much adoe restrained from adoring the Disco-ple. uerers as Gods. Those are the most strange people of all those Countries, both in Language and Active: for their Language it may well befeeme their proportions, founding from them, as it were a great voyce in a Vault, or Caue, as an Eccho. Their Attire is the Skinnes of Beares, and Woolues, fome have Callacks made of Brares heads and Skinnes that a mans necke goes. The deferious through the Skinnes necke, and the Eares of the Beare fastned to his shoulders behind, the onot a Salque. Note and Teeth hanging downe his breaft, and at the end of the Note hung a Beares Pawe, the fabanough. See

halfe fleenes comming to the elbowes were the neckes of the Beares and the armes through the the Map. mouth with pawes hanging at their Notes. One had the head of a Woolfe hanging in a Chaine Long Spoone for a lewell his Tobacco-pipe three quarters of a yard long , prettily carried with a Bird , a to eate with Beare, a Deere, or some such deuce at the great end, sufficient to beate out the braines

of a man, with Bowes, and Arrowes, and Clubs furable to their greatnesse and conditions. These are scarce knowne to Powkatan. They can make neere sixe hundred able and mightie men, and are pallifadoed in their Townes to defend them from the Mallawomekes their mortall enemies. Fine of their chiefe Weromances came abourd the Discouerers, and crossed

The Picture of the greatest of them is figurified in the Mappe. The calfe of whose legge was three quarters of a yard about, and all the reft of his limbes fo aniwerable to that propertion , that hee feemed the goodlieft man that ever wee beheld. His haire , the one fide was long, the other shorne close with a ridge ouer his crowne like a Cockes Combe. Hie Arrowes were fine quarters long, headed with flints or ipinters of itones, in forme like a Heart, an inch broad, and an inch and a halte or more long. These hee wore in a Woolues Skinne at his backe for his Quiuer, his Bow in the one hand and his Clubbe in the other, as is described.

Tochwhogh R.

On the East side the Bay, is the River of Tockwhogh, and vpon it a people that can make one honored men . leated foine feuen miles within the River : where they have a Fort very well to pallitadoed and mantelled with the Barke of Trees. Next to them is Ozimes with fixtie men-More to the South of tha East fide of the Bay, the River of Rapabanock, neere voto which is the River of Ruskarawaock. Vpon which is leated a people with two hundred men. After that is the River of Tants Wighcocomoco, and on it a people with one hundred men. The people of sgbescomoce those Rivers are of little stature, of another Language from the reft, and very rude. But they on the River of Acobanock with fortie men, and they of Accomack eighty men do equalize any of Accomach R. the Territories of Powb. tan and speake his Language, who over all those doth rule as King. Southward they went to some parts of Chamonock and the Mangones to search for the men

Chammuck.

Languages.

there lett by Sir Walter Raleigh; for those pares to the Towne of Chisapeack have formerly heene diffouered by Mailer Harsots and Sir Ralph Lane. Amongst those people are thus many 20 feuera I Nations of fundry Languages, that entiron Powbatans Territories. The Chamonocker, the Mangoars, the Monacans, the Mannahokes, the Majawomekes, the Powbasans, the Sajquefaha. nocks, the Alquanachukes, the Tockwogbes, and the Kufcarawaokes. Of all those not any one viderflaumerhanother but by Interpreters. Their feuerall Habitations are more plainly determed by this annexed Mappe, which will prefent to the eye, the way of the Mountaines and current of the Rivers, with their feuerall Turnings, Bayes, Shoales, Iles, Inlets, and Creekes, the breadth of the waters, the diffances of places and fuch like. In which Map observe this, that as farre as you fee the little Croffes on Ruers, Mountaines, or other places have beene discouered; the reft was had by information of the Sauages, and are let downe, according to their inftructions,

Of such things which are naturall in Virginia, and how they wse them. Virginia doth affoord many excellent vigitables and living creatures, yet graffe there is little or none, but what groweth in low Marithes : for all the Countrey is ouergrowne with Trees,

whose droppings continually turne their graffe to weedes, by reason of the ranknesse of the

Why there is httle graffe.

Woods with their fraits.

ground which would toone be amended by good busbandry. The wood that is most common is Oke and Walnut; many of their Okes are to tall and straight, that they will beare two foote and a halfe square of good Timber for (wenty yards long; Of this wood there is two or three fenerall kinds. The Acornes of one kind, whose barke is more white then the other, are somewhat sweetish, which being boyled halfe a day in senerall waters , at last affoord a sweete Oyle, 40 which they keep in Goards to annoint their heads & joynts. The fruit they eate made in bread or otherwife. There is also some Elme, some blacke Wal-nut tree, and some Ash: of Ash and Elme they make Sope-ashes. It the trees be very great, the ashes will be good, and melt to hard lumps, but if they be small, it will be but powder, and not so good as the other. Of Walnuts there is two Supposed Gy or three kinds; there is a kind of wood we called Cypresse, because both the wood, the fruit, and leafe did most resemble it, and of those trees there are some neere three fadome about the Roote very straight, and fifty, fixty, or eighty foot without a branch. By the dwelling of the Sauages are some great Mulbene trees, and in some parts of the Countrey, they are sound growing naturally in pretie Groues. There was an offay made to make filke, and furely the Wormes prospered

Mulberies.

Elme.

Walnuts.

excellent well, till the Mafter workman fel fick. During which time they were eaten with Rats, 50 In some parts were found some Chesnats whose wild fruit equalize the best in France, Spaine, Chefnuts. Germany, or Italy, to their tafts that had taited them all. Plummes there are of three forts. The red and white are like our hedgy Plummes, but the other which they call Putchamins, grow as high as Palmeta: the fruit is like a Medler; it is first greene then yellow, and red when it is ripe; if it be not ripe it will draw a mans mouth awrie, with much torment, but when it is ripe,

Plummes.

Cherier.

it is as delicious as an Apricock. They have Cherries, and those are much like a Damson, but for their tastes and colour we called them Cherries. Wee faw fome few Crabbes, but very fmall and bitter. Of Vines great abundance in many pares climbe the tops of the highest trees in some places; but these beare but few Grapes. But by the Rivers and Savage habitations where they are not cuershadowed from 60 the Sunne, they are couered with fruit, though neuer pruned nor manured. Of those hedge Grapes wee made neere twenty gallons of Wine, which was neere as good as your French Britsifb Wine : but certainly they would prove good, were they well manured. There is another fort of Grape, neere as great as a Cherrie, this they call Mefaminnes, they be far, and the myce

thicke. Neither doth the tafte so well please when they are made in Wine. They have a small from growing on little trees, busked like a Chefnut, but the fruit most like a very small Acorne . this they call Chechinquamins, which they efteeme a great daintie. They have a berrie much like Chechinquamini our Gooseberrie, in greatnesse, colour, and taite; those they call Rawcomenes, and doe eate them Rawcomenes raw or boyled. Of these natural fruits they live a great part of the yeare, which they vie in this manner. The Walnuts, Chefnuts, Acornes, and Chechinquamins, are dried to keepe. When How they vie they need them they breake them betweene two stones; yet some part of the Walnut shels will cleaue to the fruit. Then doe they drie them againe voon a Mat ouer a Hurdle. After they put it in a Morter of wood, and beate it very fmall : that done they mixe it with water, that the 10 thels may finke to the bottome. This water will be coloured as milke, which they call Paperbilling, and keepe it for their vie. The fruit like Medlers they call Parchamins, they call voon Hurdles on a Mat, and preferue them as Prunes. Of their Chefnuts and Chechinquamins bows led foure houres, they make both Broth and Bread for their chiefe men, or at their greatest feafle. Besides those fruit trees, there is a white Populer, and another tree like vnto it, that yeeldeth 4

CHAP. 2. Small fruit on which many line. Strange bealts.

Wee tried conclusions to extract it out of the wood, but nature affoorded more than our arts. In the watery Valleyes groweth a Berrie, which they call Ocomphenismus, very much like Berries, vnto Capers. These they dry in Summer. When they will eate them, they boyle them neere 20 halfe a dav : for other wife they differ not much from poilon. Mattonine groweth as our Bents Mattolime. doe in medowes : the feed is not much valike to Rie, though much smaller : this they vie for a dainty Bread buttered with Deeres Suet.

During Summer there are either Strawberries which doe ripen in Aprill 3 or Mulberries which Strawberries ripen in May and June: Raspites, Hurtes, or a fruit that the Inhabitants call Maracocks, which and other is a pleafant whollome fruit, much like a Limond, Many Herbes in the Spring time there are berries. commonly dispersed throughout the Woods, good for Broths and Sallets, as Violets, Purslane; Sorrell, &c. Befides many wee vied whole names we know not.

The chiefe root they have for food is called Tockawhoughe, It groweth like a Flag in low muddy Freshes. In one day a Sauage will gather fufficient for a weeke. These rootes are much of the

preatnesse and taste of Poratoes. They vie to couer a great many of them with Oke Leanes and Ferne, and then couer all with earth in the manner of a Cole-pit; ouer it, on each fide, they continue a great fire twentie foure houres before they dare eat it. Raw it is no better then roifon. and being roafted, except it be tender and the heat abated, or fliced and dried in the Sunne, mixed with Sorrell and Meale, or fuch like, it will prickle and torment the throat extreamely, and yet

in Summer they vie this ordinarily for bread.

They have another root which they call Wighfacan: as th'other feedeth the Bodie, fo this cua Wighfacan a reth their horts and diseases. It is a small roote which they bruise and apply to the wound. Pos medicinable cones. is a small root that groweth in the Mountaines, which being dried and beat in powder turneth red. And this they vie for swellings, aches, anointing their toynts, painting their heads and small root. earments. They account it verie precious, and of much worth. Mulqualpenne is a root of the big- Mulqualpenne neffe of a finger, and as red as bloud. In drying it will wither almost to nothing. This they wife to a root paint their Mats, Targets, and fuch like. There is also Pellitorie of Spaine, Safafrage, and divers Parietaries others Simples, which the Apothecaries gathered, and commended to be good and medicinable, Saffatras, others Simples, which the Apothecarse gasueres, anatomises to be good or more in many places, In the low marifles grow plots of Onions containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection of the containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection of the containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection of the containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection of the containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection of the containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection of the containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection or the containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection or the containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection or the containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection or the containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection or the containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection or the containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection or the containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection or the containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection or the containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection or the containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infection or the containing an acre of ground or more in many places.

Of beafts the chiefe are Deare, nothing differing from ours. In the Defarts rowards the heads of Oxen found the Rivers, there are many , but amongst the Rivers few. There is a beaff they call Aronghoun, by Cap, Aroll. much like a Badger, but vierh to live on trees as Squirrele doe. Their Squirrels, fome are neere as Their chiefe great as our smallest force of wilde Rabbets , fome blackifh or blacke and white, but the most are 50 gray. A small beast they have, they call a figurick, but wee call them flying Squirrels, because Arougheum. foreading their legs and fo firetching the largenetic of their skinnes, that they have beene feene to Sourcels. flie thirtie or fortie yards. An Opassam hath a head like a Swine, and a taile like a Rat, and is of Allapanich a the bigneffe of a Cat. Under her belly she hath a bag, wherein she lodgeth, carrieth, and suckleth Squirres Bying her young. Muffaicus, is a beaft of the forme and nature of our water Rats, but many of them Opefform smell exceeding strongly of Muske. Their Hares are no bigger then our Conies, and few of them to be found.

Their Beares are verie little in comparison of those of Muscomia and Tartaria. The Beaner is Muscalem. as big as an ordinane great Dog, but his legs exceeding thort, His fore feet like a Dogs, his hinder Be res. teet like a Swans. His taile somewhat like the forme of a Racket bare without haire, which to ate the Sauages effeeme a great delicate. They have many Otters, which as the Beauers they Otters. take with fnares, and effeeme the skins great ornaments, and of all those beaffs they vie to feede when they eatch them.

There is also a beaft they call Vetchunquoyes, in the forme of a wil te Cat, their Foxes are like Vetcunquojes, our filter haired-Conies of a small proportion, and not smelling like those in England, Their Foxes, Bbbbbbb 3

very cleare and an odoriferous Gumme like Turpentine, which fome called Balfam. There are pery cleare and an outsterous Cumme nav 1 in a final proportion of themselves. Gume Ceders, also Ceders and Saxafras tree. They also yeeld Gummes in a small proportion of themselves. Saxafras trees.

LIB, IX.

Do s. Martins. Polcats. Weefels, and Minkes. Note.

Dogs of that Countrey are like their Wolues, and cannot barke but ho wle; and their Wolues not much bigger then our Englifb Foxes. Martins, Powlecats, Weetiels and Minkes we know they haue, because we have seene many of their akins, though very seldome any of them aline. But one thing is strange, that wee could never perceive their vermine destroy our Hens, Egges, nor Chickens, nor doe any burt, nor their Flyes nor Serpents any way pernitious, where in the South parts of America they are alwaies dangerous and often deadly.

Birds. Fish hawkes.

Of Birds the Eagle is the greatest denourer. Hawkes there bee of diners forts as our Falconers called them, Spatrowhawkes, Lanarets, Gulhawkes, Falcons, and Operaies, but they all prev most vpon Filh. Partridges there are little bigger then our Quailes, wilde Turkies are as bigge as our tame. There are Woofels or Black-birds with red shoulders. Thrushes and divers forts of small 10 Birds, fome red, fome B'ew, fcarce fo big as a Wren, but few in Summer. In Winter there are area plentie of Swans Cranes, gray and white with blacke wings, Herons, Geefe, Brants, Duck, Wigeon, Dotterell, Oxeies, Parrats and Pigeons. Of all those forts great abundance, and some other ffrange kinds to vs vnknowne by name. But in Summer not any or a very few to be feene.

O Fish, we are reft acquainted with Sturgeon, Grampus, Porpus, Seales, Stingraies, whole tail sale very dangerous. Bretts, Mullets, white Salmonds, Trowts, Soles, Place, Herrings, Conytifh, Rocktifh, E. Is., Lampreyes, Catfifh, Shades, Perch of three forts, Crabs, Shrimps, Creufes. Strange forme Oyfters, Cocles and Muscles. But the most strange Fosh is a small one, so like the picture of Saint George his Dragon, as possible can bee, except his legges and wings, and the Todefish, which will fw. Il till it be I ke to burft, when it commeth into the aire.

The Rocks.

Concerning the entrailes of the earth little can be faid for certaintie. There wanted good Refiners, for those that tooke vpon them to have skill this way, tooke vp the washings from the mountaines, and some moskered shining stones and spangles which the waters brought downe. flattering themselves in their owne value concert to have suppoted what they were not, by the meanes of that Ore, if it proued as their Arts and judgements expected. Onely this iscertaine, that many Regions lying in the lame Latitude, afford Mines very rich of divers natures. The cruit allo of their Rocks would easily periwade a man to believe there are other Mines then Iron and Sceele of there were but meanes and men of experience that knew the Mine from Bare.

Of their Planted fruits in Virginia, and how they wfe them.

They divide the yeere into five feafons. Their Winter some call Papanen , the Spring Cate underheyeres penk, the Summer Cobattajough, the earing of their Corne Nopmangh, the Harvelt and fall of Icate Taguirock From Sep. ember, vivall the midft of Nouember are the chiefe Fraits and Sacrifice. Then have they plentie or truces, as well planted as naturall, as Corne, green and ripe, Fish, Fowle, and wild beafts exceeding fat.

How they pro-

The greatest labour they take, is in planting their Corne, for the Countrey is naturally overgrowns with Wood. To prepare the ground they bruife the barke of the trees neere the roote, then doe they fourth the roots with hie that they grow no more. The next yeere with a crooked piece of Wood, they beat up the Woods by the roots, and in those moulds they plant their Corne. 40 Their manner is this. They make a hole in the earth with a flicke, and into it they put four graines of Wheat, and two of B. anes. There holes they make foure foot one from another; Their women and children do continually keepe it with weeding, and when it is growne middle high, they hill it about like a Hop-yard.

How they

In April they begin to plant but their chiefe plantation is in May, and so they continue till the midft of Iune. What they plant in April, they respe in August ; for Blay, in Septembers for Iune, in October. Euery stalke of their Corne commonly beareth two cares, some three, seldome any foure, many but one, and fome none. Every care ordinarily hath between two hundred and five hundred graines. The stalke being greene bath a fweet inyce in it, fomewhat like a Sugar Cane, which is the cause that when they gather their Come greene, they sucke the stalkes for as we ga- 10 ther greene Peale, so doe they their Corne being greene, which excelleth their old. They plant alio Peale, which they call of fest amous, which are the fame they call in Italy, Pogisti. Their Beanes are the fame the Turkes call Garner fes, but thefe they much efteeme for dainties.

How they vie

Their Corne they roft in the eare greene, and bruifed it in a Morter of Wood with a Polt, lap it in roules in he leaues of their Corne, and to boile it for a daintie. They also referue the Corne late planted that will not ripe, by roaffing it in hot after, the heat thereof drying it. In Winter they efteeme it, being boiled with Beanes, for a rare dish, they call Pauleromena. Their old Wheat they first steepe a night in hot water, in the morning pounding it in a Morter. They vie a small basket for their Temmes, then pound agains the great, and sofeparating by dalning their hand in the basket, receive the flower in a platter made of Wood, scraped to that forme with bur- 60 ning and theis. Tempering this flower in water, they make it either in cakes covering with after till they be baked, and then washing them in faire water they drie prefently with their owner heat; or elfe boile them in water, eating the broth with the bread, which they call Pours. The groute and pieces of the cornes remaining, by fanning in a platter, or in the wind, away, the brance

Pumpions planted amongst Corne. Women Barbers. CHAP.2

1607

they boile three or foure hours with water, which is an ordinary food they call Vitatahamm. But fome more thriftie then cleanly, doe burne the coare of the earers powder, which they call Panamenth, mineling that in their meale, but it never tafted well in bread, nor broth, There his and rieft they boile either very tenderly, or brode it folong on hurdles ouer the fire, or else after How they vie the Spanish fashion, putting it on a spit, they turne first the one side, then the other, till it beest their fish and drie as their lerkin beefe in the Welt Indies, that they may keepe it a month or more without field, putrifying. The broth of fish or fiesh they eate as commonly as the meat. In May also amongst their Corne they plant Pumpeons, and a fruit like vnto a Munke Millen. Planted fruits.

but leffe and worfe, which they call Macocks. Their increase exceedingly, and riper in the beso sinning of July, and continue vntill September. They plantalfo Muracocks, a wilde fruit like a Lemmon, which also increase infinitely. They begin to ripe in September, and continue till the and of October. When all their fruits be gathered, little elle they plant, and this is done by their women and children; neither doth this long fuffice them, for neere three parts of the yeare they onely observe times and seasons, and live of what the Countrey naturally affordeth frem hand to mouth,&c.

The mildnefle of the aire, the fertilitie of the foile, and the fituation of the Rivers, are fo propi. The 'commotions to the nature and vie of man, as no place is more concernent for pleasure, profit, and mans dities in Vigis suffenence. Vnder that Latitude or Climate, here will live any beafts, as Horses, Goats, Sheepe, Affes, Hens, &c. as appeared by them that were carried thither. The waters, Iles, and hoales, are by industry. 30 full of fafe harbours for thips of Warre or Merchand ze, for boats of all torts, for transportation or A proote, catfishing, &cc. The Bay and Ruers have much merchandable fish, and places fit for Salt scats, but tell will live

ding of Ships, making of Iron,&c. Mulconia and Polonia doe yeerely receive many thousands, for Pitch, Tarre, Sope, ashes, Rosen, The Com-Flax, Cordage, Sturgeon, Mafts, Yards, Wainfoot, Firres, Glaffe, and fach like : also Swirbland for Iron and Copper. Frame in like manner for Wine , Canvas, and Sale ; Spaine as much for Iron, Steele, Figs, Reafons, and Sackes. Italy with Silkes and Veluets confirme our chiefe commodities. Holland maintaines it felfe by Fishing and Trading at our owne doores. All these temporize with other for necessities, but all as vocertaine as Peace or Warres. Besides the charge, trauell, and danger in transporting them, by feas, lands, flormes, and Pyrats. Then how much liath Virginia 30 the presogniue of all those flourishing Kingdomes, for the benefit of our Land, when as within

one hundred miles all chofe that are to bee had, either readie prouided by nature, or elle to be prepared, were there but industrious men to labour. Onely Copper (we may doubt) is wanting this there is good probabilitie that both Copper, and better manerals are there to bee had for their labour. Ocher Countries haue it. So then here is a place ; a murfe for Souldiers ; a practife for Mariners, a trade for the Merchants, a reward for the good, and that which is most of all, a butineffe (most acceptable to God) to bring fuch poore Infidels to the true knowledge of God, and his holy Gofpel.

Of the natural Inhabitants of Virginia, and their customes.

The land is not populous, for the men be few; their farregreater number is of women and children. Within fixtie miles of lames Towne there are about fome 7000. people, but of able men fit for their warres fearle 2000. To nourish so many together they have yet no meanes, becaple they make to imalt a benefit of their Land, be it never to fertill : feven or eighe handred (hough by their owne report they were about a thousand) have beene the most which hath beene feene together, when they gathered themselues to have furposed Captaine South at Pamayune, having but fifteene to withfland the worft of their furie. As Imail as the proportion of to have furpriground that hath yet beene difcouered, is in comparison of that yet waknowne, the people dif. fed Captains fer very much instance, especially in language, as before is expressed. Some being very great, as Smith. 50 the Sofquefabansocks; others very little, as the Wighousmorers; but generally tall and ftraight, of a comely proportion, and of a colour browne when they are of any age, but they are borne

white. Their haire is generally blacke, but few haue any beards. The men weare halfe their The Barbers. heads shauen, the other halfe long; for Barbers they wie their women, who with two shels will grate away the haire, of any fathion they pleafe. The women are out in many fathions agreeable to their yeares, but ever some part remainesh long. They are very strong, of an able body and The constitute full of agilitie, able to endure to lye in the woods under a tree by the fire, in the worlt of winter, or in the weedes and graffe, in Ambuferdo in the Summer. They are inconstant in enery The dispositithing, but what feare conftraineth them to keepe. Craftie, timerous, quicke of apprehension, on.

60 and very ingenious. Some are of disposition feareful, some bold, most cautelous, all Sauage : Generally conerous of Copper, Beads, and such like trash. They are some moved to anger, and so malicious, that they feldome forget an injury : they feldome steale one from another, least their Conjurers should reveale it, and to they be pursued and punished. That they are thus feared is certaine, but that any can reutale their offences by consuration I am doubtfull. Their women are carefull not to be julpected of dishonefty without the leave of their husbands. Each houshold

the moff feene together, when they thought A delcziocios

The poffesti-Their attire.

Their ofna-

knoweth their owne lands and gardens, and most line of their owne labours. For their apparell, they are fometime couered with the skins of wilde Beafts, which in winter are deeffed with the haire, but in summer without. The better fort victarge mantels of Deare skins, not much differing in fashion from the Irif Mantels : some imbrodered with white Beades, some with Conper, other painted after their manner. But the common fort haue scarce to court sheir nakednesse but with graffe, the leaues of trees, or fuch like. Wee have seene some vie mantels made of Turkie-feathers, fo prettily wrought and wouen with threds, that nothing could be difeerned but the feathers. That was exceeding warme and very handsome. But the women are alwaves covered about their middles with a skin, and very fhamefac't to be feene base. Thevadorne themselves most with Copper Beads and paintings. Their women, some have their less. 10 hands, brefts and face cunningly imbrodered with divers works, as Beafts, Serpents, artificially wrought into their flesh with blacke spots. In each eare commonly they have three great holes. whereat the hang Chaines, Bracelets or Copper. Some of their men weare in those holes, a fmall greene and vellow coloured Snake, neere halfe a yard in length, which crawling and lappine her felfe about his necke oftentimes familiarly would kille his lips. Others weare a dead Rat tied by the taile. Some on their heads weare the wing of a bird, or some large feather with a Rattell. Thole Rattels are fomewhat like the chape of a Rapier but leffe, which they take from the taile of a Snake, Many have the whole skin of a Hawke or iome strange fowle, stuffed with the wings abroad. Others a broad peece of Copper, and fome the hand of their enemy drie ed. Their head and shoulders are painted red with the roote Pocone braied to powder mixed with 20

Their buildings.

to behold.

Their Buillings and habitations are for the most part by the Rivers, or not farre distant from some fresh Spring. Their Houses are built like our Arbors, of small your sprigs bowed and ried, and to close couered with mats, or the barks of trees very hand fomely, that not with handing either winde raine or weather, they are fo warme as floues, but very imoakie, yet at the top of the house there is a hole made for the smoake to goe into right ouer the fire.

Oyle, this they hold in fummer to preferue them from the heate, and in winter from the cold.

Many other formes of paintings they vie, but he is the most gallant that is the most mensious

Their lodg-

Against the fire they lye on little hurdles of Reades couered with a mat borne from the ground a foote and more by a Hurdle of wood. On these round about the house they lye heads and 30 points one by shother against the fire, some covered with Mats, some with Skins, and some starke naked, lye on the ground, from fix to twenty in a house. Their Houses are in the midst of their Their gardens, Eields or Gardens, which are small plots of grounds; some twenty, some forty some a hundred, fome two hundred, fome more, fome lefte, fometimes from two to a hundred of those houses together, or but a little seperated by groues of trees. Neare their habitations is little small wood or old trees on the ground by reason of their burning of them for fire. So that a man may sallop a horse amongst these woods any way but where the creekes or Rivers shall hinder.

How they vie

Men, Women, and Children haue their feuerall names, according to the feuerall humour of their Parents. Their women (they fay) are easily delivered of child, yet doe they love children very dearely. To make them hardy, in the coldest mornings they wash them in the Riuers, 40 sheir children. and by painting and ointments fo can their skins, that after a yeare or two, no weather

The industry of their wo.

The men beflow their times in filhing; hunting, warres, and fuch manble exercises, forming to be feene in any womanlike exercise; which is the cause that the women be very painfull, and the men often idle. The women and chikiren doe the reft of the worke. They make Mats, Bafe kets, Pors, Morters, pound their corne, make their bread, prepare their victuals, plant their corne, gather their corne, beare all kinde of burdens, and fuch like.

How they Their order of

Their fire they kindle prefently by change a dry pointed sticke in a hole of a little square peece of wood, that firing it telfe, will fo fire moffe, leaves, or any fuch like dry thing, that well quickly burne. In March and April they like much vpon their fifting wares, and teedeon fifth, Tur- 50 kies; and Squirrels. In May and lune they plant their fields, and line most of Acornes, Walnuts, and fifh. But to mend their diet, forme difperfe them felues in small companies, and line vpon fifh Beafts, Crabs, Oyfters, land Fortoyfes, Strawberries, Mulberries, and fuch like. In June, July, and August, they feede upon the rootes of Tocknough Berries, Fish, and greene Wheate. It is strange to fee how their bodies alter with their diet, euen as the Deere and wilde Beafts, they feeme fat and leane, strong and weake. Powhatan their great King, and some others that are prouident, rost their fillt and fielh voon hurdles, as before is expressed, and keepe it till scarce times.

How they

Their Knife.

For fifting, and hunting, and warres, they vie much their Bowe and Arrowes. They bring their Bowes, to the forme of ours; by the scraping of a shell. Their Arrowes are made some of Straight youg sprige, which they head with bone, some two or three inches long. These they 62 wie to firoce at Squirrels on trees. Another fort of Arrowes they vie, made of reedes : thele are perced with wood, headed with splinters of Christall, or some sharpe stone; the sours of a Turkey, or the bill of some Bird. For his Knife, he hath the fplinter of a reede to cut his feathers in forme. With this Knife also, he will iount a Deere or any Beast, shape his shoors, buskins, Mantels. &c. To make the noch of his Arrow, he hath the tooth of a Beuer, fet in a thicke, wherewith he grateth it by degrees. His Arrow head he quickly maketh with a little bone, which he euer weareth at his bracer, of any iplint of a thone or glaffe, in the forme of a hart; and there they glew to the end of their Arrowes. With the finewes of Deere, and the tops of Deeres hornes hoiled to a jelly, they make a glew that will not diffolue in cold water,

For their warres also they vie Targets that are round and made of the barkes of trees, and a Their Targets (word of wood at their backes, but oftentimes they vie for fwords the horne of a Deere put and swords. through a peece of wood, informe of a Pickaxe : fome a long from fharpened at both ends. yfed in the fame manner. This they were wont to vie also for Hatchets, but now by to trucking, they have plenty of the fame forme of Iron. And those are their chiefe instru-

Their fishing is much in Boates. These they make of one tree by burning and scratching a- Their Boats. way the coles with stones and shels, till they have made it in forme of a Trough. Some of them are an elle deepe, and forty or fifty foote in length, and fome will beare forty men, but the most ordinary are smaller, and will beare ten, twenty, or thirty, according to their bignesse. Instead of Oares, they vie paildles and thickes, with which they will rowe falter then our Barges. Batwint their hand, and thighes, their women vie to fpin; the Barkes of trees, Deere linewes, or Howthey foint a kinde of graffe they call Pemmenam, of these they make a thred very even and readily. This thred ferueth for many vies, about their housing, apparell, as also they make nets for filling, for on the quantity as formally braded as ours. They make also with it lines for angles. Their hookes Their Fishcoles are either a bone grated, as they nocke their Arrowes, in the forme of a crocked pin or fishhooke. or of the splinter of a bone tied to the clift of a little flicke, and with the end of the line, they twe on the baite. They vie alfo long Arrowes tyed in a line, wherewith they shoote at fish in the River. But they of Accommack vie staves, like vnto Iquelins, headed with bone. With these

In their hunting & filhing they take extreame paines; yet it being their ordinary exercise from their infancy, they effeemed it a pleasure and are very proud to be expert therein: And by their bours.

continuall ranging, and trauell, they know all the advantages and places most frequented with 20 Deere, Beafts, Fish, Fowle, Rootes, and Berries. At their huntings they leave their habitations, and reduce themselves into companies, as the Tartars doe, and goe to the most desert places with How they have their families, where they spend their time in hunting and fowling up towards the Mountains. by the heads of their Rivers, where there is plenty of game. For betwixe the Rivers, the grounds are fo narrow, that little commeth there which they denouse not. It is a margell they can fo directly passe these detarts, some three or source daies source without habitation. Their hunting Hunting harhouses are like vnto Arbours coucred with mats. There their women beare after them, with fes. Corne, Acornes, Morters, and all bag and baggage they vie. When they come to the place of exercise, every man doth his best to thew his dexteritie, for by their excelling in those qualities, they get their wines. Forty yards will they shoote levell, or very neere the marke, and one hunao dred and twenty is their best at random. At their hunting in the desarts they are commonly

two or three hundred together. Having found the Deere, they environ them with many fires, and betwire the fires they place themselves. And some take their stands in the midst. The Decre being thus feared by the fires and their voices, they chace them to long within that circle, that many times they kill fix, eight, ten, or fifteene at a hunting. They vie also to drive them into fome narrow point of land, when they finde that advantage, and fo force them into the River, where with their Boates they have Ambulsadoes to kill them. When they have flot a Deere by land they follow him like Bloud-hounds, by the bloud and straine, and oftentimes so take them. Hares, Partridges, Turkies, or Egges, fat or leane, yong or old, they denoure all they can catch in their power. In one of these huntings they found Captaine Smith, in the discouery of the head of the River of Chickahamania, where they flew his men, and tooke him prisoner in a Begmire, where he faw those exercises, and gathered these observations.

One Sauage hunting alone, vied the skinne of a Deere flit on the one fide, and fo put on his One Sauage arme, through the necke, fo that his hand comes to the head which is fluffed, and the hornes, hunting alone, head, eies, eares, and euery part as artificially counterfeited as they can deuile. Thus throwding his body in the skin, by stalking he approacheth the Deere, creeping on the ground from one tree to another. If the Deere chance to finde fault, or stand at gaze, hee turneth the head with his hand to his best advantage to feeme like a Deere, also gazing and licking himsel e. So watching his best aduantage to approach, having shot him, he chaseth him by his bloud and straine till heget him.

When they intend any Wars, the Werowarces vivally have the advise of their Priests and Con- Their confidinters, and their allies and ancient friends, but chiefely the Priefts determine their refolution. rations. Every Werowance, or fome lafty fellow, they appoint Captaine over every Nation. They feldome make Warre for lands or goods, but for women and children, and principally for revenge. They have many enemies, namely all their Westernely Countries beyond the Mountaines, and Theirenem 65;

they dart fift I wimming in the water. They have also many attificiall wares in which they get

the heads of the Rivers. Vpon the head of the Powbatans are the Monacans, whole chiefe habitation is at Rullawmeake, voto whom the Moubementhughes, the Massimnacacks, the Manahal-Canno es, and other Nations pay tributes. Vpon the head of the Ruer of Toppabanocke is a penple called Mannahoseks. To the legre contributers the Taux Initamas, the Shackaconsas, the Outponeas, the Tezoneaes, the Whonkentyaes, the Stegarakes, the Haffinnungas, and divers others. all confederates with the Monacans though many differ in language, and be very barbarous, huine for most part of wilde Beaits and fruies. Beyond the Mountaines, from whence is the head of Maffaroniches, the River Patawomeke, the Savages report inhabit their most mortall enemies, the Masfaromekee ypon a great falt water, which by all likelihood is either fome part of Commada, fome great vpon a great fait water, which by att hat falleth into the South Sea. Thele Maffamentes are a great Nation and very populous. For the heads of all those Rivers, especially the Pattawomeker.

the Pantuxuntes, the Safquefahanoks, the Tockwonghes are continually tormented by them : of whole cruelty, they generally complained, and very importunate they were with Cantaine Smith and his company to free them from these tormentors. To this purpose they offered food. conduct, affiltance, and continuall subjection; which hee concluded to effect. But the councell then present, emulating his successe, would not thinke it fit to spare him forty men to be hazarded in those vnknowne Regions, having passed (as before was spoken of) but with twelve, and fo was loft that opportunity. Seuen Boates full of thele Maffanomekes the discourrers encountred at the head of the Bay; whole Targets, Baskets, Swords, Tobaccopines, Flatters. Bowes and Arrowes, and enery thing the wed, they much exceeded them of our parts, and their dexteritie in their small Boates made of the barkes of trees fowed with barke and well luted with gum, argueth that they are feated upon iome great water.

Against all these enemies the Powbarans are constrained sometimes to fight. Their chiefeattempts are by Stratagems, trecheries or furprilals. Yet the Weromances women and children they put not to death, but keepe them Captiues. They have a method in warre, and for our pleasures

they flewed it vs, and it was in this manner performed at Mattapanient.

Having painted and difguited themselves in the hercest manner they could deuise. They did uided themielues into two Companies, neere a hundred in a Company. The one company called Monacans, the other Powhatans. Either army had their Captaine. Thele as enemies tooke their stands a Musket shot one from another; ranked themselves fifteene a breit, and each ranke 20 from another foure or fine yards, not in tyle, but in the opening between their tyles. So as the Reare could shoote as conveniently as the Front, Having thus pitched the fields : from either part went a Meffenger with these conditions, that whoforuer were vanquished, furh as elope woon their fubmission in two daies after shall live, but their wives and children should be prize for the Conquerours. The Messengers were no sooner returned, but they approached in theirorders : On each flanke a Sarieant, and in the Reare an officer for Lieutenant, all duely keeping their orders, yet leaping and finging after their accustomed tune which they vie onely in wars. Vpon the first flight of Arrowes they gave such horrible shouts and screeches, as so many infernall helhounds could not have made them more terrible. When they had spent their Arrowes, they joyned together prettily, charging and retiring, every ranke seconding other. As they got 40 aduantage, they catched their enemies by the haire of the head, & down he came that was taken! his enemy with his wodden Sword feemed to beate out his braines, and ftill they crept to the Reare to maintaine the skitmith. The Monacans decreafing, the Powhatans charged them in the forme of a halfe Moon; they vnwilling to be inclosed, fled all in a troope to their Ambulcadors, on whom they led them very cunningly. The Monacans difperfe themielues among the fresh men, whereupon the Powbatans retired with all speede to their seconds; which the Monacans seeing, tooke that advantage to retire againe to their owne battell, and so each returned to their owne quarter. All their actions, voices and gestures, both in charging and retiring, were fo strained to the height of their quallitie and nature, that the strangenesse thereof made it seeme very

For their musicke they vie a thicke Cane, on which they pipe as on a Recorder. For their warres they have a great deepe platter of wood. They cover the mouth thereof with a skin, ac each corner they tie a Walnut, which meeting on the backefide neere to the bottome, with a fmall rope they twitch them together till it be fo tough and fliffe, that they may beare vpon it as vpon a Drum. But their chiefe instruments are Rattels made of small gourds or Pumpions shels. Of these they have Base, Tenor, Countertenor, Mear eand Trible. These mingled with their voyces, fometimes twenty or thirty together, make fuch a terrible norte, as would rather affright then delight any man. If any great Commander arrive at the habitation of a Weromance, they spread a Mat, as the Turkes doe a Carpet, for him to fit vpon. Vpon another right cppolice they fit themselves. Then doe all with a tunable voice of showing bid him welcome 60 After this doe two or more of their chiefest men make an Oration, testifying their loue; which they doe with such vehemency, and so great passions, that they sweate till they drop, and are fo out of breath they can scarce speake; so that a man would take them to be ex ding angry, or flarke mad. Such victuall as they have, they spend treely, and at night where his

CHAP. 3. Trading for Copper. Priests Ornaments. Strange passions. lodging is appointed, they fet a woman fresh painted red with Pocenes and Oile, to be his

Their manner of trading is for Copper, Beades, and fuch like, for which they give fuch commodities as they have, as Skins, Fowle, Fish, Flesh, and their Countrie Corne. But their victuall

Euery fpring they make themselues sickewith drinking the juice of a roote they call Wieb. Their philicke, Gean, and water, whereof they powre fo great a quantity, that it purgeth them in a very violent manner ; fo that in three or foure daies after they scarce recouer their former health. Sometimes they are troubled with dropfies, fwellings, aches, and fuch like difeales; for cure whereof they build a stone, in the forme of a Douehoule, with mats, so close that a few coales therein copered with a pot, will make the patient sweate extreamely. For swellings also they vie small peeces of touchwood, in the forme of cloues, which pricking on the griefe they burne close to the

Helh, and from thence draw the corruption with their mouth. With this root Wighfacan they ordinarily heale greene wounds. But to scarrifie a swelling or make incision, their best instruments are some splinted stone. Old vicers or putrified hurts are seldome seene cured amongst them. They have many professed Physicians, who with their charmes and Ractels with an in- Their charmes fernall rows of words and actions will feeme to fucke their inward griefe from their nauels or to cure, their grieued places; but of our Chirurgians they were to conceited, that they beleeved any Plaifter would heale any hurt.

Of their Religion.

There is yet in Virginia no place discouered to be so Sauage in which the Sauages have not a Religion, Deere, and Bow, and Arrowes. All things that were able to doe them hurt beyond their preuention, they adore with their kinde of diuine worship; as the fire, water, lightning, thunder, our ordnance peeces, horses, &cc. But their chiefe God they worship is the Diuell; him they call Oke, and ferue him more of feare then loue. They fay they have conference with him and faihion themselves as neere to his shape as they can imagine. In their Temples they have his image euilfauouredly carued, and then painted and adorned with Chaines, Copper, and Beads, and couered with a skin, in such manner as the deformitie may well suite with such a God. By him is commonly the fepulcher of their Kings. Their bodies are first bowelled, then dried vpon hurdles till they be very dry, and so about the most of their joints and necke they hang How hey bu-

Bracelets or Chaines of Copper, Pearle, and such like, as they vie to weare, their inwards they ry their Kings, fluffe with Copper Beads and coursed with a Skin, Hatchets, and fuch trash. Then lap they them very carefully in white Skins, and fo rowle them in mats for their winding-sheetes. And in the Tombe, which is an arch made of Mats, they lay them orderly. What remaineth of this kinde of wealth, their Kings haue, they fet at their feete in baskets. These Temples and bodies are

For their ordinary burials, they dig a deepe hole in the earth with fharpe stakes, and the corpes being lapped in Skins and Mats with their lewels, they lay them upon dicks in the ground, and 40 fo couer them with earth. The buriall ended the women being painted all their faces with black coleand oyle, doe fit foure and twenty houres in the houses mourning and lamenting by turnes, with fuch yelling and howling as may expresse their great passions.

In every Territory of a Werowance is a Temple and a Priest, two, or three, or more. Their pring Their Temples cipall Temple or place of superfittion is at Vitamuffack at Pamaunke, neere vnto which is a house temple or place of Powhatans. Vpon the top of certain red fandy hils in the woods, there are three great houses filled with images of their Kings, and Duels, & Tombes of their Predeceffors, Those houses are neere fixty foot in length, built arbot-wise after their building. This place they count fo holy as that none but the Priests and Kings dare come into them; nor the Sauages dare not goe Vp the River in Boares by it, but that they solemnly cast some peece of Popper, white Beads or

To Pocones into the River; for feare their Oke (hould be offended and revenged of them. In this place Their ornacommonly are refident feuen Priefts. The chiefe differed from the reft in his ornaments, but inferments for rior Priefts could hardly be knowne from the common people, but that they had not io many their Priefts. holes in their eares to have their Iewels at. The ornament of the chiefe Prieft were certaine attires for his head made thus: They tooke a dofen, or fixteene, or more Snake skins, and stuffed them with moste, & of Weelels, and other vermine skins a good many. All these they tye by their tailes, fo as all their tailes meete in the top of their head, like a great Taffell. Round about this Taffell is as it were a cown of feathers, the skins hang round about his head, necke, and shoulders, and in a manner couer his face. The faces of all their Priefts are painted as vgly as they can deuife, in their hands they had every one his Rattell, some base, some smaller. Their devotion was most in 60 Songs, which the chiefe Priest beginneth, and the rest followed him, sometimes he maketh inuo.

cations with broken fentences by flarts and flrange paffions, and at every paule, the reft give a It could not be perceived that they keepe any day as more holy then other; but onely in some Their times of great diffreste of want feare of enemies, times of triumph and gathering together their fruits, the folemeries.

whole

Their Coniurations.

with Rattles and shouts together foure or fine houres. Sometime they let a man in the midft.and about him they dance and fing, he all the while clapping his hands if he would keepe time, and after their fongs and dancings ended they goe to their Feafts. They have also divers conjurations; one they made when Captaine Smith was their prisoner (as they reported) to know if any more of his Country-men would arrive there, and what hee

there intended. The manner of it followeth in his story.

Their Altara. C.Smith.

Sacrifices to

the water.

They have also certaine Altar stones, they call Pancorances, but these stand from their Temples, fome by there houses; others in the Woods and Wildernesses : Where they bane bad any ex- 10 traordinary accident or incounter. As you travell by them they will tell you the cause of their erection. wherein they instruct their children; fo that they are in flead of Records and memorialls of their Antianities. Voon this they offer bloud, Deare fuet, and Tobacco. These they doe when they returne from the warres, from hunting, and vpon many other occasions. They have also another Superflition that they vie in flormes, when the waters are rough in the Rivers and Sea Coafts. Their Conjurers runne to the water fides, or paffing in their Boats, after many hellish outcies and invocations, they cast Tobacco, Copper, Pocones, or such trash into the water, to pacifie that God whom they thinke to be very angry in those flormes. Before their dinners and suppers, the better fort will take the first bit, and cast it in the fire, which is all the grace they are

Their folemne making of

C.Smith.

Enery Nation in feuen or ten yeeres vieth a kind of folemnity. Such a one was at Quijongbeohanack, fome ten miles from lames Towne, and thus performed. Fifteene of the properest young Boyes, betweene ten and fifteene yeeres of age they painted white. Having brought them forth. the people spent the forenoone in dancing and singing about them with Rattler. In the afternoone they put those children to the root of the tree. By them all the men stood in a gard, euery one having a Bastinado in his hand, made of Reeds bound together. This made a lane betweene them all along, through which there were appointed fine young men to fetch thefechile dren : fo euerie one of the fine went through the guard to fetch a child each after other by turnes, the guard fearlessy beating them with the Bastinadoes, and they patiently enduring and receiuing all, defending the children with their naked bodies from the vinmerciful blowes, that pay them foundly, though tie children escape. All this while the women weepe and cry out vene pissionately, prouiding Mats, Skins, Mosse, and drie Wood, as things fitting their childrens Funtralls. After the children were thus passed, the guard tore downe the trees, branches, and boughs, with such violence that they rent the bodie, and made wreathes for their heads, or bedecked their haire with leaves. What elfe was done with the children, was not feene, but they were all cast on a heape, in a Valley as dead, where they made a great feast for all the company, The Werowance being demanded the meaning of this facrifice, answered. That the children were not all dead, but the next day they were to drinke Wighlakon, which would make them mad; and they were to bee kept by the last made Blacke boyes in the wildernesse, where their Oke did sucke the blond of those which fell to bic lot. The truth is, as I thinke that many die with the mifery which they endure. For they 46 lye in all weathers in a little bonell naked , and they seldome speake or keepe company with any but them Keepers ; whom they obey fo, that if they be bidden fit on the frozen from, they will not rife till they be called. And if they bid them goe take Fish, Flesh, or Corne from their mothers, or elfe they are Old me, this word is fo terrible that they will teare their mothers throat but they will have it; yea it makes them do what seemer they are commanded: and much mischiefe they often doe to such as they find stragling. Tet burt they not each other. They continue thus nine months. Then are divers platters of broth set, of which some are porsoned; and be whose dimmation finds out the porsoned, is much esteemed and made a Quiyoughootuck. Thefe are the degrees to become Priests or Coniurers. This facrifice they held to be to necessary, that if they should omit it, their Oke or Devil, and all their other Quijone hoo suches which are there other Gods, would let them have no Deare, Turkies, Corne, nor Fifth, and yet be- 50 fides, be would make a great flaughter among it them.

They thinke that their Weromances and Priests , which they also esteeme Quijone beefaghes, when they are dead, goe beyond the Mountaines towards the fetting of the Sunne, and euer remaine there in forme of their Oke, with their heads painted with Oile and Pocones, finely trimmed with Feathers, and shall have Beades, Hatchets, Copper, and Tobacco, doing nothing but dance and fing, with all their Predeceffors. But the common people they suppose shall not live after death.

Their refur-

To divert them from this blind Idolatry, many vied there best endeauours, chiefly with the Werewances of Quiyoughcohanock, whose deuotion, apprehension, and good disposition, much exceeded any in those Countries, whom though wee could not as yet prevaile withall to forfake 62 his falle Gods, yet this hedid beleeue, that our God as much exceeded theirs, as our Gunnes did their Bowes and Arrowes, and many times did fend to the President, at Iames Towne, men with Presents, intreating them to pray to his God for Raine, for his God's would not fend him any. And in this lamentable ignorance, doe these poore soules sacrifice themselves to the Devil, not knowing their Creator.

of the manner of the Virginians Government.

Although the Countrey people be very barbarous, yet have they amongst them such govern ment, as that their Magistrates for good commanding, and their people for due subjection, and obeying, excell many places that would be counted verie civill. The forme of their Commonwealth is a Monarchiall government, one as Emperour ruleth over many Kings or Governours. Their chiefe Ruler is called Powhatan, and taketh his name of the principall place of dwelling, salled Powhatan. But his proper name is Wahun Sonacock, Some Countries hee hath which have been his Ancestors, and came vnto him by Inheritance, as the Countrie called Pophasan, Arro-To bateck, Appamatuke, Pamavuke, Toughtanud, and Mattapaniont. All the reft of his Tetritories expreffed in the Map, they report have beene his feuerall conqueits. In all his ancient Inheritances, hee hath houses built after their manner like arbours, fome thirtie, some fortie yards long, and at euerie house prouision for his entertainment according to the time. At Weroweomogo, hee was feated youn the Northfide of the River Pamazuke, fome fourteene miles from James Towne. where for the most part, hee was resident, but hee tooke so little pleasure in our neere neighbourhood, that were able to visit him against his will in sixe or feuen houres. that he retired himselfe to a place in the Defarts at the top of the River Chickahamania, betweene Tonghtanund and Pow- A deferition batan. His habitation is called Orapacks, where he ordinarily now refideth. He is of parlonage a of Powhatan. tall well proportioned man, with a fower looke, his head fomewhat gray, his beard to thin that an it feemeth none at all , his age neere fixtie; of a verie able and hardie bodie to endure any labour. About his person ordinarily attendeth a guard of fortie or fiftie of the tallest men his Countrie doth afford. Euerie night voon the foure quarters of his house are foure Sentinels each standing from other a flight shoot, and at every halfe houre one from the Corps due guard doth hollow, vnto whom euerie Sentinell doth answere round from his stand; if any faile, they presently fend

forth an officer that beateth him extreamely. A mile from Orapakes, in a thicket of Wood, hee hath a house in which hee keepeth his kind of His treasuries Treasure, as Skins, Copper, Pearle, and Beads, which he storeth vp against the time of his death and buriall. Here also is store of Red paint for ointment, and Bowes and Arrowes. This house is siftie or fixtie yards in length, frequented onely by Prieffs. At the foure corners of this house stand of foure Images as Sentinels, one of a Dragon, another a Beare, the third like a Leopard, and the

fourth like a Grant-like man, all made eurll-favor dly, according to their best workmanship. He hath as many women as he will, whereof when he lieth on his bed, one fitteth at his head. His Whice, and another at his feet, but when he fitteth one fitteth on his right hand & another on his left. As he is weary of his women, he bestoweth them on those that best deserue them at his hands. When he dineth or suppeth, one of his women before and after meat, bringeth him water in a woodden Platter to wash his hands. Another waiteth with a bunch of Feathers to wipe them insteed of a Towell, and the Feathers when he hath wiped are dried againe. His Kingdome descendeth not to his ionnes nor children, but first to his brethren, whereof hee hath three, namely Opitchapan, His Successions Opechancanough, and Catataugh, and after their decease to his fifters. First to the eldest fifter, then The title of ao to the rest, and after them to the heire male and semale of the eldest fister, but never to the heires sacceffion-

of the males. Hee, nor any of his people understand any letters whereby to write or read, onely the Lawes whereby he ruleth is Cuftome. Yet when hee lifteth his will is a law, and must be obeyed : not

only as a King, but as halfe a God they efteeme him. His inferiour Kings, whom they call Their authoris Weromances are tied to rule by cultomes, and have power of life and death, as their command in that nature. But this word Werewance, which we call and confter for a King, is a common word whereby they call all Commanders : for they have but few words in their language, and but few occasions to vie any officers more then one Commander, which commonly they call Werowances. The topor of They all know their fenerall lands, and habitations, and limits, to fish, fowle, or hunt in, but they their lands. 50 hold all of their great Werowance Powhatan, vnto whom they pay tribute of Skins, Beads, Copper. Pearle, Deare, Turkies, wild Beatls, and Corne. What hee commandeth they dare not disobey in the least thing. It is strange to see with what great feare & adoration all these people do obey this Powhatan. For at his feet they present whatsoever hee commandeth, at the least frowne of his brow, their greatest spirits will tremble with feare; and no marnell, for hee is very terrible and tyrannous in punishing such as offend him. For example, hee caused certaine malefactors to bee His manner of bound hand and foot, then having many fires, gathering great flore of burning coles, they rake these punishments. coles round in the forme of a cock-pit, and in the midtl they cast the offenders to broyle to death.

ftone, and one with clubs beat out their braines. When he would punish any notorious enemy or 60 malefactor, hee caufeth him to bee tied to a tree, and with Mulile shels, or Reeds, the executioner cutteth off his joynts one after another, ever cafting what they cut off into the fire; then doth hee proceed with S. els and Reeds to case the skin from his head and face; then doe they rip his belly, and so burne him with the tree and all. Thus themselves reported they executed George Cassen. Their ordinary correction is to beat them with cudgels. Wee have seene a man kneeling on his

Cececee

Somtimes hee canfeth the heads of them that offend him, to beel aid vpon the altar or facrificing

Vanitie of

Liff minate

Vanitie of

felf-fecking

glor:ofos.

Planters.

knees, and at Powhatans command, two men have beat him on the bare skin, till hee hath fallen fenfeleffe in a found, and yet neuer cry nor complained.

In the yeare 1608, he furprised the people of Paganhetank, his neere neighbours and subjects: The occasion was to vs vnknowne, but the manner was thus. First, he sent divers of his mento lodge among them that night, then the Ambufacodes invironed all their houses, and at the hour appointed, they all fel to the spoile, twenty foure men they slew, the long haire of their one fide of their heads, with the skinne caled off with shels or reeds, they brought away. They surprifed also the women, the children, and the Werowance. All these they present to Pombaran. The Weremance, women and children became his pritoners, and doe him feruice. The lockes of haire with their skins he hanged on a line vnto two trees. And thus hee made oftentation of 25 to great a triumph at Werowocomoco, thewing them to the English men that then came vnto him at his appointment, they expecting prouision, he to betray them, supposed to halfe conquer them by this ipectacle of his terrible crueltie.

And this is as much as my memory can call to mind worthy of note; which I have purposely collected, to fatisfie my friends of the true worth and qualitie of Virginia. Yet fome bad natures will not flick to flander the Countrey, that will flouenly fpit at all things, especially in company where they can find none to contradict them. Who though they were learce euer ten miles from Iames Towne, or at the most but at the Falls; yet holding it a great diffrace that among to much action, their actions were nothing, exclaime of all things, though they never adventured to know any thing , nor ever did any thing but devoure the fruits of other mens labours. Being for 20 most part of such tender educations and small experience in martiall accidents, because they found not English Cities, nor fuch faire houses, nor at their owne wishes any of their accustomed dainties, with Feather-beds, and Down-pillowes, Tauernes and Ale-houses in euery breathing place, neither fuch plentie of Gold and Silver and diffolute libertie as they expected, had little or no care of any thing, but to pamper their bellies, to fly away with our Pinnaces, or procure their meanes to returne tor England. For the Countrey was to them a mifery, a ruine, a death, a bell, their reports here, and their owne actions were there according.

Some other there were that had yeerely stipends to passe to and againe for transportation: who to keepe the mystery of the businesse in themselves, though they had neither time nor meanes to know much of themselves; yet all mens actions or relations they so formally tuned to 20 the temporizing times simplicitie, as they could make their ignorances seeme much more, then all the true actors could by their experience. And those with their great wordes deluded the world with such strange promises, as abused the businesse much worse then the rest. For the bufineffe being builded vpon the foundation of their fained experience, the planters, the Money, Tin, and meanes haue still miscarried : yet they euer returning, and the Planters so farre absent, who could contradict their excuses ? which still to maintaine their vain-glory and estimation, from time to time they have vied fuch diligence as made them passe for truths, though nothing more falle. And that the adventurers might be thus abused, let no man wonder; for the wisest litting is foonest abused by him that hath a faire tongue and a dissembling heart.

Miferie of bale

There were many in Virginia meerely proiecting, verball and idle contemplators, and those so 40 denoted to pure idlenelle, that though they had lived two or three yeeres in Virginia, lordly, neceffitie it selfe could not compel them to paste the Pninfula, or Palisadoes of lames Town, & thole wittie spirits, what would they not affirme in the behalfe of our transporters to get victual from their ships, or obtaine their good words in England to their passes. Thus the clamors and the ignorance of itle informers, are forung those disasters that sprung in Virginia, and our ingenious Verbalists were no lesse plague to vain Virginia, then the Locusts to the Egyptians, For the labour of thirtie of the best only, preserved in Christianitie by their industry the idle livers of neere two hundred of the rest: who hung neere ten months of such natural meanes, as the Countrey naturally of it selfeassorded, not withstanding all this, and the worst fury of the Sauges, the extremitie of ficknesse, mutinies, faction, ignorances, and want of victual : in all that time Host 50 but seuen or eight men, yet subjected the Sauages to our defired obedience, and received contribution from five and thirtie of their Kings, to protect and affift them against any that should affault them; in which order they continued true and faithfull, and as subjects to his Maiestie, so long after as I did gouerne there, vntill I left the Countrey : fince , how they have revolted, the Countrey lost, and againe replanted, and the businesses have succeeded from time to time, I refer you to the relations of them returned from Virginia, that have been more diligent in fuch obseruations, gathered out of the Writings of divers of that Plantation, by Doctor William Simon.

CHAP. 60

CHAP. IIII.

CHAP. 4. Letters Patents for establishing a Counsell. A Fort contriued.

The proceedings of the English Colony in Virginia, taken faithfully out of the writings of THOMAS STYDLY Cape-Merchant, ANAS TODKILL, Doctor Rys-SELL, NATHANIEL POWELL, WILLIAM PHETIPLACE, and RICHARD POT, * RICHARD WIFFIN, THO. AB-BAY, THO. HOPE; and since enlarged out of the Writings of Capt. IOHN SMITH, principal Agent and Patient in

thele Virginian Occurrents, from the beginning of the Plantation 1606. till Ann. 1610. Comewhat abridged.



Apraine Bartholomen Gofnold, the first mouer of this Plantation, having many cause these weeres folicited many of his friends, but found imall affiftants; at last prevailed have alreadie with fome Gentlemen, as M. Edward-Maria Wingfield , Captaine John Smith, feene the light, and divers others, who depended a yeere upon his projects, but nothing could and containe be effected, till by their great charge and industrie it came to bee apprehended of Virginian by certaine of the Nobilitie, Gentrie, and Merchants, fo that his Maiettie by affaires. I was

his Letters Patents, gaue Commission for establishing Councels, to direct here, and to governe, and loth to wearie to execute there : to effect this was front another yeere, and by that time three Ships were pro- the Reader uided, one of one hundred Tuns, another of fortie, and a Pinnace of twentie. The transportation with others of this time. on of the Company was committed to Captaine Christopher Newport, a Mariner well practifed for The fift mothe Westerne parts of America. But their orders for gouernment were put in a Box, not to bee ucr of the

opened, nor the Governours knowne vntill they arrived in Virginia.

On the ninteenth of December, 1606. wee fet faile, but by vnprosperous winds, were kept Orders for gofix weekes in the fight of England; all which time, M. Hunt our Preacher, was fo weake and england; ficke, that few expected his recourrie. Yet although hee were but ten or twelue miles from his Admirall with to habitation (the time we were in the Downes) and notwithstanding the stormy weather, nor the 71, feandalous imputation (of fome few , little better then Atheilts , of the greatest ranke among it God feed Vice. vs) fuggefted against him, all this could neuer force from him so much as a seeming defire to leave admirall with the bulinesse, but preferred the Service of God, in so good a Voyage, before any affection to con
Gommanded test with his godleffe foes, whose disasterous designes (could they have prevailed) had even then by Cap Golnal. overthrowne the businesse. So many discontents did then arise, had he not with the water of patience, and his godly exhortations (but briefly by his true denouted examples) quenched those Rear admirely, flames of enuy and diffention.

Wee waterdat the Canaries, we traded with the Sauages at Dominica; three weekes we spent M. Hunt. in refreshing our selues amongst these West India Iles; in Gwardalupa wee found a Bath so hot, as 40 in it we boiled Porck as well as over the fire. And at a little lle, called Monica, wee tooke from the Bulhes with our hands, neere two Hogsheads of Birds in three or foure houses. In Mevis, Monica an vno Mona , and the Virgin Iles, we spent some time, wherewith a loathsome beast like a Crocadil, called a Gwayn, Tortoles, Pellicans, Parrots, and Filhes, wee daily feasted. Gone from thence in fearch of Virginia, the Company was not a little discomforted, seeing the Mariners had three daies passed their reckoning and found no Land, so that Captaine Ratcliffe (Captaine of the Pinnace) rather desired to beare vp the Helme to returne for England, then make further search. But God the guider of all good actions, forcing them by an extreame florme to Hull all night, did drive them by his providence to their defired Port, beyond all their expectations, for never any of them had feenethat Coaft. The first Land they made, they called Cape Henry; where ancho- Their first ring, M. Wing field, Goffoll, and Newport, with thirtie others, recreating themselves on shoare, Were landing-50 affaulted by fine Sauages, who hart two of the English very dangerously. That night was the Box opened, and the orders read in which Bartholomen Gofnoll Edward Wing field, Christopher Nemport.

John Smith, John Ratliffe, John Marzin, and George Kendall, were named to be the Councell, and to chuse a President among st them for a yeere, who with the Councell should gouerne. Matters of Matters of gol moment were to be examined by a Jury , but determined by the Maior part of the Councell , in ueroment. which the Prefident had two voices. Vintill the thirteenth of May they fought a place to plant in, then the Councell was I worne, M. Wing field was chosen Prefident, and an Oration made, why Captaine Smith was not admitted to the Councell as the reft.

Now falleth every man to worke, the Councell contrine the Fort, the rest cut downe Trees to 60 make place to pitch their Tents ; some prouide Clap-board to relade the Ships, some make Gardens, lome Nets, &c. The Sauges often visited vs kindly. The Presidents ouerweening iealousie would admit no exercise at Armes, or Fortification, but the Boughs of Trees cast together in the The discourse forme of a halfe Moone, by the extraordinary paine and diligence of Captaine Kendall, Nemport, orthe Fols and With Smith, and twentie others, were lent to discouer the head of the River : by divers small habi- Pontain.

* I haue many written Treatifes lymo by me, written by Capt. Smith and others. fome there, feme here af

Godly zeale of

Cccccc 2

The Fort affaulted by the I hau: also M. Wingfields notes of thefe offaires : but ould not rouble the Reader here with things nore then troublefome

zhere.

tations they passed, in fixe dayes they arrived at a Towne called Powbatan, consisting of some twelve houses pleasantly seated on a Hill; before it three fertill lies, about it many of their Cornfields, the place is very pleasant, and strong by nature, of this place the Prince is called Pope hatan, and his people Powhatans, to this place the River is Navigable, but higher within a mile, by reation of the Rockes and Iles, there is not passage for a small Boat, this they call the Falls, the people in all parts kindly intreated them, till being returned within twentie miles of lames Towne, they gave just cause of jealousie, but had God not blessed the discoverers otherwise then those at the Fort, there had then beene an end of that Plantation; for at the Fort, where they are rived the next day, they found seventeene men hurt, and a boy slaine by the Sauages, and had it nor chanced a croffe Bar shot from the Ships strooke downe a Bough from a Tree amongst them, that caused them to retire, our men had all beene flaine, being securely all at worke, and their Armes in Dry-fats. Heereupon the President was contented the Fort should be pallisadeed, the Ordnance mounted, his men armed and exercifed, for many were the affaults, and Ambufcadore of the Sauges, and our men by their diforderly ftragling were often hurt, when the Sauges by the nimble neile of their heeles well elcaped. What toile we had, with fo small a power to guard our workemen adayes, watch all night, refilt our enemies, and effect our bulineffe, to relade the Ships, cut downe Trees, and prepare the ground to plant our Corne, &c. I refer to the Readers confideration. Six weekes being Ipent in this manner; Captaine Newport (who was hired onely for our transportation) was to returne with the Ships.

Now Captaine Smith (who all this time from their departure from the Canaries) was reftrai-20 ned as a prisoner upon the scandalous suggestions of some of the chiefe (enuying his repute) who fained he intended to viurpe the gouernment, murder the Councell, and make hunfelfe King that his confederates were dispersed in all the three Ships, and that divers of his confederates that renealed it, would affirme it; for this he was committed, thirteene weekes hee remained thus fulpected, and by that time the Ships should returne, they pretended, out of their commissions. to referre him to the Councell in England to receive a check, rather then by particulating his defignes make him to odious to the world, as to touch his life, or veterly ouerthrow his reputation : but he much scorned their charitie, and publikely defied the vetermost of their crueltie, hee wilely prevented their policies, though bee could not suppresse their enuies, yet so well hee demeaned himfelte in this businesse, as all the Company did see his innocencie, and his adversaries malice, 20 and those which had beene subborned to accuse him, accused his accusers of subornation; many wntruths were alledged against him; but being so apparantly disproved, begat a generall hatred in the hearts of the Company against such vniust Commanders; many were the mischiefes that daily forume from their ignorant (yet ambitious) spirits; but the good doctrine and exhortation of our Preacher Master Hunt reconciled them, and caused Captaine Smith to be admitted of the Councell: the next day all received the Communion, the day following the Sauages voluntarily defired peace, and Captaine Newport returned for England with newes; leaving in Virginia one hundred the fifteenth of lune 1607.

The names of them that were the first planters, were these following. Master Edward-Maria Winefield, Captaine Bartholomew Gofnoll, Capt. Iohn Smith, Capt. Iohn Ratcliffe, Cap. Iohn Martin, 40 Capt. George Kendall, Councellors.

M. George Piercy, M. Robert Hunt Preacher, Anthony Gofnoll, Capt. Gabrill Archer, Rob. Ford, William Brustar, Dru Pickhouse, John Brookes, Thomas Sands, John Robinson, Visis Clonil, Kellam Throgmorton, Nathaniell Powell, Robert Bebethland, Ievemy Alicock, Thomas Studley, Richard Crofts, Nucholas Houlgraue, Thomas Webbe, John Waler , William Tankard , Francis Snarsbrough , Edward Brookes, Richard Dixon, John Martin, George Martin, Anthony Gofnold, Thomas Wotten, Stirg. Thomas Gore, Francis Midwinter, Gentlemen.

William Laxon, Edward Pifing, Tho. Emry, Rob. Small, Carpenters. Anas Todeill, John Capper. Iames Read, Blacksmith, Ionas Profit, Sailer. The Couper, Barber. lobn Herd, Brick-layer, William Garret, Brick-layer. Edward Brinto, Malon, William Lone, Taylor, Nic, Skee Drum.

Iobn Laydon, William Caffen, George Caffen, Tho. Caffen, William Rods, William White, Ould Edward, Henry Tanin, George Golding, loba Dods Will. lobn fon, Will. Vinger, Labouters. Will Wilkin fon. Surgeon. Samuell Collier, Nat. Pecock, James Brumfield, Rich, Matton, with divers others to the number of one hundred and fine.

What happened till the first supply. The occasion of fickneffe. The Sailers

D Eing thus left to our fortunes, it fortuned that within ten dayes, scarce ten among it vs could Deither goe, or well stand, such extreame weaknesse and sicknesse oppressed vs. And thereat none need maruell, if they confider the cause and reason, which was this; whilest she ships stayed, our allowance was somewhat bettered, by a daily proportion of bisket which the Saylers would pilfer to fell, give or exchange with vs, for money, faxefras, furres, or love. But when they 60 departed , there remained neither Tauerne, Beere-house , nor place of reliefe but the common kettell. Had we beene as free from all finnes as gluttony, and drunkennesse, we might have beene canonized for Saints : But our President would never have beene admitted, for ingroffing to his private, Otemeale, Sack, Oile, Aquavitz, Beefe, Egges, or what not, but the kettel; that indeed he

allowed equally to be diffributed, and that was halfea pinte of Wheat, and as much Barly boiled with water for a mana day, and this having fryed tome fix and twentie weekes in the ships hold, contained as many wormes as graines; fo that wee might truely call it rather fo much Bran then Corne, our drinke was water, our lodgings castles in aire, with this lodging and diet, our extreame toile in bearing and planting Pallifadoes, lo strained and bruifed vs. and our continual labour in the extreamitie of heat had to weakned vs, as were cause sufficient to have made vs as miferable in our native Countrey, or any other place in the world. From May to September, those dene. that escaped lived upon Sturgion, and Sea-Crabs; fiftie in this time we buried : The rest seeing the Presidents projects to escape these mileries in our Pinnace by flight (who all this time had to neither felt want nor ficknesse) so moued our dead spirits, as wee deposed him; and established

Rateliffe in his place, (Gofnell being dead) Kendall deposed, Smith newly recoursed, Martin and Railffe was by his care preferred and relieved, but now was all our provision spens, the Sturgeon gone, all helpes abandoned, each houre expecting the fury of the Sauages; when God, the Parron of all good indeauours in that desperat extreamitie, to changed the hearts of the Sauages, that they Plentie vncz-

brought such plentie of their fruits and prouision, as no man wanted.

The new President, and Marin, being little beloued; of weake sudgement in dangers, and leffe industry in peace, committed the managing of all things abroad to Captaine Smith: who by his owne example, good words, and faire promites, fet some to mow, others to binde thatch, some to build houses, others to thatch them, himselfe alwaies bearing the greatest taske for his owne 20 share, so that in short time he prouided most of them lodgings, neglecting any for himselfe. This done, leeing the Sauages superfluitie begin to decrease (with some of his workmen) hee shipped himselfe in the shallop to search the Countrey tor trade, the want of the language, knowledge to mannage his Boat without Sailers, the want of fufficient power (knowing the multitude of the Sauages) apparell for his men, and other necessaries, were infinite impediments, yet no discou-

ragement, Being but fixe or leuen in company, hee went downe the River to Kecongbian, where ragement. Deing out in a sa a flarued man; and would in derision offer bies a handfull of Corne, or a c. smith. piece of Bread for their Swords and Mulkets, and such like proportions also for their apparell. But seeing by trade there was nothing to be had nesefficie forced him to exceed his Commission, and to vie his Muskets to another kind of trading, which made these deriders flye to the Woods. Hee basted to their honses, 30 and found flore of Corne, from which the hungry Souldier; were hardly detained, in bastier spoile to bane betrayed themselves to the returning Sanages affault. This fixite or seventy did presently, with hideous noise to the eare, and manifold colours painted to the eye, singing and dancing with their Okee (which was an Idol made with skins, sinfed with mosse, all painted and hanged with Chaines and Copper, borne before them) and being well ar med with Clubs, Targets, Bowes and Arrowes, they charged the English, who fo kindly received them with their Muskets loaden with Postoll flot, that downe fell their God, and divers of

his worthippers lay forauling on the ground, the reft firing to the Woods. Soone after they fent one of their Quiyoughcalucks to offer peace, and redeeme their Okee. Smith agreed that if onely fixe would come wnarmed and load his Boat with Corne, bee would be their friend, restore their Okee, and give them also Beads, Copper, Hatchets; which on beth sides was performed to mutual content, and they brought him 40 (finging and dansing) Vension, Turkeys, wild Fowle, Bread, &c. In his returne hee discourred and (finging and danfing) Vension, Tinkess, was Fowle, Bread, Gre. In his returns nee discourred and Thebeginning kindly traded with the Wereskopks, in the means time those at the Fort to glutted the Sauages of tradea-

with their commodities as they became not regarded. Smith perceiving (notwithstanding their late mifery) not any regarded but from hand to mouth (the company being well recoursed) caused the Pinnace to bee prouided with things fitting to get prouition for the yeere following; but in the interim he made three or foure journyes and discovered the people of Chickehamine, yet what hee carefully provided the rest carelesty spent, Wingfield and Kendall living in digrace, feeing all things at randome in the absence of Smith, The Companies diflike of their Prefidents weaknesse, and their small love to Martins ne- The distourre uer-mending fickneffe, ftrengthened themselves with the Sailers, and other confederates to re- of chukuha

30 gaine their former credit and authoritie, or at least fuch meanes aboard the Pinnace (being fitted mine. to faile as Smith had appointed for trade) to alter her course and to goe for England, Smith vnexpectedly returning had the plot discoursed unto him, much trouble hee had to preuent it, till with flore of Fauken and Musket shot hee forced them to flay or linke in the River, which action coil the life of Captaine Kendall. The President and Captaine Archer not long after intended also to have abandoned the Countrey, which project also was curbed and sup- in a coabinpressed by Smith. And now the Winter approaching, the Rivers became so covered with don the Coun-Swans, Geele, Ducks, and Cranes, that wee daily feathed with good Bread, Virginia Peale, trry. Pumpions, and Putchamins, Fish, Fowle, and divers forts of wild Beasts as fat as wee could eate Winter Fowles them : fo that none of our Tuftaffatie humorifts defired to goe for England. But our Comzdies

60 neuer endured long without a Tragedie; some ielle exceptions being muttered against Capraine Smith, for not discouring the head of Chickahamine river, & taxed by the Conneel, to be too slow in to worthy an attempt. The next voyage hee proceeded fo far, that with much labour by cutting off Trees in funder hee made his paffage, but when his Barge could paffe no farcher, hee left her in a broad Bay out of danger of thot, commanding none should goe ashoare till his returne

Cccccc 3

Capt. Newports returne for Emland.

sbufes.

himfelfe with two English and two Sauages went up higher in a Canowe, but hee was not long

abtent, but his men went ashoare, whose want of government, gave both occasion and opportuni-

ty to the Sauages to surprize one George Casson, and much failed not to have cut off the Boate and

Diali admired

of Sauages.

The Sauages having drawns from George Casson, whither Captaine Smith was gone, followed him with three hundred Bowmen, conducted by Opechankanough the King of Pamaunke; who fearthing Cap. Smith af. the dinifions of the River found Robinton and Emery by the fire side, whom they bot full of Arrowes and stem. Smith being assaulted slew three of them, and so galled the rest that they would not come nere. be vied the Savaze bis guide as a fireld, having bound him to bis arme with his garters; and thinking to bane reconered his Boate, having more eye to them in his march then to his way, he supped up to the IC middle in an ozie creeke, and bus Savage with bim; yet aurst they not come to bim till bettrew awar bis armes, being neere dead with cold. Then according to composition they drew him forth, and led him to the fire, where his men were flaine. Diligently they chafed his benummed lumbes; and be gave One. chankanough a round luory double compassed Diall. They much maruelled at the playing of the five which ther could see and not touch, by reason of the Glasse coner; but when he hadread a Comporable. call lecture to them of the Skies, Earth, Day, and night, with the varietie of Nations, and such like, they were all amazed: notwithstanding which sudden wonder, they tide him to a tree within an houre ofter us many as could frand about him prepard their fatall Arrowes to his death, which were all laid downe when Opechankanough beld up the faid Diall : and they led him in a kinde of trimmeh to

Sauage tri-

Their order was this: drawing themselves all in sile, the King in the midst had all their Perces Sauzge tri-umph, difeiplin and Swords borne before him: Captaine Smith was led after him by three great lubbers, bolding him and gallantry. fast; on each side went six in file, with their Arrowes nocked. When they arrowed at the Towne (which was of thirty or forty bunting houses made of Mats, removed at pleasure, as Tents with vs) the women and children came to stare on him; the Souldiers in file bad their Sargiants to keepe them in order. A good while they thus continued, and then cast themselves into a ring, dancing in fenerall postures, and singing bellish noates, strangely painted, each having bis Quiner of Arrowes . and at his backe a Clubbe ; on his arme a Foxes or Otters Skinne for his vambrace. their heads and houlders painted red with Oyle and Pocones mineled together, his Bome in his band, and the Skinne of a Bird, with her wings abroad, dried, tied on his head, with a peece of 30 Copper, a white Shell, a long Fether, and a small Rattle growing at the taile of their Snabes, or some such toy fastened thereto. All this while Smith flood with the King quarded in the midst, till three dances being done, they departed. Then did they conduct Swith to along bonfe, where thirty or forty men guarded bim, and some after was brought more Bread and Venison then would have served twenty: what he left they put in Baskets and tied over his head, which about midnight they againe let before bim, none of them eating ough: with him, till basing brought as much more the next morning, they did eate the old, and referned the new in like manner. Hee thought they intended to fat and eate bim.

Their feafting-

One Maocastater, in requitall of Beads which be had given him, brought him his Gowne to defend bim from the cold. Another was possessed with a contrary humour, and would have staine him for the 40 death of his sonne, had not the guard prenented; to him, yet breathing his last, they brought him to recouer him. Smith told them that at lames Towne be bad a water that would doe it if they would let him fetch it. But they prepared to all aule James Towne, promising him liberty, and women, if he would aflift them. In part of a Table Booke be wru bu minds to those which were at the Fort : that they should fend such things mentioned. They were in bitter weather for Frost and Snow, and seeing men fally out. as he had before told them, they fled; but comming agains in the night to the place which be had appointed, for an answer, they found things ready, and speedsly returned, as if either be had divined, or the pa-

Sauage fimplicity.

per bad Goken. After this they led bim to the Youghtanunds, the Matapanients, the Payankatiks, the Nantaughtacunds, the Onanmanients, upon the Rivers of Rapahanocke, and Patanomecke, and 50 backe againe by diners other Nations, to the Kings babitation at Pamaunk, where they entertained him with frange consurations. Earely in a morning a great fire was made in a long house, a Mat sprea on each lide; on one of which he was let, the quard went out, and in came a great grum fellow skipping, all painted with cole mingled with Oyle, many Snakes and Weefels skins stuffed with Mosse, their tailet tied together, and meeting on the crowne of his head; round about the taffell was a coronet of Fethers; the skins bung round about his head, shoulders, backe and face : With a bellish voyce, strange gestures and passions, with a Rattle in his band, bee began his innocation, and environed the fire with a circle of Meale. After this, three such other divels rushed in with like trickes, painted halfe blacke, halfe red, all their eyes painted white, with some red stroakes along their sheekes. These having danced a pressio while, three more same in as vely as the reft, with red eyes and white stroakes oner their blacke faces. At 60 last they all fat downe right against him, the chiefe Priest in the midst, and three on each hand. All then with their Rattles began a fong, which ended the chiefe Priest laid downe fine Wheate cornes : and straining bis armes and hand wish such violence, that he swet, and his veines swelled : hee began a short Oration; at the conclusion whereof shey gave a short ground, and then laid downe three graines more. Now

they becam their Song againe, and then another Oration, ever laying downe so many cornes as before till they had twice encircled the fire. That done, they take a bunch of lutle flickes, prepared for that purpole, and at the end of enery Song and Oration laid downe a flicke betwixt the divisions of the Corne. Till niebt, neither be nor they did eate or drinke, and then they feasted merrily with their best promisous, Three dages they vied this Ceremonie, thereby to know (as they faid) whether bee intended them weller no. The circle of meale fignified their Country, the two circles of Corne the Sea-bounds: and the stickes his Countrey. They imagined the World to be flat and round like a trencher and them- Sausae Geo: felues in the midst. After this, they brought him a buge of Powder, which they carefully preserved till graphy. the next fring, to plant as they did their Corne, because they would be acquainted with the nature of Gunpowder

Opitchapam the Kings brother, innited him to his house, where hee welcommed him with as many Platters of Bread, Fowle and wilde Beasts, as did encompasse bim: but not any would eate with him, reserving theremainders in Baikets. At his returne to Opechankanoughs, all the Kings women and their children flocked about him, as for their customary due, to be merry with such fragments. At last they brought him to Werowocomoco to Pohatan, where about two hundred of his Courtiers He is brought fload wondring on him, till Pohatan and his traine had put themselnes in their greatest branery. Before to Pohatan. a fire bee lat on a lease like a bedited, concred with a great robe made of Rarowcun Skinnes, all the tailes banging by: on each hand did fit a your wench of fixteene or eighteene yeeres of age; along on each fide the boufe two romes of men, and behinde them as many women, with all their heads and shoul-20 ders painted red , many of their beads bedeeked with the white downe of Birds , enery one adorned with Wilde tovaler. Come thing , a great chaine also of white Beades about their neckes. At his entrance before the King all the people came a great front. The Queene of Appanatucke was appointed to bring water to malh bis hands, another brought him a bunch of Feathers instead of a Towell to drie tuem. Haming feasted him in their best manner, the held a consultation, in conclusion whereof, two creat

flones were brought before Poliatan, and as many as could lay bold on him dragged him to them.

bim Hatchets, and Beads, Bels, and Copper for ber. For they thought him like themselues, of all occu-

and thereon laid his head, being ready with their clubbes to beate out his braines. Pocahuntas the Kings desrest Daughter, when no intreatie would premaile, got his head into her armes, and laid her Pocahuntas

owne voon his to faue birm from death : whereupon the Emperour was contented hee should live to make fueth his life, 20 pations ; the King himfelfe making his owne Robes, Shooes, Bowes, Arrowes, Poss, Planting alfo, Hun- All men of all

ting, and doing Offices, no leffe then the reft. Two dayes after, Pohatan having desquesed himselfe in the dreadfullest manner, caused Captaine Smit to be bronght forth to a great boufe in the woods, and there upon a Mat by the fire to bee ieft alone, Not long after from bebinde a Mat which divided the house, was made the dolefullett moile that ever bee had beard. After this Pohatan with twenty more as blacke as himselfe came unto him, and told him that they were now friends, and presently hee should goe to lames Towne to fend him two great Gunnes and a Grindstone, for which hee would give him the Country of Capahowolick, and for ener eiteeme bien as bis Sonne Nantaquaus. Hee fent bim thither with twelve ouides. When they came to the Fort, Smith veed the Sanages kindely, and shewed Rawhunt.

40 Poharans trufty fernant two Demiculnerius and a Militone to carry to Pohatan : fomembat too beaute for their carriage. But when they faw him discharge them leden with stones, on the boughes of a great tree banging full of isickles, the Ice and boughes comming downewith (ach furie, the Sawaves were halfe dead with feare; and at last returning contented with toics and presents for Poliatan. his women and childred. This his returning fafe to the Port, once more stated the Pinnace her The third proflight for England, which till his returne, could not fet faile, to extreame was the weather, and ice to abase fo great the Frost.

His relation of the plenty he had feene , especially at Weromocomoco, where inhabited Powe batan (that till that time was vnknowne) fo remined againe their dead spirits, as all mens feare was abandoned , Powhatan having fent with this Captaine divers of his men loaded with 50 prouision, hee had conditioned, and so appointed his trustie Messengers to bring but two or three of our great Ordnances; but the Medlengers being fatisfied with the fight of one of them difcharged an away amazed with feare, till meanes were vied with gifts to affure them our loues.

A LL this time our cares were not fo much to abandon the Countrie, but the Treasurer and The arrivall of Connfell in England, were as deligent and carefull to supply vs. Two tall Shippes they the fift upply fent vs, with neere one hundred men, well furnished with all things could be imagined ne- with their procellary, both for them and vs. The one commanded by Captaine Newport: the other by Cape ceedings and taine Nolon, an honest manand an expert Marriner, but such was the leewardnesse of his Ship

(that though he were within fight of Cape Henry) by stormy contrary windes, was forced to The Phenie farre to Sea, as the West Indies was the next land for the repaire of his Masts, and reliefe from Cape of wood and water. But Captaine Nempers got in, and arrived at lames Towne, not long after Hemy forced to the Well the redemption of Captaine Smith, to whom the Sauges energy other day brought spell plenty Indies, of Bread, Fish, Turkies, Squirrels, Deere, and other wilde Beasts, part they gave him as protents from the King; the rest, he as their marker Clarke fet the price how they should fell.

So he had inchanted those poore soules (being their Prisoner)in demonstrating vato them the roundnesse of the World, the course of the Moone and Starres, the cause of the day and night, the largenesse of the Seas, the qualities of our ships, shot and powder : The diminon of the World, with the disertitie of people, their complexions, customes and conditions. All which gothis liberty. he fained to be winder the command of Captaine Newport, whom he termed to them his Father: of who e arrivall, it chanced he to directly prophecied, as they esteemed him an Oracle; by thefe fictions he not only faued his owne life, and obtained his liberty; but had them at that command, he might command them what he litted. That God that created all these things; they Their opinion knew he adored for his God, whom they would also tearme in their Discourses, the God of

Folly in vader-

traluing our Commodities

by gifts or

fmall prizes.

Anerher folly

in Mariners

trade both

which fup-

The Prefident and Councell fo much enuied his estimation amongst the Sauages (though wee all in generall equally participated with him of the good thereof) that they wrought it into their understandings, by their great bountie in giving foure times more for their Commodities then he appointed, that their greatnesse and authoritie, as much exceeded his, as their bountie and liberalitie: Now the arrival of his first supply, so ouer-ioyed vs, that wee could not dense too much Commodities to please the Mariners. Weegaue them libertie to trucke or trade at their pleasures. But ina fhort time, it followed, that that could not be had for a pound of Copper, which before was fold for an ounce, Thus Ambition and Sufferance, cut the throat of our Trade, but confirmed their opinion of Newports greatnesse where with Smith had possessed Pombatan) especially by the great Prefents Newport often fent him, before he could prepare the Pinnace to goe and vifit him; fo 20 that this Sauage also defired to see him. A great brute there was to fet him forward; when hee went he was accompanied, with Captaine Smith, and Mafter Scrimener a very wife understanding Gentleman newly arrived, and admitted of the Councell, and thirtie or fortiethofen men for that guard. Arriving at Werowocome, Newports conceit of this great Sauage bred many doubts and suspicions of Treacheries; which Smith, to make appeare was needleffe, with twentie men well appointed, undertooke to encounter (with that number) the world that could happen. These being kindly received ashore, with two or three hundred Savages were conducted to

called his Sonne, for whom Pombatan gaue him Namontacke his truftie Servant , and one of a

in Powbatan carried himselfe so proudly, yet discreerly (in his Sauage manner) as made vs all ad-

mire his naturall gifts confidering his education, as forming to trade as his fubicets did, her be-

Spake Newport in this manner. Captaine New port it is not agrecable with my greatneffe in this ped-

ling manner to trade for trifles, and I esteeme you a great Weroans, Therefore lay mee donne all your

Commodities together, what I like, I will take, and in recompence give you that I thinke fitting their va-

lue. Captaine Smith being our Interpreter, regarding Nemport as his Father , knowing belt the

disposition of Pombatan told vs his intent was but to cheat vs; yet Captaine Nemport thinking to

out-braue this Sauage in oftentation of greatnesse, and so to bewitch him with his bountie, as to

shrewd subtill capacitie. Three or foure dayes were spent in feating, dancing and trading, where- 40

planted the good of the Smiths reuifiting Pemberan.

P whaton fult their Towne ; Powbatan ftrained himfelfe to the vttermost of his greatnesse to entertaine vs. entertainment with great shouts of Ioy, Orations of protestations, and the most plentie of victuals hee could prouide to feath vs. Sitting vpon his Bed of Mats, his Pillow of Leather imbroydered (after their rude manner) with Pearle and white Beads, his Attire a faire Robe of skinnes as large as an Irih of this journie: Mantle, at his head and feet a hand fome young woman; on each fide his house sare twenties his Concubines, their heads and shoulders painted red, with a great chaine of white Beads about but content their neckes, before those fate his chiefest men in like order in his Arbor-like house. With many my felic with pretie Discourses to renue their old acquaintance; the great King and our Captaine spenthe this briefer to time till the ebbe left our Barge aground, then renuing their Feaths and mirth, we quartred that anoid prolinity night with Powhatan : the next day Newport came aftore, and received as much content as those people could give him, a Boy named Tho. Sauage was then given vnto Powhatan, whom Newport

The exchange of a Christian for a Sauage.

Pewhatans

Difference of

lames Towne Mafter Hutts

have what he lifted; but to it chanced, Pombatan having his defire, valued his Corne at such a rate, as I thinke it better cheape in Spaine, for we had not fourebushels for that we expected twenthe so Hogheads. This bred fome vnkindnesse betweene our two Captaines, Newport leeking to please the humour of the vulatiable Sauage; Smith to cause the Sauage to please him, but smoothering his diftafte (to avoid the Savages suspition) glanced in the eyes of Pombatan many Trifles who fixed his humour vpon a few blue Beads ; A long time he importunately defired them , but Smithfeemed so much the more to affect them, so that ere we departed, for a pound or two of blue Beads he brought over my King for two or three hundred buffiels of Corne, yet parted good friends. The like entertainment we found of Opechantymongh King of Pamaunke whom also he in like manner fitted, (at the like rates) with blue Beads a and io wee returned to the Fort. Where this new supply being lodged with the reft, accidentally fired the quarters, and so the Towne, which being but thatched with Reeds, the fire was fo fierce as it burnt their Pallizadoes (though ten or twelve 62 yards diftant) with their Armes, Bedding, Apparell, and much private provision. Good Mafter Hant our Preacher loft all his Librarie and all that hee had (but the clothes on his backe) yet none over faw him repine at his loff. Vion any alarme be would be as readic for defence as any, and till be could freake; he never ceassed to his utmost to animate us constantly to persist : whose soule que-

fliouleffe is with God. This happened in the Winter, in that extreme Frost 1607. Now though montelle is with a long a monte of Oate-meale, Meale, and Corne, yet the ship staying there fourteene weekes, when she might as well have beene gone in fourteene dayes, spent the Beefe, Porke, Oyle, Aquauitæ, Fish, Butter, and Cheele, Beere and such like; as was prouded Ashipidly loito be landed vs. When they departed, what their differentian could spare vs, to make a Feastfor tring touneen two with Bisket, Porke, Beefe, Fish, and Oyle, to rellish our mouthes, of each somewhat they weeks, and two with Disact, a confesse, those that had either Money, spare Clothes, credit to give Bils of haufing the payment, Gold Rings, Furres, or any fuch Commodities were euer welcome to this remooning company here Tauerne; fuch was our patience to obey fuch vile Commanders, and buy our owne prouifion at and Colonie To fifteene times the value, fuffering them to feast (we bearing the charge) yet must not repine, but there to pri-

fait; and then leakage, thip-rats, and other cafualties occasioned the loft, but the vessell and remnants (for totals) we were glad to receive with all our hearts to make vp the account, highly commending their Prouidence for preferring that. For all this plentie our ordinarie was but mesle and water, fo that this great charge little relieued our wants, whereby with the extremitie of the bitter cold Aire more then halfe of vs died, and tooke our deaths, in that piercing Winter. I cannot deny, but both Serimener and Smith did their best to amend what was amisse, but with the President went the major part, that their hornes were too short. But the worst michiefe was, our gilded Refiners with their golden promises, made all men their slaues in hope of recompence; there was no talke, no hope, no worke, but digge Gold, wash Gold, refine Gold, The effect of 20 load Gold, fuch a brute of Gold, as one mad fellow defired to bee buried in the Sands, leaft they meere Verba fhould by their Art make Gold of his bones: Little need there was and lesse reason, the shippe lists.

should stay, their wages sunne on, our victuall consume fourteene weekes, that the Mariners charge. might fay, they built such a golden Church, that we can fay, the raine washed neere to nothing in fourteene dayes. Captaine Smith would not applaud all those Golden inventions, never any * Certaine thing did more torment him, then to fee all necessary businesse neglected, to traught such a drunken ship with so much gilded * dirt; till then we neuer accounted Captaine Newport a Refiner; who being fit to fet faile for England, and we not having any vie of Parliaments, Playes, Petiti- was fent over ons, Admirals, Recorders, Interpreters, Chronologers, Courts of Plea, nor Justices of Peace, ons, Admirals, Recorders, Interpreters, Chronologers, Courts or Plea, nor juttices or Peace, great promites fent Mafter Wingfield and Captaine Archer with him for England, to feeke fome place of better of gold, like

ac imployment.

"He authority now confifting in refining Captaine Martin, and the still fickly President, the performance. The arrival of fale of the flores Commodities maintayned their effates as inheritable Revenues. The the Phanix her Spring approching, and the thip departed, Mafter Seriuener and Captaine Smub divided betwixt them, the rebuilding our Towne, the repayring our Pallifadoes, the cutting downe Trees, pre- ther accidents panng our fields, planting our Corne, and to rebuild our Church, and recouer our Storehouse; all Chapter men thus busie at their severall labours, Master Nelson arrived with his lost Phonix, (lost I say, of lames towned for that all men deemed him loft) landing (afely his men; fo well hee had mannaged his ill hap, Welfauthonecaufing the Indian lies to feed his company that his victuall (to that was left vs before) was fuffi- fly & fidelinic. 40 cient for halfe a yeere, he had nothing but he freely imparted it; which honest dealing (in a Ma-

riner) caused vs admire him, wee would not have wished so much as he did for vs. Now to relade this thip with fome good tydings. The Prefident (yet not flanding with his dignity to leave the Fort) gaue order to Captaine Smith and Mafter Scrimener to discouer and search the Commodities Sinie spoolinof Monacans Countrey beyond the Falls, fixty able men were allotted, the which within fixe ted to discount dayes exercise, Smith had so well trained to their Armes and Orders, that they little feared with Menecan. whom they should encounter. Yet so vnseasonable was the time, and so opposite was Captaine Martin to every thing, but only to fraught his ship also with his phantasticall Gold, as Cap-Smith rather defired to relade her with Cedar, which was a prefent difpatch; then either with dirt, or the reports of an vacertaine Discouerie. Whilft their conclusion was resoluting, this

Powbatan to expresse his love to Newport, when he departed, presented him with twenty Turkeyes, conditionally to returne him twenty Swords, which immediatly were fent him; Now af- Anill examter his departure he presented Captaine Smith with the like luggage, but not finding his humour ple to sell obeyed in fending him Weapons, he caused his people with twentie deuices to obtaine them; at uages. last by Ambuscadoes at our very Ports they would take them perforce, surprize vs at worke, or Pombatans the any way, which was fo long permitted that they became fo infolent, there was no Rule, the com- cherie, mand from England was fo straight not to offend them, as our authority Bearers (keeping their houses) would rather be any thing then Peace-breakers: this vncharitable charity prevailed, till well it chanced that they medled with Captaine Smith , who without farther deliberation gaue The Goner-

them such an incounter, as some hee so hunted up and downe the Ile, some hee so terrified with nours weakthem used an incounter, as some neet to nuntee v pand downer that My and the state of this foraging differ-whipping, beating and imprisonment, as for reuenge they surprized two of his foraging differ-derly Souldiers, and hauing assembled their forces, boldly threatned at our Ports to force Smith to tuperesse to re-deliuer seuen Sauages, which for their villanies he detained Priloners. But to try their fue the Sourges ries, in leffe then halfe an houre he fo hampered their infolencies, that they brought the two pri- injolencies

(I faw it) with the promilers yealding fandy

1712

Powhatan, to obtaine him our owne weapons to cut our owne throats, with the manner how where, and when, which we plainly found most true and apparant. Yet hee fent his Messengers Powbatant ex- and his deerest Daughter Pocabuntas to excuse him, of the injuries done by his Subjects described their liberties, with the affurance of his loue. After Smith had given the Prifoners what correction he thought fit, vied them well a day or two after, he then delivered them to Pocabuntas. for whole take only hee fained to faue their lives and grant them liberty. The patient counfell. that nothing would moone to warre with the Sanages, would gladly have wrangled with Captaine Smith for his cruelty, yet none was flaine to any mans knowledge, but it brought them in fuch feare and obedience, as his very name would fufficiently affright them. The fraught of this thin being concluded to be Cedar, by the diligence of the Master, and Captaine Smub, thee was Aftip fraught quickly reladed; Mafter Scrimener was neither idle nor flow to follow all things at the Fort, the thip falling to the Cedar Ile, Captaine Martin having made shift to bee sicke neere a yeere . and now, neither Pepper, Sugar, Cloues, Mace, nor Nutmegs, Ginger, nor Sweet meats in the Countrey (to enjoy the credit of his supposed Art) at his earnest request, was most willingly admitted to returne for England, yet having beene there but a yeere, and not past halfe a yeere fince the ague lett him (that he might fay fomewhat he had feene) he went twice by water to Pathabeth a place neere feuen miles from lames Towne, but left the dew should diftemper him. was euer forced to returne before night. Thus much I thought fit to expresse, hee expressy commanding me to record his Icurnies, I being his man, and he sometimes my Master. One hundred and twentie were landed in the last supply. Thomas Studly. Avas Todkill.

foners defiring peace without any farther composition for their Prisoners, who being threatned

and examined their intents and plotters of their villanies, confelled they were directed only by

tures of Cap. Martin.

The accidents which nagned had a while tyed both Marinand him to the Rules of Proportion, but now Smith being to in the discoure depart, the Prelidents authority so overswayed Master Scrineners discretion as our store, our time, rie of the Bay. our strength and labours were idlely consumed to fulfill his phantasies. The second of lune 1608. Chep 5.

Thane a Diarie Smith left the Fort to performe his Discouery; with this company. Walter Rullell Doctor of Phyof this and the ficke. Ralph Morton, Thomas Memford. William Cantrill. Richard Fetherstone. I ames Bourne. Mifollowing Dife chael Sicklemore. Anas Todkill. Robert Small, James Watkins, John Powell, James Read black Smith, 29 coucrie of the Richard Keale Fishmonger. Ionas Profit fisher.

Thefebeing in an open Barge of two tunnesburthen leaving the Phanix at Cape Henrie, we ning things more particu- croffed the Bay to the Easterne shoare, and fell with the sles called Smiths Hes: the first people larly & largely we law there were two growme and fout Sauages voon Cape Charles, with long Poles like lautbut I was loth lings, headed with bone, they boldly demanded what we were, and what we would , but after ings, neaded with bone, they boldly demanded what we were, and what we would, but after to be redious, many circumftances, they in time feemed very kind, and directed vs to Acarmacke, the liabitation fince in this, on of the Werows where we were kindly intreated; this King was the comelieft proper civil Saunge we incountred : his Country is a pleasant fertile clay soyle, He told vs of a strange accident Cape charles. lately happened him, and it was? Two dead children by the extreme passions of their Parents, Aftrange mor- or fome dreaming Vilions, Phantalie, or affection mooved them agains to reuisit their dead car- 40 kailes, whose benummed bodies reflected to the eyes of the beholders such pleasant delightfull ralirie of Sacountenances, as though they had regained their vitall spirts. This is a Miracle drew many to behold them, all which, (being a great part of his people) not long after died, and not any one escaped. They spake the Language of Powhatan, wherein they made such descriptions of the Bay, Iles, and Rivers that often did vs exceeding pleafure. Paffing alongst the Coast, searching euery Inlet, and Bay fit for Harbours and Habitations, feeing many Iles in the midft of the Bay, we bore vp for them, but ere we could attaine them, such an extreame gust of Winde, Raine, Thunder, and Lightning happened, that with great danger wee escaped the vnmercifull raging

An extreame Ruffels Hes.

winhearamara. Anextreme want of fresh water.

> The Barge a guft.

Limbe Ilcs.

of that Ocean-like water. The next day fearthing those inhabitable Hes (which wee called Ruffells Hes) to promide fresh 50 water, the defect whereof forced vs to fellow the next Eafterne Channell, which brought vs to the River Wighcocomoco, the people ac first with great furie feemed to affault vs., yet at lait with Songs, Dances, and much mirth, became very tractable, but fearthing their habitations for water, we could fill but three, and that fuch puddle, that never till then, we knew the want of good water. We digged and fearched many places, but ere the end of two dayes wee would have refuled two Barricoes of Gold for one of that puidle water of Wigheocomoco. Being past their lies, filling with a high Land vpon the Mayne, we found a great pond of tresh water, but so exceeding hot, that we supposed it some Bath ; that place we called Point-ployer, in bonour of that Honourable House of Moulaye, that in an extreame extremitie oncerobbed our Captaine: Breing thus refreshed in crossing over from the Mayne to other lies, the winde and waters fo much increased 50 with Thunder, Lightning, and Raine, that our fore-mast blew ouer-boord, and such mightie waves over-wrought vs in that small Barge, that with great labour, wee kept her from ficking by freeing out the water : two dayes were were inforced to inhabit these winhabited Iles, which (for the extremitie of Gusts, Thunder, Raine, Stormes, and ill weather) we called Limbo. Reputring our fore-layle with our thirts, we fet fayle for the Mayne, and fell with a faire Riuet on the East called Kuskaranaocke. The people ran as amazed in troupes, from place to place, and disters got into the tops of Trees, they Gap. Smith.

were not foaring of their Arrowes, nor the greatest passion they could expresse of anger, long they bot we full riding at an Anchor out of their reach, making all the figures of friendship wee could. The next day ther same unarried, with enery one a Bithet, densing in a ring to draw us on thore, but feeing there was nothing in them but villanie, we discharged a volley of Musters charged with Pestoll shot, whereat they all last umbling on the ground, cresping some on may, some avoiber into a great cluster of Reeds bard he where there companions lay in Ausbuscado. Towards the Enening were weighted and approached the 10 fore, discharging fine or fixe for amongst the Reeds we landed, where they laid a many of backets , but far not a Sanage, a smoke appearing on the other side the River we went thither, where wee found two or jan not a same, , junto a fire, there we left some pieces of Copper, Beads, Bels, and Looking-glaffes , and then went into the Bay. When it was darke we came to an Anchor againe. Earely in the morney, foure Sanages came to vs in their Canoa, whom we vsed with such courteste, nor knew what we were, nor bad done, basing beene in the Bay a filbing, bad us flay, and ere long they would returne, which they did, and (ome twentie more with them, with whom after a little conference, two or three hundred men, women, and children came clustering about vs, energ one presenting vs somewhat, which a little Bead would so well require, we became (uch friends, they would contend who should fetch us water, stay with us for bostage,

conduct our men any whether, and give us the best content. 30 By it inhabit the people of Soraphanigh, Naufe, Arfek, and Nautaquake, that much extolled a Thefift nogreat Nation called Mafanometes, in fearch of whom wee returned by Limbo, but finding this tice of the Batterne thore that low broken lies, and the Mayne for most part without fresh water, we pasted by the Straits of Limbo, for the Westerne shore. So broad is the Bay here, that we could scarce perceine the great high Cliffes on the other fide; by them wee anchored that night, and called them Rubards Cliffes. Thirtie leagues we layled more Northwards, not finding any Inhabitants, yet the Coast well watered, the Mountaines very barren, the Valleyes very fertile, but the Woods extreme thicke, full of Wolnes, Beares, Deere, and other wild Beafts. The first Inlet we

found, we called Bolm, for that the clay (in many places) was like (if not) Bole-Armoniacke : zoim River; when we first fet faile, some of our Gallants doubted nothing, but that our Captaine would make 30 too much bast home; but having lien not about twelve dayes in this small Barge, oft tyred at their Oares, their Bread spoyled with wet, so much that it was rotten (yet so good were their stomackes that they could digest it) did it with continual complaints so importune him now to

returne, as caufed him bespeake them in this manner. Gentlemen, if you would remember the memorable Historie of Sir Ralfe Lane, how his company impersuned him to proceed in the Discouerie of Morattico, alleaging, they had yet a Dogge, that beeing boyled with Saxafras leanes, would richly feed them in their returnes; what a shame would it bee for you (that have beene fo [nifescians of my tendernesse) to force me returne with a moneths promision, scarce able to fay where we have beene, nor jet heard of that we were fent to feeke; you cannot fay but I have [bared with you of the worst is past; and for what is to come of lodging, diet, or what somer, I um co ten. 40 ted you allot the worst part to my selfe as for your feares that I would lose my self in these unknown large waters, or be swall owedup in some stormie gust, abandon those childish feares, for worse then is past cannot happen, and there is as much danger to returne, as to proceed forward. Regains therefore your old frists; for returne I will not, (if God affist me) sill I bane seene the Massawomekes, found Patawomeck, or

the head of this great water, you conceit to be endleffe. Three or foure dayes we expected wind and weather, whole adverse extremities added such discouragements to our discontents as three or foure fell extreme ficke, whose pittifull complaints caused vs to returne, leaving the Bay some ten miles broad at nine or ten fathome water. The fixteenth of June we fell with the River of Paramemeck: feare being gone, and our men re- The discoue is couered, we were all contented to take some paines to know the name of this nine miles broad of Patamoniche River, we could fee no Inhabitants for thirtie miles fayle; then we were conducted by two Sa-

50 tages up a little bayed Creeke toward Onammament, where all the Woods were laid with Am- Ambufcadoes bulcadoes to the number of three or foure hundred Sauages, but fo firangely painted, grimed, and of Sauages. disguized, shouting, yelling, and crying, as we rather supposed them so many Deuils, they made many brauadoes, but to appeale their turie, our Captaine prepared with as feeming willingnes (as they) to encounter them, the grazing of the bullets v pon the River, with the Eccho of the woods so amazed them, as downe went their Bowes and Arrowes; (and exchanging hostage) lames Waskins was fent fixe miles up the Woods to their Kings Habitation : wee were kindly vied by thele Sauages, of whom we understood, they were commanded robetray vs, by Pombaians direction, and he fo directed from the discontents of Ismes Towne. The like incounters we found 60 at Patawomecke, Cecocamne, and divers other places, but at Mojaoner Nacothtant and Tana, the A treatherous

people did their best to content vs. The cause of this Discourre, was to tearch a gilistering Mettall, the Sauages toll ve they had from Patamomeck, (the which Nomport allured that hee had tryed to hold halfe tiluer) also to search what Furres, Metals, Rivers, Rockes, Nations, Woods, Filhings, Fruits, Victuals and other Commodities the Land affoorded, and whether the Bay

Anchundant

were endlesse, how farre it extended. The Mine we found nine or ten miles up in the Country from the River, but it proved of no value; to which he marched, leading his hinds in Chaines which they were to have for their paines, and so returning loded with that Ore they had. Some Otters, Beuers, Martins, Lizards, and Sabels we found, and in divers places that abundance of fill lying fo thicke with their heads aboue the water, as for want of nets (our Barge driving a. mongst them) we attempted to catch them with a Frying-pan, but wee found it a bad instruplenty of fifth. ment to catch fish with. Neither better fish, more plenty, or variety, had any of vs ever seene. in any place fwimming in the water, then in the Bay of Chefabeack, but there not to be cauche

To expresse all our quarrels, treacheries, and incounters amongst those Sauages, I should be to How to deale too tedious; but in briefe, at all times we so incountred them and curbed their infolencies, as they with the Saua- concluded with prefents to purchase peace, yet wee loft not a man. At our first meeting, our Captaine euer observed this order, to demand their Bowes and Arrowes, Sword, Mantles or Furs. with some childe for hostage; whereby he could quickly perceive when they intended any villanie, Hauing finished this discouery (though our victuall was neere spent) he intended to have feene his imprisonments, acquaintance voon the River of Toppahannocke. But our Boate thy resfon of the ebbe) chanfing to ground vpon a many shoules lying in the entrance, wee spied many A Stingrave. fifthes lurking amongst the weedes on the Sands, our Captaine sporting himselfe to catch them ry hurtfull, one by nailing them to the ground with his Sword, fet vsall a fishing in that manner; by this dein foulenessess unfe. we tooke more in an houre, then we all could eate: but it chanced, the Captaine taking a fo wolne with fin from his Sword (not knowing her condition) being much of the fashion of a Thornebacke with a longer taile, whereon is a most poyloned sting of two or three inches long, which shee his his ke fifth (trooke an inch and halfe into the wrift of his arme the which in foure hours had to extreamely ermans-bones, fwolne his hand, arme, shoulder, and part of his body, as wee all with much forrow concluded that he therof his funerall, and prepared his grave in an Ile hard by (as himselfe appointed) which then wee died, in 1613. called Stingeray Ile, after the name of the fish. Yet by the helpe of a precious Oyle which Doctour Rulleils applied, ere night his tormenting paine was fo well affwaged that hee eate the fish they could not to his supper, which gave no leffe joy and content to vs. then ease to himselfe. Having neither bring his coffin Surgeon nor Surgery but that preferuative Oyle, we prefently fet faile for Iames Towne; palout of the dore fing the mouth of Pyankatanck, and Pamaunte Rivers, the next day we fafely arrived at Keengh. 30 tan. The simple Sauages, seeing our Captaine hure, and another bloudy (which came by breakwall (as they ing his shin) our number of Bowes, Arrowes, Swords, Targets, Mantles and Forres, would needesimagine wee had bin at warres, the truth of these accidents would not fatisfie them, The Saurges, but impatiently they importuned vs to know with whom wee fought, finding their aptneffe to affighted with beleeue, we failed not (as a great fecret) to tell them any thing that might affright them, what spoyle wee had got and made of the Masawomeckes, this rumour went faster up the River then our Barge; that arrived at Werafkorack the twentieth of July, where trimming her with painted itreamers, and such denises, we made the Fort jealous of a Spanish Frigot : where we all fafely arrived the twenty one of July.

A needeleffe

picion.

There we found the laft supply, all ficke, the rest, some lame, some bruised, all wnable to doe 40 any thing, but complaine of the pride and vnreasonable needelesse cruelty of their filly President, that had riotoufly confumed the store, and to fulfill his follies about building him an wnnecessary Pallace in the Woods, had brought them all to that mifery : That had not we arrived, they had as strangely tormented him with reuenge. But the good newes of our discovery, and the good hope we had (by the Sauages relation) our Bay had itretched to the South Sea, appealed their furie; but conditionally that Ratliffe should be deposed, and that Captaine Smith would take vpon him the government: their request being effected, hee Substituted Master Scrimener his deare friend in the Prefidencie, equally distributing those private provisions that the other had ingroffed; appointing more honest officers to affait Scrimener (who then lay extreamely tormented with a callenture) and in regard of the weakenesse of the company, and heate of the yeare, 50 The Company they being vnable to worke; he left them to live at eafe, but imbarked himselfe to finish his lefeto line at discouery. Written by Walter Russell and Anas Todkill.

What hapned Chap. 6.

The Sauages

The twentieth of Ioly Captaine Smith fet forward to finish the discovery with twelve men their names were Nathaniell Powell, Thomas Momford, Richard Fether stone, Michaell Sickle age to discourt more, lames Bourne, Anas Todkill, Edward Pyfing, Richard Keale, Anthony Bagnall, lames Walkins, William Ward, Ionas Profit. The winde being contrary caused our flay two or three daies at Kecoughtan, the Weromans featting vs with much mirth, his people were perswaded wee went purpolely to be reuenged of the Maffanomeckes, in the evening we firing two or three rackets, To terrified the poore Saluages, they supposed nothing impossible we attempted, and defired to 60 affilt vs. The first night we ancored at Stingeray He, the next day croffed Paramomecks River, and halted for the River Bolw, we went not much farther before wee might perceive the Bay to deuide in two heads, and arriving there wee found it deuided in foure, all which wee fearched fo farre as we could faile them; two of them we found vninhabited, but in croffing the Bay to the

CHAP.A. Presents of Venison. Beares-flesh. & c. Captaine adored by the Sauages 1755

other, we encountered feuen or eight Canoaes full of Maffawomeckes, wee feeing them preother, we encounter them, yet were we with he made way with our faile to incounter them, yet were we with he mallbut fine (with our Captaine) that could stand: for within two dayes after wee left Kecoughtan, warners. the reft (being all of the last fupply) were ficke almost to death (vintill they were featoned to the the reit (being and) the last tupping, were the action of the last support the Barge Good policy. fide to make vs sceme many, and on each fide a man a loded Musket; and so weethinke the Indians supposed those hats to be men, for they fled withall possible speede to the shoare, and there flayed, flaring at the failing of our Barge, till wee anchored right against them. Long it was ere we could draw them to come vnto vs , at last they lent two of their company vnarmed in 10 a Canoa, the rest all followed to second them if neede required: These two being but each presented with a Bell, brought aboord all their fellowes, presenting the Captaine with Venion, Beares flesh, Bowes, Arrowes, Clubbes, Targets, and Beare-skins, we understood them nothing at all but by fignes, whereby they fignified vnto vs that they had beene at warres with the Tockwoods, the which they confirmed by shewing their green wounds; but the night parting vs,

we imagined they appointed the next morning to meete, but after that we neuer faw them. Entring the River of Tockwood the Sauages all armed in a fleete of Boates round invironed vs: An incounter it chanced one of them could speake the language of Pombatan, who perswaded the rest to 2 meets. friendly parley: but when they faw vs furnished with the Masamemeckes weapons, and we fained the invention of Kecouchean to have taken them perforce; they conducted vs to their 20 pallizedoed Towne, mantelled with the Barkes of trees, with Scaffolds like Mounts, brefted about with Barkes very formally, their men, women, and children, with Dances, Songs, Fruits, Fifth, Furres, and what they had kindely entertained vs, foreading Mats for vs to fit on, fretch-

ing their best abilities to expresse their loues.

Many Hatchets, Kniues, and peeces of Iron, and Braffe, we faw, which they reported to haue from the Safquefahanocker a mighty people, and mortall enemies with the Mallawomecker: The Salquefabanecks, inhabit vpon the chiefe Spring of thefe foure, two dayes journey higher then our Barge could passe for Rockes. Yet we preuailed with the interpreter to take with him another interpreter to perf wade the Safquefabanecks to come to vifite vs, for their language 20 is different : three or foure dayes we expected their returne, and then fixty of these Gyantlike people came downe with prefents of Venison, Tobacco-pipes, Baskets, Targets, Bowes and Ar-

rowes, fine of their Werowances came boldly aboord vs, to croffe the Bay for Tockwood, leaning

their men and Canoses, the winde being so violent that they durst not passe. Our order was daily to have prayer, with a Pfalme; at which folemnity, the poore Sauages much wondered : our prayers being done, they were long builed with confultation till they had contriued their businesse; then they began in most passionate manner to hold up their hands

to the funne with a most fearefull fong, then imbracing the Captaine, they began to adore him in like manner, though he rebuked them, yet they proceeded till their Song was finished, which done with a most strange furious action, and a hellish voyce began an Oration of their loues : that ended, with a great painted Beares skinne they couered our Captaine, then one ready with 40 a chaine of white Beades (weighing at least fix or feuen pound) hung it about his necke, the o-

thers had eighteene mantles made of divers forts of Skins fowed together, all these with many other toyes, they laid at his feete, flroking their ceremonious hands about his necke for his creation to be their Gouernour, promiting their aides, victuals, or what they had to be his, if he would flay with them to defend and reuenge them of the Massawomeckes: But we left them at Tockwogh, they much forrowing for our departure, yet we promifed the next yeare agains to visit them; many descriptions and discourses they made vs of Arquanabucke, Mas awomecke, and other people, fignifying they inhabited the River of Cannida, and from the French to have Cannida. their Hatchets, and fuch like tooles by trade, thefe know no more of the territories of Pombatan then his name, and he as little of them.

Thus having fought all the Inlets and Rivers worth noting, we returned to discourt the Ri- Partus unit. R. ver of Pawturunt; these people we found very tractable, and more civill then any, wee pro-

mifed them, as also the Paramomeckes, thenext years to revenge them of the Massawomeckes. In the discovery of this River, which some call Rapahanocke, others Tapahanocke; we were kinde- The exceeding by entertained by the people of Moraughtacun ; here we encountred our old friend Mosko , a lustie Sa- loue of the Sawage of Wighcocomoco, upon the Riner of Parawomecke, wee supposed him some Frenchmans Sonne, uage Mojco. because he had a thicke, blacke, bush Beard, and the Sauages seldome have any at all, of which bee was not a little proud to see so many of bie Countrie men: wood, and water bee would fetch vis, guide vi any whether, nay cause diners of his Countrie men to belpe vs too, against winde or tyde, from place to place, till we came to Patawomeke. There be rested, till me returned from the head of the River, and then

60 occasioned us conduct to the Mine, which we supposed Antimony. Now in this place bee failed not to Mine of Antidoe vs all the good he could, perswading vs in any sase not to goe to the Rapahanocks, for they would mony. kill vs, for being friends with the Moraughlacuds, that but lately had ftolne three of the Kings women. This we did thinke was but that his friend: might onely have our trade, or so cooffed the Riner to the Rapahanocks : there some twelve or fixteene standing on the shore, directed us to a little narrow cricke,

Our fight with

where was good landing, and commodities for us, in three or foure Canaacs which we faw there. But ac. cording to our custome, we demanded to exchange a man, w figne of lone, which after they had a little con sulted foure or fine came to the middles to fetch our man, and leave us one of them, shewing we neede not feare them, for they had neither Clubs, Bowes, nor Arrowes: notwithstanding Anas Tockillb. ing fine on there to fee if he could discouer any ambuscados; desired to goe over the plaine to fetch some wood, but they were unwilling, except we would come into the creeke, where the Boate might come close aftere. Tod. kill by degrees having gotten some two stones throwes up the plaine, perceined two or three bundred men as be thought behinde the trees, fo that offering to returne to the Boate, the Sanages affayed to carry him away perforce be called to vs, we were betraid, and by that be had foken the word, our bostage was ourboard but Watkins bis keeper flew bim in the water, immediatly we let fly among to them fo that they fled of to Todkill efcaped ret they hot fo fast that be fell flat on the ground ere be could recover the Boate there the Mallawomecks Targets flood us in good flead, for upon Molcos words we had fet them about thefore are of our Boate like a fore-castell, from whence we securely beate the Sanages from off the plaine wahout a. ny burt. yet they flot more then 1000. Arrowes, and then fled into the woods, arming our felmes with thefe light Targets (which are made of little (mall flicks, women betwitt firings of their bempe and filke graffe, as is our cloth but to firmly that no Arrow can possibly pierce them) we refcued Todkill who was blonded by some of them that were shot, but as it pleased God, be had no hurt, and followed them up to the woods. we found some wou ded some flaine of in divers places much bloud : it feemes all their Arrows were frent, for we hard no more of them : their Canoas we tooke the Arrowes which we found we broke except those we kept for Moico, to whom we gave the Canones for his kindnes, that entertained us in the best trium- an phing manner and warlike order in armes be could procure of the Moroughtacunds. The rest of the day wee spent in accommodating our Boate, instead of tholes we made stickes like bed-

Stanes, to which we fastned fo many of our Milliam mecke Targets, that insuroned ber as wasteloathes:

Fetherilones

the most.

Bay.

the next morning we went up the River and our friend Moleo followed us along the hoare, but at last defired to one with vs in our Boite. But as wee paffed by Pilacacke, Machopeake and Wecuppom, three Townes scituated upon high white clay Clifts, the other side all a low plaine marish, and the River there but narrow, thirty or forty of the Rapahanockes bud fo prepared them (elues with branches as we tooke them for little Bulbes growing among ft the Sedge : feeing their Arrowes fir the the Targets and drop in the Rimer. Masso fell that on his face, crying the Rapahanock swhich prefently we office to be the Bufhes, which at our first Voter fell downe in the Sedge; when we were gone neere balfe a mile, they hewed them clust, 30 daneing and linging very merrily. The Kings of Piffaffacke, Naudraughtacund and Cuttatawomen, vled us kindely, and all the people negleited not any thing to Molco to bring us to them. Betweet Secobecke and Massacecke is a [mall lie or two, which canfet b the Riner to be broder then ordinary : there it pleased God to take one of our company, called M. Richard Fetheritone, that all the time bee badbene in the Country had behaved himselfe very honestly, valiantly. or industriously, where in a little Bay, called bereupen Fetherstones Bay, we burred him with a volly of shot, the rest not with standing their ill diet and bad lodging cronded in fo [mall a Barge in fo many dingers never resting, but almaies toffed to & againe, bad all well recovered their bealths. The next day we failed so bigh as our Boat would flote, there setting up Crosses. Then we disconcred the Riner of Payankatank so high as it was Nauigable, but the people were For feare of most abunting, but a few old men, women and shildren, that were tending their Corne; of which, 40 they promised us part when wee would fetch it, as had done all the other Nations where ener we had haue leit out yet beene. In a faire calme, rowing towards Point Comtort, wee anchored in Guinolds Bay; but such a sodaine gust surprised us in the night, with thunder and rame, that wee never thought more to have seen sames Towne; yet running before the winde, we sometimes see the Land by the subject of fire from beaven, by which light onely wee kept from the splitting shoare, until it pleased God in that blacke darkeneffe to preserve us by that light to finde Point Comfort : there refreibing our felues , because wee bad onely but heard of the Chisapearckes and Nandsamunds , wee thought it as fit to know all our Neighbours neere home, as so many Nations abroad. This wee did (the particulars are omitted) and arrived lafe the feuenth of September, 1608. where wee found Mafter Skrinener, and divers others well recovered, many dead, fome ficke : The late Preli- 50 dent prisoner for muteny ; by the honest diligence of Master Skriuener the haruest gathered, but the stores proussion much spoiled with raine. Thus was that yeare (when nothing wanted) confumed and spent, and nothing done (such was the government of Captaine Raicliffe) but onely this Discouery, wherein to expresse all the dangers, accidents, and incounters

Their procee-

The Prefidenev furrendred Me tenth of September 1608, by the election of the Councell, and request of the Comps. 60 20 Cap. Smith. ny, Captaine Smith received the Letters Patents, and tooke vpon him the place of Prelithe arrival and returne of the dent, which till then by no meanes he would accept, though he were often importuned therefecond supply: unto. Now the bailding of Raciffes Pallace was staid as a thing needelestic. The Church was repaired, the Storehouse recoursed; building prepared for the supply we expected. The Fort

this small number passed in that small Barge, with such watrie diet in these great waters and barbarous Countries (till then to any Christian vtterly vnknowne) I rather referre their merit to the censure of the courteous and experienced Reader, then I would be redious, or partiall, being a party. By Nasbaniell Powell, and Anas Todkill.

reduced to the forme of this figure, the order of watch renued, the fquadrons (each fetting of

reduced to the former of the whole Company every Saturday exercised in a field prepared for that left out. purpole; the Boates trimmed for trade, which in their journey encountred the fecond funply, that brought them backeto discouer the Countrey of Monacan. How, or why, Captaine Nempero obtained such a prisuate Commission as not to returne without a lumpe of Gold, a cerrainty of the South-Sua or one of the loft Company of Sir Walter Rawley I know nor, nor why hebrought such a fi e pieced Barge, not to beare vs to that South-Sea, till wee had borne her ouer the Mountaines : which how farre they extend is yet vaknowne) as for the Coronation Civiliay is not ouer the Mountaines: which how tarre they extend is yet vakhowne) as for the Coronation the way to win of Powhatav, and his Presents of Bason, Ewer, Bed, Cloathes, and such costly nouelvies, they Sauges, nor 10 had bin much better well spared, then so ill spent. For we had his fauour much better, onely magnificence

of or a poore poece of Copper, till this stately kinde of soliciting made him to much our ualue and bouncy to himlelfe, that he respected vs as much as nothing at all; as for the hiring of the Poles and reclaime Bar-Duteb to make Pitch and Tarre, Giaffe, Mils, and Sope-aftes, was most necessary and well, deen are plea-But to fend them and feuenty more without victuall to worke, was not fo well confidered; yet fed with toves this could not have burt vs, had they bin two hundred (though then we were one hundred and and awed with thirty that wanted for our felues.) For wee had the Sauages in that order (their haruest being rods; and this newly garbered) that we feared not to get victuall sufficient, had wee bin fine hundred. Now coursest toics newly gathered) that we reared not to get victual numeron, had wee bit his monared. Now a stream of the was there no way to make vs milerable, but to neglect that time to make our Provision, whilst alwaybest proit was to be had; the which was done to performe this strange Discouery, but more strange Co- speed with

20 ronation; to loofe that time, ipend that victuall weehad, threand flarue our men, having no wilde Indians meanes to carry victuall, munition, the hurt or ficke, but their owne backes, how or by whom either to doe meanes to carry victuals, munition, the nurr of licke, dut then owner backers, how or by which them, or to they were invented, I know not; But Captaine Newport we onely accounted the author, who make them to effect thele projects had fogilded all our hopes, with great promifes, that both Company good to vs or and Councell concluded his resolution. I confesse wee little understood then our estates, to con- themselves. clude his conclusion, against all the incommensences the foreseeing President alleadged. There This vanity of was added to the Counfell one Captaine Walds, and Captaine Winne, two ancient Souldiers and ours made Pow was added to the Counfell one Captaine Watas, and Captaine Winner, two ancient Southerns and Value Captaine Watas, and Captaine Winner, two ancient Southerns and Value Captaine Watas, and Captaine Winner, two ancient Southerns and Value Captaine Watas, and Captaine Winner, two ancients Southerns and Value Captaine Watas, and Captaine Winner, two ancients Southerns and Captaine Watas, and Captaine Winner, two ancients Southerns and Captaine Watas, and Captaine Winner, two ancients Southerns and Captaine Watas, and Captaine Winner, two ancients Southerns and Captaine Watas, and Captaine Winner, two ancients Southerns and Captaine Winner, two ancients Southerns and Captaine Watas, and Captaine Winner, two ancients Southerns and Captaine Watas, and Captaine Winner, two ancients Southerns and Captaine Watas, and Captain mitted to have his voyce, and Master Scrinener defirous to fee strange Countries, so that al- his Corne, &c. though Smith was Prelident, yet the Counfell had the authority, and ruled it as they litted; as No way but

30 for cleering Smiths obiections, how Pitch, and Tarre, Wanfcot, Clapboord, Glaffe, and Sope- one to ouerashes, could be prouided to relade the Smp; or prouision got to line with all, when none was in throw the basithe Countrey, and that which we had, fpent before the Shippes departed: The answere was. Captaine Newport vndertooke to fraught the Pinnace with Corne, in going and returning in his Discouery, and to retraught her againe from Werowocomers; also promiting a great propostion of victuall from his Ship, inferring that Smiths propositions were onely deutles to hinder his journey, to effect it himielfe; and that the cruelty Smith had vied to the Sauages, in his absence, might occasion them to hinder his defignes : For which, all workes were lett, and one hundred and swenty chosen men were appointed for his guard; and Smith, to make cleere these feeming fuspitions, that the Sauages were not so desperate, as was pretended by Captaine New-

40 port, and how willing hee was to further them to effect their projects (because the Coronation would confume much time) undertooke their mellage to Powbatan, to intreate him to come to with four ego-Iames Towne to receiue his Prefents, accompanied onely with Captaine Waldo, Mafter Andrew ethto Bamba-Buckler, Edward Brinton , and Samuell Collier ; with these foure hee went over land, against tan. Werawocomoco; there passed the River of Pamaunke in the Sausges Canoaes, Powhatan being thirty miles off, who, presently was sent for, in the meane time his women entertained Smub in

In a faire plaine field they made a fire, before which he fitting voon a Mat; fuddenly among it The womens the woods was heard fuch a hideous noile and shriking, that they betooke them to their armes, entertainment

fuppoling Porbatan with all his power came to furprife them; but the beholders which were as Weranoco-50 many, men, women, and children, fatisfied the Captaine there was no fuch matter, being prefently prefented with this anticke, thirty yong women came naked out of the woods (onely couered behinde & hefore with a few greene leaves) their bodies all painted, tome white, tome red, some blacke, some party colour, but every one different, their leader had a faire paire of Stagges hornes on her head, and another Skinne at her girdle, another at her arme, a quiver of Artowes at her backe, and Bowes and Arrowes in her hand, the next in her hand a Sword, ano- A wilde Dina ther a Clubbe, another a Pot-sticke, all horndalike, the rest every one with their severall deuifes. Thete Feinds with most helish cries and shouts rushing from amongst the trees, cast person. themselves in a ring about the fire, singing and dancing with excellent ill variety, oft falling in-

to their infernall paffions, and then folemnely againe to fing and dance. Having ipent neere an houte in this Maskarado, as they entred, in like manner they departed. Having reaccommodated themselves, they solemnly inuited Small to their lodging, but no sooner was hee within the house, but all these Nimphes more tormented him then ever, with crowding, and preffing, and hanging vpon him, most tediously crying, Loue you not mee? This falutation ended, the feath was fee, confifting of Fruite in Baskets, Fish and Flesh in woodden Platters, Ddddddd 2

Captain Smith mellage.

and banquet being ended, with Firebrands (instead of Torches) they conducted him to his The next day came Powhatan; Smith delivered his Message of the Presents sent him. and redelivered him Namontacke, defiring him to come to his Father Nemport to accept those Prefents, and conclude their revenge against the Monacans: whereupon, the subtill Sause

Bosnes and Peafe there wanted not (for twenty Hogges) nor any Sauage daintie which their

invention could devile; fome attending, others finging and dancing about them; this mirth

Perchateut anfwer-

If your King have fent mee prefents, I also am a King, and this my land; eight dayes I will flav to receive them; your Father is to come to mee, not I to him, nor yet to your Fort, neither will bue at such a baite: as for the Monacans, I can resenge my owne insuries, and as for Asquants chucke, where you say your Brother was saine, it is a contrary way from those parts you suppose it. But for any falls water beyong the Mountaines, the relations you have had from my people are falls; whereupon he began to draw plots upon the ground (according to his discourse) of all those R gions : many other difcourses they had (yet both desirous to give each other content in Complementall curtesies) and so Captaine Smith returned with this answer.

Voon this Captaine Newport fent his prefents by water, which is neere one hundred miles.

parell (with much adoe) put on him, being periwaded by Namontacke, they would doe him no 20

with fitty of the belt shot, himselfe went by land, which is but twelve miles, where he met with

our three Barges to transport him ouer. All things being fit for the day of his Coronation, the

hurt. But a foule trouble there was to make him kneele to receive his Crowne, he neither know-

ing the Maiefly nor meaning of a Crowne, nor bending of the knee, indured fo many perfiva-

fions, examples, and instructions, as tired them all : At last, by leaning hard on his shoulders, he

he fee all was well, then remembring himfelfe, to congratulate their kindenesse, he gave his old

Shooes and his Mantle to Captaine Newport. But perceiuing his purpole was to discouer the

then Namontacke, and so (after some complementall kindenesse on both sides) in requitall of his 20

prefents, he prefented Newport with a heape of Wheate eares, that might contains some feuen

ronation. So much was done to buy repentance with more coft prefents were brought, his Bafon, Ewer, Bed and Furniture fet vp, his Scarlet Closke and Apthen worthin. If we feeke Sanages we loofe them.if wee force them to a little flooped, fo they put the Crowne on his head; When by the warning of a Piffoll, the fecke vs. wee shal finde these Boates were prepared with such a Volly of shot, that the King start vp in a horrible feare, till shadowes of men close at our feet.I haue read more fto- Monacans, he laboured to divert his resolution, retuing to lend him either men or guides, more ries of them then perhaps any man, and finde that a cruell m rev in awing Saua-

is better then

that mercifull

by roo much

by too much

or eight bulhels, and as much more we bought ready dreffed in the Towne, wherewith we returned to the Fort. The Ship having disburdened her felfe of feventy persons, with the first Gentlewoman, and ges to feare vs woman feruant that arrived in our Colony ; Captaine Newport with all the Counfell, and one handred and twenty chosen men, set forward for the discouery of Monacan, leaving the Prefis dent at the Fort with eighty (fuch as they were) to relade the Ship. Arriving at the fals, wee cruelty, which marched by land some forty miles in two dayes and a halfe, and so returned downe to the same kindenes hath path we went. Two Townes we discourred of the Monacans, the people neither ving vs well made vs feare nor ill, yet for our fecurity we tooke one of their petty Weromances, and led him bound, to con- to them, or effe duct vs the way. And in our returns fearched many places we supposed Mines, about which we spent some time in refining, hauing one William Callicut a refiner, fitted for that purpole, confidence to bose our selves from that crust of earth which we digged, he perswaded vs to believe hee ex racted some small quantity of Siluer (and not vnlikely tome better ftuffe might be had for the digging) with this Smith S: Newpoore triall being contented to leaue this faire, fertill, well watered Country. Comming to the port may by their examples Fals, the Sauages fained there were divers Ships come into the Bay to kill them at Iames Towne. teach the just Trade they would not, and findetheir Corne we could not, for they had hid it in the woods, and course to be take with fuch: being thus deluded we arrived at lames Towne, halfe ticke, all complaining, and tired with toile, famine, and discontent, to have onely but discovered our gilded hopes, and fruitlesse certainties, the one brecdread, without as the President foretold vs.

No sooner were we landed, but the President dispersed as many as were able, some for Gliffe, Spanish or Pamit terror, the others for Pitch, Tarreand Sope-afnes, leaving them (with the Fort) to the Councels overfight. But thirtie of vs he conducted fine miles from the Fort to learne to make clap-boord, cut downe other difera-Trees, and lie in Woods; among it the reit he had chosen Gabriell Beadell, and John Ruffell the onced in feeking ly two Gallants of this last supply, and both proper Gentlemen : strange were these pleasures to to grace with offices of hu-

which are gracelesse. Neither doth it become vs to vse Sauages with sauagenesse, nor yet with too humaine vsage, but in a middle path (medio tutisfinings ibis) to goe and doe so that they may admire and feare vs, as those whom God, Religion, Civility, and Art, haue made fo farre superiour; yet to abuse them (vnprouoked) as hostile states, or as meere beasts, with cruell and beastly serty, whom nature hath equally made men. This breedes desperate depopulations, as in the Spanish Indies hath beene seene; that gentlenesse and vnequall equity makes them proud and treacherous, as wofull experience hath rought in the late massacre. 60 Our remperance and audice should be qualified with prudence and fortitude. Neither must wee make them beasts, nor very slare them as Christians, till we have made them luch; and the way to make them Christian men, is first to make them civill men, to file off the rult of their humanity, which as children (the like in taming wilde Beafts) must be done with feuere gendencife, and gende fenerity, which may breede in them a louing awe,or awfull lone, at least a luft disead toward vs, that feare may make them know vs. and then the fault is ours if they fee no cause to loue vs.

to their conditions, yet lodging, eating, drinking, working, or playing, they doing but as the President, all these things were carried so pleasantly, as within a weeke they became Masters, making it their delight to heare the Trees thunder as they fell, but the Axes fo oft bliftered there tender fingers, that commonly every third blow had a lowd Oath to drowne the Eccho; forcemedic of which finne the President deuised how to have every mans Oathes numbred, and at night, for every Oath to have a Kan of water powred downe his fleeue, with which eue- A pretie pury Offender was so washed (himselfe and ali) that a man should scarce heare an Oath in Apretie punishment for

By this, let no man thinke that the Prefident, or thefe Gentlemens spent their times as com-10 mon Wood-hackers at felling of Trees, or fuch like other labours, or that they were pressed to any thing as hirelings or common flaues, for what they did (beeing but once a little inured) it. feemed, and they conceited it only as a pleafure and a recreation. Yet thirtie or fortie of fuch vo- One Gentleluntarie Gentlemen would doe more in a day then one hundred of the rest that must be prest to manbetter it by compulfion. Mafter Serinemer, Captaine Waldo, and Captaine Winne at the Fort, every one then twentie in like manner carefully regarded their charge. The Prefident returning from amongst the Woods feeing the time confumed, and no pronision gotten, (and the ship lay idle, and would do nothing presently imbarked himselfe in the Discouery Barge, giving order to the Councell, to fend Master Percie after him with the next Barge that arrived at the Fort; two Barges, he had himfelfe, and twentie men, but arriving at (bickahamina, that dogged Nation was too well acquainted with 20 our wants, refusing to trade, with as much icorne and infolencie as they could expresse. The

President perceiuing it was Powhatans policie to starue vs, told them hee came not Io much for The chiclata-President perceiuing it was Pownstans policie to statue vs, took them necessme not formed for their Corne, as to reuenge his imprisonment, and the death of his men murdered by them, and contribution. fo landing his men, and readie to charge them, they immediatly fled; but then they fent their Ambaffadors, with corne, fifh, fowle, or what they had to make their peace (their corne being that weere bad) they complained extremely of their owne wants yet fraughted our Boates with one hundred bushels of Corne, and inlike manner Master Percies, that not long after vs arrived; they having done the best they could to content vs, within foure or fine dayes were returned to Iames Towne.

All this time our old Tauerne, made as much of all them that had either Money or Ware as A good rauern could be defired; and by this time they were become so perfect on all sides (I meane Souldiers, Saylers, and Sauages) as there was ten times more care, to maintayne their damnable and private Trade, then to prouide for the Colonie things that were necessarie, neither was it a small policie in the Mariners, to report in England wee had fuch plentie, and bring vs fo many men without victuall, when they had so many private Factors in the Fort, that within fixe or seven weekes after the thips returne, of two or three hundred Hatchets, Chiffels, Mactockes, and Pick-axes fearce twentie could bee found, and for Pike-heads, Kniues, Shot, Powder, or any thing (they could fleale from their fellowes) was vendible; They knew as well (and as fectetly) how to con- Abad trade of could fleate from their fellowes) was vendible; I ney knew as well (and as secretary now to collaboration of the Sauages, for Furres, Baskets, Mustaneekes, young beafts or such like Sailets. Commodities, as to exchange them with the Saylers, for Butter, Cheele, Beefe, Porke, Aqua-10 mitz. Beere, B. sker, and Oate-meale; and then faine, that all was fent them from their friends. And though Virginia affoord no Furres for the store, yet one Mariner in one Voyage hath got so many, as he hath confelled to haue fold in England for thirtie pound. And for all this riot and

Stuall his Thip homeward. Those are the Saint-seeming Worthies of Virginia, that have notwith sanding all this, meat, drinke, and pay, but now they beginne to grow wearie, their Trade beeing both perceiued and preuented; none hath beene in Unginia (that hath observed any thing) which knowes not this 50 to be true, and yet the scorne, and shame was the poore Souldiers, Gentlemen and carelesse Gouernours, who were all thus bought and fold, the Aduenturers coezened, and the action ouerthrowne by their false excuses, informations, and directions by this let all the World Judge, how this butineffe could prosper, being thus abused by such pilfering occasions. .

Newports boaffing to leave vs for twelve monethes, though we had eightie nine by his Discourie ficke

and lame, which by one wan for a pound of Copper might much better hans beene done, and bauing but

apint of Corne a day for a man, we were constrained to give bim three Hogsbeads of that Corne to vi-

The proceedings and accidents, with the second supply.

Mafter Scrimener was fent with the Barges and Pinnace to Werawacomoco, where he found the Scrimeners voy-Sauages more readie to fight then trade, but his vigilancie was such, as preuented their projects, age 1018/2020. 60 and by the meanes of Namontack got three or foure Hogsheads of Corne, and as much red paint which (then) was efteemed an excellent die.

Ddddddd 3

Captaine Newport being dispatched with the tryals of Pitch, Tarre, Glasse, Frankincense, and Sope-ashes, with that Clapboord and Wainscot which could bee provided, met with Master Serimener at Point Comfort, and so returned for England, leaving vs in all two hundred, with thotehe brought vs.

Non Camund forced to congribu.ion.

Nansamund, tooke with him Captaine Winne and Master Scrimener, (:hen returning from Captaine Nemport) these people also long denied him Trade (excuting themselves to be to commanded by Powbatan) till we were conftrained to begin with them perforce, and then they would rather fell'ys some, then we should take all; so loading our Boats, with one hundred bushels wee parted friends, and came to lames Towne, at which time, there was a Marriage betweene lobn Lava First marriage, don and Anna Burrowes, being the first Marriage we had in Virginia.

Long he stayed not, but fitting himselfe and Captaine VValdo with two Barges, from Chamano. VVeanocke and all parts there, was found neither Corne nor Sauage, but all fled (being iealous of our intents) till we discouered the River and people of Apparaetuck, where we found little: that which they had , wee equally denided, betwixt the Sauages and vs (but gaue them Cop_ Id per in contideration) Maiter Perce, and Mafter Serinener went also abroad but could finde no.

thing. The President seeing this procrassinating of time, was no course to line, resolved with Captaine VValdo (whom he knew to be fure in time of need) to furprize Pomhatan, and all his prouifion, but Captaine VVinne, and Mafter Scruener (for some private respects) did their best to hinder their project : But the President whom no perswasions could perswade to starue, being inuited by Powhaten to come vnto him, and if he would fend him but men to build him a house bring him a Grindstone, fiftie Swords, some Peeces, a Cocke and a Henne, with Copper and Beads, he would load his thip with Corne, the Prefident not gnorant of his deuices, yet vnwilling to neglect any opportunitie, prefently fent three Durchmen and two English (haung no victuals to imploy them, all for want thereof being idle) knowing there needed no better Castell, then that houle to furprize Powbatan, to eff. Et this project hee tooke order with Captaine Waldo to fecond him if need required; Serimener he left his Substitute; and fer forth with the Pinnace two Barses, and fixe and fortie men which only were fuch as voluntarily offered themselues for his journie the which) by reason of Master Scrineners ill successe) was censured very desperate, they all knowing Smith would not returne emptie how focuer, cauled many of those that he had appointed, to find excuses to stay behind.

iourneto Pa-

The nine and twentieth of December hee set forward for Werdwegomogo, In the Pinnace.

Master George Percie, brother to the Earle of Northumberland. Master Francis West, bromainte. Cb. 8. ther to the Lord De la-Ware. William Phetiplace Captaine of the Pinnace. Ionai Profit Maftet. Robert Ford Clerke of the Councell.

Michaell Pheriplace. Geoff ry Abbot Sergeant. William Tankard. George Tarington. lames

Bourne, George Burton, Thomas Cee, Gentlemen.

John Dods, Edward Brinton, Nathaniell Peacocke. Henry Powell. Danid Ellis, Thomas Gipfon. Iohn Prat. George Acrigge. Iames Reade. Nicholas Hancocke. Iames Walkins. Anthony Bag. gly Sergeant. Thomas Lambert, Edward Pifing Sergeant. Souldiers. Foure Dutchmen and Richard Sanage were lent by Land, to build the house for Ponhatan a-

gainst our arrivall.

This company being victualled but for three or foure dayes lodged the first night at Werakerack, where the President tooke sufficient promsion; This kinde Saurge did his best to divert him from feeing Pombatan, but perceiuing hee could not preuaile, hee aduifed in this manner; Captame Smith, you Shall find Powhatan to ve you kindly, but trust him not, and be sure he have no opportunitie to feize on your armes, for he bath fent for you only to cut your throt; the Captaine thanked him for nis good counfell, yet the better to try his loue, defired Guides to Chomanoke, for hee would fend a present to that King to bind him his friend. To performe this Ioumey, was tent Michael Sicklemore, a very honest valuant, and painfull Souldier, with him two Guides, and directions how to fearch for the loft company of Sir Walter Rawleigh, and Silke Graffe : then weed parted thence, the Prefident affuring the King his perpetuall loue, and left with him Samuel Collier his 50 Page to learne the Language.

Plentie of xi Suall. 148 Fowles

The good

Weraskoyake.

The next night being lodged at Kecoughtan fixe or feuen dayes, the extreme wind, raine, froft, and inow, cauled vs to keepe Christmail, among it the Sauages, where we were never more merrie, nor fed on more plentie of good Oyiters, Fish, Flesh, Wild-foule, and good Bread, nor neuer had better fires in England then in the dry warme imokie houses of Kecouchtan. But deparkined at three ting thence, when we found no houses, we were not curious in any weather, to lie three or foure nights together vponany shore under the Trees by a good fire. The President Anthony Bagly, and Edward Pising, did kill one hundred fortie and eight Fowles at three shootes. At Kukiack the Froit forced vs three or foure dayes also to supprelle the infolencie of those proud Sauiges; to quarter in their houses, and guard our Birge, and cause them give vs what we wanted, yet were 60 wee but twelve with the President, and yet wee neuer wanted Harbour where wee foundary

The twelfth of Ianuary we arrived at Werawocomo, where the River was frozen neere halfe 2 mile from the shore; but to neglect no time, the Prefident with his Barge, fo farre had approa-

CHAP. 4. Salt Ice melted. Demand of Swords and Gunnes.

ched by breaking the Ice as the ebbe left him amongst those Ozie shoales, yet rather then to lie there frozen to death, by his owne example he taught them to march middle deepe, more then a flight fhot through this muddie frozen Oze; when the Barge floted hee appointed two or three Anill march. to returne her aboord the Pinnace, where for want of water in melting the Salt Ice they made Powbatons Subfresh water, but in this march Master Russell (whom none could perswade to stay behind) being theire. fomewhat ill, and exceeding heavie, so over-toyled himselfe, as the rest had much adoe (ere hee got ashore) to regaine life, into his dead benummed spirits, quartering in the next Houses wee found, we fent to Pombatan for prouision, who fent vs plentie of Bread, Turkeyes, and Vension. The next day having feasted vs after his ordinary manner, he began to aske, when we would bee

to gone, fayning hee sent not for vs, neither had hee any Corne, and his people much lesse, vet for fortie Swords hee would procure ve fortie bushels. The President shewing him the men there prefent, that brought him the meffage and conditions, asked him how it chanced hee became fo forgetfull, thereat the King concluded the matter with a merrie laughter, asking for our Commodities, but none hee liked without Gunnes and Swordes, valuing a basket of Corne more precious then a Basket of Copper, faying, hee could eate his Corne, but not his

Captaine Smith feeing the intent of this subtle Swage; beganne to deale with him after this Cap. Smiths manner, Powhatan, Though I had many courses to have made my provision, yet beleeuing your promi- discourse to les to supply my wants, I neglected all, to fatisfie your defire, and to testifie my lone, I fent you my men Pombatin. 20 for your building, neglecting my owne : what your people bad you have engroffed , forbidding them our

Trade, and now you thinke by consuming the time, we shall consume for want, not having to fulfill your strange demands, as for Swords and Gunnes, I told you long agoe, I had none to fare. And you hall know, those I have, can beepe me from want, yet steale, or wrong you I will not nor disclue that friendwe have mutually promised, except you constraine me by your bad vlage.

The King having attentively littled to this Discourse; promited, that both he and his Coun- Powertenses

trey would spare him what they could, the which within two dayes, they should receive, yet ply and flattery Captaine Smith (faith the King) some doubt I have of your comming hither, that makes me not To kindly feeke to releeue you as I would; for many doe informe mee, your comming is not for Trade, but to inuade my people and possesse my Country, who date not come to bring you corne, 30 feeing you thus armed with your men. To cleere vs of this feare, leave aboord your weapons,

for here they are needl-fie we being all friends and for euer Powhatans.

With many such Discourtes they spent the day, quartering that night in the Kings houses, the next day he reniewed his building, which he little intended should proceed; for the Dutchmen finding his plentie, and knowing our want, and perceiuing his preparation to furprize vs. little Wickednesse thinking we could escape, both him and famine (to obtaine his fauour) revealed to him as much of their Dutabas they knew of our estates proceets, and how to prevent them; one of them being of fo good a mon iudgement, spirit, and resolution, and a hireling that was certaine of wages for his labor, and euer well vied, both he and his Countrimen, that the President knew not whom better to trust, and not knowing any fitter for that imployment, had fent him as a fpie to discouer Powhatans in-

40 tent, then little doubting his honeftie, nor could ever be certaine of his villany, till neere halfe a yeere after. Whilst we expected the comming in of the Country, we wrangled out of the King ten quarters of Corne for a Copper Kettle, the which the President perceiuing him much to etfect, valued it at a much greater rate, but (in regard of his fearcitie) he would accept of as much more the next years, or elle the Country of Monacan; the King exceeding liberall of that he had not yeelded him Monacan, Wherewith each feeming well contented; Pombatan began to expostulate the difference betwixt Peace and Warre, after this manner.

Captaine Smith you may understand, that I, having seene the death of all my people thrice, and not Powhetens disone living of those three Generations, but my selfe, I know the difference of Peace and Warre, better then course of any in my Countrie. But now I am old, and ere long I must die, my Brethren, namely Opichapam, O- Poece and Waire. pechankanough, and K karaugh, my two fisters, and their two daughters, are diffinelly each others suc-

50 ceffors, I will their experiences no leffe then mine, and your love to them, no leffe then mine to you: but this brute from Nanfamund that you are come to destroy my Countrie; so much affrighteth at m; people, as they dare not vifit you; what will it anaile you, to take that perforce you may quietly have with lone, or to destroy them that provide you food? what can you get by war, when we can hide our provision and flie to the woods, wherby you must family by wronging is your friends; and why are you thus icalous of our lucs, feeing vs unarmed, and both doe, and are willing fill to feed you with that you cannot get but by our labours? thinke you I am fo simple not to know, it is better to eat good meate, lie well, and sleepe quietly with my women and children, laugh & be merrie with you, have Copper, Hatchets, or what I want, being your friend then be forced to flee from all to lie cold in the woods, feed upon Acornes, roots and such traft, and 60 be so bunted by you, that I can neither rest, eat, nor sleepe; but my tired men must watch, and if a twig but breake, enery one cry there comes Captaine Smith then maft I flie I know not whether, and thus with miferable feare end my miserable life; leaning my pleasures to such your bs as you, which through your rash

unadmisednesse, may quickly as miserably end, for want of that you mener know how to find? Let this

therefore affure jou of our lones, and eneric seere our friendly Trade shall furnish you with Corne,

and now also if you would come in friendly manner to see us, and not thus with your Guns and Swords, as to innade your foes. To this fubtill discourse the President thus replied.

C. Smiths

Sceing you will not rightly conceine of our words, we strive to make you know our thoughts by our deeds. The vow I made you of my lone, both my felfe and my men have kept, as for your promise I find it everie day miolated by some of your subjects, yet we finding your love and kindnesse (our sustaine is so far from being ungratefull) that for your (ake onely, we have curbed our thirfting defire of revenge, elle had they knowne as well the crueltie we vie to our enemies, as our true love and curtefie to our friends. And I thinke your indigement sufficient to conceine as well by the admentures wee have undertaken, as by the aduantage we have by our Armes of jours : that had we intended you any hurt , long ere this wee could have effected it : jour people comming to me at lames Towne, are entertained with their Bowes and Ar- 10 romes without exception ; we esteeming it with you, as it is with vs, to weare our Armes as our appared. As for the dangers of our enemies, in such warres consist our chiefest pleasure, for your riches wee have no vie, as for the hiding your promision, or by your flying to the Woods, wee Shall so unadmisedle Starue as you conclude your friendly care in that behalfe is needleffe; for wee hans armle to find beyond your knowledge.

Many other discourses they had, till at last they began to trade, but the King freing his will would not be admitted as a law, our guard differfed, nor our men difarmed, he (fighing) breathed his mind once more in this manner.

Pow a ansim. portunitiesor to have them betray them.

Captaine Smith . I never vied any Wetowances fo kindly as your felfe; yet from you I receive the least bindnesse of any, Captaine Newport gave me swords, Copper, Clothes, a Bed Teoles, or what I de- 20 fired ever taking what I offered him, and would fend away his Guns when I intreated him : none doth deny to lay at my feet (or doe) what I defire, but onely you, of whom I can have nothing, but what you resard not, and ret you will have what soener you demand. Captaine Newport you call fasher, and so you call me. but I fee for all vs both, you will doe what you lift, and wee must both feeke to content you: But if you intend to friendly as you fay, fend hence your Armes that I might beleene you, for you fee the love I heare ron, doth canfe me thus naked to forget my felfe.

Smith feeing this Sauage but trifled the time to cut his throat : procured the Sauages to breake the Ice (that his Boat might come to fetch both him and his Corne) and gaue order forhismen to come alhore, to have surprised the King, with whom also hee but trifled the time till his men landed, and to keepe him from fulpition, entertained the time with this reply.

C.Smiths difcourse to delay time,mar he might furprife Pombatan.

Powhatan, you must know as I have but one God, I honour but one King; and I live not here at the Subject but as your friend, to pleasure you with what I can: by the gifts you best ow on me, you gaine were then by trade, yet would you wifit mee as I doe you, you frould know it is not our customes to fell our two telle as a vendible commoditie. Bring all your Countrey with you for your guard, I will not diffike of it # being over sealows. But to content you, to morrow I will leave my Armes, and trust to your primite. I call you father indeed, and as a futher you hall fee I will lone you, but the small care you had of such a child, caused my men to perswade me to lists for my selfe.

Perphatans plot to have murdered Smith.

A Chaine of Pearle for a

Prefent. His excuse.

Pretending to kill our men loaded with baskets_wee forced the Samages to car-

By this time Powhatan having knowledge, his men were readie : whilft the Ice was breaking, his luggage, women, and children fled, and to aword futpition, left two or three of his women talking with the Captaine, whilft hee fecretly fled, and his men as fecretly befet the house, which 40 being at the instant discoursed to Captaine Smith, with his Pistol, Sword, and Target, hee made fuch a passage among it those naked Deuills, that they fled before him, some one way, some another fo that without hurt hee obtained the Corps du-guard : when they perceived him fo well escaped, and with his eight men (for hee had no more with him) to the vttermost of their skill, they lought by excuses to diffemble the matter, and Powhatan to excuse his flight, and the sudden comming of this multitude, lent our Captaine a great Bracelet, and a Chaine of Pearle, by an ancient Orator that bespoke vs to this purpose (perceiuing then from our Pinnace, a Barge, and men departing and comming vnto vs.) Captaine Smith, our Werowance is fled, fearing your Guns, and knowing when the Ice was broken there would come more men, fent those of his to quard bis Corne from the pilfry, that might bappen without your knowledge : now though some bee hurt by your misprisson, 50 yet he is your friend, and so will continue : and fince the Ice is open hee would have you fend away your Corne; and if you would have bis company fend also your Armes, which to affriobseth this people, that they dare not come to you, as he bath promised they sould : Now having provided Baskets for our men to carry the Corne, they kindly offered their service to guard our Armes, that none should steale them. A great many they were, of goodly well appointed fellowes as grim as Deuills : yet the very light of cocking our matches against them, and a few wordes caused them to leave their Bowes and Arrowes to our guard, and beare downe our Corne on their owne backes; wee needed not importune them to make quick dispatch. But our owne Barge being left by the ebbe, caused vs to flay till the midnight tide carried vs fafe aboard, having spent that halfe night with such mirch, as though we never had infpected or intended any thing, we left the Durchmen to build, 60 Brinton to kill Fowle for Powbatan (as by his Meffengers he importunately defired) and left directions with our men to give Powbatan all the content they could, that we might miew his company at our returne from Pamaunke.

VV E had no fooner let faile, but Pombatan returned, and fent Adam and Francis (two Howwee'ca-frow Durch men) to the Fort, who faining to Captaine Winne that all things were pediupring well and that Captaine Smith had vie for their Armes, wherefore they requeited new (the which at Pamaunte. were given them) they told him their comming was, for some extraordinary tooles and shift of chap. 9. apparell, by this colourable excute, they obtained fixe or feuen more to their confederacie, fuch men deceme expert theetes that prefently furnished them with a great many of Swords, Pike-heads, Peeces, C. Smith. Shot, Powder, and such like ; they have Sanages at hand ready to carry it away. The next day Perfidings they returned vnsuipeded, leaving their confederates to follow, and in the interim, to connay wretche them a competencie of all things they could, for which feruice they should live with Powhatan to as his chiefe affected : free from those misries that would happen the Colony. Samuell their other confort, Powhatan kept for their pledge, whose diligence had provided them three hundred of their kind of Hatchets, the reit fiftie Swords, eight Pecces, and eight Pikes: Briton, and Richard Sauage feeing the Dutch-men fo strangely diligent to accommodate the Sauages; these weapons attempted to have got to lames Towne, but they were apprehended, Within two or three daies we arrived at Passaunie, the King as many daies entertained vs with feathing and much mirch : and the day he appointed to begin our trade, the Prefident, with M. Persie, M. West, M. Russell, M. Beheathland, M. Powell, M. Crafbam, M. Ford, and some others to the number of niceene went up to now he aban-Openhancanonels houle (neere a quarter of a mile from the River) where we found nothing, but a doned. lame fellow and a boy, and all the houses about, of all things abandoned; nor long wee stand ere

an the King arrived, and after him came divers of his people loaded with Bowes and Arrowes, but fuch pinching commodities, and those eftermed at such a value, as our Captaine began with him Opechancanough, the great lone you professe with your tongue, seemes meere deceit by your actions; Smith speech

last yeare you kindly fraughted our Ship, but now you have innited me to starue with bunger. You know my want, and I your plentse of which by some meanes I must have a part, remember it is fit for Kings to keepe their promife, here are my commoduties, whereof take your choice; the rest I will proportion fit bargaines

The King feemed kindly to accept his offer; and the better to colour his project, fold vs what they had to our owne content; promiting the next day more company, better prouided (the Barthe Prefident, with his old fifteens marched up to the Kings house, where wee found foure or hue men newly come with great Baskets. Not long after came the King , who with a ftrained cheerefalneffe held vs with difcourse, what paines he had taken to keepe his promisestill M. Russell brought vs in newes that we were all betrayed : for at least tixe or feven hundred of well appointed Indians had incironed the 700.50x27es house and befet the fields. The King conjecturing what Ruffel related, wee could well perceive befet in Enge how the extremitie of his feare bewrayed his intent: whereat fome of our company feeming farcene. difmayed with the thought of fuch a multitude; the Captaine incouraged vs after th a manner. Worthy Country-men were the mischiefes of my seeming friends , no more then the danger of these ene- Smith Secreti mies, I little cared, were they as many more; if you dare doe, but as I. But this is my terment, that if I to his Com-40 escape them, our malicious Councell, with their open mouthed Minions, will make me such a peace-breaker pany. (in their opinions) in England, as will breake my necke : I could wish those here, that make these (come Saints, and me an Oppreffer. But this is the worft of all, wherein , I pray aide me with your opinions , Should we begin with them and surprize this King, we cannot keepe bim, and defend well our selves, if wee should each kill our man, and so proceed withall in this house; the rest will all fly, then shall we get no more,

you know (being alone affaulted with two or three bundred of them) I made them compound to faue my life, and we are now fixteene, and they but seuen hundred at the most, and assure your selines GOD will so affift us, that if you dare but to stand to discharge your Peeces, the verie smoake will be sufficient to affright them: yet bowfemer (if there be occasion) let us fight like men, and not die like sheepe but first I will deale with them, to bring it to paffe, we may fight for some thing, and draw them to it by conditions. If you like this motion, promifeme youle be valiant, The time not permitting any argument, all vowed to execute whatfoeuer he attempted, or die; whereupon the Captaine approaching the King,

then the bodies that are flaine, and then starme for victuall: as for their furiest is the least danger, for well

befpoke him in this manner. I see Opechancanough your plot is to murder me, but I feare is not; as yet your men and mine, have Smiths offer to done no harme, but by our directions. Take therefore your Armes ; you fee mine : my bodie finall bec as naked as yours; the lle in your River is a fit place, if you be contented; and the conquerour (of us two) Shall be Lord and Master oner all our men : otherwaies draw all your men into the field; if you have not enough, take time to fetch more, and bring what number you will, so eneric one bring a basket of Corne, against all which I will state the valuean Copper ; you see I have but sitteene men , and our gan e shall be,

60 The conquerour take all. The King , being guarded with fiftie or fixtie of the chiefe men , feemed kindly to appeale Ofechanes-Smubs suspicion of vnkindnesse, by a great present at the doore, they intreated him to receive. This was to draw him without the doore where the prefent was guarded with (at the leaft two Smith. hundred men, and thirtie lying under a great tree (that lay thwart as a Barricado) each his Ar-

1723

taken prifoner amids his men. If this course had bin eskén by athers Virginia by this had .

1724

n out of her .c.& able o goe alone, yea to trade or Sght. Bur same of neace haue bred worfe then wars, and our considence harehed the milerable maffacre by this perfidious Saunge. And would God a Dale or Smith, or fome fuch fpirit were yet there to take this that is the onely right cou:fe wi b thole which know not to doe right further for trace offuffering it enforceth. Smiths difcourse to the

The Sausees diffemble their intent. See their vie of English Armes. Their excuse and reconcilement. The loffe of M. Shrineser and others with a Skiffe. M. Wiffin his journey to the Prefident.

Pam: unkies.

Pembatan con-Oraineth his men to be treacherous

The third berray vs.

row necked ready to shoot; some the President commanded to go & see what kind of deceit this Obechancenough was, and to receive the Prefent but they refuled to doe it) yet divers offered whom he would not permit : but commanding M. Perfie, and M. West to make good the house, to M. Pavell, and M. Bebeatbland to guard the doore, and in such a rage fnatched the King by his long locke of haire in the midth of his men, with his Piftoll readie bent against his breft, he instantly yeelded his Bow and Arrowes, and fued for his life : Thus he led the King (neere dead with feare) amonest all his people, who delinering the Captaine his Bow and arrowes, all his men were cally intreated to cast downe their Armes, little dreaming any durit in that manner have vied their King; who then to escape himselfe, beltowed his Prefents in good fadnesse. And having caused all his multitude to approach difarmed; the Pretident argued with them to this effect,

I fee you Pamavakies, the great defire you have to cut my throat; and my long suffering your ininries, have involded you to this presumption. The canse I have forborne your insolencies, is the momile I mide you (before the God I ferne) to be your friend, till you give mee inst cause to bee your enemy. If I beene this vow. my God will keepe me, you cannot hurt me; if I breake h , be will destroy me. But if you Shoot but one Arrow, to feed one drop of bloud of any of my men, or steale the least of these Beades, or Conper (i purne before me with my foot) you hall see, I will not conservenge (if once I begin) so long as I can heare where to find one of your Nation that will not deny the name of Pamavnke : I am not now at Rafe lenear (kalle drown'd with mire), where you tooke me prisoner, yet then for keeping promise, and your good vlage, and faning my life, I fo affect you, that your denialls of your treacherie, doth halfeperwade me to miliake my felfe. But of I be the marke you aime at, here I fland , Poor he that dare, You an promised to fraught my pop ere I departed and so you shall er I meane to load ber with your dead careasles : yet if as friends you will come and trade, I once more promise not to trouble you, except you eine mee the first occasion. Vpon this away went your Bowes and Arrowes, and men, women, and children brought in their commodities, but two or three houres they to thronged about the Prefident and fo overwearied him, as hee retired himselfe to reft, leaving M. Bebeathland, and M. Powel to accept their Prefents: but tome Sauages perceiping them fait affecte, and the guard carefully difperfed fortie or fiftie of their choice men each with an English Sword in his hand, began to enter the house, with two or three hundred others that prefed to second them. The noise and hast they made in, did fo shake the house, as they awoke him from his sleepe, and being halfe amazed with this fudden fight, hetooke him straight to his Sword and Target, M. Crafbawand lome 50 other charging in like manner, they thronged fafter backe, then before forward. The house thus clenfed, the King and his Ancients, with a long Oration came to excute this intrusion. Therest of the day was ipent with much kindnesse, the company againe renuing their Presents of their best prouision. And what socuer we gave them, they seemed well contented with it.

Now in the meane while fince our departure, this hapned at the Rott : M. Sermener willing to croffe the furnizing of Powhatan; nine daies after the Prefidents departure, would needs vifit the He of Hogs, and tooke with him Captaine Waldo (though the Prefident had appointed him to be readie to second his occasions) with M. Anthony Gofnoll, and eight others; but to violent was the wind (that extreame frozen time) that the Boat funke, but where or how, none doth know, for they were all drowned; onely this was knowne, that the Skiffe was much outladed; and 40 would fearce have lived in that extreame tempert, had she beene emptie; but by no periwasion he could be diverted, though both Walds and a hundred others doubted as it happed. The Sausges were the first that found their bodies, which so much the more encouraged them to effect their projects. To advertise the President of this heavy newes, none could be found would vndertake it, but the journey was often refused of all in the Fort, vntill M. Wiffin vndertooke alone the performance thereof; wherein he was encountred with many dangers and difficulties, and in all parts as he passed (as also that night he lodged with Pombatan) he perceived such preparation for warre, that affured him, some mischiefe was intended, but with extraordinary bribes, and much trouble, in three daies trauell at length he found vs in the midft of their turmoiles. This vnhappy newes, the Prefident swore him to conceale from the rest, and so diffembling his forrow, 10 with the best countenance he could, when the night approached, went lafely aboard with all his

Now so extreamely Powhatan had threatned the death of his men, if they did not by some meanes kill Captaine Smith, that the next day they appointed the Country should come to trade vnarmed; yet vnwilling to be treacherous, but that they were constrained, hating fighting, almost as ill as hanging, such feare they had of bad successe. The next morning the Sunne had not long appeared, but the fields appeared couered with people, and baskets to tempt vs ashore. The Prelident determined to keepe aboard, but nothing was to be had without his prefence, nor they would not indure the fight of a Gun ; then the President seeing many depart , and being vnwilling to lose such a bootie, so well contriued the Pinnace, and his Barges with Ambuscadoes, as 63 only with M. Perfie, M. West, and M. Ruffell armed, he went ashore, others vnarmed hee appointed to receive what was brought; the Sauages flocked before him in heapes, and (the banke feruing as a trench for retreate) he drew them faire open to his Ambulcadees, for he not heine to be perswaded to goe to visit their King, the King came to visit him with two or three hundred

men, in the forme of two halfe Moones, with some twentie men, and many women loaded with great painted baskets; but when they approached tomewhat neete vs. their women and children Aed for when they had enuironed and befet the fields in this manner, they thought their purpole fure ; yet to trembled with feare, as they were fearce able to nock their Arrowe; : Smith standing with his three men readie bent beholding them, till they were within danger of our Ambulcade, who, vpon the word discourred themselues, and hee retiring to the banke : which the Sauages no fooner perceived, but away they fled, effeeming their heeles for their best advantage. That night we fent to the Fort M. Crashaw, and M. Ford, who (in the mid-way betweene Werawocsmoco and the fort) met foure or fine of the Dutchmens confederates going to Powhatan, the to which (to excuse those Gentlemens suspition of their running to the Sanages returned to the Fort and there continued.

The Sauages hearing our Barge depart in the night were so terribly affraide, that wee sent for more men (wee having so much threatned their ruine, and the rasing of their Houses, Boates, and Canowes) that the next day the King, fent our Captaine a Chaine of Pearle to alter his purpoie, A Chaine of and flay his men, promifing (though they wanted chemielues) to fraught our fhip, and bring it Pearle fent to aboard to avoid suspition, so that five or sixe daies after, from all parts of the Countrey within ten or twelve miles, in the extreame cold Froft, and Snow, they brought vs provision on their

Yet notwithstanding this kindnesse and trade, had their are and posson beene sufficient, the The President no President with Master West and some others had beene poyloned : it made them sicke, but expelled it felfe. Wecuttanom aftout young fellow, knowing hee was suspected for bringing this The offender present of poilon, with fortie or fiftie of his choice companions (feeing the President but with a punished few men at Potavneat --) fo proudly braued it , as though hee expected to incounter a reuenge: which the Prelident perceiums, in the midft of his company did not onely beat, but spurned him like a dogge, as fcorning to doe him any worse mischiese : whereupon all of them fled into the Woods, thinking they had done a great matter, to have fo well escaped : and the Townsmen remayning, prefently fraughted our Barge, to bee rid of our companies, framing many excules to excuse Weenstanow (being sonne to their chiefe King , but Powbatan) and told vs , if wee would shew them him that brought the poyson, they would deliuer him to vs to punish 20 as wee pleated.

Men may thinke it ftrange there should bee this stirre for a little Corne, but had it beene Gold with more ease wee might have got it : and had it wanted, the whole Colony had flarued. Wee may bee thought verie patient, to indure all those injuries; yet onely with fearing them, wee got what they had. Whereas if wee had taken renenge, then by their losse wee should have lost our felues. We searched all the Countries of Toughtanund and Mattapamient, The Sange where the people imparted that little they had, with such complaints and teares from women want and and children ; as hee had beene too cruell to bee a Christian that would not have beene fatif- pourrie. fied, and moued with compassion. But this happened in October, Nouember, and December, when that vnhappy discouerie of Monacan was made, wee might have fraughted a Ship so of forcie Tunnes, and twice as much might have beene had from the Rivers of Toppahan-

nock, Patawomeck, and Pawennunt. The maine occasion of our temporating with the Sauages was to part friendes (as wee did) to give the lefte cause of suspicion to Powhatan, to five: The Durchby whom wee now returned, with a purpose to have surprised him and his provision: for effect men did much ting whereof (when wee came against the Towne) the President sent Master Wiffin and Ma- hurt. fter Coe, a shoare to discouer and make way for his intended project. But they found that those damned Dutchmen had caused Pombatan to abandon his new house, and Werawecomoco, and to carrie away all his Corne and provision; and the people they found by their meanes so ill affected, that had they not flood well voon their guard, they had hardly escaped with their liues. So the Prefident finding his intention thus frustrated, and that there was nothing now to bee had, and therefore an vnfit time to reuenge their abufes, held on the course for lames Towne: wee having in this journey (for five and twentie pound of Copper, fiftie pound of Iron and Beades) kept fortie men fixe weekes, and daily feilted with Bread, Corne, Flesh, Fish, and Fowle, euery man having for his reward (and in consideration of his commodities) a months promision (no trade being allowed but for the store) and wee delivered at lames Towne to the

Worker the ships departed, all the provision of store (but that the President had gotten) How the Saua-was so rotten with the last Summers Raine, and eaten with Rats and Wormes, as the set became Hogges would fearcely eate it, yet it was the Souldiers Die:, till our returnes: fo that we found English. 60 nothing done, but victuall spent, and the most part of our Tooles, and a good part of our Armes Chap. To. conveyed to the Sausges. But now, calting up the flore, and finding sufficient till the next Harueft, the feare of starting was abandoned; and the Company divided into tennes, fifteenes, or as the busines required foure houres each day was spent in work, the rest in pastimes and merrie exercife. The Duccomens Conforts to closely still contaid Powder, Shot, Swords, and Tooles, that

Cape-Merchant two hundred feuentie nine bushels of Corne.

The Dutchmens plot to murder Cap.

emith taketh

1626

though wee could find the defect, we could not find by whom it was occasioned, till it was too late, All this time the Datchmen remayning with Powbatan, received ti em, inftructing the Samoes their vie. But their Conforts not following them as they expected (to know the cause. they fent Francis their companion (a front young fellow) diguised Sauage like) to the Glassethey tent transs then companies (the House Jowne) where was the randenoze for all their voluspected villany; fortie men they procured of Pombatan to lie in Ambulcadoe for Cantaine Smith, who no fooner heard of this Dutchman, but he lent to apprehend him, who found he was gone, yet to crolle his returne to Powbatan, Captaine Smith prefently dispatched twenty shoe after him, and then returning but from the Glaffe-house alone, he incountred the King of Passa. bergh, a most strong stout Sauage, whose pers wassons not being able to perswade him to his am. 10 bulh, feeing him only armed but with a Fauchion, attempted to haue shot him; but the President prevented his short by graphing with him, and the Sauage as well prevented him for drawing his Fauchion, and perforce bore him into the River to have drowned him; long they struggled in the water, from whence the King perceiving two of the Poles vpon the fands would have fled; but the President held him by the haire and throat till the Poles came in; then feeing how pittifully the poore Saluage begged his life, they conducted him prisoner to the Fort. The Dutchman ere long was also brought in, whose Villany, though all this time it was suspected, yet he fained such the King of Pathonish a formall excuse, that for want of Language, Winne had not rightly understood them, and for their dealings with Powhatan, that to faue their lives they were confirmed to accomodate his aims, of whom he extremely complained to have detained them perforce; and that hee made this efcape with the hazard of his life, and meant not to have returned, but only walked in the woods to gather Walnuts: yet for all this faire Tale (there was fo small appearance of truth) hee went by the heeles; the King also he put fetters; purposing to regaine the Dutehmen, by the fauing his life: the poore Sauage did his best, by his daily Messengers to Powhatan, but all returned that the Duchmen would not returne, neither did Powbatan itay them, and to bring them fiftie miles on their backes they were not able. Daily this Kings Wives, children, and people, came to vilit him with Presents, which he liberally bestowed to make his peace, much trust they had in the Presdents promife, but the King finding his Guard negligent (though fettered) yet escaped; Captaine Winnethinking to purfue him, found fuch troupes of Sauages to hinder his passages, as they exchanged many voltes of shot for flight of Arrowes. Captaine Smith hearing of this, in retur. 30 ning to the Fort tooke two Sauages Prifoners, the one called Kemps, the other Kinfock, the two most exact Villaines in the Countrey; with those, Captaine Winne and fifthe cholen men attempt ted that night to have regained the King, and revenged his injurie (and to had doue if he had followed his directions, or beene aduited by those two Villaines, that would have betrayed both their King and Kindred for a piece of Copper) but hee trifling away the night, the Sauagesthe next morning by the rifing of the Sunne, braued him to come afhore to fight, a good time both fides let flie at other, but we heard of no hurt, only they tooke two Canozes, burnt the Kings

The Sauages defire peace.

The Prefident fearing those brauadoes, would but incourage the Sauages, begunne himselfeto the his conclusions; whereby fixe or seuen Sauages were slaine, as many made Prisoners: burnt the bit of the conclusions whereby sixe or seuen Sauages were slaine, as many made Prisoners: burnt to the burnt of the conclusions whereby sixe or several s their Houses, tooke their Boats with all their filling weares, and planted them at lames Towns for his owne vie; and now relolued not to cease till hee had reuenged himselfe vpon all that had injured him, but in his journey passing by Pass abeigh towards Chickabamina, the Sauages did their best to draw him to their Ambuscadoes; but leeing him regardlesly passe their Countrey, all shewed themselues in their brauest manner, to try their valours; he could not but flie, and ere hee could land, the Sauages no fooner knew him, but they threw downe their Armes and defired Peace; their Orator was a ftout young man called Oceanindge, whose worthy Distourse deferent

Ocanindze his

to be remembred; and this it was. Captaine Smith, my Master is bere present in this companie thinking it Captaine Winne, and not you; and of him be intended to have beene renenged, basing neuer offended him: if he have offended you in elegating your important ment to the contract of the have offended him: in escaping your imprisonment; the Fishes swimme, the Fowles sue, and the verie Benits structo escape the four and line; then blame not him being a man; he would entreate you remember , your being a prisoner, what paines hee tooke to save your life; if since hee hath iniured you, hee was compelled to it; but how focuers you have revenged it with our too great loffe; we perceive and well know you intend to destroy vs, that are here to intreat and delire your friendship, and to enioy our honses and plant our fields, of whose fruit you shall participate, otherwise you will baue the worst by our absence, for we can plant any where, though with more labour, and we know you cannot line if you want our Haruest, and that reliefe we bring you; if you promise us peace we will believe you, if you proceed in renewee, we will abandon the Counyou properly superse we mususester you give the present reases, we will around not the you check teamns the President promised them peace, till shey did vis inture, you can dition they should bring in protein, do all departed good friends, and so continued till Smith left?

A Sautge fmothered at Imnes Towne, and was reco-

Arriving at lames Towne, complaint was made to the Prefident that the Chickahaminos, who all this while continued Trade, and feemed our friends by colour thereof were the only Theenes, and among ft other things, a Piffoll being stolne, and the Theife fled, there was apprehended two

proper young fellowes that were brothers, knowne to be his confederates. Now to regaine this Pufoll the one we imprisoned, the other was fent to returne againe within twelve houres, or his brother to be hanged, yet the President pittying the poore naked Sauage in the dungson tent him victuall and fome Char-cole for fire; ere midnight his brother returned with the Piftoll, but the Charenter Sauge in the dungeon was so smothered with the smoake hee had made, and so pittiously burnt, smoke an ythat he found him dead, the other most lamentably bewailed his death, and brake forth in fach feal murtherer bitter agonies, that the Prefident (to quiet him) told him that if hereafter they would not iteale. he would make him aliue againe, but little thought he could be recoursed, yet (we doing our best islent on. with Aquanita and Vineger) it pleased God to restore him againe to life, but so drunke and afto frighted that he seemed lunaticke, not vnderstanding any thing he spoke or heard, the which as

CHAP.4. Sauage mothered. Powhatan affrighted, Store of Sturgeon.

much grieued and termented the other, as before to fee him dead; of which maladie (vpon pro- Perhaps the mife of their good behaujour afterward) the President promised to recouer him, and so caused lesuites was mile of their good behaviour afterward the Prendent promited to leoute him? and to cancel have (or fides him to be laid by a fire to fleepe, who in the morning (having well flept) had recovered his permeter lies) feed lenges: and then being dreffed of his burning, and each a piece of Copper given them, they barched move went away fo well contented, that this was spread among stall the Sauages for a Miracle, that of their indian Captaine Smith could make a man aline that is dead. Thefe and many other fuch prette accidents. Miracles from fo amazed and affrighted both Powbaran and all his people that from all parts with prefents as validely egs they defired peace, returning many stolne things which wee neither demanded nor thought of. And after that, those that were taken stealing (both Powhatar and his people) hath fent them strie and op-20 backe to James Towne to receive their punishment, and all the Countrie became absolutely as portunite.

free for vs, as for themselues.

Now wee so quietly followed our businesse, that in three moneths wee made three or source done in three last of Pitch and Tarre, and Sope-ashes, produced a triall of Glasse, made a Well in the moneths ha-Fortof excellent iweet water (which till then was wanting) built fome twenty houses, reco- ung victuall. nered our Church, proteiled Nets and wares for filhing (and to ftop the diforders of our diforder- The ftore dely theeues and the Sauages) built a Blocke-house in the necke of our He, kept by a garrison to entertaine the Sauages trade, and none to palle nor repalle, Sanage, nor Christian, with out the Prefidents order; thirty or forty acres of ground we digged, and planted; of three Sowes in one of fuch natural

30 years increased fixty and odde Pigges, and neers flue hundred Chickens brought vp themselves fruits as the (without having any meate given them) but the Hogges were transported to Hogge Ile, where Countrie afalto we built a Blocke-house with a Garrison, to give vs notice of any shipping, and for their exercise they made Clap-boord, Wainscot, and cut downe Trees against the ships comming. Wee built also a Fore for a retreat, neere a consenient River vpon a high commanding Hill, very hard to be a laulted, and easie to be defended; but ere it was halfe finished, this defect caused a stay; in fearching our Casked Corne, wee found it halfe rotten, the rest so consumed with the many thousand Rattes (increased first from the ships) that wee knew not how to keepe that little wee Rat-plague had. This did drive vsall to our wits end, for there was nothing in the Countrey but what Nature affoorded, vntill this time Keings and Taffere, were fettered Prisoners , and daily wrought,

40 and taught vs how to order and plant our fields. Whom now (for want of victuall) we fet at libertie, but fo well were they vied, that they little defired it; and to expresse their loues, for fixteene dayes continuance, the Countrey brought vs (when leaft) one hundred a day of Squirrils, Turkeyes, Deare, and other wilde Beafts; but this want of Corne occasioned the end of all our workes, it beeing worke sufficient to prouide victuall, fixtie or eightie with Ensigne Laxon, were fent downe the River to live voon Oysters, and twentie with Lieutenant Percie to try for filhing at Point Comfort, but in fixe weekes, they would not agree once to cast out their Net. Master West with as many went up to the Falls, but nothing could be found but a few Berries and Acornes; of that in the store every one had their equal proportion. Till this Thepaines of prefent (by the hazard and endeauour of fome thirtie or fortie) this whole number had ever bin so, fed 150.

50 fed. We had more Sturgeon then could be denoured by Dogge and Man; of which the induftrious, by drying and pownding, mingled with Cauiare, Sorrell, and other wholrome hearbs, would make Bread and Meate; others would gather as much Tockwoneh Roots in a day, as would make them Bread a Weeke, to that of those wilde Fruites, Fish, and Berries, thefe lived very well (in regard of fuch a Diet) but fuch was the most firange condition of some Basingle of one hundred and fiftie, that had they not beene forced to gather and prepare their victual they ideactic, would all haue started, and haue eaten one another: of those wilde fruites the Sauages often brought vs: and for that the President would not folish the vnreasonable desire of those distracted lubberly Gluttons to fell, not only our Kettles, Howes, Tooles, and Iron, nay Swords, Peeces, 60 and the very Ordnance, and Houses (might they have prevailed but to have beene but idle)

for those Sauage fruites they would have imparted all to the Sauages, especially for one basket of Corne they heard of, to bee at Powbatans, fiftie miles from our Fort, though hee brought neere halfe of it to fatisfie their humours , yet to have had the other Their delite: halfe, they would have fold their foules (though not fisficient to have kept them a Weeke) defiroy that thousands were their exclamations, suggestions, and deuises, to force him to those base sclues, Ececoco

Powhatan d. G. reth peace.

The Profidents Speech to the Drones.

Inventions, to have made it an occasion to abandon the Countrey. Want perforce comfravned him to indure their exclayming follies till hee found out the Author, one Dree a most craftie Knaue, and his ancient maligner, whome hee worthily punished, and with the reit her argued the case in this manner. Fellow Souldiers, I did little thinke any fo fallo to report, or fo many fo fimple to bee persuaded, that I either intend to fixtue you, or that Powhatan (at this prefent) hath Corne for himselfe, much leffe for you; or that I would not have it, if I know where it were to be had. Neither did I thinke any so malicious as now I see a great many. set it shall not fo much passionate mee, but I will doe my best for my worst maligner. But dreame no lower of this vaine hope from Powhatan, nor that I will longer forbeare to force you from your idlenelle, and punily you if you raile, you cannot denie but that by the baz ard of my life, many a time I have 10 Gined yours, when, might your owne wills have prenailed, you would have starned, and will doe still metaber I will or no. But I protest by that God that made me, since necissitie halb not power to force
you to gather for your seluct stools simile the Earth doth yeeld, you shall not only gather for your seluct, but for those that are sicke: as jet I never had more from the flore then the worst of you; and all me E. glifh extraordinary promifion that I have, you fhall fee me denide among the ficke. And thu Sanage trulh, you fo [cornfully repine at, being put in your mouthes your stomacks can digest it, and therefore I will take a course you shall provide it. The sicke shall not starme, but equally share of all our labours, and every one that gathereth not every day as much I doe, the next day hall be fet beyond the Ruer. and for ener be banshed from the Fort, and line there or flarne. This order many mur nured, was very cruell, but it caused the most part to well bestirre 20

Bu: 7 of 200. died in two moneths.

The Sauages returneour Fugitiues.

themselves, that of two hundred men (except they were drowned) there died not past leven or eight. As for Captaine Winne, and Mafter Ley, they died ere this want happened . and thereft died not for want of fuch as preferued the reit. Many were billitted among the Sausges, whereby we knew all their pallages, fields, and habitations, how to gather and vie their fruts, as well as themselves. So well those poore Sauages vied vs (that were thus Billited) as divers of the Souldiers ranne away, to learch Kemps our old prifoner. Glad was this Sauage to have fuch an occation to teffine his love, for infleed of entertayning them, and fuch things as they had ftolne with all the great offers and promifes they made them, to reuenge their injuries voon Captaine Smith. First hee made himselfe sport in shewing his Countrimen (by them) how hee was vied: feeding them with this Law, Who would not worke must not eate, till they were neere flarned, continually threatning to beate them to death, neither could they get from him. till perforce he brought them to our Captaine, that so we contented him, and punished them : as many others that intended also to have followed them, were rather contented to labour at home, then adventure to live idle among the Sauages (of whom there was more hope to make better Christians and good subjects, then the one halfe of those that counterfeited themselves both) For so affraid were all those Kings and the better fort of their people, to displease vs. that some of the baser fort that wee haue extreamely hurt and punished for their villanies. would hire vs that wee should not tell it to their Kings or Countrimen, who would also repunih them, and yet returne them to James Towne to content the President, by that testimonie

Search for them fent by Sir W. Rawlew. Pawhatia confeffed that hee had bin at the murther of that Colon e: and thewed to Cap. Smith à Musker barrell and a braffe Morter, and certaine pecces of Iron wh ch had bin prouds.

Mafter Sicklemore well returned from Chamonock, but found little hope and leffe certaintie of them which had beene left by Sir Walter Rawley. So that Nathaniell Powell and Anas Todkill, were also, by the Quiyough quohanochs, conducted to the Mangonges to fearch them there. But nothing could we learne but they were all dead. This honest, proper, good promise-keeping King, of all the rest did ever best affect vs, and though to his falle Gods hee was yet very zealous, yet he would confess, our God as much exceeded his, as our Guns did his Bow and Arrowes, often jending our President many Presents to pray to his God for rain, or his corn would pensh, for his Gods were angrie all this time. To reclaime the Dutchmen, and one Bentley another Fugitive, we imployed one William Volda, (a Switzer by birth) with pardons and promifes to regain them. Little we then suipected this double villanie of any villany, who plainly taught vs, in the most trust 50 was the greatest Treason. For this wicked Hypocrite, by the freming have hee bore to the lewd condition of his curfed Countrimen, having this opportunitie by his imployment to regaine them, conveighed them every thing they defired to effect their project to deftroy the Colonie. With much denotion they expected the Spaniard, to whom they intended to have done good feruice. But to begin with the first opportunitie, they feeing necessitie thus inforced vs to disperse our selves; importuned Powhatan to lend them but his forces, and they would not only defrey our Hogges, fire our Towne, and betray our Pinnasse; but bring to his seruice and subjection the most part of our companies. With this plot they had acquainted many discontents, and many were agreed to their deuillish practite. But one Thomas Donese and Thomas Mallard (whose Chriftian hearts much relenting at such an vnchriftian act) voluntarily reneated it to Captaine Smith: 63 who did his best it might be conceased, perswading Donese and Mallard to proceed in the confederacie : only to bring the irreclamable Dutchmen, and inconftant Sauages in fuch a manner amongit his Ambuscadoes, as hee had prepared, as not many of them thould ever have returned from out our Peninfula. B.st

CHAP. A. Sauages offer of amitie. Mutinie, Dreach of beide.

But this brute comming to the cares of the impatient multitude, they fo importuned the President to cut off those Dutchmen, as among it many that offered to cut their throats before the Two Geniles face of Powhatan, Mafter Wiffin and lefra Abbot were fene to Habbe or Thoote them; but thefe men tento kil Dutchmen made fuch excuses accusing Wolder whom they supposed had reusaled their project, them. as Abbet would not, yet Wiffs would, perceiving it but deceit. The King understanding of this their imployment, fent prefently his Mellengers to Captaine Smith; to fignifie it was not his fault to detayne them , nor hinder his men from executing his command, nordid hee nor would he mayntaine them, or any to occasion his displeasure. But ere this businesse was brought to a point, God having feene our milery fufficient, fent in Capraine Argalto fish for Sturgeon with to a flup well furnished with Wine and Bisket, which though it was not fent vs, such were our occasions we tooke it at a price, but left him sufficient to returne for England, still dislembling Valdo

his villany, but certainly be had not escaped had the President continued. Notwithflandure this Valdo comming for England, presending to the Company what rich Mynes Gap. Sai: be had found, for which he was verie much funomed, remarded and respected, but returning with the

Lord La-ware, be could not performe any thing hee promised, and thus also bearing coor ened them all. died both basely and miserably. For the rest of his Consorts upon the arrivall of the Lord La-ware, whom they highly recommended to Powhatan, promising what great wonders they would worke with his Lordbip, would be give them leave to goe to him, but when he faw they would be gone, be replied, as you would have betrayed Captaine Smith to me, so will you me to this Lord, for you that would be so false to 20 bim, cannot be true to me, fo canfed his men to beat out their braines, as the Sanages reported to diners that came from thence.

TO redreffe those larres and ill proceedings, the Councell in England altered the government The arrival of and devolved the authoritie to the Lord De-la. ware. Who for his Deputie, sent Sir Thomas the third up-Gales, and Sir George Somers, with nine thips and fine hundred perfons : they fet faile from Eng. ply. Chap. 12. land in May 1609. a imali Catch perished at Sea in a Herycano. The Admirall, with 150. The alteration land in May 1609, a Imali Caten perined at Sea in a Herreaus. The Admirall, with 150, of the goutte-men, with the two Knights, and their new Commission, their Bils of loading with all manner, ment. of directions, and the most part of their promition arrived not. With the other feuen (as Cap- The loffe of taines) arrived Ratlife (whole right name was Sickelmore) Martin, and Archer. Who as they had Virginia,

so beene troublesome at Sea, began againe to marre all ashore. For though, as is faid, they were formerly deposed and sent for England : yet now returning againe, graced by the title of Captaines of the passengers, seeing the Almirall wanting, and great probabilitie of her losse : strongthned themselves with those new Companies, so railing and exclayming against Captaine Smith, that they mortally hated him , ere euer they faw aim. Who understanding by his Scowts, the arriwall of fuch a fleet (little dreaming of any such supply) supposing them Spaniards, he so determined and ordered his affaires, as we little feared their arruall; nor the fucceffe of our incounter, nor were the Sauages any way negligent or vn willing, to aide and offit vs with their best power. had it so beene, we had beene happy. For we would not have trusted them but as our foes, whereas receiving those as our Countrimen and friends, they did their best to murder our President, to offer to fight 40 furprize the store, the Fort, and our Lodgings, to vsurpe the government, and make vs all their vnderour coferuants and flaues to our owne merit. To a thouland mischiefes those lewd Captaines led this lours,

lewd company, wherein were many vnruly Gallants packed thether by their friends to escape Multiples ill Destinies, and those would dispose and determine of the government, sometimes one, the next day another, to day the old Commission, to morrow the new, the next day by neither. In fine, they would rule all orrune all; yet in Charitie wee must endure them thus to destroy vs, or by correcting their follies, have brought the Worlds centure voon vs to have beene guiltie of their blouds. Happie had we beene had they neuer arrived; and wee for ever abandoned, and (as wee were) left to our fortunes, for on Earth was neuer more confusion, or milery, then their facti-

The President seeing the desire those Braues had to rule, seeing how his authoritie was so vn- The planting so expectedly changed, would willingly have left all and returned for England, but feeing there was Manjamund, small hope this new Commission would arrive, longer hee would not suffer those factious spirits to proceed. It would be too tedious, too strange, and almost incredible, should I particularly relace the infinite dangers, plots, and practifes, heedaily escaped amongst this factious crue, the shiefe whereof hee quickly laid by the heeles, till his leafure better ferued to doe them Inflice; and to take away all occasions of further mitchiefe, Master Percie had his request granted to returne for England, and Mafter West with one hundred and twentie went to plant at the Falls. Marin wath neere as many to Nanfamund, with their due proportions of all provisions, accor. A plantation thing to their numbers.

Now the Prefidents yeere being neere expired, he made Marin Prefident, who knowing his owne insufficieticie, and the Companies scorne and conceit of his vinworthinesse, within three houres refigued it agains to Captaine Smith, and at Nanfamund thus proceeded. The people being Contributors vied him kindly : yet fuch was his jealous feare, and cowardize in the midft of peace with the his mirth, he did furprize this poore naked King, with his Monuments, Houses, and the He hee Saurges.

Ecccec 2

Mutinics.

inhabited; and there fortified himfelfe, but so apparantly diffracted with feare, as imboldned the Sauages to assault him, kill his men, redeeme their King, gather and carrie away more then one thouland bulhels of Corne, he not once daring to intercept them. But fent to the Fresident then at the Falls for thirtie good shot, which from lames Towne immediatly were fenthim, but he fo well imployed them, as they did init nothing, but returned, complayning of his childifhneffe, that with them fled from his company, and fo left them to their fortunes.

Mafter Woft having feated his men at the Falls, prefently returned to result lames Towne, the Prefident met him by the way as hee followed him to the Falls : where hee found this Company inconfiderately feated, in a place not only subject to the Rivers inundation, but round invironed with many intollerable inconveniences. For remedy whereof, hee fent prefently to Powlater, 14 to fell him the place called Powbatan, promifing to defend him againft the Monacans, and these should be his conditions (with his people) to refigne him the Fort and Houses, and all that Countrey for a proportion of Copper : that all stealing offenders should bee sent him, there to receive their punishment : that every House as a custome should pay him a bushell of Corne for an inch fquare of Copper, and a proportion of Poeones as a yeerely Tribute to King Iames, for their pro-

tection as a dutie : what elle they could spare to barter at their beft discretion.

But both this excellent place and those good conditions did those furies refuse, contemning both him, his kinde care and authoritie, the worst they could to shew their spight, they did. I doe more then wonder to thinke how only wish five men, hee either durit, or would seventure

as he did (knowing how greedie they were of his bloud) to land amongst them, and commit to Fine suppresse imprisonment the greatest spirits among st them, till by their multitudes being one bundred and swentie, they forced him to retire, yet in that retreat he surprized one of the Boats, wherewith he returned to their ship, wherein was their prouisions, which also he tooke. And well it chanced he found the Mariners so tractable and constant, or there had beene small possibilitie hee had eyer escaped. Notwithstanding there were many of the best, I meane, of the most worthy in judgement, reason or experience, that from their first landing hearing the generall good report of his old Souldiers, and feeing with their eyes his actions to well mannaged with discretion, as Captaine Wood, Captaine Web, Captaine Moone, Captaine Phitz-lames, Mafter Partridge, Ma-Rer White, Master Powell, and divers others; when they perceived the malice and condition of

Rascliffe, Marin, and Archer, left their factions; and euer refted his faithfull friend : But the 30 worst was, the poore Sauages that daily brought in their contribution to the President, that diforderly company to termented those poore naked foules, by stealing their Corne, robbing their peace with the Gardens, beating them, breaking their Houles, and keeping some prisoners; that they daily Sauages at the complayned to Captaine Smith, hee had brought them for Protectors worfe enemies then the

Monacans themselves, which though till then (for his love) they had indured : they defired pardon, if hereafter they defended themselues, fince hee would not correct them, as they had long expected he would : so much they importuned him to punish their missemeanours as they offered (if he would conduct them) to fight for him against them. But having spent nine dayes in feeking to reclaime them, thewing them how much they did abuse them telues, with their great gilded hopes, of Seas, Mynes, Commodities, or Victories they fo madly conceived. Then (leeing 40

nothing would preuaile with them) hee fet faile for lamer Towne: now no fooner was the thip under faile but the Sausges affaulted those one hundred and twentie in their Fort, finding some An affault by stragling abroad in the Woods they flue many, and so affrighted the rest, as their prisoners escathe Sauages. ped, and they scarce retyred, with the Swords and Clokes, of these they had slaine. But ere we had failed a league our ship grounding, gaue vs once more libertie to summon them to a parlie Where we found them all io strangely amazed with this poore simple assault, as they submitted themselves vpon any tearmes to the Presidents mercy. Who presently put by the heclesia or feuen of the chiefe offenders, the rest he seated gallantly at Powhatan, in their Sauage Fortthey built

and prettiy fortified with Poles and Barkes of Trees sufficient to have defended them from all their Sauages in Unginia, dry Houles for Lodgings three hundred Acres of ground readie to 50 plant, and no place to strong, so pleasant and delightfull in Virginia, for which wee called it None-such. The Sauges also he presently appealed; redelivering to every one their former losfes. Thus all were friends, new Officers appointed to command, and the President agains ready The planting of Nonfueb. to depart. But at that inftant arrived Mafter VVeil , whose good nature with the perswasions New prace and compassion of these mutinous priloners was so much abused, that to regaine their old shops concluded. new turmoyles arose. For the rest being possessed of all their Victuall, Munition, and every thing, they grow to that height in their former factions, as there the President left them to their Fortunes, they returning againe to the open Aire at VVeft Fort, abandoning Non-Inch, and hee to lames Towne with his best Expedition, but this happened him in that

Sleeping in his Boat (for the Ship was returned two dayes before) accidentally, one fired his Powder-bag, which tore his flesh from his bodie and thighes, nine or ten inches square in a most pittifull manner : but to quench the tormeating fire, frying him in his clothes, hee lesped ouerredunto the deepe River, where ere they could recover him hee was neere drowned. In this CHAP.4. Government Vsurped. Pocahontas kindnesse to Captane Smith.

estate, without either Chirurgion, or Chirurgerie he was to goe neere one hundred miles. Arriting at Iames Towne, causing all things to be prepared for Peace or Warres to obtaine proussion. whilest those things were prouiding, Martin, Ratcliffe, and Archer, being to have their trialls. their guiltie consciences fearing a just reward for their deserts, seeing the President vinable to fland, and neere bereft of his fentes by reason of his torment, they had plotted to have murdered him in his bed. But his heart did faile him that should have given fire to that mercilesse Pistoll. So, not finding that course to be the best, they joyned together to vsurpe the gouernment, thereby to escape their punishment, and excuse themselves by accusing him. The President had notice of their projects: the which to withstand, though his old Souldiers importuned him, but to permit them to take

10 off their heads that would refift his command, yet he would not permit them : but feut for the Masters of The wouldness. Bips, and tooke order with them for his returne for England. Seeing their was neither Chirurgion, nor ment viured Chururgery in the Fort to cure his hurt, and the ships to depart the next day, his Commission to be suppresfed hee knew not why, bimselfe and Souldiers to bee rewarded he knew not bow, and a new Commillion granted they knew not to whom, the which so disabled that authoritie he had, as made them presume so oft to those mutinies and factions as they did. Besides, so grienous was his wounds, and so cruell his torment. few expected be could lime, nor was he able to follow his businesse to regaine what they had wit, suppresse those factions, and range the Countries for promision as be intended, and well be knew those affaires his owne actions and presence was as requisite as his experience, and directions, which now could not be. hee went presently about d, resoluting there to appoint them governours, and to take order for the mutiners and

20 their confederates. Who feeing him gone, persmaded Master Perfie to stay and be their President, and within leffe then an hour was this mutation begun & concluded. For when the Company under food Smith within tells total an about the rest in Armes called Presidents and Councellors, divers began to faune on The earlies those new Commanders, that new bent all their wits to get him resigne them his Commission, who after why Smith lest many falt and bitter repulses, that their confusion should not bee attributed to him, for leaving the Countie try without gonernment and authoritie; having taken order to be free from danger of their malice; and his Combe was not unwilling they should steale it from him, but never consented to deliver it to any.

Leauing vs thus, with three Ships, feuen Boats, commodities readie to trade, the Haruest newly gathered, ten weekes prouision in the store, foure hundred nintie and odde persons, foure and C.Smithlest in twentie Peeces of Ordnance, three hundred Muskets, Snaphanches, and fire-lockes, Shot, Pow- Prouifions lets 30 der and match sufficient, Curats, Pikes, Swords, and Morions more then men : the Sauages their

language and habitations well knowne to one hundred well trained and expert Souldiers : Neta for Fishing, Tooles of all forts to worke, Apparell to supply our wants, fixe Mares, and a Horse. fine or fixe hundred Swine, as many Hennes and Chickens; fome Goates, fome Sheepe, what was brought or bred there remained : but they regarded nothing but from hand to mouth, to confume what wee had, tooke care for nothing but to perfit fome colourable complaints against Captaine Smith, for effecting whereof, three weekes longer they staied the fixe Ships till they could produce them. That time and charge might much better have beene spent; but it suted well Their comcould produce them. That time and charge might much determine the plaints and with the rest of their discretions. Now all these which Smith had either whipped, punished, or proofe against and proofe agai

any way difered, had free power and libertie to fay or sweare any thing, and from a whole him. 40 armefull of their examination, this was concluded.

The Musiners at The Falls, complained be cansed the Sanages to assault them, for that he would not revenge their loffe, they being but one bundred and twentie, and hee five men and himfelfe, and this they proued by the oath of one hee had oft whipped for periury and pilfering. The Dutch-men that hee had appointed to be flab d for their treacheries, fwere be fent to poifon them with Rats-bane. The prudent Councell , that he would not submit himselse to their stolne authoritie. Coe and Dyes, that should have murdered him, were highly preferred for swearing, they beard one say, he heard Pow hatan say, That bee beard a man fay: if the King would not fend that Corne bee bad, bee Sould not long enity his Copper Crowne, nor shofe Robes bee had fent bim : yet those also swore be might have had Corne for Tooles, but would not. The truth was, Smith bad no such Engines as the King demanded, nor Powhatan any 50 Corne. Tet this argued be would starue them. Others complained bee would not les them rest in the Fort (to flarue) but forced them to the Oyster Bankes to line or starne, as hee lined himselfe. For though hee had of his owne prinate provisions fent from England , sufficient : yet hee gave it all away to the weake and ficke, caufing the most untoward (by doing as he did) to gather their food from the unknowne parts of the Riners and Woods, that they lined (though hardly) that otherwayes would have starued, ere they

would have left their beds, or at the most the fight of lames Towne to have got their owne victuall. Some propheticall first calculated he had the Sauages in such subjection, be would have made himselfe a King, by marrying Pocahontas, Powhatans daughter. It is true, she was the very nonparell of his Kingdome, Pocahontal and at most not past thirteene or fourteene yeeres of age. Very oft she came to our Fort, with what shee Powhatens could get for Captaine Smith, that ener loued and vied all the Country well , but her especially bee ener daughter her much respected : and see so well required it, that when her father intended to have surprised him, she by C. Smile. flealth in the darke night came through the wild Woods and told him of it. But her marriage could no way baue entitled him by any right to the Kingdome, nor was it ener suspected be had ener such a thought, or more regarded her, or any of them, then in bonest reason and discretion he might. If he would be might

1731

Theft ite of the Colony when

bane married ber, or have done what him listed. For there was none that could have bindred his deter-Ecccece 3

mination. Some that knew not any thing to say, the Councell instructed, and admifed what to sweare. So diligent they were in this businesse, that what any could remember, he had ener done, or said in mirth, ar pallion, by fome circumstantialloath, it was applied to their fittest vie , yet not past eight or nine could fan much, and that nothing but circumstances, which all men did know was most false and untrue. Many on their Passes, by promising in England to say much against him. Instead of accusing him. I have never heard any give him a better report, then many of those witnesses themselves that were fent only home to tellifie against him. Richard Pots, W. P. The day before the Ships departed, C. Davis arrived in a small Pinnace, with some fixteene

proper men more: to those were added a company from Iames Towne, vnder the command of

The planting at Point Com-

proper men mote to the Point Comfort. Marin, and Master West having lost their Boats, to and neere halfe their men amongst the Sauages, were returned to lames Towne. For the Sauages no sooner vnderstood of Captaine Smith: loffe, but they all revolted, and did murder and soule all they could encounter. Now were weeall constrained to line onely of that which Smith had onely for his owne company, for the rest had confirmed their propertions. And now have wee twentie Prefidents, with all their appurtenances, for Mafter Perfie was fo ficke he could not goe nor stand. But ere all was confumed, Master West, and Rathsfe, each with a Pinnace, and thirtie or fortie men well appointed, sought abroad to trade, and vpon confidence of Pombatan, Rathfie and his men were flaine, onely leffery Shortridge escaped, and Pochahuntas the Kings dangher laned a bor, called Henry Spelman , who lined many peeres after by ber meanes amongst the Patawo mekes. Powhatan fill as bee found meanes, cut off their Boats and denied them trade. And Mafter well fin ling little better successe, set faile for England. Now we all found the want of Captaine Smith, yea his greatest maligners could then curse his losse. Now for come, provision, and contribution from the Saueges; wee had nothing but mortall wounds with Clubs and Arrowes. As for our Hogs, Goats, Sheepe, Horfe, or what lived, our Commanders and Officers did daily confume them : tome fmall proportions (fometimes) wee tafted till all was denouted, then Swords, Arrowes, Peeces, or any thing we traded to the Sauages, whole bloudy fingers were fo imbrued in our blouds, that what by their crueltie, our Gouernours indifcretion, and the loffe of our Ships : Or fine hundred within fixe moneths, after there remained not any more then fixtie most milerable and poore creatures. It were to vild to fay what wee endured. Life was now preferred by Roots, Herbs, Acomes, Waleuts, Berries, now and then a little Eth, and Starch by fueb as bad an, A 30 Sauage flaine and huried, is faid to have beene taken up by the poorer and esten : which is reported also

The occasion of these miseries was onely our owne, for want of prouidence, industrie, and gotternment, and not the barrennesse and desect of the Countrey, as is generally supposed, fortill then in three yeeres (for the numbers were landed vs) wee had neuer landed fufficient provision Wichednes of for fixe moneths, fuch a glutton is the Sea, and fuch good fellowes the Mariners, wee as little tafied of those great proportions for their prouisions, as they of our miseries, that notwithstanding improvidences ever Iwayd and overruled the businesse : though weedid live as is said, three yeeres chiefly of what this good Countrey naturally affordeth ; yet now had wee beene in Paradice it felfe (with 40 those Governours) it would not have beene much better with vs, yet were there some amongst vs, who had they had the gouernment, would furely have kept vs from those extreamities of miferies, that in ten dayes more would have supplanted veall by death. Thus you fee the miferable ends of those viarping Commanders, for all their greatnesse, Oratory, and long being there, and what is the want of owne man in Authoritie, that is houeft and valiant, discreet, and industrious; and how easily that may also be blemished, by ambitious indiscretion, or what did hinder them now in his absence, they had not done much better then bee, having all these aduantages.

to have bapned to others of their owne. A report was that one flew bis wife, and had eaten part of her: this is by others denied, the murther acknowledged, and be infly executed for that parricide.

Sir Tho. Gates with 150. lames Towne abandoned.

Theartiuallof But God that would not it should bee unplanted, sent Sir Thomas Gates, and Sir George Summers , with one hundred and fiftie men , most happily preserved by the Bermudas to preserve vs. But when those noble Knights did see our miseries (being strangers in the Countrey) and could 50 understand no more of the cause but by their consecture of our clamours and complaints, of accufing or excusing one another, they imbarked vs with themselves, with the best meanes they could, and abandoning lames Towne, fet faile for England.

The arrivall of

But yet God would not so haue it , for ere wee left the River ; wee met the Lord de-la-wate, then gouernour of the Countrey, with three Ships exceeding well furnished with all necessaries ficting, who againe returned them to the abandoned I ames Towne, the ninth of Iune, 1610. 20companied with Sir Ferdinande Wainman, and divers other Gentlemen of fort. Sir George Someter, and Captaine Argall he presently dispatcheth to repaire to the Bermuda, to furnish them with prouision : Sir Thomas Gates for England to helpe for ward their supplies : himselfe neglected not the best was in his power for the furtherance of the businesse, and regaining what was lost. But 60 euen in the beginning of his proceedings, his Lordship had such an incounter, that after eight Two fhips fent months fickneffe, he was forced to faue his life, by his returne for England.

to the Bermu-

In this time Argall, not finding the Bermadas , having loft Sir George Semers at lea, fell on the coast of Sagadabock, where refreshing himselfe, he found a convenient hilling for Cod. With a taste CHAP. S. Sauages kind Dage; Crost by extraordinary windes.

whereof he returned to lames Towne, from whence the Lord De-la-ware fent him to trade in the River or Patawomeck, where finding an English boy those people had preserved from the furv of Powbatas, by his acquaintance had fuch good viage of those kind Sauages, that they fraughted his Ship with Corne, wherewith he returned to James Towne, and fo for England with the Lord Gouernour; yet before his returne, the adventurers had fent Sir Thomas Dale with three Ships. The arrivalos men and cattell, and all other provisions necessarie for a yeere, all which arrived the tenth of Sir. The Dale, , May, 1611.

Againe, to second him with all possible expedition there was prepared for Sir Thomas Gates, fixe tall Ships with three hundred men, and one hundred Kine, with other cattell, with munition, and all manner of prouision could be thought needfull, and they arrived about the first of Auguft next after fafely at lames Towne.

Sir Goorge Somers all this time was supposed loft : but thus it hapned, miffing the Barmudas, Sir George So. hee fell also as did Argall with Sagadabeck, where being refreshed, would not content himselfe mers arrivall at with that repulle, but returned agains in the fearch, and there fafely arrived. But overtoyling and dieth. himselse on a surfet died. And in this Cedar Ship built by his owne directions, and partly with his owne hands, that had not in her any Iron, but onely one bolt in her Keele, yet well endured thus toffed to and seaine in this mightie Ocean, till with his dead bodie the arrived in England, and at Whitchareh in Dorfetshire, his body by his friends was honourably buried, with mane vo- His heart and lies of shot, and the rites of a Souldier, &c.

But thus much may ferue at the argument of the diffenries fellowing, and at the Prologue to the Vir buried in Sumginian Scene, where we will first produce M. Archer, after whose succinit narration, M. Strachies co. mer Ilands, a pious discourse shall feast you with the linely expression of others miseries, and Barmudas bappy discours to them comin Rhetorickes Full fea and spring tide.

municated.

CHAP. V.

A Letter of M. GABRIEL ARCHAR, touching the Voyage of the Fleet of Ships. which arrived at Virginia, without Sir THO. GATES, and Sir GEORGE SYMMERS, 1609.



Rom Woolwich the fifteenth of May, 1609, fementh faile weyed anchor, and came to Pimmouth the twentieth days, where Sir George Somers, with two final Vessells, conforted with us. Here we tooke into the Bleffing (being the flip wherein I went) fixe Mares and two Horfes; and the Fleet layed in forme necessaries belonging to the attion : In which bufinesse we spent time till the second of lune. And then wee set sayle to Sea,

but croft by South-west winder, we put in to Faulemouth, and there staying till the eight 40 of lune, me then gate out. Our Courfe was commanded to leane the Canaries one hundred leagues to the appointed Eastward at least, and to store away directly for Virginia, without touching at the West Indies, except Course the Fleet Should chance to be Separated, then they were to repaire to the Bermuda, there to stay fenen dayes in expellation of the Admirall; and if they found him not, then to take their course to Virginia.

Now thus it happened; about fixe dayer after we loft the fight of England, one of Sir George So. The Ships, and mers Pinnaffes left our company, and (as I take it) bare up for England ; the reft of the first, viz. The chiefe men in Sea Aduenture Admiral mberein was Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Somer, and Captaine Newport : The Diamond Vice-admirall, wherein was Captaine Ratcliffe, and Captaine King. The Falcon Reme-admirall, in which was Captaine Martin, and Master Nellion : The Bleffing , wherein I and Captaine Adams went : The Vnitie, wherein Captaine Wood, and Master Pett were. The Lion. wherein Captaine Webb remained : And the Swallow of Sir George Somers, in which Captaine 40 Moone, and Master Somer went. In the Catch went one Matthew Fitch Master : and in the Boat of Sir George Somers, called the Virginia, which was built in the North Colony, went one Captains Davies, and one Master Davies. These were the Captatines and Masters of our Fleet.

We ran a Southerly course fron the Tropicke of Cancer, where having the Sun within fixe or seuen degrees right over our head in luly, we bore away West; so that by the ferment heat and loomes breezes, Sicknesse and many of our men fell field of the Calenture, and out of two figs was throwne over-board thirtie two per- mortalities at fant. The Vicealmitall was land to have the planes in here thus in the Rhelling we had not any felds of his Sea. sons. The Viceadmirall was faid to have the plague in her; but in the Bleffing we had not any sicke, albeit we had twenty women and children.

Vpon Saint lames day, bemo about one hundred and fiftie leagues distant from the Weft Indies, in 60 croffing the Gulfe of Bahoma, there hapned a most terrible and venement storme, which was a taile of the Terrible ter-West Indian Horacano; this tempest seperated all our Fleet one from another, and it was so violent that pett. men could scarce stand upon the Deckes, neither could any man beare another speake, being thus divided. enery man steered bis owne course, and as it fell out about fine or fixe dayes after the storme ceased (which endure fortie foure boures in extremitie.) The Lion first, and after the Falcon and the Vnitie, got fight

Снар. 6.

mors charge-Arrivall in Vaginia.

1734

of our Shippe, and so we lay a way directly for Virginia, finding neither current nor winde opposite. at Note. Folicite- some bane reported, to the great charge of our Counsell and Aduenturers. The Vnicy man fore distressed nome nume reported, when the second product of fewenty land men, five had not ten found, and all her Sea men were downe. but onely the Master and his Boy, with one poore faster, but we relieved them, and we four e consortine sall into the Kings Riner haply the elementh of August. In the Vnity were borne two children at Sea. but both died, being both Boyes.

When wee came to lames Towns, we found a Ship which had bin there in the River a moneth before we came; this was fent out of England by our Counfels leave and authority, to fish for Sturgeon, and to cos the ready nay, without tracing through the Torrid Zoan, and shee performed it: her Commander was Captain Argall Captains Argoll (a good Marriner, and a very civill Gentleman) and her Master one Robert Tindail. 19

State of the Colony.

blame alfo.

The veople of our Colonic were found all in health (for the most part) howbest when Captaine Argoll same in they were in such distresse for many were dispersed in the Sauages townes, living upon their almes for an ounce of Copper a day, and fourescore lined twenty miles from the Fort, and fed upon nothine but Orders eight weekes fo ace, baning no other allowance at all, neither were the people of the Country able to relieue them if they would, Whereupon Captaine New port and others have beene much to blame to in-Lilleneffe and forme the Counfell of such plenty of vittuall in this Country, by which meanes they have beene flacke in other vicesto this supply to give convenient content. V pon this, you that be adventurers, must pardon us, if you finde not returne of Commodity fo ample as you may expect because the law of nature bids us seeke sustenance first. and then to labour to content you afterwards. But upon this point I shall be more large in my next Letter. After our foure Ships had him in harbour a few dayes, came in the Viceadmirall, having out her mane 20

Some things parely,falfe rumors, partly factions, fuggenions, are here left out.

the malecon-

tents which

fing nowill

comming of

the following

miferies in

which this

perificd,

Author with

him arole

Mast over boord, and bad many of her men very sicke and weake, but she could tell no newes of our Governour, and some three or foure dayes after her, came in the Swallow, with her maine Maft overboard alfa. and had a shrewa leake neither did she see our Admirall. Now aid we all lament much the absence of our Gouernour, for contentions began to grow, and fattions, and partakings, &c. Infomuch as the President, to strengthen his authority, accorded with the

Mariners, and gave not any due respect to many worthy Gentlemen, that came in our Ships: wherewore They choose a they generally (baning alfo my confent) chofe Maiter Welt, my Lord de la Wars brother, to betheir Go. newGouernor. uernour, or president de bene este, in the absence of Sir Thomas Gates, or if be miscarried by Sea. then to continue tillwe heard newes from our Counfell in England. This choice of him they made not to di-Hincille lacherme. Henge fro furbe the old President during his time, but as his authority expired, then to take upon him the folego- 30 wenment with such assistants of the Captaines, as discrettest persons as the Colonie afforded. Perhaps ven Bad beene in Prail bane it blaz sued a mutenie by such as retaine old malice; but Master West, Master Petcie, and President bear of the Master West, Master Petcie, and enemies to the all the respected Gentlemen of worth in Virginia, can and will testifie otherwise upon their outher. For the Kings Patent weratified, but refused to be governed by the President that now is, after his time was ex-Prefident,raipired, and onely subjected our selves to Master West, whom we labour to have next President. I cannot certific you of much more as yet, until we grow to some certaine flay in this our state, but by the other reports at their Ships you hall know more. So with my harty commendations I cease. From Iames Towne this last thefe ftirs and of Angust 1609.

CHAP. VI

amont the whole Colony A true reportory of the wracke, and redemption of Sir THOMAS GATES Knight ; poon, and from the Hands of the Bermudas : his comming to Virginia, and the estate of that Colonie then, and after, on-der the government of the Lord LA WARRE, luly 15. 1610. written by WILLIAM STRACHY, Esquire.

A most dreadfull Tempest (the manifold deaths whereof are here to the life described) their wracke on Bermuda, and the descrip-

Xcellent Lady, know that vpon Friday late in the evening, we brake ground out of the Sound of Pomosuf, our whole Fleete then confidment of Course and two Pinnesses. of the Sound of Pymuth, our whole Heete then confifting of fearn good Ships, go and two Pinneses, all which from the fail fecand of June, who the twenty three of fully kept in friendly confort together not a whole watch at any time, Joofine the fishe school golden. fing the fight each of other. Our course when we came about the height of betweene 26. and 27. degrees, we declined to the Northward, and according to

our Governours instructions aftered the trade and ordinary way vied heretofore by Dominico. and Monis, in the West Indies, and found the winde to this course indeede as triendly . 25 in the judgement of all Sea-men, it is vpon a more direct line, and by Sir George Summers our Ad- Sir O Summers mirall had bin likewise in former time failed, being a Gentleman of approued affurednesse; and a good maiready knowledge in Sea-faring actions, having often carried command, and chiefe charge in ma. ner and tried ny Ships Royall of her Maiefties, and in fundry Voyages made many defeats and attempts in the time of the Spaniards quarrelling with vs, vpon the Hands and Indies, &c. We had followed this sourfe folong, as now we were within feuen or eight dayes at the most, by Cap, Newports reckoning of making Cape Henry upon the coast of Priginia: When on S. James his day, July 24. be-

o ing Monday (preparing for no lefte all the blacke night before) the cloudes gathering thicke vp. A terrible on vs. and the winder linging, and whiftling most vausally, which made vs to cast off our Pin- florme expreson vs, and the windes mignig, and winding most the latery wind hideous began to blow from fed in a pathe-nace towing the same vntill then afterne, a dreadfull storme and hideous began to blow from ficialland retoout the North-east, which swelling, and roaring as it were by fits, some houres with more violence then others, at length did beate all light from heaven; which like an hell of darkeneffe ture tion. ned blacke upon ve, to much the more fuller of horror, as in such cases horror and feare wie to Black-darknes, opermine the troubled, and overmaftered fences of all, which (taken vp with amazement) the eares lay to fentible to the terrible cries, and murmurs of the windes, and diffraction of our Company, as who was most armed, and best prepared, was not a little shaken. For surely (Noble Feare of death Lady) as death comes not so sodaine nor apparant, so he comes not so elusin and painfull (to men fearefull. an especially even then in health and perfect habitudes of body) as at Sea; who comes at no time fo

welcome, but our frailty (to weake is the hold of hope in milerable demonstrations of danger) it makes guilty of many contrary changes, and conflicts: For indeede death is accompanied at no time, nor place with circumstances every way so vncapable of particularities of goodnesse and inward comforts, as at Sea. For it is most true, there artieth commonly no such vonmercifull tempest, compound of so many contrary and divers Nations, but that it workerh voon the whole frame of the body, and most loathsomely affecteth all the powers thereof : and the manner of the ficknesse it laies upon the body, being so unsufferable, gives not the minde any free and quiet time, to wie her judgemen; and Empire : which made the Poet fay :

Hostium ux ores, paerique cacos Sentiant motus erientis Hadi, & Lqueris nigri fremitum, & trementes Verbere rinat .

For foureand twenty houres the florme in a reftleffe tumult, had blowne fo exceedingly, as Confinence we could not apprehend in our imaginations any possibility of greater violence, yet did wee still and increases finde it, not onely more terrible, but more constant, fury added to fur, and one storme vrging a fecond more outragious then the former; whether it fo wrought voon our feares, or indeede met with new forces: Sometimes firikes in our Ship amongst women, and passengers, not vied to fuch hurly and discomforts, made vs looke one vpon the other with troubled hearts, and panting bosomes : our clamours dround in the windes, and the windes in thunder. Prayers might

well be in the heart and lips, but drowned in the outcries of the Officers: nothing heard that could give comfort, nothing feene that might incourage hope. It is impossible for me, had I the voyce of Stentor, and expression of as many tongues, as his throate of voyces, to expresse the outcries and miferies, not languishing, but wasting his spirits, and are constant to his owne principles, but not prevailing. Our failes wound up lay without their vie, and if at any time wee bore but a Hollocke, or halfe forecourfe, to guide her before the Sea, fix and fometimes eight men were not inough to hold the whipstaffe in the steerage, and the tiller below in the Gunner roome, by which may be imagined the strength of the storme : In which, the Sea swelled about Swelling Sea the Clouds, and gaue battell vnto Heauen. It could not be faid to raine, the waters like whole fer forth in a Rivers did flood in the ayre. And this I did still observe, that whereas vpon the Land, when a swelling stile. florme hath powred it selfe forth once in drifts of raine, the winde as beaten downe, and vanquifhed therewith not long after indureth: here the glut of water(as if throatling the winde ere

while) was no fooner a little emptied and qualified, but infrantly the windes (as having gotten their mouthes now free, and at liberty) spake more loud, and grew more tumultuous, and Compared malignant. What shall I say? Windes and Seas were as mad, as fury and rage could make them; with the Aufor mine owne part, I had bin in fome stormes before, as well vpon the coast of Barbary and Alexperiments. geere, in the Lenant, and once more diffresfull in the Adriatique gulfe, in a bottome of Candy, fo as I may well fay. Ego quid fit ater Adria noni finus, & quid albus Peccet lapex. Yet all that I had euer fuffered gathered together, might not hold comparison with this: there was not a moment in which the fodaine splitting, or infant ouer-fetting of the Shippe was not

Howbeit this was not all; It pleased God to bring a greater affliction yet upon vs; for in the Leake added beginning of the storme we had received likewise a mighty leake. And the Ship in every loyne to the stormes almost, having spued out her Okam, before we were aware (a casualty more desperate then any tenour, other that a Voyage by Sea draweth with it) was growne fine footefuddenly deepe with water

aboue her ballaft, and we almost drowned within, whilest we fat looking when to perish from aboue. This imparting no leffe terrour then danger, ranne through the whole Ship with much fright and amaziment, flartled and turned the bloud, and tooke downe the braues of the most hardy Marriner of them all, infomuch as he that before happily felt not the forrow of others. now began to forrow for himselfe, when he saw such a pond of water to suddenly broken in and which he knew could not (without prefent avoiding) but instantly finke him. So as iovning (nnely for his owne fake, not yet worth the fauing) in the publique fafety; there might be feene Mafter, Mafters Mate, Boateswaine, Quarter Mafter. Coopers, Carpenters, and who not with candels in their hands, creeping along the ribs viewing the fides, fearthing enery corner, and life. ning in enery place, if they could heare the water runne, Many a weeping leake was this way found, and halfuly itopt, and at length one in the Gunner roome made vp with I know not how many peeces of Beere; but all was to no purpose, the Leake (if it were but one) which drunke in our oreatest Seas, and tooke in our destruction taltest, could not then be found, nor ever was, by any labour, countell, or fearch. The waters still increasing, and the Pumpes going, which at length choaked with bringing vp whole and continuall Bisket (and indeede all we had, tenne thousand weight) it was conceiued, as most likely, that the Leake might be sprung in the Breadroome, whereupon the Carpenter went downe, and ript vp all the roome, but could not

Leake cannor which cannot

> I am not able to give vnto your Ladiship every mans thought in this perplexity, to which we were now brought; but to me, this Leakage appeared as a wound given to men that were before dead. The Lord knoweth, I had as little hope, as defire of lite in the ftorme, & in this, it went beyond my will; because beyond my reason, way we should labour to preserve life; yet we did. either because so deare are a few lingring houres of life in all mankinde, or that our Christian knowledges taught vs, how much we owed to the rites of Nature, as bound, not to be falle to our felues, or to neglect the meanes of our owne preferuation; the most despairefull things amongit men, being matters of no wonder nor moment with him, who is the rich Fountaine and admirable Effence of all mercy.

Their labour for life three dayes and foure nights,

Our Gouernonr, vpon the tuefday morning (at what time, by fuch who had bin below in the hold, the Leake was first discovered) had caused the whole Company, about one hundred and forty, besides women, to be equally divided into three parts, and opening the Ship in threepla- 26 ces (vnder the forecastle, in the waste, and hard by the Bitacke) appointed each man where to attend; and thereunto every man came duely upon his watch, tooke the Bucket or Pumpe for one houre, and rested another. Then men might be seene to labour, I may well say, for life, and the better fort, euen our Gouernour, and Admirall themselves, not refusing their turne, and to fold each the other, to give example to other. The common fort stripped naked, as men in Gallies, the easier both to hold out, and to shrinke from under the falt water, which continually leapt in among them, kept their eyes waking, and their thoughts and hands working, with tyred bodies, and waited spirits, three dayes and foure nights destitute of outward comfort, and desperate of any deliuerance, testifying how mutually willing they were, yet by labour to keepeeach other from drowning, albeit each one drowned whilest he laboured.

Seabreakes in.

The Gover-

Once, so huge a Sea brake vpon the poope and quarter, vpon vs, as it couered our Shippe from flearne to flemme, like a garment or a vast cloude, it filled her brimme full for a while within, from the hatches up to the sparse decke. This source or confluence of water was fo violent, as it rusht and carried the Helm-man from the Helme, and wrested the Whipstaffe out of his hand, which so flew from side to side, that when he would have ceased the same againe, it fo toffed him from Star-boord to Lar-boord, as it was Gods mercy it had not folie him : It so best him from his hold, and so bruifed him, as a fresh man hazarding in by chance fell faire with it, and by maine ffrength bearing somewhat vp, made good his place, and with much clamour incouraged and called vpon others; who gave her now vp, rent in pieces and absolutely loft. Our Gouernour was at this time below at the Capftone, both by his speech and authoritie 50 heartening every man vnto his labour. It strooke him from the place where hee fate, and grovelad him, and all vs about him on our faces, bearing together with our breaths all thoughts from our bolomes, e. e, then that wee were now finking. For my part, I thought her alreadie in the bottome of the Sea; and I have heard him fay, wading out of the floud thereof, all his ambition was but to climbe vp about hatches to dye in Aperto colo, and in the company of his old friends. Remerois fa. It fo flun'd the flip in her full pace, that free flured no more, then if free had beene caughtin a net, or then, as if the fabulous Remora had thucke to her fore-castle. Yet without bearing one inch fmall fifthable of faile, even then fnee was making her way nine or ten leagues in a watch. One thing, it is not without his wonder (whether it were the feare of death in fo great a storme, or that it pleased God to be gracious vnto vs) there was not a paffenger, gentleman, or other, after hee beganne to 60 firre and labour, but wasable to relieue his fellow, and make good his courie : And it is most whom he will trus, fuch as in all their life times had neuer done houres worke before (their mindes now helping their bodies) were able twice tortie eight houres together to toile with the belt,

During all this time, the neavens look'd to blacke vpon vs, that it was not possible the eleva-

nation of the Pole might be oblerued : nor a Starre by night, not Sunne beame by day was to be feene. Onely your the thurlday night Sir George Summers being voon the watch, had an apparition of a little round light, like a faint Starre, trembling, and ffreaming along with a sparkeling blaze, halfe the height vpon the Maine Maft, and shooting fometimes from Shroud to Siroud, tempting to lettle as it were upon any of the foure Shrouds: and for three or foure houres together, or rather more, halfe the night it kept with vs. running fometimes along the Maine-Shrouds. yard to the very end, and then returning. At which, Sir George Cummers called divers about him. and shawed them the same, who observed it with much wonder, and careful nesse: but voon a fadaine towards the morning watch, they loft the fight of it, and knew not what way it made.

10 The superstitious Sea-men make many constructions of this Sea-fire, which neverthelesse is vsuall in formes : the fame (it may be) which the Gracians were wont in the Mediterranean to call Caffor and Pollux, of which, if one onely appeared without the other, they tooke it for an ewill hope of great tempest. The Italians, and fuch, who lye open to the Adrianane and Tyrrene Sea, call it (a (acred Body) Corpo (ancto : the Spaniards call it Saint Elmo, and have an authentique Section 1.14. and miraculous Legend for it. Be it what it will, we laid other foundations of fafety or ruine. c.i. s.t. then in she rifing or falling of it, could it have ferued vs now miraculously to have taken our height by, it might have frucken amazement, and a reverence in our devotions, according to the due of a miracle. But it did not light vs any whit the more to our knowne way, who ran now (as doe hood winked men) at all aduentures, fometimes North, and North-eaft, then North and

20 by West, and in an instant againe varying two or three points, and sometimes halfe the Compaffer. East and by South we steered away as much as we could to beare pright, which was no small carefulnesse nor paine to doe, albeit we much vnrigged our Ship, threw ouer-boord much luggage, many a Trunke and Cheft (in which I fuffered no meane loffe) and tlaued many a Butt of Beere, Hogiheads of Oyle, Syder, Wine, and Vinegar, and heaved away all our Ordnance on the Starboord fide, and had now purposed to have cut downe the Maine Mail, the more to lighten her, for we were much ipent, and our men fo weary, as their flengths together failed them. with their hearts, having trausiled now from Tuefday till Friday morning, day and night, with No fleene or out either fleepe or foode; for the leakeage taking vp all the hold, wee could neither come by food romtuef

Beere nor fresh water: fire we could keepe none in the Cookeroome to dresse any meate, and day till triday carefulnesse, griefe, and our turne at the Pumpe or Bucket, were sufficient to hold sleepe from

And furely Madam, it is most true, there was not any houre (a matter of admiration) all these dayes, in which we freed not twelue hundred Barricos of water, the leaft whereof contained fix 1200. Barricos gallons, and some eight, besides three deepe Pumpes continually going, two beneath at the Capfides a Pumpe, ftone, and the other aboue in the halfe Decke, and at each Pumpe foure thousand stroakes at the acquiting 100 leaft in a watch; fo as I may well fay, every foure houres, we quitted one hundred tunnes of wa- tuns of water ter ; and from tuefday noone till friday noone, we bailed and pumped two thousand tunne, and suery 4, houres yet doe what we could, when our Ship held leaft in her, after tuelday night fecond watch) shee bore ten foote deepe, at which stay our extreame working kept her one eight glaffes, forbearance 40 whereof had instantly funke vs, and it being now Friday, the fourth morning, it wanted little, but that there had bin a generall determination, to have flut vp hatches, and commending our finfull foules to God, committed the Shippe to the mercy of the Sea : furely, that night we must have done it, and that night had we then perished: but see the goodnesse and sweet introduction of better hope by our mercifull God given vnto vs. Sir George Summers, when no man dreamed of fuch happinesse, had discovered, and cried Land. Indeede the morning now three quarters summer lands

commanded the Helme-man to beare vp, the Boatefwaine founding at the first, found it thirteene fathome, & when we stood a little in seven fatham; and presently heaving his lead the third time. to had ground at foure fathome, and by this, we had got her within a mile under the South-east point of the land, where we had somewhat smooth water. But having no hope to saucher by comming to an anker in the fame, we were inforced to runne her ashoare, as neere the land as we could, which brought vs within three quarters of a mile of thoare, and by the mercy of God vnto vs. making out our Boates, we had ere night brought all our men, women, and children, about They go a land

the number of one hundred and fifty, fare into the Hand. We found it to be the dangerous and dreaded Hand, or rather Hands of the Bermuda: whereof let mee give your Ladyship a briefe description, before I proceed to my narration. And that the supposed the rather, because they be so terrible to all that ever touched on them, and such tempelts, thunders, Divels, &c.

and other featefull objects are feene and heard about them, that they be called commonly, The 60 Denils Hands, and are feared and anoyded of all fea trauellers aline, about any other place in the world. Yet it pleased our mercifull God, to make eyen this hideous and hated place, both the place of our fafetie and meanes of our deliverance.

And hereby also, I hope to deliver the world from a foule and generall errour : it being counted of most, that they can be no habitation for Men, but rather given over to Deuils and wicked

fpent, had wonne a little cleerenesse from the dayes before, and it being better furueyed, the ye-descried by Sig ty trees were feene to move with the winde vpon the shoare side: whereupon our Governour George Summers

Shippe in her courfe. Godinableth faue to faue

themfelues,

Spirits; whereas indeed wee find them now by experience, to bee as habitable and commodious as most Countries of the same climate and situation infomuch as if the entranceinto them were as a le as the place it selfe is contenting, it had long ere this beene inhabited, as well as other liands. Thus thall we make it appeare, That Truth is the daughter of Time, and that men onehnot to deny enery thing which is not fubice to their owne fenfe.

Si-George Sum.

forucy : his

we have note

M.No parchach

In his Gen hill.

Line other reci-

terh the fame

h florie more

fairh it haih

gwe names,

Garza,of the

and Bermudez

mudes: Note

that he place h

ir mare to the

North-then

that which is

time the , fee

The Scan gras

(as I haue

beard) which

were wracked

there in Cap.

on that ours

are not the

Butleys time

The Bermudu bee broken Hands, fine hundred of them in manner of an Archipelague (at leaft if you may call them all Ilands that lie, how little focuer into the Sea, and by themselues) of fmall compaffe, fome larger yet then other, as time and the Sea hath wonne from them, and eaten his pallage through, and all now lying in the figure of a Croissant, within the circuit of fixe or feven leagues at the most, albeit at first it is said of them that they were thirteene or sourteene 10 leagues; and more in longitude as I have heard. For no greater diffance is it from the Northwest Point to Gates his Bay, as by this Map your Ladyship may fee, in which Sir George Summers, who coalted in his Boat about them all, tooke great care to expresse the same exactly and full. and made his draught perfect for all good occasions, and the benefit of such, who either in distresse mishe draught which he brought voon them, or make taile this way.

It should feeme by the testimony of Gonzalus Ferdinandus Oniedus, in his Booke intituled. The Summary or Abridgement of his generall History of the West Indies, written to the Emperer Charles une parinnea an exact Map. the Fitt, that they have beene indeed of greater compasse (and I easily believe it) then they are Orfalams now, who thus faith : In the yeere 1515, when I came first to informe your Maiefly of the flate of the things in India, and was the year following in Flanders, in the time of your most fortunate succellen to the le your kingdomes of Aragony and Catteel, whereas at that voyage I fayled above the Iland Bermudas otherwise called Gorza, being the farthest of all the Ilands that are yet found at this day in the world. and arriving there at the depth of eight yards of water, and distant from the Land as farre as the sha of a Peece of Ordnance, I determined to fend some of the Ship to Land, as well to make fearch of Such pa-ticularly he things as were there, as a'fo to leave in the I land certaine Hogges for increase, but the time not ferning my purpole, by reason of contrary winds I could bring my Ships no neerer : the Iland being twelve leagues in length, and fixteene in breadth, and about thirtie in circuit, lying in the thirtie three digrees of thip which first discouered it, the North fide. Thus farre hee.

True it is, the maine lland, or greatest of them now, may bee some sixteene miles inlength being fo called, East North-east, and West South-west the longest part of it, standing in thirtie two degrees and 20 or that this ma- twentie minutes, in which is a great Bay on the North fide, in the North-west end, and many broken Ilands in that Sound or Bay, and a little round Iland at the South-west end, As occasions med lobn Ber-

were offered, to we gave titles and names to certaine places. These Hands are often afflicted and rent with tempests, great strokes of thunder, lightning and raine in the extreamity of violence; which (and it may well bee) hath fo fundred and tome downe the Rockes, and whuried whole quarters of Ilands into the maine Sea (fome fixe. some by oursinaabi- feuen leagues, and is like in time to fwallow them all) fo as even in that distance from the shoare tid, & fay form there is no finall danger of them and with them, of the fformes continually raging from them, which once in the full and change commonly of every Moone (Winter or Summer) keepe their vnchangeableround, and rather thunder then blow from enery corner about them, fometimes for- 40 tie eight houres together : especially if the circle, which the Philosophers call Halo were (in our being there) seene about the Moone at any season, which bow indred appeared there often, and would bee of a mightie compasse and breadth. I have not observed it any where one quarter so great, especially about the twentieth of March, I faw the greatest when followed upon the eucs eue of the Annuntiation of our Ladie, the mightiest blast of lightning, and most terrible rap of thunder that ever aftonied mortall men, I thinke. In August, September, and untill the end of were of opini-October, wee had very hot and pleasant weather onely (as I say) thunder, lightning, and many feattering showers of Raine (which would passe swiftly ouer , and yet fall with such force and Bermudas : Yea darkneffe for the time as if it would never bee cleere againe) wee wanted not any; and of raine more in Summer then in Winter, and in the beginning of December wee had great flore of highe 50 have sensuch (the sharpe windes blowing Northerly) but it continued not, and to say truth, it is wintry or an Hand to the fummer weather there, according as those North and Noth-west windes blow, Much caste of this North of ours, kind of Winter wee had; for those cold windes would suddenly alter the ayre : but when there ted to diffouer was no breath of wind to bring the movil ayre out of the Seas, from the North and North-well, it ; [a] lidice wee were rather weary of the heate, then pinched with extreamitie of cold : Yet the three Winter moneths, December, lanuary, and February, the winds kept in those cold corners, and indeed temposition. then it was heavy and melancholy being there, nor were the winds more rough in March, then mannerirele in the forefaid moneths, and yet euen then would the Birds breed. I thinke they breede there, Monage geat most monethes in the yeere, in September, and at Christmaffe I saw young Birds, and compasse in Februarie, at which time the mornings are there cas in Marie I saw young Birds, and shared. in Februarie, at which time the mornings are there (as in May in England) fresh and sharpe. 60 Well may the Spaniards, and thefe Bifcani Pilots , with all their Traders into the Indies, palls

by these Hands as afraid (either bound out or homewards) of their very Meridian, and leave the fishing for the Pearle (which some fay, and I beleeue well is as good there, as in any of their other Indian Hands, and whereof we had some triall) to such as will adventure for them. The Seas about them are so ful of breaches, as with those dangers; they may well be faid to be thestrongeit lituate in the world. I have often heard Sir George Sammers, and Captaine Newport lay how they have not beene by any chance or discovery voon their like. It is impossible without great and perfect knowledge, and fearch first made of them to bring in a bable Boat, to much as of ten Tun without apparant roine, albeit within there are many faire harbours for the greatest English Ship : yea, the Argafies of Venice may ride there with warer enough, and lafe land-lockt. There is one onely lide that admits fo much as hope of fafetie by many a league, on which (as before defeibed) it pleated God to bring vs. wee had not come one man of vs elfe a shoare, as the weather was : they have beene ever therefore left defolate and not inhabited.

10 . The foile of the whole Iland is one and the same, the mould, dark, fed, sandie, dry, and vncapa- Experience ble I beleeue of any of our commodities or truits. Sir George Summers in the beginning of August, hath Biesquared out a Garden by the quarter (the quarter being fee downebefore a goodly Bay, voon ter thewed which our Gouernour did firit lespe ainoare, and therefore called it (as aforefaid) Gates bis Bay, fince, as we atwhich opened into the Eaft, and into which the Sea did ebbe and flow, according to their tides, truits wormes. and fowed Muske Melons, Peafe, Onyons, Raddilh, Lettice, and many English feeds, and Kitchen & those that Herbes. All which in some cen daies did appeare aboue ground, but whether by the small Birds, dwell there of which there be many kindes, or by Flies (Wormes I never faw any, nor any venomous thing, as Toade, or Snake, or any creeping beaft hurtfull, onely fome Spiders, which as many afterme are which tooke fignes of great flore of Gold : but they were long and flender legge Spiders, and whether veno-

20 mous or no I know not . I beleeue not, fince wee should still find them amongst our linnen in our ledging. Yes Chefts, and drinking Cans; but we never received any danger from them: A kind of Melonibia, the dawning & or blacke Beetell there was, which bruifed, gaue a fauour like many fiveet and ftrong gums punned together) whether, I ay, hindred by these, or by the condition or vice of the soyle they light; though came to no proofe, nor thrused. It is like enough that the commodities of the other Westerne notall so cer-Ilands would prosper there, as Vines, Lemmons, Oranges, and Sugar Canes: Our Gouernour taineas the made triall of the later, and buried some two or three in the Garden mould, which were referred Sun; for which in the wracke amongst many which wee carried to plant here in Vogima, and they beganne to cause I have grow, but the Hogs breaking in , both rooted them vp and eate them : there is not through the thefefift difwhole Hands either Champion ground, Valleys, or fresh Rivers. They are full of Shawes of good coveries.

30 ly Cedar, fairer then ours here of Virginia; the Berries, whereof our men feething, straining, and Spidore. letting ftandiome three or foure daies, made a kind of pleafant drinke : thele Berries are of the Beeile very fame bigneffe, and collour of Corynthes, full of little stones, and verie restringent or hard building. Hoss. Peter Martin faith, That at Alexandria in Egypt there is a kind of Cedar, which the lewes Cedars. dwelling there, affirme to be the Cedars of Libanus, which beare old fruite and new all the years, Cedar-drinke; being a kinde of Apple which tait like Prines : but then, neither those there in the Bermudis, American Co. nor ours here in Virginia are of that happy kind.

Likewise there grow great store of Palme Trees, not the right Indian Palmes, such as in Saint with those of Iohn Port-Rico are called Cocos, and are there full of fmall fruites like Almonds (of the bignesse of Libanus, as by the graines in Pomgranates) nor of those kind of Palmes which beares Dates, but a kind of Sie the historic of 40 merons or wild Palmes in growth, fashion, leaves, and branches, refembling those true Palmes; them in our for the Tree is high, and straight, sappy and spongious, vinitime for any vite; in branches but in the vppermost pur thereof, and in the top grow leaves about the head of in the most pair.

Application

**A whereof they call Palmeto, and it is the heart and pith of the fame Trunke, fo white and thin, as Many forts of it will peele off into pleates as smooth and delicate as write Sattin into twentie folds, in which a Palmes, the man may write as in paper) where they fread and fall downward about the Tree like an ouer. Coco, the blowne Rose, or Sasfron flower not early gathered; so broad are the leanes, as an Italian Vmbrello, the Winea man may well detend his whole body under one of them, from the greatest storme raine that Palme, or tade falls. For they being stiffe and smooth, as if so many slagges were knit together, the raine easily die, &c, besides flideth off. Wee oftentimes found growing to thefe leaves, many Silk-wormes involved there-

80 m, like those small wormes which Acosta writethos, which grew in the leaves of the Tunal Tree, Silks wormes, of which being dried, the Indians make their Cochinile to precious and marchantable, With there leanes we that ched our Cabbins, and roading the Palmito or loft top thereof, they had a tafte like fried Melons, and being fod they eate like Cabbedges, but not fo offenfuely thankefull to the ftomacke. Many an ancient Borger was therefore heaved at, and fell not for his place, but for his head : for our common people, whole bellies never had eares, made it no breach of Charitie in their hot blouds and tall fromackes to murder thousands of them. They beare a kind of Berry, blacke and round, as bigge as a Damfon, which about December were ripe and I from theing scalded (whilest they are greene) they eate like Bullates. These Trees shid their leaves in the Winter moneths, as withered or burnt with the cold Hails of the North winde, effeci-60 ally these that grow to the Seaward, and in March, there Burgen new in their roome fresh

Other kindes of high and fiveet fmelling Woods there bee, and divers colours, blacke, yellow, Other Trees! and red, and one which beares a round blew Berry, much eaten by our owne people, of a fliptick qualitie and rough taite on the ton gue like a Slow to Hay or binde the Fluxe, which the often

Waters No Springs

then found.

fince Wells

haue bin then

eating of the luscious Palme berry would bring them into, for the nature of fweet things is to clense and dissolute. A kinde of Pease of the bignesse and shape of a Katherine Peare, wee found growing woon the Rockes full of many tharpe fubtill prickes (as a Thirtle) which wee therefore called , The Printle Pears , the outfide greene , but being opened , of a deepe murrie. full of invee like a Mulberry, and just of the same substance and taste, wee both eate them raw

Sure it is, that there are no Rivers nor running Springs of fresh water to bee found voon and of them : when wee came first wee digged and found certaine gushings and soft bublings, which being either in bottoms, or on the tide of hanging ground, were onely fed with raine water, which neuerthelelle foone finketh into the earth and vanisheth away, or emptieth it felfe out of fight in- ta to the Sea, without any channeli aboue or vpon the superficies of the earth: for according as angged which ebbc and flow their raines fell, we had our Wels and Pits (which we digged) either halfe full, or absolute exhausted and dry, howbeit some low bottoms (which the continuall descent from the Hills filled full, and in those flats could have no passage away) we found to continue as fishing Ponds, or standing Pooles, continually Summer and Winter full of fresh water.

Fifb.

The shoare and Bayes round about, when weelanded first afforded great store of fish . and that of divers kindes, and good, but it should seeme that our fiers, which wee maintained on the shoares side draue them from vs, so as wee were in some want, vntill wee had made a flat bottome Gundall of Cedar with which wee put off farther into the Sea, and then daily hooked great store of many kindes, as excellent Angell-fish, Salmon Peale, Bonetas, 20 Stingray, Cabilly, Sinappers, Hogge-fish, Sharkes, Dogge-fish, Pilcherds, Mullets, and Rock-fish, of which bee divers kindes : and of these our Governour dryed and salted, and barrelling them vp, brought to fea fine hundred, for he had procured Salt to bee made with some Brine. which happily was preserved, and once having made a little quantity, he kept three or four pots boyling, and two or three men attending nothing elie in an house (iome little diffance from his Bay) fet vp on purpole for the fame worke.

Salt made

Likewise in Furbushers building Bay wee had a large Sein, or Tramell Net, which our Gopernour caused to be made of the Deere Toyles, which wee were to carry to Virginia, by drawing the Masts more straight and narrow with Roape Yarne, and which reached from one fide of the Dock to the other : with which (I may boldly fay) wee haue taken fine thousand of small 30 raken at a hale and great fish at one hale. As Pilchards , Breames , Mullets , Rocke-fish, &c. and other

kindes for which wee haue no names. Wee haue taken also from under the broken Rocks, Creuises oftentimes greater then any of our best English Lobsters; and likewise abundance of Crabbes, Oylters, and Wilkes. True it is, for Eth in eueric Coue and Creek weefond Snaules, and Skulles in that abundance, as (Ithinke) no lland in the world may have greatered. Caule of their ter flore or better Fish. For they sucking of the very water, which descendeth from the high Somnessee Hills mingled with juyce and verdor of the Palmes, Cedars, and other sweet Woods (which likewise make the Herbes, Roots, and Weeds sweet which grow about the Bankes) become thereby both fat and wholfome. As must those Fish needes bee groffe, slimy, and corrupt the bloud, which feed in Fennes, Marishes, Ditches, muddy Pooles, and neere vnto places 40 where much filth is daily cast forth. Vnscaled Fishes, such as Suning calleth Molles Pisces, as Trenches, Eele, or Lampries, and fuch feculent and dangerous Snakes wee neutrlaw any, nor may any Riuer bee inuenomed with them (I pray God) where I come. I forbeare to speake what a fort of Whales wee have seene hard aboard the shoare followed sometime by the Sword-fish and the Thresher, the sport whereof was not unpleasant. The Sword-fish, with his sharpe and needle Finne, pricking him into the belly when hee would stake and fall into the Sea; and when hee startled vpward from his wounds, the Thresher with his large Fins (like

Flayles) beating him about water. The examples whereof gives vs ((aith Onied:u) to vinderstand,

that in the selfe same perill and Janger doe men live in this mortall life, wherein is no certaine se-

No unscaled

Whale and

Cater-tray beare the bell away.Medie tutifimus ibis. Fowles.

Wild Swans,

it maketh a

curity neither in high effate nor low. Fowle there is great store, small Birds, Sparrowes fat and plumpe like a Bunting, bigger then ours, Robbins of divers colours greene and yellow, ordinary and familiar in our Cabbins, and other of leffe fort. White and gray Hernshawes, Bitters , Teale, Snites, Crowes, and Hawkes, of which in March wee found divers Ayres, Golhawkes and Taffells, Oxen-birds, Cormorants, Bald-Cootes, Moore-Hennes, Owles, and Battes in great store. And vpon New-yeeres day in the morning, our Gouernour being walked foorth with another Gentleman Master Iames Swift, each of them with their Peeces killed a wild Swanne, in a great Sea-water Bay or Pond in our Hand. Akinde of webbe-footed Fowle there is, of the bignifie of an English They call it of greene Plouer, or Sca-Meawe, which all the Summer wee faw not, and in the darket nights of November and December (for in the night they onely feed) they would come forth, but 60 not flye farre from home, and houering in the ayre, and ouer the Sea, made a strange hollow and barth howling. Their colour is inclining to Ruffet, with white bellies, as are likewife the long Feathers of their wings Ruffet and White) thele gather themselves together and breed in those llands which are high, and so farre alone into the Sea, that the Wilde Hogges

cannot I wimme over them , and there in the ground they have their Burrowes , like Conves in a Warren, and to brought in the loofe Mould, though not fo deepe : which Birds with a light bough in a darke night (as in our Lowbelling) wee caught. I have beene at the taking of three hundred in an houre, and wee might have laden our Boates. Our men found a pretrie way to take them, which was by standing on the Rockes or Sands by the Sea fide, and hollowing, laughing, and making the strangest out-cry that possibly they could : with the nevie whereof the Birds would come flocking to that place, and lettle voon the very armes and head of him that fo cryed, and still creepe neerer and neerer, answering the noyse themselves : by which our men would weigh them with their hand, and which weighed heavieff they tooke IO for the best and let the others alone, and to our men would take twen ie dozen in two houres of the chiefest of them ; and they were a good and well relished Fowle, fat and full as a Partridge. In lanuary wee had great store of their Egges, which are as great as an Hennes Egge. and to fathioned and white helled, and have no difference in yolke nor white from an Hennes Egge. There are thousands of these Birds, and two or three Hands full of their Burrowes . when ther at any time (in two hours warning) wee could fend our Cock-boat, and bring home as many as would ferue the whole Company : which Birds for their blindneffe (for they fee weak-Iv in the day) and for their cry and whooting, wee called the Sea Onle; they will hite cruelly with their crooked Bills. Wee had knowledge that there were wilde Hogges vpon the Hand, at first by our owne Wild Hogges

20 Swine preserved from the wrack and brought to shoare : for they straying into the Woods, an how histourd huge wilde Boare followed downe to our quarter, which at night was watched and taken in out and taken in this fort. One of Sir George Summers men went and lay among the Swine, when the Boare being come and groueled by the Sowes, her put ouer his hand and rubbed the fide gently of the Boare, which then lay itill, by which meanes hee fastned a rope with a sliding knot to the hinder legge and so rooke him, and after him in this fort two or three more. But in the end (a little bufinefleouer) our people would goe a hunting with our Ship Dogge, and fometimes bring home thirtie, fometimes firtie Boares, Sowes, and Pigs in a weeke aliue : for the Dog would faiten on them and hold, whilest the Hunti-men made in ; and there bee thousands of them in the Ilands, and at that time of the veere in August, September, October, and November, they were well fed 30 with Berries that dropped from the Cedars and the Palmes, and in our quarter wee made flyes for them, and gathering of these Berries served them twice aday, by which meanes we kept them in good plight : and when there was any fret of weather (for vpon enery increase of wind the billow would be fo great, as it was no putting out with our Gundall or Canow) that we could not fi h nor take Tortoyles, then wee killed our Hogs. But in February when the Palme Berries began to be icant or dry, and the Cedar Berries failed two moneths sooner. True it is the Hogs greye poore, and being taken to, wee could not raile them to be better, for besides those Bernes, we had nothing wherewith to franke them ; but even then the Tortoyles came in againe, of w hich wee daily both turned up great store, finding them on Land, as also sculling after them in our Boate throoke them with an Iron goad, and fod, baked, and roafted them. The Tortoyfe is reasonable Tortoifeld toothiom (fome fay) wholfome meate. I am fure our Company liked the meate of them verie well, and one Tortoyle would goe further among it them, then three Hogs. One Turtle (for fo we called them) featted well a dozen Meffes, appointing fixe to every Meffe. It is fuch a kind of meat. as a man can neither absolutely call Fish nor Flesh, keeping most what in the water, and feeding vpon Sea-graffe like a Heifer, in the bottome of the Couesand Bayes, and laying their Egges (of which wee should finde five hundred at a time in the opening of a shee Turtle) in the Sand by the shoare side, and so covering them close leave them to the hatching of the Sunne, like the Manati at Saint Dominique, which made the Spanish Friars (at their first arrivall) make some feruple to eate them on a Friday, because in colour and taste the fiesh is like to morfells of Veale. Concerning the laying of their Egges, and hatching of their young, Peter Martyr writeth thus in 50 his Decades of the Ocean : at fuch time as the heate of Nature moueth them to generation, they came forth of the Sea, and making a deepe pit in the fand, they lay three or four hundred Egges therein : when they have thus emptied their bag of Conception, they put as much of the fame againe into the Pit as may fatisfie to couer the Egges , and fo refort againe vnto the Sea, nothing carefull of their fuccession. At the day appointed of Nature to the procreation of these creatures.

Fffffff 2

there creepeth out a multitude of Tortoyies, as it were Pilmyers out of an Ant-hill, and this on-

ly by the heate of the Sunne, without any helpe of their Parents: their Egges are as big as Greie

Egges, and themselves growne to perfection, bigger then great round Targets.

ð. I I.

Actions and Occurrents whiles they continued in the Ilands : Rauens fent for Virginia: Diners mutinies ; PAINE executed : Two Pinnaces built.

O foone as wee were a little fetled after our landing, with all the conveniencie wee might, and as the place, and our many wants would give vs leave, wee made vp our ong Brate (as your Ladyship hath heard) in fashion of a Pinnace, fitting her with a httle Deck, made of the Hatches of our ruin'd flip, fo close that no water could goe in Io

H. Rauensvoy. her, gaue her Sayles and Oares, and intreating with our Mafters Mate Henry Rauens (who was Supposed a sufficient Pilot) wee found him easily wonne to make over therewith, as a Barke of Amfo for Virginia, which being in the height of thirtie feuen degrees, fine degrees from the Hard which we were, might bee some one hundred and tortie leagues from vs,or thereabouts (t : ko. ning to every degree that lies North-east, and Westerly twentic eight English leagues) who the twentie eight of August being Munday, with fixe Saylers, and our Cape Merchant Thomas Whittingham departed from vs out of Gates his Bay; but to our much wonder returned againe vpon the Wednelday night after, having attempted to have got cleere of the Hand, from the North North-eath to the South-west, but could not as little water as shee drew, which might not bee about twentie inches for shoales and breaches, so as he was faine to go out from Summers Creeks, 20 and the same way we came in on the South South-east of the Hands, and from thence wee made to Sea the Friday after the first of September, promising if hee lived and arrived safe there, to returne vnto vs the next new Moone with the Pinnace belonging to the Colony there : according vnto which instructions were directed vnto the new Leistenant Gouernour, and Councell from our Gouernour here, for which the Ilands were appointed carefully to be watched, and fiers prepared as Beacons to have directed and wafted him in, but two Moones were wasted voon the Promontory before mentioned, and gaue many a long and wished looke round about the Horizon, from the North-east to the South-west, but in vaine, discouring nothing all the while, which way foeu r we turned our eye, but ayre and fea.

You may please, excellent Lady, to know the reason which moued our Gouernour to dispatch 20 this long Boat, was the care which hee tooke for the efface of the Colony in this his interced absence : for by a long practifed experience, foreseeing and fearing what innovation and tumult might happily arife, among it the younger and ambitious spirits of the new companies to arrive in Virginia, now comming with him along in this fame Fleet, hee framed his letters to the Colony, and by a particular Commission confirmed Captaine Peter Win his Lieutenant Gouernour, with an Affiltance of fixe Counsellours, writing withall to divers and such Gentlemen of qualificand knowledge of vertue, and to fuch louers of goodnesse in this cause whom hee knew, intreasing them by giving examples in themselves of duty and obedience, to assist likewise the said Lieutenant Governour, against such as should attempt the innovating of the perion (now named by him) or forme of government, which in some Articles hee did likewise prescribe vnto them : 40 and had faire hopes all should goe well, if these his letters might arrive there, vntill such time as either some Ship there (which hee fairely beleeved) might bee moved presently to adventure for him : or that it should please the right honourable, the Lordes, and the rest of his Maiesties Councell in England, to addresse thither the right honourable the Lord Lawar (one of more eminencie and worthinesse) as the project was before his comming forth) whilest by their honourable fauours, a charitable confideration in like manner might bee taken of our estates to redeeme vs from hence. For which purpose likewise our Gouernour directed a particular letter to ther industrie, the Councell in England, and fent it to the foreigid Captaine Peter Winne (his now to bee chofen Lieutenant Gouernour) by him to bee dispatched (which is the first) from thence into

In his absence Sit George Summers coasted the Hands, and drew the former plat of them, and tilly fished, and hunted for our whole company well. daily fished, and hunted for our whole company, vntill the fouen and twentieth of November, when then well perceiving that we were not likely to heare from Virginia, and conceiving how the Pinnace which Richard Frubbulber was a building would not be of burthen fifficient to transport all our men from thence into Dirginia (especially considering the season of the years, wherein we were likely to put off) he consulted with our Gouernour, that if hee might have two Carpenters (for we had foure, such as they were) and twenty men, ouer with him into the maine Hand, he would quickly frame vp another little Barke, to fecond ours, for the better fitting and conneiance of our people. Our Gouernour, with many thankes (as the cattle required) cherifing this fo carefull and religious confideration in him(and whose experience likewise was 60 somewhat in these affaires) granted him all things sutable to his desire, and to the furthering of the worke : who therefore had made ready for him all fuch tooles and inftruments, as our owne wie required not : and for him, were drawne forth twenty of the ableft and flourest of the company, and the best of our men, to hew and square timber, when himselfe then, with daily maines

ding the meanes of redeeming vs from hence, as each one wrought with his Mate how to divorte him from the fame.

and labour, wrought upon a fmall Veffell, which was foone ready as ours: at which wee leave him a while bulled, and returne to our felues. In the meane space did one Frubbulker, borne at Graves end, and at his comming forth now dwelling at Lime Houle (a painefull and well experienced Shipwright, and skiltull workman' labour the building of a little Pinnace: for the furtherance of which, the Gouernout dispensed with no rangile of his body, nor forbare any care builds another or study of minde, perfuading (as much and more, an ill qualified parcell of people, by his owne performance, then by authority, thereby to hold them at their worke, namely to fell carry, and fawe Cellar, no for the Corpenters purpose (for what was so meane, whereto he would not him-

felic fet his hand, being therefore up earely and downe late ?) yet neuertheleffe were they hard-10 ly drawne to it, as the Fortoile to the inchanement, as the Prouerbe is, but his owne prefence and hand being fet to enery meane labour, and imployed foreadily to enery office, made our people power of exa at length more diligent, and willing to be called thereunto, where they should see him before ample. they came. In which, we may observe how much example prevailes above precepts; and how

readier men are to be led by eyes, then eares.

And fure it was happy for vs. who had now runne this fortune, and were fallen into the bottome of this mifery, that we both had our Gouernour with vs and one to folicitous and carefullwhole both example (as I faid) and authority, could lay flyine, and command upon our people; elfe. I am periwaged, we had most of vs fini hed our dayes there, so willing were the major part of the common fort (especially when they found fuch a plenty of victuals) to settle a foundati-20 on of ever inhabiting there; as well ippeared by many practifes of theirs (and perhaps of tome of the better (ort) Loe, what are our affections and passions, if not rightly (quared? how irreligious, and irregular they expresse vs : not perhaps to ill as we would be, but yet as wee are; fome Mutinous condangerous and fecret difcontents nourished among ft vs, had like to have bin the parents of blou- ceptions. dy illues and mitchiefes; they began first in the Sca-men, who in time had fattened vinto them (by falle baits) many of our land-men likewife, and fome of whom (for opinion of their Religion) was carried an extraordinary and good respect. The Angles wherewith chiefely they thus hooked in these disquieted Pooles, were, how that in Virginia, nothing but wretchednesse and labour must be expected, with many wants, and a churlish intreaty, there being neither that Fish, Plesh, nor Fowle, which here (without wasting on the one part, or watching on theirs, or any threatning, and are 20 of authority) at ease, and pleasure might be intoyed ; and since both in the one, and the other place iber were (for the time) to loofe the frustion both of their friends and Countrey, as good, and better were to for them, to repose and seate them where they should have the least ontward wants the while. This, thus preached, and published each to other, though by such who never had bin more onward towards Virginia, then (before this Voyage) a Sculler could happily rowe him (and what hath a more adamantine power to draw vnto it the confent and attraction of the idle, vntoward, and wretched number of the many, then liberty and fulnesse of sensuality?) begat such a

And first (and it was the first of September) a conspiracy was discovered, of which fix were Conspirafound principals, who had promifed each vnto the other, not to let their hands to any tranale or endeauour which might expedite or forward this Pinnace; and each of these had severally (according to appointment) fought his opportunity to draw the Smith, and one of our Carpenters . Nicholas Bennit , who made much profession of Scripture , a mutinous and differnbling Imposter; the Captaine, and one of the chiefe perswaders of others, who afterwards brake from the society of the Colony, and like outlawes retired into the Woods, romake a fectlement and habitation there) on their party, with whom they purposed to leave our Quarter, and possesse another Iland by themselves: but this happily found out, they were condemned to the same punishment which they would have chosen (but without Smith or Car-50 Penter) and to an Iland farre by it felfe, they were carried, and there left. Their names were

murmur, and fuch a difcontent, and difunion of hearts and hands from this labour, and forwar-

John Want, the chiefe of them, an Effex man of Newport by Saffronwalden, both setitious, and John Mane, a fectary in points of Religion, in his owne prayers much denout and frequent, but harely wall same in drawne to the publique, infomuch as being suspected by our Minister for a Brownist, he was the sex a often compelled to the common Liturgie and forme of Prayer. The reit of the confederates and parameter were Christopher Carter, Francis Pearepoint, William Brian, William Martin, Richard Knowles: but soone they missed comfort (who were farre removed from our store) besides, the society of their acquaintance had wrought in some of them, if not a loathsomenesse of their offence, yet a forrow that their complement was not more full, and therefore a wearine fe of their being thus vntimely prescribed; infomuch, as many humble petitions were tent vnto our Gouerner, fraughe 60 full of their feeming fortow and repentance, and earnest vowes to redeeme the former trespasse,

with example of dueties in them all, to the common cause, and generall butinesse; you which our Gouernour (not easie to admit any acculation, and hard to remit an offence, but at all times forry in the punishment of him, in whom may appeare either shame or contrition) was eatily content to reacknowledge them againe.

I ffffff 2

He builds a Pinnace.

Cap. Wim.

L. Lawarre.

Sir George Summers his

Another Mu-

Yet could not this be any warning to others, who more fubtilly began to shake the foundation of our quiet lafety, and therein did one Stephen Hopkins commence the first act or ouerture: A fellow who had much knowledge in the Scriptures, and could reason well therein, whom our Minister therefore chose to be his Clarke, to reade the Psalmes, and Chapters vpon Sondayes, at the affembly of the Congregation under him : who in Ianuary the twenty foure, brake with one Samuel Sharpe and Humfrey Reede (who presently discouered it to the Gouernour) and alleaged fubitantiall arguments, both civill and divine (the Scripture fallly quoted) that it was no breach of honefly, conscience, nor Religion, to decline from the obedience of the Gouernour, or refuse to goe any further, led by his authority (except it fo pleafed themfelues) fince the authority ceato goe any further, and by instantion and with it, they were all then freed from the gouern- fed when the wracke was committed, and with it, they were all then freed from the gouernment of any man; and for a matter of Confcience, it was not vnknowne to the meanest, how much we were therein bound each one to prouide for himselfe, and his owne family : for which

Confeience my to confcie

were two apparant reasons to stay them even in this place; first, abundance by Gods providence of all manner of good foode: next, fome hope in reatonable time, when they might grow wezry of the place, to built a small Barke, with the skill and helpe of the aforelaid No bolas Beonit. whom they infinuated to them, albeit hee was now ablent from his quarter, and working in the maine Hand with Sir George Summers upon his Pinnace, to be of the confurery, that for might get cleere from hence at their owne pleafures : when in Virginia, the first would be alluredly wanting, and they might well feare to be detained in that Countrie by the authority of the Commander thereof, and their whole lite to ferue the turnes of the Aduenturers, with their transiles and labours. This being thus laid, and by fuch a one, who had gotten an opinion (as I before remembreu) of Religion; when it was declared by those two accusers, not knowing what further ground it had or complices, it pleased the Gouernour to let this his factions of fence to haue a publique affront, and contestation by these two witnesses before the whole Com-Sterben Hoskins pany, who at the toling of a Bell) affemble before a Corps du guard, where the Prifoner was condemied and particular which was onely full of forrow and teares, pleading fimplicity, and demall. Bet heebeing onely found, at this time, both the Captaine, and the follower of this Mutinie, and generally held worthy to latisfie the punishment of his offence, with the facrifice of his life, our Governour patied the fentence of a Martiall Court vpon him, fuch as belongs to Mutinie and 20 Rebellion. But so penitent hee was, and made so much moane, alleadging the ruine of his Wife and Children in this his trespalle, as it wrought in the hearts of all the better fort of the Company, who therefore with humble intreaties, and earnest supplications, went vnto our Gouernor, whom they befought (as likewife did Captaine Newport, and my felfe) and neuer left him vital we had got his pardon.

In the edangers and divellish disquiets (whilest the almighty God wrought for vs , and sent vs miraculously delivered from the calamities of the Sea, all bledings vpon the shoare, to content and binde vs to gratefulneile) thus inraged amongft our felues, to the destruction each of other, into what a mischiefe and misery had wee bin given vp, had wee not had a Gouer-Third Mutiny, nour with his authority, to have suppressed the same? Yet was there a work practise, fa- 40 Ction, and conjuration a foote, deadly and bloudy, in which the life of our Governour, with many others were threatned, and could not but miscarry in his fall. But such is ever the will of God (who in the execution of his judgements, breaketh the firebrands upon the head of him, who first kindleth them) there were, who conceived that our Governour indeede neither durst, nor had authority to put in execution, or palle the act of Iultice vpon any one, how treacherous or impious to euer; - their owne opinions to much deceiuing them for the valawfulness of any act, which they would execute: daring to infifine among themselves, that if they should be apprehended, before the performance, they should happily suffer as Martyrs. They perfeuered therefore not onely to draw wnto them luch a number, and allociates as they could worke in, to the abandoning of our Governour, and to the inhabiting of this Iland. They had now purpo- 50 fed to have made a surprise of the Store-house, and to have forced from thence, what was therein either of Meale, Cloath, Cables, Armes, Sailes, Oares, or what elfe it pleased God that we had recouered from the wracke, and was to ferue our generall necessity and vie, either for the relief of vs, while wee stated here, or for the carrying of vs from this place againe, when our Pinnace

should have bin furnished. Eastlas inhath But as all giddy and lawlesse attempts, have alwayes fomething of impersection, and that a deficient as well by the priperty of the action, which holderh of disobedience and rebellion (both full esuicio in and of feare) as through the ignorance of the deuiters themselues; so in this (belides those detects) fects, def. dis there were some of the allociation, who not strong inough fortified in their owne concerts, brake from the plot it felie, and (before the time was ripe for the execution thereof) discour- 50 red the whole order, and every Agent, and Actor thereof, who neverthelesse were not suddenly apprehended, by reason the confederates were divided and feperated in place, some with vs, and the chiefe with Sir George Summers in his Hand (and indeede all his whole company) but good watch passed vpon them, every man from thenceforth commmanded to wears

his weapon, without which before, we freely walked from quarter to quarter, and converfed among our felues, and every man aduled to stand upon his guard, his owne life not being in fafery, whileft his next neighbour was not to be trufted. The Centinels, and nightwaiters doubled, the passages of both the quarters were carefully observed, by which meanes nothing was further attempted; vntill a Gentleman amongst them, one Henry Paine, the thirteenth of H. Paine his March, full of mischiefe, and every houre preparing something or other, stealing Swords, A. Musinus behalf difer, Axes, Hatchets, Sawes, Augers, Planes, Mallets, &c. to make good his owne bad end, wout.

his watch night comming about, and being called by the Captaine of the fame, to be voon the guard, did not onely give his faid Commander cuill language, but frucke at him, doubled his blowes, and when hee was not juffered to close with him, went off the Guard, icoffing at the double diligence and attendance of the Watch, appointed by the Gouernour for much purpose, as hee faid: vpon which, the Watch telling him, if the Gouernour should vnderstand

of this his infolency, at might turne him to much blame, and happily be as much as his life were worth. The faid Paine replyed with a feeled and bitter violence, and in fuch vnreuerent tearmes, as I hould offend the modelt eare too much to expresse it in his owne pirale : but the contents were, how that the Governour had no authoritie of that qualitie, to instific upon any one (how meane soener in the Colonie) an action of that nature, and therefore let the Gonernour (faid hee) kife, &c. Which words, being with the omitted additions, brought the next day vnto euery common and publique discourse, at length they were delivered over to the Goan uernour, who examining well the tact (the transgression so much the more exemplary and odious, as being in a dangerous time, in a Confederate, and the fuccesse of the same wishtly liftened after, with a doubtfull conceit, what might be the iffic of fo notorious a boldnesse and impudency) calling the faid Paine before him, and the whole Company, where (being foone consinced both by the witnesse, of the Commander, and many which were voon the watch with him) our Gouernour, who had now the eyes of the whole Colony fixed you him, condemned him to be instantly hanged; and the ladder being ready, after he had made many confessions, hee

earnestly delired, being a Gentleman, that hee might be shot to death, and towards the evening His execution he had his defire, the Sunne and his life fetting together.

But for the other which were with Sir George, vpon the Sunday following (the Barke beeing ao now in good forwardnesse) and readie to lanch in short time, from that place (as we supposed) to meet ours at a pond of fresh water, where they were both to bee mored, wntill such time as being fully tackled, the wind should serue faire, for our putting to Sea together) being the eighteenth of March, hearing of Paynes death, and fearing hee had appeached them, and discovered the attempt (who poore Gentleman therein, in so bad a cause, was too secret and constant to his owne faith ingaged voto them, and as little needed, as veged thereunto, though fomewhat was voluntarily delivered by him) by a mutuall confent forfooke their labour, and Sir George Summers, and like Out-lawes betooke them to the wild Woods: whether mese rage, and gree- Diversof Sie dineffe after fome little Pearle (as it was thought) wherewith they conceived, they should for G Summers ener inrich themselues, and saw how to obtaine the same easily in this place, or whether, comp ny fire an the defire for ever to inhabite heere, or was other fecret elfe mouel them thereunto, into the woods

true it is, they fent an audacious and formall Petition to our Gouernour, subscribed with all their names and Seales : not only intreating him, that they might flay herre, but (with oreat art) importuned him, that he would performe other conditions with them, and not wave, nor euade from some of his owne promises, as namely to furnish each of them with two Sutes of Apparell, and contribute Meale rateably for one whole yeere, so much among them, as they had weekly now, which was one pound and an halfea weeke (for such had been our proportion for nine moneths.) Our Gouernour answered this their Petition, writing to Sir George Summers to

That true it was, at their first arrivall upon this Iland, when it was feared how our meanes would not Sit T. Gateshin extend to the making of a Velfell, capeable and large enough, to transport all our Countrimen at once . in letter to Sit Go 50 deed out of his Christian consideration (mourning for such his Countrimen, who comming under his com- Summers. mand, he fore aw that for a while, he was like enough to leave here behind, compelled by tyrannie of necessitie) his purpose was not yet to for suke them so, as given up like Sanages : but to leave them all things fitting to defend them from want and wretchednesse, as much at least as lay in his power, to spece from the present use (and perhaps necessitie of others, whose fortunes should be to be transported with him) for one whole years or more (if so long by any casualtie, the lins which he would send was them michs be Staied before their arrivall, so many bazards accompanying the Sea) but withall intreated Sir George to remember unto his Company (if by any meanes he could learne where they were) how he had vowed unto him, that if either his ownemeanes, his anthoritie in Virginia, or love with his friends in England, 6) could dispatch for them fooner, how farre it was from him, to let them remarne abandoned, and neg-

letted without their redemption folong: and then proceeded, requesting Sir George Summers againe, to signifie unto them, lince now our owne Pinnalle did arise to that buriben, and that it would sufficiently transport them all, beside the necessitie of any other Barke; and yet, that since his Barke was now readic too, that those consultations, how somer charitable and most passionate in themselves, might determine, as

taken away thereby, and therefore, that he bould now bee pleafed to admife them well, how unanswerable this grant or consent of his bould be : first, to his Maieste for so many of his subjects, next to the Ad. menturers, and lastity, what an imputation and infamy it might be, to both their owne proper reputations. mounters, una injury, won, an improvement in their places, to competite adnersant and irregular multitude, at any time, to what frould bee obedient and honest, which if they should not execute, the blame would not by upon the people (at all times wavering and insolent) but upon themselves so weake and unworthy in their command. And moreoner intreated him by any fecret practice to apprehend them, fince that the obstinate, and precipitate many, were no more in (nch a condition and state to bee fanoured, then the murmuring and mutinie of such Rebellious and turbulent Humorists, who had not considence nor the marmurang was minister of goodnesse, and in the businesse for which they were sent out of England; 10 for which likewife, at the expence and charge of the Adventurers, they were to him committed, and that the meanest in the whole Fices stood the Company in no leffe then twentie pounds, for his owne personall Transportation, and things necessary to accompany him. And therefore loningly consured Sir George, by the worthinesse of his (heretosore) well magnitaged reputation, and by the powers of his owne indecwint, and by the vertine of that ascient lone and friendlip, which had thefe many yeeres beene feiled betweene them, to doe his beft, to give this remoited Company (if he could fend unto them) the confideration of these particulars, and so works with them (if he might) that by faire meanes (the Matiniereconciled) they would at length (uruey their owne errours, which bee would bee as readie, upon their rendring and comming into paridon, as he did now pittie them: affuring them in general and particular, that what focuer they had fin ferly committed, or practifed buberto against the Lawes of dutie and honestie, 20 frould not in any fort be imputed againft them.

In which good Office Sir George Summers did so nobly worke, and heartily labour, as hee brought most of them in, and indeed ail, but Christopher Carter, and Robert Waters, who (by no meanes) would any more come among it Sit Georges men, hearing that Sir George had commanded his men indeed (ince they would not be intreated by faire meanes) to furprize them (if they could) by any device or force. From which time they grew fo cautelous and wary, for their owne ill, as at our comming away, wee were faine to Isaue them behind. That Waters was a Sayler, who at his first landing upon the lland (as after you shall heare) killed another fellow Sayler of his, the bodie of the murthered and Murcherer fo dwelling, as prescribed now

During our time of abode upon these Hands, wee had daily every Sunday two Sermons pres-

Backt.

The most holy:

Marriage.

Child-birth,

Chi'dren na-

med Bermuda

civilland mod

Maters and

Larter ftand

out and are

left behind.

Religiouses- ched by our Minister, besides every Morning and Evening at the ringing of a Bell, wee repayed ercies perfor- all to puplique Prayer, at . hat time the names of our whole Company were called by Bill, and med by Mafter fuch as were wanting, were duly punished.

The contents (for the most part) of all our Preachers Sermons, were especially of Thanke-

fulnesse and Vnitie, &c.

It pleated God alio to give vs opportunitie, to performe all the other Offices, and Rites of our Christian Profession in this lland : as Marriage, for the fixe and twentieth of November, we had one of Sir George Summers his men, his Cooke, named Thomas Powell, who matried a Maid Servant of one Miltris Horton, whole name was Elizabeth Persons: and upon Christmasse Eue, 40 as also once before, the first of October; our Minister preached a godly Sermon, which being enday by exercise ded, he celebrated a Communion, at the partaking whereof our Gouernour was, and the greater ded, he celebrated a Communion, at the partaking whereof our Gouernour was, test part of our Company : and the elementh of February , weehad the childe of one lobn Rofe of Sacraments christened a Daughter, to which Captaine Newport and my selfe were Witnesses, and the aforefaid Multis Horson and we named it Bermuds, as also the five and twentieth of Marc', the wife of one Edward Eason, being delivered the weeke before of a Boy, had him then christened, to which Captaine Newport and my feife, and Maiter lames Swift were Godfathers, and we named and Beymsdas.

Likewife, we buried five of our company, Ieffery Briars, Richard Lewis, William Hitchman, and my God-daughter Bermuda Rolfe, and one votimely Edward Samuell a Sayler, being villanouly 50 killed by the forefaid Robert Waters, (a Sayler likewife) with a shouell, who strake him therewith under the life of the Eare, for which he was apprehended, and appointed to be hanged the next day, the fact being done in the twilight) but being bound falt to a Tree all night, with many Ropes, and a Guard of fine or fix to attend him, his fellow Saylers watching the advantage of the Centinels fleeping) in despisht and distaine that Instice should bee shewed upon a Sayler, and that one of their crue should be an example to others, not taking into confideration, the vincanlineff of the murther, nor the horror of the finne, they cut his bands, and conveyed him into

We chad brought our Pinnafe fo forward by this time, as the eight and twentieth of August 60 we having laid her Keele. The fixe and twentieth of February, we now began to calke cold Cables we had preferred vnto vs, which affoorded Ocam enough : and one barrell of Pitch, and another of Tire, we like wife faued, which ferued our viefome little way vpon the Bile, wee breamed her otherwite with Lime made of Wilke fiels, and an hard white ftone which we bur-

the Woods, where they fed him nightly, and closely, who afterward by the mediation of Sir George Summers, upon many conditions, had his tryall respited by our Gourmour.

ned in a Kill, flaked with fresh water, and tempered with Tortoyles Oyle. The thirtieth of March being Friday, we towed her out in the morning Spring-tyde, from the Wharfe where the was built, boying her with foure Caske in her runne only : which opened into the Northweft, and into which when the Breeze flood North and by West with any staffegale, and your the Spring-tydes, the Sea would increase with that violence, especially twice it did to, as at the first time (before our Gouernour had caused a solid Causey of an hundred load of stone to bee brought from the Hils and Neighbour Rockes, and round about her ribs from flemme to flemme. where it made a pointed Baulke, and thereby brake the violence of the Flowe and Billowe) it indangered her overthrow and ruine, beeing greene as it were voon the Stockes. With much

to difficultie, diligence, and labour, we faued her at the first, all her Bales, Shores, and Piles, which under-fet her, being almost carried from her, which was the fecond of January, when her knees were not fet to, nor one joynt firme : We launched her vnrigged, to carrie her to a little round Iland, lying Well North-weit, and close abourd to the backe side of our Hand, both neerer the Ponds and Wels of fome fresh water, as also from thence to make our way to the Sea the better: the Channell being there fufficient and deepe enough to leade her forth, when her Mafts, Savles, and all her Trimme should bee about her. Shee was fortie foot by the Keele, and nineteene foot broad at the Beame, fixe foote floore, her Rake forward was fourteene foot, her Rake aft from the top of her Poil (which was twelve foot long) was three foot, thee was eight foot deepe vnder her Beame, betweene her Deckes the was foure foot and an halfe; with a riting of halfe a foot 20 more under her fore Castle, of purpose to scowre the Decke with small shot, if at any time wee should bee borded by the Enemie. Shee had a fall of eighteene inches aft, to make her sterage and her great Cabbin the more large; her sterage was fine toote long, and fixe foore high, with a close Gallerie right aft, with a window on each fide, and two right aft. The most part of her

timber was Cedar, which we found to be bad for hipping, for that it is wonderous falle inward, Cedarill for and befides 1: 18 fo spault or brickle, that it will make no good plankes, her Beames were all Oke thipping, of our rune ship, and some plankes in her Bow of Oke, and all the rest as is aforesaid. When

thee began to swimme (vpon her launching) our Gouernour called her The Deliverance, and thee might be some eighty tunnes of burthen.

Before we quitted our old quarter, and dislodged to the fresh water with our Pinnasse, our Go-

30 nemour fet vp in Sir George Summers Garden a faire Muemofjnon in figure of a Croffe, made of Croffe fet vp some of the timber of our ruined shippe, which was scrued in with strong and great trunnels to a for a memorial mightie Cedar, which grew in the middeft of the faid Garden, and whofe top and upper branches he caused to be lopped, that the violence of the winde and weather might have the leffe

power ouer her.

In the middest of the Crosse, our Gouernour fastened the Picture of his Maiestie in a piece of His Maiesties Siluer of twelue pence, and on each side of the Croffe, hee fet an Inteription graven in Copper, in Picture,

the Latine and English to this pur pole,

In memory of our great Delinerance, both from a mightie storme and leake : wee have set up this to the bonour of God. It is the poyle of an English |bip (of three bundred tunne) called the Sea Venture. 40 bound with seven ships more (from which the storme divided vs) to Virginia, or Nova Britania, in America. In it were two Knights, Sir Thomas Gates Knight , Gonernour of the English Forces and Colonie there : and Sir George Summers Knight, Admirall of the Seas. Her Capsaine was Christopher Newport, Paffengers and Mariners shee had beside (which came all (afe to Land) one bundred and liftie. We were forced to runne ber ashore (by reason of her leake) under a Point that bore Southeast from the Northerne Point of the Iland, which wee disconcred first the eight and twentieth of

About the last of Aprill, Sir George Summers launched his Pinnasse, and brought her from his building Bay, in the Mayne Hand, into the Chanuell where ours did ride, and fhee was by the Keele nine and twentie foot : at the Beame fifteene foot and an halfe : at the Loote fourteene, at 50 the Trausam nine, and the was eight foot deepe, and drew sixe foote water, and hee called her

S. III.

Their departure from Bermuda and arrivall in Virginia : miseries there, departure and returne upon the Lord LA WARRES arriving. I A M E S Towne described.

Rom this time we only awaited a favourable Westerly wind to carrie vs forth, which longer then viuall now kept at the Eart, and South-east, the way which wee were to goe. The tenth of May early, Sir George Summers and Captaine Nempors went off with their long Boates, and with two Canoaes boyed the Channell, which wee were to leade it out in , and which was no broader from Shoales on the one fide and

of that, were we able to fit our Bowyes, but even when we came just upon them, we strucke a more winde blew, we were fainte to court in Rocke on the starboord side, ouer which the Bowye rid, and had it not beene a soft Rocke. by which meanes she bore it before her, and crushed it to pieces, God knowes we might have beene like enough, to have returned anew, and dwelt there, after tenne monethes of carefuln fleand great labour a longer time : but God was more mescifull vnto vs. When shee strucke vpon the Rocke, the Cock-1 wayne one Walfingham beeing in the Boate with a quicke spirit (when wee were all amazed, and our hearts failed) and to by Gods goodnesse wee led it out at three fadome. Io and three fadome and an halfe water. The wind ferued vs eafily all that day and the next, when (God be ever prayled for it) to the no little ioy of vs all, we got cleere of the Ilands. After which holding a Southerly course, for seven dayes wee had the winde sometimes faire, and sometimes scarce and contratie : in which time we Loft Sir George Summers twice, albeit we still spared him our may ne top-layle, and sometimes our fore course too. The seventeenth of May we saw change of water, and had much Rubbish swimme by our ship Signe of fide, whereby weeknew wee were not farre from Land. The eighteenth about midnight wee Land. founded, with the Dipling Lead, and found thirtie feuen fadome. The nineteenth in the morning we founded, and had nineteene and an halfe falome, stonie, and fandie ground. The twentierhabout midnight, we had a maruellous iweet finell from the shoare (as from the Coast of 20 Spaine, thort of the Straits) itrong and pleasant, which did not a little glad vs. In the morning by day breake (fo soone as one might well see from the fore-top) one of the Saylers descryed Land about an houre after, I went vpa id might discouer two Hummockes to the Southward, from which (Northward all along) lay the Land, which were were to Coast to Cape Henrie. About feuen of the clocke wecaft for han Anchor, because the tyde (by reason or the Freshet that fet into the Bay) make a strong Ebbe there, and the winde was but easte, so as not beeing ableto stemme the Tyde, we purposed to lye at an Anchor vntill the next flood, but the wind comming South-west a loome gale about eleuen, we set tayle againe, and hauing got ouer the Barre, bote This is the famous Chesipiacke Bay, which we have called (in honour of our young Prince) 30 Cape Henrie over against which within the Bay, lyeth another Head-land, which wee called in Cheffiack Bay. honour of our Princely Duke of Yorke Cape Charles; and these lye North-east and by East, and South-west and by West, and they may bee distant each from the other in breadth seuen leagues, betweene which the Sea runnes in as broad as betweene Queenebutrough and Lee. Indeed it is a goodly Bay and a fairer, not eafily to be found. The one and twentieth, beeing Munday in the morning, wee came vp within two milesof Point Comfort, ween the Captaine of the Fort discharged a warning Peece at vs, whereupon we came to an Anchor, and fent off our long Boar to the Fort, to certifie who we were by reason of

the shoales which lye on the South-side, this Fort early commands the mouth of the River, albeit it is as broad as betweene Greenwich, and the Ile of Dogges. True it is, such who talked with our men from the shoare, deliuered how safely all our ships the last yeere (excepting only the Admirall, and the little Pinnalle in which one Muchael Philes commanded of iome twentie tunne, which we towed a sterne till the storme blew) arrived, and

how our people (well increased) had therefore builded this Fort; only wee could not learne any thing of our long Boat, fent from the Bermudas, but what wee gathered by the Indians themselves, especially from Powhatan, who would tell our men of such a Boat landed in one of his Riuers, and would describe the people, and make much seeffing sport thereat : by which wee have gathered, that it is most likely, how it arrived upon our Coast, and not meeting with our River were taken at some time or other, at some advantage by the Savages, and so cut off. When our The long Boat Skuffe came up againe, the good newes of our ships, and mens arruall the last veere, did nota 50 fent by Rauens cuft away little glad our Gouernour: who went foone ashoare, and assoone (contrary to all our faire hopes) had new enexpected, encomfortable, and heavie newes of a worle condition of our people aboue at lames Towne.

70 diforders the lait veere) then i was east e nour found the condition and there of the C is how to amend it or faue are owne Company, at the like necessities. For we had brought from ring no fuch accidents pointle to betali the C. fiftie for a Sea Voyage : 171 wacm : pais helpe from the Inwan. Fire the time, this time

fion, the old Patent and the Council State

had taken from them) rent vp and burnt, rather

within; with many more particularities of their

flones call off from them, to teten other her.

out, if our men (tirred but beyond the orange

downe, the Ports open, the Catestran,

mouth, it was now like with him en Selection nor was there at the Fort and were my week ther fufficient Seine, nor other con e. ent No. 20 Sturgeon yet come into the North Alexander Speech vinto the Company, get ne them and equally there with him, and the thing from the Countrey, by the endeander port them all into their Nithur Countrey there was a general acclamation, and in outer

to be disheartened and faint, when they taw ? ned vnto themfelues. In the meane which . ctions, which hee en ovned them threative t them, which being written out take, were fer 30 notice of. If I should be examined from whence, and h ons descended upon our people. I can only reter the Aduenturers have fent hitner intituled, . "

in the ground and causes are fausurably and an produced, not excufing likew to the turne of ? full enough among to heatie a multipluse, et per the lait years with vs : with whom to coerte absolute command, came along and . mere we with them had reached our will early to Vinto fuch calamity can that him to an exdeede (right noble Laciv) no it ev can re nome.

people, thus gouerned, have bot . Fire and and fome of them, whose vavces and communate guilt hereof, as flanding vntourist in the renaries shall neuer find time nor care of the practifes, who, it may be, lavall the where the But vnder pardon, let me speake terely to the

both meet in any one of their that I am tie in England, continuall watti gir filian " 50 provisions, what better could total and the ner, then necessarily toll was a leave doome of the Witeman 1 Per a . 1 fothy powerty commeto, at ore that there is a to with this Idlenetle, when

and the headlesse in this day . -which they were fert higher, - - - - for their owne bellies, more para Gardens or eliewhere I have no a region lie ficke and languable of the bee

V pon Point Comfort our men did the last yeere (as you have heard) rayse a little Fortification, which fince hath beene better perfected, and is likely to prooue aftrong Fort, and is now kept by Captaine lames Danies with forty men, and hath to name Algernoone Fort, to called by Captaine George Percy, whom we found at our arrivall Prefident of the Colony and at this timelikewife in the Fort. When we got into the Point, which was the one and twentieth of May, being Rockeson the other, then about three times the length of our Pinnafe. About ten of the clocke, that day being Touriday, we fet fayle an eafiegale, the wind at South, and ov reason no more winde blew, we were fame to towe her with our long Boate, yet neither with the helpe of that, were we the to fit our Bowyes, but even when we came just voon them, we strucke a Rocke on the starboard side, over which the Bowye rid, and had it not beene a fost Rocke, by which meanes she bore it before her, and cruthed it to pieces, God knowes we might have beene like enough, to have recurned anew, and dwelt there, after tenne monethes of carefuln fle and great labour a longer time; but God was more meiciful vnto vs. When thee ftrucke vpon the Rocke, the Cock-twayne one Walfingham beeing in the Boate with a quicke fpirit (when wee were all amazed, and our hearts failed) and fo by Gods goodnesse wee led it out at three fadome, 10 and three fadome and an halfe water. The wins ferued vs eafily all that day and the next, when (God be ever prayled for it) to the no little toy of vs all, we got cleere of the Ilands. After which holding a Southerly courfe, for feuen dayes wee had the winde fometimes faire, and fometimes fearce and contrarie : in which time we Lift Sir George Summer; twice, albeit we fill spared mm our mayne top-fayle, and sometimes our tore course too.

Signe of

The fenenceenth of May we faw change of warer, and had much Rubbish swimme by our ship fide, whereby wee knew wee were not farre from Land. The eighteenth bout midnight wee founded, with the Dapting Lead, and found thirtie feuen fadome. The mineteenth in the morning we founded, and ad nineteene and an haire faiome, fronie, and fandie ground. The twentieth about midnight, we had a margellous iweet fmell from the shoare (as from the Coast of 19 Spaine, thort of the Straits) itrong and pleafant, which did not a little glad vs. In the morning by day breake (fo foone as one might well fee from the fore-top) one of the Saylers deferyed Land about an houre after, I went vp and might discouer two Hummockes to the Southward, from which (Northward all along) lay the Land, which were were to Coast to Cape Henrie. About feuen of the clocke we cast forth an Anchor, because the tyde (by reason or the Freshet that set into the Bay) make a ftrong Ebbe there, and the winde was but easie, so as not beeing able to ftemme the Tyde, we purposed to lye at an Anchor vntill the next flood, but the wind comming South-west a loome gale about eleuen, we settayle againe, and hauing got ouer the Barre, bore in for the Cape.

This is the famous Chefipiacke Bay, which we chaue called (in honour of our young Prince) 30 Cape Henrie ouer against which within the Bay, lyeth another Head-land, which wee called in honour of our Princely Duke of Torke Cape Charles; and thefe lye North-east and by East, and South-west and by West, and they may bee distant each from the other in breadth seuen leagues, betweene which the Sea runnes in as broad as betweene Queeneburrough and Lee. Indeed it is a goodly Bay and a fairer, not eafily to be found.

The one and twentieth, beeing Munday in the morning, wee came up within two miles of Point Comfort, ween the Captaine of the Fort discharged a warning Pecceat vs, whereupon we came to an Anchor, and fent off our long Boar to the Fort, to certifie who we were by reason of the shoales which lye on the South-side, this Fort early commands the mouth of the River, al-

beit it is as broad as betweene Greenwich, and the He of Dogges.

True it is, such who talked with our men from the shoare, deliuered how safely all our ships the last yeere (excepting only the Admirall, and the little Pinnalle in which one Michael Philes commanded of some twentie tunne, which we towed a sterne till the storme blew) arrived, and how our people (well increased) had therefore builded this Fort; only wee could not learne any thing of our long Boat, fent from the Bermudas, but what wee gathered by the Indians themfelues, especially from Powhatan, who would tell our men of such a Boat landed in one of his Riuers, and would describe the people, and make much scoffing sport thereat : by which wee have gathered, that it is most likely, how it arrived upon our Coast, and not meeting with our River were taken at some time or other, at some advantage by the Savages, and so cut off. When our Skiffecame vp againe, the good newes of our ships, and mens arrivall the last weere, did not a 50 little glad our Gouernour: who went soone ashoare, and assoone (contrary to all our faire hopes) had new vnexpected, vncomfortable, and heavie newes of a worle condition of our people aboue at lames Towne.

The long Boat mens caft away

Miserable

Vpon Point Comfort our men did the last yeere (as you have heard) rayse a little Fortification, which fince hath beene better perfected, and is likely to prooue a ftrong Fort, and is now kept by Captaine lames Danies with forty men, and bath to name Algernoone Fort, localled by Captaine George Percy, whom we found at our arrivall President of the Colony, and at this timelike-M. George Percy. wife in the Fort. When we got into the Point, which was the one and twentieth of May, being Munday about noone; where riding before an Indian Towne called Keconghien, a mightie storme

From hence in two dayes (only by the helpe of Tydes, no winde flirting) wee plyed it fadly on the River, and the three colors and three colors and the three colors and three colors an of Thunder, Lightning, and Raine, gaue vs a shrewd and fearefull welcome. vp the River, and the three and twentieth of May we cast Anchor before Iames Towne, where we landed, and our much grieued Gouernour first visiting the Church caused the Bell to be rung, at which (all fuch as wereable to come forth of cheir houses) repayted to Church where our MiCHAP. 6.8 3. Fort viewed Want of provision. Neglett, and sensuall surfer.

miller Mafter Bucke made a zealous and forrowfull Prayer, finding all things fo contrary to our expectations, to full of misery and misgouernment. After Seruice our Governour cauled mee to reade his Commillion, and Captaine Percie (then Prefident) deliuered up unto him his Commif. Old Farent fion, the old Patent and the Councell Seale. Viewing the Fort, we found the Palliladoes torne verified vp. downe, the Ports open, the Gates from off the hinges, and emptie houles (which Owners deat

had taken from them) rent vp and burnt, rather then the dwellers would flep into the Woodsa thones cast off from them, to fetch other fire-wood : and it is true, the Indian killed as fait without, if our men (tirred but beyond the boun Is of their Block-house, as Famine and Pestilence did instead for their mileties within; with many more particularities of their fufferances (brought vpon them by their owne could malarum; to diforders the last yeere) then I have heart to expresse. In this defolation and misery our Governour found the condition and state of the Colonie, and (which added more to his griefe) no hope how to amend it or faue his owne Company, and those yet remayning alive, from falling into the like necessities. For we had brought from the Bermadas no greater store of provision (tearing no fuch accidents possible to befall the Colony here) then might well Grue one hundred and fiftie for a Sea Voyage and it was not posible, at this time of the yeere to amount it, by any helpe from the Indian. For beiles that they (at their beit) have little more, then from band to mouth, it was now likewife but weir Seed-time, and all their Corne fearce put into the ground : nor was there at the Fort, as they whom we found related vnto vs) any meanes to take till, neither sufficient Seine, nor other conuccient Net, and yet if there had, there was not one eye of 10 Sturgeon yet come into the River. All which confidered, it pleafed our Governour to make a Speech vnto the Company, giving them o vnderdand, that what providen he had, they should

equally share with him, and if he should had it not possible, and easie to supply them with some thing from the Countrey, by the endeuours o' his able men, hee would make readie, and transport them all into their Native Countrey (accommodating them the best that he could) at which there was a generall acclamation, and shoute of io, on both sides (for even our owne men began to be disheartened and faint, when they saw this morey among the others, and no lesse threatned vnto themselves. In the meane while, our Government published certaine Orders and Instru-Aions, which hee enjoyined them firifully to observe, the time that hee should stay among the continued for them, which being written out faire, were fet vp vpon a pol in the Church for every one to take their fhort

notice of.

If I should be examined from whence, and by what occasion, all these disasters, and affilieti- culers are here ons descended wpon our people, I can only referre you (honoured Lidie) to the Booke, which contained a the Aduenturers have fent hither intituled, Adnertisements onto the Colony in Virginia: where- Preface and in the ground and causes are fauourably abridged, from whence these milerable effects have beene at Articles to produced, not excufing likewife the forme of government of some errour, which was not power- Pictie, Loyaltill enough among so headie a multitude, especially, as those who arrived here in the supply fent the and Politic the last yeere with vs: with whom the better authoritie and gouernment now changes into an the Colonie, biolute command, came along, and had beene as happily established, had it pleased God, that we with them had reached our wished Harbour. Vinto fuch calamity can floath, riot, and vanity, bring the most fetled and plentifull estate. In-

deede (right noble Lady) no ftory can remember vinto vs, more woes and anguifnes, then thefe

people, thus gouerned, have both fuffered and pold voon their owne heads. And yet true it is.

fome of them, whose voyces and command might not be heard, may easily be absolued from the guilt hereof, as standing vntouched, and vpright in their innocencies; whilest the privile factionaties shall neuer find time nor darknesse, to wipe away or couer their ignoble and irreligious. Men blamed

practifes, who, it may be, lay all the differedits, and imputations the while upon the Countrie. but not all the

But vinder pardon, let me speake freely to them : let them remember that if riot and floth should. Country freed both meet in any one of their best Families, in a Countrey most stored with abundance and plentie in England, continuall wasting, no Husbandry, the old store still spent on , no order for new provisions, what better could be all vinto the Inhabitants, Land-lords, and Tenants of that corner, then necessarily following cleannesse of teeth, famine and death? Is it not the sentence and doome of the Wiseman! Tet a little sleepe, a little slumber, and a little folding of the hands to sleepe: Prou.6. so thy powerty commeth, as one that travelleth by the way, and thy necessitie like an armed man. And with this Idleneffe, when some thing was in store, all wastfull courses exercised to the height, and the headlesse multitude, some neither of qualitie nor Religion) not imployed to the end for which they were fent hither, no not compelled (lince in themfelues vinwilling) to fowe Corne fortheir owne bellies, nor to put a Roote, Herbe, &c. for their owne particular good in their Gardens or eliewhere: I fay in this neglect and fentuall Surfet, all things fuffered to runne on, to lieficke and languish; must it be expected, that health, plentie, and all the goodnesse of a well Ordered State, of necessitie for all this to flow in this Country? You have a right and noble heart (worthy Lady) beeindge of the truth herein. Then fuffer it not bee concluded vnto you, for beleeue, I befeech you, that the wants and wretchednesse which they have indured, ascend of the pouertie and vilenesse of the Countrey, whether bee respected the Land or Rivers:

the one, and the other, having not only promifed, but powred enough in their veines, to con-

1750

uince them in fuch calumnies, and to quit those common calimities, which (as the shadow The Courter accompanies the body) the precedent neglects touched at, if truely followed, and wrought vpon. What Englandmay boalt of, having the faire hand of husbandry to manure and dreffe it, God, and Nature have favourably bestowed vpon this Country, and as it hath given vnto it, both by fituation, height, and soyle, all those (part hopes) affurances which follow our well planted native Countrie, and others, lying vinder the fame influence: if, as ours, the Countriey and foyle might be improued, and drawne forth: lo hath it indowed it, as is most certaine, with many nore, which England tetcheth farre vntoher from ellewhere. For fift wee house experience, and even our eyes witherfie (how yong fo ever wee are to the Countrie) that no Countrey yeeldethegoodher Corne, nor more manifold increase : large Fields wee haue, as prospects of the 10 same, and not farre from our Pallisado. Besides, wee haue thousands of goodly Vines in euery hedge, and Boske running along the ground, which yeelde a plentiful Grape in their kinde. Let mee appeale then to knowledge, if these naturall Vires were planted, dreffed, and ordered by skilfall Vincaroones, whether wee might not make a perfect Grape, and francefull vintage in those time? And we have made triall of our owne English feedes, kitchen treate, and Rootes, and finde them to prosper as speedily as in Eigland.

Times of 11-

T.Gates.

Onely let me truely acknowledge, they are not an hundre or two of deboilt hands, dropt forth by yeare atter yeare, with penury, and leifure, ill prouded for before they come, and worfe mifery in Virtuo be gouerned when they are here, men of fuch destempered bodies, and infected mindes, whom no examples daily before their eyes, either of goodnesse o punishment, can deterre from their habituall impieties, or terrifie from a shamefull death, nat must be the Carpenters, and worke-

men in this to glorious a building. Then let no rumour of the pouerty of the Courty (as if in the wombe thereof there lay not those elementall leedes, which could produce a many faire births of plenty, and increase, and better hopes, then any land vnder the heaves to which the Sunne is no neerer a neighbour) I fay. let no imposture rumour, nor any fame of some one, or a few more changeable actions, interpofing by the way, or at home, want any mans taire purposes hitherward, or wrest them to a declining and falling off from the bufinelle

I will acknowledge, detre Lady thate feene much propenfineffe already towards the unity, and generall endeauours: how contentedly doe such as labour with vs, goe forth, when men of 30 ranke and quality, all it, anities on their labours? I have feene it, and I protest it, I have heard the inferiour people, with alacrity of spirit professe, that they should neuer refuse to doe their best in the practife of cheir iciences and knowledges, when such worthy, and Noble Gentlemen goe it and out before them, and not onely fo, but as the occasion shall be offered, no late helpe them with their hand, then defend them with their Sword. And it is to bourvader Sir be voderflood, that fuch as labour, are not yet fo taxed, but that eafly they performe the fame, and end by tenne of the clocke have done their Mornings worke: at what time, they have the allowances fet out ready for them, and vntill the three of the clocke againe, they take elieir owne plealure, and afterwards with the Sunne fet, their dayes labour is finished. In all which couries, if the businesse be continued, I doubt nothing, with Gods fauour towards 40 vs, but to fee it in time, a Countrie, an Hauen, and a Staple, fitted for such a trade, as shall advance affureder increale, both to the Adventurers, and free Burgers thereof, then any Trade in Christendome , or then that (even in her earely dayes, when Michael Causeco the Greeke, did first discouer it to our English Factor in Poland) which extenus it selie now from Calpe hopes of Virand Abila, to the bottome of Sidon, and so wide as Alexandria, and all the Ports and Hauens North and South, through the Arches to Co., Smyrna, Troy, the Hellefont, and vp to Pompeys Piliar, which as a Pharos, or watch Tower, itands vpon the wondrous opening into the Euxine Sca.

Sir T. Gates his care.

Note. The

From the three and twentieth of May, wnto the fruenth of June, our Gouernour attempted, and made triall of all the wayes, that both his owne indgement could prompe him in , and the 50 aduise of Captaine George Perer, and those Centlemen whom hee found of the Counsell, when hee came in , as of others; whom hee caused to deliver their knowledges, concerning the State and Condition of the Countrey: but after much debating, it could not appeare, how possibly they might preserve themselves (reteruing that little which wee brought from the Bermudas in our Simppes, and was vpon all occasions to stand good by vs) tenne dayes from starning. For besides, that the Indians were of themselves poore, they were forbidden likewife (by their fibtile King Powbatan) at all to trade with vs; and not onely fo, but to indanger and affault any Boate upon the River, or Hragler out of the Fort by Land, by which (not long before out arrivali) our people had a large Boate cue off, and divers of our men kdled, euen within command of our Blocke-house; as likewise, they shot two of our people to 62 death, after we had bin foure and fine dayes come in: and yet would they dare then to enter out Ports, and trucke with vs (as they counterfeited underhand) when indeede, they came but as Spies to discouer our strength, trucking with vs vpon such hard conditions, that our Gouernour might very well fee their subtiltie, and therefore neither could well indure, nor

would continue it. And I may truely fay befide, fo had our men abased, and to such a contempt. had they brought the value of our Copper, that a prece which would have bought a bulhell of Basenesse of their Corne in former time, would not now buy a little Cade or Bisket of a Pottle. And for this misgouernment, chiefely our Colony is much bound to the Mariners, who never yet in any Voyage hither, but haue made a prey of our poore people in want; infomuch, as velleffe Mischiefes of they might advance foure or five for one (how affored focuer of the payments of their Bils of Mariners. Exchange) they would not spare them a dust of Corne, nor a pinte of Beere, to give vinto them the leaft comfort or reliefe, although that Biere purloyned, and stolne perhaps, either from some particular supply, or from the generall store : to vncharmable a parcell of people they whe, and ill conditioned. I my felfe haue heard the Mafter of a Shippe lay (euen voon the arriuall of this Fleete, with the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall, when the faid Mafter was treated with for such Commodities as hee brought to felt) that valeffe hee might have an East Indian increase, foure for one, all charges cleered, hee would not part with a Canof Beere. Befides, to doe vs more villany and mischiefe, they would fend of their long Boates still by night, and (well guarded) make out to the neighbour Villages, and Townes, and there (contrary to the Articles of the Fort, which now pronounce death for a trespasse of that qualitie) trucke with the Indians, giving for their trifles Otter skinnes, Beuers, Rokoone Furres, Beares skinnes, &c. to large a quantity, and measure of Copper, as when the Trucke-Master for the Colong, in the day time offered trade, the Indians would laugh and forme the fame, telling what to bargains they met witha'l by night, from our Mangor Quintons (fo calling our great Shippes) by which meanes, the Market with them forestalled thus by these dishonest men, I may boluly lay, they have bin a confequent cause (this last yeare) to the death and starting of many a worthy Pursers from fpirit; but I hope to lee a true amendment and reformation, as well of those as of divers other intollerable abuses, thrust upon the Colony by these shamelesse people, as also for the transportation onof fuch prouisions and supplies as are tent hither, and come under the charge of purfers (a parcell, fragment, and odde ends of fellowes dependancies to the others) a better course thought vpon : of which supplies, neuer yet came into the Store, or to the Parties, vnto whom such supplies were fent, by relation hitherto, a moirie or third part; for the speedy redresse of this, being fo fourraigne a point, I vinderstand how the Lord Governour and Captaine Generall, hath adur- Remedy, If fe | vnto the Counfell, that there may be no more prouisions at all deliuered vnto Pursers, but hath intreated to have the provision thus ordered. He would have a Commissary Generall of the Victuals to be appointed, who (receiving the flore for the Colony, by Indenture from the Frequency furer, and Victuallers in England) may keepe a just accompt, what the groffe amounteth voto, and what is transported every Voyage, in leuerall kindes, as of Bread, Meate, Beere, Wine, &c. which faid Commiffary shall deliner ouer the same, to the Matter of every Ship, and take an Indentre from the faid Mafter, of what he hath in charge, and what he is to deliver to the Treasurer of the flore in Virginia: of which, if any be wanting, he the faid Mafter shall make it good, out of in owne intertainment, otherwife the Purfers, Stewards, Coopers, and quarter Mafters, will befure ftill, not onely to give themselves and their friends double allowances, but thinke it all will gotten that they can purloine and Heale away. Besides that the Indian thus euill intreated vs, the River (which were wont before this time

of the yeare to be plentifull of Storgion) had not now a Fish to be seene in it, and affect we labured, and hold our Net twenty times day and night, yet we tooke not so much as would content halfe the Fishermen. Our Gouernout therefore sent away his long Boate to coast the River downward, as farre as Point Comfort, and from thence to Cape Henry, and Cape Charles, and all within the Bay : which after a leuen nights triall and trausile, returned without any fruites of their labours, scarse getting so much Fish as served their owne Company.

And to take any thing from the Indian by force, we never vied, nor willingly ever will and The Colony though they had well deferued it, yet it was not now time, for they did (as I faid before) but when they h then set their Corne, and at their best, they had but from hand to mouth; so as what now fouredayes of temained ! fuch as we found in the Fort, had wee staid but foure dayes, had doubtliffe bin the straing. most part of them started, for their best reliefe was onely Mushrums, and some heartes, which sod together, made but a thin and vulauory broath, and fivelled them much. The pitry hereof moued our Gouernour to draw forth fuch provision as he had brought, proportioning a measure equally to every one a like. But then our Governor began to examine how long this his flore would hold out, and found it (husbanded to the best adventage) not possible to serue longer then fixeene dayes: after which, nothing was to be possibly supposed out of the Country (as before temembred) nor remained there then any meanes to transport him elsewhere. Whereupon hee then entred into the confultation with Sir George Summers, and Captaine Newport, calling vnto the same the Gentlemen and Counsell of the former Gouernment, intreating both the one and the other to adulfe with him what was best to be done. The prouision which they both had aboord himselfe and Sir George Summers, was examined, and delinered, how it, being rackt to the vttermoft, extended not about, as I faid, fixteene dayes, after two Cakes a day. The Gentlehen of the Town, who knew better of the Country, could not give him any hope;or wayes, how

Politans po-

would continue it. And I may true vay believe, to had our men abased, and to such a contempt. the regard full wer, and wrought vo. had they brought the value of our Copper, that a prece which would have bought a bushell of Basenesse of gran ê satulio international control of the state of the st their Corne in former time, would not now buy a little Cade or Basket of a Pottle. And for The state of the s this milgouernment, chiefely our Colony is much bound to the Mariners, who never yet in aan nicht fest in der Duratiere gening fein Woor well planmy Voyage hither, but have made a prey of our poore people in want; infomuch, as wilese Michiefes of The law uses the same of the first state Countries and they might aduance foure or fine for one (now affured foeuer of the payments of their Bils of word start and an analytic trace of the Orthogonal worth tra-Exchange) they would not spare them a dust of Corne, nor a pince of Beere, to give vinto tan a mai a in, mai aw ara hand it weemine experience. them the least comfort or reliefe, although that Beere purloyned, and stolne perhaps, either willig la eder wire are to the Countrie thirt no Countriev verla from some particular supply, or from the generall store: so which are table a parcell of people they mur la distrate de l'arge I lius less deux, es projectes of ene la to be, and ill conditioned. I my felfe have heard the Mafter of a Shippe tay (even vpon the ar-1... 2.0 Belles, werbaut triujanus of goodly Vines in eur. tigall of this Fleese, with the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall, when the faid Mafter to go me ground, would product a plei trudi Grape in their was treated with for fuch Commodities as hee brought to fell) that valeffe hee might have an to will wieugu, if there natures. Whise were planted, cresh East Indian increase, foure for one, all charges cleered, hee would not part with a Can of Beere. Vingernanes, wiet et wee mig it ist makes periedt Grape. Besides, to doe vs more villany and mischiete, they would send of their long Boates still by met gun wie naus maue trillige fur a were Engule eelestatemen night, and (well quarded) make out to the neighbour Villages, and Townes, and there (coneine i est establiseult abid Eigiana. trary to the Articles of the Fort, which now pronounce death for a trespasse of that qualifie) Till fill fill fill film tien ver der Tilt die eine Afterden Leter trucke with the Indians, giving for their trifles Otter skinnes, Beuers, Rokoone Furres, Beares nyma. Rybow **una "est** de mysterenten de Labouren Labouren et Labouren et Labouren et Labouren et Labouren et Labouren skinnes, &c. to large a quantity and measure of Copper, as when the Trucke-Matter for the Coere mich obligen a Reminewald under stall under treatminues, worm long, in the day time offered trade, the Indians would laugh and foome the fame, telling what Vester har liga autabe i gar alimenta akt deterre from thristia. Po 20 harrying they met witha'l by night, from our Mangor Quintons (fo calling our great Shippes) by ma merch leath . . semun de the Ca gentirs, and workewhich meanes, the Market with them foreflated thus by thefe diffhoneft men, I may boldly lay, they have bin a confequent cause (it is last yeare) to the death and starting of many a worthy Puisers fraud-Plarty if the Courty as the tre sombe thereof there layers forrit; but I hope to see a true amendment and reformation, as well of those as of divers other Table 1 odder of any taken of the of greaty, and increase, and intollerable abuses, thrush upon the Colony by these shamelesse people, as also for the transportatiuent a calente would the summers of neerer a neresbour Ilav. on of fuch proussions and supplies as are tent hither, and come under the charge of purfers (a par-The first of the control of the control of the control of the sections interposition of the control of the cont cell, fragment, and odde ends of fellowes dependancies to the others) a better course thought alle and pans taire puly eles i it let ware, er wrele tiem to a declivpon : of which supplies, neuer yet came into the Store, or to the Parties, vnto whom such supplies were fent, by relation hitherto, a moitie or third part; for the speedy redresse of this, being Laury or the fearth made proper fine for already towards the valve, to foueraigne a point, I understand how the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall, hath adui-Tyriter really are land astronom with ver greiterin, when mener 30 30 fe i vnto the Counfell, that there may be no more prouifions at all deliuered vnto Purfers, but Gerigh Gleif land in fill baue lee eine, and I proteit in, I faue hath intreated to have the provision thus ordered. He would have a Commissary Generall of the vich alair im or iminit prictelle, it at it em hould neuer refine to Victuals to be appointed, who (receiving the flore for the Colony, by Indenture from the Treaof the modernes and knowledges, when such worthwy and No. furer, and Victuallers in England) may keepe a infl accompt, what the groffe amounteth vneo. ມກວານກອດກອກ . ຂາມ ກ່າງການທ້ານ, ພົມກ່ອນ ກ່າວວັດສຸກິດກໍ່ ກິນມີ 🤐 and what is transported every Voyage, in severall kindes, as of Bread, Meate, Beere, Wine, &c. ault in Badel, tien leten innem wit inner Sword, America w which faid Commillary shall deliner ouer the same, to the Master of enery Ship, and take an Indennorther than to take a but that as livetien berforme the and ture from the faid Malter, of what he hath in charge, and what he is to deliner to the Treasurer na vidua vivi a primir minimi milja wintsa pistiwi kabama, they sala of the flore in Virginia: of which, if any be wanting, he the faid Mafter shall make it good, out of o pora niemy ja na o jo o je si jest orez oz toje obroke agjoznek i znevitake. his owneintertainment, otherwife the Purfers, Stewards, Coopers, and quarter Mafters, will general wood of the order of the raise layer lacely a footbal. In be fure still, not onely to give themselves and their friends double allowances, but thinke it all nelle oli oli oli oli ili ili ili ili nello oli inge wild. Glies reconstrumeres 🤂 40 well gotten that they can purloine and iteale away. onered to Holon, Fullettick of fed for the laterate, as fault Befides that the Indian thus euill intreated vs, the River (which were wont before this time in the transport of the state o of the yeare to be plentifull of Storgion) had not now a Fish to be seene in it, and affect we lathe state of the state of the state of the state of the Grains boured, and hold our Net twenty times day and night, yet we tooke not fo much as would con-ကွ (၂) ရှိသို့ က (၂) ရေးသည်။ သည် သည် သည် သည် သည် မြောက် tent halfe the Fishermen. Our Gouernour therefore sent away his long Boate to coast the River Fig. 2 am (4) in the first series and a series and downward, as farre as Point Comfort, and from thence to Cape Henry, and Cape Charles, and all in a resident of the second section of the second second within the Bay : which after a feuen nights triall and trauaile, returned without any fruites of their labours, scarfe getting so much Fish as served their owne Company. And to take any thing from the Indian by force, we never yied, nor willingly ever will fand. The Colon, though they had well deferued it, yet it was not now time, for they did (as I faid before) but when they and the first of t 50 then fet their Corne, and at their best, they had but from band to mouth; so as what now foure daye, of Agentic of the Country of the Countr remained fluch as we found in the Fort, had wee staid but foure dayes, had doubtleffe bin the fliraingmost part of them starued, for their best reliefe was onely Mushrums, and some hearbes, which fod ing and the state of the second process. together, made but a thin and vnfauory broath, and fivelled them much. The pitry hereof The state of the s moued our Gouernour to draw forth fuch provision as he had brought, proportioning a measure e-qually to every one a like. But then our Gouer nor began to examine how long this his flore in the first water that complete

would hold out, and found it (husbanded to the best aduantage) not possible to serue longer then fixteene dayes : after which, nothing was to be polibly supposed out of the Country (as before

remembred) nor remained there then any meanes to transport him elsewhere. Whereupon hee

then entred into the consultation with Sir George Summers, and Captaine Newport, calling vnto

the fame the Gentlemen and Countell of the former Government, intreating both the one and

The second of th

and the second of the second o

to improve it from the Indian, It some then appeared most fit, by a generall approbation, that to preferue and faue all from flaruing, there could be no readier course thought on, then to abandon the Country, and accommodating themselves the best that they might, in the present Pinnices then in the road, namely in the Descourry and the Virginia, and in the two, brought from, and builded at the Bermudas, the Delinerance, and the Passence, with all speede convenient to make Purpole toleau for the New found Lind, where (being the fishing time) they might meete with many Engliships into which happily they might disperie most of the Company.

1752

The highest pitch & low ft dep h of the Colonics mifories fearily elcaping the iawes of denouting defpe-Hopes mor-L.La Warring-

ration.

This Confultation taking effect, our Gouernor having caused to be carried aboord all the Armer. and all the best things in the store, which might to the Aduenturers make some commodiand all the best things in home, and burying our Ordnances before the Fort gate, which looked to your the tale thereof at home, and burying our Ordnances before the Fort gate, which looked the into the River. The feventh of lune having appointed to cuery Pinnace likewife his complement and number, also delivered thereunto a proportionable rate or prouision, hee commanded every man at the beating of the Drun to repaire aboord. And because hee would preserve the Towne (albeit now to be quitted) vaburned, which some intemperate and malicious people threatned. his owne Company he cauled to be last ashoare, and was himselfe the last of them, when about noone giving a farewell, with a peale of small shot, wee fet faile, and that night, with the tide. fell downe to an Hand in the River, which our people have called Hogge Hand; and the morning tide brought vs to another lland, which we have called Mulberry lland; where lying ac an ancor, in the afternoone flemming the tide, wee discouered a long Boate making towards vs. an ancor, in the mire in much delcant we made thereof, about an houre it came up; by which, to 20 our no little joyrs, we had intelligence of the honorable my Lord Lawarr his arrivall before Algarnoone Fort the lixt of lune, at what time, true it is, his Lordship hauing vinderstood of our Go. u. rnous resolution to depart the Country, with all expedition caused his Skiffe to be manned. and in it dispatched his letters by Captain Edward Bruster (who commandeth his Lordships Company) to our Gouernour, which presenting vs before the aforefaid Mulberry Iland, the eight of June aforelaid) vpon the receipt or his honours letters, our Gouernour bore vp the helme, with the winde comming Easterly, and that night (the winde to fauourable) relanded all his men at the Fort againe: before which (the tenth of lune, being Sunday) his Lordship had likewise brought his Ships, and in the afternoone, came a shoare with Sir Ferdinando Weinman, and all his Lord-

Description of fire of lames Towne.

Here (worthy Lady) let mee have a little your pardon, for having now a better heart, then when I half landed, I will briefely describe ynto you, the fituation and forme of our Fort. When Captain Nempers in his first Voyage alid not like to anhabit vpon to open a roade, as Cape Henry nor Poine Confort he plied it vp to the River, it il looking out for the most apt and secureit place, as well for his Company to fit downe in, as which might give the least cause of offence, or distalt in his judgement, to the Inhabitants. At length, after much and weary fearch (with their Barge coa-Ring still before, as Virgell writeth Auest did, arriving in the region of Italy called Latimo, vpon the bankes of the River Tyber) in the Country of a Weromance talled Wominchapuncke (aditionary to Powbaran) within this faire River of Paffihaigh, which wee have called the King, River, a Country least inhabited by the Indian, as they all the way observed, and threescore miles & bet- 40 ter up the fresh Channell, from Cape Henry they had fight of an extended plaine & spot of earth, which thrust out into the depth, & middest of the channell, making a kinde of Cherfonts wo Peninfala, for it was faitened onely to the Land with a flender necke, no broader then a man may well-quarte a tile shard, & no inhabitants by feuen or fix miles neere it. The Trumpets foundings the Admirall-frooke faile, and before the fame, the rest of the Fleete came to an ancor, and here (as the best yet offered vinto their view , supposed so much the more convenient, by how much with their small Company, they were like inough the better to affure it) to loofe no further time, the Colony difimbarked, and every man brought his particular flore and furniture, together with the generall prouision ashoare: for the safety of which, as likewise for their owne security, ease, and better accommodating, a certaine Canton and quantity, of that little halfe Hand of ground, 50 was measured, which they began to fortifie, and thereon in the name of God, to raise a Fortresse, with the ablest and speediest meanes they could: which Fort, growing since to more perfection, is now at this present in this manner.

The Fort.&c.

A low level of ground about halfe an Acre, or (fo much as Queene Dide might buy of King Hyarban, which the compaffed about with the thongs cut out of one Bull hide, and therein built her Cattle of Byzza) on the North file of the River, is cast almost into the forme of a Triangle, and to Pallizadoed. The South fide next the River (howbeit extended in a line, or Curtaine fix foore foote more in length, then the other two, by reason the advantage of the ground doth so require) containes one hundred and forty yards: the Well and Eaft files a hundred onely, At enery Anglesor corner, where the lines meete, a Bulwarkeor Watchtower is railed, and in each 60 Bulwarks a prece of Ordnance or two well mounted. To enery fide, a proportioned diffance from the Palliado) is a feet of fluete of houles, that runs along, so as each line of the Angle bath his threete. In the middelf is a market place, a Store house, and a Corps du guard, as likewise a pretty Chappell, though (at this time when wee came in, as runned and vofrequented; but the

Lord Gouernour, and Captaine Generall, hath given order for the repairing of it. and at this instant, many hands are about it. It is in length threescore foote, in breadth twenty foure, and thall have a Chancell in it of Cedar, and a Communion Table of the Blake Walnut, and all the Pewes of Cedar, with faire broad windowes, to flut and open, as the weather shall occasion, of the same wood, a Pulper of the same, with a Pont hewen hollow, like a Canoz, with two Bels at the West end. It is so cast, as it be very light within, and the Lord Gonernour and Captaine Generall doth cause it to be kept passing sweete, and trimmed vp with diuers flowers, with a Sexton belonging to it, and in it every Sonday wee have Sermons twice a day, and every Thursday a Sermon, having true preachers, which take their weekely turnes, 10 and every morning at the ringing of a Bell, about ten of the clocke, each man addrelleth himfelfe to prayers, and io at toure of the clocke before Supper. Every Sunday, when the Lord Gouernour, and Captaine Generall goeth to Church, hee is accompanied with all the Counfailers, Captaines, other Officers, and all the Gentlemen, and with a Guard of Holberdiers, in his Lordships Livery, faire red cloakes, to the number of fifty both on each side. and behinde him : and being in the Church, his Lordship hath his feate in the Quier, in a greene Veluet Chaire, with a Cloath, with a Veluet Cushion spread on a Table before him, on which he kneeleth, and on each fide fit the Counfell, Captaines, and Officers, each in their place, and when he returneth home againe, he is waited on to his house in the same manner,

And thus inclosed, as I faid, round with a Pallizado of Planckes and itrong Posts, foure foote 20 deepe in the ground, of yong Oakes, Walnuts, &c. The Fort is called in honour of his Maiesties name, lame: Towne; the principall Gate from the Towne, through the Pallizado, opens to the River, as at each Bulwarke there is a Gate likewise to goe forth, and at every Gate a Demi-Culuerin, and fo in the Market Place. The houses first railed, were all burnt, by a casualty of fire, the The Houses. beginning of the second years of their feate, and in the second Voyage of Captain Newsors, which fince haue bin better rebailded, though as yet in no great vniformity, either for the falhion. or beauty of the ftreete. A delicate wrought fine kinde of Mar the Indians make, with which (as they can be trucked for, or fratched up lour people do dreffe their chambers, and inward roomes, which make their houses to much the more handlome. The houses have wide and large Country Chimnies in the which is to be supposed (in such plenty of wood) what fires are maintained; and Barke Roofes, 30 they have found the way to couer their houses : now (as the Indians) with barkes of Trees, as

durable, and as good proofe against stormes, and winter weather, as the best Tyle defending likewise the piercing Sunbeames of Summer, and keeping the inner lodgings coole enough, which before in fultry weather would be like Stoues, whilest they were, as at first, pargetted and plaistered with Bitumen or tough Clay: and thus armed for the injury of changing times, and feafons of the yeare, we hold our felues well apaid, though wanting Arras Hangings, Tapiftry, and guilded Venetian Cordouan, or more spruse houshold garniture, and wanton City ornaments, temembring the old Epigraph:

We dwell not bere to build vs Bowers, But Hals we build for vs and ours, And Hals for pleasure and good cheere: To dwell in them whilst we line here.

True it is, I may not excuse this our Fort, or lames Towne, as yet seated in somewhat an yn. Vnhealthful wholesome and sickly ayre, by reason it is in a marish ground, low, flat to the River, and hath no neffe of James fresh water Springs seruing the Towne, but what wee drew from a Well sixe or seuen fathom deepe, fed by the brackish River owzing into it, from whence I verily beleeve, the chiefe causes have proceeded of many difeates and ficknesses which have happened to our people, who are indeede strangely afflicted with Fluxes and Agues; and every particular scason (by the relation of the old inhabitants) hath his particular infirmity too, all which (if it had bin our fortunes, to have feated vpontiome hill, accommodated with fresh Springs and cleere ayre, as doe the Natiues of the Country) we might have, I believe, well escaped : and some experience we have to perswade 50 our felues that it may be fo, for of foure hundred and odde men, which were feated at the Fals, the last yeere when the Fleete came in with fresh and yong able spirits, vinder the government of Captain Francis West, and of one hundred to the Seawards (on the South fide of our River) in the Country of the Nanfamundes, under the charge of Captaine Iohn Martin, there did not fo much as one man miscarry, and but very few or none fall ficke, whereas at Immes Towne, the same time, and the same moneths, one hundred sickned, & halfe the number died: howbeit, as we condemne not Kent in England, for a small Towne called Plumsted, continually affaulting the dwellers there (especially new commers) with Agues and Feuers; no more let vs lay scandall, and imputation vpon the Country of Virginia, because the little Quarter wherein we are set dowee (vnaduisedly 60 to chosed) appeares to be vinwholesome, and subject to many ill ayres, which accompany the like marish places.

ø. IIII.

The Lord LaW ARRES beginnings and proceedings in lames Towne. Sir THOMAS GATES fent into England; his and the Companies testimony of Virginia, and cause of the late miseries.

Pon his Lord hips landing at the South gate of the Pallix ado (which lookes into the Ruser) our Gouernour cauled his Company in armes to fland in order, and make a Guard : It pleased him, that I should beare his Colours for that time : his Lordship Guard: It pleafed him, that I should beare his Colours for that time: his Lordship landing, tell vpon his knees, and before vs all, made a long and silent Prayer to himfelfe, and after, marched up into the I owne, where at the Gate, I bowed with the Colours and let them fall at his Lordfnips feete, who passed on into the Chappell, where he heard a Sermon by Mafter Bucke, our Gouernours Preacher; and after that, caufed a Gentleman, one of his owne followers, Matter Anthony Scot his Ancient, to reade his Commission, which intituled him Lord Gouernour, and Captaine Generall curing his life, of the Colony and Plantation in Verginta (Sit Thomas Gates our Gogernour hitherto, being now filled therein Lieutenane

Arter the reading of his Lordships Commission, Sir Thomas Gates rendred vp vnto his Lordfind his owne Commission, both Patents, and the Countell Seale : after which, the Lord Gouernour, and Captaine Generall, delivered some few words vnto the Company, laying many blames whom them for many vanities, and their Idlenesse, earnestly wishing, that he might no more finde it fo leaft he should be compelled to draw the sword of Iustice, to cut off such delinquents, which he had much rather, he protested, draw in their defence, to protect them from injuries; hattening them with the knowledge of what store of provisions he had brought for them, viz, sufficient to serue foure hundred men for one whole yeare.

Provisions brought. Countell chofen & iwoine.

Officers ap-

pointed.

Commission

Lord La Was

Sit T. Gares

Lieutmant

Generali.

His fpeech.

The twelfth of lune, being Tueflay, the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall did conflitute, and give places of Office, and charge to divers Captaines and Gentlemen, and elected vnto him a Counfell, vnto whom he did administer an Oath, mixed with the oath of Allegiance and Supremacy to his Maiestie: which oath likewife he caused to be administred the next day after 20 to every particular member of the Colony, of Faith, Affilance, and Secrecy. The Countaile which Colony worn, he elected were. Sir Thomas Gases Kinght, Lieutenant Generall. Sir George Summers Knight. Admirall, Captaine George Percy Esquire, and in the Fort Captaine of fifty. Sir Ferdinando Wille. man Knight, Mafter of the Ordnance, Captaine Christopher Newport, Vice-admirall. William Sre-

chei Esquire, Secretary, and Recorder,

As likewise the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall, nominated Captaine Iohn Maria, Matter of the Battery workes for Steele and Iron : and Captaine George Webb Sergeant Maior of the Fort, and especial Captaines ouer Companies, were these appointed; Captaine Edward Brufler, who hath the command of his Honours owne Company. Captaine Thomas Lawfon. Captain Thomas Holecroft: Captaine Samuell Argoll. Captaine George Turder, who commandeth the Lucit of tenant Generals Company. Divers other Officers were likewise made, as Mafter Raiph Hamm, and Maiter Browne, Clarkesof the Counfell, and Mafter Daniell Tucker, and Mafter Robert Wilde,

The first businesse which the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall (after the setling of these Officers) thought upon, was to aduse with his Counsell, for the obtaining of such prouifions of victuals for Hore, and quality, as the Countrey afforded. It did not appeare, that any kinde of Flesh, Deere, or what elie, of that kinde, could be recovered from the Indian, or to be fought in the Countrey, by the trauaile or fearch of his people, and the old dwellers in the Fort (together with the Indians not to friend) who had the last winter, destroyed and killed up all the Hogges, intomuch, as of fine or fixe hundred (as it is supposed) there was not one left alive; nor 50 an Henne, nor Chicke in the Fort; and our Horses and Mares, they had eaten with the first, and the proudion which the Lord Gouernour, and Captaine Generall had brought, concerning any kinde of flesh, was little or nothing; in respect it was not drempt of by the Ada.nturers in England, that the S vine were destroyed.

In Countell therefore the thirteenth of Iune, it pleased Sir George Summers Knight, Admirall, Sir G. Summers to propose a Voyage, which for the better reliefe, and good of the Colony, he would perform in bringgrouis to the Bermudas, from whence he would fetch fix moneths provision of Flesh and Fish, and some ons from Er- hus Hogges to fto:e our Colony againes and had a Commission given vinto him the hitteenth of lune, 1610. who in his owne Bermeda Pinnace, the Patience, conforted with Captaine Sammes Aged, in the Difeouery (whom the Lord Gouerour, and Captaine General), make of the countries of the countrie the twenty two left the Bay, or Cape Henry a iterne.

And likewife, because at the Lord Governous, and Captaine Generals first comming, there was o found in our owne River no itore of Filh; after many trials, the Lord Governour, and Capraine

Generall, dispatched in the Virginia, with inflructions, the feuenteenth of June, 1 6 1 0. Robert Tradall. Mafter of the De la Warre, to fish vnto, all along, and betweene Cape Henry, and Cape Charles, within the Bay; who the last of the faid moneth returned vnto vs againe, but as ill speeding as the former, whom our Gouernour (now Lieutenan: Generall) had addressed thither before for the same purpole. Nor was the Lord Gouernour, and Captaine Generall in the meane while idle at the Fort, but every day and night hee caused the Nets to be hawled, sometimes a dosen times one after another. But it pleased not God so to blesse our labours, that we did at any time take one quarter to much, as would give vnto our people one pound at a meale a peece, by which we might haue better husbanded our Peafe and Oatemeale, notwithitanding the great fo flore we now faw daily in our River : but let the blame of this lye where it is , both voon our Nets, and the vnskilfulneffe of our men to lay them.

The fixth of Iuly Sir Thomas Gates Lieutenant Generall, comming downe to Point Comfort, the North wind (blowing rough) befound had forced the long Boate belonging to Algernoone Fort: to the other shoare voon Nansamund side, somewhat flint of Weroscoick; which to recouer againe, one of the Lieutenant Generals men Humfrey Blum, in an old Carrow made ouer, but the wind driging him voon the Strand, certaine Indians (watching the occasion) feifed the poore fellow, and led him vp into the Woods, and facrificed him. It did not a little trouble the Lieurenant Gouernour, who fince his first landing in the Countrey (how inftly focuer prouoked) would not by any meanes be wrought to a violent proceeding against them, for all the practices . Ad Gracas 20 of villany, with which they daily indangered our men, thinking it possible, by a more tra- Calendan. Ctable course, to winne them to a better condition ; but now being fartled by this, he well per. Can a Leoceited, how little a faire and noble intreatie, workes upon a barbarous disposition, and therefore his spors? Can

in tome measure purposed to be reuenged.

The ninth of July, he prepared his forces, and early in the morning fet vpon a Towne of theirs, mayning a Sa fome foure miles from Algernoone Fort, called Kecoughtan, and had foone taken it, without use becimile loffe or hurt of any of his men. The Gouernour and his women fled (the young King Powhatans Were not wee tone on the control of the Control o bacco, and some few womens Girdles of Silke, of the Graffe-tilke, not without art, and much our Progeni-30 neatneffe finely wrought; of which I have fent diners into England, (beeing at the taking of tors dayes and the Towne) and would have fent your Ladiship some of them, had they beene a Present were not Case

We purposed to set a Frenchman heere a worke to plant Vines, which grew naturally in great Vinginions The plentie. Some few Corne fields it hath, and the Corne in good forwardnesse, and weede- Romane swords spaire not but to bee (able if our men stand in health) to make it good against the Indian.

The continual practifes of the fubtle King Powhaten, doth not meanely awaken all the chers of ciuipowers and workings of vertue and knowledge, in our Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall, other Counhow to preuent not only his mischieses, but to draw him vpon some better termes, and acknowledgemen of our forces and spirits, both able and daring to quit him in any valiant and martiall Graffesike. ao course whatsoeuer, he shall dare to runne with vs, which hee doth yet scarily beleeue. For this therfore, fince first, and that so lately, he hath set on his people, to attempt vs with private Conspiracies and actuall violence, into the one drawing his Neighbour Confederates and under Princes, and by the other working the loffe and death of divers of our men, and by fuch their loffe feifing their Armes, Swords, Peeces, &c. of which he hath gathered into his store a great quantitie and number by Intelligence about two hundred Swords, besides Axes, and Pollaxes, Chiffels, Howes, to paire and clenfe their ground, with an infinite treasure of Copper) our Lord Go- English Armes uernour and Captaine Generall fent two Gentlemen with an Ambassie vnto him, letting him to treatured by understand of his practiles and outrage, hitherto vied toward our people, not only abroad but at Psubatan. our Fort also yet flattering him withall how the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall did not Porbates. 50 suppose, that these mischiefes were contriued by him, or with his knowledge, but conceined

them rather to be the acts of his worst and varuly people, his Lordship therefore now complayning vato him required, that hee (being fo great and wife a King) would give an vinuerfall order to his Subjects, that it might bee no more to, left the Lord Governour and Captaine Generall should be compelled (by defending him and his) to offend him, which he would be loath to do: withall he willed the Meslengers to demand of him the said Powhatan, that he would either punith or fend vnto his Lordship such of his people whom Pombatan knew well not long before, had affaulted our men at the Block-house, and but newly killed foure of them, as also to demaund of Powhatan, willing him to returne vnto the English Fort, both such men as hee detayned of ours, and fuch Armes as he had of theirs in his polleifion, and those conditions performed, hee willed 60 them to affure vnto Powhatan that then their great Werowance, the Lord Governour and Captaine

Generall would hold faire quarter, and enter friendship with him, as a friend to King James and his Subjects. But refusing to submit to these demands, the Lord Governour and Captaine Generall gaue in charge to the Messengers, so tent to signifie vnto Pombatan that his Lordship would by all meanes publike and private, feeke to recour from him fuch of the English as he had, being Ggggggg 3

coick taken

Sir T. Gates

bound for England.

Priloner.

Subjects to his King and Mafter, voto whom even Pombatan himfelfe had formerly vowed nor only triendfhip but homage, receiving from his Maiestie therefore many gitts, and vpon his knees. a Crowne and Scepter with other Ornaments, the Symbols of Chull State and Christian Sone-Powhanas ho- raigntie, thereby onliging himfelte to Offices of dutie to his Maietie. Vito all which Powhan tan returned no other and were, but that either we should depart his Country, or confine our felicesto lames Towne only, without fearching further vp into his Land, or Ruers, or otherwise, hae would give in command to his people to kill vs, and doe vnto vs all the mitchiete, which they at their pleafure could and we feared: withall forewarning the faid Meffengers, not to returne and more vnto him, valelle they brought him a Coach and three Hories, for hee had underfloor by. the Indians which were in England, how fuch was the state of great Weromances, and Lords us Io England, to nide and v fit other great men.

After this divers times, and daily hee fent fometimes two, fometimes three, with our Forte understand our strength, and to observe our Watch & Guard, and how our people stood in health. and what numbers were arrived with this new Weroance; which being foone perceived our Lord Governour and Captaine Generall forewarned fuch his Spies, ypon their owne perill, to refore no more vnto our Fore. Howbeit, they would daily preffe into our Block-house, and come va to our Pallizado gates, supposing the government as well now, as fantafficall and negligent in the former times, the whilest some quarter of a mile short of the Block-house, the greatest somber of them would make affault, and lye in ambush about our Glasse-house, whether, Disess times indeed our men would make out either to gather Strawberries, or to fetch fresh water, any 20 one of which fo ftragled, if they could with conveniencie, they would affault and charge with their Bowes and Arrowes, in which manner they killed many of our men : two of which being Pass aheans, who were ener our deadlieft enemies, and not to be reconciled; at length being apprehended (and one of them a notable villaine, who had attempted vpon many in our Fort) the Lord Gouernour caused them to be manacled, and convented before him and his Countell, where it was determined that her that had done fo much mischiese should have his right hand strocke. off, sending him away withall, with a message to Powhatan, that volesse hee would yet returne fuch Englishmen as he detayned, together with all fuch their Armes (as before fpoken of)that not only the other (now Prisoner) thould die, but all such of his Sauges (as the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall, could by any meanes surprize) should runne the same courte: as shewife the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall would fire all his Neighbour Corne Fuldes, 19 Townes, and Villages, and that fuddenly, if Powhatan fent not to contract with him the fooner

What this will worke with him, wee know not as yet, for this was but the day before our thips were now falling to Point Comfort, and to to fet tayle for England: which thips riding be-King of Weref fore Werefeeick to take in their fraight of Cedar, Clap-boord, Blacke Wal-nut, and Iron Out, tooke Prifoners likewise the chiefe King of Weroscoick, called Safenticum, with his Sonne Kainta, and one of his chiefe men. And the fifteenth day of July, in the Bleffing Captaine Adams brought them to Point Comfort, where at that time (as well to take his leave of the Lieutenant Generall Sir Thomas Gates, now bound for England, as to dispatch the ships) the Lord Go- 40

uernour and Captaine Generall had pitched his Tent in Algernoone Fort.

The Kings Sonne Kainta the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall, hath fent now into England , vntill the thips arrive here agains the next Spring, dimiting the clid It eromance, and theother with all tearmes of kindnesse, and friendship, promifing further designes to beeeffested by him, to which hee hath bound himselfe, by divers Savage Ceremonies, and ad-

And thus (right Noble Ladie) once more this famous businesse, as recreated, and dipped a new into life and spirit, bath rayled it (I hope) from infamy , and shall redeene the staines and loffes under which the hath fuffered, fince her hift Conception : your Graces still accompany the least appearance of her, and vouchfafe her to bee limmed out, with the beautie which wee will 10 begge, and borrow from the faire lips : nor feare you, that shee will returne bloshes to your cheekes for praying her, fince (more then most excellent Ladie) like your selfe (were all tongues dumbe and enuious) thee will prayfe her felfe in her most filence : may shee once bee but fene, or but her shadow lively by a skilfall Workman set out indeed, which heere (bungerly as lam) I have prefumed (though defacing it) in these Papers to present vinto your Lauchip.

Atter Sir Thomas Gates his arrivall, a Booke called A true Declaration of Virginia, was p. blished by the Company, out of which I have heere inserted this their publike teltimonie of the cautes of the former culs, and Sir Thomas Gates his Report vpon Oath of Vaginia.

The ground of all these miscrees, was the permission Providence of God, who, in the fore meeting 63 and violent storme, special the bead from the bodie, all the vitall powers of Regiment being the store of the sto exiled with Sir Thomas Gates in those infortunate (yet fortunate) Ilands. The troten remainder of those supplies made a greater shipporacke in the Continent of Virginia, by the tempest of Deticion: every man oner-malning his owne worth, would be a Commander: every man under prizing ascillars vaine, demed so be commanded.

The next Fountaine of wees was focure negligence, and improvidence, when custy man sharked for bie present bootes, but was altogether careleffe of succeeding penurie. Now, I demand whether Sidles , or Sardinia (Jameiraces the Barnes of Rome) cauld hope for increase without manuring? A Colony is therefore denominated, because they found be Coloni, the Tellers of the Earth, and Stewards of ferellitie: our noutmous Logievers would not fow with providence, and therefore they reaped the fruits of too descrebought Rapportance. An increasible example of their idlenesse, is the report of Sri Thomas Gates, who affirmeth, that after his first comming thither, be hath seene some of them eat their filn raw, rather then wher would goe a flores call to fetch wood and dreffe it. Dilaboribus on wa vendunt, God lets we all things for our labour, when Adam bumfalfe might not tive in Paradice without dreffing the

10 Garden Vaso-idlateste, you may sorne Trassons, wrought by those unballowed creature; that for socke the Colome, and appoled their de Colaic Breibren to extreame miferie. Tou final know that eight and twentie or thatte of the Company were appointed (mibe ship salled the Swallow) to trucke for Corne with the Indiass, and baung entained a great garnitia by traing, the most feducion of them, co fored together, persuaded some, and enforced others, to this barbarasu prosect. They, fole away the fine, therease a league among it thernfelms to be prefujed Pirats, with areames of Mount aires of Gold, and bapte Robberies : thus at one instant they peromand the bopet, and subserted the cares of the Colonic, who depends of apon their resurve; fore-flowed to lange out far further promision; they created the Ladians our implacable enemies by some vivience they had affered; they carried away the hell buy (which fronta h us beene a 20 refuse in extrematics:) they weakened our forces, by substruction of their armes and succours. These are that scurme of men that fayling in their Piracie, that being sinched nith sumingeand perure, after their mildo rowing upon the Sea, when all their lawleffe hapes failed, force remarmed with other Livale. there men upon the Sea, the others resolved to returne for England, bound themselves by mu wall Quin, to agree all in one report to descredit the Land, to deplore the famine, and to protest that this beix comming amay, proceeded from desperate necessive: These are they, that roared out the Tragecal Historie of the man cating of his deat Wife in Virginia; when the Master of this flip willingly confessed before for tie witneffet, that at their comming away, they left three monethes victuals, and all the Cattel liung in the Fort : fametimes they reported that they fam this borrible altion, fametimes that Captaine Divies (and 6, Cometimes that one Beatla the Lieutenant of Captaine Danies did relate it , varying this report 30 mes describes of falls colours, which hold no likewells and proportion: but to cleere all doubts, Ser Tuomas Gates thus relegate the Tragedie.

There was one of the Company who mortally hated his Wife, and therefore fecretly killed her, then cue her in picces and hid her in divers parts of his House: when the woman was misting, the man ful pecked, his House searched, and parts of her mangled hodie were discoursed, o excute himfelte le faid that his Wife died, that he hid her to fatisfie his hunger, and that hee fed darly vpon her. Vpon this, his Houle was againe fearched, where they found a good quantitie of Meale, Oat-meale, Beanesand Peale. He thereupon was arraigned, confessed the Murder, and

was burned for his horrible villany.

Now shall the scandalous reports of a viperous generation, preponderate the testimonies of so worthy Leaders? Shall their venemous tongues, blast the reputation of an ancient and worthy Peere, who voon Lord Lang re, the ocular certainty of future bleffings, bath protested in his Letters, that he will sucrefice himselfe for his Countrie in this feruice, if be may be feconded; and if the Company dor gine it oner, bee will jet lay all his fortunes upon the profecution of the Plantation ?

Vnto Treasons, you may toyne constous resse in the Mariners, who for their prinate lucre partly imbereled the promisons; partly presented our Trade with the Indians making the Matches in the night, and forestalling our Market in the day : whereby the Virginians were glutted with our Trifles, and inbiunced the prices of their Corne and Victuall, That Copper which before would have provided a bushell would nes now obtaine jo much as a Pottle.

Some unto the le another enill: inere is great store of Fish in the River, especially of Surgeon; but our 50 men promided no more of them then for p efent ne efficie, not barrelling up any ftore against that feafon the Stargeon returned to the Sea. And not to diffemble their folly, they fuffered fourteene nets (ubi: h was all they bad) torst and pople, which by orderly drying and mending might have beene preferred : but being lost, all helps of filhing perilhed.

The state of the Colony, by these accidents began to finde a sensible declining: which Powerstan (as a greedy Vulture) observing, and boiling with delire of revenge, bee inuited Captaine Rat. I. ffc, and about thirty others to trade for Corne, and vader the colour of fairest frienditip, bee brought them with in the compasse of bis ambush, whereby they were cruelly murthered and mass acred. For upon considence of bis fidelise, they want one and one into severall houses, which caused their severall destructions, when if but any fixe hadremained together, they would have beene a Bulwarke for the generall prefernation. After this, Powhatan in the night cut off some of our Boats, he drawe away all the Decre into the further part of the Countrey, bee and his people destroyed our Hogs (to the number of about fixe bundred) hee sent one of his Indians to trade with vs, but layed secret anobusties in the Woods, that if one or two diopped out of the Fort

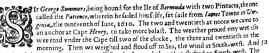
alone, they were indangered. Cast up the reckning together: want of government, fore of idlenesse, their expectations frustrated

by the Traytos, their market specied by the Mariners, our Nets broken, the Deere chafed, our Boats loft. our Hoos killed our trade with the Indians forbidden, some of our men fled, some murtbered, and most be drinking of the brackish muter of lames Fort weakened and indangered, famine and sicknesse by all these meanes increased, here at home the monyes came in fo flowly, that the Lord Laware could not bee difparched till the Colony was worne and spint with difficulties : About all, bauing neither Ruler, nor Preacher, they neither feared God, nor man, which prouched the wrath of the Lord of Hofts, and bulled dewne his judgements upon them. Diferte justitiam moniti.

The Councell of Virg ma (finding the smallesse of that returne, which they boped should have defrased the charge of a new supply) entred into a deepe confulation, and propounded amongst themselves, whether it were fit to enter into a new contribution, or in time to fend for home the Lord La-wate, and is a. in bandon the attion. They resolved to fend for Sir Thomas Gates, who being come, they adirection to deale plainly with them, and to make a true relation of those things which were presently to be bad . hereafter to be boped for in Virginia. Sir Thomas Gates with a folemne and facred outh replied. the all things before reported were true : that the Countrey yeelded abundance of Wood, as Oake, Wainfca. Walnut Trees, Bay Trees, Albe, Sarfafrafe, line Oake, greene all the yeere, Cedar and Fir; which are the materialis, of Soape after, and Pot after, of Oyles of Walnuts, and Bayes, of Pitch and Tur, of Clapa boards, Pipe Stanes, Masts and excellent boards of fortie, fiftie, and fixtie length, and three foot breadth when one Furretree is able to make the maine Mast of the greatest Ship in England. He anouched that there are incredible varietie of (weet woods, especially of the Balfamum tree, which distilleth a precione Gumme: that there are innumerable white Mulberry trees, which in so warme a climate may cherift and feede millions of Silke-wormes, and returne vs in a very fort time, as great a plenty of Silke as is vented into the whole world from all the parts of Italy : that there are diners forts of Minerals, effecially of Iron oare lying ripper the ground for ten Miles sircuite; of which wee have made a trial at home. that it maketh as good Iron as any is in E trope :) that a kinde of Himpe or Flaxe, and Silke Graffe doe growt bere naturally, which will affoord stuffe for all manner of excellent Cordage: That the River swarmeth with all manner of Sturgeon : the Land aboundeth with Vines; the Woods doe barbour exceeding store of Beauers, Foxes, and Squirrels; the Waters doe nourish a great encrease of Otters, all which we conered with precious Furres : that there are in present disconcred Dyes and Drugges of sundry qualities: that the Orenges which have beene planted, did profper in the winter, which is an infallible argument that Lemmons, Sugar Canes. Almonds, Rice, Annifeede, and all other commodities which wee bane from the 30 Straights, may be supplied to us in our owne Country, and by our owne industry: then the Corne yeldeth a terrible encrease more then ours : and lastly, that it is one of the goodliest Countries under the Sume; enterneined with fine maine Rivers, and promising as rich entrals as any Kingdome of the earth, to whom the Sunne is no neerer a neighbour.

CHAP. VII.

The Voyage of Captaine SAMVEL ARGAL, from Iames Towne in Virginia, to feeke 40 the He of Bermuda, and missing the same, his putting over toward Sagadahoc and Cape Cod, and (o backe againe to lames Towne, began the nineteenth of lune, 1610.



till eight of the clocke at night it was all Southerly, and then that shifted to South-west. The Cape then bearing West, about eight leagues off. Then wee stirred away South-east. The foure and twentieth, at noone I observed the Sunne , and found my felte to bee in thirtie fixe degrees, fortie leuen minutes, about twentie leagues off from the Land. From the foure and twentieth at noone, to the fire and twentieth at noone, fixe leagues East, the wind Southerly, but for the most part it was calme. From the five and twentieth at noone, to the fixe and twentieth about fixe of the clocke in the morning, the winde was all Southerly, and but little. And then it beganne to blow a fresh gale at West South-west. So by noone I had failed fourteene leagues East, South-east pricked. From the fixe and twentieth at noone, to the feuen and twentieth at noone, twentie leagues East, South-east. The wind shifting from the West, South-west Southerly, and so to the 60 East, and the weather faire, but close. From the seuen and twentieth at noone, to the eight and twentieth at noone, fixe and twentie leagues East, South-east, the wind shifting backe again from the East to the West. Then by mine observation I found the ship to be in thirtie five degrees fiftie foure minutes. From the eight and twentieth at noone, to the nine and twentieth at noone,

thirtie fixe leagues East by South, the wind at West, North-west. Then by my observation I found the ship to be in thirtie five degrees, thirtie minutes pricked. From the nine and twentieth at noone, to the thirtieth at noone, thirtie fine leagues East, South-east, The winde thifting betweene West, North-west, and West, South-west, blowing a good fresh gale. Then by my objernation I found the thip to be in thirtie foure degrees, fortie mine minutes pricked. From the thirtieth of lune at noone, to the first of July at noone, thirtie leagues South-east by East, the winde at well, then I found the thip in thirtie foure degrees pricked.

CHAP.7. Fresh gale, Calme weather, Very ftormy westerly pariation.

From the first of July at noone, to the second at noon, twentie leagues East, South-east southerly, the wind Weft, then I found the fhip to bee in thirtie three degrees, thirtie minutes pricked.

the weather very faire. From the lecond at noone, to the third at foure of the clocke in the afternoone it was calme, then it beganne to blow a resonable fresh gale at South-east : so I made account that the ship had driven about fixe leagues in that time East. The Sea did set all about the West. From that time to the fourth at noone, feuenteene leagues East by North, the wind shifting betweene South-east and South South-well, then I found the ship to bee in thirtie three degrees, fortie minutes, the weather continued very faire. From the fourth at noone, to the fifth at noone, ten leagues South-east, the wind and weather as before, then I found the thip to be in thirtie three degrees, feuenteene minutes pricked. From the fitt at noone, to the fixt at noone, eight leagues South-west, then I found the thip to be in thirtie two degrees, fiftie seven minutes pricked; the wind and weather continued as before, only we had a im ill thowre or two of raine.

From the fixt at noone, to the leventh at noone, feventeene leagues East by North, then I found the ship to be in thirtie three degrees, the wind and weather as b. tore. From the feuenth at noon, to the eight at noone, fourteene leagues North-east, then I found the ship to be in thirtie three 13. degreess degrees, thirde two minutes, the wind and weather continued as before, From the eight at noon as moon to the ninth at noone, fine leagues South-east, there I found the ship to be in thirtie times degrees, twentie one minutes, the wind at South-weit, he weather very faire, From the ninte at noone, to the tenth at noone, fine leagues South the wind westerly; but for the most part it was calcie. and the weather very faire. From the tenth at noone, to the eleuenth at noone it was calme, and fo continued vntill mine of the clocke the fame night, then it began to blow a reasonable fresh gale at South-east, and continued all that night betweene South-east and South, and writill the 33. deore twelfth day at noone ; by which time I had failed fifteene leagues West foutherly ; then I found

the ship in thirtie three degrees, thirtie minutes. From that time to foure of the clock the twelfth day in the morning twelve leagues West by North, the wind all foutherly, and then it shifted betweene South and South-weit, then wee tacked about and flood South-east, and South-east by South : fo by noone I had fayled fine leagues South-east by Bast; then I found the ship in thirtie three degrees ten minutes. From the thirteenth at noone , to she fourteenth at noone , twenty leagues South-east by East, the wind shifting betweene the South-west, and West South-west. then I found the fhip to be in thirtie two degrees, thirtie five minutes. From the fourteenthat 12 degrees, noone, to the fifteenth at noone, twentie leagues South-raft, then I tound the thip to be in thirty two degrees, the wind as before : then we tacked about, and lay North-west by West. From the 40 fifteenth at noone, to the fixteenth at noone, twelve leagues North by West, the wind shifting

betweene South-west and West, and the weather very stormy, with many sudden suffs of wind

And about fixe of the clocke in the afternoone, being to windward of our Admirall I bare vp. He freaker vnder his lee : who when I hayled him, told me that he would tack it up no longer, because hee with the Adwas not able to keepe the fea any longer, for lacke of a road and water : but that hee would pre- mnall. fently fleere away North North-welt, to fee if he could fetch Cape Cod. Which without delay he put in execution. His directions I followed : fo from the fixteenth day at noone, to the feuen- They faile toteenth at noone I had failed thirtie eight leagues North North-west : then I found my ship to be ward Cape cod in thirtie foure degrees, ten minutes. The feuenteenth and eighteenth dayes were very wet and ftormy, and the winds shifting all points of the Compasse. The nineteenth day, ab ut foure of the

50 clocke in the morning it began to cleere up, and then we had a very fliffe gale betweene East and North-east. From the seventeenth at noone, to the mneteenth at noone. I had tayled fifting fine leagues North North-west, then I found the ship to be thirtie sixe degrees thirty minutes. From the mineteenth at noone, to the twentieth at noone, thirty fine leagues North-west : then I was in thirty feuen degrees, fifty two minutes, the weather now was fairer and the wind all eafterly. From the twentieth at noone, to the twentie one at noone, we layled twenty leagues North by West, the wind betweene East and South-east, and the weather very faire: At the sunne setting west-I observed, and found thirteene degrees, and an halfe of wester's variation, and vntill midnight arise we had a reasonable fresh gale of wind all southerly, and then it fell coline and aired and to con- Sec-

60 tinued very little wind vntill the two and twentieth at nonne, and thit meg at an prints of the Compasse : yet by mine observation that I made then, I como must be then be then twenty-dec. 35 1965 leagues North, for I found her to be in forty degrees, one minute, who they are in the third backs. there was some tide or current that did fet Northward. Again 1,000 to 1000 to 1,000 for ward, did fay, That in their watch they did fee race, and that flop did cries is see at the low thousand. when she had not a breath of wind.

From the two and twentieth at noone, vntill ten of the clocke at night, we had a fresh sale of wind, betweene East and South-east, and then it shifted all westerly, and so continued vntill two of the clocke the twenty three in the morning : and then it began to be very foggy and bue little wind, yet shifting all the points of the Compasse, and so continued vntill ten of the clocke. and then it began to cleere vp. At twelue of the clocke I obferued, and then I found the flip to be in fortie degrees fiftie minutes : fo from the twenty two at noone, to the twenty three at noone I had dayled twenty leagues Northward. From the twenty three at noone, to the twenty foure, at three of the clocke in the morning it was calme, and then we had a reasonable fresh gale of wind all foutherly, and fo it continued vntill noon foutherly, in which time I had failed twelve leagues North. And about foure of the clocke in the afternoone, we had forty feuen fathoms of 10 water, which water we did find to be changed into a grasse green in the morning, yet we would not heave a lead, because our Admirall was so farre on head of vs : who about three of the clocke

Weer like vn-

in the afternoone lay by the lee, and fished till I came vp to him : and then I fitted my selfe and my boat, and fifted untill fixe of the clocke. And then the Admirall fitted his failes, and flirred away North, whom I followed with all the speed I could. But before seuen of the clocke there fell such a myst, that I was faine to shoot off a Peece, which he answered with a Cornet that he had aboord. So with hallowing and making a noyfe one to another all the night we kept company. About two of the clocke, the twenty hue day in the morning we tooke in all our failes, and lay at Hull wntill five of the clocke : and then finding but small flore of fish, we set saile and firred away North-west, to fetch the mayne land to relieue our selues with wood and water, which we stood in great need of. About two of the clocke in the afternoone we tooke in all our failes and lay at Hull, a. which time I heaved the lead three times together, and had three fundry kindes of foundings. The first a blacke peppery land, full of peble stones. The second blacke peppery, and no ftones: The third blacke peppery, and two or three ftones.

Great for and

Sounding.

From the fourth at noone, to the twentie five, at wo of the clocke in the afternoone, I savled thirteene leagues West North-west : and the weather continuing very foggy, thicke, and rainy. about fine of the clocke it began to ceale, and then we began to filh, and to continued vntill feuen of the clocke in betweene thirty and forty fathoms, and then we could fift no longer. So having gotten betweenetwentie and thirty Cods, we left for that night : and at fine of the clocke, the twenty fixe in the morning we began to fish againe, and so continued vntill ten of the clocke, and 30 then it would fish no longer : in which time we had taken neere one hundred Cods, and a couple of Hollybuts. All this while wee had betweene thirty and forty fathoms water: before one of the clocke in the afternoone we found the thip driven into one hundred and twenty fathoms. and fost blacke Ofe. Then Sir George Somers fent me word, that he would fet faile, and stand in for the River of Sagadahoe; whole directions I followed.

Before two of the clocke we fet faile, and furred away North-west by North, the wind South

the morning we heated the lead, and had no ground in one hundred and twentie fathoms. Then I hot off a Peece, but could not heare none answere from our Admirall: and the weather was so 40

thicke, that we could not fee a Cables length from our ship. Betweene nine and ten of the clock

we did thinke that we did heare a Peece of Ordnance to windward : which made me suppose our

Admirall had fet faile, and that it was a warning piece from him. So I fet fayle and stood close by

the wind, and kept an hollowing and a noile to try whether I could find him againe : the wind

was at South-west, and I stood away West North-west. From the fixe and twentieth, at two of

the clocke in the afternoone, to eight of the clocke at night I had fayled nine leagues North-weft.

The feuen and twentieth at noone I heaved the Lead, in one hundred and twenty fathoms, and

had no ground. Then I stirred away North-well, till foure of the clocke at night : then I heaved the Leadagaine one hundred and twenty fathoms, and had no ground. Then I tooke all my failes and lay at Hull and I had fayled feuen leagues North-west. The eight and twentieth, at se-

uen of the clocke in the morning I did found in one hundred and twenty fathoms, and had no

South-west, and the weather continued very foggy. About eight of the clocke wee tooke in all

our failes, and lay at Hull at that night. The feuen and twentieth, about feuen of the clocke in

Too.Cods taken, Th. Ship d sueth.

They ft and for the River of Sazadahoc.

V rie foggie weather.

The thick fog continueth.

ground. Then I tet fayle againe, and steered away North, and North by West. At noone I heaved in one hundred and twenty fathoms againe, and had no ground. So I steered on my course still, the wind shifted betweene South and South-west, and the fog continued. At source of the clocke in the afternoone, I heaved one hundred twenty fathoms againe, and had no ground : fo I flood on vntill eight of the clocke, by which time I had failed twelve leagues : then I heaved the Lead againe, and had blacke Oie, and one hundred thirty fine fathoms water. Then I tooke in all my fayles and lay at hull untill the nine and twentieth, at fine of the clocke in the morning. Then I fer faile againe, and steered away North, and North by Weit. At eight of the clocke I heared the Lead agame, and had blacke Ole in one hundred and thirty fathoms water. Betweene eleuen and twelve of the clocke it began to thunder, but the fogge continued not still. About two of the clocke in the afternoone, I went out with my Boat my lelfe and heaved the Lead, and had blacke Ofe in ninety fathoms water by which time I had failed fix leagues North by Weil more, Then I vooke in all my tayles fauing my Fore-course and Bonnet, and stood in with those failes onely.

About fixe of the clocke I founded agains, and then I had fixty five fathoms water. Affoote as I same abourd it cleared up, and then I fave a small Il and which bare North about two braues off: whereupon I flood in varilleight of the rlocke : And then I flood off againe varill two of the clocke in the morning the thirtieth day. Then Litood in againe, and about eight of the clocke I was faire aboord the Hand. Then I manned my. Boat and went on floare; where I found great fore of Seales : And I killed three Scales with my hanger. This Hand is not halfe a mile about, and A Rocke of nothing but a Rocke, which feemed to be very sich Marble from And a South South west Moon a micabout msketh a full Sea. About ten of the clocke I came abourd againe, with fome Wood tha I had in 1 of Seales. found voon the lland, for there had beene some folkes that had made fiers there, Then I ftood The malrocke on ouer to another Hand that did beare North off me about three leagues; this small rockie-Hand ly- Hand lieth in ouer to another hand that did beare worth on me about three leagues, cans that to want that year eth in forty foure degrees. About feuen of the clocke that dight I came to an anchor among many Many dands llands in eight fathoms water ; and vpon one of these llands I fitted my lelle with Wood and in eight fa-The third day of August , being fitted to put to Sex againe , I caused the Master of the shap to August 3.

open the boxe wherein my Committion was, to fee what directions I had; and for what place I was bound to shape my course. Then I tried whether there were any fish thereor not, and I found Reforal le reasonable good ftore there; to I stayed there fishing till the twelfrin or August and then finding fore of nit. that the fifthing did faile. I thought good to returne to the Iland where I bad killed the Scales, to fee whether I could get any store of them or not ; for I did find that they were very nourshing

on meate, and a great reliefe to my men, and that they would be very well faued with labeto keepe along time. But when I came thither I could not by any meanes cauch any. The fourteenth day Seale Rocke in at noone I polyrued the Sen, and found the Hand to be in torry three degrees, for y minutes. Then 43 deg, 47 mil I fhaned-mix source for Cape Ced, to fee whether I could get any felt them or not 210 by the fit. Hereturneth teenth that noone, I had failed thirty two leagues South-west, the wind for the most part was home; ibetweene Northiwell and North. From the fifteenth at moone, to the fixteenth at moone I ran twenty leagues South , she wind thisting betweene West and South-west. And then Founded and had exound in eighteene fathoms water, full of thele and peblettenes of divers colours : fome greene, and some ble wish, some like diamants, and some speckled: Theo i make in all by sayles, and let all my company to filling, and filled till eight by the clocke chat me had and finding but

little fift there, I let fayle agains, and by she enemmenthan noonel baddhyied ten leggues Wieft by North, the wind hifting betweene South and South well. Frominoone, till tixe at the clocke at night, foure leagues North-well, the wind finfting lienweene Well and South-well. Then it add and did blow to hard that I tooke in all my fayles, and lay at hull all that night, vntill nue of the clock the eighteenth day in the morning rand then I fee faile againe, and by noone I had failed foure leagues North-west, the wind betweene West and South-west. From the eighteenth at noone, to the nineteenth at noone ten leagues Well by Well, the wind shifting betweene South and South-west, and the weather very thick and fogey.

About feven of the clocke at night the fogge began to breake away, and the wind did finft Thick and foge westerly , and by midnight it was shifted to the North, and there it did blow very hard vitall gie was her. so the twenty at noone; but the weather was very cleare, and then by my obternation I found the thin to bee in the latitude of forty one degrees, forty toute minutes, and I had lailed twenty leagues South-well by Welf. From the nineteenth at noone, to the twentieth at noone : about two of the clocke in the afternoone T did lee an Hed-Tand, which did beare off me South-west, 41.4 g. 44 mis about four eleagues : fo I steered with it, taking it to bee Cape Cod; and by four of the clocke I was fallen among to many thoales, that it was hue of the clocke the next day in the morning before I could get cleere of them, at is a wary dangerous place to fall witholl atoutle theates freat Cape cot. the leaft ten leagues off from the Land ; and I had voon one of them but one fathem and an halfe the des water, and my Barke did draw-fenen foor. This Land lyerh Southwest fand North and Jank file Speales lie of from it South and South by Welt, and I a slong toward the North. At the Northwellby West Guards Fobserned the North-Starre, and found the ship cobe methods of torso tie-one degrees, fitte minutes, being then in the middle of the Sholdes and I did finde thirteene The midd' of

degrees on wellerly variation then likewife. Thus finding the place nor so be for my turne afform the Sholees in as I was cleare of their dangers. I shought it fit to retorns to laner Towne in Un with to the 41 des. so mis Lord De-lamarre, my Lord Court much and theresto assembly sommand to I shaped my courte we firth Vafor that place. And the one and twenteeth day by noone I had brought my felie South South-riation. well thirtie three leagues from this Care; and Had the wind thiting all this while betweene North and North-weith a and the weather very faire tod where: From the one and twentieth at noone, to the two and twentieth at noone, I ran thirtie leagues Sooth West by Walty and then by mine obtavation I found the thip to be in chirele minestegrees, that is fixe minutes want Flad 12. degrees of 62 twelve siegrees welterly inaration, and the wind feitring between North and North east, things

and the weather very farreand electe. From the two and twentieth at mone, to the three and twentieth at noone ; nine leagues Somets well by West ; and then by observation adid find the 11. degrees of Thip in thirtie nine degrees, twent ditarreminines, and I had eleven degrees of westerly variation, on and there did blow but very littlengend, and flutting betweene West and North, and the

1762

weather very faire and cleere. From the three and twentieth at noone to the foure and twentieth at noone eighteene leagues South-west , and then I found the shippe to be in there is he degrees tortie two minutes : and I had swelve degrees of Westerly Variation, and the wind thisting betweene North and West, and the weather very faire.

From the foure and twentieth at noone, to the fine and twentieth, at noone two and twentie leagues West by South, the wind shifting betweene North and East, And then I found the ship to bee in thirtie eight degrees fine and twentie minutes, and the fame Variation that I had before.

and the weather very faire. From the fine and twentieth at noone, to the fix and twentieth at noone, fine and twentie leagues Wefterly, the wind all fhifting betweene South and South-weft. And I had thirteene 10 degrees fine and twentie minutes of Westerly Variation. About fixe of the clocke at night the water was changed, and then I founded and had red fandie ground in twelve fathomes water a-

17. deg. 15.mi. bout twelve leagues from the shore. variation.

The feven and twentieth by day in the morning, I was faire aboord the shore, and by nine of the clocke I came to an Anchor in nine fathomes in a very great Bay, where I found great flore of people which were very kind, and promifed me that the next day in the morning they would bring me great ftore of Corne. But about nine of the clocke that night the winde shifted from South-west to East North-east. So I weighed presently, and shaped my course to Cape Charles. This Bay lyeth in Westerly thirtie leagues. And the Souther Cape of it lyeth South South-east and North North-well, and in thirtie eight degrees twentie minutes of Northerly Latitude. 20

Many shoales many of shoales, about pwelve leagues to the Southwester of Cape La Warre. So there I came to 12. leagues to an Anchor in three fathomes water, the winde beeing then all Eafterly, and rode there all that the South of Cape La Watte

Night.

The nine and twentieth in the morning I weighed againe, the wind being all Southerly, and turned vusill night, and then I came to an Anchor in lenen fathomes water in the offine to Sea. How the tyde didier there, or whether that there did runany current or not , I cannot tay; but I could find neither current nor tyde.

The eight and twentieth day, about foure of the clocke in the afternoone I fell among a great

The thirtieth in the morning I weighted againe, the wind still Southerly, and turned all that day, but got very little, fo at Euening I frood off to Sea vneill midnight, and then ftood in againe. 10 The one and thirtieth, about feuen of the clocke at night I came to an Anchor vnder Cape Charles in foure fathomes, and one third part water, and rode there all that night,

Cape Charles.

CHAP. VIII.

A Short Relation made by the Lord De-La-Warre, to the Lords and others of the Counfell of Virginia, touching bu unexpetted veturne home, and afterwards delinered to the general Affembly of the faid Company, at a Court holden the twentie fine of fune, 1611. Published by authoritie of the faid Counfell.

My Lords, &c.

Eing now by accident returned from my Charge at Virginia, contrary either to my ownedente or other mens expectations, who spare aut to centure mee, in point of dutie, and to discourse and quetion the reason, though they apprehend not the this casts of my returne, I am forced (out of a willingness to stay appendent ry man) codeliuer with your Lordships, and the rest of this Assembly, briefly 50 to the rest of the rest of this Assembly, briefly 50 to the rest of the rest (but truly) in what flate I have lived, ever fince my arrivall to the Colonie; what

hath beene the just occasion of my furdem departure thence; and in what termes I have left the fame: The rather becaused perceine, that fince my comming into England, fuch a coldnesse and irrefolution is bred, in many of the Adventurers, that some of them feeke to withdraw those payments, which they have subscribed cowards the Charge of the Plantation, and by which that Action must be supported and mayntained; making this my returne, the colour of their needlesse backwardneffeand vninte protraction. Which, that you may the bester understand , I must in-Some your Lordfhips, that presently after my arrivall in lames Towne. I was welcommed by a hot and violent Ague; which held me a time, will by the addice of my Phylition, Doctour Lan-Lord La Warter Pence Baban (by bloud letring) I was remoured as invay firth Letters by Sir Thomas Gates, I have 60 informed you. That Difeafe had not long left me, till (within three weekes af er I had gotten a little ftrengeh) I beganto bediffempered with other grieunus fickneifes, which fuccefficely and feuerally affailed meet for befules a relapse into the former Dilease, which with much more violence held me more third a monetty, and brought me to great weaknesse, the Flux surprized mee,

and kept me many dayes; then the Crampe affaulted my weake bodie, with ftrong paines; and afrerwards the Goot (with which I had heeretofore beene fometime troubled) afflicted me in fuch fort, that making my bodie through weaknesse vnable to stirre, or to vie any manner of exercise, drew vpon me the Diseale called the Scurny; which though in others it be a ficknesse of slothfalnesse, yet was in me an effect of weaknesse, which never left mee, till I was voon the point to

These severall Maladies and Calamities, I am the more desirous to particularise voto your Lordthinnes (although they were too notorious to the whole Colonie) left any man fhould mildeeme that under the generall name and common excuse of ticknesse, I went about to cloke either sloth. on or feare, or any other bife apprehension, vinworthy the high and Monorable Charge, which you

had entrusted to my Fidelitie.

In these extremities I resolved to consult my friends, Who finding Nature spent in mee. and my body almost confumed, my paines likewise daily encreasing) gaue me adulte to prefer a hopefull recodery, before an affured ruine, which must necessarily have ensued, had I lived, but twentie dayes longer in Freinia: wanting at that inflant, both food and Phylicke, fit to remedy fuch extraordinary Dicales, and reftore that strength fo desperately decayed.

Whereupon, after a long confiltation held, I refolued by generall confent and perswafion, to fhip my felfe for Menis, an Illand in the West Indies, famous for wholfesome Bathes, there to try what helpe the Heauenly Prouidence would affoord mee, by the benefit of the hot Bath: an But God, who guideth all things; according to his good will and pleafure, fo provided, that after we had fayled an hundred Leagues, we met with Southerly windes which forced mee to change my purpole (my bodie being altogether vnable to endure the tediousnesse of a long Voyage) and fo feere my course for the Westerne Hands, which I no sooner recoursed, then I found helpe for my health, and my ficknesse asswaged, by meanes of fresh Diet, and especially of Orenges and Orenges and Lemons, an vindoubted remedy and medicine for that Difease, which lastly, and so long, had at Lemons good flicted me : which eafe as foone as I found, I refolued (although my body remayned itill feeble remode for and weake, to returne backe to my charge in Fremia againe, but I was aduised not to hazard my the Scurue. felfe before I had perfectly recouered my thrength, which by counfell I was perfwaded to feeke in the naturall Ayre of my Countrey, and so I came for England. In which Accident , I doubt not but men of reason, and of judgement will imagine, there would more danger and prejudice

haue happened by my death there, then I hope can doe by my returne.

In the next place, I am to give account in what estate I left the Colonie for government in my absence. It may please your Lordships therefore to understand, that upon my departure thence, I made choice of Captaine George Percie (a Gentleman of honour and refolution, and of no small experience in that place, to remayne Deputie Gouernour, vntill the comming of the Marshall rill the com-Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arruall of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arruall of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arruall of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arruall of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arruall of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arrual of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arrual of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arrual of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arrual of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arrual of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined. mas Gates, according to the intent and order of your Lordinips, and the Councell here.

The number of men I left there, were vpward of two hundred, the most in health, and pro- 200 let there. nided of at least ten moneths victuals, in their Store-house (which is daily iffued voto them) bechildes other helps in the Countrey, lately found out by Captaine Argell by trading with pettie Trade by Capa Kings in those parts, who for a small returne of a piece of Iron, Copper, &c. have consented to dr. 34. trucke great quantities of Corne, and willingly imbrace the intercourse of Traffique, shewing

vnto our people certaine fignes of amitie and affection. And for the better strengthening and securing of the Colonie, in the time of my weaknesse there. I tooke order for the building of three leuerall Forts, two of which are leated neere Point Three Forts. Comfort, to which adiovneth a large circuit of ground, open, and fit for Corne : the third Fort is at the Falls, upon an Iland invironed also with Corne ground. These are not all manned, for I wanted the commoditie of Boats, having but two, and one Barge, in all the Countrey, which hath beene cause that our fishing hath beene (in some fort) hindered for want of those prouisions, which eafily will be remedied when we can gaine fufficient men to bee imployed about those bu-

finelles, which in Virginia I found not : but fince meeting with Sir Thomas Gates at the Cowes Sir T. Gates his neere Portsmouth, (to whom I gaue a particular account of all my proceedings, and of the pre- second voyage fent estate of the Colonie as I left it) I understood those wants are supplyed in his Fleet.

The Country is wonderfull fertile and very rich, and makes good what some heretofore hath beene reported of it, the Cattell alreadie there, are much encreased, and thrive exceedingly with the pasture of that Countrie: The Kine all this last Winter, though the ground was covered most with Snow, and the Seafon sharpe, lived without other feeding then the grasse they found, with which they profpered well, and many of them readie to fall with Calue: Milke beeing a great nourithment and refreshing to our people, seruing also (in occasion) as well for Physicke as for 60 food, fo that it is no way to be doubted, but when it shall please God that Sir Thomas Dale, and roo. Kine and

Sir Thomas Gates, shall arrive in Virginia, with their extraordinary supply of one hundred Kine, 200. Swine and two hundred Swine, befides flere of all manner of other provisions for the fuffenance and fent. maintenance of the Colonie, there will appeare that successe in the Action as shall give no man sause of distruit that hath alreadie aduentured, but encourage euery good minde to further so

Dale Mar hoil

Hhhhhhhh

worthy a worke, as will redound both to the glory of God, to the credit of our Nation, and to the comfort of all those that have beene Instruments in the furthering of it.

1761

The lat Discourry, during my continual licknesse, was by Captaine Argoll, who hath found a Trade with Patamack (a King as great as Pombatan, who ftill remaynes our Enemie, though not able to doe vs hurt.) This is in a goodly River called Patomack, upon the borders whereof there are growne the goodlieft Trees for Mafts, that may bee found elie-where in the World : Hemps better then English: growing wild in abundance : Mynes of Antimonie and Lead.

There is also found without our Bay to the Northward an excellent fishing Banke for Cod and Ling, as good as can be eaten, and of a kind that will keepe a whole yeere in fhips hold, with little care; a triall whereof I now have brought over with me. Other Ilands there are voon one 10 Coasts, that doe promife rich Merchandize, and will further exceedingly the establishing of the Plantation, by supply of many helpes, and will speedily affoord a returne of many worthy com-

I have left much ground in part manured to receive Corne, having caused it the last Winter to be fowed for Roots, with which our people were greatly relegied. There are many Vines planted in divers places, and doe profper well, there is no want of any thing, if the action can be vnheld with constancie and refolution.

Larly, concerning my felte and my course, though the World may imagine that this Comptrie and Climate, will (by that which I have fuffered beyond any other of that Plantation) ill agree with the flate of my bodie, yet I am fo farre from thrinking or giving over this honourable 10 Enterprize, as that I am willing and readie to lay all that I am worth vpon the aduenture of the Action, rather then so Honourable a Worke should faile, and to returne with all the convenient expedition I may, beleeching your Lordhips and the reft, not onely to excuse my former wants. happened by the Almightie Hand : but to fecond my Refolutions with your friendly indepours: that both the Scate may receive Honour, your felues Profit, and I tuture Comfort, by beeing imployed (though but as a weake Instrument) in so great an Action.

And thus having plainly, truly, and briefly delivered the cause of my returne, with the state of our affaires, as we now stand, I hope every worthy and indifferent hearer, will by comparing my present resolution of returne, with the necessitie of my comming home, rest satisfied with this true and short Declaration.

CHAP. IX.

A Letter of Sir Samuell Argoll touching his Voyage to Virgima, and Actions there : Written to Master Nicholas Hames. June 1612.



Aster Hawes, within senen weekes after my departure from the Coast of England, being the three and twentieth of Iuly, 1612. I fell with the Coast of Virginia, in the La- 40 tituae of fortie degrees. The twelfth of September, with all my men in good health, the number being fixtie two, and all my victuals very well conditioned : my course being fiftie leagues to the Northward of the Azores. The seventeenth, I arrived at Point Comtort, where by the discreet and provident government of Sir Thomas Gates, and

oreat paines and bazard of Sir Thomas Dale , I found both the Countrey and people in farre better estate there, then the report was by Juch as came home in Sir Robert Manshelds Ship. From my arrinal until the first of Nonember, I fpont my time in belging to repaire such ships and Boats, as I found beere decayed for lacke of Pitch and Tarre : and in pursuing the Indians with Sir Thomas Dale, for their Corne, of which we got some quantitie, which we were like to have bought very deerely: for by the Providence of God, Sir Thomas Dale escaped killing very narrowly. Then about the beginning of No- 50 uember, by the addice of Sir Thomas Gates, I carried Sir Thomas Dale to Sir Thomas Smiths I. land, to have his opinion of the inhabiting of it: who, after three dayes march in discovering it, apprecied very well of the place : and so much the better, because we found abundance of fish there, and very great Cod, which we caught in fine fathome water, of which we are in hope to get a great quantitie this Summer, for the reliefe of our men, as also to find lafe passage for Boats and Barges thither, by a cut out of the bottome of our Bay, into the De la Watte Bay. For which fifting and better Discourry, I have my fing readie, with my Company in as good health, as at my arrivall, and as they have continued over fixee : for which, God be glorified, to whom we give daily thanker, for the continuance of his mercy.

After my returne from Sir Thomas Smiths Hand, I fitted my thip to fetch Corne from Patowomeck, by trading with the Indians, and fo fet Suyle from Point Comfort the first of December and being 60 entred into Penbrooke River, I met with the King of Pastancie a bunting, who went prefectly about with me, feeming to be very glad of my comming, and told me that all the Indians there were my very great friends, and that they had good flore of Corne for mee , which they had provided the seers before, which we found to be true. Then I carried my lappresently before his Towne, and there last eve a fout

CHAP.O. Felling of timber. Great quantitie of Corne. Good Harbour

shallon, to get the Corne aboord withall, which being done, and having concluded a peace with divers other Indian Lords, and likewife given and taken * Hoftages: I hasted to lames Towne, beeing the first of * Can Web. January, and arrived as Point Comfort the first of February.

In this Voyage I got 1100, bulbels of Corne, which I delinered into the senerall Store bouses, accor. Rob. Searches & ding unto the direction of Sir T. Gates : besides the quantuie of 300. busbels, refermed for mine Compa. INO Boyes. my. As some I had valaden this Corne, I set my men to the felling of Timber, for the building of a Fre. 1100 buthels of Corne. gat, which I left halfe finished in the hands of the Carpenters at Point Comfort, the 19. of March: The second and returned my felfe with the hip into Pembrook Riner, and fo discovered to the head of it, which is a voyage to Pinbout 6s. leagues into the Land, and nauigable for any flip. And then marching into the Countrie, I found brooke River, 10 great store of Cattle as big as Kine, of which, the Indians that were my guides, killed a couple which wee Great fore of

found to be very good and wholfome meate, and are very easie to be killed, in regard they are beauty firm, Oxen in Praand not fo wild as other beafts of the Wilderneffe. In this cournie I libewife found a Myne, of which I brooke. have fent a triall into England : and likewife a ftrange kind of Earth , the vertee whereof I know not : River. but the Indians eate it for Phylicke, alleaging that it cureth the sicknesse and paine of the belly. I then ife A Myne. found a kind of mater is using out of the Earth, which bath a tart taste much like vuto Allum-water, it is Earth. good and wholfome: for my men did drinke much of it, and never found it otherwife. I alfo found an earth A water that the a Gumme, white and cleere; another fort red like Terra figillata; another very white, and of fo light hith thate

a substance, that being cast into the water, it swimmeth.

Whilst I was in this businesse, I was told by certaine Indians, my friends, that the Greas Powhatans Summe. 20 Danehter Pokahuntis was with the great King Patowo neck, whether I presently repaired, resolving to Ared Earth policife my felfe of ber by any firatagem that I could vie, for the ransoming of fo many English men as like term felle were prisoners with Powhatan ; as also to get such armes and tooles, as bee, and other Indians had got late. by murther and flealing from others of our Nation, with some quantitie of Carne, for the Colonies re. The great King by matther analiseum from overs of the Powne, I manned my Boate and fent on Source, for the Ensign Swift.

Liefe. So soone as I came to an anchor before the Towne, I manned my Boate and fent on Source, for the Ensign Swift. King of Pastancy and Ensigne Swift (whom I had left as a pledge of our love and truce, the Voyage before) who presently came and brought my pledge with him : whom after I had received , I brate the matter to this King, and told him, that if he did not betray Pokohuntis into my hands; wee would be no longer brothers nor friends. Hee alleaged, that if hee Should undertake this businesse, then Powhatan would make warres upon him and his people; but upon my promife, that I would in ne with him against

30 bim, hee repaired presently to bis brother, the great King of Patowomeck, who being made acquainted with the matter, called his Counsell together: and after some few boures deliberation, concluded rather to deliner her incomy bands, then lose my friendship : so presently, he betrayed her into my Boat, wherein I recabunti tacarried her abourd my flip. This done, an Indian was dispatched to Powhatan, to let him know that I had ken. taken his Daughter : and if he would fend home the Englishmen (whom he deteined in Stanerie, with such armes and tooles, as the Indians had gotten, and floine) and also a great quantitie of Corne, that then, he Should have his daughter restored, otherwise not. This newes much grieved this great King, yet, without delay, he returned the messenger with this answer. That he desired me to we his Danghter well, and bring my Ship into his Riner, and there he would give mee my demands; which being performed, I Should deliner

bom his Daughter, and we should be friends.

Having received this answere, I presently departed from Patowomeck, being the 13. of Aprill, and reparred with all freed to Sir T. Gates, to know of bim upon what condition he would conclude this peace, and what he would demand : to whom I also delinered my prisoner, towards whose ransome within few dages, this King (ent home fewen of our men, who feemed to be very tog full for that they were freed from. 7, men freec, the flauery and feare of cruell murther, which they daily before lined in. They brought also three pieces, one broad Axe, and a long Whip-faw, and one Canow of Corne. I beeing quit of my prisoner went forward with the Frigat which I had left at Point Comfort, and finished her.

Thus having put my flip in hand to be fitted for an intended fishing Varage. I left that businesse to be followed by my Master with a ginge of men, and my Lieutenant fortifled on shoare with another ginge to felltimber, and cleane plankes to build a fifting Boat; my Enfigne with another ginge was imployed in

50 the Frigat, for getting of fish at Cape Charles, and transporting it to Henries Towne for the reliefe of such men as were there : and my selfe with a fourth ginge departed out of the River in my shallop, the first of May, for to discourr the East side of our Bay, which I found to have many small Rivers in it, and very courty, good harbours for Boats and Barges, but not for thips of any great burthen; and allo creat fiore of Inbabitants, who feemed very defirous of ou lone, and fo much the rather, because they had received good reports from the Indians of Pembrock River, of our courteous vlace of them, whom I found trading with me for Corne, whereof they had oreat store. We also discovered a multunde of Hands bearing good Medow ground, and as I thinke, Salt might eafily be made there, if there were any ponds digged, for that I found Salt kerned where the water had ouer-flowne in certaine places. Here is also great flore of fish, both shel-fish and other. So basing discourred along the shore some fortie leagues Northward, I returned

againe to my loip, the twelfth of May, and hasted forward my businesse left in hand at my departure: and May 12. 1613 fitted up my (lip, and built my fishing Boate, and made readie to take the first opportunitie of the wind for my filling Voyage, of which I beleech God of bis mercy to bleffe us.

Hhhhhhhh 2

CHAP.

Sir T. Gates. Sir T. Dale.

The Deliue -Yance. This was in the Rouge of Nanfamund. His Vovage to Sir T. Smiles Hand,

Dela War Bay.

His firft Vovage to Patomomee and Penbrooke Riner. Ayapa Jus the Wernance of Paftancie,

CHAP.10. R. Nanfamund. Sir Thomas Gates arrivall. Henrico built.

Notes of Virginian Affaires in the gonernment of Sir THOMAS DALE and of Sir THOMAS GATES till Anno 1614. Taken out of Ma. fler RALPH HAMOR (Secretary to the Colome) his Booke.

Euery mans care is no mans Propriepameftaker.

threefcore persons therein, and those scarceable to go ealone, of wel-nigh fix hundred, nor full ten monethes before. The reason hereof E found the Colonie at our arrivall there, from the Bermudas, not living about when our people were fed out of the common store, and laboured joyntly in the manuring of the ground, and planting Corne, glad was that man that could flip

Sir Thom. Dales

from inslabour ; nay, the most honest of them in a generall businesse, would not take so much faithfull and true paines, in a weeke, as now hee will doe in a day, neither cared they for the increate, prefuming that howfoeuer their hatuest prospered, the generall stere must maintavne them. By which meanes we resped not fo much Corne from the labours of thirtie men, as three men haue done for themselues. To preuent which mitchiefe hereafter Sir Thomas Dale hath tamen naue done for themselves the whole Colonie, by which meanes, the generall flere (appareil onely excepted) shall not bee charged with any thing : and this it is, here hath allotted to every man in the Colonie, three English Acres of cleere Corne ground, which every man is to mature and tend, being in the nature of Farmers (the Bermuda vindertakers onely excepted) and they are not called voto any feruice or labour belonging to the Colonie, more then one moneth in the yeere, which shall neither be in Seed time, or in Haruest, for which, doing no other durie to the Colonie, they are yearely to pay into the store two barrels and a halfe of Corne : there to be referued to keepe new men, which shall bee fent ouer , the first yeere after their arrivall : and even by this meanes I dare fay, our store will bee bountifully furnished, to maintayne three or source hundred men, whenfoeuer they shall be fept thither to vs. Concerning the vidertaking of the Bermuda Citie, a bufineffe of greatest hope, euer begunne 30

Bermuda Citica

at a time.

in our Territories there, their Patent, doth apparantly demonstrate, upon what termes and conditions they voluntarily haue undertaken that imployment. The Land is stored with plentie and varietie of wild Beafts, Lions, Beares, Deere of all forts, onely differing from ours in their o: 4. Fawnes increase, having vitall, three or foure Fawnes at a time, none that I have seene or heard off vnder two: the reason whereof some of our people ascribe to the vertue of scme grasse or herbe which they eate, because our Goates oftentines bring forth three, and most of them two: for my part I rather impute their fecundire to the Prouidence of God, who for every mouth provideth meate. and if this moreafe were not, the Naturals would affuredly starue; for of the Deere (they kill as doe we Beefes in England) all the yeere long, neither sparing young nor olde, no not the Does readie to fawne, nor the young Fawnes, if but two dayes olde) Beauers, Otters, Foxes, Racou- 40 nes, almost as bigge as a Foxe, as good meate as a Lambe, Hares, wild Cats, Muske Rats, Squirrels flying, and other of three or foue forts, Apossumes of the bignesse and likenesse of a P.gge of a moneth old, a beaft of as strange incredible nature, she hath commonly leuen young ones, sometimes more and sometimes lesse, which at her pleasure till they be a moneth old or more shee tateth up into her belly, and purteth forth againe without hurt to her felfe or them. Of each of thefe beafts, the Lion excepted, my felle haue many times eaten, and can testifie that they are

Apossumes.

not onely taftefull, but also wholfome and nourishing food. There are fowle of divers forts, Eagles wild Turkeyes much bigger then our English Cranes, Herons white and ruffet Hawkes, wilde Pidgeons (in Winter beyond number or imagination, my selfe have feene three or foure houres together flockes in the Aire, fo thicke that even they 50 haue shadowed the Skie from vs) Turkeyes, Buzzards , Partridge , Snipes, Owles, Swannes, tore in Ouieds. Geele, Brants, Ducke and Mallard, Droeis, Shel-drakes, Cormorants, Teale, Widgeon, Curtore in Ouieds. lewes, Puits, beildes other small birds, as Black-birds, Heige-Sparrowes, Oxe-eyes, Wood-pec-

kers, and in Winter about Christmasse many flockes of Parakertoths. For fish, the Rivers are plentifully stored, with Sturgeon, Porpasse, Base, Rockfish, Carpe, Shad, A Frigusla- Herring, Ele, Cathill, Perch, Flat-fish, Trout, Sheepes-head, Drummers, Iarlish, Creviles, Crabbes, Oyfters and divers other kindes, of all which my felfe hath feene great quantitie taken, especially the last Summer at Smiths lland, at one hale a Fingots lading of Sturgion, Bale and other great fish in Captaine Argals Saine : and even at the very place which is not above fifteene miles trom Point. Comfort, if we had beene furnished with falt, to have faued it, wee might have taken 60

as much fish as would have served vs that whole yeere. To goe yet a little further, I my felfe know no one Countrey yeelding without Art or indufiry fo many fruits; Grapes Strawberries, Mulberries, Maricocks, of fallion of a Lemmon, whole Faireflowres, bloffome may admit comparison with our most delightsome and beautifull Flowers, and the fruit

exceeding pleafant and taffuil: Chefine-trees towardes the Falls as many as Oakes, and as fertill many goodly Groues of Chincomentrees, with a buske like vnto a Cheinut, raw or boiled. Interious and heartie meat : Walnuts of three or foure forts, whereof there might bee yeerely made orest quantitie of Oyles, as vicifull and good as that of Oliues: Some Filberds haue I feene, Crabs Crabs. great store, leffe, but not to fower as ours, which grafted with the Siens of English Apple-trees. without question would beare very good fruit.

In May, 1611. Sir Thomas Dale, with a prosperous passage, not full eight weekes arrived there Sir The. Dales with him about three hundred people, fuch as for the present speed and dispatch could then bee going to Virgi prouided, of worse condition then those formerly there, who I forrow to speake it, were not fo mis jair tit. a

proudent, though once before bitten with hunger and penury, as to put Corne into the ground for their Winters bread, but trufted to the store, then furnished but with eight months prouision. His first care therefore was to imploy all hands about fetting of Corne at the two Forts. feated wretches. voon Kecongbian , Henry and Charles , whereby the fealon then not fully past, though about the His care and end of May, we had there an indifferent Crop of good Corne.

This purinelle taken order for , and the care and truth of it committed to his under Officers : to lames Towns hee haitened, where the most company were, and their daily and vitall workes, bowling in the fireets, these he imployed about necessary workes, as felling of Timber, repairing their houses ready to fall upon their heads, and prouiding Pailes, Posts and Railes, to impaile his purposed new Towne, which by reason of his ignorance in those parts, but newly arrived there, to he had not resolved where to seat. For his better knowledge therefore of those parts, himselfe with an hundreth men spent some time in the discourry, first of Navlamund River, which in de- R Nanlamund foight of the Indians, then our enemies, hee discouered to the Head, after that, our owne River to Wife for the fpight of the Indians, then our enemies, nee on concrete to the read, after that, but the Relation the Falls, where vponaligh Land, inuitoned with the maine Riggs, fome fixteene or twentie forbuild conmiles from the Head or the Falls, neere to an Indian Towne called Arfabattocke, hee reloked to plant his new Towne, and fo did, whereof in his due place I shall make a briefe relation.

It was no meane trouble to him, to reduce his people to timely to good order, being of foill a condition as may well witnesse his seuere and strict imprinted booke of Articles , then needfull with all feueritie and extremitie to bee executed, now much mitigated ; for more deferued death in those dayes, then doe now the least punishment, so ag if the law should not have restrained by execution, I fee not how the veter subursion and ruine of the Colory should have beene prevented, witnelle Webbes and Prifes defigne in the first yeere, fince that Abbets, and others more dand wolleiter.

gerous then the former, and even in this Summer, Coles and Kuchins Plot, with three more, bending their course towards the Southward, to a Spanish plantation reported to be there, who had travelled (it being now a time of peace) fome five dates sourney to Ocanaboen, there cut off by sertaine Indians, hired by vs to hunt them home to receive their delerts.

Thus much obuiously I proceed in his indevours, varill Sir Thomas Gates his happy arrivall, which was onely in preparing Timber, Pales, Polits, and Railes for the prefent impailing this new Towne to fecure himselfe, and men from the malice and weatherie of the Indian, in the midst and heart of whom he was resolved to set downer. But before he could make himselie readie for that bufineffe, Sir Thomas Gates happily arrived about the focond of August, with fixe good Ships, men, Arrivallof Sir

prouisions and cattle. The worthies being met after falutation and welcome given and received, Sir Thomas Dale acquainted Sir Thomas Gates, both with fuch bufineffes as he had affected fince his arrivall, and alfo of his resolution to build a new Towne at the Fales: which designe and purpose of his, Sir Thomas Gates, then principall Gouernour in Virginia, well approuing, furnished him with the huntin and fiftie men, fuch as himselfe made choice of, and in the beginning of September, to 11 her to from lames Towne, and in a day and a halfe landed at a place where hee purposed to pack and build, where hee had beene ten dates before hee had verie frongly impaled feuen ball Acte of ground for a Towne . which in honour of the Noble Prince Heary (of ever happen and bleffe to memory, whose Royall heart was strongly affected to that action) hee called by the name of Henrico. In foure moneths space, he had made Henrico much better, and of more worth then all the worke ever fince the Colony began, therein done. I should bee too ted ous if I should give yo the account of enery daies I bour, which therefore I purpofely omit, and will onely deferibe the Towne, is the very flate and perfection which I left it and first for the situation, it stands whom a necke of a very high Land, three parts thereof inuironed with the maine River, and cut out between two Rivers with a strong Pale, which maketh the neck of Landan Hand. There are in this by Sir T. Dale.

honfes, and fuch like; there are also, as ornaments belonging to this Towne, vpon the Verge of this River, fine faire Block-houtes, or Commanders, wherein live the honester lore of reople, as in Farmes in England, and there keepe continuall centinell for the Townes fecuritie, and about two miles from the Towne into the Main, a Pale of two miles in length cut offer from River to River, guarded likewife with feusrall Commanders, with great quantitie of Corne ground impage led, fufficient if there were no more in the Colony secured, to maintaine with but cake manuring, Habbahh 3

Town three dreets of well framed houses, a handsome Church & the foundation of a more stately

one laid of Brick, in length an hundred foot, and fiftie foot wide, befides Store-houses, Watch-

imploiment,

Tho. Gates, with

Henrico buile

and husbandry, more men, then I suppose will be addressed thither (the more is the pittie) these

For the further enlargement yet of this Towne, on the other fide of the River, by impaline likewife : for we make no other fence, is fecured to our vie, especially for our hogges to feed in about twelle English miles of ground, by name, Hope in Faith, Coxen-Dale, secured by five Fortscalled Charity Fort, Mount Malado, a Retreat or Gueft-house for ficke people, a high feate, and wholiome ayre, Elizabeth Fort, and Fort Patience: and here hath Master Whitacres chosen his Parfonage, or Church-land, some hundred Acres impaled, and a faire framed Parsonage house built thereupon, called Rocke Hall. Of this Towne, and all the Forts thereunto belonging, hath Captaine James Danis the principall Command and Gouernment.

guished.

Virginia is

brought to

fuch an a-

him or others

in that kind.

I proceed to our next and most hopefull habitation, whether wee respect commoditie or secu-Bermada a city. ritie (which we principally ayme at) against forraine designes and inuasion, I meane the Bermuda Citie, begun about Christmasse last, which because it is the neerest adiopning to Henrico. though the last vindertaken, I hold it pertinent to handle in the next place. This Towne, or Plantation is feated by Land, fome fine miles from Hemice, by water fourteene, being the veere before the habitation of the Appamatucks, to revenge the treacherous injurie of those people done vnto vs, taken from them, belides all their Corne, the former before without the loffe of amy, faue onely force few of those Indians (pretending our hurt) at what time Sir Thomas Dale. being himfelfe vpon that feruice, and duely confidering how commodious a habitation and feate sunareds set out and diffine it might be for vs, tooke resolution to possesse and plant it, and at that very instant, gaue it the 20 name of the new Bermudas, whereunto he hath laid out, and annexed to bee belonging to the Freedome, and Corporation for ener, many miles of Champion, and Wood-land, in feurrall Hundreds, as the upper and nether Hundreds, Roch-dale Hundred, West: Sherly Hundred. French di planand Digges his Hundred.

Captaine Argalls Northward discourries towardes Sacadebec, and beyond to Port Rosall. Long difcourfes followed in the Authoribut Santia Crux, and thereabout may not bee concealed : In which his aduentures, if he had brought home no commoditie to the Colony (which yet he did very much, both of apparell, victualls. and many other necessaries) the honour which he hath done vnto our Nation, by displanting the French, there beginning to feat and fortifie within our limits, and taking of their Ship & Pinnace, which he brought to Iame: Towne, would have been reward enough for his paines, and will ever 30 that I have no

heart to follow speake loud his honour, and approved valour.

CHAP. XI

A Letter of Sir THOMAS DALE, and another of Master WHITAKERS, from James Towne in Virginia, lune 18. 1614. And a piece of a Tractate, written by the faid Mafter WHITAKERS from Virginia the yeere before.

> To the R. and my most esteemed friend, M.D. M. at his house at F. Ch. in London.



John Reutrend Sir, by Sir Thomas Gates I wrote unto you, of fuch occasions as then prefenced themselves, and now agains by this worthy Gentleman Captaine Argall I falute you : for such is the reserved regard I have of you, as I cannot omst any occasion to expresse the function affection I beare you. You have over given mee encouragements to per seuro in this Religious Wartare, until your last Letters; not for that you are now less well assected thereunto : but because you see the Action to be in danger of their non-50

performances who undertooks the businesse. I have undertaken, and have as faithfully, and with all my might indeanoured the profecution with all alacritie, as God that knoweth the heart can beare merecord, what recompence, or what rewards, by whom, or when I know not where to expect; but from him in whole Vineward I labour, whose Church with greedy appetite I defire to erect. My glarious Mafter is gone, that would have ennamelled with bie favours the labors I undertake, for Gods cause, and his immortall konome. Hee was the Great Captaine of our Israel, the hope to have builded up this beauent, new Icarullem he interred (I thinke) the whole frame of this bufinesse, fell into his grave : for most mensionward (at least feeming fo) desires are quenched, and Virginia stands in desperate bazard. Tou there dos your duties, I will no way omit mine, the time I promised to labour, is expired : it is not a yoke of Oxen bath drawne mee from this feaft : it is not the marriage of a wife makes me hall bome, though that fallat 63 gine mee an appetite to canse me returne. But I have more care of the Stock, then to set upon a Dye, and rather put my lefe to the curtefic of noble and worthy censures, then ruine this Worke; and have a Tury (nay 4 million) of foule mouthed detractors, fcan upon my endeanours, the ends whereof they cannot dimeinto. You Shall briefly understand what bath betide since my last, and how ne new stand, and are

likely to grow to perfection, if wee be not altogether neglected, my ftay grounded upon such reason. as had I now returned, it would have hazarded the ruine of all.

Sir Thomas Gates basing imbarked bimfelfe for England, I put my felfe into Captaine Argalls flip, with a bundred and fiftie men in my frigot, and other boats went unto Pamaunkie River, where Powina- Sir T. Dales tan hath his residence, and can in two or three dayes, draw a thousand men together; with me I carried joutny to Powhis danshier, who had beene long prisoner with us, it was a day or two before wee heard of them: At batan: Counlength they demanded why wee came; I gave for answere, that I came to bring him his daughter, conditionally he would (as bath beene agreed upon for her ransome) render all the Armes, Tooles, Swords, and men that bad run away, and to give me a ship full of Corne, for the wrong bee bad done unto us: if they the particular 10 would doe this, wee would be friends, if not burne all. They demanded time to fend to their King; I affen- circumstances ted, I taking, they receising two pledges, to carry my meffage to Pownatan. All night my two men lay not farre from the water fide about noone the next day they told them the great King was three daies iournes off that Opechankane was hard by to whom they would have had them deliner their message, saying, M. Hanot. That what hee agreed upon and did, the great King would confirme. This Opocankano is brother to Powhatan, and is his and their chiefe Captaine : and one that can as foone (if not fooner) as Powhatan com nand the men. But my men refused to doe my message unto any saue Powhatan, so they were brought backe, and I (ent theirs to them; they told me that they would fetch Simons to me, who had thrice plaid the runnagate, whose lyes and villany much hindred our trade for Corne: But they delayed vs. so as we went a hore they fact at us, we were not behinde hand with them, killed some, hurt others, marched into 20 the Land, burnt their bouses, tooke their Corne, and quartered all night ashoare.

The next day we went further up the River, they digged us and called to know whither we went; wee answered. To burne all, if they would not doe as we demanded, and had beene acreed voon. They would they (aid, bring all the next day fo we forbare all hostilitie, went ashoure, their men in good numbers commine amonest ve but we were very cantious and flood to our Armes. The Kings daughter went alboare, Pacabintus bebut would not talke to any of them, Carce to them of the best fort, and to them onely, that if her father haubur and had loved her, he would not value her leffe then old Swords, Peeces, or Axes: wherefore shee would fill tepotte dwell with the English men, who loued ber, At last came one from Pow hatan, who told vs, that Simons was run away, to Nonlow haicond, which was a truth, as afterwards appeared, but that the other Englift man was dead that proued a lie (for fince M. Hamor, whom I employed to Powhatan brought him to mee) our Peeces, Swords, and Tooles within fificene dayes, should be sent to lames Towne, with some Corne, and that his daughter should be my child, and ener dwell with mee, defiring to be ener friends, and named such of his people, and neighbour Kings, as hee defined to be included, and have the benefit of the peace, promifing if any of our men came to hime, without lease from mee, he would fend them backe : and that if any of his men ft ale from us, or killed our cattell, hee would fend them to us to bee punished as wee thought fit, With the fe conditions were returned, and within the time limited, part of our Armes were fent, and twentie men with Corne, and promifed more, which he hath alfo fent. Opachankano defired I Orachankana would call bim frund, and that be might call me so, saying, Hee was a great Captaine, and did always now their fight: that I was also a great Captaine, and therefore be loued mee; and that my friends should bee his king,& worked friends. So the bargaine was made, and enery eight or ten dayes, I have me fages and prefents from him.

40 with many appearances that he much desireth to continue friendship. Now may you indee Sir, if the God of Battailes had not a belging hand in this, that having our Swords drawne, killing their men, burning their boufes, and taking their corne : yet they tendred us peace. and strine with all alacretie to keepe us in good opinion of them; by which many benefits arise unto us. First, part of our Armes, diffracefully lost long agoe (kept by the Sauages as Monuments and Trophies of our frames) redelinered fome repaire to our Honor, Our catellto mercafe without dancer of de-Broying our men at libertie to hunt freely for Veni fou, to fifb, to doe any thing elfe, or goe any whither without danger , to follow the bushanding of our corne securely , whereof wee have abone fine hundred Acres (et. and God be praised, in more forwardnesse then any of the Indians, that I have seene or heard of this yeares, Roots and Hearbs we have abundance; all doubt of want is by Gods bleffing quite vanished, and much plentie expected. And which is not the least materiall, wee may by this peace come to discourse the Countrey better, both by our owne trauells, and by the relation of the Sanages, as we grow in familiaria

Powhatans daughter I caused to be carefully instructed in Christian Religion, who after she had made Some good progresse therein, renounced publikely her Countrey Idolatry, openly confessed her Christan Pocahantas

Faith, was, as shee desired, haptised, and is since married to an English Gentleman of good waderslan. baptised (80 thing (as b) his Letter unto me, containing the reasons of his marriage of her you may perceine) another have heard the knot to binde this peace the stronger. Her Father and friends gave approbation to it, and her Vncle gave was properly her to him in the Church : free lines civilly and louingly with him, and I trust will increase in goodnesse, as named) at helt the knowledge of God increaseth in ber. Shee will goe into England with mee, and were it but the gaining called Rebecca; 60 of this one foule, I will thinke my time, toile, and prefent flay well spent.

Since this accident, the Governours and people of Checkahomanies, who are fine hundred Bow-men, and better, a front and warlshe Nation, have made meanes to have us come unto them, and conclude a peace, where all the Governours would meet me. They having thus three or foure times importuned me, I refolued to goe; fo having Captaine Argall, with fiftie men in my Frigot and Barge I went thither : Cap-

felues be called. The parti-

letter to the

Committees

foure of the

put all toge-

ther, may no

ery either for

commodities.

or goodness

Mafter Alexan-

of foile.

same Arzall with forty men landed, I kept abourd for some reasons. Vpon the meeting they told Captaine Argall they had longed to be friends, that they had no being, but eight great men, who gonerned them. He told them that we came to be friends, asked them if they would have King lames to be their King, and whether they would be his men? They after some conference betweene themselves, seemed willing of both demanding if we would fight against their enemies; he told them that if any didthem minry, they should lend me word, and I would agree them, or if their adversaries would not, then I would let them have ac many men as they would to helpe them: they liked well of that, and told him that all their men should They called the English Tof- being a Mil this being agreed upon, Captaine Argall ganc enery Counfellour a Tamahawk. and familia and o a peece of Copper, which was kindely taken: they requested further, that if their Boates flouds hap-woold them.

Best meter with our Boates flouds happen to meete with our Boates, and that they faid they were the Chikahominy Englishmen, and 10 King lames bu men, wee would let them passe: we agreed unto it, so that they pronounced themselues Englishmen, and King lames his men, promising within fifteene dages to come unto lames Towne to fee culars and ar-ticles of agree- me, and conclude the fe conditions; every Bowman being to give me as a Tribute to King lames two meamont are in M. fures of Corne every harvest she two measures containing two bushels and a halfe and I to give every Bow-H amors Books; man a small Tamahawke; and to enery Counseller a fuit of red cloath, which did much please them. This people neuer acknowledged any King before, no nor ener would acknowledge Powhatan for their King; a front people they be, and a delicate feate they have.

Now Sir you fee our conditions, you, and all worthy men may indee, whether it would not be a criefe to lee thele faire hopes frostbitten, and thele fresh budding plants to wither? which had I returned had alfuredly followed for here is no one that the people would have governe them, but my felfe: for I had now come 20 away, bad I not found a generall defire in the best fort to returne for England : Letter upon Letter, request upon request from their friends to returne, so as I knew not upon whom to conferre the care of this businelle in my ablence : whom I thought fit was generally distasted, so as seeing the eminent ensuing danger. bould I have left this multitude, not yet fully refined, I am refolued to flay till harnest be got in, and then Cetile things according tomy poore understanding, and returne : if in the interim there come no authoria fed Gonernour from England.

Consider I pray you, since things be brought to this passe, as you see, and that I should have come away, Sir T. Dales rethen through their factions, humors, mutinies, or indifferetion of the Chiefes I had left behinde, this port of Firgi. Should fall to ruine : I then should receive the emputation, and incurre the blame, for quitting the Plantaia. In another tion, although I might doe is, both with my bonour, my promised flay of time being expired, and basino 30 warrant from my Soueraigne, the Kings Maiesty : but the precedent reasons moned mee and that this he writeth that astion of fuch price, fuch excellency and affured profit to mine come knowledge should not dye to the scorne of our Nation, and to give cause of laughter to the Papists, that desire our ruine. I can affere you no best Kingdoms Country of the world affords more affured bopes of infinite riches, which both by mine owne peoples difcoof Christendame mery, and the relation of fach Sauages, whose fidelity we have often found, affureth me. Oh why should Comany Princes and Noblemen ingage themselves, and thereby intermeding herein, have cansed a numway compare
with this coun- ber of soules transport the melelucs, and be transported bother? Why should they (I. say) relinquish thu so olorious an Action: for if their end; be to build God a Church, they ought to perfenere : if otherwise, yet their honour ingageth them to be constant. How seener they hand affelted, here is enough to content them, 10 let their ends be either for God, or Mammon.

These things having animated me to stay for a little season, to leave those, I am tied in conscience to returne unto, to leave the affured benefits of my other fortunes, the sweete society of my friends and acquaintance, with all mundall delights, and refide here with much turmoile, which I will constantly doe, rather then fee Gods glory diminified, my King and Countrey dishonored, and thefe poore people, I have the charge of, ruined. And so I be secch you to answer for me, if you beare me taxed for my staying, as some may infily was son to that doe, and that these are my chiese motives God I take to witnesse. Remember me and the cause I have in worthy of Po- band, in your daily meditations, and reckon me in the number of those shat doe sincerely lone you and yours,

and will ever rest in all offices of a friend, to doe you service.

der whitaker lemicall Dinine Doctor whitaker Mafter of S. labas Col.in Cambridge. Whatshadowes of men are the moft in this fhould neede gyrikes ? They

> ing tuffer ill, crywhore firft,

To my very deere and louing Cosen At. G. Minister of the B. F. in London.

Ir, the Colony here is much better. Sir Thomas Dale, our Religious and valiant Governour, bath Inom brought that to paffe, which never before could be effected. For by warre upon our exemies, and age, that the Inam brought that to paye, would never before could be ejected. For of warre 2000 our extends, be best deserving kinde vsage of our friends, he hash brought them to seeke for peace of vs. which is made, and they dire not breake. But that which is best, one Pocahuntas or Matoa the daughter of Powhatan, is married to an bonest and descreete English Gentleman Master Rolfe, and that after the had openly renounced her Country Idolatry, professed the faith of lesus Christ, and was baptised ; which thing Sir Thomas Dale had laboured a long time to ground in her.

Tet notwithstanding, are the vertuous deedes of this worthy Knight, much dehafed, by the Letters which fome wicked men have written from hence, and especially by one C. L. If you heare any condemna and by depra- this noble Knight, or doe feare to come hither, for those standarows Letters, you may upon my word boildy uing inflice represents my now that no malefulfors can abide the face of the Indge, but themselves scorning to CHAP. 11. Surplis and subscription. Miserable condition. Strange Narrations. 1771

be reproved, doe professie with all hatred, all those that labour their amendment. I marwaile much that ociep men of honest life, hould feare the Sword of the Magistrate, which is unfheathed onely in

But I much more muse, that so sew of our English Ministers that were so bot against the Survius and SubGription : come hither where neither spoken of. Doe they not either wilfully bide their Tallents or beeve themselues at home for feare of loosing a few pleasures? Be there not any amongst them of Moles bu munde, and of the Apoities, that for sooke all to follow (brist? But I referre them to the indee of all bearts, and to the King that shall remard enery one according to the gaine of his Talent. But you my cofen bold fait that which you have, and I, though my promise of three yeeres service to my Country be 10 expired, will abide in my vocation here untill I be lawfully called from hence. And so betaking us all unto the mercies of God in Christ lefus, I rest for ener.

Part of a Tractate written at Henrico in Virginia, by Master A L EX. WHITAKER, Minister to the Colony there, which then gouerned by Sir T. DALE, 1613.

Hey acknowledge that there is a great good God, but know him not, having the eyes of I their understanding as yet blinded: wherefore they serue the Diuell for seare, after a most bale manner, facrificing sometimes (as I haue here heard) their owne Children to him. I haue fent one Image of their god to the Counfell in England, which is painted vpon one fide of a toadfoole, much like vnto a deformed monfter. Then Priefts (whom they call Quiste foughs) are no Their Priefts other but fuch as our English Witches are. They live naked in body, as if their shame of their and mannet finne deferued no courring: Their names are as naked as their body: they esteeme it a vertue to or huing. lye, deceiue, and steale, as their Master the Divell teacheth them. Much more might be said of their miferable condition, but I referre the particular narration of these things to some other

These men are not so simple as some have supposed them : for they are of body lufty, strong, and very nimble: they are a very understanding generation, quicke of apprehension, juddaine in their dispatches, subtile in their dealings, exquiste in their inventions, and industrious in their labour, Liuppole the world hath no better marke-men with their Bowes and Arrowes then they be; they will kill Birds flying, Fishes swimming, and Beasts running: they shoote also with meruilous ftrength, they shot one of our men being vnarmed quite through the body, and nailed both his armes to his body with one Arrow : one of their Children also, about the age of twelue or thirteene yeeres, killed a Bird with his Arrow in my fight. The feruice of their God is answerable to their life, being performed with a great feare and attention, and many strange dumbe shewes vsed in the same, stretching forth their limbes, and straining their body, much like to the counterfeit women in England, who faine themselves bewitched, or possessed of some

They stand in great awe of the Quickofonabs or Priests, which are a generation of Vipers, even of Sathans owne brood. The manner of their life is much like to the Popish Hermits of our age; for they live alone in the woods, in houses sequestred from the common course of men, neither may any man be fuffered to come into their house or to speake with them, but when this Priest doch call him, He taketh no care for his victuals, for all such kinde of things both Bread and Water, &c. are brought vnto a place neere vnto his cottage, and there are left, which hee fetcheth for an proper neede. If they would have raine, or have loft any thing, they have their recourse to him, was conjureth for them, and many times prevaileth. If they be ficke, he is their Phylician; if they be wounded, he sucketh them. At his command they make warre and peace, neither doe they any thing of moment without him. I will not be tedious in these firange Narrations, when I have more perfectly entered into their fecrets, you shall know all. Finally, there is a civill government among ft them which they strictly observe, and shew thereby that the law of

Nature dwell th in them: for they have a rude kinde of Common-wealth, and rough government was killed in wherein they both honour and obey their Kings, Parents, and Gouernours, both greater and lette, Bernadaby anthey observe the limits of their owne possessions. Murther is fearly heard of : Adultery and other other State

offences teuerely punished.

The whole Continent of Virginia fituate within the degrees of 34. and 47. is a place beautified by God, with all the ornaments of nature, and enriched with his earthly treasures : that pare of it, which we already possesse, beginning at the Bay of Chasapheae, and stretching it telle in 60 Northerly latitude to the degrees of 39, and 40 is interlined with feuen most goodly Rivers, the leaft whereof is equall to our River of Thames: and all thete Rivers are to neerely toyned, as that Arthoras there is not very much distance of dry ground betweene either of them, and those feu rall maine miles. lands are every where watered with many veines or creekes of water, which fundry waies doe Suerthwart the land, and make it almost nauigable from one River to the other. The commodity

alto Eagels and Hankes of all forts, among ft whom are Auspreys, fishing Hanke, and the Cormo-

rant. The woods be every where full of wilde Turkies, which abound, and will runne as swift

birds; the Riners and creekes be ouer-spread enery where with water foule of the greatest and

brait fort, as Swans, flockes of Geefe and Brants, Ducke and Mallard, Sneldrakes, Dyuers, &c.

besides many other kindes of rare and delectable Birds, whose names and natures I cannot yet re-

cite, but we want the meanes to take them. The Rivers abound with Fish both small and great;

of Herings come in first : Shads of a great bignesse, and Rock fish follow them. Trouts, Base,

great Sturgeons, whereof we catch many, and should do more, but that we want good Nets

antiwerable to the breadth and deapth of our Rivers : besides, our channels are so soule in the bot-

giue proper names to the divers kindes of fresh fish in our Rivers; I have caught with mine Angle,

Pike, Karpe, Eele, Perches of fix seuerall kindes, Crea-fish, and the Torope or little Turtle, besides

to Flounders, and other dainty fish come in before the other be gone : then come multitudes of

the Sea-fish come into our Rivers in March, & continue vnrill the end of September : great sculls Fish.

tome with great logges and trees, that we often breake our Nets vpon them: I cannot reckon nor Nets.

as a Greyhound. In winter our fields be tull of Cranes, Herons, Pigeons, Partridges and Black- Fowle.

whereof to those that shall inhabite this land is infinite, in respect of the speedy and easie transportance of goods from one River to the other, I cannot better manifelt it vnto you, but in aduting you to confider whether the water or land hath beene more beneficiall to the Low-Countries. To the River which we inhabit (commonly called Powbatans River) ebbeth and floweth one hundred and forty miles into the maine; at the mouth whereof are the two Forts of Henrice and Charles: two and forty miles voward is the first and Mother-Christian Towne feated, called James-Torne: and fevency miles beyond that vpward, is the new Towne of Henrice built, and fo named in the memory of Noble Prince Herry of lafting and bleffed memory: tenne miles beyond this is a place called the Fals, because the River hath there a great descent falling downe between Christall Rock Stall Rocke wherewith the Indians doe head many of their Arrowes; three dayes journey from thence is there a Rock or flony hill found, which is in the top couered all ouer with a perfect and most rich Silver oare. Our men that went to discouer those parts had but two Iron Pickaxes with them, and those to ill tempered, that the points of them turned againe, and bowed at enery ftroake, fo that we could not learch the entrailes of the place, yet fome triall was made of that oare with good successe, and argument of much hope. Six dayes journey beyond this Mine a great ridge of high hils doe runne along the maine land, not farre from whom the Indians reporta great Sea doth runne, which we commonly call a South Sea, but in respect of our habitation is a West Set, for there the Sun fetteth from vs. The higher ground is much like vnto the molde of France. have done for out Bricks) we finde it to be red clay, full of gliffering spangles. There be many tockie places in all quarters; & more then probable likelihoods of rich Mines of all forts : though I knew all, yet it were not convenient at this time that I hould veter all, neither have wee had meanes to fearch for any thing as we ought, thorough prefent want of men, and former wants Avreand Sea- of provision for the belly. As for Iron, Steele, Antimonium, and Terra figillata, they have rather offered themselves to our eyes and hands, then bin sought for of vs. The Ayre of the Countrey (especially about Henrico and voward) is very temperate and agreeth well with our bodies. The extremity of Summer is not to hot as Spaine, nor the cold of Winter fo sharpe as the frosts of England. The Spring and Haruest are the two longest seasons and most pleasant, the Summer and Winter are both but fhort. The Winter is for the most part dry and faire, but the Summer 30 watered often with many great and lodaine showers of raine; whereby the cold of Winter is warmed, and the heate of Summer cooled. Many have died with vs heretofore thorough their

The naturall people of the Land are generally such as you heard of before. A people to be feared of thole that come you them without defensive Armor, but otherwise faint-hearted (if they fee their Arrowes cannot pierce and easie to be subdued. Shirts of Male, or quilted cotten coates are the best desence against them. There is but one or two of their petry Kings, that for feare of vs have defired our friendship; and those keepe good quarter with vs, being very pleasant amongst 40 vs. and (if occasion be) seruiceable vnto vs. Our eldest friends be Pipisco and Choapote, who are our overchwart neighbours at lames-Towne, and have beene friendly to vs in our great want. The other is the Weromance of Chescheak, who but lately traded with vs peaceably. If we were once the mafters of their Country, and they flood in feare of vs (which might with few hands imployed about nothing elfe, be in short time brought to passe) it were an easie matter to make them willingly to forfake the Diuell, to embrace the faith of Iefus Christ, and to be baptized. piety&ciuility Besides, you cannot easily judge how much they would be availeable to vs in our Discoue-What vie may ries of the Countrey, in our Buildings and Plantings, and quiet prouision for our felues, when we may peaceably passe from place to place without neede of Armes or Guard.

owne filthinese and want of bodily comforts for ficke men; but now very few are ficke amone

vs : not aboue three persons amongst all the inhabitants of Henrice; I would to God our soules

The meanes for our people to line and fublift here of themselves are many and most certaine to both for Beafts, Birds, and Hearbes. The Beafts of the Countrey are for the most part wilde: as Lyons, Beares, Wolues and Deere: Foxes blacke and red, Rakowns, Beners, Pollowns, Squerrels, Wilde-Cats, whose skins are of great price, and Muske-Rats which yeelde Muske as the Muske-Cats doe. There be two kindes of Bealts amongst these most strange; one of them is the female Pollowne, which will let forth her yong out of her belly, and take them vp into her belly againe at her pleafure without hurt to her felfe; neither thinke this to be a Trauellers tale, but the very truth; for nature hath framed her fit for that fertice, my eyes have beene witneffe vato it, and we have fent of them and their yong ones into England. The other strange conditioned creature is the flying Squirrell, which thorough the helpe of certaine broad flaps of skin growing on each fide of her forelegs, will flye from tree to tree twenty or thirty paces at one flight 60 and more, if the have the benefit of a fmall breath of winde, Befides there, fince our comming hither, we have brought both Kine, Goates, and Hogges, which prosper well, and would multiply exceedingly, if they might be prouided for. This Countrey besides is replenished with Birds of all forts, which have bin the best sustenance of flesh, which our men have had since they came;

many minerall Rockes which be there: twelue miles farther beyond this place is there a Chris. In clay and fand being proportionably mixed together at the top; but if we digge any depth (as we 10

many imaller kindes,&c.

I therto you have heard the Authors themsekes speak of their owne affaires. Now we must for continuation and confummation of our Story, borrow a few Collections from others, where the Authors themselves have not comne to our hands. Wherein that industrious Gentleman Captaine lobn Smith still breathing Vergimid and diligent enquiry and writing, as sometime by discouery and doing to shew his zeale to this action (for feeing he cannot there be employed to performe Vir-

ginian exploits worthy the writing, here he employeth himselfe to write Virginian affaires worthy the reading) having compiled a long Hiltory of that and the Summer Iland plantation, and of New England in tix Bookes, hath gently communicated the fame to mine, that is to thine, as intended to the Worlds vie. Out of his rich fields I have gleaned thefe handfuls, adding thereto the crop also of mine owne industry.

W Sir Thomas Gates returned from Virginia in March, and Captaine Argall in Iune following 1614. The Lottery. and to animated by their hopefull reports the Adventurers, that the great standing Lottery was drawns Anno 1615, in the West end of Pauls Churchyard (where before, as in many other places after; arun-Anno 1015, in the tree come of rause consequents, on which the Prizes were proportioned from two for the Lottery of smaller adventures had beene vsed in which the Prizes were proportioned from two To 1900, 2006. crownes (which was the least) to divers thousands, arising in ordinary assents and degrees , casually accrownes (which was the least; to dimers thom ands, arijung in ordinary algents and degrees", the many according to cruing as the lot fell, and paid in money or in Plate there set forth to view, provided that if any chose more 2000, and the ney rather then Plate or goods for paiment, in summes abone ten crownes, be was to abate the tenth part. highest 45000 The orders of this Lotters were published, and courses taken to present frauds,

Whiles Sir. Thomas Dale was in Virginia, it chanced that a Spanish Ship beate up and downe before Point Comfort, and fent alhoure for a Pilot. Captaine James Davies fent them one, with whom they Spanift Ships 50 presently sailed away, leaving three of their company behinde. These, upon examination, confessed that a Virginia. bauing lost their Admirall, accident had forced them into those parts; two of them said they were Cap- Enville Pilace taines of chiefe command in the Fleete. They received good v (age there, till one of them was found to be or ladas tathert an English nan, which in the great Fleete 1588, hadbin a Pilot to the Spaniards, and now exercifed his suspended and wonted trechery, having induced some malecontents to runne away puth a small Barke. This darkness expited togebeing brought to light, ome of them were executed, and he expelling no better confelled that two or three ther according Spanish Ships were at Sea, on purpose to discouer the state of the Colony: but their Commission was not to his metra to be opened till they arrived in the Bay, fo that he knew no further. One of the Spaniards died the other was fent for England, and this fellow was now reprised but (as became (usb a Pilot) was hanged at Sea in Sir Thomas D les returne. The English Pilot which they had carried away to Spaine, after long

60 imprisonment by much suite recovered his liberty and Country. Sir Thomas Dale having thus established things as you have heard, returned thence, appoint Con Yardhine ting Captaine George Tardly his deputy Gouernour in his absence, and arrived at Plemmouth in pury Gouer May or lune A. 1616, to aduance the good of the Plantation, Mafter Rolfe also with Rebecca his sournew conjugate and confort, and Ittamstamshin (commonly called Tomocomo) one of Tobatans

CHAP. XII.

Of the Lottery : Sir THOMAS DALES returne : the Spaniards in Virginia. Of POCAHVNTAS and TOMOCOMO: Captaine YERD-LEY and Captaine AR & OLL (both since Knighted) their Government: the Lord L A-W ARRS death, and other occurrents till Anno 1610.

Note well.

were no ficker then our bodies.

ginning of be made of the Natines.

ftrange beaft.

Flying Squir-

Counfellours came ouer at the same time. With this Sauage I have often converfed at my good friends Mafter Doctor Goldstone, where he was a frequent guest; and where I have both feen him Hitherto from Capt, Smith.

fine and dance his diabolicall measures, and heard him discourse of his Countrey and Religion. Sir

The. Dales man being the Interpretour, as I have elsewhere shewed, Master Rolfe lent mee a difcourse which he had written of the estate of Virginia at that time, out of which I collected those See my Pil.1.8. things which I have in my Pilgrimage delivered. And his wife did not onely accustome her felfe to civilitie, but full carried her felfe as the Daughter of a King, and was accordingly respected. not onely by the Company, which allowed prouision for her felfe and her sonne, but of divers particular persons of Honor, in their hopefull zeale by her to advance Christianitie. I was prefent, when my Honorable & Reuerend Patron, the L. Bishop of London, Doctor King entertained 12 her with festivall state and pompe, beyond what I have seene in his great hospitalitie afforded to other Ladies. At her returne towards Virginia the came at Granefend to her end and grave, having given great demonstration of her Christian finceritie, as the first fruits of Virginian conversion, leauing here a godly memory, and the hopes of her refurrection, her foule afpiring to fee and enior presently in heaven, what here shee had loyed to heare and beleeve of her beloved Saulour. New fush was Tomocomo, but a blafphemer of what he knew not, and preferring his God to ours because he taught them (by his owne so appearing) to weare their Deuill-lock at the left eare; hee acquainted mee with the manner of that his appearance, and beleeved that this Okee or Devil had

See my Pile. taught them their husbandry, &c. Powbeten was at this time of their comming gone Southwards. whi sup. for feare (as some thought) least Opachancanough his brother should some with the English a- 20 Perphatans regainst him. His age was not so great as some have reported, they reckoning euery Spring and mouc. Autumne for diffinet yeeres. Tomocomo was as wife in computation of his failing, reckoning each

Viteinian yeers night (when hee expected they frould have anchored by the floare) as another day. Hee is faid which perhaps allo to haue fet vp with notches on a flick the numbers of men, being fent to fee and fignifie the occasioned the truth of the multitudes reported to his Master. But his arithmetike soone failed, and wonder did no lefe amoze him at the fight of so much Corne and Trees in his comming from Plimmonth to their longevity I and on the Virginians imagining that defect thereof here had brought vs thither.

But let vs returne to Captaine Smiths Relations. The new Gouernour applied himselfe to the readjeft way of gaine in planting Tobacco; and though Sir Tho. Dale had caused much Corneto be planted, yet the new supplies easing them of that superfluitie, hee fent to the Chickahaminies 30 for the tribute Corne which Sir Thomas Dale and Captaine Argall had conditioned with them, but receiued a bad answere. Whereupon hee gathered a hundred men, and twelue of them were flaine, twelue others captized, and returned to lames Towne with three Boats laden with corne, of which one hasting to bring the newes was overfet, and eleven men, together with the goods drowned. Captaine Spelman by his language did them good fetuice. This, together with the league which they had with Opachankanough enemy to the former, put them fo in feare, that ours followed their labours quietly, and other Nations also brought them provisions and would hunt for them. Captaine Yeardly is taxed for suffering two of his Sauages to vie the Peece in their game and therein to grow expert; a thing reported to have beene practifed by some others. Yet whiles hee stated in the gouernment they lived quietly with the Savages, but grudges grew a- 40 mongst themselves.

A. 1617. Captaine Yeardly returned for England, after the arrivall of Captaine Argall, fent this ther to be deputie Gouernour.

Captaine Argall was (ent in the George, and with Capt. Hamor his Vice- Admirall, in May, 1617. arrived at lames Towne, where bee found things in much disorder, which hee sought to redresse. Their cattell were now well encreased, and both of their owne growing, and from the Saunges they had store of Corne, A. 1618. happened a great drought, and such a cruell storme of haile, that it did much burt to their Corne and Tobacco. The Magazine that came in the George, being fine moneths in her paffage Great drought proned badly conditioned.

To supply them, the Company furnished and set forth in Aprill a Ship of two hundred and siftie tunnet, 50 with two hundred people. The Lord De-la-war ment therein, and at the Iland of Saint Michael was L. De.la. Wars laft voyages bonourably feasted. Departing from thence, they were long troubled with contrary windes, in which time and death. many fell ficke, thirtie died, one of much was that honourable Lord of noble memory. The rest refreshed themselnes on that Coast of New England, with Fish, Fowle, Wood, and Water, and after sixteene weekes fent at Sea, arrived in Virginia.

The Ship called the Treaturer not long after came thither with fortie Passengers, before the other Ship Plowing and was gome. They now had ved the Plow, and reaped good forme, and they writ for more Plow-harueffe to

Richard Killingbeck with foure others , going to trade fecretly with the people of Chickahaminias, either for reuenge of some before staine in Captaine Yerdly's expedition, or for conetons nelle of their goods 60 were affaulted by the Sauages, one of which had a Peece furnished and therewith shot Killingbeck dead; therest also were all staine, stripped and spoyled. Other muribers also were done by other Sanages, which Opachankanough excused by ignorance, and for the former, hee sent a basket of earth, in token of the gift and possession of that Towne where they dwelt, to Captaine Argal, desiring him not to revenge the fault

of a few, which for feare of remenge were fled to the Woods, on their unnocent neighbours. Sam. Arg.

. Roite. Master Rolfe west, Inne 15. 1618. that Powhatan died in Aprillbefore, Itopatan his second brother succeeded, who with Opachanckanough had confirmed the league with the Colony. May 11. death. happened at lames Towns in the might, a terrible storms which lasted about halfe an hours, and poured downe bailestones eight or mine in ches about.

A. 1619. Sir Edwin Sands being chosen Treasurer , Captaine Yerdley was knighted and fent Go- Sit Edwin mernour into Virginia. A little Pinnace bad arrived fome twelve dayes before bim, in which Capsaine Sands Treafine Argall returned, leaving in his place Captaine Nathaniel Powel, As for their dignifts ownen the rer. To Company (in their apprehension) by Captaine Argall, I am not fully informed, or lust to bee the

Sir George Yerdly arriving April 18. filled the Colony with toyfull bopes of better successed at his errivall, and I freely acknowledge the Treasurers great study and care was worthy (bad God so pleased) of better enemis then by unexpected accidents have fince happened.

Captaine West, Captaine Powel, Maller Pory, Master Rolfe, Master Wickam, & Master Wacock, were added to the Councell. A Pinnace of Captaine Bargraue, another of Captaine Lawines, and a third of Mafter Evans, and the Marget of Brittol arrived. Some fcandalous Letters, which laid a falle imputation on the Country, caused enquiry to bee made, where by men of best experience was found, that an industrious man not otherwise imployed may well bushand foure Acres of Corne, and one thousand Profit to be an Plants of Tobacco, of which many to have much, neglet the goodnesse (in suffering too many leaves to made in Progrow on one stalee) and many Tobaccomongers in England are faid to fell the best of it in other names, ginia, calling all their traft Virginian, and fo at once rob both England and Virginia. June 25, the Triall came in with Corne and Cattell. The Governour and Counfell caused Burgesses to be chosen in all places. and a generall affembly was beld for consultation about the Colonies good. The ancient Planters being fet

building and planting. Many good instructions were fent from the Company, to amend the Virginian abuses and competencie of provision was appointed for Officers. But leave weawhile our Captaines Notes, and let vs liften to that which the Company publifted, A. 1620.

free chose places to their content, and sweetnesse of proprietie made them emulous to exceed each other in

CHAP. XIII:

The estate of the Colony, A. 1620. and Master Dermers Letter to mee from Virginia. touching bis Voyage for the South Sea.

Ow touching the present efface of our Colony in that Country, We have throught it not vnfit thus much briefly to declare. There have beene fent thither this laft yeere, and are now prefently in going, twelve hundred perfons and voward, as particularly appeareth in the note about specified; and there are neere one thornfand more remaining of those that were gone before. The men lately sent, have beene most of them choice men, borne and bred up to labour and industry. Out

of Denonshire, about an hundred men , brought vp to Husbandry. Out of Warnickshire and Staffordsbre, about one hundred and ten; and out of Suffex, about fortie; all framed to Iron-worker: the rest dispersedly out of divers Shires of the Realme. There have beene also fundry persons of good qualitie, much commended for sufficiency, industry and honestie, prouided and sene to take charge and government of those people. The care likewise that hath beene taken by directions, instructions, Charters and Commissions to reduce the people and affaires in Virginia into a regular course, hath been such and so great, that the Colony beginneth now to have the face and faihion of an orderly State, and fuch as is likely to grow and profper. The people are all divided into feuerall Burroughes; each man having the shares of Land due to him fet out to hold and enjoy to him and his Heires. The publike Lands for the Company here, for the Gouernour there, for the Colledge, and for each particular Burrough, for the Ministers also, and for divers other necesfary Officers, are likewise laid out by order and bounded. The particular Plantations for divers Buctoughs prinate Societies, are feeled in their Seates, being allotted to their content, and each in concenient distance. The rigour of Martiall Law, wherewith before they were governed, is reduced -within the limits preferibed by his Maietty; and the landable forme of luftice and government vied in this Realme, established, and followed as neere as may be. The Gouernour is to restrained 6) to a Counfell ioyned with him, that he can doe wrong to no man, who may not have speedy remedy. Each Burrough, and each particular Plantation, partly hath, partly is bound to have in short time a sufficient Minister : for whom maintenance is ordained, to each of two hundred pounds a yeere value. Which orderly proceeding there, by direction from hence, hath caufed

A. 1617.Cap.

Argells 20-

uernment.

the Colony now at length to fettle themselues in a firme resolution to perpetuate the Plantati-

on. They fall to building of Houses, each for his owne private; and the Generality to the rearing of publike Gueft-houles, for entertaining of new men vpon their first arrivall. They fall to fet vp their Ploughes, to the planting of Vineyards; to the pursuing of the Staple Commodities furnified and commended from hence. In fumme, they are now to full of alacrity and cheerefulneffe, that in a late generall Affembly, they have in the name of the Colony prefented their greanene, that in a late general Amenday, for the care that hath beene taken for the fetling of the Plantation. Neither is it to be omitted, the care which hath beene had here lately at home, for the reducing of all the proceedings and affaires of the Company, to an orderly course of good goperment and Iultice. Wherein to begin with the Fountaine thereof, his Maiefties authoritie rarent meet und pleasure, there hath beene a collection made of all the branches of the same, dispersed in his 10 Letters Patents, now three times renewed : as also out of other instructions proceeding from his Maieftie. Out of both which, together with fuch other Orders as (authorized by his Maieftie) the Companie them felues have thought necessary to make, hath beene compiled a booke of standing Orders and Conflicutions, appround by the generall confent of all the Companie: whereby both the Company here, and the Colony in Voginia, have their businesse carried regularly, induffrioufly, and with, every man knowing both his right and dutie, to their generall great content, and the great advancement of the Action. And whereas the Colony likewife have been often Sutors in effect, to reduce into a compendious and orderly forme of writing, the Lawes of ten studies much to the vie of that Plantation, with addition of fuch other, as the nature of the England proper for the vie of that Plantation, with addition of fuch other, as the nature of the Place, the noutely of the Colony, and other important circumflances should need any require: A 20 place, the noutely of the Colony, and other important circumflances should need any require: A course is like wife taken for the effecting of this worke; yet so as to submit it first to his Maiesties view and approbation; it being not he that his Majerties Subjects should bee gourned by any other Lawes, then fuch as receive the influence of their lite from him.

And now to come to that which concerneth the Aduenturors in particular, by whose charges. care, and labour (next vnto his Maethies especiall grace) this famous Plantation hath not onely beene vindertaken, but through to many difficulties vipheld and continued; wee fhould beevery greatly injurious to them, if we should not acquaint them with this seasonable time, for the reaping of that benefit and reward which is due vnto them. Wee therefore let them know, that in this last yeere now ended, there have beene granted by the Company under their legall Scale, eleuen seuerall Patents for particular Plantations; and more are in hand to bee passed this next 30 Quarter-Court. It is not un probable that upon each of these Patents, divers hundreds of persons will foone Plant in Virginia : there have beene already transported upon the first, about three hundred men. These and other like Planters, having priority of time, will have priority also in choice of the Seat of their Plantations. Seeing therefore the onely matter of retribution to the Adventurors, is by a faire proportion of Land to them and their heires, namely, of one hundred Acres for every share of twelve pounds and ten shillings, vpon a first division; and as much more wpon a fecond, the first being peopled; with fiftie Acres for every person (to bee doubled in like manner) which at their own charges they shall transport to inhabite in Unginia bafore the foure maintri / winches called ordinate and the tent three yeares, either at one of leveral times, or and twentie: he of lune, a 625, if hee continue there three yeares, either at one of leveral times, or the after he is thipped for that voyage: It flandeth them you, who are not willing to be the last 40 the after he is thipped for that voyage: It flandeth them you, who are not willing to be the last 40 the after he is thipped for that voyage: It flandeth them you, who are not willing to be the last 40 the after he is thipped for that voyage: It flandeth them you, who are not willing to be the last 40 the after he is thipped for that voyage: It flandeth them you. in the benefit to be partaked, not to be the last in fetting forth to the choice and peopling of their Land. Wherein what fauour or aff flance may by vs bee given them, they that bee well afford of it, in equall proportion with our felues, as their charges and long expectance have well deferred. And to the end that not onely the Aduenturors now living, but the Herres also of the deceased, may take certaine notice of the feuerall proportion of Land, which ratably to their Aduentures in money are due and belonging to them.

A Note of the Shipping, Men, and Provisions Sent to Virginia, by the Treasurer and Company, in the yeere 1619.

He Bona None of two hundred Tun, fent in August 1619, with one hundred and twenty per-I fons. The Duty, of feuenty Tun, fent in Ianuary 1619. with fiftie one persons. The lengthers of three hundred and fiftie Tun, fent in February 1619. with two hundred persons. The Triall, of two hundred Tun, fent in February 1619, with fortie persons, and fixtie Kine. The Faulcon, of one hundred and fifeie Tun, fent in February 1619, with thirtie fixe persons, fiftie two Kine, and foure Mares. The London Merchant, of three hundred Tun, fent in March 1619. with two hunpersons. The Swan of Barnstable, of one hundred Tunne, sent in March, 1619 with seventie one persons. The Bonnessure of two hundred and sertie Tun, sent in April, 1620, with one hundred 69 and fiftie three persons. Besides these, set out by the Treaturer and Company, there hath beene fet out by particular Adventurers for private Plantations. The Garland of two hundred and fitte Tun, fent in Iune, 1619. for M. lohn Farrars Plantation, with fortie five persons. Who are yet detained in the Sammer Hands. A Ship of Briffell, of eightie Tun, fent in September, 1619, for M.

Barkleys Plantation, with fortie fine perfons. There are also two Ships in prouiding to be short-Iv gone, for about three hundred pertons more, to bee fent by private Adventurers to Fromia. The fumme of the persons one thousand two hundred sixtie one. Whereof in the eight Ships set out by the Treasurer and Company, eight hundred seuentie one.

Of these persons there are sent for publike and other prousvies, these ensuing Tenants People. for the Gouernours Land, besides fiftie sent the former Spring, eightie. Tenants for the Companies Land, one hundred and thirtie. Tenants for the Colledges Land, one hundred, Tenants for the Ministers glebe-Lands, fiftie. Young Maids to make Wives for so many of the former Tenants, ninetie. Boyes to make Apprentices for those Tenants, one hundred. Seruants for the 10 publike, fiftie. Men ient by their labours, to beare up the charge of bringing up thirtie of the Infilels children in true Religion and Civilitie. The fum of persons for publike vie, &c.dix hundred and fiftie. The fix hundred and elegen remaining, are fent for private Plantations.

The Commodities which these people are directed principally to apply (next to their own necessary main. Commodities, tenance) are these ensuing : Iron, for which are tene one nundred and fiftie perions, to set up three Iron-workes; proofe having beene made of the extraordinary goodnesse of that Iron.

Cordage : for which (belides Hempe) direction is given for the planting of Silke graffe (naturally growing in those parts) in great abundance : which is approved to make the best Cordage and Linnen in the world. Of this, every housholder is bound to set one hundred Plants; and the Gouernour himfelfe hath fer five thoufand.

20 Pot-ashes and Sope-ashes, Pitch and Tarre : for the making whereof the Polacres are returned

Timber of all fores, with Masts, Planks and Boords for prouision of Shipping, &c. there being not so good Timber for all vies, in any one knowne Countrey what soeuer. And for the case and encreate of divers of these workes, provision is sent of men and materialls, for the setting up of fundry Sawing Mills.

Silke : for which that Countrey is exceeding proper, having innumerable flore of Muibers Trees of the best, and some-Silk-wormes naturally found upon them, producing excellent Silke: fome whereof is to be feene. For the fetting vp of which Commoditie, his Maiefty hath beene graciously pleased now the second time (the former having miscarried) to bestow upon the Company plenty of Silk-wormes-feed of his owne store, being the best.

Vines : whereof the Countrey yeeldeth naturally great flore, and of fundry forts : which by culture will be brought to excellent perfection. For the effe ang whereof, divers skiltull Vignerons are lent, with ftore also from hence of Vine-plants of the beft fort.

Salt : which workes having beene lately fuffered to decay, are now ordered to bee fet up in fo great plentie, as not onely to ferue the Colony for the prefent ; but as is hoped in fhort time also the great Fishings on those Coasts.

For the following, working, and perfecting of these Commodities, all provisions necessary for the present are sent in good abundance. As like wife the people that goe are plentifully form shed with apparell, bedding, victuall for fixe moneths: Implements both for the House and Labour, Armour, Weapons, Tooles, and fundry other necessaries. And a supply of Armour, Powder, and many necessary prouisions is made for those of the Colony which were there before yet without any prejudice to the former Magazin.

There have beene given to the Colony this yeere by denout persons, these Gifts ensuing : Two persons Gifts. vnknowne, haue given faire Plate, and other rich On aments for two Communion Tables : whereof one for the Colledge, and the other for the Church of Mattreffe Mary Robinfors founding: who in the former yeere by her Will, gaue two hundred pounds towards the tounding of a Church in Virginia.

Another vinknowne person (together with a godly Letter) hath lately sent to the Treasurer. fine hundred and fiftie pounds in gold, for the bringing up of children of the Infidels; first in the to Knowledge of God and true Religion; and next, in he Trades whereby honeftly to lue.

Master Nicolas Ferrar deceated, hath by his Will given three hundred pounds to the Colledge in Virginia, to bee paid, when there shall be ten of the Infidels children placed in it. And in the meane time foure and twentie pounds by yeere, to bee distributed vnto three discreet and godly men in the Colony, which shall honestly bring up three of the Infidels children in Christian Religion, and fome good course to live by.

An unnamed perion fent to the Treasurer the summe of ten pounds, for advancing of the

There have beene Patents granted this yeere for particular Plantations, as here enfucth: To the Sc- Patents. cietie of Southamton Hundred. To Matter Heath, Recorder of London. To Matter Wincop. To Master Tracie. To Doctor Bohun. To Master Pierce. To Master Delbridge. To Master Pointz. To Master Barkley. To Captaine Bargrane. To Captaine Ward. Who have vndertaken to transport to Virginia great multitudes of people, with store of cattell.

It is to be knowne, that touching the Colledge for the Infidels children, it hath beene thought more expedient to begin first with the planting and peopling of the Lands (which hath beene

SIR,

done this yeere) and afterwards to proceed to the erecting of the Fabricke, which is to be performed out of the revenues of the Lands.

To his Worshipfull Friend M. SAMVEL PVRCHAS, Preacher of the Word, at the Church a little within Lude ate, London.

Twas the nineteenth of May, before I was fitted for my discovery, when from Monahiggan I see Twas the mineteenth of way, octore and the land I told you of. I passed alongit the Coast where I (agle in an open Pinnace of fine tun, for the Iland I told you of. I passed alongit the Coast where I L japie in an open rinnace of time um, for ence cannot roughout. A pagica acomption coals where I found some antient Plantations, not long sace populous now otterfy coal; in other places a termantre. In maines, but not free of sicknesse. Their disease its Plague, for nee might perceive the sores of some that had e Coped, who described the spots of Such as V sully die. When I arrived at my Sauages native Country (finding all dead)! transiled along it addies sourney Westward, to a place talled Nummattaquyt, where. finding Inhabitants, I diffiatched a Messenger a dayes iourney further West, to Poconackit which berderesh on the Sea; whence came to fee me two Kings, attended with a guard of fiftie armed men, who beang well faitified with that my Sanage and I discoursed unto them (being desirous of noueltie) game mee content in whasoeuer I demanded, where I sound that former relations were true. Here I redeemed a Frenchman , and afterwards another at Mattachusit , who three yeeres since escaped sipwrache at the renchman, and afterwards notices at mantachate, movement period process period payments at the North east of Cape Cod. I must among it many things worthy observation) for mant of leisure, therefore 20 bence I possel continued any place where we touched in the way) to the liand, which were discovered 20 the melfibof lane. Here we had good quarter with the Sanages, who likewife confirmed former reports. I found seven several places digged, sens bonne of the earth, with samples of other commodities elsewhere found, founded the Coast, and the time being farre if ent bare up for Monahiggan, arriving the three and tieth of lune, where wee found our Ship ready to depart. To this lle are two other neere advoning, all which I called by the name of King James his Hes, because from thence I had the first motines to fearch. winco i cauca of the name of a mg satures and uses, various; i was corner a cumine; in a more respective for that (now probable paffage) which may bareafter be both bonourable and profitable to bis Massile.

When I had diffracted with the lips ready to depart, I thus concluded for the accomplifying my businesses. In regard of the fewnesse of my men, not being able to leave behind mee a competent number for defence, in regara of toe genneye v, my man, not most of my provisions about the Sampson of Cape Ward ready 30 and yet sufficiently farnish my selfe. I put most of my provisions about the Sampson of Cape Ward ready 30 bound for Virginia, from whence bee came, taking no more into the Pinnace then I though might ferue our surnes, determining with Gods below to search the Coast along, and at Virginia to supply our select for a second descent, of the first failed. Him as the best actions are commonly bardest in effecting and are Glacome without their crosses, so in this we had our soure, and met with many difficulties : for wee had not fayled about forty leagues, but wee were taken with a Southerly forme, which drame us to this frait; 9ther we must weather a rockie point of Land, or run into a broad Bay no leffe dangerous ; Incidit in Syllam, &c., the Rocket wee could not weather, though wee loofed till we received much water, but at last were forced to beare up for the Bay, and run on ground a furlong off the floare, where we find beene bear zen to pieces, had wee not instantly throwne our board our promisons to have our lives; by which meanes ven to pieces, man wee not meanity turowne vaccoood a me promotion to mane one times; v) worto means we escaped and brought off our Pinnace the next high water without hurt, having our Planke broken, and 40 as features to two which we castly mended. Being left in this misery, having lost much bread, all our Beefe and Sider, some Meale and Apparell, with other provisions and necessaries; having now little left besides boge to encourage vi to persili : Tet after a little deliberation we resolved to proceed and departed with the next faire winde. We had not now that faire quarter among it the Saunges as before, which I take is was by reason of our Saudoes absence, who desired (in regard of our long iourney) to stay with some of our Sanage friends at Sawahquatooke) for now almost enery where, where they were of any firengila they sought to betray vs. At Manamock (the Southerne part of Cape Cod, now called Succliffe Iulets) I was vnawares taken prisoner, when they sought to kill my men, which I left to man the Pinnace; but missing of their purpose, they demanded a ransome, which had, I was as farre from libertic as before : yet it pleased God at last, after a strange manner to deliner me, with three of them into my hands, and a little 50 after the chiefe Sacheum himselfe; who seeing me weigh anchor, would have leaped overboord, but intercepted, craued pardon, and fent for the Hatchets given for ransome, excusing himselfe by laying the fault on his neighbours; and to be friends sent for a Canous lading of Corne, which receined we set him free. I

am leth to omit the flory, wherein you would finde cause to admire the great mercy of God even in our greatest misery, in gining we both freedome and reliefe at one time. Departing hence, the next place we

arrined at was Capaock, an Hund formerly discourred by the English , where I met with Epinew a Sanagethat had lind in England, and featherindifferent good English, who four exercisine being carried

bone, was reported to have beene flame, with dimers of bis Countregmen, by Saylers, which was falfe. with him land much conference, who gave me very good fettifalten in every living almost foundation made. Time one permitting mere to fearch bere, which I flowed have done for fundry things of fixed monder. Time one permitting mere to fearch bere, which I flowed have done for fundry things of fixed monders the wind faire. I flood away flagting my course as the Cools led mee, till I came to be might more than the wind faire. I flood away flagting my course as the Cools led mee, till I came to be might

Weiterly part where the Coast began to fall away Southerly. In my way I disconered Land about theric loaques in length, heretofore taken for Mayne, where I feared I had beene imbarca, but by the helpe of an Indian I get to the Sea againe, through many crooked and freight passages. I let passe many accidents to

this journey occasioned by treacherie, where wee were compelled twice to goe together by the eares . once the Sausoes had great aduantage of us in a freight, not about a Bowe flot, and where a multitude of Indians let five at us from the banke , but it pleased God to make us victours : neere unto this wee found a most dangerous Catwratt amongst small rockie llands, occasioned by two unequalitydes. the one ebbing and flowing two boures before the other : here wee loft an Anchor by the frengib of the current, but found it deepe enough; from bence were wee carried in a fort space by the tides (wiftnesse into a great Bay (to vs so appearing) but indeede is broken land, which came vs light of the Sea: here, as I faid, the Land readeth Southerly. In this place I talked with many Saluages, who told me of two fundry passages to the great Sea on the West, offered me Pilots, and one of them drew mee a 10 Plot with Chalke upon a Choft, whereby I found it a great Iland, parted the two Seas : they report the one scarce passable for shoulds, perillous currents, the other no question to be made of Haning receined these directions, I basten to the place of greatest hope, where I purposed to make triall of Gods goodnesse cowards us , and very best endenous to bring the truth to light , but wee were but onely Shewed the entrance, where in seeking to passe were forced backe with contrary and overblowing windes. bardly escaping both our lines. Being thus overcharged with weather, I stood alongst the coast to seke barbours, to attend a fanourable gale to recover the streight, but being a harbourlesse Coast for ought we could then perseine, wee sound no succour till wee arrived between Cape Charles and the Maine on the East side the Bay Chestapeak, where in a wilde Roade wee anchored and the next day (the eight of September) croffed the Bay to Kecoughtan, where the first newes strooks 30 cold to our bearts, the generall sistenesse oner the Land. Here I resolved with all possible feede to returne in pursuite of this businesse; so that after a little refreshing, wee recovered up the River to lames Citie, and from thence to Cape Warde bie Plantacon, where immediately wee fell to heming of Boords for a close Decke, having found it a most defined course to attempt as before. At wee were thus labouring to effect our purposes, is pleased almisture God (who enety disposeth of the times and sossons, wherein all workes shall be accomplished to restite us with his heamic hand, so that at one time there were but two of vs able to beloe the rest, my selfe so fore shaken with a buruing feaser, ibst I was brought enew unto deaths doore, but at length by Gods affittance escaped, and base non with the rest almost reconcred my former strength. The Winter having overtaken us (a time on these Coasts especially) subject to guits and fearefull stormes, I have now resolved to choose a more temperate season, both for the generall good and our owne safeties. And thus I have fent you a broken discourse, though indeede very unwilling to have guen any notice at all, till it had pleafed God to have bleffed mee with a thorow fearch, that our eyes might have withefed the truth.

I have drawne a Plot of the Coast, which I dare not yet part with five feare of danger, let this therefore I have drawn a l'lot of toe woss; words tare nes set par with yo face of annyer, at the therefore force for confirmation of your bapes, till can better performs any promise and your defire; for what I have spoken (can produce at least mille testes; sarre sporate, of the Sea behinde them, and of Ships, which come many dayes courney from the West, and of the great extent of this Sea to the North and South, not knowing any bounds thereof Westward. I cease to trouble you till a better opportunity offer it selfe rea

membring my best lone, orc. I reft From Captaine MARTYN his Plantation, 27. Decemb. 16 19.

Yours to command.

THO. DERMER.

To Sir Edwin Sands in the Treasurership succeeded the right Honorable Henry Earle of South- Cap. I. Smith. ampion, whose industry together with that of those two brethren John and Nicolas Farrars the Sir Edw. Sands fuccessive Deputies, have given much content to many, but to divers others matter of complaint; was Tressurer wherein I am an vnft ludge; onely as a reasonable man and Christian Minister (that I isy not from Ap. 1619 50 Historian) I am much grieued that Voginias prosperity cannot answer mens hopes; nor can any till lunatore man meruaile if diuifions (minde-maffacres) here, with the maffacring Sauages and difeases there. have hindred there the expected effects of honorable and carefull indeuours. Mafter Stockam, a Mafter Stock Minister, writthence, May the eight and twentieth, that which deserueth inst consideration, ams Lever to that he found no probability byfaire meanes alone to draw the Sauages to goodnesse, and if Mars Master whiteand Minerua went hand in hand, they would effect more good in one houre, then these verball terbefore. Mercurians in their lines: and till their Priests and Ancients have their throats cut, there is no hope to bring them to conversion.

Iiiiiii 3

CHAP.

CHAP. XIIII.

A true Relation of a Sea Fight betweene two great and well a ppointed Spanish Ships, or Men of Warre; and an English Ship, called thy Margaret and Iohn, or the Blacke Hodge, going for Virginia.



Auing taken our iourney toward Virginia in the beginning of February last past in a Ship called the Blacke Hodge, her burthen one hundred and fixtie tunne, man- Ia ned onely with eight fron Peeces, and a poore Faulcon, we soone ouer-passed both the tedious endurances and fearefull dangers of fuch a Voyage, and came at last by the foureteenth of March under 1 3. and halfe Latitude, within twenty leagues

Hellanders co.

Falling with Menis by the twentieth of March, and compating the furthest point to stand in the handlommer with the shore, wee perceived two tall Ships at anchor right over against the watring place with their top fayles loofe, and their Boates going ashoare for their men. At first we supposed them Hollanders, in respect of their building, and the Hollanders colours borne by their Admirall in the maine top, the vice Admirall haung his fore top mast downe, and no colors difplayed, which encreased our former opinion, adding withall that it must needes be prife, or 20 fome other Ship fubiect to the misfortune of a fight.

But driving by necessity of water, and willing to refresh our selves a shoare, wee trimmed our Ship, and came to anchor fairely by them, fending our Boate in friendly manner to hale them both unprouided and unarmed, which returned with certificate, that they were Spaniards, wherein not fully fatisfied, by reason of our former apprehension that it was otherwise; the better to be resolued, we sent out our Boate againe, as well to be assured what to trust vinto, as to gaine fometime to prepare our Shippe, and trim her more commodiously, being peffered with goods and fardels betweene the deckes, and altogether unpromided for any fight, either offensue or

defensiue.

The Boate approached the hindmost Ship, which I call the vice-Admirall, and haled her, de- 30 manding who they were, but instead of refoluing vs, she commanded them to come aboord, and would answere no otherwise; whereupon the Boate rowed from them, as resoluting all was not fhot at theboat well, and so made haste vnto vs againe, yet could not prevent a volley of small shot powred very dangeroully amongst them, infomuch that they had their cloathes shot through, their Oares shivered, and the fides battered with Bullets; yet thankes be to God, neither was a man hurt, nor any thing loft; which, as if they had had notice of the same escape, rated their rage so much the more: For by that time the Boate was out of reach of their small shot, they followed it to the Ship with great Ordnance; and when they perceived they were fafely come abourd, they East/ bynpre- tooke it foill, that they thundred against our Ship with the foarer rage, and most violent vollies, pared for fight. which we could not answer, having no Peece in our gunner roome, nor indeede any other well 40

They fhot at Spanish aduan-

The Spaniards

mounted for such a Sea fight. By this time their vice Admirall heaved up her anchor to her warpe, and laid her selfe to wind-ward, if either we should passe forward, or anchor shortagaine, so that we perceived they meant to affault vs on all hands: for the let flye a whole broad-fide vpon vs, and came furioully vp to our lee quarter without damage or relistance of our parts.

But when we were thus terrified and threatned by them, and thus encombred and disanimated amongst our selues, knowing withall (by reason of our ill prepared Ordnance) the disaduantage and hazard to be boorded at anchor by two good Ships well prepared for spoyle and ruine; we hoyfed up our failes, and determined to fet forward, had not the vice-Admirall come on our star-boord fide, and beate vpon vs fo hardly, that we fell to our businesse, and answered their vn- 50 kndenesse accordingly with many faireshot, which proved most effectuall, especially from a demy-culturing, which at last shot her betweene winde and water, so that shee was compelled from vs, and bare off to Sea, leaving her Admirall onely fingle with vs, who at last came fairely in our quarter to winde-ward, taking in her Holland flagge, and advanced her Spanish colours, and

Spanish colors.

Their conference.

We quietly and quickly answered, both what we were, and whither wee were bound, discouering the effect of our Committion, and relating the cause of our tarying there for water, neither purpoling to annoy any subsect of the King of Spaines, nor by way of affront to braue either Merchant or man of Warre. Then the charged vs to strike our failes for the King of Spaine, and vaile the bonnet according to the prerogative they had in those Seas: we replyed with enlarging the 60 particulars of the league betweene the King our Master and their King, adding with all, that as we intended no ill, we would take no wrong; Whereupon the Mafter left the poope, and fequeftred himselfe from such open conference; had they not called for the Captaine againe, who at last prefented himselfe, till they commanded him to come about with his Commission,

which he refused, yet wished them to send their Boat aboord, and then they should see it most

But infread either of answering vs further with kinde words, or accepting of our reply in good Infolence of part, they made two great that at vs, and poured among vs such a volley of small that, before we the Spaniers. could get off the poope, that we thanked God they did no more harme, yet we were much amazed they did to much: not thus content they waved vs with their bright fwords, and reuiled vs with approprious tearmes, mil-tearming vs dogs, and inventing more odious names against vs. then we could imagine that Christians durft vige one another withall : at last they laid vs aboord, which enforced vs to raise vp our maine fayle, and to give the word to our small to thot, which all this while lay close, well resolved and prepared : but sodainely breaking The Emplish forth wee plyed them in fuch fort that wee made them give backe and thrinke from their former fight.

The fight continued some halfe hours in our quarter, and according to the terrour of such encounters, wee were compatt as it were in fire and smoake, untill they discourred the waste of our Ship naked, and were encouraged with the hope of reciprocall damage, whereupon they brauely ranne your our fide, and laid vs abourd loofe to loofe, haltning with Pikes and Swords to enter, to which was added fuch fury, that if they had not beene preuented, we should have Spaniards Socke fhrunke vnder the rage of a barbarous flaughter : but it pleafed God io to direct our Mafter with to enter. aduice, and encourage our men with valour, that our Pikes being formerly placed vnder our 36 halfe decke, and certaine thot lying close for that purpose vnder the portels of the Shippe, encountred them to brauely, that their fury was not onely rebated, but their halfinesse inter- Their repulse. cepted, and the whole Company beaten backe, especially vpon the wind-ward side, where the charge was hottest, and the fight bloodiest; for there the throng was great, and men had

worke enough to make proofe of their courages and fortunes. Divers of our men were hurt, and many fell on their fide.

In the end they were violently repulled by vs, enforced to a retreat, vntill they were reinforced backe againe by their Commanders, who standing upon tearmes of honor, as being men of Warre, and designed for that purpose, thought it an indignity to be so afronted and countermanded; which earlied a fecond charge, and that was answered with a fecond beating backe, till the Second charge Captaine himfelfe grew enraged, as not brooking to be fo much overmated, and conftrained them

to come on a fresh, which they did so effectually, that questionlesse it had wrought an alteration, Third charge if the God that toffeth Monarchies, and teareth the Mountaines in his fury, had not taught vs to toffe our Pikes with profeerous event, and poured out a fodaine volley of small shot upon them, whereby that worthy Commander was flaine at the foote of a Pike, and many of his Souldiers Their Captain dropped downe on the top of the hatches. Prefently our Mafter tooke advantage of their dif. flainc. comfiture (though with fome commiferation for their valiant Captaine fo flaine) that hee not onely plyed them a fresh with great Ordnance, but had more false shot under the Pikes, which

were bestowed to good purpose, and amased our enemies with the sodainnesse.

Amongst the rest one Lucas our Carpenters mate must not be forgotten, who perceived a way an how to annoy them, as they were thus pulled and in a confusion, drue out a minion which hee Lucubis brave nobly fer a worke under the halfe decke, till at the last hee brought it to the doxe of the halfe act. decke, and there bent it you them, but in fuch a manner, that when it was fiered the cases full of stones and peeces of Iron fell vpon them like haile, and cleared their decke in such a fort that The case after of flones and peeces of fronten vpon them like hane, and cleared then decke in flor in flore time we faw few affailants, but onely fuch ascrept from place to place Omnium to are very couertly, and feemed willing to obscure themselves from the fury of our shot, which now vicissitude, was thicker then theirs: For although (as farre as we may commend our enemies) they had done fome things worthy of admiration : yet either wanting men, or overtaken with the volooked for valour of our company, they now began to thrinke, and gaue vs leave to be wanton with

Yet were our great Ordnance onely foure, that we could vie in this fight, but it should seeme The Exclision they ferued the turne as well as foure times foure: for they (hot her divers times betweene winde could wit but and water, and so prevailed, that at last we saw many signes of their willing nesse to leave vs, fourc Ordbut by reason she was fast in a slach of our cable, which in haste of weighing our anchor hung nance. loofe, the could not be divided nor make that way thee purposed, vntill one of our men cut it with an Axe without direction, and was flaine for his labour. But when the perceived the was looie, after the had beene a boord two houres and a halfe, good Lord what haite the made, and how quickly were we divided, both great and small shot playing on both sides, which lasted vn- Spaniards fall till the remotenesse was about a Caliner shot, and we discoursed the vice-Admirall comming to off. her affiftance, who began a farre off to ply vs with great fnot, and put vs in minde we had ano-

60 ther worke in hand. Whereupon wee manned our Ship a new, feparating the dead and hurt bodies by them felues Brauado turfrom vs, and were so encouraged, that we wanted her, and in a manner made toward her to fight a ned English. fresh : For when we perceived, that the Admirall made not a shot more at vs, we verily imagined,

that either the was preparing her felfe with a new tupply or wanted men to make her feruiceable

Next dayes

or resolued to goe away from vs , considering shee had lost her Captaine; yet loth to bee secure. and imagining the Vice-admirall might come and boord vs finding vs play, till the Admirall did make her selfe better readie, we prepared our selues, wondring yet that shee came no neerervs then Falcon flot, where with she plyed vs still on the Lee side, wntill at last she received another payment from our Demie-culturing, which thot her through, and made her beare with the thore payment that water, where sheer remayned till two of the clocke after midnight, and so wee had time to reforme our disorders, and make our selues better readie for the next dayes varietie. By breake of day the came up againe with the Admirall with her; as if they determined in-

deed to deuoure vs at once; but as it seemed it was but a Brauado, though for the time they forflooke not our quarter within Musket shot : for all that night and morning they were quiet IQ Neighbours, and kept vs company without any great annoyance with their Top-lavles downe, not knowing, as it should seeme, what to doe with vs, or else suspecting their owne hurts and Leakes, they durit not trust themselves too farre from Land, nor to the ferrie of another encounter. All that night we had time and leafure to ouer-looke our losses, and prepare for them, the Admirall made thew of an encounter, and we after Prayers were ended propare tot them, but fuddenly wee perceived the Vice-Admirall hang a sterne, cutting her mayne fayle to come vp, and stirring very ill.

At length the Admirall shooke in the wind, and by apparant signes gaue vs notice of slacking her courle, whereby we might runne a head and follow the Seas at her pleasure, so wee permirall fecteib ceined the Vice-Admirall with all her Syles to make towardes an Iland called Sana, which 20 to recourt the to recoure the the Admirall either tooke notice of, as knowing the danger she wasin, or gaue directions accorqualitie, Sonta dingly, confidering there wasno good to bee done with vs : for prefently the tacked about and loit vs , bearing toward that Iland ale.

Dofter Behane and feuen others flane out-right,

somilb thips deferibed.

Wee lost Doctor Behave, and seuen other were slaine out-right: two died shortly after of their wounds, and fixteene were that through in some part or other of the bodie, whose wounds Gods be thanked were recured and without mayme or further impeachment of health are now recovered and fettled in Virginia, according to our first entended purpose and Commisfion : I reckon not fuch as are hurt with Pikes and other offensue Weapons, because there was no danger in their cures, and the skilfull Surgeon shewed his art and good speed with facilitie. How danger in their cures, and the saminal outgoon hieror and arriving good speed with restricts. Flow many they loft were cannot tell, nor what men of name were entertaying amongst them, once \$\frac{3}{2}\$ by I am fure we faw many he shane on the Decke, and more cast ouer-boord in the fight, besides the Scuppers ran with bloud, and the very Sea in their quarter was coloured with a Scarlet hue, and looked fearfully vpon vs all.

The burthen of their Admirall was three hundred tunnes, having two and twentie Peeces of Braile, and all prouision of a man of Warre indeed : their Vice-Admirall three hundred tune, and fixteene cast Peeces, nor much inferiour to her for trimming and correspondent Equipage, and both to outward shew ouer-masterfull and daring for one poore Merchant and Passenger, being but a hundred and fixtie tunnes, having eight Iron Peeces and one Falcon, over-loaden with Stuffe and Wares, encombred with Pallengers, toyled with a storme, tyred with a long Voyage, affrighted with wants, and euery way infufficient to answere any such enemie: but 40 as it in the Scripture, it is all one to thee, O God, whether there be few or many, and Gedeons three hundred shall slay many thousands of the Midianites: as for deliuerances, the people of Ifraell shall passe through the Red Sea dry foot : Ionas shall bee cast safe on shoare out of the Whales belly: and Paul shall escape shipwracke, fauing his life with all his Passengers in the Iland of Malta.

For to conclude with the purpole in hand, there is one thing most remarkable as an inducement to this our deliuerance, that Captaine Chefter embraced Doctor Bobune beeing mortally wounded, and thus recomforted him, faying, O Doctor Bohune what a difaster is this; the Noble Doctor no whit examinated, replyed, Fighe it out braue man, the canse is good , and Lord recoine my foule.

Slaine out right. Doctor Bobune, Thomas Demeter Gentleman. Th. Read. William Garret. Th. Vernam. Gabriel Peies. Danid Baibering. Raph. Gc. Died after, Francis Annis Gentleman. Ed. Neroberg Sayler. Wounded yet cured. William Bird Gentleman. Alexander Bousnine. William Bannington Gentleman. William loyce Quarter Matter. John Wakings, John Wilfon Sayler. George Tayler Sayler. William Lucas Sayler. John Robbins Steward, Phillip Durmine. Three Frenchmen, Robert Lettor, Anthony Browne Gentleman.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

Virginian affaires since the yeere 1620 till this present 1624.

A note of the Shipping, men, and provisions fent and provided for Virginia, by the Right Honourable HENRY Earle of South-hampton, and the Company, and other prinate Aduenturers, in the yeere 1 621. 66. with other Occurrents then published by the Company.

SHIPS AND PEOPLE.

The George 180. tun: in Iuly 17 The Bonanenture 50. tun: in Aprill 10. 120.

The Marmaduke 100. tun : in July The Temperance 80, tun : in Iuly The Warwicke 160. tun : in August 100.

The Tigre 40. tun : in August The Sea-flowre 140.tun: in August 120.

The Flying Hart 200, tun: in August 60. Men. and 40. Cattell. To The Disconerie 60, tun : in November 20.

II The Bona None 200. tun : in Noumber 50. 12 The Hope-well 60. tun : in Nouember 20.

13 The God-freed 150. tun : in Aprill 11622. 14 The Gift of God 140. tun : in Aprill 100.

He Elianor 30. tun : in May | 15 The Prime-Rofe 80. tun : in Aprill 1621. with 10. perfons. 16 The Charnie 80. tun: in April

> 18 The White Lion 180. tun: in May 40 Men, 40. Cattell. 10 The Furtherance 180, tunin May 80,men.

> 20 The May res and lobs 160 tun in May 21 The lames 120, tun : in May Summe of the perions, 1300. Cattell 80.

> > Sent alfo to the Summer Hands by that Company.

22 The lefet 150. tun : in May 1621. 100. perfons.

22 The lames 120, tun : in Iuly 24 The Concord 180. tun : in August

So there is foure and twentie Sayle of thips, with fine hundred Mariners in them imployed to there Plantations in this yeere. Befides, there are now prouiding feuerall ships in divers parts of this Kingdome to transport

to the Plantations about five hundred persons.

And for the benefit of the Plantations these things following have beene here done this yeere.

Sixteene persons and others have beene provided and sent for the making of Beads for erade Beads. in the Countrie with the Natiues, and for making Glaffe of all forts.

Seven and fiftie voung Maides have beene fent to make wives for the Planters, divers of which Maids. were well married before the comming away of the Ships.

50 A Magazine hath beene fent of all necessaries for the Colonie, to the value of two thousand Magazines pound, besides all private mens sending goods, which was very ample, Trade being fer open for all his Majesties Subjects. A ship called the Discouerie, hath beene set out for the rich Trade of Furre-trade. Furres, which both the French and Hollanders have yearely within our Precincts, and within fiftie leagues of vs. Fine and twentie persons for the building of Boats, Pinnasses and Ships, for the Boat-builders; necessarie vie of the Colonie for fishing, Trade, and Discouerie, &c. Seuen persons sent for planting the thousand Acres of Land given to the East Indie Schoole.

Other Occurents of Note.

The Gouernours arrivall in Virginia, at the end of the last Summer, with nine thips, and neere feuen hundred people, all tately, and in good health. The admirable deliuerance of diuers ships; and namely, of the Tiger, which beeing driven strangely neere two hundred leagues out of her courle, fell into the Turkes hands, and yet came faue to Virginia.

Mafter

LIB. IX.

Iren.

Master Berkleyes Letters ashire vs , that there is not a more fit place for Iron-workes then in Virginia, both for Wood, Water, Mynes, and Stone: and that by Whitfontide next, wee may relie voon Iron made by him.

Corton

The Plants of Cotton-wooll trees that came out of the West Indies, prosper exceeding well. and the Cotton-wooll-feeds from the Mogels Countrie come vp, and grow: Samples of it they have fent; and this Commoditie they hope this yeere to bring to a good perfection and ogantitie. - The Indico Seed thrines well, but they yet want knowledge how to cure it.

Indico. V.nes.

Our Frenchmen affure vs that no Countrie in the World is more proper for Vines, Silke, Oliues. R ce, &c. then Urginia, and that it excelleth their owne Countrey. The Vines beeing in abundance naturally ouer all the Countrey ta taste of which Wine they have alreadie fent vs. with 10 hope the next yeare to lend vs a good quantitie. There bee Mulberie trees in wonderfull abundance, and much excelling both in goodneffe and greatneffe thole of their Countrey of Lanene. docke. To the full periecting of both which rich Commodities of Wine and Silke, there wanteth nothing but hands. And of the Mulb: ries may bee made also good wholelome Wine for

Silke and Mulberies.

the people there. And of a certaine Plumme in the Countrey, they have made good drinke, Salt-workes are erecting (the proper place being now found, as the Rocheller doth certific ve) whereby many ships will transport people at easier races hereafter, finding Salt there to furnish them for the great and profitable fiftings upon that Coast, whither twentie fayle of thips went

Plum-drinke. Salt-workes.

this last yeare out of the Westerne parts of England, besides the ships formerly mentioned, Maiter John Porie hath of late made a Discourrie into the great Bay Northward (yet at the 20 bottome of it he was not, referning it to a fecoud Voyage) where are now fetled neere one hun-New Difcouedred English very happily, with hope of a good Trade of Furresthere to bee had. And Terra

Lemnia was lent vertom thence, which is found as good as that of Tunker, and is in great abun-In February last he likewise discourred to the South River, some fixtie miles over Land from

. vs, a very fruttiuli and plealant Countrey, full of Rivers, wherein are two Harvests in one week - (the great King giuing him friendly entertainment, and defirous to make a league with vs) hee found also there in great quantitie of the same Silke-grasse (as appeareth by the samples lent vs) whereof Maiter Heror in his Booke 1587. makes relation, who then brought home some of it, with which a piece of Grogeran was made, and given to Queene Elizabeib, and some heere who 30 have lived in the East Indies affirme, that they make all their Cambana Stuffes of this, and Coo ton-wooll. Allo in his paffage by Land, Maiter Pores discouered a Countrey full of Pine-trees, abouetwentie miles long, whereby a great abundance of Pitch and Tarre may bee made : and other forts of woods there were, fit for Pot-athes and Sope-athes,

The Indians have maderelation of a Copper Myne, that is not farre from thence, how they gather it, and the firange making of it : a piece whereof was lent home being found (after trial) very excellent metall. Some of the English have made relation of a China Boxe leene at one of the Kings Houses, who declared, that it was sent him from the Well , by a King that dwels ouer the great Hils, whose Countrey is neere the Sea, he having that Boxe from a people as hee faid, that come thicherin flips, and weare clothes, and dw. ll in Houtes, and are called Acanack. 40 ching. And he offered our people that he would fend his Brother slong with them to that King: which the Gouernour purpoteth not to refuse, hoping thereby to discouer the South Sea, to long talked of.

Summer Iland

A small ship comming in December last from the Summer-Ilands, to Virginia, brought thither from thence thele Plants, viz. Vines of all forts, Orange and Leman trees, Sugar Canes, Caffado Roots (that make bread) Pines, Plantans, Potatoes, and fundry other Indian fruits and plants, not formerly feene in Virginia, which begin to prosper very well.

Gifts.

The Gentlemen and Mariners that came in the Royall I ames, from the East Indies (beeing at Cape Bona Speranza homeward bound) gave towards the building of a Free Schoole in Virginia, to be called the East Indie Schoole, the fumme of icuentie pound eight shillings fix pence.

Towards the furtherance of the faid East India Schoole, an vinknowne perion hath added the

A person resuling to be made knowne, hath given the summe of fortie shillings a yeere for cafumme of thirtie pound. uer, tor a Sermon, before the Virginia Company thirtie pounds.

At a Quarter Court held the thirtieth of January 1621, by a person not willing as yet to bee knowne, was sent in Gold to helpe forward the East Indue Schoole, fine and twentic pounds.

At the fame Quitter Court, a small Bible, with a couer richly wrought; agreat Church Bible; 63 Bookes of Common Prayer; and other Books were presented to be sent to Ungmia, in the name of a person who had the yeere before fint, for the vie of the Colledge at Henrico, divers Bookes, and an exact Map of America; the Giver is not knowne, but the Bookes are valued at cenne Giuen

CHAP.15. S.2. Parents granted. Newes fent. Restraint for Trade.

Given by Master Thomas Bargrane, Preacher in Virginia deceasted, for the vie of the Colledge. a Library valued at a hundred Markes.

And there is a contribution made by the Inhabitants in Virginia, for the building of an house of entertainment for new commers at Iames Citie, amounting to the value of fifteene hundred

Patents granted this yeere.

14 To Sir George Teardly. To the Ladie Dale. To Sir Dudly Digger. 1 e To Master Thomas Leneson. To Sat John Bourchier. 16 To Captaine William Wildon 17 To Mailer Henry Souther. To Captaine Ralph Hamer. 18 To Martins Hundred. To Mailer Arthur Swayne, &c. 19 To Mafter Robert Mofton. To Matter Rowland Trueloue, &cc. To Maffer Iobu Crowe. 20 To Master Edmand Wynne. 21 To Captaine Henry Pelbam, &c. To Mailer Edward Rider. 22 To Captaine Daniell Tucker. To Cantaine Simon Leeke. 23 To Sir Bowyer Worlly. 10 To Matter Daniell Gookin. 11 To Maiter Edward Bennet. 24 To Mafter Thomas Buckley. 13 To Mafter lofeph Lemmg. 25 To Malter Francis Harwell. 20 11 To Sir Charles North. 26 To Sir Iohn Brooke.

Who together with their Affociates, have undertaken to transport great multitudes of people and cattle to Virginia.

Newes from Virginia in Letters fent thence 1621. partly published by the Company, partly transcribed from the Originals, with Lesters of his Maiestie, and of the Company touching Silke-workes.

for Virginia two and fortie Saile of thips, three thousand flue hundred and feventie featto Virginia men and women for Plantation, with requisite provisions, besides store of Cattle, and in the three men and women for Planeation, with require prouinons, penaes more or Cattle, and at those ships haugheene about tweller hundred Mariners imployed: There hath also Saile of ships, beene tent in those yeeres nine fin ps to the Summer Ilands with about nine hundred people to 1200, Mariners inhabit there, in which ships two hundred and fortie Mariners were imployed. In which space imployed, have beene granted fifty Patents to particular persons, for Plantation in Virginia, who with their 1500. To the Affociates have undertaken therein to transport great multitudes of people and cattell thither, 40 which for the most parc is since performed, and the residue now in preparing, as by the seuerall Declarations of each yeare in their particulars, (manifested and approoued in our generall and imployed, publike Quarter-Courts) and for the fuller latisfaction of all defirous to understand the particularities of such proceedings, hath beene by printing commended to the understanding of all.

Sir Francis West was fent Gouernour into Virginia, who arrived there in November 162 1. with Mafter George Sandys Treasurer, Mafter Danifon Secretarie, &c. In the nine fhips fenc in that Fleet died but one Passenger of seven hundred, in whose roome there was another also borne at Sea. Their provisions were not found so well conditioned as was expected. The Sailers are full blamed for imbezelling the goods fent to private persons, for killing of Swine, inordinate trucking &c. It was ordained that for every head they should plant but a thousand plants of Toto bacco (and for the better (trength not to fuffer aboue nine leanes to grow on each plant) which will make about a hundred weight.

Master Gookin arrived also out of Ireland with fiftie men of his owne, and thirtie Passengers well furnished. The present gaine by Tobacco, had made the planting of Corne to be neglected: and some thinke that if Corne might there be valued (not at two shillings fixe pence the bushell) as deere as that which is brought from hence, there would be lefte feare of famine, or dependance on Tobacco.

The Letters written from the Governour and Treasurer in Variation the beginning of Alarch last, (which came hither in Aprill) gaue assurance of ouercomming and bringing to pertection in this yeere, the Iron-workes, Glasse-workes, Salt-workes, the plentifull sowing of all forts of to English graine with the Plough, having now cleered good quantitie of ground; fetting of flore of Indian Corne or Maiz, sufficient for our felues, and for trucke with the Natives; reftration of the quantitie of Tobacco, and amendment of it in the qualitie, learned by time and experience: The planting of Vines and Mulberie trees neere to their Houles, Figge-trees, Pomegranates, Potatoes, and Cotton-would Seeds, Pocoon, Indico, Sugar Canes, Madder, Woade, Hempe, Flaxe,

Nthe three last yeares of 1619. 1620. and 1621. there hath beene prouided and fent 1570, people

and Silke-graffe; and for the erecting of a faire Inne in lames Citie for the better entertainment of new commers, whereto and to other publike workes, every old Planter there offered freely and liberally to contribute. I write the words of their Letters. And how in a late Discourrie made. a few moneths before by some of them to the Southward, they had past thorow great Forrests of

Pines, fifteene or fixteene miles broad, and aboue threescore miles long, very fit for Mastsfor shipping, and for Pitch and Tarre, and of other forts of woods fit for Pot-ashes and Sope-ashes. and came vnto a most fruitfull Countrey, blessed with abundance of Corne, reaped twice a yeere (within the limits of Virginia) where also they understand of a Copper Myne, an estay whereof was fent, and voon triall here found to be very rich; and met with a great deale of Silke-graffe there growing, which monethly may be cut, of which kinds, and Cotron-wooll, all the Came To baya and Bengala Stuffes are made in the East Indies : and of which kindes of Silke-graffe was

M. Haristinhis heretofore made a piece of Grogeram giuen to Queene Elizabeth. And how that in Decem-Books of Vin- ber lait they had planted and cultivated in Unginia Vines of all (as well those naturally growing, as those other Plants sent them from these parts of Europe) Orengeand Lemon-trees, Figtrees, Sugar Canes, Cotton-wooll, Caffaui Roots (that make very good bread) Plantanes, Potatoes, and fundry other Indian fruits and Plants not formerly feene in Virginia, which at the time of their faid Letters began to profeer very well as also their Indico Seed, for the true cure whereof there is lately cauled a Treatife to be written. Furthermore, they write that in a Voyage made by Lieutenant Marmaduke Parkinfon, and

other Englis Gentlemen, up the River of Patomacke they faw a China Boxe at one of the Kings 20 Houses where they were. This Boxe or Casket was made of braided Palmito, painted without, and lined in the infide with blue Taffata after the China or East India fashion. They enquiring whence it came, the King of Patomecke faid, it was presented him by a certaine people of the Mountaines toward the South-west, who got it from another Nation beyond them some thirtie dayes journie from Patomacke, called Acana Echinac, beeing of small stature, who had Houses. Apparell, and Houshold stuffe like vs, and living within foure dayes journey of the Sea, had ships come into their River : and he his Brother along with them to that King, which offer the Gouernour purposed not to refuse ; and the rather, by reason of the continual constant relations of all those Sauages in Virginia, of a Sea, and the way to it West, they affirming that the heads of all those feuen goodly Ruers (the least whereof is greater then the River of Thomes, and Navigable 30 about an hundred and fiftie miles, and not about fixe or eight miles one from another) which fall all into one great Bay, have their rifing out of a ridge of Hils, that runnes all along South and North : whereby they doubt not but to find a lafe, easie, and good passage to the South Sea, part by water, and part by Land, efteeming it not about an hundred and fiftie miles from the head of the Falls, where we are now planted; the Discouerie whereof will bring forth a most rich Trade to Carbay, China, Iapan, and those other of the East Indees, to the inestimable benefit of this

Moreouer, the Letters of Mafter John Berkley, formetimes of Benerstone Caftle in the Countie of Glocester, (a Gentleman of an Honourable Family) likewise certifie, that a more fit place for Iron-workes (whereof he was made Mafter and Ouer-leer) then in Vaginia, both for Wood, 40 Water, Mynes, and Stone, was not to be found : And that by Whitfontide the Company might relye vpon good quantities of Iron made by him : which also by Letters from Matter George Sandys the third of March last, was confirmed, with this farther description of the place (called The falling Creeke) to be to fitting for that purpose, as if Nature had applyed her selfe to the wish and direction of the Workman; where also were great stones hardly seene else-where in Unguna, laying on the place, as though they had beene brought thither to advance the crection

of those Workes. The Letters of the French Vignerous or Vine-men, procured out of France, and fent ouer into Virginia, did likewise assertaine, that no Countrey in the World was more proper for Vines, Silke, Rice, Olines, and other frints, then Verginia is: and that it far excelled their owne Coun-So trie of Languedocke; the Vines of divers forts being in abundance naturally over all the Countrey. They fearfly belecued those fruits to be Grapes till they had opened them and seene their kernels; such was their bignesse. They are in lone with the Countrey, and having planted some cuttings of Vines at Michaelmas last, in their Letters affirme that these bare Grapes alreadie this Spring to their great wonder, as being a thing they suppose not heard off in any other Countrie. A tafte of Wine made of the wilde Grape, they last yeere fent, with hope to fend a good quantitie this next Vintage; and that the Mulbery trees, where they abode were in wonderfull abundance, and much excelling both in goodnesse and greatnesse those of their owne Countrey of Languedonte: and that those Silke-wormes they have, prosper exceeding well, and some Silke they hope to fend this yeere, there wanting nothing to fet vp that rich Commoditie but flore of 60 hands where with England doth abound. Of the fruit of which Mulbery trees (as of a Plumme there plentifully growing) they would make wholsome Drinkes for the Colonie and people

Opachankanengh doted on a house which the English had built for him of our fashion : hee

CHAP.15. S. 2. Copper Peeses. His Maieft, Letter to the Treasurer of Virginia, 1787

dwelled therein, shewed it to his owne people and strangers with pride, keeping his Keves charily, and bufying himfelfe with locking and vnlocking the doores, fometimes a hundred times in a day, admiring the ilrangenesse of that Engine, a Locke and Key. Hee gaue the English leave to feate themselues any where on his Rivers where the Natives are not actually seated, and entred into further couenants of amity, for reciprocall defence, mutuall transportation, discouery of mines, &c. They report also of Copper Peeces presented to Opachank. which Copper is gathered at the foote of the Mountaines, where they digge a hole in the ground, in which they put the oare, and make thereon a great fire, which causeth it to runne into a masse, and become malleable : neither haue they any tooles, but smooth stones for that purpose. This seemed strange to to ours which heard the English Copper passeth eleven fires.

His Maiesties gracious Letter to the Earle of South-hampton, Treasurer, and to the Counsell and Company of Virginia here: commanding the present setting vp of Silke workes, and planting of Vines in Virginia.

20 R Ight truity and welbeloued, We greete you well: whereas We understand, that the Soyle in Vica 20 R inia naturally yreldeth store of excellent Mulberry trees, We have taken into Our Princely consider stion the creat benefit that may grow to the Aduenturers and Planters, by the breede of Silkewormes, and setting up of Silkeworkes in those parts. And therefore of Our gracious Inclination to a designe of so much benour and advantage to the publike, We have thought good, as at fundry other times, so now more particularly to recommend it to your specialisare, hereby charging and requiring you to take specdy order, that our people there, vie all possible diligence in breeding Silkewormes, and erecting Silkewrites, and that they rather bettem their transfel is sempaffing this rich and folds. Commodity, then in that of Tobacce; which befildes much unnestifier expense, trungs with it many diforders and necessaries.

And or a much as One Trease, to his Boncol that he have paint in fetting downer the rivers of the contraction of the contract of the Silkeworme, together with the Art of Silkemaking, and of planting Vines, and that his experience and abilities may much conduce to the advancement of this businesse; We doe hereby likewise require you to canfe his directions, both for the faid Silkeworkes and Vineyards, to be carefully put in practice thorowone our Plantations there, that fo the worke may goe on cheerefully, and receive no more interruptions

Given under Our Signet, at our Pallace of Westminster, the ninth day of July, in the twentieth yeare of our Raigne of England, France and Ireland, and of Scotland the five and fiftieth.

To Our right trusty and right welbeloued Cousin and Councellour, HENRY, Earle of Southbampton, Treasurer of our Plantation in Virginia, and to Our trusty and webeloued, the Deputy, and others of Our faid Plantation.

Virginia.

WINDEBANK.

The Treasurour, Counsell and Company of Virginia, to the Governour and Counsell of State in Virginia residing.

Fier our very harry commendations: His Sacred Maiesty, out of his high wisedome and care of A the noble Plantation of Virginia, hath beene graciously pleased to direct his Letters to Us here in England, thereby commanding vs to advance the fetting up of Silkworkes, and clanting of Vineyards; as by the Copy herewith Cent, you may perceise.

The intimation of his Maiesties pleasure, we conceine to be a motine sufficient, to induce you to imploy all your indexors to the festing forward those two Staple Commodities of Silke and Wine; which brought to their perfection, will infinitely redound to the bonour, benefit, and comfort of the Colony, and of this whole Kingdome: yet we, in discharge of our duties, doe againe renew our often and iterated Instruction ons, and muite you cheerefully, to fall upon these two so rich, and necessary Commodities And if you hall finde any person, either through negligence or wilfulnesse, to omit the planting of Vines, and Mulberry trees, in orderly and busbandly manner, as by the Booke is prescribed, or the providing of convenient 60 roomes for the breeding of Wormes; me defire they may by senere censures and punishment, be compelled thereunto. And on the contrary, that all fauour and possible assistance be given to such as yeelde willing obedience to his Highnesse Commands therein. The breach or performance whereof as we are bound to give a first account, so will it also be required of you the Governour and Countell especially. Herein there can be no Plea, either of difficulty or impossibility; but all the contrary appeares, by the natural a Kkkkkkk

Forrest of

with the Sa-

French Vigne-

The Broke is Vines & oth r husbandry;but

abundance of those two excellent Plants afore-named enery where in Virginia: neither will such excuses be admitted, nor any other pretences ferme, whereby the businesse be at all delayed : and as wee formerly fent at our great charge the French Vignerons to you, to teach you their Art; fo for the lame timele we now commend this Booke visto you, to ferue as an Instructions to enery one, and fend you flore of them remeta, con- tomme comment to be difer sed ouer the whole Colony, to enery Master of a Family one, Sike-seede you feall receive also good tulesboth by thu Ship, sufficient to store enery man : so that there wants nothing, but industry in the Planter, sudtor Siknorks, denly to bring the making of Silke to its perfection : which either for their owne benefit (we hope) they will willingly indeuour, or by a whole some and necessary severity they must be inforced.

Thu particular adnice we thought necessary to give you, lest that if it should have come to you minoled to be injected, with others, you would have interpreted at as a common Instruction, or a businesse that was not taken fo to heart, as this by Us. and we hope will be by you in bumble obedience to his Sacred Maiesties Rorall Instructions. The paines and industry of the Anthour, for the benefit of the Plantations (being a member of our Company) are sufficient arguments of his good affection to the Action, and they both deferne your best acceptance and ours, that others may thereby be innited to impart their knowledge in businesse of Juni ocis acceptance and in Sereby the Colony may not oxely be supported for the present, but brought to that perfection, that may redound to the glory of God, the honour of his Maiestie, and the inestimable benefit of his noble Kingdomes; which as they are the true aime and end the Aduenturers and Planters have proposed unto themselves, so ought they to be still the honorable seedes to put others also forward in this action : we commend this businesse againe to your speciall care. And so we commit you all, and your maighty of aires, to the protection of the Almighty.

HENRY Southampton.

S. III.

The barbarous Massacre committed by the Sauages on the English-Planters, March the two and twentieth, 1621. after the English accompt.

He last May there came Letters from Sit Francis Wist Governour in Uirginia, which did advertise that when in November last heartned in Virginia, and entred upon his Government, he found the Country setled in a peace (as all men there thought) sure and viunotable, not onely because it was folemnly ratified and sworne, and at the request of the Natiue King flamped in Braffe, and fixed to one of his Oakes of note, but as being aduantagious to both parts; to the Saungesas the weaker, under which they were lafely sheltred and defended; to vs, as being the ealiest way then thought to pursue and advance our projects, or buildings, plantings, and effecting their conversion by peaceable and faire meanes. And such was the conceit of hime peace and amity, as that there was feldome or neuer a Sword worne, and a Peece iel- 40 Hafty fecurity, cent of mime peace and annay, as that the Plantations of particulation of centre of the Plantations of particulation of the Plantation of particulation of the Plantation of particulation of the Plantation of the lar Aduenturers and Planters were placed featteringly and flraglingly as a choyce veine of rich ground inuited them, and the further from neighbours held the better. The houses generally set open to the Sauages, who were alwayes friendly entertained at the table of the English, and commonly lodged in their Bed-chambers. The old Planters (as they thought now come to reape the benefit of their long trauels) placed with wonderfull content upon their private dividends, and the planting of particular Hundreds and Colonies puritied with an hopefull alacrity, all our proiects (faith he) in a faire way, and their familiarity with the Natines, feeming to open a faire

diffimulation Englifa fecurity

gate for their conversion to Christianity. The Country being in this estate, an occasion was ministred of sending to Opachantano the King 50 of thele Sauages, about the middle of March last, what time the Messenger returned backe with these words from him, That be beld the peace concluded so firme, as the Skie |bould sooner fall then it disfoluced : yea, such was the treacherous distimulation of that people, who then had contribed our de struction, that even two dayes before the massacre, some of our men were guided thorow the woods by them in fafety : and one Browne, who then to learne the language lived among the Warrafcoyacks (a Province of that King) was in friendly manner fent backe by them to Captaine Hamor his Matter, and many the like pullages, rather increating our former confidence, then any wife in the world ministring the least inspition of the breach of the peace, or of what instantly enfired; vea, they borrowed our owne Boats to conney themselves crosse the River (on the bankes of both ides whereof all our Plantations were) to confult of the divellish murder that ensued, 60 and of our veter extirpation, which God of his mercy (by the meanes of some of themselves converted to Christianity) presented ; and as well on the Friday morning (the fatall day) the two and twentieth of March, as alfo in the euening, as in other dayes before, they came vinarmed into our houses, without Bowes or Arrowes, or other weapons, with Deere, Turkies, Fifth, Furres,

and other prouisions, to fell and trucke with vs for Glasse Beades, and other trifles : yea, in some places, far downe at Breakfait with our people at their tables, whom immediately with their owne tooles and weapons, either laid downe, or flanding in their houses, they bately and barbarously murthered, not sparing eitherage or fexe, man, woman or childe; so fodaine in their cruell execution, that few or none discerned the weapon or blow that brought them to defiruction, In which manner they also slew many of our people then at their severall worker and busbandries in the fields, and without their houses, some in planting Corne and Tobacco, some in gardening, fome in making Bricke, building, fawing, and other kindes of husbandry, they well knowing in what places and quarters each of our men were, in regard of their daily familiarity, and refort to vs for trading and other negotiations, which the more willingly was by vs continued and cherified for the delire we had of effecting that great mafter-peece of workes, their conver-

fion. And by this meanes that fatall Friday morning, there fell under the bloudy and barbarous hands of that perfidious and inhumane people, contrary to all lawes of God and Men, of Nature and Nations, three hundred and forty feuen men, women, and children, most by their owne basely murcheweapons: and not being content with taking away life alone, they fell after againe woon the red, some think dead, making as well as they could a fresh murder, defacing, dragging, and mangling the dead more. carkaffes into many peeces, and carrying some parts away in derition, with base and bruitish triumph. Neither yet did these Beafts spare those amongst the rest well knowne vnto them, from whom they had daily received many benefits and favours, but spitefully also massacred them.

One instance of it, amongst too many shall ferue for all.

Toat worthy religious Gentleman, Mafter George Thorpe Elquire, Deputie of the Colledge He had written lands, lometimes one of his Maiesties Pensioners, and in one of the principall places of command letters the year lands, tometimes one of his Maiettes Pentioners, and in one or the principal places of command before, May 17 in *Directia*, did fo truely and earneitly affect their convertion, and was fo tender over them, that sefficies the whofocuer ynderhis authority had given them but the least displeasure or discontent, hee punish plentiful comed them feuerely. He thought nothing too deate for them, and as being defirous to binde them ming up of the voto him by his many courtefies, he never denied them any thing that they asked him, infomuch Cotten feede, that when thele Sanges complained vnto him of the fierceneffe of our Maftines, molt implace- &c.attributing that when these Sanages complained with him of the hercenesie of our Matties, most implacts the ill successe ble and terrible with other (knowing them by inflined it seems, to be but treacherous and false of things, to hearted friends to vs, better then our felues) he to gratifie them in all things, for the winning the not feeking an of them by degrees, caused some of them to be killed in their presence, to the great displeasure of Gods glory of the owners, and would have all thereft guelt (had he not beene hindered) to make them the in connering of the owners, and would have an interest guest (had no not been millered to make what the gentler and the miller to them. Hee was not onely too kinde and beneficiall to the common the Natiues, fort, but allo to their King, to whom he oft reforted, and gaue many prefents which he knew to were peaceabe highly pleafing to him. And whereas this King before dwelt onely in a Cottage, or rather a ble, & wanted denne or Hog-ftye, made with a few poles and flickes, and couered with Mats after their wilde but meanes manner: to civilize him, he first built him a faire House, according to the English fashion, in which (indeed to must (as before is faid) he tooke fuch ioy, especially in his Locke and Key, which hee fo admired, as therstem, which locking and vilocking his doore an hundred times a day, he thought no deuice in all the world timed) Sure

was comparable to it. Thus infinuating himfelfe to this King for his Religious purpoles, he conferred after with him Pitty luch an oft, and intimated to him matters of our Religion ; and thus farre the Pagan confessed moued by Abel should be naturall Principles, that our God was a good God, and better much then theirs, in that hee had fo Kaindetti with fo many good things about them endowed vs. He told him, if he would frue our God, he should be partaker of all those good things we had, and of farre greates then sence or reason euch could imagine. He won voon him, as he thought in many things, so as hee gave him faire heav ring and good answer, and seemed to be much pleased with his discourse, and in his companie. And both he and his people for the daily courtefies this good Gentleman did to one or other of them, did professe such outward love and respect vnto him, as nothing could seeme more : but all was little regarded after by this Viperous brood, as the sequell shewed: for they not onely wilfully murdered him, but cruelly and felly, out of a diuellish malice, did so many barbarous deso fpights and foule fcornes after to his dead corps, as are unbefitting to be heard by any civill eare.

One thing I cannot omit, that when this good Gentleman, vpon his fatall houre, was warned by his man (who perceived fome treachery intended to them by these hell-hounds) to looke to himfelfe, and withall ran away for feare of the milchiefe he strongly apprehended, and fo faued his owne life; yet his Master, out of the conscience of his owne good meaning, and faire deserts ever towards them, was so voide of all inspition, and so full of confidence, that they had sooner killed him, then he could or would believe they meant any ill against him.

At the time of this Maffacre there were three or foure of our Ships in lames River, and one in the next River, and daily more to come in, as three did within foureteene daies after; one of to which they endenoured to have surprised, but in vaine, as had also beene their whole attempt, had any the least fore-knowledge beene in those places where the Massacre was committed : yet were the hearts of the English ever Hupid, and averted from beleeving any thing that might weaken their hopes of speedy winning the Sauages to Civilitie and Religion, by kinde viage and faire converting among it them. Hee, and the whole Counfell writ further, That Almighty God Kkkkkkk 2

Converted 121:22.

Manner of the Sautges life.

(they doubt not) hath his great worke to doe in this Tragedy, and will thereout draw honour and glory to his great Name; lafety, and a more flourishing efface to themselves, and the whole Plantation there; and the more speedy conversion of the Children of those Sauages to himselfe. fince he io miraculously preferred to many of the English, whose delire to draw those people to Religion, by the carelelle neglect of their owne fateries, feemes to have beene the greatest canse or their owne entuing destruction. Yet it pleased God to vie iome of them as instruments to saue many of their lines, whole foules they had tormerly faued, as at lames Citie, and other places. and the Pinnace trading in Pamounkey River; all whole lives were faved by a converted Indian. difclosing the plot in the instant.

These wilde naked Natives live not in great numbers together, but dispersed, and in small 10 companies; and where most cogether, not about two hundred, and that very rare, in other places fifty or forty, or thereabouts, and many miles diffant from one another, in fuch places amono the Woods where they either found, or might easeliest make some cleared plots of ground, which they imploy wholly in fetting of Corne, whereby to fustaine their lines. These small and scattered Companies (as I haue faid) had warning given from one another in all their habitations to meete at the day and houre appointed for our destruction, at all our severall Townes and places feated youn the River ; fome were directed to goe to one place, fome to another, all to be done at the same day and time, which they did accordingly : some entring their Houses under colour of trucking, and fo taking aduantage, others drawing our men abroad vpon faire pretences, and the rest suddenly falling upon those that were at their labours.

By Letters and those that returned it is certified, that besides Master George Thorpe, before mentioned, Mafter John Berkeley, Captaine Nathaniel Powel, and his wife (daughter of Mafter William Tracy, and great with childe) and Captaine Maycocke, all Gentlemen of birth, vertue. and industry, and of the Councell there, suffered vnder this their cruelty and treason. That the flaughter had beene univerfall, if God had not put it into the heart of an Indian belonging to one Perry, to disclose it, who living in the house of one Pace, was veged by another, Indian his brother (who came the night before and lay with him) to kill Pace (so commanded by their King as he declared) as he would kill Perry: telling further, that by fuch an houre in the morning a number would come from divers places to finish the Execution; who failed not at the time: Perries 30 Indian role out of his bed and rewales it to Pace, that wied him as a Sonne : And thus the reft of the Colony that had warning given them, by this meanes was faued, Such was (God be thanked for it) the good fruit of an Infidell converted to Christianity; for though three hundred and more of ours died by many of these Pagan Infidels, yet thousands of ours were faued by the meanes of one of them alone which was made a Christian : Bleffed be God for euer, whose merce endureth for euer; Bleffed be God whose mercy is aboue his suffice, and farre aboue all his works: who wrought this deliuerance whereby their foules escaped euen as a Bird out of the snare of the Fowler.

Pace vpon this discourry, fecuring his house, before day rowed over the River to Iames City (in that place neere three miles in bredth) and gaue notice thereof to the Gouernour, by which An meanes they were preuented there, and at fuch other Plantations as was possible for a timely inselligence to be given; for where they faw vs standing vpon our Guard, at the sight of a Peece they all range away. In other places that could have no notice, some Peeces with munition (the vie whereof they know not) were there carried away, and some few Cattell also were destroyed by them. And as Fame disulgeth (not without probable grounds) their King hath fince caufed the most part of the Gunpowder by him surprized, to be sowne, to draw there-from the like increate, as of his Maiz or Corne, in Harueft next. And that it is fince discourred, that the fed before in last Summer Opachankano practifed with a King of the Easterne shoare (no well-willer of his) CaptainSmites to furnish him with store of poison (naturally growing in his Countrey) for our destruction, which hee absolutely refused, though he sent him great store of Beades, and other Presents to 50 winne him thereunto : which he, with fine or fix of his great men, offered to be ready to instifie against him. That the true cause of this surprize was most by the instigation of the Divell (enemy to their faluation) and the daily feare that poffest them, that in time wee by our growing continually upon them, would dispossesse them of this Country, as they had beene formerly of the West Indies by the Spaniard; produced this bloudy act. That neuer griefe and shame polleffed any people more then themselues, to be thus butchered by so naked and cowardly a people, who date not fland the presentment of a staffe in manner of a Peece, nor an vncharged Peece in the hands of a Woman, from which they flye as to many Hares; much faster then from their tormenting Diuell, whom they worship for feare, though they acknowledge they loue him not.

time.

ta 🦸 1144.

A Note of provisions necessarie for every Planter or personall Adventurer to Virginia : and accidents fince the Maffacre.

He Inconniences that have happened to some persons which have transforted themselves from P. Rigland to Virginia, without proussions necessary to suitant themselves, but greatly him dered the Prograssic of the Noble Plantation. For presention of the like disarders hereaster, that no man fuffer either through ignorance or misinformation; it is thought requisite to publish this loars Declaration; wherein is contarned a particular of [neb nesesfaries, as either primate Families or fingle 10 persons shall have cause to furnish themselves with, for their better support at their first landing in VIIginia; whereby alfo greater numbers may receive in part, directions bow to provide themselves.

Apparell	for one	man	and	ſo	afè	er	the	
••	rate	for n	ore.					

	fate for more.	
	One Monmonth Cap	1.5.10.d.
	Three falling bands	1.5.3.d.
	Three lbirts	7.5.6.1.
	One Wafte-coate	2.5.2.d.
20	One sure of Cannase	7.s.6.d.
	One jule of Cannale	10,5,
	One Sute of Frize	
	One Sute of Cloth	15.8.
	Three paire of Irish stockins	4.5.
	Foure paire of shopes	8.5.8.
	One paire of garters	10.
	One doozen of points	2.d.
	One paire of Canuase sheets	8.5.
	Scuen Ells of Cannafe, to make a bed as	
	to be filled in Virginia	8.5.
30	D C I I I I I I I I I I I I I I I I I I	
-	One Rug for a bed 8.1. which with the	rea jerming
	for two men, balfe is	
	Fine Ells coorfe Canuafe, to make a bei	t at See for
	two men, to be filled with straw 4.5.	5.s.
	One coorfe Rug at Sea for two men, wil	cost 6.s.w
	for one.	
	Jo, 5.104	a.li.
	Victuall for a whole yeere for one	man

and fo for more after the rate.

Eight bulbels of Meale	2.li.
Two bushels of Pease at 3.8.	6. s.
Two bubels of Oatmeales.s.6.d.	9.s.
One gallon of Aquauitæ	2.5.6.
One gallen of Oyle	3.s.6.d.
Two gallons of Uineger 1.5.	2.5
	3.li.3.s.

Armes for one man, but if halfe of your men haue Armour it is sufficient, so that all haue Peeces and Swords.

One Armour compleat, light	17.5.
One long Piece, fine foot or fine and al	
Musket bore	1.11.2.8.
One Sword	5.S.
One Belt	1.S.
Oxe Bandaleere	1.s. 1.s.6.d.
Twentis pound of Powder	18.4.
Twentis pound of Powder Sixtie pound of shot or lead, Pistoll	and Goose
) /001	3.30
	.li.9.s.6.d.

Tooles for a Family of fixe persons, and so after the rate for more.

after the rate for more.	e3 pholib. Hi
Fine broad bowes at 2 s. a piece 10.s.	*
Fine narrow bowes at 16. d. a piece 6.s.8.d.	
Two broad Axes at 3 8.d. a piece 7.8.4.d.	
Fine felling Axes at 18.d. a piece 7.s.6,d.	
Two Steele Hand fames at 16.d. a piece 2.5.8.d.	51.5
Two two-band-sawes at 5.s. a piece 10.s,	
One whip-faw, fet and filed with baxe, file and	
prest 10.5.	÷ 1
Two Hammers 12.d. a piece 2.5.	
Three fouels 18.d. a piece 4.s.6.d.	
Two Spades at 18.d. a piece 3.8,	
Two Augers 6.d. A piece 1.8,	
Six Chiffels 6.d. a piece 3.5.	
Two percers fracked 4.d. a piece 8.d.	
Three simblets 2.d. a piece 6ade	
Two batchets 21.d. a piece 3.5.6.d.	
Two frames to cleane pale 18.d. 34.	
Twe band bils 20. a piece 3.5.4.d.	1 A 1
One Grundleftone 4.5. 4.5.	
Nailes of all forts to the value of 2.li.	
Two Pickaxes 3.5.	
6.li.2 5.8,d.	

Houshold Implements for a Family of fix persons, and so for more or lesse after the rate.

One Iron Pos	7.Se
One Kessle	6.8.
One large frying-pan	2.5.6.d.
One Griddiren	1.s.6.d.
Two Skillets	5.5
One Spit	2.5
Platters, dishes, Speones of wood	4.5
	7 li 8 e

For Sugar, Spice, and fruit and at Sea for fix So the full charge of apparell victuall, armes, stooles, & honihold-lituffe and after this rate for each perfon will amount vinto about the fum of 12.1. 10.5. The passage of each man is The fraight of these provisions for a man, will be about balfe a Tun, which is 1.1.10.s. So the whole charge wil amount to about 20.1.

Nets, Hookes, Lines, and a Tens must be added if the number of people be greater, as also some Kinc. And this is the viwall projection that the Virginia Company doe beflow upon their Tenants which they fend. Who ocuer tran ports himselfe or any other at his owne charge vato Virginia, shall for each person so transported before Midfummer 1625, haue to him and his herres for euer fiftie Acres of Land vpon a first, and fiftie Acres Kkkkkkk 3 Vpon a fecond division.

Cap. 105 Smith. M. Parie. Naked breaft concealed

Sir George Teardly intending to vilit Smulbs Lles, fell ficke and thereupon fent Maffee Forey with Estimen & Moll a Frenchman to finde a convenient place to make Salt, in Namenicus King of Paminiant came and shewed them his naked brack, protesting the inside to be astree ill meaning, aethat from deformitie, and promifing welcome if they would come into his Countrey, which they promifed. After this they having conferred with Kipropeke King of A auchanok, they paffed Ruffels Iles and Onancoke, and arrived at Pawinxunt, at Attentolisomoco the habitation of Namenacus, and Wamanato his brother, who came abourd them with a brother Kerele briefit without, within full of Oyfters. Hee was shewed their hunting conducted forth by the vounger and home by the elder : prefented also with Beauers skinnes, which hee requited wich fuch things as Wamanato faid he would keepe them while hee lived, and burie them with It him being dead : Namenacie his breaft proued vicerous within and treacherous, but without harme to them by reason of their circumfpection:an ambush being prouided in a Wood at a point where they would have had them land. Kiptokepe is the elder brother, and yeelded the movie of his Countrie to the younger, bearing still the greater burthen in government but leffe honour. whereas on the Westerne shore, the younger beares the charge, the elder the dignitie. These are Prouident Sathe most thriftie Sauages, keeping Corne for all the yeere and having to spare, whereas others want for one halfe. They are also more civil!, just reckoners, vie no Black-boy-ceremonies, and in Affinitie and Confanguinitie obserue a larger distance in their Marriages.

Iack of the Feather. G u:e of the Maffacre.

Anno 1623, the Abigail was fent, and therein Captaine Barmick with fine and twentie men to build thins and Boars, and others to build the East Indie Schoole. That fatall Maffacre , fome 20 thinke to have beene occasioned by Nemattanow, a Savage called vivally lacke of the Feather, in best esteeme amongst them for courage and policie; who perswading one Morgan to go with him to Pamannke to trucke, by the way flue him two or three dayes after hee returned to Moreans house, and answered his Servants asking for their Master that hee was dead, whereupon they would have had him to Mafter Thorpe, but hee fo moved their patience that they shot him. Hee (whom the Sauages effeemed free from hurt by the English and shot free)defired before his death that they would bury him with the Englifb, and not make it knowne that hee was flaine with a bullet. Opachancanough was moved with his lofte fo as he threatned revenge, which he could not effect but by treacherous pretence of greatest peace, after fourteene dayes by so many deaths, gining life to the following Tragedie: which you heard delinered by publike Authoritie.

This terrible blow so affrigheed all that it was concluded, that all the pettie Plantations 39 thould be left, to make good a few places (fome fay fine or fix) whither for want of Boats their goods and cattell could not be so suddenly conveyed, but that much was exposed to the Sauages cruell gleanings. Mafter Gookins at Nuperts newes, having thirtie five of all forts with him refused that order, and made good his part against the Sauages. Master Iordan at Beggars Bulb ga-Miltris Profler. chered a few about him, and fortified himfelfe in despight of the enemie. Miltris Profler would have adventured the like, and did it for three weekes till the Officers (as some report) would no longer permit her. Captaine Nuse and Captaine Cramshaw are much for prouidence and valour commended. Waters and his wife were kept prisoners by the Nansamuds (this Edward Waters is one of those three which first stayed in Bermuda, and found the great piece of Ambergreece) 40 whence by chance vpon occasion of a Boat loft by ill weather (whole company were fauled) and comming on their shoare, they being busied in their Triumphs and Dances for ioy, they found opportunitie to get into a Canoa, and escaped to Keconghtan. Captaine Nuce called his Neighbours together when he heard of the Maffacre, entrenched himselfe , and mounted three Peeces of Ordnance, to that in foure dayes hee was strong enough to defend himselfe against all the Barbarian forces. Captaine Craftan with fine others fortified himfelfe in delpight of all the Sauages, with the helpe of other Sauages, and made offer to the Colonie, if they would fend him a shallop with Armes, men and prouision for Trade, that the next Haruest he would prouide them Corne sufficient, which then (in the latter end of June) was little to bee had in the Countrie. Captaine Maddefon is reported to have given over-hastie credit to an exiled King, which com- to ming to Patowomeke for succour and not obtayning it, in reuenge deuised and slandered the Patowomeker with intent of betraying and killing the English: which credulitie produced effects of crueltie and the conceits of bloudie treacherie conceiued (if others conceiue not fallly) treacherie and bloud.

The last Summer 1 623, they fet forth a company which destroyed the Sauages Corneand houfes, and surprized Pamaunke chiefe Seat of Opachancanough. And the last report is that the Colonie is now in health, and that the Sauages have returned feuen of the English which they held prisoners, out of selfe guiltimesse and feare of revenge seeing ships still come thither, and wearie of their watchings and manifold loffes and dangers. Opachankanough the authour of the Maffacre is faid to have come to his end by meanes more lurable to his deferts, then perhaps agreeing with 63 Christian simplicitie. A sicknesse after the Massacre fell among it the English, by reason that from neere eightie Plantations, they were brought to fewer then eight, these distracted with a fudden remoone and diffressed wants. It is thought that 1800, survived both.

His Maiestie not a little moved with the loffe of so many his good Subjects, and some complaints also being made of the Gouernment, many of the Virginian Company here bolding no (uch uniforme agreement as was meete : bath shewed his gracious bomnie in the gift of diners Armes out of the Tower, with further promifes of his affitance; and appointed Commissioners to examine the Canles of Virginias not answering to the care and coft in fo long time bestowed on her. I am no fit Relater of things ensaine. and farre unfitter Vmpire in (uch differences, I will now feake to God rather than men : Quid enim niis vota superlunt. My Pragers shall betothe Almighte for Virginias proferitie ; whose Dwarfish growth after so many yeares, convultions by diffentions there and beere, lamentaions in the complaints of both tides (a Plurifie Stich in ber fidet, continuing after fo much bloud taken from her) weakneffe. 30 Sinne armes after Such Successions of armes and forces ; Tantalean startings amidst both Magazines and fertilute; [ubuer fions bere, and felfe enerfians there (permerfneffe I mention not) rather then connerfions of Sauages after so many learned and boly Dinines sent thither ; ponertie, sicknesse, deaths, in so rich a Soyle, and bealthfull a Climate; what should I say? I can deplore, I doe not much admire, that we have bad so much in Virginia, and bane so little; the promises as probable as large, and yet the premiset geeldung in the conclusion this Virginian sterilite, and meagrene fer ather then the multiplied iffue and shrift of a worthy Matron and Mother of a Family, answerable to her great Inheritance there, and lonter from hence. But what doe I in plaints, where some perhaps will complaine of my complayning? I will expelt better from God and his Maiestie, and while my selsemeane-while in the better thrining of the English Colonie in Bermudas or Summer Hands.

CHAP. XVI.

English Voyges to the Summer Hands; HENRY MAYS Shipwracke there 1593. The first Colonie fent 1612.



I!u

T is now time to leave the Continent and visit Bermudas, of Sir George Summers called Summer Hands. The occasion you had before related by Malter Strachie. and that some of their Company tooke up their abode there. This was not the fift time that English eyes had Reese those Ilands. For in the yeere 1593, Henry May had beene there; one of Captaine Laneasters Company, which had beene in the East Indies, and in returning had put ouer to Trinidad, and thence to Puerso

Rico and Hispaniola for refreshing, where Captaine Liendafter desired a Frenchman Monstenr de Barbotiere, to giue this Henry May paffage home with him. They departed from Lagana the last of Nouember, and December the seuenteenth were wracked on the North-west part of Bermade about midnight. The Pilots making therafelues at noone to be twelue leagues to the Southwards of the Hand, certified the Captaine that they were from all danger : and demanded their wine of height, which they had thought they had beene cast away by the shore, but were seven 40 leagues off; by the helpe of their Boat, and a Raft, fixe and twentie of aboue fiftie were faued. I (faith May) durft not preffe in, but flayed in the ship almost full of water, till the Captaine being entred the Boat, called me to him, and I entred leaving the better halfe of our company to the mercie of the Sea. We rowed all day till an houre or two before night; yer we could come on Land towing the Raft with the Boat. Having beene all day without drinke, wee fought long, and at last one digging among weeds, found fresh water being only raine water, which was all we found. It pleased God that we had faued our Carpenters tooles, and going roundly to worke, webuilt a Barke of some eighteene tun, for the most part with trunnels and a few nailes. For tacklings we made a Voyage to our ship and cut downe her shrouds; in stead of Pitch wee made Lime and mixed it with the Oyle of Tortoifes ; affoone as the Carpenters had calked, fpreading 50 it on with a sticke, which was soone dried by the heat, being in Aprill wee hasted away for feate

of water failing vs. We made two great chifts and calked them, and stowed them on each fide our maine Mast, and so put in our provisions of raine water, and thirteene living Tortoyses for our food. The Hogs were leane, and there was store of Fowle, Fish and Tortoyses. There is also good fishing for Pearles.

The eleventh of May we were cleere of the Land for our Voyage to New-found-land, and on the twentieth fell with the Land neere to Cape Briton, and thence to the Banke of New-foundland, where a Barke of Falmouth tooke vs in, wherein I had pallage home, and arrived at Falmonth in August 1594. Thus much for May.

Let vs now heare the Relation sene from an English Colonie planted there under the gouern-60 ment of Mafter Richard Moore. This following Discourse hath beene printed, and was added to a Tractate of Matter Siluester Iordan touching the wracke of Sir Thomas Gates and Sir George Summers on the Bermudas, which beeing delivered more fully by Master Stracbie fup. cap. 6. I have here omitted, and proceed to the English proceedings in those Ilands.

Being bound for the Sommer Hands, in the Ship called the Plough, wee imbarked the eight and

Sain: Georges Illand. Three men had ft nea behind and went

Harter Water.

and Chard.

twentieth of Aprill. 1612. So passing downe to Granefend, wee anchored at Tilbery-lope, vntill the fith of May. The wind comming faire, wee purforth and came to the Downes the fixth of May, where we stated till the ninth. And then setting forward wee had a faire and comfortable pallage, and by Gods bleding found to direct a courte, that on the eleventh of July in the morning. between nine and ten of the clocke wee descried our hoped and desired Hands, and in the afternoone of the fame day, about three a clocke, wee arrived in a verie fafe harbour neere S. Georges Hand, there wee landed all our men and women, and had beene at anchor about an houre, before wee could heare of our three men which had beene left there. As foone as wee had landed all our company, we went all to praier, and gaue thankes voto the Lord for our lafe arrivalland whilest wee were at praier. wee faw our three man come rowing downe tows, the fight of whom did Ic not to Virginia. much rejoyce vs : to they welcomming vs, and wee the like to them againe, we fung a Palme, and praised the Lord for our fate meeting, and went to supper.

The next day, being the Sabbath day, which wer dedicated to God in the boft manner wee could, wee abode fill in the forelaid Hand, with all the reft of our company till Munday morning. being the thirteenth of luly : Then we went up with our Ship and company higher into the herbour, to the place where these three men had planted themselves. They had planted Corne great fore of Wheat, Beanes, Tobacco and Mellons, with many other good things for the vie of man: Besides they had wrought upon Timber, in squaring and sawing of Cedar Trees, for they intended to build a small Pinnace to carrie them into Virginia, being almost out of hope and comfort of our comming; because Cap. Danies time was to have beene with them long before we came. 20

Wee were no fooner come withing a league of the Land, but a company of Fish, as it were. met vs and neuer left vs till wee were come to an ankor within the harbour; and as foone as we had naffed oner our bufineffe, and all things fafe and in order, with a Hooke and Line weet to be more then our whole company was able to eate, fo that there was enough to feed many more. The next day after the Sabbath, wee went with our Net and Boat, and if we would have loaded two Boats wee might; and so may you do day by day, Fishes doe so abound and there be of these forts, Mullets, Breames, Hog-fifth, Rock-fifth and Lobstars, with more forts of other Fifth which I cannot name.

Turkles there be of a mightie bignesse; one Turkle will serue or suffice three or source score at a meale, especially if it be a shee Turkley for shee will have as many Egges as will suffice fiftie or 30 threefcore at a meale : This I can allure you, they are verie good and wholfome meat, none of it bad, no not fo much as the veria Guts and Maw of it, for they are exceeding fat, and make as good Tripes as your beafts bellies in England. And for Fowle we went the third day of our arrivall vnto the Bird Hands (as wee call them Landwing norther Stick, nor Stone-bow, nor Gun, we tooke them wo with our hands fo many as wee would me that enerie one of the company were to have fome three, some foure a piece , three for a child, boy or girle, for a man foure ; then reckon what those that served some sourcescore people did amount vnto. But this is for certaine, if wee would haue brought awaie twice fo many more we might.

Some fixe daies after our comming, wee fent out for Hogges, fo the company which went out brought home some : for the meate of them, I hold your Mutton of England not of so sweet and 40

For the inclination of the weather, confidering in what climate it lies, wee have had for the space of some fortie daies no raine, but verie coole and fresh gales of wind, yet in the day time verie hot : but wee agree with it verie well, and not a man that had lien ficke or difeated, but all likes well, and followes and imploies themselves to one businesse or other.

For the fruites which the Land yeelds, they bee the Mulberrie, great flore, and Peares which have in them a red liquor, as the Pomgranat hat , or somewhat redder , but verie wholsome ; if you eate an hundred at one time, you shall never surfet of them, if you eate some proportion of them they will bind, but if you exceed in eating of them, then are they of the contrarie operation : yet neuer any that hurt themselves by them, eate they neuer fo many. It is certaine, that one 50 man eate aboue a peck of them in some ten houres, and was neuer the worse. We have a kind of Berrie voon the Cedar Tree verie pleafant to eate; and for the Palmito Tree, the top of it is a great deale fweeter and wholtomer then any Cabedge.

In fome of our Ilands there growes Pepper, but not fo good as our Indian Pepper: divers forts of other good things there is, which the feuerall times of the yeere bring forth one after another: but the top of the Palmito Tree is in season and good all the yeere. Take a Hatchet and cut him or an Augar and bore him, and it yeelds a very pleasant liquor, much like vnto your tweet Wines; it beares likewise a Berrie in bignesse of a Prune, and in tatte much like.

Also wee have Olives grow with vs, but no great store : many other good excellent things wee haue grow with vs, which this short time will not permit mee to write of so largely as 1 60 might; but this is of truth, that Hogs, Turkles, Fish, and Fowledoe abound as dust of the earth: for Amber-greece and Pearle wee have not had leafure, in fo few dates tince our arrivall to goe looke out for the one, or to fifh for the other; but the three men which were left there, have found of them both. Also they have made a great deale of Tobacco, and if some would come that have

CHAP.16. Three forts of Timber. Articles propounded, and subscribed onto.

kill in making it, it would be verie commodious, both to the Merchant, and to the maker of it. And for the Silk-worme, if any were brought ouer, and some of skill to vie them, there would bee Timber Trees. rery much good done with them, for the verie Spider in thefe our llands doth weaue perfect fine * I have omit-Silke, both Yellow and White.

The Timber of the Countrey confifteth of three forts, the one is the Cedar, verie fine Timber this discourse, to worke vpon, of colour red, and verie lweet : the other forts we have no name for, for there is none in the company hath feene the like in other Countries before we came, &c.

ted the reft of as being better knowne to later Writers,

10 A Copie of the Articles which Master R. Mon E, Gouernour Deputie of the Sommer Ilands, propounded to the Company that were there with him to be subscribed unto, which both he and they subscribed the second of August, in his house, Anno 1612. which about the same time he fent into England, to the Worshipfull Company
of the Aduenturors.

 \sqrt{V} Ee, who have here under subscribed our names, being by the great goodnesses God safely arrived at the Sommer Ilands, with purpose here to inhabite, doe hereby promise 20 and bind our felues to the performance of the feuerall Articles hereafter following, and that in the presence of the most glorious God, who hath in mercy brought vs hither.

First, We doe faithfully promise, and by these presents solemnly binde our selues ever-more to worthing that aforefaid only true and euerliung God, who hath made the Heauens, and the Earth. the Sea, and all that therein is, and that according to those rules that are prescribed in his most holy Word, and ever to continue in that faith into the which wee were baptifed in the Church of England, and to stand in defence of the same against all Atheists, Papists, Anabaptists, Browniffs, and all other Heretikes and Sectaries what soever, differing from the said Word and Faith. Secondly, because the keeping of the Sabboth day holy, is, that wherein a principall part of Gods worthip doth confift, and is as it were the Key of all the other parts thereof, wee do there-

30 fore in the presence aforesaid promise, That wee will set apart all our owne labours and implovments on that day, voleffeit be those that be of meere necessitie, much more vaine and vnfruitfull practiles, and apply our felues to the hearing of Gods Word, Prayer, and all other exercifes of Religion in his Word required, to the vitermost of our power.

Thirdly, Seeing the true worship of God and holy-life cannot be seuered, we doe therefore promife in the presence aforesaid, That to the vttermost of our power we will like together in doing that which is just, both sowards God and Man, and in particular we will forbeare to take the most holy name of God in vaine, in ordinary swearing by it, or any other thing, or by scoffing, or vaine abuling of his most holy Word, or to vie curing, or filthy speeches, or any other thing forhidden in Gods most holy Word, as also to line together without stealing one from another, or 40 quarrelling one with another, or flandering one of another : And to avoide all things that fland not with the good effate of a Christian Church and well gouerned Common-wealth, asalfoto embrace the contrary, as luftice, and Peace, Loue, and all other things that fland with the good

and comfort of Societie. Fourthly, Whereas we are here together farre remote from our native foile of England, and yet are indeed the naturall Subjects of our most Royall and gracious King I A M E s of England, Sconland, France, and Ireland, King, Defender of the Farth, &c. Wee doe therefore in the presence aforelaid, folemnly promise enermore 20 continue the loyall Subjects of our faid Soueraigne King, his Heires and Successors, and neuer to result from him, or them, voto any other what soeuer, but euermore to acknowledge his Supreme Gouernment.

Fiftly, Whereas were were fent hither by divers Adventurers of the Citie of London, and other parts of the Realme of England, wee doe here in the presence aforesaid promise to vie all diligence for the good of the Piantation, and not to purloyne or imbefell any of the prohibited commodities out of the generall estate, but to vie all faithfulnesse, asit becommeth Christians to doe, as also to bee obedient to all such Governour or Governours, or their Deputie or Deputies, as are, or shall be by them sent to gouerne vs; As also to yeeld all renerence towardes the Ministery or: Ministers of the Gospel, sent, or to be sent.

Sixtly and lattly, Wee doe here in presence aforesaid promise, the Lord affitting vs, that if at any time hereafter any forrain power shall attempt to put vs out of this our lawful possession, not cowardly to yeeld up the fame, but manfully to fight as true English men, for the defence of the 60 Common-wealth we line in, and Goipel wee projette, and that whiles we have breath wee will not yeeld to any, that shall inuade vs vpon any conditions what locuer.

I had thought hitherto to have added a Letter of M. Hughes, written from thence, Dec: 21. 1614. and printed. But our latter intelligence, being more ample, hath cauled mee to omit him and others; Yea all things in tome, and tome things in all. M. Norwood hath beene a diligent

Commodites of the Coun-Fiftes.

Torroifes' great, and of great vic.

Fowle.

Hogs by reafon of their food there, and our mens ftomackes, extraordinarily Iwect. The weather, Fruits. Peares not hurrfull.

> Cedar Berries Palmitos.

Pepper.

Palme-liquor.

Ambergrecce and Pearle.

Tobacco.

Surveyor of the place and accidents, and hath given a Map of the one (common to be fold) and a briefe relation of the other. But because his History of the Creatures is briefe, I have borrowed out of Captaine Smith, what he had borrowed of Capt. Butler, and others to give the Reader more full fatisfaction in that kind.

CHAP. XVII.

Relations of Summer Hands, taken out of M. RICHARD NORWOOD. bis Map and Notes added thereto, printed 1622. The History of the Creatures growing or lining therein, being inlarged out of Capt. S M I T H S written Relations.

If Thomas Gates, and Sir George Summers, having stated in Bermuda nine moneths, with helpe of such things as they faued with the Sea-ven ure, and of such as they found in the Company. In Advict of C. found in the Countrey, had built of Cedar, and rigged fit for the Sea, two Velfound in the Countrey, had built of Cedar, and rigged it for the Sea, two Vellers, a Ship and a Pinnace, and vpon the tenth of May, 1610, departed toward To grants, a same a manage of the people there. Vpon the four and twentieth of May, 30 from the reliefe of the people there. Vpon the four and twentieth of May, 30

they arrived fafely there, and shortly after some of them returned to the Sommer Hands against for a further supply, in the same Ship which they had formerly built there; where Sit George Sommers dying, his men did not according to his last charge given vnto them, returne to Promise but framed their course for England, leaving behind them three men, that stated voluntarily. who shortly after found in Sommer fet Hand, which is a part of Sandys Tribe, a verie great treasure in Ambergreece, to the valew of nine or ten thousand pound sterling : there hath also been found

fince divers times of the best fort.

This new discourse of the Sommer Ilands, being thus made knowne in England, to the Virginia Company, by these men which returned, they fold it to some hundred and twentie persons of the fame Company, who obtained a Charter from his Maiestie, and so hold it. And toward the 20 latter end of Aprill, 1612, fent thither a Ship, called the Plough, with some fixtie persons to inhabite, appointing Governour one Matter Richard Moore, a man ingencous and carefull. who fince dved in Sir Walter Rambyes last voyage to Guiona, (a place as appeareth by our Moderne Geographers, very rich and spatious.) But, as I say, he arrived there about the beginning of July, and found the forefaid three men that itsied voluntarily, very well. Mafter Moore spene the three yeeres of his government, for the most part in fortifying the Countrey, and trayning the people in Martiall exercises, which custome harb beene continued by his successours : hee built some nine or tenne Forts, placing O duance and Municion in them. In his time, the Lord fent vpon the Countrey, a very grieuous feourge and punishment, threatning the veter ruine and defolation of it : That it came from God I need not strive to prove, especially confidering it was gene- 40 rally so acknowledged by vs at that time : The causes and occasions of it, I need not name, being very well knowne to vs all that then lived there, which were about fixe hundred perfons, thought shortly after much diminished. I will onely shew the thing it selfe, which was a wonderfull annoyance, by filly Rats : These Rats comming at the first out of a Ship, few in number, increased in the space of two yeares, or leste, so exceedingly, that they filled not onely those places where they were first landed : But swimming from place to place , spread themselves into all parts of the Countrey. Infomuch, that there was no Hand, though fewered by the Sea from all other Lands, and many miles diffant from the Iles where the Rats had their originall, but was pestered with them. They had their Nests almost in euery Tree, and in all places their Burrowes in the ground (like Conies) to harbour in. They spared not the fruits of Plants and Trees, nei- 50 ther the Plants themselves, but eate them vp. When wee had fet our Corne, they would commonly come by troupes the night following, or so soone as it began to grow, and digge it up againe. If by diligent watching any of it were preferred till it came to earing, it should then very hardly scape them. Yea, it was a difficult matter after wee had it in our houses, to saue it from them, for they became noyfome even to the persons of men. Wee vsed all diligence for the destroying of them, nourishing many Cats, wilde and tame, for that purpose, weevled Rats-bane, and many times let fire on the Woods, fo as the fire might run halfe a mile or more before it were extinct : Every man in the Countrey was emoyned to fet twelve Traps, and fome of their owner accord fet neeze a hundred, which they visited twice or thrice in a night. Wee trayned vp our Dogs to hunt them, wherein they grew to expert, that a good Dog in two or three houres pace, 60 would kill fortie of fittie Rats, and other meanes we yied to deftroy them, but could not preuzile,

finding them full to increase against vs. And this was the principall cause of that great distresse, whereunto were were driven in the first planting of the Countrey, for these, denouring the truits of the earth, kept vs deflitute of bread

a veere or two, to that, when wee had it afterwardes againe, wee were to weaned from it, that wee should easily neelect and forget to eate it with our meat. We were also destitute at that time of Boats, and other prouision for filling. And moreover, Matter Moore had received warning from England, that hee should expect the Spaniard that yeere, yet they came not, but with two ships. attempting to come in, and having their Boat before them to found the way, were shot at by the faid Mafter Moore from Kings Caltle, and as we supposed one of them stricken through, wherewoon they prefently departed. But (as I fay) this expectation of them caused vs (though in great necessitie) to haften the fortifications of the Countrey. All these iountly (but principally the Rats) were the caules of our diffresse : for being destitute of food, many dyed, and wee all became 10 very feeble and weake, whereof fome being fo, would not; others could not fir abroad to feeke reliefe, but dved in their houses : fuch as went abroad were lubiect, through weaknesse, to bee suddenly furprized with a difeate we called the Feages, which was neither paine nor ficknesse, but as The Fearest it were the highest degree of weaknesse, deprining vs of power and abilitie for the execution of any bodily exercise, whether it were working, walking, or what else. Being thus taken, if there were any in company that could minister any reliefe, they would straightwayes recour, otherwife they dyed there: Yet many after a little rest would be able to walke again, and then if they found any fuccour were laued.

About this time, or immediately before, came thither a company of Rauens, which consinued with vs all the time of this mortalitie, and then departed. There were not before that time, nor 10 fince (to far as I heare) any more of them feene there. And this, with fome other realons of more moment, moved many to thinke that there was fome other Hands neere the Sommer Hands, betweene Virginia, and it; and M. Moore (in his time, with some other of vs) went forth in a Boat to far as then wee could conseniently, of purpole to discouerit : Since then, it hath beene endeauouted by other, and is vet (as I heare) to be further attempted. And how focuer I am perswaded (for certaine causes which I cannot here relate) there is no such thing; Yet would I not difanimate any from this enterprile, for if they find any, their labours will be well recompenced; and though they find none, yet might they discouer those parts so well, that the passage to and

from Virginia would be more fafe and eatie. But to returne from whence wee have digressed: The extremitie of our distresse began to abate an a little before M. Moores time of government was expired, partly by supplies out of England, of victualland prouision for fishing, and partly by that reit and libertie we then obtained, the Countrey being fortified. Yet the Rats encreased and continued almost to the end of Captaine Tuckers time, although hee was prouident and industrious to destroy them, but toward the end of his time it pleafed God(by what meanes it is not wel known) to take them away, informech that the wilde Catsand many Dogs which lived on them were tamified, and many of them leaving the Woods, came downe to the houses, and to tuch places where they vie to gaibish their Fish, and became tame. Some have attributed this destruction of them to the encrease of wild Cats, but that's not likely they should be so suidenly encreased rather at that time, then in the source yeeres before, And the chiefe occasion of this supp sition was, because they saw such companies of them to leave the Woods, and thew themselves for want of food. Others have supposed it to come to paffe by the coolnesse of the weather, which not with standing is never so great there, as with vs in March, nor scarce as it is in April, except it be in the wind; besides the Rats wanted not feathers of young Birds and Chickens which they daily killed, and of Palmeto Moffe (as wee call it) to build themselaes warme nests out of the wind, as viually they did. Neither doth it appeare that the cold was so mortall to them, seeing they would ordinarily swim from place to place, and be very fat even in the midft of Winter. It remaineth then, that as we know God doth sometimes effect his will without subordinate and secondary causes, and sometimes against them: So wee need not doubt, but that in the speedy encrease and spreading of these Vermine; as also, in the prefernation of fo many of vs by fuch weake meanes as we then enjoyed, and especially in the sudden removallef this great annovance, there was joyned with, and besides, the ordinary and mani-

fest meanes, a more immediate and fecret worke of God. Now to proceed. M. Moores time of gouernment being expired, Capt. Tucker fucceeded, arii- Cap. Tucker. uing there about mid-May, 1616, who likewife gouerned (according to the custome) three yeeres; which time hee ipent, for the most part, in husbandring the Countrey, planting and nourishing all fuch things as were found fit either for trade, or for the fuftentation and vie of the Inhabitants, wherein hee trauelled with much diligence and good fuccifie, fending to fome parts of the Indies fee Plants and Fruits; hee alto adjed to the Fortifications, and made tome Inclosures. In his time, viz. in the yeare 1617, was fent a Ship and prouision, with men of skill, for the killing of Whales; but they arrived there too late to wit, about the midft of April, to that before they could 60 make reasis their Shallops, and fit themselves, the principall teaton for Whale-filling was Whales past : For the Worle come thither in January, and depart againe toward the latter end of May: Yet they throok tome, but tound them to lively, fwift, & fierce after they were stricken, that they could take none. They well great flore of Oyle, as appeared by one that draue to shoare on Somme fer lland, in Sandry Trib. : and by another that we found not far from thence dead upon a

1796

Rat-plague.

How vaine a thing is man, whose best wits and induftry are triumphed ouer by Great God, giue vs grace to feare thee, that we may feare nothing elie: elfe fhall we feare with Pharas Frogs, Lice Flies. with others, Fleas Sparrowes.& .Yea a few Rats,in despite of Cats Dogs, Traps, poifons, thall farue vs.

Shares.

1798

I also received by Captaine Tucker, directions from the Adventurers to divide the Countrey. and to affigne to each Aduenturer his shares or portion of Land : and withall, a description, with notes touching the manner how they would have it done, as they had formerly determined by Lot. Which thing I did with all faithfulneffe and diligence, the manner of it doth about appeare. and is more largely manifested in a Booke of the Survey of the Country, exhibited to the Right Honorable his Maiesties Counsell, and the Court of Aduenturers for these parts. And then began this, which was before as it were an unfetled and confused Chaos (I mean as touching a Plantation, for confidered onely as a Regiment it was otherwife) to receive a convenient difpofition, forme, and order, and to become indeed a Plantation; for though the Countrey was small ver they could not have been conveniently disposed and well settled, without a true description on and furuey made of it; and againe every man being fettled where her might confirmtly abide. they knew their bulinesse, and fitted their houshold accordingly. They built for themselves and their Families, not Tenes or Cabins, but more substantiall houses : they cleered their grounds and planted not onely fuch things as would yeeld them their fruits in a yeere, or halfe a yeere : but all fuch too, as would affoord them profit after certaine yeeres, &c. So that in thort time after even before expiration of Captaine Tuckers government, the Country began to alpire and neerely to approch vnto that happinesse and prosperity wherein now it flourisheth. For may it not justly be accounted happinelle and prosperitie, for men to live where they enjoy the meanes of true Religion and Salvation, to wit, the fincere Ministerie of the Word and Sacraments: where the gouernment is good without rigour and oppression, the place healthfull and temperates where they are freed from all extreme care and toyle : where they have food in abundance, and very good, with other things needfull to the body; and where they have Commodities meete for Trade. by which they better advance their effaces? all which and more is largely verified in the prei pt citate of that Colonie, whattoeuer fome maliciously minded, or to evill ends suborned, may fay to the contrary, so that there may seeme to bee a restauration of that Golden Age so much fpoken of.

The Governour now there refident, is one Captaine Butler, for Captaine Tucker departing thence in December 1618, left in his place Captaine Kendall (who also was one that supplied the same place in the interim, betweene Master Moores time and Captaine Tuckers, and hath fpent fome nine or ten yeeres in the Countrey. But in the yeere 1619, about Midiummer, the 20 Adventurers fent thither as Gouernour for three yeeres (according to the custome) the faid Captaine Butler, and foure thips, with fome five hundred persons, there beeing at that time in the Countrey onely fine hundred more : for by the space of foure yeeres , to wit, during the latter part of Master Moores government, and all the time of Captaine Tackers, they had fent few this ther, being almost hopelesse of the place, by reason of the Rats : But fince there have beene sent many companies more then have come to my knowledge. Infomuch that I vinderstand the Countrey is now almost fully planted and inhabited.

Thus have I briefly related (to farre forth as hath come to my knowledge and remembrance) every thing of most note and importance that hath befallen in the first Discoverie and planting of these Ilands, till this present. I have laboured to contract my selfe, yet have exceeded my en- 40 tended limits. Now I multipeake fomething of the Countrey it felte: Which confilteth of a company of small Hands, situate and formed as about appeareth. It lyeth in the Westerne Ocean, in that part of the World lately discouered, and called America, or the New World, vulgarly, the West Indies: It hath Latitude, or Eleuation (as is abouefaid) 32. degrees 25. minutes, which is almost the same with the Maderaes, or rather more Southward.

The Countrey is round about enuironed with Rockes; which to the Northward, Westward, and Southward, extend farther then hath beene yet discouered : By reason of these Rockes the Countrey is very firong: For there is onely two places (and fcarce two, except to fuch as know them well) where shipping may safely come in and those places are very well fortified but within is roome to entertaine a Royall Fleet. The Rockes in most places appeare at a low water: 50 neither are they much couered at a high water; For it ebbes and flowes there, not about fine foot, The shoare it selfe (for the most part) is a Rocke: fo hardned by the Sunne, Wind, and Sea, that it is not apt to be worne by the Waues; whole violence is also broken by the Rocks, before they come at the shoare. The Mould is of divers colours; neither Clay, nor Sand, but a meane betweens. The Red, which refembleth Clay is worst; the whitish, refembling Sand, and the blackish, Clay, is good : the Browne, betweene them both (which they call white, because there is mingled with it, as it were a white Marle) is belt. Vnder the Mould two or three foote deepe, and fometimes leffe, is a kind of white, hard substance, which they call the Rocke : the Trees visally fasten their Roots in it : and draw their nourishment from it : Neither is it indeed Rocke of Stone, nor to hard, though for the most part harder then Chalke; not so white, but Pumice-like 66 and Spongie, easily receiving and contayning much water: I have feene, in fome places, Clay found under it. It feemes to be engendred of the Raine water, drawning through the earth, and drawing with it of his substance, vinto a certaine depth where it congeales. The hardest kind of it (which is commonly under the red ground) is not fo Spongie, nor retaynes much water : but

lyeth in the ground in Quarries, as it were thicke Slates one vpon another: and there is fome chinkes or creuses betwixt one lare and another, through which the water hath passage : so that in fuch places there is scarce found any fresh water. For all, or the most part of their fresh waser (whereof they have good ftore) commeth out of the Sea; drayning through the Sand, or through the forefaid fubitance, which they call the Rocke, and leaving his Sale behind it becomes fresh : Sometimes we digged Welles of fresh water, within foure or five paces of the Sea-fide : Wels. fometimes further off. The most part of them would ebbe and flow, as the Sea did, and be levell or little higher then the Superficies of the Sea.

The Aire is most commonly cleere, very temperate, moift, with a moderate heate, very The Aire; to healthfull, and apt for the Generation and noursthing of all things; fo that there is scarce any thing transported from hence thither, but it yeelds a farre greater encrease; and if it be any lining thing, becomes fatter and better liking, then here. By this meanes the Country was fo replenifhed with Hennes and Turkeyes, within the space of three or foure yeeres, that beeing negle-Ated, many of them forfooke the Houses, and became wilde, and so lued in great abundance. The like encrease there is of Hogges and other Cattle, according to their kinds. There seemes to be a continual! Spring, which is the cause that some few things come not to that maturitie and perfection, as were requisite. And though the Trees doe shed their leaves, yet are they alwayes full of greene.

Their Corne is the same which they vie almost in all parts of the West Indies , to wit, Maiz: an which, to such as are yied to it, is more heartie and nourithing then our English Wheate, and veelds a farre greater increase, as a pound, sometimes, of one or two graines. Of this Corne, and civers other things, without either plowing or digging the ground, they have two Harvelts every yeere : for they fet about March, which they gather in July; and againe in August, which is ripe in December : And little flips of Figge Trees, and Vines, doe viually beare fruit within leffe then a yeere after they are planted, fometimes in halfe a yeere. The like fertilitie it hath in other things.

There is scarce at any time to be perceived either Frost or Snow, nor any extreme heate; for Teperature of there is almost alwayes some wind stirring, which cleereth and cooleth the Aire, Their Sum- the Gountrey. mers and Winters observe the same times with ours, but their longest dayes and nights are shoron ter then ours in England, by two hours and almost a halfe : as also their shortest dayes and nights are as much longer then ours : for their longest dayes and nights are about fourteene houres, and their shortest ten. When it is Noone with vs. it is Morning with them; and when it is about fine of the clocke in the Enening with vs, it is high-noone with them : to that whileft the Sun declines with vs. it rifeth with them, as also it doth in Virginia. It is apt to Thunder and Lightnine all the veere, oft-times more terrible then in England; but no man, or other living creature have I knowne hurt by it. There is no venemous creature in the Countrey : the yellow Spi- Spiders, der which is there, making her Webbe as it were of Silke, and bringing forth her young (as the Alchimists their stone) of Egges like little Balles of Quick-filter, is not perceived to bee any whic venemous. Yet there is a Plant (that climbeth Trees like Iuie, the leafe also of the fame colour, but in shape like the Vine) that is somewhat venomous, but of no great force.

There is great store and varietie of Fish, and so good as these parts of the World affoords not the like; which being for the most part voknowne to vs, each man gave them names as they heit liked; as one kind they called Rocke-fish, another Groopers, others Porgie-fish, Hog-fish, Angle-fish, Cauallies, Yellow-tayles, Spanish Makerell, Mullets, Breame, Connie-fish, Morrayes, Sting-rayes, Flying-fish, &c. The like they did by the Fowle, as Cohooes, Sandbirds, Herons, Ducke and Teale, Pemblicoes, Caele-boobies, Hawkes, &c.

The Country when we first beganne the Plantation, was all ouer-growne with Woods and Plants of severall kinds : and to such kinds as were voknowne to vs (which were the most part) we also gaue names: such as were knowne retayning their olde names: as Cedars . Palmetoes, Black-wood, White-wood, Yellow-wood, Mulberie-trees, Stopper-trees, Lawrell and Olivetrees, Mangrowes, Pepper-trees, Yellow-bery-weed, Red-weed : These, and many others, wee found naturally growing in the Countrey. But fince it hath beene inhabited, there hath beene brought thither, as well from the Indies as from other parts of the World, fundry other Plants. as Vines of feuerall kinds, Sugar-canes, Figge-trees, Apple-trees, Oranges, Lemmons, Pomegranets, Plantanes, Pines, Parsnips, Raddithes, Artichokes, Potatoes, Cassaui, Indico, and many other: Infomuch that it is now become as it were fome spacious Garden or Nourcerie of many pleafant and profitable things.

Now if I should proceed to a more special! Narration, and speake of all these Plants, Birds, Fithes, and other remarkable things particularly: I could not but bee much larger then were any to waves expedient in this place. Befides, I have long fince underflood, that Captaine Butler (the Gouernour there relident) hath undertaken to write of these and the like things, a peculiar Treatife. This therefore that is spoken touching the nature of the Countrey in generall, shall fuffice. Onely to make choice of two particulars, wherof I will speake, not so largely as the things require, but to farre forth as will be meet and convenient in this places

surall Historie of them both.

The first shall bee the Tortoyse, which they call a Turtle : which having some effinitie and

resemblance with Fishes, Beasts, and Fowles, shall serve instead of a Historic of them all. The other thall be that which they call the prickled Peare-tree: which participating in nature, and

retembling in some things, herbs and in other Trees; shall likewise serue instead of the Na-

And first of the Turckle, not regarding (for breuities fake) the large Discourses of others :

I will onely write what I haue feene and knowne my felfe. They are in the shape of their bodie like a Crab-fish; and haue foure finnes : they are as great as three or foure men can carrie: the

wpper part of them is couered with a great shell, which wee call a Galley-patch, weighing

harder then Horne : shee hath also a shell on her belly, not so hard, but being boyled it becom-

meth foft, like the finewes or griffle of Beefe; and good meate. These line in the Sea, fremding the Spring time, and part of the Summer about these Ilands : but the relidue of the yeere,

we know not where. They are like to Fowle in respect of the smalnesse and fashion of their

heads and neckes: which are wrinkled like a Turkeyes, but white, and not fo sharpe billed.

They also breed their young of Egges which they lay. They resemble Beasts, in that their fiesh

is like Veale, but more hard and folid; and they feed alwayes vpon graffe growing at the bot-

some of the water; neither can they abide any longer under water, then they hold their breath;

two minutes without comming vp to breathe, Shortly after their comming in, the Male and

Female couple, which wee call cooting; this they continue fome three dayes together, during

which time, they will scarce separate though a Boat come to them, nor hardly when they are

fmitten. Not long after, the Shee-Turckle comes vp by night vpon fome Sandie Bay; and fur-

ther yo then the water vieth to flow, thee digges a hole with her finne in the Sand, fome two

foote deepe; and there comming vp seuerall nights, layes her Egges, some halfe a bushell

(which are about the bignesse of a Hennes Egge, and round as a Ball) and each time couers

them with Sand very curiously; so that a man shall hardly finde the place. These Egges (asit

feemes) are afterwards hatched by heate of the Sunne, and then by the Prouidence of God (the

shee returnes any more to them, and yet in likelihood they remaine not long in the Earth after

they are hatched, because (as I have before faid) they cannot live without breathing. We some-

times fee of the young ones no bigger then a mans hand, which some fish will deucure. They

grow flowly, and feeme to have a very long life, they will fleepe on the top of the water, and

were wont to sleepe often on the Land, till the Countrie was peopled; they will also line out of

the water fome three weekes, and that without meate, but mourne and pine away; they are ve-

ry wittie. Being on the Land turned v pon their backes, they can no more without some helps

or advantagerecouer themselues; by which meanes when they come on shoare to lay them

Egges, they are eafily taken, as also they are when they are cooting, But otherwise wee take

times wimme, and feldome fhunne : fo that a man flanding readie with a flaffe in his hand,

which hath at one end a focket, wherein is an Iron lesse then a mans finger, foure-square and

sharpe, with a line fastned to it, hee striking this Iron into the vpper shell of the Turckle, it fickes fo fait, that after fiee hath a little tired her felfe by fwimming too and fro, fiee is taken

by it. They will live, the head being cut off, foure and twentie houres; so that if you cut the flesh

with a Knife, or touch it, it will tremble and shrinke away. There is no meate will keepe lon-

But leaving these, we will now come to speake of the Prickled Peares, which are a fruit

and Cliffes, and commonly by the Sea side, as if the salt-water did somewhat helpe to the gene- 50

growing in these llands, in such places as are scarce fit for any thing else, namely, vpon Rockes

ration and nourishing of them. The tree seemes to grow certaine yeeres before it beares fruit, and

then to continue bearing, very many yeeres, having almost all the yeere long fruit upon it. And

although we call this a Tree, yet hath it fearce any bodie or branches, but confifteth in a mannes

But we will give you a larger Historie of the Creatures from Captaine Smith, in the next Chapter.

them for the most part by night, making a great light in a Boate, to which they will some 4

meanes are yet vnknowne to vs) are brought out of the earth, for wee could never perceive that 20

which the old ones will doe long: but the young ones being chafed to and fro, cannot continue 20

(as I take it) halfe a hundred weight : the flesh that cleaueth to the in-side of this being rolled 10 against the fire, is excellent meate: almost like the Marrow of Beefe : but the shell it selfe

CHAP. 18. The animal and Degetall creatures in Summer Hands.

1081

CHAP. XVIII.

Extracts out of Captaine IO HN SMITHS Hifterie of Bermudas, or Summer Ilands; touching the English Ads and Occurrents there from the beginning of the Plantation.

Ome one hundred and twentie of the Virginian Company bought that Title which the Company might feeme to have to Bermuda, and obtayned Letters Patents of his Mietle. Sir Thomas Smite was elected Treatment, and observation and the selected Treatment, and Mafter Ri-hard Moore lent thither with the first Colonie, which found the three men well, Carter, Chard, and Waters, which had found flore of Ambergrice, which Inuenianture was the occasion of great stirres betwitt Moore and Kendall, (who was impri-

foned) (hard (who was condemned and on the Ladder to be hanged, but reprived, and all Moores time detayned prisoner) and Captaine Danies, who had almost kindled a mutinie till better thoughts did better him. Sie vos non vobis, was the conclusion of that Treasure to the finders, howfoener Danies and Kendall are faid to have licked their fingers well. For the natural Historie thereof I have added they much out of him to that which before bath beene delivered by others.

The most troubletome to their Ilands are the Winds and Wormes , specially in the Spring and 20 Autumpe, rather to awaken industrie then to cause despaire.

The Musketas or Flies are very buffe, with a certaine Indian bugge called by the Spaniards, a Flies, Cacaroatch, which creeping into Chifts by their ill fented dung detile all, besides their eating. Little Ants are in Summer to troubletome that they are forced to dry their figs on high frames, Ants anointing the feete with Tarre which flay their passage that elle would spoile all. Wormes in the earth are notiome to their Corne and Tobacco, caufing them great labour every morning to deflroy them; which elfe would deftroy all. Large Lizards have been there now deftroyed by the Lizards. Cats. Spiders are large but beautifully coloured, as if they were adorned with Silver, Gold, and Spiders. Pearle: their Webs in Summer wouen from Tree to Tree a perfect raw Silke in substance and colour, fo ftrong that Birds like Snites bigger then Black-birds, are fnared in their Nets.

There are grey and white Hearne, grey and greene Plouer, wild Ducks, and Mallards, Coots, Forles Red-shankes, Sea-wigeons, grey Bitternes, Cormorants, numbers of small Birds, like Sparrowes and Rubbins, which have lately beene destroyed by the Wild Cats, very many Wood-peckers, Crowes, which fince the Plantation are killed, and feldome feene except in places leaft inhabited, where they are observed to take their flight about Sun-set, directing their course toward the North-west, which causeth the consecture of other Hands. (Yea, the Spaniards lay this is not true Bermuda, &c.) sometimes also are seene Falcons, Jarfalcons, Osprayes, a Bird like a Hobby, bolden but a paffenger.

The Cohow is fo termed of his voice; a night Bird all day hid in the Rockes. The Egge-bird on the first day of May constantly observed to come, they begin to lay Egs as big almost as Hens 40 Egges; fo continuing till Mid-fummer, fo tame you must thrust them off : then permitted to breed (growing weake) and their young are excellent meate. The Egges of those are white; of the Cohomes freckled, as bigge as Hennes: ftrict inhibition was made for their sparing beeing al-

The Tropiks Bird hath his name of the places where he is most feene. Another Bird of her Cry is called Pemblico, feldome feene by day, an vinwelcome Prophet of Tempells by her clamorous crying. O wles are now gone, Pigeons proiper not, Tame Duckes and Geefe are there.

Now for Plants there growing, the most remarkeable are, the Porfon-wood, which is much in shape like our English Iuie, with the touch thereof causing rednesse, itching and blisters, all which after a while passe away of themselves without further hurt.

The Red-reed is a tall Plant, whose stalke is covered with a red rind : the Roote steemed, or a fmall quantitie of the juyce drunke alone procureth a forceable Vomit, generally vied and effe-Quall against diftempers of the stomacke.

A kind of Wood-bind is common neere the Sea running on Trees like a Vine, the fruit fomewhat like a Beane but flatter, which eaten any way caufeth to purge vehemently, yet without

Another small Tree causeth costiuenesse. There is also a Plant like a Bramble, bearing a long yellow fruit with a hard shell, and within a hard Berrie which stamped and taken inwardly,

Red-Pepper is a fruit like our Barberies, which beaten, or bruized with the Teeth , fets all 60 the mouth on a heat, for the time terrible; but fwallowed whole have the fame operation that

The Sea-feather is a Plant growing on the Rocks in the bottome of the Sca in forme of a Vine. leafe, but fatre more spread with veines of a palish red, strangely interlaced and weated into each other; the vertue vnknowne.

wholly of leaves and fruit, foft and brittle.

LHIIII 3

Moores Forts.

apple, Plantans, and Papawes; the English Artichoke, Pease, &c. Master Moore applied himselfe to fortifying and to traine his men: hee laid the foundation of eight or nine Forts, called the Kings Castle, Charles Fort, Pembrokes Fort, Smiths Fort, Gates Fort. Warwickes Castle, Saint Katherines Fort, &c. mounting therein all luch Ordnance as he had. Be-Mafter Keath. ing busied in these and other necessaries, which held the men hard at worke, Mafter Keath the Minister, a Seot, taxed him in the Pulpit for grinding the faces of the poore, opprefing his Chri-Miniter, 2 360, taxen minital the appropriate generality contraction of the generality contracti ed, he fell on his knees and asked pardon, which was easily with good admonition granted. Two other malecontents were condemned to be hanged, one of which for feare fell into a dead palife. the other was freed, and after proued a good labourer. He got two peeces of Ordnance out of the Sea-Venture (Sir George Summers wracke) framed a Church of Timber, which was blowne Church built. downe and reedified, and another built in a closer place with Palmito leaves. Before the yeare Supplies fent expired, an Adulfo with thirtie paffengers were fent, to prepare for Spaniards; which made them fall to hard to worke, that many fell ficke. The Martha followed with fixtie paffengers. and in it Maiter George Barklie, who tooke good notice of those Ilands. The Elizabeth was fent the fecond time with fortie pallengers. These carried the first Potatos, which being all loft but two castaway rootes have yeelded increase there to admiration, and are great reliete to

There are besides truits thither carried which thrine and multiply, White, Red, Yellow Po-

tatoes, Sugar-canes, Indicoes, Parlnips, exceeding large Radishes, Cassau (the American root

for bread) the Indian Pompeon, the water Melon, the Muske Melon, the most delicate Pine-

M. Barbic. Increase of

An.1613.

Spanilly Ships.

Two Spanish Ships were seene soone after this Ship was gone, to found with their Boate, attempting to come in; but from the Kings Castle Master Moore made two shot, which caused them to depart, to the ioy of the Plantation, which then had but three quarters of a barrell of Powder, and but one shot more: the Powder also by carelesnesse tumbled under the Mussels of the two Peeces which were discharged, and yet not touched with fire. The like mercifull prouidence appeared in certaine cartrages of Paper filled with Powder; a negligent fellowleauing his Match burning voon one of them all the while they were at Prayer, so that the cole touched the Paper and fired it not.

Escapes from dangers

A worse thing happened by a caruell of Meale, which Daniel Elfred brought thither, so stored 20 with Rats, that had neere ruined all the Plantation. Two yeeres after came in the Bleffing with M.Bartlies fe- one hundred passengers, and the Starre with one hundred and eightie, and soone after the Margaret, and two Frieats with one hundred and fixtie. Mafter Barkley also came to divide the Countrie into Tribes, and the Tribes into shares; but Moore feeing his share and the Colonies to be none, gave him fo cold entertainment, that he returned as he came.

This bred Moore more diflike in England, and his minding fortification fo much, with neglect of Corne bred a famin; that attended with difeafes, specially one called the Feagues, which with-

1614. Famine and ficknelle.

Contrary ex-

out fenie of paine, swallowed vp all their strength at once, whereof without succour they died; some by foode and rest recovered. The Rauens continued this mortality and then departed. William Millinton was drawne into the Sea by a Fish, and neuer seene more. The Famine gaue a fu- 40 persedeas to the workes, and Moore sent them to seeke reliefe. At Conpers Ile with a contrary extremity of the abundance of Cahows and Fish, many furfeited and died, Some killed the Cattell, and one stole away to the Woods and there franked himselfe, feeding on land Crabbes and Wilkes, For filhing, the Smith was faine to make Hookes of Swords, and Lines of old Ropes, till a Frigat being fent with aduice into England, the Welcome was fent with provision. Mafter Moore returned in this Ship, and left the Gouernment to a Councell of fixe, which fhould succeede each by a Counsell, other monethly ; viz. Captaine Miles Kendall, Captaine John Mansfield, Thomas Knight, Charles Caldicor, Edward Waters, and Christopher Carter, with twelve Affiltants. Moore arriving here, after much quarrell, obtained eight snares of Land. Hee died after in Sir Walter Raleighs Guiana voyage. He was a man very pragmaticall, and had before undertaken much in Foulenesse for 50 Rapes feede, &c. A man fitter for fuch a Plantation es this in the beginning was, then fome filken Citizen, or stalking Gentleman, or talking Traueller, or fowre Humorist, or grim Martialist might

Caldicots lot.

M.Keath and

Caldicors Lot was first, whose moneth being ended, with Knight and Waters in a small Frigot he went to Vuginia, Mansfield succeeded in the new triumuirate, and a plot not to surrender the Gouernment to luch as from England should be appointed, was disappointed : Master Hushes was imprisoned, and soone set at liberty, but Master Kealb his Symmystes fell to frange allputes, and Hughes was againe convented, and by the Iury acquitted. Mansfields moneth being paffed in braules, the two next were quiet; yet those contestings after remined. The Estim attiued with good supplies. Divers Boates were lost at Sea about this time.

M.Hughes. Strange acci-

Button memorable accident was this: In March, a feafon most tempestuous, on a suite Friday morning, seuen men went in a Boate of two or three tuns to fish, some of them fasting, neither had they any prouision in the Boat with them but a few Palmeto berries; some foure leagues from shoare a tempest tooke them, and carried them quite out of fight of land; their strength be-

ing ipent, the strength also of the tempest abated on funday, and a calme followed. Too weake for Oaresthev lay adrift that night: the next morning Andrew Hillyard (the reit not able to helpe ares aduction them lelues) ipred the faile : On tuelday one died, on wednesday three, which were cast onerboord : on thursday night the fixth, whom he was not able to turne over, but stripped him, ripped his belly with his Knife, threw his bowels into Sea, fored his body abroad, tilted open with a flicke, and so let it lye as a Cesterne to receine some luckie raine water, which God fent presently after, to that in a small shower he recovered about foure spoonefuls of raine to his ynspeakable refreshment. He also prescrued neere halfe a pint of blood in a shooe, which hee did sparingly drinke to moisten his mouth. Two dayes he fed on his flesh to the quantity of a pound; the e-10 lenenth day after his lofe of Land, two flying Fishes fell into his Boate, whose warme incie bloud he fucked, to his great comfort, and within an house after, with greater comfort effied land.

which within foure houres he attained on a Rocke neere Port Royall, where his Boate was folic presently in peeces, and he made shift to climbe so steepe a Rocke by night, as would have troubled the ftrongest man in t' . ile to have done by day. He discerned in the morning where he wasand without other refreshing then water (which he tooke temperately, or might elie have drunk his last) he got in halfe a day to a friends house. He was living Anno 1622.

Some treasure in Dollers, to the value of twentie pounds was found, the remainder of some

Wrack. The Company fent M. Daniel Tucker, to be Gouernour; hee fet faile in the George, accompanied with the Edwin: some preparation was made to refit, but he at last was received and 20 acknowledged in May, 1616. Somewhat hee had to doe to bring them to their workes, which yet he effected; their day worke till nine in the morning, and then staying till three in the afternoone, they began againe continuing till fun-fet. Besides meat, drinke, and clothes, they had for a time a certaine kind of braffe Money, with a Hog on the one fide, in memory of the Hogs there found at first landing. Hee by Master Richard Normoods helpe, laid out the eight Tribes in the Tribes laid out Mayne, which were to confift of fiftie shares to a Tribe, each share twentie fine Acres. He began to plant some of the Colony on specials shares, and appointed Bailiffes to each Tribe, Hee held a generall Affite in his fecond moneth at Saint Georges , where for fedition John Wood a Frenchman Affifes. was hanged. He fent the Edmin to Trade with the Natiues of the West Indies for Cattel Corne. Plants, which had it been continued, might happily haue bin more beneficiall to the Plantation

then the Magazines from hence. She returned with Figs, Pines, Sugar-canes, Plantans, Papawes. and divers other plants, which were presently replanted, and fince have increased by the Go-Bernours commendable husbandry. Severity, by the conceit thereof produced an admirable fact: Fine men which could by no meanes get passage for England, resolved to adventure an escape, viz. Richard Sander Mariner chiefe plotter, William Goodwin a Ship Carpenter, Tho. Harifon a Lovner. lames Baker Gentleman, and Henry Puet. These infinuated to the Gouernour, that they would build him a Boat of two or three Tuns with a close Deck, fit to fish in all weathers. Hee glad to royace, fee them so obsequious, furnished them with necessaries whatsoever they could defire. Shee was fitted and gone the evening before hee fent for her, to fee, as was reported, how shee could faile. This was most true, and Botelias his adventure from Goa in the East Indies to Lisben was not so

4 admirable a triall. Barker had borrowed a Compatie Diall of M. Hughes, leaving a Letter to him His course was to have patience for that lose, whereby their adventure was intimated. The Governours threats necter stoore. were not in that remotenesse to terrible as the two present swelling Elements, whom yet they with all providfound more gentle then a French Pickaroone, who in flead of fuccour, which they defired tooke from them what they liked , leaning them not so much as a Crosse-staffe to observe with, and so cast them off. They continued their course till their victuall began to faile, and the knees of their Small Boar Boat were halfe hewed away for fire wood. They at last arrived in Ireland, where the Earle of from Bermy. Tomund entertained them, and caused the Boat to be hanged up for a Monument, having fayled das commeth 3300. miles thorow the Ocean by a right line without fight of any Land. This fortunate San- to Ireland. ders in the rifling of a Ship taken in the East Indies, bought a Cheft for three or foure shillings, but

50 would for want of a Key have fold it againe for leffe. But one day having little to doe, hee broke it open and found therein 1000. pounds fterling, or fo much gold as bought him in England a good estate, which leaving with his wife he returned againe to the East Indies.

The Company sent Captaine Powell in the Hopewell, after he had landed his passengers in Sum- Cap Fowell, mer Iles, to trade in the Indies, who by the way tell foule on a Brafillman, and afterwards a French. man on him : but hee got fafe to the flands and told what he had done. The Gousmour kept his fecond Affize, and made a proclamation against the killing of coheires. Powell is against ent to the Well Indies from thence, with thirteene or fourteene men. Hee made triall but in vaine, for the Whale-filhing, for which and to which purpose the Company soone after sent the Neptune, In the beginning of his second yeere he called the third azife, in which one washanged, two others to condemned, but reprieued. The Rat Tragedy was now terrible: fome Fishes have been taken with Rats in their bellies, catched as they fwam from Ile to Ile. One Henry Long, with fixe others being on fishing, a sudden storm arose with terrible thunder, and the Boat was tossed over the Rocks, Hurchy Rats

the fish toffed ouer-boord, and Long with two others escaped (the rest drowned) one of the three filling all the being demanded what he thought in the prefent perill, answered, hee faid nothing, but Gallowes Hand. LIIIIII 3

CHAP.10. Bulwarkes raised. Miserable torments. Noisome Wormes.

1305

Gallowesclappers fate.

claime thy right, which within halfe a yeere fell out accordingly. Powell returned with three Fria oats laden with Meale, Hides, and Munition. The Mafter and Governour contending both were difpossessed by a thronger power. Wasers, with twelue men were sent to Virginia, and would no more returne to Summers lles.

intended.

A. 1618. arrived there the Diana, with men and provision, and the first Magazine (a course I Magazines not heate not much applauded by the Planters here, or in Virginia, the companies honeft care) feeming fo provisible as by some others dishonestie frustrate. This Ship fraught with 3 0000, weight of Tobacco, gaue by the good fayle thereof encouragement to the Aduenturers. The Gouernour building a house of Cedar in the belt Land, appropriated it to himielte to the griefe of others there, of whom Mafter Hugher could not by threats nor imprisonment be so pacified, but that here to the Company hee Io approved his caute. Two men and a Gentlewomen, thinking to make their escape in a Boat to Virginia, were neuer heard of after. Sixe others attempted the like, but were apprehended. araigned, condemned, and one of them hanged. The Gouernours hard dealings fo much complainable ned of, cauled him in the Bleffing to returne to excuse himselfe, and to get that house affured him.

cicaping. Two thips fent

Efeapers not

leaving Captaine Kendall to Jupply his place. The Gilli-flower and the Treasurer were fent. By the Sea-flower which went to Virginia, 2 Preacher was ient to the Ilands, and newes of a new Gouernour. Captaine Kerb; came in with a small Barke from the West Indies. A Datch Frigot was cost away on the Westerne shoare, the people saued by the English.

Cap.Butler Gouernour.

Captaine Builer, the new Gouernour arrived in the Warmicke, the twentieth of October, 1619. The Redoubt, a platforme of the Kings Castle, at the same time whiles the New Goutmour and 20 old Planters were feafting aboord, accidentally was confumed with fire. The next month came in the Garland, which had come from England fixe or feuen weekes before him, and fpent feuenteen weekes on the voyage, which proued to tedious, that many both Saylers and Paffengers died. In Great flormes the end of November, arole such a storme that many great Trees were blown up by the roots, the Warwicke cast away, the Garland forced to cut her Masts ouerboord. Not long after happened another as fierce; in which the Monns, built by M. Moore for a Watch-tower, was blowne vp bw

the roots; and their winter crop of Corne blaited.

He began the new yeere with refortifying the Kings Castle, and finding the Treasurer rotten, tooke nine Peeces of Ordnance out of her. Hee fent the Garland for England. Hee finished the Church begun by Captain Kondall, with great toile got three Peeces out of the wracked Warnick, 20 imployed a Dutch Carpenter of the former Dutch wrack to build Boates. A luckie fellow in February, found a piece of Ambergreece of eight Ounces, as hee had done twice afore, and according to order of Court (to preuent concealements) had thertore thirtie pound an Ounce. Two Dutch Frigots arrived, conducted by Captaine Powell, and much refreshed the Colony with Oyle and Bacon at cheape rates. The Gouernour made a new platforme in place of the burned Redants, and mounted feuen great Peeces on Cariages of Cedar. The Ministers not being conformable to

Minifers scruples.

the Church of England, nor vniforme with themselves in administration of the Sacrament, and Matrimony. Hee translated the Liturgie Booke of Garnsie and Iarsie, void of the pretended scruples which was generally embraced, and in his time practifed, and the Sabbaths observation proclaimed. They rebuilded the Mount, and divers Boats was indangered with a Hericano, one loft. 49 Sie George Sum- Finding a little Crosse erected where Sir George Summers his heart and entrailes were buried : he meramemorial caused a Marble stone brought out of England, to bee handsomely wrought, and an Epiraphengrazen, in memory of that worthy Souldier, and laid thereon, inuironed with a square wall of

On the second of June , began their Ass zes, in which their Lawes and Government were re-Their fift Par- duced to the English forme. The first of August, was a generall Assembly in manner of a Parliament, at Saint Georges, divers Articles concluded, and being fent hither, by the Company confirmed, which for breuitie I omit. The Magazine Ship foone after came in weake case thither, hauing cast ouerboord twentie or thirtie of her people, and had they staied at Sea a weeke longer, were likely to have all perished. That aire foon mends or ends men in that case, and those which so died not soone after the landing recovered, not without infection of others there. 70000. weight of Tobacco was prefixed for her freight. Commandement came now to entertaine no Ships, but fuch as were fent from the Company, to the Colonies great griefe, which now were forced to a Magiz ane-Monopoly, and debarred of occationall reliefe. Cap. Powell foone after came thither, imployed by the States, defiring admittance for wood and water, which was denied with excee-Spenife Wrack, ding murmuring and exclaiming of the Colony. The Magazine Ship arrived, her Matter dead,

and many passengers, the rest sicke. Then happened also in September a Spanish Wrack, which comming from Carrhagena with Then happened allo in September a spanjo verack, which comming from conditions the Spanis Fleet lost their Ship on those Rockes, and seventie persons were faued, some of which the Spanis Fleet lost their Ship on those Rockes, and seventie persons were faued, some of which Seamife Emba- had beene rifled, but their money to the value of one hundred and fortie pound reffored them by 60 habor alloyr the Gouernours meanes : into whose hands they committed it for disbursment of their charges. the Gouernours meanes; into whose hands they committed it for disbursment of their charges, ging the fame. Some were sent away, others forced to stay till their labours had procured meanes for their partitle counts. 115 WIS MANI- Tage. Her made meanes to get out of the Wrack two Sakers, and three Murtherers, which were the fame which Cap. Kendall had fold to Cap. Kerby, who was taken by two men of War of Car-

thagena, most of his men slaine or hanged, hee wounded died in the Woods, as these Spaniards related. Three Bulwarkes were raifed at Southampton Fort, with two Curtens and two lauelens. Armes were diffributed to all fuch as were able to vie them.

The Weauelis (which had at this time much hurt their Corne) found a strange remedy. For a Weauelis cure. proclamation being made that all Corne should be gathered by a day, because many had lost some for want of gathering, it Il haunting the Ships for Aqua-vita and Beere; some bad husbands hafilly gathered it, and threw it on heapes in their houses vnhusked, fo letting it lye foure or fine moneths. Now the good husbands husked theirs, and hanged it vp with much labour, where the Flies did blow it, which the others idlenesse, as the event shewed, prevented, that being thus so found to be the best way to faue the corne and labour, to let it lye in the huske. Divers places of fresh-water were now also luckily found out. Another triall of whale-fishing was vainely attempted by a Ship which came from Unginia, who returned thither fraught with Lime-flone. 20000. pound weight of Potatos, &c.

Aprill and May were spent in building a Prison, and perfecting some Fortifications, and soure Sakers were gotten from the Spanift Wrack, and mounted at the Forts. One was hanged for buggering a Sow, whose Cock in the time of his imprisonment vsed also to tread a Pig, as if it had beene a Hen, till the Pig languished and died, and then the Cock haunted the same Sow. About the same time two Chickens were hatched, one of which had two heads, the other is said to have crowed loud and huftily within twelve houres after it was out of the shell. Other Peeces

20 were got out of the Spanish Wrack, and a Saker also out of that of Sir George Summers. By a Barke going to Unginia, Captaine Bailer, his time expiring, conveied himselfe thither. leaving the government to C. Felgate C. Stokes, &c. In the Kings Caffle were mounted, or fufficient platformes, inteen Peeces of Ordnance. In Charles Fort two, in Southampton Fort five, betwixe Forts & Orda which & the Castle passeth the channel into the Harbor, secured by twenty three Peeces of good Ordnance. In Compille is Pembrookes Fort, with two Peeces. Saint Georges channell is guarded by Smiths Fort and Payers Fort, in which are eleuen Peeces. Saint Georges Towness commanded by Warnicks Fort, with three great Peeces, on the Wharfe before the Gouernours house are eight more, besides the warning Peece by the Mount, and three in Saint Katherines; in all tenne Fortresses, and fiftie two Peeces of Ordnance sufficient and serviceable. Hee left one thousand 30 five hundred persons, and neere one hundred Boates, the He replenished with provisions, fruites,

poultry, &c.

Malter Iohn Bernard, was fent by the Honourable Company to supply his place, who arrived Governours within eight daves of Captaine Butlers departure, with two Ships, and one hundred and fortie Paffengers, with Armes and all forts of Munition and other prouifions. During his life (which continued but fixe weekes) hee gaue good proofe of his sufficiency in reforming things defective. M.Harrifon He and his wife were both buried in one day, and one graue : and Master lobn Harrison chosen Gonernour till further order came from London,

The Wormes before mentioned are still troublesome, and make them morning workes to bill Wormes noythem. Caterpillers are pernicious to their fruits, and Land Crabs are as thicke in some places, as 40 Conies in a Warren, and doe much harme. A Ship in which had beene much fwearing and blafpheming yfed all the voyage, perished; the companies negligence iovially frolicking in their cups and Tobacco (hauing landed certaine goods) by accident the Powder fired, and blew up the great Cabbin; some were taken up in the Sea, living in miserable torments, eighteene were lost with this tatall blaft, the Ship also lunke, with fixtie Barrells of Mealesent for Virginia, and her other provisions loft. The Company have fent Captaine Woodboufe in a Ship called the Tigre for that gouernment, a man much commended and hopefull. I have beene told that there are three thoufand persons of all forts living there, halfe of which number is able to beare Armes, and exercifed to that fernice.

M. Bernard

1622.

CHAP. XIX.

Briefe intelligence from Virginia by Letters, a Supplement of French-Virginian Occurrants, and their supplantation by Sir SAMVEL ARGAL, in right of the English Plantation,



He late alteration of Firginia Gouernment is vnknowne to none; and most know of the frequent complaints, both by prinate Letters, and by Petitionsto his Ma-ietly. Now leaft any fhould hereupon thinke Virginia to be vinovity of fuch our care and coft; I have out ofton of the Planters private Letters transfried a few words of gricuances, and yet a magnifying of the Country, that the English may be more blamed for want of Proudence, then the Region for defect of Natures beft more blamed for want of Prouidence, then the Region for defect of Natures best

gifts. Other things I could alleadge from others, but my meaning is to amend things not to

quarrell them, and to awaken the care of good men, rather then to recite the faults of the bad. In one Letter, dated Dec. 22 last past, he hatn these words :

dayfor a workter) befides meate and lodging.

The intollerable rates we pay here for commodities, as ten pound sterling a hog shead of Meale, sixteen He mentions Shillings a gallon of Alligant, three pound sterling a Henne and eight Chickens, Go. and so according to in other letters thefe rates for every thing elfe : lastly, the beaut taxations that are laid upon us free men, for building 3.s.a pound of of Castles, paying of publique debts, for the not gathering of Sasafras, GC. So that it will come to my Butter, 6.d. rea Bare, with that is paid, and that that is to pay in Corne and Tobacco, to at least twenty or fine and pinte of Milke, twenty pound sterling, this yeere; so that when I have paid this, and paid my faithlesse servants their wages. 10 20112.5.2 I shall carle bane good Tobacco enough left to buy my selfe for the next yeer a pint of Aquanita to. This you fee (I neither warrant, nor except against the truth, but present the worst quarelled paralel- to led with the best) complaints of great prizes of things, not arising from plenty of money as you reade before in the conquest of Pera, but from I know not what ill habit and indisposition of that Colony. And least any man should withdraw his heart, hand, or purse therefore from that worthy work, I have out of the fame mans Letters delivered a commendation of the Countrey. The Letters were written, and dated 22. March 1624, and containe for subflance none other then what before you have read in others; yet are more furable to this time and purpose, as later newes and fitter directories to the Philitians of that Effate ; that at laft the English honour may he windicated against to base perils from Sauages, and baser quarrels from and among st our owner. God profper his Maiesties care, and make those which are therein emploied not to feeke their owne good by hasty returnes, much lene other their fellow adventurers enill by calumnies and 20 underminings, but Virginias prosperity; of which, Natures prosperity is thus related by one querulous of his owne loffes and croffes. His words are there :

Now concerning the state of the Country, so much as I have observed, I will relate unto you : First the Countrie it felfe, I must confesse is a very pleasant Land, rich in Commodities, and fertile in soyle to produce all manner of Plants, Hearbes, and Fruites. I have seene here my selfe both Carrets, Turneys, Cabares, Onjons, Leekes, Garlicke, Tyme, Parfeley, Pompions, Muskmilion, and Watermilions rare fruits and exceeding wholesome, here are also Stramberries; I have lien downe in one place in my Corne field. and in the compasse of my reach have filled my belly in the place : and for Mulberries. I can when I list goe and gather a bufhell at a time : here is also a coole Fruite growing wildely on the ground, much refembling a great Walnut with the greene rinde on it, which refernes in it three admirable good tastes namely 30 of Stramberries, Rosewater, and Sugar, they were an exceeding great comfort to me in my last yeares sick-

neffe, and are admirable good against the blondly fluxe.

English Wheate and Barley will grow here exceeding well; I have feene here growing as good Englift Wheate as ener I faw in England in all my life. For Timber we have the Oake, Ashe, Poplar, blacke Walnut, white Walnut, Pines, Gumme trees; the Pines bere afford admirable good Pitch and Tarre, and ferme, fplit out in small peeces, in many places of this Land instead of Candles; but it will smeare one world then a Linke; here are also leave treet which yearely bring forth Peares. But there is a tree that passible all Fruite trees, which we call by the names of a Prissurmon tree, which beareth a Plum much about the biqueffe of a Peare plum, I doe thinke it is one of the rarest Fruites in the world; when they are ripe they eate naturally of themselves from the tree better then any preserved Plummes I ever tasted in Eng- 40 land. The Beafts that this Land is plentifully stored withall are Deere, Beares in some parts, Beaucrs, Otters, Foxes, Hares, Squirrels, Roccounes, Poffucins, names strange to you, yet are they singular good meate; the Roccouns tasting as well as Pigges fielb. Indian Dogges here are as good meate with vs as your English Lambe. English Cattell bere increase and thrine very well, as Kine, Hogges, Gostes, and Poultry. Fowle bere are abundance, as Swans, Brants, Geefe, Turkies, Herons, Cranes, Eagles, fishing Hawkes, Bussards, Ducke and Mallard, Sheldrake, Dapchicke, Partriches, Pidgeons, Crowes, Blacke-birds, and all manner of small Birds in abundance. Our Rivers here are likewise rich by the abundance of Fish, as Herings, Shads, Perch, Eele, Pike, Carpe, Cat-fish, Rock-fish, Gor-fish, and Sturgeon. If here were any that would make filhing for Sturgeon an occupation they might take inough to furnish this Land, and also plentifully supply England. I my selse have seene aboue twenty Sturgeon leape 4- 50 bone water in leffe then two houres. As for our Graine, I thinke it produceth the plentifullest encrease of any Corne in the World; for I have seene one graine of Corne, that by the assistance of growth and time, bath yeelded a pint of Corne: we have here also Beanes and Pease.

I confesse bere are plentie of all those things I have set before you, but all the craft is in catching them; for be that will get any game, wift be a wary and a well eyed flost, and to prop his profession, he wast addo great care and vigilance, both in defending himfelfe and winning his game. It hath beene often frome in this Land, that whilest an Englishman hath beene winning bis game, an Indian bath dogd bim, attending his opportunitie by the others discharge to fill him full of Arrowes. Since the Maffacre they have killed us in our owne doores, fields, and boufes: thus are we not fafe neither at bome nor abroads and (which grieues me to write) our safetie is lessened by our malice one to another, for the mell part alloge-63 ther neglecting the common enemie. I my felfe and my wife are by some secret enemies much wronged for I am Shauen fo bare, that I bane scarse either Garter, Girdle, Stocking, or Shirt left; all my wearing Cloather likewife are sorne and tattered, I can accuse no man, and they that thewise doe it grunte b), and which grieves me most of all, they strine by base and instructing meanes to clip the wings, as well of

CHAP.19. Virginias good & euill. Frenchmen and their fortunes in Virginia. 1807

my prosperitie as of my reputation; yet I hope God will give me patience to beare, and in his good time give me a jorfull delinerance in the middest of all these miseries. Whilest I was a writing these lines, newes was brought me of the killing of one, and the carrying away prisoner of another of my neighbours, by the Indians : one was an old Virginian, and one who for a long time was Sir Thomas Dale his Onerfeer in this Land, his name was Master Henry Watkins: and but two daies agoe there was another that had his braines beaten out by the Indians, in the next Plantation to vs. Wherefore with a fad and fortowfull heart I take my leave of you deere Father, Mother, Sifters, Brethren, and all the rest of my kinde and loning friends; for the cafe stands fo with vs here, that if wee goe out in the morning, wee know not whether wee shall ever returne; working with our Hoe in one hand, and our Peece or Sword in

to the other, c.

And now from latest intelligence you have notice of the good and euill, as becommeth a faithfull Hiltorian, requid non veri andeat, nequid vers non andeat; It is good to know the worst, to preuent it : forewarned, forearmed, Early you may lee that the good things of Virginia are naturall and her owne, the bad accidentall and our owne; and confequently if wee amend our felues, Virginia will foone be amended. The body there is found; to cut the haire, avoide the excrements, paire the nailes, waih away fweate and dust, and to cure other like accidents of negligence, or impenitent and vnprofitable diligence, is a worke feafible and facile also to induttrious and vizatimous workemen. One thing touching the French (whole Plantations are before recited) remaineth, that we take away all foruple from feare of suspected neighbours. I shall 20 therefore adde a little more touching them, the conclusion of their Virginian Plantation in a double fenie. As for the English right to these parts, the next Chapter will shew, and consequently

the Iustice of Sir Samuell Argali act. The Patents to Sir Humfry Gilbert, and to Sir Walter Raleigh, and their actuall possession before these latter Plantations may be alleadged likewise against the French. Their things I have collected out of Sit William Alexanders Encouragement to Colonics;

Lescarbot hath also related them.

The Marquesse de la Roche, by a Commission from Henry the fourth, intending a Voyage for Canada, happened by the way upon the He of Sablon (which is now comprehended within the Patent of new Scotland) and there (trusting to the strength of the place, where there are no Satages at all) landed some of his men, till he should have found a convenient place within the maine Carteregalia ao Land fit for a habitation, promiting then to returne for them. But it was his fortune, by reason to those parts of contrary winde, never to finde the Maine Land, but he was blowne backe to France without Ant 500, and feeing of them, where he was in the time of the civill warres (fuch is the vncertainty of world- another 1501 ly things) taken prisoner by the Duke of Mercant, and shortly after died; so that his people After that his whom he had left at Sablon, furnished but for a short time, had quickly spent their proussons, habothios. Gen uing for their maintenance onely such things as the place it selfe did without labour freely afford; mes another which hath a race of Cowes, as is thought, first transported thither by the Portugals, that have Portugal lought long continued there: they had likewise there growing wilde, of this which wee call Turkey straus ther. tong commerce unter Tutty in intervence tasts growing here abundance of Fishes, with Venifon, and (naumg no meanes to liue but by fport) as for their Apparell, they cloathed themfelues with and was called the Skins of Fuch treatures as they could kill by Land or Sea 1 to that haung liued there for the galaction for the galactic or t

fpace of 12, years; when they were prefented to King Henry, who had hired a Fisherman to bring des. to S. Lasthem home, as I have heard from them that did tee them at first before the King, they were in rence. very good health, and looked as well as if they had lived all that time in France: having bin abuiled by the Fisherman, who cunningly conceiling that he had bin directed by the King, did bargaine with them to haueall their Skins for transporting them home, which were of great value. fome of them being of blacke Foxes, which have bin fould at fiftie pound sterling a peece and aboue: for the recourry thereof they intended a Processe against him before the Court of Parliament at Paris, wherein they prevailed, gaining by that meanes a flocke wherewith to traffique in these parts againe.

Monfieur de Montes betaking himfelfe to trade for Furs, Monfieur Pourrincourt resoluing 50 to projecute the Plantation at that place fent his fonne Biencourt to France, to bargaine with some that would fend them a supply, such as was requisite for establishing of that

The first that embraced his propositions were the Isfaires, who as they have ordinarily good Islaires, wits which made them the rather capable of fo advantagious a project, fo they were the more animated thereunto by vpbraiding the lazinelle of our Clargie, to thew with what feruency they travelled to propagate the Gospell, in doing whereof (whether it be ambition or devotion that prouokes them) sparing no paines, they have trau lled both to the East and West Indies, and to the admired Kingdome of China. Their fociety in France, prenailing with all that had any in-60 clination either to zeale or to vertue, did easily gather a voluntary contribution for the furthering of so commendable a purpose. Thereafter they sent away two Fathers of their Company, with a new tupply of all things necessary to the Plantation at Port Regall, but shortly after their

arrivall (their predominant disposition hardly yeelding to any superiour, specially if it be a few-

lar power) they began to contradict Pourtrincourt in the execution of those decrees which had

bin sigen forth by him, as civill Magistrate of that place : whereupon the Gentleman extreamely discontented, and weary or contesting with him; having taid that it was his part to rule them vpon earth, and theirs enely to guide him the way to heaven, he returned backe to France. leauing his Sonne Biencourt in his place. Who being a youth at that time of more courage then circumfpectnesse, diddaning to be controlled by them whom he had enuited thither, and scorning their insupportable prefumption, ving spiritual armes for temporal ends, and an imperious kinds of carriage, who onely for spleene had excommunicated and branded him with a foirituall centure; he threatned them by his temporall power with a more palpable punishment. So that after much controuerie, reloluing to ieparate themselves, the two lessites taking a part of that aret much controlled, sent from thence to a place in new England, called by them Mount to Defart, where they feated themselves; and having a supply from the Queene Mother did plant fundry Fruit trees of the most delicate kindes in France, such as Apricockes and Peacher neuer intending to remove from thence.

was the Gountnot of Zirginia andt him.

teffeize killed.

At this time Sir Samuel Argall being then Gouernor of Firginia, coasted along t new Engl that Sir I.Dale land to traitique and diffeour, or to acquire things necessiry for the Southerne Colony in these parts, where the lands are reputed to be more fertil, and the Seas more frequented, & did conceine by a description made vnto him by the Sauages, that there were fome come from this part of the World to inhabit there; and being lealous of any thing that might derogate from the honour.or proue prejudiciall to the benefit of his Nation, where their interest in this was easie to be apprebended; he went whereas he was informed that they were, and his vnexpected arrivall, as it would feeme, not onely amazed the mindes of the French, but likewife preuenting their preparation and refolution; he approached so neere to a Ship that lay before their Fort, that hee beate them all that were therein with Musket shot from making any vie of their Ordnance, faue one of the two lefuites, who was killed in giving fire to a Peece: Having taken the Ship, they landed and went before the Fort, fummoning them that were therein to yeelde themselves, who at the first made some difficulty, asking a time to adusse; but that being refused, they privately abandoned the Fort, flealing out by some backe way into the Woods, where they flaied one night, and the next day comming backe, rendered themselues to Sir Samuel Argall, who had lodged all that night within the Fort, giving vp the Patent they had from the French King to be cancelled. He yied them very curteoully, as their owne Writers doe make mention, fulfring fuch as had a 30 minde to goe for France, to feeke out Fishers Ships wherein they might be transported; the rest that were willing to goe for Unginia went thither alongst with him; no man having lost his life but onely that one lefute, who was killed whilft they made resistance, during the time of the conflict. Thereafter Father Biard, the other of the lefuites, comming backe from Virginia with Sir Samuell Argall, out of the indigestable malice that he had conceived against Biencourt, did informe him where he had planted himselfe, offering (as he did) to conduct him thither. As soone as they were entered within the Fort, neere the uppermost of the llands, Sir Samuel directed the Ship to ride at a reasonable distance to attend occasions before the Fort did land himselfe with forty of the best of his men upon a Meddow, where immediately they leard a peece of Ordnance from the Fort, and he conceiving fince it was flot whilft it could doe no harme, that it 40 was done either but to give terrour to them, or to warne some that might happen to be abroad, did make the greater haite towards the Fort, where he presently entered, finding it abandoned without any men at all left for the defence thereof. He went vp the Riuer fide fiue or fix miles, where he faw their Barnes, and the ground where a great quantity of Wheate had grown, which he carried with him to proue for Seede in Virginia: he faw also their corne Milne very conveniently placed, which together with the Barneshe left standing vintouched. As for the Fruit it felfe he deftroied it downe to the ground, racing the Frencharmes, and leaung no Monument that might remaine to witnesse their being here. After this, Biencourt, who had been for ewhere abroad trauelling through the Countrey com-

ming home, defired to conterre with Sir Samuel Argall, who did meete with him a part from the 50 company upon a meadow: and after they had exposulated a space for what had past controllerting concerning the French and English, little to thele bounds, at last Biencourt offered, if hee might have a protection from him, to depend upon our King, and to draw the whole Furres of that Countrey to one Port, where he would divide them with him; as likewise hee would show him good mettalls, whereof he gaue him pieces, the other refused to lovne in any locietie with him, protefting that his Commission was onely to displant him, and that if hee found him there thereafter hee would vie him as an enemy. Biencourt labouring earneflly to have had the letter, as he confessed, with a purpose to hang him. Whilest they were discouring together, one of the Sauzges rushing fuldenly forth from the Woods, and licentiated to come neere, didafter his manner, with fuch broken French as he had earneftly mediate a peace, wondring why they that 60 feemed to be of one Country, should vie others with such hostilitie, and that with such a torme of habit and gefture as made them both to laugh.

After Biencourt remouing from thence to some other, Monsieur Champlein, who had flued long here, did carry a company with him from France of fome fortie perions or there bouts, vp

the River of Canada whom hee planted on the North fide thereof, with a purpose to sue for a Factory, drawing all the trade of that farre running River, within the hands of a few whom he doth command, which a Plantation would have dispersed in many parts, other wise, if his deireshad beene bended that way, hee might have planted many people there ere now the blace is called Keberk, where the French doe prosper well, having Corne by their owne labour, which may furnish themselves for foode, and likewile for a stocke to traffique with the Sauages, with fundry other Fruites, Rootes, Vine grapes and Turkey Wheates. Champlein hath discouered the River of Canada from the Gulfe vpwards about 1200. miles, finding in it fometimes fuch fals as he must carry his Boate a little way by land, and then put it in againe. He did many times to come to great Lakes, at the end whereof he did alwaies finde a River againe : and the last Lake where he came was a very huge one, sudged to be three hundred miles in length; by the report The South Sea of Come Sauages, who did affirme vnto him, that at the further end thereof they did finde Salt Suspected (as of tome sanages, who did amine which think that the far the think the total they did need to before in Der-water, and that they had feene great Vesfels; which made Champlein believe that a passage might before in Der-mers keep by be there to the Bay of California, or to some part of the South Sea, which would prove an ineftimable benefit for the Inhabitants of these parts; opening a neere way to China, which hath bin tions. to many fundry wayes with fo great charges fo long fought for. Howfeeuer, in regard of the Geston, and for want of necessary proussions, Champleine did returne backe at that time, with a purpoje to goe againe another yeare: which it hee hath done is not yet knowne. but this is most certaine, that the River of Canada hath a long course, and through many goodly 20 Countries : fome of these great Lakes, by fending forth, or by receiving great Rivers, doe afford meanes of commerce as farre as to some parts of Terra Florida, as may be gathered by Champleines

Hus bane I given thee Others transells to Virginia and the Summer Hands, I will conclude with mine owne trancils for them. I fee many likely to bee disheartened by the stender growth of the Vitginian Plantation, which for the time might have beene not onely a fafe , but a rich and bleffed Mother of a unmerous thriwing generation, branching farreinto other Colemies; and yet is 1 But noy de l'inter-cept your eyes and dissert your thempts; (suffend them at best) from that which for my Countries good, and zeale to Virginia, without partial reflect on the right band or on the left, with a candid right band I 30 bere present, and forbid all finister bands to meddle with ? Troe Tyriusve mihi --- I fide no where, but embrace Virginia with a right bears, my pen directed, my bands erected for her good, which can doe mee no other good, but in reference to the publike, whose I am and whom under God and his Maiestie I serne and observe with all that I have, am, and can. I had written it as a traffate by it selfe, at the request of some worthy friends, but here have abridged it in some such things at the other parts of these Va-

CHAP. XX.

Virginias Perger: Or a Discourse shewing the benefits which may grow to this Kingdome from American English Plantations, and specially those of Virginia and Summer Hands.



difcouery, &c.

Od is the beginning and end, the Alpha and Omega, that first and last, of whom and for whom are all things. The first and last thing therefore in this Virginian are gument considerable, is God; that is, whether we have Commission him to consider the plantation may bring glogine bims. This in regard of v. and our scope; That in regard of it, and the lawfulnesse thereof. To begin with this; In the beginning God created beauer and earth (all things therefore are his by the market of the considerable and the considerable and the strength of both which Man. God in Man. and for whom are all things. The first and last thing therefore in this Virginian ar- 'Ex Aids aga

a higher name then right, this rule and the things ruled, being his creatures) of both which Man God in Man onely among t Vitible creatures was created capable, which Mofes deliuereth in thefe words, that Gini. 1. God ereated him after his owne Image: which is spoken not onely of the foirituall, immortall substance of his foule, whose vnity shineth with that created Trinicy of Vnderstanding, Will, Memory, in it felfe; and that of Vegetation, Senfe, Reafon, exercised in and by bodily motion; but more especially in regard of the Creator, a contormity to him in righteousnesse the bolinesse of truth (the whole Est. 4,24) Man finning with a borrowed light, as the Moone is the image and reflexion of the Sunne) and in regard of the Creature, a suit dominion oner the fame, as the holy words manifest; repleniff the Earth and Subducit, and have dominion over the Fish of the Sea, and over the Fowle of the agre, and 60 oner every lining thing that moueth upon the earth. Although Mans rebellion had torfeited this Na-

turall Charter, yet was the same in the repeopling of the World renewed to Noah and his Sons, General which ever fince have beene in actuall posteffion; and as Adam gave names (as humaine earemarks) to he lining creatures; to Noabs heires have fince given names to Seas and Lands, and other creatares a me thorow the knowne World. Neither did the Fall of Man to cracke this earthen welfell,

E/4:53.

A 100 . 2 T .

3. COT. 15.

that of Hea-

thens to the

world.

See thefe

5.3,4.5.

180.8.31.36.

There avo-

TOXALTO,

Heathens.

Gal. 3. 17.

Matth. S.

John 19.36.

2. Cor. 10. 4.

Matth, 16.

14d. S.

Ishn 19.11.

Rom.13.1.

Gen. 110

Alls 17. 27.

1.Cor. 3.

g.Cor.13.

Matthe 5.

1. Pet. 3.

Tit. I.

T.Tim. 1. 6. Christians

that all his created excellence ran out: for neither were the fubitance or faculties of the foule extinct, nor his prerogative over the visible creatures (the spirituall creature naturally excelling the bodily, and the realonable and living, the femitive, vegetative and torpid:) these received a wound, the other (his spiritual and religious conformitie in these to God) as a purer water of the pureft life, ran forth irrecouerably; and as our naturall parts were weakned and wounded, so of thole supernaturall wee were veterly robbed; till that good Samaritan vndertooke the restitution of that in redemption, whereunto in creation he had given first institution, God bash laid open him the immutie of us all, and in his stripes wee are bealed; our Charter is renued and now made to compleat, that whereas the deuills thought to rob man of Earth and Paradife, Hee which taketh the mile in his craftinelle hath reftored him : nay (that is little) hath added Heaven Himfelfe : that as 10 the /fraelites entred upon the houses, Caties and possessions of the curied Canaanites, fo Chriftians into those Thrones and celefiall Dominions, which those spiritual Thrones and Dominions loft, and there have God himselfe and the Lambe to be their Temple and All in all vnto them

Hence is it that Christians (luch as have the Grace of the Spirit of Christ, and not the profes. Chaftiens and fion of his merit alone) have and hold the world and the things thereof in another tenure where. of Hypocrites and Heathens are not capable. These have onely a Naturall right, by the reliques of the Law of Nature left in Man, by the Creators goodnesse, for the conservation of the face of a world in the world ; the fame further improved with a warrantization, Contra ownes genes (our enidences dialect) by the Law of Nations vnto Nations, and Lawes Politicke and Civill in each 20 fully handled Nition, allotting to the members thereof the publike and private civill rights and tenures, which in Te. I.bid.I. either publike or prinate, perfons or corporations, held therein.

This tenure comparatively that Christian , is by our Lord himselfe called a tenure in villenage, that of formes : the fermant hath his time and abides not in the bowle for ever : but the forme is berrein fee simple (fide simplici) for euer. Neither yet is it lawfull for Christians, to vsurpe the goods and lands of Heathens; for they are villains not to vs; but to our and their Lord; nor hath the fonne in nonage power to dripoffesse villaines : nor are wee sonnes by nature, but by adoption, and a later E langelical Charter which doth not disannul the former (the Truth, or Word of the may not ipoile Gospel receiued by Faith, makes wi free) free Tenants to our Lord, not Lordly subuerters of others tenures; which may with a good conscience vie our owne (all things to the pure or pure, 30 which others cannot, whose conscience being pitchy, all things it toucheth, are defiled) and not, as fome haue turned libertie into licentiousnesse, with a bad conscience take away that which is anothers. Christ same not to deftroy the Law, of which one Commandement is, Thou halt not fieale: My Kingdome, faith hee, is not of this world, and therefore properly medleth not with proprietie and civill interests. The weapons of our warfare, faith Saint Paul, are not carnall but spirituall, and the Keyes fo much boasted on by Peters pretended Successors, are called Keyes of the Kingdome of Heauen; la wfull keyes, not threuish picklocks; of Heauen, not of Earth. And it is remarkable that neither Pope nor Anabaptist (the troubles of Ifrael with worse then Heathenish conceits in this kind) euer inverted or interverted Scepters, till they had denied the very Christian name which they received in B. ptilme; nor diffifed government till they were twice dead, nor pro- 40 mifed this liberiie to others, till themselnes were the sernants of corruption. Euen a Malefactor, a Traytor, a very Fanx, or Raniliac, is permitted to breath, yea is in prison, the Kings house (whereof no private hand may dispossesse him) maintained at the Kings charge, till judgement have palfed on him, which to the world is not till the end of the world, when Christ shall come to judge the quick and dead; who once fo respected the iurisdiction of Ethnickes, that himselse was thereby adjudged to the worst of sufferings, yea acknowledged that power given to Pilat from above. His Birthacknowledged Augustu his Edict, his Infancy fled Herods tyranny, his Man-hood payd Tiberine tribute, and his Death was Roman both in kind and fentence. Let euery foule be subiect to the big ber powers, yeel led those noble armies of Martyrs in the Primitive Church; the contrary whereof hath yeelded Massiues and Monsters in these last and worst dayes.

Therefore was Babels building in the East (and shall not Babel bable building in the West be) confounded that men might bee difperfed thorow the world, to take poffession of their inheritance : and God which faid, Replenif the earth, hith made of one bloud all Nations of men, to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times and bounds of their habitation. Hee gave Ar to the children of Los, and the Land of the Horims to Efans posteritie, though not with like circum-Deut. 2.9,19. flances as Canaan to I frael: and it was by speciall indulgence, that I frael both spoiled the Egrptions and differited the Canaantes. Let it bee enough, that Christ hath given vs our selves in the Lords service to bee a perfect freeman, the Vniuersein an vniuersall tenure, and Heaven in reverse on; that hath given his Sonne, doth give his Spirit, will give bimfelfe; that all things are ours, and wee Christs, and Christ Gads: without thoughts of inuation and viurpation, knowing that Chris 60 stian Charity Seeteth nos her owne things (much leffe obtrudes on others) and Christian libertie maketh liberall Saints of naturall men, not vnnaturall deuills of professed Saints. Our Light should to hime before others, that they may see our good workes, that they which know not the world, may bee men without the Word, in admiring our Christian conversation.

to make Sauges and wild degenerate men of Christians, but Christians of the Sauge, wild, degenerate men; to whom preaching must needs bee vaine, if it begins with publike Latrocinie. And this is fufficient to preuent scruple of the Popes Bul, which (if Bafan Buls rearing were enidenc.) maketh af wel against England, this being no less questionable then Virginia, Paul, Pius, Gregory Sixtus breathing as much fire against this, as Alexander for that. But what right can England then challenge to Virginia? I answere, that we would be loth to begin our right at wrong, either to Etanick or Christian : nor need we, having to manifold and just interests. First, as men, we have a resturall right to replenif the whale earth : to that if any Countrey be not possessed by other men, righting laces 10 which is the case of Summer Hands, and hath brene of all Countries in their first habitations) every either wholy man by Law of Nature and Humanitie hath right of Plantation, and may not by other after com- or in great mers be difpossessed, without wrong to human nature. And if a country be inhabited in some parts part not inhatherof, other parts remaining unpeopled, the tame reason giveth liberty to other men which want convenient habitation of feat themselves, where (without wrong to others) they may provide for themselves. For these have the same right vuto these latter parts, which the former had to the former:especially where the people is wild, and holdeth no tettled possession in any parts. Thus the holy Patriarks removed their habitations and pafturages, when those parts of the world were not vet replenished; and thus the whole world hath been planted and peopled with former and later Colonies: and thus Virginia nath roome enough for her own (were their numbers an hundred times I have heard

This should be, and in the most Aduenturers I hope is the scope of the Virginian Plantation, not

20 as many) and for others also which wanting at home, feeke habitations there in vacant places, with perhaps better right then the first, which (being like Cain, both Murtherers and Vaga- more searched bon is in their whatfoeger and howfoeger owne) I can fearfly call Inhabitants. To question this the Countrie right, were to accul- al nost all Nations which were rocked (for the most part) in no other cradle; then any other and to disappoint also that Divine Ordinance of replensshing the Earth, whose habitations other- Cap. Smith, wife would be like scattered Ilands in the Seas, or as the present Spanish Plantations in the Indies, so much as all fo diffe-ried and diffoyned that one cannot in any diffreffe fuccour another, and therefore are made England, they an eafier prey to every Inuader. Another right is that of Merchandile: Non omnia possumus omnes, bauenot about Nec vero terra ferre omnes omnia possunt ; God in manifold wisedome hath divelified every Coun- 5000 men able tries commodities, so that all are rich, and all poore; not that one should be bungry and another dran-30 ken, but that the whole world might be as one body of mankind, each member communicating red and civilly with other for publike good. He hath made this immutable decree in the mutabilitie of the Winds, planted might commodities & commodiouinesse of Seas, and Harbors, varietie of Baies and Reuers, multiplicity of well nourish

all Mens both Necessities and Superfluities, and their univerfall defires of Nouelties. Thus Sa- 1500000, and lomon and Hiram had right to fayle ouer the Ocean, and to negotiate with the Ophirans more; as for Gommes, Gold, Ivory, and other commodities seruiceable for his peoples necessities, appeareth by for pompous Magnificence, and for the Temples Holies. And if hee did not plant Colonies this out c. unthere, you must remember that the lewift Pale was then standing, which prohibited voluntarie trie nor having remote dwellings, where each man was thrice a yeere to appeare before the Lord in Ierurill Inherifallem. Befides, it is a question whether the Countrey peopled so long before, had roome for
tunce. 40 fuch Neighbours:

It is therefore yngodly, and inhumane also to deny the world to men, or like Manger-dogges chandise. (neither to eat hay themfelues, nor to fuffer the hungry Oxe) to prohibite that for others ha- 1.cer 11.214 bitation, whereof themselues can make no vie; or for merchandise, whereby much benefit accreweth to both parts. They which doe this, Tollunt è vita vita societatem, to vie Tullies Gen. 10. phrase, or hominem ex homine tollant, to borrow Saint Ieroms in another matter. The Barbarians themiciues by light of nature faw this, and gaue Ours kind entertainment in mutual cohabita- Rom. 2. 14tion and commerce : and they having not the Law were a Law to themselves, practically acknowledging this Law of Nature written by him, which is Natura naturans, in their hearts : from which if they fince have declined, they have loft their owne Naturall, and given vs another Na-

te tionall right; their transgression of the Law of Nature, which tieth Men to Men in the rights of Right Nation Natures commons, explains them (as a forfeited bond) to the challifement of that common nall: 144 gen-Law of mankind; and alto on our parts to the feneritie of the Law of Nations, which tyeth tiam, Nation to Nation. And if they bee not worthy of the name of a Nation , being wilde and Satage: yet as Slaues, bordering rebells, excommunicates and out-lawes are lyable to the punishments of Law, and not to the priviledges; So is it with thefe Barbarians, Boilderers and Outlawes of Humanity. Armatenenti, Omnia dat qui insta negat, If the Armes bee iuit, as in this case of vindicating vinaturall, inhumane wrongs to a louing and profitable Nation, entertained Lucan. voluntarily, in time of greatest pretended amity. On this quarrell David conquered all the Kingsome of the Ammounter and lett it on his interioristin many generations, not with flanding Mo- 2. Sam. 10.

for fee had otherwife left a speciall caution for their security, testifying that God had given it the fonnes of Lot, and prohibiting inuation to Ifrael, That natural right of cohabitation and commerce Deut, 2, 19 we had with others, this of init inuation and conqueit, and many others pranicus to this, we have aboue others; to that England may both by Law of Nature and Nations challenge Virginia for her Owne peculiar propriety, and that by all right and rites viual among it men, not those mentioned Mmmmmm

alone but by others allo, first discovery, first actuall possession, prescription, gift, cession, and livery of feeting fale for price, that I mention not the naturall Inheritance of the English their naturally borne, and the vinaturall outcries of io many vinaturally murthered, for just vengeance of root-Englands manureldri hts ing out the authors and actors of to prodigious injuffice. to Prizinia.

First d:fcouery

Dec.Ontel.oc.

M.Thorne.

And first for discovery, the English, Spaniard, and Portugall seems the Triumuirs of the Worlds first discourries, the Spaniard and Portugall first opening the Eastern, Western, and Southern parts. the English the Northern America, and all known parts thence to the North & Northeast, I could bring authority for King Arthurs conquests, about 1000. yeers fince in Island, Gronland, Estotiland: but I reare this would feeme too weake a foundation, and (which lyers get by lying) discredit our other authorities lesse suspicious; how soeuer Authors of best note in Geography alledge those, to which reverence of the truth makes me let paffe. And fo I doe King Malgo toone after him, and Saint Brandon, and the Friar of Oxford (which A. 1360. is faid to discouer to the Pole) and Owen Gwined Prince of North Wales his fonne Madock, A. 1170. which conneyed a Colony, as learned men thinke into the Well Indies. In all Antiquities, as Varro observed, there are some. things fabrilous (to I deeme the former) fomething vincertaine, as this last; and fomethings Hiforicall, as that which we shall deliver. Robert Thorne in a Booke to Doctor Leigh writesh, that his father with another Merchant of Bristol, Hugh Eliot, were the first discouerers of the New-foundlands; and it the Mariners would have beene ruled by their Pilot, the Lands of the West Indies from whence the Gold commeth had beene ours. What yeere this happened he expresses not; Sit Seb Cabola. but the words import that it was before Columbia his discovery. And before Columbia his discover- 20 ry of the continent, Sir Schastian Cabot, at the charges of K. Henry the feuenth, with two Caruels, the prime galin the years 1496. (10 mm felte, in Ramufie; the Map with his preture in the Privy Gallery hath Holland he'e 1407.) lailed to the New-found Lind, which he called Prima Vista, and the lland S. lobis, because it was discouered on the Feath of S. John Baptist; from whence he failed Northerly to 67 deg, and a words.Efficies halte, hoping by that way to paffe to Cathan, but his mutinous company (terrified haply with Set. Cabour Aa-Ice and cold) forced his returne, which hee made along the Coast toward the Equinc tiall, to gli fily loanais the part of the firme land now called Florida, and then his victualls failing, he returned into Eng-Cabote Veneti, militis aurati, land, where by occasion of warres with Scotland, the imploiment was laid aside. Atterwards the &c. he was born at Venice, fame Sir Sebaitian Cabot was fent, A. 1516. by King Henry the eight, together with Sir Thomas Pert Viceadmitall of England, which after coatting this Continent the fecond time, as I haue read, 30 7. r. z. gu.o. was accounted discovered the Coast of Brafil, and returned from thence to S. Domingo and Puerto Rico. Now Columbis his first discourry of the Hands, was in \$492. of the Continent in his third voyage in Au-Englifb, &c. guft, 1497. or as others, 1498. fo that counting most fauourably for Columbus, Cabot had disco-

Sir Seb.Cab. Grand Pilot of England.

he was borne

hundred fixtie fixe pound thirteene shallings foure pence) in which voyage Greeneland was difcouered (neither is there any other Willoughbys Land to be found, but in erroneous Maps) and the Ruffian Empire by the North Cape, and the Bay of Saint Nicolas. But for Virginia, as it was then discouered by Sir Seb. Cabot, loit received that name from our Virgin-Mother, Great Elizabeth: in whose time formal & actual possession was taken for her Maiesty, the thirteenth of July, 1584. by Captain Philip Amadu, and Captain Barlow, whom Sir Walter Raleigh had fent thither with prescription. two Barkes furnished , who also the next yeere, 1,84. Sent Sir Richard Greenevile with seven fayle, which there left an English Colony under the government of M. Ralph Lane. A. 1586, hee fent another Ship of one hundred Tuns thither for their reliefe : but the Colony being returned in Sir Francis Drukes Fleet, thee returned also. Sir Richard Greenevile also about a fortnight after of their departure arrived with three Ships, and not finding the Colonie, left fifteene men to keepe poslession, furnished with prouision for two yeeres.

uered the Continent in Luie next before; by one reckoning aboue a yeere, by another aboue two

yeeres before. And indeed that New World might more fitly haue borne his name, then America

of Americus vesputius, or of Columbus, Cabot having discovered farre more of that Continent then

they both, or any man else in those Seas: to wit, from 67. degrees and an halfe to the Line, and

Hee also was the principall mover in the setting forth of Sir Hugh Willoughby, in King Edwards

time (vnder whom he was constituted Grand Pilot of England, with the annuall stipend of one 40

from thence Southerly to the River of Plate.

The names of A.1587 Six Walter Raleigh lent a new Colony of one hundred & fifty persons, with three faile, about 100, are a Ship of one hundred and twenty Tuns, a Fly-boat and a Pinnace. Her appointed twelve Affiextant in M. Stants to the Gouernour, and incorporated them by the name of Governour and Affisiants of the Back 3. Tome. Citie of Raleigh in Virginia. To thele, Sir Walter Raleigh fent succour five severall times, the last by Samuel Mace, 1602. An. 1603, the Bristow men fent thither, by leave of Sir Walter Raleigh, in which Expedition was Mafter Robert Saltern , who the yeere before had beene with Cap. Bart. Gofnold. And thus are wee come to the beginning of his Maiettes gracious raigne, when the North and South Plantations were by new Patents eagerly pursued, the one from hence, the o- 62 ther from the Well parts of England. Mawoofhen and other parts, were many yeeres vilited by our men, and An. 1607. 2 Plantation fetled at Sagadabor, by two Ships fent by that wife and feuere Luftice Sir Iohn Popham and others : the fuccesse whereor hath been such, that from the North Plantation it hath beene dignified with the Title of New England. And for the Southerne parts,

A. 1606. 2 Colony went from hence, fet forth by the Virginia Company, which have ever fince maintained their Plantation in differing fortunes. As for the former Plantations of Sir Walter Raleigh, some children were borneto them there: and whether they line, they continued the Two somes posteffion; orif the Sauages dealt perfidioully with them (as Pombatan confessed to Cap. Smith. Colonies that hee had beene at their flaughter, and had divers vtenfills of theirs to flew) their carkaffes, wholly, &c. the disperied bones of their and their Countrey mens since murthered carkaffes, haue taken a mortall immortall possession, and being dead, speake, proclaime and cry, This our earth is truly English, and therefore this Land is suftly yours O English.

Thus have we discouered the English right by Discouery, Possession, Prascription; to which we no may adde, that none other Nation hath once adventured to fettle in those parts, nor scarce to view them ; yea the French and Spanish Plantations in Florida , Virginias Southerne neighbour, foone ended in bloudy mafficres, the Spanis cruelly " murthering the Fronth , under the conduct of Pedro Melendes, which An. 1567, was repaid them by Dominique de Gorgues, the acquitiance written with his f word in Spani boloud : Florida euer fince expecting civilizing from her first difcoursers the English : which is further ratified by the former Spanish disafters in the Expeditions of Pamphilo de Nauarez, 1527, and of Soio, 1537, into Florida : which two iourneyes confumed neere one thouland men therein imployed : besides other Expeditions of Ponce de Leon and o-

thers mentioned by Vega and the Spanifo Authors.

Now for voluntary subjection of the Natiues, giving themselves and their lands to the Crown 30 of England, M. Ralph Lane hath testified for the first Colonie, that Menatonon their King by his fernice to the Mc Inger, & with him twentie foure principal men fent from Okisko King of Weopomiok his Val- English. fall, formally acknowledged Her Maielty as feruants and homagers to her, and vnder her to Sir W. R. For the lait Plantation by the present Patent of His Maiefty , Paspehay, one of their Kings fold visland for Copper, and Powbatan the chiefe Lord of all the Sauages, with thirty nine Werowances, have yeelded to more then formes and circumftances of homage, besides contributi- Right by buy? on, having also actually sold for Copper by him received of Cap. John Smith, and made voluntary ing & selling a ceffion of as much as the English defired, going away with his people to leave it to the English and by ceffion onely. This purchase was much increased by Sir Thomas Dale, and for whatsoever else which he Right by Forheld, hee accepted a Copper Crowneas Vaffall to His Maiesty: which also hee really performed feiture, 30 for a time, how loener (ince they have beene perfidious. And this perfidiousnesse of theirs hath further warranted the English Title. Temperance and Infice had before kiffed each other, and feemed to bleffe the cohabitations of English and Indians in Virginia. But when Virginia was violently ranished by her owne ruler Natines, yea her Virgin cheekes dyed with the bloud of three Colonies (that of Sir R. Greenevile, that of Sir W. R. both confessed by themselves, and this last butchery intended to all, extended to so many hundreths, with so immaine, inhumane, doublish treachery) that I speake not of thousands otherwise mis-caring here and mis-carrying there, taking possession of Virginia by their facts, and fates, by so manifold losses adding to the price of Fatalloostess. Viremias purchase : Temperance could not temper her selfe, yea the stupid Earth seemes distem. on. pered with such bloudy potions and cries that shee is ready to spue out her Inhabitants : Iustice ao cive h to G o D foe vengeance, and in his name adjureth Prudence and Fortitude to the execution.

The Holy Patriarks had a promise of Canaan, yet held no possession but with their dead bodies; Heb. 11. Infeph by faith gaue charge concerning his bones: Virginia by fo many rights naturalized English, by first discouery, actuall possession, chargeable continuation, long prescription, voluntary subjection, delinery of feifin, naturall inheritance of English there borne, reall sale, legall cession, regall vaffallage; difloyall treason hath now conficated whatfoeuer remainders of right the vnnaturall Naturalls had, and made both them and their Countrey wholly English, prouoking vs, if wee bee our owne, not base, degenerate, vnworthy the name of English; so that wee shall not have any thing lett (like Danids Embassadors, which thus abused, brought their Matter a inst title to Am-50 mon, purchased by their disgraces) to couer our nakednesse, till Virginia couer, reward, inrich & with a totall subjection at left, if not a farall revenge. And thus much for our right which God hath given vs : whose Virginian tribute is bis glory, that hee may indeed be Alpha and Omega (as hath beene faid) of the Virginian Plantation : which if it hath not fatisfied the expectation hithereo, no doubt that defect hath in great part proceeded from this.

The end of a thing is the beginning, being first in intention though last in execution : the Word and end which Christians ought to ayme at is God, Doing all things in the name of our Lord lefus Workes ad-Christ, to the glory of God the Father, by the gracious guide and affiliance of the Holy Ghost. nanced by this Glory is, * Frequens de aliquo fama cum lande, And beereby is our Father glorified, faveth Plantation, Christ, if yee bring forth much fruite, and fo shall yee be my Disciples. Loe here the scope of 60 Christians Plantations, to plant Christianity, to produce and multiply Christians, by our words Is. 15. and works to further the knowledge of God in his Word and Workes. The workes of God glorifie their Creator : The Heavens, faith David, declare the glory of God, &c. I will trimmph in the workes Pr. 19.10 of thy hands. O Lord, how great are thy workes? and thy thoughts are very deepe. A bruitist man Pf. 9.4.

knoweth not, neither doth a foole understand this. All creatures are inuited to praise the name of the

Mmmmmmm 2

1314 Gods olory in his various works, Mynes not they great minds wealth. LIB. IX.

P . 16 / 45 2.

Lord for hee bath commanded and they were created : How much more should the tongue of man he the Pen of a readie writer, and as it is called, The glory of the man, fo imploy it felfe in fer ing forth the glory of God, in his Workes of Creation, Prouidence, Redemption?

The Whites of

God is a Glonous Circle, whose Center is every where, his circumference no where : himselfe God and va. i- to himselfe is Circle and Circumference, the Ocean of Entitie, that very vigue, from whom, to etie there feen whom (the Centre of vnitie) all divertified lines of varietie iffue and returne. And although we every where feele his present Deitie, yet the difference of heavenly climate and influence, canfine fuch diffeording concord of dayes, nights, featons; fuch varietie of meteors, elements, aliments; fuch noueltie in Beafts, Fishes, Fowles; such luxuriant plentie and admirable raritie of Trees. Shrubs, Hearbs: fuch fertilitie of foyle, infinuation of Seas, multiplicitie of Rivers, fafetie of 10 Ports, healthfulneffe of ayre, opportunities of habitation, materialls for action, ebiects for contemplation, haps in prefent, hopes of future, worlds of varietie in that diverfified worlds doe quicken our mindes to apprehend, whet our tongues to declare, and fill both with arguments of dunine praise. On the other fide confidering to good a Country, fo bad people, having little of Propagation of Humanitie but shape, ignorant of Civilitie, of Arts, of Religion; more brutish then the beatte the Goloelli & attended the beatty rewards there of they hunt, more wild and vinmanly then that vinmanned wild Country, which they range rather then inhabite; captinated also to Satans tyranny in foolish pieties, mad impieties, wicked idlenetle, butte and bloudy wickednetle : hence have wee fit objects of zeale and pitte , to deliver from the power of darknesse, that where it was faid, Tee are not my people, they may bee called the children of the lining God : that luftice may to proceed in rooting out those murtherers, that vet in undgement (imitating Gods dealing with vs) wee may remember Mercy to such as their owne finnocence shall protect, and Hope shall in Charitie judge capable of Christian Faith. And let men know that bee which converteth a summer from the errows of his way, Shall same a soule from death. and Shall hide a multitude of finnes. And Saniours Shall thus come on Mount Zion to indee the Mount of Elan, and the Kingdome (of Virginia) Shall be Lord. Thus shall wee at once overcome both Men and Deuills, and espouse Virginia to one husband, presenting ber at a chast Virginite Christ. If the ene of Aduenturers were thus fingle, how loone and all the body should be light? But

Matth. 6.22 the louing our felues more then God, hath detained fo great bleffings from vs to Varginia, and from 2.Tim.4.8. Virginia to vs. Godlineffe bath the promises of this life, and that which is to come. And if wee be carefull to doe Gods will, he will be ready to doe ours. All the rich endowments of Ungines, her Virgin-portion from the creation nothing leffened.

are wages for all this worke : God in wifedome having enriched the Sauage Countries, that those riches might be attractives for Chriftian luters, which there may fone firstuals and rease

Anfweres to Objections : 8 first to the want of Geld and Siluer

Ism, 4, 20.

Obad plt.

1.Cor.11,2.

temporals. But what are those riches, where we heare of no Gold nor Silver, and fee more impouerished here then thence enriched, and for Mines we heare of none but Iron? Iron mindes! Iron age of the world! who gaue Gold or Silver the Monopoly of wealth, or made them the Almighties fall uprites. Precious perils, specious punishments, whose originall is neerest bell, whose house is darkneffe, which have no eye to fee the heavens, nor admit heavens eye (guilty malefactors) to fee 40 them; neuer produced to light but by violence, and continued, vpon records written in bloud, the occasioners of violence in the World; which have infected the furface of their native earth with deformity and iterality (these Mines being fit emblemes of mindes couetous, stored with want, and euer wanting their owne (tore) her bowels withdarknesse, damps, deaths, causing trouble to the neighbour Regions, and mischiefe to the remotest ! Penution mindes! Is there no riches but Gold Mines ! Are Iron Mines neglected, rejected for hopes of Silver! What, and who elfeis the Alchymift, and impostor, which turnes the World, and Men, and all into Iron ! And how much Iron-workes in Warres and Maffacres bath American Gold and Silver wrought thorow all Chriflendome? Neither speake I this, as itour hopes were blasted, and growne deplorate and desperate this way, the Country being to little fearched, and the remote in-land-Mountaines vn- 50 knowne : but to shew the fordid tincture and base alloy of these Mine-mindes. Did not the Spamifb Iron (tell me you that contemne Iron-mines) draw to it the Indian Silver and Gold? I will not be a Prophet for Spaine from Virginia. But I cannot forget the wily apophthegme of the Pilots Boy in the Cacafaego, a great Ship laden with treasure taken in the South Sea, by Sit Francis Drake; who seeing the English Ordnance command such treasure from the Spanish Casafuego; Our Ship, faid he , Shall be called the Cacaplata, and the English may be named the Cacafuego. I will not be fo vinmannerly to give you the homely English; it is enough that English Iron brought home the Spanish-Indian Silver and Gold. But let vs consult with the wifelt Councellour. Canaan, Abrahams promise, Ifraeli inheritance, type of heaven, and ioy of the earth! What were her riches " were they not the Grapes of Elbeal, the balme of Gilead, the Cedary neighbourhood 62 of Liberry, the pastury vate of leviele, the dewes of heaven, fertility of foile, temper of climat, the flowing (not with Golden Sands, but) with Milke and Hony (necessaries, and pleasures of life, not bottomelelle gulfes of luft) the commodious scituation for two Seas, and other things like (in how many inferiour ?) to this of Virginia. What golden Country ever nourified with her natural fore the hundreth part of men, in io imall a proportion of earth, as Danid there

CHAP.20. Virginia best in the best endowments of a Country. Cause of ill successe. 1815

mustered, being 1 100000. of Ifrael, and 500000. of Inda, not reckoning the Tribes of Leni and Compare Reniemin, all able men for warres. And after him, in a little part of that little Iebofhapbat (More 2 Sam. 24. with I dare tay then the Spaniards can finde in one hundred times fo much, of their Mine lands, and 1 chron. 21. It choose their best in Peru, New Spaine, and the Hands) the Scriptures containing an infallible mu- feemes that iter-booke of 1160000. able Souldiers in his small territories

That then is the richelt Land which can feede most men, Man being a mortall God, the best boue two millions of men part of the best earth, and visible end of the visible World. What remarkeable Gold or Silver besides women Mines bath France, Belgia, Lumbardy, or other the richest peeces of Europe? what hath Baby- and children. louis, Mauritania, or other the belt of Affa and Africke? What this our fertile Mother England?

to Aske our late Travellers which faw fo much of Spaine, the most famous part of Europe for Mones of old, and inriched with the Mynes of the New World, if an Englishman needs to enuy a Spaniand or prefer a Spanife life and happineffe to his owne. Their old Mynes made them the feruants of Rome and Carthage : and what their Mynes and mindes doe now I leave them to others. Once. as the Mynes are in barrennelt foyle, and couctous men have leaft, even when they are had of most money (medig ver Tantalus undis) fo I have heard that in Spaine is leffe Gold and Silver: then in other parts of Europe , (I dare not mention the proportions) from both Spanish and Eng-Wh relation : their vitall money also (to meddle with no more) is of base mettall, and their grearest summes computed by Maranedis lesse then our later tokens : except which (deuised for poorer vies of the poorest) England of long time knowes no base monyes; and hath seene plentie of

20 Silver and Gold, of Wine and Oyle which (grow not in her) when Spane, which produceth thefe, is fed with falads, and drinketh water, helped now and then with Hoggef-kinne vnfauoury Wine. The Indian Fountaines runne with golden and filter streames (fie vos non vobis) not to themselves, but into that Spanish Cifterne ; and these Cifternes are like those of the London Water-house, which hath the Conduit Pipes alway open in the bottome, fo that a thousand other Cifternes hold more water then it : fo may it be faid of the other; it is not Concha but Camalis, a Pipe rather then Cifterne, a Calh-keeper rather then Owner; and (which is spoken of better things) remaining poore, makesmany rich. To proceed, are not Myners the most milerable of Slaues, toyled continually, and voto manifeld deaths tired for others, in bringing to light those Treasures of darknesse, and living (if they live, or if that bee a life) in the suburbs of Hell; 30 to make others dreame of Heauen! Yea Paradife, the modell of heauen, had in it no Minerals,

nor was Adam in his innocency, or Noah after the Worlds recovery, both Lords of all, employed in Mines, but (in those happy workes which Virginia inuiteth England vnto) in Vines, Gardening, and Husbandry. Neither let any man thinke that I pleade against the foureneffe of the Grapes, like the Foxe which could not reach them : but I featoufly flew that they are calues and not men, which adore the golden Calfe, or Nabachadnezzars great golden flatue, as if the body were not more then raiment, and those things to be preferred to money, for whole take mony (the creature of man; base Idolatry where the Creator worships his creature!) was first ordained, and fill hath both vie and being.

Doe we not fee in this respect, that the Silkes, Calicos, Drugges, and Spices of the East swal-40 low vp (not to mention the Belgian whirlepoole) all the Mines of the West ? and that one Carricke carrieth more Rials thither, then perhaps some whole Region in Spaine retaineth for vulgar vie? And whence are English, Partugals, or Dutchmen fitted for that commerce ? as if Amereca had ominoully (for other inft reason there is none) beene called India, as if the West were but drudge and factor for the East. And what hath dispeopled the New World, not leaving in some places one of Millions, but Aurifacra fames, others killing them in the Mines, or they killing themselves to prevent the Mines! Let it be riches enough, that Sir Thomas Dale testified Vaginias high by Letters from thence, and after his returne to me that foure of the best Kingdomes of Christen- Valuation. dome were not for naturall endowments comparable to Virginia: and which I have heard of one which hath travelled in all the best Regions of Europe, and hath seene more of Virginia then perhaps any man elfe, and which needes not speake for any gaine there or thence gotten, as no re-50 puted fauourite or fauourer of that Society and their actions; that he hath feene no Country to

be preferred for foile, nor for commodious Rivers to be compared. And if successe hath not beene correspondent to English hopes : who seeth not the causes of Answer to the those diseasters?

Divition that taile-headed Amphisbanaand many-headed monster, deformed iffue of that diffor- successes and med old Serpent, in some of the Colony there & Copany here, hath from time to time thrust in her causesthereof, forged venomous tongue, wherby they have swolne with deadly poison of great thoughts of heart Ind. 5516. (onely by pride doe men make contention) with blinde-flaring eyes of felt-loue abounding in their own Proussalo, sense: whence sulpicions, lealousies, factions, partialities to friends and dependants, wilfull ob-

60 finacies, and other furious passions haue transported men from Virginias good and their owne. Couetoul nelle hath distorted others to minde earth and not heaven, in hastinesse of more then speedy returns and present gaine, forgetting that Godlinessess the beff gaine, and that they are a Time. planting a Colony, not reaping a harueft, for a publike and not (but in subordinate order) private Wealth. A long time Virginia was thought to be much encombered with Englands excrements,

Mmmmmm 3

fome vicious persons, as corrupt leuin sowring, or as plague fores infecting others, and that Colo. ny was maile a Port Exquiline for fuch as by ordure or vomit were by good order and phyficke worthy to be enacuated from This Body: whence not only lazie drones did not further the Plantation, but wicked Walpes with flatking, and the worst, that is beggerly tyrants, frustrated and fundiated the labours of others. Calum non animum mutant qui trans mare current. A prodicious Produgall here, is not eafily metamorpholed in a Virginian paliage to a thrifty Planter; nor can there needs witer choice or more industrious courte in any vndertaking, then is requisite in a Chris fine Colonies plantation among it Infidels. Which Huppofe hath beene carefully by many Adnenturers practiced : and whatloener faults happened by ignorance in the beginnings, negle@ of uenturers practiced and whatteened taster or in Gouernours or Gouernment, abuses of Mariners, featons, riot, fleath, occasionall wants of or in Gouernours or Gouernment, abuses of Mariners, trechery of Fugitiues, and Sauages; and other difeates, which have in part attended all new Plantat ons, and confumed many: experience I hope by this time hath taught to preuent or remedy. The late barbarous Maffacre (bine illa lachryma) ftill bleedeth, and when things were

reported to be in better forwardnesse then euer, in great part blassed those hopefull blossomes. pas: been too chiointed the proceedings in the Iron workes, Vineyards, Mulberry plants; and in fudden flifts later military for life, exposed them to manifold necessities; insomuch, that many of the Principals being flain. the rest surprifed with feare, reduced themselves almost from eighty to eight Plantations, whereby pestered with multitude, and destitute of Corne and other forsaken necessaries, they incurred a grieuous and generali ficknesse, which being increased by insection of some passengers tainted a grieuous and general in the state, in their Ship-pallage with corrupt Beere, there followed a mortality which confumed about five 20 hundred perions, befides three hundred and fifty or thereabouts murthered in that Sauage-Maffacre. All which notwithstanding, there remaine, some haue if truely calculated and conicdured eighteene hundred persons : for whose security and proussion it hath pleased his Maiesty to have presented by the Companie a Royall care, as I kewife the Honor ble Lords of his Maiesties printy Councell, besides the hoto the Lords of notable endeuours of the Councell and well affected members of that Society, which God almighthe Genneell. ty, the great Founder of Colonies, profper.

Now that I may show Virginia worthy those princely, honorable and industrious thoughts. Arguments for I have adventured briefely to point out, rather then to paint out her beauty and attractine or-

tation, asbe- naments. ine honorable.

First Religion (as is before observed) inviteth vs there to seeke the Kingdome of God first, and all 20 other things shall be ministred to us, and added as advantage to the bargaine : seeke the Kingdome of God, and see an earthly Kingdome in recompence, as the earnest, and the heavenly Kingdome for our full paiment. Of glorifying God in his word and workes in this defigne is already

s. Humanirie.

z.Religion.

Secondly, Humanity and our common Nature forbids to turne our eyes from our owne flesh; yea commands vs to loue our neighbours as our felues, and to play the good Samaritan with these our neighbours (though of another Nation and Religion, as the wounded Icw was to him) to recouer them if it be possible, as by Religion, from the power of Sathan to God; so by humanity and civility from Barbarilme and Sauageneffe to good manners and humaine polity.

Thirdly, the Honour of our Nation enjoyeth vs not balely to loole the glory of our fore- and fathers acks, which here have been shewed in King Henry the feuenth, King Honry the eight, King Edward the fixt, and Oneene Elizabeths times, all which illustrated their names by Discovery of Realmes remote, viknowne parts and ports (and the first, first of all Kings, and the last holding to the last) Discouering and possessing thele, and leaving them as just inheritance to his Maiesty. What shame to a degenerate posterity, to loose so honorable a claime, and gaine; yea, to neglect that which many English have purchased with doing and suffering to much, and not with their fweate alone, their care and coft, but with their decreft bloud and manifold deaths?

4. Honour of

Fourthly, wee may recken the Honour of our King, and his Royall posterity : to which, in time Virgonia may performe as much with equall manuring as euer Britannia and Ireland could 50 promite when first they became knowne to the then civiller World. And were not companions odious ! I am fure I heard Sir Thomas Dale confidently and feriously exulting in private conference with me, in the hopes of future greatnesse from Virginia, to the English Crowne. And if the wife King wifely faid, the honour of a King is in the multitude of his Subjects, loe here the way to preserve, employ, encrease them; and for his Maietty to reach his long royall armes to another World. The Roman Empire fowed Roman Colonies thorow the World, as the most naturalland artificiall way to win and hold the World Romaine.

... Honor of the

Fifthly, the honour of the Kingdome, thus growing and multiplying into Kingdomes, that as Scotland and England feeme lifters, fo Virginia, New England, New found Land in the Continent already planted in part with Englift Colonies, together with Bernada, and other 60 lands may be the adopted and legall Daughters of England. An honorable defigne, to which Honor stretcheth her faire hand, the fine fingers whereof are adorned with such precious Rings, each enriched with inualnable lewels of Religion, Humanity, Inheritance, the King, the Kingdome i Honos alit artes, omnesque incenduntur ad findia gloria.

CHAP.20. Spaines American greatnesse a motive for Englands Virginia.

And if Honour hath prevailed with honorable and higher spirits, we shall come laden with arguments of profit to prefit meaner hands and hearts to the feruice of Vnginia. Onely I define that 6. Argument guments of profit to prette meaner manus and meares to the tended or regime. Only the the of profit, gemen bring their hearts first, and consider that the very names of a Colony and Plantation doe imnerally pronerally promen oring chen and feafonable culture, and planting before a Harnest and Vintage can be expounded. pected : which if they here exercise our Faith and Hope both for earth and heaten, where all things are prepared; let vs not in ruder and cruder foundations and beginnings there, precipitate vnto hafty fals.

And before we come to Virginias particular probabilities for this Kingdomes good, we need Illustrated by not far fetched speculations, we have evidence from experience. Cafile (a Kingdome which now the Cafillan to floops to none, and which some of her flatterers advance about all, making it Catholike without respect to Faith) grew from an almost nothing out of the Moorife deluge, to be but a petrie

fomething in comparison of others in Europe, till Ferdinands time who fent Columbia to Americe. And how poore abilities or probabilities had they for it, when Columbia upon falle grounds haung conceiued strong, strange hopes of the Eisterne Indies, stumbled vpon a Westerne World Vpon lisse whereof hee neuer dreamed, which therefore he called India, and Hiffaniola Ophir: to which probabilities Expedition (neither founded on found reason, nor experience of former Ditcoueries, when as vet the Mariners Art was but crept out of the Cradle, and bleffed only in the Euent) the flate of Callile was as poorely furnished as it feemes, eyther with money or credit, the Queene pawning part of her Iewels for 2000. Duckets, to fet Columbus forth with three poore Caruels for this 20 Discouery. Little was it then imagined, that in Hispaniola should be found (which happened in

the taking of Domingo by Sir Francis Drake) a Spanish Scutchion with a Horie, whole hinder feet trod on the Globe, his fore-feet prauncing as it he would foot our another World (like Alexander hearing Philosophers discourse of other Worlds, weeping that hee had not yet finished the conquest of this) having this Mottoannexed, Non sufficit Orbis. Yea, but they found Gold and Silver in abundance; the Pockes they did 1 and plagued all Europe with the great ones, See Oniole & with the did not ones, See Oniole & with the did not ones of the pockes they did find Gold and Silver, how poore were the our fixth Book! proportions till the Mexican Discouery almost thirty yeeres, and that of Permsorty yeeres after their Indian plantation. And who knowes what Virginia in that space may produce by better Their greatest their Indian plantation. And who knowes what Originia in that space may produce by better benefit in Discovery of it, and further Discovery of parts adjoyning, whereof we have ten thousand times commodities. no more pregnant hopes, then they had in their first Expedition, by knowledge gathered from their notin Mines.

Befides, though Gold and Silver from thence hath enriched the Spanifb Exchequer, yet the mon fubica, Magazines haue found other and greater wealth, whereof Virginia is no leffe capeable, namely, the Country Commodities. What Mynes have they, or at least, what doe they vie in Brafil, or in all the Hands, where yet fo many wealthy Spaniards and Portugalls inhabit ? Their Ginger. Sugar, Hiles, Tobacco and other Merchandize, I dare boldly affirme, yeeld far far more profit to the generalitie of the Spanish Subjects thorow that vast World, then the Mynes do or have done this last Age. Which I shall make apparant by honourable testimonie, in one of the last English Exploits on the Spanifo Indies. The Right Honorable Earle of Cumberland in a Letter of his af-

ter the aking of Port Rice, (chiefe Towne if not the greatest lland in those parts, and far short of Hispaniola and Cuba) affirmeth, that if hee would have left the place, hee might have had by The Earle Had good account as much Sugar and Ginger in the Countrey, as was worth 500000 pounds. But purposed to he intended to keepe it, as the Key of the Indies, which who former possesses (I vie his owne words) leave Sir Iobu he intended to keepe it, as the Key of the indies, word was journer pureyers (1 vie in so will worlds) Barker with a may at his pleasure goe to any Chamber in the House, and see how they sleepe before hee be cuther slopped Garrison to or descried: so as they must at enery doore keepe so great a force to guard them, as will consume a great hold it, but a part of their yeerely Reuenue; and fend it frem place to place with fo great a waftage, as will cause them great ficknette to curse their new Porter : for when they have done what they can , they shall beare his charge to their and mortalities owne destruitions, and still be loosing places both of strength and wealth. Thus that valorous and renowmed Earle, whole bloud ennobled his attempts, whose attempts added glory to his bloud, men, he was and noblenesse to his Nobilitie: which I rather recite that you might see the great wealth which forced tolerue the Spaniards reape of Ginger and Sugar, to which that of Hides in that Iland holds fuch propor- the place, to

tion, that one inhabitant thereof named Chirigo, had no fewer then twelve thouland Beenes: bring home his where Beeues growing wild, it was tolerable to any Ilander to kill a beaft, if hee returned the I finds this in a skinne to the Owner : and what he speakes of a Key and a Porters advantage, Mutato nomine de written Exte, change the name, and if Uirginia and Summer Hands fall short some wayes, they will, more task of all the then equall it other wayes, in Cale! But I muit contains my felfe, left I purchase a Purchase Cale Ports, thipping

medling.

Now if any thall thinke that the many transplantations of people into thosepatts, would ex-which somehauft England, Spaine will answere that point also, now in their dayes complaying no more of times belong-60 scarcitie of people (notwithstanding their many and long Warres in so many parts of Europe, ex- ed to that incept the expulsion of the Moores and Marans, have caused it) then when first they undertooke custious Gen-

those contuming valt Enterprizes, not of a Virginia, but of a World. And yet what in compazifon is Spanne for multitudes of people, whose vastnesse is faid to yeeld (the King, Dukes, Mar- troller of the quelles and Earles only with their retinue excepted) from eighteene yeeres of age to fiftie, but Name.

Arg. 7. from our multitudes

1 124 390. men of alliorts, as I have feene in an Extract of the Royall Mufter-booke, which how much is it exceeded by the numerous excelle of people in this Iland, straitned in farre leffe roome. and wanting necessary employments, which almost exacteth a Virginian vent and adjenture. For how much more convenient is a transmigration, into a fruitfull, large and wholesome Region. where the Countrie hath need of a Colonie to cultivate it, as well as those Colons and Inhahis tants have need of a Countrie to inhabit rather then to breed a fulnes in This Bodie, which without some such euacuation either breeds matter for the pestilence and other Epidemicall Difeases. or at least for Dearth, Famine, Diforders, ouer-burthening the wealthier, opptessing the poorer. diffquieting both themselves and others, that I mention not the fatall hand of the Haneman And thus you have Virginias hopes in generall propounded by Spanish example viged and enforced by our necessitie of feeking vent to fuch home-fulnesse. Arguments of But looke upon Virginia; view her louely lookes (howfocuer like a modelt Virgin the is now

particular co- vailed with wild Couerts and shadie Woods, expecting rather rausshment then Mariage from her Natiue Sauages) furuay her Heauens, Elements, Situation; her divisions by armes of Bayes and Rivers into fo goodly and well proportioned limmes and members; her Virgin portion nothing empaired, nay not yet improoued, in Natures best Legacies; the neighbouring Regions and Seas fo commodious and obfequious; her opportunities for offence and defence; and in all thefe you shall see, that she is worth the wooing and loues of the best Husband. First, for her Heavens and Climate, the with her Virgin Sifters hath the fame (being extended from 30, to 45, degrees of North latitude) with the best parts of Europe, namely the fat of Grecia, Thracia, Spaine, Ita- 20 lie, Morea, Sicilia, (and if we will looke more Northward to the height of France and Britaine, there her Sifters New England, New Scotland, and New-found-land, promife hopefull and kinde entertainment to all A Juenturers. If you looke Southwards, you may parallel it with Barbarie. Egype, and the fertileit parts of Africke) and in Afra, all that Chnerfoneffus, sometime the feate or foure thousand Cities, and so many Kingdomes, now called Natelia, with her Neighbours Antiochia, and other Regions of Syria, Damafew, Libanu, with Babylonia and the glorie of the Earth : and Types of Heauen, Indea and Paradife; the Silken Countries also of Perlia, China in her best parts, and lapan, are in the elevation; and Virginia is Daughter of the same Heavens, which promife no leffe portion to this Virgin, then those Matrons had for the foundation-stock of their wealth and glory.

. The fime climate with bell Countries

Secondly, this Climate as it promifeth wealth, so it doth health also, enjoying the temper of 2. Temperate. the most temperate parts, even of that in which Adam, Abraham, with the Prophets and Apofiles were bred in, and received as an Earthly priviledge; and in which Christ conversed in the 2. Large exfieth. And thirdly for extension, if conetousnesse gape wide, ten Indam, and a hundred Paradifes, may be equalled for quantitie in Virginia, whole mid-land Regions are wholly voknowne, till we arrive at that Nona Albion , which yeelded it felfe Englifb before the first Urreinian

Fourthly for commodious divisions, the Lands and Seas contend by frosh Rivers and Armes of the Sea fo to diverlifie the foyle as if in luxuriant wantonnesse they were alway engendring maous autinon or Lands and Ri. nifeld Twinnes of Commoditie and Commodiousnesse, Profit and Pleasure, Hunting and Fishing, 40 Fruits and Merchandizing, Marinership and Husbandry, Opus and Vise, Meate and Drinke, Wares and Portage, Defending and Offending, Getting and Keeping, Mountaines and Valleyes, Plaines and Hillocks, Rivers Navigable and shallower Foords, Ilands and Land-iles (or Peninfula) Woods and Marishes, Vegetatines and lining creatures maruellously diversified. Looke on the Map, and tell me if any Countrey in the World promifeth more by the lookes then it. Yea I have observed in the Letters of greatest Malcontents from thence, foe and friend and themselves are blamed rather then the Countrey, the least finger of Virginias hand (I meane the least of fine Rivers (or as Mafter Alexander Whitakers relateth, the least of feven) in a finall part of that great Countrie, is bigger then the First-borne of Britaines waters, the famous Thames, all Nauigable, fome one hundred miles, some one hundred and fixtie, receiving Tributes by the way of innume- 50 rable Springs, Brookes, Riverets (fuch as that of Ware, and fit for portage of Wares in imaller Barkes, of which kind lames River hath five Attendants in ordinary) the fall of every one of the fine is within twentie or fifteene miles of some other: and not aboue fifteene miles in some places is the Great River of Roanoke faid to be distant from some of those which fall into lames Riuer, yeelding a commodious intercourse twixt those Southerly and these more Northerly parts of the Countrey. I know not how Nature hath here also wantonized and danced a Loath to depart in the winding of those Streames, which feeme willingly againe and againe to embrace that beloued Soile, and to prefent her with rich Collers of filuer Eifes, murmuring that they must leave To fresh and fertile a Land, of which at last with Salt teares they take their leave, but contra-Eting with their New Sea Lord to visit their old Land-lord and former Loue every Floud, Meane 60 whiles those many impetuous clippings and sweet embraces, searching refuges every way make thew as if they would meet together in confultation, and agree on some Conspiracie, which howfoeuer disappointed, yeeld neuerthelesse many conueniences of entercourse and easier portage, each River comming within foure, eight, ten miles, more or fewer in divers places of another. All

thefe Rivers runne into a faire Bay, on which the Earth enery way is a greedie gazing Spectator, Bay of cheftexcept where the Ocean rusheth in to raugh her beauties, flowing neere two hundred miles into peace. it, and forcing a Channell one hundred and fortie, of depth betwixt feuen and fifteene fathome. and ten or fourteene miles in ordinary breadth. The Earth yet vadermining it by Ilands, and mustering those River Captaines and innumerable Springs and Brookes, maintaineth his fresh challenge with continuall Warres, forcing backe the Ocean enery Ebbe to retire, which vet loth to lote fo fweete a possession returneth within few houres, freshly flowing with Salt re-

Firthly, the foile is bleffed, every Element bestowing a rich portion on her. The fire hath trea- s. Fertile foiles 30 fires laid up to maintaine her fewell vnto prodigality (yea which feldome meete, a thriftie prodigality) for many yeeres. Her store of waters you have heard, but not her watery store of tishes vnto incredibility in kinds, goodnesse, numbers. The Are is no lesse luxuriant in the Fowles of Heaven, Bur the Earth (fruitfull Mother of Mankind) the is prodigiously prodigall, in fatneffe of the foile: talneffe, fweetneffe, ftrength, varietie, numberleffe numbers of her Trees : her Oakes 6. Trees for no leffe excellent then frequent, many of them bearing two foote and an halfe fquare of good timber and no Timber twenty yards long : of which also are divers kinds. Elmes and Ashes (of which Sope- ther vies many ashes are made) Wal-nuts in three forts, Cypreffes (or much resembling them) Cedars and other fweet imelling Timbers, Chefnuts, Plummes of divers forts, Cheries and other Trees. &c. reckoned by Virginian Relators, I omit. But most remarkable and promiting are the Mulberic and

the Vine, the one to the backe, the other to the belly, yeelding Silkes and Wine. As for Silke, how great profits are raised thereof to the Chinois and Persian? Yea to come nee 7. Specially for

rer, in Naples and other parts of Italy, which have provoked France to a general limitation. And Silkes. how you aluable are the expenses of this Kingdome for that materiall, Ut matrona in publico luceant! Likewife for Wines from France, Spaine, Germanie, and other parts how many thou- 8. And for fands are veerely expended to the profits of Strangers, that I say not to enemies, or at least to Wines. fuso cted friends : It hath pleased his Maiestie to take these two into his Princely confideration luly 9, 48,200 and by his Letter to the Right Honorable the Earle of Southampton, and the Company of Virginia Sec (40, 6, 15, to commend and command this care to them.

The Countrey it felfe naturally produceth Vines in great abundance, and some of a very good 30 fort : divers plants also have beene sent this her of the better kinds of Christendome, with eight Vignerous procured from Languedock for the husbanding of that commoditie. The Soyle is no leffe naturally happy in Mulberie Trees of the best kind and some Silke-wormes also; and generall order bath beene taken for the abundant planting of them in all places inhabited; large fupply also of Silke-worme-feed from his Maiesties store, and men skilfull in that kind for the well ordering of that businesse have beene fent. In a word , the very prosperity and pregnant hopes of that Plantation made the Deuil and his lims to enuy, feare and hate it. Hence that bloudy Malacre which caused almost a sudden Chaos to the hinderance of those affaires, by the convulfions, combustions, and almost confusion of that Body and their Designes : whereof yet we hope not only a recourry but greater advantage, the greatest danger from the Sauges, growing out of our mens-confidence, which that terrible stroke (except a stupid Deuill possesse vs) hath cut off : which likewife requires that feruile natures be feruily vfed; that future dangers be presented by the extirpation of the more dangerous, and commodities also raised out of the serurienesse and Sausses so ferniceablenesse of the rest.

As for Saffafras, Salt, Terra Lemnia, Gummes and other profitable Drugges I shall not neede their laboura. speake : nor of their Silke-graffe naturally growing, besides a kind of Hempe or Flaxe, yeelding 10. Drugs, and most excellent Cordage. Pot-ashes, Sope-ashes, Pitch and Tarre have beene the employment commodities. of Polacres lent thither.

very plentifull) aboue fine thousand pounds were spent, and one hundred and fiftie persons sent so for that imployment; which being brought in manner to perfection, was interrupted by that fatall accident, fince which the reftituion is with all possible diligence (as it is faid) ordered and

There have beene also sent skilfull men from Germany, for setting vp of Saw-mils: Firginia 12. Timbers yeelding to no place in the knowne World for Timbers of all forts, commodious for strength, for all vies. pleasant for sweetnesse, specious for colours, spacious for largenesse, victual for Land and Sea, for housing and shipping : in which Timber vies England and Holland alone are said to disburse about 300000. pounds sterling yeerely. And the defects at home, where the Hearth hath climbed into the Roofe, where back-fewell hath denoured our buildings in the Woods, and bellyfewell hath denoured the Woods, and connerted them to arable: where so many thips are emto ployed for prouisions of and for shipping, Virginia by distine bountie is Magne spes altera Britan-

nie. Herein we may verifie the old Property, That he which light longest, shall fetch his wood furtheil; but io, as he shall be paid for the fetching with great advantage. And if an Hand needs woodden Wals to fecure it against others, to enrich it from others, Fire cishly forbuil-

gina offers her feruice herein, and will looke to much more cheerefully on you, how much more ding both

tage from the

houses & thir s

you shall disburthen her in this kind : yea, as England hath wooed and visited Virginia, so herein Virginia will be glad and reioyce to vifit England, in her there-built ships, and to dwell here with vs in thence-brought Timbers, and esteeme her selfe advanced to adorne our Towres. and take view of our Pomps and Spectacles.

to. The mani-

And touching thipping and the materials thereof; Timbers, Pitch, Tarre, Cordage, Sayles. told materialls Anchors, &c., nec. flittle of the times exacteth in our defects at home, for securitie from enemies abroad, employment of Mariners, Merchants and our numerous multitudes, offending our Ofenders, defending our Allies, that I adde not the Riches of the World, and glory of Exploits. all which depend on Nauigation. Hence Tyrns and her Daughter Carthage of old (Matre palchra filia palchrior) hence the Egyptian Alexandria and many Nations fince, have reaped wealth and In honour. Hence the Lumbards and Easterlings sucked out the sweetes of this Kingdome in former times, whiles we like children were fed by their hands, and they were inriched by the Importation and Exportation of Merchandise to and from vs : which when that glorious Elizabeth altered, and fought to fland in the Seas on her owne legs, and to flie ouer them with her owne wings, it not only wanne her renowme but dread abroad, and fuch ftrength at home, that notwithflanding her manifold wars offensiue and defensiue, and motherly protection of her Neighbours round about with Men and Monies; her Cuftome, her Nauie, and the wealth of her preple is thought to haue received in her time a feuen-fold advancement. And what hath to long voholden and enhanced the Hanse Townes? What hath rayled the rich and glorious States of Venice and Genoa? What hath fince freed, and doth fill fustaine the Hollanders, but their mouing 20 Magazines and Caltles, their strength and magnificence being (by a Miracle in State) hereby most. wherein it is leaft, in their Sea-fortelts; Nature denying that to their Soyle, which Art hathluperabundantly supplied by shipping, to their Lands, to their Seas, for vie, for admiration hence hath the Abaffine or Prester lohn lott his estate, the Turke not encreased his by swallowing the reft of Christendome, the Persian, the Mogull and other mighty Asian Potentates have not bin mighty, howfocuer firnamed Great; have beene folong awed, and as it were, imprisoned within their owne shores, there also often braued, affaulted, forced to receive Lawes and conditions, vea to pay Customes for their owne ships, and prohibited Trade with others by a handfull of Portugalls. Hence the Portugals themselves crept out of their Straites and obscuritie, and hence the Castilian colours have been so far displayed, and set the rest of the World in this present Maze: 30 Hence our Edgar, Edward the Third, and Great Edizabeth, have left fuch memories of them, after them; hence all Maritime States and Kings have received encrease or diminishing; as their Navies have beene, so have they. Yea, without a Nauie, Salemon had not beene so meet a Type of Christ, fo glorious in Domesticall, Politicall or Ecclesiasticall magnificence.

Haile then, al-haile Virginia, hope of our decayed Forreits, Nurfery of our Timbers, fecond Supply to our thipping, the faccenturiate copie in diffresse of Nauall materials : and those independant on forreine States, disburthened of Taxes, Customes, Impositions, and Suspensions of forceine Princes: yea gainfull not in the ships alone, but in Shipmen and Mariners trained vp and multiplyed by that imployment, with mutuall entercourse of Wares and manifold Commodities. Hee that lookes on the best Corne-fields soone after the sewing, seeth expense and labour 40 without any profit but in expectation. Now is our Seed-time; and if cost and industry want no Virginia, in her Soyle and Climate not only promifeth thele materials, there also to be made at ea ier rates; but infinite other Commodities also which may be transplanted from these and other parts, as the Spaniards in their Indies , have given vs example. These have reserved Wines and Oyle, as Staple Commodities to be carried from Spaine (that these Americans may fill have need of Spanifo Commodities) which else would easily grow there. They have again furnished the se parts both from Spaine and many other Countries, with Figs, Oranges, Limons, and fruits for pretent vie and for Merchandize, with Sugar-canes, Gingers, Cattell and other Commodities, yeelding exceeding summes of Treasure to the Planters. And I know not but in a settled Virginian Plantation, Sugars, Gingers, Hides, &comay there prooue as gainfull, as they have 30 in the Spanish Indies, that is, beyond all conceit of ordinarie valuation, and as good as

Now for the Cattell and Fowles, I might here present their Deere of all forts, reported to have three or foure Fawnes at a time, and none under two (which fome impute to the qualitie of ly for efethere that Countrey, having happened likewise to the Goats transported from hence) and were it not for this increase, eyther they must faile, or the Natiues (these sparing neither old nor young, nor old with young, nor obseruing any rule of Season or Reason therein) I might adde Shag-haired Oxen-feene by Sit Samuell Argoll, Beauers, Otters, Foxes, Wildeand Ciuet Cats, Muske Rats, and many Beatls which beare good Furres; their large Turkeyes, Cranes, Herons, Partridges, and innumerable other Fowles: filh also of innumerable numbers and manifold kinds, Sturgeon, Por- 60 pole, Bale, Rock-fish, Carpe, Shad, and the rest. It seemeth to vs incredible, which is related of the both numbers and excellencie at one draught taken. As for the varietie of Corne, the excellencie also and multiplication to 1500. or 2000, for one stalke of Maiz, the viefulnesse, their fucfoot long,300, as big as Cod, ceeding-exceeding Haruests, their Roots, Herbs, Pulle, and the rest, I referre to all the Writers in

CHAP.20. Benefit by fishing ; Motives for Virginia from these times. &c. that Argument, and to as many as have beene Eye-witnesses themselves to be Relaters.

Were it but a fishing trade, yet his vinderstanding is contemptible, that thinkes contemptibly 19. Benefits by of it. He that should reade Doctor Dees relations of so many hundred Butles, and Flemmilb faile history. on the English, and Spanish, on the Irish coalis: or what Maiter Gentleman hath related of the Commodities raifed that way by the Holanders, fummed to millions of pounds in Herring, Cod and Ling : and that which others relate of 3600. faile of Fishermen in Holand and Zeland, with other things of like nature gathered together by Captaine Smith in his New Englands Trials,

with the experiments of that coast also (part of our Virginian subject shall see, as greatest bo- multa invant. dies composed of least parts, so greatest summes raised out of least and meanest meanes, that being to dundant in tale, which feemeth wanting in weight. Once, the impregnable wals of the vnired Prounces are their Ships (whereof fome reckon small and great of all fores 20000,) and their principall and most generall Trade is Fishing, which is the Seminary of their Mariners of which tome have reckoned about 100000, and fummed their returnes thence growing to 7000000. pounds in a yeare. I am none of Neptunes Secretaries; yet know this, that there is no fifthing to the Sea, and no Country fo ilrong by Sea as that which findeth most employment in this kinde, where no exportation of treasure, no custome, no consumption and exhausting of commodities can be quarelled. Thus then, whether we confider Wines, Silkes, and other the appurtenances of our pleasures, as Dies, Drugges, Gummes, Sugars, Ginger, Furres, and the like, which cost this Kingdome yearely lome hundreths of thousands of our pounds: or whether wee reckon those 20 more staple and necessary commodities for Shipping, and all forts of Timber, Cordage, and other like, no leffe coffly, Virginia inuiteth our hopes, and couenanteth to bestow them on the induftrious : fo that we shall saue those treasures and costs that way expended, shall lesse depend on

other Nations, leffe feare imbarguing, detention, imposts ; yea, shall from other Nations raise by returne of our excelle in these kindes great Summes, besides the turnishing of the Kingdome with greater encreale of Shipping, Marriners, and innumerable employments, and the fecuring and enriching the Ports, both of Ireland and England. As for Tobacco I have faid little of it, because 20. Tobacco. it is so generally knowne (which yet is faid to be worth to Spaine 100000, pounds yearely; and ABooke prethat (I grieve to (peak it) from the fume-fome-froth-spirits of England) & the abundance brought sented to the from Virginia and Summer Ilands (inopes nos cepia feeit) exceedeth the Market: and because so Masket Bennet. 30 many by immoderate vie thereof are corrupted here at home, and the present benefit thereby ac- It is said crewing in quicke returne, hindreth delignes of better consequence there. And thus much of Vm- that some ma-

ginias prefent or very probable Commodities : to which we may adde the hopes in future times liciously father by finding there as good vent for our Wools and Clothes, both to the English and civilized Indi- all their bad an, as the Spannards doe in their Indies by their Wines and Oyle, of which I have already faid that Tobacco on they permit not the generall growth in their Indian plantations for the continuance and necessistie of commerce with Spaine. And who feeth not the exceeding benefit which may arise by compleat commerce, in venting our owne superfluities of Men; of others, and specially the principal! thence, an of English Commodities, Cloth and Wooll, with the Gospel of our Lord lelus; and returning Spanish 1986. from thence, Clapboord, Pipe-staues, Cauiare, Oade, Madder, Salt, Cordage, Pitch, Tarre, Sope- future Trace

40 afhes, Pot-alhes, Cotton-wools, Gaules, Furres, Hops, Hides, Gummes, Dyes, Gingers, Sugars, for clothes & Silkes, Wines, Iron, Timbers, Fish, Ships, Mariners, Merchants, and a World of the Worlds most other English vieful good things thorow an open Sea, obnoxious to no forreine Potentate, from and to known commodities,

and fecure Ports and Harbours

It is also not only viefull at all times, but necessary to these times, as to transport superfluous 22. Manifold numbers from hence to Virginia, to to cure the difference of the times caused by the wants of Monies necessities of (the life of trading, and finewes of a great State) attended with wants of fale for the Merchane, thefe times. and confequently of Clothiers and other subordinate professions; want of worke for Spinsters, Weavers, and innumerable poorer Trades and Handicraftsmen; want of trading for Citizens(nerther hath fuch a generall breaking beene euer knwone, fo many shops in the principall limmes

50 and ftreets of this Citie, yea, in Cheapfide the faire face, yea, in the eye of that beauteous face, the Gold-Smiths Row (where befides fo many shoppes converted to other Trades, I have told this last Winter betwixt Friday-street and Bread-street the third part shut vp) want of employment for decayed Gentlemen, both the elder Vnthrifts and younger Gallants; which want of moneyes and flore of wants thence isluing, is in greatest part caused by the Merchandizes sought and bought in other Countries, whereby our Moneyes fall into forraine Whirle-pooles without hopes of recovery; whereas if our Trade lay (as we see the Spanish) with our owne Colonies and Plantations elie-where, wee should hold them still current in our owne Nation, and draw others to bring to, ws both Wares and Moneyes from other Regions for the Commodities aforesaid. And thus should the Vices of the Times be remedied, and the vices of men or vicious men finde from

Tobacco, Silkes, Wines and other exceffes (like the fling of Scorpions from the Oyle of Scorpions) a cure thence, whence they received their wounds; and to many ruptures should eyther be preuented or healed; prouisions also procured for employment of hone? and humble pouertie at home, and the mordinate prices of others tamed by the Sea, and trained at labour to better

Discipline.

D. D. Brit. Mon

(unt foteula .

Ladde

freeing from dangers in forreine Countries. 16. implayman and hading of Mariners. 17. Many probabilities by traniplantati-

on of cautell,

Somiards.

fruits, &c. exemplified by

15. Sauing of

exacules and

18. The Countrie, cattell &. but Merchandife h.re. * Cap. Smith tels of 1000. Baffes at a draught: M. Rolle at 5000. the least of two La lide further, that the profecution of the Firginian Plantation, is both profitable and neces-

25.N reeffetie tor itrengthe. nine other Plantations. 24-1200 collities of a South Sea paffage & commodicies

thereby.

gners.

fary for he itrengthning of the Plantations already begun in Summer Ilands, New England, and New found Land, and that other expected in New Scotland. Now if we ad le the hopefull paliage to the South Sea, that one argument is more then all the reft, if our eyes shall once be bleffed with that defired fight. For the trade of the whole world is then made compendious, all the rich trades of the East Indies are obvious and neerer hand, and no force is able to scoure fo large a Coast as that Westerne shoare of all America, and secure it from our trading. Hence, if we finde not golden Countries before not possessed by other Christians (whereof allo Sir Francis Drakes Nona Albion fo long fince fubiected by voluntary furrender to the English Crowne, hath given vs hope) yet trade will bring the Mines of the West into our 10

fines, and the Spices and other rich Merchandize of the East into our shops at easier charge, and therefore faleable at eafier rates. But this Deligne of the South Sea may feeme desperate, and the Argument ridiculous. I shall 25.Norefficie of m'intais therefore indepour to give better light therein, and withall to adde another Argument as weighning Varginia tie as it, and greater then all exceptions. in cale of war forciday o-

I may adde also the case of Warre, which I defire not; but which may happen, and Bellona may even now feeme pregnant and alreadic conceived, whose abortion might be wished, if necessitie adds not honour to the lawfulneffe. I but propound a cafe possible. The most certaine, honorable. and beauteous front of Peace, hath a backe part of Warre, and therefore in securest Peace, Prudence is not fo fecure, but the armeth her felfe against feares of War, forewarning and forearming men by the Sword drawne to present the drawing of Swords, and eyther eschewes it, or reads good out of it.

It is not voknowne what expenses England hath fulfained in and ever fince Sir Sebastian Ca-South Sea why let is not vinknowne what expenses any willoughby, Burrough, Pet and Lackman by the Northeast, of Hudson, Poole, Fotherby, and diversother Navigations by the North; of Sir Martine Frebufter, Captaine Dames, Sir Thomas Button, Maiter Knight, Hudfon, Hall, Baffin, and other manifold Discoueries by the North-west, all seeking a compendious passage to Cathay, and to the East Indies. The Reasons which modued them were far more hopefull then that of Columbus. which found not with standing far better and speedier successe. Successe is a seruile Argument, for Sense rather then for Region, and in this whole Virginian proiect, I ipeake to English Aduenturers, and not to pettie Pedlers, or Vinginian Sauages, to fuch whose eyes are in their heads and not in their hands : Careat successibus opto, Quisquis abenentu facta notanda putet. Yet hath not Successe beene wholy frustrate, yea both Reason and Sense plead for a Passage, and Virginias vietulneffe therein.

I will not bring uncertaine testimonies of a Portugall taken in a Carrike in Queene Elizabeths dayes, and of another Portugal in Guinie, which affirmed to Sir Martine Frebulher that hee had paft it; nor of Garcia Louisa, which is said by the Coast of New-found-land to have gone to the Molnecas; nor of Vasco Coronado in his Letter to the Emperour Charles, and other antiquated

· Sec (up, the Booke: & Der

Witneffes of Antiquitie. I have already in due place produced * Thomas Cowles, luan de Fuca, Thomas Dermer, Sir Thomas Button, Master Brigges, besides the constant and generall report of all the Sauages from Florida, to the great River of Canada. Now for the hopes of Virginia by a South-Sea Discovery, how neere is England that way to the Trade of both Indies, that is, of all the remoter World! It flands midway betwixt vs and the most frequented Ports of the West, which perhaps may shortly come to full age and fue out her Liverie, how ever hitherto kept in close Wardship, and debarred the rights of common humanite, that is, the commerce with other Nations, without differning Friend and Foe. Strange realouse and worthy of seasous Suspicion! to admit Trade in all European Ports, not Simil and Madrid excepted, and to prohibit the fame in all the East and West, where it can leffe be prohibited! there to repute all in nature of Pyrats, and accordingly to make 50 prize of flips, goods, and men which shall attempt to sayle that vait Ocean, or offer I rade in a ny of those Habitations! But leauing that to consideration of my Betters, in the East both Englife and Dutch have maintayned their iuft Trade by force, which by vinit force was denied, and have paid themselves largely for all losses sustayined by the Insultings or Assaultings of those Monopolians, with gaine, with honour : that trade being almost denied to those injurious deniers, their owne reputation and traffique now bleeding, which would have cut the throates of all others aduentures, of all other aduenturers. I neither prophelie, nor exhort vnto the like in the Weil: Our prudent and potent Mother Elizabeth wan renowne and wealth in their owne harbours and Cities at home, and no leffe in the remotest of their Lands and Seas. Yea, the South Sea by furthest compasse was neere to her long and iust armes, and their Cacaplain and Saint Anne, 62 with other their richest Ships and Ports were ransacked by English Cacafnegos, and the charges of those warres borne by those enemies which caused them. Nulla falies bello paceus to pose; mus omnes. He whole words and workes hath euer beene Beati pacifici, knowes best when and how to exact his and the Worlds right, in the World, of which God hath granted a Monopoly to no man; and (if others can embrace the whole Globe with dispersed habitations) not to suffer his long arms

to be shortned, and the strong armes of his to be pinioned, and forced to accept of a bounded and limited commerce in a little corner at others pleafure. Once, in instand even peace, Virginia stands fit to become Englands Factor in America; if war thould happen, both it and Bermuda are fit Sentinels and Scours, yea fit Searchers and Customers, fit Watch-towers and Arsenals to maintaine right against all wrong-doers. And for the South Sea, if a passage be found neere vnto Virginia, Malter Dermer was confident upon relations (as he writ to me) of a thousand witnesses, wee then lee Organiss lap open, yeelding her Ports and Harbours for the Easterne treasures to be the necrest way conneied by the West, Years it be more remote, as Chacke and Fuca relate, yet hath Virginia an vietall neighbourhood both for ticke men, weatherbeaten Ships, and prouisions ex-10 hauft in long Voyages, to make them fitter for returne. And if fuch paffage were not at all, yet the Mountaines of Virgima cannot but fend Rivers to that Sea; fo that as the wealth of Permis brought to Panama, and thence by Land convaied to the Ports of this Sea, fo may the wealth of the South Sea, and the Regions of the West of America be that way pasted to English hands. The like may be faid of the Hands of Salomon, the South vinknowne Continent, which aftertimes may discouer (probably as rich as the rest) that I mention not the knowne Regions of the East already traded. And although the passage be not yet perfectly knowne, yet may the feations and fittest opportunities and prouisions for that discovery be most easie from Virginia: and there, if croffed with stormes or other diasters, they may finde securest refuge and refresh-

ing. And if (which God auert) we may not have the wares of peace, yet the peace of warres 20 (that is, a fit rendenous and retiring place, where to cheere and hearten, to repaire and hipply vpon all occasions) is there offered, by the advantages of both Seas. For in both, that wait body must needes be of flow motion, where the limmes are so discoynted, and one member whit to helpe another by remotenesse. And if it should but force the adversary to maintaine Garritons in his Ports on both fides, to fecure them from inualion, and a double Nauie of War in both Seas , the one to fecure the Coasts , the other to fecure his Shippes in the South Sea paffing from the Philippinas, or from one Port to another; and in the North Sea to wafte his Treatures and Merchandile into Europe, the wings of that Eigle would be fo pulled with fuch cofts, that hee could not eafily make invafine flight vpon his neighbours in these pares; yez, both thole and these Dominions would be exposed to the easier inuations of others. Tam Marte, quam Mercurio, in Peace and Warre, fo viefull may Virginia and Bermuda be to this Kingdome.

Now if any fay Medice curateipfum, and alleadge that they themselves are not able to fand against an enemy : I answere, first, for Bermuda, or Summer Hands, that little body is all heart, and hath the ftrentgh of Nature and Art confpiring her impregnableneffe. For the Rockes every way have to fortified the feituation, that the would laugh at an Armada, at a World of Ships; where the ileaught paffage admire not two Shipsabreaft to enter, and hath ten Forts with Ordnance to entertaine them. She feares no rauithment, and as little needes the famithment, to that voleffe God for our finnes, or the Divell by the worft of finnes, treaton, and the worft of his Sonnes, fome Indar, expose her to the Enemy, the can know no other lone or Lord but English. And for Virginia 40 against the Sauages greatest fright, Captaine Smith maintained himselfe without loffe, with gaine with thety eight men ragainst others she hath so sit places for fortification; so sit meanes and materials to fecure her, as eye-witnesses report, that the worst of enemies to be feared is English backwar heffe or frowardnesse, like Sampsons Foxes either drawing backe, or having fire at their

Now if Queene Elizabeth of glorious memory, were able from England onely to annoy her * M. Thomas enemies, fo great and potent, to much and farre : what may we in Gods name hope of a New Turner an Ene England, New found Land, Bermuda and Virginia already planted with English? When vpon in Mericana newes of the fall of this great Northen Starre, the Duke of Braganzas brother, fpake of her at stangential the facilities and the heads the design of the Toke him fall for one them as forces. the lesistes had standered; hold your peace brother, faid the Duke himselfe (one then present related this to me) had it not beene for her Religion (for which wee most honour her, for which almaine. God did most blesse her) the might justly have beene ranked with the ancients Romans: England is a small thing, as the Map flieweth, to Spaine, and yet we durst not looke out of doores for her and hers. Thus worthily that worthy man, of the Worthy of women in her time. Great and glorious Elizabeth! how didft thou contemne the Iberian threates? How didft thou invert, dipert, subvert their attempts? How victoriously didst thou evade their inninoible Invasion? how Q Elizabeths didft thou inuade the Inualers, at their gates, in their ports? how didft thou meete them in the praces. Atlanticke, purior them to the South, to the Indian Seas, and round about the World? How didthe skie, windes, waves ferue to a higher providence in thy deliveries, in thy triumphs ? how often were the prodigious Carrikes of the East, and prodigall Vessels of the West, either staid at 60 home for feare, or driven to fort-covert by the way, or costly wafted on their way, or borned in the way, or finke out of the way, or carried quite a way to visite the English shoares, and adorne the Trophees of great and glorious Elizabeth? Rouze vp your braue spirits English hearts in loyall fubication to your Royall Sourraign: be ready to offer right, feare not to fuffer wrong: feeke the good, and fee the goods which Virginia offers. Here could I wilder my felfe in thickets of argu-

Nananana

ments, and could Muster more motions and more necessarily concluding for Virginias advancement, if that which we delire not be enforced on vs, then I have already numbred in plantation and commerce : Yea almost all those former arguments are pressed of necessity, or offer their feruice voluntarily, some more, others no leffe seruceable that way, then to publike peace and traf-

fique, which alto are securest when they neede not feare a Warre. The honour of Religion defended by the Defender of the Faul; of our Nation, King Kingdome: the Materials of Ships, Mariners, Armes, Victuals; Fishing, Merchandise, and Prize subsequent to each Voyage, that one may supply if the other faile; in crossed Voyages, a convenient receptacle for refreshing; fir place of thay in not fitting and vnseasonable seasons : a tafe repository for spoiles gotten in expectation of greater purchafe: a redreffe to weatherbeaten and storme-distressed to Ships: a refuge to fuch as the enemy hath battered and endangered; an Holpitall for ficke, wounded and prefently unfor iceable Mariners and Souldiers : a storehouse to repaire Timbers, Tackline, and other prouifions to Ships and Men : a fit meane (in supplying vs from thence with neceffaries) to keepe those Monies in our owne hands, whereby we are destitute of the principall fie newes of warre, yea perhaps the enemy armed against vs : a schoole and training place for our youth to endure labour and hardship, and to prepare them like the lewes in Nebemials time, to the the Sword with one hand, and inftruments of labour in the other: an exercise to breede Men for longer Voiages: a backed ore to breake out fuddenly on the enemy : an ambushment, whiles Ships from hence & thence shall at once be expected, and he which flees the one shall fall into the other: a redoubling of our forces when they meete; a fafe halbour in Bermuda or in Virginia for 20 a hundred failes, or many more, to awaite all opportunities : a place likely to yeelde to men of merit entertainment and reward: a place yeelding opportunity by trade there to weaken our possible or probable enemics, to whom now wee seeke for trade, and consequently to weaken them by the want of our Commodities, and to adde a double strength to our selues : a place commodious to preuent warre by diverting it, to divert it by preventing: to subvert the enemies Plantations by fudden affaults, or force them to coftly Garifons : to euert their Merchandifing by trade suspended, surprized, or defended with chargeable wastage : to intercert their intelligence and profits : to invert the hearts of Maleconcents, and those hands which feare now curbeth and briuleth: to consert to our parts those which maintaine a fugitive and wilde enmity with them: to avert the profits of their Mines by other imployments; and in a word, to make that vie of ad others against them, which their examples have taught ve in acquiring the great Empires of Mexico and Pers, with other parts of America, which wirhout the helpe of Indiane against Indians, banding themselves with a contrary faction, such handfuls had never beene able to have effected: What shall I say more? If others impotence and importunities force a War, Virginia and Summer Hands seeme to this English body as two American hands, eares, seete; two eyes for defence : two Keyes (asbefore is laid) for offence : two Armes to get, encompaffe, embrace : two Fifts to strike : the Sword and Dagger; Ship and Pinnace; Caitle and Rampire, Canon & Musket, Arsenale and Peere, and what iocuer God shall please to give to humaine industry, who gives all things of free grace, but to fuch to whom he hath given grace freely to feeke them; and isalway a facile and easie giver, but to them onely which love not their ease and idle pleasure. And although I am no Secretary of Gods Counfell for the Indies, yet event hath revealed thus much of his will, that no other Christian Nation hath yet gotten and maintained pollethon in those parts, but the English: to whom therefore wee may gather their decreed feruiceablenesse in Peace, aduantagiousnelle in Warre, and opportunity for both, to be both Magazine and Bulwarke, and ready even by naturall scituation to sit on the skirts of whatsoever enemies, which passe from America to Europe. Three Spanish witnesses, Acosta, Oniedo, and Herrora, have related this, in describing the course

Acoftal. 1.2.6.4 of that Nauigation; yea, all experience, the Heavens also and Elements subscribe to it. For such 8.2.3.

The brifes and

Eddy windes.

is the statute of the windes, which all Shipping in that Sea must obey : they must goe one way and returne another. To the Indies the course from Enrope is by the Canaries, and thence entring 50 Deferi, of Ind. the Trop ke, they meete with the Brifes, which are perpetual Easterne windes, or I know not what imperuofity by the motion of the heavens breathed into the lower aire betwixt the Tropikes, and preffing all vapours and exhalations unto that feruice in one or other point Easterly: which force the Ships to return e neerer the American coast there to feeke as it were some alloy of that impétuous motion (euen as you see Water-men in the Thames rowing against the tide, to couet neere the shoare where the tide is weakest) and thence passing the Tropike to seeke Westerly windes, which from twenty feuen to thirty feuen doe there vivally remaine, as wee fee in Eddies caused by stronger motions. Thus the Spanish Ships on the South Sea make one way from Acaputeo to the Philippinas, which is the Tropicke; and another without in the height of Ispan, to returne. And thus in the Atlanticke the Ships from their feuerall ports come to the Ha- 60 mana in Guba, and thence must take their course neere to Virginia and Summer Ilands, to finde the Azmes: in which way, from thence it is easie for English Ships (not far from their owne home of Ports) to disperse them selves in expretation of a surprisall. The want of fuch helpes in Queene Elizabeths glorious times, enforced our men of Warre fill

to awaite both for the Indian Carrickes, and all American Ships, houring about the Acores I. Difaduantase lands fubiect to the Spanish Crowne, where they neither had harbour in stormes, nor could in any to our shores wants refresh themselves with water, victuals, or other provisions but by force; where a greater water by want and fronger Armada of the enemy waited to wafte home their Ships returning; where it often of firm fuch hanned that the Ships could not fo foone be deferred, but they gat either into some Port, and vn. Plantation as der some Fort which secured them; or else there ran themselves aground, and saving what they be whence ma could with their persons, fired the rest, so to facrifice it to Neptune or Oulcan, rather then permit ny Voyages it to English hands. Neither had the English any neere Port where to supply themselves in any di- were frustrafirefle, or exhauftion of prouifions, but must necessarily returne home for England, if not (as some-ted in partor times) perishing in the way, with little or perhaps no prize attained. Likewise in long Vova- wholly. ges, as to the East Indies, and to the South Sea, having no harbour to friend every difeate proved mortall to their Voyage, and forced at left a returne, that is, a miscarrying of the designe, if not of themselves: whereas, such a refuge as Virginia and Summer Hands might either have recovered the Voyage intended or refreshed and inabled them to make as good a purchase you the enemy. making him to pay their charges, perhaps with more gaine then the first intents could have produced. Examples will make this more evident.

And first to begin with the first of our great Discouerers; Sir Sebast ian Cabot, and Sir Thomas Anno 1317. Pert, were let forth by King Henry the eight (as before is mentioned) in a Voyage of American Quiedo Gen. 5:74 Discouery, a Ship of which Fleete comming from the coast of Brasil to Domingo (Ousedo menti-

20 ons it in the Spanish file, branding them with Piracy, yet laieth nothing to their charge but difcouery and offer of trade, paying with Pewter diffies for what they tooke) was thence repelled Anno 1 < 17, and obtained fome provisions at Saint lobn, from whence in their returne to England, Oniedo thinkes they perished: at least the Voyage miscarried, as appeareth by Master Thornes and Mafter Edens testimony thereof, for want of prouisions. The like happened to Ma. Master Hore. ther Hores Voyage, described in Master Haklait Anno 1536, when want of victuals made them Sir 10. Hawkins, eate one another, and at last to steale a French Ship, in which they returned.

Anno 1 864. Sir John Hawkins having made a profitable Voyage by fale of Negros on the coast Townes of America, was driven to feeke reliefe of the French (then planted in Florida, rooted thence not long after by Spanish butchery) And in another Voyage 1567, incurred by perfidious no treachery of the Spaniards, a most lamentable disaster, He then failed in the lefte of Lubecke, having to his conforts, the Minion, the William and John, the Indith, the Angell and the Smallow, Hauing gotten Negros in Guinnee and made his market in the Spanish Indies, he put in for reliefe at Saint John de Vlbus, Whiles his Fleete was there, the Spanish Fleete came thither with their new Viceroy, which he could easily have kept out of the harbour, but there being then no Warres betwixt England and Spaine, certaine Articles were concluded betwixt them; from which the Spanishperfidia V. ceroy perfidiously resulting, with close trechery (contrary to his faith plighted) affaulted the English with a ftrong power on the fudden; the iffue whereof was the firing, drowning, taking many of the English, whom they put also to execuable tortures. Onely the Minion and Indush of that whole Fleete escaped, if it be an escaping to avoide Scrilla and rush on Charibdis. For they 40 were fo shaken in fight first, after with stormers, lastly and worst of all, with famine, that they

were forced to expose a hundred and source eene men to the mercy of cruell elements, crueller Sauages, cruellest Spaniards, who exercised in the Inquisition with bondage, rackes, whips, fires. Spanish crueldes familhments, of plurima moreis imago, what the other had spared; so that of a hundred and sourceteene not about the odde foure, and those foure after Odysses of wandrings, and Iliades of mileries returned home from the foure corners of the World. Had Sir John Hawkins had a Virginian opportunity of refreshing, the first danger should not have needed, and the last had not proved worse then the first : that exposing being not farre from the Virginian shoare, and the current fitting to carry him thither. Sir Francis Drake was then Captaine of the Indith, and repaired that courtefie to the Spaniards after, who to shew the telibility of such tefreshing Anno 1585. having facked Saint lago, Domingo, Carthagena, and Saint Augustine, returned by Virginia to relieue the Colony there planted by Sir W. Raleigh.

Anno 1991. Captaine George Raymund in the Penelope, Captaine Foxoroft in the Merchant Cap Lancolte Royall, and Captaine Lancaster in the Edward Bonaduenture, let forth a Voyage intended for the 1591. East Indier. Their Company were to weakened with ficknesse, that the Viceadmirall was fent backs from Soldania with ficke men. The Admirall was loft, the Rereadmirall returned, and for want of prouisions put ouer from Saint Helena to Trindad, in hope of reliefe, Yet being there difappointed, they intended to get to Newfoundland, but being creffed with fformes in the way, and forced backe to Port Ricco, the Ship was driven away and loft not far from Mona, whiles the famished Company were seeking refreshing (which how easily had a Bermuda or Virginia supplied, 60 had an English plantation flourished there?) Sir James Lancaffer and the rest being forced to return after much mifery, in French Ships for France, and thence home.

Anno 1 596, the Beare, the Beares Whelpe, and the Bensamin, were fet forth for China vinder the Cap. Bensamin command of Captaine Beniamin Wood. Frier logon des Santes mentions both the two former of 1596. Saymund and Lancaster, and two also of these seene on the coast of Mozambique. Bartolom: Leo Origin. 4 nardo

Nnnnnnn 2

nardo de Argenfola in his Booke, printed at Madrid 1609: hath published the Letter of the Chinese Vilitor of Chinches, in which he writeth to Don Pedro de Acnnas, Gouernour of the Philippings, that the King of China had done two Sangless to death, for shewing the hauen to these two English Sings: and Acuma rescribes that the English were Pyrates, &c. after the Spanish wont. Theie Ships were voheard of in England, votill a Letter of Alcafar de Villa fenner, Auditor of Domingo, writ to the King his Master, being by an English Ship intercepted, gaue intelligence of one of mole two Sirps which diffressed for want of necessaries, by mortality, had foure men only left alius in her, which feeking reliefe, put themselves into their Boate, and comming on shoare in the Hand Vitus, not farre from Domingo, with Iewels and great riches, confelled that they had reken three Portugall prizes. The Spaniards at first received them on good conditions, but some 10 villaines feeing their wealth, mutthered them, for which this Auditor had fentenced Roderico de Fuentes with others, as his Letter to the King of Spane importeth. Now had there then beenea Voginian or Bermudan Plantation, how easily might they have attained thither(the Boat at least) and elcaped that butchery ! I could hither adde instructions from the English Indian Ships 1604. and 1608, from Captaine Fenton 1582, from the Earle of Cumberlands Voyages before selated in the yeares 86.89.91.93.96.97. and from Master Candift, Matter Davis, and others. But we haue made too long a Virginian Voyage, having no better freight then Arguments?

which the Times doe now promife, if not worthy wite mens approbation, yet good mens indul-Est Indie foci- gence; where in a weake body, and manifold weighty imployments, the willingnesse of a heart truely English, fincerely Christian, may seeme tolerable, if not commendable; pardonable if not 20

> Another labour remaines to fet downe rules and projects of best fecibility and accomplishing this noble worke, but I am onely a Freeman, no Councellour of thet Plantation, and have neither Lands there, nor other adventure therein, but this of my love and credit, which with the allegiance to my Soueraigne, and defire of the publike good of this Kingdome, is more to me then all the treatures of America, I feeke the good and not the goods or England and Negrain, I follow the land of God, which have given England io many rights in Vogines, right naturall, right nationall, right by first discouery, by accepted trade, by possession furrendred voluntarily, continued constantly, right by gift, by birth, by bargaine and sale, by cession, by forfeiture in that late dampable trechery and maffacre, and the fatal poffeifion taken by io many murthered English. Gods an bounty before, his inflice now hath given vs Virginia, that we should so in indgement remember mercy, as to give Virginia againe to God, in Christian acknowledgement of his goodnesse and mercy, of his word and workes, and in our owne more ferious conversion to prepare that of Vaginia. God goeth before vs in making this designe honorable to Religion, to Humanity, to our Ancestors, to our King, to our Kingdome. God goeth before vs, and hath given Virginia forich

Ex. 13.

E/. 11.

a portion, to allure and affure our loues; in multiplying our people, and thereby our necessities en forcing a vent : in endowing Virginia with to large a iointure, to temperate, fo commodious for the climate compared with other Countries, beyond other Countries in her own diversified Lands, Brieferecapi. Seas, Rivers ; in so fertile a soyle, in so strong, sweete, stately, delicate Woods and Timbers, in her tulation of the natural I hopes of Wines, of Silkes, of the bodies of Natives feruile and feruiceable : in Drugges, 40 moftremarka Irons, and probability also of other Mines; in all materials for Shipping, and other buildings: God goeth before vs in offering that meane to faue that which wee feeke and fpend in other (perhaps enemies) Countries; to breede vp Marriners, to train vp Souldiers, to exercise labourers, by transportation of English and European creatures to plant another England in America, enriched with the best things of Errope; to give vs Fish, Tobacco, and other present improvements as earnest of future better hopes; and that in these times, which have so manifold necessities thereof, in regard of monies, men, and trades decayed, in regard of neighbour plantations, in the probabilities of a South-Sea glory, and in the cafe of obruded warre, obtruding on vs abfolute necessity, and inclusions. ding and concluding every way so manifold wie. God the Father, Sonne and holy Ghost, which goe before vs in thele things, if not in miraculous fire and cloudy pillars, (as when I fraet went to 50 Canaan) yet in the light of reason, and right consequence of arguments; come into vs and fillys with the spirit of wisedome and understanding, the spirit of counsell and of fortitude, the

spirit of knowledge, and the feare of the Lord (I may adde the spirit of vnity and counsell) that he may vouchfafe to goe with vs, and we with him, and after him to Virginia, Amen, O Amen. Be thou the Alpha and Omega of Englands Plantation

in Virginia O GOD. The end of the ninth Booke.

ENGLISH DISCOVE RIES AND PLANTATI-ONS IN NEW ENGLAND

AND NEW-FOVND-LAND, WITH THE PATENT AND VOYAGES TO

NEW-SCOTLAND: Relations also of the Fleets (et forth by Queene Elizabeth against the Spaniards.

THE TENTH BOOKE.

CHAP. I.

A briefe Relation of the Discourie and Plantation of New-England: and of fundry Accidents therein occurring, from the yeere of our Lord 1607, to this present 1622. Published by the Prefident and Councell, and dedicated to the Princes Highnesse here abbreuiated.



Hen this Deligne was first attempted, some of the prefent Company were therein chiefly intereffed; who being carefull to have the fame accomplished, did fend to the discouery of those Northern parts a braue Gentleman, Cap, Henry Challens, with two of the Natines of that Territorie, the one called Maneday, theother Affecomet. But his misfortunes did expose him to the power of certaine ftrangers, enemies to his proceedings, fo that by them, his Company were feized, the ships and goods conficated, and that Voyage wholly ouerthrowne.

This loffe, and vnfortunate beginning, did much a- 1. Castialier bate the rifing courage of the first Aduenturers; but im- 2, Cap, Ham ar, mediately upon his departure, it pleased the Noble Lord Chiefe Inflice Chiefe Iudice, Sir John Popham Knight, to fend out anothershippe, wherein Captayne Thomas Hanam went

Commander, and Martine Prinne of Bristow Master, with all necessary supplyes, for the seconding of Captayne Challens and his people; who arriving at the place appointed, and not finding that Captayne there, after they had made some Discourrie, and sound the Coasts Hanens, and Harbours answerable to our desires, they returned Vpon whose Relation the Lord Chiefe luftice, and we all waxed so confident of the businesse, that the yeere following every man of any worth, formerly interested in it, was willing to joyne in the charge for the sending over a competent number of people to lay the ground of a hopefull Plantation.

Hereupon Captaine Popham, Captaine Ramler Gilbert, and others were fent away with two 3, Cap Portem thips, and an hundred Landmen, Ordnance, and other prouisions necessary for their suftentation & Cap, Guens, and defence; vntill other supply might be sent. In the meane-while, before they could returne, Nananan 3

ENGLISH

Sir John Pete hams death.

Piantation.

Cap. Hobsen

Cap. Herley,

de. 1611.

it pleased God to take vs from this worthy member, the Lord Chiefe Inflice, whose sudden death did fo altonish the hearts of the most part of the Aduenturers, as some grew cold, and some did wholly abandon the bufineffe. Yet Sir Francis Pophans his Sonne, certaine of his private fr.ends, and other of vs, omitted not the next yeere (holding on our first resolution) to joyne in fending forth a new Supply, which was accordingly performed.

But the flips arriume there, did not only bring vicomfortable newer of the death of the Lord Chiefe luftice together with the death of Sir John Gilbert, the elder Brother vnto Capraine Rawler Gilbert, who at that time was Prelident of that Councell : But found that the old Cap-Captaine Pop taine Popham was also dead; who was the onely man (indeed) that died there that Winter. wherein they indured the greater extremities; for that, in the depth thereof, their Lodgings and

flores were burnt, and they thereby wondroufly diffreffed.

This calamitie and emili newes, together with the resolution that Captaine Gilbert was forced to take for his owne returne (in that he was to fucceed his Brother, in the Inheritance of his Lands in England) made the whole Company to retolue vpon nothing but their returne with the thing; and for that prefent to leave that Countrey againe, having in the time of their abode there (not with flanding the coldnesse of the season, and the small helpe they had) built a pretrie Barke of their owne, weich ferued them to good purpole, as eating them in their returning,

The arrivall of thefe people here in England, was a wonderfull discouragement to all the first undertakers, in fo much as there was no more speech of settling any other Plantation in those Sir Fr. Posbam. parts for a long time after : only Sir Francis Popham having the ships and provision, which re- 20 mayned of th Company, and supplying what was necessary for his purpose, fent divers times to the Coalts for Trade and fithing; of whose losse or gaines himselfe is best able to

Our people abandoning the Plantation in this fort as you have heard; the Frenchmen imme-Tuenchmen

diately tooke the opportunisie to tettle themselves within our limits; which beeing heard of by plant there. those of Virginia, that discreetly tooke to their consideration the inconveniences that might arife, by f ffering them to harbour there, they dispatched Sir Samuel Areall, with Commillion to displace them, which he performed with much discretion, judgement, valour, and dexteritie. For having feized their Forts, which they had built at Mount Manfell, Saint Cross, and Port Reall, he carried away their Ordnance; he alfo fürprifed their Ship, Cattle, and other Prous- 20 fions, which he transported to the Colonie in Firginia, to their great benefit. And hereby hee hath made a way for the prefent hopefull Plantation to be made in Nowa Scotia, which we heare his Majeffie hath lately granted to Sir William Alexander Knight, one of his Majeffies most Honorable Councell of the Kingdome of Scotland, to be held of the faid Crowne, and that not withour some of our privities, as by approbation vider writing may and doth appeare. Whereby it is manifest that wee are so farre from making a Monopoly of all those Lands belonging to that Coast (as hath beene scandaloutly by some objected) That wee wish that many would undertake the like.

In this Interim there were of vs who apprehended better hopes of good that might enfue by this attempt, being the reunto periwaded, both by the Relations of our people that had indured 40 the many difficulties whereunto fuch actions are fubiected, chiefly in the Winter Seafon; and like. wife by the informations given them by certaine of the Natives, that had beene kept a long time in their hands; wherefore we refolued once more to trie the veritie thereof, and to lee if possibly we might finde some thing that might induce a fresh resolution to prosecute a Worke so plous and so honourable. And thereupon they dispatched Captayne Hobson, of the lle of Wight, toimployed with Sether with Captayne Herley, Master John Matthew, Master Sturton, with two Saurges, the one called Epenon, the other Manamet, with Commission and directions fit for them to observe and follow, the better to bring to palle what was expected. But as in all humane affaires, there is nothing more certaine, then the vncertaintie thereof; fo fell it out in this; for a little before fuch time as they arrived upon the Coast with the foresaid Sauages, who were Naturals of these parts, 50 Hunti Sauage it happened there had beene one Hunt (a worthlelle fellow of our Nation, fet out by certaine bunting of 5a. Merchants for love of game, who, not content with the commoditie he had by the filh, and peaceable Trade he found among the Sauages, after he had made his dispatch, and was ready to fet tayle more Sauage-like then they) leized upon the poore innocent creatures, that in confidence of his

honestie had put themselves into his hands. And stowing them under Hatches, to the number of twentie foure, carried them into the Straits, where he fought to fell them for flaues, and fold Friers charitie, as many as he could get mony for. But when it was vnderstood from whence they were broughts the Friers of those parts took the rest from them, and kept them to be instructed in the Christian Faith; and so disappointed this vieworthy fellow of the hopes of gaine he conceived to make by this new and Deutlish project.

This being known by our two Saunges, formerly fpoken of, they prefently contracted fuch Wicked effects an hatred against our whole Nation, as they immediately studied how to be reuenged; and conof wickedness triued with their friends the best meanes to bring it to passe; but Manamet dying in a short time after the shippes arrivall there, and the other observing the good order, and strong guard our

people kept, fludied only how to free himfelfe out of our hands, and thereupon laid the plot very orderly, and indeed effected his purpose, although with so great hazard to himselfe and friends. that laboured his refeue, that Captayne Hobson and his whole Company imagined hee had beene flame. And though in the recovery of his bodie they wounded the Mafter of our thip, and diners other of our Company, yet was not their Defigne without the flaughter of some of their people, and the hurts of other, compassed, as appeared afterward. Hercupon Captaine Hobson and his Company, conceiving the end of their attempt to bee fru-

frate, resolved without more adoe to returne, and so those hopes, that charge and Voyage was loit alfo, for they brought home nothing but the newes of their euill successe of the vnfortunate caule thereor, and of a Warre now new begun betweene the Inhabitants of those parts, and vs. A miterable comfort for so weake meanes as were now left, to pursue the conclusion of fo

redious, an Enterprise.

While this was a working, we found the meanes to fend out Captaine John Smith from Plane Cap. J. Smith month, in a thip, together with Matter Dermer, and divers others with him, to lay the foundation of a new Plantation, and to try the filling of that Coaft, and to feeke to feetle a Trade with the Natiues : But such was his mistortune, as being scarce free of our owne Coast, he had his Milts shaken ouer-boord by stormes and tempests, his ship wonderfully distressed, and in that extremitie forced to come backe againe; fo as the featon of the yeare being almost ipent, wee were of necessitie enforced to furnish him with another ship, and taking out the proussion of the 20 first, dispatched him away againe, who comming to the height of the Westerne Hands, was chafed by a French Pirace, and by him made Prisoner, although his ship in the night escaped away. and returned with the loffe of much of her proution, and the overthrow of that Voyage, to the ruine of that poore Gentleman Captayne Smith, who was detayned Prisoner by them, and forced to juffer many extremities, before he got free of his troubles.

Notwithstanding these Difasters, it pleased God so to worke for our incouragement againe, as he fent into our hands Tafquantum, one of those Savages that formerly had beene betraved by this vinworthy Huns before named, by whose means there was hope conceined to worke a peace betweene vs. and his friends, they beeing the principall Inhabitants of that Coaft, where the fire was kindled. But this Sauage Tofquantum, being at that time in the New-found-land with 20 Captaine Mafon, Gouernour there for the vndertakets of that Plantation : Mafter Darmer Cap. M. fon (who was there also, and sometimes before imployed as wee have faid by vs. together with Governor in Captayne lobn Smith) found the meanes to give vs intelligence of him, and his opinion of the New found land good vie that might bee made of his Employment, with the readinesse of Captayne Majon, to further any of our Attempts that way, eyther with Boates or other prouision necessarie. and refoluing himfelfe to goe from thence, admied vs to fend fome to meete with him at our v-

fuall place of filhing; to ayde him in his indeuour, that they isyning together, might bee able to doe what he hoped would be very acceptable vnto all wel-withers of that busineffe, V pon this newes, we dispatched the next season Cap. Recraft, with a company for that purpose, in hope Cap. Recraft. to have met with Captaine Darmer; but the care and discretion of Cap. Mason was such, finding 40 Captayne Darmers resolution to goe beyond his meanes, that he perswaded him first to go for England, that prouiding himselfe there, as was requisite, hee might proceed in time expedient,

which counsell he observed (as fit it was) although our expectation of his joyning with Captaine Rocrafe was thereby disappointed. Yet so it happened, that Captaine Rocrafe at his arrivall in thole parts, met with a French Barke that lay in a Creeke a filhing , and trading , which hee feized on , and fent home the Master and Company in the same thip which hee went out in. French feized,

With this Barke and his owne Company, he meant to keepe the Coast that Winter quarter, being very well fitted both with Salt, and other necessaries for his turne : but as this was an Act of extremitie (the poore man being of our owne Religion) fo succeeded it accordingly. For in a short time after, certaine of this Captaynes Company, conspired together to cut his throate, and to make themselves Masters of the whole spoyle, and so to seeke a new Fortune where they so could best make it. This Conspiracie being discouered to the Captayne, he let it go on, till the Conspiracie

time that it should have beene put in execution, when her caught them in their owne traine, and so apprehended them in the very instant that they were purposed to begin their Massacre.

But after hee had preuented the mischiefe, and seized vpon the Malefactors, hee tooke to his confideration what was best to bee done with them. And being loth by himselfe to dispatch them as they deserved, hee rejolued to put them a shoare, thinking by their hazard, that it was possible they might discouer tomething, that might advance the publike; and so giving them some Armes for their defence, and some victuals for their sustentation, virill they knew better how to prouide for themselves, hee left them a place Con pirators

60 called Samaguatock, where they remayned not long, but got from thence to Menchighan, an tothe Menching. Iland lying tome three leagues in the Sea, and fitteene leagues from that place, where they bon, remayned all that Winter, with bad lodging, and worse fare, yet came all safe home saue one fickely man, which dyed there, the reft returned with the Shippe wee lent for Rocrafts supply and prouition, to make a Fishing Voyage.

yoiage.

Deck in Pin-

Hallanders in

After these fellowes were landed, the Captaine finding himselfebut weakely man'd, and his Ship to draw too much water to Coast those places, that by his instructions hee was affigued to discouer, hee resolued to goe for Virginia, where he had lived a long time before, and had (as hee conceined) many friends, that would helpe him with some things that hee had occasion to vie. Arriung there, he was not deceived of his expectation; for Sir Samuel Argall being their Governour, and one that respected him much for his owne sake was the readier to helpe him, in regard of the good hee wished to the buinesse wherein he was imployed.

But all this could not prevaile, for after that Sir Samuel Argall came from thence (hisdenarture, being more sudden then was expected) it fell out that the new Gouernour entred the Harhour; and finding Rocraft ready to bee gone, fent to him to command him to come abourd to to fpeake with him, which hee readily obeyed, as foone as bee could fit his boat and men for that purpose. And so leaving his Barke with her great Anker at head, and taking with him the halfe of his company, he was forced to flay aboard the new Gouernors Ship that night. In the meane while a florme arising, our Barke wanting hands to doe their labour, droue a shoare, and there funke. But yet the Gouernour and Captaine fo laboured the next day, when they knew thereof, as that they freed her againe, but that occasion forced our Captain to stay so long in the Countrey to fit himselve a new, as in the interim a quarrell fell out betweene him and another of that Rotraft finine, place; to as Rotraft was flame, and the Barke tunke the second time, and finally disabled from

veelding yeary benefit to this prefent. Can. Dirmers

But we not knowing this dilaster, and Captain Darmer arriving with his Sauage out of New- 20 found land, dispatched him away the next season , in a Ship wee sentagaine for the fishing busneile, and affigned him a company to joyne with Rocraft and his people. Captain Darmer arming there, and not finding Rocraft, was a little peoplexed, and in doubt what to doe : yet hearing by those Mutiners which hee found there, that hee was gone for Virginia; he was hopefull of his returne; and lived in that expectation, till fuch time as he heard (by a Ship that came from thence to fish for the Colony) the confusion of his fortune, and the end of his misery in this world. Then hee determined to take the Pinnace, that the yeere before was affigned to Rocraft, for him to make the Trade with, and with her to proceed on his defigne, and so embarked himselfe and his prouision and company in her. And leaving the Fisher-men to their labour, he coasted the shoare from thence, fearthing every Harbour, and compassing every Cape-land, till hee arrived in Un- 30 ginia; where hee was in hope to meet with some of the prouition, or company of Rocraft, to help Neerfli ie of a to lipply him of what hee wanted; as alfo to lay a Decke vpon his Pinnace, that before had not any, and now was taught by experience the necessitie of having that defect supplied.

But those hopes failed him (all being before that time ruined and dispersed) so farre, as he saw naces of discoit in vaine to hope for helpe by that meanes, and therefore attempted to make the best of what hee hid of his owne. And going to fet his men a worke, they all in tew dayes after their arrivall, fell ficke of a difeafe which hapned at that time in the Countrey, fo as now he was not onely forced to be without hope of their helping of him, but must labour himselfe all hee could to attend and sustaine them; but so God savoured him, that they recovered, and in time convenient he dispatched his businesse there, and put himselfe to Sea againe, resoluing to accomplish in his jour- 40 ney backe to New-England, what in his last Discouery he had omitted. In his passage he met with certaine Hollanders, who had a trade in Hudfons River some yeeres before that time, with whom he had conference about the state of that coast, and their proceedings with those people: whose antivere gaue him good content. Hee betooke him felfe to the following of his bulinelle, discouering many goodly Rivers, and exceeding pleafant and fruitfull Coasts and Ilands, for the space of eightie leagues from East to West, for to that Coast doth range along, from Hudsons River to

Cape lames. Now after wee had found by Captaine Rocrafts relation made the yeere before, the hopes hee conceived of the benefits that Coali would afford, towards the vpholding of the charge for fetling our Plantation, by reason of the commodities arising by Fishing and Furres, if a course might 50 bee taken for the managing of that bufineffe, as was fit for fuch a defigne; as well as for the advancement of the publike good of our whole Nation, and latisfaction of every well disposed perfon that had a will to be interreffed therein. It was held to be most convenient to strengthen our felues by a new Grant to bee obtained from his Royal Maiefly: the rather, finding that those of Unginia had by two feuerall Patents feeled their bounds, and excluded all from intermedling with them that were not free of their Company; and had wholly altered the forme of their Gouernment, from the first ground layed for the managing she affaires of both Colonies, leaving vs as delperate, and our hufinefle as abandoned. Thele confiderations (asis faid) together with the necessi ie of seeling our affaires, bounds and limits, dictinct from theirs, made vs resolue to perition his Maiestie for the renewing of our Grant. By which time the rumour of our hopes was so 60 publikely (pread abroad, and the commodities of the Fish and Trade so looked into, as it was defired that all that Coalt might bee made free, as well to those of Virginia, asto vs to make their commoditie : How just or vinust that motion was, wee will not argue, freing the businesse is ended. By this meanes our proceedings were interrupted, and wee questioned about it; first, by the

Counfell of Virginia, whom wee thought to have beene fally latisfied therein, before wee could hane way given vs for a new Patent, both parties having beene heard by certaine of the Lords of the Councell; and the businesse by them so ordered, as wee were directed to proceed and to have our Grantagreeable to the libertie of the Virginia Company, the trame of our government excepted; but this order not being liked of, it was againe heard and concluded. Laftly, the Patent being pail the Seale, it was front upon new fuggeftions to the King, and by his Maiefly referred to the Councel to be fetled, by whom the former Orders were confirmed, the difference cleared, and we ordered to have our Patent delivered vs. These disputes held vs almost two yeeres, so as all men were afraid to ioyne with vs, and we

to thereby left hopelesse of any thing more, than that which our owne fortunes would veeld to adnance our proceedings, in which time to many accidents hapned vnto vs at home and abroad, that wee were taine to give order by the Ships wee fent a filhing, for the retiring of Mafter Darmer and his people, vntill all things were cleered, and wee beeter prouided of meanes to goe through with our defigne : But this worthy Gentleman confident of the good likely to enfue, and retolutely resoluing to pursue the ends he aymed at, could not be perswaded to looke backe, as yet; and forefuling to accept our offer, began againe to profecute his Difcouery, wherein he was betrayed Demer berralby certaine new Sauages, who foliainly fet vpon him, giving him fourteene or fifteene wounds; edby Savages. but by his valour and dexteritie of spirit hee freed himtelfe out of their hands, yet was constrai- See [6], his ned to retire into Virginia againe the second time, for the cure of his wounds, where he fell ficke owne letter to 20 of the infirmities of that place, and thereof dyed : to ended this worthy Gentleman his dayes, after he had remained in the discouery of that Coast two yeeres, giving vs good content in all hee vadertooke; and after hee had made the peace betweene vs and the Sauages, that so much abhorred our Nation for the wrongs done them by others, as you have heard : but the fruit of his lahour in that behalfe wee as yet receiue to our great commoditie, who have a peaceable Plantation Procesble at this present among them, where our people both prosper and line in good liking, and assuredneffe of their neighbours, that had beene formerly io much exasperated against vs, as will more at his meanes, large appeare hereafter.

But having puffed all these storms abroad, and vindergone so many home-bred oppositions, and Patentrefreed our Parent, which wee were by order of State affigned to renew, for the amendment of newed. 20 some defects therein contained, wee were affured of this ground more boldly to proceed on than before ; and therefore wee tooke first to consideration, how to raise the meanes to advance the Plantation. In the examination thereof, two wayes did first offer themselves : The one was the voluntary contribution of the Patentees; The other, by an easie ransoming of the freedomes of those that had a will to partake only of the present profits arising by the Trade and Fishing voon the Coast. The first was to proceed from those Noble-men, and others that were Patentees, and they agreed by order among themselues to disburse a hundred pounds a piece, for the advancement of fuch necessary businesse as they had in hand. The second was to bee accomplished by setling such liberties and orders in the Westerne Cities and Townes, as might induce enery reasonable man, in, and about them, affecting the publike good, or a regular proceeding in the businesse 40 of Trade, to embrace an uniformitie, and to ioune a communitie or lount flock together, &c.

BVt this Countrey, what by the generall and particular fituation is so temperate, as it seemeth to hold the golden meane, and indeed is most agreeable to the nature of our owne, which is Glimate. made manifest by experience, the most infallible proofe of all affertions; infomuch as our people that are fetled, enjoy their life and health much more happily then in other places; which can be imputed to no other cause, then to the temperature of the Climate. Now as the Clime is found to be so temperate, so delicate and healthfull, both by reason and experience; such is the soile alfo, some parts thereof yeelding wonderfull increase, both of Corne, the Natiues have most vie of ; as also of our owne, of all forts: with infinite varietie of nourishing Rootes, and other Hearbs and to Fruits common among them, but rare with vs. Befides, the Coaft doth abound with most conue- Commodious nient Hauens and Harbors, full of fingular Ilands fit for Plantation; replenished with Plants and Coaffe Wood of all forts; as Oake, Cedars, Spruce, Fir, Pyne, Walnut, Cheftnut, Elme, Sallarras, Pium-

trees, and Calamus Aromaticus, &c. The people are tractable (if they be not abused) to commerce and Trade withall, and as yet have good respect of vs. The Seas are stored with all kindes of excellent Fish, and in many places upon the Coatt, fit to make Salt in. The Countrey aboundeth with divertitie of wilde Fowle, as Fowler Turkies, Partridges, Swans, Cranes, wild Geele of al forts, wild Ducks of clice forts, many Doues,

especially when Strawberries are ripe. There are severall forts of Deere in those parts, and some that bring forth two, three, and source 60 young at once, which is a manifest proofe of the fertilitie of the Soile, or temper of the Clime, or both together. There is also a certaine Beaft, that the Natives call a Mofe, hee is as big bodied Deere. as an Oxe, headed like a fallow Deere, with a broad Palme, which hee mues every yeere, as doth The Moffe the Deere, and neck like a Red Deere, with a front Mane running downe along the Ranes of his detenbed. back, his haire long like an Elke, but esteemed to be better then that for Sadlers vie, he hath like-

New Patent thought on-

low Deere, his legs are long, and his feet as big as the feet of our Oxen, his taile is longer then the Single of a Deere, and reacheth almost downe to his Huxens, his skinne maketh very good Buffe. and his field is excellent good food, which the Natives vie to Ierkin and keepe all the veerero forue their turne, and to proces very ferusceable for their vie. There have beene many of them Mount Manfell feene in a great Hand vpon the Coatt, called by our people Mount Manfell, whither the Sauaces goe at certaine featons to hunt them; the manner whereof is by making of feuerall fires, and ferting the Countrey with people, to force them into the Sea, to which they are naturally addicted. How they take and then there are others that attend them in their Boates with Bowes and weapons of fenerall the Moffe or kindes, wherewith they flay and take at their pleafure. And there is hope that this kind of to Beatle may be made feruiceable for ordinary labour, with Art and Industry.

Muffe, Commodities.

The knowne Commodities of that Countrey are Fish of feuerall forts, rich Furres, as Beauers. Otters, Martins, blicke Fox, Sables, &c. There are likewife plentie of Vines, of three kinds, and those pleasant to the tatte, yet some better then other. There is Hempe, Flax, Silkgraffe, feuerall veines of Ironitone, commodities to make Pitch, Rofen, Tarre; Deale-boords of all forts, Spirs, Masts, for Ships of all burdens; in a word, there comes no commoditie out of France, Germany, or the Sound, but may be had there with reasonable labour and industry.

Seutrall Plantations along

Further, wee have fetled at this prefent feuerall Plantations along the Coast, and have granted Patents to many more that are in preparation to bee gone with all conveniencie. Those of cur people that are there have both health and plenty, fo as they acknowledge there is no want of 20 any thing, but of industrious people, to reape the commodities that are there to be had, and they are indeed to much affected to the place, as they are loth to bee drawne from thence, although they were directed to recurne to give fatisfaction to those that fent them, but chose rather to performe that office by Letters, together with there excuse for breach of their duty in that behalfe. And thus you fee there is no labour well imployed, but hath his reward at one time or other. These incouragements have imboldned vs to proceed to the ingaging of our selves for the building of some Ships of good burden, and extraordinary mould, to he vpon the Coast for the defence of Merchants and Fishermen that are in ployed there as also to Wast the Fleets, as they goe to and from their Markets : and wee purpose from henceforth to build our shipping there, where wee find all commodities fit for that feruice, together with the most opportune places that can 30

Laftly, finding that we have fo far forth prevailed, as to wind our felues into familiaritie with the Natiues (which are in no great number) along the Coast, for two hundred Leagues together, wee have now dispatched some of our people of purpose, to dyne into the bowels of the Continent, there to search and finde out what Port, or Place, is most convenient to fertle our mayne Plantation in , where wee meane to make the Residencie of our State and Gouernment, as alio to bee affured what other commodities may bee rayfed for the publike, and private benefit of those that are dealers in that businesse, and willing to bee interessed in any the Lands there : Whither is gone this yeere already, for Trade and Fishing onely, thirtie Saile of the better fort of Ships belonging to the Westerne parts, besides those who are gone for trans-40 portation of the Planters, or supply of such as are already planted, whose returne (as is suppofed) will amount (at the least) to thirty thousand pound, the greater part whereof comes home in Bullion. And therefore as towching the third happinesse of these parts, which is the Sea, there needeth no other greater commendation, then this benefit of Fishing affured vnto vs by common Experience; although it affords many other hopes, both in regard of the facilitie of the Nauigation, the boldnesse of the Coast, the convenience of Roades, Havens and Harbors, for performance of all manner of imployments ; yet is there also found Showes of Pearle, Ambergreece, great numbers of Whales, and other merchantable meanes to raise profit to the industrious Inhabitants or diligent Traders.

Thirtie faile

CHAP. II.

The Voyage of M. HENRY CHALLONS intended for the North Plantation of Virginia, 1606. taken by the may, and ill wfed by Spaniards: written by Iohn Stoneman Pilot.



N Tuefday the twelfth of August, 1606. M. Henry Challans Gentleman set forth from Plimonth, in our fmall Ship of the burthen of fiftie fine Tunnes or there- 60 about, called the Richard of Plimonth. Wherein went twentie nine Englishmen, and two of the fine Sauages (whole names were Mannido and Affacomon) which were brought into England the yeere before out of the North parts of Unginia, from our goodly River by him thrice discovered, called

of 42, derees, 20, minutes were imployed for a farther discouery of these Coasts: And if any good occation were offered, to leave as many men as wee could spare in the Country. Being victualled for eleven or twelve moneths, at the charges of the Honourable Sir John Popham Knight, Lord chiefe Lustice of England, Sir Fardinando Gorges Knight, Captaine of the Fort of Plimonth . together with divers other worthipfull Knights, Gentlemen and Merchants of the West Countrye: John Stoneman of Plimouth being Pilot, who had beene in the forefaid parts of Virginia the veere before, with George Waymouth: The Maftets name was Nicholas Hine of Cockington, neere Dartmouth:

The last day of August wee fell with the He of Madera, where we watered and refreshed our Madera, felues, and frayed three dayes, being very kindly vied by the Inhabitants. The third day of September wee departed from thence, palling betweene Gomora and Palma, two of the Canary Iles, and from thence were driven by contrary winds, to take a more Southerly course then we intended, and to from more then fixe weekes before wee could recover any of the Ant-Iles. The first that wee could recover, was the Ile of Saint Lucia, in the Latitude of 14, degrees, 20. minutes, Saint Lucia, where we refreshed our selves with Wood and Water, And faw certaine of the Saugees there.about fortie or fiftie, came vnto vs at our Ship in one of their Cannoas, bringing vnto vs Tobacco, Potatos, Plantins, and Caffans Bread, the which Sauages had flaine more then fortie of our Nati- Fortie English on, the yeere before 1605, as after wee understood by Philip Glafes, and Miles Pett, being flaine by Sauatwo of Captaine Nicholas, Saint Johns company, which was there treacherously flaine a-

20 mong the reft.

Having stayed heare three dayes, about the two and twentieth of October we departed thence to the Northward. And in passing by the Ile of Dominica, wee chanced to see a white Flag put Dominica forth on the shoare, whereat maruelling, wee supposed that some Christians had sustained shipwrack their. And forthwith a Cannoa came off from the shoare towards vs., which when they came neere, being very little wind, we layed our Ship by the lee and flayed for them a little, and when they were come within a little diffance of the Ship, wee perceived in the Cannoa a Friar, who cried aloud in the Latine tong e, faying, I befeech, as you are Christians, for Christ his Friar Blofus fake to thew fome mercy and compatition on mee, I am a Preacher of the Word of God, a Friar of his request, the Order of Franciscus in Smill, by name Friar Blasius. And that hee had beene there fixteene moneths a Slaue vinto thole Sauages; and that other two Friars which were of his company they had murthered and throwne into the Sea. We demanded of him then, how he got fo much fauour to preferve his life his Brethren being murthered : Hee answered, because hee did shew the Saua-

ges how to fit them Sayles for their Cannoas, and to to eafe them of much labour often in rowing. which greatly pleafed the Sauges as appeared, for wee faw them to vie fayles in their Cannois. which hath not beene feene before.

Then we demanded of him where they had this Linnen Cloth to make those Sayles ; hee anfwered. That about two yeeres before that, three Gallions comming to the West Indies were cast away on the Ile of Gwadalopa, where abundance of Linnen Cloth and other Merchandife was caft luga. on shoare. We demanded farther, what was the cause of his being in this place, and how he came thither: he answered, That the King of Spaine did every yeere, fend out of every great Monastery certaine Friars into the remote parts of the Indies, both to fecke to convert the Sauges . as also to feeke out what benefits or commodities might be had in those parts, and also of what force the Gansesof veet-Sauages were of, and what number of them were in the feuen Ant-Iles, viz. Saint Vincent Grana- ly fending of do, Saint Lucia, Mattalina, Dominica, Gwadaloga, Aifey. The which the faid Friat Blaleus faid Frist out of he had diligently noted and observed, and did hope to make perfect relation of such great bene. Spaine, fits and riches as was to be drawne from thence, as he doubted not but would bee greatly acceptted of his King, if hee might live to returne to declare it : For, faid hee, I have feene in one River

discending from the Mountaines in the Ile of Dominica, the Sand to glitter like Gold or find Cop-

per, whereupon I tooke some of it, and chewed it betweene my teeth, and found it perfect Mettall, the Sauages noting me, began to have fome realousie of me, so as I durst not take any farther mica. to notice of it, neither would they fuffer him forward to come neere to that place. And farther hee faid, That if the great plentie of divers Fruits and Roots fit for mans fuffenance were pertectly knowne, together with the Sugar-canes that they have in those Iles, and the fertilitie of the foyle he thought it would be very shorely inhabited; and as for the number of Sauages there, as neere as we could understand, was scarce one thousand of all forts of men, women, and children in all the faid feuen Hes.

Now, being moved with pitrie at the lamentable complaint, and humble fuit of this distressed Friar, wee tooke him into our Ship, and fent away the Sauages much discontented. And from thence wee fayled to the lie of Saint John De-port-rice, where on the nine and twentieth of Octo- They land the 60 ber, wee arrived on the Southfide, and forthwith tent the Friar on shoare, and delivered him to two Heardimen, which most thankfully received him, and of their courteste brought vs a fat Cow. and proferred vs more with Hogs, Calues, or any thing elfe that they could procure vs in recom-

pence of the good dred done to the Friar.

Wee departed from thence, and fayled out betweene the Iles of Saint Iohn De-portrico; and

the ftorie, fur.

Historica standing away to the Northward, And leaving the great shoulds called Abricio, on our Larboord fide, being in the Latitude of 21, and 22, degrees, from thence Westward, our course North North-weft, and North-weft and by North, vatall wee were in the Latitude of 27. degrees or better, and about one hundred and eightie leagues from Saint lohn de Port Rice.

In this place having had a very great storme of Wind and Raine continuing fiftie fixe houres and more before on the tenth day of Nouember, about ten of the clocke in the morning, fuddenly we found our felues in the middeft of a Fleet of eight Sayle of thips in a very thicke fogge of happy hap fall mift and raine, fo as we could not fee them before they were very neere, and within shot of them. among Spa- wherein three of them were on the wind-ward of vs, on a third and fourth more to lee-ward: those at the wind-ward came rome vnto vs, and shot at vs , requiring vs to speake with their IC Admirall. When we law that by no meanes we could avoid them, but that they would meake with vs. we out abroad our Colours, and went toward the Admirall, before wee came vnto him. he likewite ffrooke downe our Sayle, and came under his lee, demaning his pleafure: the other thip which first that vs, all our Sayles being downe, and that our mayne Sayle in pieces lying on the Decke. And forthwith the Admirall came on board of vs , with two and twentie men in their

They are bor-

ded, taken and thus Boate with Rapiers, Swords, and halfe-pikes. We being all in peace flood readie to entertayine them in peace. But affoone as they were entred on boord of vs, they did most cruelly beate vs all, and wounded two of our Company in the heads with their Swords, not paring our 20 Captayne nor any. Also they wounded Affacomort, one of the Sauages aforesaid, most cruelly in feuerall places in the bodie, and thruth quite through the arme, the poore creature creeping voder a Cabbin for feare of their rigour : and as they thrust at him, wounding him, he cried still. King lames, King lames, King lames his ship, King lames his ship. Thus having beaten weall downe vnder the Deckes, prefently they beat vs vp againe, and thrust vs ouer-boord into their Boate, and so sent vs on boord of the Admirall ship. Neither would they suffer any of vs to speake a word, to shew the cause of our passing the Seas in these parts. Neyther regarded they any thing. our Commission which the Captayne held forth vnto them in his hand a vntill that the Admirall with the Company of foure other of the ships, had rifled fooyled, and delivered all the Merchandize and goods of the ship among them : which beeing done, they also divided us beeing thirtie persons in all into the said five ships, by seven, six, sine, and soure to a ship.

King Tames his refpe aed by Spaniards.

> Three of the former eight Sayle made Sayle away, and neuer came neere vs, neither were partakers of our spoyle. Then they also repayred our Maine Sayle which was torne with the shot aforefaid, and put their men into her. And after because they could not make her to sayle well. they tooke two of our men, and put into her to helpe them, the other fine ships and our ship kept company two or three dayes together. After this they feparated themselves either from other, not through any tempest or storme, but through wilfull negligence or simple Ignorance, by shaping contrary courfes the one from the other. So as not two of them kept company together. My selfe and fixe more of our company in the Vice-Admirall (of the burthen of one hundred and eightie tunnes; called the Peer of Simil, the Captaynes name was Andrew Burber) being a 40 lone, and having loft the company of the Fleet, continued our course wntill the middle of December : at which time being about twentie leagues off from the He of Santa Maria, one of the Iles of the Azares, the Vice-Admiral and the whole company dilliving the great Ignorance of the Pilot, because he had told them ten dayes before that he was very neere the Hands, and had waited all this time, and could find any of them, entreated me very earnestly to shew my skill. And the Pilot himselse brought mee his Inftruments , and besought mee most earnestly to affift him , and to appeare the company. Whereunto by there much importunitie I yeelded, And by Gods affistance on Christmasse Eeue, after our English account, I brought them fafe to the Barre of Saint Lucas , being the first thip of the whole Fleet that arrived there.

French cour-

One of the ships of this Fleet, by the great Ignorance of the Spanifo Masters, Pilots, and Ma- 50 riners was driven beyond all the Coast of Spane, into Burdeaux in Gascorne, In which shippe the Officersof the Admiraltie of France, finding foure of our Englithmen prisoners vader the Deckes in hold; to wit, Master Daniell Tucker, who was our Cape Merchant, Pierce Gliddon and two others , did very friendly set them at libertie ; and the said Daniel Tucker prefently arrested the Spanifo ship and goods beeing of great value, which of long time remayneth under arreft.

The good Duke of Medina hearing of the arrivall of certaine English prisoners taken here, the Coast of the West Indies, Ent command to the Captaynes of the Spanish ships, to bring four of the chiefest to be brought before him. Whereupon my felfe, Master Thomas Saint Iohn, Iohn Walrond our Steward, and William Stone our Carpenter were brought before him. The ship wherein 62

Mafter Challous was, was not yet come. Master Danid Neull an Englishman dwelling in Saint Lucas, was appointed our Interpretor. And then the Duke required me vpon my oath to yeeld a true and faithfull answere, according to the whole state and manner of our Voyage and proceedings, which I did, according to the former Relation afore written, wherevoon his Excellencie seplyed vinto the Spanil Captaynes

which had brought we laying, it this bee true which this Englishman affirmeth, you have greatly wronged these men. And to commanded them to provide meate, drinke, and at ledging for vs. and to bring vs againe the next day before him. They fent vs nevertheleffe to Simil, where wee were troughe to a Duichmans house, called Signier Petre, where we were real onably lodged and entertayned that night .

Thomese morning being New yeeres day we were brought before the Prefident of Smill, at Their impris the Contractation, who hearing of our comming, and not vouchfaing to speake with vs, few somment, foure Quivers to vs. and cast vs into Priton. Where for the space of fine dayes were had publike allowance, but fuch as poore men which were there Prifoners, also did of their mereie bestow on

10 vs:Atlength after many humble Sutes; and earnest Petitions excibited to the President, we had a Rigibot Plate allowed to each man a day, which is fixe pence English, which by reason of the dearshof all forts of wieduall in those parts, will not goe fo far as three pence in England.

. And foat feuerall times, within one moneth after elegen more of our Company were committeiden Priton, as they came home, whereof our Captaine was one. Notwithstanding that the good Duke of Medna had diffcharged both him and all those of his Company, which came into Spaine with him, and willed him to goe home to the Court of England, byto the Court of Spaine-where he thought to have best reliefe for his poore imprisoned Company. Whereupon Niebotas Hime our Matter, and two more of our men wifely foreleging what was like to bee the Hine, made haite away out of the Citie, and to got passage and escaped into England.

30 Before the comming of our Captaine to Similary felte and eleven more of my Company were examined before the President of the Contractation ; who finding no suft cause of offence in vs. did office earneftly examine me of the manner and tituation of the Countrie of Virginia, topether word the Commodities and benefit thereof. And after the comming of our Captaine, they likewite examined him to the fame purpole. We answered both to one purpole, according to our Commission in writing, which the Spaniards at our taking at Sea, had preferred and delivered up unto the hands of the President. Within few dayes after, they gave our Captaine and Master Thomas, Saint John, libertie of mayne Prison, upon the securitie of two English Merchants, which were Matter William Rapier, and Mafter John Pecketord, whereof the later is dwelling and maried in Stant. The rest of the Company being one and twentie in Prison, continued still in miserable 30 eftere. An sabout two moneths after, Robert Cooke of London one of our Company fell fick of a

Floxe, whereof he languished three moneths and more, and by no meanes that wee could make could get him forth to bee cured, although wee frent more then fixtie Rials in Supplicates and Sines to get him out. At length being dead, they cauled his bodie to bee drawne up and downe the Priton by the heeles, naked, in most contemptible manner, crying, Behold the Latheran, as fue of here of our Company beeing then in Prifon beheld : and fo laid him under the Conduit, and Cruell imme powred water into his dead bodie. This done, they cut off his Eares, Nofe and Members, as the nicie, Spaniar ar themselves confessed vinto vs, and so conveyed his bodie wee could never learne when ther, although we profered them money to have his dead corps to burie it.

Shortly after Nathaniel Humfrie our Boatswaine was stabbed into the belly with a Knife by 40 a Spaniard, which was a flue in the Prifon, and fourteene dayes after dyed, who beging dead I went vnto the Keeper of the Prison, defiring to buy his dead bodie to burie it, and fo for twenty Rials I bought his bodie, and buried it in the field. Then we befought the Prefident for Juffice on this flaue which had flaine our Boatfwaine : he demanded what we would have of the flaue. And we requested, that as he had flaine an honest and worthy man of ours causelesse, that hee mighe die for it according to the Law. The Prefident answered no, but if we would have him condemned for two or three yeares more to the Gallies he should. For find hee, The King of Spaine will Spaint Prefinot gine the life of the worst Slane that be bath, for the best Subject the King of England bath , and io dents respect fent vs away with this answere. Whereupon being out of all hope of Inflice with the President, we repaired vnto the Regent being an Ecolofiafticall man, one of the chiefest ludges of the Citie, dei ring likwife Iustice on the Mortherer aforefaid : who in kind tearmes promifed vs Iustice, nierds, and so willed vs to retaine countell and Atturnies to profecute our Sute; which weedid accordingly, and foafter two moneths Sute, and the cost of more then two hundred Rials on Lawyers,

therwife we had never obtained. And now I may not omit to thew how I got the libertie to have the fcope of the Citie for my Race to come, and go. Having beene three moneths in close Prifon with our poore company as aforeiaid. At length I gor the fauour of two Englishmen inhabiting in Simil named Constantine Collins, and Henry Roberts who did ingage themselves for me. The Spaniards were very defirous to have me to ferue their State, and proffered me great wages, which I refuted to doe, affirming. 60 that this imployment which I had in hand, was not yet ended untill which time I would not de-

Scribes and other Officers at length we had him hanged by the fanour of the Regent, which o-

termine any. Then the Alcadie major of the Contra Ctation House and diners others Merchants perswaded me to make them tome descriptions and Maps of the Coast and parts of Virginia, which I also refused to doe. They being discontent with me, fent mee againe to Prison, where I continued 000000

es. 30 as we began amon to despant of melling in Simil, named Hanfe Elosse, sent vitto mee to focake with me, which when I came vato him, fignified vato me what he had learned of one of the Indiges of the Contractation: who told him as he reported vato me, that the Spaniards had or the runges of the Contract of there, because they understood that I had been a former Difcoa great nate white me about an other state of the savages; and that they thought it was uprer in Fireinsa, at the bringing into England of the Savages; and that they thought it was is by my infligation to perferale our State to inhabit those parts. And because they had received to imall knowledge of those parts by my confession; and that they could not perswade mee to ferue that Scate, neither would make them any note draught, or descriptions of the Countrie. They resolved to bring to the Racke and torment me, whereby to draw some further knowledge by cont. fion from me, before any discharge might come for vs. The which this honest Merchant confidering, and the Innocencie of our case, gaue me to vnderstand. And wished mee rather to flie and preferre my felfe, then to fland to their mercie on the Racke, I hearing this the next morning, being the three and ewentieth of October, fuddenly fled from Simil, and with me Mafter Thomas Saint John aforelaid, and one other of our Company named James Stoneman my Brother, whom through great coft and charges bestowed on the Keepers of the Prilon a little before I had got forth to bee cured of a Callenture. Thus wee fled from Simil, leaving Mafter Henry Challons our Captaine at libertie vpon fureties, and fixteene more of our Company in close Prifon. From thence on the fine and twentieth of October, wee came to a Mount in the Cundade,

where finding no passage by any shipping into England, France or Flanders. Wee travelled through Alemnie, to the Port of Seinnall, and finding no passage there, wee travelled to Lesbone in Portugall. Where wee arrived the one and thirtieth of October, and there found thips reache bound to goe to England, but the wind was contrary for fourteene dayes.

At the time of our abode at L. Bone, wee vinderstood that three Carrickes were come from the East Indies: whereof one was arrived fately at Liftone tenne dayes before our comming this ther. Another was drinen to leeward, and put in Vergo, as wee heard. The third Carracke 20 beeing at the Ile of Tercera, was to leake that they could not bring her home into Portugal, but valoaded her into three of the King of Spaines great Armadoes, to bring the goods more fafely to Lilbone. Which Ships at there comming before the mouth of the River of Libone in the night within three dayes after my comming thither, were all cast away on cercame shouldes there called Ofcacbopos, or as wee commonly call them the Cascbops, where of nine hundred men, as the Portugalli reported, but only third feuen were faued, and of the goods very little at all : because the said ships being cast away on the ebbe. The goods were driven off into the Sea, the dead bodies of many that were drowned, I my felfe faw call on the shore with the fundry wrackes of the parts of the Ships Mails and Yards, with other wracke of Caske, Chifts, and fach like in great abundance.

The fourteenth day of November the winde being faire, wee tooke passige from Lisbone in a Small Barke belonging to Bidiford, called the Mager, and on the foure and twentieth of the Same we were landed at Saint lues in Cornwall, and from thence I hasted to Plimmenib, where Ishewed vnto Sir Ferdinando Gorges and divers others the Adventurers, the whole Discourse of our vnhappie Voyage together with the mileries that wee had, and did indure vnder the Spanie ards hands. And then hatted with all the speed I could toward the Court of England, where I was affured to my great comfort; that they either were alreadie, or very facitly should bee

Before my departure from Simil, I should have remembred, that about Whitsonide last deliuered. there were brought into the Prilon of the Contractation there, two youngmen brought out of 50 the West Indies, in one of the Kings Gallions, which were of Captaine lobn Legats company of Plummouth, which departed out of England, about the latter end of July 1606. bound for the River of Amazons, as hee told me before his going forth, where hee had beene two years before. And comming on the Coatt of Brafillas thole young men (the name of one of them is knew nowhen 14: Illiam Adams horne in Plimpton n:ere Pl.mmonth) reported vnto mee whether falling to the they haddone leeward of the River of Amazons, or decined by his Matter they knew not. And not being able to being ham to bring home to recourt the faild River, were confit ayned to refresh in the West Indes, in which time there mer inip, and fell a great diforder betweene the fail Captaine Legar and his company, to as one of his company, Spanife tufti in a broyle within themselves aboard there ship, ilue the faid Captaine Legat, whether in his owne private quarrell or with the confent of the reit of the Company, they could not tell mee. 62 But this is the more to bee tuspected for that he alwayes in former Voyages deale very straidy much com-mended to a with his company. After his death his company comming to the lle of Pmes, on the Southfide mendedtor a proper and exproper an

two and twentie dayes, and then I making meanes onto my good friends borrowed money, and fo save divers bribes vnto the keepers of the Prison, whereupon they gave mee libertie to goe a. broad againe into the Citie at my pleasure. And wayting energy day for some order from the Court of Spaine of our discharge, there came none but delayes and prolonging of our troubles and miferies. So as we began almost to despaire of libertie.

eighteene persons, fourteene were hanged the other foure being youths were saued to serue the Spaniards, whereof, two of them, refuting to ferue longer in there thips, were put into the Prifon at Sinil, the other two remayne still as shues to the Spaniards. This I had the rather noted to the end, that it may be the better confidered what numbers of

thins and men have gone out of England, fince the conclusion of peace betweene England and Spaine, in the way of honest Trade and Traffique, and how many of them have miserably misearried. Having beene flaine, drowned, hanged or pittifully captiated, and thrust out of their ships

and all their goods.

10 R Ender, I had by me the Voyage of Captaine Thomas Hanham, (written by himfelfe) unto Saga-dahoc: also the written lownals of Master Raleigh Gilbert which stayed and fortified there in that vn [easonable Winter (fit to freeze the heart of a Plantation) of James Davies, John Eliot, Gre. but our voluminousnesse makes me afraid of offending nicer and queasier stamackes : for which cause I bane omitted them , even after I had with great labour futed them to the Preffe: at I bane also done s written large Tractate of Mawauthen, and the Voyage of Master Edward Harlie fone of the first Planters with (ap. Pophara) and Nicholas Hobson to those parts 16x 1. with diners Letters from Cap. Popliam and others, You must observe, that it was in those times called by the name of Virginia, and the Northerne Plantation or Colonie. But Captaine Smith (a man which bath fo many Irons in our fire) presented a Booke of the Countrie to Prince Charles bis Highnesse, with a Map of the Country, 20 who filed it (as our hopes are , be will one day make it) New England, and altered the Sauage names of places to English. Hee made one Voyage thisber, Anno 1614, and the next yeare beganne another. which taken by Frenchmen, he was not able to make up: but in testimonie of his lone to his Countres bere, and of his hopes there bath wruten diners Bookes, One called A Description of New Eng. land (in which his faid Doyages are described, with the description of the Country and many Arenments to incite men to that undertaking; which I had also prepared for the Presse, but for the former feares have omitted) the other called New Englands Trials twice or thrice printed, out of which I base added thus much, that the World may fee the benefit to bee made by filbing, and may also be better acquainted with the successe and succession of New Englands Affaires.

CHAP. III.

Extracts of a Booke of Captaine IOHN SMITH, printed 1622. called New Englands tryalls, and continuing the Storie thereof, with Motines to the businesse of fishing there.

> The benefit of filhing, as Master Dee reporteth in his Brittish Menarchie.



E faith that it is more then foure and fortie yeeres agos, and it is more then for its yeeres fince he writtin, that the Herrine Buffee power faith. the King of Spaine, were five hundred, befides one hundred Frenchmen , and three or foure hundred Sayle of Flemmings. The Coalts of Wales and Lancalbire was vied by three hundred Sayle of ftrangers.

Ireland and Baltemore fraugted yeerly three hundred Sayle of Spaniards, where King Edward the Sixt intended to have made a firong Caftle, because of the Strait, to have Tribute for filling.

Blacke Rock was yeerely filled by three or foure hundred Sayle of Spaniards, Portugals, and 50 Biskiners.

Master Geneleman, and many Fisher-men and Fish-mongers, with whom I baue conferred, report, The Hallanders raise yeerely by Herring, Cod, and Ling, 3000000, pounds.

English and French by Salt-fish, Poore John, Salmons, and Pilchards, 200000. pounds. Hamborough and the Sound, for Sturgion, Lobilers and Eeles, 100000, pounds.

Cape Blanke for Tunny and Mullir, by the Biskiners and Spaniards, 30000. pounds.

But diners other learned experienced Observers say, though it may seeme incredible, That the Duke of Medica receive th yeerely tribute of the Fishers for Tunny, Mullit and Purgos, more then

Luber's hath fenen hundred Ships : Hamborough fix hundred : Embden lately a Fisher Towne. one thousand source hundred, whose Customes by the profit of fishing liath made them so power-

Holland and Zealand, not much greater then Torkefbire , hath thirtie walled Townes , fourt O000000 2

Cap. John Le. gat of Plimmouth. Murine? Cap. Legat flaine by his

Three thips

cers. Ihrue

hundred Villages, 20000 faile of Ships and Hoyes; thirtie fixe thousand are Fisher-men, whereof one hundred are Doggers, seuen hundred Pinkes and Wel-boates, seuen hundred Frand Boates. Britters and Tode-boats, with one thousand three hundred Busses, betides three hundred that veerely filh about Tarmenth, where they fell their Fish for Gold; and fifteene yeeres 2go they had more then \$16000. Sea-faring men.

The fishing thippes doe take yeerely two hundred thousand Last of fish, twelue barrels to a Last, which amounted to 3000000. pounds by the Fishermens price, that fourteene yeeres 2200 did nay for their Tenths 300000. pound; which venting in Pumerland, Spruffia, Denmarke, Lefland, Russia, Smetbland, Germany, Netberlands, England, or elie-where, &c. make their returnes in a yeere about 700000, pounds; and yet in Holland they have neither matter to build ships. 10 nor Merchandize to let them forth; yet by their industrie they as much increase, as other Nations decay. But leaving these vncertainties as they are, of this I am certaine :

That the Coast of England, Scotland, and Ireland, the North Sea, with Ireland and the Sound. New-foundaland, and Cape Blanke, doe ferue all Europe, as well the Land Townes as Ports, and all the Christian shipping, with these forts of Staple fish which is transported, from whence it is taken, many a thouland mile, viz. Herring, Salt-fish, Poore-John, Sturgion, Mullit, Tunny, Porgos, Cautare, Buttargo.

Now feeing all these forts of fish, or the most part of them, may be had in a Land more fertile, temperate, and plentifull of all necessaries for the building of ships, Boates, and houses, and the nourishment of man; the Seasons are so proper, and the fishings to neere the habitations, we 20 may there make, that New Eugland nath much advantage of the most of those parts, to serve all Emope far cheaper then they can, who at home have neither Wood, Salt, nor Food, but at great rates; at Sea nothing but what they carrie in their ships, an hundred or two hundred leagues from

But New Englands filhings is neere land, where is helpe of Wood, Warer, Fruites, Fowles, Corne, or other refreshings needfull; and the Torcoras, Mederas, Canaries, Spaine, Portugall, Pronance, Sanoy, Sicilia, and all Italy, as convenient Markets for our dry fish, greene fish, Sturgion, Mullit, Causare, and Buttargo, as Norman, Sweebland, Littmania, or Germany, for their Herring, which is here also in abundance for taking; they returning but Wood, Pitch, Tarre, Sope-ashes, Cordage, Flaxe, Waxe, and fuch like Commodities: we, Wines, Oyles, Sugars, Silkes, and fuch
Merchandize as the Straits affoord, whereby our profit may equalize theirs; betides the increase of shipping and Mariners. And for proofe hereof:

With two ships sent out at the charge of Captaine Marmaduke Roydon, Captaine George Lanoum, Mafter John Buley and W. Skelton, I went from the Downes the third or March, and arrived in New England the last of April, where I was to have stayed but with ten men to keepe possile fion of those large Territories, Had the Whales proued, as curious information had affured mee and my Aduentures, (but these things failed.) So having but fortie five men and boyes, we built seuen Boates, thatte leuen did fish; my felle with eight others ranging the Coast, I tookea plot of what I could fer, got acquaintance of the Inhabitants; 1100. Beuer skinnes, a hundred Martines, and as many Otters. Fortie thousand of dry fish wee fent for Spaine, with the Salt-fish, 40 traine Oyle and Furres, I returned for England the eighteenth of July, and arrived fafe with my Company the latter end of August. Thus in fixe moneths I made my Voyage out and home; and by the labour of fine and tortie, got neere the value of fifteene hundred pounds in those grole Commodities. This yeere also one went from Plimmouth, set out by divers of the Ile of Wight, and the West Countrie, by the directions and instructions of Sir Ferdinando Gorge, Spent their victuals, and returned with nothing.

The Virginia Company vpon this fent foure good ships; and because I would not undertake it Proofe 2, 1615. The Virginia Company vpon this sent route good maps; and because two dates the men that for them, having ingaged my felfer to them of the West, the Londoners entertained the men that came home with me. They fet sayle in Ianuary, and arrived there in March; they found fish enough vntill halfe Iune, fraughted a thip of three hundred tunnes, went for Spane, which was 50 taken by the Turker; one went to Virginia to relieue that Colonie, and two came for England with the greene filh, traine Oyle and Furres within fix moneths.

In Ianuary with two hundred pounds in cash for aduenture, and six Gentlemen well furnished, I went from London to the foure Ships was promifed, prepared for mee in the West Country, but I found no fuch matter; notwithftanding at the last, with a labyrinth of trouble I went from Plumeth, with a Ship of two hundred Tunnes, and one of fiftie : when the filhing was done onely with fifceene I was to flay in the Countrey ; but ill weather breaking all my Masts, I was forced to returne to Plimoth, where rather then lofe all, reimbarking my felfe in a Barke of fixer Tuns, how I escaped the English Pyrats and the French, and was betrayed by foure Frenchmen of War, I refer you to the description of New England : but my Vice-Admirall, not withit anding the late- 63 neffe of the yeere, fetting forth with me in March, the Londoners in Ianuary, shee arrived in May, they in March, yet came home well fraught in August, and all her men well, within five moneths, odde dayes.

Profe 4: 1616. The Landoners ere I returned from France, for all their loffe by the Turkes, which was valued a-

bout foure thousand pounds sent two more in July; but such courses they tooke by the Canaries to the West Indies, it was ten moneths ere they arrived in New England, wasting in that time their featons, victuall, and health, yet there they found meanes to refreth themselves, and the one returned neere fraught with Fish and Traine, within two moneths after.

From Plime b went foure Ships, onely to Fifth and Trade, fome in February, fome in March, Proofe 5. 1616. one of two hundred Tuns got thither in a moneth, and went full traught for Spane, the reft returned to Plimoth well fraught, and their men well, within five moneths, odde dayes.

From London went two more, one of two hundred Tuns, got thither in fixe weekes, and Proofe 6, 1616. within fixe weekes after, with fortie foure men and boyes was full fraught, and returned agains to into England within five moneths and a few dayes; the other went to the Canaries with dry fifth,

which they fold at a great rate, for Rials of eight, and as I heard turned Pyrats,

I being at Plimoth provided with three good Ships, yet but fifteene men to flav with me in the Profe 7, 1617. Countrey, was Wind-bound three moneths, as was many a hundred faile more, fo that the feafon being past, the Ships went for New-found-land, whereby my deligne was frustrate, which was to me and my friends no small loste, in regard whereof here the Westerne Commissioners, in the behalte of themselues and the rest of the Company, contracted with me by Articles indented vider our hands, to be Admirall of that Country during my life, and in the renewing of their Letters Patents to to be nominated, halfe the fruites of our endeuours theirs, the reft our owne : being thus ingaged; now the bufinelle doth profper, fome of them would willingly forget mee; 20 but I am not the first they have deceived.

There was foure good Ships prepared at Plimoth, but by resfon of their delagreement, the fea- Proofe 8, 1618; fon to waited as onely two went forward, the one being of two hundred Tunnes, returned well fraught for Plumith, and her men in health, within five moneths; the other of eightie Tuns, went for Bilbow with dry fish, and made a good returne. In this voyage Edward Roweroft, alias Stallings, a valiant Souldier, that had beene with mee in Virginia, and feven yeeres after went with mee from Plimoth towardes New England, with Thomas Darmer, an understanding and an industrious Gentleman to inhabite it; all whose names, with our proceedings, you may read at large in my description of New England, upon triall before the Judge of the Admiraltie, how when weehad pail the worlt, for pure cowardile the Mailer and Sailer ran away with the Ship and all I had and 40 left mee alone among eight or nine Frenchmen of War , in the veere 1614. This Stallings went now againe in those Ships, and having some wrong offered him in New England by a Frenchman, he tooke him, and as he writ to mee, he went with her to Virginia with fifth, to trade with them for such commodities as they might spare ; hee knew both these Countries well, yet hee promiled mee the next Spring to meete mee in New England; but the Ship and he perished in

This yeere againe, divers Ships intending to goe from Plimoth, fo difagreed, as there went but Proofe 9, 1619; one of two hundred Tunnes, who flayed in the Countrey about fix weekes, with thirtie eight men and boyes, had her fraught, which thee fold at the first peny, for two thousand one hundred pounds, befiles the Furs : fo that every poore Sayler, that had but a fingle share, had his charges. and fixteene pound ten shillings, for his leuen moneths worke. M. Thomas Darmer, having lived about a yeere in New-found-land, returning to Plimath, went for New England in this Ship, and not onely confirmes what I have writ, but so much more approved of it, that he stayed there with five or fix men in a little Boat : finding two or three Frenchmen among the Sauges, who had loft their Ship, augmented his company, with whom hee ranged the Coast to Virginia, where he was kindly welcommed and well refreshed; thence returned to New England againe, where hauing beene a yeere, in his backe returne to Uinginia, he was so wounded by the Sauages, hee dyed vpon it, them escaped were relieved at Virginia. Let not men attribute their great adventures and vntimely deaths to vnfortunatenelle, but rather wonder how God did folong preferue them, with to small meanes to doe so much, leaving the fruites of their labours, to bee an encouragement to 50 those our poore undertakings; and this for advantage as they writ unto mee, that God had laid this Countrey open for vs , and flaine the most part of the Inhabitants by cruell Wars and a mortall difeate; for where I had feene one hundred or two hundred people, there is fearee ten to bee found. From Pembrocks Bay, to Harrintons Bay, there is not twentie; from thence to Cape Anne, some thirtie; from Taulbuts Bay to the River Charles, about fortie, and not any of them touched with any ticknesse, but one poore Frenchman that dyed.

For to make triall this yeere, there is gone fixe or feuen fayle from the West Countrey, onely Profeso. 1620 to fish, three of whom are returned, and as I was certainly informed, made so good a voyage, that euery Sayler for a fingle share had twentie pounds for his seuen moneths worke, which is more then in twentie months hee should have gotten, had he gone for wages any where. Now, though 60 all the former Ships have not made fuch good voyages, as they expected, by fending opinionated vnskiltull men, that had not experienced diligence to faue that they tooke, nor take that there was; which now patience and practife hath brought to a reasonable kinde of perfection : in defpite of all detract irs and calumniations, the Country yet hath fatisfied all, the defect hath bin in their ving or abating it, not in it felfe nor mee.

O 0 0 0 0 0 0 3

1829

A Plantation in New Eng-Presfe 11. 1610

TPon these inducements, some few well disposed Gentlemen and Merchants of London and V other places prouided two Ships, the one of one hundred and fixtie Tuns, the other of feuentie; they left the Coast of England the three and twentieth of August, with about one hundred and twentie persons, but the next day the leffer Ship fprung a leake, that forced their returne to Plimouth , where discharging her and twentie Passengers, with the great Ship, and a hundred persons beliefes Sailers, they set faile againe the fixth of September, and the ninth of November fell with Cape lamer; but being pettred nine weekes in this leaking vnwholfome Ship, lying wet in their Cabbins, most of them grew very weake and weary of the Sea, then for want of experience ranging to and againe fixe weekes before they found a place they liked to dwell on, forced to lie on the bare ground without couerture in the extremitie of Winter, fortie of them dyed, to and fixtie were left in very weake estate at the Ships comming away, about the fifth of April following, and arrived in England the fixth of May.

Pro:fe 12 . 16:0

Immediately after her arrivall from London , they fent another of fiftie five Tuns to supply them, with thirtie feuen persons, they set saile in the beginning of July, but being crossed by Westerly winds, it was the end of August ere they could passe Plimouth, and arrived at New Plimouth in New England the eleventh of November , where they found all the reople they left in April, as is faid, lufty and in good health, except fix that dyed. Within a moneth they returned here for England, laded with Clapboord, Wainscot, and Walnut, with about three Hogsheads of Beauer skins, and some Saxefras, the thirteenth of December, and drawing neere our Coast, was taken by a Frenchman, fet out by the Marquis of Cera Gouernour of Ile Den, on the Coaft of 20 Portou, where they kept the Ship, impriloned the Master and Companie, tooke from them to the value of about fine hundred pounds; and after fourteene dayes lent them home with a poore supply of Victuall, their owne being denoured by the Mai quis and his hungry fernants; they arrived at London the fourteenth of Februarie, leaving all them they found and carried to New England, well and in health, with victuall and Corne sufficient till the next Haruest.

The Copie of a Letter fent by this Ship.

A Letter from New Plimath.

T Ouine Cousin, at our arrivall at New Plimoth in New England, wee found all our Friends and 30 Planters in good health, though they were left sicke and weake with very small meanes, the Indians round about us peaceable and friendly, the Country very pleasant and temperate, yeelding naturally of it selfe great store of fruits, as Umes of diners forts in great abundance; there is likewise Walnuts, Chefnuts, Small-nuts and Plums, with much varietie of Flowers, Roots, and Hearbs, no leffe pleafant then wholfome and profitable : no place bath more Goofe-berries, and Straw-berries, nor better ; Timber of all forts you have in England, doth coner the Land, that affords Beafts of diners forts, and great flockes of Turkies, Quailes, Pizeons and Partridges: Many great Lakes abounding with Fish, Fowle, Beauers, and Otters. The Sea affoords vs as great vientie of all excellent forts of Sea-fish, as the Rivers and Iles daib varietie of wild Fowle of most verfull forts. Mynes we find to cur thinking, but neither the goodnesse mor qualitie wee know. Better Graine cannot be then the Indian Corne, if we will plant it upon as good ground 40 as a man need defire, wee are all Free-bolders, the rent day doth not trouble vs, and all those good bleffings we bane, of which and what wee list in their feafons for taking. Our company are for most part very religious honest people; the Word of God sincerely taught us every Sabbath : so that I know not any thing a contented mind can here want. I defire your friendly care to fend my Wife and Children is mee, where I wish all the Friends I have in England, and fo I rest

Your louing Kinsman William Hilton.

From the West Countrey went ten or twelve Ships to Fish, which were all well fraughted ; those that came first at Bilbow, made seuenteene pounds a single share, besiles Beauer, Otters, and Martins skins ; but some of the rest that came to the same Ports, that were already furnished, so glutted the Market, their price was abated, yet all returned fo well contented, they are a preparing to goe againe.

For this yeare

There is gone from the West of England one y to fish, thirtie five Ships, and about the last of April two more from London, the one of one hundred Tuns, the other of thirtie, with some fixtie Paffengers to supply the Plantation with all necessary provisions. Now though the Turke and French hath beene somewhat too busie, would all the Christian Princes but bee truly at vincie, as his Royall Maiesty our Soueraigne Lord and King delireth, seuentie saile of good Ships were sufficient to fire, the most of his Coasts in the Lenant, and make such a guard in the Graits of Hele lespont, as would make the Great Turke himselfe more afraid in Confiantinople, then the smallest Red Croste, crosses the Seas would be, either of any French, Piccaroun, or the Pyrates of Argere.

An Abstract of Letters sent from the Colony in New England, July fixteene, 1622.

Since the newes of the Massacre in Virginia, though the Indians continue their wonted friend in Jet

are wee more wary of them then before; for their bands have beene embrued in much English bloud, one-Ly by too much confidence, but not by force.

Here I must intreat a little your fanours to digresse. They did not kill the English, because they were Christians, but for their weapons and commodities, that were rare nouelties; but now they feare we may beat them out of their Dens, which Lionsand Tygers would not admit but by force. But must this be an argument for an Englishman, or discourage any either in Virginia or New England? No : tor I have tried them both. For Virginia, I kept that Countrey, with thirtie eight. and had not to eate but what we had from the Sausges. When I had ten menable to goe abroad, our Common-wealth was very firong : with fuch a number Iranged that vnknowne Countrey to fourteene weekes; I had but eighteen to fibdue them all , with which great Army I flaved fixe weeks before their greatest Kingshabitations, till they had gathered together all the power they could; and yet the Dutchmen fent at a needleffe exceffine charge did helpe Pombatan how to betray mee.

Of their numbers wee were vncertaine ; but those two honourable Gentlemen, Captaine George Percie, and Captaine Erancis West, two of the Phittiplaces, and some other such noble Gentlemen and refolute spirts bore their shares with me, and now living in England, did see me take this murdering Opechane anough, now their Great King by the long lock on his head, with my Pi- Opechancanough ftoll at his breath, I led him among his greatest forces, and before wee parted, made him fill our midth of his cre-Barke of twentie Tuns with Corne. When their owne wants was fuch, I have given them part a- mie as Aubais-20 gain in pitty, & others have bought it again to plant their fields. For wronging a Souldier but the fa was by Fi. value of a peny. I have caused Powbatan send his own men to lames Town to receive their punish- fora. ment, at my suferetion. It is true in our greatest extremity they shot me, slue three of my men, and by the folly of them that fled tooke me priloner; yet God made Pocahontas the Kings Daughter the meanes to delicer me : and thereby taught mee to know their treacheries to preferue the reft. It was also my chance in fingle combate to take the King of Palpabegh prisoner, and by keeping him forced his subjects to worke in Chaines, till I made all the Countrey pay contribution, having little elte whereon to hue.

Twice in this time I was their Prefident, & none can fay in all that time I had a man flain; but for keeping them in that feare I was much blamed both there and heere : yet I left fine hundred 20 behind mee that through their confidence in fixe monethes came most to confusion, as you may reade at large in the description of Virginia. When I went first to those desperate designes, it coff me many a forgotte a pound to hire men to goe; and prograftination caused more runne away then went. But after the Ice was broken, came many braue Voluntaries : not withflanding fince I came from thence, the Honorable Company have beene humble Suters to his Majeffie to get Vagabonds and condemned men to goe thither; nay, to much formed was the name of Virenia. fome did chuse to be hanged ere they would goe thither, and were : yet for all the worst of spite. detraction and discouragement, and this lamentable Massacre, there are more honest men now faters to goe, then ever have been conftrained knaves; and it is not voknowne to most men of voderstanding, how happy many of those Callumners doe thinke themselves, that they might bee 40 admitted, and yet pay for their passage to goe now to Vaginia: and had I but meanes to transport as many as would goe, I might have choice of ten thouland that would gladly bee in any of those new places, which were to basely contemned by vogratefull base minds.

To range this Countrie of New England, in like manner I had but eight, as is faid, and amone ft. their bruite conditions I met many of their filly incounters, and without any hurt. God be thanked: when your West Countrie men were many of them wounded, and much tormented with the Sauages that affaulted their Ship, as they did fay themselves, in the first yeare I was there 1614. and though Mafter Hunt then Mafter with me, did most basely in stealing some Sauages from that coaff to fell, when he was directed to have gone for Spaine, yet that place was fo remote from Capamuck, where Epenem should have fraughted them with Gold Ore, that his fault could 50 be no caute of their bad successe, however it is alledged for an excuse. I speake not this out of vain glory, as it may be some gleaners, or some was never there, may censure mee : but to let all men be affured by those examples, what those Sauages are that thus strangely doe murder and betray our Co intrie men. But to the purpole.

What is already writ of the healthfulness of the agre, the richnesse of the soyle, the goodnesse of the Woods the abundance of Fruits, Fish, and Fowle in their feafon, they still affirme that have beene there now neer two yeeres, and at one draught they base taken one thou and Basses, and in one night twelve hop fheads of Herring. They are building a strong Fort, they hope shortly to finish, in the interim they are well provided : their number is about a hundred persons, all in health, and well neere sixtie Acres of ground well planted with Corne, besides their Gardens well replenished with vsefull fruits; and if their Aduentu-60 vers would but furnish them with neversaries for fishing, their wants would quickly bee supplied. To supply them this fixteenth of October, is going the Paragon, with fixtie seuen persons, and all this is done by prinate mens pur (is. And to conclude in their owne words, should they write of all plenties they bane found, they thinke they (bould not be beleeved.

For the twentie fixe fixed of Ships, the most I can yet understand is .M. Ambrose Iennens of London.

and Master Abraham Jennens of Plimmoth (ent (their Abraham) a Ship of two hundred and twentie Tans, and the Nightingale of Porchmouth of a hundred : whose Fish at the first penie came to 21 co nounds; in all they were fine and thirty faile: and wherein New found Land they shared fixe or fenen pounds for a common man, in New England they shared four etcene pounds; besides fix Dutch and French Ships made wonderfull recurnes in Furres.

Thus you may see plainely the yearely successe from New England (by Unginia) which hach bin fo coffly to this Kingdome, and fo deare to me, which either to fee perish or but bleede, nardon me though it pallionate me beyond the bounds of modesty, to have bin sufficiently able to foresee it, and had neither power nor meanes how to prevent it. By that acquaintance I have with them. I may call them my children, for they have bin my Wife, my Hawkes, my Hounds. 10 my Cards, my Dice, and in totall my best content, as indifferent to my heart as my left hand to my right; and not withflanding all those miracles of disafters have croffed both them and me ver were there not one Englishman remaining (as God be thanked there is some thousands) I would vet begin againe with as imall meanes as I did at the first; not for that I have any secret encourasement from any I protest, more then lamentable experiences ; for all their Discoueries I can yet heare of, are but Pigs of my owne Sowe; nor more strange to me then to heare one tell mee he hath gone from Billings gate and discourred Greenwich, Granefend, Tilberry, Quinborom Lee and Margit, which to those did neuer heare of them, though they dwell in England, might be made feeme some rare secrets and great Countries ynknowne, except the Relation of Master Dirmer. But to returne : It is certaine, from Cannada and New England within these fixe yeares, hath 30 come neere 20000/Beuer Skins. Now had each of those Ships transported but some small evantitie of the most increasing Beatts, Fowles, Fruites, Plants and Scades, as I proiected, by this time their increase might haue bin sufficient for a thousand men. But the desire of present gaine (in many) is so violent, and the endeuours of many undertakers so negligent, every one foregarding their private gaine, that it is hard to effect any publicke good, and impossible to bring them into a body, rule, or order, valeffe both authority and money affift experiences. It is not a worke for every one to plant a Colony ; but when a House is built, it is no hard matter to dwell in it. This requireth all the best parts of art, judgement, courage, honesty, constancy, diligence and experience to doe but neere well: your home-bred ingroffing projectors shall finde there a great difference betwixt faving and doing. But to conclude, the Fishing will goe forward if you plant 20 it or no; whereby a Colonie may be transported with no great charge, that in a short time might prouide fuch fraughts to buy of vs there dwelling, as I would hope no Ship should goe or come empty from New England.

The charge of this is onely Salt, Nets, Hookes, Lines, Kniues, Irish Rugs, course Cloath, Beades, Glaffe, and such like trash, onely for fishing and trade with the Sauages, beside our ownenecessary prouisions, whose endeuours will quickly defray all this charge: and the Sauages haueintreated me to inhabite where I will. Now all these Ships, till this last yeare, have bin fished within a fquare of two or three leagues, and not one of them all would aduenture any further, where questionlesse fiue hundred faile may have their fraught better then in Island, New found Land, or elsewhere, and be in their markets before the other can have their fish in their Ships, because New 40 Englands fishing begins with February, the other not till mid May : the progression hereoftends much to the advancement of Virginia and the Bermudas, whose emptie Ships may take in their fraught there, and would be a good friend in time of neede to the Inhabitants of New

CHAP. IIII

A Relation or Iournall of a Plantation settled at Plimoth in New England, and proceedings thereof; Printed 1622. and here abbreuiated.

found Land &c.

Ednesday the fixt of September, the Winde comming East North-east, a fine small gale, we loofed from Plimoth, having bin kindely entertained and curreoully vled by divers friends there dwelling, and after many difficulties in boifterous flormes, at length by Gods prouidence vpon the ninth of Nouember following, by breake of the day we espied Land, which we deemed to be Cape [ed. and io

50

afterward it proued. Vpon the eleuenth of November, we came to an anchor in the Bay, which is a good harbonr and pleafant Bay, circled round, except in the entrance, which is about foure 63 miles ouer from land to land, compaffed about to the verie Sea with Oakes, Pines, Juniper, Saffafras, and other fweete Wood: it is a harbout wherein 1000, faile of Ships may fafely ride, there weerelieued our felues with Wood and Water, and refreshed our people, while our Shallop was fitted to coast the Bay, to search for an habitation : there was the greatest store of Fowle that euer we faw.

And euerie day we faw Whales playing hard by vs, of which in that place, if weehad inftruments and meanes to take them, we might have made a verie rich returne, which to our orear griefe we wanted. Our Master and his Mate, and others experienced in fishing, professed, wee might have made three or foure thousand pounds worth of Oyle; they preferred it before Greenland Whale-fishing, and purpole the next winter to fish for Whale here : for Cod we affaied, but found none, there is good ffore no doubt in their feafon. Neither got we anie fifth all the time we lay there, but some few little ones on the shoare. We found great Mussles, and verie fat and full or Sea Pearle, but we could not eate them, for they made ve all ficke that did eate, as well failers as passengers; they caused to cast and scoure, but they were soone well againe. The Baie is to fo round and circling, that before we could come to anchor, we went round all the points of the Compaffe. We could not come neere the shoare by three quarters of an English mile, because of shallow water, which was a great prejudice to vs, for our people going on shoare were forced to Ill Landing. wade a Bow shoote or two in going aland, which caused manie to get colds and coughs, for it was manie times freezing cold weather.

This day before we came to harbour, obserging some not well affected to vnitie and concord. but gaue some appearance of faction, it was thought good there should be an affociation and agreement, that we should combine together in one bodie, and to submit to such government and Gouernours, as we should by common consent agree to make and choose, and set our hands to this that followes word for word.

N the name of God. Amen. We whole names are underwritten, the lovall Subjects of our dread Soueraigne Lord King James, by the grace of God of Great Britaine, France, and Ireland King, Defender of the Faith, &c. Hauing undertaken for the glorie of God, and advancement of the Christian faith, and honor of our King and Countries a Voiage to plant the first Colonie in the Northerne parts of Virginia, doe by these presents solemnely and matually in the presence of G O D and one of another, covenant and combine our selves together in a civill bodie politike. for our better ordering and preservation, and furtherance of the ends aforesaid; and by vertue hereof to enact, conflitute, and frame such sust and equal Lawes, Ordinances, acts, constitutions, offices from time to time, as shall be thought most meete and convenient for the generall 30 good of the Colonie: vnto which wee promise all due submission and obedience. In witnesse whereof we have here under suscribed our names. Cape God eleventh of November, in the years of the raigne of our Soueraigne Lord King I a M & S , of England, France and Ireland, 18, and of Scotland 54. Anno Domino 1 620.

The fame day fo foone as we could we fet alhoare fifteene or fixteene men, well armed, with fome to fetch Wood, for we had none left; as also to see what the Land was, and what Inhabitants they could meete with, they found it to be a small necke of Land : on this side where we lay is the Bay, and the furthest side the Sea : the ground or earth, fand hils, much like the Downes in Holland, but much better : the crust of the earth a Spits depth, excellent blacke earth : all woodded with Oakes, Pines, Saffafras, Iuniper, Birch, Holly, Vines, fome Ash, Walnut; the 40 Wood for the most part open and without vnder-wood, fit either to goe or ride in : at night our people returned, but found not anie person, nor habitation, and laded their Boate with Iuniper, which smelled verie sweete and strong, and of which wee burnt the most part of the

Munday the thirteenth of Nouember, we vnshipped our Shallop, and drew her on land, to mend and repaire her, having bin forced to cut her downe in bestowing her betwixt the decks; and the was much opened with the peoples lying in her, which kept vs long ther, for it was fixteene or seventeene daies before the Carpenter had finished her : our people went on shoare to refresh themselves, and our women to wash, as they had great neede : but whilest wee lay thus ftill, hoping our Shallop would be readie in five or fix daies at the furthert, but our Carpenter 50 made flow worke of it, fo that tome of our people impatient of delay, defired for our better furtherance to trauaile by Land into the Countrie, which was not without appearance of danger, not having the Shallop with them, nor meanes to carrie provision, but on their backes, to see whether it might be fit for vs to feate in or no, and the rather because as we failed into the Harbour, there feemed to be a River opening it felfe into the maine Land; the willingnesse of the persons was liked, but the thing it felfe, in regard of the danger was rather permitted then approved, and fo with cautions, directions, and inftructions, fixteene men were fet out with euery man his Musket, Sword, and Corilet, vnder the conduct of Captaine Miles Standile, vnto whom was adiouned for counfell and aduife, William Bradford, Stephen Hopkins, and Edward Tilley.

Wednesday the fifteenth of Nouember, they were fet a shoare, and when they had ordered 60 themselves in order of a single File, and marched about the space of a mile, by the Sea they espied fine or ix people, with a Dogge, comming towards them, who were Sauages, who when they Sight of Sar faw them, raninto the Woods and whiftled the Dogge after them, &c. First, they supposed uages. them to be Maiter lones, the Maiter and fome of his men, for they were a shoare, and knew of their comming: but after they knew them to be Indians they marched after them into the

Woods, least other of the Indians should lye in Ambush ; but when the Indians faw our men fellowing them, they ran away with might and maine; and our men turned out of the Wood after them, for it was the way they intended to goe, but they could not come neere them. They followed them that night about ten miles by the trace of their footings, & faw how they had come the fame way they went, and at a turning perceined how they rame up an hill, to fee whether they followed them. At length night came vpon them, and they were constrained to take up their lodging, fo they fet forth three Sentinels, and the reft, some kindled a fire, and others fetched Woods & there held our Randeuous that night. In the morning fo foone as we could fee the trace. we proceeded on our journie, and had the tracke vntill wee had compafied the head of a lone creake, and there they tooke into another Wood, and we after them, supposing to finde some of their dwellings, but we marched thorow Boughes and Buthes, and under Hils and Vallies, which tore our verie Armour in peeces, and yet could meete with none of them, nor their houles. nor finde any fresh water, which we greatly defired, and stood in neede off, for we brought neither Beere nor Water with vs, and our victuals was onely Bisket and Holland Cheefe, and a little Bottell of Aquanite, fo as we were fore a thirft. About ten a clocke we came into a deene Valley, full of brush, wood-gaile, and long grasse, through which wee found little paths or tracks. and there we faw a Deere, and found Springs of fresh Water, of which we were hartily glad and fat vs downe and drunke our first New England Water, with as much delight as ever we drunke When we had refreshed our felues, we directed our course full South, that wee might come to

the shoare, which within a shore while after we did, and there made a fire, that they in the Ship might fee where we were (as wee had direction) and to marched on towards this supposed Riger ; and as we went in another Valley, we found a fine cleere Pond of fresh water, being about a Musket shot broad, and twife as long: there grew also many small Vines, and Fowle and Deere haunted thereithere grew much Safafras: from thence we went on and found much plainground about fittle Acres, fit for the Plow, and some fignes where the Indians had formerly planted, their Corne : after this, fome thought it best for nearenesse of the River to goe downe and tranaile on the Sea fands, by which meanes fome of our men were tired, and lagged behinde, fo we Hayed and gathered them vp, and ftrucke into the Land againe; where we found a little path to certaine heapes of Sand, one whereof was couered with old Mats, and had a woodden thing like 20 a Morter whelmed on the top of it, and an earthen pot laid in a little hole at the end thereof; we musing what it might be, digged and found a Bowe, and as we thought, Arrowes, but they were rotten; We supposed there were many other things, but because we deemed them graues, we put in the Bow againe and made it vp as it was; and left the rest untouched, because we thought it would be odious vnto them to ransacke their Sepulchers. We went on further and found new stubble of which they had gotten Corne this yeare, and many Walnut trees full of Nuts, and great store of Strawberries, and some Vines; passing thus a field or two, which were not great, we came to another, which had also bin new gotten, and there wee found where an house had beene, and foure or five old Plankes laied together; also we found a great Kettle, which Cornefound. had beene formeShips kettle and brought out of Europe; there was also an heape of land, made hke 40 the former, but it was newly done, wee might fee how they had padled it with their hands, which we digged up, and in it we tound a little old Basket full of faire Indian Corne, and digged further, and found a fine great new Basket full of very faire Corne of this yeare, with some fixe and thirty goodly cares of Corne, some yellow, and some red, and others mixt with blew, which was a very goodly fight: the Basket was round, and narrow at the top, it held about three or foure bushels, which was as much as two of vs could lift up from the ground, and was very handfomely and cunningly made: But whilst we were busic about their things, we set our men Sentinell in a round ring, all but two or three which digged up the Corne. Wee were in suspence, what to doe with it, and the Kettle, and at length after much confultation, we concluded to take the Kettle, and as much of the Corne as wee could carry away with vo: and when our Shallop 50 came if we could finde any of the people, and came to parley with them , wee would give them the Kettle agains, and fatisfie them for their Corne.

So we tooke all the Eares, and put a good deale of the loofe Corne in the Kettle, for two men to bring away one Staffe; befides, they that could pur away into their Peckets filled the fame; the rest wee buried agains, for we were so laden with Armour that we could carry no more. Not farre from this place we found the remainder of an old Fort, or Palizado, which as we conceived had beene made by some Christians, this was also hard by that place which we thought had been a River, vato which we went and found it fo to be, dividing it faite into two armes by an high banke, itanding right by the Cut or Mouth which came from the Sea, that which was next unto vs was the leffe, the other arme was more then twice as big, and not whike to bee an Harboth 60 for Ships; but whether it be a fresh River, or onely an indraught of the Sea, wee had no time to discouer, for we had commandement to be out but two dayes. Here : If o we saw two Cancas, the They returned one on the one fide, the other on the other fide, we could not believe it was a Capoa, all we care neere it, fo we returned, leaung the further d flowery hereof to our S'alien and amethernight

backe agains to the fresh water pond, and there we made our randenous that night, making a great fire, and a Baricado to windward of vs, and kept good watch with three Sentinels all night, every one standing when his turne came, while five or fixe inches of Match was burning. It proved a very rainie night. In the morning we tooke our Kettle and funke it in the Pond, and trimmed our Muskets, for few of them would goe off because of the weet, and so coasted the Wood agains to come home, in which we were shrewdly pulled, and lost our way; as we wandred we came to a tree, where a yong Spitts was bowed downe ouer 2 Bowe, and some Acornes frewed vademeath; Stephen Hopkins laid, it had beene to catch fome Deere, 10, as we were looking at it, William Bradford being in the Redre, when he came looking allo vpon it, and as he went catch Deere, In the end wee got out of the Wood, and were fallen about a mile too high about the creake.

to about, it gaue a fodaine ierke vp, and he was immediately caught by the legge: It was a very pretty deuise, made with a Roape of their owne making, and having a moofe as artificially made, as any Roper in England can make, and as like ours as can be, which wee brought away with vs. where we saw three Buckes, but we had rather have had one of them. We also did foring three couple of Partridges; and as we came along by the creake, we saw great flockes of wilde Geese and Duckes, but they were very fearefull of vs. So we marched some while in the Woods, some while on the Sands, and other while in the Water vp to the knees, till at length we came neere the Ship, and then we that off our Peeces, and the long Boate came to fetch vs : Mafter lone; and Matter Carner being on the shoare, with many of our people, came to meete vs. And thus wee to came both weary and welcome home, and deliuered in our Corne into the flore, to be kept for feede, for we knew not how to come by any, and therefore was very glad, purpoling to foone as we could meete with any of the Inhabitants of that place, to make them large fatistaction.

When our Shallop was fit indeede, before the was fully fitted, for there was two daies worke after bestowed on her, there was appointed some foure and twenty men of our owne, and armed. then to goe and make a more full discovery of the Rivers before mentioned. Master lones was defirous to goe with vs, and tooke such of his Saylers as he thought vsefull for vs, fo as we were in all about four and thirty men : we made Maiter lones our Leader, for we thought it best herein to geatifie his kindnesse and forwardnesses. When we were fet forth, it proued rough weather and croffe windes, to as we were conftrained, tome in the Shallop, and others in the long Boate. to row to the neerelt shoare the winde would fuffer them to goe vinto, and then to wade out aboue the knees; the winde was fo ftrong as the Shallop could not keepe the water, but was torsed to harbour there that night, but we marched fix or feuen miles further, and appointed the Shallon to come to vias foone as they could. It blowed and did fnow all that day and night, and frote withall; some of our people that are dead tooke the originall of their death here. The next day about eleuen a clocke our Shallop came to vs, and we shipped our selues, and the winder being good, we failed to the River we formerly discovered, which we named Cold Harbour, to Cold Harbour which when we came we found it not Nauigable for Ships, yet we thought itimight be a good harbour for Boates, for it flowes there twelve footat high water. We landed our men betweene the two creekes, and marched some source or fine miles by the greater of them, and the Shallop

so followed vs: at length night grew on, and our men were tired with marching vp and downer the steepe Hils, and deepe Vallies, which lay halfe a foote thicke with Snow : Master lones wearied with marching, was defirous we should take vo our lodging, though some of vs would have marched further, fo we made there our Randenous for that night, under a few Pine trees, and as it fell out we got three Geefe, and fix Duckes to our Supper, which we eate with Soldiers flomacks, for we had caten little all that day. We marched to the place where we had the Corne formerly. which place we called Corne-hill; & digged & found the reft, of which we were very glad: we alfo digged in a place a little farther off, & found a bottle of Oyle, we went to another place which we had feen before & digged and found more Corn, viz. two or three Baskets full of Indian wheat. and a bag of Beans, with a good many of faire wheat-eares; whill flome of vswere digging up this, some others found another heape of Corn, which they digged vp also, so as we had in all about ten

So Bushels, which will ferue vs sufficiently for Seede, And sure it was Gods good providence that we found this corn, for elfe we knew not how we should have done, for we knew not how we should finde, or meete with any of the Indians, except it he to doe vs a mischiefe. Also we had never Frost and in all likelihood feene a graine of it, if we had not made our first lourney; for the ground was now Snow. courred with Snow, and to hard frofen, that we were faine with our Curtlaxes and thort Swords, to hew and carne the ground a foote deepe, and then wrest it vp with leavers, for we had forgot to bring other Tooles: whilit we were in this imploiment, foule weather being towards, M. lones was earnest to goe aboord, but fundry of vs defired to make further discouery, andto finde out the Indians habitations, so we sent home with him our weakest people, and some that were sicke, and 60 all the Corne, and eighteene of vs flaied still, and lodged there that night, & defired that the Shallop might returne to vs next day, and bring vs some Mattockes and Spades with them.

When wee had marched fine or fix miles into the Woods, and could find no fignes of any peo. ple, wee returned agains another way, and as we came into the plaine ground, wee found a place like a grave, but it was much bigger and longer then any wee had yet feen . It was also covered with boords, loas wee muled what it fliculd be, and resolved to dig it vp; where we found, first a

P. ! ~ade.

Sepulchre opined.

Mar, and under that a faire Bow , and there another Mat , and under that a Bound about there quarter, long, finely carried and painted, with three, Tynes, or broches on the top, like a Crowne alto betweene the Mars we found Bowles, Trayes, Dah s, and such like Trinkets; at longth ween came to a faire new Mit, and under that two Bundles, the one bigger, the other leffe, we opened the greater and found in it a great quantitie of fine and perfect Red Powder, and in it the bones and skull of a man. The skull had time yellow haire full on it, and to we of the flesh ynconfumed. there was bound up with a Knite, a Packneedle, and two or three old fron things. It was bound vp in a Saylers Canuas Calacke, and a payre of Cloth Breeches; the Red Powder was a kind as Embaulment, and yeelded a ffrong, but no offentiue fmell; It was as fine as any Flower. We one ned the leffe bundle likewife, and found of the fame Powder in it, and the bones and head of a lierle, hilde, about the legger, and other parts of it was Bound thring and Bracelets of fine white Beads: there was also by it a little Bow, about three quarters long, and some other odde knackes we brought fundry of the pretieft things away with vs, and coucted the Corps vp againe. After this, we digged in fundry like places, but found no more Corne, nor any things elfe but graves Whilest we were thus ranging and learching, two of the Saylers, which were newly come on the shoare, by chance espeed two houses, which had beene lately dwelt in , but the people were gone. They having their Peeces, and hearing no body; entred the houses, and tooke out some thing, and durit not flay but came again & told vs; to some seuen or eight of vs went with them. and tound how wee had gone within a flight thot of them before. The houses were made with long young Sapling Treesbended, and both ends flucke into the ground sthey were made round, an like voto an Arbour, and couered downe to the ground with thicke and well wrought Mats, and

Houfhold

the doore was not over a ward high, made of a Mat to open : the Chimney was a wide open hole in the top, for which they had a Mat to cover it close when they pleased, one might stand and goe vor gar, in them; in the minit of them were foure little Tru iches knockt into the ground, and (mall-rickes lat) ouer, on which they hung their Pots, and what they had to feeth : round about the fire they lay on Mats, which are their Beds. The Houles were double matted, for as they were matted without, to were they within, with newer and fairer Mats. In the Houles wee found Woodden Bowles, Trayes and Dishes, Earthen Pots, Hand-baskets made of Crab-shells, wrought together : alto an English Paylabr Bucket it wanted a Baile, but it had two Iron Eares : there was also Baskets or rundry fores, begger, and fome letter, finer, and fome courfer: fome were 30 curiously wrought with Blacke and White in prettie workes, and fundry other of their houshold fluff: : wee found alto two or three D. eres Heads, one whereof had been newly killed, for it was ftill fresh : there was also a company of Decres Feete, flucke vp in the Houses, Harts Hornes, and Eagles Clawes, and fundry such like things there was : also two or three Baskets full of parched Acornes, pieces of Fish, and a piece of a broyled Herring. We found also a little Silke Graffe, and a little Tobacco Seed, with some other Seeds which weeknew not : without was fundry bundles of Flags, and Sedge, Bull-rulhes, and other stuffe to make Mats; there was thrust into an hollow Tree , two er three pieces of Venison, but wee thought it fitter for the Dogges then for vs: fome of the best things wee tooke away with vs, and left the houses standing still as they were: Much disputation fellout about the place where wee should abide; and a Company was chosen 40 to goe out voon a third Dilcouery (whileft some were imployed in this Dilcouery', it pleased God that Miltris White was brought a bed of a Sonne, which was called Peregrine.)

Wednefilly the fixt of December we fet out, being very cold and hard weather, we were a long while after wee lanched from the Ship, before wee could get cleere of a Sandy Point, which lay within leffe then a furlong of the fame. In which time, two were very ficke, and Edward Tilley had like to have four ded with cold; the Gunner was also sicke vnto Death (but hope of trucking made nim to goe) and fo remained all that day, and the next night ; at length weegot cleare of the Sandy Point, and got vp our Sayles, and within an houre or two wee got under the weather shoare, and then had smoother water and better fayling, but it was very cold, for the water froze on our clothes, and made them many times like coats of iron : wee fayled fixe or feuen leagues by 50 the shoare, but saw neither River nor Creeke, at length wee met with a tongue of Land, being flat off from the shoare, with a Sandy point, wee bore up to gaine the Point, and found there a faire Income or Rode, of a Bay, being a league ouer at the narrowest, and some two or three in length, but wee made right ouer to the Land before vs, and left the discourse of this Income till the next day : as wee drew neere to the shoare, wee espied some ten or twelue Indians, very buse about a blacke thing, what it was wee could not tell, till afterwards they law vs, and ran to and fro, as if they had beene carrying something away, wee landed a league or two from them, and had much adoe to put a shoare any where, it lay so full of flat Sands : when wee came to shoare, we made vs a Baricado, and got fire Wood, and fet out our Sentinells, and betooke vs to our lodging, such as it was; wee faw the smoake of the fire which the Sauages made that night, about 60 foure or five miles from vs : in the morning wee divided our Company, some eight in the Shallop, and the rest on the snoare went to discouer this place, but we found it onely to be a Bay, without far, and five or either River or Creeke comming into it. This place the most were minded wee should call, the fix paces long. Grampus Bay, because wee found many of them there : we followed the tract of the Indians bate

Gram'us Bay. Th y tound Gramoules.

feet a good way on the Sands, at length we faw here they flrucke into the Woods by the fide of a Pond, as we went to view the place, one faid, he thought he faw an Indian-house among the Trees . fo went up to fee : and here we and the Shallop loft fight one of another till night . it being now about nine or ten a clocke ; fo we lite on a path , but faw no house, and followed a great way into the Woods, at length we found where Corne had been fet, but not that yeere: anon we found a great burying place, one part whereof was incompaffed with a large Palizado. like a Church-yard, with young spires foure or fine yards long, set as close one by another as they could two or three foot in the ground; within it was full of Graves, fome bigger and fome leffer tome were also paled about, and others had like an Indian-house made over them, but not matted :

to those Graves were more sumptious then those at Corne-bill, yet we digged none of them vo. only viewed them and went our way ; without the Palizado were Graues also, but not so costly. We went ranging up and downe till the Sunne began to draw low, and then we hafted our of the Woods, that we might come to our Shallop. By that time we had done, and our Shallop come to vs it was within night, and we fed upon fuch victualls as we had, and betooke vs to our rest after we had fet out our watch. About midnight we heard a great and hideous cry, and our Sentinell called, Arme, Arme. So we beffired out felues and thot off a couple of Muskets and noise ceased: we concluded, that it was a company of Wolues & Foxes, for one told vs he had heard fuch a noise in New-found-land, About fine a clocke in the morning we began to be thirring, voon a fulden wee heard a great & strange cry which we knew to be the same voices, though they varied their notess 20 one of the company being abroad came running in and cried, They are men, Indians. Indians : and withall, their Arrowes came flying amongst vs., our men ran out with all speed to recour their

Armes. The cry of our enemies was dreadfull, especially, when our men ran out to recouer their Armes, their note was after this manner, Woalb woach ha ha bach woach; our men were no fooner come to their Armes, but the enemy was readie to affault them.

There was a luftie man, and no whit leffe valiant, who was thought to be their Captain, flood behind a Tree within halfe a Musket shot of vs, and there let his Arrowes flie at vs; hee stood three shots off a Musket, at length one tooke as he faid full ayme at him, after which he gave an extraordinarie cry and away they went all, wee followed them about a quarter of a mile, but wee lest fixe to keepe our Shallop, for wee were carefull of our businesse. Wee tooks 30 vp eighteene of their Arrowes, which wee had fent to England by Mafter lones, fome where-

of were headed with brasse, others with Harts horne, and others with Eagles clawes: many more no doubt were that, for these wee found were almost covered with leaves : yet by the speciall providence of God, none of them either hit or hurt vs. On Munday we found a very good A good Har-Harbour for our Impping, we marched also into the Land, and found divers come Fields and little bour. running Brookes, a place verie good for scituation, so we returned to our Ship againe with good newes to the rest of our people, which did much comfort their hearts.

This Harbour is a Bay greater then Cape Cod, compassed with a goodly Land, and in the Bay two fine Ilands vninhabited, wherein are nothing but Woods, Okes, Pines, Wal-nut, Beech Salifras. Vines and other Trees which we know not. This Bay is a most hopefull place, innumerable atore of Fowle, and excellent good, and cannot but be of Fish in their feasons : Skote. Cod. Turbor and Herring we have tasted of, abundance of Musles the greatest and best that ever we saw; Crabe

and Lobsters, in their time infinite : It is in fashion like a Cikle or Fish-hooke. The eighteenth we went along the Coast in the Woods, some seuen or eight mile, but faw not an Indian, nor an Indian house, onely we found where formerly had beene some Inhabitants, and where they had planted their Corne: wee found not any Naugable River but foure or five [mall running Brookes of very fresh water, that all run into the Sea. The Land for the crust of the earth is a fpits depth, excellent blacke mould and fat in fome places; two or three great Okes, but not very thicke, Pines, Walnuts, Beech, Ash, Birch, Hafell, Holley, Asp, Sasifras, in abundance, and Vines enery where, Cherry-trees, Plum-trees, and many other which we know not; many kinds of Hearbs we found here in Winter, as Strawberry leaves innumerable, Sorrell, Yarow, Caruell, Brook-lime, Liver-wort, Water-creffes, great flore of Leeks and Onyons, and an excellent flrong kind of Flax and Hempe. Here is Sand, Gravell, and excellent Clay, no better in the World.excellent for Pots, and will wash like Sope, and great store of Stone, though somewhat soft, and the best water that euer we drunke, and the Brookes now begin to be full of Fish; that night many

being weary with marching, we went abourd againe. The nineteenth of December, after our landing and viewing of the places, so well as we could we came to a conclusion, by most voyces, to set on the Maine Land, on the first place, on an high ground, where there is a great deale of Land cleered, and hath beene planted with Corne three or foure yeeres agoe, and there is a very fweet Brook runs under the Hill fide, and many delicate 60 Springs of as good water as can be drunke, and where wee may harbour our Shallops and Boates exceeding well, and in this Brooke is much good Fish in their feafons. On the further side of the Riverallo much Corne ground cleered, in one Field is a great Hill, on which wee point to make a

plat-forme, and plant our Ordnance, which will command all round about from thence we may fee into the Bay, and far into the Sea, and we may fee thence Cape Cod.

Ppppppp

Sacurday

Saturday the three and twentieth, so many of vsas could went on shore, felled and carried time ber, to prouide themselves stuffe for building. Munday the fine and twentieth, wee went on thoare, fome to fell timber, tome to fawe, tome to riue, and fome to carry, fo no man refled

Munday the fine and twentieth, being Christmasse day, we began to drinke water aboord: but at night the Master caused ws to have some Beer, and so on boord we had divers times now & then fome Beere, but on shoare nane at all. Wee tooke notice how many Families they were, willing all fingle men that had no wives to joyne with some Family as they thought fit, that so wee might build fewer houses, which was done, and we reduced them to nineteene Familieito greamight bund fewer nodes, and plots, to every person halfe a Pole in breadth, and three in length, id and so Lots were cast where every man should lie, which was done, and staked out; we thought this proportion was large enough at the first, for Houses and Gardens to impale them round, confidering the weakenede of our people, many of them growing ill with colds, for our former Difsources in frost and stormes, and the wading at Cape Cod had brought much weaknesse amonest ws, which increased enery day more and more, and after was the cause of many of our deaths.

briday and Saturday wee fitted our felues for our labour, but our people on shoare were much troubled and discouraged with rayne and wet that day, being very stormy and cold: wee faw great smoakes of fite made by the Indians, about fix or seven miles from vs as wee

co iectured.

Thursday the fourth of Ianuarie, Captaine Miles Standift, with foure or fine more, went to 20 fee if they could meete with any of the Sauages in that place where the fires was made, they went to some of their houses but not lately inhabited, yet could they not meet with any; as they came home, they shot at an Eagle and killed her, which was excellent meat; It was hardly to be

Tue day the ninth of Ianury, was a reasonable faire day, and wee went to labour that day in the building of our Towne, in two rowes of houles for more fafetie : wee divided by lot the plot of ground whereon to build our Towner Atter the proportion formerly allotted, we agreed that enery man should build his owne house; thinking by that course men would make more hast then working in common: the common house, in which for the first we made our Rendeuous, being neere finished, wanting only covering, it being about twentie foor square, some should make mor- 20 ter, and some gather thatch, so that in soure daies halfe of it was thatched, frost and soule weather hindered vs much ; this time of the years feldome could we worke halfe the weeke.

On the twelfth day, John Goodman and Peter Browne at dinner time tooke their meat in their hands and would go walke and refresh themselves, to going a little off they find a Lake of water, and having a great Mashiffe bitch with them , and a Spannell ; by the water side they founds great D. ere, the Dogs chased him, and they followed fof ar as they lost themselves, and could not find the way backe, they wandred all that afternoone being wet, and at night did freeze and fnow, they were flenderly apparelled, and had no weapons but each one his Cicle, nor any victue alls, they ranged vp and downe and could finde none of the Sauages habitations. When it drew to night they were much perplexed, for they could find neither harbour nor meat, but in froft 40 and fnow, were forced to make the Earth their bed, and the Element their courring, and another thing did very much terrifie them; they heard as they thought two Lions roaring exceedingly for a long time together, and a third, that they thought was very neere them : fo not knowing what to doe, they refolued to climbe up into a Tree as the faieft refuge, though that would proue an intollerable cold lodging. They food at the Trees root, that when the Lions came they might take their opportunitie of climbing vp, the Bitch they were faine to hold by the necke, for free would have beene gone to the Lion; but it pleased God so to dispose, that the wild Beasts came not : fo they walked vp and downe vnder the Tree all night, it was an extreame cold night; fo soone as it was light they trauelled againe, passing by many Lakes, and Brookes, and Woods, and in one place where the Sauages had burnt the space of fine miles in length, which is a fine Cham- 50 pion Countrey, and even. In the afternoon it pleased God from an high Hill, they discovered the two lles in the Bay, and so that night got to the Plantation, being ready to faint with trauell and wint of victualls, and almost tamished with cold, Ishn Goodman was faine to have his shooes cut off his feet they were to swelled with cold, and it was a long while after ere hee was able to goe. The house was fired occasionally by a sparke that flew into the thatch, which instantly burnt it all up, but the roofe thood and little hurt; the most losse was Master Carners and William Bradfords, who then lay ficke in bed, and if they had not rifen with good fpeed, had been blowne vp with powder: but through Gods mercy they had no harme: the houle was as full of beds as they could lie one by another, and their Muskets charged, but bleffed be God there was no harme done

Munday the fifteenth day, it rained much all day, that they on ship-boord could not goe on 60 finare, nor they on shoare doe any labour but were all wet, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday, were Very faire Sun-shiny daies, as if it stad beene in April, and our people so many as were in health we ought chearefully. The ninteenth day weerefolied to make a Shed, to pur our common prouision in , of which some were already set on shoare, but at moone it rained that wee could not

worke. This day in the cuening, loha Goodman went abroad to vie his lame feet, that were pittyfully ill with the cold hee had got, having a little Spannell with him, a little way from the Plantation two great Wolues ran after the Dog, the Dog ran to him, and betwixt his legs for fuccour, Two great he had nothing in his hand, but tooke vp a sticke and threw at one of them and hit him, and they Wolues. prefently ran both away, but came againe; he got a Pulle boord in his hand, and they late both on their tailes, grinning at him a good while and went their way and left him.

Saturday the seventeenth day in the morning, we called a meeting for the establishing of Mili-

tary Orders amongst our telues, and we chose Miles Standift our Captaine, and gaue him authoritie of command in affavres. Saturday the third of March, the wind was South, the morning mystie, but towards noone

warme and faire weather : the Birds fang in the Woods most pleafantly ; at one of the clocke it thundred, which was the first we heard in that Countrey, it was strong and great claps, but short, Thunder. but after an houre it rayned very fadly till midnight, Wednesday the seventh of March, the wind was tull Fatt.cold.but faire.

Friday the fixteenth, there presented himselfe a Savage, which caused an Alarum, he very bold.

ly came all alone and along the houses straight to the Randeuous, where we intercepted him, not Conference fuffering him to goe in, as vndoubtedly he would out of his boldnesse hee falured vs in Enelish, with Sausges, and bad vs welcome, for he had learned fome broken English among it the Englishmen that came to fish at Monbiggon, and knew by name the most of the Captaines, Commanders, and Masters,

20 that vivally come; he was a manfree in speech, so farre as he could expresse his minde, and of a feemly carriage, we questioned him of many things, he was the first Sauage we could meet withall; hee faid he was not of those parts, but of Morasuggon, and one of the Sagamores or Lords thereof, had beene eight moneths in there parts, it lying hence a daies faile with a great wind, and fine dayes by Land: he discoursed of the whole Countrey, and of every Province, and of their Sagamores, and their number of men, and strength. The wind beginning to rife a little, wee cast a Horiemans Coat about him, for he was starke naked, only a leather about his wast, with a fringe about a span long, or little more; he had a Bow and two Arrowes, the one headed, and the other vnheaded; he was a tall straight man, the haire of his head blacke, long behind, only short before, none on his face at all; he a ked some Beere, but we gave him Strong-water and Bisket, and But-20 ter, and Cheefe, and Pudding, and a piece of a Mallerd; all which he liked wel, and had bin acquain-

ted with fuch among it the English; he told vs the place where we now live, is called, Paturet, and Paturet, that about foure yeeres agoe all the Inhabitants died of an extraordinary plague, and there is net People all dead ther man, wo man, not child remaining, as indeed we have round none, to as there is none to hinder of a plague, Our possession, or to lay claime voto it. All the afternoone we spent in communication with him, we would gladly have been rid of him at night, but he was not willing to goe this night, then we. thought to carry him on thip-boord, wher with hee was wel content and went into the Shallop. but the wind was high and water feant, that it could not returne backe. We lodged that night at Steuen Hopkins house, and watched him : the next day he went away back to the Mafaforts, from Mafaforts

whence he laid he came, who are our next bordering neighbours; they are fixtle strong, as he faith. 40 The Naustres are as neere South-east of them, and are a hundred strong, and those were they of Naustres. whom our people were encountered, as we before related. They are much incenfed and prouokell against the English, and about eight moneths agoe slew three Englishmen, and two more hardly escaped by flight to Monbiggon; they were Sir Ferdinando Gorge his men, as this Sauage told Vs, as he did likewife of the Huggery, that is, Fight, that our discouerers had with the Naufites, and of our Tooles they were taken out of the Woods, which we willed him should be brought againe, otherwise we would right our selves. These people are ill affected towards the English by reason of one Hunt, a Master of a Ship, who deceived the people, and got them under colour of trucking Hunts wickedwith them, twentie out of this very place where we inhabite, and teuen men from the Noufites, neile, and carried them away and fold them for Slaues, like a wretched man (for twentie pound a man)

that care not what mischiefe he doth for his profit. Saturday in the morning we dismitted the Sauage, and gaue him a Knife, a Bracelet, and a Ring; he promifed within a night or two to come again, & to bring with him some of the Massafarts our neighbours, with fuch Beauers skins as they had to trucke with vs. Saturday and Sunday realonable faire dayes. On this day came againe the Sauage, and brought with him fine other fall proper men, they had euery man a Deeres skin on him, and the principall of them had a wild Cats skin, or tuen like on the one arme : they had most of them long hosen up to their grownes, close made; and about their groynes to their wast another leather, they were altogether like the Irigatroutes; they are of complexion like our English Gipleys, no haire or very little on their faces, on their heads long haire to the shoulders, onely cut before ; some trusted up before with a feather,

60 broad wife,like a fan, another a Fox taile hanging out : thefe left (according to our charge given him before) their Bowes and Arrowes a quarter of a mile from our Towne, we gave them entertainment as we thought was fitting them. They did eate liberally of our English victuals, they made semblance vnto vs of friendship and amitie; they sang and danced after this manner like Stungs de-Anticks ; they brought with him in a thing like a Bow-case (which the principall of them had Cribed.

Ppppppp 2

about his wait) a little of their Corne pounded to powder, which put to a little water they eate : he had a little Tobacco in a bag, but none of them drunke but when he lifted, fome of them had their faces painted blacke, from the forehead to the chin, foure or five fingers broad; others after other fathions, as they liked : they brought three or foure Skins, but wee would not trucke with them all that day, but wished them to bring more, and we would trucke for all, which they promited within a night or two, and would leave these behind them, though wee were not wil-Ing they should, and they brought all our Tooles againe which were taken in the Woods, in one mens absence, to because of the day we dismitted them so some as we could. But Samoses our first acquaintance, either was ficke, or fained himselfe so, and would not goe with them, and staied with vs till Wednesday morning: Then we sent him to them, to know the reason they came not according to their words, and we gaue him an Hat, a paire of Stockings and Shooes, a Shire, and a

piece of Cloth to tye about his wait.

Thursday the 22. of March, was a very faire warme day. About noone we met againe about our publike businesse, but we had searce beene an houre together, but Samoset came againe, and Squante, the onely Natine of Patrixat, where wee now inhabite, who was one of the twentie Captives that by Hant were carried away, and had beene in England, and dwelt in Cornbill with Master Iohn Slanie a Merchant, and could speake a little English, with three others, and they brought them some few Skins to trucke, and some Red Herrings newly raken and dried, but not falted and fignified voto vs, that there Great Sagamore Maffafort was hard by, with Quadequina his brother, and all their men. They could not well expr. se in English what they would, but after an houre the King came to the top of an Hill over against vs, and had in his trayne sixtie men. that we could well behold them, and they vs: wee were not willing to fend our Gouernour to them , and they vawilling to come to vs, fo Squanto went againe vnto him, who brought word that wee should fend one to parley with him, which we did, which was Edward Winfloe, to know his mind, and to fignifie the mind and will of our Gouernor, which was to have trading and peace with him. Wee lent to the King a paire of Kniues, and a Copper Chaine, with a Iewell at it. To Quadequina we fent likewife a Knife and a lewell to hang in his care, and withall a Pot of ftrong water, a good quantitie of Bisket, and some Butter, which were all willingly accepted : our Meifenger made a speech vnto him, that King I A M E s faluted him with words of Loue and Peace, and did accept of him as his Friend and Alley, and that our Governour defired to fee him and to trocke with him, and to confirme a Peace with him, as his next neighbour; hee liked well of the speech, and heard it attentionly, though the Interpreters did not well expresse it; after hee had eaten and drunk himfelie, & given the rest to his company, he looked voon our M. flengers Sword and Armor which he had on, with intimation of his defire to buy it, but on the other fide, our Meffenger shewed his vnwillingnesse to part with it: In the end he left him in the custodie of Quadequina his brother, and came ouer the Brook and fome twenty men following him, leaving all their Bowes and Arrowes behind them. We kept fix or feuen as Hollages for our Mellenger; Cap. State dilh and M. William fon met the King at the Brook, with halfe a dezen Musketiers, they faluted him and he them, to one going ouer, the one on the one fide, and the other on the other, conducted him to an house then in building, where wee placed a greene Rug, and three or foure Culhi-40 ons. Then instantly came our Gouernour, with a Drum and Trumpet after him, and some few Musketiers. After falutations, our Gouernour kiffing his land, the King kiffed him, and fo they fate downe. The Gouernour called for some strong water, and drunke to him, and he drunke a ereat draught that made him sweate all the while after; hee called for a little fresh meate, which the King did eate willingly, and did give his followers. Then they treated of Peace, which was; First, That neither he nor any of his should injure or do hurt to any of our people. Secondly, & if mers of peace any of his did hurt to any of ours, he should fend the offender, that we might punish him. Thirdly, that if any of our tooles were taken away when our people were at work, he should cause them to bee restored, and if ours did any harme to any of his, we would doe the like to them. Fourthly, If

any did vniuftly war against him we would aide him; If any did war against vs, he should aide vs. 50 Fifthly, He should fend to his neighbor Confederates, to certifie them of this, that they might not wrong vs, but might be likewife comprised in the conditions of Peace. Sixthly, That when their men came to vs, they should leave their Bowes and Arrowes behind them, as wee should doe our Peeces when we came to them. Lastly, that doing thus King I A M E s would esteeme of him as his Friend and Ally : all which the King feemed to like well, and it was applauled of his fellowers, all the while he fate by the Gouernour hee trembled for feare. In his perion hee is a very lufty man, in his best yeeres, anable body, grave of countenance, and spare of speech : In his attyre little or nothing differing from the reit of his followers , onely in a great Claime of white bone Beades about his neck, & at it behind his neck hangs a little bag of Tobacco, which he drank and gaue vs to drinke; his face was painted with a fad Red like Murry, and ovied both head and face, that hee looked greafily : All his followers likewife, were in their faces in part or in whole painted, some Blacke, some Red, some Yellow, and some White, some with Croffes, and other Antick workes, some had Skins on them, and some naked, all strong stall men in appearance. The King had his bosome hanging in a string, a great long Knife; he maruelled much at our Tramper,

and some of his men would found it as well as they could, Samofet and Squanto, stayed all night with ve, and the King and all his men lay all night in the Wood, not about halfe an Englife mile from vs. and all their wives and women with them, they faid, that within eight or nine daies. they would come and fet Corne on the other fide of the Brooke, and dwell there all Summer. which is hard by vs. That night wee kept good watch, but there was no appearance of danger; the next morning divers of our people came over to vs. hoping to get fome victualls as wee imagined, some of them told vs the King would have some of vs come fee him ; Captaine Standift, and Ifage Alderton went venteroully, who were welcommed of him after their manner; he gane them three or foure ground Nuts, and fome Tobacco. Wee cannot yet conceine, but that hee is so willing to have peace with vs., for they have seene our people sometimes alone two or three in

the Woods at worke and Fowling, when as they offered them no harme, as they might eafily have done, and especially because hee hath a potent Aduersarie, the Narowbiganses, that are at warre with him, against whom hee thinkes wee may bee some strength to him, for our Peeces are terrible voto them. This morning they flated till ten or eleven of the clocke, and our Governour bid them fend the Kings Kettle, and filled it full of Peafe, which pleafed them well, and to they

Friday was a very faire day, Samofet and Squanto stil remained with ve. Squanto went at noon to fifth for Eeles, at night he came home with as many as hee could well lift in one hand, which our people were glad of, they were fat and fweete, hee trod them out with his feete, and so caught 20 them with his hands without any other Instrument, This day we preceded on with our common bufineffe, from which we had bin fo often hindred by the Sauages comming, and concluded both of Militarie Orders, and of fome Lawes and Orders as we thought behoovefull for our prefent estate, and condition, and likewise chuse our Governour for this yeere, which was Master Iobn Carver, a man well approved amongst vs.

T feemed good to the Company for many confiderations, to fend fome among ft them to Maf. A journey to fafort, the greatest Commander among it the Sauages, bordering about vs ; partly to know Pachanokit, the where to find them, if occasion ferued, as also to see their strength, discouer the Countrey, preuent abuses in their diforderly comming vnto vs, make satisfaction for some conceiued iniuries Massages to be done on our parts, and to continue the league of Peace and Friendship betweene them and

vs. For thefe, and the like ends, it pleased the Gouernour to make choice of Steven Hopkins, and Edward Winfloe to goe vnto him, and having a fit opportunitie, by reason of a Sauage, called Tifquantum (that could fpeake English) comming vnto vs : with all expedition provided a Horsemans Coat, of Red Cotton, and laced with a flight Lace for a Prefent, that both they and their

melfage might bee the more acceptable amongs them.

Wee fet forward the tenth of fune, about nine a clock in the morning, our guide refoluing that night to reft at Namafchet, a Towne vnder Maffafort, and conceiued by vs to be very neere, because the Inhabitants flocked so thicke voon every slight occasion amongst vs : but wee found it to bee some fitteene English miles. On the way wee found some ten or twelue men, women, and O children, which had pettered vs. till wee were wearie of them, perceiving that (as the manner of them all is) where victuall is easiliest to be got, there they live, especially in the Summer: by reaion whereof, our Bay affording many Lobiters , they refort every Spring Tide thither : and now returned with vs to Namafehet. Thither we came about three a clocke after noone, the Inhabitants entertaining vs with ioy, in the best manner they could, giving vs a kind of bread, called by them Maizium, and the spawne of Shads, which then they got in abundance, in so much as they gaue vs spoones to eate them, with these they boyled mustie Acornes, but of the Shads wee eate heartily. After this they defired one of our men to shoot at a Crow, complaining what damage they fultained in their Corne by them, who shooting some fourescore off and killing, they much admired it, as other shots on other occasions. After this Tifquantum told vs wee should 50 hardly in one day reach Pakanokick, mouing vs to go some eight miles further, where we should

find more store and better victuals then there : Being willing to hasten our journey we went, and came thither at Sunne fetting, where we found many of the Namafebeneks (they fo calling the men of Nama (chet) fishing voon a Ware which they had made on a Ruer which belonged to them, where they caught abundance of Baffe. Thefe welcommed vs alto, gaue vs of their fifth, and we them of our victualls, not doubting but we should have enough where ere we came. There we lodged in the open fields : for houses they had none, though they spent the most of the Summer there. The head of this River is reported to bee not farre from the place of our abode, vpon it are, and have beene many Townes, it being a good length. The ground is very good on both fides, it being for the most part cleered: Thousands of men have lived there, which died in a great plague Great plague.

60 not long fince : and pittie it was and is to fee, so many goodly fields, and so well feated, without men to dreffe and manure the fame. Vpon this River dwelleth Maffafoyt.

The next morning wee brake our fait, tooke our leave and departed, being then accompanied with fome fixe Sauages, bauing gone about fixe miles by the River fide, at a knowne shoale place. it being low water, they spake to vs to put off our breeches, for wee must wade thorow. Here

let me not forget the valour and courage of some of the Sauages, on the opposite side of the River ! for there were remaining aliue onely two men, both aged, especially the one being about threescore : Their two espying a company of men entring the River, ran very swiftly and low in the graffe to meet vs at the Banke, where with shrill voyces and great courage, standing charged voon vs with their Bowes, they demanded what wee were, supposing vs to be enemies and thinking to take aduratage on vs in the water : but feeing wee were friends, they welcommed vs with fuch food as they had, and we bestowed a small bracelet of Beads on them. Thus farre we are sure the Tile et bes and flowes.

Having here againe refreshed our selves we proceeded in our Journey, the weather being verie hot for travell, yet the Countrey fo well watered, that a man could scarce be drie, but hee should to have a Spring at hand to cloole his thirst, beside small Rivers in abundance : But the Sauages will not willingly drinke, but at a Spring head. When we came to any small Brooke, where no Bridge was . two of them defired to carry vs through of their owne accords, also fearing wee were or would bee wearie, offered to carrie our Peeces, also if wee would lay off any of our clothes, wee should have them carried; and as the one of them had found more speciall kindnesse from one of the Messengers, and the other Sauage from the other; so they shewed their thankfulnesse accordingly in affording viall helpe, and furtherance in the lourney.

As we patied along, we observed that there were few places by the River, but had beene inhabited, by reason whereof much ground was cleere, faue of weeds which grew higher then our heads. There is much good Timber, both Oake, Walnut-tree, Firre, Beech, and exceeding great

After we came to a Towne of Maffaforts, where we eat Oyfters and other Fish. From thence we went to Packanokick, but Maffafoys was not at home, there we staired, he being fent for : when newes was brought of his comming, our guide Tifquantum requested that at our meeting, wee would discharge our Peeces, but one of vs going about to charge his Peece, the women and children through feare to fee them take vp his Peece, ran away, and could not be pacified, till he laid it downe againe, who afterward were better informed by our Interpreter. Maffafort being come, wee discharged our Peeces, and saluted him, who after their manner kindly welcommed vs, and tooke vs into his house, and set vs downe by him, where having delivered our Message and Prefents, and having put the Coat on his backe, and the Chaine about his necke, hee was not a little 30 proud to behold himselfe, and his men also to see their King so brauely attired. For answere to our Meffage, he told vs we were welcome, and he would gladly continue that Peace and Friendthip which was betweens him and vs : and for his men they should no more petter vs as they had done : Allo, that hee would fend to Paomet, and would helpe vs with Corne for Seed, according to our request.

This being done, his men gathered neere vinto him, to whom hee turned himfelfe, and mades great Specch; they fometime interpoling, and as it were, confirming and applauding him in that he faid. The meaning whereof was (as faire as wee could learne) thus; Was not hee Maffafort Commander of the Countrey about them ! Was not fuch a Towne his and the people of it! and should they not bring their skins vnto vs. After this manner, he named at least thirrie places, and 40 their answere was as aforesaid to every one : so that as it was delightfull, it was tedious vnto vs. This being ended, he lighted Tobacco for vs, and fell to discoursing of England, and of the Kings Maiestie, maruelling that hee would live without a Wife. Also hee talked of the Frenchmen, bidding vs not to suffer them to come to Narohiganfet, for it was King I A M E s his Countrey, and healfo was King I A M E s his man. Late it grew, but victualls he offered none; for indeed he had not any, being he came so newly home. So we defired to goe to rest : hee laid vs on the bed with himfelfe and his wife, they at the one end and wee at the other, it being onely plankes laid a footfrom the ground, and a thinne Mat vpon them. Two more of his chiefe men for want of roome preded by and vpon vs ; fo that wee were worfe wearie of our lodging then The next day being Thursday, many of their Sachmis, or pettie Gouernours came to fee vs,

and many of their men alio. There they went to their manner of Games for Skins and Knices. There we challenged them to shoot with them for Skins : but they durit not : onely they defired to see one of vs shoot at a marke, who shooting with Haile-shot, they wondred to see the marke fo full of holes. About one a clocke, Maffafort brought two Fifthes that he had thot, they were like Breame, but three times fo bigge, and better mear. Thefe being boyledithere were at least fortie looked for share in them, the most eare of them: This meals onely we had in two nghts Hungtiefare. and a day, and had not one of vs bought a Partridge, we had taken our Journey failing: Very inportunate bee was to have vs flay with them longer : But wee defired to keepe the Sabbath at home, and feared wee fhould either bee light-headed for want of fleepe, for what with bad led- 60 ging, the Sauages barbarous linging (for they yie to fing themselves afterpe) Lice and Fleas within doores, and Muskeetoes without, wee could hardly fleepe all the time of our being there; we

much fearing that if we should flay any longer, we should not be able to recover home for want

of ftrength. So that on the Friday morning before Sun-riling, wee teoke our kaue and departed.

Maffafort being both grieued and athamed, that he could not better entertaine vs; and retaining Tilauantum to tend from place to place to procure trucke for vs ; and appointing another, called Tokam thamen in his place, whom we had tound faithfull before and after voon all occasions.

He elementh of June we fer forth toward Names, the weather being very faire: but ere we A Voyage had bin long at Sea, there arole a fforme of winde and raine, with much lightning and thun-made by ten of der, in so much that a spout arose not farre from vo: but God be praised, it dured not long, and our men othe we put in that night for Harbour at a place called Cummagnid, where we had some hope to finde Newlet, to seek the Boy. Two Sauages were in the Boat with vs, the one was Tifquantum our Interpreter, the on a Boy that had to other Tolamabamon, a speciall friend. It being night before we came in, wee Anchored in the loft himselfe middeft of the Bry, where we were dry at a low water. In the morning we efpied Sauages feek- in the Woods; middleft of the Biy, where we were dry at a low water. In the morning we explice Sauages teck with fuch acciing Lobsters, and fent our two Interpreters to speake with them, the channell being betweene dents as beight them; where they told them what we were, and for what we werecome, willing them not at win that all to feare vs, for we would not hurt them. Their answere was, that the Boy was well, but he Voyage, was at Naulet; yet fince wee were there they defired vs to come alhoure and eate with them: which as foone as our Boate floated we did : and went fixe afhoare, having foure pledges for them in the Boate. They brought ye to their Sachim or Gouernour, whom they call Iganough, a man not exceeding twenty fix yeares of age, but very personable, gentle courteous, and faire conditioned, indeede not like a Sauage, faue for his attyre : his entertainment was answerable to his parts. and his cheare plentifull and various.

One thing was very grieuous vnto vs at this place. There was an old Woman, whom wee judged to be no leffe then an hundred yeares old, which came to fee vs because shee neuer saw English, yet could not behold vs without breaking forth into great passion, weeping and crying exceffigely. We demanding the reason of it, they told vs, she had three Sonnes, who when Maffer Hunt was in these parts, went abourd his Ship to trade with him, and he carried them Captimes into Spaine (for Tifquantum at that time was carried away alfo) by which meanes thee was deprived of the comfort of her children in her old age. We told them were forry that any Englishman should give them that offence, that Huns was a bad man, and that all the English that heard of it condemned him for the same : but for vs, we would not offer them any fuch injury, 30 though it would gaine vs all the Skins in the Countrie. So we gaue her some small trifles, which fomewhat appealed her.

After dinner we tooke Boate for Nauset, Iyanough and two of his men accompanying vs. Ere we came to Nanfee, the day and tide were almost spent, in so much as we could not goe in with our Shallon; but the Sachm or Gouernour of Cammagnid went alhoare and his men with him, we also fent Tifquantum to tell Afrinet the Sachim of Naufet, wherefore we came. After Sunfet Aspinet came with a great traine, and brought the Boy with him, one bearing him through the water : he had not leffe then an hundred with him, the halfe whereof came to the Shallop fide ynarmed with him, the other flood aloofe with their Bowe and Arrowes. There he delinered vs the Boy, behang with Beades, and made peace with vs, wee bestowing a Knife on him, floored. ao and likewife on another that first entercained the Boy and brought him thither. So they depar-

thereof being abroad : But we fet forth with resolution to make the best haste home we could;

yet the winde being contrary, having fearce any fresh water left, and at least sixteene leagues

home, we put in againe for the shoare. There we met againe with Iyanough the Sachim of Cum-

maguid, and the most of his Towne, both men, women and children with him. Hee being still

willing to gratifie vs. tooke a runlet and led our men in the darke a great way for water but could

finde none good ; yet brought fuch as there was on his necke with them. In the meane time the

50 women loyned hand in hand, finging and dancing before the Shallop, the men also shewing all

ing it vponone of vs. By Gods providence we came fafely home that night,

Here we understood that the Narrobigan fets had spoyled some of Massa forts men, and taken him. This strucke some feare in vs, because the Colony was so weakely guarded, the strength

the kindenesse they could, Iranough himselfe taking a Bracelet from about his necke, and hang-CHAP. V.

Good newes from New England : Or, A Relation of things remarkeable in that Plantation; written by E. WINSLOVV and here abbreuiated.



He good Ship called the Fortune, which in the Moneth of November 1621. (blefin die God) arought vs. a new inpply of fine and thirty perions, was not long de-parted our Coalt, et the Green conduct of Manhaematic mint, was not long departed our Coalt, ere the Great people of Nanobigganfet, which are reported to e many thousands throng, began to breath forth many threats against vs, notwithitanding their defired and obtained peace with vs in the fore-going Summer. Infomuch as the common talke of our neighbour Indians on all fides was of the

Royall enter-

1852

Gimesi

preparation they made to come against vs, In reason, a man would thinke they should have now more cause to feare vs than before our supply came : but though none of them were present, vet understanding by others that they neither brought Armes nor other prouisions with them. but wholly relied on vs, it occasioned them to sleight and brave vs with so many threats as they did. At length came one of them to vs, who was fent by Conanacus their chiefe Sachim or King. accompanied with one Tokamahamon a friendly Indian. This Messenger inquired for Tisquantum our Interpreter, who not being at home feemed rather to be glad then forry, and leauing for him a bundle of new Arrowes lapped in a rattle Snakes skinne, defired to depart with

When Tilgnantum returned, and the Arrowes were deliuered, and the manner of the Mellen- IO gers carriage related, he fignified to the Gouernour, that to fend the rattle Snakes skinne in that manner, imported enmitie, and that it was no better then a challenge. Hereupon, after some deliberation, the Gouernour stuffed the skin with Powder and Shot, and fent it backe, returning no leffe defiance to Conanaciu, affuring him if he had Shipping now prefent thereby to fend his men to Nanohio ganfet (the place of his abode) they should not neede to come so farre by Land to vs: vet withall, shewing that they should never come vnwelcome or vnlooked for. This message was fent by an Indian, and delivered in fuch fort, as it was no small terrour to this Sauage King, infomuch as he would not once touch the Powder and Shot, or fuffer it to flay in his House or Countrie. Whereupon the Messenger refusing it, another tooke it vp, and hauing beene posted from place to place a long time, at length came whole backe againe.

In the meane time, knowing our owne weakenesse, notwithstanding our high words and loftie lookes towards them, and still lying open to all casualty, having as yet (vnder God) no o-Towneimpa- ther defence then our Armes, we thought it most needfull to impale our Towne, which with all expedition we accomplished in the moneth of February, and some few dayes, taking in the top of the Hill under which our Towne is feated, making foure Bulwarkes or ietties without; the ordinary circuit of the Pale, from whence we could defend the whole Towne: In three whereof are Gates, and the fourth in time to be. This being done, Captaine Standib divided our ftrength into foure foundrons or companies, appointing whom he thought most fit to have command of each; And at a generall Multer or Training, appointed each his place, gaue each his Company, giuing them charge vpon enery alarum to refort to their Leaders to their appointed place, and in 30 his absence, to be commanded and directed by them. That done according to his order, each drew his Company to his appointed place for defence, and there together discharged their Muskets. After which they brought their new Commanders to their houses, where againe they graced them with their thot, and so departed. Fearing also least the enemy at any time should take any adnantage by firing our houses, Captaine Standifb appointed a certaine Company, that when soes uer they saw or heard fire to be cryed in the Towne, should onely betake themselues to their Armes, and should inclose the house or place so indangered, and stand aloose on their guard, with their backes towards the fire, to preuent trechery, if any were in that kinde intended. If the fire were in any of the houles of this guard, they were then freed from it, but not otherwife, without

Long before this time we promifed the people of Massachuser in the beginning of March to come vnto them, and trade for their Furres, which being then come, we began to make preparation for that Voyage. In the meane time, an Indian, called Hobbamocke, who full lived in the Towne, told vs, that he feared the Maffachufets or Maffachufenks (for they so called the people of that place) were inyned in confederacie with the Nanobigganneucks, or people of Nanobiggarles, and that they therefore would take this opportunity to cut off Captaine Standals and his Company abroad: but how foeuer in the meane time, it was to be feared that the Nanobig ganeaks would affault the Towne at home, giving many reasons for his icalousie, as also that Tifquantum was in the confederacy, who we should finde would vie many periwasions to draw vs from our

Shallops to the Indians houses for their better aduantage.

Notwithstanding the forenamed Captaine with ten men, accompanied with Tifquantum and 19 lebbamocke, fet forwards foreign. Mental the state of the st Hobbamocke, fet forwards for the Maffachufers: but we had no fooner turned the point of the Harbour, called the Gwnets nofe (where being becalmed we let fall our grapneli, to fet things to rights, and prepare to row) but there came an Indian of Tifquantums family, running to certaine of our people that were from home with all eagernesse, having his face wounded, and the bloud still fresh on the same, calling to them to repaire home, oft looking behinde him, as if some others had him in chale, faying that at Namaschet (a Towne some fifteene miles from vs) there were many of the Nanobig ganfett, Maffaffowat our supposed friend; and Conbatant our feared enemy, with many others, with a resolution to take advantage on the present opportunity, to asfault the Towne in the Captaines absence, affirming that hee received the wound in his face for 60 speaking in our behalfe, and by sleight escaped, looking oft backward, as if he suspected them tobe at hand. This he affirmed againe to the Gouernour, whereupon he gaue command that three peece of Ordnance should be made ready and discharged, to the end that it wee were not out of hearing, we might returns thereat. Which we no fooner heard, but we repaired homeward with

CHAP.S. Carriage of Tifquantum. A conceit of the plaque buried.

1855

all convenient speede, arming our felues, and making all in readinesse to fight. When were entred the Harbour, we saw the Towne like wife on their guard, whither we haited with all convenie ent focede. The newes being made knowne vato vs, Hobbamock faid flatly that it was falle, affuring vs of Mallaffowats fatchtulnelle; howfoeuer he prefumed he would neuer haue vndertaken any such act without his prinitie, himselfe being a Pinfe, that is, one of his chiefe Champions or men of valour, it being the manner among it them not to vindertake fuch enterprises without the advice and furtherance of men of that ranke,

The Governour caused Hobbamock to send his wife with all privacie to Puckanokick, the chiefe place of M. faffowats refidence (pretending other occasions) there to informe her selfe, and so vs. to of the right state of things. When the came thither, and faw all things quiet, and that no such matter was or had beene intended, the told Maffafforat what had hapned at Plimoth (by them called Paturet) which when he vinderstood, he was much offended at the carriage of Tilguantum. returning many thankes to the Governour for his good thoughts of him; and affuring him, that according to their first Articles of peace, hee would fend word and gine warning when any tuch bufineffe was towards.

Thus by degrees we began to discouer Tifquantum, whose ends were onely to make himselfe great in the eyes of his Country-men, by meanes of his neereneffe and fauour with vs, not caring Tifquantams who fell, to he stood. In generall, his course was to perf wade them hee could lead us to peace or

warre at his pleafure, and would oft threaten the Indians, fending them word in a private man-30 ner, we were intended shortly to kill them, that thereby he might get gifts to himfelfe to worke their prace; infomuch as they had him in greater efteeme then many of their Sachims; yea, they themselves sought to him, who promited them peace in respect of vs; yea, and prorection also. to as they would refort to him. So that whereas divers were wont to relve on Maffall owat for protection, and refort to his abode, now they began to I-aue him, and feeke after Tifquantum. But when we understood his dealings, we certified all the Indians of our ignorance and innocincy therein, affuring them till they begun with vs, they flould have no caule to feare. And if any hereafter should raile any such reports, they should punish them as liers and seekers of their and

our diffurbance, which gave the Indians good fatistaction on all fides. After this we proceeded in our Voyage to the Massabusets, where we had good flore of Trade

30 and (bleffed be God) returned in tafety, though driven from before our Towne in great danger and extremity of weather. At our returne, we found Maffaffowat at the Plantation, who made his feeming inft Apologie for all former matters of accuration, being much offended and inraged against Tifquantum, whom the Gouernour pacified as much as he could for the present. But not long after his departure, he fent a Mellenger to the Gouernour, intreating him to gine way to the death of Tifgrantum, who had to much abuted him, But the Governour answered : Although he had deferred to dye both in respect of him and vs; yet for our fakes he defired he would spare him, and the rather because without him he knew not well how to understand himselse, or any other the Indians. With this answer the Mellenger returned, but came againe not long after, accompanied with divers others, demanding him from M. f. fowat their Matter, as being one of his o fubiects, whom by our first Articles of peace we could not retaine: yet because hee would not willingly doe it without the Gouernors approbation, offered him many Beuers skins for his confent thereto, faying, that according to their manner, their Sachim had fent his own - Kuife, and therewith, to cut off his head and hands, and bring them to him. To which the Governous anfwered; It was not the manner of the English to fell mens lives at a price, but when they had deferued infily to die, to give them their reward, and therefore refuted their Beauers as a gift ; but Sent for Tifquantum, who though he knew their intent, yet offered not to five, but came and accufed Hobbanocke as the author and worker of his ouerthrow; yeelding himfelfe to the Governour to be fent or not according as he thought meete. But at the inflant, when our Gonernour was ready to deliuer him into the hands of his Executioners, a Boate was feene at Sea to as le before our Towne, and fall behinde a head-land not farre off: whereupon, having hear? many so rumours of the French, and not knowing whether there were any combination between the Sauages and them, the Gouernour told the Indians, he would first know what Boate that was ere he would deliuer him into their cuffody. But being mad with rage, and impatient at delay, they

Here let me not omit one notable (though wicked) practife of this Tifaustiem, who to the end he might possesse his Countrimen with the greater feare of vs, and it consequently of himfelfe, told them we had the plague buried in our flore-house, which at our pleasure we could fend forth to what place or people we would, and deftroy them therewith, though wee stirred not from home. Being upon the forenamed brabbles fent for by the Governour to this place, where 60 Hobbamock was & some other of vs, the ground being broke in the middelt of the house whereunder certaine barrels of Powder were buried, though viknowne to him) Hobbanock asked him what it meant? To whom he readily answered; That was the place wherein the plague was place concili-

buried, whereof he formerly told him and others. After this Hobbamock asked one of our people

whether fuch a thing were, and whether we had fuch command of it! Who answered no; But

the God of the Englyb had it inftore, and could fend it at his pleasure to the defluction of his and our enemies.

This was, as I take it, about the end of May, 1 6 2 2. At which time our flore of victuals was wholly foe.t, having lued long before with a bare and short allowance: The reason was, that fumply of menbefore mentioned, which came to vnprouided, not landing to much as a barrell of Bread or Male for their whole Company, but contrariwile received from vs for their Ships flore bread of all are to their were the fetters forth thereof altogether to beblamed therein, but rather certaine among to our felues, who were too prodigall in their writing and reporting that plenty

we emoyed, But that I may returne,

e emeyed. Due that hay to be a Shallop that belonged to a fifting Ship, called the Sparon, fet forth 10 by Malter Thomas Weston, late Merchant and Citiz in of London, which brought fix or feuen paffengers at his charge, that should before have beene landed at our Plantation, who also broughe no more proution for the present then served the Boats gang for their returne to the Ship, which made ner Voyage at a place called Damarins Coue, nee e Munhiggen, some forty leagues from vs North-east-ward; about which place there fished about thirty fails of Ships, and whither my felte was imployed by our Gouernour, with orders to take vp fuch victuals as the Shippes could foare; where I found kinnie entertainment and good respect, with a willing nesse to supply our wants: Butbeing not able to spare that quantity I required, by reason of the necessitie of some among it themselves, whom they supplied before my comming, would not take any Bils for the fame, out did what they could freely, withing their flore had beene fuch as they might in greater 20 measure have expressed their owne love, and supplied our necessities, for which they forrowed, prouching one another to the vemost of their abilities: which although it were not much amongitto many people as were at the Plantation, yet through the provident and discrete care of the Gournours, recoursed and preferred frength till our cwine crop on the ground was ready.

Having dispatched there, I returned home with all speede convenient, where I found the state of the Colony much weaker then when I left it: for til now we were neuer without some Bread, the want where finuch abated the strength and flesh of some, and swelled others. But here it may be faid, if the Countrey abound with Fish and Fowle in such measure as is reported, how could men widergoe fach mealtire of hardneffe, except through their own negligence? I answer: E 30 cert will go into an Orchard unity of men widergoe fach mealtire of hardneffe, except through their own negligence? I answer: E 30 cert will go into an Orchard of the orchard will go into an Orchard wi in the Winter to gather Cherries : io he that lookes for Fowle there in the Summer, will be deceined in his expectation. The time they continue in plenty with vs, is from the beginning of October to the end of March : but these extremities befeil vs in May and Iune. I confesse, that as the Fowl: decreafe, fo Fish increase. And indeede their exceeding abundance was a great cause of increasing our wants. For though our Bay and Creekes were full of Bale, and other fish, vet for want of fit and firing Signers, and other netting, they for the most part brake thorow and carried all away before them. And though the Sea were full of Cod, yet we had neither tackling nor harteis for our S. allops. An : indeede had we not beene in a place where divers forts of Shelfish are that may be taken wit i the hand, we must have perished, vnlesse God had raised some vn- 40 knowne or extraordinary meanes for our prefernation.

In the time of thefe streits (indeede before my going to Munhiggen) the Indians began against to cast forth many intulting speeches, glorying in our weakenesse, and giving out how easie it would be ere long to cut vs eff. Now also Massaglomat seemed to frowne on vs, and neither came or fent to vs as formerly. These things occasioned further thoughts of Fortification, And whereas we have a Hill called the Mount, inclosed within our Pale, under which our Towne is feated, we refolted to erect a Fort thereon, from whence a few might eafily fecure the Town from any affault the Indians can make, whilest the reit might be imployed as occasion served. This worke was begun with great eagernesse, and with the approbation of all men, hoping that this being once finished, and a continuall guard there keps, it would otterly discourage the Sa- 40 uages from having any hopes or thoughts of riling against vs. And though it tooke the greatest part of our strength from dressing our Corne, yet (life being continued) wee hoped God would

raile forme menies in itead thereof for our further preservation.

In the end of Iune, or beginning of Iuly, came into our harbour two Ships of Mafter I'efforts planters which aforefaid, the one cilled the Charite, the other the Swan, having in them feme fitte or fixed men fent ouer at his owne charge to plant for him. There we received into our Towne, affording them whatfoeuer curtefie our meane condition could afford. There the Charitie, beingithe bigger Ship, left them, having many paffengers which the was to land in Virginia. In the meane time, the body of them retreshed themselves at Plimoth, whilest some most hit sought our a place for them. That little store of Corne we had, was exceedingly wasted by the vinust and cishonest 60 walking of these strangers, who though they would fometimes seeme to helpe vs in curlibour about our Corne, yet spared not day and night to steale the same, it being then eatable, and pleafant to tafte, though green and vnprofitable. And though they received much kindnelle, fee light both by it and vs. At length their Coafters returned, having found in their indgement a place fir

for plantation, within the Bay of the Maffachufets, at a place called by the Indians Wiebasufsaffet. To which place the body of them went with all convenient speede, leaving still with vs fuch as were ficke and lame, by the Gouernours permiffion, though on their parts vindelerued. whom our Surgeon by the helpe of God recourred gratis for them, and they fetched home, as occasion served. They had not beene long from vs, ere the Indians filled our eares with clamours aeainst them, for stealing their Corne, and other abuses conceived by them. At which we grieved the more, because the same men, in mine owne hearing, had beene earnest in perswading Captaine Standile, before their comming to folicite our Gouernour to fend fome of his men to plant by them, alledging many reasons how it might be commodious for vs. But weeknew no no meanes to redreffe those abutes, saue reproofe, and adusting them to better walking, as occafion ferued.

CHAP.S. Many clamours. Captaines supplied. Tempestuous season.

In the end of August came other two Ships into our harbour, the one (as I take it) was called the Disconerie, Captaine lones having the command thereof, the other was that Ship of Master Westons, called the Sparrow, which had now made her Voyage of Fish, and was conforted with

the other, being both bound for Virginia. Of Captaine lones we furnished our selues of fuch pro- Heloe from uifions as we most needed, and he could bett spare, who as he vied vs kindely, so made vs pay Master Lenet. largely for the things we had. And had not the Almighty, in his All-ordering Providence, dire-Red him to vs, it would have gone worse with vs, then ever it had beene, or after was: for, as we had now but small store of Corne for the yeere following : so for want of supply, we were worne 20 out of all manner of trucking-stuffe, not having any meanes left to helpe our felues by trade; but

through Gods good mercy towards vs, hee had wherewith, and did supply our wants on that

In the end of September, or beginning of October; Mafter Westons biggest Ship called the Chair ritie, returned for England, and left their Colony fufficiently victualled, as some of most credit among it them reported. The leffer, called the Swan, remained with his Colony for their further helpe. At which time they defired to loyne in partnership with vs to trade for Corne; to which our Gouernour and his Affiftant agreed upon fuch equall conditions, as were drawne and confirmed betweene them and vs. The chiefe places aimed at were to the Southward of Cape Cod; and the more because Tifquantum, whose peace before this time was wrought with Mas 30 fassowat, vadertooke to discouer vato ve that supposed, and fill hoped passage within

Both Colonies being thus agreed, our Gouernour in his owne person supplied the Captaines place, and in the month of November fet forth, having Tifquantum for his Interpreter and Fis lot, who affirmed he had twice pailed within the Sholes of Cape Cod, both with English and French. Neuertheleffe, they went fo farre with him, as the Matter of the Ship faw no hope of paffage : but being (as he thought) in danger, bare vp, and according to Tifquantums directions, made for an harbour not farre from them, at a place called Manamoyeke, which they found and founding it with their Shallop found the channell, though but narrow and srooked, where at at length they harboured the Ship. Here they perceived that the Tide let in and out with more to violence at some other place more Southerly, which they had not feene nor could discouer , by realon of the violence of the feason all the time of their abode there. Some judged the entrance thereof might be beyond the Shotes, but there is no certainty thereof as yet knowne. That night

the Governour accompanied with others, having Tifquantum for his Interpreter went alhoare : At first the Inhabitante plaied leaft in fight, because none of our people had euer beene there before; but understanding the ends of their comming, at length came to them, welcomming out Godernour according to their Sauage manner, refreshing them very well with store of Venison and other victuals which they brought them in great abundance, promiting to trade with them, with a feeming gladnesse of the occasion: yet their ioy was mixed with much lealousie, as appeared by their after practifes: for at first they were loath their dwellings should be knowne, but when they faw our Gouernours resolution to flay on the shoare all night, they brought him to so their houses, having first convaied all their stuffe to a remote place, not sarre from the same, which

one of our men walking forth occasionally, espied; whereupon, on the sudden, neither it nor they could be found, and so many times after vpon conceiued occasions, they would be all gone, bag and baggage. But being afterwards (by Tifquantums meanes) better perswaded, they left their lealousse and traded with them; where they got eight hogsheads of Corne and Beanes, though the people were but few. This gaue our Gouernour and the Company good encouragement. Tifquantum being still confident in the passage, and the Inhabitants affirming, they had feene Ships of good burthen paffe within the Sholes aforefail. But here, though they had determined to make a fecond affay, yet God had otherwaies disposed, who strucke Tefquantum with

60 ficknesse, in so much as he there died, which excelled their Southward trading, and the more, because the Masters sufficiency was much doubted, and the season very tempestuous, and not fit to goe woon discourry, having no guide to direct them.

From thence they departed, and the winde being faire for the Maffachusers, went thither, and the rather because the Sauages vpon our motion had planted much Corne for vs, which they

A Plaque. Note.

Honest Sa-

1858

promised not long before that time. When they came thicher, they found a great sickorffe to be among it the Indians, not volike the Plague, if not the seme. They remued their complaints to our Gouernour, against that other Plantation seated by them, for their injurious walking. But indeede the trade both for Furres and Come was overthrowne in that place, they giving as much for a quart of Corne, as we vied to doe for a Beauers skin; fo that little good could be there done. From thence they returned into the bottome of the Bay of Cape Cod, to a place called Nanfer. where the Sachim vied the Gouernour very kindely, and where they bought eight or ten hoefheads of Corne and Beanes. Also at a place called Mattachieft, where they had like kinde enterramment and Corne alio. During the time of their trade in these places, there were so great and violent flormes, as the Ship was much endangered, and our Shallop cast away, so that they to had now no meanes to carry the Corne aboard that they had bought, the Ship riding by their report well netre two leagues from the same, her owne Boate being small, and so leake (hauins no Carpencer with them) as they durft scarce fetch wood or water in her. Hereupon the Gouernour caused the Corne to be made in a round stacke, and bought Mats, and cut Sedge to couer it, and gaue charge to the Indians not to meddle with it, promiting him that dwelt next to it a reward, if he would keepe vermine also from it, which he vindertooke, and the Sachim promised to make good. In the meane time, according to the Gouernors request, the Sacrim fent men to feek the Shallop, which they found buried almost in sand at a high-water marke, having many things remaining in her, but vnieruiceable for the prefent : whereof the Gouernour gaue the Sachim foeciall charge that it should not be further broken. And having procured a Guide, it being no lese 20 then fiftie miles to our Plantation, fet forward, receiuing all respect that could be from the Indians in his journey, and came safely home, though weary and surbated, whether some three dayes after the Ship also came. The Corne being divided which they had got, Master Westons Company went to their owne Plantation, ic being further agreed, that they should returne with all convenient speede, and bring their Carpenter, that they might fetch the rest of the Corne, and

Que their Shallop. At their returne Captaine Standift being recoursed and in health, tooke another Shallop, and went with them to the Corne, which they found in fafety as they left.it; also they mended the other Shallop, and got all their Corne aboard the Ship. This was in lanuary, as I take it, it being very cold and flormy, infomuch as (the harbour being none of the best) they were conftrained to 30 cut both the Shallops from the Ships sterne, and so lost them both a second time. But the storme being ouer, and feeking out, they found them both, not having received any great hure. Whileft they were at Naufes, having occasion to lye on the shoare, laying their Shallop in a Creeke not faire from them, an Indian came into the same, and itole certaine Beads, Ciffers, and other trifies out of the same, which when the Captaine missed, he tooke certaine of his company with him, and went to the Sachim, telling him what had hapned, and requiring the fame againe, or the party that fiole them (who was knowne to certaine of the Indians) or elfe he would revenge it on them before his departure, and so tooke leave for that night being late, refusing whatfor wer kindneffe they offered. On the morrow, the Sachien came to their randenow, accompanied with many men, in a stately manner, who faluting the Captaine in this wife; He thrust out his tongue, 40 that one might fee the roote thereof, and therewith licked his hand from the wrift to the fingers end, withall bowing the knee, ftriuing to imitate the Englife gefture, being inftructed therein formerly by Tilquanium: his men did the like, but inforude and Sauage a manner, as our men could fearce forbeare to breake out in open laughter. After falutation, he delivered the Beads, and other things to the Captaine, faying, he had much beaten the party for doing it, causing the women to make Bread, and bring them, according to their delire, feeming to be very forty for the fact, but glad to be reconciled. So they departed, and came home in latery; where the Coune was

equally divided, as before.

After this, the Gouernour went to two other inland Townes, with another Company, and bought Corne likewise of them, the one is called Namaskes, the other Manomes. That from Na. 50 masket was brought home partly by Indian women; but a great fickneffe artling amongst them, our owne men were inforced to fetch home the reft. That at Manomer the Gouernour left in the Sachims custody: this Towne lieth from vs South well neere twenty miles, and stands upon a fresh River, which runneth into the Bay of Nanobigganset, and cannot be leffe then fixty miles from thence. It will beare a Boat of eight or ten tun to this place. Hither the Dutch, or French, or both vieto come, It is from hence to the Bay of Cape Cod about eight miles; out of which Bay it floweth into a Creeke fome fix miles almost direct towards the Towne. The heads of the Ruer, and this Creeke, are not farre diffant. This River yeeldeth thus high, Oysters, Muscles, Clams, and other Shel-fish, one in shape like a Beane, another like a Clam, both good meate, and great abundance at all times; besides it aboundeth with divers forts of treth fish in their seasons. 60 The Governous or Sachim of this place, was called Canacum, who had formerly, as well as many others (yea all with whom as yet we had to doe) acknowledged themselves the Subjects of our Sourraigne Lord the King. This Sachim vied the Gouernour very kindely, and it feemed was of good respect and authority among it the Indians. For whilest the Governour was there within

CHAP. 5. Tobacco and Beades. Abundance of Baffe. Colonie. night in bitter weater, came two men from Manamoiek, before spoken of, and hatting fet afide their Bowes and Quiuers, according to their manner, fat down by the fire, and tooke a pipe of Tobacco, not ving any words in that time, nor any other to them, but all remained filent, expecting when they would peake: At length they looked toward Canacum, and one of them made a thore speech, and delivered a prefent to him from his Sachim, which was a basket of Tobacco, and many Beades, which the other received thankfully. After which, he made a long speech to him, the contents hereof was related to vs by Hobbamock (Who then accompanied the Gouernour for his Guide) to be as followeth; It hapned that two of their men fell out as they were 'in game ffor they vie gaming as much as any where, and will play away all, even their skin from their Sauages great to backs, yea and for their wives skins alfo, though it may be they are many miles diffant from them. gamfters, as my telte have feene) and growing to great heat, the one killed the other. The actor of this tact was a Powah, one of speciali note among it them, and such an one as they could not well miffe, yet another people greater then themselnes threatned them with warre, if they would not put him to death. The partie offending was in hold, neither would their Saehim doe one way or other till their returne, refting spon him for a love and furtherance in fo weightie a matter. After this there was filence a fhorrtime; at length men gave their judgement what they thought beft. Amonest others, he asked Hobbamock what he thought! Who answered, he was but's ftranger to them, but thought it was better that one should die then many, fince he had deserved it, and the relt were innocent; whereupon he passed the sentence of death vpon him. Not long after (auing no great quantitie of Corne left) Captaine Standift went againe with a Shallon to Mattachieft, meeting also with the like extremitie of weather, both of winde. Snow. and Froft, intomuch as they were frozen in the harbour the first night they entred the lame.

Here they pretended their wonted love, and spared them a good quantitie of Corne to confirme the same: Strangers also came to this place, pretending onely to see him and his Companie, whom they never faw before that time, but intending to joyne with the reft to kill them, as after appeared. But being forced through extremitie to lodge fir their houses, which they much preffed, God possessed the heart of the Captaine with inft realousie, giving frait command, that as Infticalousie, one part of his Companie slept, the rest should wake, declaring some things to them which he vinderstood, whereof he could make no good construction. Some of the Indians spring a fit op-30 portunitie, stole some Beades also from him, which he no somer perceived, having not about tix men with him, drew them all from the Boat, and let them on their goard about the Sachims house, where the most of the people were, threatning to fall vpon them without further delay.

if they would not forthwith reftore them, fignifying to the Sachim especially, and so to them all. that as he would not offer the least iniurie, so he would not receive any at their hands, which should eleape without plinishment or due fatisfaction. Hereupon the Sachim bestirred him to finde out the partie, which when he had done, caused him to returne them agains to the Shallop, and came to the Captaine, defiring him to fearch whether they were not about the Boat. who fuspe Ring their knauerie, fent one, who found them lying openly voon the Boats cuady; yet to appeale his anger, they brought Corne afresh to trade, infomuch as he laded his Shallop, and so do departed. This accident fo daunted their courage, as they durft not attempt any thing against

him. So that through the good mercy and prouidence of God they returned in fafetie. At this Bafe Summer place the Indians get abundance of Baife both Summer and Winter, for it being now February and Win.cr. they abounded with them.

In the beginning of March, having refreshed himselfe, he tooke a Shallop, and went to Mansmet, to ferch home that which the Governour had formerly bought, hoping also to get more from them, but was deceived in his expectation, not finding that entertainment he found elfewhere, and the Gouernour had therereceived. The region whereof and of the trecherie intended in the place before spoken of, was not then knowne vnto vs. but afterwards : wherein may be observed the abundant mercies of God working with his providence for our good. Captaine Standifb being now farre from the Boat, and not about two or three of our men with 50 him, and as many with the Shallop, was not long at Canacum the Sachims licufe, but in came two of the Maffachuset men, the chiefe of them was called Waturamet, a notable infulting villaine, one who had formerly imbrued his hands in the bloud of English and French,

and had oft boafted of his owne valour, and derided their weaknesse, especially because (as he faid) they died crying, making fowre faces, more like children then men. This villaine tooke a dagger from about his necke (which hee had gotten of Miffer Westons people) and presented it to the Sachim, and after made a long speech in an audacious manner, framing on it in fuchtort, as the Captaine (though he be the best Linguist amongst vs) could not gather any thing from it. The end of it was afterward discouered to be as followeth : The Maf. 60 fachenfences formerly concluded to ruinate Master Westons Colonie, and thought thems-

felues, being about thirty or forty men ftrong, enough to execute the fame : yet they durit not attempt it, till fuch time as they had gathered more firength to themselves to make their partie good against vs at Plimoth, concluding, that if wee remained (though they had no other Arguments to vie again t vs) yet wee would never leade the death of

Mamasket.

2999999

our Countrimen vareuenged, and therefore their safetie could not be without the ouerthrow of both Plantations. To this end they had formerly folicited this Sachim, as also the other called lanoneb at Mattachieft, and many others to affit them, and now againe came to prosecute the same; and since there was so faire an opportunitie offered by the Captaines pre-Hence, they thought best to make fure him and his Company. After this message was deliuered, his entertainment much exceeded the Captaines, infomuch as hee scorned at their behaujour, and told them of it: after which, they would have perswaded him, because the weather was cold, to haue fent to the Boate for the rest of his Company, but he would not, defiring according to promife, that the Corne might be carried downe, and he would content the women for their labour, which they did. At the same time there was a lufty Indian of 10 Paomet or Cap: Cod then prefent, who had ever demeaned himselfe well towards vs, being in his generall carriage very affable, courteous, and louing, especially towards the Captaine. This Sauge was now entred into confederacie with the reft , yet to avoide sulpition , made many figures of his continued aff. ctions, and would needes beftow a Kettle of fune fix or feuen gallons on him, and would not accept of any thing in lieu thereof, faying, he was rich, and could afford to bettow fuch fauou son his friends whom he loued; also hee would freely helpe to carry some of the Corne, ffirming he had never done the like in his life before, and the winde being bad would needes lodge with him at their Randeuow, having indeede vndertaken to kill him before they parted, which done they intended to fall vpon the reft. The night proued exceeding cold, infomuch as the Captaine could not take any rest, but either walked or tur- an ned himtelfe to and froat the fire: This the other observed, and asked wherefore he cid not fleepe as at other times, who answered he knew not well, but had no defire at all to reft. So that he then mist hisopportunity. The winde seruing on the next day, they returned home, accompanied with the other Indian, who vied many arguments to perswade them to go to Paomes, where himself had much Corne, and many other, the most wherof he would procure for vs, seeming to forrow for our wants. Once the Captaine put forth with him, and was torced backe by contrary winde; which winde ferued for the Maffachufet, was fitted to goe thither. But on a fudden it altered againe.

Faire opportunitie. I rofesed friendsbip. Troubled Spirit. LIB.X.

During the time that the Captaine was at Manomer, newes came to Plimoth that Maffaffor wat was like to die, and that at the same time there was a Dutch Ship driven so high on the shoare by firefie of weather, right before his dwelling, that till the tides encreafed, the could not begoe off. Now it being a commendable manner of the *Indians*, when any (effecially of note) are dangeroully ficke, for all that profelle friendship to them, to visit them in their extremity, either in their persons, or else to send some acceptable persons to them, therefore it was thought meete (being a good and warrantable action) that as we had ever professed friendship, so we should now maintaine the same, by observing this their laudable custome; and the rather, because we defined to have some conference with the Duich, not knowing when we should have so fit an opportunity. To that end my felfe having formerly beene there, and vinderstanding in some measure the Dutch tongue, the Gouernour againe laid this feruice vpon my felfe, and fitted me with fome cordials to administer to him, having one Matter John Hamden a Gentleman of London (who then wintered with vs, and defired much to see the Country) for my Consort, and Hobbanocke for our 40 guide, So we fet forward, and lodged the first night at Namacket, where we had friendly enter-

Reports of Maffaffewats

Dutch Ship.

Visitations of

the ficke.

The next day about one of the clock, we came to a ferrie in Conbatants Country, where vpon discharge of my Peece, divers ludious came to vs from a house not far off. There they told vs, that Massafassonat was dead, and that day buried, and that the Duteb would be gone before we could get thicher, having houe off their Ship already. This newes flrucke vs blanke; but especially Hobbamocke, who defired we might returne with all speede. I told him I would first thinke of it, confidering now that he being dead, Combatant was the most like to succeede him, and that we were not about three miles from Massapsoft his dwelling place, although he were but a hollow-hearted friend towards vs, I thought no time fo fit as this, to enter into more friendly tearmes with 70 him, and the rest of the Sachines thereabout, hoping (through the bleffing of God) it would be a meanes in that vnietled state, to fettle their affections towards vs, and though it were somewhat dangerous, in respect of our personall safety, because my selfe and Hobbamocke had beene impleyed vpon a service against him, which he might now fitly revenge; yet esteeming it the best means, leaving the event to God in his mercy, I resolved to put it in practise, if Master Hamden and Hobbamock durft attempt it with me, whom I found willing to that or any other course might tend to the generall good. So we went towards Mattapunft. In the way, Hobbamocke manifelling a troubled spirit, brake forth into these speeches, Neen womas Sagimus, neen womas Sagimus, Se. My louing Sachim, my louing Sachim. Many haue I knowne, but neuer any like thee: And turning him to me faid; Whileft I hued, I should neuer see his like amongst the Indians, saying, he 60 was no lyer, he was not bloudy and cruell like other Indians; In anger and passion he was some reclaimed, case to be reconciled towards such as had offended him, ruled by reason in such meafure, as he would not fcorne the aduice of meane men, and that he governed his men better with few stroakes then others did with many; truely louing where he loued; yea, he stared we had not

a faithfull triend left among the Indians, the wing how he oft-times reftrained their malice, &c. continuing a long speech with such signes of lamentation and vafeined forrow, as it would have made the hardeit heart relent. At length we came to Mattapuyst, and went to the Sachimo Comaco (for so they called the Sa-

chims place, though they call an ordinary house Witeo) but Combatant the Sachim was not an home, but at Puckanokick, which was fome five or fix miles off; the Squa fachim (for fo they call Sachims wife) gaue vs friendly entertainment. Here we enquired againe concerning Maffaffowat, they thought him dead, but knew no certainty; wherupon I hired one to goe with all expedition to Puckanokick, that we might know the certainty thereof, and withall to acquaint Combatant to with our there being. About halfe an houre before Sun-fetting, the meffenger returned, and told ws that he was not yet dead, though there was no hope we should finde him living. Vpon this we were much reuiued, and fet forward with all speede, though it was late within night ere we got thither. About two of the clock that afternoone the Dutchmen departed, fo that in that refp. & our journie was frustrate. When we came thither, we found the house to full of men, as we could fearce get in, though they vied their beit diligence to make way for vs. There were they in the comforters, middelt of their charmes for him, making fuch a hellish noite, as it diftempered vs that were well, and therefore volike to ease him that was ficke. About him were fix or eight women, who chated his armes, legs, and thighes, to keep heat in him : when they had made an end of their charming,

one told him that his friends the English were come to fee him (hauing understanding left, but his 10 fight was wholly gone) he asked wno was come, they told him Winfing (for they cannot pronounce the letter l, but ordinarly n in the place thereof) he defired to speake with me : when I came to him, & they told him of it, he put forth his hand to me, which I took; then he faid twice, though very inwardly , keen Winfnow, which is to fay, art thouwinflow? I answered, abbe, that is, yes; then he doubled thele words, Massa neen wont anes namen Winfnew, that is to fay, O Winflow I hall neuer fee thee agam, Then I called Hobbamock, and defired him to tell Maffaffowat, that the Gouernor hearing of his ticknes, was forry for the fame, & though by reason of many businesses he could not come himfelfe, yet he fent me with fuch things for him as he thought most likely, to doe him good in this extremity, and whereof if he pleased to take, I would presently give him; which he defired, and having a confection of many comtortable Conferues, on the point of my Knife I gaue 30 him fome, which I could flarce get thorow his teeth; when it was diffolued in his mouth, he fwallowed the juice of it, whereat those that were about him much reloyced, saying, he had not swallowed any thing in two daies before. Then I defired to fee his mouth, which was exceedingly furred, and his tongue swelled in such manner, as it was not possible for him to eat such meat as they had, his passage being stopt vp. Then I washed his mouth, and scraped his tongue, & got abundance of corruption out of the fame. After which, I gave him more of the confection, which he fwallowed with more readines; then he defired to drinke, I dissolved some of it in water, and gane him thereof; within halfe an houre this wrought a great alteration in him in the eies of all that beheld

himspresently after hissight began to come to him. In the meane time I inquired how he slept, and when he went to ftoole. They taid he flept not in two daies before, & had not had a ftoole in fine; 40 then I gaue him more, and told him of a mishap we had by the way in breaking a bottle of drink, which the Gouernour also sent him, saying, if he would fend any of his men to Pataxet, I would fend for more of the same, also for Chickens to make him broth, & for other things which I knew were good for him, and would flay the returne of the Messenger, if he desired. This he tooke maruellous kindly, and appointed some, who were ready to go by two of the clock in the morning, against which time I made ready a Letter, declaring therein our good successe, the state of his body &c.desiring to fend such things as I fent for, and such physicke as the Surgion durst administer to him, He requested me that the day following, I would take my Peece, and kill him some Fowle, and make him some English pottage, such as he had eaten at Plimoth, which I promised : after his Romacke comming to him, I must needes make him some without Fowle, before I went abroad, which fonewhat troubled me; but being I must doe formewhat, I caused a woman to bruise some Corne, and take the flower from it, and fet ouer the grut or broken Corne in a Pipkin (for they haue earthen Pots of all fizes,) When the day broke, we went out (it being now March) to feeke hearbes, but could not finde any but Strawberrie leaues, of which I gathered a handful & put into the same, and because I had nothing to relish it, I went forth againe, and pulled vp a Saxafras root, and fliced a peece thereof, and boiled it till it had a good relish, and then tooke it out againe. The broth being boiled, I ftrained it thorow my handkerchiffe, and gaue him at least a pinte, which he dranke, and liked it very well. After this, his light mended more and more, also he had three moderate stooles, and tooke some rest: Intomuch, as we with admiration blessed God for giving his bletting to fuch raw and ignorant meanes, making no doubt of his recourry, himfelfe and all of 60 them acknowledging vs the instruments of his preservation. That morning he caused me to spend

in going from one to another amongst those that were sicke in the Town, requesting me to wash their mouthes also, and give to each of them some of the same I gave him, saying, they were good folke. This paines I tooke with willing reffe, though it were much offenfine to me, not being accultomed with fuch poisonous fauours.

The Messers were now returned, but finding his stomacke come to him, he would not have the Chickens killed, but kept them for breede. Neither durit we give him any physicke which was then fent, because his body was so much altered tince our instructions, neither faw we any neede, not doubting now of his recourry, if he were carefull. Many whilest we were there came to lee him, some by their report from a place not lesse then an hundred miles. Vpon this his recourty, he brake torth into thele speeches; Now I fee the English are my friends and loue me, and whileft thise I will never forget this kindenesse they have showed me. Whilest wee were there. our entertainment exceeded all other strangers. At our comming away, he called Hobbamocke to him, and privately (none hearing faue two or three other of his Pueefes, who are of his Counfell) revealed the plot of the Maffachenfencks before Ipoken of, against Mafter Westons Colony. 10 and to against vs, taying that the people of Naufet, Paomet, Succouet Mattachieft, Manomet Ago. warmam, and the lie of Capamack, were joyned with them; himselfe also in his fickenede was earnestly follicited, but he would neither joyne therein, nor give way to any of his. Therefore as we respected the lines of our Countrimen, and our owne after-lafety, he admied vs to kill the men of Mallachneet, who were the authors of this intended mischiefe. And whereas we were wont to fay, we would not frike a froke till they first began; if faid he vpon this intelligence. they make that aniwer, tell them, when their Countrimen at Wichagufouffet are killed, they being not able to defend themselves, that then it will be too late to recover their lives, nay through the He revealeth the tree try of multitude of adversaries they shall with great difficultie preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficultie preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficultie preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficultie preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficulties preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficulties preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficulties preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficulties preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficulties preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficulties preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficulties preserve the shall with great difficulties preserve the shall with great difficulties preserve the shall be a shall the tree errory of the Mallachu. felled without delay to take a way the principals, and then the plot would cease. With this hee in charged him thorowly to acquaint me by the way, that I might informe the Gouernour thereof at my first comming home. Being fitted for our returne, we tooke our leaue of him, who returned many thankes to our Gouernour, and also to our selves for our labour and loue : the like did all that were about him. So we departed.

That night, thorow the earnest request of Combatant, who till now remained at Samaams or Puckanutick, we lodged with him at Mattapunft. By the way I had much conference with him. to likewife at his house, he being a notable politician, yet full of merry iests and squibs, and neper better pleafed then when the like are returned againe vpon him. Amongst other things he asked me. It in case he were thus dangerously ficke, as Maffaffor at had beene, and should fend word thereof to Painxet for Maskiet, that is, Phylicke, whether then Master Gouernour would fend it? and if he would, whether I would come therewith to him? To both which I answered yea; whereat he gaue me many joyfull thankes. After that, being at his house, he demanded further, how we durst being but two come so farre into the Country ! I answered, where was true love there was no feare, and my heart was so vpright towards them, that for mine owne part I was feareleffe to come among ft them. But, faid he, if your love be such, and it bring forth such fruits, how commeth it to paffe, that when we come to Patuzet, you fland vpon your guard, with the mouthes of your Peeces presented towards vs ? Whereupon I answered, it was the most honorable and respective entertainment we could give them; it being an order among it vs so to receive out best respected friends : and as it was vied on the Land, to the Ships observed it also at Sea, which Hobbamock knew, and had feene observed. But shaking the head, heanswered, that he 40 liked not fuch falutations.

Further, observing vs to craue a bleffing on our meate before we did eate, and after to give thankes for the same, he asked vs what was the meaning of that ordinary custome? Hercupon I tooke occasion to tell them of Gods workes of Creation, and Preservation, of the Lawes and Ordinances, especially of the ten Commandements, all which they hearkned vnto with great attention, and liked well of; onely the feuenth Commandement they excepted against, thinking there were many inconveniences in it, that a man should be tied to one woman: about which we reasoned a good time. Also I told them, that what soener good things we had, we received from God, as the Author and giver thereof, and therefore crawed his bleifing vpon that we had, and were about to eate, that it might nourish and strengthen our bodies, and having eaten sufficie 50 ent, being fatisfied therewith, we againe returned thankes to the same our God for that our refreshing, &c. This all of them concluded to be very well, and faid, they believed almost all tive fame things, and that the fame power that we called God, they called Kietstan. Much profitable conference was occasioned hereby, which would be too tedious to relate, yet was no leile delightfull to them, then comfortable to vs. Here we remained onely that night, but neuer had better entertainment amongst any of them.

The day following, in our journey, Hobbamocke told me of the private conference he had with Maff afformat, and how he charged him perfectly to acquaint me there with (as I shewed before) which having done, he vied many arguments himfelfe to moue vs thereunto: That night we lodged at Namasket, and the day following about the mid-way betweene it and home, we met 60 two Indians, who told vs that Captaine Standift was that day gone to the Majachnfets :but contrary windes againe draue him backe, fo that we found him at home; where the Indian of Paomet still was, being very importunate that the Captaine should take the first opportunitie of a faire winde to goe with him, but their fecret and villanous purpofes being through Gods mercy

now made knowne, the Gouernour caused Captaine Standist to send him away without any diffafte or manifestation of anger, that we might the better effect and bring to passe that which should be thought most necessary.

CHAP. 5. Undirect meanes. Secret Plot. Grienous Relation.

Before this journey we heard many complaints both by the Indian; and fome others of best defert amongst Master Wester : Colony , how exceedingly their Company abased themselues by vndirect meanes, to get victuals from the Indians, who dwelt not farre from them, fetching them wood & water, &c. and all for a meales meate, whereas in the meane time, they might with diligence haue gotten enough to haue ferued them three or foure times. Other by night brake the earth, and robbed the Indians store, for which they had beene publiquely stocked and whipt, no and yet was there small amendment. This was about the end of February, at which time they had front all their Bread and Corne, not leaving any for Seede, neither would the Indians lend or fell them any more voon any tearmes. Hereupon they had thought to take it by violence, and to that (piked vp enery entrance into their Towne (being well impaled) faue one, with a full refolution to proceede. But some more honestly minded, aduited lobn Sanders their Ouer-feer first to write to Plimeth, and if the Gouernor aduifed him thereunto, he might the better doe it. They fent, and our Gouernour writ divers reasons of dislike. With these Letters wee dispatched the Mellenger ; Vpon the receipt whereof they altered their determination, resoluting to shift as they could, till the returne of Iohn Sanders from Manhiggen, who first comming to Plimoth, notwithstanding our owne necessities, the Gouernour spared him fome Corne to carrie them to 30 Munbiggen. But not having sufficient for the Ships store, he tooke a Shallop, and leaving others with instructions to over-fee things till his returne, fee forward about the end or February, fo that he knew not of this confipracie of the Indians before his going, neither was it knowne to any of vs till our returne from Samaams or Packanakick; at which time also another Sachim called Wassapinewat, brother to Obratiest the Sachim of the Massachusete, who had formerly finarted for partaking with Combatant, and fearing the like againe, to purge himlelfe, reuealed the fame thing.

The three and twentieth of March being now come, which is a yearely Court day, the Gouernour having a double restimony, and many circumstances agreeing with the truth thereof, not being to vndertake warre without the confent of the body of the Company; made knowne the 30 Same in publique Court. We came to this conclusion, That Captaine Standish should take so many men as he thought sufficient to make his party good against all the Indians in the Maffachases Bay; & because (as all men know that have had to doe in that kinde) it is impossible to deale with them youn open defiance, but to take them in such traps as they lay for others; therfore he should pretend trade as at other times: but first goe to the English, & acquaint them with the plot, & the end of his owne comming, that comparing it with their carriages towards them, he might better judge of the certainty of it, and more fitly take opportunity to revenge the fame: but should forbeare if it were possible till such time as he could make sure Witumamat, that bloudy & bold villain before spoken of, whose head he had order to bring with him, that hee might be a warning and terrour to all that disposicion. Vpon this, Captaine Standifb made choice of eight men , and 40 would not take more because he would preuent lealousie, knowing their guilty consciences would foone be prouoked thereunto : but on the next day before he could goe, came one of Master Weflons Company by land vnto vs, with his packe at his backe, who made a pittifull narration of their lamentable and weake estate, and of the Indians carriages, whose boldnesse increased abundantly, infomuch as the victuals they got, they would take it out of their Pots and eate before lence. their faces, yea if in any thing they gaine-faid them, they were ready to hold a Knife at their breafts; that to give them content, fince Iohn Sanders went to Munhiggen, they had hanged one of them that Role their Corne, and yet they regarded it not : that another of their Company was turned Sauage, that their people had most forsaken the Towne, and made their randeuous where they got their victuals, because they would not take paines to bring it home; that they had fold their cloathes for Corne, and were ready to starue both with cold and hunger also, because they 50 could not indure to get victuals by reason of their nakednesse: and that they were dispersed into three Companies, Carce having any Powder and Shot left. As this Relation was grieuous to vs, fo it gaue vs good encouragement to proceede in our intendments, for which Captaine Standib was now fitted, and the winde comming faire, the next day fet forth for the

The Indians at the Massachusets missed this man, and suspecting his comming to vs, as wee conceine, fent one after him, and gaue out there that he would never come to Palaxet, but that fome Wolues or Beares would ease him : but we know not by our owne experience, and the report of others, that though they finde a man fleeping, yet fo foone as there is life differned, they 60 feare and thun him. This Indian miffed him but very little, and miffing him paffed by the towne and went to Manomet, whom we hoped to take at his returne, as afterward we did. Now was

our Fort made fit for service and some Ordnance mounted; and though it may seeme long worke it being ten moneths fince it begun, yet we must note, that where so great a worke is begun with fuch small meanes, a little time cannot bring to perfection : beside those workes which tend to 09999993

Their name ot God.

CHAP. S.

the preferration of man, the enemy of mankinde will hinder what in him lieth, sometimes blinin gement, and cauting reasonable men to reason against their own fafety. The Indian Life mentioned in his returne from Monomet, came through the Towne, pretending still friendship and in love to fee vs. but as formerly others, to his end was to fee whether wee continued full in health and strength, or fell into weakenesse like their neighbours, which they hoped and looked for (though God in mercy prouised better for vs) and hee knew would be glad tydings to his Countrie men. But here the Gouernour flail him, and fending for him to the Fort, there gade the Guard charge of him as their prisoner, where he told him hee must be contented to remaine till the return of Captain Standoft from the Maffachufets, to he was locked in a chaine to a staple in the Court of guard, and there kept. Thus was our Fort hanfelled, this being the first day as I take it. To that ever any watch was there kept.

The Captaine being now come to the Maffachafets, went fift to the Ship , butfound neither man or fo much as a Dogge therein: vpon the discharge of a Musket the Master and some others of the Plantation shewed themselves, who were on the shore gathering ground-nuts, and getting other foode. After falutation, Captaine Standifb asked them how they durft fo leave the Ship, and line in fuch fecurity, who answered like men senslesse of their owne misery, they feared not the Indians but hue I and furfered them to lodge with them, not having Sword or Gunne, or needing the same. To which the Captaine answered, if there were no cause he was the gladder, but woon further inquiry, understanding that those in whom John Sanders had reposed most speciall confidence and lett in his flead to gouerne the rest, were at the Plantation : thither he went, and 20 to be briefe, made knowne the Indians purpose, and the end of his owne comming, as also (which formerly I omitted) that if afterward they durit not there flay, it was the intendment of the Gouernours and people of Plimouth there to receive them till they could be better provided: but if they conceined of any other course that might be more likely for their good, that himselfe should further them therein to the vttermoit of his power. These men comparing other circumstances with that they now heard, aniwered, they could expect no better, and it was Gods mercy that they were not killed before his comming, defiring therefore that he would neglect no opportunity to proceede : Hereupon he aduised them to secrecy, yet withall to send special command to one third of their Company that were farthest off to come home, and there enjoyee them on paine of death to keepe the Towne, himfelfe allowing them a pint of Indian Corne to a man for a day (though that flore he had was spared out of our Seede.) The weather prouing very wet and

flormy it was the longer before he could doe any thing. In the meane time an Indian came to him and brought some Furres, but rather to gather what he could from the Captaines, then comming then for trade; and though the Captaine carried things as smoothly as possibly he could, yet at his returne he reported he saw by his eyes that he was angry in his heart, and therefore began to suspect themselves discovered. This caused one Peckfuot who was a Pinefe, being a man of a notable spirit to come to Hobbamacke who was then with them, and told him hee vinderstood that the Captaine was come to kill himselfe and the rest of the Sauages there; tell him, said he, we know it, but feare him not, neither will we shun him ; but let him begin when he dare, he shall not take vs at vnawares : many times af- 40 ter, divers of them feuerally, or few together, came to the Plantation to him, where they would whet and sharpen the point of their Kniues before his face, and vie many other infulting gestures and speeches. Amongst the rest, Witamanas bragged of the excellency of his Knife, on the end of the handle there was pictured a womans face, but faid hee, I have another at home wherewith I have killed both French and English, and that hath a mans face on it, and by and by thele two must marry : Further he said of that Knife he there had ; Hinnaim namen, hinnaim michen, mattacuts: that is to lay, By and by it should see, and by and by it should eaten but not speake. Also Peck fuor being a man of greater stature then the Captaine, told him, though he were a great Captaine, yet he was but a little man : and faid he, though I be no Sachim, yet I am a man of great ftrength and courage. These things the Captaine observed, yet bare with patience for the pre- 19 fent. On the next day, feeing he could not get many of them together at once, and this Peckfuot and Winmamat both together, with another man, and a youth of some eighteene yeares of age, which was brother to Witumamat, and villaine-like trode in his steps, daily putting many trickes upon the weaker fort of men, and having about as many of his owne Company in a roome wich them, gave the word to his men, and the doore being fall thut, began himfelte with Perke Sauages flin. fuot, and fnatching his owne Knife from his necke, though with much ftrugling, killed him therewith, the point whereof he had made as tharpe as a needle, and ground the backe also to an edge: Withmannar and the other man, the rest killed, and tooke the youth, whom the Captaine cauled to be hanged; but it is incredible how many wounds thefe two Pueefes received before they died, not making any fearefull noyfe, but catching at their weapons and ftriuing to the latt. Hobba- 60 mocke flood by all this time as a spectator and medled not, observing how our men demeaned themselves in this action : all being here ended, smiling, he brake forth into these speeches to the Captaine; Yesterday Pecks foot bragging of his owne strength and stature, faid, though you were

a great Captaine, yet you were but a lttle man; but to day I fee you are big enough to lay him

on the ground. But to proceede, there being fome women at the fame time, Captaine Standish left them in the custody of Master Westons people at the Towne, and fent word to another Company that had intelligence of things to kill thole Indian men that were amongst them, these kil-Led two more: himfelte also with some of his owne men went to another place, where they kill led another, and through the negligence of one man an Indian escaped, who discourred and croffed their proceedings.

Not long before this Execution, three of Master Westons men, which more regarded their bel- Savage Eng. lies then thy command or Commander, having formerly tared well with the Indians for making liftmen. them Clanoes, went againe to the Sachim to offer their feruice, and had entertainment. The first to night they came thither within night lace came a Meffenger with all speede, and deliuered a fad and fhort meffage: Whereupon all the men gathered together, put on their Bootes and Breeches, trusted up themselves, and tooke their Bowes and Arrowes and went forth, selling them they went a hunting, and that at their returns they should have Venison enough. Being now gone, one being more ancient and wife then the reft, calling former things to minde, especially the Captaines preience, and the itrait charge, that on paine of death none should got a Musket-shoe from the Piantation; and comparing this sudden departure of theirs therewith, began to dislike and with himfelfe at home againe, which was further of then divers other dwelt. Hereupon he moued his fellowes to returne, but could not perfwade them : fo there being none but women leit, and the other that was turned Sauage, about midnight came away, forfaking the paths left

20 he should be purfued, and by this meanes faued his life. Captaine Standish tooke the one halfe of his men, and one or two of Master Westons, and Hobba. mock, still tecking to make spoyle of them and theirs. At length they espied a file of Indians which made towards them amayne, and there being a small advantage in the ground by reason of a Hill neere them, both Companies ftroue for it. Captain Standillo got it, whereupon they retreated and tooke each man his Tree, letting flie their Arrowes amayne, especially at himselfe and Hobbemocke, whereupon Hobbamocke calt off his coate, and being a knowne Pinefe, (theirs being now killed) chased them so fast, as our people were not able to hold way with him, insomuch as our men could have but one certaine marke, and then but the arme and halfe face of a notable villaine as hee drew at Captaine Standish, who together with another both discharged at him, and 30 brike his arme ; whereupon they fled into a swampe, when they were in the thicket they para lied, but to small purpose, getting nothing but foule language. So our Captain dared the Sachine to come out and fight like a man, thewing how base and womanlike hee was in tounging it as he did : but he refuled and fled. So the Captaine returned to the Plantation, where hee released the women and would not take their Beauer coates from them, nor suffer the least discourtese to bee offered them. Now were Master Westons people resoluted to Icaue their Plantation and goe for Munitiggen, hoping to get passage and returne with the Fishing Ships. The Captaine told them. that for his owne part hee durit there line with fewer men then they were , yet fince they were otherwayes minded, according to his order from the Gouernours and people of Plimonth, hee would helpe them with Corne competent for their provision by the way, which hee did, scarce 40 leaving himfelfe more then brought them home. Some of them diffiked the choice of the bodie to goe to Munbiggen, and therefore defiring to goe with him to Plimenth, hee tooke them into the Shallop : and teeing them fet fayle and cleere of the Maffachufet Bay, he tooke leave and returned to Plissouib, whither hee came in fafetie (bleffed be God) and brought the head of Witne

Among ft the reft, there was an Indian youth that was ever of a courteous and louing disposition on towards vs, hee notwithstanding the death of his Countrimen, came to the Captaine without fea: e, laying, His good conscience and loue towards vs imboldned him so to doe. This youth confessed that the Indians intended to kil Master Westons people, and not to delay any longer then till they had two more Canoes or Boats, which Malter Weltons men would have finished by this 50 time (having made them three already) had not the Captaine prevented them, and the end of stay for those Boats, was to take their Ship therewith.

Now was the Captaine returned and received with ioy, the head being brought to the Fors and there fet up, the Gouernours and Captaines with divers others went up the fame further, to examine the priloner, who looked pittioully on the head, being asked whether he knew it, he anfwered, yea : Then he confessed the plot, and that all the people prouoked Obtakest their Sachim thereunto, being drawne to it by their importunitie : Fine there were (he faid) that profecuted it with more eagernesse then the rest, the two principall were killed, being Peckiner and Witnmamat, whose head was there, the other three were Pomabs, being yet living, and knowne vnto ys, though one of them was wounded, as aforelaid. For himfelte hee would not acknowledge that hee had any hand therein , begging earnestly for his life, faying, Hee was not a Maffachufet man, but as a litranger lived with them. Hobbamock also gave a good report of him, and belought for him, but was bribed fo to doe it. Neuertheleffe, that wee might fliew mercy as well as extreamitie, the Gouernour released him, and the rather because we desired he might carry a message to Obravef his Mafter. No fooner were the Irons from his legs, but he would have beene gone, but

the Gouernour bid him flay and feare not, for hee should receive no hurt, and by Hobbamock commanded him to deliver his meffage to his Malter ; That for our parts, it never entred into our hearts to take such a course with them, till their owne treachery enforced us thereunto, and therefore they much to take fuch a course with the name outer them yet face bee bad begun, if againe by any the file course the course the name to have the file course the did prouche him, his Country should not bold him, for her would never suffer him or his to rest in peace. till hee had viterly consumed them, and therefore should take this as a marning. Further, that he should fend to Patuxet the three Englishmen hee bad and not kill them; also that bee should not fools the Pele and Honles at Wichaguscusset, and that this Messenger should either bring the English, or an answer or both, pro mising his lafe returne.

both, promiting the jate resource.

This message was deliuered, and the partie would have returned with answer, but was at first to diffwaded by them, whom afterward they would, but could not perswade to come to vs. At length (though long) a woman came and told vs that Obtakieft was forry that the Englifb were killed before he heard from the Gouernour, otherwise hee would have sent them. Also shee faid: hee would faine make his peace againe with vs , but none of his men durft come to treate about it, having forfaken his dwelling, and daily removed from place to place, expecting when wee would take further vengeance on him.

Concerning those other people that intended to joyne with the Maffachuleucks against ve though we neuer went against any of them, yet this sudden and vnexpected execution, together with the inft indgement of God vpon their guiltie confciences, hath to terrified and amazed them, as in like manner they forfooke their houses, running to and fro like men distracted, living 20 in fwamps and other defert places, and so brought manifold difeases among it themselves, whereof very many are dead, as Canacum the Sachim of Manomet, Afpinet the Sachim of Naufet, and Isnoneb Sachim of Mattachnest. This Sachim in his life, in the middeft of these diffractions, faid. The God of the English was offended with them, and would destroy them in his anger; and certainly it is ftrange to heare how many of late haue, and full daily dye amongft them, neither is there any likelihood it will eafily cease, because through feare they fet little or no Corne, which is the statte of life, and without which they cannot long preferue health and iftrength. From one of thefe places a Boat was fent with Prefents to the Gouernour, hoping thereby to worke their peace, but the Boat was cast away, and three of the perions drowned, not farre from our Plantation on, onely one escaped, who durft not come to ve, but returned, fo as none of them date come 20 among it vs.

An. 1622.

1866

The moneth of April being now come, on all hands we began to prepare for Corne. And because there was no Corne left before this time, saue that was preserved for Seed, being also hopeleffe of reliefe by supply, we thought best to leave off all other workes and profecute that as most necessarie. And because there was no small hope of doing good, in that common course of labour that formerly wee were in, for that the Governours that followed men to their labours, had nothing to give men for their necessicies, and therefore could not so well exercise that command ouer them therein as formerly they had done, especially confidering that selfe-loue wherewith euery man (in a meature more or leffe) loueth and preferreth his owne good before his neighbours, and also the base disposicion of some drones, that as at other times so now especially would bee an most burdenous to the rest : It was therefore thought best that every man should viethe best diligence he could for his owne preferuation, both in respect of the time present, and to prepare his owne Corne for the veere following: and bring in a competent portion for the maintenance of publike Officers. Fishermen, &c. which could not bee freed from their calling without greater inconveniences. This course was to continue till harvest, and then the Governours to gather in the appointed portion, for the maintenance of themselves and such others as necessitie constrained to exempt from this condition.

In the middest of Aprill webegan to set, the weather being then seasonable, which much incouraged vs, giving vs good hopes of after plentie : the fetting feafon is good till the latter end of May. But it pleafed God for our further chastifement, to fend a great drought, infomuch, as in fix 50 Great drought weekes after the later fetting there scarce fell any raine, so that the stalke of that was first fet, began to fend forth the eare before it came to halfe growth, and that which was later, not like to yeeld any at all, both blade and stalke hanging the head, and changing the colour in such manner as we indged it veterly dead : our Beanes also ran not vp according to their wonted manner, but flood at a flay, many being parched away, as though they had beene feerched before the fire. Now were our hopes ouerthrowne, and we discouraged, our joy being turned into mourning. To adde also to this forrowfull estate in which we were, we heard of a supply that was sent vnto vs many moneths fince, which having two repulles before, was a third time in company of another Ship three hundred Leagues at Sea, and now in three moneths time heard no further of her, onely the fignes of a wrack were feene on the Coast, which could not be judged to be any other then 60

> These & the like considerations, moved not only every good man privately to enter into examination with his own estate between God and his conscience, & so to humiliation before him that also more folemnly to humble our selues together before the Lord by Fasting and Frayer. To that

end a day was appointed by publike authority, and let a part from all other emploiments, hoping Publike Faft, that the fame God which had ftirred vs vo hereunto, would be moued hereby in mercy to looke voon vs & grant the request of our dejected soules, it our continuance there might any way stand with his glorie and our good. But oh the mercy of our God! Who was as readie to heare as we to aske : For though in the morning when wee affembled together , the heavens were as cleete and the drought as like to continue as ever it was : yet (our exercise continuing some eight or nine Gracious houres) before our departure the weather was overcast, the clouds gathered together on all fides, dewes, and on the next morning distilled such fost, sweete, and moderate showers of raine, continuing fome fourteene daies, and mixed with fuch feafonable weather, as it was hard to fay whether to our withered Corne, or drouping affections were most quickned or reuised. Such was the boun-

tic and goodnesse of our God. Of this the Indians by meanes of Hobbamock tooke notice : who heing then in the Towne, and this exercise in the midft of the weeke, faid, It was but three daies fince Sunday, and therefore demanded of a boy what was the reason thereof? Which when hee knew and law what effects followed thereupon, hee and all them admired the goodnesse of our God towards vs, that wrought fo great a change in fo short a time, shewing the difference be- Indians conidtweene their Conjuration, and our Injurcation on the Name of God for raine; theirs being mixed ration. with fuch flormes and tempelts, as sometimes in stead of doing them good, it laieth the Corne flat on the ground, to their prejudice : but ours in fo gentle and feafonable a manner, as they never observed the like.

At the tame time Captaine Standish, being formerly imployed by the Gouernour, to buy prouifions for the refreshing of the Colony, returned with the fame, accompanied with on M. Danid M. Tomfor a Tomfon, a Scotchman, who also that Spring began a Plantation twentie fine leagues North-east Scot his Planfrom vs, neere Santhe lles, at a place called Pascatoguack, where hee liketh well. Now also tation. heard wee of the third repulie that our fupply had, of their fafe, though dangerous returne into England, and of their preparation to come to vs. So that having these many fignes of Gods favour and acceptation, wer thought it would bee great ingratitude, if fecretly wee fhould smoother vp the tame, or content our selves with private thanks giving, for that which by private praier could Day of thanks not be obtained. And therefore another folemne day was fet apart for that end wherein wee returned glory honour, and praise, with all thankfulnese to our good God, which dealt so graciously 30 with vs. whose name for these and all other his mercies towards his Church and chosen ones, by them be bleffed and praifed now and euermore, Amen.

In the latter end of July, and the beginning of August, came two Ships with supply vnto vs, Two Ships. who brought all their pailengers, except one, in health, who recourred in thort time, who also not-withstanding all our wants and hardship (bleffed be God) found not any one sick person amongst ws at the Plantation. The bigger Ship called the Anne was hired, and there againe fraughted backe, from whence wee fet faile the tenth of September. The leffer called the little Jumes, was built for the Company at their charge. Shee was now also fitted for Trade and discouery to the Southward of Cape Cod, and almost readie to fet faile, whom I pray God to bleffe in her good and lawfull proceedings.

Few things I thought meete to adde heereunto, which I have observed amongst the

A Indians, both touching their Religion, and fundry other Customes amongst them. And first, whereas my felfe and others, in former Letters (which came to the Presse against my Their Relieford will and knowledge) wrote, that the Indians about vs are a people without any Religion or The meaning knowledge of any God, therein I erred, though wee could then gather no better : For as they of the word, conceine of many divine powers, to of one whom they call Kiehran, to bee the principall maker Ajehran, I of all the reft, and to be made by none : Hee (they fay) created the Heauens, Earth, Sen, and all think bith recreatures contained therein. Also that hee made one man and one woman, of whom they and tiquity for wee and all mankind came : but how they became to farre differfed that know they not, At first chife is an old 50 they fay, there was no Sachim, or King, but Kiehtan, who dwelleth about the Heauens, whither man, and Kithall good men goe when they die to fee their friends, and have their fill of all things. This his habitation lyeth Westward in the Heavens, they say; thither the bad men goe also, and knocke at de hin acc. his doore, but he bids them Quachet, that is to lay, Walke abroad, for there is no place for fuch; fo tie maledelli. that they wander in relileffe want and penury. Neuer man faw this Kiebran; onely old men tell them of him, and bid them tell their children, yea, to charge them to teach their potterities the fame, and lay the like charge upon them. This power they acknowledge to be good, and when they would obtaine any great matter, meet together, and cry vinto him, and to likewise for plentie, victory, &c. ling, dance, feast, give thankes, and hang vp Garlands and other things in memo-60 ry of the fame.

Another power they worthip, whom they call Hobbamock, and to the Nothward of vs Hob- Their Devillbamoqui; this as farre as wee can conceiue is the Deuili, him they call upon to cure their wounds and difeales. When they are curable, hee perf wades them hee fends the same for some conceined angeragainst them , but voon their calling voon him can and doth helpe them : But when they are mortall, and not curable in nature, then he perfiwades them Kiebtan is angry and fends them

Offerings.

Sacrifices.

The Douill keeps his fer-

whom none can cure : infomuch, as in that respect onely they somewhat doubt whether hee bee fimply good, and therefore in ficknesse neuer call vpon him. This Hobbomock appeares in lundry formes vnto them, as in the shape of a Man, a Deare, a Fawne, an Eagle, &c. but most ordinarily a Snake : Hee appeares not to all, but the chiefest and most judicious amongst them, though allof them strue to attaine to that hellish height of Honour. He appeareth most ordinary, and is most conversant with three forts of people, one I confesse, I neither know by name nor office directly: Of these they have few but esteeme highly of them, and thinke that no weapon can kill them: another they call by the name of Powab, and the third Priefe.

Parabor Price The office and dutie of the Powab is to be exercised principally in calling upon the Deuill, and curing difeales of the licke or wounded. The common people ioyne with him in the exercise of In Innocation, but doe but onely affent, or as we terme it, fry Amen to that he faith, yet fometime breake out into a short muticall note with him. The Powab is eager and free in speech, fierce in countenance, and inyneth many antick and laborious gestures with the same over the partie difeased. If the partie be wounded, he will also sceme to sucke the wound, but if they bee curable (as they fay) hee toucheth it not, but a Skooke, that is the Snake, or Wohlacuck, that is the Eagle fitteth on his shoulder and lickes the same. This none see but the Ponat, who tells them hee doth it himfelfe. If the partie be otherwise diseased, it is accounted sufficient if in any shape hee but come into the house, taking it for an vindoubted figne of recouerv.

And as in former ages Apollo had his Temple at Delphos, and Diana at Ephesiu; fo have I heard them call youn some, as if they had their residence in some certaine places or because they appear 20 red in those formes in the same. In the Powahs speech hee promifeth to facrifice many skinnes of Beaits, Kettles, Hatchets, Beades, Knines, and other the best things they have to the fiend, if hee will come to helpe the partie difeated : But whether they performe it I know not. The other practiles I have feene, being necessarily called at some times to be with their ficke, and have vied the best arguments I could make them understand against the same : They have told me I should fee the Depull at those times come to the party, but I affured my selfe and them of the contrary, which fo proued : yea, them telues have confessed they never faw him when any of vs were prefent. In desperate and extraordinary hard trauell in childe-birth, when the partie cannot be delivered by the ordinary meanes, they fend for this Powab, though ordinarily their travell is not fo extreame as in our parts of the world, they being of a more hardie nature ; for on the third day 30 after childe-birth, I haue feene the mother with the Infant, vpon a fmall occasion in cold weather in a Boat woon the Sea.

Many facrifices the Indians vie, and in some cases kill children. It seemeth they are various in their religious worship in a little distance, and grow more and more cold in their worship to Kiebtan; laying, In their memory he was much more called vpon. The Nanobigganfets exceed in their blind denotion, and have a great spatious house wherein onely some few (that are as wee may tearme them Priests) come : thither at certaine knowne times resort all their people, and offer almost all the riches they have to their gods, as Kettles, Skins, Hatchets, Beades, Knines, &c. all which are cast by the Priests into a great fire that they make in the midst of the house, and there confumed to ashes. To this offering every man bringeth freely, and the more he is knowne 40 to bring, hath the better esteeme of all men. This the other Indian; about vs approue of as good, Burnt offring, and with their Sachims would appoint the like : and because the plague hath not raigned at Na-

mobigganfet, as at other places about them, they attibute to this custome there vied. mants poorce The Panieses are men of great courage and wisedome, and to these also the Deuill appeareth Priefer valou. more familiarly then to others, and as wee conceine maketh conenant with them to preferue them from death, by wounds with Arrowes, Kniues, Hatchets, &c. or at least both themselues and especially the people thinke themselues to be freed from the same. And though against their battels, all of them by painting disfigure themselues, yet they are knowne by their courage and boldnesse, by reason whereof one of them will chase almost an hundred men, for they account it death for whomsoeuer stand in their way. These are highly esteemed of all forts of people, and 50 are of the Sachims Councell, without whom they will not warre or undertake any weightie bu-

fineffe. In warre their Sachims, for their more fafetie goe in the midft of them. They are commonly men of greatest stature and strength, and such as will endure most hardnesse, and yet are more discreet, courteous, and humane in their carriages then any amongst them, scorning theft, lying, and the like base dealings, and stand as much whon their reputation as any men. And to the end they may have flore of these, they traine up the most forward and likeliest boyes from their child-hood in great hardnesse, and make them abitaine from daintie meat, obseruing divers orders prescribed, to the end that when they are of age the Deuill may appeare to them, cauling to drinke the juyce of Sentry and other bitter Hearbs till they cast, which they must disgorge into the platter, and drinke againe, and againe, till at length, through extraordinary prelling of nature 60 it will seeme to bee all bloud, and this the boyes will doe with eagernesse at the first, and so contime, till by reason of faintnesse they can scarce stand on their legs, and then must goe forth into the cold: also they beat their shins with sticks, and cause them to run through bushes, stumps, and brambles, to make them hardy and acceptable to the Deuill, that in time he may appeare vnto

Their Sachims cannot bee all called Kings, but onely some few of them, to whom the rest refore for protection, and payhomage vinto them, neither may they warre without their know- Lords. ledge and approbation, yet to be commanded by the greater as occasion ferueth. Of this fort is Massassana appropriated, and Conanacus of Nanobiggenset our supposed enemy. Every Sachim taketh care for the widdow and father lette, also for such as are aged, and any way may med, if their friends be dead, or not able to prouide for them. A Sachim will not take any to wife, but such an one as is equall to him in birth, other wife they fay their feede would in time become ignoble, and though they have many other wives, yet are they no other then concubines or fervants, and yeeld a kind of obedience to the principall, who ordereth the family, and them in it. The to like their men obserue also , and will adhere to the first during their lines ; but put away the other at their pleasure. This Gouernment is successue and not by choyce. If the father dye before the some ordaughter bee of age, then the while is committed to the protection and tuition of tome one amongit them, who ruleth in his ftead till hee be of age, but when that is

I know not. Every Sachim knoweth how farre the bounds and limits of his owne Countrey extendeth. and that is his owne proper inheritance, out or that if any of his men delire land to fet their Corne, hee giueth them as much as they can vie, and fets them in their bounds. In this circoit winofoeuer hunteth, if any kill any venifon, bring him his fee, which is foure parts of the same, if it bee killed on the Land, but if in the water, then the skin thereof: The Great 30 Saebams or Kings know not their owne bounds or limits of land, as well as the reft. All Tranellers or Strangers for the most part lodge at the Sachims, when they come, they tell them how long they will stay, and to what place they goe, during which time they receive entertainment according to their persons, but went not. Once a yeere the Puiefer vie to prouoke the people to Tributes bestow much Corne on the Sachim. To that end they appoint a certaine time and place neere the Sachims dwelling, where the people bring many baskets of Corne, and make a great flack thereof. There the Pniefes ftani ready to give thankes to the people on the Sachims behalfe, and after acquainteth the Sachins therewith, who fetcheth the same, and is no lesse thankfull, bestowing many gifts on them.

When any are vilited with sicknesse, their friends refort wnto them for their comfort, and con-30 tinue with them oftentimes till their death or recourry. If they die they flay a certaine time to Mourning for mourne for them. Night and morning they performe this dutie many daies after the buriall in a the dead. most dolefull manner, infomuch as though it bee ordinary, and the Note Musicall, which they take one from another, and altogether, yet it will draw teares from their eyes, and almost from ours also. But if they recouer then because their sicknesse was chargeable, they fend Corne and other gifts vnto them at a certaine appointed time, whereat they fealt and dance, which they cali Commoco.

When they bury the dead, they fowe up the corps in a mat and fo put it in the earth. If the partie bea Sachim, they couer him with many curious mats, and bury all his riches with him, and inclose the grave with a pale. If it bee a childe, the father will also put his owne most speciall 40 Izwels and Ornaments in the earth with it, also he will cut his haire and disfigure himselfe very much in token of forrow. If it bee the man or woman of the house, they will pull downe the mats and leave the framestanding, and bury them in or neere the same, and either remove their dwelling, or give ouer house-keeping. The men imploy themselues wholly in hunting, and other exercises of the Bow, except at

their burdens, let and dreffe their Corne, gather it in, and feeke out for much of their food, beate ucry. and make readie the Corne to eate, and have all houshold care lying upon them. The younger fort reuerence the elder, and doe all meane offices whilft they are together, although they be strangers. Boyes and girles may not weare their haire like men and women, but

50 are diftinguished thereby. A man is not accounted a man till he doe some notable act, or shew forth such courage and reso. Manhoods lution as becommeth his place. The men take much Tobacco, but for boyes to doe they ac-

count it odious. All their names are fignificant and variable; for when they come to the flate of men and wo- Names. men, they alter them according to their deeds or dispositions. When a maide is taken in marriage, shee first cutteth her haire, and after weareth a couering Maids & wites

on her head till her haire be growne out. Their women are dinerfly disposed, some as modestas they will fearce talke one with another in the company of men, being very chafte also: yet other some light, lasciuious and wanton. If a woman haue a bad husband, or cannot affect him, and there 60 bee warre or opposition betweene that and any other people, shee will runne away from him to the contrary partie and there hue, where they never come vinwelcome : for where are most women, there is greatest plentie. When a woman hath her monethly termes, shee separateth her felfe from all other company, and liueth certaine dayes in a house alone : after which she watheth her felfe and all that thee hath touched or vied, and is againe received to her husbands bed or

fome times they take some paine in fishing. The women line a most slauish life, they carry all Womens slav

Adulterie and family. For adultery the husband will beat his wife and put her away, if he pleafe. Some common ftrumpers there are as well as in other places, but they are fuch as either neuer married, or whooredome, widowes, or put away for adultery : for no man will keepe such an one to wife. In matters of which and dishonelt dealing the Sachim examineth and punisheth the same. In

Murther.

case of thefis, for the first offence hee is disgracefully rebuked, for the second beaten by the Sechans with a cadgell on the naked backe, for the third hee is beaten with many ftroakes and bath his note flit vo ward, that thereby all men may both know and thus him. If any man kill another, hee must like wife die for the fame. The Sachin not onely passeth the fentence vpon malefactors. but executeth the same with his owne hands, if the partie bee then present; if not, senderh his but executes the same with ms owner mans, have been seen as the first but if the offender been owne knife in cale of death, in the hands of others to performe the same. But if the offender been owner knife in cale of death, in the hands of others to perform the same by same than the same been same to same the same by same than the same by same than the same by same than the same that the same than the same that the same than the same than the same than the same that the same than the sam to receiue other punishment, hee will not receiue the same but from the Sachim himselie, before whom being naked he kneeleth, and will not offer to runne away though hee beat him pener fo much it being a greater disparagement for a man to cry during the time of his correction, then cowards note. is his offence and punish nent.

Apparell.

As for their apparell, they weare breeches and stockings in one, like some Irish, which is made of Deere skinnes, and have shooes of the same leather. They weare also a Deeres skinne loose an bout them like a cloake, which they will turne to the weather fide. In this habite they travell. but when they are at home, or come to their journeyes end, prefently they pull of their breeches. flockings, and shooes, wring out the water, if they bee wet, and drie them, and rub or chafe the fame. Though these be off, yet have they another small garment that covereth their secrets. The men weare also when they goe abroad in cold weather, an Otter or Fox skin on their right arme. but onely their bracer on the left. Women and all of that fex weare strings about their legs, which the men neuer doe.

Wittie people.

The people are very ingenious and observative, they keepe account of time by the Moone, and Winters or Summers; they know divers of the Starres by name, in particular, they know the North-ftar, and call it Macke, which is to fay, The Beare. Also they have many names for the Winds. They will gueffe very well at the wind and weather before hand, by observations in the Hearens. They report also, that some of them can cause the wind to blow in what part they lift, can raife fromes and temperts, which they vivally doe when they intend the death or defruction of other people, that by reason of the vuscasonable weather, they may take advantage 30 of their enemies in their houses. At such times they performe their greatest exployts, and in such seasons when they are at enmittie with any, they keepe more carefull watch then at

As for the language it is verie copious, large, and difficult, as yet wee cannot attaine to any great measure thereor; but can vaderstand them , and explaine our selues to their vaderstanding, by the helpe of those that daily converse with vs. And though there be difference in an hundred miles diftant of place, both in language and manners, yet not fo much but that they very well vnderstand each other. And thus much of their lives and manners.

Rezifters.

In Head of Records and Chronicles, they take this course, where any remarkeable act is done, in memory of it, either in the place, or by fome parhway neere adioyning, they make a round 40 hole in the ground about a foot deepe, and as much ouer, which when others passing by behold, they enquire the cause and occasion of the same, which being once knowne, they are carefull to acquaint all men as occasion serueth therewith. And least such holes should bee filled, or growne vp by any accident, as men paffe by they will oft renew the fame : By which meanes many things of great Antiquitie are fresh in memory. So that as a man travelleth, if hee can understand his guide, his journey will be the leffe tedious, by reason of many historicall Discourses will be re-

New England

For that Continent, on which wee are called New-England, although it hath ever beene conceiued by the English, to bee a part of the maine Land adioyning to Virginia, yet by relation of the Indians it should appeare to bee otherwise : for they affirme confidently , that it is an Iland, 50 and that either the Dutch or French paffe thorow from Sea to Sea, betweene vs and Virginia, and drine a great Trade in the fame. The name of that Inlet of the Sea, they call Mobegon, which I take to be the same which wee call Hudsons River, vp which Master Hudson went many leagues, and for want of meanes (as I heare) left it undiscouered. For confirmation of this, their opinion is thus much ; Though Virginia bee not aboue an hundred and fiftie leagues from vs, yet they never heard of Pombacan, or knew that any English were planted in his Countrey, face onely by vs and Tifquantum, who went into an English Ship thither : And therefore it is the more probable, because the water is not passable for them, who are very aduenturous in

Then for the temperature of the ayre, in almost three yeeres experience, I can scarce diffin- 60 guish New England from Old England, in respect of heate, and cold, frost, inow, raine, winds, &c. Some object, because our Plantation lieth in the latitude of two and fortie, it mult needes bee much botter. I confesse I cannot give the reason of the contrary; onely experience teacheth vs, that it it doe exceed England, it is so little as must require better judgements to discerne it. And

CHAP. 6. Variable foyle, manured with fish. The Kings Patent.

for the Winter, I rather thinke (if there be difference) it is both sharper and longer in New Engl lind then Old; and yet the want of those comforts in the one which I have enjoyed in the other, may deceine my indgement alfo. But in my best observation, comparing our owne conditions with the Relations of other parts of America, I cannot conceine of any to agree better with the constitution of the English, not being oppressed with extremitie of heat, nor nipped with biting cold, by which meanes, bleffed be God, wee enioy our health, notwithflanding those difficulties wee haue vndergone, in such a measure as would have been admired if we had lived in Eneland with the like meanes. The day is two houres longer then here, when it is at the shor- Daves

reft, and as much shorter when it is at the longest. The loyle is variable, in some places Mould, in some Clay, and others a mixed Sand, &c. The Soyle. chiefelt graine is the Indian Mays, or Ginny-Wheat; the feed-time beginneth in the midft of A- Corne pril, and continueth good till the midft of May. Our Harvest beginneth with September. This Corne increaseth in great measure, but is inferiour in quantitie to the same in Virginia, the reason I conceine, is because Virginia is farre hotter then it is with vs, it requiring great heat to ripen; but whereas it is obiected against New England, that Corne will not there grow, except the ground bee manured with Fish : I answere , That where men fet with Fish (as with vs) it is

more easie so to doe, then to cleere ground and set without some fine or fixe yeeres, and sobegin anew, as in Virginia and elfewhere. Not but that in some places, where they cannot be taken with ease in such abundance, the Indians set foure yeeres together without, and haue as good 20 Corne or better then we have that fet with them , though indeed I thinke if wee had Cattell to till the ground, it would be more profitable and better agreeable to the foyle, to fowe Wheat, Ry, Barley, Peafe, and Oats, then to let Mays, which our Indians call Emachim: for we have had experience that they like and thrine well ; and the other will not bee procured without good labour and diligence, especially at feed-time, when it must also bee watched by night to keepe the Wolves from the Fish, till it be rotten, which will beein foureteene dayes; yet men agreeing together, and taking their turnes it is not much. Much might bee spoken of the benefit that may come to such as shall here plant by Trade

with the Indians for Furres, if men take a right course for obtaining the same ; for I dare prefume your that small experience I have had, to affirme, that the English, Dutch, and 30 French, returns yeerely many thousand pounds profits by Trade onely from that Iland, on which

wee are feated.

Tobacco may bee there planted but not with that profit as in some other places, neither were it profitable there to follow it, though the increase were equall, because Fish is a better and richer Commoditie, and more necessary, which may be, and there are had in as great abundance as in any other part of the world ; Witnesse the West-countrey Merchants of England, which returne incredible gaines veerely from chence. And if they can fo doe which here buy their falt at a great charge, and transport more Company to make their voyage, then will faile their Ships. what may the Planters expect when once they are feated, and make the most of their Salt there, and imploy themselves at left eight moneths in fishing, whereas the other fish but foure, and have 40 their Ship lie dead in the Harbour all the time, whereas fuch shipping as belong to Plantations may takefraight of Pallengers or Cattle thither, and have their lading provided against they come. I confeile we have come fo far short of the meanes to raife such returns, as with great difficultie wee haue preferued out liues; insomuch as when I looke backe vpon our condition, and weake meanes to preserve the same, I rather admire at Gods mercies and providence in our prefernation, then that no greater things have beene effected by vs. But though our beginning have beene thus raw, small, and difficult, as thou hast feene, yet the fame God that hath hitherto led vs thorow the former, I hope will raife meanes to accomplish the latter.

CHAP. VI.

Noua Scotia. The Kings Patent to Sir WILLIAM ALEXANDER Knight, for the Plantation of New Scotland in America, and his proceedings therein; with a description of Mawoolhen for better knowledge of those parts.



Acobus Dei gratia Maena Brittanniz, Francia, & Hibernia Rex fideig, defensor: Omnibus probis kominibus totism terra sua Clericis & laicis salutem. Sciatis nos semper ud quamlibet qua ad decisi & emolumentam regni nostri Scotia spettaret occasionem amplettendum fuisse intentos, risilamque aut faciliorem aut magis innoxiam acquisitionem cenfere, quam que mexteris & incultis regnis obi ona & victui suppettune commode nenis deducendis Colonies facin fit ; prafertim fi vet spfa regna cultoribus prisu vacua, vel ab infidelibus, quos ad Christianam conserti fidem & Dei gtoriam interest plarimum.

Seafons.

meessa farint. Sed cum & alsa nonnulla regna, & hac non ita pridem nostra Anglia landabiliter sua nomina nouis terris acquisitis sed in se subactis indiderunt, quam numerosa & frequens dinimo benesicio bec gens, bac tempestate fit nobiscum reputantes, quamque bonesto aliquo & vill cultu cam finaiose ex-

ercerine in deteriora ex ignania & otto prolabatur expediat plerosque in nonam deducendos regionem quam Colonis compleant, operapretium duximus qui or animi promptitudine & alacritate corporumque robore & viriben quionsenque difficultatibus, si qui aly mortalium ofpiam se audiant opponere, bunc canatum huic regno maxime idoneum inde a bitramur quod virorum tantummodo & mulicrum immento. rum & frumenti, non etiam pecunia transuectionem postulat, neque incommodam ex ipsiu reenimercia bus retributionem hoc tempore cum negotiatio adeo imminuta fit, possis reponere. Hisce de cansis sicuti et propter bonum fidele & gratum dilecti nostri confiliari Domini Willelmi Alexandri equiti fernitium no. 10 bis prastitum & prastandum, qui propriys impensis ex nostratibus primus externam hanc coloniam du cendam conatus fit, dinersasque terras infra designatis limitibus circumsferiptas incolendas expetimeris. Nos ivitur ex regali nostra ad Christanam veligionem propagandam & ad opulentiam, professitatem. pacemque naturalium nostrorum subditorum ditti regni nostri Scotia acquirendam cura, sicuis alu Prina cipes extranes in talibus casibus hactenus fecerunt, cum anisamento & consensu pradutts nostri con-Sanguinei & consiliari Ioannis Comitis de Marr Domini Erskene & Garrioche summi nostri Thelaus rary computorum rotulatoru collectoru ac Thefaurary nonarum nostrarum augmentationum husus Res. ni nostri Scotie ac reliquorum dominorum nostrorum Commissionariorum emsdem Regni nostri, dedimus concessimus & desposumus, tenoreque presentic charte nostre damus concedimus & d sponimus prefacto Domino Wilelmo Alexandro, baredibue suis vel assignatis quibuscunque bareditarie mnes er 20 singulas terras continentes ac insulas situatas & sacentes in America, intra caput seu promontorium communiter Cap. de Sable appellatum sacens prope latitudinem quadraginta trium graduum aut ab eo circa, ab aquinoctiali linea versus septentrionem, à quo promontorio versus littus maris tendentis ad occidentem ad stationem Santte Maria nanium (vulgo S. Maries Bay) & deinceps versus septentrionem per directam lineam introitum fine oftmm magne illim flationis nanium trancientem que excurrit in terra orientalem plagam inter Regionis Suriquorum & Ecochemmorum (valge Suriqueis & Etechemines) ad fluuium vulgo nomine Santa Cracie appellatum: Et ad featuriginem remotissimam sue fontem ex occidentali parte ein dem qui se primum pradicto flunto mimi (cos, unde per imaginariam directam lineam qua pergere per terram seu curvere versus septentrionem concipietur ad proximam nanium stationem. fluuium vel scaturiginem in magno flunio de Cannada sese exenerantem. Et ab co pergendo versu ori- 20 entem per marie oras luttorales esus dem fluniy de Cannada ad flunium stationem nanium portum ant litus communiter nomine de Gachepe vel Gaspienotum & appellatu, Et deinceps versus Euronosum ad insulas Bacalaos vel Cap. Briton vocatas Relinquendo casaem Insulas à dextra & voraginem dicts magni flusis de Cannada fine maçue stationis nansum & terras de New-fonna-land, cum insulis ad easdem terras pertinentibus à sinistra. Et deinceps ad Caput sine promentorum de Cap. Briton pradictium sacens prope latitudinem quadraginta quinque graduum aut eo circa. Et à dicto promentorio de Cap, Briton verfus meridiem er Occidentem ad pradictum Cap. Sable v bi incipit perambulatio includenda o compre-For the De- henda intra dictas maris oras littorales ac carum circumferentias à mari ad omnes terras continentis scription & in- cum summinibus torrentibus, sinubus, littoribus, insulis aut maribus iacentibus prope infra sex lucas ad alicouragements to this deligne, quam earnndem partem ex occidentali boreali vel orientali partibus erorum litteralium & pracinciuum 40 and forbeiter earundem. Et ab Euronoto (vissacet Cap. Britton) & ex auftrali parte einsdem vbieft Cap. de Saknowledge of ble omnia maria ac infulas verfus meridiem intra quadraginta leucas dictarum orarum littoralium earundem magnam insulam vulgariter appellatam Île de Sable vel Sablon includen, iasen, versus New Scotland befides a Book carban vulgo South South-eaft, circa triginta leucas à dilto Cap. Britton in mars & existen in lapurpolely pubtitudine quadra ginta quatuor graduum aut co circa. Qua quidem terra pradicta omni tempore affulished by the Honourable & turo nomine Noue Scotie in America gaudebunt, Quas etiam prafatus Dominus Willelmus in parter & portiones sicut es visum fuerit dividet issama, nemina pro beneplacito imponet. Vna cum omnibus fodinia learned Author (who at tum regalibus auri & argenti quam aligs fodinis ferre plumbi, cupri, ftanni, aris, &c. other weapons hath placed his

In cuius rei test imensum buic prafeuts Charta nostre magnum Sigillum nostrum apponipracepimus Testibus pradictionostrio consanguineis & Confiliaries Iacobo Marchione de Hamilton Comite Arrania 50 Mufcs prizes. and given the & Cambridge Domino Anen & Innerdail, Georgio Marifcalli comite Domino Keith & alt. regni nostri Marifeallo, Alexandro Comite de Dunfermling Domino Fyvia & vrqubant nostro Cancellario, Thoma Comite de Melros Domino Byres & Bynning nostro Secretario, Dilectis nostris familiaribus you may read Confiliarijs Domino Richardo KoKburne Iuniore de Clerkington nostri Secreti Sigiks enstode, Georgio Hay de Knifarunis nostrorum Rotulorum Registrorum ac Concilis Clerico, Ioanne Cochburne de Or-Om 8. Booke mestonn nostra Instituaria Clerico, & Ioanne Scot de Scottistaruet nostra Cancellaria Directore, Milia tibus. Apud Castellum nostrum de Winsore decimo die mensis sebtembris Anno Domini milesimo sexenwards the laft tesime vigesimo primo Regnorumo, nostrorum anuis quinquagesimo quinto & decimo nono.

Sir Ferdinando Gorge being entrulted with the affayres of New England, after hee had admied 60 with some of the Company; considering the largenesse of the bounds intended to bee planted by his Maieflies subiects in America, and the flow progresse of Plantations in these parts, that the Scottifb Nation may be perswaded to imbatke themselves in their forraine enterprise; hee was added herceo. content that Sir William Alexander - Knight, one of his Maiefties most Honorable Priny Councel

622.

iptid πđ

210 :he

òz

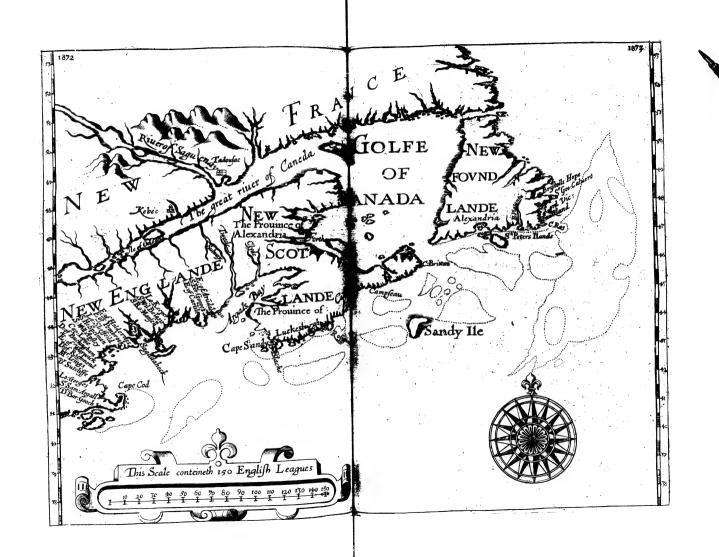
two Chapiters of the ninth Booke, &that description of the Country

world ample

teftimony of

his learning)

from the fixt



of that Kingdome, should procure a Patent of such a bounds as his Maiestie should appoint to bee called New Scotland, and to bee held of the Crowne of Scotland, and gouerned by the Lawes of that Kingdome, as his faid Patent containing all the bounds, that doth lie to the East of Saint Croix, compaffed with the great River of Canada on the North, and the Maine Ocean on the South doth more particularly beare. Whereupon the faid Sir William did fet out a Shippe with a Colony of purpose to plant, which being too late in setting forth were forced to flay all the Winter at New-found-Land, and though they had a Shippe with new proussions the next Spring from the layde Sir William , yet by reason of some vnexpected occasions, the chiefe of the Company resolued nor to plant at the first, but onely to discouer and to take possession, which a number made choyce of for that purpose and happily

The three and twentieth of lune, they loofed from Saint Iohns Harbour in New faired Land, As. 1622. and favled towardes New Scotland, where for the space of fourteene dayes they were by Forges and contrarie Windes kept backe from fpying Land till the eight of July : thereafter that they faw the West part of Cape Breton, and so till the thirteenth day, they fayled to and fro alone it the Coaft till they came the length of Port de Muton, where they discouered three very pleasant Harbours, and went a shoare in one of them, which they called Lukes Bay, where they found a great way up to a very pleafant River being three fathoms Lukes Bay.

deepe at low water; at the entry thereof, and on every fide of the same they did see very delicate Meadowes, having Roses white and red growing thereon, with a kind of wild Lilly, which had a verv daintie fmell.

The next day they refolued to coast along to discouer the next Harbour, which was but two leagues distant from the other, where they found a more pleasant River, being foure fathom water at a low water, with Meadowes on both fides thereof, having Rofes and Lillies growing thereon as the other had. They found within this River a very fit place for a Plantation , both in regard that it was naturally apt to bee fortified, and that all the ground beweene the two Plantation: Rivers was without Wood, and was good fat earth having severall forts of Berries growing thereon, as Goofeberry, Strawberry, Hyndberry, Rasberry, and a kinde of Red-wineberry : As also some forts of Graine, as Pease, some eares of Wheat, Barley, and Rye, erowing

there wild; the Peale grow enery where in abundance, very big and good to eate, but talke of the Fitch. This River is called Port lolly, from whence they coalted along to Port Negre, being Port lolly. 12. leagues distant, where all the way as they failed along ft they found a very pleasant Country Port Negroi having growing every where such things as they did see in the two Harbours where they had beene. They found like wife in every River abundance of Lobsters, and Cockles, and other small files, and also they found not onely in the Rivers, but all the Coast alongst, numbers of severall forts of Wild-fowle, as Wild-goofe, Black-Duck, Woodcock, Herron, Pigeon, and many other forts of Fowle which they knew nor. They found likewife, as they failed alongst the Coastabundance of great Cod, with feuerall other forts of great fishes. The Countrey is full of Woods, nor very thick, and the most part Oake, the rest Fir-tree, Spruce, Birch, and many other forts of wood 40 which they had not feene before.

Having discovered this part of the Countrey in regard of the voyage, their Ship was to make to the Straits with fifthes, they resolved to coast alongst from Lukes Bay to Port de Muton, being foure leagues to the East thereof, where they encountred with a Frenchman, that in a very short time had a great voyage, having furnished one Ship away with fishes, and had neere fo many ready as to load his owne Ship and others. And haung taken a view of this Port, which to their judgement they found no wayes inferiour to the rest they had seene before, they resolved to retire backe to New-found-land, where their Ship was to receive her loading of fishes, the twentieth of July they loofed from thence, and the feuen and twentieth thereof they arrived at Saint Johns Harbour in New-found land; and from thence failed along (t the Bay of Conception, where they left the Ship, and dispatched themselves home in severall Ships

that belonged to the Welt part of England, and doe intend this next Spring to fet forth a Colony to plant there.

The description of the Countrey of Mawooshen, discovered by the English, in the yeere 1602. 3.5.6. 7.8. and 9.

Amooshen is a Countrey lying to the North and by East of Virginia, between the degrees quantitie. Mora 3. and 45. It is fortie leagues broad, and fiftie in length, lying in breach East and West, Tammine are 60 and in length North and South. It is bordered on the East fide with a Countrey, the people, faid to be the whereof they call Tarrantines : on the West with Epistoman, on the North with a great Wood called Senaglecoune, and on the South with the mayne Ocean Sea, and many Hands.

In Manoolben it feemeth there are nine Rivers, whereof the first to the East is called Quibi- Quibiquession; on which there is one Towne, wherein dwell two Sagamos or Lords, the one called A. Riner.

This descripted on of Mamonfben I had amonest M. Hakingts pspers.

Climate and fame with the

Retrere 3

ficon, the other Abermot. In this Towne are fiftie houses, and 150. men. The name of which Afticon Sagamo. Towne is Precante; this River runneth farre vp into the Mayne, at the head thereof there is a Lake of a great length and breadth; it is at the fall into the Sea tenne fathoms deepe, and halfes A great Lake. mile ouer. The next is Pemagnid, a goodly River and very commodious all things confidered; it is ten fa-

Printered river thoms water at the entrance, and fortie miles vp there are two fathoms and a halfe at low water: it is halfe a mile broad, and runneth into the Land North many daies journey : where is a great Lake of 18, leagues long and foure broad. In this Lake are feuen great Hands : toward the farthest end there falleen in a River, which they call Acason flowed, where they paffe with their Boates there takes fourney up, and from thence they goe over Land twentie daies fourney more, and then come to another River, where they have a trade with Anadabis or Anadabison, with whom the Frenchmen have had commerce for a long time. Neere to the North of this River of Pemanuid are three Townes : the first is Upsegon, where Bashabes their chiefe Lord doth dwell. And in this Towns are fixtie houles, and 250. men, it is three daies journey within the Land. The second is (aiocame; the third Shalleokeing. The fe two last Townes are opposite one to the other, the River dividing them both, and they are two daies journey from the Towne of Bashabes. In Caiscane dwelleth Maielquis, and in Shafheokeing Bomant, two Sagames, lubie &s to Bashabes. Vpon both fides of this River vp to the very Lake, for a good distance the ground is plaine, without Trees or

Bulhes, but full or long Graffe, like vnto a pleafant meadow, which the Inhabitants doe burne

Three townes Balbabes. Carocame.

Anadabis.

once a veere to have fresh feed for their Detre. Beyond this Mesdow are great Woods, whereof more shall bee spoken hereafter. The River of Pemaqued is foure dayes sourney from the mouth The third River is called Ramafor, and is diffant from the mouth of Pemaguid foure daies iourney; it is twentie fathoms at the entrance, and hath a mile ouer; it runneth into the Land three Ramalloc. daies journey, and within leffe then a daies journey of the dwelling of Balbabes : vpon this River

Panablest 2 Towne. Apanawapeske.

fiftie houses, and eightie men. The fourth River Apanamapeske, lying West and by South of Ramassoc, at the entrance whereof there is twentie fathoms water, and it is a mile broad : it runneth vp into the Countrey five daies journey; and within three daies of the mouth are two Townes, the one called Mes- 30 combe, where dwelieth Aramafoga, who hath in his Towne fiftie houses, and eightie men. The other is Chebeenadole, whose Lord is Skanke, and hath thirtie houses and ninetie men. The mouth of Apanawapeike is dittant from Ramaffor three daies iourney.

there is a Towne named Panobseat, the Lord whereof is called Sibatabood; who hath in his Town

Apanmen fek. A L.kc.

To the South-west foure daies journey, there is another excellent River; in the entrance whereof is twentie rathoms water, and it is a quarter of a mile broad, it runneth into the Land two daies journey, and then there is a greatfall; at the head wherof there is a Lake of a daies journey long and as much in breadth. On the fide of this Lake there is a Strait, and at the end of that Strait there is another Lake of foure daies journey long, and two daies journey broad; wherin there are two llands, one at the one end, and another at the other end. I should have told you that both thefe Lakes, as also the rest formerly spoken of, doe infinitely abound with fresh wa- 40 ter fish of all forts!, as also with divers forts of Creatures, as Otters, Beeves, sweete Rats, and

Another Lake. full of Fish Beeues, and fweet Rate. 6. Aponeg.

The fixt River is called Apponick on which there are three Townes; the first is called Appofram, where dwelleth Abochigific. The second is Mesaqueegamic, where dwelleth Amniquin, in which there is seuentie houles and eightie men ; the third is Matamusisconte, in which are eightie houles and ninetie men, and there dwelleth Narracommique.

To the Wellward of this there is another River called Aponeg: it hath at the entrance ten fathoms water, and is a mile broad : it runneth vp into a great Sound of fresh water. Vpon the East fide of this River there are two Townes, the one called Nebamocago, the other called Assbawe. In the first dwelleth Mentaurmet, and hath in his Towne 160, housholds, and some 300, men. In 50 the second dwelleth Hamerbaw, and hath in his Towne eightie housholds and seuentie men. On the West side there is another Towne called Neredoshan, where are 120, housholds, and 100. men. There is a Sagamo or Lord called Sabenaw. Three daies iourney from Aponeg to the Westward, there is a goodly River called Sagadoboc:

the entrance whereof is a mile and an halfe ouer, holding that breadth a daies journey, and then

Satedahoc. Here C. Per ham betil. S. Geo ges Fort, and planted.

it maketh a great Sound of three daies journey broad : in which Sound are fix Hands, foure great and full of Woods, and two leffe without Woods : The greater are called Somaeheoc, Neguino, Neimoc. And in the verie entrance of this River there is another small Hand : from the Well of which Hand to the Maine, there is a Sand that maketh as it were abar, fo that that way is not passable for shipping ; but to the Eastward there is two fathoms water. This Sound duideth it 60 felfe into two branches or armes, the one running North-east twentie foure daies journey, the other North-west thirtie daies iourney into the Maine: At the heads whereof there are two Lakes, the Westermost being eight daies journey long, and foure daies journey broad; and the Eastermost foure daies journey long, and two daies broad. The River of Aponeg runneth vp into this

Sound, and so maketh as it were a great Hand between Sagadabae and it. From the Hand voward the water is fresh, abounding in Salmons, and other fresh, water fish. Some thirteene or fourteen A great Iland. daies journey from the entrance in the North-east branch, there is a little arme of a River that runneth East some daies ioutney, which hath at the entrance foure fathoms water. Vpon this arme there is one ouer fall, which standeth halfea daies iourney aboue this branch : vpon this arme there are foure Townes : The first is called Kenebeke , which hath eightie houses, and one Renthete. handred men. The Lord whereof is Apombamen. The second is Ketangheamphe, and the Sacames name is Octoworthe, who hath in his Towne ninetie housholds, and three hundred and thirtie men. This Towne is foure dayes iourney from Kenebeke, and eight dayes iourney

To the Northward is the third Towne, which they call Naragooc ; where there to from are fifcie houlholds, and one hundred and fiftie men. The chiefe Sagamo of that place is Cocochabamas. And on the small branch that runneth East standeth the fourth Towne, named by M. fakiga ; where there are but eight housholds , and fortie men. Vpon the Northwest branch of this Sound stand two Townes more : The first is called Amereangan, and is difrant from Kenebeke fixe dayes journey. In this place are ninetic housholdes, and two hundred and fixtie men, with two Sagamoes ; the one called Safuea, the other Scamus. Seuen daies iourney hence there is another Sagamo, whole name is Odoworokin, and his Townes name Namercante, wherein are fortie housholds, and one hundred and twentie men. A dayes journey about Namercante there is a downefall, where they cannot passe with their Cannoes, 30 but are inforced to carrie them by Land for the space of a quarter of a mile, and then they put them into the River againe: And twelve dayes journey above this Downfall there is another, where they carrie their Boates as at the first ; and fixe dayes journey more to the North is the head of this River, where is the Lake that is of eight dayes journey long, and foure dayes broad before mentioned. In this Lake there is one Hand; and three dayes iourney from this Lake there is a Towne which is called Buccamganecants, wherein are threefcore houl-

holds, and foure hundred men : And the Sagamo thereof is called Baccatus he. This man and his people are subjects to the Balbabez of Maroofben, and in his Countrey is the farthest limit of his Dominion, where he hath any that doe him homage. To the Westward of Sasadaboc, foure dayes sourcey there is another River called Ashama-30 baga, which hath at the entrance fixe fathoms water, and is halfe a quarter of a mile broad: Afternals it runneth into the Land two dayes journey : and on the East fide there is one Towne cal-

led Agnagebese, wherein are seuentie houses, and two hundred and fortie men, with two Sagames, the one called Mammes, the other Calherokenit.

see, the one casted or semest, the units uper common.

Seem dayes fourney to the South-west of Albamahaga there is another River, that is fixe to.

Seem the entrance: This River is named Stamahaga, and is halfe a myle broad 3 it run- Stamahaga. neth into the Land fiftie dayes journey : but foure dayes from the entrance it is fo narrow. that the Trees growing on each fide doe so crosse with their boughes and bodies on the other, as it permitteth not any meanes to palle with Boates that way : for which cause the Inhabitants that on any occasion are to travell to the head, are forced to goe by Land, ta- A Lake foure 40 king their way voon the West side. At the end of this River there is a Lake of source dayes dayes sourcey iourney long, and two dayes broad, wherein are two Ilands. To the North-Well foure daies long & 2 broad

they call Cretemago, wherein is one Towne. This is the Westermost River of the Dominions of

iourney from this Lake, at the head of this River Shanakatee there is a small Province, which

To the Reader.

Bashabez, and Quibiquiffon the Westermost.

Hauethought good to adde to the English Plantations in New England, those in the neighbour Country of New-found-land. This was first discourred, Ann. 1497. by S. Sebastian Cabot Set 50 forth by King Henry the fewenth : the Voyages followed of M.Rut, Albert de Prato, M. Hore, and others. Ann. 1583, actinall and formall possession, was taken in the right of Queene Elizabeth of glorious memory, and her Successours, by that memorable Knight, Sir Humtrey Gilbert (fee sup.lib. 4. ca. 12.) And in the yeare, 1609. M. John Guy of Bristoll did write a Treatife to animate the English to plant there, a written Copy whereof I have. A. 1610. It pleased bis most excellent Maiestie to grant a Patens for a Plantation, part whereof (the whole might seeme too long for our purpose) we have inserted.

Rerrere 3

CHAP

LIB. X.

LIB.X

CHAP. VII.

The beginning of the Patent for New-found-land; and the Plantation there made by the English, 1610. delinered in a Letter dated thence from M. G v x . to M. SLANY: Also of the weather the three first Winters, and of Captaine WESTON: with other remarkable Occurrents.



1876

A M E S, by the Grace of G o D, of Great Brittaine, France, and Ireland Kine, Defendour of the Faith, &c. To all people to whom these Presents shall come greeting. Know yee, whereas divers Our louing and well disposed Subjects, are defirous to make Plantation to inhabite and to establish a Colony or Colonies, in the Southerne and Easterne parts of the Countrey, and Ile or llands, commonly cale led New-found-land, vnto the Coast and Harbour, whereof the Subjects of this our Realme of Eng. land have for the space of fiftie yeeres and vowards, yeerely vied to refort in no small numbers to fifth intending by fuch Plantation and inhabiting, both to fecure and make fafe the faid Trade of Fishing to Our Subiects for euer; And also, to make some commendable benefit for the vie of mankind by the lands and profits thereof, which hitherto from the beginning (as it feemeth manife(t) hath remained upprofitable : And for better performance of fuch their purpofe and intentions, have humbly befought Our Regall Authoritie and affiftance; Wee being well affared that the fame Land or Countrey adiopning to the forefaid Coafts, where Our Subjects vie to fiftheremaineth fo destitute and desolate of inhabitance, that scarce any one Sauage person bath in many yeeres been eleene in the most parts thereof: And well knowing that the same lying, and being fo vacant is as well for the realous aforefaid, as for many other reasons very commodious for Va and Our Dominions : And that by the Law of Nature, and Nations, We may of Our Royall Authoritie, polletie out felues, and make graunt thereof, without doing wrong to any other Prince, or State confidering they cannot justly pretend any Soueraigntie or Right thereunto, in respect that the same remaineth so vacant and not actually possessed, and inhabited by any Christian, or other 30 whomfoeuer. And therefore, thinking it a matter and action well beleeming a Christian King, to make true vie of that which God from the beginning created for mankind; And therefore intending, not onely to worke and procure the benefit and good of many of Our Subjects, but principally to increase the knowledge of the Omnipotent God, and the propagation of Our Christie an Faith, have graciously accepted of their faid intention, and fuit. And therefore doe of Our freciall grace, certaine knowledge, and meere motion, for Vs, Our Heires, and Successors, give, graunt, and confirme by these Presents, vnto Our right deere, and right welbeloued Coufin, and Coun-Tellor, Henry Earle of Northampton, Keeper of Our Priuy Seale, and to Our truftie and right welbeloued Sir Laurence Tanfield Knight, chiefe Baron of Our Exchequer, Sir lobn Dodridge Knight, one of Our Sergeants at Law, Sir Francis Bacon Knight, Our Sollicitor Generall, Sir Daniel 40 Dun, Sir Walter Cope, Sir Piercinal Willoughby, and Sir lobn Confiable Knights, John Weld Elquire, William Freeman, Ralph Freeman, John Slany, Humfrey Slany, William Turner, Robert Kirkam Gentlemen, John Weld Gentleman, Richard Folhburne, John Browne, Humfrey Spencer, Thomas Juxon, John Stokely, Ellis Crifpe, Thomas Alport, Francis Needeham, William lones, Thomas Langton, Philup Gifford, Iohn Whitting am, Edward Allen, Richard Bowdler, Thomas Iones, Simon Stone, Iohn Short, John Vigars, John Iuxon, Richard Hobby, Robert Alder, Anthony Haueland, Thomas Aldworth, William Lewis, Ichn Guy, Richard Hallworthy, Iohn Langton, Humfrey Hooke, Phillip Guy, William Meredith, Abram lenings, and Iohn Dowghie, their Heires and Affignes. And to tuch, and to many as they doe, or shall hereafter admit to be loyned with them in forme hereafter in these Prefents expressed, whether they goe in their persons to bee planted in the faid Plantation, or whe- 50 ther they goe not, but doe aduenture their Monyes, Goods, and Chattels, that they shall bee one Body, or Comminaltie perpetuall, and shall have perpetuall succession, and one common Seale to ferue for the faid Body, and Comminaltie; And that they, and their fuccessours shall be knowne, called, and incorporated by the name of the Treasurer, and the Company of Adventurers, and Planters of the Citie of London, and Bristoll, for the Colony or Plantation in New-found land, and that they, and their fuccesours shall bee from henceforth for euer inabled, to take, require, and purchale by the name aforesaid (Licence for the same, from Vs, Our Heiresand Succellours fire had, and obtained) any manner of Lands, Tenements, and Heredrizments, Goods, and Chartels, within Our Realme of England, and Dominion of Wales, and that they, and their faceeflours shall beelike wife inabled by the name aforefaid, to plead and be impleaded, before any Our Ind- 60 ges, or Iuflices in any of Our Courts, and in any Actions and Suits what focuer. And Wee doe al-To of Our faid speciall grace, certaine knowledge, and meere motion, for Vs, Our Heires, and Succellours, giue, grant, and confirme vnto the faid Trefurer and Company, and their Succellours, under the referencions, limitations, and declarations hereafter expressed, all that part and porti-

on of the laid Countrie, commonly called New found land, which is fituate, lying and being to the Southward of the paralell line to be conceived to passe by the Cape or hedland, commonly called or knowne by the name of Bonemift Inclusive, which Cape or hedland is to be Northward of the Bay, commonly called Trinity Bay, and also which is situate, lying, and being to the Eastward of the Meridian line, to be conceived to passe by the Cape, or headland, commonly called or knowne by the name of Cape Sanita Maria, or Cape Saint Maries Inclusine, which Cape or headland is to be Eastward of the Bay commonly called the Bay of Placentia, together with the Seas and Hands lying within ten leagues of any part of the Sea coaft of the Countrie aforefaid. and also all those Countries, Lands, and Ilands commonly called Newfound land, which are fituate 10 betweene forty and fix degrees of Northerly latitude, and two and fifty degrees of the like latitude, and alto all the Lands, Soyle, Grounds, Hauens, Ports, Rivers, Mines, af well royall Mines of Gold and Silver, as other Mines, Minerals, Pearles, and precious stones, Woods, Quarries, Marshes, Waters, Fishings, Hunting, Hawking, Fowling, Commodities, and Hereditaments whatsoeuer. together with all Prerogatiues, lurifdictions, Royalties, Priniledges, Franchifes, and Preheminencies, within any the faid Territories, and the precincts thereof what soeuer, and thereto or there abouts, both by Sea and Land, being, or in any fort belonging or appertaining; and which wee by our Letters Patents may or can grant, and in as ample manner and fort, as We or any of Our Noble progenitors haue heretofore granted to any Company, body politique or Corporate, or to any Aduenturer or Aduenturers, Vndertaker, or Vndertakers of any Difcouery, Plantation, or 20 Trafficke, of, in or into any foraine parts what foeuer, and in as large and ample manner, as if the same were herein particularly mentioned and expressed. Neuerthelesse Our will and pleasure is. and We doe by these presents expresseand declare, that there be saued, and reserved vnto all manner of perions of what Nation foeuer, and also to all and every Our louing Subjects, which doe at this present, or hereafter shall trade, or voyage to the parts aforesaid for Fishing, &c. April. 27. A. Reg. 8.

Trinitie Bay. Mafter Guy his Letter to the Treasurer.

CHAP. 7.

Master I o Hn Gvy his Letter to Master SLANY Treasurer, and to the Counsell of the New-found-land Plantation.

R lebt worlbipfull, it may pleafe you to understand, that it was the tenth day of this moment of May before the Barke of Northam, called the Consent, arrived here in New-found-land; notwithflanding that a Ship of Briftoll, called the Lioneffe, came to this Country the second of May in a transing tost a Stop of Stritton, cause are Lioneus, came to tost country use terms of vriay or a month space and the Trial of Dattmouth arrivable role before in fettere deprise. Byracify on which Yogage in flay of the digited all trees making could be done to take any of the places defired: all being possessed being taken. fore. So that the Ship that commeth, whereof as yet there is no newes, is to trust to the place here, which is reserved for ber; which I bope will prove a good place. Some yeeres as great a Vojage hash bin made here, as in any place in this Land : God send ber hitber in Sasette. I have not yet seene any of the Counorie, an interprete interestant of the Barks, and thought it use fit to be ablent bereibing, because it expected daily the arrival of the Barks, and thought it use fit to be ablent bereibines writill fite mere arrived, and

diffracted : but presently upon ber departure, no time, God willing shall be lost, The care that was taken to require generally the Fiftermen to affift us, and to supply our wants, if any should be, was most toyful Fishermens and comfortable to vs, which was most willingly accomplified by the most part of those which I have yet kinde affilianfeene : yet, God be prasfed, such was the state of all things with us, as we were in no want of victuals, but ces. bad a orcat remainder, as you hall after understand.

The state of the Autumne and Winter was in these parts of New-found-land after this manner. In State of the both the moneths of October and November, there were scarce fix dayes wherinit either freezed or snow- weather in both the moneths of October and November, there were jearce jix capes weeting enter jeach of the Sinne: All there— Autumne and ed: and that so little, that presently it was thanked and melted with the strength of the Sinne: All there— Winter, I have sidue of the afore said two months being both warmer and drier then in England. In December we had by me a write-50 sometimes faire weather, sometimes frost and snow, and sometime open weather and raine : for in the latten ioutnall,

ter endit was rainie, and was open weather. All these three moneths the winde was so cartable, as it would declaring the

enery fortnight visite all the points of the Compasse. The most part of lanuary and February unto the middle of March the frost continued : the minde being for the most part Westerly, and now and then Northerly; not with standing three or four etimes, when 4. Nourmber the minde was at South, it began to tham and did raine. That which fell in this feafor was for the most 1610 till the part Snow, which with the heate of the Sunne would be consumed in the open places within a few dayes. Inflot Aprill That which abode longest was in February. During this time many dayes the Sun Cone warme and bright 1011. but That which abode longest was in February. During toutime many dayes the Sun conceverine and origins thought it from morning to night : notwith standing the length of this frostly weather, small brooks that did run alwood seems 60 most in level with a flow course, were not the whole winter three nights over frozen so thicke, as that the lee ted one, the

could be are a Dogge to goe ouer st, which I found by good proofe: for enery morning I went to the brooke ful flance which runneth by our house to walls. The Snow was never above engiteene inches thicke generally out of thereof being the drift : fo that the feare of wanting wood or water neuer tooke bold of us : for albeit we made no pronif. here contain on for them, yet at a minute of an boures warning we were furnified where there were Lakes of frefo wa- Moderate

ter that flood feil and did not run, there it remained frozen able to beare a man almost three moneths and was not disolved untill the middle of Aprill. But where the agre had entrance and iffue cut of them there was no frost. When the winde in the winter time in England is at the North-east one moneth together the frost is greater, and the cold more sharpe, then it is here at all. There was no moneth in all the winter that some of our company did not travell in, either by land or by water, and lie abroad and drinke water, in places distant two, three, four and five leagues from our babitation, and sometimes lay in the woods without fire, and received no barme. When Aprill came our Spring began, and the first that did but may the fmall Refen or the Carinth tree. Our Company was not letted in working abroad, or in the woods and over ayre fifteene dayes the wholewinter. We never wanted the company of Rauens and small Birds: So that the doubt that have bin made of the extremity of the winter feafon in these parts of New-found-land are found by our experience canfelesse; and that not onely men may safely inhabit here without any needs of 10 Stone but Nanigation may be made to and fro from England to thefe parts at any time of the years.

Healthfulnes.

Concerning the bealthfulnessee of these Cour. ries, we bearing him now more then ten morethe von this Voyage, of nine and thirt; persons, which was all our number which wintered here, there are maining one. ly foure; whereof one Thomas Percy Samper died the elementh of December of thought, bring flaine a man in Rochester; which was the cause, being unknowne unto mee until a day before be died, that he came this Voyage. And one other, called Iohn Morris Tyler, onscarred the first of February by reason of a brule. The third, called Marmaduke Whittington, was never perfectly well after be bad the fmall Poxe, which he brought out of Brittoll with him, who died the fifteenth of February. And the fourth called William Scone, baning at the first onely a stiffenesse in one of his knees, kept his bed ten weekes, and would never store his body, which lasinesse brought him to his end, who died the thirteenth of Aprill. Of 20 the rest foure or fine have bin sicke, some three moneths, and some foure moneths; who now are better then they were, except one. All of them, if they had bad as good will to worke, as they had good flomackes to their victuals, would long fince have bin recovered. One Richard Fletcher, that is Mafter Pilot bere and a direct or of the Fishing, reported unto me, that he was one of the company confisting of forty persons, that went in a drumbler of Ipswich, called the Amitie, to the North part of Ireland about eleven recree agoe from London in the late Queenes fernice, under the charge of one Captaine Fleming, and continued there the pace of two yeares: In which time two and thirty died of the Scurnie, and that onely eight of them returned bome, whereof the faid Richard Fletcher was one, So that the accident of death or ficknesse of any persons in these our parts of New-found-land is not to argue any unbealthfulnesse of this Country, 30 no more then Ireland is to be discredited by the loffe of those two and thirty men : notwithstanding that there were to be had fresh victuals and many other helpes, which this Country as yet hath not, but in good time may baue.

Imployment

From the fixt of October untill the fixteenth of May our Company had bin imployed in making of a Store-house to hold our promisions, and a dwelling bouse for our babitation, which was finished about the first of December; with a square inclosure of one hundred and twenty foot long and nintie foot broad, compassing these two houses, and a worke house to worke dry in to make Boates or any other worke out of the raine : and three peeces of Ordnance are planted there to command the Harboroughs upon a platforme made of great posts, and railes, and great Poles fixteene foot long fet upright round about with two Flankers to scoure the quarters. A Boat about tweluc tuns big with a decke is almost similecute faile and row 40 about the headlands: six silving Boates and Pinnesses: a second saw pit at the fresh Lake of two miles in length and the fixt part of a mile broad, standing within twelve score of our habitation, to saw the timber to be had ont of the fresh Lake, in keeping two paire of Sawyers to samplankes for the Said buildings, in ridding of some grounds to sow Corne and garden seedes: in cutting of wood for the Collier, in coling of it: in working at the Smiths Forge Iron worker for all needfull ofes : in costing both by Land and Sea to many places within this Bay of Conception : in making the frame of timber of a farre greater and fairer boufe, then that which as yet we dwell in, which is almost finished, and diners other things. We have fored En Life Corne, all forts of oraine this Spring, which profper well bitheria. Our Goates have lived here all this winter; and there is one lustic Kidde, which was yeared in the dead of winter. Our Swice profeer. Pidgens and Conies will endure exceeding well. Our Poultrie have not onely laied Egges plentifully but there are eigh- 50 teene yong Chickens, that are a weeke old, besides others that are a batching.

The feare of wilde Beasts we have found to be almost needeleffe. Our great Ram-Goate was miffing

fifteene dayes in October, and came home well againe, and is zet well with vs. If the industry of men and

presence of domesticall Cattle were applied to the good of this Countrey of New-found-land, there would

Thortly arife suft cause of contentment to the inhabitants thereof. Many of our Masters and Sea-faring

men freing our fafetic, and hearing what a milde winter we had, and that no Ice had bin feene fleeting in

Cattle prosper

Mcdew.

Deere.

any of the Bayes of this Countrey all this yeare (notwithstanding that then met one bucared and fifty leagues off in the Sea great flore of Ilands of Ice) doe begin to be in lone with the Countres, and doe talke of comming to the land here to inhabit: falling in the reckoning affect of the commond tie that they may make by the banke fishing, as by the husbandry of the Land, befides the ordinary fishing. At the Green- Bay, where some of our Company were affiling in November, they report there is creat flore of good grounds without woods, and there is a thoufand acres together which they fay may be moved this yere. There is great flore of Deere, whereof they faw some divers times, and twice they came within hot of them; and the Grey hound, who is lustie, had a courfe, but could not get upon them. But neerer vnio Cipe Rizo,

Revonic, and Trepatic there is great quantitie of open ground and Stagges. It is most likely that all the Revonte, and trepande over the England before the returne of this our Barte, which hall not make any Sacket will be departed out of England before the returne of this our Barte, which hall not make any Sacres min or my properties of opinion that nothing frontabe fent hither before the returne of the Shinz matter, vectory.

from filbing. For as concerning sending of Cattle, it will be best that it be deserved until the next Spring. And concerning Victuals, in regard of the quantity, we have of it remaining of old, together with that thit is come now, as with the dry fills that here we may be flored with, I am in good hope there will not want any to last till this time twelse moneths. And according to the victuals which hall be found at the end of the filling, the number of persons that shill remaine here all the next winter shall be fitted, that there shall not want : notwithit anding about Albollantide, or the beginning of December, a Ship may be fent, such BO 4 one as our Fleming was with Salt from Rochel; for at any time of the winter Ships may as well see and come buber, as when they doc, effectally before I annary. This Summer I purpose to see most places betweene Cape Rale, Placentia, and Bona vilta, and at the returne of the filbing Ships to entertaine a fit number of men to maintaine bere the winter; and to fet ouer them, and to take the care of all things berewith your patience, one Mafter William Colton, a discreete yong man, and my brother Philip Guy, who have wintered with me, and have promifed me to undertake this charge until my returne the next Spring, or till it hall be otherwise differed of by you, and then together with such of the company as are willing to goe bome, and such others as are not fit longer to be entertained here, I intend to take passage in the filting Ships, and foreturne bome: And then betweene that and the Spring to be present, to sine you mere ample fairfaction in all things, and to take fuch further resolution, as the importance of the enter-30 prife halr: quire: wherein you hall finde me alwayes as ready as ener I bane bin to proceede and goe forward, God willing. And because at my comming home it will be time enough for mee to lay before you mine opinion tenching what is to be undertaken the next yeare, I will forbeare now to write of it; because you flould be the sooner aductifed of our welfare: and because such of the Company as are sent home both for their owne good, and that the emprofitable expense of withals and wages mucht coafe: I have laden little or nothing backe, that the faid Company might the better be at ease in the bold. Onely there is fent three bog (heads of Charceles : where Numero 10 sis, they are of Burch: no. 20 is, of Pine and Spruce. no. 20. 20 s of Firre, being the lightest wood, yet it maketh good Coles, and is wied by our Smith. I fend them because you shall see the goodnesse of each kinde of Cole. Alfo I fend you an Hoeshead of the Skinnes and Eurres of Inch Beafts as have bin taken bere, the particulers whereof appeare in the Bill

While I was writing I had newes of the Vineyard, the Ship which you fend to fishing, to have hin in company with another Ship that is arrised on this fide of the B ante, and that the Master intended to goe to Farillon or Fer-land: God fend bor in Jefers. So praying God for the professing of your Wellhaps, and the whole Company, with boyes that it is dusine Manifes whole Company, with boyes that it is dusine Manifes whole Company, with boyes that it is dusine Manifes whole Company, with boyes that it is dusine Manifes whole Company, with boyes that it is dusine Manifes whole Company, with boyes that it is dusine Manifes whole both generator for good a beginning will also water bleffe our proceedings : my dutte most bumbly remembred, I take my leave. Dated in Cupers Cous the fixteenth of May, 1611.

I have also a Journall of the winde and weather from the latter end of August 1611, till Iune 1612. Writtenby Master William Colfton; and delivered to Master lobs Guy, Governour of the 40 English Colony in New oundland, at his returns from England thither, lune the feuenth 1612. By which it appeareth that the weather was somewhat more intemperate then it had beene the yeare before, but not intolerable, nor perhaps so bad as we have it sometims in England. Their Dogges killed a Wolfe, Otters, Sables, &c. Captaine Easton a Pirat was troublesome to the Eng-Elband terrible to the French there: of whom I have added this Letter; for the Diarie of the weather and occurrents each day would be very tedious.

To Master Io HN SLANY Treasurer, and others of the Councell, and Company of the New-found-land Plantation, the twenty nine of July 1612.

Ight Worlhipfull, by my last of the seuenteenth of Iune. I wrote you of the estate then, of all matters Rhere, by the Holland Ship, which (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined, together with Master Colfton, who bath (I doubt not) made by word of mouth, full relation of all matters. Because the proceedings of one Captaine Peter Ealton a Pirate, and his company fince, are most fit to beknowne, before I souch our Plantation businesse you shall understand, what they have bin unto this time: until the seventeenth of this prefent, the said Captame Easton remained in Harbor de Grace, there trimming, and repairing his Shipping, and commanding not onely the Carpenters of each Ship to doe bit businsse, but hath taken vi-60 Awals, munition, and necessaries from every Ship, together with about one bundred men out of the Bay. to man his Ships, being now in number fix. He purposed to have before he coeth, as is said, out of the land fine hundred men, while he remained there, two fenerall Companies to the number of about one hundred and eightse person: to each Company, being discontented, sole away from him in a Shallop, and tooke two Ships that were filming in Trinitie Bay, one belonging to Barnstable, and one other to Plimmouth, and so intend, to begin to be new beads, of that damnable course of life. As I failed from hence towards Renoole, in a small Barke, I fell into one of their bands: and one of my company with hurt with a Muket. there was one of their crew that wintered with me bere the first yeare, by whose meanes, and because I was in the Barke, they made hew, that they were forry that they had medled with vis : And fo they departed from us, without comming aboutd. That which they fought after was men, to mercafe their number. Be-fore the faid Captaine Eattons departure, he fent three Shops into Trinitic Bay, to flore himselfe with victuals, munition, and men, who are faid to beworfe vsed, then the Ships here be taketh much ordnance from them. The Sud Easton was lately at Saint Iones, and is now, as farre as I can learne, at Feriland. where he taketh bis pleasure, and thereabouts, the rest are to meete him. It is given out, that we will find one Captaine Harry in a Ship to Ireland, to understand newes about his pardon, which if he can obtaine to in t. s' erge and ample manner as be expecteth, then he giveth out, that be will come in: otherwise, it is thought, that he wil get Protection of the Duke of Florence, and that in his course berehence, he will be ner about the Westwards of the Ilands of the Azores, to see whether he can light upon any of the Plate fisete or any good rich brotte before his comming in Albeit, he bath so premailed here to the strengthening of bimselfe, and inconraging of others to attempt the like bereafter : yet, were there that course taken, as I hope hall be, it is a most ensie matter to represse them.

I have also a Diarie of the winter weather, and observations of occurrents from August 1612, till Aprill 1613. December was very full of Snow (for I dare not present the whole) and the fresh-water Lake was frozen ouer, and the Frost and Snow by the tenth of that moneth, as in 20 any part of the two former places. Ianuary was much milder till the foureteenth, from thence it was very frosty. Their Becre was frozen, and they dranke halfe water (an ill remedy to cold.) The Cattell did not well thrine, as comming out of a Countrie not fo cold. And therefore Irib Cattell (where the wincer is warmer) are not fo fit to be transported hither. George Danis died of the Scuruic, and after him Edward Garten, Edward Hartland, John Tucker, and one and twenty were ficke (most of the Scuruie) the whole Colonie was fixtie two. February was much warmer and more temperate. Toby and Grigge died in March, the rest recovered. Turneps being found as good to recouer from the Scurule as the Aneda tree to Iacques Carriers Company. Nicho-Las Guies wife was deliuered of a lufty boy March 27. The Easterly windes and some Currents brought Ilands of Ice from the North Seas, which made the weather colder that Spring then in 30 the depth of winter when the same windes blowed, namely Bast and Northeast, those llands being blowne into the Baies, and the windes from them even in Aprill very snarpe; and the Snow on the tenth of Aprill as thicke as any time that yeare,

In October Iobu Guy with thirteene others in the Indeauour, and fine in the Shallop, went vp. on Discouery. A: Mount Eagle Bay they found flore of Scuruy-graffe on an Iland. In the South bottome of Trinitie Bay, which they called Sauage Harbour, they found Sauages houses, no peo-Copper kettle. ple in them; in one they found a Copper Kettle very bright (you shall haue it as one of them writ it in his owne tearmes) a furre Goune of Elke skin, fome Seale skins, an old faile and a fishing reele. Order was taken that nothing should be diminished, and because the Sauages should know that some had bin there, every thing was removed out of his place, and brought into one of the 40 Cabins, and laid orderly one upon the other, and the Kettle hanged ouer them, wherein there was put some Bisket, and three or foure Amber Beades. This was done to begin to win them by faire meanes. This time of the yeare they hue by hunting; for wee found twelve Elkes hoofes, that were lately killed. A little peece of flesh was brought away, which was found to be a Be-Their houses uer Cod, which is forthcomming to be feene. Their Houses there were nothing but Poles fer in round forme meeting all together aloft, which they couer with Deere skins, they are about ten foote broad, and in the middle they make their fire : one of them was couered with a faile, which

they had gotten from fome (briftian.

All things in this manner left, every one returned by the Moone-light, going by the brinks of the Lake voto the enterance of the made way ; and a little before they came thither, they paf. 50 fed by a new Sauage house almost finished, which was made in a square forme with a small roofe, Their Dares, and so came to the Barke. They have two kinds of Oares, one is about four foot long of one peece of Firre; the other is about ten foot long made of two peeces, one being as long, big, and round as a halfe Pike made of Beech wood, which by likelihood they made of a Biskin Oare, the other is the blade of the Oare, which is let into the end of the long one flit, and whipped very strongly. The short one they wse as a Paddle, and the other as an Oare. The thirtieth, without any further businesse with the Sauages, we departed thence to the Northerne fide of Trinity Bay, and anchored all that night under an Iland. The one and thirtieth, we rowed unto an harbour,

which now is called Alhallowes; which hath adioyning vnto it very high land. Nouember the fixt, two Canoas appeared, and one man alone comming towards vs with 2 60 Flag in his hand of a Wolfes skin, shaking it and making a loud noise, which we tooke to be for a parley : whereupon a white Flag was put out, and the Barke and Shallop rowed towards them,

Sauages.

which the Sauages did not like of, and so tooke them to their Canoas againe, and were going away : whereupon the Barke wheazed voto them, and flour hed the Flag of trace, and came to

anker, which pleafed them, and then they staied: prefently after the Shallop landed Master Whit. tington with the Flagge of truce, who went towards them. Then they rowed into the shoare with one Ganoa, the other standing aloofe off, and landed two men, one of them having the white skin in his hand, and comming towards Mafter Whittington, the Sauage made a loud speech, and shaked the skin, which was answered by Matter Whittington in like manner, and as the Sauage drew neere, he threw downe the white skin on the ground, the like was done by Mafter Whitetington : whereupon both the Sauages paffed over a little water ftreame cowards Mafter Whitington, dancing, leaping, and finging, and comming together, the foremost of them presented vinto him a chaine of leather full of small Periwinckle shels, a spitting knife, and a Feather that stacke in his care : the other gaue him an Arrow without a head; and the former was requited with a linnen Cap, and a hand Towell, who put prefently the linnen Cap your his head; and to the other he game a Knife; and after hand in hand, they all three did fine and dance; youn this, one of our company called Francis Topion went alhoare, vnto whom one of the Sausges came running, and gave him a Chaine, fuch as is before spoken of, who was gratified by Francis Topion with a Knife and a small peece of Brasse. Then all foure together danced, laughing and making fignes of ioy and gladnesse, sometimes striking the brests of our company, and sometimes their owne. When fignes were made that they should be willing to fuffer two of our Company more to come on thoare, for two of theirs more to be landed and that Bread and Drinke should be brought ashoare, they made like wife fignes that they had in their Canoas meate also to eate : upon this the Shalon longowed abourd, and brought lohn Gay and Mafter Teage a shoare, who presented them with a Shirt, two table Napkins, and a Hand-towell, giving them Bread, Butter, and Reasons of the Sunne to eate, and Beere, and Aquauna to drinke; and one of them blowing in the Aquauna Bottle, that made a found, which they fell all into a laughing at. After, Maiter Croste and John Crossber came ashoare, whom they went to salute giving them shell Chaines, who bestowed Gloues upon them. One of the Sauages that came last ashoare, came walking with his Oare in his hand, and feemed to have fome command over the reft, and behaved himfelfe civilly: For when meate was offered him, he drew off his Mitten from his hand before hee would receive it, and gaue an Arrow for a prefent without a head : who was requited with a dozen of Points. After they had all eaten and drunke, one of them went to their Canoa, and brought vis Beeres fiells dried in the imoake or winde, and drawing his Knife from out of his necke, hee cut every man a peece, and that favoured very well. At the first meeting, when figures were made of motion to pate, one of the Sauages prefently ran to the banke fide, and pulled up a roote, and game it the Maller Whittington, which the other Sauage perceiving to be durtie tooke it out of his hand, and went to the water to wash it, and after divided it among the foure, it tafted very well: hee that came ashoare with the Oare in his hand, went and tooke the white skin that they hailed vs with, and gaue it to Master Whitington ; and presently after they did take our white Flagge with them in the Canoa, and made negres vuto vs that we should repaire to our Barke, and so they out off, for it was almost night.

In the two Canoas there were eight men, if none were women (for commonly in every Canoa there is one woman) they are of a reasonable stature, of an ordinary middle fife, they goe bareheaded, wearing their haire fomewhat long, but round : they have no Beards; behinde they have a great locke of haire platted with feathers, like a Hawkes Lure, with a feather in it flanding Their fathioni voright by the crowne of the head, and a small locke platted before, a short Gown made of Stags skins, the Furre innermoft, that ranne downe to the middle of their legges, with fleeues to the middle of their arme, and a Beuer skin about their necke, was all their apparell, faue that one of them had shooes and Mittens, so that all went bare-legged, and most bare-foote. They are full eyed of a blacke colour; the colour of their haire was divers, some blacke, some browne, and some yellow, and their faces something flat and broad, red with Oker, as all their apparell is, and the

reft of their body : they are broad brefted, and bould, and frand very voright. Their Canoa, are about twenty foote long, and foure foote and a halfe broad in the middle a. Their Canoas loft, and for their Keele and timbers, they have thin light peeces of dry Firre, rended as it were lathes: and instead of Boords, they yee the outer Burch barke, which is thin, and hath many folds, fowed together with a three made of a small root quartered. They will carry foure persons well, and weigh not one hundred weight: they are made in forme of a new Moone, flem and flerne alike, and equally distant from the greatest breadth; from the stem and sterne here riseth a yard high a light thin staffe whipped about with small rootes, which they take hold by to bring the Canoa ashoare, that serueth instead of ropes, and a harbour, for every place is to them a harbotough; where they can goe ashoare themselves, they take aland with them their Canoa; and will neuer put to Sea but in a calme, or very faire weather; in the middle the Canca is higher a great

deale then in the Bowe and quarter, they be all bearing from the Keele to the portleffe not with any circular line but with a right line. They had made a Tile with a Saile that they got from fome (bristian, and pisched a dozen poles in the ground ucere, on which were hanged divers Furs, and chaines made of fhels, which at that inftant we fell not in the reckoning to what intent it was done, but after it came to our minde, as hereafter you shall perceiue.

20

CHAP. 8.

The feuenth day we figent in washing, and in beginning a houfe to shelter vs when we should come thisher hereafter, upon a small land of about fine acres of ground, which is injured to the mane with a small Beept is for any bartering with the Sauages there cannot be a sitter place.

The eighth day it began to freeze, and there was thin Ice ouer the found; and because we heard nothing more of the Sauages we began to return out of the Sounds, & comming to the place which the Sauages and made two dayes before fire in, wee found all things remaining there, as it was when we parted, was, an old Boat faile, three or foure thell chaines, about twelne Furres, of Beaturs moit, a Fox skin, a Sable skin, a Bird skin, and an old Mitten, fee tevery one yoon a feuerall pole: whereby we remained fatisfied fully, they were brought thit her of purpose to barter with vs, and that they would fland to our course to leaue for it what wee should thinke good. 18 Because we were not furnished with fit things for to trucks, we tooke onely a Beauer skin, a Sable skin, and a Bird skin, leaning for them a Hatchet, a Knife, and foure Needles threaded. Ma. Act Whitingson had a paire of Cizzars which he left therefor a small Beauers skin, all the reft we left there vintouched, and came that night to the harbour that we were in at our entring, which we call Flag-flaff Harbour-because we tound there the Flag-faffe throwned by the Sauages away, These Sauages by all likelihood were animated to come vinto vs, by reason that we tooke nothing from them at Sauage Eas, and some of them may be of those which dwell there. For in no other place where we were could we perceitue any tokens of any aboade of them, &c.

CHAP. VIII.

Captaine RICHARD WHITBOVERES Voyages to New-foundland, and observations there, and thereof; taken out of his Printed Booke.



r882

Tit well knowne, that my breeding and courfe of: life hath beene fush, as that I have long time for many people on worke, and fepast most of my dairs in trauell, forcially in Merchandizing, and Sex-Voyages. I have beene often in France, Spain, 30 Italy, Paringall, Saway, Demmerks, Normey, Sprincians, the Cameirs, and Siria Italy and the Cameirs of the New Jonath Anad, its alloss for familiarly knowne to me as my

owne Comercy.

In the year 5,88.1 ferued under the then Lord Admirall, as Captaine in a Ship of my owne fee forth at my charge against the Spamile Assessing at deter such time as that service was coded, taking my leave of his Honour, I had his favourable Letters to one Sir Robert Demis, in the Countie of Demo, Rnight; whereby there might be some course taken, that the charge as well of my owne Ship, as also of two other, and a Pinnace, with the victuals, and men therem imploited should not be any way burthensome to me. Wherein there was such order guen by the then right Honorable Lords of the print Countell, that the same was well satisfied: which service is a some before recorded in the Booke as White Hall.

no et cent recorde in the Booke at Francisco Composition of the Pre-Institute of Pre-Instit

In a Voyage to that Countrie, about fix and thirtie yeeres fince, I had chen the command of a worthly Ship of two bundred and twenty tun, fet forth by one Mafter Greake of South-hampters. At that time Sit Humfrey Gibert, a Deusopher Knight, came thinker with two good Ships and Pinnace, and brought with him a large Patent, from the late most renowned Queene Elizabrit, and in her name tooke patietion of that Countrie, in the Harbour of Sain Labrit, whereoff was an ive-wincile. He failed from thence towards Vigninia; and by reason of ione winappy direction in his course, the greatest Ship he had strucke yone. Shelue, on the Coast of Casadiae, and was there both, with most gart of the company in her; And he himselfe being then in a small Panace of twenty tun, in the company of his Vice-Admiral (one Captaine Haper) returning towards England, in a great storme, was outerwhemed with the Sean, and (opersible).

In another Voyage I made thither, about foure and thirty yeeres part, wherein I had the command of a good Ship, partly mine one as that time own Sir Bernard Drake of Dewolfire, Kought, came thither with a Commission, and having divers good Ships vnder his command, hee there took many Portugus Ships laden with Fish and brought them into Soylandas Prizes. Omitting to speak of other Voyages, I made thither, during the late Opiens raign, I will descend to later times. In the vecer 1611, being in New-Jound-Land, at which time that famous Arch-Prizes. Peter

In the yeter 1611, being in New-16883-1888, at Whith time the fathout another lates, we have Eafton, came there, and had with him ten faile of good Ships well furnished and very rich, I was kept eleuen weekes wider his command, and had from him many golden promifes, and much weight offered to be put into my hands, as it is well known: I did perfused him much to defilt from his euill course; his intreaties then rome, being that I would come for Buyeland, to some but having no warrant to touch such goods, I gave him when the Maichte for his pardon: 10 but having no warrant to touch such goods, I gave him when his being ing to one Captaine Rahly of Po in Command; a man whom I know but onely by report: which he kectoringly released. Whereupon I provided men, victuals, and a fraught for the faid Ship, and so sent her home to Dartmouth in Dann, thought I never had to much as thankes for my kindensfe therein. And is leaving Easton, I came for England, and gave notice of his intention, letting passe my Voyage I intended for Naplan, and losh than hy labour and charges: for before my armail, there was a parion granted, and ten thin from Ireland, But Easton houring with those thips and riches vpon the Coalt of Barbary, as he promised, with a longing delire, and full expectation to be called home, loft that hope by a too much delaying of time by him who carried the Pardon. Whreeupon he failed to the Straights of Gibraltar, and was afterwards entertained by the Duke of Sanny, where whom labour he had because the submitted of the Sanny, where whom labour her believe the submitted of the Sanny, where whom labour her believe the submitted in the best with the labour of the Duke of Sanny, where whom labour her believe the submitted when the Duke of Sanny, where whom labour and the submitted in the submitted when the submitted with the submitted with the submitted when the submitted when the submitted when the submitted with the submitted when the submitted with the submitted with the submitted with the submitted with the submit

I was there allo in the yeere 1614 when Sir Henry Manuaring was vpon that Coaft, with fine good Ships (thoughy provided: he caused me to spend much time in his company, and from him I returned into Envisada, though I was bound from thence to Masselia, to make fals of such goods as I then had, and other imploiments, &c.

In the yeere 1615, I returned agains to New-found Land; carrying with mee a Commiffion out of the high Court of Admiralité, voder the great Sale thereof, authoriting me to empannell Initia, and to make inquire vyon Oxth, of liantly abules and diforders committed amongel Fiftermen yeerfy vpon that Coaff, and of the fitteft means to redrefte the fame, with foune caber points, Johnson a front particular relation to the Office of the Lord Admirall.

Whatwas then there done, by vertue of that Commillion, which was wholly executed at my owne charge, hath bin at large by me already ceruified into the high Gours of Administre-Noursheldfe, feeing the fame hath been outellips to use fince, & not produced third good infest; which were expected. It will, in fome concenient place of this Discourse field everye a briefe collection of the former part of my endeutours spent in that fetuice; not dollaboring but it will be as auditable for the fome part of my endeutours spent in that fetuice; not dollaboring but it will be as auditable for the former part of my endeutours spent in that fetuice; not dollaboring the interval of our intended designs, as any other resson I stall deliner.

In the yeere 1616, I had a Ship at New-found stand of a hundred tun, which returning laden from thence, being bound for Lisbose, was mer with by a Frence of Rechell, one David Theboth, who rifled her, took le outerbrow and loffe of my Voyage, in more then the flusshmood 866, both, who rifled her, took le outerbrow and loffe of my Voyage, in more then the flusshmood 860 pounds, and cruelly handled the Mafter and the Company that were in her, and atthough I made good proofe thereof at Lisbose, and repreferred the fame also to this Kingdome, as appearance, after my returne from thehexyet for all this 106. Il could never have any recompense.

Shortly after my returns from Lis bows, I was fent for by a Gentleman, who about a years be forc, by a grant from the Patentees, had vindertaken to fartle people in Non-Sound-Lord; he equanted me with his defignes, & after since conference outling the fishers, we fo concluded, that he gau me a convenience wader his hand and feale for the terms of my hife, with full power cogourne within his circuit vyou that Coal; 'whereupon' (being defrout treasdance chas worke) in Ann 16:18. I failed thinher in a Ship of may owne, which was vickualled by that Gentleman, my also carried from victuals for chose prople which had been formerly from to instabit there: but also carried from victuals for chose prople which had been formerly from to instabit there: but also carried from victuals for chose prople which had been formerly from to instabit there: but also carried from victuals for chose prople which had been formerly from to instabit there: but also carried the Malter of her, the Boattwains, & two others of the best men, with much of her victuals (the refl of the Company for feare running into the wood) and so Bett the Ship as a Prize, whereby our intended Ethins Voyages of both the Shipe-were ourschriewn, and the Plantation

hindered.

Now feeing it pleafed your Maiestie many yeers since, to take good notice of the said Newfound-land, and granted a Patent for a Plantation there; wherein many Honorable and worthy
mens endeuous, and great charge therein, have defensed good commendations (as is well-known)
the which I defire to further with all my best endeauers than do not to differe to dishbethe founthe which I defire to further with all my best endeauers than do not to differe to dishbethe founform of the said of the sa

expectation and defere of the Vindertakers; neither have fuch good effects followed, as may be expected from a thorow performance hereafter. And feeing that no man hath yet published any fit moriues of inducements, whereby to perfwade men to aduenture, or plant there; I have prefumed plainly to lay downe thele following realons, &c.

A Relation of the New-found-land.

En frem leudis an fland, bordertog, spon the continent of America, from which it is diviied by the Sea : fo far diffant, as England is from the neerest part of France, & lieth between of the Gounty 46 and 53, deg. North-latitude His is necessar spacious as Ireland, and lieth necre the course that Ships whighly hold in their return from the Well Indies, and neere halfe the way between Ireland to and Fremis Libell not much needs to remmend the whollome temperature of that Countrie-feeing the greatest part thereof lieth about 3 degrees nearer to the South, then any part of England The tempera doth. And it bath bin well approved by fome of our Nation , who have lived there these many weeres, that summ in the winter it is as pleasant and healthfull as England is, And although the example offone Summer be no certain rulefdrother yeeres; yet thus much alio can I truely affirme. that in the pence 1615 of the many thousands of English, French, Partugal, and others, that were then you that Coaft(among it whom I failed to and iro more then one hundred leagues) I neither faw nor heard in all that exauell of anyman or boy of either of these Nations, that died there during the whole Voyage; neither was so much as any one of them sicke.

The Inhabiran:s, with their nature and customes.

The natural Inhabitants of the Countriers they are but few in number, fo are they fomething 20 rude and lausge people; having neither knowledge of God, nor living under any kinde of civil goperment, In their habits, cuttoms & marmers, they refemble the Indians of the Continent, from whence (Liuppole) they some; they live altogether in the North and West part of the Country, which is feldome frequented by the English But the Enench and Biscaines (who refort thither veerely for the Whale-fishing, and also for the Cod-fish) report them to be an ingenious and tra-Stable possis (being well viei) they are ready to affilt them with great latiour and patience, in the killing, custing and boyling of Whales; and making the Traine Oyle, without expectation of other reward, then a little Bread, or some such small hire.

Bayesinthat

All along the coast of this Countrie, there are many spacious and excellent Bayes, some of them The conveni- ilretching into the land, one towards mother, more when twentie leagues. On the East fide of the Land, see the Bayes of Trinitie and Conception; which firetcheth themselves towards the Santhenad The Row and Conclude Research with the All Santhenad The Row and Conclude Research with the Santhenad Sa Southereefte Tor Bay, and Capelin Bay, lying aliq on the East, firetch toward the West: the Bayes of Trepaffer, Si Mary, Berrell, and Plaifance; on the South part of the Land, extend their armes toward the North : The great Bay of S. Rerenlying on the South-west side of the Land, and East, Souther befrem the gratt Rings of Contenbeing about ewentie leagues diffant, the fame firetcheth toward the East. Andhere Ipray you note, that the bottoms of these Bayes doe meete togetherwishin the compaffe of a small compute by meanes whereof our men passing ours land from Bay to Bay may with much ficultion foouer the whole Countrie.

From the Bay of S. Ween round about the Well taken the Land, till you come to the grand Bang Which lieth on the North-fide of the Countrie; and to from the net; till you come round, back 40 to Twin Bar, are abundance of large and excellene Bayes ; which are the leffe knowne, because not frequenced by the English, who leldome into to the Northward of Triving Bay.

Commodions

And evisate be observed, checkound about the Coast and in the Bayes, there are many small Ilander noment them durther off thesix largue from the land both faire and fruitfull; neither doth and a worcommoness; then are there built by the admirable weekmanship of God; I will onely instance gwe or shree of the shiefest, for forse frientall reafons.

Trinitie Harbon affording di-

Trimble Harbour lyes fortie nine degrees North-daritude, being very commodiquity feasted to seceive flepping in reasonable meather, both to anchor in , and from thence to faile towards either the East , Weft, or South : It hath three Armes or Rivers ; long and large enough 50 for many handred fayle of Ships, to moure fast at Anchor neere a mile from the Harbours month; close adioyning to the Rivers ide, and within the Harbour is much open land, well Roredtwith Graffe feffeiehn, Winter and Summen; to maintaine great flore of ordinary Castell, belides Hogges and Goats; if fugh beatts were carried thither; and it Randeth North, moft of any Harbour in the Land , where our Nation practifeth Fishing ; It is neere vnto a great Bay lying on the Northbide of it, called the Bay of Flowers, to which place no Ships repaire to film; partly in regard of fundry Rockes, and Ledges lying even with the water, and full of damger : bin shiefly (as Loonie cure) bequie the Savage people of that Country doe there in-Sangesliuing babice tratoy of sheen fecretly every years - Some into Trimite. Bay and Harbour, in the night nect to Trimite time, purpolely to fleste Sailers Lupes, Hatchete; Hookes, Knines, and tuch like. And 60 this Bdy is not three, English milesount Land from Trimeie Bay in many places ; which people sie they might bee the used to the knowledge of the true Trinitie indeed, no doubt but it would bee a most sweet and acceptable facrifice to God, an everlasting honour to your Maiefly, and the heavenlight blefling to those poore Creatures, who are buried in their own luperitious

ignorance. The taske thereof would proue easie, if it were but well begun, and constantly seconded by industrious spirits: and no doubt but God himselse would set his hand to reare vp and advance fo noble, to pious, and fo Christian a building. The bottome of the Bay of Trinity lieth within four leagues through the land South-west, The bottoms

Southerly from Trings, as by experience is found, and it comes neere vinto the Bay of Trepaffer, of divers Baies and the bottome of some other Bayes, as I have alreadie touched before.

Trepassey in like manner is as commodious a Harbour, lying in a more temperate climate, al. together. most in 46. degrees, the like latitude, and is both faire and pleasant, and a wholesome Coast, free The Harbone from Rockes and Shelues : fo that of all other Harbours, it lies the South-most of any Harbour of Trepafer ly. to in the Land, and most conveniently to receive our Shipping to and from Virgina, and the ing commodi-Bermuda Hands; and also any other Shipping that shall passe to and from the River of Cana- outly. dy and the Coast thereof; because they viually passe and returne in the fight of the Land of Tree

paffe; and also for some other purposes, as shall be partly declared in the following discourse. The foile of this Countrie in the Vallies and fides of the Mountaines, is fo fruitfull, as The fertilitie of that in divers places, there the Summer naturally produceth out of the fruitfull wombe of the foyle, the earth, without the labour of mans hand, great pleneie of greene Peale and Fitches. faire. round, full and wholesome as our Fitches are in England: of which I have there fed on many times : the hawmes of them are good folder for Castell and other Beafts in the winter, with the helpe of Hay; of which there may be made great flore with little labour in divers places of 20 the Countrie.

Then have you there faire Strawberries red and white, and as faire Raspasse berrie, and Goose- Severallsores. berries, as there be in England; as also multitudes of Bilberries, which are called by some of Fruits there Whortes, and many other delicate Berries (which I cannot name) in great abundance. There growing. are also many other fruites, as small Peares, sowre Cherries, Filberds, &c. And of these Berries and Fruits the ftore is there fo great; that the Marriners of my Ship and Barkes Companie, have often gathered at once, more then halfe an Hogshead would hold; of which divers times eating their fill, I never heard of any man, whose health was thereby any way impaired.

There are also Herbes for Sallets and Broth; as Parille, Alexander, Sorrell, &c. And also Flow- Herbs & Flowa ers, as the red and white Damaske Rofe, with other kindes, which are most beautifull and de- ers both plealightfull, both to the fight and fmell. And questionlesse the Countrie is stored with many Physi- fant and medicall herbs and roots, albeit their vertues are not knowne, because not fought after; yet within cinable, thele few yeares, many of our Nation finding themselves ill, have bruised some of the berbs and Areined fome of the juice into Beere, Wine or Aquanite; and fo by Gods affiftance, after a few drinkings, it hath reftored them to their former health. The like vertue it hath to cure a wound or any iwelling, either by washing the grieued places with some of the lierbes boiled, or by applying them to thereunto (plaitter-wife) which I have feene by often experience. This being the natural fruitfulneffe of the earth, producing such varietie of things, fit for foode, without the labour of man: I might in reason hence inferre, that if the same were manured, and husbanded in fome places, as our grounds are, it would be ape to beare Corne, and no leffe fertill then the Enga

40 lifb foile. But I neede not confine my felfe to probabilities ; feeing our men that have wintred there di- Corn growing uers yeeres, did for a triall and experiment thereof fowe fome small quantitie of Corne, which I there, yeelding faw growing veriefaire; and they found the increase to be great, and the graine very good; and good increase, it is well knowne to me, and divers that trade there yeerely, how that Cabbage, Carrets, Tur-

neps, Lettice, and fuch like, proue well there. In divers parts of the Countrie there is great flore of Deere, & some Hares, manie Foxes, Squir Store of Deere rels, Beuers, Wolues, and Beares, with other forts of Bearts, feruing as well for necessicie, as for &other Beafts profit and delight. Neither let me feeme ridiculous, to annex a matter of noueltie, rather then Ararecxample weight to this discourse. In the yeere 161c, it was well knowne to eight and fortie persons of of the gentle my Companie, and divers other men, that three feuerall times, the Wolves & Beafts of the Coun- nature of the trie came downe neere them to the Sea-fide, where they were labouring about their Fish, howling and making a noise : so that at each time my Mastiffe Dogge went unto them (as the like in that Countrie hath not been feene) the one began to fawne and play with the other, and so went M Guiss Mas together into the Woods, and continued with them, everie of thefe times, nine or ten daies, and did returne voto vs without any burt.

The Land Fowle (befides great number of small Birds flying vp and downe, some without name, that line by foraping their food from the earth in the hardest winter that is) there are also Hawkes great and imall, Partridges, Thrush, and Thrussels abundance, very fat. As also Filladies, Nightingales, and then like, that fing most pleasantly. There are also Birds that line by prey, as 60 Rauens, Gripes, Crowes, &c. For Water-fowle, there is certainly fo good, and as much varietie, as in any partor the world; as Geele, Dicks, Pidgeons, Gulls, Pengnins, and many other forts. Thele Penguins are as bigge as Geefe, and flie not, for they have but a little flort wing, and they multiply to infinitely, vpon a certaine flat Hand, that men drive them from thence vpon a boord Penguins, into their Boates by hundreds at a time; as if God had made the innocencie of fo poore a crea-

Siffiff a

Buffe & Greybound vied a. more deggede ly, one pulling the other the

ture to become such an admirable instrument for the sustentation of man. There are also Godwits. Curlèwes, and a certaine kinde of Fowle are called Oxen and Kine, with fuch like; which Fowle doe not onely fleed those that trade thither greatly for foode, but also they are a great forthering to divers Ships voyages, because the abundance of them is such, that the Fishermen doe bast their hookes with the quarters of Sea-Fowle on them ; and therewith some Ships doe veerely take a great part of their Filhing Voyages, with fome baite, before they can

Fresh water and Springs.

The fresh waters and Springs of that Countrie, are many in number, and withall very pleafant, delightfull and wholesome, that no Countrie in the world hath better. And Fewell for fire is to plen, stull, that there is never like to be want of that commoditie.

Many forts of growing.

In like manner there is great abundance of Trees fit to be imploied in other feruiceable vies: There are Furre and Sproce trees, found, good, and fit to mail Ships withall; and as commodious for boards and buildings as the Spruce and Firre trees of Normay, and out of thele came abundance of Turpentine. No Countrie can thew Pine and Birch trees, of fuch height and greatnesse as those are there; and doubtlelle, if some store of your Maiesties subjects doe once settle there to live, and would be industrious to fearch further, and more throughly into the Countrie, then as vet it hath beene, there might be found many other commodities of good worth. Among the which I may not omit, that there is much probabilitie of finding Mines, and making of Iron

Good hope of Mines, and making of Iron and Pitch. Fift in great

The Ruers also and Harbors are generally stored with delicate Fish, as Salmons, Pearles, Ecles, 20 Herring, Mackerell, Flounders, Launce, Capelin, Cod, and Troutes the fairest factest and tweetell, that I have feene in any part of the world. The like for Lobsters, Crabfish, Muskles, Hens, and other varietie of Shel-hih great flore. And also observe here, that in these places there is vfaully store of the spawne and frie of seuerall forts of fishes: whereby the Sea-towleline so fat as they are there in the winter : And like wife the Beuers, Otters, and fuch like, that feeke their foode in the Ponds, and fresh Rivers. The Seas like wise all along the Coast, doe plentitully abound in other forts of fish as Whales, Spanish Mackerell, Dorrell, Pales, Herring, Hogs, Porpofes, Seales, and such like royall fish &cc. But the chiefe commodity of New-found land yet knowne, and which is growne to be a fet-

Codefishing a great hope of benefit there-

led trade, and that may be much bettered by an orderly Plantation there (if the Tradersthither will take some better course, then formerly they have done, as shall be declared) if the Codfilling upon that Coast, by which our Nation and many other Countries are enricht. And if I should here fet downe a valuation of that Fish, which the French, Biscaines, and Portugals fetch yeerely from this Coast of New-found land, and the Barke, which lieth within fine and twen-The benefit arifing to France tie leagues from the South-Cape of that Countrie, where the French vie to fish Winter and Summer, viually making two Voyages energy yeare thither : (To which places, and to the Coast of Canadr, which lieth neere voto it, are yearely tent from those Countries, more then foure hundred faile of Ships:) It would feeme incredible, yea some men are of opinion, that the people of France, Spaine and Italy, could not so well live, if the benefit of the fishing youn this Coast, and your Mai-fties other Dominions, were taken from them.

on that coast.

voon those

coaffs.

But I trust it will be fossicient, that I give an estimate of our owne trading thicker, and partly of the wealth and commedities we reape thereby, without any curious fearch into other mens profits. In the yeere 1615, when I was at New-found-land with the Commission before mentio-Shipslying vp. ned, which was an occasion of my taking the more particular observations of that Country, there were then on that Coaft, of your Maiesties subjects two hundred and fiftie faile of Ships great and fmell. The burthens and Tunnage of them all, one with another fo neere as I could take notice, allowing enery Ship to be at least threescore tun (for as some of them contained lese, so many of them held more) amounting to more then 1,000, tunnes. Now for every threefcore tun burthen, according to the vivall manning of Ships in those Voyages, agreeing with the note I then tooke, there are to be fet downe twentie men and boyes : by which computation in thefe to two hundred and fittle faile, there were no leffe then fine thouland persons. Now every one of there Ships, to necre as I could gueffe, had about 120000. fifh, and fine tunne of traine Oyle one with another. So that the totall of the Fish in these two hundred and fiftie faile, when it was brought into England, France or Spaine (being fold after the rate of foure pound, for every thoutained in moit find of fifh, fixicore fifhes to the hundred, which is not a pennie a fifh, and if it yeelds leffe, it was

Whee bevaley of the Fishcon Ships did 1-

ill fold) amounted in monie to 1 20000, pound, Now, as I have faid before, allowing to every Ship of fixtie tun, at least five tun of traine Oyle; the totall of that arifeth to 1250, tun; each tun, whether it be fold in England, or elfewhere, being voder-valued at twelve pound. So as the whole value thereof in monie, amounteth to the fum of 15000. pound, which added to the fifth, it will appeare that the totall value of the fifth, and 60 Traine Oyle of those 250. faile of Ships that yeere, might yeelde to your Maietties tubiects better then the Summe of 135000 pound, omitting to reckon the ouer-prices which were made and gotten by the fale thereof in forrain Countries, being much more then what is vivally made at home, and to the like in other yeeres. And this certainly, in my understanding, is a point worthe of confideration, that fo great wealth should yearely be raised, by one sole commodity of that Countrie, vea by one onely fort of fifth, and not vpon any other trade thither, which must needes yeelde, with the imploiments thereof, great riches to your Maiesties Subiests: And this alio to be gathered and brought home by the fole labour and industry of men, without exchange or exportation of our Coine, and native commodities, or other adventure (then of necellarie pronifions for the fifthing) as Salt, Nets, Leads, Hookes, Lines, and the like; and of victuals. as Bread. Brefe, and Porke, in competent measure, according to the number and proportion of men imployed in those Voyages. The connecting of these commodities (gotten by nihing) into mony, cannot choose but be a great benefit to all your Maiesties Kingdomes in many respects.

What the charge in fetting forth of these two hundred and fiftie saile might amount vnto (brwhat the charge in the the control of the control o is) doth yearely fet on worke, and relieue many numbers of people, as Bakers, Brewers, Coopers, ford to feuerall Ship-Carpenters, Smithis, Net-makers, Rope-makers, Linesmakers, Hooke-makers, Beiler and Sonp-Carpenting and many other trades, which with their families base their belt means of more charge. After this the form their New found-law Voyages. Adde vnto them the families of fertants of duties. Was author with and Mafters of fuch Shirps as goe thither, and Mariners with their families, hereby supplied and maintained, * &c.

turer; which I
THE Nations of the Countrey have great flore of red Oaker, which they vie to colour their base omitted Bodies, Bowesand Artowes, and Cannowes withall, which Cannowes are built in shape, as busied in his like the Wherries on the River of Tarmes; but that they are much longer, made with the rinds flory. The Book of Birch trees; which they few very artificially and close together, and ouerlay enery feame with such as defire Turpentine; and in like manner they few the rindes of Spruce crees, round and deepe, in propose to reade it I tion like a Braffe Kettle, to boyle their meate in, which hath beene well proued by three Mati- have also omit ners of a Ship, riding at Anchor by me, who being robbed in the night by the Sauages, of their apparell and divers provisions, did the mext day feeke after them, and came fuddenly where they had fet vo three Tents, and were feafting, having three Canoas by them, and had three Pots made ceedings. of fuch rindes of trees, standing each of them on three Bones boyling with twelue Fowles in each 30 of them; enery Fowle as bigge as a Widgeon, and fome to bigge as a Ducke: they had also ma-

ny fuch pots fo fowed, and fathioned like the leather Beckets that are yied for queeching of fire, and thoic were full of the yalks of Eggos, that they had taken and boiled hard, and to dried fmall, which the Sauages vied in their brosh, as Sugar is wied in some meates : they had great store of the Skins of Deere, Beauers, Beares, Seales, Otters, and divers other fine skins which were well dreffed; as also great flore of feuerall fores of flesh dried; and by shooting off a Musker towards them, they all ran away naked without any apparell, but onely their hags on their heads, which were made of Seales skins, in fashion like our hats, sewed handsomely with narrow bands about them, let round with fine white fiels, fuch as are carried from Portugal to Brafeile; where they passed to the Indians as ready monie. All their three Canoas their Fiesh, Skins, Yolks of Egges. 40 Targets, Bowes and Arrows, and much tine Okar, and divers other things, they tooke & brought away, and shared it amongst those three that tooke it and brought to me the best Canoa. Bowes

and Arrowes, and divers of their Skins, and many other things worth the noting : which may feeme to inuite vs to finde out some other trades with them.

Now also I will not omit to relate something of a strange Creature that I first faw there in the yeere 1610, in a morning early as I was standing by the water side, in the Harbour of Saint Tohns: which I espied verie swittly to come swimming towards me, looking cheerefully, as it had beene a woman, by the Face, Eyes, Nofe, Mouth, Chin eares, Necke and Forehead: It feemed to be fo beautifull, and in those parts to well proportioned, having round about upon the head, all blew strakes, resembling haire, downe to the Necke (but certainly it was haire) for I beheld it long, and another of my companie alfo, yet living, that was not then farre from me; and feeing the 30 same comming so swifely towards mee, I stepped backe, for it was come within the length of a long Pike. Which when this strange Creature faw that I went from it, it presently the reupon dined a little under water, and did fwim to the place where before I landed; whereby I beheld the shoulders and backe downe to the middle, to be as square, white and smooth as the backe of a man, and from the middle to the hinder part, pointing in proportion like a broad hooked Arrowshow it was proportioned in the forepart from the necke and shoulders, I know not; but the fame came shortly after vnto a Boat, wherein one William Hawkridge, then my servant, was, that hath bin fince a Captaine in a Ship to the East Indies, and is lately there imploied againe by Sir Thomas Smith, in the like Voyage; and the same Creature did put both his hands upon the fide

60 of the Boate, and did firiue to come into him and others then in the faid Boate : whereat they were afraid; and one of them strooke it a full blow on the head; whereat it fell off from them: and afterwards it came to two other Boates in the Harbour; the men in them, for feare fled to land : This (I suppose) was a Mermaide. Now because divers have written much of Mermaides, I have prelumed to relate, what is most certaine of such astrange Creature that

Plantarion there; which I

was feene at New-found-land: whether it were a Mermaide or no, I know not; I leave it for others to indge, &c.

CHAP. IX.

The names of divers honorable persons and others who have undertaken to beloe aduance bis Maiesties Flautation in the New-found-land : written by the faid R.W. with extracts of certaine Letters written from thence.

January and Bartle verb He right Honorable, Him. Lord Cary, Vilcount of Fanke-land, Lord Deputic for the Kingdome of Irefand; buth vindertaken to plane a Colonie of his Maielles Subicechin the New familiand, and is well pleased to entertaine look as are walling to be Adventuries with him therein vinon fuch Ecubicities as a service. ling to be Aduenturers with him therein, you fuch Conditions as may appeare in the latter part of this Booke: And in his Lordships absence, hee hath authorized this Agent, Mafter Leonard Wellsted, by warrant under his hand and Seale, to rati- 20

he whatforter shall be by him concluded therein. The faid Master Wellsteds Chamber is more one Matter Garlands house, at the lower end of Same Marting land in the fields.

The right Honorable Sir George Calsere, Knight jone of the principall Secretaries vato his Maieffie, hath also undertaken to planta large Circuit of the Countrie I who hath stready fent this ther this years and the former years, a great number of worn and women; with all neocharie proin fons fit for them; where they have pleafanrly, building of Houresick sting of Land for Corne. and Meddowes, Gabage, Carrets, Turneps, and such like as also for Wood and Tobacco, Likewife they are there preparing to make Salt, for the preferention of Pull another weber, and for divers other feruices. And his Honor is likewife well plained to entertaine fuch as will adventure with him therein, ypon very the condition.

The Worldipfull John Slany of London Merchant, Whols one of the undertakers of the New- 30 found land Pfaniation, and is Freaturer were the Parentees of that Societie, who have maintained a Colomie of his Maiellies lubicote there about twelve years, and they are willing to entertains fuch as will furcher his Maieffies faid Plantation, voor firconditions,

Divers Worthipfull Citizens of the Civie of Brifoll, have vndertaken to plant a large Circuit of that Commerie, & they have maintained a Colony of his Maiefties fubreds there any time thefe five yeeres, who have builded there many faire Houses, and done many other good fernices, who live there very pleasantly, and they are well pleased to entertaine vportar conditions such as will be Aduenturers with them.

The Worthipfull William Vangban of Tarraced, in the Countie of Carmanthen, Doctor of the 40 Civil Law, hath alfo vidertaken to plant a Circuit in the New-found land, and hath in two feuerall yeares sene thirther divers men and women, and hee is willing to entertaine such as will be Aduenterers with him vpon fit conditions.

And there are many other worthy perions Adventurers in the faid Plantation, whose names are not herein mentioned. And it is well hoped, that divers others will also put their helping hand to advance the same, when they are given to understand what honour and benefit may accrue thereby. And if his Maiesties subices of this Kingdome may be willing to set torth from everie feuerall Countrie, but one good Ship yearely thither, with people and prousions fit for them, it will be then not onely a great honour and benefit to his Marettie, but alto a great increase of Shipping and Marriners, and the imploying and inriching of many thoulands of poore people which pow line chargeably to the Parishoners. The which may be easily performed by the able Subiects, to let forth the charge at first, and foeuerie Parish to recour yearely their equall parts of the benefit which may accrue by the faid flocke, and thereby not onely disburden yearely them-Selves of some of those which lie chargeable vnto them within their severall Parishes; but also yeerely yeelde a great benefit to every fewerall Countie, though it lie fomething remote from the Sea-coaft, if they imploy a discreete honest man there, who may yearely be accomptable to eucrie Parish of the charge, and likewise the benefit. The which will not be anie way burdensome or hurtfull vnto any; as the following discourse which I have written will plainly informe them.

Extracts

Extracts of a Letter from Captaine ED WARD WINNE, Governous of the Colony at Ferryland; within the Prounce of Analon, in Newfound-

Land vnro the Right Honourable Sit G t O R G E C A L-YERT Knight, his Maifties Principall Secretary ; July 28. 1622.

My ispleafe your Honour :

I Ponthe fenencemb day of May . I received here your Letters of the wineteenth of February, from V. ibs bands of Robest Stoning. I pan the fin and in evident of the fame; a Ship of Matter Tennins, with your people and promitten arrived here in fafetie: and from the hands of Captaine Powell I received then your thereury Levers whihe fourtemnt of March. And von the last of lune Mafter lames acone beiberiffon Renoule and the Salamaker Master John Hickling from whose hands I received two Letters more, that by Mufter lames, being of the fourth of May, and the other by Hickion of the

ber a limmediately addressed my selfe energy to our businesse. Nativishet anding our diligent labour left Lener tent ber a limmediately addressed my selfe energy to our unimage: Materialist and out authorized for an into England and extraordinary paints taking, it was Alhallentide before our first range of building was fitted for an incovere behabitable being coc.

After Christmafe, weedraployed our schoes in the Woods, especially in band menther, where wee got home as many Boord flockes as afforded us two hundred Boords; and about two bundred Timber trees besides. Mee got home as much ar as many Trees, as furned us to palizado ento the Plantation about foure Acces of ground, for the keaping of of barb man and heaft, with Post and Rayle seven foot bigb, fraggered in the top, the Treesbeing puched upright and fastened walb Spikes and Nayles, who got also togo ber as much Pira-wood as will ferue ve yet thefe two monates. We also fisted much Garden ground for Seed I meane Barley Oases Reale and Beares For addition of building weathank at this prefent a Parlank of founteene food Befides the Chroney, and

twelve foot bread of conservious beight, and a lodging Chamber over it; to each a Chimney of Stone-work with Staires, and a Staires on Erbefides a tenament of two receives or a flory and a balfe, which ferues for a 30 Store boufe til west are exherites prounded. The Borge back barns similed the fe sine weekst; the Salt-works is now aloness ready. Marminssanding obin great sarkefur so for hunds; we have both to beat Bar-They were but ley, Oates, Reefe and Boanes abone she quantuse of one Acres. Of Gurden raome about balfe an Acre : twelve men all tey, Mishan etgle, and the house some we quantus of the acres, by Some are raine about any survives. Wetter that Corne, though fate forms, is not in early grabe Remon and the goodleth Forfesthat I care far, be applied. The lift Winterday is the time of the some a fair to see fate, be lift Winterday in the winter the control of the some and the see fate of the see

For the Country and Clymate : It is better, and not focald at England bibberto. My comfort is, that ing. the Lord is with your Hosper, and your designes: for we have grospered, to the admiration of all the beholders in what is done. And thus with my humble duty remembred, I rest, & c.

Another Letter to Mafter Secretary CALVERT, from Captaine WINNE, of the seuenteenth of August, 1622.

Mey it please your Honour; W E beneterbrean Bartey Oates, and Beanes both early and codded, and though the late foreing which the fact from the contrary, the uppear one fifth that is carried the lates because the contrary, the uppear one fifth that is carried the lates and the contrary. It is uppear one fifth that is carried the lates of the contrary the uppear of the lates of the ranke, that I bane not feene the like in England. Our Beanes are exceeding good : our Peale shall goe 50 pothent compare : for they are in some places as high as a man of an extraordinary stature , Raddill as big as mine arme, Lettice, Cale or Cabbage, Turneps, Carrets, and all the rest is of like goodnesse. We have a Meadow of about three Acres : it flourished lately with many cockets of good Hay, and now it is made up for a Winter feeding. Wee hope to bee well fitted with many Acres of Meadow against another recre : of Passure-land, wee base already to serve at least three hundred beads of Cattell: and to all this, if it please God, a good quantitie of Seed-ground shall be fitted, and such buildings as wee shall be able to

Now in the next place it may please your Honour to understand; That touching this Country, the Summer time here is fo faire. So warme, and of fo good a temperature, that it produceth many Hearbes and Plants very wholfome, medicinable, and delectable, many fruit Trees of fundry kindes, many forts of Berries wholfome to eate, and in measure most abandant : insomuch as many forts of Birds and Beasts are relieved with them in time of Winter, and whereof with further experience I trust to ft d some for the turne of Drers. Our high levells of Land are adorned with Woods, both fare and scemely to behold, and greene all Winter, Within Land there are Plaines innumerable, many of them containing many thou find Acres, very pleasant to see to, and well furnished with Ponds, Brookes and Riners, very plentifull of sus-

CHAP.IO.

Temperate Winter.

Brifto# Planta-

Salt made

Abuses of Fi-

dry forts of Fife : besides store of Decre and other Beasts that yeeld both Food and Furre. Touching the Gile, I find it in many places, of goodnessefarre beyond my expectation: the Earth as good as can be: the june, i fina non many pinces, of growings for the force of Cattle to feed it up, and with good ordering, it would become a most fledfait nourdbmens : whereof the large breed of Cattell to our Northerne Plantation, have lately given proofes sufficient, though since, they have beene most shamefully destroyed. The tion, have tricing even proofes influences, some government, some tree were here is very healthfull, the water both elect and wholfome, and the Winter front & tolerable, continuare overe to very ocumum, and part of March: the day in Winter longer then in England : the niebts both filent and comfortable, producing nothing that can be faid, either borrid or bideom. Neither was it Coold bere the lait Winter as in England the peere before, I remember but terce fenerall dayes of hard cold vere to smit me not extreame neither : for I have knowne greater Froits , and farre greater vo Snowes in our owne Countrey.

At the Brino of Hantation, there is as goodly Rye now growing , as can bee in any part of England : ther are allo well furnified with Swine, and a large breed of Goates, fairer by far then those that were fent

The Stones Kernells, and Seeds that Stoning brought mee, were put into the ground presently after bis arrivall, the which are already of a prettie growth, though late fet; for they came to my hands but voon the fenencenth of May. The Umes that came from Plimouth, doe profper very well : nay, it is to be affured, that any thing that growes in England , will grow and proper very well here: whereby it plainly appeares unto your Houser, what manner of Countrey the same is .

peares unto jour florour to understand, that our Salt-maker bath performed his part with a great 20 deale of sufficiency, by whom I have fent your Honour a Barrell of the best Sait that ener my eres beheld. who with better fetling doth undertake to better this, which bee bath made already, I shall humbly also delive you to remember my last yeeres (nit, that our delicate Harbours and Woods may not bee altogether destroyed. For there hath beene runded this yeare not fo few as 50000. Trees, and they beane out ballast into the Harbors, though I looks on, It may likewife pleafe your Honour to give express order; Fuffishet suro 100 Elarous, come generater, may be such men as shall bee of good firength: whereof wee fand m need such as be sent thinker bereater, may be such men as shall bee of good firength: whereof wee fand m need of fixe Malons, foure Carpenters, two or three good Quarry men, a Slater or two, a Lyme-hurner, and Lyme-stones, a good quantitie of bard Laths; a couple of strong Maids, that (besides other worke) can both Brew and Bake, and to furuik us with Wheeles, Flewpe, and Flax, and a convenient number of Wellcountry Labourers to fit the ground for the Plough. Secondly that no more Boyes or Girles be fent hither, 30 country). Loweviet is to pe tone ground for see a umple, executing the na more to ope or Great is fort better;
I meane, upon your Henry change, nor any other perfors which beam not been fromghey up to labor;
they are unfit for the feef affects. Thirdly, your Hours of needfalls must need to found from Gunner, and a
Gunner with bus necessaries; for the place and time doe requirest. It is a distrible Chartel; they will command the Harbour, and secure all, &c.

A Copie of a Letter from N.H. a Gentleman living at Ferryland in Newfound-Land, to a worthy Friend W. P. of the 18. of August, 1622.

M Thumble service remembred; accounting my selfe bound unto you in a double bond, namely, lose and ante: I could not be unmanisfull to seem the same unto you in these rude lines, thereby to acquaint you with our health . the temperature of the Country, and the commodities and bleffings therein. And first, for the first : Concerning our health, there is not any man among it our company, that bath beene licke Carcely one day lince be came , but bath beene able to follow his worke. The Climate differs but little from England, and I my felfe felt leffe cold bere this Winter, then I did in England the Winter before by much. The arre u sweeter : for I nower smelt any enill sanor in the Country, nor saw any venemous creature to burt mee. Gods bleffings upon this Land are manifold : As for mood and mater, it puffit Bengland : the one most fuece in growing and burming, the other most pleafant to taffe, and good to drive. For in Wint and beliader (I taking mith me Matter Stoning) did couft some con miles in 50 to the Country Weltward from our Plantation, to make some discovery of the Country, and to killa Desre; and being some fine miles into the Land, where wee lodged that night in a Wood, we found much Champion ground, and good leuels of one, two, three or foure hundred Acres together, and at the foot of each Mountaine and Small Hill, wee alwayes met with a faire fresh Riuct, or a sweet Brooke of running water, whereof wee freely drauke, and it did quench my thirst as well as any Beere, and much refresh vi both, and never offended our stomaches at all. Wee travelled three dayes, but found no Deere faue their footings, which came to paffe by meanes of a great fire that had burned the Woods a little before ten miles compasse. It began betweene Formouse and Aquatort; it burned a weeke, and then was quen-

to me you me the most bree was that gaue fire to it, had I thinke hee was a fermant hired by the Detill 60 I to doe that method deed, who [I doe not doubt] will pay him for his worke. In the night the Wolues hing neere, did something affright vs with howlings, but did not hart vs: for wee had Dogs, Fire, and Sword to welcome them. As for the Beares, although there bee many; they beare us no ill will, I thinke, for L bane caten my part of two or stree, and taken ne burt by thems. Foxes heere are many, and at fabital as a

Foxe, yet have wee soonned many of them of their rich coats, which our worthy Governour keepes carefully, as also of Cattagend's and Otters, whose concrings wee preserve as fitting presents for greater perfons. The Formles and Birds of the Land are Partridges, Curlues, Filladayes, Black-birds, Bulfinches. Larbes, Spirrowes, and Juch like. Those of the Sea, are Goofe, Ducks of foure forts, Capderace, Teale, Super, Penguyns, Murres, Hounds, Sanderlings, Redfbanks and others, all very fet, sweete and whol-Come. The Fewles of prey, are Tercells, Golbankes, Falcons, Laners, Sparhankes, Gripes, Offreis, Owles oreat and small, Runens, Guils, Pinerils, and some others; and of most of these forts I bane killed many. As for the plentie of Codfilb it is well knowne unto you. Salmons , Eeles . Mackwell , Herrings, Lance, Caples, Dog fish, Hollibuss, Flowkes, Lobsters, Crabs and Muskles: All and more then all thefe on are here in great plentie, very good and sweet meat. The weld fruit and herries, are small Peares, Cherries Nats, Resberries, Stramberries, Barberries, Demberries, Hurtleberries, with others, all good to cate. Many faire Flowers I have feene here, which I cannot name, although I had learned Gerrards Herball by heart : But mild Rofes are here bosh red and damaike , as fragrant and faire as in England. All our Corne and Seedes baue profested well, and are already growne almost to perfelt maturitie. &c.

THE SECOND PART OF THE TENTH BOOKE.

CHAP. X.

Diners Warlike Fleets fet forth to Sea against the Spaniards, by our English DEBORA, Queene ELIZABETH, of Glorious memory: Her manifold Delineries and Victories.

O I the Man, who fo Mafe nons'd on Plantations, New England, Virgin, Bermude, Newfound-landed, Lawrell for oline take, and make Relations Of Armes, Harmes, Fighes, Prigles, Flights, Depopulations, Romes Buls, Spaines broyles, Irelands mes Frances branded. GOD, Angels, Winds, Som, Men, Elizas Glory Conspire ; Shee outlines Death, in Heaven, in Story.



Aile greatest of English Names, Glorious ELIZABETH! Nor may wee after thy overgand pergrimation out of this World, vant thy true and hearnly home & Country, forget the great Acts of thy earthly Pulgrimage. Thou wait indeed the Mother of English Sea-greatnesse, and didly fifth both (Canarall), home the country to the property of the first by thy (Generalls) not salute alone, but awe and trrrifie the remoteft East and Weft, firetching thy long and firong armes to India, to Chua, to America, to the Persons Seas, to the Californian Coaff and New Albions Scepters: Thou mad't the Northerne Musiconits admire thy Greatnelle: Thou gaueft name to the North-well Straits (Meta Incomita) and the Southern

30 Negros, and Hands of the South-vnknowne-continent which knew not humanitie, were compelled to know Thee; Thou imbracedit the whole earthly Globe in thy Maritime Armes: thou freedit England from Easterlings and Lumbards borrowed legs, and taughtst her not onely to stand and goe without helpe, but become helpe to our friends, and with her own Sea forces to stand against, yea to fland upon, and flampe under free the proudest of her foes. Thou wast a Mother to thy Neighbours, Scots, French, Dutch ; a Mirrour to the remotest of Nations. Great Cumberlands twelue voyages before recited are thine, and the fiery vigor of his Martiall Spirit was kindled at thy bright Lamp, & quickened by the Great Spirit of ELIZABBTH. Drake, Candift, lobn and Rubard Hawkins, Raleigh, Dudley, Sherley, Preston; Greenuile, Loncaster, Wood, Raimund, Lenison; The Ficers se:
Moniton, Winter, Frobiber, Danier, abdother the Star-worthies of Englands Sphere, whole Platiforth by queen net-courfes we haue before related, acknowledge EL 1 ZAS Orb tobe their Eirft and higheft. Elizabeth Mouer. How many Royall Fleets did fince fet forthe In the yeares 85, and 87, effore vader Sir Sup. pag. 1082. Francu Drake, before mentioned , as that allo in 92. under him and Sir lohn Hawkins : another & f Fleet 1590. under Sir lohn Hawkins, and Sir Martin Frobilber to the Hands; also 1591. the Hand

Fleet under the Lord Thomas Howard , now Earle of Suffolke ; that 1592, by Sir John Burroughs

CHAP.IO.

and Sir Robert Croffe, when the Madre de Dies was taken, and another Carrike burnt : An, 1894: Suce lent forth a Fleet to Breft , where Frobuffet was flaine. Another 1899. Vinler the Lord Thomas Howard A. 1600, vinler Sir Richard Lewifin a Fleet to the Hands: 1601. another to Ireland, A. 1602, under Sir Richard Leuison and Sir William Manson; and another under the fame Commanders, 1603. as bequeathing in her fatall extreames, Marine Actions and Glory to her Successour. These and other her Sea-glories I purpose not here to dilate, having already handled fome of them; but have fingled from the reft the actions of 88.89. 96. and 97. premiling fomthing as a Preface of the great deliverances which G id vouchfafed that Virgin Queen.

That Church which is myitically called, The woman drunken with the blond of Saints, had begun

Acre 17.5. Her perfecutithe wombe.

to perfecute her from her birth , Pope Clement the fixt decreeing against her Mothers mariage, 10 and Pope Paul the third thundring a terrible tentence against her Fathers Soueraigntie. And although King Henry had first enacted against his daughters, and after for them by Parliamentary authoritie yet when King Edward (which vied to call her be freet fister Temperance) was dead. there wanted not some which extruded both the lifters, and obtruded another succession. Queene Mary dispersing that storme, raised another, wherein shee was exposed to the c. lumnies of fairefoule-mou hed fycophants, which would have flamed the reigne of that Queene, otherwise branded, as Bort, blondy, unfortunate, with the flaughter of that Royall Virgin: Story and others laving. That in vame the boughs of Herese were lopped off, if the Root were suffered to continue. Long and ftraight imprisonment shee indired, and was forced by them to Massey Confession and externall profession of that Remile Catholicisme, which perhaps had not diverted her enemies deligne, 'ad ... not the perce foft of her enemies Gardiner beene auerted by his owne death; and had not also King Philip with the Spaniards entited to the French fo rich at Inheritance, as by Queene Mariet death without flue (which could fearly from her ficke and aged body be expected) was likely to fall upon Queene Mary of Scotland betrothed to the Dolphin of France, whereby the Spanish great neffe already embroyled enough, was likely to bee ouermatched by the French, increated with addition of three mightle Kingdomes. Queene Mary dying, and Cardinall Poole with mamy Prelates, as it were, attending her exequies with their owne, with generall applause Shee was acknowledged Queen. Her first care was to restore Religion, notwithstanding the dangers thence incompating her ; thee alto rejected the mariage with King Philip, whereof hee had treated with her by the Earle of Feria his Embaffadour, promiting to procure thereunto the Popes difpenfati- 30 on meither admitted fhee the offered march of Charles, fonne to Perdinand the Emperour; and when Henry the French King by the Guifians was perswaded to challenge England to his sonne and daughter in law, cauting them to vie her title Francis & Mary by the Grate of God King and Queene of Scotland, England, and Ireland) and prepared Warres against her, God tooke him out of the world, being il me at a Tilt iport.

The new King and Queene continued their former challenge, Title and Enlignes, which gave no small occasions of those endls, which afterwards involved her, breeding a great dreuft becwit those two greatest Ladies which Christendome had, both Heires to an absolute Source gotic. (). Elizabeths Shee expelled the French out of Scotland, flablished the affaires of Ireland, procured armour and prosperitie. accession this weapons cut of Germany, cauted much Artillery to bee cast of Braste and Iron, new Mynes of 40 & other kinds, Braffe being found at Kefrorcke, and the Rone Calammaris vlefuli for Braffe-workes tound here alfo : prouition for Gunpowder was first at her commandement made here at home : Barwicke forthe B. of Chitified, the Navie furnished, the Sea Townes imitating her example and increasing dayly in Nacoeffer his Reuall forces, niwered by Martiali Spirits for Land and Sea feruice. Thus did God bleffe her that lizious Tractate of Thankshad glorified him in establishing his Truth., not withstanding the pouertie of the State at her giuing. See al o Camentrance, deepely indetted by her predeceffours; and the faint friendship or professed enmitte of Rome and all her disciples. This fhall it bee done to the Woman God will benour, and more then dens Elizabetha. thus: for what was all the time of her reigne but visifitudes of Treasons, Werres, and manifold Annalesof externall and internall broyles, and yet in an admirable working of Divine Grace, when had England folong and flourithing peace at home, or glory and renowme abroad? as if hee which 50 her Reigne.

the boule of George Duke of Clarerec. Ann. 1 569. Prushie impious Bull.

brought light out of darknesse, would permit all such contrary workings to bee the obitet of his goodnesse, the fewell and materialls of ber greatnesse. Arthur Poole, the tourth yeere of her reigne abufed the greatneffe of his bloud with other conspirators, to the Gustan purposes, but taken and sentenced received not bloudie reward from her mild and mercifull hand.

Pope Pine the fift denounceth her excommunicate, discharging her Subiects from loyaltic and alleaseance and arming them against her : Ridolf a Florentine playes the Merchant of Popish wates, the Earles of Northumberland and Westmerland take armes, the Duke of Norfolke is entangled, the French and Spaniard are perswaded by the Pope, who promised also if need were, to ingage to this purpose all the goods of the Sea Apostolike, Chalices, Crosses, and holy Vestments: 60 Onelleus is commanded to inuade England with an Army from the Low-countries : but God protected EL IZABETH, and her Enemies abroad were disappointed, the Traitors at home falling into their owne pit.

About the same time Edmand and Peter, brethten to the Earle of Ormand were busie in Ire-

land, to inflame which rebellion Mendoza came out of Spaine, but before it brake forth into any great combustion it was extinct.

Don lobn of Austria enters next upon the Stage (for I omit Barnes and Musbers, Sir Henry fon of challes Percie, the B. of Ross his attempts, and other Acts and Arts sauouring more of the Foxe then Emperour, the Lion) and pretended a peace, whiles hee intended the deliuerance of the Scottift Queene. 1576. and marrying her, to make himi-life King of England and Sectland, by helpe of fugitives and fauonr of the Pope and Gisfians : and in the midit of his warlike preparations fuddenly dieth. When Pin his impious curses had thus proved bleffings, hee deceaseth, and Gregory his successour in the A. 1572. Pius his impious curles had thus proued blettings, nee deceatern, and orgony in redeemed from the Papacie, and malice to Queene E L I ZABET H, the great Founder of Seminaties, gaping for no firm the lelle then a Kungdome to his base sonne lames Boncompagno, treateth with the Spaniard, who senence ahad (wallowed England alto in his conceit. Thomas Studies an English fugitive promileth fre- gainst Q.Elif. hand to the Popes baltard, who in recompence gives him the titles of Marquelle of Lagen, Earle of Study trea on Wexford and Caterloneb, Vicount of Moroneh and Baron of Rofs (all places of note in Ireland) and made him Generall of eighte hundred Italian Souldiers, the King of Spaine paying their wages. But Sebastian King of Portugall, which should have conducted the Spanish forces against England, being intangled with an African Expedition, procured Stacley to goe chither with him , where A.1578. both loft their lives. And the Spaniard was now diverted from English delignes to those neerer of

Pertugal, there imploying the forces intended against vs. Doctor Nicolas Sanders playeth the next part, who having written in defence of the Popes 1579.1580. to visible Monarchy Eccleinsticall, and belehed out the fowlett flanders of Queen ELIZABETHS Sanders Auparentage that Hell could denile, would make his writings withle by his deeds; and with I ames booke De villo. Fuz Morice an Irifo Traitor, hanne obtained to be the Popes Numio, with a banner confectated Monarch, & of at Rome, and fome forces out of Spaine, entreth Ireland, there fortifieth and winneth Defmond to the forced tale his partie. San lofephon to Howeth with feuen hundred Italians and Spaniards , with Armour for Definificate fue thousand. Their Fort is taken, Fire movies first, and after the Earle with many others staine, Majacaso in which he abus Sanders runnes mad, and wandering vp and downe in the Woods and Mountaines dieth milera- feth he queens bly; the Country is pacified and ELIZABETH proundeth. The Seminaries (Schooles of Trea. Mother with fon) were now erecked at Rime and Rhemes, to become worfe then that Troian Hoyle, Cells of grole hes, nedesperate Empfartes ; incendaries of their owne Countrey: Campion and others fuffer; feditious uerbefore cen Bookes are written against the Queene, whereby Somerail was indigated to kill her.

Mendone the Spanife Embaffadour was commanded to depart our of England, having practice and spite shares fed with Threchmoren and others about an inusion of the Land, and to remove the Queene. A- eves which bout the fame time in manner miraculously, traiterous projects came to light by certaine papers Malice could of one Creighton a Scottish Lefitite, who being taken by Daich Perates tare them and threw them entertain uen of one Creighter a Section tentte; who dring taken by primer relates the tree and intervention then when the into the Son; which woodshoot bee according to lefuntical plots, but by the helpe of the winds was most maheought them backe to the Ship ; wrhich being delivered to Sir William Wade were toyned again, heions & moft and renealed new plots of the Pope, the Spaniard, and Gmilians to insude England: Whereupon ferpent fighted an Afforiation was made by many thorow the Kingdome, binding themselves by their hands and 153. scales to profecute all fuch to death as should attempt any thing against the life of the Queene. O Cardinall Amer for the English Catholikes Eccletiafticall, Inglafield for the Laikes, the Bishop of Cardinall Alex for the English Catholikes Eccletaticali, Ingispeta for the Laters, the blinder of Thankmorton.
Rolle for the Queene of Scotz, were laid to have agreed to deprine the Queene, and to difinherite Creighton, pa-

King IAM Es asa fanourer of Hereite, &c. A. 1 585. Doctor Parry (whom Queene E L I Z A B ET H had before pardoned his life) being Affo action. heartned by Ragazoniss the Popes Nunio in France, and absolued in the Popes name by the Car- Paris treaton dinall Comentie, undertooke to kill the Queene, being thereunto incouraged by Allens booke, Allens booke, teaching that excommunicated Princes may bee dispoyled of lines and Scepters. His partner reneales him, and his mischiefe lighted on himselse. Henry Earle of Northumberland (brother of Earle of Northum Thomas before executed at Torke) flew himselfe in the Tower, and the Lord Chancellour three thumberland. dayes after in the Statte Chamber declared that he had beene committed for traiterous denifes a-Jo gainst the Queen and State; the particulars whereof were then opened by the Atturney Popham. feeking to let free the Queene of Scots , to deltroy the Queene and the Religion , to have dealt with Charles Paget (termed Mope) about these things, with the inuation of England, &c. The Burker rebellion in Ireland fell out that yeere, and many broyles, which coft three thouland 2 who landers their lives at one time, the title Mac-William in Connagh extinguished, and the insolence of the the sin treland. flanders betwixt Scotland and England represed. The Spaniard arrested the English Ships in his Ports, whence the Expeditions of the Earle of Cumberland, and Sir Francis Drate before mentioned tooke their beginning, and the Warres betwixt the two Kingdomes.

A. 1586, that produgious plot of Samege, Balard, Babington, and the rest of that bloudy crue Babington, oc. conspiring to kill the Queene, was detected and the plotters were executed. In 87 the French 60 Embaffadour, a Guifian, conferred with Stafford to kill the Queene, making great promites to that purpole. And he and Moody were further treated with on that point by Trapping his Secretary, French Embal. which by Stafford was reuealed and prevented. But whiles all pretended the freeing of the Queen fad urs plot of Scots, by this meanes they shortned her dayes and freed her of her life. The flory is knowne, and I shall not need to infift upon these later things, nor on Tyrones Tra- Tyrons it, alons

byth fharceft

Logoz. Luke 8,29.

gicall rebellion, the death of fo many thousands English, Irila, Spanish; nor Lopez his plot to poifore the Queene, &c. I but propound these things to excite English thankfulnesse to God, and hatred to that Whoore, drungen wub bloud, which hath thus enchanted the Kings of the earth; yea like the Legion Deuill bath broken all chaines of allegeance, and hath initiated in hellish mysteries naturall fworne lubiects to inuation and mutuall maffacres ; yea to account it tolerable, lawfull. commendable, meritorious, and in ordine ad deum, necessary (ô times ! ô monsters!) to kill and murcher; and hath made it a compendious way to win the Kingdome of Heauen by killing the Kings of the Earth. And if the bloud of fo many Saints from Abel to Zacharias were threatned to fall on Ierufalem, fometimes the boly Citie; what may be faid of Rome? whose Temporall Monarchy first founded in the bloud of Rhemus brother of Romalus, proceeded in exiling their owne Kings, and in exterminating worlds of men out of the world (Cafar alone is faid in fiftie battells to have flaine ' 1192000. men, besides what was slaine in his Civil Warres) in a world of time together: exceeded in the fanctitie of the bloud of fo many thousand Saints and Martyrs in ten difmall persecutions, and yet fell short of the pretended Catholike Rome, that mysticall

Rome, Citie of murchers & haters of tings * Plind-7.5. 25.

Woman drunken with bloud.

Prefent Rome greatermanflaier & Saint-Erbnike.

I dare boldly aver, and by History make it good, (yea " in great part to a judicious observer the former parts of this Worke have shewed) that since the Papall challenge of Monarchy over Monarkes by Gregory the feuenth, the Deuills thousand yeeres of imprisonment being expired, Antichriftian Rome hath by Sword, Fire, Warres, Ciuill and Forraine, and other inhumane. immane. Etonice. * See to 1.4.8: distellish furies procured the shedding of more humans bloud, then ever Heathen Rome in farre 20. 6.1.4.3.4.6 6. longer time had fhed to erect their Heathenish Empire, from the dayes of Romalus which foun-1.2.c.1 10,2.1.8. ded the Citie to Angustine which grounded and stablished the Empire, and Tiberine under whom Christ was crucified : Yea if you adde the perfecutions of the succeeding Emperors till Inlien the Apollata ; yet haue the later Antichristian exceeded in numbers, as much as the executions of Warres are viually beyond all comparison of the Iudiciall and Legall. I adde that as the Ethnike Romans spilt none (except in persecutions) but Ethnike bloud : so the pretended Christan Romilts (except in the Indees and the Holy Land Wars) fled none in this account but Christian. This may feem a prodigal speech & prodigious paradox, to those which know not the millions which perished in the Holy Land Wars, fet & kept on foot about 200 veers together by Papall ambition : fo many hundreths of thousands which perished in the same times, by open warres made by 30 the Popes Crufados against the Albigenses , Waldenses , and what other names it pleased them to giue to better men then themselues, in almost eightie yeeres continued warres : So many Civill Warres in Germany, the fubiects and competitors armed by Crufados against the Emperours till that Eagle was plocked; where one Henry whom Hildebrand first deposed, fought fixtie battells: In England, France, Italy, and other parts, in the daies of King lobn, Fredericke the fecond, Conrade, Memfred, Philip, and others : and after that, the long Bobemian broiles drenched in bloud after Hulles fire ; and lately fo innumerable millions (pauperis est numerate) in America and the llands Pricits, agents which these bookes plainly cuince to have beene written in bloud by Roman authoritie and pretence; not to make mention of the Philippinas, the East Indies, the Wars in Sicile and Maples; and the Greeke Empire first weakned, and after by Romen ambition lost : how many hundreth thou- 40 The Pope Ma. fands hath France loft of Christians within these last hundreth yeeres ! how many more haue tafter Workman. Ken their fatall farewells in the Belgian quarrell ! How doe thole Low-countries and Germany still flow in bloud ! That I fpeake not of our England and Ireland ! But I hate the thoughts of those things, and therefore come to the \$8, businesse, that also set on worke from Rome, the widest and openeft passage from hell for his ingresse and egresse, that was a Muriberer from the beginning, and in the last ages turning himselfe into an Angell of light , hath there established his principall Vicar under pretended titles and leemings of Christ and Christianitie. Yea this is also remarkable that in the treasons against Queene Elizabeth, and in those against our present Souereigne King lames (whom God long preserue) by Wasson, Clarke, Cobbam, &c. at first, and in the Master and Monfter-peece (which was now ready to breake forth with violence and virulence from Hell, 50 and to blow up all other Treasons) that of the Gun-powder Traitors ; still the busiest part of the Tragedie is committed to some Romish Prieft or Iefuite, who should fit and frame the resolute kil the Queen, diffolutenesse of wild spirits to the execution of it or themselves. The Master Workman (Isay He and Brifton not Beelzebub) is the Pope, as appeareth in those before mentioned, and in this of 88. whose Bull & Marin were declaratory against that Worthy of women followeth, as the contents thereof are delivered by Meteransu, to whose labours in this Story wee are principally indetted. It was to be published in the Popes name by Cardinall Allen after the Nauie had arrived in England, to command the English to yeeld their obedience to the Duke of Parms. From the Pope therefore wee will begin

our 88 Story, touching the preparation and fuccesse of that Armada fignamed inuincible.

Allen or Alan was by Spanish procurement

made Cardinall for this purpole; and had written a violent books which heartned Parry to Au hors of the Rhem: fb Tranflation and Notes of the

CHAP. XI.

Octavefimus Octavus mirabilis Annus.

The Popes Buil, the King of Spaines preparations, the Duke of Medinas Expedition, the Duke of Parmas Forces, for the invalion of England: divers Sea-fights twixt the English and Spanish Fleets, the Sea flight of the Spanift, and milerable disasters in their returne. Their lies. The Queens Religious Triumph.

Ixtus Quintus, by dinine providence, unwerfall Pastor of the Flock of Christ, to whom by continued and lawfull succession, the administration and charge of the Catholike Church Papall pretenpertaineth; taking into consideration the miseries and calamities mbereinto the samous ded causes of deprining the Kinedomes of England and Ireland had false, which in times pass were commended so Queene. much for Vertues, Religion, and Christian Pietie and Obedience, and now by the im- Fuguines impious and whiast Empire of Elizibeth pretended Queene, and a few adhering to her, not potent Zeale.

onely to base come to a disolute estate and dangerous to it selfe, but also as infected and venemens mem. Spanish argubers are wont to easse infection and disease to the whole body of Christians: and wanting there the due remedies which elswhere by help of Christian Princes he vseib, to prenent abuses & tomaintaine Ecclesialis with with will. call discipline: Forasmuch as Henry the Eight, late King of England, a Rebell and forsaker of the Sea 2 Act. 24.14. 10 Apostolite separated bimselfe and bis from the communion of Christians by force and Elizabeth the pre- By the way Apostoure-separated timeses, not without great committee and danger of the Neighbour Regions, which they call lent V surper persenereth therein, not without great committee and danger of the Neighbour Regions, heresies owerlener jurger per jemeretu tuerem, met ette, fo that there is no hope that those Kingdomes may at any time frip wee the be reformed and reduced to the exercise of Christian Religion, true peace and quietnesse, except see be de- God of our faprined of the administration of the Kingdome.

Therefore our most holy Father desiring (as his Office requireth) to prouide for this easil, with pre- using allthings Therefore our most hoty Father descring (as his Universality of the vinuerfall Church , incited as well Law, &c. by his owne, as his predecessor affection and zeale, alway borne toward England; and moned by the con- b They make tinual follicitation, vehement and importunate exhortation of very many, and those principal men of the tchime or faid Nation; bee bath view great diligence with diners Princes, and especially with the Mightie and Ca-tent, which faid Nation; bee bath view great diligence with timers princes, and especially miles on prigotis and say, vanishy exthough King of Spaine, imploving but aide bereunto, by the reurience which hee heareth the Roman Sea, communicate onounce a long of spatting moreovering to a line between the bat bad with the Kings of England, by his fin- & cutofffrom gular charitie and benenolence formerly shewed to the Catholines of that Country; for obtaining by that the body of meanes bis desire of peace and quietnesse in his Neighbour Praninces for his studie and readinesse towards Christ, as Io.a. the propagation of Catholike Religion, and lastly for the furtherance of the common good of Europe; Sinte illes, cothe propagation of Catholine Religion, and initify of the following being him bereunto, that that Wo cifunt, och bath belonght him to confar all the Forces which God almightie hath einen him bereunto, that that Wo cifunt, och bath belonght him to confar all the Forces which God almightie hath einen him bereunto, that that Wo cifunt ille vain verous view in the degree, and that the enill men and burifull to mankind, which adhere to latryme. her may be panished, and that Kingdome may bee reduced to certaine reformation and quietnesse, from d Withlie and which ereat sood and many commodities to the Common-wealth might be to be expected. Wherefore that all thee reicebee might make knowne to all the world the lustice of this Cause, and the Subsects also of that Kingdome ted the title of Dee migos mare comme to an ine worth of antine of the might demonice the inft indeement of God against her 31 bath to awild from a might fully he farisfied, likewife that her might demonice the inft indeement of God against her 31 bath to awild from to swind from fermed meet to his Holinesse, with the Declaratory Sentence made against this Woman, to shem the cause appearance of alfo why be had fo proceeded against her.

First, because thee is an Heretike a and Schismatike b and therefore excommunicated of two Popes, declared her bis predecessors, contumacione, disobedient to God aud the supreme . Sea : Also shee tooke to ber selfe with presumptions vsurpation supreme Authoritie and Ecclesiatical surifiction over the Soules & of with prefumptions of arpation supreme Authorstie and Ecclesiatrical surifaction over the Soules a of power over all Men, against Nature, Reason, against all Lawes Dinine and Humane; and that as well by vertue of her subjects, to the fentences vinen by Clement she Seventh, and Paul the Third, as of the public declaration of King command the Henry ber Father. Thirdly, becamfe shee vsurped the Kingdome against all right, not onely in regard of to do their dutheory per rainer. I un any vecumje processing the old Contracts in times past made between the Sea Apother offices, folke and the Kingdome of England in the time of Henry the Second, when the faid Kingdome recon- exclusing forciled it felfe to the Roman Sea, for the murther of Sami Thomas of Canturbury. At which time it rain juridictis was agreed c, that none should bee taken for lawfull King of England mulbout consent of the Great Bi- on: as David, was agreed c, that none should bee taken for lawfull ting of England uniformed of Oath. Which thing Sal moncou-skop; which convention or contract was after renewed by King John, and confirmed by Oath. Which thing famine, & her was most profitable, and so established by the request of the Nobilitie and People.

For many and crieuous insures f, extersions, and other wrongs perpetrated by her and by others, had done exthrough her permission, against the distressed innocent Subjects of both Kingdomes. For feditions and rebellions between the Inhabitants of neighbour Proninces, raifed against their lawful or overPricits,

Magistrate and & natural Prince, by which shee seduced innumerable Scules and many potent Regions. O impudency-What King of Expland ever fought the Popes confirmation: King 1-ba by Papall Arts made himfelife tributary, but 60 without and against his subjects concentras Ma-Paris & R.W. inducer then lining testifie at largest at writing being burnt and disclaimed the fibirely also revelling against the Author thereof. f Quinterum telemman reception: Shee wronged them much infound her throat from their blades. 2 Vinaturall Prince, which not centent with inheritance, would have made conquett of the Protimees, to to fwall-wall their priviledges, and fubice them to for rance inquifition and ruletto baving with toe millions of treasure and the bass of 40000 Christians, the folfe of those which would have bought and fought to be his subjects, if nee would have kept the oathes which the Pope dispensed with, twice made to them; and ruled as his predecessors had done.

Ttttttt

CHAP.

tainment to

thus roared.

The Spaniard

entertained

nor admir

as his Ance-

the inuader &

diff wher of

peace? And

tes ?

handled as

they had

lated.

O AD.1.2.

they are Abo-

them liers.

uer at their

her Funitiues.

For entertainment h given to Fugitive Heretikes, and Rebells, wicked and publike malefactors, and h The Pope undertaking their protection, to the great loffe and detriment of Christian Regions. contelfeth hee Alfo for fending to and procuring the Tutke, that our mightie i and craell Enemy, to innade Chrigane enter-

Stendome and disturbe & the Setled Peace. the Oucenes

naome and disturbe ... the series reason of the Saints of God, for holy ... B. B. ill handled, spoyled, im-Fug times, and protoned, and diners torments and miserable tortures and slaughters done to the members of the holy and for their faltes.

Catoning funcio.

For the whomane and united imprisonment and crueltie, lately exercifed against the most gracious

Princesse, Mary Queene of Scotland, which had sted into England, having first a received promote of fecuritie, pretection, and aide.

and the might For abolifying the true Catholike Religion o, the profanation of boly Sacraments, alfo of Monafte. 10 those whom he ries P. Temples, Persons consecrated to the memory of Saints, and all other things which make or may help would not juf- to eternall life.

fer to obey him And concerning Secular off aires 9 and the State politike, for that the ancient Nobilitie being rejected and excluded, thee bath promoted obscure and unworthy men to Civill and Ecclesiasticall dignities: flors had done i A mighty & and by this meanes hash made a fale of Lames and Rights; and lastly for the absolute tyranny t which Thee vierpeth and continually exerciseth, to the great contempt of God, oppression of the miserable & People cruell torgery of his Holiness the loffe of Soules, and destruction of Countries.

k Whorshere Wherefore seeing those affences are of that nature and moment, that some make ber uncapable of the Wherefore seeing twose agences are vy tom me Holmesso by the power of Almightse God, and of offor-Rolicall authoritie committed to him, doth renew the sentence of his predecessors, Pius the Fifth, and Green. whereto tends ty t the Thirteenth, whereby the faid Elizabeth is excommunicated and deprined of her Kingdome, And all this but to different by the sepresent Letters, the same Elizabeth agains excommunicateth and deprine the of all Rorall ditanuit peace? Dignitie, Titles, Rights and pretences to the first Kingdomes of England and Iteland; declaring her ille-Gracino deli- gitimate, and a true Usurper of the Kingdomes; and absoluing the Subjects of that Land, and all a ditione queren- there from all dutie " of Dominion , Fidelitie and Obedience , and from the Oath z ginen to her or to

m Roner.&c. Enriber, exprelly commanding under paine of the anger 7 of God Almightie, that name of what focus was all handled condition or degree, after bee shall have notice bereof; doe presume to yeold her any obedience, favour, or because they ande what souner but that all man impley all their power and indenous, that due punishment man be taken of her; that she at length, which hath separated her selfe by many wayes from God and his Church, see were not fo ing her felfe for faken and destitute of all worldly refuse, way be brought to acknowledge her fault, and to bandled Cransubject ber selfe to the indgement of the most High, with all submission. mer Ridley, 8cc.

And therefore commands all and enery the Inhabitants of the faid Kingdomes , and all others , that n See M.Camdens History, a with all their power they execute the premisfes, withdrawing all belpe publike and primate from the faid perfon and ber adherents : and that as foone as they shall be hereof certified, they some themselmes to the Ca-A.1568. + Feg. where those tholike Armie, led by the Illustrious and victorious Prince Alexander Farnelius, Dake of Parma, and occurrents are Deputie of the Catholike King; with all the forces they can gather, that they may affilt the faid deprinaotherwise retion and punishment of the parties afore faid, and the reststution of the holy Catholike Religion, declaring that all which hall from themselves disobedient z to this Mandate, shall not escape deserved Thou bart tried รมทร์ไกรเลยร. them that (ay

Be it knowne further to all men, that it is not the purpose of his Holinesse, the Catholike King, or the faid Duces Highnesse, in this Expedition, to oppresse the faid Kingdomes, or thereof to make conquest files and are not or to alter the Lawes, Priviledges or Customes thereof, or to deprine any man there, of his libertie or life and haft found (except the rebellious and contumacious) or to bring any change a, besides that which shall be judged fit p How much by common voyces of his Holinesse, the Catholike Maiesty and the States of that Kingdome, to the restoring and continuing of the Catholike Religion, and the punishment of that Usurper and ber adherents: in demolifing Certifying and securing all, that all controversies which may happen by the deprination of that Woman the mean is of (whether they hall arife about prinate mens affaires, or about the Royall Succession, or betwint the Clergy fuperflition. and List, or what somer other discords) they shall be all compounded and decided according to the Lames, 50 how holy foc-Initice, and Christian equitie, without any minry or damage. Neither shall it onely bee provided conses niently that the Catholikes which have suffered so many enills be not spoyled, but favour is also granted to first institutió? So the braien all others, which being pentient shall submit themselves wato the Chiefe Commander of the Army. And

uine type of Christ crucified was demolished, See. q vis dicamquid si ?magnus es ardello. Pitie she promoted not Cardinal Allen or Father Parfine, the one to Lambeth, the other to Tib I flould fay the Broad Scale. r What a faire deliverance from this tyranny fould we have had by the Spanish Whips and Knives? f We had indeed bin miserable, had we false into the hands of such Phyficians. The holineife of three Popes curfe her, and the holy and bleffed Trinitie bleffe her.u Dutie and faith acknowledged and yet denied ! Is not this babbling? x But God will not hold him guiltleffe that taketh his name in vaine. y Yet this is the first commandement of promife; fo contrary are Gods bleffing and the Popes curfing Eph. 6.2. Z. A false Prophet! for neither did England ether profeser more, or feare the Pope or Spaniard leffe, or so much loue or honour Heror any of her progenitors, as Her Maietty after this: fuch a bleffed harueft God raifed out of this Curfers curfed feed. a The Duke of Medica Generall of this Fleet was of an- 60 other mind, who being told of Catholikes in England which would take his part, &c. answered, That he must make way how forces for his Mafter. And were not Count Egmond and Count Horne and others, Papills, which D' Alua executed ? There were 700. Eng-Life Fugitiues in Term is Array for this invafion, Qui omnum delpicatifime habiti, the baggage of the Armies eftimate; nor was to spectiginen to Stant; and westmerland, Traitors of note, Sed pro impietate in Patriam omni adieu probibilit de tanquam pessima austicia merita non fine detestatione resetts, faith Camden. They were excluded all Councells of Warre; for men vie to love the Treason and hate the Traytor.

whereas he due information made, wee are given to understand that there are many innocents, which through invorance of Christian Faith having falme, bane huberto erred onely of ignorance, being nenertheleffe restance amongst Heretikes : wee purpofe not at all to purify (uch per funs , but to maure pariently, till by conference of learned men, and good found counfells, they may be better instructed touching the truth and not her themselves obstinate, but desirous to prevent the effusion of Christian blond , and defirmation of Countries which may be expected by the refistance of some wicked principall adversaries.

Therefore by these Presents wee declare, that it is not onely lawfull for all, as well publice as prinate Matth . 6 se persons, besides these which have undertaken this Expedition, to lay hand on the said Murper, and other industrial ber adverents, to take them and deliner them to the (atholike fide; but alfothis deed shall bee estremed of went to the 10 vs for a fact hfull and singular service, and shall be recompensed with very great rewards, according to the chiefe Prices. on all the persons taken or betrajed. All others also which heretofore have given ander, or shall Priest presents bereafter affict to the punishment of the enill, and the reftitution of Catholike Religion in those King- the Traitor & domes Shall receive their reward and recompence, increased by vs in Dignities and Honours, as their good courraits to and faithfull fernice to the Common-wealth fhall defire, by berein as much as may be care thall be had that more then 20. and faithfull fermice to the Common-weatty jout agire, or vertue as much more property from the picces, before reckning and respect be bolden of the antient and hunourable Honfes and Stockes of the faid Kingdomes. he be followed Lailly free accesse and safe conduct by these Presents is granted to all men, which will some themselves to withwhat will the Caibbile Armie, and will bring thereto proussion, furniture of warre, and other necessivist, full and y would mare liberall (asisfaction is promised for all things, which for the fermice and commodistic of the faid Armie sewils Pich. Thall be supplied by them. And all are adminished and plainty commanded, that they doe their vimost in- wite cul, com-20 denour and deligence, that by their meanes cause may bee removed of vsing force in punishing those which Parce to hele Shall neolect this Precept.

Furthermore the 'Holy Father, in his fatherly lowe and singular affection to this Expedition, out of the "Holy Fa! Spiritual Treasure of the boly (burch (which is committed to bis custody and dispensation) doth libe the rally grant plenary Indulgences and remission of Sins, to all those which shall bring any aid or factour to the * Pro thesauro deprination and punishing of the Said persons, and the reformation of both Kingdomes: to wit, after due pe- carbonis.

The Pope nance. Contrition and Confession had according to the Lawes of God and Men, and the received custome graves that liamongst Christians.

berally which is all-ly.

NO w that all might bee carried more closely, and that this Expedition might feeme made against the Low-countries, rather then the English, a solemne meeting was appointed first neer Offend, after at Bronchburg in Flanders for a treaty of peace with the Queene of England. Henry Earle of Derby, the Lord Cobbam, Sir I ames Croft, D. Dale ; D. Rogers were fent. Richardet plainly faid that he knew not what might be put in practife in the meane time against England. But the Prince and he being demanded if their were any enterprise of intrading England, they veterly denied any thoughts the rot. Count Aremberg. Campignie, Rechardot, Maes & Garnier were the Princes Delegaces, and professed that they had fufficient Commission for treaty of peace. First a truce was propounded by the English and by them cemed. Then the English required that the ancient leagues betwixt the Kingsot England and the House of Burgundy might be renewed and confirmed, that the Low-countrimen might mior their prin ledges and libertie of conference, that Spamiards and forraine forces might be removed, that neither they nor their neighbours should have cause to seare; and then the Queene would redeliner her soure Cautionary. Townes. They whiled them with fuch answere as futed to their purpoles, and long adoe was made in weating and vnweating Penelopes web till the Spanish Armada was upon the Coalt, and the very Ordnance proclaimed in their eares a jurceafe from further illusions. Then did Parma dismisse them, pulled off his Vitor, vncafing the Fox, and ruly appearing in the Lions skin. But let vs now come to take view of this Fleet, and the preparations made for it.

The King of Spaine having with small fruit, about twenty yeeres together waged warre against the Netherlands after deliberation with his Countellours thereabout, thought it most convenient to affaul t them once again by Sea, which had bin attempted fundry times heretofore; but not with for forces sufficient. Vinto the which expedition it flood him now in hand to ioine great puissance, as having the English people his protested enemies; whose Iland is so situate, that it may either greatly helpe or hinder all fuch as fails into those parts. For which cause he thought good first of all to inuade England, being periwaded by his Secretary Esconedo, and by diners other well experienced Spaniards and Dutchmen, and by many English fogitives, that the conquest of that Iland was leffedifficult, then the conquest of Holland and Zealand. Moreover the Spannards were of opinion, that it would be farre more behoovefull for their King to conquer England and the Low countries all at once, then to bee constrained continually to maintaine a warlike Nauie to defend his East and West Indie Fleets, from the English Drake, and from such like valiant enemies.

And for the fame purpote the King Catholike, had given commandement long before in Italy & 60 Spaine, that a great quantitie of timber should be felled for the building of Ships; and had belides made great preparation of things and furniture requilite for fuch an expedition as namely in tounding of brasen Ordance, in storing up of corn and victuals, in training of men to vie warlike weapons, in leaving and multering of Souldiers: infomuch that about the beginning of the yeer 1,88. he had finished such a mightie Nauie, & brought it into Lisbon Hauen, as neuer the like had before Ttttttt 2 that time failed upon the Ocean Sea.

1800

Awary large and particular description of this Nauie was put in print and published by the Spaniards, the translated copy whereof, in perp-tuam rei memoriam, to incite English thankfulneffe. I have here interted, but abridged.

Squadron of the Galeons of Portugall.

He Galeon S. Martin, Captain Generall of the Armie, of 1000 tuns, carrieth 177 Mariners. o Souldiers, cholen men, 50. Peeces of Canon, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Cord, and all that

The falcon S. John, Admirall Generall, of 2050, tuns, carrieth 170. Mariners, 231, Souldiers, 50. Peeces of Canons, and Bullets, Powder, Lead, Cords, and that which is necessary. The Galeon of S. Markers of 792 tuns, and carrieth 292. Souldiers, 117. Mariners, and Powder.

Bullets, Lead, Match as much as is needfull, The Galeon S. Philip, of Soo. tuns, hath 415. Souldiers, 127. Mariners, 40. Peeces of Artillery,

and Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all that is needfull. The Galeon S. Lewes 830. tuns, hath 376. men of Warre, and 116; Mariners, 40. Peeces of Ord-

nance, and Bullets, March, Powder, and other things as much as is needfull. The Galeon of S. Mathew 750. tuns, 177.men of Warre, 50. Mariners, 40. great Peeces, and

Powder, Bullets, Lead, Match, and all other things as much as is needfull,

The Galcon S. lames 520, tunnes, 300. Souldiers, 100. Mariners, 30. great Peeces, and Bullets, Powder, Lead, March, and all that which is needfull.

The Galcon of Florence, of 961 tuns, 300. Souldiers, 100, Mariners, 52. Peeces of Ordnance, and Builets, Powder, Lead, March, and all the reft as much as is needfull. The Galeon S. Christopher, 352. tuns, 200 men of Warre, 90 Mariners, 20 great Peeces Bullets,

Lead, Powder, Match, and all that which they need. The Galeon S. Bernard, 352, tuns, hath 280. Souldiers, 100. Mariners, 30. Canons, and Bullets,

Powder, Lead, Match, and other necessary things as much as they need. The Zabra Augusta, of 166. tuns, carrieth 55. Souldiers, 55. Mariners, 13. great Peeces, Bullets,

Powder, Lead, March, and other necessary things as much as they need. The Zabra Inlia, of 166.tuns, 60. Souldiers, 50: Mariners, with Ordnance, Bullets, Powder, and

There is in this Squadron, 12. Vessells, 10.of them Galcons, and two Zabres, which are of 7737. turns & 30

there are imparted ushem 3230. Souldiers footmen, & 1230 mariners, which are in fum 4624, men, & they carry 3,50. Freat Peeces and all that which is necessary to the rest, as bullets, powder match lead &c.

The Armie of Ho Ship S. Angell, the Captaine is of 768, tuns, and hath 323, men of War, 114, Mariners, 30. 1 Canons, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all that which is needfull. The Gangrin, Admirall m Captair See of 1160. tuns, currieth 300, Souldiers, 100, Mariners, 36, great Peeces of Canons, Bullets, Powder, nerall land May. tast of Ricalds. Match Lead, and all that which is needfull. The Veffell of S. lames, 660. tuns, hath 2xc. Souldiers, 102. Mariners, 20. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and other necessary prouisions. The Conception of Zubalzu, 468, tuns, hath 100 men of War, and 70, Mariners, 20, great Canons, and 40 Builets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all other necessary things. The Conception de Ivanes del Cano, 418, tuns, hath 164, men of Warre, 70. Mariners, 24, great Peeces, and Bullets, Powder, Lead, March, and all, that which they need. The Magdelone of John Frauncis of Ajala, 330 tuns, carricth 200 Souldiers, 70 Mariners, 22 great Peeces, and Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and that which is necessary to the rest. The Sup S. John, 350. tuns, bath 130. men of Warre, and 80. Mariners, and 24. great Preces, Ballets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all that which they need for the rest. The Mary of 16c.tuns, carrieth 180. Souldiers, and 100, Mariners, 24. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and other necessary things. The Manuela of \$20, tuns, bath 130, Souldiers, 54. Mariners, 16. great Pecces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match and the rest of their fraught. The Ship of S. Mary of Monte-maier, of 707. tuns, 120. Souldiers, 50. Mariners, 30. great Peeces, Bullets, 50 Powder, Lead, and Match, and other proussions. The Pinnace, called the Marie of Aguiare, of 70. tuns, hath 20. men of War, 23. Mariners, 10. Peeces, of Canon, Powder, Bullets, Lead, Match, and other necessary things. The Pinnace, called Ifabella, of tuns, bath 20. Souldiers, 22. Mariners, 12, Canons, Bullets, and other necessary things. The Pinnace of Michel Susa, of 96. tuns, 30. Souldiers, 24. Mariners, 12. great Poeces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all other necessary things. The Pinnace of S. Steuen, of 78, tuns, hath 30, men of Warre, 26. Mariners, 12. Peeces of Canon, Bullers, Powder, Lead, Match, and all other necessary things of prousson.

There is in this Squadron, 14. Ships, ten of thein great, and foure Pinnaces, which are of 6567, tuns The Armie of of burden, in, which Ships bee imbarked 2037. Souldiers, 868. Mariners, which make in all 1802. and 260. grant Pecces of Canon, 119000. Bullets, 467. Quintals of Powder, 140.of Lead, 89.of Match. 60 the Gallyes of

> THe Gileon S. Christopher, Captaine of 70. tuns, hath 20 c, men of Warre, and 120. Mariners, and 49, great Perces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all that winch is necessary to the reit. The Galeon S. John Bapritt, of 750. tuns hach 250. Soulders, 140 Meinners, 20. great Pecces, &

bullets. Powder, lead, Mitch, & other necessary things. The Galeon S. Peter, of \$20. tuns, 120. men of Warre, 140. Mariners, and 40 great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Match, Lead, and all the reit needfull. The Galcon S. lebr, of g 30. tuns, 170. Soul liers, 120. Mariners, and 30. great Peeces, Powder. Bullets, Lead, Match, and all the reit. The Galcon S. lawer the great, of \$20. tuns, 230. Souldiers. 122. Mariners, 30. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all the reft, The Galcon S. Philip, and S. Lamer, of \$10. tuns, 159. Souldiers, and 216. Mariners, 20. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Match, Lead, and ali that is necessary. The Galeon of the Afertion, of \$20. tuns, 220. Souldiers, \$ 14. Mariners, and 30. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, March, Lead, and all other necessary things. The Galeon of our Lady del Barrie, of 130, tuns, 170, Souldiers, 108. Mariners, and 30. to Canons, Bullers, Powder, Lead, and all other necettary furnitures. The Galeon of S. Medel and Celedon, of \$ 20, tuns, 170, Souldiers, 120, Mariners, 20, great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, March, Lead, and all the reit. Gilcon S. Anne of the Port, of 250 tuns, 100 men of Warre, and 80. Mariners, 24. ereat Peeces, Bullets, Powder, March, Lead, and all the rest. The Ship of our Lord of Vigoma, 750. tuns, 100 men of Warre, and 130 Mariners, 30 great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Match, Lead, and all the rest. The Vessell of the Trintee, of 780, turn, 200. Southers, 222. Mariners, 20 great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Match, Lead, and all the reft. The Ship of S. Katherine, of 863. tunt, 200. men of Warr. 160. Mariners, 30, great Peeces, and Powder, Bullets, March, Lead, and all the reft. The Ship of S. lobn Baptist, of 652 tuns, 200 Souldiers, 20. Mariners, 20. Canons, Bullets Powder, Match, Lead, and all the reft, The Pinnace of our Lord Refary, 30. Souldiers, 25. Mariners, 24. great Pes-

10 ces, Powder, Bullets, Lead, Match, and the reft of their prouision. There are in this Squadron, fourteene Galcens and Ships, and two Pinnaces, which beare \$714. tuns. In thefe Veffells there are imbarked 2458. Souldiers, 1719. Mariners, which are in all, 4177, and 248.

great Pecces, Bullets, Powder Land, March, and all that which they need.

"He Captaine Ship of 1950 tuns carrieth 304 men of War, 118 Mariners, 50 Canons, Pow- The Armie of The Captaine Ship of 1950 tuns carrier 304 men of was the Admiral of 914 tuns, 230, the Ships of der, Bullets, and the reft of their prouision. The Ship S. Prancie, the Admiral of 914 tuns, 230, the Ships of der, Bullets, and the reft of their prouision. The Calcon S. Andelso 240 Souldiers, 60. Mariners, 30. Canons, Powder, Bullets, and the rest of their promision. The Galeon S. Andels rest of John Baptift, of \$10, tuns 250. Souldiers, and 40. Mariners, 40, great Peeces, Powder, Bullets, March, Cap. Den Pe-Lead, and thereft. The Ship S. lobs Gargaran, of 569. tuns, 170. men of War, 60. Mariners, 20. great drede Valdes. 30 Pecces, Powder, Bullets, Match, Lead, and the reft. The Conception of \$62. tunts, 200, men of War, This Peirs de 65. Mariners, 25, great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Hatch, Lead, and all the reft. The Holke Duque-Valdet was ta-(4,S. Asne of 900, tuns, 250, men of War, and So. Mariners, 30, great Peetes, Powder, Bullets, ken, and prifor March, Lead, and all the rest. The Trimite, 650, tuns, 200, men of Warre, 80, Mariners, 20, Canons. Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and the reit. The Ship S. Mary de Innew, of 730, tuns, 240. men of War, 80 Mariners, 30. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all the reft. The Pinnace of the Holy Ghoft, 40.men of War, 33. Mariners, 10. Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match and Cord. and all that which they need,

There are in this Squadron 11. Ships, 10. great, and a Pinneace, of the burden of \$762. sums, in which are imbarked 2400. Souldiers, 800. Mariners, and 260, great Peeces.

"He Ship of S. Anne, the Captaine, of zaoo cuns of burden, hath 300 men of Warre, 60. Ma- The Armie of riners, co. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, and all the reft. The Ship of our Lord of the Ships come Rofe, Admirall of 945 runs, 230. Souldiers, 64. Mariners, and 30. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, from the Pro-Lead, Match, and all the reft. The Ship S. Sanier, of 958. tuns, 330. Souldiers, 50. Mariners, 30. uince of Gi-Canons, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and the reft: The Ship of Sastenen, of 936, tuns, 200, men which is Greof Warre, 70. Mariners, 30. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all the reft. The Ship nerall Michell of S. Marthe of \$48. tuns, 180. men of Warre, 70. Mariners, 25. great Peeces, bullets, powder, and de Oquendo. the reft. The fhip, S. Barbe of 525. tuns, 160. Souldiers, 50. Mariners, 15. Canons, bullets, powder, lead, match, and all the reft. The ship of S. Bonanenture, of 369 tuns, 170. Souldiers, 60. Mariners, to 15-great Peeces, bullets, powder, lead, and the rest The Mary of 291. tuns, 120. Souldiers, 40. Mariners, 15. great Peeces, bullets, powder, lead, and the reft. The S. Croix 680. tuns, 150. Sculdiers 40. Mariners, 20. great Peeces, bullets, powder, match, lead, and the reft. The Holke Doucella, 500. tuns, 160.men of War, 40. Mariners, 18. great Peeces, powder, bullets, match, lead and all the rester The Patax of the Amunciation of 60. tuns, 30. men of War, 16. Mariners, 12. great Peeces, bullets,

The Patax of our Lady of Guadalouse is of the same burden also. The Pinnace of Magdelene, is also the same burden. There are in this Squadron, 14. Ships, ten great Ships, two Pataches, and two Pinnaces, of 6991.1 uns of barden. In which Dessels, there are imbarked 2092. men of Warre, and 670. Mariners, all com-60 meth 2708.

powder, match, lead, and all the reft, The Patax S. Bernabe, is the fame burden as the aforenamed.

He Regasona, the Captaine, which is of 1294. tuns, hath 350. Souldiers, 90. Mariners, 35. which is chief I great Peeces, powder, bullets, lead, match, and all the rest: The Lama, the Admirall, ot 728. Martin de Vatuns, 210. Souldiers, 80. Mariners, 30. great Peeces, powder, bullets, lead, match, and all the reit. tendana. Titttt 2

Caftille , of the which is Generall, Iaques Flores de Valdes.

The Rosa S. Mary crowned of 820, tuns, 240, men of Warre, 90, Mariners, 40, great Perces, riowtier beilets, nigtch, lead, and the reft. The S. lobnot Ciele, of 880. tuns; 290. men 6f Warre 702 Mariners, 20. Canons, and all the reit. The Trmitie Valencera, of a 1000. tuns, 240. Souldiers: 00: Alatiners, 41 great Preses, and all the rest of their furnitures. The Annintiation of 730, mins, 200; Souldiefe 90, Mariners, 30, great Peeces, and all the rest. The S. Nicholas Products of 824 tunnes 2801Souliets 84. Mariners 30. great Peers, and all the reft. The Initiale of 780, uns. 220. Souldiers. 80, Mariners, 36. great Peeces, and the reit. The Mary Pifen of 666, tuns, 250, Southdiers. So Mariners, 22 great Peeces, and the mithof their need. The Trimitio Efcala of good under to z. Souldiers, 25. great Peeces, and all the reft of their furniture.

In which Squadron there are ten Ships which are of 170 c. tuns of burthen , and there are imbarked to in them 1880. Souldiers, 8071 Mariners, 310: great Partes, with the rest of that they have

Halles in the which is Cap. Iohn Lorez of Michiga.

He great Grifon, the Captaine, of 670, tuns, 270. Souldiers. 60. Mariners, 40. great Pecces; and
the rell, The S. Samur the Admirall of 650. tuns, 230. Souldiers, 66. Meriners, 30. great Pecces and the rest of their promision. The Sea Dog, of 200 tons, 80. Souldiers, 30 Mariners, 10. great Peeces, and the rest, The White Faulton the great of 500 tons, 160. men of Warre 40 Mariners. 18.great Peeces, and all the reft. The Blacke Caftle of 750.tuns, 250. Souldiers, 50. Mariners, 25. oreat Peeces and all the feft. The Barke of Ambing of 600 tuns, 250, men of War. to Mariners. 25. Canous and the reft. The House of peace the great, of the same butthen. The S. Peter the great of the same burthen also. The Samplan, and Peter the Small, doe beare the same. The Barke of Ana 20 24085. of \$50. suns, 210. Souldiers, 50. Mariners, 26. great Peeces, and the reft of their provision. The Falcon, the meane White, of 300 tuns; 80 men of War, 30 Mariners, 18, great Peeces, and all the reft. The S. Andrew of 400 tuns, 160. Souldiers .40. Marmers, 1 c. great Perces, and thereft of their prouition. The Little bonfe of peace, of 350. tuns, 160. Souldiers, 40. Mariners, 15. great Peeges, and the reft of their prouition. The Flying Rauen of 400.tuns, 210 Souldiers 40, Mariners 18. great Peeces, and the relitof cheir furniture. the second section.

Patagoes and Zantes wherein Mendera com-

He Word Done; of 2x0. tuns, 60. Souldiers, 20. Mariners, 12. great Peeces, and the reft. The Adventure, 3. Barbe tranghted of the fame. The S. James 600 tuns, 60. Souldiers, 40. Mariners. 10. ereat Peeces, and all the reit. S. Gabriel of the Port, of 280. tims, 50. Souldiers, 25. Mari- 20 ners, 9. great Peeces, and the reft of their flurhiture. The Efay isfraughted of the fame. There are in this Squadron 23. Hulkes, which are of 10271. tuns, in the which are imbarked 2221.

men of Warre, 708. Matiners, 410. great perces, and then necessary provision.

The Captame of our Lord of Piler of Zaragoffe of 300 tunnes, 120 Souldiers, 50 Mariners, 12. great Peeces, and their furniture. The English Charity, of 180. tuns, 80. Souldiers, 36. Mariners, 12. great Peeces, sirt the reft. The Scottifb S. Andrew of 150 tuns, 51. Souldiers, 20. Mariners, 12 great Peeces, and their furniture. The Patache of the Crucifix, 150. tuns, 50. Souldiers, 20. Mariners, 8. great Peeces, and their furniture. Our Lord of the Hann fraught alike. The Conception of Caraffa. and our Lord of Begous, and the Conception de Capitillo, and S. Hiorofineing of the butthen of 60. or 70. runs, 50. Souldiers, 30. Mariners, 8. great Peeces, a Peece, and their furniture. Our Lady of grace, 40 the Conception of Frauncy's Lastero, our Lady of Guadalupe, S. Frauncy's, the Hoty Spirit, our Lady of Frenefda, all traughted alike. The Zabra of the Trinitie, the Zabra of our Lady Caffre, S. Andrew, the Conception of Zomartiba, S. Clere, S. lobn of Caraffa, and the of famption, all fraughted alike.

There are in this Squadron 22. Paraches and Zabres, which are of the burthen of 1821-tune, in the which there are imbarked 479. Souldiers, 574. Mariners, and there is 193. erect Proces, and

all their furniture.

The foure Gaples, which are giue in charge to Dom Vio de Muncada.

He Galeace the Captaine called S. Lawrence, hath 270. Souldiers, 130. Mariners, 300. Slaves, 1 50. Peeces of Canon, and their furniture. The Galeaco Patrone, 180. Souldiers, 112. Mariners, 200. Slaues, 50. great Peeces, and their furniture. The Galeace Grone, 170. Souldien, 120. Mari- 50 ners, 300. Slaves, 50. great Poeces. The Galeace Neapolutaine 124. Souldiers, 115. Mariners, 300. Siaucs, 50. great Perces, and the reft of their necessary traught.

There are in these foure Galeaces 873. Souldiers, 468. Mariners ; 200. great Petces, 1200. Slaves, and the rest of their furniture.

The Gally Captaine, 110. Souldiers, 106. Mariners, 306. Slaves, and fiftie great Peeces, and other necessaries. The Gally Princesse, the Gally Diana, the Gally Vacana, are the like. In the about named Galeaces, there are \$ 200. Slaves, and in the foure gallies. 885, which is in all 2083.

Moreover, they carry punder for their need, if it be offered to doe Autery, 600. Quintals. So that there are in the face Army 130 Ships of 57868. twns, 1929 . Souldiers and \$450. Mariners, 2088. Slaves, and 2630. great Peeces of Braffe of all fores, among which there are Colcurines, and de 60

my Coleurmes, and Canons to the Stone, and other necessaries for their franche. In the Booke follow the names of the Aduenturers, also of fuch as in the Army were entertain ned for pay; such also as were imbarked for the service of the Canon, for the Hospitall, the Regiments, and Companies in pay, the Officers, &cc. which for breuitte I omit.

The Galeons were fixtue foure in number, being of an huge bignesse, and verie startly but, be- A distribution ing of margeilous forceallo, and folish, that they refembled great Cattles, mon fie of defend or the Calcons the miclues and to withfland any affault, but in guing any other Ships the encounter farre inferiour voto the English and Datch Ships, which can with great dexteritie weild & turne themselves at all affires. The uppersworke of the laid Galeons was not thicknesse and direcent disfficient to heare off Musker-thora The lower works and the symbers thereof were our of meaning frong being framed for plankes and a bs foure or fue foot on thickness, intomuch, that no bullets could pierce them, but fuch as were discharged hard at liand a which afterward proued true, for a great number of bullets were found to fticke fall within the maffer fubitance of those thicke plankes. Great and well pitched Cables were twined about the healts of their Ships, to ftrengthen them against the battery of shot.

The Gailiaffes were of fuch bigneffe, that they contained within them Chambers, Chappels, Adefering Tunets, Pulpirs, and other commodities of great houles. The Callesfes were rowed with great Oarrs, there being in each of them you faues for the fame surpord, and wereable to the wreat leruice within he force of their Ordnance: All there together with their should aforem med were furnished and beautified with Trumpets, Streamers, Banners, warlike Ensignes, and cooker fach

liké ornamerits. Their Pieces of Braten Ordnance were 1600 and of tron 1000. The Bullets thereto belonging nanoa builess. were 120. thouland. Irem of Gunpowder 1600 quintale Of Match 1200 quintalis Of Muskets Gunpowder, to and Kaloinets 7000. Of Halberts and Partifans 10000. Moreover, they had great flore of Canons; and other furdouble Canons, Culurrings and field-pieces for land teruice.

Likeweile they were provided of all inftroments needfary on Land to conveigh, and transport Th ir provide their furniture from place to place; as namely of Carbs; Wheeles, Wagons; &c. Alto they had, on of victuals Spades, Mattecks and Biskets to fet pioners on worke. They had in the fore great fore of Moles: & other rings and Horfes, and whatfoeuer elfe was requifite for a Land-armie. They were fo well stored of necessary, Biscuit, that for the space of halfea yeers; they might allow each perion in the whole Flecte balfe a quintall every moneth! whereof the whole lineare amounteth wato an hundreth thou-

Likewise of Wine they had 147, thousand Pipes; sufficient also for halfe a yeeres expedition. Or Bacon 6500. q intuds, Of Cheefe three thouland quiscale. Beildes Pith, Rive, Beanes, Peafe, Oyle, Vinegar, &c. Moreouer, they had a sodo. Pipes of fresh water, and all other necessarie promision: as namels

Candles, Lancernes, Lampes, Sailes, Hempe, Octo-hides and Load to ftop holes-that fhould be made with the batterie of Gun hot. To be fhort, they brought all things expedient onher tor 4 Fisete by Seator for an Armie by land.

This Name (as Diego Pimentelli afterward confessed) was esteemed by the King himfelfe to 32000 persons containe \$2000, perions, and to cost him outry days orthoniand Directes.

There were in the fard Name fine Termes of Spaniards (which Termes the Fronthmen call Regiments) under the command of fine Gouernours, tearmed by the Spatiards Mafters of the field; 3200, foutiers, and among the reft there were many old and expert Souldiers choice out of the Garrisons of Siedie, Naples, and Tercera. Their Capraines or Colonels were Diego Pimentelli, Don Francisco de Toledo, Don Alonzo de Luçon, Don Nicolas de Illa, Don Augustia de Mexia: who had each of them two and thirty Companies under their conduct. Befides the which Companies there were many bands also of Caftilians and Portugali, every one of which had their peculiar Governours, Captaines, Officers, Colours and weapons.

It was not lawfull for any man, under grieuous penaltiesto carry any woman or harlors in the Baggage of the Fleete : for which cause the women hired certaine Ships, wherein they failed after the Name : Amada. some of the which being driven by tempest arrived upon the coast of France.

The Generall of this mightie Nauie, was Don Alonfo Perez de Guzman Duke of Medina, Sido-10 mia, Lord of S. Lucar, and Knight of the golden Fleece; by reason that the Marquelle of Santa Cruz appointed for the fame dignity, decealed before the time:

John Martines de Ricalde was Admirall of the Fleete; Francis Benadilla was chiefe Marshall: who all of them had their officers fit and requifice for the guiding and managing of fuch a multitude. Likewife Martin Aloreon was appointed Vicar generall of the Inquitition, being accompanied with more then a hundreth Monkes, to wit; lefustes, Capuchines, and Friers Mendicant, Befides whom also there were Philitians, Chirurgians, Apothecaries, and whatfoeuer elfe pertained vnto the Hospitall.

Ouer and besides the forenamed Governours and Officers, being men of chiefe note, there were 124 very noble and worthy Gentlemen, which went voluntarily of their owne colls and charges, to the end they might fee fathious, learne experience; and attaine voto glory. Amongst whom was the Prince of Afeole, Alonzo de Leina, the Marquette de Pennafiel, the Marquette de Ganes, the Marqueffe de Barlango, Count de Paredes, Count de Teluie, and sivers other Marquefes and Earles of the honorable families of Mendoza, of Taledo, of Pacheco, of Cordono, of Guzman, of Manriques, and a great number of others.

I have by me the Dukes Orders for the whole Nanie, during this Voyage, made about the Gallian Saint Martin, May 28. the beginning whereof I have added, the whole would be too long.

Don ALONS O PERES DE GVSMAN, the good Duke of Medina, Sidonia. Countie of Nebla, Marquelle of Cashelhe in Africa, Lord of the Citie Saint Lucar, Captaine Generall of the Occian Sea of the Coalt of Andaluzia, and of this Armie of his Maieflie, and Knight of the honorable Order of the golden Fleece.

Doe ordaine and command, that the generall Mafters of the field, all Captaines of the Sea Dil lats, Mafters, Souldiers, Mariners, and Officers, and what foeuer other people for the Land or Sea feruice commeth in this Armie, all the time that it indureth, shall be thus governed, as hereafter followeth, viz.

The cause of

Their Shrift

First, and before all things, it is to be understood by all the aboue named from the highest to the lowest : that the principall foundation and cause that bath mouse the King his Maiestie to make and continue this journie, hath beens, and is, to ferue God, and to returne vnto his Church a great many of contrite foules that are oppressed by the Heretikes, enemies of our holy Catholike faith, which have the m fubicets to their feets and vnbappineffe : and for that every one may put his eyes upon this marke, as we are bound, I doe command and much defire every one, to give charge vinto the inferiors and those vinder their charge to imbarke themselves, being shriven. and having received the Sacrament with competentand contrition for their finnessby the which contricion and zeale to doe God fuch great fernice, he will carry and guide vs to his great glory: which is that which particularly and principally is pretended.

Forauoiding and others.

In like manner, I doe charge and command you, to have particular care, that no Soldier, Marriner, or other, that ferueth in this Armie, doe blafpheme, or rage against God, or our Lady, or any of the Saints, upon paine that he shall therefore sharply be corrected, and very well chaftened, as it thall feeme best voto vs : and for other oather of leffe qualitie, the Governours in the 30 fame Ships they goe in shall procure to remedy all : they shall punish them in taking away their allowance of Wine, or otherwise as they shall thinke good. And for that the most occasions come by play, you shall publikly prohibit is especially the games that are forbidden; and that none doe play in the night by no meanes.

Debarring

Articles follow to suppresse quarrels, to avoid disgracing any man, and all occasions of scandal, forbidding carriage of common women with other orders for watchwords, attendance on the Admiral, for fire and wilde-fire, and lighes, armours bes, sounder, match, and other necessary instructions, too long to be here particularifed: that in the height of hamaine policie, and religious hypocrifie, the hand of God in Englands preservation way be made onident.

The preparatiaide the Spa-

While the Spaniards were furnishing this their Nauie, the Duke of Parma, at the direction 40 of King Philip, made great preparation in the low Countries, to gine aide and affiffance vinto the Spaniards, building Ships for the same purpose, and sending for Pilots and Ship wrights out of Italy. In Flanders he caused certaine despe channels to be made, and among the rest, the channell of Tper, commonly called Tper-lee, employing some thousands of workemen about that feruice : to the end that by the faid Cannell he might transport Ships from Answerp and Ghende to Bruges where he had affembled aboue a hundreth small Ships, called Hoyes, being well stored with vi-Stuals, which Hoyes he was determined to have brought into the Sea by the way of Slays, or elfe to have conveied them by the faid Tper-lee, being now of greater depth, into any port of Flan-

In the River of Waten, he caused 70. Ships with flat bottomes to be built, every one of which 50 should serve to carry 30, horses, having each of them Bridges likewise for the Horses to come on boord, or to goe forth on land. Of the same fashion he had provided 200, other vessels at Neinport, but not fo great. And at Dunkerk he procured 28. Ships of warre, fuch as were there to be had, and caused a sufficient number of Mariners to be leuied at Hamburg, Breme, Emdan, and at other places. He put in the ballast of the said Ships, great store of beames of thicke plankes, being hollow and befet with Iron pikes beneath, but on each fide full of claspes and hookes, to 10 year

He had likewife at Graveling provided 20. thousand of caske, which in a shore space might be compact and isyned together with nailes and cords, and reduced into the forme of a Bridge. To be thort, what focuer things were requifite for the making of Bridges, and for the barring & flep- 60 ping up of Hauens mouthes with stakes, posts, and other meanes, he commanded to be made ready Moreouer, not far from Neimport hauen, he had caused a great pile of wooden fagots to be laid, and other furniture to be brought for the reating vp of a Mount. The most part of his Ships contained two Quens a peece to bake Bread in, with a great number of faddles, bridles, and fuch other

like apparell for Horfes. They had Horfes likewife, which after their landing should serve to conuey and draw engines, schi-pieces, and other warlike prouifions.

Necere vinto Nesupore he had sliembled an armie, ouer the which hee had ordained Camillo de Monte to be Camp -mailer. This army conflitedirf 20, bands or entires of Italians, of ten bands of Wallons, eight of Scott, and eight of Burgundians, all which together amount vnto 56. bands euery hand containing a hundreth perlons. Neere unto Dixmed there were muftered eightie bands of Duchmen, fixtie of Spaniards, fix of high Germans, and leuen bands of English tugitues, vinder the conduct of Sir William Stanlie, an English Knight In the luburbs of Cortreight there were 4000. horsemen together with their horses ma readinesse and at Water 900, horses, with the troupe

to of the Marquelie del Grafto Captaine generall of the horiemen. Vinto this famous expedition and prefupposed victory, many pocentates, Princes, and honorable personages hed themselves : out of Spains the Prince of Melio, called the Duke of Pastrana, and taken to be the Son of one Ruygemer de Silua, but in very deed accompted among the number of King Thilips bale fons, Alio the Marquelle of Bargrane, one of the ions of Archiduke Ferdinand and Philippa Wallera. Vefpafian Gonfaga of the family of Manua, being for chiualty a man of great renowne, and negecofore Vice-roy in Spaine. Item John Medices, bate ion vnto the Duke of Florence. And Amadas of Sauor, the Duke of Sauor his bafe fon, with many others of inferi-

At length when as the Erench King about the end of May fignified vnto her Maieffie in plaine Her Maieffies 20 tearmes that the should stand upon her guard, because he was now certainly enformed, that there warlike prepare was to dangerous an invation imminent upon her Realine, that he feared much, leaft all her land and fea-forces would befufficient to withfrand it, &c. then began the Queenes Maiettie more carefully to gather her forces together, and to furnish her own ships of warre, and the principall ships of her subjects, with Souldiers, weapons, and other necessary promisen. The greatest and strongest thips of the whole Nauie the fent anto Plummonth, under the conduct of the right honorable Lord Charles Howard, Lord high Admirall of England, &c. Vnder whom the renowned Knight Sir Francie Drake was appointed Vice admirall. The number of thele ships was about an hundreth. The leffer thips being 30, or 40, in number, and vader the conduct of the Lord Henry Seimer were commanded to lie betweene Deuer and Caleis.

On land likewise throughout the whole realme, souldiers were mustered and trained in all plate Her. Mais slies ces, and were committed vnto the most resolute and faithfull captaines. And whereager was comi. Land forces, monly given out, that the Spaniard having once writed himfelte vnto the Duke of Parma, ment to inuade by the river of Thames, there was at Tilburie in Effex, over-against Graveferid, a mighter army encamped; and on both fides of the river fortifications were erected, according to the prefeription of Frederike Genebelli an Italian enginier. Likewile there were certaine hipsbrought to make a Bridge, though it were very late first. Vnto the faid Armie came in proper perion the Queenes molt roiall Maieftie, representing Tompris that Scitbian warlike Princelle, or rather diuine Pallas her felte. Alfo there were other fuch armiesteuied in England.

The principal Reculants (least they should for up any tumult in the time of the Spanis invasion) Catholike 40 were fent to remaine at certain convenient places, as namely in the Isle of Elr and at Wibich. And Roman. fome of them were fent vote other places, to wit, voto fundry Bilhops and Noblemen, where they were kept from endangering the state of the common wealth, and of her facred Maiestie, who of her most gracious clemency gaue expresse commandement, that they should be intreated

with all humani ie and friendship. The Provinces of Holland, Zeland, &c. giving credit vnto their intelligence out of Spaine, made The preparation preparation to defend themselves : but because the Spanish thips were described voto them to be on other ner to huge, they relied partly upon the shallow and dangerous Seas all along their coasts. Wherefore ted Promuces they stood most in doubt of the Duke of Parma, his small and flat-bottomed ships. Howbert they had all their thips of warre to the number of nincie and aboue, in a readinesse for all assyes : the 50 greater part whereof were of a small burthen, as being more meete to taile upon their Rivers and

shallow Seas; and with these ships they besieged all the hauens in Flanders, beginning at the mouth of Scheld, or from the towne of Lille, and holding on to Graneling, and almost ento Caleis, and fortified all their Sea-townes with strong garritons. Against the Spanis fleets arrivall, they had provided five and twenty of thirty good ships, committing the government of them virto Admirall Lorck, whom they commanded to inine him-

felie unto the Lord Henry Seymer, lying betweene Douer and Cales. And when as the forefeld thips (whereof the greater part belieged the hauen of Dunkerke) were druen by tempest into Zeland, luftin of Naffanthe Admirall of Zeland supplied that squadron with fine and thirty shops, being of no great burthen, but excellently furnished with Guns, Mariners and Souldiers in great 60 abundance & especially with 1200 brave Musquetiers, having beene accustomed with Sea-fights, and being cholen out of all their company for the fame purpole : and so the find Inflim of Naffan kept fuch deligent ward in the Station, that the Duke of Parma could not title forth with his Nauie into Sea out of any part of Flanders.

In the meane while the Shangh Armada fet faile out of the hauen of Lisben vpon the 19. of

licat scherence inesti accessor

Gains valour.

They fee faile *pon the 11.of The Spaniards come within kenning of England.

Cap Fleming.

The L.Admirals (hort warnin: vpon-the

Gods great not Flemming brought word, the Queenes Name hadea. Gly beene oppreffed : nor could it fo toon be ready had their opportu-

- May, An. Dom. 1 , 88. under the conduct of the Duke of Medina Sidonia, directing their confe The Spanijo for the Bay of Corunna, alias the Groine in Gallicia, where they tooke in fouldiers, and warlike if etelectatic voon the 19 of proution, this port being in Spaine the neerest voto England. As they were failing along, there arole luch a mighty tempeft, that the whole Elect was disperied, fo that when the Duke was re-O multim dile- turned vinto his company, he could not efficie aboue eighty thips in all, whereunto the refidue by a: Deo tib mi- little and little joyned themselves, except eight which had their Matts blowne over-boord. One of the foure Gallies of Paring all elcaped very hardly, retiring her felfe into the hauen. The other ad claffica veg. three were vpon the coast of Bason in France, by the affiftance and courage of one Danid Gum, an English Captine (whom the French and Turkish thues aided in the fame enterprise) ytterly dilabled and vanqui hed; one of the three being first ouercome, which conquered the two other, with the flaughter of their Gouernour and fouldiers, and among the rest of Don Diego de Mandrana. with fundry others : and to those flaues arrived in France with the three Gallies, fet themselves

> The Natic having refreshed themselves at the Groine, and receiving daily commandement from the King to halten their journie, horfed up failes the 11 day of July, and fo holding on their course till the 10, of the same moneth, they came then vnto the mouth of the narrow Seas or English channell. From whence (firiking their failes in the meane featon) they diffratched certain of their imali fluos voto the Duke of Parma. At the fame time the Spanish Fleete was efcried by an Englift Pinnace, Captaine whereof was Mafter Thomas Fleming, after they had beene advertised of the Spaniards expedition by their footes and efficient, which having ranged along the coat of Spaine, were lately returned home into Plummoth for a new fupply of withinks and other necessity. ries, who confidering the forefaid tempest, were of opinion that the Nauie being of late differfed and toffed up and downe the maine Ocean, was by no meanes able to performe their intended Voyage. Moreover, the Lord Charles Howard, Lord high Admirall of England, had received Letters from the Court, fignifying vnto him, that her Maiefty was advertised that the Spanific Fleete would not come forth; nor was tobe any longer expected for, and therefore, that vpon her Maietties commandement hee must fend backe foure of her tallest and strongest Ships vn-

The Lord high Admirall of England being thus on the fudden, namely upon the 19. of July about foure of the clocke in the afternoone, enformed by the Pinnace of Captaine Fleming afore- 30 Said of the Spaniards approach, with all speede and diligence possible hee warped his Ships, and caused his Mariners and Souldiers (the greater part of whom was absent for the cause aforelaid) to come on board, and that with great trouble and difficultie, infomuch that the Lord Admirall himfelfe was faine to lie without in the road with fix Ships onelvall that night after the which ma-Thezo, of July ny others came forth of the hauen. The very next day, being the 20. of July about high noone, was the Spanish Fleet escried by the English, which with a South-west winde came failing along, and passed by Plimmonth; in which regard (according to the judgement of many skilfull Nauigamercy to Eng. tors) they greatly overshot themselves, whereas it had been more commodious for them to have land. For had fraied themifelies there, confidering that the Englishmen being as yet unprouided, greatly relied vpon their owne forces, and knew not the effate of the Spanifo Navie. Moreover, this was the 40 most convenient Port of all others, where they might with greater fecurity have beene advertifed of the English forces, and how the commons of the land stood offeded, and might have stirred up fome mutinie, fo that hither they should have bent all their puislance, and from hence the Duke of Parma might more easily have conveied his Ships. But this they were prohibited to doe by the King and his Counsell, and were expresly commanded to vnite themselves vnto the fouldiers and thips of the faid Dake of Parma, and fo to bring their purpose to effect. Which was thought to be the most easte and direct course, for that they imagined that the English and Durch men would be vtterly daunted and difmaied thereat, and would each man of them retire vnto his owne Prounce or Port for the defence thereof, and transporting the Armie of the Duke under the protection of their huge Nauie, they might invade England. It is reported that the chiefe 50 commanders in the Nauy, and those which were more skilfull in nauigation, to wit, John Martines de Ricalde, Diego Flores de Valdez, and divers others, found fault that they were bound vnto fo firet directions and inftructions, because that in fuch a case many particular accidents ought to concurre and to be respected at one and the same instant, that is to fay, the opportunitie of the winde, weather, time, tide, and ebbe, wherein they might faile from Flanders to England, Oftentimes alio the darknesse and light, the situation of places, the depths and shoalds were to be considered : all which especially depended vpon the conveniency of the windes, and were by so much the more dangerous. But it feemed that they were enjoyned by their Commission to ancre neere vnto, or about Caleis, whither the Duke of Parma with his ships and all his warlike prouition was to refort, and while the English and Spanish great thirs were in the midft of their con- 60 flict, to passe by, and to land his fouldiers upon the Downes. The Spanish Captines reported that they were determined first to have entred the River of Thames, & thereupon to have passed with fmall thips up to London, supposing that they might easily win that rich and flourishing Citie, being but meanely fortified and inhabited with Citizens not accultomed to the wars, who durit

not withftand their first encounter, hoping moreover to finde many rebels against her Maiestie. and Ponish Catholikes, or iome tauourers of the Scottifb Queene (not long before beheaded) who might be inftruments of fedition.

Thus of en aduertifing the Duke of Parma of their approach, the 20. of July they passed by Plinamonth, which the English pursuing and getting the winde of them, gave them the chafe and

the encounter, and to both Fleetes frankly exchanged their Bullets.

The day following, which was the 21. of July, the English Ships approached within Musket The 21. of July that of the Spanish: at what time the Lord Charles Howard most hotly and valiantly discharged his Ordnance upon the Spanish Vice-admirall. The Spanisrals then well, perceiving the nimbleneffe of the English flaps in discharging upon the enemy on all fides, gathered themselves close into the forme of an halfe Moone, and flackned their failes, leaft they bould outgoe any of their company. And while they were proceeding on in this manner, one of their great Galliafles was to furionily battered with thot, that the whole Nanie was faine to come vp rounder together for the fategard thereof : whereby it came to paffe that the principal! Galleon of Smill (wherein Don Pedro de Valdez, Va (ques de Silmi, Alenzo de Sayas, and other Noble men were embarqued) falling foule of another thip, had her fore-mast broken, and by that meanes was not able to keepe way with the Spanish Fleete, neither would the faid Fleete flay to fuccour it, but I fo the diffresfed Galeon behinds. The Lord Admirall of England, when hee faw this Ship of Valdez, and thought the had beene voide of Marriners and Souldiers, taking with him as many thips as he Gileon for 20 could, paffed by it, that hee might not loofe fight of the Spanish Fleete that night. For Sir faken.

Francis Drake (who was not withit anding appointed to beare out his Lanterne that night) was giving of chale vinto five great Hulkes which had separated them (elves from the Spanish Fleete : but finding them to be Easterlings, hee dismissed them. The Lord Admitall all that night following the Spanis Lanterne instead of the English, found himselfe in the morning to be in the midft of his enemies Fleete, but when he perceived it, he clenly conveied himfelfe out of that great danger.

The day following, which was the 22.0f July, Sir Francis Drake efficed Valdez his thip, where- The 22.0f July unto he fent for his Punace, and being advertifed that Valdez himselfe was there, and 450, perfons with him, he fent him word that hee should yeelde himselfe, Faldez for his honours take to cauled certaine conditions to be propounded vnto Drakes who answered Valdez, that he was not now at leifure to make any long parle, but if he would yeelde himfelfe, he should finde him friendly and tractable : howbeit if he had refolued to die in fight, he should proue Drake to be no daftard. Vpon which answer, Valder and his Company understanding that they were fallen into the hands of fortunate Drake, being moued with the renoune and celebratie of his name. with one confent yeelded themselves, and found him very favourable voto them. Then Valdez Don Pedro de with forty or fiftie Noblemen and Gentlemen pertaining vnto him, came on boord Sir Francu Valdez with Drakes thip, Therefidue of his company were carried vnto Plinementh, where they were detai- his thips and ned a weere and an halfe for their ransome.

Valdez comming vnto Drake, and humbly killing his hand, protefting vnto him, that he and his to had resolved to die in battell, had they not by good fortune fallen into his power, whom they knew to be right curteous and gentle, and whom they had heard by generall report to be most fa- Virtus in heff # nourable anto his vanquished foe: infomuch, that he faid it was to be doubted whether his ene- laudanda. my had more cause to admire and loue him for his great, valiant, and prosperous exploits, or to dread him for his fingular felicity and wildome, which ever attended upon him in the wars, and by the which he had attained vnto to great honor. With that Drake embraced him, and gaue him very honorable entertainment, feeding him at his owne table, and lodging him in his Cabbin. Here Valdez began to recount vnto Drake the forces of all the Spanish Fleete, and how foure mighty Gallies were separated by tempest from them : and also how they were determined first to baue put into Plimmouth haven, not expecting to be repelled thence by the English thips, which they thought could by no meanes withiftand their impregnable forces, perswading themselves that by o meanes of their huge Fleete, they were become Lords and commanders of the maine Ocean. For which cause they marueiled much how the Englishmen in their small Ships durit approach with-

in musket that of the Spaniards mighty woodden Cattles, gathering the wind of them, with many other such like attempts. Immediately after, Valdez and his Company (being a man of principal) authority in the Spanish Fleet, and being descended of one and the same family with that Valdez, which in the yeare 1574. belieged Leiden in Holland) were fent captines into England. There were in the faid thip 55 . thousand Duckers in ready monie of the Spanift Kings gold , which the fouldiers merrily shared among themselves.

The same day was set on fire one of their greatest ships, being Admirall of the squadron of Gui-60 pusco, and being the ship of Michael de Oquendo Vice-admirall of the whole Fleete, which contained great flore of Gunpowder, and other warlike proution. The upper part onely of this flip A great Bif. was burnt, and all the persons therein contained (except a very few) were consumed with fire, came ship ca-And thereupon it was taken by the English, and brought into England, with a number of miterable ken by the burnt and forched Spaniards. Howbeit the Gunpowder (to the great admiration of all men) rea mained whole and vaconfumed.

In the meane feafon the Lord Admirall of England in his ship, called the Arke-royall, all that night pursued the Spaniards to neere, that in the morning hee was almost left alone in the enemies Fleete, and it was foure of the clocke at afternoone before the refidue of the English Fleete could overtake him. At the fame time Hugo de Moncada, Governour of the foure Gallialles, made humble fuite vinto the Duke of Medine that hee might be licenced to encounter the Admirall of England: which liberty the Duke thought not good to permit vnto him, because he was touth to exceede the limits of his Commission and charge.

Slow motions Span Bihips.

Voon tueiday, which was the 23.0f July, the Nauy being come ouer against Portland, the wind began to turne Northerly, infomuch that the Spannards had a fortunate and fit gale to inuade the Englifb. But the Englishmen hauing leifer and nimbler ships, recourred againe the vantage of the Ic winde from the Spaniards, whereat the Spaniards feemed to be more incensed to fight then before, But when the English fleet had continually and without intermittion from morning to night beaten and battered them with all their shot both great and small; the Spaniards vniting themfelues, gathered their whole Fleete close together into a roundeli, to that it was apparant that they ment not as vet to inuade others, but onely to defend themfelues, & to make haite vato the place prescribed vnto them, which was neere vnto Dunkerk, that they might joyne forces with the Duke of Parma, who was determined to have proceeded fecretly with his small ships under the shadow and protection of the great ones, and to had intended circumspectly to performe the whole expedition.

Admirals hot

This was the most furious and bloudy skirmish of all, in which the Lord Admirall of England continued fighting amidit his enemies Fleete, and feeing one of his Captaines a farre off, he spake G praine Fen- unto him in thele words: Ob George, what doeft thou? Walt thou now frustrate my hope and opinion conceined of thee? Wilt thou for sake mee now? With which words hee being enflamed, spproached forthwith, encountered the enemy, and did the part of a most valiant Captaint. His name was George Fenner, a man that had beene conversant in many Sea-fights. In this conflict there was a certaine great Venetian ship with other small ships surprized and taken by

A great Venetian thip and other mall fhips taken by the English,

The English Nauy in the meane while increased, whereunto out of all Hauens of the Realme reforted flips and men : for they all with one accord came flocking thither as vinto a fet field, where immortall fame and glory was to be attained, and faithfull service to be performed vnto 30 their Prince and Countrey. In which number there were many great and honorable personages, as namely, the Earle of Oxford, of Northumberland, of Cumberland, of c. with many Knights and Genclemen : to wit, Sir Thomas Cecill, Sir Robert Cecill, Sir Walter Raleigh, Sir Williams Hatton, Sir Horatio Palanicini, S. r Henry Brooke, Sir Robert Carem, Sir Charles Blunt; Mafter Ambrofe Willonobbie, Matter Henry Nowell, Matter Thomas Gerard, Matter Henry Dudley, Matter Edward Darcie, Mafter Aribur Gorge, Mafter Thomas Woodbowfe, M. William Harnie, Ge. And to it came to palle that the number of the English thips amounted victo an hundreth: which when they were come before Douer, were increased to an hundred and thirty, being notwithstanding of no proportionable bigneffe to encounter with the Spaniards, except two or three and twenty of the Queenes greater fhips, which onely; by reason of their presence, bred an opinion in the Spaniards 40 minds concerning the power of the English Fleet: the Marriners and Souldiers whereof were esteemed to be twelve thousand.

Souldiers.

The 24 of Iuly

The foure and twentie of July, when as the Sea was calme, and no winde stirring, the fight was onely betweene the foure great Galleaffes and the English thips, which being rowed with Oares, had great vantage of the English thips, which not withflanding for all that would not be forced to yeelde, but discharged their chaine-shot to cut asunder their Cables and Cordage of the Galleaffes, with many other fuch Stratagems. They were now constrained to fend their men on land for a new supply of Gunpowder, whereof they were in great scarcitie, by reason they had Wantof Pow- fo frankly spent the greater part in the former conflicts. The same day, a Counfell being allembled, it was decreed that the English Fleete should be deuided into four equidrons : the principal 50 whereof was committed voto the Lord Admirall : the second to Sit Francis Drake : the third to

Captaine Hawkins : the fourth to Captaine Frobisher. The Spanards in their failing observed very diligent and good order, failing three and foure and sometimes more ships in a ranke, and following close vp one after another, and the stronger Spanift order. and greater thips protecting the leffer.

The five and twenty of July, when the Spaniards were come over-against the Isle of Wight, the Lord admirall of Englandbeing accompanied with his best ships (namely the Lion, Captaine Whereof was the Lord Thomas Howard: The Elizabeth longs under the command of Sir Robert Southwell, fon in law vnto the Lord Admirall : the Beare vnder the Lord Sheffield, Nephew vnto the Lord Admirall : the Vidorie vnder Captaine Barker : and the Galeon Leiceffer under the fore- 60 named Captain George Fenner) with great valour and dreadfull thunder of thot, encountered the Temble fights

Spenish Alimitall, being in the very midt of all his Fleete. Which when the Spaniara's perceimed, being affitted with his ftrongest ships, he came torth and entered a terrible combat with the
feath. English; for they bestowed each on other the broad sides, and mutually discharged all their

Ordnance; being within one hundred or an hundred and twenty yards one of another. At length the Spaniards horfed up their failes, and againe gathered themfelues up close into the forme of a roundell. In the meane while Captaine Frobiler had engaged himtelfe into a most dangerous conflict. Whereupon the Lord Admirall comming to fuccour him; found that hee had valiantly and discreetly behaued himfelfe; and that he had wifely and in good time given over the fight, because that after so creat a batterie he had sustained no damage. For which cause the day tollowing, being the fixe and twenty of Inly, the Lord Admirall rewarded him with the order of The 26.0f July Kojehthood, together with the Lord Thomas Howard, the Lord Sheffield, Mafter John Hawkins, and others.

The large day the Lord Admirall received intelligence from New hanen in France, by certaine Guident feared of his Pinnaces, that all things were quit in France, and that there was no preparation of fent- Tac.conq. A. ding aide vnto the Spaniards, which was greatly feared from the Guiffan faction, and from the Leaguers : but there was a falle rumour foread all about, that the Spaniards had conquered England.

The feuen and twentieth of July, the Spaniards about the fun-fetting were come order-against The ar of July, Doner, and rode at ancre within the fight of Caleis, intending to hold on for Dunkerk, expecting The Spaniards there to joyne with the Duke of Parma his forces, without which they were able to doe little or ancrebetore nothing. Likewise the English Fleete following vp hard vpon them, ancred inft by them within Caleis, coluering shot. And here the Lord Henry Seymer vnited himselfe vnto the Lord Admirall with

his fleet of 20. hips which rode before the mouth of Thames. As the Spanish Name therefore lay at ancre, the Duke of Medina fent certaine Meffengers vato the Duke of Parma, with whom your that occasion many Noblemen and Gentlemen went to retreft themfel ies on land; and among it the reft the Prince of Assolibeing accounted the Kings bafeion, and a very proper and towardly your Gentleman, to his great good went on thoate, who was by to much the more fortunate, in that he had not opportunity to returne on boord the fame thip out of which he was departed, because that in returning home it was cast away vpon former the Irifb coast, withall the persons contained therein. The Duke of Parma being advertised of the Spanih Fleetes arrivall upon the coaft of England, made all the hifte hee could to be preferit
himselfe in this expedition for the performance of his charge; vainely perswading himselfe that now by the meanes of Cardinall Allen, hee thould be crowned King of England, and for that

cause he hadresigned the Gouernment of the Low-Countries vinto Count Mansfeld the elder. And having made his vowes vinto Shint Mary of Hall in Henault (whom he went to vinte for hisblinde devotions ake) he returned toward Bruger the eight and twenty of fully. The next Theas, of july day trauelling to Danier's he cheard the thundring Ordnance of either Fleete: and the same evening being come to Dismud, hee was given to vnderstand the hard successe of the Spa- These of last.

Vpon tuelday, which was the 12.0f July, about high noone, he came to Dunkerk, when as all The 30.0f July the Spanish Ficete was now passed by: neither durst any of his ships in the meane space come forth to affirt the faid Spanish Fleet for feare of five and thirty warlike thips of Holland and Zeto land, which there kept watch and ward under the conduct of the Admirall Instin of Nasan. The

forefaid five and thirty thips were furnished with most cunning Mariners and old expert Souldi- States Fleets, ers, among It the which were twelve hundred Musketeers, whom the States had cholen out of all their Garrisons, and whom they knew to have beene heretofore experienced in Sea-fights. This Nauie was given especially in charge not to suffer any ship to come out of the Hauen, nor to permit any Zabraes, Pataches or other small vessels of the Spanish Fleete (which were more likely to aide the Dunkerkers) to enter thereinto, for the greater thips were not to be feared by reason of the fhallow Sea in that place. Howbeit the Prince of Parma his forces being as yet vinready, En life Hiftswere not come on board his ships, onely the English Figitives, being seven hundred in number, ninisced training winder the conduct of Sir William Stanley, came in hit time to have beene embarked, because they hoped to give the first affault against England. The residue shewed themselves vowilling and loath

to depart, because they saw but a few Marriners, who were by constraint drawne into this expedition, and also because they had very bare prouision of Bread, Drinke, and other necessary vi-Quals. Moreover, the ships of Holland and Zeland stood continually in their sight, threatning shot and Powder, and many inconveniences vnto them: for feare of which ships; the Mariners and Sea-men fecretly withdrew themselves both day and night, least that the Duke of Parma his Souldiers should compell them by maine force to goe on boord, and to breake through the Hollanders Fleete, which all of them judged to be impessible, by reason of the straightnesse

But it seemeth that the Duke of Parma and the Spaniards grounded upon a vaine and pre- The Spaniards to fumptuous expectation, that all the thips of England and of the Low-Countries would at the first vaincopinion fight of the Spanish and Dunkerk Name have betaken themselves to flight, yeelding them Sez-concerning roome, and endenouring onely to defend themfelues, their hauens, and Sea-coasts from invasion, their area aces Wherefore their intent and purpose was, that the Duke of Parma in this small and flat-bortomed thips, should as it were under the shadow and wings of the Spanish Fleete, concey oner all his

troupes, armour, and warlike provision, and with their forces fo vnited, should invade England: or while the English Fleete were bulied in fight against the Spanish, thould enter voon any part of the coalt, which he thought to be most convenient. Which invasion (as the Captines afterward confelled) the Deke of Parma thought first to have attempted by the River of Thames: voon the bankes whereof having at his first arrivall landed twenty or thirty thouland of his principall Souldiers, he supposed that he might easily have won the Citie of London; both because his imall thins should have followed and affifted his Land-forces, and also for that the Citie it felfe was but meanely fortified and easie to ouercome, by reason of the Citizens delicacie and discon-

tinuance from the warres. When as therefore the Spanish Fleete rode at ankerbefore Caleis, to the end they might con- Io fult with the Duke of Parma what was best to be done according to the Kings commandement. and the present estate of their affaires, and had now (as we will afterward declare) purposed vpon the second of August, heing Friday, with one power and consent to have put their intended bufinelle in practife; the Lord Admirall of England being admonished by her Maiesties Lettere from the Court, thought it most expedient either to drive the Spanish Fleet from that place, or at least wife to give them the encounter; and for that cause (according to her Maiesties prescription) he tooke forthwith eight of his worst and bateit ships which came next to hand, and disburchening them of all things which fremed to be of any value, filled them with Gunpowder, Pitch, Brimttone, and with other combultible and fiery matter; and charging all their Ordnance with

The as of fully powder, bullets and fitones, and fent the faid fully sypon the 28. of fully, being Sunday, about two of the clocke after midnight, with the winde and tide against the Spanish Fleete: which when they had proceeded a good space, being for saken of the Pilots, and fet on fire, were directly carried vpon the King of Spaines Nauie : which fire in the dead of night pur the Spaniards into fuch a perplexitie and horror (for they feared left they were like vnto those terrible ships, which Fredsrie lenebelli three yeeres before, at the fiege of Animerpe, had furnished with Gunpowder, flones, and dreadfull engines, for the diffoliction of the Duke of Parma his Bridge, built wpon the River of Schold) that cutting their cables whereon their ankers were fasted, and horfing vp their failes they betooke themiclues very confusedly vnto the maine Sea. And this fulden confusion, the principall and greatest of the foure Galiasses falling fowle of

another thip loft her midder: for which cause when the could not be guided any longer, the was by other por the force of the tide cast into a certaine thould y pon the shoare of Catri, where she was immediate the hoalds be- arely affaulted by divers English Pinnaces, Hoyes, and Drumblers. And as they lay battering of her with their Ordnance, and durft not boord her, the Lord Admirall fent thither his long Boate fore Caleis. with an hundreth choife Souldiers vinder the command of Captaine Amou Preston, V pon whole M Amias Freapproach their fellowes being more emboldened, did ofter to boord the Galliaffe; against whom for valuately the Governor thereof and Captaine of all the foure Galliaffes, Hugo de Moncada, flourly opposed handeth the himself, fighting by so much the more valiantly, in that he hoped presently to be succoured by the Galhaffe. Dake of Parma. In the meane feafon Moncada, atter hee bad endured the conflict a good white, being hit on the head with a Bullet, fell downe starke dead, and a great number of Spaniards allo were flaine in his company. The greater part of the refidue leaping ouer-boord into the See, to 40 faue them elues by wimming, were most of them drowned. Howber there escaped among others Den Anthonio de Mauriques, a principall efficer in the Spanish fleete (called by them their Veador Generall) together with a few Spaniar de befides : which Authorio was the first man that carried certaine newes of the fuccesse of their seete into Spaine. This huge & moustrous Galliaste, where-50000, duckets in were contained three hundred flaues to lug at the Oares, and four e hundred foul liers, was in the foace of three houres rifled in thesame place; and there was found amongst diners other commodities 10000 Duckets of the Spanish Kings treasure. At length when the flaues were released out of their fetters, the English men would have fet the faid ship on fire, which Monfieur Gourdon, the Gouernour of Caleis, for feare of the damage which might thereupon entire to the Towne and Hauen, would not permit them to doe, but draue them from thence with his 50

ling the 23. of

The Galliaffe

great Ordnance. Vpon the 29.0f July in the morning, the Spanift Fleete after the forelaid tumule, having arranged themselves agains into order, were, within light of Greveling, most brauely and furiously encountered by the English, where they once again got the winde of the Spaniards: who suffered themselves to be deprived of the commodity of the place in Caleis rode, and of the advantage of the winde neere ento Duckerk, rather then they would change their array, or separate their forces now comogned and writted together, standing onely upon their defence. And albeit there were many excellent and warlike fh ps in the English fleet, yet learle were there 22.or 23.2mong them all which matched 90.0f the Spany fhips in bignelle, or could conveniently affault them. Wherefore the English ships wing their prerogative of nimble flirrage, whereby they could 60 turne and wield themiclus with the winde which way they lifted, came oftentimes very neereypon the Spaniards, and charged them to fore, that now and then they were but a Pikes length at funder : and fo continually guing them one broad fide after another, they difpatched all their flos both great and small vpon them, pending one whole day from morning till night in that violent

kinde of conflict, vittill tuch time as powder and bullets failed them. In regard of which want they thought it convenient not so puritie the Spannards any longer, because they had many great vantages of the English, namely for the extraordinary bigneffe of their ships, and also for that they were so neerely contoyned, and kept together in so good array, that they could by no meanes be fought withall one to one. The English thought therefore, that they had right well acquitted themselves, in chasing the Spaniards first from Caleis, and then from Dunkerk, and by that means to have hindered them from joyning with the Duke of Parma his forces, and getting the winde of them, to have driven them from their owne coafts.

The Spaniards that day fulfained great loffe and damage, having many of their ships shot thoto row and thorow, and they discharged likewise great store of Ordinance against the English; who indeede fultained fome hinderance, but not comparable to the S. aniards loffe; for they loft not any one thip or perion of account. For very diagent inquificion being made, the Englishmen all that time wherein the Spanish Nauie failed vpon, their Seas; are not found to have wanted above one hundreth of their people; abeit Sir F. Drakes thip was pierced with thot about forty times, and his very cabben was twife fhot thorow, and about the conclusion of the fight, the bed of a certaine to the Entille-Gentlemanlying weary thereupon, was taken quite from under him with the force of a Bullet. Likewile, as the Earle of Northumberland and Sit Charles Blunt were at dinner vpon a time, the Bullet of a Demi-culturing brake thorow the middelt of their Cabbin, touched their feete. and throoke downe two of the Handers by, with many fuch accidents befalling the English thips, which it were tedious to rehearfe. Whereupon it is most apparant, that G.d miraculously preferned the English Nation. For the Lord Admirall wrote vinto her Maietty, that in all humaine reason, and according to the judgement of all men (euery circumstance being duely considered) the Englishmen were not of any luch force, whereby they might, without a miracle, date once to approach within the fight of the Spanife Fleete: infomuch, that they freely afcribed all the honour of their victory vato God, who had confounded the enemy, and had brought his coun-

fels to none effect. The same day the Spanish ships were so battered with English shot, that that very night and the Three Spanish day following, two or three of them funke right downe : and among the reft a certain great flip flips funke in of Bifeay, which Captaine Croffe allaulted, which perished even in the time of the conflict, so that 30 very few therein elcaped drowning; who reported that the Gouernors of the same thip flew one another your the occasion following : one of them which would have yeelded the ship was suddealy flame; the brother of the flame purty in reuenge of his death flew the murtherer, and in the

meane while the thip funke. The fame night two Portugall galeons of the burthen of feuen or eight hundreth tune a peece; Two Galeons to wit Saint Philip and Saint Matthew, were fortaken of the Spanish Fleete, for they were fo torne taken and carwith thot, that the water entered into them on all files. In the Galeon of Saint Philip was Fran- ried into Zeland

cis de Toleda, brother unto the Count de Argus, being Colonell oner two and thirty bands; befiles other Centlemen; who feeing their maft broken with flot, they shaped their course, as well as they could, for the coalt of Flanders: whither when they could not attaine, the principall 40 men in the flup committed them! lues to their skiffe, arrived at the next towne, which was Oftend; and the thip it felfe being left behinde with the refi ue of their company, was taken by the Villingers. In the other Galeon, called the Saine Massbew, was embarked Don Diego Pimentelli another Camp-mafter and Colonell of two and thirty bands, being brother vinto the Marquelle of Tammares, with many other Gentlemen and Captaines. Their thip was not very great, but exceeding flrong, for of a great number of Bullets which had batterd her . there were fearce twenty wherewith the was pierced or hure: her vpper worke was of force fifficient to beare off a Musket that : this thip was that thorow and pierced in the fight before Greneling : intomuch that the leakage of the water could not be stopped : whereupon the Dake of Medina fent his great skiffe vnto the Gouernour thereof, that he might faue himfelle and the principal persons, shat were 50 in his ship : which he, vpon a hault courage, refuted to doe : wherefore the Duke charged him to faile next voto himselfe; which the night following hee could not performe, by reason of the abundance of water which entered his ship on all sides; for the audiding, whereof, and so save his thip from finking he caused fitty men continually to I bour at the Pump though it were to small purpole. And feeing himfelfe thus forfaken and reparated from his Admirall, he endeuored what no could to attaine vnto the coast of Flanders; where being espied by foure or five men of war, which had their flation affigned them upon the same coast: he was admonished to yeeldehimselte vino them; which he refused to doe, was strongly assulted by them altogether, & his ship being pierced with many bullets, was brought into far worle case then before, & forty of his souldiers were flain. By which excremity he was enforced at length to yeelde himielfe vnto Peter Banderduefs 60 and other Captaine, which brought him and his ship into Zeland; and that other ship alfolast before mentioned : which both of them, immediatly after the greater and better part of their goods were valaden. funke right downe. For the memory of this exploit, the foresaid Captain Banderduels caufed a Banner of one of these shups to be set up in the great Church of Leiden in Holland, which is of to great a length, that being tailed to the very roofe, it trached downe to the ground.

Vuquuuq 2

Engliffe fhips

A fmal! thip caft awa. abe utBlankenAbout the same time another small ship being by necessity driven woon the coast of Flanders. 2bout Blankenberg, was cast away upon the lands, the people therein being faued. Thus Almighty God would have the Spaniards huge thips to be presented, not onely to the view of the English but also of the Zelanders; that at the fight of them they might acknowledge of what small ability they had beene to reflit fuch impregnable forces, had not God endued them with courage, proindence, and fortitude, yea, and fought for them in many places with his owne arme-The 29. of Iuly the Spanife fleete being encountered by the English (as is aforesaid) and Iving

The diffence-

cloie together under their fighting failes, with a South-west winde failed past Dunkerk, the Enoctole together valuer their agating laites, with a South-west winde lailed past Dunkerk, the English with the spaniar difficulty fill following the chase. Or whom the day following, when the Spaniards had got Sea we see the spaniar dechase. uy & the pra- mome, they cut their maine failes, whereby they fufficiently declared that they meant no longer to the LAdmiral to fight , but to flie. For which cause the Lord Admirall of England dispatched the Lord Henry Segmer with his fquadron of small ships vnto the coast of Flanders, where, with the helpe of the Dutch thips, he might stop the Prince of Parma his passage, if perhaps he should attempt to issue forth with his army. And he himselfe in the meane space pursued the Spanish ficet vital the fea cond of August, because he thought they had let faile for Scotland. And albeit he followed them Powder & Bul- very neare, vet did he not affault them any more, for want of Powder and Bullets. But voon the lets preclaime fourth of August, the windcarthing, when as the Spaniards had spread all their failes, betaking themselves wholly to flight, & leaving Scotland on the left hand, trended toward Norman (wherepower & mer- by they I ficiently declared that their whole intent was to faue themselues by flight, attempting power of mental both delicital both de being vinwilling to participate that danger whereinto the Spaniards plunged themislues, and be-Th. En lifere. cause they wanted things necessary, and especially Powder and Shot, returned back, for Englands un home no leaving behinde them certaine Pinaffes onely, which they enjoyined to follow the Spaniards athe pursuit of loofe, and to abserve their course. And so it came to passe, that the fourth of August, with great danger and industry, the English arrived at Harmich; for they had beene toff d vp and downe with the 4.0t Aug. a mighty tempest for the space of two or three dayes together, which it is likely did great hure water the Spanift fleet, being (as I iam before) to marmed and battered. The English now going on shoare, provided themselves forth with of Victuals, Gunpowder, and other things expedient,

victory.

The Spaniards feeing now that they wanted foure or fine thousand of their people, and having divers maimed and ficke persons, and likewife having loft ten or twelve of their principall ships, they confulted among themselves, what they were best to doe, being now escaped our of the hands of the English, because their victuals failed them in like fort, & they began also to want cables, cor lage, anker, masts, failes, and other naual furniture, and otterly despaired of the Duke of confult to faile Parma his affitance (who verily hoping & vndoubtedly expeding the return of the Spanifo fleet, round about was continually occupied about his great preparation, commanding abundance of ankers to be 40 Scotland & Ire- made, and other necessary furniture for a Nauy to be prouided) they thought it good at length, so taus, and to to return thoms. foone as the winde should serve them, to setch a compasse about Seosland and Ireland, and so to re-

that they might be ready at all affayes to entertaine the Spanish fleete, if it chanced any more to 10 re urne. Bu being afterward more certainely informed of the Spaniards course, they thought

it beit to leave them vnto those bottlerous and vncouth Northren Seas, and not there to hunt

Horfes caft

For they well understood, that commandement was given thorowout all Scotland, that they should not have any succour or affiftance there. Neither yet could they in Norway supply their wants. Wherefore, hairing taken certaine Scottife and other fitherboats, they brought the men on boord their owne ships, to the end they might be their guides and Pilots. Fearing also least their fresh water should taile them, they cast all their horses and mules ouer-boord; and so touching no where vpon the coaft of Scotland, but being carried with a fresh gale betweene the Oreades and Faar-Isles, they proceeded farre North even vnto 61 degrees of latitude, being distant from any 50 land at the leaft 40.leagues. Here the Duke of Medina, Generall of the Fleet, commanded all his followers to shape their course for Bifcay : and he himselfe with twenty or five and twenty of his thips which were best projuided of fresh water and other necessaries, holding on his course over the maine Ocean, returned fafely home. The refidue of his ships being about torty in number, and committed vnto his Vice-admirall, fell neerer with the coast of Ireland, intending their course for Cape Clare, because they hoped there to get fresh water, and to refresh themselves on land. But after they were driven with many contrary windes, at length, voon the second of September, The hipwrack they were cast by a tempest arising from the South-west vpon diners parts of Ireland, where many of the parado of their thips perished. And amongst others, the ship of Michael de Oquendo, which was one of the great Galluffes : and two great thips of Venise alio, namely, la Ratta and Belanzara, with other 36 60 or 31 fhips more, which perifhed in fundry tempefts, together with most of the perions contai-

Likewise some of the Spanish ships were the second time carried with a strong West wind into the channell of England, whereof tome were taken by the English vpon their coast, and others by the men of Rochel vpon the coast of France.

Moreover, there arrived at Newhauen in Worm andy, being by tempest inforced so to doe, one of the tours great Galliaffes, whereby they found the ships with the Spanish women which followed Of 124 thinsof the Fleet at their letting forth. Two ships also were call away vpon the coast of Norway, one of the Sounish deer them being of a great burthen; howbeit all the persons in the laid great ship were saued; info- there returned much that of 134 thips, which fee taile out of Portugall, there returned home 53 onely, small and home but 53. great : namely of the foure Gallialies but one, and but one of the foure Gallies, Of the 91, great Gilleons and Hulkes there were milling 48, and 23, returned: of the Pataches and Zabraes 17. were miffing, and 18. returned home. In briefe, there were miffing 81. fhips, in which number were Galliales, Gallies Galeons, and other veffels both great and small. And amongst thee a. ships to remaining, those also are reckoned which returned home before they came into the English channell. Two Galeons of those which were returned, were by misfortune burnt as they rode in the haven; and fuch like mishaps and many other undergoe. Of 30000, persons which went in this

expedition, there perilhed (according to the number and proportion of the ships) the greater and better part; and many of them which came home, by reason of the toiles& inconneniences which they furtained in this voiage, died not long after their arrivall. The Dake of Medina immediately D. of Medina voon his returne was depoted from his authority, commanded to his private house, and forbidden to repaire voto the Court; where he could hardly fatisfie or yield a reason voto his malicious enemies and backbiters. Many honorable personages and men of great renown deceased soone after their returne; as namely John Martines de Ricalde, with divers others, A great part also of the Spa- Ricaldes deaths

no wish Nobility and Gentry employed in this expedition perished either by fight, diseases, or drowring, before their arrivall; and among the rest Thomas Perent of Grandnell a Dutchman, being Earle of Cantebroi, and fon vnto Cardinali Grandnell his brother.

Voon the coait of Zeland Don Diego de Pimentell, brother voto the Marquesse de Tamnares. and kinfman vnto the Earle of Beneventum & Calna, and Colonell ouer 22. bands with many on ther in the fame thip was taken and detained as pritoner in Zeland.

Into England (as we faid before) Don Pedro de Valdez, a man of fingular experience, and greatly honoured in his country, was led captine, being accompanied with Don Vajques de Silna, Don Alonzo de Sayas, and others.

Likewise vpon the Scottish Westerne Isles of Lewis, and Ila, and about Cape Cantre vpon the 30 maine land, there were cast away certaine Spanif Ships, out of which were faued divers Cap-taines and Gentlemen, and almost foure hundred fouldiers, who for the most part, after their hipwracke, were brought vnto Edenborough in Scotland, and being miferably needy and naked, were there cloathed at the liberalitie of the King and the Merchants, and afterward were fecretly fhipped for Spaine; but the Scottifh Fleete wherein they paffed touching at Tar- Spaniards vitis mouth on the coast of Norfolke, were there stated for a time untill the Counsels pleasure was tied. knowne; who in regard of their manifold mileries, though they were enemies, winked at

their paffage. Vpon the Irifo coast many of their Noblemen and Gentlemen were drowned; and divers slain by the barbarous and wilde Iril. Howbeit there was brought prisoner out of Ireland, Don Alon-AQ 30 de Lucon, Colonel of two and thirty bands, commonly called a Terza of Naples: together with Rodorigo de Laffo, and two others of the family of Cordona, who were committed vinto the cultody of Six Horatio Palanicini, that Monfieur de Teligny the fon of Monfieur de la None (who being taken in fight neere Antwerpe, was detained prisoner in the Castle of Turney) might be ransomed Souther general for them by way of exchange. To conclude, there was no famous nor worthy family in all Spain, loffe. which in this expedition loit not a fon, a brother, or a kinfman.

For the perpetuall memory of this matter, the Zelanders caufed new coine of Silver and Broffe New coines to be stamped: which on the one side contained the armes of Zeland, with this inscription; stamped for the to be stamped: which on the one had contained the armost perfect of certaine great ships, memory of the with thefe words; THESPANISH FLEET: and in the circumference about the fhips, IT CAME, WENT, AND WAS. Anno 1388. That is to fay, the Spanish fleet came,

so went and was vanquished this yeere; for which, glory be given to God onely. Likewise they coined another kinde of mony; vpon the one fide whereof was repreferred a ship fleeing, and a ship finking : on the other fide, foure men making prayers and giving thankes vnto God vpon their knees; with this sentence : Man purposeth, God diposeth, 1588. Also, for the lasting memory of the same matter, they have stamped in Holland divers such coines, according to the custome of the ancient Romans. Also other coines were stamped with a Fleet slying with full faile, and inferibed ; Venit, Vidit , Fugit ; It came, faw, fled : others with the fired fhips, and the fleet in confusion, the word DVX FOEMINAFACTI.

While this wonderfull and puissant Natie was failing along the English coasts, and all men 60 did now plainly fee and heare that which before they would not be perfuaded of, all people The people of did now plainly tee and heare that which before they would not be pertwaced or, an people England and of thorowout England profitated themselnes with humble prayers and supplications with God: the mited probut especially the outlands (h Churches (who had greatest cause to feare, and against whom by uinces pray, name, the Spaniards had threatned most grienous torments) enjoyned to their people continual faft, and give failtings and supplications, that they might turne away Gods wrath and fury now imminent thankes valo Vuuuuuu 3

whon them for their fins : knowing right well, that prayer was the onely refuge against all enemies, calamities, and necessities, and that it was the onely solace and reliefe for mankinde, being visited with affliction and milery. Likewise such solemne daies of supplication were observed throughout the vnited Prouinces.

Alto a while after the Spanish Fleet was departed, there was in England, by the commandement of her Maiefty, and in the vnited Provinces, by the direction of the States, a folemne feftinall day publikely appointed, wherein all persons were enjoyned to refore vnto the Church, and there to render thankes and praifes vnto God; and the Preachers were commanded to exhort the people thereunto. The foresaid solemnity was observed upon the 19.0f November: which day was wholly fpent in Preaching, praying, giving thankes, with the accustomed solemnities of IQ

Bonfires, Singing, Ringing, and other wonted expressions of publike iov. Likewife, the Queenes Maielty her felfe, imitating the ancient Romans, rode into London in eriumph, in regard of her owne and her subjects glorious deliuerance. For being attended voon very folemnly by all the principall effaces and officers of her Realme, the was carried thorow her faid Citie of London in a triumphant chariot, and in robes of triumph, from her Palace vinto the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paul, out of the which the enfignes and colours of the vanquifhed Spaniards hung dilplaied. And all the Citizens of London in their Liveries flood on either fide the street, by their seuerall Companies, with their Ensignes and Banners : and the streets were hanged on both fides with Blew cloath, which, together with the forefaid Banners, yeelded a very trately and gallant prospect. Her Maiesty being entered into the Church, together with her 20 Cleroy and Nobles gaue thankes vnto God, and cauled a publike Sermon to be preached before her at Pauls Croffe; wherein none other argument was handled, but that praise, honour, and glory might be rendered vinto God, and that Gods name might be extolled by thankigining. And with her own Princely voyce the most Christianly exhorted the people to doe the fame : whereupon the people with a loud acclamation wished her a most long and happy life, to the confusion of her foes. The Lord Admirall had a pension assigned for his good seruice.

This publike toy was increased by Six Robert Sidney (now Earle of Leicester) who returning out of Scotland, related to her Maiestie the King of Scots faithfull friendship, and loue to her, and to the Religion. He had beene employed to the faid King, whiles the Spanish Fleet housered on the coast, to gratulate with him in the Queenes name, for his alacrity in the common cause, and to 30 obtains his promise of aide, if the Spaniards landed in Scotland; and to put him in minde how ambitiously the Spaniard fought to I wallow in all Britaine, viging the Pope to Excommunicate him fo to ftrip him of Scotland, and quit his fucceffion in England; to admonish him of the threats of Mendoza and the Popes Nuntio; that therefore he should be very wary of the Papists in Scotland. He answered concertedly, amongst other speeches, that be bepedfor no other benefit from the The Kings wife Spaniard, then that which Polyphemus had promifed Vlyffes, namely, that when the reft were denoured, be frould be fwallowed laft.

Thus the magnificent, huge, and mighty fleet of the Spaniards (which themselves tearmed in all places inuincible) fuch as failed not youn the Ocean Sea many hundreth yeeres before, in the veere 1 588. vanished into smoake; to the great confusion and discouragement of the authours 40 thereof. In regard of which her Maiesties happy successe all her neighbours and friends congratulated with her, and many Verses were penned to the honour of her Maiesty by learned men, whereof we will here annexe thole of Maiter Beza.

triumphall Ad (evenissimans Elizabetham Anglia Reginam Theodor. Bezg.

Epinitian or

S Trauerat innumeris H:spanus nauibus aquor, Regnis iuncturus sceptra Britanna suis. And all to joyne the Kingdome of that land Vnto the Kingdomes that he had in hand. Tanta buins, rogitas, qua motus causa? superbos Now if you aske what fet this King on fire. To practife warre when he of peace did treat. Impulit Ambitio, vexit Anaritia. Quam bene te ambitio mersit vanissima ventus? Et tumidos tumide, vos superastis aqua! Quam bene toims raptores orbis auaros, Haust inexhausti insta vorago maris! At tu,cui venti, cui totum militat aquor, Regina, ô mundi totius vna, decus, Sic regnare Deo perge, ambitione remota,

Vs te Anglislongum Angles ipsa fruaris, Quam dilecta bonis, tam metuenda malis. The Came in English.

Pradiga sic opibus perge innare pios,

With so great rage as nothing could appeale, And with fuch ftrength as never feene before :

It was his Pride, and neuer quencht defire, To spoile that Ilads wealth, by peace made great: 50 His Pride which far about the heavens did iwel And his defire as vnfuffic'd as hell. But well have winds his proud blafts overblown And swelling waves alaid his swelling heart, Well hath the Sea with greedy gulfs vnknown, Denoured the denourer to his imart: And made his ships a pray vnto the fand, That meant to pray vpon anothers land. And now, O Queene, about all others bleft, For whom both winds &waves are preft to fight 62 So rule your owne, fo fuccour friends opprett, The Spanish Fleet did flote in narrow Seas, So rule your owne, so succour friends oppre And bed her ships against the English shore, (As farre from pride, as ready to doe right) That England you, you England long enioy,

No leffe your friends delight, then foes annoy;

CHAP. II. Packet of lyes, concerning the successe of the Catholike Army.

I have thought good to adde here the prime reports made by the Spaniards and their friends, touching the successe of their Armada, as they were printed in Spaine, and after published and sorned in England.

The true Relation of the successe of the Catholike Armie against their Enemies, by the Letters of the Post-master of Lograno of the fourth of September, and by Letters from Roan of the one and thirtieth of August, and by Letters from Paris of the Kings Embassadour there: wherein be declareth the imprisonment of Francis Drake, and other great Nobles of England, and how the Queene . Like live is in the Field with an Armie, and of a certaine Mutinie which was amongst the libelette ce.

is in the Field with an Armie, and of a certainte Midtine which was almong that A blind BalOueenes Armie, with the successe of the said Casholike Armie since they entred Indinates the in the Groyne, till they came on the Coast of England, with two Ballets * com- Homer for Apounded by Christouer Brano, a blind man of Cordona, Printed with licence by chillian con-

Gabriel Ramos Beiarano Printer.

He newes of England is confirmed bere, by a Letter of the Gouernour of Roan. Hee writeth bee By a Letter of He newes of England is confirmed were, by a Letter of the Comment of the English Ar Diego Peres, bath in his power the chiefe Pilot of Capitaine Drake, and that he knowed bear all the English Ar Diego Peres, bath in his power the chiefe Pest. 20 mie remained ouerthrowne, basing funke two and twentie Ships, and taken fortie, and imprifored Francis chiefe Post-Drake, baumg ginen them chase almost as high as Abspurge, and same many by the sword, and likewise master of Lofaith that there was found in Captaine Drakes Ship, a Peece of Ordnance of fine and twentie foot long, fecond of Sepwhich discharged a Shot of a hundreth weight at once made of purpose, with one onely Shot to sinke our tember, 1588. Spanish Admirall, and it pleased God, alshough shee was somewhat battered, yet was shee repaired againe. and oversbrew the English Armie.

He English baue loft abone fortis Ships in one encounter where they could not flye, which was in Copic of a Luxaten a Hauen in Scotland , to the which place , fince the departure of the Spanish Armies letter that tohn from Calleis, the English Armie followed , and supposing they went to take that Hanen, they got before Gamara wince 20 ours to defend the entrance : wee feeing them fo neare the English Fleet, and that they could not retire, at 21.0fAugust of they alwaies did when they pleafed to the Enghila Hamou, they fer upon them fo voltimeth that they funke the fame years twentie of their Ship; and they rooke twentin fix whole and found, and the rest feeing their destruction fied away with great leffe of men, and their Ships very much battered, and with this (they fay) the Spanish Armie tooke the Hauen where they are very well ledged, as every one affirmeth, and so the newes is here: I pray God gine them good successe: Wee understand by the Post come from Calleis, that in England it is forbidden open pane of death and losse of goods, that in bodie dee write news from thence to any place: which confirmeth the newes about.

Doe not write news of the Spanish Armie , because they are diners, and would gladly write the very Copie of a AD truth. Now by the newes which runneth from divers places, as Calleis, Deepe, and Holland, and Letter that presumptions from England and other places, it is holden for certaine that they fought with the English, Pèare de d'id and broken their heads, haning funke many of their Ships and taken others, and the rest which ther far, did write from and broken their beads, having funke many of their Joseps and tagen others, and to east which they for Roan the first were twentie feuen Ships, returned very much battered to the River of London, which are all those that of September could escape: There goeth with this Post another Post of lorge Seguin of Calleis, which faith that cera of the same taine Masters and Mariners of Zeland, did affirme to the Governours of Calleis, Mounsier de Gorden, yeere. that our Fleet is in a Hanen or Riner in Scotland, called Trifla, where they (ay there may ride two thou-(and Ships : this is that which commonly is current here.

Tnewes from London the thirtie fix of August, it is knowne for most certaine from persons of cre- Adule from 50 Bdue, that the Queens Admiral Generall was arrived in the River of London, with twentie fine fing Landon, which onely without his Admirall Ship, which was taken by our Admirall Saint John, and it is well knowne in dor of our So-England, that to hide the loffe of their Admiral Ship, they fay bee put bimfelfe in a smaller Ship the bet- ucreiene Lord ter to follow our Armie: and it is knowne for certaintie that be faued bimfelfe in a Boat when he lost his the King reli-Ship, That Drake for certaintse is taken or flame. The same is confirmed by the way of Holland, by dentin Paris a Pinnace of theirs. And from Austerland, that the Oncene commanded bypon paine of death, that no had from body (hould speake of ber Fleet, and that there was great forrow in those parts of England, and that the thence. Queene bad in the field that ie thou fand raw Souldiers , betwint Dover and Mirgate , and that the Catholikes understanding that all their Fleet was dispersed, moned a certaine Mutinie, which forced the By a Letter of Queene to got ber selfe into the Field, and for certaine it is knowne that there is not brought into Eng- the chiefe Post 60 land, neither Ship nor Boat of ours, more then the Ship of Don Pedro Valdez, and that our Fleet may mafter of Bur-

eone into Scotland, and arrived in a Hanen called Trapena Euxaten. Fier that I bad written this, bere is arrined a Scottishman , which faith that all the spinish Fleet Ass arrived in Scotland, and that Scottishmen have taken Armes against the English.

to the French Embaffadour,

Relation of that which this day, the fifth of Sept. 1588.till three of the clock in the atternoon, knowne by the relations and aduice come to his Maiethie from the baspy Fleet, wherot is Generall the Duke of Medina, in the conqueft of

THat upon the thirtieth of July, without seeing any sayle of the Enemies in the Sea, her came to the Channell, fixe leagues from Plimouth : where understanding the Enemies were , bee 140 ha h passed till thered together and set in order all the Fleet: and sayling the first of August, there was discousred some Sayles of the Enemies, the which the second day were numbred to bee threescore Sayle, of which the Duke tooke the wind, and passed without any fight, although be presented the same to them, how ben they becan to shoot at the Rearward : but the Duke in the Galleon S. Martin, fet the Trop of his Ship against the biggest of the Enemies, the which being succoured by twentie others, fled away of this fight and first encounter, there was sunke three Galeasses, and foure mightie Galeons of the Queenes: there was burnt of ours by negligence of a Gunner, the Admirall of Oquendo, and the Enemies tooke the chiefe Shis of Don Pedro de Valdez, which being entangled with others under his charge : wai left without to Tackle, and so neere the Enemies, that shee could not be succoured by others.

With this, our Fleet feeing that the Enemy in enery point did flye from giving battell, they failed with Some salme weather, and the Enemies after them, Shooting alwayes at the Rearward, until the senenth. that our Fleet ancored in the Road of S. John, betwiet Calleis and Bollin, nine leagues from Dunkerk.

and the Enemies did the like, the neerest they could to England.

The night being approached the Enemies got up their Ankers to get wind, and not to suffer our Shoe to see out of the Road to Sea, because they had trimmed eight Ships of fire, which with the current of the water . Should have put themselves amongst our Ships to have burnt them. But my Lord the Duke, forelesing the danger presented them , with commandement that the Ships that were neerest should cut their Cables, and take up the others with a readine se uncredible : and with this the Enemies pretence was him. 30 dered, and fo got the Sea most branely and with good fortune, that if bee had not done it our Army foculd bane beene in an enill case, for in the very place where we left, there was hot off by them out of those fiers Ships, such Fires and other Engines , that were sufficient to burne the Sea , much more Ships which are made of Wood and Prich.

In this departure, the Captaine of the Galeaffes had a great mischance : for getting up her Anker, a Cable fell foule of her Helme, that thee could not follow the rest, which cansed one of her sides to be so bish that her Ordnance could not play, and fo twentie fine Pennaces came and battered ber, and with all this if the Mariners. Souldiers and Rowers that were in her bad not cast themselves into the Seast is holden for certaine, that Don Hugo de Moncada bad defended ber as be did untillfee came into Caffeis, where at the entrance thereof, he was killed of two (aliner floot, the people on floore defended the Galeaffe, and all 30 that was in ber, and delinered the fame to our Soneraigne Lord the Kings Miniflers.

At this time the Duke had a very franke wind, and the like had the Queenes Fleet; and to they both paffed by the fight of Dunkerke, informuch as they on Land buen the Gallion S. Martin, and others that

went fighting with the English Army, and in this order they went till the twelfth.

Afterwards they write, that their came into Calleis a Ship, which faith, that the twelfth day they did fee the two Fleets together in fight : another which came afterwards, faid be had feene fome Ships footled and torne, and from them they threw out their bag gage which they famed in Boats, which aroneth they were Ships of the Enemies, for that our men bad no place to faue them felnes, nor there were none of them arrived into Flanders, which was their place of returne.

Ott of England was adulte ginen, that on the thirteenth arrived lifteene of the Queenes Ships, and they faid that the Galleon S.Martin, wherin my Lord the Duke is (whom Godpreserve) had encountred with Drake, and had grappled his Ship, and captined his Person, and other Noble Englishmen, and taken other fifteene Ships, beside others that were districted, and the Duke with his Fleet followed his way io Scotland, because the wind was not come about.

With these newes his Maiesty resteth very much contented, and cansed them to be sent to the Empresse, by the bands of Francisco Ydiaquez, bis Secretary of Estate.

Imprinted in Senill, in the Houle of Cofmo de Lara, Printer of Bookes, by licence of the Counte of Orgaz, Affiftant in Sewill.

CHAP. XII.

A Discourse of the Portugali Voyage, A. 1589. Sir I o H M NORRIS and Sir FRANCIS DRAKE Generalls, written (as is thought) by Colonell ANTONIE WINGFIELD, imployed in the fame Voyage, formerly published by his friend to whom it was written : and here abbreniated.



Auing determinately purposed to pur on this habite of a Souldier, I grew doubt- 60 full whether to employ my time in the warres of the Low-countries, which are in auxiliarie manner maintained by her Maiestie, or to follow the fortune of this voyage, which was an aduenture of her and many honourable personages, in reuenge of viniupportable wrongs offered vato the efface of our Country by the

Castilian King : in arguing whereof , I finde that by how much the Challenger is reputed before the Defendant, by fo much is the journey to bee preferred before thole defensive Warres. For had the Duke of Parma his turne beene to defend, as it was his good for une to inuade : from whence could have proceeded that glorious honour which these late warres have laid voon him, or what could have beene faid more of him, then of a Respondent (though never so valiant) in a private Duell ! Euen that he hath done no more then by his honour he was tied vnto. For the gaine of one Towne, or any small defeat grueth more renowme to the Affailant, then the defence of a Countrey, or the withstanding of twentie encounters, can yeeld any man who is bound by his place to guard the fame : whereof as well the particulars of our age, especially in the Spanier d, as the reports of former Hiltories may affure vs, which have fill layed the fame of all warres upon the Inuader. And doe not ours in these dayes live obscured in Flanders, either not having wherewithall to manage any warre, or not putting on Armes, but to defend themselves when the enemy shall procure them ! Whereas in this short time of our Adventure, we have won a Town by Escalade, battered and allaulted another, ouerthrowne a mightie Princes power in the hearfall of the Field, landed our Army in three feuerall places of his Kingdome, marched feuen dayes in the heart grelibexploirs of his Country, tyen three nights in the Suburbs of his principall Citie, beaten his forces into the in this voyage, Gates thereof, and poff-ffed two of his frontier Forts , as shall in discourse thereof more particularly appeare. But our Army, which hath not coft her Maiestie much aboue the third part of one yeeres expences in the Lew-countries, hath already fpoyled a great part of the prouision hee had made at the Graine of all torts, tor a new voyage into England; burnt three of his Ships, whereof one was the fecond in the last yeeres expedition, called S. Inan de Colorado; taken from him aboue 150, Peeces of good artillery; cut off more then 60. Hulkes, and 20, French Ships well manned fit and ready to lerue him for men of warre against vs , laden for his store with Corne , Victualls, Masts, Cables and other merchandizes ; slame and taken the principall men of Warre hee had in Galitia : made Don Pedro Euriques de Gusman, Conde de Fuentes, Generall of his forces in Portugall, shamefully run at Peniche; laid along of his best Commander in Lisbon; wherefore I directly conclude that this proceeding is the most fafe and necessary way to be held against him, and therefore more importing then the warre in the Low-countries. I doubt not but this voyage hath sufficiently madeknowne what they are even vpon their owne dunghill; which, had it bin fet out in fuch on fort as it was agreed upon by their first demand, it might have made our Nation the most glorious people of the world. For hath not the want of eight of the twelve Peeces of Artillery , which were promifed vnto the Aduenture, loft her Maie ity the poff. fion of the Groine and many other places, as hereafter shall appeare; whose defensible rampiers were greater then our battery (such asit was) cold force : and therefore were left vnattempted ! It was also resoluted to have sent 600, English Hories of the Low-countries, whereof wee had not one, notwithflanding the great charges expended in their transportation hither ; and that may the Army affembled at Puente da Burger thanke God or, as well as the forces of Portugall, who fore-ran vs fix dayes together : Did we not want leven of the thirteen old Companies, which we should have had from thence; foure of the ten Duteb Companies ; and fix of their men of Warre for the Sea, from the Hollanders: which I may juilly lay wee wanted, in that we might have had fo many good Souldiers, fo many good ships, and to many able bodies more then wee had? Did there not upon the first thinking of the journey, divers gallant Courtiers put in their names for Adventurers to the sum of 10000. li. who feeing it went forward in good earnest, aduited themselues better, and laid the want of to much money upon the journey Was there not moreouer a round fumme of the aduenture

of no fmall moment : What milery the detracting of the time of our fetting out, which should have beene the first of February, did lay upon vs, too many can witnesse: and what extremitie the want of that months victualls which wee did eat, during the moneth wee lay at Plimouth for wind, might have driven vs vnto, no man can doubt of, that knoweth what men doe line by, had not God given vs in the end a more prosperous wind and shorter passage into Galitia then hath been often seene, where our owne force and fortune remictualled vs largely : of which croffe winds, that held vs two dayes after our going out, the Generalls being weary, thrust to Sea in the same, wifely chusing rather to attend the change thereof there, then by being in Harbour to lofe any part of the better, when it should come by having their men on shoare : in which two dayes twentie five of our Companies (hipped in part of the Fleet were feattered from vs , either not being able or willing to

spent in leaving, furnishing, and maintaining three moneths one thousand fine hundred men for the feruice of Berghen, with which Companies the Mutinies of Oftend were suppressed, a feruice

double Ulbant.

These burdens layed upon our Generalls before their going out, they have patiently endured, 60 and I thinke they have thereby much enlarged their honour : for nating done thus much with the rall Drake. want of our Artillery, 600. Horie, 3000. Foot, 20000. It of their adventure, and one moneths victualls of their proportion, what may be consectured they would have done with their full complement : For our instruction against them, who had almost seduced you from the true opinon edu ation and you hold or such men, you shall understand that Generall Norris from his booke was trained up comployments,

in the warres of the Admirall of France, and in very young yeeres had charge of men under the Earle of Effex in Ireland : which with what commendations hee then discharged, I leave to the report of them who oblered those services. Vpon the breach betwirt Don John and the States. he was made Colonell Generall of all the English Forces there present, or to come, which he contimued two veeres : he was then made Marshall of the Field vinder Conte Hobenlo : and after that. Crantrall of the Army in Frifand: at his comming home in the time of Monfieurs government in Flanders, he was made Lord Prelident of Munster in Ireland, which he yet holdeth, from whence within one yeere hee was fent for, and fent Generall of the English Forces, which her Majeffie leat then to the Low-countries, which he held till the Earle of Leicesters going ouer. And he was made Matshall of the Field in England, the enemy being upon our Coast, and when it was expected the Crowne of England should have beene tried by battell. All which places of Command which never Englishman successfuely actained vnto in forraine warres, and the high places her Blajeftie hath thought him worthy of , may fuffice to perfwade you that hee was not altogether valikely to discharge that he vadertooke.

What fame Generall Drake hath gotten by his journey about the world, by his adventures to the West Indies, and the sources hee hath laid upon the Spanish Nation, I leave to the Sontherne parts to speake of. But to answere the reports, which have beene given out in repreach of the Actors and Action by fuch as were in the fame: let no man thinke otherwife, but the they, who fearing the caruall accidents of Warre had any purpose of returning, did first aduise of fom: occasion that should moue them thereunto ; and having found any what focuer did thinke it 20 full iently just, in respect of the earnest defire they had to seeke out matter that might colour

their comming home.

Of these there were some, who having noted the late Flemilb wars, did find that many young men haue gone over and fafely returned Souldiers within few moneths. in having learned fome words of Art yied in the wars, and thought after that good example to fpend like time among it vs: which being expired they began to garrell at the great mortalize that was among t vs. The neglect of discipline in the Armie, for that men were suffered to bee drunke with the plantie of Wines. The fearlitie of Surgions. The want of carriages for the hurr and ticke : and the penury of victualls in the Campe: It hath beene proued by fluckt, examinations of our Muffers, that we were never in our fulnette before our going from Plimente 11000. Souldiers, nor aboue 2500. 30 Mariners. It is also evident that there returned about 6000, of all forts, as appeareth by the feperall paiments made to them fince our comming home. And I have truely thewed you that of thefe numbers very neere three thousand for looke the Armie at the Sea, whereof fome passed into France, and the rest returned home. So as wee never being 13000, in all, and having brought home about fix thousand with vs, you may see how the world hath beene seduced, in beleeuing that we have left 16000. men by ficknelle.

If at home in the eyes of your Indices, Majors, Preachers, and Mafters, and where they pay for enery pot they take, they cannot be kept from their liquor : doe they thinke that those base difordered persons whom themselves sent vnto vs, as living at home without rule, who hearing of Wine doe long for it as a daintie that their puries could never reach to an England, and having it 40 there without money eyen in their houses where they lie and hold their guard, can be kept from being drunke; and once drunke, held in any order or tune, except we had for every drunkard an Officer to attend him ! But who bee they that have run into these discreters ! Euen our newest men, our youngest men, and our idlest men, and for the most part our slouenly prest men, whom the luftices (who have alwayes thought vnworthily of any warre) have fent out as the four and dregs of the Countrey. And those were they, who diftempering themselves with their hot Wines, haue brought in that fickneffe, which hath infected honefter men then themfelues. But I hope, as in other places the recourry of the difease, doth acquaint their bodies with the ayre of the Countrey where they be, so the remainder of these which have either recourred, or past without ficknesse will proue most fit for Martiall services.

If we have wanted Surgeons, may not this rather be laid vpon the Captaines (who are to proui le for their seuerall Companies) then vpon the Generalls, whole care both been more generall. And how may it be thought that every Captaine, vpon whom moil of the charges of raiting their Companies was laid as an adventure, could provide themselves of all things expedient for a war, which was alwayes wont to be maintained by the purfe of the Prince. But admit enery Captain had his Surgeon : yet were the want of curing neuers beleffe : for our Enelas Surgeons (for the most part) bee vnexperienced in hurts that come by shot because England hath not knowne warres but of late, from whose ignorance proceeded this discomfore, which I hope will warne those that hereafter goe to the warres, to make preparation of such as may better preserve mens

From whence the want of carriages did proceed, you may conjecture in that wee marched through a Country neither plentifull of fuch provisions, nor willing to part from any thing yes this I can affure you, that no man of worth was left either hurt or nicke in any place voptomized for. And that the Generall commanded all the Mules and Affes, that were laden wire any bagpage to be upburdened and taken to that wie : and the Earle of Effer and he for mony hired men gage to be viscouter to sent tanether the Earle (whole true vertue and nobilitie, as it dothin all other his worthy his actions appeare, to did it very much in this) threw downe his owne stuffe, I means apparell Acts. and neoglisties which hee had there from his owne carriages, and letthem be left by the way to pat burgand ticke men your chem.

And the great complaint that these men make for want of victurils; may well proceed from their not knowing the wants of warre afor if to feed upon good Beeues, Muttons, and Goares, be to want , they have endured great francisie at Land , whereunto they never wanted two dayes . together wine to mixe which their water, nor bread to eat with them meat (in fome quantitie) ex-10 cept it were fuch as had vowedrather to flarue then so thir out of their places for food; of whom we have too many.

After hix dayers sayling from the Coast of England, and the fifth after we had the wind good, be. Our men land ing the sweatieth of Aprill in the eneming, we landed in a bay more the state English mile from the within a mile ing the twentieth of April in the eneming, we randed in any more enemalia any in the troit of the G one.

Groine, in our long Boats and Primaces without any impeachments from whence we preferrly the 10-01 April, the 10-01 April. marched toward the Towne, within one halfe mile weowere encounted by the enemy, who being charged by ours, retired into their gates. For that might our Armietay in the Villages, Houses, and Mils next adjoyning, and very neere round about the Towne, into the which the G leon named S. John (which was the second of the last yeeres Elect against England) one Hulke, two fmaller Ships, and two Gallies which were found in the Road, did beat vpon vs and vpon our 20 Companies as they palled too and tro that night and she next morning. General Norris having that morning before day viewed the Towne, found the fame defended on the Lind fide (for it francesh vpon the necks of an land) with a wall vpon a dry Dich's whereupon hee refolued to try in two places what might be done against it by Escalade, and in the meane time adulied for the landing of some Artillerie to be upon the Ships and Graties, that they might not annoy vs : which being but in execution, woon the planting of the first Peece the Gallies abandoned the Road, and berooke them to Ferell, not farre from thence : and the Armada being beaten with the Artillery and Musketers that were placed upon the next shoare, left her playing upon vs. The reft of the day was frent in preparing the Companies, and other proudions readie for the furprife

of the bale Towne, which was effected in this fort.

There were appointed to bee landed 1200, men, wader the conduct of Coloriell Huntler, and Captaine Fewer the Vice-Admirall, on that fide nemetroncing weby, water in long Boates and Pinnaces, wherein worst placed many Perces of Artiflery to beat upon the Towns in their spproach : at the corner of the wall, which defended the other water file, were appointed Captain Richard Wong field, Lieutenant Colonell to Generall Noris, and Captaine Samplon, Lieutenant Colonell to Generall Drake, to enter at low water with fine hundred men it they found it piffable,but if not, to betake them to the Efentede, for they had also Ladders with them sat the other corner of the wall, which towned to that fide that was attempted by water, were appointed Colonell Umpton, and Colonell Bret, with three bundred men to enter by Efcalade. All the Companies which (hould enter by Boat being imbarked before the low water, and having given the 40 alarme, Gaptaine Wingfield and Captaine Sampfon betooke them to the Efculade, for they bad in commandement to chargeall at one instant. The Boats landed without any great difficultie : vet had they some men hurt in landing. Colonell Bret, and Colonell Fingten entred their quarter wichout encounter, not finding any defence made against them : for Captaine Hinder being one of them that entred by water, at his first entry, with some of his owne companie whom hee trusted well, betooke himselfe to that part of the wall, which hee cleered before that they offen red to enter, and so scoured the wall, till he came on the backe of them, who maintained the fight against Captaine Wingfield and Captaine Sampson; who were twice bearen from their Ladders, and found very good reliftance, till the enemies perceiving ours entred in two places at their backes, were driven to abandon the same. The reason why that place was longer defended then 50 the other, is (as Don Iuan de Luna , who commanded the fame affirmeth.) that the enemie that day had resolved in counsell how to make their defences, if they were approached : and therein concluded, that, if wee attempted it by water, it was not able to bee held, and therefore upon the discovery of our Boates, they of the high Towne should make a fignall by fire from thence, that all the low Towne might make their recreat thither : but they (whether troubled with the fudden terror we brought vpon them, or forgetting their decree) omitted the file, which made them

guard that place till we were entred on every tide. Then the Towne being entred in three feuerall places with an huge cry, the Inhabitants betooke them to the high To a netwhich they might with leffe perill doe, for that ours being frangers there, knew not the way to cut them off. The rest that were not put to the sword in f. rie, 60 fled to the Rocks in the liand, others hid themselves in Chambers and Sellers, which were energy

day found in great numbers. Amongst those Don luun de Luna, a man of very good commandement, having hidden himselfe in a houle, did the next morning yeeld himfelfe. There was also taken that night a Commissarie of victuals, called luan de Vera, who contested that there were in the Groine at our entrie fine hun-

dred Souldiers, being in leven Companies, which returned very weake (as appeareth by the fmall numbers of them) from the sourney of England. The rest falling into the hands of the common Soundiers, bad their throats cut, to the number of fine hundred as I conjecture, first and last, after Intemperate wee had entred the Towne, and in the entry thereof there was found entrie Seller full of Wine. dishing cause whereon our men by inordinate drinking, both grew themselves for the present sensite of the danger of the flor of the Town, which hurt many of them being drunk, and tooke the field excund of their ficknesse; for of fugh was our first and chiefest mortalitie. There was also abundant store N wyovage to -of Victualls, Salty and all kind of prouision for shipping and the warre : which was confessed by Excland incn. the faid Committary of Violualls taken there, to be the beginning of a Magafin of all forth of prothe faid Computary or visitians taken that of the faid Computary or visitians taken the faid Computary or visitians taken that the faid Computary or visitians that the advantaged vs, and prejudiced the King of Spaine.

The next morning about eight of the clocke the enemies abandoned their Ships, And having ouercharched the Artillery of the Gallion, left her on fire, which burnt in terrible fort two dates Gallion burns, together, the fire and ouescharging of the Peeces being fo great, as of fiftie that were in her, there were not about fixteene taken out whole; the rest with ouercharge of the powder being broken and molten with heat of the fire, were taken out in broken pieces into divers Ships. The fame day was the Cloifter of the South fide of the Towne entred by vs, which joyned verie neere to the wall of the Town, out of the chambers and other places whereof we beat into the lame with our Musketiers.

The next day in the afternoone there came downe fome two thousand man, gathered together out of the Countrey, even to the gates of the Towne, as resolutely (led by what spirit I know 20 not) as though they would have entred the fame : but at the first defence made by ours that had the guard there, wherein were flaineabout eighteene of theirs, they tooke them to their heeles in the same disorder they made their approach, and with greater speed then ours were able to follow : notwithstanding wee followed after them more then a mile. The second day Colonell Huntler was fent into the Countrey with three or foure hundred men, who brought home very

great Hore of Kine and Sheepe for our reliefe.

The third day in the night, the Generall had in purpole to take a long Municion-house builded voon their wall, opening towardes vs, which would have given great advantage against them; but they knowing the commodity thereof for ve, burnt it in the beginning of the enening; which put him to a new councell : for he had likewife brought fome Artillery to that fide of the Town. Dangerous fire During this time there happened a very great fire in the lower end of the Towne; which, had it not bin by the care of the Generals heedily feene voto and the fury thereof precented by pulling downe many houses which were most in danger, as next vnto them, had burnt all the prouisions we found there, to our wonderfull hinderance.

The fourth day, were planted under the guard of the Cloifters two Demy-canons, and two Coluerings against the Towne, defended or gabbioned with a crosse wall, thorow which our battery lay; the first and second tire whereof shooke all the wall down, so as all the Ordnance lay open to the Enemy, by reason wherof some of the Canoniers were shot and some slaine. The Lieutenant also of the Ordnance, M. Spencer, was flame fait by Sir Edward Norris, Mafter thereof: AO whose valour being accompanied with an honourable care of defending that trust committed vnto him, neuer left that place, till he receiued direction from the Generall his brother to cease the battery, which he presently did, leaving a guard vpon the same for that day; and in the night following made fo good defence for the place of the battery, as after there were very few or none anneyed therein. That day Captaine Goodwin had in commandement from the Generall, that when the affault should be given to the Towne, he should make a proffer of an Escalade on the other fide, where he held his guard : but he (mistaking the fignall that would have beene given) attempted the same long before the assault, and was shot in the mouth. The same day the Generall having planted his Ordnance ready to batter, canted the Towne to be summoned; in which summons they of the Towne shot at our Drum : immediately after that there was one hanged over 50 the wall, and a parle defired; wherein they gaue vs to vinderstand, that the man hanged was hee that shot at the Drum before : wherein they all intreated to have faire wars, with promise of the fame on their parts. The rest of the parle was spent in talking of Don Inan de Luna, and some other prisoners, and somewhat of the rendring of the Towne, but not much, for they listned not greatly thereunto.

Generall Norris having by his skilfull view of the Towne (which is almost all seated vpon 2 Vidermining. Rocke) found one place thereof mineable, did prefently fet workemen in hand withall; who after three daies labour (and the feuenth after we were entred the base Towne) had bedded their Powder, but indeed not farre enough into the wall. Against which time the breach made by the Canon being thought affaultable, and Companies appointed as well to enter the fame, as that which was expected should be blowne up by the Mine : namely, to that of the Canon, Captaine Richard Wingfield, and Captaine Philper, who led the Generalls Foot-company, with whom allo Captaine Torke went, whose principall commandement was over the Horse-men. And to that of the Mine, Captaine lobs Sampfon, and Captaine Anthony Wingfield Lieutenant Colonell to the Master

Matter of the Ordnauce, with certaine felected out of divers Regiments. All these Companies being in Armes, and the affault intended to be given in all places at an inflant, fire was put to the traine of the Mine; by reason the Powder brake out backwardes in a place where the Caue was made too high, there could be nothing done in either place for that day, During this time Captain Prouisions Hinder was lent with some chosen out of every Company into the Country for provisions, where breught in-

of he brought in good ftore, and returned without luffe. The next day Cap. Anthony Samplen was lent out with some fine hundred to fetch in ponisiona for the Army, who was encounted by them of the Country, but he put them to flight, and returned with good fo ale. The same night the Miners were fet to worke againe, who by the second To day after had wrought very well into the foundation of the wall. Against which time the Companies aforefaid being in readineffe for both places (Generalt Drake on the other fide, with two or three hundred men in Pinnaces, making proffer to attempt a firong Fort voon an lland before the Towns, where he left more then thirtis men) fire was given to the testine of the Mine, which blew up halfe the Tower under which the Powder was planted. The affailants having in charge you the effecting of the Mine prefently to give the affault, performed it accordingly; but too foone : for having entred the top of the besich the other halfr of the Tower, which with the first Towerfallets. force of the Powder was onely shaken and made loose, tell woon our men e vider which were buried about twentie or thirtie, then being under that part of the Tower. This fo amazed our men that flood in the breach, not knowing from whence that terror came, as they for looke their Commanders, and lett them among the ruines of the Muse. The two E ungues of Generall Drake and Ca praine Anthony Worg field were that in the breach, but their colours were refeued : the Generails by Captaine Sampfons Lieurenant, and Captaine Wingfields by himfelfe. Among ft them that the wail tell voon, was Cap. Sydenbam pittifully loft; who having three or foure great Rones voon his lower parts, was held to fait, as neither himfelfecould ftirre, nor any reasonable company recouer him. Not with standing the next day being found to be aline, there was sen or twelve loft

in accempting to relieve him. The breach made by the Canon, was wonderfully well affaulted by them that had the charge thereof, who brought their men to the pull of the Pike at the top of the breach. And being readie to enter, the looie earth (which was indeede but the ribbilh of the walld) with 30 the weight of them that were thereon flipped outwarder from under their feet. Whereby did app: are halfe the wall subactived. For let no man thinks that Culterit of Demy-canon can fallficiently batter a defentible rambire : and of those Reeces which we had; the better of the Denay canons at the focond that brike in her carriages , to m the battery was of left force , being but of

three Peeces

In our recreat (which was from both breaches thorow a narrow lane) were many of our men hurt ; and Captaine Dolphin, who ferued very well that day, was hurt in the very breach. The failing of this attempt, in the opinion of all the beholders, and of fuch as were of the best judgement wis the fall of the Mine; which had doubtleffe faceeeded, the rather, because the approch was unlooked for by the enemy in that place, and therefore not fo much defence made there as in the other which made the Generall grow to a new refolution : for finding that two daies battery had fo little beaten their wall, and that he had no better preparation to batter withall : he knew in his experience, there was no good to be done that way; which I thinke he first put in proofe, to try if by that terror hee could get the upper Towne, having no other way to put it in hazzard to speedily, and which in my conscience had obtained the Towne, had not the defendants bin in as great peril of their lives by the displeasure of their King in giving it vp, as by the Bullet or Sword in defending the same, For that day before the affault, in the view of our Armie, they burne's Cloi-Her within the Town, and many other houses adjoying to the Castle, to make it more defenfible: whereby it appeared how little opinion themselves had of holding it against vs , had not God (who would not have vs fuddenly made proud) laied that misfortune spon vs.

The next day the Generall hearing by a prifoner that was brought in, that the Conde de An- cende de Ac-So drads had affembled an Armie of eight thousand at Puente de Burgos, fixe miles from thente in dradahis Ars the way to Pelance, which was but the beginning of an Armie : in that there was a greater leavy mic. ready to come thither under the Conde de Altomira, either in purpose to relieue the Groine; or to encampe themselves neere the place of our embarking, there to hinder the same; for to that purpole had the Marquelle of Straibs, written to them both the first night of our landing, as the Commiffary taken then conteffed, or at the leaft to ftop our further entrance into the Countrey, (for during this time, there were many incursions made of three or foure hundred at a time, who burnt, spoiled, and brought in victualls plentifully) the Generall, I say, hearing of this Armie, had in purpose the next day following to visite them, against whom hee carried but nine Regiments: in the Vantguard were the Regiment of Sir Roger Williams, Sir Edward Norrie, and Colonell Sadieg : in the Battaile, that of the Generall of Colonell Lane, and Colonell Medierte and

in the Reareward, Sir Henry Norris, Colonell Huntley, and Colonell Brets Regiments; lealang the other five Regiments with Generall Drake, for the guard of the Cloiffer and Artifilery. About ten of the crocke the next day, being the fixe of May, halfe a mile from the Campe,

or the social

20202-01

wee discourring the enemy Sir Edward Norris, who commanded the V aut guard in chiefe, appointed his Lieutenant Colorieli Captaine Anthony Wing field to command the thot of the fame, who dissided them into three troupes; the one he appointed to Captain Meddleton to be conducted in away on the left hand : another to Gaptain Erugton to take the way on the right hand, and the bodie of them (which were Mulquetiers) Captamo Wing field tooke himfelfe, keeping the direct way of the march. But the way taken by Captaine Middleton met a little before with the way held by Captaine Wingfield, fo as he giving the first charge vpon the enemy, was in the infant leconded by Captaine Wing field, who beat them from place to place (they having very good places of defence rand croffe Waltes which they might have held long) till they betooke them to their Brilge, which is over a creeke comming out of the Sea, builded of Stone vpon Ar. ches. On the foot of the further fide whereof, lay the Car pe of the enemy very firongly entrenched, who with our hochesten to the further end of the Bridge, Sir Edward Norris marchine in the point of the Pikes, without flay palled to the Bridge, accompanied with Colonell Sidner. Captaine Hunder, Captaine Falferd, and diners others, who found the way cleere over the fame. but through an incredible volley of thot; for that the thot of their Army flanked vpon both files of the Bridge, the further and whereof was parricaded with Barrella; but they who should have guarded the same, feeing the proud appropriate wer made, fortooket the defence of the barricade. where Sir Edward entred, and charging the first defendant with his Pike, with very earnest nelle in overthrufting, fell, and was grieuously hurt at she sword in the head , but was most honoursbly refcued by the Generall his brother, accompanied with Colonell Sidney, and some other 20 Gentlemen : Captaine Hinder also having his Caske shot off , bast fine wounds in the head and face at the fword : and Captaine Fulford was fnot in the left arme at the fame encounter : ver were they fo thorowly fesonded by the Generall, who thrust himselfe fo neere to rive encounragement to the attempt (which was of wonderfull difficultie) as their braueft men that defended that place being courredrowne, their whole Army fell prefently into rout, of whom our men had the chale three miles in foure fundry waies, which they betooke themfelues vato. There was taken the Scandard with the Kings Armes, and borne before the Generall. How many two thousand men (for of somany consisted our Vantguard) might kill in pirefute of foure sundry parties, fo many you may imagine fell before ye that day. And to make the number more great, our men having given over the execution, and returning to their flands a found many hidden in the 30 Vineyards and Hedges, which they dispatched. Also Colonell Members was feat with his Regiment three miles further to a Cloufter, which hee burnt and spoiled, wherein he found two hundred more, and put there to the fword. There were thank in this fight on our fide onely Captain Copper, and one private Souldier: Captaine Barton was also hurt voon the Bridge in the eye. But had you seene the strong barricades they had made on either side of the Bridge; and how strongly they lay encamped thereabouts, you would have thought it a rare refolution of ours to give to braue a charge vpon an Armie fo strongly lodged. After the fury of the execution, the Generall

The notable te de Burgos.

> fort to the enemy within the fame, who shot many times at vs as we marched out; but not once in our comming backe againg. The next day was fpent in shipping our Artillery landed for the battery, and of the rest taken at the Graine, which had it beene fuch as might have given ve any affirence of a better battery, or had there beene no other purpose of our journey but that, I thinke the Generall would have spent fome more time in the fiege of the place.

> fent the Vantguardone way, and the battell another, to burne and spoile; fo as you might have

feene the Countrey more then three miles compalle on fire. There was found very good flore of Munition and victualis in the Campe, tome plate and rich apparell, which the betterfort left be- 40

hind; they were to hotly purfued. Our Sailers also landed in an Iland next adjoyning to our ships, where they burnt and spoiled all they found. Thus we returned to the Groine, bringing small com-

The two last nights, there were that vndertooke to fire the higher Towne in one place, where the honges were builded upon the wall by the water fide; but they within suspecting as much, 50 made to good defence against vs, as they prevented the fame. In our departure there was fire put into energe house of the low Towne, intomuch as I may fully fay, there was not one house left standing in the base Towne, or the Cloister.

The next day, being the eight of May, wee embarked our Asmie without losse of a man, Which (had wee not beaten the enemie at Puente de Burges) had beene impossible to have done.

After we had put from thence, we had the wind to contrarie, as we could not vodernine daies recouer the Barlings; in which passage on the thirteenth day the Earle of Esfex, and with him M. Walter Doneraum, his brother (a Gentleman of wonderfull great hope) Sir Reger Williams, Colonell Generall of the Footmen, Sir Philip Butler, who hath alwaies beene most inward with him, and Sir Edward Progfield , came into the Fleet. The Earle put off in the fame wind from 60 Falmouth, that wealeft Plimouth in, where he lay, because he would avoid the importunitie of Mellengers that were daily fent for his returne, and some other causes more secret to himselfe, not knowing (as it feemed) what place the Generals purposed to land in, had bin as far as Casia in Andalazia, and lay vp and downe about the South Cape, where her tooke fome Ships laten

CHAP. 12. Portugall Voyage. Peniche taken. March and Fleet for Lisbon. 1921

with Corne, and brought them wato the Fleet. Alfo in his returne from thence to meet with our Fleet, he fell with the Ilands of Bayon; and on that fide of the River which Cannas standeth voon,he, with Sir Roger Williams, and those Gentlemen that were with him went on shoare, with form men out of the Ship he was in , whom the enemy that held guard upon that Coaft, would not abide, but fled vo into the Countrey.

The fixteenth day we landed at Peniche in Peringal, under the shot of the Castle, and about the They land at wafte in the water, more then a mile from the town, wherin many were in peril of drowning, by Perilete. real on the wind was great, and the Sea went high, which ouerthrew one Boat, wherein fine and twentie of Captaine Dolphins men perished. The enemy being fine Companies of Spaniards, vnof der the commandement of Conde do Fuenter, fallied out of the town against vs, and in our landing made their approach close by the water fide. But the Earle of Effex, with Sir Roger Williams, and his brother, basing landed fufficient number to make two troupes, left one to hold the way by the water fide, and led the other over the Sand-hills; which the enemy feeing, drew theirs likewife further into the Land; not, as we coniccured, to encounter vs, but indeed to make their speedie pallage away : notwithstanding they did it in such fort, as being charged by ours which were lent out Dy the Colonell generall under Captaine lack for, they flood the fame euen to the puth of the Pike : in which charge and at the path, Captaine Robert Pier was flaine. The enemy being fled further then we had reason to follow them, all our Companies were drawne to the Town; which being vofortified in any place, wee found undefended by any man against vs. And therefore the 20 Generall caused the Castle to bee summoned that night; which being abandoned by him that commanded it, a Portugall named Antonio de Aurid, being possessed thereof, defired but to be assured that Don Antonio was landed, whereupon he would deliver the fame; which he honeftly performed. There was taken out of the Cattle fome hundred Shot and Pikes, which Don Emanuel Prairie taken. furnished his Portugalls withall, and twentie Barrells of Powder: fo as possessing both the Town and the Caltle, we rested there one day; wherin some Friare and other poore men came vuto their new King, promiting in the name of their Countrey next adioyning, that within two dayes heeshould have a good supply of Herse and Foot for his affitance. That day wee remained there, the

Generals company of horses were vnshipped. The Generalls there fully resolued, that the Armie should march ouer Land to Liben, wader They march 30 the conduct of Generall Norris; and that Generall Drake should meet him in the River thereof towards Listen with the Fleet; that there hould bee one Company of Foot left in guard of the Caftle, and fix in

the Ships : also that the ficke and hurt should remaine there with prouisions for their cures. In this march Captaine Criffe the Prouelt Marshall caused one who (contrary to the Proclamation published at our arrivall in Persugal) had broken vp an house for pillage, to bee han- Good dice. ged, with the cause of his death woon his breast, in the place where the act was committed: which good example providently given in the beginning of our march, stufed the commandement to be more respectively regarded all the sourcey after, by them whom feare of punishment doth ouly hold within compasse. The Campe lodged that night at Lorings : the next day we had intelligence all the way, that the enemy had made head of Horse and Foot against vs at Tores Vedras. which wee thought they would have held : but comming thither the fecond day of our march, not two houres before our Vantgard came in, they left the Towns and Castle to the possession of

Don Antenie. There began the greatest want we had of victuals, especially of bread, you a commandement Want of bicate given from the Generall, that no man (hould spoile the Country, or take any thing from any Pering all : which was more respectively observed, then I thinke would have bin in our owne Countrey, among to our owne friends and kindred but the Countrey (contrary to promife) wholly neg-Ic ded the prouition of victuals for vs, wherby we were driven for that time into a great fearlity. Which moved the Colonell Generall to call all the Colonells together , and with them to adule offe me better courle for our people : who thought it beft, frit to advertife the King what needto fitie we were in, before weihould of our felues alter the firft inftitution of abstinence. The Colonell generall, having acquainted the Generall herewith, with his very good allowance thereof, went to the King; who after some expostulations vied, tooke the more carefull order for our men, and after that our Armie was more plentifully relieved.

The third day we lodged our Armie in three fundry Villages, the one Battalion lying in Exact rama de los Canalleres, another in Exarama de Obifos, and the third in San S. baftian. Captain Tarke who commanded the Generalls Horse Company, in this march made trial of the valour of the Horsemen of the enemy; who by one of his Corporals charged with eight Horses thorow for tie of them, and himfelfe thorow more then two hundred, with fome fortie Horfes: who would ag bide him no longer then they could make way from him.

60 The next day we marched to Lores, and had divers Intelligences that the enemy would turry we there for the Cardinall had made publike promife to them of Lasbon, that he would fight with ws in that place, which he might have done advantageoutly ; for we had a Bridge to pulle ouer in the same place : but before our comming he diflodged, notwithflanding it appeared vinto vithat hee had in purpole to incampe there; for wee found the ground flaked out where their trenches

Earle of Effex

comes to

should have bin made; and their Horsemen with some few Shot shewed themselves youn an Hill at our comming into that Village; whom Sir Henry Norris (whose Regiment had the point of the Vanteard) thought to draw voto fome fight, and therefore marched without found of Drum. and tomewhat faiter then ordinary, thereby to get neere them before he were discovered for hee was hadowed from them by an Hill that was betweene him and them : but before he could draw his Companies any thing neere, they retired.

Generall Drakes Regiment that night, for the commoditie of good lodging, drew themselves into a Village, more then one English mile from thence, and neere the enemy : who not daring to doe any thing against vs in foure dayes before, tooke that occasion, and in the next morning fell downer pon that Regiment, crying, Vina el Rey Don Antonio, which was a generall falutation thorowall the Countrey as they came : whom our young Souldiers (though it were voon their guard, and before the watch were discharged) began to entertaine kindly, but having got within their guard, they fell to cut their throats : but the alarme being taken inwards, the Officers of the two next Companies, whose Captaines (Captain Sydnam and Captain Toung) were lately dead at the Grome, brought downe their Colours and Pikes voon them info refolute manner, as they prefently draue them to retire with loffe othey killed of ours at the first entrance fourteene, and

Some died with drinking Earle of Effex his attempt.

The next day we lodged at Aluelana within three miles of Lisben, where many of our Souldiers drinking in two places of standing waters by the way were poyfoned, and thereon prefently dved. Some doe thinke it came rather by eating of Hony, which they found in the houles plentifully. But whether it were by Water or by Hony, the poore men were poifoned. That night the Earle of Effex and Sir Roger Williams went out about eleven of the clocke with 1000, men to lie in ambufcade poere the Town, and having laied the fame very neere, fent fome to give the alarme voto the enemy; which was well performed by them that had the charge thereof, but the enemy refuled to like after them. to that the Earls returned as foone as it was light without doing any thing, though he had in purpole, and was ready to have given an honourable charge on them.

They come to

The act of May in the euening we came to the Suburbs of Liston: at the very entrance wherethe aburbs of of Sir Roger Williams calling Captaine Anthony Wing field with him, tooke thirtie Shot or thereabouts, and first icowred all the Streets till they came very neere the Towne : where they found none but old folkes and beggars, crying, Vins el Rey Don Antonio, and the houses shut vp : for they 30 had carried much of their wealth into the Towne, and had fired fome houses by the waterfide, full of Corne and other acoustions of victualls, leaft wer should be benefited thereby, but yet left behind shem great riches in many houses. The foure Regiments that had the vantguard that day, which were Colonell Designers, Six Edward Norry, Colonell Sidneys, and Generall Drakes (whom I name as they marched) the Colonell generall caused to hold guard in the neerest Streets of the Suburbs : the Battel and the Arrereward flood in Armes all the night in Field neere to Alcantara. Before morning Captaine Wingfield , by direction from the Colonell general! Sir Roger Williams, held guard with Sir Edward Norris his Regiment in three places very neere the Towne wall, and fo held the fame till the other Regiments came in the morning. About midnight they within the Towns burnt all their houses that stood upon their wall either within or without least we possel- 40 fing them, mighe thereby greatly have annoyed the Towne.

Hou es burnt

The next morning Sir Roger Williams attempted (but not without perill) to take a Church called S. Antonio, which toyned co the wall of the Towne, and would have been a very euill neighbor to the Towne : but the enemy having more easie entry into it then wee, gained it before vs. The relt of that morning was (pent in quartering the Battell and Arrereward in the Suburbs called Bona Vista, and in placing Musqueriers in houses, to from their Shot upon the wall, who from the same scowred the great Screets very dangerously. By this time our men being thorowly weary with our fixe dayes march, and the last nights

watch, were defirous of rest; whereof the enemy being aduertifed, about one or two of the clocke

fallied out of the Town, and made their approach in three feuerall Streets upon vs, but chiefly in 50 Colonell Brets quarter : who (as most of the Armie was) being at reft, with as much speed as he could, drew his men into Armes, and made head against them to thorowly, as himselfe was slain in the place, Captaine Carfes thor thorow the thigh, of which hurt hee died within foure dayes after, Captaine Carre flaine prefently, and Captaine Cane hurt (but not mortally) who were all of his Regiment. This ressance made as well here, as in other quarters where Colonell Lane and Their retrait, Colonell Medkerk commanded, put them to a sudden foule retreat ; infomuch, as the Earle of Effex had the chale of them enen to the gates of the high Town, wherin they left behind them mamy of their best Commanders : their troupe of Horsemen also came out, but being charged by Captain Torke, withdrew themselves againe. Many of them also left the streets, and betooke them to houses which they found open : for the Sergeant Maior Captain Wilfon flew in one house with 60 his owne hands three or foure, and caused them that were with him to kill many others. Their loffe I can affure you did triple ours, as well in qualitie as in quantitie.

During our march to this place. Generall Drake with the whole Fleet was come into Cafesia, and policified the Town without any refutance : many of the Inhabitants at their discourry of our

Name, fled with their baggage into the Mountaines, and left the Towne for any man that would posses it, till Generali Drake lent unto them by a Portngall Pilot which he had on boord, to of- ken ter them all peaceable kindneffe, fo farre forth as they would accept of their King, and minister necessaries to the Armie he had brought; which offer they joyfully imbraced, and presently sent two chiefe men of their Town, to figuifie their loyaltie to Don Antonio, & their honeft affections to our people. Whereupon the Generall landed his Companies not farre from the Cloifter called San Domingo, but not without perill of the shot of the Castle, which being guarded with fixtie fine Spannards, held flill against him.

As our Fleet were cashing anker when they came first into that Road, there was a small ship of Brafil that came from thence, which bare with them, and feemed by ftriking her failes, as though the would also have ancred ; but taking her fittest occasion hossed againe, and would have passed vo the River, but the Generall presently discerning her purpose, sent out a Pinnaceor two after her, which forced her in fuch forc, as the ran her felte when the Rocks : all the men escaped out of her, and the lading (being many chefts of Sugar) was made nothing worth, by the Salt water. In his going thither alfo, he tooke Ships of the Port of Portsgall, which were lent from thence, with Ships taken. fifteene other from Pedro Vermendes Xantes Sergeant Major of the fame place, laden with men

and victualls to Lieben: the rest that escaped put inco detined. 1

CHAP.12.

The next day it pleafed Generall Nerres to call all the Colonels cogether, and to admie with them, whether it were more expedient to tarry there to attend the forces of the Portugall Horse 20 and Foot, whereof the King had made promite, and to march tome concenient number ter Cafe as to fetch our Artillery and Munition which was all at purships lauing that which for the necessisty of the service was brought along with vs.whereunto, some carried away with the vaine hope of Don Antonio, that the most part of the Town stood follows, held it best to make our abode there; Consultation and to fend fome three thousand of our Artillery : promusing to themselves, that the Enemy being well beaten the day before, would make no more fallies : fome others (whose unbeliefe was very firong of any hope from the Portugal) perswaded rather to march wholly away, then to be any longer carried away with the opinion of things, whereof there was fo little appearance. The Generall, not willing to leave any occasion of blot to be laid vpon him for his speedie going from thence, nor to lose any more time by attending the hope of Don Antonio; told them, that though 30 the expedition of Paragad were not the onely purpole of their iburney, but an aductorare there in (which if it fucceeded properously might make them suspensely rick, and wonderful boooserble) and that they had done fo much alreade in triall thereof, as what end focuer happened could not hing impaire their credits: yet in regard of the Kings laft promise, that hee should have that night there chouldnot arend the sound on the regard of the Kings laft promise, that hee should have the right there chouldnot arred men of his owne Country, he would not for that night disloge, The King of Portugall (whether carried away with imagination, by the advertisements he receiued tron the Portugatio, or willing by any promife to being fuch an Armie into his Country, thereby to the sortune once more in trial) affired the Generall, that you his first landing

there would be a revolt of his Subjects. After two nights staying at Lisbon , the King , as you have heard promised a supply of three 40 thousand Foot, and some Horse; but all his appointments being expired, even to the last of a night, all his Horse could not make a Cornet of fortie, nor his Foot furnish two Enfignes fully, although promises they carried three or four colours : and these were altogether such as thought to inrich themsclues by the ruine of their neighbours : for they committed more diforders in every place where

we came by spoile, then any of our owne. The Generall, as you fee, having done more then before his comming out of England was required by the King, and given credite to his many promifes, even to the breach of the lait, he defifted not to perswade him to stay yet nine daies longer: in which time hee might have engaged himselfe further, then with any honor he could come out off againe, by attempting a Town tortified, wherein were more men armed against vs, then we had to oppugne them withall, our Artil-50 lery and Municion being fitteene miles from vs , and our men then declining; for there was the first show of any great ficknelle amongst them. Whereby it seemeth, that either his Prelacie did much abuse him in perswading him to hopes, whereof after two or three daies hee law no semblance : or heelike a illy louer, who promifeth himselfe fauour by importuning a coy mistrefle, thought by our long being before his Towne, that in the end taking pittie on him they would ket him in. What end the Friers had by following him with fuch deuttion I know not, but fire I am, the Laitie did respite their homage till they might see which way the victorie might sway; fearing to shew themselves apparantly vnto him, least the Spaniard should after our departure (if we premiled not) call them to account : yet fent they underhand meffages to him of obedience, thereby to faue their owne, if he became King; but indeed very well contented to fee the Spania 60 ards and vs crie by blowes who should carry away the Crowne. For they be of sobate a mould, 2000 as they can very well fubicet themselves to any gouernment, where they may imelize from

blowes, and have libertie to become rich, being loth to indure hazzard either of life or goods. For durft they have put on any minds thorowly to revolt, they had three wonderfull great occasions offered them during our being there, &c.

Xxxxxxx 3

The riches that they

might haue

. The most morning, feeing no performance of promife kept, the Generall gaue order for one marching away phimfelfe, the Earle of Effex, and Sir Roger Williams remaining with the fland that was made in the high threet, cill the whole Armie was drawne into the Field, and fo marched out of the Powing, appointing Captaine Richard Wong field, and Captaine Anthony Winfield in the Arrere ward of them with the thoe; thinking that the enemy (as it was most likely) would haue island our vaon our riling; but they were otherwise aduled. When we were come into the Field, eneric Battalion tell into that order which by courfe appertained vnto them, and fo marcied that night vinto Cascais. Had wee marched thorow his Countrey as enemies, our Souldiers had beene well supplied in all their wants: but had wet made enemies of the Suburbs of Libenwee had beene the richeft Armie that ever went out of England : for besides the particular to wealth of enery house, there were many Ware-houses by the water fide full of all forts of rich group to dis-

in our march that day the Gallies which had some what, but not much appoyed vs at Liston (for that our way lay along the River Jerenied ve till we were past S. I ulians , bestowing many fhor amongst vs, but did no harme as ally fatiling that they strooke off a Gentlemans leg, and killed the Sergeant Majors Moile vinder him. The Horiemental fo followed vs afarre off, and cut off as many ficke men as were not able to hold in march, nor we had carriage for.

After we had beene two daies at Cofods, wee had intelligenceby a Friar, that the enemy was marching frongly towards us; and then came as farre as S. Inhan : which newes was fo welcome to the Farle of Effer and the Generalie; in they offered every one of them to gue the Mellenger 20 an hundred Crownes if the ground them in the place & for the Generall defining mothing more then to fight with themm held toome; difpatched that night a Mellenger with a Trumpet, by English to dight whom there wit a Cartell to the Generall of their Armie, wherein he gaue them the lie, in that it was by this met ported that weed dislodged from Lisbon in disorder and feare of them (which indeed mai min't falle) for that it was fine of the clocke in the morning before wee fell into Armes, and then year in dich fore, as they had no courage to follow out your vs. Alfo he challenged him thereing to meet him the next morning with his whole Armie, if hee durit attend his comming, and there comey out the infraeffe of their quarrell by battell; by whom also the Earle of Ellex (who preferring the hanoumof the taute, which was his Countries, before his owne fafetie) fent a particular Carrell, offering himfelfo against any of theire, if they had any of his qualitie; or if they 30 would libradmit of thet; fix dight, orten or as many as they would appoint, should meet so mamy of theirs in the heart of our batted toite their fortunes with them; and that they should have

affurance of their returne and honourable intreatie,

Feare of the

The Ortherall accordingly made all his Armie readie; by three of the clocke in the morning, and matched even to the place where they had encamped, but they were diflodged in the night in great dilbrder, being taken with a fudden feare that we had been come your them as the Generall was the next day certainely informed . To as the Trumpet followed them to Lisbon , but could not get other answere to either of his Letters, but threatning to bee hanged; for daring to being fuch a mediage. Howbeit the General had confed to be written when the backfide of their Palpose, that if they did offer any violence voto the Mellengers, he would hand the best prifoners 40 he had of clients whichimade them to adulte better of the matter, and to returne them home; but withousanfwerdamade and

After our Armie came to Cafeais, and the Cafle faminioned, the Caffelian thereof granted, that you five or fix that of the Canon he would deliver the fame, but not without fight thereof. The General chinking that his diffreste within had been such for want of men or victuals, as he could not hold it many dayer ; because hee faw it otherwise defensible enough, determined rather to make him weeld to that necelline, then to bring the Canon, and therefore onely fet a guard upon the lame, least any supply of those things which hee wanted should bee brought vnto them. But hee fill flanding vponthele conditions, the Generallabout two dayes before hee determined to goe to Sea; brought chree or foure Peeces of battery ageinst it t voon the frit rire whereof he fur- 50 rendered; and compounded to goe away with his bageage and Armes thee had one Canon, two Culturings; one Battliske, and three or four other Field Peeces, threefcore and fine Scoldiers, very good fore of Municion ; and victualls enough in the Cafele; infemuch as hee might have held the fame longer then the Generali had in purpose to turry there. One company of Footmen was put into the goard fliereof, till the Artillery was taken out, and our Armie imbarked; which without having that fort, we could not without great perill have done. When we were readie to let faile (one halfe of the Fost being by order from the Generall blowne vp by mine) the company was drawne away.

During the time we lay in the Road, our Fleet began the second of June, and secont mued fix dayes after to fetch unfome Hulks to the number of threelcore, of Danik, Stetin, Roflock, Luocch 60 and Hamburgh, laden with Spanish goods, and as it feethed for the Kings provision, and going to Liber : their principall lading was Corne, Matts, Cables, Copper, and Waxe : among it which were some of great burthen wonderfull well builded for failing, which had no great lading in them, and therefore it was thought they were brought for the Kings promision, to reinforce

his decaied Name; whereof there was the greater likelihood, in that the owner of the greatest of them which carried two milnes, was knowne to be very inward with the Cardinall, who rather Cardinall Althen he would be taken with his ships, committed himselfe vnto his small Boate, wherein he bert after marrecouered Saint Sebastians: into the which our men, that before were in flie-boates, were ried to the Inrecovered Saint Sebajtiant: into the which our men, that before were in included, with fanta and Rushinged, and the Flie-boates fent home with an offer of Corne, to the value of their hire. But fer of the Surthe winde being good for them for Rochel, they chose rather to loofe their Corne then the winde, n & Portot the and fo departed. The General alfo fent his Horfes with them, and from thence shipped them Low Countries. into England.

The third of June, Colonell Denereux, and Colonell Sidney, being both very ficke, departed for To England, who in the whole Journey had fliewed themselves very forward to all feruices, and in their departure very vinwilling to lease vs: that day we embarked all our Army, but lay in the

road votill the eight thereof.

CHAP. II.

The fixt day, the Earle of Effex, your receit of Letters from her Maiefty, by them that brought in the victuals, prefently departed towards England, with whom Sir Roger Williams was very defirous to goe, but found the Generals very vowilling he footld do fo, in that he bare the next place vnto them, and if they should miscarry, was to command the Army. And the same day there came vnto vstwo imall Barkes, that brought tidings of some other thips come out of England with victuals, which were passed vowards to the Cape : for meeting with whom, the second day after we fet faile for that place, in purpose after our meeting with them to goe with the Iles of 20 Azores, the second day, which was the ninth, we met with them comming backe against owards vs, whose promision little answered our expectation. Notwithstanding we resolved to continue our courie for the Ilands.

About this time wanthe Marchant Royall, with three or foure other thips, fent to Pemche, to fetch away the commanios that vecrelete there; but Captain Barton having received Letters from the Generals that were forit overland, was departed before, not being able by reason of the enemies speedy marching thirther, either to being a way the artillery, or all his men, according to the edirection chald letters gandling; for he was no fooner gone, then the the my possessed the Towne and Caftle, and thorat our thips as they came into the road.

At this gime allo was the Ambifador from the Emperor of Margin entled Reys Hames Ben- Margaret Fra 36 cafamp, return; d, and with him M. Ciprian, a Gentleman of good place and defert, who fent from balladour.

Don Austrus and Captains On flor from the Generals to the Emperour.

The next meaning the nigo Gallicown left were lent not fine dairs before out of Andalus, in for the fireng thening of the Runr of Luben which being royard with the other twelie that were there before, though we lay hard by three at Same lalians, durk never make any attempt against vs) vpon our departure from theirce where texturning home, and in the morning being a very dead calme, in the dawning thereof, felt in the winde of our lett; in the vtrermoft part whereof they affailed one fungling Barkenf Planmouth, of the which Captaine Cauerley being Captaine of the land company, with his Lientenant, the Maiter, and fome of the Marriners, abandoned the fhip, and betooke them to the hip-boats, whereof one, in which the Mafter and the Captaine were, was outerradewith the Gallies, and they drowned. There were also two Hulkes stragled far from the firengels of che other (hips which were fo calmed, as neither they could get to vs. nor we to them, though all the great thips towed with their Bouts to have relieved them, but could not be recourred; in one of which was Captaine Minfhon with his company; who fought with them to the laft, yea after his flup was on fire, which whither it was fired by himselfe or by them we could not well different, but might eafily judge by his tong and good fight, that the enemy could not but fullain much lofter who letting also voon one other Hulke wherein was but a Lieutenant, and he very ficke, wereby the valour of the Lieuxenant put off, although they had first beaten her with their artillery, and attempted to boord her. And feeing also one other Hulke a league off, a fterne of vs, they made towards her : but finding that the made ready to fight with them; they durit not further attempt her : whereby it feemed, their loffe being great in the other fights, they were loath to proceede any further.

From Mar day milthe nineteenth of lune, our direction from the Generall was, that if the winde were Northerly, we should plie for the Azores; but if Southerly, for the Hes of Bayon. We lay with contrary windes about that place and the Rocke, till the Southerly winde preuai- Espon. ling catried vs to Bajon: among whom was Sir Henry Norris in the Ayde; who had a purpole (if the Admirals had not come in) with fome 500, men out of them all to have landed, and attempted the taking of Vigo. The rest of the fleet held with generall Drake, who though he were two dayes before put vpon those llands, cast off sgaine to Sea for the Azores: but remembring how vaprouided he was for that journey, and feeing that he had loft company of his great ships, so returned for Bayon, and came in there that night in the cuening, where hee paffed up the River

more then a mile about Vigo. The next morning weelanded as many as were able to fight, which were not in the whole aboue two thousand men (for in the senenteene dayes we continued on board wee had caft

I COS

CHAP. 13. Callis taken by the Cardinall. Causes of the Voyage to Cadiz.

1027

Vice taken.

many of our men ouer-board) with which number the Colonell generall marched to the Towne of Vigo, neere the which when hee approached, he fent Captaine Anthony Winefield with a troups of that to enter one fide of the fame, who found vpon every itreates end a firone barricade, but altogether abandoned; for having entred the Towne, he found but one man therein but might lee them making way before him to Bayon. On the other fide the Towne entreu Generali Drake with Captaine Richard Wingfield, whole approach on that fide (I thinke) made them leave the places they had to artificially made for defence: there were also certains thins fent with the Vice-admirall to lye close before the Towne, to beate voon the fame with their artillerv.

In the afternoone were fent three hundred under the conduct of Captaine Petuin and Captain IQ Henry Poure, to burne another Village betwixt that and Bayon, called Borlis, and as much of the Countrie as the day would give them leave to doe; which was a very pleasant rich Valley; but they burnt it all, houses and come, as did others on the other fide of the Town, both that and the next day, fo as the Countrey was spoiled seuen or eight miles in length. There was found greet flore of Wine in the Town, but not any thing elfe : for the other dates warning of the thins that came first in gaue them a respit to carry all away.

The next morning by breake of the day the Colonell generall (who in the absence of the Generals that were on boord their fhips, commanded that night on shoare) caused all our Companies to be drawne out of the Towne, and fent in two troupes to put fire in every house of the fame: which done, we imbarked againe. This day there were certaine Mariners which 20 (without any direction) put themielues on thoure, on the contrary fide of the River from vs

The fame day the Generals feeing what weake effate our Army was drawne into by fickness determined to man and victuall twenty of the best ships for the Hands of Azeres, with General Drake, to fee if he could meete with the Indian Fleet, and Generall Merris to returne home with the reft : And for the flutting of men and victuals accordingly, purposes the next morning to fall downe to the Hands of Bayon againe, and to remaine there that day. But Generall Drake, according to their appointment, being under faile neuer ftrooke at the llands, but put ftraight to Sea : whom all the Fleet tollowed fauing three and thirty, which being in the River further then he, and at the entrance of the same, finding the winde and tide too hard against them, were inforced to cast ancre there for that night; amongst whom, by good forcune, was the Foresight, and inher Sir Edward Norris. And the night following, Generall Norris being driven from the rest of the Fleet by a great florme (for all that day was the greatest storme we had all the time we were out) came againe into the Hands, but not without great perill, he being forced to turft to a Spanish Fisher-mail (who was taken two dayes before at Sea) to bring him in.

The next morning he called a counfell of as many as he found there, holding the purpose her had concluded with Sir Francis Drake the day before, and directed all their courtes for England. tarrying there all that day to water and helpe such with victuall, as were left in wonderfull die fireffe by having the victuals that came laft, carried away the day before to Sea.

The next day he fet faile, and he tenth day after, which was the fecond of July came into 40 to Plumouth. Plumouth, where he found Sir Francis Drake and all the Queenes thips, with many of the others but not all : for the Fleete was dispersed into other harbours, some led by a delire of returning from whence they came, and some being possessed of the hulkes, sought other Ports from their Generals eye, where they might make their private commoditie of them, as they have done to their great advantage: Pretently upon their arrivall there, the Generals diffolised all thearmiefaums eight companies which are yet held together, ginng every Souldier fine fhillings in money, and the armes he bare to make money of, which was more then could by any meanes be due vnto them : for they were not in feruice three moneths, in which time they had their vie chuals, which no man will value at leffe then halfe their pay, for such is the allowance in her Maiefties thips to her Mariners, so as there remained but ten thillings a moneth to be paid, for which there was not any private man but had apparell and furniture to his owne vie, to as cuery common Souldier discharged, received more in money, victuals, apparell, and furniture, then his pay did amount voto.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Abriefe and true report of the Honorable Voyage unto Cadiz, 1 596. of the overthrow of the Kings Fleete, and of the winning of the Citie, with other accidents, cathered out of METERANYS, Mafter HACKLVYT * and others.



Feer that Callis had beene taken by Cardinali Albert, Archduke of Austria, which the large re-Fier that Callis had beene taken by Cardinali Albert, Archduke or Austria, William port of this afterwards by Papall dispensation married the Lady Isabella Engenia Clara Infan-Voyage with ta, who yet gouerneth the Belgians which acknowledge the Spaniard, Queene ten byone em-Elizabeth thought it fitter to inuade the Spaniard at home, then to expect his ploied therin forces here. The faid Cardinall (and Archduke of Anfria) had planted his vnex- out of which I toroes nere: The mid Cardinan (and Archduke of America) had pranted in which have raken pected fiedge before Caller, and begun his vinwelcome battery on Wednesday the that which fer-

17.06 April 1 coo. and the Towne defired truce for foure and twenty hours, which was rejected, ued our purwhereupon they yeelded themselves presently vpon condition of life and goods faued, and fixe pole. dayes truce to be giuen chem, with liberty either to flay in the Citie, or to goe to the Caffle; and if the King of Nanare (Henry the fourth, the Freuch King) did not in that space relieue them, they were to veelde the Caftle. Most of them betooke themselves to the Caftle, and left

their empty houses to the Conquerours. The night before the truce expired, they began to shoot at the Spaniards, who had now made

fo fatall preparations, that the next day, Aprill 24, before noone they had beaten downe the wals and ensered, the Gonernour of the Towne and diversothers being flaine. Queene Elizabeth meane while had prepared aide, and the Souldiers and Ships at Leigh in Effex, were detained by the windes, which then were Easterly, and instead of carrying the English thither, brought hither the servible thunders of the Spanib Ordnance; infomuch, that I have heard that they shooke the loofer glaffe out of the windowes in Doner and filled the shoares of Effex & Kent with the hideous reports of Calis her vnanoidable mine. And thus in fo fhort time the Cardinall won that ancient Port, by Strabe called limm, by Psolomer Gefforiacum (as Meteranus collecteth) which had cost 30 the English eleven moneths fiedge, before they, under Edward the third, tooke it, An. 1346. They held it 202, yeers at which time Francis Duke of Ginfe, in the wnhappy dates of Queen Mary, and by reason of her valuekie towning with the Spaniards in their warres against the Franch, recourredit in a few dayes valooked for battery to the French, and therewith tooke " not that Towne "O. Mer faid alone, but the loy of life allo from that vinfortunate Queene; both which feeming difafters were before her alone, but the loy of the allo from that vanorunate openie; one which terming what is the price of Englands faire purchales; both gaine and liberty in the dipfering of that Spa. disthibution with the concentration of the space Agrichriftian Papall Milts, which was a (moake from the bottomlesse pit to them which recei- finde calls in uedit, and a fire to them which refused it of what degree soever: and in that as throwes of a herheart. grieuous trauell they brought forth a Virgin, both Truth to the Church, and Queene to the State; 40 the one a fruitfull Mother to the foules, the other to the wealth, honour, domesticke peace, forraine victories, and Nausli glorie of the English Nation. This renowned Queene, eight and thirty yeeres after, viable to alter that decree of the windes which now fremed themselves, and forced Calis, to become Spanish; would try their windy fidelity in another expedition; and prepared a ftrong Fleet to inuade the Spanife coaft: The charge whereof the committed to the Lord Rabers Earle of Effex, and the Lord Charles Howard Lord high Admirall of England, who came vnto Plymmouth (about the beginning of May 1596.) being there accompanied with divers other no-

for the expecting of some other ships, which were to come from divers places of the Realme, and Before their departure from Plymmouth, it pleased their Lordships to publish in Print, and make knowne to all the world, especially to such as it concerned, and that both in the Latine, French, Dutch, English, and Spanish tongue, what were the true, luft, and vrgent causes. that at this time prouoked her Maiestie to vndertake the preparing and setting ferth of this fo great a Nauie, namely the King of Spaines preparations against her, who had before whiles hee 60 treated of peace, Anno 1588, prepared to inuade her coast, and now also to that purpose daily encrealed his Nauie. If therefore any should furnish the Spaniard with munition and provisions, they should expect what force could doe; for all others of what source Nation they admired them to tortake the Spanift and Portugall Ports, or to loyne with the English for their owne fecurity.

they having no quarrell in this defigne but against the Spaniard.

ble Peeres, as the Earle of Suffex, the Lord Thomas Howard, the Lord Herbers, the Lord Warden Sir

Walter Raleigh: the Lord Marfhall Sie Francis Vere: the Lord Burk, Don Christopher yong Prince

of Portugal, yong Count Lodowick of Naffaw, and the Admirall of the Hollanders, Sir John Vander-

this most honorable Action ; It pleased them, there to make their aboade for the time of that

moneth, aswell for the new furnishing and renictualing of her Maiesties Royall Nauie; as also

to ford: belides many other most worthy Knights and Gentlemen of great worth attending woon

* M. Harbbeit had published

Thus then, all things being in a very good order and well appointed, the most holy name of

our Omnipotent God being most religiously and decountly called vpont, and his blested and Go cred Communion being divers times most reverently and publikely celebrated : being furnished

with one hundred and aftie good faile of thips, or thereabout . In the name of the most bigh and

everliving God: the first day of June they embarked themselves, weighed Ancre, and hoysed an fule, and put to Sea onward their journey from the Sownds of Plymment, to fliew her Maie-

the streligious intendments in this exploit. I have thought good to adde here a Prayer made by

Mostome of all our bearts conceits, and in them feeft the true originals of all our actions intended.

then that by thy forefight deeft stucky discerne, how no malice of remenge, nor quattance of interior, nor

defire of blondbed, nor greedine fe of incre bath bred the refolution of our new fee out Army, but a

beadefull care, and wary watch, that no neglect of foes, nor oner-furetie of harme might breede ei-

Of Omniposent maker and guide of all our worlds maffe, that enely fearchest and fadomest the IQ

her felte (as was reported) and vied, as it was fitted, for that deligne.

our company; but they were both of them very honogably and well vied by the Lords Generall. and for after a few dayes tarrying, were peaceably fent away, after that they had conferred with them about facis matters, as was thought good in their honorable wifedomes. The twelfth of the Hamburgers fame moneth, Sir Richard Luifon Knight, affilted with Sir Christopher Blunt, fought with three taken. Hamburgers, and in that fight flew two of them, and hurt eleven, and in the end brought them

CHAR. 12. Arrivall at Cadiz. Opportunitie neglected. The Spanish Fleete. 1929

all three in-

The next day after, Sir Richard Weston meeting with a Flomming, who refused to vaile his foretop, with the like good courage and resolution, attempted to bring him in. The fight continued very hot betweene them, for a good space : in the end, the Swan, wherein the faid Sir Richard to wear, mad her forebeake altrooken off : and having spent before in fight the one fide of her tire of Ordnance, while the prepared to cast about, and to bestow on him the other fide, in the means time the Elemming taking his opportunitie, did get almost halfe a league from him: and so for thattime made his escape. And yet the next day after, the faid Fleuming being in a manner got to the very mouth of the River up to Lisbons, was taken, and brought in by Malter Dorrell, being Captaine of the Lobn and Prairies of London.

The 13. 14. and 156 dayes, cortaine little stragling Carauels were taken by certaine of the Fleete; and in one of them ayong beggerly Fryer vetesly valearned, with a great packet of Let- Leiters taken

The 38-day early in the morning we tooke an Irishman, and he came directly from Cadic, has histogramiately 20 using beene there but the day before at twelue of the clocke at high noone. This man being exallegence, mined, told truely that there was now great flore of thipping at Cade, and with them eightteene or nineteene Galhes in a readinelle, and that among those ships there were ditters of the Kitigs beit: and namely, that the Philip of Spaintwas amongst them, but what their intene was her could not tell. This man was commanded alfo to give his attendance. The 20. of lune, being Stinday; wee came before Cadi z, very early in the morning, and in all this time as yet, the whole Nauic had not loft either by fickness or by any other manner of water fix men to my knowledge.

Thus then I fay, being all imgood plight and fivong the so. of fune we came to Cadre, and there cadre. very early in the morning preferred our refues before the Towner, riding about a league or fome- Some which go thing lefte, from it. The Sea at that intant were manualous high, and the winds was exceeding proteff maclarge. Notwithstanding, a Goomiell being called, our Lords Generall forthwith attempted with tall to. wil ag targe. 1400 Well fide of the Touries Companies of their men at the Well fide of the Touries, by landing in first au capeuntan Buars, lighe horfemen, Einneces, & Barger made for the purpole, but could not compafe it and in the actempting thereof, they chanced to linke one of the Barges, wath fome foure the weather fore good fouldiers well appointed in her, and yet by good hap and great care, the men were all ferued; but the frore good toutsiers wen appointed for they were constrained to put off sheir landing till another fund outer faued excepting night. And therefore they were constrained to put off sheir landing till another day and other

more conucnient time. Pretences for a morning very timely, there lighted a very faire Done vpon the maine yard of the Lord a million of Admirals ship, and there she fac very quietly for the space of three or foure houres. And as at our weakh. 40 very first comming to Castic chis chanced, fo likewife on the very lift day of our departing from Doues lighting the faid Towne, another Doue presented her selfe in the selfe same order into the same thip, and presently grew wonderfall tame and familiar to vs all, and did fo ftill keepe vs company cuen till

our arruall here in England. We no fooner presented our selues, but presently a goodly fort of tall Spanish Ships came our of the mouth of the Bay of Cadre, the Gallies accompanying them in such good or ker, and to placed as all of them might well (uccour each other, and therewithall kept themselves very close to their Towne, the Caftle, and the Forts, for their better guard and defence, abiding there ftill; and expecting our further decermination. All that day passed, being very rough and boisterous, and liethe or nothing could be done, more then that about the evening there passed fome friendly and kinde falurations fent one from the other in warlike manner, by discharging centhine great

On monday morning being the 21.day, the winde and weather being become moderate and favourable, betweene five and its of the checke in the morning, our ships an the name, of the Almighter Gad, and in defence of the honeur of England, without any further delay, with all speed, courage and alacritie, did fee v pon the Spanish thips, being then wider faile, and making one of The Spanish the mouth of the Bay of Cadee, up toward Puente de Sunge on Granade inde, being in number 19. Fleete, tall thing, with 19.00 so. Gallier attending upon them forced in fixely good order, and restamble diflance as they might fill annoy vs, and alwaies relieue themselves interchange abit, a bausing lakewife the Cattle, Forts, and Towne, continually to affect them and theirs, and alwaye tready to play

to vpon vs and ours, see the second value of a second In most mensopinous it feemed that the enemy lind a wonderfull aduntage of vs. all circumflances being well weng ted, but effect ship the straight nesse of the place, and the natural forme and fituation of the Bay infelie, being rightly confidered. For albeit the very Bay it lelfe is very tage and exceeding behavifull, to that from (whe to Port S. May, is some fix of lessen English

ther danger to us, or glory to them : thefe being the grounds wherewith thou doest enfine the minde, we humble befeech thee with bended knees, proper the worke, and with best forewindes guide the iowines. freede the wiltory, and make the returne the advancement of thy glory, the triumph of their fame, and furety to the Realme, with the least loffe of the English blond. To these denont petitions Lord gine thou the bleffed grante The ninth of the same moneth comming something neere to the North Cape, in a manner in the fame altitude, or not much differing, which was about 43 degrees, and fomething more, yet bearing fo, as it was impossible to be descried from the land. There it pleased the Lords to call a fele Councell, which was alwaies done by hanging out of a Flagge of the Armes of England.

and shooting off a great warning peece. Of this telect or privile Counsell, were no moe then thefe: The two Lords Generall, the Lord Thomas Howard, the Lord Ward in Six Walter Raleiob. the Lord Marthall Sir Francis Pere, Su George Cary Matter of the Ordnance, Sir Coniers Clifford. and Sir Anthony Albler, Clarke of the faid Counfell. And when it pleafed the Lords Generall to call a common Counfell (as oftentimes they did vpon weighty matters best knowns to their honours) then they would cause another kinds of Flag to be hanged out, which was the red Cross of S. George, and was very easie to be discerned from the other that appertained onely to the feled Counfell, and fo often as this Flag of S. George was hanged out, then came all the Mafters and Captaines of all the ships, whose opinions were to be demanded, in such matters as apperrained voto the faid felca Counfell : It was prefently concluded that our course in failing should forthwith be altered, and that we should beare more into the West, for some purposes to them best knowne.

At that initiant many Letters of infructions were addressed and fent to every particular Master and Captaine of the Ships : What the contents of those Letters of instructions were, it was not as yet knowne vinto any, neither was it held meete to be enquired or knowne of any of vs. But vinder the titles and superscriptions of euery mans particuler Letter these words were en- 40 dorfed. Open not thefe Letters on paine of your lines, valeffe wee chance to be feattered by tempest, and in that case open them, and execute the contents thereof : but if by mishap you fall into your enemies hand, then in any case cast them into the Sea, sealed as they are. It should feeme that these Letters did contains in them the principall place and meaning of this entended action, which was hitherto by their deepe forefights kept to fecret, as no man to my knowledge ei her did or could fo much as suspect it, more then themselves, who had the onely mamaging thereof.

All this while, our fhips, God be thanked, kept in a most excellent good order, being denided into fine foundrons : that is to fay, The Harle of Effer, the Lord Admirall, the Lord Thomas Howard, the Lord Warden Sir Walter Raleigh, and the Admirall of the Hollanders. All which yo iquadrons, albeit they did every day separate themselves of purpose; by the distance of certains leagues, as well to looke out for fuch thips as were happily under faile, as also for the better procoring of Sea-roome : yet alwayes commonly either that day, or the next day, toward evening, they came all together, with friendly falutations and gratulations one to another: which they tearme by the name of Hayling : a ceremonie done folemnly, and in very good order, with found of Trumpets and notic of cheerefull voyces: and in such fore performed as was no small encouragement one to the other, befide a true report of all fuch accidents as had happened in their fquadrons.

Hitherto as I faid, our iourney was most profperous, and all our thips in very got d plight, more then that the Afary Rofe, by some mischance, either sprang or spent her forevard, and two dayes 63 after Sir Robert Croffe had in a manner the like mischance.

Now being thus betweene the North Cape, and Cape S. Fineent, and yet keeping such a course Flemming take a loofe, that by no meanes, those from the shoare might be able to descrie vs : The teach of lone, and dismitted, a French Barke, and a Flemming comming from the coall of Barbaris were brought in by fome of

miles ouer or there abouts, yet be there many rockes, shelues, fands, and shallowes in it. fo there the very channell and place for lea roome, is not about two or three miles, yea, and in tome places not to much, for the thips of any great burthen to make way in, but that they must either be fee on ground, or elfe constrained to run foule one on another. All this notwithstanding, with great and intinciple courage, the Lords generall prefently fer vpon them, and forting out fome fuch convenient thips, as to their honorable wisedomes seemed fictest for that times service, they were driven to take some other course then before had beene by them entended, Wherefore voon a graue consultation had by a select counsed, they concluded that the Vice-admirall, the Lord Thomas Howard, in the Non Pareille for that time, and the Reare Admirall Sir Walter Release in the Warfpicht, allociated with Sir Francis Vere the Lord Marshall in the Rainbow, Sir Gange Can In ry Mafter of the Ordnance, in the Mary Rose, Sir Robert Southwell in the Lyon; having with them fome of the Ships of Landon, and some of the Dutch squadron of reasonable burthen, should lead the dance, and give the oniet, and that the two most noble Lords generall with some others of their companies, should in their convenient time and order, second the maine battelli. The fishe being begun and growne very hot, the Lord generall the Earle of Effex, being on Port Saint Man er fide, vpon a fudden and volooked for of others, thrust himfelfe among the formost into the mainebattell. The other most honorable Lord generall vinderstanding the most noble Earle to be in fight among them, and perceiving by the Mafter of his thip, the A keroyall, that for lacke of water, it was not possible, that he might put any neerer, wathout further delay, called presently for his Pinnace, and in the same Pinnace put himselfe, and his honorable son Lord William How- 20 ard about the Honor de la mer, & there remained in the fight till the battell was ended. The fight was very teirible on all fines, and to continued doubtfull cill about one or two of the clocke in the afternoone : about which time the Philip, whom in very truth, they had all most fancie voto be-

The fight be-

twist the two

Ficeres.

Enz'ifh.

mediatly hereupon, the refidue of the thips ran themielues on ground as far from vs as they could. thereby purchased their owne satetie, or rather breathing spice for the time. Of themail, two faire ships onely were boonled and taken by our men with most part of their furniture in them, 20 the one called S. Mathew, a thip by estimation of some twelve hundred tun, and the other S. Anforcedtopreach drew, being a thip of not much leffer burthers, The Gallies, feeing this fodaine great victorious operthrow . made all the halfo they could soward the Bridge called Puente de Suace . and there throwded themselves in such fort as our ships could not by any meanes possible come nigh them The Spanib thips in all were fifty nine, and as I faid, all tall thips, and very richly furnished

gan to yeelde and give over, her men that remained alive flufting for themfelues as they were a-

ble. and fwimming and running alhoure with all the hafte that they could possibly, and there-

withall, at the very fame inflant themselves fired their ship, and so less ther, and pretently there-

upon a great Argofie, with another mighty great fhip, fired themselues in the like manner, Im-

and well appointed, whereof some of them were bound for the Indies, and other traighted and furnished for Lasbon, as themselves affirme : and had we not come that very time that we did, wee had certainly mist of them all.

Of what great wealth and riches the feships were, that I leave to other mens judgement and se report, but fure I am, that themselves offered two millions and a halfe of ducats for the redemption of the goods and riches that were in them : which offer of theirs, albeit it was accepted of the Lords generall, and should have beene received, yet we were defeated of it, as hereafter shall be more at large declared.

. In all this cruell terrible fight, there were not either flaine or hurt by any manner of meanes many above the number of 100 of our men; notwithstanding divers of our ships were many times shot thorow and thorow; yea and some of them no lesse then two and twenty times, as I was enformed by credible report of the Captaines and Masters themselves, I know not of any other hurt done . fauing onely that Sir Robert Southwell, who alwayes thewed himfelfe a most valiant resolve knight in all this action, making a little too much hafte with his Pinnace to board 50 the Philip, had there his faid Pinnace burne with the Philip at the same instant, and yet by good care and diligence his men were faued. One other milchance happed thus : One of the Flemmings Flie-boats, who had in all the conflict before, carried her felfe very well and valiantly, about ten of Flormill milthe clocke while the fight continued tharpest, chanced by great negligence and misfortune, to be fired and blown up by his owne powder, who could not have any fewer in him, then one hundred fighting men by all tuppofall, and so in the very twinkling of an eye, both thip and men were all cast away, excepting tenen grieight, which by very good fortune, and great care and diligence of fome of the other throstwere faned.

Immediately upon this notable victory, without any further flav in all the world, the Lord generall the Earle of Effer put to shore, & landed about 3000 shot and pikemen of the which number the one halfe was presently dispatched to the bridge Puente de Susge, under the conduct of Sie Christopher Blum, Sir Coniers Clifford, and Sir Thomas Gerard: with the other halfe, being 2bour fireene hundred, the most noble Earle of Esex himselfe, being accompanied with divers other honorable Lords, namely the Earle of Saffer, the Lord Harbers, the Lord Bark, Count LodeCHAP.14. Cadiz entred by the English. L. Admirals Age honorable by Acts.

nick of Nassam, the Lord Marshall Sir Francis Vere, with all expedition possible marched on sooce toward the towne of Cadiz, which was about three English miles march. That time of the day was very hot and faint and the way was all of dry deepe fliding fand in a manner, and befide that. Bad way, very vieuen, and by that meanes fo tirefome and painfull as might be. The enemie having reafonable companie both of horle and footemen, stood in a readinesse some good distance without the towne to welcome vs, and to encounter the Lord Generall. But the most famous Earle with his valiant Troopes, rather running indeede in good order, then marching, haftened on them with fuch yntpeakeable courage and celeritie, as within one houres space and leffe, the horsemen were all discomfitted and put to flight, their leader being throoken downe at the very first encounter; to whereat the footemen being wonderfully difmajed and aftonished at the vnexpected manner of the Englishmens kinde of fuch fierce and resolute fight, retyred themselues with all the speede possible that they could, to recouer themselves into the Towne againe. Which being done by them, with farre swifter legges then manly courage, our men were enforced to scale the wals : which thing in very deede, although it was not without great danger and difficultie to be performed : yet such was the muincible resolution, and the wonderfull dexteritie of the English, that in one halfe houre or thereabout, the enemy was repulfed, and the towne wall possessed, by the no- The Enelish ble Earle himselfe, being in all this action, either the very first man, or else in a manner joined enterthe tweether

The Town wals being then poffessed, and the English Ensigne being there displaied vpon them, to with all speede possible they proceeded on to march through the Towne, making still their way with fword and that so well as they could, being still fought withall at everie turne. The noble Earle was feconded by the noble Lord Admirall in person, who was accompanied with the noble Lord Thomas Howard, the most worthy Gentleman his Sonne (after Lord Howard) Sir Robert Southwell. Six Richard Lenifon, and with divers other Gentlemen, his Lordships followers of good account: his Colours being advanced by that valiant refolute Gentleman, Sir Edward Hobby Knight. And thus he like wife marching with all possible speede on foote, notwithstanding his * I bauebia L. many yeeres *, the intolerable heate for the time, and the ouertring tedious deepe fands, with told by some of other many impediments: Yet in good time, loyned himselfe with the Earle and his companies, and gaue them the itrongest, and best assistance that he could.

Thus then the two Lords Generall with their companies being joined together, and proceeding fo farre as the market place, there they were horly encountered, where and at what time, that worthy famous Knight Sir lobs Winkfield, being fore wounded before on the thigh, at the howass Novers very entring of the Towne, and yet for all that no white respecting himselfe, being carried away old, or between with the care he had to encourage and direct his Company, was with the shot of a Musket in the that and 70. head most vafortunately slaine.

And thus before eight of the clocke that night were these two most noble Lords General, Ma. 1624. crowned And thus before eight of the clocke that night were there two morthodie Longs General, may with filter flers of the market place, the forts, and the whole Towne and all, onely the Caftle as yet holding hires and golout, and from time to time as they could, stil annoying them with seuen battering peeces. By this dentaies of time night began to grow on, and a kinde of peace or intermission was obtained by them of the Ca- glorious a de. 40 file : to whom the Lords Generall had fignified, that voleffe before the next day in the morning The Gafile they would absolutely render themselves, they should looke for no mercie, but should every one delivered. be put to the fivord: vpon which meffage they tooke deliberation that night: but in the morning before breake of day they hanged out their flag of truce, and so without any further composition did yeelde themselues absolutely to their mercie, and deliuered vp the Castle.

And yet notwithflanding all this, in the night time while they had this respite to pause and deliberate about the peacemaking, there were divers great and sodaine alarms given : which did breede some great outrages and disorder in the Towne. At every which alaram, the two Lords Generall shewed themselves marueilous ready and forward.

These things being done, and this surrender being made, present Proclamation was publish-50 ed, that the fury now being past, all men should surcease from all manner of bloud and cruell dealing, and that there should no kinde of violence or hard viage be offered to any, either man, woman, or childe, vpon paine of death : permitting the spoyle of so much of the Towne as was by them thought meete, to the common fouldiers for fome certaine daies. This honorable and merciful Edict I am fure was freightly and religiously observed of the English: but how well it was kept by the Dutch, I will neither affirme, nor yet denie. For I perceiue betweene them and the Spaniards there is an implacable hartburning, and therefore as soone as the Datch squadron was espied in the fight, immediately thereupon both they of Smil and Saint Lucar, and also some of fome other places did not onely arrest all such Dutch thips, as dealt with them triendly by the way of trafficke and merchandise, and so conflicated their goods, but also imprisoned the Mer-60 chants and owners of the same, and as the report goeth, did intreat many of them with extreame

In the meane while, the very next day, being the two and twentie day of Iune, all the Spanish Spanish Ere fhips which were left on ground in the Bay of Cadez, where the great cuerthrow had beene their flips. but the day before, were by the Spaniards themselves there set on fire, and so from that time

great worth action, that they heard the Lord Admirall who yet hucch

The English

forward they never left burning of them, till every one of them, goods and all, as far as we know were burnt and confumed. This their doing was much maruelled at of vs. Not long after the fame time (three dayes as I remember) the gallies that were run on ground, did quit themselves alio out of that place, and by the Bridge of the Hand called Puente de Suaço, made their way round about the same Iland, and so by putting themselves to the maine Sea, escaped to a towne called Rotte, not farre off, but something vp towards the towne of Saint Lucars, and there purchased their fatety by that meanes. Thus was this notable victory, as well by Sca as by Land, both begun and in effect performed, within the compasse, in a manner, of foureteene houres : a thing in truth fo strange and admirable, as in my judgement will rather be wondred at then beleeved of nosteritie. And if ever any notable exploit in any age was comparable to Cafars Veni, Vidi, Vici, certainly in my poore opinion it was this.

10 2

The Towns of it felte was a very beautifull towne, and a large, as being the chiefe See of the Bishop there, and having a good Cathedrall Church in it, with a right goodly Abbey, a Nunnery, and an exceeding fine Colledge of the Jefutes, and was by natural lituation, as also by very good fortification, very firong, and tenable enough in all mens opinions of the better judgement. Their building was all of a kinde of hard stone, even from the very foundation to the top, and every house was in a manner a kinde of a Fort or Cattle, altogether flat-roofed in the top, after the Turhilb manner, to that many men together, and that at cale, might walke thereon: having voon the house top, great heapes of weighty thones piled vp in fich good order, as they were ready to be throwne downe by every woman most castily upon such as passed by, and the streetes for the most part fo exceeding narrow(I think to avoide the intollerable great heat of the Sun) as but two men or three at the most together, can in any reasonable fort march thorow them, no streete being broader commonly then I suppose Watlingstreete in London to be. The towne is altogether without slaffe, excepting the Churches, yet with faire comely windowes, and with faire grates of Iron to them, and have very large folding leaves of wainfcot, or the like. It hath very few Chimnies in it, or almost none at all it may be some one chimney in some one or other of the lower out-roomes of least account, serving for some necessary vies, either to wash in, or the like, or elie, now and then perchance for the dreffing of a dish of meate, bauing, as it should seeme voto me, alwayes a greater care and respect how to keepe themselves from all kinde of great heate, the how to proude for any flore of great rofte. It had in it, by report of them that should know best 30 it, some foure thousand and moe, of very good able fighting men, and fixe hundred horsemen at the leaft. No question but that they were well furnished of all things appertaining thereunto especially fo many good thips lying there, and being fo well stored with all manner of munition, shot, and powder, as they were.

Of what wealth this towns should be, I am not able to resolue the asker; but as it should appeare by the great pillage by the common Souldiers, and some Marriners too, and by the goodly ing buthoften furnitures, that were detaced by the baler people, and thereby veterly loft and spoiled, as not rold me that worth the carrying away; and by the over great plenty of Wine, Oyle, Almonds, Oliucs, Raihe had the rife fins, Spices, and other fuch Grocery wates, that by the intemperate diforder of fome of the rather fore were knocke out, and lay trampled under feet, in enery common high way, it should appeare 40 that it was of some very mighty great wealth to the first owners, though perchance not of any and in hisre- fuch great commodity to the last jubduers, for that I judge that the better part was most riotously

turne gaue and and intemperately ipent and confamed.

The Wednesday, Thursday, and Friday following, the Lords Generall spent in counsell about the disposing of all matters, as well touching the towns and priloners, as also concerning all other matters, thought meete of them in their honourable wildomes, and in all that means world did flew fuch honourable bounty and mercy, is not able to be expressed. For not onely the lines bies) of great of every one were spared, but allo there was an especiall care had, that all the Religious, as well men as women, should be well and fauourably intreated, whom freely without any manner of ransome or other molesiation, they caused to be safely transported ouer to Port Saint Mary, #50 Towns in a manner as faire as Cadiz : but at that time, as the case did Sand, certainely knowne to worthan angel be of no wealth in the world, and it was fome fixe or feuen miles diffant ouer against Cade, in robisignorant a manner as Paules is againit Southwarke, on the other fide of the Bay, in a part of Andaluzia, nimpucity, ne subiect to the territorie of the Duke de Medina Sidonia. Moreouer, at the fame instant they did uer ordained appoint that worthy Knight Sir Amias Presson, and some others in some convenient Barkes, to transport ouer to the faid Towne safely and in good order, a hundred or moe of the better fort of ancient gentlewomen, and merchants wives, who were suffered to put voon themselves, some of them two, yea, some three suites Apparell, with some convenient quantitie of many lewels, Chaines, and other ornaments belonging to their estate and degree.

fmiths house,

many Stones

deficription

feemed Ru-

to be rich.

Vpon Saturday, being the fix and twentieth, Sir Iobn Wink field knight was buried, in honoura- 60 ble and warlike manner, fo farre forth as the circumstances of that time and place could permit. At whose funerals the Nauie discharged a great part of their Ordnance, in such order, as was thought meete and convenient by the Lords Generals command. The feuen and twenty day beang Sunday, in the Abbey the divine Service was had, and a learned Sermon was made thereby

one Mafter Hopkins, the right honourable Earle of Effect his Preacher, a man of good learning and fweete veterance, and even there the fame day, fomething before the Sermon was made, thefe worthy Gentlemen following were Knighted by the Lord Generall, And here I am to fignifie by the way that two of thefe were Knighted three or foure daies before, and fome three or foure moe were Knighted after that time, vpon certaine occasions: but yet I hold it best (and I trust without offence) to recite their names in this place altogether.

CHAP. 14. Cadiz Knights. B. of Cusco well vied. L. Admirals Letter.

CIs Samuel Bagnal.	Sit Christopher Heydon.	Sir Iohn Buck.	Iune 21.2
Sir Arthur Sauage.	Sir Francis Popham.	Six lobn Morgan.	
The Earle of Suffex.	Sir Philip Woedhonfe.	Sir lobn Aldridg.	27:
The Lord Harbert.	Six Alexander Clifford.	Sir Iohu Afikinden	
The Lord Burken	Sir Maurice Bareley.	Sir Mathew Browne.	
Count Ladowick.	Sir Charles Blunt.	Sir John Alton.	
Sir William Howard.	Sir George Gifford.	Sir Thomas Gates.	
	Sir Robert Croffe.	Sir Gilly Meriche.	
Sir George D'Eureux.	Sir James Escudamor.	Sir Thomas Smith.	
Sir Henry Neuel.		Sir William Pooley.	
Sir Edmund Rich.	Sir Urias Leigh.	Sir Thomas Palmer.	
Sir Richard Leuen.	Sir John Leigh, alias Lee.		
Sit Peter Egomert.	Sir Richard Weston.	Sit Iohn Stafford.	
20 Sit Anthonie Albley.	Sir Richard Wasuman.	Sir Robert Louel.	
Sit Henry Leonard.	Sir lames Wootton.	Six Iohn Gylbert.	
Six Richard Leuison.	Sir Richard Ruddal.	Sir William Harnie	
Sir Horatio Vere.	Sit Robert Mansfield.	Sir John Gray.	
Six Arthur Throckmorton.	Sit William Mounton.	Don Christ. Prince of Ports.	
Sir Miles Corbet.	Sir John Bowles;	gall.	
Sir Edward Conway.	Sir Edward Bowes.	Sir John Vanderfoord Admirall	
Sir Oliver Lambert.	Sir Humfrey Druel	of the Hollanders.	
Sir Anthony Cooke.	Sir Amias Preston.	Sir Robert Dudley. 8. August.	
Sir loba Townesend.	Sir Robert Remington.		
10			

Being in Cadiz, attending upon my most honorable good Lord, I talked with certains of the Religious men, such as I found learned, whereof indeede there were some, though not very manya I talked alto with the Bilhop of Cufee there, a grane aged comely man, and being of late chosen to that Bilhopricke, he was as then to have gone to the ledies, had not we then taken him prifoner, and to stated his journey for that time.

It pleated the Lords generall to deale exceeding fanourably with this faid Bishop of Cufee : for it was their good pleafure to give him his free paffage without any ranfome, and therewithall to let him to vaderitand, that they came not to deale with Church-men, or warmed men, or with men of peace weaklings and children, neither was it any part of their meaning to make fuch a to voyage for gold, filter, or any other their wealth and riches, &c. But that their onely comming was to meet with their dishonorable practifes, and manifold injuries, and to deale with men of war and valour, for the defence of the true honour of England; and to let them to vaderstand, that when soever they attempted any base-conceited and dishonorable practise to their sourraigne Queen, their Mistreile, that it should be reuenged to the vetermost, &c.

In this meane space, while the Lords generall continued at Cadix, there came to them certaine prore wretched Turks, to the number of eight and thirty, that had bin a long time gally-flaues, and either at the very time of the fight by Sea, or elfe immediately thereupon, taking the opportunity, did then make their elcape, and did fwim to land; yeelding themselves to the mercy of their most honorable Lordships. It pleased them with all speede to apparell them, and to furnish them with mony, and all other necessaries, and to bestow on them a Barke, and a Pilot, to see them free.

So ly and fafely conucied into Barbary.

The eight and twenty day being Monday, the Lord Admirall came abourd the Arke againe, minding there to remaine for a space, as indeede he did, and vpon the adurce of his Phistian, to deale fomething in philicke, for that his Lordship found his body fomething out of frame. At that time it pleafed his Lordship to write certaine letters to the Duke of Medina Sidonia, for the dehuerance of English Captines, who were remaining in the Gallies. For by this time, it was reported, that the faid Duke was come downe in person with some power, and that he was either at Port Saint Mary,or elfe at Rotta,or thereabout. His Lordship did indite the Letters himfelfe, but his pleasure was, they should be turned into Latine by another ; and so to be sent (as indeede they were) in the Latine tongue vnto the Duke.

The next day after, being the fourth of July, the Lords generall caused the towns of Cadiz to Codir have be let on fire, and raied and defaced fo much as they could; the faire Cathedrall Church, and the Religious houses onely being spared, and left vublemished. And with the Towne all such prouition, for faipping, and other things, as were femiceable for the Realmes vie, and yet were not

Yazzzyy z

either is convenient for vs to be carried away, as elfeluch as we shood no whit at all in neede of. were likewife at the same inflant confumed with fire. And presently thereupon, their Lordships. with as convenient freede as they could, and the whole army in such order and leifure, as they thought beit, came aboord.

The next day being the fift of July, the Lords generall with all the army being under faile, and I have continue L. Admirall his now making for England, and but as yet passing the very mouth of the Bay of Cadra, a Galley ful of English prisoners, with a flag of truce, met vs from Rossa, sent by the Duke of Medina Sidonia. and fentas it should feeme, one day later then his promite : but yet their flig being either not big enough, or not well placed in the Galley, or not well differred of our men, or by what other michance I know not; but thus it was: by one of our smallest ships that failed formost, as soone 10 as the faid Gall-y came within Gunfhot, there was a great Peece discharged vpon her, and at that inftant there was one man flaine outright, and two other grieucusly hurt. The errour being efficiel and perceived, our fhip gave over immediately from any further shooting. As soone as the Galley came neere vs, my Lord Admirall caused a gracious salutation to be sounded with his truppets, and willed the Captaines forthwith to come aboord his ship : which they did, and then he feafted hem with a Banket, as the time and place might ferue. And then by them vnderflanding of that unfertunate mischance that had napned by the shot of the said ship, he was very forry for the fame, and yet fuch was the mercifull providence of almighty God, that even in this mischance also, he did hold his holy hand ouer the English; and all the harme that was done did light only upon the poore Turke, and the Spaniard himselfe. When this Lord had well banqueted 20 them, he presently called for his Barge, and did accompany the faid Galley to the Lord Generall the Earle of Effer, who then did ride with his thip a good diffance off: and there they being in like manner most honorably received, and intertained, the Spanife Gentlemen delivered vp their prifoners the Eaglish captines, of whom some had bin there hix yeeres, some eight or ten; yea, and fome two and twenty yeeres, and vpward, and fome of them but lately taken in Sit Francis Drakes laft voyage to the lades. The number of the pritoners delivered were but nine and thirty, and no moe, and were brought in, and delivered by Don Amonio de Corolla and his brother, and by Don Pedro de Cordea, and certaine others.

If any man presume here so farre, as to inquire how it chanced, that the Lord Generall rested folong at Cadra, and went no further; and why Port Saint Mary, being fo faire a Towne, and 30 fo neere to them, was forborne ? and why Shoras alias Xeres ? And why Resta, and the like? And why this or that was done . And why that, or this left vindone ? I will not answere him with our common English proverbe, as I mighe, which is : That one foole may aske mor questions in one houre, then ten discreete men can well answere in fine dayes. But that grave ancient wiiter. Cornelsus Tacitus, hath a wife, briefe, pithy, faying, and it is this; Nemo tentanit inquirere in columnas Herculis, fantinfq, au remerentins babitum eft de factis Deorum eredere,

quam feire. Allo voon my knowledge, the chiefest cause why Port Saint Mary, and the rest, were left vncouched, was this: For that it was most certainely known, that they were Townes not worth the faluting of fisch a royall company, in which there was no manner of wealth in the world left, 40 more then bare houses of stone, and standing wals, and might well have served rather as a stale, perchance, to have entrapped, then as a meanes to have enriched.

And thus much for our journey to Cadez: for the accidents that hapned by the way, for the winning, spoiling, and burning of the said Towne, for the overthrow of the Spangh Fleete there, and for all other by-matters that hapned, as appendances to the same, both in the time of our abode there, as also at the very last houre of our comming from thence. As for our returne home, and our entrance into a part of Portugall by the way, with the taking, spoiling, and burning of the Towns of Faraon there, and marching into the Spanifs confines thereabouts, &c. I minde to leave it to some other, whose chance was to be present at the action, as my selfe was not, and shall be of more sufficient ability to performe it.

Meteranus writeth, that the taking of Cadiz had so terrified the neighbour townes, that the Inhabitants fied out of them; and Saint Lucar had beene also very easily taken, if a few thips had assaulted it; and that eighteene Spanish hip comming from the Indies ignorant of what had hapned, were English at vnawares, being very wealthy.

CHAP-60

CHAP. XIIII.

CHAP. 14 S.1. Earle of Effex his Relation of the Hand Doyage.

The Voyage to the Iles of Azores, under the conduct of the Right Honorable ROBERT Carle of Effex, 1507.

The Relation thereof by the faid Earle, and other Commissioners.



10

The Generall, having by her Maiesties gracious favour the charge of her Fleete and Armie, fer out of Plimmouth in lune 1 597. did both promife my felfe and give hope to her Maieftie, that I should be able to defeate the King of Spaines Fleete, commanded by the Adelantado, if I met them at Sea, or destroy it in the harbour of Feroll, if I found them there; as also to master and take all Fleetes of treasure, or of the East or West Indian Fleete, that I should finde upon the Sea in their way to Spaine: and laitly, that I should take in the Hand of Tergea; which I held an action of equall im-

portance to the other.

With this confidence I went out, and to these ends: but none of these three being performed, it may be doubted, whether we have not through weakenesse or negligence failed of successe. For which we make answere, that if our whole carriage be examined, from the first hours to the last, it shall appeare that we have striven to attaine to every one of these with as much obstinate constancie, as any men in the world could doe, and that onely the powerfull hand of God, did binde our hands, and frustrate all our endenours.

The first for the enterprise of Ferel, we went out of Plinomonth the third of June, and stiered directly for that port, and when most extreame stormes and contrary windes met with vs. we Crossed with beate it up till all our Fleete was feattered, and many of our ships in desperate case. And because winder and Ishe Generall thought my too foone giving over would not onely deprive the Pleete of our prin- formes. 20 cipall thip, but abiolutly defeate the journey; I forced my company first to abide the continuall increasing of a most dangerous leake, which I made light of because I saw that with labour of men I could free the thin as fast as the leake did grow. Secondly, I made them endure the craking of both my maine and foremast, the one in two places, the other in three; so as we fill look. Danger of the ed when they should be carried by the boord; which was not enough to make me beare up, becapie I knew whenfoeuer I should loofe them both, I could with jurie masts, by Gods favour, carry the ship home. And I continued so long, that my ships Okam came all out, her seemes opened, her deckes and upper workes gaue way, her very timbers and maine beames with her labouring did teare like lathes ; fo as we looked hoursly when the Orlope would fall, and the Ordnance finke downe to the keele : then did those few, whom before I had wonne to fland with mee, all 40 protest against me, that if I did not within a minute of an houre beare vp the helme, I did wishully cast away the ship and whole company.

Then onely I suffred my selfe to be ouercome : and when I came to Plimmonth, halfe her Maie. They put in to flies ships, and more then halfe the principall officers by fea and by land were put in before mee Plimmouth. for the excremitie their thips were in. And when we were all of vs eathered together agains, at Plimmouth, and had repaired all the thips but mine owne, which was fent home to Chatham to be new builded, then were we kept in by continuall fforme and contrary windes, till our victuals (which were at fiff but for three moneths) were in a manner all spent, and the sicknesse in the Flie boates, that carried the land armie, growne fo great, that I had order from her Maiestie to discharge the land forces, all but the thouland old Souldiers, which were drawneout of the Low Order to dif 50 Countries. By which meanes, though we were disabled to land at Ferol, to beate the land Armie charge land there, and take in the forces, which was the certaine way to command the Adelantados Fleete; forces, yet I the Generall offered her Maiestie to fend in certaine ships of fire, and to second them with the Saint Matthew and Saint Andrew, and fome great flye-boates, and Merchants ships, with which I would defroy the most of the enemies principall shipping, and leave all the Queens own English built ships at the mouth of the harbour to affore our retreate. By this meanes I should hazard to loofe but two great Cartes, which before I had won, and for the adventuring of thefe defeate the enemies whole Nauie. Which counfell being allowed, though with reftraint of mine owne going in with the etwo thips, and an absolute barre to hazard any other, we went out the

60 But againe ere we could recourt the Spanish coast, the Saint Matthew, by looking her foremalt, Their foreign was put backe into England, and the Saint Andrew had loft company, till at one inftant within forth the fe fight of the shoare of the Groine, Sir Walter Raleigh the Vice-admirall brake his maine yard, which cond in ... forced him to beare along to the Westward before the winde; and I in this second ship had such a desperate leake sprang, as when we pumped and boled with buckets as much as we could for our

fecond time to put this project in execution.

1936

owne lines, it grew still upon vs ; and when we fought by ramming downe peeces of Beefe, and Leaks remeholding linnen cloath wrong together, to ftop the comming in of the water, it came in not withfrancing to frongly, as it bare downe all, and beate away enery man that flood to fron it: Then was I faine to lye by the lee, and make my company worke vpon it all night, my matter Carpenter, the onely skilfull man I had, dying at that very instant. And w en by the great mercy of God we had stopped it, the winde being easterly the Fleete

threwne.

Gape Finificate Was to farre thot a head, as I could not recour the most of them till I came to the Cape Finificate. where holding a Countell, and milling Sir Walter Raleigh (who being off at Sea, had no plying failes to get vp) miding him, I iay, with thirty failes that in the night followed his light . and hearing that the Saint Matthew, which was our principall flip for the execution of our intended 10 enterprife, was returned, and being barred to hazard any other in her place, it was by the whole Enterprise of Countell of warre concluded, that the enterprise of Ferol was ouerthrowne, both because, though the winde had ferued, we wanted the thips appointed for that feruice, and if wee had had the thip; we wanted winde to get into the harbour of Ferol; for the winde blew firongly at Eaft. which would have bin fully in our teeth as we had plied in. And now wee onely could thinke of the intercepting of the Indian Fleete, and defeating of the Adelantade: if he had put to Sea. For to take in Tergera, our land army being discharged, we had no meanes : whereupon wee bare for the height of the Rocke; hoping there (because it was our second Rende wons after Ferel) to meete with Sir Walter Raleigh. Into which height when I came, a mellage was defluered mee from Sir Walter Raleigh, by one Captaine Skabbels, that the Adelantado was gone out of Ferol with his 20

South Cape.

Tercers.

The Rocks. Fleete to Tercera, to wast home the Weit Indian Fleete of tressure, and that hee would attend mine answere off of the Burlingas; which message of Sir Walters was grounded voon the report of the Captaine of a ship of Hampton, which did confidently deliver it.

I the Generall there calling a Counfell, tooke a resolution, both because wee hoped to meete the Adelantado there, and because all our best experimented Seamen did affure vs that it was the

out Pinnaces both to the Burlinges, and toward the South Cape (which was our third Rende-uons, by our first appointment) to cause Sir Walter Raleigh and ali others of our Fleete to follow. And

being with the lland of Tergera, I looked into the roade of Brafil, and law there was no Fleete; whereupon we bare along the twixt Saint George and Graciofa for the Island of Flores, at which 30 we might both water and take in victuals, which in Merchants fhips her Maieftie had fent after Victurls fent vs : and where, if the Indian Fleete did come this yeere, they were likelt to fall. But when we had after them. spent at Flores some tendayes, in which time Sir Walter Raleigh and his company came vnto vs.by a imill Pinnace come from the Indies, I the Generall was told, that it was doubtfull whether the Indian Fleete came from thence or not, and if they did, they would change their viuall course, and come in fome height more to the Southward, till they were past these Ilands, where viully

likelieft course to meete with the Indian Fleete, to goe for the Hands of the Azores. And I fent

comming from the Indias. they are attended.

Which newes made vs resolue in Counsell to goe for Fayal, and so for Saint Michael, and to have some nimble ships to lye off and on at Sea, both to the Southward and to the Northward. In our passige by faile, Graciosa, and Pico, we tooke such commodities and refreshings as those I- 40 lands afforded : and in passing from them toward Saint Michael, wee were told that a great ship was discovered off of Graciosa: whereupon I the Generall gave order to divide and to direct the Fleete into three places : the one to furre away East North-east, and to goe along the Northide of Tergera: the other East South east, and to goe by the Southfise of the faid Hand, and both to meete in the roade of Brafil: fo as if the Carackes, or West Indian Fleete should strive to recover Tercera, they should be cut off: And the third part of the Ficete should ply to the Westward, which way it was faid that the great ship stood, and so to cut it off, it it fought for the roade of Fayal: which if the were kept from, Tergera was her onely place the could put into : and one of these three wayes she must needes stand; for the winde being at North North-west, shee could

not goe but one of their three courses.

Byt as I had given this direction, there came to me a small Barke of Lime, whose Captaine 30 deonsilentialises are the small between the small beautiful and the small beautif did confidently afture me, that he was the man that did follow the chase, and fetched it vp, finding it but a small ship of our owne Fleete : which made vs resolue to continue our former intended course for Saint Michael. But in this meanetime, I the Generall hailing the Captaine of a Pinnace, and willing him to call to the ships of my squadron to follow my light, and those of the Viceadmirals (quadron to follow his light to the Westward (which direction I did presently after counter-mand) hee misheard, and willed some ships that were next, to rland about to the Wellward : which direction, together with his not hearing of me that, which was spoken to countermand it, made foure of her Maielties ships, the Garland, the Marie rose, the Dread-nanght, and the Rainebon, to fland off to the West all that night : of which, Sir William Mounfon mithe 63 Rainebowe fell in the night with the West Indian Floete; and it being calme, went off in his Boate to make and haile them: which hee did, and made himfelfe knowne vnto them: and straight rowing to his ship, hee shot off his Ordnance all night, and carried a light in his maine top : whereupon the other three of her Maiesties ships flood off with him, but could retrievely

up the Spaniards till they were gotten into Tercera Road; before which, after they had flriued in vine to get into them, they plied till my comming, which was three dayes after : for I was hard Electres not abourd the Welfermott part of Saint Michaell before I heard these newes.

And then Handing about, I the Generall being on head of the Fleet, met in my way with a Torces. great Ship of the Governour of Hanana, and a Frigate of the Spanifo King, manned with the faid Kings Souldiers, and another Frigate of a particular man : which three I ferched out, tooke, and Three Scarift manned for the lafe bringing home of the Ship and goods, and fell the next night being Saturday.

with Tercera; where finding the wind ftrong at Northwest, we plyed with as much faile as ever we could bear to get up to the road of Brafil all that night. Al Sunday,

Io and Sunday night, and till Munday morning wee could not weather the point of Brafil: which when wee had done, while I the Generall gathered fuch of the Fleet as were neere, I tent in a Pinnace of my Lord of Cumberland, and foure or frue of very fufficient Captaines and Mafters, to fee whether it were possible for vs to get up where the Ships rode : and they brought me backe word, it was impossible. With which I being not satisfied plied in with mine owne Ship, keeping abourd with mee two or three of the principall Officers, that wee might judge by the eye, and dispute vpon the place; and when wee were in, wee faw the bottome of the Bay (into which they were towed and warped) lay right in the eye of the wind : fo as to lead it in with a fayle it was impossible, and to turne it vp would aske an whole day, if wee had scope, but both wee must upon enther board come within a quoytes east off their Forts, and yer our Ships would 20 wend in to narrow a place, wee should have beene on shoare. Which manifest discouerie, and not the idle Shot of all the Forts and Ships, though they were verie liberall, made mee

fland off agains. And as it was impossible to doe any thing for the present, so when I the Generall called all the

Captaines of her Maietties Ships together, and enquired the effate of their charge, I found that some by the naughtinesse of their Caske and leakage of Beere, had not about two dayes, and some not one dayes drinke aboord; and that which most of vs all had did fo ftinke, as our men dyed and fell ficke continually, and all men-protested, that if wee stayed to attend change of windes, and d. I not instantly seeke a watering place, both men and Ships were absolutely lost. Besides we faw the Galions had beene valuden, by their shewing their white bellies so much aboue wa-20 ter, and that the Merchants Ships lay all dry on shoare; so as we had abidden the extreamest ha-

zard of her Maiesties troupes and Ships, for the burning of a few dry vnladen Vessells.

Thus were we driven to beare the second time with Saint Michael (our chiefe end being to water, but withall to facke the Hand if we could land neere the principall Towne) where wee came to an anchor before Punta Delgada the chiefe Towne; and forthwith went in a little nimble Boat to difcouer the landing places, which we found to be exceeding dangerous. For as about ail those llands of the Acores a Westerly wind bringeth in the hollow mother Sea , so the wind then being Weit Southerly blew trade, and made both a great Sea gate or wash voon the shoare. and a dangerous rode. So as besides the apparant likelihood, that our men had been all lost by the Querturning of our Boats ypon our heads : the loffe of our Boates, which could not have beene in

40 that place avoided, had kept vs from watering, and so had beene the manifelt deftruction of the whole Fleet, Whereupon, I the Generall, leauing commandement of the great Ships with Six Walter Raleigh (because the Lord Thomas Howard defired to land with mee) accompanied with his Lords Ship, and all the other principall Officers and perfons of qualitie in the Army, I put my felfe in the imal Ships, and towed the boats at our Sterns to feeke another smal Bay on the other fide of the Point to the Eastward, called Punta de Galera or Galy Point, where there was a Land Punta de la Fange, and confequently a smoother landing.

But we putting off in this manner at eleven of the clocke at night, I the Generall in a Pinnace of Sir Walter Raleigh, called the Guiana, wherein all the Officers of the Land Army did accompany me, & the Aduenturers of quality that came out of my Ship in another Pinnace with Captain

50 Arthur Champernon came to an anchor in this Bay; but fo dangeroully as wee were put from our anchor, and had like to have beene cast away : all the rest of the Fleet being put to leeward very farre. The next morning at the breake of the day, being driven as low as Villa Franca, and there finding a good landing place, wee let our troups on shoare; where wee found (besides many other commodities with which we refreshed our troupes) a better watering place, and a safer rode then any other that was about that Hand. Which, together with the impossibilitie of getting our small Ships and Boats to ply backe againe fine leagues against the wind, and to meet ve that should have marched by land, and they seeing of many of the Queens principal ships driven from their anchors about, and come to Villa Franca : These accidents, I say, made vs to resolue to draw all the Fleet to one place, and there to water with all possible diligence.

And wee being there faw it was fo dangerous for our Ships to ride, the wind growing more Ochober the Southerly, as on Sunday the fifteenth of October, wee re-imbarked all our men ; the Matters of fifteenth. the Ships hatting before protested, that if they were put from their anchors, as hoursly they looked to bee, that the Fleet and Land Forces were in danger to be seuered for this whole Winter : So as to have hazarded her Maiesties honour, and so many gallant men, for that which was

The Indian

never any of our ands, had beene as vinwife as it was vinlafe; and if the counfell of retyring were Their resume. good, the manner of it was without taxation : for wee imbarked first of all our idle persons . fecondly our aduenterous, and the old Companies one after another; and when weehad but three hundred and fiftie men on flore, the enemy marching in fight of our Guards, we went cut to meet him, and frond two hours readie to fight with the whole Forces of the Iland, till at last they retired one of fight. Thus left wee that Iland, the principall Commanders by Land and Seaftaying to bring off the last man. In this meane time, while the Land Forces were at Villa Franca. and the Fleet at Punta Delgada, there came into that Road a Carake and a small Brasil man. The Carack prefently ran her felfe on the Rocks; and after her men had faned themfelues, the last fee her on fice with all the goods in her, to avoid her being taken. Which Sit Walter Raleigh and Io those with him could not possibly avoid. The Brafil man was taken, and the Ship being found leakie, the goods were taken out and put into English Ships.

her telie on A Ship of Braflaken.

* charles.

And now wee have given account of all our whole carriage vntill we bare for England. If our comming home scattering be objected, wee must plead the violence of stormes, against which no fore directions, not prefent industry carr prevaile. Wee must conclude with this. That as wee would have acknowledged that wee had done but our duties, if we had defeated the Adelantado. interpreted the Feet of Treasure, and conquered the Hands of the Agores : So wee having failed of nothing that God gaue vs meanes to doe ; wee hoped her Maieftie will thinke our painfull dayes, carefull nights, euill diet, and many hazards deferue not now to be meafured by the euent. the like honourable and just construction wee promise our selues at the hands of all my Lords. As 20 for others, that have fer warme at home and descant vpon vs, wee know they lacked strength to performe more, and believe they lacke courage to adventure fo much,

Signed

Thomas Howard, Chit Mountion.

Walter Raleigh.

Fran: Vere. Christ: Blunz. Antony Sherley.

d. IL

A larger Relation of the faid Iland Voyage, written by Sir ARTHYR GORGES Knight, collected in the Queenes Ship called the Walt Spite, wherein he was then Captaine; with Marine and Martiall Discourses added according to the Occurrences.

* Ofthefe Timds fee before Linfebatens obfernations: to which I have added this Authors defeription, as containing in omitted.

Thisbooke was written that great hope

A. 1607. and dedicated to of Great Brisaine, P. ince Henry , the Epiftle to him and the Preface I hau: 0mated in regardof our long volume. I haue not added a word of mine but the

Heseles of the Afores are situate in the Atlastike or Westerne Ocean, and doe stand betweene 37, and 40 degrees, and distant from England 400, leagues. They are in number nine, namely Saint Marses, Saint Michaels, The Tercera, Gratiofa, S. Georges, Pyker Fynak, Flores, and Coerno.

This name of Afores was given vnto thefe Hands by the Portugues, of a kind of Hawkes called, 40 by them Afores (which wee name Gofbankes , and the Latines Accipitres) whereof there did breed great store in those Iles : But Ortellins fets downe this name to bee so given of the French word Efforer, which fignifieth, to dry or wither, but yeekleth no reason withall for that Etimofomwhat ther- logy. The Netberlanders doe call them the Plemift Hands, challenging that they were first discouered by the Merchans of Bridges, who found them meerely vn-inhabited, abounding with Woods and Cedar Trees, whether they fent Colonies to people and manure them. And afterterwards in processe of time they yeelded themselves Subicets to the Portugues, who since did inhabite and gouerne there, fo as now with them they are fallen under the power of the Spanifo

Among it these llands the Tercera's the chiefe, but is so called by the Spaniards, because it beth viurpation. the third Iland distant from the Coast of Spaine. It is plentifull of Fruit and Corne, and liath some Vines growing in it. The Inhabitants doe make great benefit and trade of Oade to dye Cloth, which growes there in great plentie: The chiefe Towne in that Iland is called Angra, and hath thereunto a very ilrong Fortreffe, called Brazill, and under it a Roade for flipping to ride, but an Hauen or fafe Port for all weathers, there is not one among it their nine Hands.

The Pike is so called of a sharpe Mountaine, rising steeple wife some three miles in height and fix or feuen miles in circuit at the foot; fashioned it is voward like an Hine, and the top therof most commonly to be discerned within and about the clouds. This Mountaine bath in a (by

Title and Marginall Notes; nor defalked any of the Authors (after my wont in others, not to make their writings mine, burbling, 60 the redioulactie in footen repetitions by often relators, and the inperfinities being fuch as would deterre the Realet;) The Dif courfes I have visually put in another letter, to diffinguish them from the History; the one the Eyes onsenutions, the ether the Minds, and both worthy both thine eyes and minds best observation. Hee added also Notes conching the Name Royall, who have worthy the noting but perhaps not to be permitted to enery vulgar and noteleffe eye. Sometim a collar of a may cause paines, and buffe labour may reap the reward of a buffeb. dy. I am losh to buy repentance,

report) many great hollow Caues and deepe Vaults, and it is credibly reported that oftentimes it oreathes out flames and ipatkes of fire, as doth the Mountaine Lina. Also at the bottome of tins Mountain, towards the East, there is a great Spring of Fresh-water, which is teen many times to iffue out flakes and itones of fire with great violence, and of the number and bigneffe of the fromes that are throwne out by the force and fource of this Spring, and what huge workes they make of the multitudes of them, they confidently doe tell frange wonders, which I will neither affirme nor deny but leaue indifferent to credit as men lift.

Fazall is to called of Faza, which in the Portugues fignifieth a Beech Tree, wherewith that Hand Fajall, is faid to abound. But yet I faw there more ftore of luniper and Cedar, then of any other Wood to cr Timber. For Aireand Soyle, it is as pleasant and fruitfull, as any of the other Ilands, and in it are some fine Townes with many pretie Villages ; and in this lland there are yet remaining certaine families of the Fleamfb race. Gratiofa is so called of the exceeding fruitfulnefie of the Sovle Gratiofa and plealant temper of the Ayre. Flores, of the abundance of Flowers that grow in it. Cherno, of. Flores, the multitude of Rauens and Crowes breeding therein. And that Iland doth also breed Horses. Curva, Saint Maries, Saint Georges, and Saint Michaels, were so called of thole Saints names, vpon whole S. Maries &c. dayes they were first discoursed; for such is the custome of many Nauigators, and especially of the Spaniards and Portnewes, fo to call those Landes that they first make by the Saints day and name wherein they are discourred. And these three Hands for temper and fruitfulnesse are suteable with the others : But Saint Michael is the greatest of them all, Tercera the strongest, and Saint 20 Maries the neerest to the Coast of Spaine.

But now as wee come neerer to our intended purpole, for the better underflanding thereof, L thinke it very necessary and pertinent somewhat to speake of the chiefe Commanders, as well by Sea as by Land, and also of the number of our Ships and Souldiers, together with the project and deligne of that journey then undertaken for the feruice of her late Majeftie, and the Honour of our Nation.

It is therefore to be understood, that Robert Denerons, late Earle of Effex, Master of the Horse Commanders and Ordnance, and Knight of the Garter : First commanded in chiefe, as well Admirall of the names, and Nauie by Sea, as Generall of the Armie by Land. His Vice-Admiralt was the Lord Thomas chiefe officers, Howard Knight of the fame Order, and second Sonne to the last Thomas Duke of Norfalke, a No-30 bleman much honoured and beloued, and of great experience in Sea feruice. His Reare-Admirall was Sir Walter Raleigh Knight, Captaine of her Maieities Guard, Lord Warden of the Stanneries, and Lieftenant of Cornwall. For the Land fernice, his Leiftenant Generall was Sir Charles Blunt. Lord Meuntier, Knight of the Garter, Governour of Portfmonth, and a man in high favour with her late Maiestie. His Marshall of the Field was Sir Francis Vere Knight, a great Souldier, and Coronell Generall of the English Forces in the Low-Conniries. The Mafter of the Ordnance, Sir George Carem Knight , Leiftenant of the Ordnance of the Kingdome of England. His Sergeant Maior, Sir Ferdinando Gorges Knight, Gouernour of the Fores of Plimonth. The Coronell Generall of the Foot Sir Christopher Blunt Knight : The Treasurer of the Armie Sir Hugh Biefton Knight, one of her Maiesties Receiners Generall in the Principalities of Walles, with all other 40 Officers defigned to places requifite that were needful by Land or Sea, now too long to rehearle. And yet of all the Noblemen I will as neere as I can record their names particularly; but craue

pardon if I faile in the precedencie of their places. The Earles of Effex, Rusland, and Southampton, the Lord Howard, the Lord Audley, the Lord Gray, the Lord Mounter, the Lord Rich, and the Lord Cromwell. But the particular names of all this service. the Land Captains that had charge Fould neuer come to the knowledge of, much leffe can I marshall them orderly in this discourse. And therefore I will palle to the number of the Ships in generall, and therein name some particulars of the chiefe and principall Vessells of the Rovall Nauie, with their Captaines.

The whole Nauie (which was divided into three Squadrons, viz. The Admirall his Squadron; The Nauie 50 The Vice-Admirall his Squadron , and the Reare-Admirall his Squadron) confided of 120. fayle, or there bout; whereof fixtie were good men of Warre and gallant Ships; thereft Victuallers, and Ships of Transportation. Of her Maiesties owne Ships the number was eighteene or faile nineteene, and these were their names. The Merhoneur Admirall, whereof sir Robert Manf. The Queenes field was Captaine : The Due Repulse Vice-Admirall, whereof Master Middleton was Captaine : thips and their The Waft Spice Reare-Admirall, whereof my felfe was Captaine : The Garland the Earle of Son. Captaines. thampton commanded : The Defiance wherein the Lord Mountier was shipped, had for Captaine Sir Amias Prefton: The Saint Mathem to Sir George Carem, Matter of the Ordnance : The Mary Rose to Sir Francis Vere Marshall , whose Captaine was M. John Winter: The Dread nought Sir William Brooke was Captaine of : The Nonparellia Sir Richard Luson was Captaine of : The Bo-60 nouentere SiriVilliam Harney was Captaine of : The Antiloge Sir Thomas Vauiser was Captain of : The Rainbow Sit Waliam Mounfon was Captaine of : The Swiftfure Sit Gilly Mericke was Captain of : The Colden Lion was lent after for a fupply. The Hope, whereof was Captain Forelight, whereof Sir Carem Reignall was Captaine : The Saint Andrew, whereof Mafter Mar-

cellin Throckmorton was Captain : The Tramontana, whereof young Mafter Fenner was Captain :

The Moone, whereof Sir Edward Michelboorne was Captaine. Befides that there were fome other of her Mareties imall Pinnaces that attended the Fleet.

The reft of de differen

The refidue or the Fleet aforenamed confided of the best shipping of London, and other Port-Townes of the Kingdome, with fundry from Veffells belonging to lome Lords and Gentlemen that were Aduenturers in this Voyage. There were also added to this Name tenne fayle of good men of Warre, fent from the States of the Lon-Countries to attend her Maiesties Fleet in this fervice, under the conduct of one Mounfier de Duneincorde, well manned and furnished.

Ten Hollanders Land-Army.

The Land Army (betides Saylers that might be afforded and spared vponoccation of landing) confitted of ux-thousand able men well appointed, with ten Peeces of Artillery for the Field and Battery, with all necessary V tentils fit for them. The proportion of victuals was for four months se large allowance, & double apparell both for Souldiers and Mariners In this Armie there went Knights, Captaines, and Gentlemen, voluntaries fine bundred at the least; as gallant partonages.

Fine handred Voluntaries gallantly turnith d. The deligne.

and as branely furnished, as ener the eye of men did behold. The lift of whole names I did ferioutly inquire after, thereby to doe them right, but could by no meanes compaffe it. The end and purpose of this great Preperation was to the taking in of most of those Ilands, and especially of the winning of the Tercera it felfe, the which was refolied to have beene attempted by vs. with the

Intent for Terena.

Plimouth.

other Hinds and Holds of importance, and in some of them to have placed strong Garrisons, if it had blealed God to have prospered the ioniney with happy successe: But in the very beginning with long contrary winds, and extremitte of foule weather, the maine plot and ground of this enterprise was hindred and maimed, as hereafter more at large shall be related in his due place. But this intended sourney for the furprifing and bolding of the Tercera alone, if it had taken effect (without any further respect to the other Hands, then onely to have facked them and rafed those Fortresses they have) had beene a service of great consequence for us, and as president to the King of Spaine, as any action that was ever undertaken agarest hom, fince the revolt of the Low-Countries; The which to fet downe in particular, would require more ample discourse, then either my leasure, or my memory cun suddenly afford. But what great vie and benefit bath the Portugues did, and the Spaniards doe make of thefe Hands is in daily experience. And se for that bare Allegation, how difficult and inconvenient st would bee for us to bold a peece fo farre off: men of Warre in their true indocements would easily answere. For as well it might be demanded, how the Forts are beld in the East Indies by the poore Postugues against mightie Nations, and yet so farre remote from Christendome: And bow Rhodes and Cyprus were beretofore long kept in despite of the Turke 20 in his very before. And bow the Spaniards of late bane kept certaine places in Britaine, and Amyens, and Callice in Picardie, mangre the force of France, and never quitted them but by composition : And Godknowes bow long Don Iom D' Lagurra would bane kept Kintale and Beare Cafile, if thefe had bin places buffe fa serrible, as those of the Tercera; or but the foutb part fo remote from vs, as the Tercera is from Spaine. Undoubtedly their industry and patience is far beyond ours, both in getting and holding matters of more difficultie. But vaine it is to fet a price of the Beares skin before hee be flaine; although I am verily persuaded that the contrary winds onely lost we both that, and all the King of Spaine his treafure that came that yeere to the Tercera. For the lourney was carried with as great fecrecie, expedition, and Royall preparation, as ever was any the fernany yeares, and they on the contrary as flenderly provided, and little doubting any fuch attempt. When all things were thus ordered, and wee furnished of our necessaries after some few dates abode in Sandwich for the meeting, mustering, and imbarking of our Land Army, about the fine and twent:eth of lune, in the yeere 1 597. we let faile from the Downes, and within three dayes with skane winds recovered Portland Rhode, where we ancored and flaied some fix or seven dayes, taking in men and victualls at Waymouth, and thence we made for Plimonth, where were were to take in our freshwater, much of our prouisions, and mest of our Mariners ; besides that this place was appointed the very randeuous for the knitting yo and dispatch of this Voyage: whether in a day and a nights sayle wee came, but with very extreme foule weather. Infomuch that even in the entrance of the very Harbour, many of our Ships falling foule one of another were forely diffrested. The Lord Mountary his Ship the Defiance, had her Beake head ftricken cleane off ; and the Saint Mathem (being a Spanil Ship of great 50 charge, very leeward and drawing much water) had like in the tempest to have runne her selfe vpon the Rocks, had not her Captaine Sir George Carew Mafter of the Ordnance, beene very refolute and carefull in that extremitie, when a great part of his Souldiers and Saylers would have abandoned her, and betaken themselves to their Ship-boats, to shun the imment perill that threatned them : which he staied to the preservation of the Ship and the company. Moreover a Flee-boat of our Traine, who had in her fortie Last of Powder was likewise bulged, and all the ftore had beene veterly loft, had not the Master of the Ordnance with like care and diligence beftirred himselfe to faue all that bee might, who with the aid of many Ship-boats, as the Flee-boat was finking, faued the greatest part of her lading. Yet notwithit anding seventeen Lasts of Powder was veterly spoiled with the Salt-water, as I heard the Master of the Ordnance himfelfe affirme.

Thus with great difficultie wee arrived at Plimouth, where within fix or feven daies our whole Army and Name met, and withall the shipping of the Low-Countries came to vs. And icone after having watered and taken in all our proutions and Marinrs, and muttered our men, we imbarked

nor fame, and let fayle about the ninth of July, and for two dayes space were accompanied with a faire leading North-easterly wind. In which time we received a ship-board all our directions Fireughout the Nittle, with fuch orders and instructions as are vivally set downe by an Admiiall, and a Countell of Warre, together with the places of meeting from time to time vpon any Influctions rall, and a Countell or warre, together with the places of the engineer of the voltage of the rations of together with the places of the rations of the rations of together with the places of the rations of the ra of delinering directions when a Fleet is a Sea-board, and not before, is an use grounded upon many good onstauching realizate as to anoid the renealing of fecret plots, and the presention of sudden execution. As also to bun instructions. the discouraging of diners that doe often expose themselves and their adventures to Sea actions, either for lone to the Commanders, or cut of hope of Purchase, or, for many other respects, which perhaps they 10 would not doe if they knew indeed either the danger, or the true ends of some preparations. And this secret manner of proceeding bath bin often vfed by Philip the lateking of Spain, in diners great expeditions. who bath beene fa precise and seuere therein, as that oftentimes the Admiralls of his Fleet themselves have not knowne their instructions, nor beene suffered to open them, until they have beene thirtie or fortie leagues on their way. Wee now being in this faire courfe, fome fixtic leagues onwards our journey with our whole Fleet together, there suddenly arose a fierce and tempestuous storme full in our Stormes teeths, continuing for foure dayes with to great violence, as that now every one was inforced rather to looke to his owne fafetie, and with a low faile to ferne the Seas, then to beat it vo against the flormy winds to keepe together, or to follow the directions for the places of meeting. And here fome began to tafte the inconvenience and perill of high Cargued Ships drawing little water, and ouercharged with mightie Ordnance in a furious high wrought Sea : And now also o created wor thers found and felt the mischiese of weake built Vessells, and of rotten Tackle. For this extrea- weake ships. mitie of weather was fo great, as that wee were all one after another forced backe againe, fome into Plimouth, and di ers into other Harbours on that Coalt, so extreamely shaken and beaten, as that the Admirall was in danger to have foundred in the Sea, having many leaks broken out voon him, and his mid-ship beame (niuered in funder. And yet (as wee vnderstood after) some three or four of the formost of our Fleet (whereof the Earle of Southampton in the Garland was faid Returne to to be one) did recouer fight of the North-Cape, but yet forced to returne againe to Plimouth. Plimouth. And many of our Gentlemen and Knights, with this boy ferous and bitter entertainment on the Seas, returned extreame weake and lay dangeroufly ficke long after: Infomuch that some of them dyed thereof at Plimonib, and were there honourably buried by the Generall. Some also were so Great ficknesse much weakened and diffempered, as that they were not able to recouer frength to put to the Scas againe, as Sir Ferdinando Gorges our Sergeant Maior, in whose place our Generall did appoint Sir A. Sherh Sir Anthony Sherly; and Sir Caren Reignalls Captaine of the Forefight, to feuerely weakned with Placed in Sir Anthony Sherly; and Sir Caren Reignath Captaine of the Foreigner, to severely weakhed with roome of Sir Seas licknesse, as that his charge was delivered over to Sir Alexander Rateliste, a very format of F. Gerge. gallant young Gentleman, who (not long after) was flaine in the Warres of Ireland, with Sir Conniers Clifford Gouernour of Connaugh. And amongst others in the beginning of this bitter florme, Sir Alexander our Treaturer Sir Hugh Biston was also to extreamely afficted with Sea ficknesse, and in so great Rardiffe.

our Treaturer Sir ringo Diston was and to Carteninery amount of his marked into a Carthisominous uell of our traine to returne for England, feeing his weake body vnable to vndergoe the resolutiao on of his mind. And I thinke this losing of our Treasurer in the beginning, was an ominous prefage of the loffe of the infinite Treasures, which afterward so value kily past by and escaped vs.

Wee being thus with contrary winds, and extreamitie of weather beaten backe into feuerall Hauens, and yet at last meeting at Plimonth (except some few Ships of transportation, that were driven vpon the Coasts of France, Wales, and Ireland, with some of our Bands of Souldiers) we fell to repairing of out Ships, and to amend those inperfections which the Seas and stormes had discouered. But withall were inforced to abate a great part of the first proportion of our Armie, as well through the derects of the Admirall his Ships, and others, as allo for the waite and expence which wee had made of our drinke and victuals by the leaking of the Caske, and by the abundance of Salt-water, which was taken in during the storme, to the wetting and spoyling of many of our prouisions. Besides that, much of our beore aboard those Victualiers that followed our Fleet with divers other provisions, was very vile and vusavoury of it selfe, by the great abule of the Victuallers and London Brewers, as well for the carelelle brewing, as for the vinfeatonable Brewers faunt Hinking Caske which they deliver, a fault much vied among them, and too much tolerated, confidering the infinite ra earld gaines they make of felling Thames water, beyond all good order

and proportion. But as God would, at that initiant when wee had discharged our Ships of that vnferusceable poisonous drinke, there came very happily into Plimonth for a supply, a tall prize A Prize. Jaden with Spanish Canary Wines , which was diffributed among it the Fleet to make Beuerage. And in this fort ving all in luftry and diligence for the fetting affice of our fforme-beaten Name, wee so fitted our selves againe within eight or ten dayes, as that wee were readie for a new for-60 tune. But yet this violent and dangerous tempett had fo cooled and battered the courages of a

great many of our young Gentlemen (who feeing that the boyiterous winds and mercileffe great many of our voung Gentlemen (who feeing that the boyiterous winds and mercutine Seas, had neither affinitie with London delicacie, nor Court brauery) as that diffeharging their high standard agree and had so agree Plumes, and imbroydered Callockes, they Feretly retired themselves home, forgetting either to not with delibid their friends farewell, or to take leave of their Generall. And here by the way, a little to digreffe, cacyst bruces

Adulce for Gallants.

I thinke it not amisse instily to reprehend and taxe our Nation, for their unproper and vaine manner of going to the Warres, and especially those that had never scene service. For bee hee poore or rich when hee first prepares to que to firme, hee will take more care, and be at more cost to provide himselfe of a rossing Feather, and a clynicant Cost, then to bee furnished either of fit Armes, or of necessary clothing to keepe ont wet and cold: whereby they come both to the Sea and Field service, rather like Markers then Souldiers, as men apter to bring spoyles for the Enemy, then to conquer or win bonour from him. And yet at the last the maning of their needfull habiliments in times of extreamitie, doth make them truly to sinde their owne errour and superfluous vanitie in those idle and fruitlesse toyes : whereof I could wish a reformation. as well for the bettering of our service, as also for abating such needlesse expences. Such were the parish troupes and gilded Armies of Darius, abounding in pompe and delicacy: whose millions of effeminate 10 Perlians were ener dispersed and descated by bandfulls of the poore and hardie Macedonians. So were the fleele edged Souldiers of that renowned Hanniball, meramorphofed into Cowardise and Sloth, after ther had once relished the pride and delicacies of Capua, for their conquests ever after declined. So was allo that famous M. Anthonius overthrowne and vanquished, when he left the strict Martiall discipline of his owne vitt rious Country, and fastioned his Forces according to the branery and laxury of Egypt. to observe the bumour of Cleopatra, who had utterly corrupted and weakned the courage both of him and bu leasons with vanities, excesse, and idlenesse. And such in our dayes were the glorious glistring French troupes led by the Duke of Toyente, being for the most part compounded of the gallant Courtiers and dancing Minions of Henry the Third French King of that name, but be ten and ouerthrowne at the Battell of Couttras, by the valiant King of Navarr, and an handfull of his poore Hugonotes (as they then ter- 20 med them.) Farre otherwise was the wont and manner of those worthy Romans, that by their wisdome and valuer made themselves famous, and Lords over the World, whose glorious examples wee doe more willingly read then follow. They going a warfare departed Rome in obedience and strictuesse of Martiall discipline, in sobrictie of diet and active, fitted with Armes, like men that knew that Iron and Steele were mastring mettalls over Gold and Silver, and having archieved and performed their enterprises, returned then home in triumph, in glory, and in pride, hining in the spoyles and riches of their vanquified Enemies. and adorned with as much sumpenousnesse as they could get, brauing therein their conquered Foes and setting to the shew of the world the fruits of their Valour and Tranailes. Whereas wee for the most part contrativise going out branely, and returning bome againe beg garly, leane no other test mony wer records of our Enterprises and Victorius, either to the liming or to posteritie, then the Merchants bookes wherin we are 20 deep plunged, even to the more age or fale of our Inberstance, to convert the true bonor of Souldery into effeminate pompe and delicacy. But now to the matter: We having in this Fort repaired and supplied the defects of our weather beaten Navie, onely attended the favour of the winds; wherein it feemed the heavens were veter enemies to our defignes. For during the space of an whole moneth together (after wee were againe readie) the weather stood flat opposite to our course, insomuch that wee were not able to worke our felues out of the Harbour. And in this confumption of Time we loft the best season of the yeere for our purpose, and also greatly decayed our victualls and provisions; betides the number of our Souldiers and Mariners that daily diminished. And about this time the Lord Rich finding himfelfe (as many others did) altogether viable to indure the inconueniences of the Seas in a long and toilesome voyage, tooke his leave of our Generall, and gave o- 40 uer the journey. In this extreamitie of contrary windes and croffe fortunes (against which the policie and power of man could not prevaile) our Generall, with the advice of his counfell refolued upon some other course, and to fashion his enterprises according to opportunitie, and the proportion of the meanes that remained. And thereupon calling the greatest part of his Land Armie, hee onely retained one thousand of the best Souldiers (as was thought) most of them being Companies brought out of the Low-Countries : And also at that tithe hee discharged divers of the fmaller Ships, and many of the Victuallers, raking out of them fuch provisions and store as remained to supply that which was fpent, and to lengthen out the time for those leffer numbers that were to be imployed. And whileft these things were thus altering and ordering, and committed to the care and charge of discreet Officers : Our Admirall himselfe, with his Reare-Admirall re- 40 folged to ride post to the Court, to receive further directions or approbation in that he intended for her Maiestie, and the Lords of the Councell. Leaving the charge both of the National Souldiers in his absence, with the Lord Thomas Howard his Vice-Admirall, and the Lord Mounting his Leiftenant Generall by Land whom hee authorited, together with the Counsell of Warre, to marshall those affaires as occasion required. Have by it may be easily conicilured what it is for men requirea Print to undertake Sea-actions, that have not great meanes to follow the fame, with previsions and allowance of superfluitie to meet with lets and misadmentures, and not to depend on the bare ordinary promisions of a set proportion. For by this great crosse of ours, wee may well take knowledge how uncertaine and difficult it is to fet out and prepare a Sea Army, except it bee on the purfe and defraies of a Privace, able and willing to supply the expences and binderances of such wast and accidents, as doe many times bappen 60 by want of windes when all things else are in readinesse, wherein ofientimes the enershipping, and not taking of fix houres advantage of winde when it hath ferued , bath overshrowne a Voyage. And it

bath to my knowledge so fallen out, that some Ships that have taken a present gale of a day, by the be-

nefutbereof have performed their Voyage, and returning agains into the Harbour, finding others of

their conforts bound for the same place, and ready at the same time, fill ficking fast at ancor; by leesing the fame or portunitie.

In this absence of our Generall at the Court, there fell out such extreame stormy weather, as that it greatly troubled and puzled our Ships, both in Plimouth Road, and in the Cat Water, informuch that many of their ancors came home, and a Ship of the Reare-Admiralls, of three hundred Tunnes, called the Roe-buck, draue a ground and bulged her felfe, and to became vinferuiceable for that journey, although much paines and care was taken of all hands, and specially by our Vice-Admirall himfelte in his owne person, to have preserved her, During all this time of our abode in Plimouth, (which was fome fix or feuen weekes) we neither found ey-

to ther want or dearth of any manner of victualls, either in the Towne, where our Mariners were Good order daily resident, or in the Countrey, where the Land Army was quartered; nor yet that extreame for prousfood manner of inhaunting the prices of all things vied in London, and in other places of the at Pineauti. Realme, upon the extraordinary affembling of any such great troupes. And withall it is ftrange to fee, how happily that poore corner of England, doth often receive and fustaine fo many Armies and Fleets, as doe there many times meet, without any of those inconveniences or alterations, that vpon the like occasion are found, in many other more rich and fruitfull parts of the Kingdome.

Our Generall (as is aforelaid) having spent now fixe or seven dayes in that icorney to the Court, returned with a refolution to continue the voyage to the Seas, and there (as intelligence 20 fell out) to follow the best courses in spending the rest of the Summer, and the remainder of his victualls; all forts being very forry, that fo great preparations should have veterly qualled without effecting, or attempting fomething of worth. Wee therefore now proposed to our felues, that by tarrying out till the last of October, (for the which time we were victualled after the Land Army was discharged) wee might range the Coast of Spaine, and so doe service in some of the Kings shipping, or else lying in the height betweene the Rocke and the South Cipe, wee might intercept some Indian Fleet or Carrackes, either outwards or homeward s bound, or at the least wee might meete and fight with the Adelantado, who was then faide to bee preparing of a Fleet, and ready to put to the Seas. Besides there was a brute given out, tha our Generall meant to attempt the Grome or Ferrall, and there to diffresse some of the 30 Kings thipping that lay in the Harbour, But what foener pretences and freeches were ginen out for that matter; both our Generall, and the wifest of his Counfell of Warre, did well enough knows. that the Groyne or Ferrall were then no morfells fit for our monthes, our Forces being fo abated, and shole places to well marned and promided for, by our long delayes and impediments, befides there was no likelibood; that wee would ener ingage so many of her Maiesties best Ships, within the circuit and mercy of those Harbours, upon so great disaduantage and hazard, as they must have admentured in doing any good on any of them , as they were then farnished. But wee daily see that it is Pretenant the manner and falhion of great Estates and Commaunders in the Wars, to give out and pretend mane shines, that indeed they intend not, as well to make their names the more famous and terrible, as also many times to amaze the world with false Alarums, thereby either to hold their true purposes

the more secret, or at least to give them the better speed and passage, by diverting the Enemyes. A custome neither new nor visuall : and therefore not repeated as any extraordinary observation. In this fore all things being ordered and repaired, and our Generall returned with full Commiftion and retolution to proceed : his Lordship in stead of the Merehoneur (which was to weakened and Jufabled, as that thee could not goe forth againe this journey) thipped himfelfe in the Dewrepulle, which was Vice-Admirall, and our Vice-Admirall tooke vnto himfelfe the Lion. in liew of the other. And on Wednesday, being the seuenteenth of August, 1597, a little before funne fetting, wee waved our Ancors, and fet fayle, but with much labour got out of Plamonth Road, being forced to vie our Tow-boates, to fet vs cleere of the Harbour, the winde being somewhat flacke and scant. Notwithstanding, afterwards a sea-boord, wee finding the weather more facourable, held our course for the North Cape, and the three and twentieth of Se August, wee fell athwart the Bay of Alchaster, and at last bare full in with it. The which Bay of Alchaster,

courie, the Matter of our Ship (called Broadebant) much diffiked, thinking it very inconvenient forand perillous for io great a Fleet, fo wilfully to be imbayed upon an Enemies Coalt, but yet followed the Generalls courfe. The foure and twentieth of the same moneth, being Bartholmen day, wee met a foule storme

in that Bay, most extreamly violene for the time, but lasted not aboue fine or fixe houres. In which fforme the S. Matthew, whereof Sir George Carew, Mafter of the Ordnance, was Captaine Si Matthew two houres before day falling into an head Sea, having her Spright-fayle out, brake over-boord diffrested. her Bolt-spright, and Fore-mail close to the Partners, which for the Ships safetie was cut from 60 her fide: In the Fore-top foure Mariners were drowned, keeping their watch there, and the fall of the Masta broke two Ancors, and carried the third into the Sea, upon which disafter (according to the manner of the Sea) some Ordnance was discharged, and many Lanternes hanged

vpon the shrowdes, to give notice of her distresse in the night. But after day light, the Garland (whereof the Earle of Southampton was Captaine) drew neere to her fuccour, who beholding

Zzzzzzz

Small time

ces purfe.

Still croffed.

Lord Rich de-

Land Army

parte h.

Sir Gerree Can rems refolution

with griefe, the miferable estate that this Ship was in, and likely to bee worse, for that her Mayne Mast, with the Ships rowling had loolened it felfe in the Partners, and in danger to breake in the flep (which if it had done, it would prefently have funke her.) The Earle, though hee was not able to take all the men out of her, into his owne Ship, being in number about feuen hundred persons, yet hee was destrous and carefull to preserve as many as hee might. And to that end fent his Pinnace to Sir George Carew, praying him, and as many as hee would felect of his Company to come vnto him : which noble offer of his Lordhip, the Mafter of the Ordnance (as hee had reason) thantully received ; but having a more tender care of the loffe of his Honour, then of the hazard of his life, would not torfake the Ship, but made election rather, to run the fortune of the rest of his company, then to prounde for the IO particular fafetie of himfelfe, and some other Captaines, and Gentleman of good qualitie. whereof hee had store. This answere, being returned, the Earle was yet vintatisfied, and being defirous to faue as many as his Ship could well receive, and especially those of the Better fort, fent his Pinnace to the Saint Matthew againe, perswading them not wiscully to lofe themselues. But the Captaine perseuered in his former resolution ; and when fome gallant men of his company would gladly have taken the Earles offer, and have left their conforts to their fortune, Sir George Carem would in no wife futfer a man to depart, because it should bee no discomfore to the rest, but openly protested, that both hee. they, and the Ship, would altogether runne on fortune. Whereupon the Earle, feeing that his flaying longer with the Saint Matthew, could in no fort give her men reliefe, and tearing by flay- 20 ing too long, to be farre ingaged in the Bay of Alchafter, and to look his Admirall, followed These brane resolutions have beene also vsed heretosore oftentimes, by such as have comman-

ded in the Royall Ships, and sometimes by the Admiralls themselves. And it is well knowne to

Ed. E. of Lincolne High Admirall.

many Sea-men lining at this day, that Edward, Earle of Lincolne, High Admirall of England, a valiant man , and worthy Gentleman , in the time of Queene Elizabeth, being in fernice on the Narrow Seas, with her Royall Nanie, chanced in a tempest to fall with his Ship athwart a fand, whereby free was in great danger to bee bulged and lost; whereupon the Captaine and Master of the Ship, persuaded him in that extreamitie and danger, to take the benefit of his Pinnace, and save himselfe aboord the next of the Fleet. But the Earle, according to his honourable mind, spenly vowed and protested, that no danger should cause him to leave his company in distresse, that for his love had followed bim to the Seas : Besides, Said bee, I benour the Queene my Mistreffe so much, to bring ber word that I have faued my felfe, and lost ber Ship; and therefore let vs do our best to faue alt gether; for at this banquet wee will all drinke of one cup. Wherein, as bee gane bimselfe great glory and reputation so it seemed, that fortune fauoured bis vertue and courage; for in the end, with diligence and lubour be-Audaces fortuyoud all hope, the Ship came safe off. These extreamities and hazards on the Sea, bring to my minde an accident worth; the relating, and a piece of fernice not emprofitable for Sea-men in like cales to bee sho ferned; and this it is. In the Queenes raigne, about the time that the Pope and the King of Spaine, fent forces into Ireland to and the Earls of Delmond, who then rebelled in Munker, there was Sir Idm Partot, fent to the Seas a Fleet of her Maieftier Ships , whereof Sir Iohn Partot was Admirall, in the 40 Reuenge, and Sir William Gorges, my Father, in the Dread-naught Vice-Admirall; who when they had performed their service on the Coast of Ireland, and other places, in their returne home-Sir W. Gorges. Drinalla Picat, wards, the Vice-Admirallebanced to take an English Pirate, whose name was Derivall, a very valtant and skilfull Mariner. This Derivall, the Admiral tooke aboord his owne Ship, and kept him ner thenman. prifoner in the Bilbowes. But fo it fortuned, that a great forme arising in the Narrow Seas, the Fleet was scattered, and Sir Iolin Parrats Shippe raune upon a Sand, where, a good time lice did dangerousty beate, having strucken all his Sayles, and with every Billow was like to bee bulged. And in this desperate extremitie they saw no other way left, but bow they might with Boates, and Rafts faue the men, and for sake the Shippe; some being of one opinion, and some of another, as mirall, that hee knew well the lying of that Land, and would direct them a way how to fame the

bope or despaire led them. This Derivall being then prisoner in the Bilbowes, fent word to the Ad-Ship and all the company, if hee would promise him on his Faith, and Honow, to eet his Pardon when hee came home in recompence thereof. The Admirall willingly accepted the profer, and ingazed his Faith for the performance of his demand, and taking turn out of the Bilbowes, had him before the first himselfe. Whereanto Detituall answered. In hope you will save my life, according to your word and Faub given, I will (by Gods belpe) save all yours : but if I shounds otherwise, I had rather here drowne with so good company, then bee hanged at home alone. The Admirall hidde him not doubt st, but follow bis bufinesse. is hereupon Derius presently commanded the Master and Mariners, to horse up all their Sayles they could make, to the very Bats end, which was cleane contrary to that they bad done before. (for fearing the mighty winds , they had strooke all their sayles , and so liv thumping on 60 the Sands) but now the firong gale haung filled all their fayles, fill as the billow role, it draue the Ship forwards, and so in four eor five shounds, being driven with the violence of the windes and the wants, with his firrages be cut cleane through and athwart the Sand, and floated into the Sea. This was a di fortaleremed e for a di fortale danger; for if bee had not vied the benefit of her fajles, and curried

ker ashwart (the Ship being a strong built vessell) shee would fill base layer sumbling on the Sand, and at last broken her (elfe. Notwithstanding this good service done by Detiuall, when bee came home, his reward was an halter, his offence being remembred, and his defert forgotten: and get the Admiral did Derisellhinhis best to fane bim according to bis promife. But furely (in my poore opinion) in (nch cases a State frould acd against dos well, for examples fake, and for incouragement of others, to take notice of fuch extraordinary feruices. and to remember that vertue deferues no leffe to bee cherified, then vice to be chaftifed, and that to Advice. whom a State committeeth the trust or considence of a Generalls or Admiralls place, st should also allow bim the honor, to make good his word for any thing, that concernes the advancement of the fernice wherewith her is put in trust.

But I will returne againe to Sir George Caren , whom we left tottering in his wrackt Ship, and in a great storme, for I have occasion here to stand somewhat upon the Relation of his hard aduentures after his difatter , because I have heard it by many that were with him in the Ship, often, and at large discoursed of; and himselse being a princical Officer in the Action, fhipt in a vessell of great charge, it cannot bee reputed as a digression, or impertment from the matter, for small is the reward of those that so resolutely engage, and expose their lives for the feruice of their Prince and Countrey, if they should not bee allowed the comfort of honourable Story of the memory. After the departure of the Earle of Southampton from the S. Mathew, as aforefaid, ma- S. Mathew, ny Counfells in this diffressed Ship were held for the cutting of her Mayne Mail ouer-board, which with rowling was growne at last to be so loofe, as that it was continually seared that it

would breake in the Stop, and when the Carpenters were ready to begin that worke, the fforme ceased, and the Seas began to calme, wherein finding comfort, they made of a space top Matt a lury Fore-mast, and the Pinnace sayle served for a Fore-sayle. In this pittifull estate the Ship still running before the winde, which shee could not otherwise doe by reason of her small Fore-sayle, within foure dayes after by the goodnesse of God, came rafely to an anchor at the Ile of Saint Martreines in France, where Sir George Carew made all the meanes hee might to get a new Mait, whereby hee might follow the Fleet. But vpon S. Matthew all that Coast hee could not prouide himselfe of any to fit to great a Gallyon. And therefore brough home of necessitie having setled his Mayne-matt, he returned for England, and within few dayes arriued in the Hauen of Portimouth.

Hee thus having brought the Saint Mathen (beyond all hope) fafe within a good Harbour, not any thing dilamayd with past perills , presently dispatched Captain Francis Slingsby in post C.Fr.Slingsby. to the Court, to aduertife the Lords of her Maiesties Councell, of the misfortunes which had befalne him, and there with all humbly defired that he might be permitted to take her Marefres thip Sit Garee Cacalled the Adventure, which was then in that Harbour, and inher to follow the Fleet, which being granted he shipped himsel'e in her, and according to the instructions (which were delivered tures with to every Captaine of the Fleet) hee fought for the Admirall at the Groyne, which was the first Aquenture, Randenous let downe in the instructions aforesaid, from thence hee made to the Rocke, and not finding the Fleet at either of these places, he failed to the Cape Saint Pincent, where it was resolved by the Lord Admirall and Councell of the Warre to stand off and on, and to attend the comming home of the West Inder Fleet. There hee had intelligence by a small man of Warre of

Plemonth, that the Generali with the whole Fleet was at the Hands of the Afores, whereunto he directeth his courte. And when hee was (as hee efteemed) within one hundred leagues of the Tercora, he had intelligence by another fmall man of Warre, in the which a man of Sir William Brookes was Captaine, that followed the Fleet for purchase, that the Lord Generall in his opinion was at that time vpon the Coast of England, for hee had left the Hands fourteene daies before the Aduenture, and he did meet ; vpon which intelligence he changed his course for England. And not farre from Vihent in the night, hee fell into the middelt of a great Spanift Fleet, Spanift Fleet, which had bin with the Adelantado vpon the Coast of England, & then homeward bound; but the night being fformy, he escaped that perill, and yet not without great danger. For one of the Spanis Gallions which was supposed to bee the Admirall (for shee carried a mightie Lanthorne in her Poope) passed so neere to the Adventure, that their Mayne-yards in the end were

foule one of the other, so as they hardly augyded their stemming of their Ships, which in all likelihood must have funke one, or both. With this storme the Adnessare was forced into Ireland, into Corke Hauen in Munster, where hee repaired his Ship of certaine leakes thee had, and also corke H. uen; mended her Mayne Matt, which was strangely shinered with a whirlewind. And then putting to

Sea againe for England, a little before day, in a fforme the Ship was driven vpon the lee shoare Dangerby within Beach; in Suffex; and not being able to double that head-land, in the endeauouring wher- from e.

Rockes, they came to an anchor, every Billow overwalking the Ships head, that neither by pum-60 ping, nor lading out of the water, they were able to free her : and the men in her to tired with labour, as no hope of safetie was left. The last remedy was to cut all the Masts and Tackle ouerboord, which lightened the Ship, and by that meanes shee was preferred. After thirtie houres of this extreme perill, the ftorme cealed, and so by Gods fauour with a lury Mast, which was made of the Boat Matt, and the Boat Sayle, having no Matt nor anchor left but one, he arri-

of all the Sayles, being by violence of weather rent from the yards, to auoid running upon the

Zzzzzzz 2

ued youn Allbollenday in the Downes, beyond all expectation of the Masters and Mariners, who

made no other reckoning then to be loft.

And thele were the accidents that separated Sir George Carem from the Fleet, in the huge ftormes on Bartholmew day, in the Bay of Alchafber, as aforesaid. In which ftorme the Saint Andrew at that time spent her mayne top Mait, and lost we for three or foure dayes, but all the rest of

the Fleet, (except our Ships, which carried the Low-Country Souldiers) kept together in the Bay. And io many as came to vs after at the Rocke, were beaten also from the Admiral in that Bay, and fo were many other Ships, which found vs after at the Rocke, to the number of thirty and odde Contle of the fayle. Whereupon a rumour was afterward raifed, that the Reare-Admirall was gone away with thirty fayle from the Fleet, to the ouerthrow of the intended feruice. Our Admirall fill bare in Io with the Land, & the most part of the Fleet followed the same course. The next day we made the high Land of Portugal, and within some three houres after, Cape Prior, where our Admirall with divers other of the Fleet, did beare in so close aboord the shore, as that all the Country over began to kindle fires. The which manner of disconering our selwes (as I do remember) was much noted by divers good Souldiers, as well by Sea, as Land : for indeed it was reputed no great policie, nor discretion in vs. to runin so close aboard the shoare, if we had any secret or sudden exploit to performe on that Coast, as it was Brau dos often pretended. For that Branado of ours, ded but give them more marking to provide for themselves, and to prevolcalonable. went vs. And I baue observed that those braning bumours, have of late yeeres been the bindrance, and loffe of many good fortunes, as well in Sir Francis Drake bis two last Voyages to the Indies, and Sir John Norris in bis to Lisbon, by staying at the Groyne, as also in others, &c. Towards the enening, we pur roome agains from the Coast, and beat up and downe in the Bay

to free vs from thence, expecting a wind wherewith to double the North Cape, which, within two or three dayes wee had, and so passed along within ten leagues of the Coast by Ferrall, the Grone, and Cape Bealins, and io weathered the North Cape. And as the Fleet together was paffing along towards the South, almost as farre as the Iles of Bayon, our Ship (the Wastinte) being then a middeft them all, on the feuen and twentieth of August, broke her mayne Yard in funder in the very middeit by the Parrell. Whereupon we prefently discharged a Peece of Ordnance. and made our misfortune knowne to our Admirall, who himselfe spake with vs, and also at that time had a great leake broken out vpon his owne Ship. And there by his order and permission we were willed to repaire our mayne Yard the best were could , and vitill it were finished in 30 that birth to goe on with our Fore-fayle towardes the Rocke before the winde, whiles in towardes the Coast, and so, wee there to ply up and hee with the Fleet would downe about the height of the Rocke, vntill his Lordship came vnto vs, or during the dayes limited in the generall inftructions, and thence to passe onwards to the South Cape, and there to remaine according to the faid directions. And yet wee did not for two dayes after depare, though to our great difeafe ; for wee wallowed in the trough of the Sea, and rowled fo extreamely, as that wee had like to have loft our mayne Mast alio. After this order giuen, wee presently tooke adunce the best wee could, and set our hands together for the repayring and finishing of our mayne Yard, being broken in the Parrell, a very euill place to amend : wherein that night wee could doe little good , more then to free the Sayles and Tackle 40 from it. Notwithstanding the very next morning the Admirall fent a commandement to vs, that wee should presently attend him with all speed, for that hee meant to put in with the Land : The which wee were altogether viable to performe, our mayne Yard being in funder, and impossible it was so suddenly in one night to repayreit, and without it, wee were not able to worke vpon a wind, (as all Mariners know) having but our Fore-fayle and Mizen, and the winde almost of the Land, so as it had beene but an idle labour, for the more we striued, the faster wee fell off. Besides, if wee could have layd the Land with that fayle, it had beene a madnesse to put our selues vpon the Enemies Coast in that estate, for if the wind had then changed to the West, we wanting all our mayne Sayles, must have yeelded or perished So as in regard of this necessitie, we did for two daies, as aforesaid ply vp and down, 50 untill wee had repaired our Yard, and fitted our fayles votoit, being now fine foot shorter then

it was before.

Vice-Admirals

Whilest wee were thus distressed on our Enemies Coast, Sir William Brooke, Captaine of the Dread nought came vnto vs and tarried with vs, out of his owne charitie and friendly disposition, for there were no directions (that wee heard of) given to any to accompany vs in that diffresses Onely the Vice-Admirall (of his owne noble care) very kindly and honourably hayled vs, and offered what comfort and helpe hee could give vs; some others afterwards did the like. But we hauing yeelded due thankes to the Vice-Admirall for such his noble care and curtesie desired no more company, but wished all others of our Squadron to repaire vnto the Admirall, contenting our selves with Sir William Brooke in the Dread-naught, and two or three other small men of our 60 owne Squadron, which of their owne accord followed vs. Neither did we in all this time intreat the company of any one Ship more to stay with vs, albeit the contrary was very fallly suggested and reported in a strange manner of phrase, which was, that the Reare-Admirall vpon the breaking of his Mayne-yard, willed all his Squadron and those that loued him to keepe him

company, and not to follow the Admirall. But as this was a monitrous vintruth, raifed out of malice to the Reare-Admirall, thereby to inuegle the Admirall against him; so the authors were after wards a hamed of their impudent flander, when the truth was made manifest at our meeting againe with the Admirall and the Fleet at the Hands of Afores:

As foone as wee had mended our Maine-yard, wee bare in with the Coaff, making all the inquiry that we could for our Admirall and the Fleet, but could not have any intelligence of them. Whereupon cafting many conjectures, weefent a small Man into the Iles of Baron, but could learne no newes of him there. Then wee thought verily that hee would hold on his courte for the South-Cape according to the generall instructions, we well knowing that hee could not then To put in for Ferrall or the Grome (as was afterward colourably fuggested) the wind being flat against him , and our whole Fleet having over-shot it neere twentie leagues before that our Yard was broken; and therefore it was rather a pretence to seeme desirous to undertake it, then that there was any possibilitie to performe it. For besides that weehad overshot it, and the wind contrary, to as we could not recouer it again, both those Ships were wanting which were chiefly defigured to bee adventured in that feruice, namely the Saint Andrew and the Saint Mathew, two S. Mathew and huge Gallions of the King of Spaines, that were but the yeere before taken at the facke of Cales, S. Andrew aand onely faued of fortie or fiftie faile that were then beaten and burnt to affres. Vpon their reas ken at cadize fons wee shaped our course for the Rocke, plying vp and downe in that height for a few dayes. In which time wee gaue chase to divers Spanish ships which wee beate into Cast-keyes, and caused 20 some of them to runne on ground, wee being so neere Cast-keper as that we could number divers

tall ships that road there under the Fort. Here wee housely expected our Admirall, being the very appointed place for a Randeuous to all the Fleet, and would gladly have met with him, being of our felues but a weake force to lye on that Coaft, if the Spanish Armado had beeue abroads as wee were to suspect it was, or in a readinesse at the least, And therefore it was fouly rallihed or mistaken of those that gaue it out, and carryed the newes into England, that wee had of purpose left and lost our Admirall to range the Coast alone at our pleasures. For being no stronger then wee were, and lying as wee did in the height that was appointed by the generall instructions to the whole Fleet, it was not to be imagined in any fende or reason, that wee defired to leave or lose the Fleet upon the breaking of our Maine-yard to neere the Coast of Spaine, and 30 the Adelantadoes Forces then bruted to bee abroad. But indeed our Reare-Admirall commanded all our Squadron to follow the Generall, because he pretended to aduenture your the Groine. Yet we hoped, and so hee promised, that either hee would come off to vs againe where wee lay, or find vs without faile at the Rocke, but did neither : for there were three places of our Randenous appointed, if any separation happened. The first at the North Cape and failing there, then at the Rocke, and failing there, then at the South Cape. Now when all fuch thips as were fundred by tempeft in the Bay of Alcafber, failed of their Admiral at the North Cape, they then fought him at the Rock, where they found the Reare-admiral, who held them altogether, and brought them to the Generall at the Hands; elfe had they all returned home, after they had miffed of some Admis rall to command them at the third and last place of meeting ; for none of our Fleet went for 40 farre to the Southward.

Whilest wee thus stayed about the Rockes the Caruells of Lisbone, and of the parts thereabouts? would daily come twarming about vs like Butter-flyes, so neere, as that we might cast a stone into some of them, and yet could wee neuer catch any one of them, so yare and nimble they are. But if wee would have bestowed any musket or great shot on such bables, wee might peraduenture have killed some of their men, or sunke some of them, which wee forbare in hope to draw them to vs oftner, and then if any calme had happened we might have taken them with our Boars and by them gotten some Intelligence. At the same time also there came to the Rocke necre thirtie faile of thips of our owne Victuallers and Transporters, amongst whom was Captain Sidner, Captaine White, Captain Berry, and others, some of whom wee tooke into vs out of their owne weake thips; who having loft the Generall in the Bay of Alcafer, in the storme aforesaid, love ht him first at the North Cape; and missing him there, came to the Rocke, according to the generall inthructions, and they by chance finding the Reare-Admiral at the Rocke, were held together till wee either found or heard from the Generall. After we had thus plied vp and downe about the height of the Rocke, and yet determined at last to have passed on for the South Cape, there came

athwart vs a small Barke of England, with whom wee communed, inquiring what newes in the South parts where they had beene. They told vs, that they had lately met a Man of Warre bound tor England, that had taken an Indian man, naming the Captaine, who (as they faid) informed Falle inte fithem for certaine that the Atlantado was gone for the Ilands, to weft home the Indian Fleet. Entiffeman, This report seemed to carry with it good likelihood of truth, for we beard before that the Atlantado was

60 preparing to the Seas, and also were certain, that both the King of Spaine his Treasure, and other Indian Fleets were to come home that yeere. Besides, we did not suspect that one of our owne Country would be so lend, or durst presume to infurme her Maiesties Naue, with a meere false coyned suggestion, as indeed this was found to be afterward. For such a dishonest treacherous part may sometimes turne to a great inconnensence, in discriting a whole Fleet by a false intelligence, and is a point better fitting a

Zzzzzzz z

Trastor then a true man, and well deserves b severe and publike punishment for an example to all other. For although (sa-furing men will now and then (as doe Poets and Painters) take liberty to fabilitetic is no good selling nor dalying with Princes affaires in that fort, and therefore if I could call to mind the Captaine or Masters name, surely I would doe them the curtesie now to remember them.

Hereupon our Reare-Admirall thinking it very require, and his dutie to informe our Admirall of this aduertifement as foone as might bee, ernoftly required the fame Man to ply un towards the North-Cape, all along the Coatt as well as he could, (because it lay in his way homewards bound) to find out our Fleet, & to informe our Admiral of this Intelligence. But he answered in the hearing of all the company, that the Captaine that had taken this Indian. Prize, had already fent the Admirall a Letter to the fame effect. Yet the Reare-Admirall for the more furetie 10 (doubting that a Letter might mifcarry, or that no such Letter might bee fent, being but an excule of this Man to put off the trouble of tecking out our Fleet, being a matter of great importance) commanded one of his small Men (that at that time followed vs) to deliner the same adpertifement to our Admirall, as hee had received it by word of mouth; and to vie all diligence to feeke him, and the Fleet, and to deliver the report truly in manner as it was related, and withall to fignifie vatolis Lordflip, that wee there attended him in that height according to the directions, and so would observe all places and times appointed, and that in such fort his Lordship should be fure to heare of vs, vpon any occasion to wait on him. This message, and Messenger could fufficiently witnesse, that we had no intent nor defire to abandon the Fleet, or to sequester our felies, being at the placefet downe in the generall inftructions. This small Man that had this 20 message in charge to deliuer to his Lordship, the next day (by good hap) found out the Fleet, and youn delivery of this newes, within two dayes after, our Reare-Admirall received two feuerall Letters to one effect from the Admirall one after another. First somewhat taxing him for not writing, then for his absence and withal requiring him presently to follow him to the Ilands, whether he faid he would (by Gods helpe) halten to find the Adelantado, not doubting but to giue his Meftreffe a better account of that feruice, then the Adelantado fhould yeeld his Mafter: fo, or much to that effect the Letters went, for I my felle read them (with the Reare-Admirall his permission) and therefore can truly report their contents.

Voon this fuldaine and itrict meffage, we presently altered our determination from going to

yard began againe to cracke, infomuch that wee were interced to strengthen it with more fishing. And as commonly misfortunes never come alone, so in the necke of this trouble, our Mayn-mait

began to thrinke alto, i pringing great flawes in diners places, in fo much that at laftiwe greatly

doubted with every high blatt or wind, that it would have beene blowne over-boord. This fudden disatter much troubled vs, and the more, to thinke what vnequall constructions would be made

thereof. Wee acquainted all the rest of our conforts with this late befallnemischiefe, and defired

vie all our best means to come speedily after, desiring him, and all the rest to hast to our Admiral,

and to fignifie our misfortunes, and withat to make the more speed, for that if the Adelantado were

at the Ilands, our Admirals Forces would be wel helped by their companies, & fo for a few hours,

Sir William Brooke in the Dread naught to carry the light for all the company feeing that curihip 40 was to defective that we must needs stay to fee if we could make the Mast feruiceable, but would

the South-Cape to haft to the Hands, and the fore we prefently gave notice to Sir William Brooke 20 and the rest of our conforts, of our Admirall his Letters, and what way he meant to take, and so instantly without any further delay, we shaped our course for the Ilands. But in this passage of

They shave for the Hands, ours towards the Hands, as weel had a franke wind, to met wee with other lets. For our Maine-

Leriers from

Sep. 8. They

Note for the

we and our conforts parted, only we retained two little small Men with vs for our better comfort. Yet not with flanding this order and direction given, so great were our delires to go on, & our labor fuch, as that the same night wee had new fined our crased Maine-mail with a spare Maine top Maft that lay by vs, and then to plied our fayles as that the next day towards the evening, wee ouercooke Sir William Brooke againe, and the rest of our conforts halting towards the llands as was directed. And on the eight of September, in the yeere 1 97, being Thursday, wee made the lle 50 cailed the Tercera, and weathered it to the North-west; where we met with an English Merchant that came from Saint Michaels, and had layen trading about those Handssome fix weekes together, but could not tell waany ne wes of our Admirall and the Fleet, albeit they were paffed by but two dayes before. Which showes how easie a matter it is for shipping to passe by amongst those llands unscene, and bow difficult it is to find out such Ships among those clauds, as would helter themselves from men of Warre, and court not to becmet withall, seeing that to great a Flee: could passe by unscene or the beard of, by one that came iust from the Hands, at the same time that our Generall came thither. And therefore it is a necessary observation for all such men of warre, as would meet or intercept any signing, that dith touch at thise llands, or do come from thence to keep in the maine fea, and fo to attend their comming forth, and not to puzzle themselves with running in amongst those llands to seeke for purchase, ex- 60 cept they have others of their conforts lying in the Sea at the recent, if they chance to flip by, which is eastlidone. This Merchant informed vs of certaine West Indian men, and two Carracks, that a month before had touched there, bound for Spaine. And by this Merchant wee wrote into Englandiowaffaires went. In patting thus onwards we discoursed Saint Georges Hands, and there we

diffractional two of our final men, with charge to fearch about the Islands for our Fleete, and to enforme our Admirall, that we were going for Flores, and Cuerwos, in hope to meete him there. withall willing those imall men to come thirher vnto vs. And yet I remember many in our Ship were doubtfull, and laid great wagers, that our Fleet was not yet come to the Itlands, for that this Merchant could make no report thereof.

Whileft we were before Saine Garges, we were very much becalmed for a day or two, and the weather extreamely hot, infomuch as the winde could not beare the fartes from the maffex. bus were faine to hull in the Sea, to our great ducoutentment, that before had yield fisch great diligence and hafte to meete with our Admirall, and the rest of the Fleete. Notwithstanding

to the winde began againe to be favourable, and to fetting forwards, the next of the Hands that we made, were Grasiofa, Pyke, and Fayall, And as we ranged by Gratiofa, on the tenth of September, about twelve a clocke at night, we faw a large and perfect Kainbow by the Moone light, in the bigneffe and Rainbowe by forme of all other Rainbowes, but in colour much differing, for it was more whitesh, but chiefly inclining Moonlight dito the colour of the flame of fire. Thus made us expell some extruordinary tempessuas meather, but in-from these or deede it fell out afterward to be very calme and hot. This Rainbow by the Moone light I doe the rather the Sunne. take occasion to note : for that I remember that Plinic in his natural! History of the world , speaking of Meteors, denietis any Rainbow to be feene, but opposite to the Sunne, and neuer in the night feason: and yet (faith be) Atiltotle reported for a raritie, that in bu time there was a Ruinbow frene by micht but withall affirmeth, that is could not be but at the full of the Moone. But in thefe parts they are very or-

20 dinary, as well when the Moone is not at the full as otherwise, which maketh me to thinke; that there !land were never knowne to the Greekes, nor to the Roman, nor that those former ages did truely conceine or know many things, that in the le latter times have ben discovered. For although Salomon faith that nothing is now under the Sunne (which ne doubt is malt true for all things have had their beine fince the first Creation) yet all things have not bin known in all places, and to all men alike. But as the long lives of men in the first ness (no doubt made their hummledes the ereater by the benefit of long observatson : fo againe, we in thefe latter dayes by the tradition of their knowledge, left onto us, and also by the difconery of those things which time bath renealed, have found out many secrets to them unknowne. But

The same night by the light of the Moone (which was then almost fallen with the Horison) 30 we might effic certaine ia les passing towards the Eastwards of Gratiofa; whereupon we gave order that a couple of our imali men should follow, and give them chate, as we in the Waltfprehe likewife did, and hone out two lights to caufe Sir William Brooke in the Dread-naught, and the reft of our conforts, to hold the fame course with vs , but wee were followed by none of them. which when we perceived, and the Moone-light being now by the earth fo shaddowed from vs. as that we could hold no longer fight of these failes (which had thrust themselves in amongst the Islands) we cast about, and held on our former courfe, But by this chasing for this lettle time (euen as we suspected) we lost the Dread-nangbt, and most of our conforts, and neuer faw them after, votill we met them with our Admirall, and the rest of our Fleete at Flores; whither with foant windes we came, on the foureteenth of September, and then discouered all our Fleete. But They come to

40 at the first making of them, we stood somewhat doubtfull, whether it was our owne, or the Span the Floria nil Armado, they being as farre from vs. as we were able to ken out of our maine too, and therefore we did full firing to keepe into the weather, in approaching neere voto them, virill at laft, we perfectly made them to be English bottomes. As soone as we were come within two leagues of them, the Seas being very calme, our Reare-admirall, my felfe, and some other Gentlemen of our finip, went aboord our Generall in a Barge, and dined with him, who feemed to be the joy- Entertainment fulleft man buing for our arrivall, protefting, that he neuer beleeved that we would leave him, al- by the General though divers perswaded him the contrary; and acknowledged that hee was forry for a Letter which he had written by Mafter Robert Knolles into England against vs, promising presently to make a dilpatch of purpole, contrary to the former ; having also found soone after by examina-

50 tion, that not any one of these thirtie and odde sales of victuallers, and transporters, which came now with vs., were drawne from him by the Reare-admirall, but that they all came to the Rocke to feeke the Generall, and there by chance found vs , who drew them to the Iffands, much against their defires, being most of them in great diffresse. Afterwards wee enquired abourd our Generall, what had paffed with them fince we departed, upon the breaking of our maine yard, before the Illes of Bayon; and we learned that in all this time, they had done nothing but ranged the Seas to leeke the Adelantado, and were come to the Hands but three dates before vs, where the Gouernours of the Islands of Flores and Cueruss, came to our Generall.

The Inhabitants of which two III and steemed to be but a wretched needle kinde of people, and II his tants of yet as crafty, as bale, and bare. Thefe very tubmifly humbled themfelues vnto our Generall, Flores Cherrot 60 bringing with them Fruites, Hens, and other fre'h victuall, imploring fauour, and mercie at his hands, and that he would vouchfate to give them his fafeguard under his hand, to protect them from the foode, and invation of our men : ailedging for themselves that they were an harm. Life poore people, that gaue offence to none, but divile in Itlands that yeelded comfort and reliefe oftentimes, to all sea-faring men in their long Voyages, betweene the Indies and Christendome,

Entle of ETex behau our to

1950

and were anciently subjects to the Portugals, friends to our Nation, and nothing guiltie of the Hothlitie betweene vs, and the Spaniards, who (as they faid) did viurpe, and tyrannize bothouer the Portugals and them. Our Generall heard, and entertained them, with great curtefie. and told them that he came not to afflict poore men, but was fent by the Queene his Miffris. to by niver and chaffife the intollerable pride and intolencie of the Spanish, whose Indian Gold and riches, were imploied onely to the oppression, and disturbance of divers Christian States and Princes; and these Islands being the chiefe places of retrait and refreshing for his Fleetes, that passed betweene Enrepe and the Indies, were great meanes, and helpes, to further their boundleffe ambition, and twrannie, with other discourse to that effect. And so inquiring of them very precisely, the times. and featons that the Indian Fleetes, both inward, and outward bound, held in paffing by those tea Illands; in conclusion gaue them divers gifts, and his Protection in wrighting vader his hand and feale from the violence of our Forces, which was very respectively observed, even to the value of an Hen, which no man durit take without paying for. Such was the moderation and bountie of this noble Gentleman our Generall, indued with many good gifts, though at the last he failed After we had bin abourd our Generall, and dined with him, he acquainted our reare Admirall

with the many coniectures, and furmifes of our absence, and withall named vnto him some of those men that had taxed him secretly with strange reports, and yet pretended to love him. which he protested (as aforesaid) he never beleeved, but thereby the better observed some mens frandalous, and cankered dispositions. In this fort did our Generall receive and welcome our reare 70 Admirall, with the greatest kindenesse, and inward familiaritie that might be, and all the Gentlemen of his Companie with honorable cuttesie, to the great dillike and hart-burning of some that much enuied that liking, which of his owne disposition, our Generall did beare voto him : For albeit the Earle had many doubts and lealousies buzd into his eares against the other, yet I have often observed, that both in his greatest actions of service, and in his times of chiefest recre-Sir W. Ralei b. ations, he would ever accept of his countell and company, before many others that thought themselves more in his favour. And as touching the Advertisement that was sent into England, from the Illes of Bayon, by Mafter Robert Knolles, in a Pinnace called the Guiana, concerning vs, that were forfaken, and left alone vpon the breaking of our Maine yard : whereupon was pretended that many great exploits should have bin performed vpon the coast of Spaine, if wee had not fal- 30 len from them (as was vntruely fuggefted and reported) his Lordship promised the reare Admirall then, to fend another advertisement, how we were all metagaine, and had bin formerly feuered by misfortunes onely, and not by any wilfull default in the reare Admirall, as was doubteed. And that Aduertisement sent formerly by Master Knolles, we well knew proceeded not out of any particular malice of the Generall to vs, but onely to rake that as a fit excuse to free himfeife from the enterprises of Ferall, or the Groine, which he had promited her Maiestie to vindertake, but faw it impossible to performe, by reason of the former crosses, and our long stay in Plimmonth; and therefore was glad to take the opportunity of any colour to fatisfie her Maiestie, and to discharge himselfe of that burthen, which we did all perceive, and therefore did strive the lesse the publish our Apologies, or to contest with a man of his place and credit, which (though in a 40 right) had bin but booteleffe, and meere folly; and therefore we left him to his best excuse, and our apparant innocencie. And for the more plaine manifesting of the Message, I have thought it not amusse, here to insert the true copie of the Instructions verbatim, that our Generall sent by Master Robert Knolles into England, upon these accidents before the i sles of Bayon.

That we weighing Ancor and fetting faile from the found of Plimmouth, the seventeenth of this moneth of August, having sometimes calmes, but for the most part, Westerly and Northeasterly windes, we fellon thursday, the fine and swenty of this moneth with the Land, which is to the Eastward of the Cape Orcingall, which land we made in the morning about ten of the clocke, and food in with the sboare, till three in the afternoone. Then finding the winde scant to ply to the Southward, I stood all night into the Sea, and the next morning in againe to the Land. By which boords, by reason of the head-sea, and the 50 bare winde, we got nothing. On Friday night I stood off againe to the Sea, and about midnight the winde comming all Northerly, we got a good slant, to lie all along the coast : on Saturday in the morning, I disconcred the Saint Andrew, whom we had loft fight of two or three dayes before. I have with her, and had no sower got her up, but Sir Walter Rawleigh shot off a peece, and game us warning of his being in di-Streffe. I presently bare with him, and found that he had broken his maine yard. Whereupon I willed him to keepe along the coast that birth that he was, will be got in the height of the North Cape, and my feife baning a desperate leake broke out as ener fou fram withall, which I was fame to lye by the lee, and feele, to stop it, which how it held us, you can report: and (God be thanked) that night we onercame it, and stopped it. The next morning we all came to Cape Finiter, facing the Sain: Masthew, who upon breaking of her fore maste went bome : and the Waltipight with whom the Dreadnaught went without flop to 60 the South Cape. This is all that is hapned to me. If her Maiestie aske you, why there was no attempt upon the Fleets at Teral, you may fay, I neither had the Saint Matthew, which was the principall sup for that execution, nor the Saint Andrew, till mine owne hip was almost sunke, and I not able to make faile, till Sir Walter Rawleigh with his owne ship the Dreadnaught, and very neere twenty faile were

cone. Wee are now gone to lye for the Indian Fleete, for by Spaniards wee bane taken, wee finde the Adelantado senot ont to Sea this yeare. Of our successe, ber Masefte shall from time to time be aduertifed : you hall acquaint Maiter Secretarie mith this instruction ; and both to him and all our friends you must excuse our baste.

We being thus met all at Flores, defired our Generall to give vs, and our conforts leaves to water there before we departed thence, as his Lordihip and the rest had done before, which he veelded vnto, and very nobly lent vs his owne long Boate, for our better speede, willing vs there to water, whileft he with the reft of the Fleete, did ply vp and downe to looke out for the Adelantado, or any Indian Fleete, that being the very fit place, and leafon for them. Hereupon whilele to our men and Mariners were prouiding to water, our Reare-admirall, with Sir William Brooke, my felfe, and diners other Gentlemen went ashoare, to stretch our legs in the Isle of Flores, and to refresh our selves with such victuals as we could there get for our monie. And at our first landing there, we met with the Lord Gray, Sir Gylly Merricke, and other Gentlemen, and wee altogether walked a mile or two into the Countrie, and there dined in a little Village, where the barelegged Gouernour caused such things to be brought vnto ws, for our monie, as the Island afforded

In other fort we tooke nothing, which was very faire wars. This Island seemes to be somewhat mountainous, yet having very good store of Fruits, Wheat,

and other Corne. Their Corne they doe all keepe in large hollow vaults within the earth, hauing no other way nor entrance into them, but by a round hole in the top of the vault, onely to big 20 as a man may creepe into it, and when it is closed up with a planke, and ouerstrewed with earth is very hard to be found out by firangers, for the which purpote they are so made, and much like. the Caues in Galcorne, and Languedocke, and fuch as are mentioned by Calar to be viso in offfricke. This Island lies more subject to the invasion of Sea-faring men, then any of the reft; for there all traders of the Indies doe vivally water, and refresh themselves. But here I must not for- A Countilfor get to relate, that before we had our leaue to water, or were departed from the Generall, a Countraking in the fell was called, and holden, for the taking in of fome of the Islands, and an orderly course fer Hands. downe for the same: which was in this fort concluded on: The Admirall and Reare-admirall to undertake Farall; the Lord Thomas Haward Vice-admirall, and the Marshall Vere, to undertake Gratiola: The Lord Mounting, Lieutenant Generall, and Sir Christopher Blum Coronell Gene-30 rall of the Foote to Saint Michaels : and the Netherland Squadron, was quartered to Price, where the greatest flore of Wines doe grow, and therefore would not be taken in ill part of them.as we prefumed. The reason why we resolved to master and waste all these stands was, because is was determined by the Generall to attempt the Tercere it felfe : which enterprise was put off. because the Reare-admirall, and with him twenty or thirty saile were wanting. But being now (contrary to all expectation, and to many mens hopes) arrived, this refolution received a fecond live; but it was first thought necessary to take from them, and to helpe our selues, with all the victuals and other commodities that those Islands could affoord: For the performance of which with the more speede, we divided our selves into soure Companies, as before written: But surely the fortune of those poore wretches was lamentable, that fell into the Flemmings bands; for I thinke 40 no people on the earth, can vie leffe mercy, or greater infolencies then they doe, in all the places that they maister, which are subject to the Spanish Government : and yet I must fay truely for them, that the Spa- Spaniardsenting niards againe have ved fuch tyrannie, and outrage in their iurifdictions over that industrious people, as tie implacable hath well merited their irreconcileable malice, and withall bath coft the Spanish King many millions of Ducates, besides the life of many a prond Castilian, since the Execution of the Counts Egmount and Horne, And it is very admirable to fee what heart and courage those Netherlanders are now growns unto, and how powerfully three or foure little Provinces, doe refilt the forces of that mightie King. that keepes Millaine, Naple-, and Sicill in great bondage, in despight of all the Italians, who doe

nish reake. After this confultation for taking in of the Islands, as aforefaid, and leave given vnto vs, and our conforts to water with all the speede we could, at Flores, we having prepared our Caske, and all things in a readinesse to bring our fresh water aboord, about midnight, being the sixteenth of September, there came vnto vs from our Generall, Captaine Arthur Champernoune, with this meffage; That my Lord Generall was borne up for Fyall, and ment presently to take it in, and therefore willed vs with all speede to follow him instantly, and though wee could not ouertake him, yet at least to finde him there so soone as we could, and the same word was likewise deliuered to Sir William Brooke, and the reit, that lay there to water. And further, our Generall lent vs word, that we should supply all our wants of water, and fresh victuals at Fayall. And this night as we rode at ancer before Flores, we faw another Rainebow, by the Moone light, as before, and afa Rainbow be

thinke themselnes for valour, and for policie the Minions of the Earth, and yet bow their neskes to the Spa-

60 ter the famo manner, which (contrary to Plinies report of Artiforels opinion) was feene, though not at a the Moone. full Moone, for the other was so seene some seven dayes before, in the which space, there could not be two full Moones. Vpon this Meflage brought by Captaine Champernowne we forbare watering, and haited all we could, to weigh our anchors, and to follow our Generall. And therefore gaue a warning peece or two, to our Conforts before wee departed, and afterwards pack don all

the failes we could make to follow our Generall, whom we could not ouertake, nor finde. The next morning we made Fayall, and entred the roade, and there miffed of him also, contrain to our hopes, and to our great discentent. Whereat we could not but greatly maruell, hecause when he fent for vs, he was fix leagues neerer it, then we were, and belides, fet faile towards it fixe or eight hours before vs. Being arrived in the roade, wee beheld before our eyes a very fine Towns, pleasantly seated along it the shoare side : from whence presently voon the fight of our entrance into the roade, they began to packe away with bag, and baggage all they could with carriages of Horles and Carts, Women, Children, Friers, and Nunnes, and fo continued in transporting all vp into the Countrey for two dayes together. There was belides a strong Fort at one end of the Town, and another on the top of a very high Mountain, neere adioyning, by nature very vnaccessible, and steepe, and artificially senced with Flanckers, Rampiers, and Ditch, and in it fix Peeces of great Artillerie, mounted vpon carriages, and two hundred Spaniards in garrison. befue others of the Island. These made certaine shot at our Ships as they anchored in the roade. but did not much harme, and fet vp a great red Auncient for vs to gaze at : Befides, there were prefently fent fix Companies with their Colours, to intrench themselves voon the shoare fide. to impeach our landing : Hereupon our Reare Admirall in his Barge, accompanied with my felfe onely and Captaine Morgan, rowed close aboord the high Fort, and all along it the shoare side, to wards the Towne, to fee what fit place there was to make a diffeent against our Generals comming. From whence we were faluted with divers musker thor; that miffed vs but narrowly by good fortune, for we undifcreetly had with vs neitheir Targets, nor Armors, but wished for them when it was to late. And therefore as well by that experience, as allo by others in the fame insurner. Vnormed rath. that I faw at our landing upon a fortified trench, I faw it to be but an idle and unfermiceable brauery, for men that are to doe feruice, to expose their unarmed bodies and limbs, to the mercy of a Musket, or the pulls of a Pike : whereby they can neither with that abilitie, nor refolution, profecute that they have in hand, nor yet fo well preferme themselves as they ought to doe, for the bettering of their attempts. Besides. out of a Christian regard, they should not desperately cast away themselves, or carelesty this their owne bloud, and the lines of many others, by fuch braning, and fooisft examples. This night as we roade in the Harbour, there fromme about us from the Towne two Portugals that disconcred unto us many things, greatly encouraging us to this exploit. And of this we may bouldly take knowledge, that the Portugals. and Inhabitants of those Islands, doe infinitely bate, and malice the Spaniards, and their Government, and 30 mould (no doubt) free themselves thereof eladir if they were fure to fall under any other Government that were able to protect them from the Spaniards. And therefore if any powerfull Monarch or State did attempt it, they should not be troubled as with a Conquest, for all the Inhabitants would some be persuaded

Speniards baged by the Por-

> to renolt, and take part with the inuaders, for the advancing of that bufine fe. While we thus expected our Generall in vaine (to our no little maruell) that thought he had bin there before vs, according to Captaine Champernonnes report (the winde being as good then for him as for vs) our Reare Admirall called a counfell of many Captaines, and Officers (that were come thither by order) to confult of the taking of the Towne, if our Generall came not, thinking it a great shame and pittie to let slip to faire a pray, so neere at hand, without attemp-. ting it in time, before they had carried all away. Befides a great fcorne and difgrace weefhould 40 doe our felues, to enterprile nothing vpon them that had begun the warres, shooting first at vs as we roade at ancor, and then after their bringing downe to the water fide fo many Auncients, did proudly as it were inuite vs to affaile them, if we durft, having withall, hung out a red Flagge of defiance, from the top of the high Fort. The hope of the wealth of this good Towne, and the ranforming of Houses and Prisoners, together with those brauadoes which they shewed, did so fee on fire all our Mariners and Souldiers, as that they began to mutine, and raile on the Reare Admirall, and at all the Commanders there, taxing them for these delaies, as not during to attempt the taking thereof: Befides, they were the more eagerly fet upon the spoile, and gaining of this Towne, and Fort, for that they faw no great likelihood of benefit by this Voyage but what was gotten ashoare in the Islands. In conclusion, albeit we heard no newes of our Generall in two 50 dayes more expectation, yet at the counfell of Captaines which our Reare Admirall had affembled, some of them varied much from the common defire, and would by no mesnes affent to the landing, without my Lord Generall his knowledge. And of this opinion was Sir Guilly Mericke, Sir Nicholas Parker, and some other Captaines : Our Reare Admirall, with Sir William Brooke, my selie, Sir William Harney, and other Gentlemen, and Commanders of our Reare Admirall his Squairon (called to this confultation) were of a contrary opinion, judging that my Lord Generail would repute vs but Idlers, and Cowards, to Iye fo long, before fo good a Towne, with fo many Ships and men, and to doe nothing in his absence, seeing them hoursly before our eyes, to fait to carry, and packe away their goods and wealth. And this was alford common opinion and bruice, as well of the multitude, as of the Low Countrie Captaines. But yet the violent and earneit 60 periwations of Sir Guille Merricke, did to preuaile with vs, vrging our obedience and duetie to our Generall, as that we staied from the Enterprise at that time, and expected our Generals comming one day longer, especially for that they perswaded vs, it his Loriship came not the next

day, then themselves would also land with vs.

CHAP.14. S.2. Sir G. Meriks indisposition. Spanish Brauade. English landing. 1953

Which when we had also expected in vain and the winde changing somewhat white for that Roade, our Reare Admirall, and disers of his Squadron, and many other of the Ships tollowing hin, wered, and coafted about the point, to the North-west fide of the Island , some soure miles further from the Towne then we were before, and there let fall our ancors, being then a better Roade then the first, as the winde was changed. But Sir Guille Merricke with Iome five or fixe Ships of his contorts, staied still in the first Roade, and would not budge. When we had in this fore changed our Roade, and being now the fourth day of our arrivall before Farall (which was not aboue a daies failing from the place, from whence our Cenerall tent for vs, wee might fee before ve, a very fine and plealant Countrie, full of little Villages, and fruitfull fields : and therefore we in much defired to refresh our selves aland there with victuals, and water, as our Generall had promiled we should doe, when we came to Fajall, and as divers others had done before vs at Flores, and as we had then, but that we were called away to Farall by Captaine Champernownes fodaine millage from the Generall, as was aforesaid. And in truth we were in great want of fresh water, which we had not renued, tince our fetting out from Plimonth. All these occasions confidered, and we being now retired from the Towne and Forts, we all refolued that wee might without offence, with a few of our owne men, goe alhoare, and refresh our felues, and feeke for water : whereupon we manned a Barge, a long Boate, and a Pinnace with three core Muskets, and forty Pikes, rather to guard our felues in our landing, and watering with differetion, then expecting any encounter or reliftance, from the Towne or Forts, on the other fide of the Ifland. But our nmen were no sooner placed in our Boates, and all things ordered, and we ready to put off from the Ships fide, but we might discouer fixe Auncients of foote, and some doten Horiemen comming on a speedy march from the Towne and Forts, directly towards the place where wee were to make our diffeent; for from one fide of the high Fort on the Mountaine, they might also ouerlooke vs, where our ships roade, and discouer all our preparation.

When we had a while admied of this new Branado, that they went about, and faw them fill to come on faster, with so many strong companies of men (or at the least the bodies of men furnihed with womens hearts) and had made luck hafte, as that they posseded themselves of the Trenches and Flankers, where we were to land, and there had placed their Companies, and Collors, attending our approach, as they made shew, by waving their Swords, and displaying their 30 Auncients ingreat brauery (for doubtleffe they thought we feard to land in their faces, because we lay folong before the Town, and neuer attempted any thing, and were fo shrunke aside off; after they had prouoked vs fo with great flot, and many other affronts) we feeing that proportion of an hundred men (prouided onely to guard our watering) to be too few to affault, and win a landing upon fo many, in a place of fo great disadvantage, and yet distaining to goe backe, or make any thew of feare; our Reare Admirall in his Barge rowed to Sir William Brookes Ship, and to Sir William Harneyes, and desired them, and some other Sea Captaines, to accompany him in landing, with fuch men as conveniently they could furnish : For (laid he) feeing these Spaniards and Portugals are to gallant to teeke and follow vs. and to keepe vs from watering, wee will try our

fortunes with them, and either win our landing, or gaine a beating. Sit William Brooke, Sit William Harney, and some others, very willingly affented, and presently there were made ready with shot, and Pike one hundred and fixtie men more in Boates. And after this our Reare Admiral rowing by Captaine Bret, Sidney, White, Berry, and other Captaines of the Low Countrie Souldiers, that were there abroad in other Ships, they all cried out to take them and their companies with them, affuring him, that if he adventured to land with Mariners, and with his owne attendants, without tome Companies of Land Souldiers, hee would receive a ditgrace. He answered, that he durit not take any of my Lord Generall his company of the Low Committies, no knowing in what service he ment to vie them; but he was resolved with the Gentlemen, and company of his owne Squadron, first to make a discent, and then to call them, and fend Boates for them, if he proceeded any further, and that neither my Lord Generall, nor any 50 of his traine, should have caule to be ashamed of vs, for undertaking that in the face of our Enemies, which we durft not follow, and performe. And therefore told those Captaines, that hee would first attempt to win a landing, and then after it they could but second him ashoare with two hundred men more, hee would vindertake to lodge them that night in the Towne, and the next night after in the Forts. These Captaines were all glad of the newes, and promised to come after vs.if we would lend our Boates for them; for most of their Ships had lost their Boates with foule weather.

This order and direction being given, we hasted as fast as our Oares could ply without the company of any Low Countrie Souldiers (being as I faid two hundred and fixty firong, and the enemy more then the double as many) to the landing place which was first guarded with a migh-60 ty ledge of Rockes, some forty paces long into the Sea, and afterwards trenched, and flanked land in. with earth and stone, and onely a narrow lane betweene two wals left for our Entrance. But withall, we caused some of our Pinnaces that carried Ordnance, to lye as close to the shoare as they could, to flinke and beate vpon them in their trenches a little before, and iust as wee made. Helpe by Pinour approach; which we found to good purpose, and as well performed, especially by one Cap-naces.

raine Banker, in a fine Flee Boate of the Flemenift Squadron. But if there had bin but one hundre Low Countrie Spaniards at that defence, it had coft many of our lines, & yet perhaps have milfed our purpoje too: For a small company with any resolution, might have made good that place: against a farre greater force then ours were at that time. But as we made onwards with our Boate. the shot plaied so thicke upon vs, as that in truth the Mariners would scarce come forwards, ha uing the leffer liking to the bufinelle, the neerer they came to it. And in like fort did I fee fome there thaseer, and itand blanke, that before made great shewes, and would gladly be taken for yaliant Leaders : and some of these, our Reare Admirall did not spare to call vpon openly, and rebuke aloud with diffracefull words, feeing their bafeneffe. anke aloud with ungraviture recognizing a Mariners, and as it were a flay among the Mariners, and as it were a flay among the mariners and a supplication and a supplicat

folution. They land.

Flight of the

More active

feete then

bands.

all the Boates, well peceiving that this manner of houering, was both more difgracefull, and also to more vulate, lying to open to the enemies shot (which through feare and amazement the Ma-Sir W.A.hisre- riners, and Rowers, neither observed nor vnderslood) with a loud voice commanded his Watermen to rowe in full upon the Rockes, and bad as many as were not afraid, to follow him : Heremon fome Boates ran in with vs, and out of them there landed Maffer Garret a Pentioner, now Earle of Kildare, a Noble and valiant Gentleman; Sit William Brooke, Sit William Harner, Sit John Scot. Mafter Duke Brooke, Captaine Henry Thinne, Captaine White, Mafter Thomas Rugeway, Mafter Walter Chute, Captaine Arthur Radford, Mafter Henry Allen, Captaine William Mergan. Maiter Charles Mackare, and divers other Gentlemen, whole names I would not omit, if I could call them all to minde, And so clambring over the rockes, and wading through the water, we passed pell mell, with Swords, Shot, and Pikes vpon the narrow Entrance. Whereupon those that were at the defence, after some little retillance, began to fhrinke, and then feeing vs to come faiter on vpon them, fuddenly retiring, cast away their weapons, turned their backes, and fled. and the like did the rest in the higher Trenches, and quickly recoursed the hils, and the woods. being a people very (wife, and nimble of foote; for we could take none of them, but fisch as after veelded vinto vs. And as for their Auncients, we could not recover one, for the Horfemen that they had, carried them cleane away. And in this fort we gained both our landing, and our Enemies Trenches. In which attempt fome few men were drowned, and flaine, divers hurt, and two long Boates bulged, and loit. And after that we faw all things cleare, we affembled our Troopes together, and refreshed ourselucs, with such comfort, as we had there, which done, we sent backe 20 our Boates for those Low Countrie Captaines afterward; who vpon their arrivall congratulated our good fuccesse, in taking to strong a peece of ground, fortified, and guarded with so many men, When these Captaines were come vnto vs, we then tooke our felues to be a prettie Armie, being then in strength to the number of foure hundred and fixtie well armed, and appointed : whereof there were of Captaines and Gentlemen of good fort thirty or forty which gaue great life to

And having done so much already, we then thought it the best way to goe through with the matter, and to prepare the Towne in a readineffe for our Generall, and to make our felnes Butgelfes thereof in the meane feafon, and therefore our Reare Admirall appointed Captaine Bret to vie the Office of Sergeant Major, and gave direction to the other Captaines to advance their Ad Colours, and to call their Companies together, in a readinesse, and so putting our Troopes in order, we marched directly toward the Towne, where by the way, divers of thele lame very Spaniards, and Portugals, that a little before fo braued vs, came and rendred themselves in great humility, with white Napkins on the end of stickes, all whom, wee received, and well intreated, vling some for Guides, and some for our Carriages, and others to tetch vs in fresh Victuals, and Fruites. And it is worth the noting , to jee the farre differing humors, upon the change of Formues, in these Spaniards, and Portugals. For where they conquer or command, no people are so proud, and in-Portugall final folent, and when they are once mastered, and subdued, no Nation of the world to bate, or swiler of service lers of Fortun crouching, and observance, as though on a sodaine Nature had framed them in a new mould, so soone in an instant will they fall from someraigntie to slanery. And surely (at home) they are in generall but a 50 baggage people, timorous, and very unwarlike. As we have well experienced by feuerall invasions, whereof one Arms was conducted by Sir Iohn Norris, and Sir Francis Drake to Lisbona, and the other by the Earle of Ellex, and the Lord Admirall Howard to Cadis, without any relistance, encounter in the field, or flow of affayling our forces by battaile, all the while we stated there. But afterwards with a little bardening, and kartening in the Warres, wee fee them proue very brane, and valiant

ex-reame in Batremes.

Portugals yeeld

Spaniards and

themiclues.

And are not other Nations fo? ! fus grom> tos facit.

Souldiers. This Towne was some soure miles from this landing place, and all the Country in which wee marched very champion, with precey little rifing hils, and all the fields over full of Mellons, Potatoes, and other Fruites. Betweene vs, and the Towne, was this high Fort, whereof I spake before, and that other Fort at the end of the Towne : By thefe two we were refolued to palle, the co better thereby to discouer and observe their strength, and situation : although there was another way that led to the Towne, fome two miles further about, which we tooke not. But our retolution was the next morning to goe in hand with these Forts, which now we could not performe, the day being too far spent, and our men already overwearied with the last works, togeCHAP. 14 S.2. Buckle-proofe. Difordered march, Garrison Souldiers not best. 1055

ther with a long march, and extreame hot weather, belides want of victuals. And therefore for that night we ment onely, either by faire or foule meanes to possesse our selucs of the Towne, and there to lodge, and fo to content our felues, as having performed already, a fufficient daies worke. But in our march, as we approached neere the high Fort (by which of necessitie we were now to paffe) they did very fiercely beate on vs both with great and finall thot, hurting divers, and killing tome of our people. Among ft others I faw a very strange accident happen to Captaine William Morgan, by whom my felfe at that time flood, when from the Fort he received vpon a round buckle or his girdle, just in the forepart, a Musket shot, that brused all his belly blacke, in a round Strange acciipot, and battered the Bullet flat at his feete, but did him no other hurt. Hee was in his doublet dent of a show and hole without any Armour, or Target, for the which a little before I found fault with him, and his answere to me was, that his fieth was of the Musket proofe, as indeede it after proued, with the helpe of a buckle of a Spanish girdle, and good fortune belides, which in the common oni-

nion favoureth the valiant. In this approaching towards the Fort, our Reare Admiral accompanied with divers other Gentlemen of the best fort, to the number of forty, in the head of all the Troopes, with his leading staffe, and no other Armour then his Collar (a brauery in a chiefe Commander not to be commen- Reare Admira) ded) led on the Company with fost march, full in the face of the Fort, descending downe a little taxed, hill, whileft with their great Ordnance, and Musketteir, we were very shrewdly petted. But he, with this little Vauntguard was no fooner part, and entred under the couert of cheir trenches,

and barricadoes, that were at the foote of this steepe hill, but the maine body of our little Atmie, that a while marched in good order, began prefently to breake their rankes, and from marching fell to flat running in ftragling manner to foone as ever they began to finde themselves within the mercy of the Musket shot, and so continued in this disorderly, and timorous course, vntill they were youn our heeles, and is the wals, and trenches, almost as foone as we, that were in manner of a Vauntquard come fome twelue fcore before them in a fleady flow march. Our Reare Admirall, and we all cried out on them for this hamefull diforder, and taxed Captaine Bret . and Captaine Berry. with other of the Captaines for it, and of them demanded, if thefe were the men, that should base done us such stead in our landing, to same us from dishonour, or if this be the manner of their old Low Country Troopes, to hew such hase cowardise, at the first sight of the Enemie, and for Musket shot so farre off from a Fort. The fault was not surely in these Captames, for they were well knowne, and liewed themselves to be bonest and resolute men, and did their best to stay this disorder. But their answere was this, that these comtanies, that did to beast like behave them felmes, were in deede men taken out of Flushing, and Brill, the Cautionary Towns, and raw Souldiers, that ener lined in a fafe Garrison, & feldome or never had seene enemie, or incountered with that in the field. And therefore for thefe kinde of Low Countrie Souldiers, they faid, we should never finde them, but as base and backward fellowes, as the other Regiments that bad folland, we formus never force to the state of confirme, their answere was true, and grounded upon reason and Experience. And therefore it is not a twist Campe mille to take good notice of such as onely ferme to take pay, to walkerounds, and guard ports in Garrison and Garrison Towner for in the field they will most commonly be miffing or at least (if present) doe little hart for con. Souldiers.

We being thus come vnto the foote of the high Fort, and vnder couert of the Trenches, and wals, which they had abandoned, retiring themselves into their fortifications, and strengths on the top of the Hill; our Reare Admirall commanded Captaine Bres to appoint a Sergeant or two, with tome few that, to goe proue and discouer the way towards the Towne, and take fafe in hand with them one of our Portagall guides, for the more affurance, and for the better inftructions for conducting the Troopes, because he was informed by the Guides, that the way in divers places lay very open, and dangerous to the shot of the high Fort, as well as to the Fort at the Townes end. And the worfe, by reason of low wals made of loose stones; on either side of the wayes, which the great Artillery, and Musketeir would beate vpon, and featter amongst vs. and so indeede afterwards in the march we found it true. Captaine Bret answered, that although it had 50 pleased our Reare Admirall to appoint him to another Office, yet, if he would expressy command him, he would also survey this passage himselfe. But it was not thought fit at that time to want the Sergeant Major among it such raw, and disorderly troopes; and therefore he was againe willed to appoint a Lieutenant, and a Sergeant or two, to got about that bulineffe, in manner as was aforefaid. But woon this order to given, Captaine Bret made report, that hee found the Sergeants and Lieutenants very vnwilling to vndertake this discouery, making the passage very difficult, by reason that they saw them from the hill top, to beate so dangerously with their great Artillery .vpon vs, and the loofe wals, & also to ply vs to fast with their Musketeir, the which they might better doe on that way. And therefore the Troopes were very definous, to have passed by with 60 fome speede, and not in any orderly march, and strength, which indeede had bin a very route, and

also an hazardous course. For as we were credibly informed, the Island was able to make a thoufand men turnished with weapons, and wee were perswaded (or at least to suspect) that they would gather the body of their most strength, for the defense of their best Towne, towards the which we were now marching.

Assassa

Reare Admirais valour.

Out Reare Admirall feeing all men to make fuch forupulofitie of this bufineffe, when Cantains Bret had related vnto him the backwardnesse of these Low Countrie Garrison Souldiers, thereungo answered that he would not offer that to any, which he would himselfe refuse to vndertake, if neede required; although it were not the dutie and office of the chiefe Commander, to yndergoe for ordinary a feruice, but a thing duely appertaining to the inferior Officers, & Souldiers: Notwithflanding (laid he) though I could inforce others to doe it, they shall well perceine, that I my selfe will doe that which they dare not performe: whereof I am ashamed in their behalfe, and how our Generall and we all are abused, in the opinion of these Low Countrie Souldiers, And therefore called for his Curates and Caske, and faid, that he would both goe view the way for them, which they had made so nice of, and also the passages, and ascents voto the hill top, and as well as hee to could take view of the itrength, and fortifications thereof, for our better directions against the next morning that we should attempt it. Captaine Berrie thereupon very willingly offered himfelfe to hoe and did earneftly defire me to divert our Reare Admirall from undertaking it. And I thereupon did openly diffawde him that commanded in chiefe, from putting his owne person to those inferiour Offices of hazard, fitter for a Lieutenant or a Sergeant, then himselfe to performe. knowing, that all the direction, as well of those troopes, as allo of a whole Squadron of the Nanie. did at that time onely rest you him, in the absence of the Admirall, & Vice Admirall, Notwithflanding he was oblinate therein, as well in fcome to them that had refused, as also indeede our of a degre, to be the better informed of the strength, and fortification of the high Fort. Wherein when I iaw him refolued, I told him that I would out of the love of a kinfman, in particular, 20 and also out of an honest regard, take such part as he did, from whom I had received many kinde favours, and accompany him, but not out of any great delire I had to goe about a peece of worke. that confisted of much danger, and little honour in the performance. Hee thanked mee for mine offer, but yet wished me not to goe, if it were against my minde; notwithstanding I accompanied him, and so did some eight or ten more of our teruants and followers. But I say truely, and to afterwards it was much fooken of, that there was not any one more of quality that did accompany him in that bufineffe. In this fort, and in this number did he himlelfe goe to discover the passage, and also was care-

full and diligent to observe and search out the strengths and ascents to the hill. In which doing,

we were shrewdly troubled with the great Artillery, which did beat upon the old wals, alongst 10

the which we were to paffe, and therewithall much indangered and harmed vs. For befides fome

that were hurt, two of our traine had their heads ftricken cleane from their shoulders; my selfe

was then shot through the left leg with a Musket bullet, but miffed the boanes being but a flesh-

wound but the bullet did burne both my filke stocking and buskin, as if it had bin finged with an

Dangerous

hot Iron. I was then hard by the Reare Admirall, who also was shot through the breeches & doublet fleeues in two or three places. And ftill they plied ve to fast with small shot, as that (I well re-

Scarle-braue-

ry perillous.

member) he wished me to put of a large red scarre, which I then wore, being (as hee said) a very faire marke for them. But I was not willing to do the Spanuards io much honor at that time albeit I could have wished it had not bin on me, &therfore told the Reare Admirall again, that his white fearfe was as eminent as my red, and therefore I now would follow his example. But yet in my poore 40 opinion I fee no great honor, nor discretion in those nice ceremonies, but when men go to service, they may with reputation either put on, or put off all babilments, for their most advantage and securitie, and especially in going to disconer, which best may be performed, when them selves are least disconered And this puts me in minde of a report which I heard many peres since of Monsieur La: Noc shat samons French Captain, and one Buffey de Amboys, a gallant French Gentleman. Thefe two being with Monfieur the French Kings brother, some 24. yeer: fince, at the stege of Bines in the Low Countries, were to informe themselves of a flanker, or some Ranelin that was to be beaten with Artillery. La Noue was the Marshall of Monsieurs Campe, and Buffy e bis great fauourite, & Lieutenant Generall (as I take it) Buffey would needes before Monfieut in a branery, inuite La Noue to undertake with bim the disconery of that place, which La None out of his better indement, and experience in the Warres, thought not so sit a prece of service for yo their places, but rather to be preserved to some private Captaines of valour, and indecement, that would very conerily goe about it. But such was Buffeyes forward beate, and iolitie to the businesse, as that La Noue, who was inferiour to none in true valour, disclained to refuse that, which the other still veged, and made so light of. And being stirred by Bulleyes daring branery, he fell to the businesse, and led Buffey such a dance in his hose and doubled unarmed to the discourty, and so slily carried him on Bill with a fober discourse, further and further into the very mouth of the Cannon and Musket That, with a foft steady pace, as that Bussey began to finde and deslike their entertainment, feeing the imminent danger that they fill ranne into. And thereupon suddenly asked La Noue, what he meant so farre openly to ingage himselfe, and on so slow a pace: whereto La Nove answered, that bee ded fo, to make Buffey know, that La Noue had a beart as well to execute, as a tonque to give coun- 60 fell when neede required. But at last, they both falling into the true rechaning of their follies; the one, for orging a valiant old Souldier, and the other for affenting to the vaine elevious humour of jouthly inconsiderate courage, came off very quietly both together, baning bad their fils of disconcring. And jet thefe Simullates (as the Latines name them) have ever in all ages raigned. Cafar in his Commencaries

makes an effeciall observation of two of his Captaines for the like: The one was called Titus Pulto and the other Lucius Varenus, and it happened in his Warres of France, in the wintering Campe of Quintus Cicero, one of bis Lieutenants being furwully affaulted by the Gauls, but most resolutely defended. The manner bee describeth excellently, and large, in bis Commentaries, to which ! referre you.

And now to our purpose, by this time, we had reasonably to our satisfaction, made a sufficient discouery, both of the way for our Troopes to palle, and also of the ascents to the high Forton the Mountaine. And then there came vnto vs Captaine Berry, and one Maiter Henry Allen, and others; who finding me hurt, very kindely bemoned my harme, and I in requitall of their curtefie. so as much lamented the want of all their good companies at that banquet; vpon the comming of these vato vs, we sent backe two of our men to Captain Bret (Sergeant Major for that time) to be his Guides, and to will him prefently to march on with his Troopes towards the Towne after vs. and that we would fray for them, because we then looked to be fought withall, or at the least, to

have fome little fally, or bickering out of the Fort at the Towns end, which we must needes passe by before we could come to the Town. This was a very fine fortification all of stone worke, with by, before we could control to the Towns I have a but prefently upon our approach they abandoned it, and in our passing by we entred into it, and found that they had newly for faken the place. for faken, The like did they afterwards from the Towne, and were all fled up into the Countrie, and into Towne abane the Mountaines, fauing those two hundred that were garrisoned in the high Fort. The Towne doned. 20 was emptied, and left very bare of all things, but of fuch wares as could not fuddenly be remou-

ed : which was Wine, Salt, and Corne, whereof they left a little ftore for our refreshing. The reft of our Troopes by this time were now come on very necre to the Towne, but there were some fine and twentie of them fhot, and fome feuen or eight flaine in the passage.

And in this manner we did afterwards enter the Town very peaceably; which was a pleasant They enter the place, built all of Stone, and couered with Tile; and full of fine Gardens, Orchards, and Wels of Towne. delicate waters, with faire Streets, and one very faire Church, and also a Nunnery, and a Fryerie. Towne delete It is in bigneffe about the proportion of Plymonth, or Tarmouth, but feated much like Douer Town. bed. This Island is of late yeeres become very watchfull, and the people more growne to the vie of fit armes, and have for their defence erected this new fortification, on the high hill, with a Garrison

30 of two hundred Spaniards in it. For not long before, it had bin very gallently furprifed, and (as I thinke) facked, and ranformed, by the right Honorable George Clifferld Earle of Comberland (a no- Earle of Cumble Gentleman) that had often exposed both his purse, and his person, to his great honour and ex- beiland. See perience in those Seafaring Aduentures. And presently vpon our entrance we made Barricadoes. Soplas.s. placed good Guards in divers parts, and a strong Corps de Guard in the Market place. For the town being vawalled, we were to suspect, that if we lay there open, and carelessy refreshing our selves. and our fouldiers scattered abroad in seeking for victuals, we might easily be surprised without good order, and directions given, before we fell to our repait, or reft. But this order being first performed, then were others at better liberty to fearch lafely for bootie. Therefore Proclamation for lefety and was made, that voon paine of death none should straggle twenty score without the Towne, and poory. that not without the knowledge and leave of an Officer, and then to goe vpon their guard with

fit weapon, and company. Hauing now refreshed and reposed our selves all night without any trouble more then two false alarmes, that were given voon the fight of divers of the inhabitants that approached towards the Towne, to view the manner of our dealings with their buildings (which proued nothing, but miftruft of the worst) for which, all things were well prouided to The Generals withitand the enemy) the next morning being the 22.0f September, euen with the day breake, comming. we might see our Generall with his Fleete at hand, bearing in with all failes towards the Roade of Fayall, who all this while had bin beating up and down the Seas, looking about for the Adelantade, and other Aduentures. V pon his arrivall, our intent for attempting the high Fort was frustrated, and all our proceedings in Fajall were by Sir Guillie Merricke at large related, vnto our Gene- Sir Guilly Meted, and all our proceedings in Fayau were by Sir Guide Merrice at targe related, vite our Genes ricky vich bei-rall, and fo apprauated, and wrested into an euill sense, by him, Sir Christopher Blum, Sir Anthony rible officious

So Sherly, and others, by putting my Lord in the head, that these parts were plaied by the Reare Adnesses. mirall onely to steale honor, & reputation from him, and to let his owne forwardnesse to the view of the world; which intimation of theirs, was an exception that they know our Generall was very apt of his owne difposition to take hold of being a man that did affect nothing in the world so much as Fame, and to be reputed matchlesse for magnanimitie, and undertaking, and could hardly bis ambition indure any that should obscure his glory in that kinde, though otherwise he fauoured them neuer of honour. to much. And that this is true, those that understand his humour hest, cannot instit deny. The which (I protest) I doe not speake, either out of any neglect of one that is dead, or to picke a thanke of any that lines, but simply out of a resolution to write an unpartial truth, or else to be silent. For those spirits that base

60 flattery, or feruile feare doth transfort in falkioning their Histories, are of all others to be reputed the unworthest, and most pernicious in a well-pollicied Common wealth, For wee feethat those Heathens, which have written the stories of Cyrus Pyrrhus, Alexander, Haniball, Scipio, Cefar, and of all other those great Kings, Frenouned Heroes, do as well taxe them for their vices as glorific them for their vertnes: For who lines without fault? And so sincerly & boldly do they follow the truth in their writings, author

ther are therby freed from malice, or revenge, because they are free from all partialitie; or if any spleen arise. Tet it is secret; for the prosecution of such sinceritie is reputed meere implete in all forts, and flat Tyrannie in Princes. And to conclude, this impotent humor of induring rinality, and other mens praises, is versincident tomen in high places, effecially if they be of great courage, or sickled with Ambitton. It was be ides ail sadged, that the prefumption and fcorne, to land fuch Forces without his

Lordinios leane, was not to be paffed over without feuere punishment, and a Marshall Court fie to be called, to confure the offence and breach of order, and discipline, with many other as bitter arouments, and deuiles, as their wits could compalle, to aggravate the Generals wrath against all that were in this Action, and especially the Reare Admirall. Against whom, they spared not so farre to inueigh, as that they gave it out, that he was well worthy to loofe his head for his labour. 10 And so had they inneighed the Generall against wall, as that all the forenoone was spent in reprehending and displacing all the Land Captaines, and Officers that accompanied the Reate Admirall in that Action, who being fent for to answere before the Generall abourd his ship. was before the Messenger came for him, gone in his Barge to fee the Generall, and to guide him to the Land, not to much as suspecting that any thing had bin ill taken for that matter, but rather Sir Walter Ralooking for great thankes at the Generall his hands. But fo foone as he entred the Generals ship. Leigh commeth he found all mens countenances estranged, as he passed through them. And when he was entred into the Generals cabbin, after a faint welcome, the Generall began to challenge him of breach of order and Articles: To whom the Reare Admirall answered, that he knew not of any such breach : my Lord replied , that there was an article that none should land any of the Troopes 20 without the General's presence, or his order. The Reare Admirall defined the Generall to give him leque to defend himselfe by those Lawes, which himselfe as well as others had denised, and his Lordship with the Counfell of warre had authorited, and that then his Lordship should finde that he had not committed any Errour at all. For (faith he) there is an Article, that no Captaine of any this, nor Captaine of any Company, if be be fenered from the Fleete, hall land any where without direction from the Generall or some other principall Commander, upon paine of death, oc. But I take my selfe (faid be) to be a principall Commander, under your Lordibio, and therefore not subject to that Article, nor under the power of the law Marshall because a succession commander of the whole Fleets in her Maiesties Letters Patents, your Lordship, and my Lord Thomas Howard failing. And besides your Lord-This agreed that I (bould land at this I fland, with your Lordfoip, whom I have attended thefe foure dayes, 30 andfinding that your Lordib to came not, being in your way this berwards halfe a dozen leagues before, I maied anchor, I could not but thinke, that you thought meftrong inough to take this I fland, and that your Lordship was gone, with some of the rest to some of the other Islands. And Stated so love from landing at

Sir Guillie Metrickes intreatie, as I heard more company, enen at my backe, murmur, and fay, that

I durst not admenture it. And to tell your Lordifing a plaine truth, my intent at first was onely to mater,

untill I fam them follow me in that braning manner, which with our reputations wer could not then flun,

and eine oner being already in our Boates for that purpole. For if I had intended the taking of the Towne, I would never have retired to farre off from our first Roade, that lay right before it.

aboord :he

Accufation.

Generali.

This dit pute held tome halte houre, and then the Generall went afhoare, and refted himfelfe in the Reare Admirals lodging, being well enough fatisfied at that time. In fo much as the Reare 40 Admirall defired my Lord to tup there, and that if his Lordship ment to call the matter further in queltion, he would claime no priviledge nor favour thereby, but answer it in the morning. To which Sir Christopher Blunt (taking my Lords and were from him) faid, that he thought my Lord would not sup at all. But the Reare Admirall finding Sir Christopher Blunts disposition, told him, that when he muited him he might disable his owne appetite, but if my Lord pleased to stay, he would be very glad of his prefence. In this meane while my Lord Thomas Howard very nobly, and kindely taking care, that no wrong, nor difgrace might be offered to the Reare Admirall by Conflian and any deutse, or practise of his Exemies, dealt with the Generall to finde how hee thood refolued, friendly medi- and the next morning affored the Reare Admiral, that my Lord fought nothing but a due acknowledgement of an offence, alleadging that the rest would thinke him a very weake and tame Com-50 mander, if he should receive no manner of satisfaction. The Reate Admirall hoping that hee had done nothing vniustriable, and well affured, that he was successively in the Commission, for the whole commandement of the Fleete (and therefore not subject to any corporall danger) as also because he affured himselfe of the Vice Admirall his honorable love, and fincere dealing, came agame in the morning to vilite the Generall. Otherwile (remembring the little truft that men ought to repose in reconciled enemies, and the strong malice borne him by others in greatest fauour with my Lord) had ment to have put himselfe into his owne Squadron, and to to have defended himfelfe, or left my Lord. But my Lord Thomas Howard, perlwading him to goe, and fatisfie the Generall (vpon whole word onely he made that adventure, after he had given him his honour, with great kindnesse, and resolution, that he would make himselve a party, if any wrong 60 The Generall or violence were offered, contrary to the General's promife vinto him; he did as the Vice Admirall aduited him. And fo all things after a little dispute came to a quiet end and conclution.

And within a day or two after, the Generall accompanied with the Vice Admirall, and other Lords, and Commanders direct aboord our ship, where he was exceedingly intertained, and consented. Onely this I omitted that when the Generall committed Captaine Bret, Berry, and Sidner, he Reate Admirall defited that those Gentlemen might receiue no hard mealure in his caule. for whatlocuer his Lordinip doth conceine to have bin mildone, hee must take it wholly on himfelle to answere, being at that time the Chiefe and Commander. This I have set downe in manner as I heard it, then from men of good fort, not being prefent thereat my felfe, nor at that time able to waite on the Generall, by reason of the shot through my legge, which I had received but the day before, in this thankleffe feruice.

CHAP.14.S.2. (age left, Birds flowne, Enuy bad to all, to it Celfe work of all.

Thus was the whole day spent in reprehending and disciplining vs for our paines. And yet maswithstanding, these aggravators, and chiefe Instigators of our Generall, vouchlafed to take the benefit of our reproued Trauailes, in lodging, and retreihing themselves in this good Towne, both this night, and three or foure dayes after. But in the fame day that our Generall animed . about one of the clocke after midnight, all the Porsugals, and Spaniards in the high Fort, with their High Fort a. bagge and baggage, abandoned the place, leaving behinde them fix peeces of great Artillery bandoned. mounted. For when they law the whole Fleete together, and io many gallant Troopes land with Our Generall, their hearts fainted, and fo they fled into the Countrie, and woodly Mountaines adjoining. Then in the morning when it was too late (although as yet wee knew not fo much) direction was given to certaine troopes, and companies, to guard all the foot of the high Fort, to flop, and flay them from flealing from thence, that were already gone, for it was given out,

that if they did not prefently furrender it, the place should be affailed. But when newes was brought that they had abandoned the Fort, and carried all away, then was there much descenting of the foule overlight, so to suffer the Birds to escape out of the Cage, that might have bin to furely kept, if we had not bellowed more labour in disciplining and correcting our owne pretended faults for landing, then differetion or diligence in profecuting Enuiespieth and correcting our owner pretended rautes for landing, then different or oringence in posteriors the Enemy, whom we had at an advantage. For preferred y upon their arrivall, they did nothing trades, then in but examine and discipline our offence. Whereas if they had gone in hand with the Fort, and protested enccast a carefull ever thereunto, we had not lost the ransoming of io many Spanish prisoners, nor the mies, and is albenefit of the fooyle which they had carried out of the Towne, for fafty to that place. And at way worft to it this groffe errour there was much muttering. But now divers of the land officers (to colour and felfe, though excute their owne default) laid this blame also on vs, alleadging that we should have left a good

ao guard vpon the Fort, if we had done like men of warre, vpon our first landing, and then all had bin fure. And although this excuse passed at first for some paiment, for the common and more ignorant fort, yet all men of judgement could eafily perceive, how impossible a matter it was for vs out of foure hundred and fixtie to spare so many, as should sufficiently guard two hundred souldiers, from fallying out of fuch a Fort, and yet proceede with the recouering of the other Fort. and Towne that was before vs. For the defence of both which, the Island was able and had in readinesse (as our spies and guides assured vs) aboue one thousand able men well turnished, voon whom we were to have a vigilant eye, and to keepe a convenient firength after we had once poffelled the Towne. But after the Generall was come, this might eafily have bin performed, or if he had not come, they had not fled fo fuddainly, and the fame morning, wee our felues had attempted the Fort, and made no doubt to carry it. But then with the presence of our Generall. voon his arrivall, all our determinations, and authorities were concluded.

Afterwards when our men entred this Fort, which the Spaniards had abandoned, there they found divers peeces of Artillery, and an English Gentleman whole name was Hart, and a Floriming with both their throates cut. Then were there certaine companies fent abroad the Coun- Bart and andtry, to trace those Spaniards and Poringals, and to make waite of all that lay in their way. But ther left with of the Garrison they could never recover one man. Now after three or fourc dayes the anger and throates cuts diflikes of our Generall towards vs, were well pacified, and vpon further confideration and conference with the Reare Admirall of his doings, hee grew againe into very kinde tearmes with him, and at his fuite released and restored all the disgraced Captaines that landed, and were in this service, and so having taken all the benefit, and refreshing of this Towne, and Island that we 'so could come by, our time being to thort, on the foureteenth of September we were all commanded

to goe aboord. And so for a tarewell, and for the funerals of our lost men, and those two that were so dispitefully murchered in the high Fort, the Towne was brauely set on hire, and all the Townefired, Ordnance of the Towne, and Forts brought away with vs. And I am perfwaded that if the warres had not bin by chance to begon before by vs, vpon that I fland by their owne feeking, and foolish brauery, and afterwards aggravated by their cruelty in murthering so despitefully two of our company in the high Fort, Fayall had elcaped as feetiree as did Cuerno, Flores, Gratiofa, Saint Reward of cru-Michaels, or any of the other. For furely they were all at our metcy, the Fort of Tercera onely elly is cruelty. excepted. But in all their Actions I obierued, and well faw, that our Generall in his true dil po-

sofition, affected rather to be renowned for bounty, clemency, and valour, then for the glory of a dreadfull Conquerour. All this while the Flemmings were playing their parts in the Ille of Pike. which was about a league from Fayall; where I leave them ranfacking the Wines, and burning all that was within their power.

The fix and twentieth of September we made towards Gratiofa, where wee cast ancor. and Aaaaaaaaa prefently

Grafio aluba mittethi. felic.

fland fubmitting themselves, and craving mercy of our Generall, alleadging (as they of Flores had done) that the inhabitants thereof were Portugals, and friends, and natural Enemies to the Spaniards, though they wanted meanes and force to show it, being held under them by frome hand. To this Illand our Generall thewed his accustomed mercy, and required of them some prounions of Wine, Fruites, and fresh victuals for the relieuing of the Fleete; but of any other come position we heard not, although it was supposed they did, or might have yeelded a better ransome : but this was very willingly fent by the inhabitants vnto vs. Here some of the Commandets went abourd the Generall, and befought him to goe aland, and fomewhat better to furney, great willing nelle vnto, But the Maiter of the Generals Ship, whose name was Grosela dell and voluckie feliow) was vecerly against that counsell, and alleadged that the veere was farre front. and the place of anchoring there not good for the ground tackle protesting that it would be danserous to, the whole Fleete, and put it in hazard, and therefore very earneftly perswaded and vised the leaving of that Roade; which adule of his, our Generall then followed, to our great leffe, and hinderance, as afterwards it fell out. But Grone the Mafter must parden mee to fav in mine opinion, that it was an undifcreete aduife, fo to divert our Fleete in fuch hafte from that Island, considering the long aboade he made afterwards before Saint Michaels, and at Villa Franca, to leffe purpose in as ill Roades as this, and later in the yeere. Hereupon wee waved, leaving Saint Michael. day, early in the morning, we made that land, and bare in with the finoare. And as wee came ve-

Grane saxed.

Newes of the

Three Star lb

valuckie aduice of Grove the Master of his ship. Vpon the Intelligence given by these two ships, our Admirall finot off a peece, and prefently cast about, and therewithall, wee in the other ships perceived casting up of Hats, and great shootes abourd the Admirall, for joy of this newes. And the like afterwards was done in the Vice-Admirals thip, and to passed throughout all the Fleete. Within some few houres after, we incountered, and tooke three Spanifo ships, comming from the Hanana, the greatest of them being about foure hundred tunnes, and esteemed to be a very rich thip, as well for the lading, as for the patterngers that were in her. To this Spaniard, our thip called the Wall bight being neereft, gave Chair, and caused her to stricke, and yeelde : but yet my Lord Generali nafting after, would tuffer none but his owne Boate to goe aboord her, being full of good prisoners, and piliage besides her lading, which was Cochynella, and other such rich Wares. This ship, and the other two that were in her company, being very good prises also, made to the Generall a relation of forty failes of Indian men, whereof tome eight were fraughted with the Kings Treature, that did diffenbarge with them from the Hanana, bound for Spaine. And as we after heard, the Garland, the Rainebow, the Dreadnaught, the Marigold, and others, fell amongst fixteene faile of the richest of this Indian Fleete, whereof they foundred one, and whilest 40 they were busic in feeking to take the spoile of her (as it was credibly reported) all the rest did escape, and recouer Tercera. But of this I speake as the generall voice went, and not vpon other assurance, for they were then separated from vs, and the rest of the Fleete; And therefore I must adde this conclusion, to defire that I may of the understanding fort be pardoned if in these relations I cannot truely, nor at large write the accidents, and courses of all their shops in particular, being no eye witnesse thereof nor possibly could so be. For to doe that in a land army or in a battaile is very hard, and much more in a Sea Voyage confisting of to many bips fometimes (eparated. Vpon intelligence of this eleaping, and patting by to valuekily of these Indian Ships, we were

Ind'an Fleets purfued to Ta

The Peere deferibed.

A Counfell.

presently whilest we roade before it, there came abourd our Generall, the chiefe men of the Ithis Island, and for one day to let his Fleete ancor in that Roade, which his Lordship shewed Lo Gratiofa v pon Saint Michaels Eue, and made for Saint Michaels Island, and on Saint Michaels 20 ry neere vnto it, two of the Sterne-most Ships of our Fleete, shot off twice or thrice, and bare vn with all failes they could packe on, towards the Admirals ship.

These brought newes of the Indian Fleete then by them discouered, comming directly from the Roade of Gratiofa, that the Generall had so vnwillingly left but the Euening before, by the

all much perplexed. For by that chance, and by our vnfortunate haft from Gratiofa, but the very night before, wee faw that Euen, the wrath of deffiny denied to make vs fo happy, as to bee ma- 50 iters of so great a fortune, as then had fallen into our laps, if wee had not fall followed all those counfells that fell out to the world. Notwithstanding, with all the speed wee could make, we instantly followed after them to Tercera, where they were entred fome fixe houres before vs , and had moored their Ships fall under the Towne and Fort, being one of the strongest pieres of all Europe. There wee might aloofe behold them fafe within the Road; which was a great Inlet inwironed with a high Land, in manner of Peninfula; fo as the Shippes lay vinder the command of two ftrong Fortifications, a place neither fit nor possible for our Ships to follow them, except we had meant, that they should have there stuck tast for comming out againe. Now was there a generall counfell called abourd the Admirall, what courfe to take heerein, and many great aduentures proposed and offered to bee attempted, by some Coronels and Captaines, with Boates and 60 Pinnaces for the landing of men, to force those places, but all in vaine, and altogether volcafonable. For whereas they, with one thousand fine hundred men, offered to take both the lland and Forts, some others of the chiefest Sea-Commanders (in their judgements, well knowing the great difficultie to Land men, and Munitions on fo disaduantagious a place, and in so guill a season of the

yeere; belides the great ftrength of the Fortifications, fo well furnished at that time by this new arrivall) were veterly against it, as a matter trivolous, and of more apparant danger to our felues. then to the Enemy, an I for it yeel led fundry reasons. All which thele Coronels feemed to account light or, and would needs in great brauery, fill vige the vinlertaking of it, if they might have but the proportion of one thouland five hundred men, before spoken of; which the General. himielfe feemed greatly to allow, and infift voon, and therefore of necessitie to be yeelded vuto by the interiour Commanders.

But our Vice-Admirall, the Lord Thomas Howard, finding indeed the marke whereat fome of our great Captaines floo, to wit, that it would have ferued their turnes to have vaunted, that if the 10 Vice-Admirall, and Reare-Admirall had beene willing to this enterprife, and not croffed it by counter counsells, the Spanib Fleet and Treature (ov maffering the Hands of Tercera) might baut been recovered his Lordship resolved either to tie them to their pretended resolutions of to make the n fee, that they could not ferue themselves of him, by any such finenesse & pretence. And therfore told the general plainly, that if indeed he would fo willingly have it attempted himfelfe, and the Reare-Admitall for their parts would be forward and readie to aduenture as farre as any others. And moreover, the berter to inable the action, faid, that they would undertake to find him three thousand strong and able men, to spare out of the Fleet, and yet leave the Navie sufficiently manned. And therefore ((aid they) if your Lordship fee no other reasons to let or hinder this offered attemp; there shall be no want of so many men as we speake of, which is double the num-20 ber that was demanded. But vpon this constant offer, the matter was againe debated, and grew fomewhat col ler, being better digested. So as in conclusion it was deemed inconvenient, and impossible to be effected, as our Forces and helpes, and theirs at that time stood, and the time of the yeere fo farre spent, and the winds and the Seas growne so tempessuous for landing in Boats. But if this offer had not bin made, then, the relinquishing of these glorious motions, and attempts, had bin laid voon the backwardnesse and disswarions of the Sea-men, which was well enough perceiued, and therefore accordingly answered.

These unscasonable ofers, and Brauadoes, puts me in mind of the like inconsiderate unfortunate atti- touching talks on of Sir R. Greenfield in the Reuenge, who being Vice-Admirall to the fame Lord Thomas onless and on of Sir R. Creenfield in the Revenge, who being the Jamen to the fame Data Hillias brands.

Howard Admirall in a journey to these clands in certains of the Queenet Ships, they fortuned to meet Sir R. Gronnile 30 with a great Fleet of the King of Spaines, were to the Ile of Flores, confiling of fo many buge and mighty his flory you Gallions, as was no way fit for them to undertake being in number and force three times as fivong as ours have before. 19.11. And therefore fister to be warily dealt withall, then raphly adventured upon Wherefore the Admi. which perhaps rall (out of the due confideration and indgement of the office, and place bee beld, as also for that at his re- may formulat turne bome, bee was to give a frict account of the charge committed unto bim) thought it fit to keepe fill bim. aloofe, and in the weather of this powerfield Nanie, and fo to fight with them at his best advantage, off, and on, as occasion ferned, or elfe to free himfelfe from them if need required : For his Ships being morenmable, yare, and fwift, then the Spaniards, it had bin a groffe errour to have thrust himselfe wilfully in a-

mongst them and so to give them the advantage of boording, being high and mighty built Ships throughly manned and full of that, and the manner of fight, by boording maft advantageous for those buse Gallions. 40 Besides being as they were all men of Warre, and thruce as many as the English, and no other benefit to bee out by boarding them, but blowes, and the hazard of battaile, which is uncertaine victory ; it beboo. med him admisedly to carry himselfe, and rather to follow the heady steps of a Fabius Maximus, then the pies. beadie fury of a Terentius Varro. But bis Vice-Admirall, being indeed a man very wilfull, and violent in his courfes, could in no wife be persuaded to follow his Admirall, and his conforts. But thrusting himselferably in amongst the Spaniards, those mighty Vessels being a Sea-board, and some of them getting into the weather of him, to becalmed all his failes, as that hee could not vie the benefit of working upon a wind to bis best aduantage, nor free bimselse of them when bee would, but was clapt aboord by two or three of them; where to redeeme his errour, seeing hee had brought himselfe so undiscreetly into a desperate worke, be very resolutely fought, and made long relistance, to the great annoyance and losse of the Assay-30 lants. But in the end, being shaken and beaten to sitters with their great Ordnance, and oppressed with the

multitude of them, comming in fresh upon him, was by mayne force mastered, and yet distaining to reeld. for that bee had received his deaths wound in the fight , fought by all meanes to have blowne up his Ship, by fetting fire on his owne Powder roome, and therewithall to have destroyed as many of the Spaniards as lay abourd him; but by the care of his Captaine (whose name was Laughorne) was with stood and preuented. A right autient Roman resolution, but sement at too much varying from the true Christian Religion; to draw 4 violent and fudden death on so main; soules, for the better gracing of his particular er. only Ship of rouse, And in this sorties have withtlessed, brought he one of the Royall Nauie, anto the power and the Nauy Royall Nauie, anto the power and the Nauy Royall Nauie, and the Nauie, and the Nauie, and the Nauie Royall Nauie, and the Nauie, and the Nauie, and the Nauie, and the Nauie Royall Nauie, and the Nauie Royall Nauie, and the Nauie Royall Nauie Ro possession of the Spaniaris, which during all the Warres, nener before nor after they could obtaine. And a all possessed faire grace of God it was , that his find example had not inticed more of them, at the same time to the like by the Spanie

60 felly and ruine. Now the best that bee could hope for, was after the exchanging of some great that with ards and dears shem to have come of againe of hee could. A brawery to [mall purpose, for to subdue them, was not in the ly bought power of all the English, if they had beene as many more in all likelihood and reason. Voon which grounds wife Commanders onght to build their resolutions, before they put themselves to the bazard of battaile. Besides, in truth is was a very insolent and disorderly part, for a Vice-Admiral, being a man of his yeeres

and experience, so wilfully without cause, against all discretion to vary from his Admiralls course. and from the apinion of all his Conforts, onely to hid himselfe voluntarily to so fooldh and bitter a banquet wherein bee could be but loft. And bard would it be for Generalls, and Chiefe Commanders to fulfill their Instructions, or fatisfie that which is expected at their bands, if they should be drawne on, or ingage them-(elues by the vaine example of enery one that is carryed with a beaddy humour, to follow his owne wilfull conceit. For fo was that noble Paulus Emilius, and the Roman Armie with bim loft, at the Battaile of Capties, in being constrained to second the fooisis brauery of Vatto, his rash Colleague. And in the libe Rich Doi Torte unadurfed desperate fort, did that valiant Duke of Yorke, Richard Plantagenet, Father to Edward the

Fourth, wilfuily cast away him seife, when with fine thousand men onily, contrary to the per swasiens and counfell of all bis friends, out of the pride of his branery, bee would needs fally out of his Cafile of Sandall. and eine battaile to the Queenes Army, that was twenty thousand strong : whereby his weate forces were quickely defeated, at Wakefield, and himfelfe flaine, with his young fonne the Earle of Rutland. It is faid to bee the dutie of a creat Captaine, to feeks victory with as little loffe to himselfe, as may bee, and more military discrebine thewed in making a faire and safe retrait, then in gining a farious and desperate charge. The experience whereof was well feene, in that gallant Souldier Sir John North, who wan as much Ho. nour and Fame, by that braue, and well ordered retrait which hee m. . befor : Caunt, as in any one viece offernice that ener bee did. We had also fresh in our memories, a Sea experiment of the very like tragi-

ter Stroffe.

call successe of Sir Richard Greenfield, in the liberalt attempt of Peter de Stroffe, Admiral of a French Fleet, against a mightie Spanish Nany, commanded by the Marquelle of Sancta Cruce, at these Hands. Where this Strolle ont of a wilfull brauery, contrary to the better adnice of all his Captaines, and Mafiers, baning alreadie landed many brane troupes of Frenchmen, in the llands, as offistant to Don Anthonio, named King of Portugali, upon the first view would needes lay the Marqueffe and the Spanish Fleet aboord, being compassed of mightie buge Gallions, and the French but stender nimble Ships. Br which unequall maich, and fools h daring he was beaten downe . ight, all his Nause destroyed (faung the Count Brylack, and a few others of better indgement, that would not follow bis vaine courle) and bimfelfe being taken prilomer, was aline most despitefully torne, and drawns asunder with two Ships. Thus lost he himselfe, and his bonour, brought many gallant Gentlemen and Son diers to a butcherly execution, and utterly thrust Don Anthonio from the possession of the lies of Alores, and confounded all those brave French troupes, which a little before he had placed in them. But in another manner, and with better (necellewere our affaires gonerned, in the yeere 88. when that mightie Fleet of Spaine, which they termed

Terrible exce

Example of 88 inutracible came to inuade vs. For them I remember, among it other good also plane, which they termed 30 Sea fight; it was straitly ordained, that none of our Ships Should voluntarily (if they could by any meanes anoid it) lay any Spaniards abourd, but alwayes to fight with them upon advantage, and indeanour by all meanes to keepe into the weather of them, and fo leave or take as occasion served, they comming to innade, Inuinfible fleet and our end only to keep them from landing. The which direction was fo well ebserved, as that this inninci-

ble Fleet, for all their force and powerfull appearance, proned at last inmifible, left many of their Ancors and good Ships behind them, got not, nor funke any one of ours : but being fore gauled and beaten, with this manner of fight, and greatly affrighted with fire, and such like stratagems, were at last glad to packe a war, as fast as they could out it the backe doore. I meane by the North Seas, round about Scotland, and Ireland: wherein they found a miferable and tedious flight, never having gotten formuch as a dish of our 40 freshwater, nor ener landed one man (except prisoners) upon our Coast. Now, if our Admirall, the Lord Charles Howard had beene a wilfull Commander, flanding upon those vaine clorious termes of boording and assaulting the enemy, and not have proceeded by counsell and policie temperately, then had be done that which the Spaniards expected and defired, their Ships being fit for the purpose, and comming to boording and handy fight, might very well have distressed us, and so have hazarded both the Name, and the Kingdome together. But this noble Lord, as hee was very fortunate and indicious in Sea service, so L. Admirall bee truely and wifely considered how great a weight and charge lay on his indeement and trust, and therefore did accordingly, with great wisdome and temper marshall bis diffairer, to the onerthrow of his Ence mies, to the perpetual bonour of bis name, and the victorious serving of his Prince and Countrey. This therefore may may frand for a Maxime and Caucat, to all great and wife Commanders, that to whom A 50 King or State commits the trust and directsin of an Army: It bridles him in the free vie of his owne conrage, or from expressing (upon energ temptation) his particular valour. For that forward humour of daring, is to be vied in younger yeeres, before they arrive to the eplaces of dignitic or command; and then euer after, counfell fould command their courage, alwayes we amping their heads in the Furre of the Foxe, and their Armes seldome in the Lyons skin, Setting aside all respects of byaning or vaine glory, as

did that Fabius Cunctator, of whom Ennius in prasse faith; Non ponebat enim rumores ante lalutem. And the se presidents I have here taken occasion to record, thereby onely to shew what inconveniences and detriments doe follow such unbridled heat, and headdy humours, and to the contrary, what herefit and advantage is gained in the true use of timely and temperate proceedings. For swely, if these desperate offers, made by the Land Souldiers, infligating our forward Generalito the taking of the Tercera, had became then put in execution, the end had beene, that many a valuant man had there lett bu bones, and the for rest returned home with the scorne of a disgraced attempt. Besides, if the Adelantado with the Spanish Name had then chanced to have come on our backet, whileft our best men were ashoure ingaged about this desperate and unfeasable enterprise, it might have turned to the destruction of the whole Fleet, or at the

least to the assured losse of as many as were landed about that businesse. But (thankes be to God) 200d counfell prenailed, and prenented the fe bazards.

After that this dispute was to calmely concluded; our Generall himfelfe, and the Lord Mounting in the Defiance, and two or three other tall Ships, bare in as close along the shoare as they could, exchanging youn pleature, fome fifteene or twentie great flot with them, to very little purpole, and to left the lie of Tercera, a place very fironge both by Nature and Art, and at that time well flored with Men. Munition, and Treasure: by reason of the late arrurall of those Indian Ships. From thence wee returned agains to the He of Saint Michaells, which before on Michaelmaffe day wee made, and left then vpon this Intelligence. And now as foone as we were They arrive ontred into the Road, that lies before Saint Michaells Towne, weelet fall our Ancors, and there, at S. Michaels the Generall accompanied with divers of our chiefe Officers, comming abourd our Reare-Admirall, hung out a Flag of Counfell, where it was consulted about landing, and the taking of this good Town, which lay to gloriously before our eles, promising many rich rewards to the Victors: In the which there was a flight Fort towards the Seafide, but the Towne vnwalled. The Gene-

rall appointed that all Companies should bee made ready to land forthwith. But our Reare-Admirall defired his Lordship; that hee would first permit him to view the place, and to find out where the Army might best make a descent, because the Billowes about those slands doe sometimes fo roule from the Sea, as might eafily ouerturne the best Boates we had, as wee found by ex- Hillow Sos. perience at Fajall, where wee had two long Boats overturned in landing, and Malter Thomas Rug-20 may also throwne with a Sea on the Rockes in his Boat. Our Generall at first, veelded to the Reare-Admiralls request, for viewing a fit place. But as hee was putting off, and fearce gone from the Ships fide twentie paces, my Lord, flanding in the Gallery with Sir Christopher Blant, called him backe againe in great half, and faid that he would not him telfe, and view it. Whereupon the Reare-Admirall returned againe, as my Lord commanded; and as his Lordinip went out of the Ship into his Barge ynarmed altogether but with his Coller and Sword, and without either Shot . or Pike to way to on him, the Reare-Admirall called aloud vnto him, and defired his Lordship to take his Caske, and Target proofe with him, it hee purposed to goe neere the shoare, seeing Boldnesseby there lay fo many Muskers on the reft, there to receive him. Whereumo my Lord answe-

But (in my opinion) though that answere much showed his valour, yet became it not the place that my Lord held, for in truth a Generall onebe not to bee fo adventuring, and careleffe of himfelfe open energy Right occasion, nor to goe warmed to places of mamment peral. Homer describes the valuent Heroes, and brauest Leaders of the Greekes to be best armed: As Achilles, an excellent Armour framed by Vulcan. at the request of Thetis his mother and Arax with his fewenfold fixeld. Infomuch as their very armes are famous even to these days , the wie whereof now wes make scornefull. But they are no beaten Souldiers in the warres , that hold thefe opinions : for it is truly faid, that a great and wife Generall Bould dre old. And I have read that finnous Epaminondas, was fined by his Countrymen the Thebanes, for being too forward, and lerning in a bastaile ill armed, although he wan the viltory. But to our matter : After 40 that thefe landing places were viewed a farre off, and were not well liked, nor yet fo neerely approached at that time, as within Culuerin Shot (for there lay all along it the shoare aboue foure hundred Shot upon the reft, intrenched to beate on our Boats;) in conclusion, after many offers and jurusies made aloofe, the conveniences of that place, for landing was excepted against. Albeit in truth it was a faire and fandy beach (as all the Fleet might well perceiue) and some foure or fine miles from the Towne, and Fort, and much more easie then that of Farall, where wee before wan our landing. And that this is most true many that were present (now lining) and saw both,

red . That hee would none , because hee distained to take any advantage of the Watermen that

And although our Generall himselfe, was very resolute and apt to undertake any good occasion of feruice, yet hee was then so led and accompanied with such politicke Land Captaines, as that of all the feruices which fell into confultations and deliberations, those most commonly, which were vnfealable, were offered to bee undertaken, and things more likely and reasonable neglected. Whereby out affaires speed accordingly. And in this regard that this differnt was not by my Lord Generall his viewers, allowed of, as fit for the Army to land at, to many Entignes being placed and intremehed there to impeach vs, it was prefently by another confultation agreed, that the Reare-Admirall should with all the strength of the Fleet, lye as neere before the Towns of Saint Michael, as commeniently they could, to hold them in expectation, whilest my Lord Generall and the reft, with two thousand men imbarked into small Barkes and Pinnaces, fecretly in the night didconiesy themselves about the point, to land at a Towne called Villa Vil Franca, fome fixe miles further then the first determinate landing. And for that purpose, they 60 had most of all our Boats with them, and three English men for their guides, that perfectly knew all the Hands and the Townes, by long trade and huing among it them. There there guides affu-

red our Generall both of a quiet landing, and of a very faire and fecret way, to march from thence to Saint Michaels Towne. Our troupes being thus shipped, and our Generall also, they made hast towardes Willa Franca,

They land at V.lla Franca.

where they arrived fafe, & were all landed by the next morning, without any manner of refifeance. For most of all the Town vpon their arrivall abandoned the Town, and we that were left vnder the command of the Reare-Admirall, in the best Ships before the Towne of Saint Michaells, did all the night give them perpetual Alarums, with Shot, Drummes, and Trumpets, in fuch Boats as were lett, fometimes in one place, fometimes in another, along it the shoare, where the Spaniards kept their Corps de Guards, and fiers, who were often in great amazements, calling, and running to and fro, thinking verily that wee were landing in that place or about it. And thus wee did to giue our Army thebetter, and more fecret meanes to make their descent, and so to come vnlooked for on their backes, as their very way did lie, and might in truth very conveniently have beene performed. They being thus landed, wee in the Ships did all the next day looke out apace, hoping to fee our troupes come marching ouer the Hills and Plaines, that were perfect in our view : for the most part of the way that they were to come, being all alongst the Sea side, was in our fight more brim from the Ships by farre, then if wee had beene alhoare. But this good Towns of Villa Franca, had so welcomed and intertained our men., (being feated in a pleasant foyle, full of fruits, wines, and fresh victualls, and the Sellars stuffed (o full of Oade and Wheat) as that our Army was content there to ingarrison, without any further pursuit of Saint Michaels Towns, and there for fixe dayes together they lay feafting, and carrying aboard of Oade, Wheat. Salt, and other merchandife, into certaine private mens Ships that followed the Fleet, for fuch

whilest wee all in vaine still gaped for their comming, which wee the rather thought would have bin at the laft, for that in all this time, they never so much as fent word, to make vs partakers of their determination to the contrary, whereby they would be fure wee should neither participate any of their Commodities, nor fee the disposure of them; although twee cast many coniectures and aymed neere the marke, finding this lingring very strange. But, to doe right to eucry man, I affure my selfe, our Generall had no benefit of these wares and commodities, being of a disposition too noble and bountifull to valiew such trifles worth his regard. For it had beene easie for him to have abounded with wealth and possessions, without following the fortune of the warres, or the hazard of the Seas, if hee had aymed at such common markes. But in this meane while, as weein the great Ships, ancored in Saint Michaels Road , there came in about the Point that lies westwards from the Towne, a small Brasis man, and let fall his Ancor in the middest of 39 vs all. A little after him, wee might discerne aloose off a mightie huge Carack, bearing in with all fayles toward vs, whom thee tooke to bee the Spanish Armada. And the Brafil man confessed that hee thought the same also : for the King of Spainer men of Warre (when he makes Fleets) are compounded of the shipping of divers Nations, and therefore the more hardly to bee distinguished from ours, which was at that time compounded of English, and Holland Bottoms ; befides one great Spanift Gallion, called the Saint Actem, and some other leiler Spanift Veffels that wee had taken before. Now there blew a ftiffe gale from the Land, ouer Saint Michaels Towne, in such fort, that shee must either put roome into the Sea, or fall vpon vs. For as the wind then stood, she could not run in with the Towne or Fort by no meanes, neither was it any part of their

Greedineffe lofeth his morfell.

A Brail man.

A mightie

Carack.

The Carack ran her felfe on ground. She was fet on fire. Examples of

As floone as wee had made her to bee a Carrack, wee tooke in all our Flags by a general commandement from our Reare-Admiral: and withall directions were given, that no manshould once weigh an Ancor, or shoot off a Peece, or put off a Boat, but with leave or order. All this while she still bare in with vs, with all fayles to the Boates end, when fuddenly one of the Holland Squadron(contrary to al discretion & the direction before) weighed his Ancors, hoiled his top sailes, & made towards this Carack, now ready to double the Poynt that entred the Road where we lay: and when the Hollander came neere the Carack, hee prefently made two or three Shot at her. Whereupon sheediscouering vs to bee Enemies, changed her course, and at the very instant (in the view of vs al that observed it as if shee had had the wind at her deuotion) the gale changed, & came full of the Seas: with the helpe whereof, and with the feare of falling into our hands, thee 50 tooke a resolution to runne her selfe a ground, hard under the Towne and Fort, Which done, from thence there presently came multitudes of Boats, fetching away their men and best wares, and that done, fiee was inftantly by them fet on fire in many places at once, being full of great Ordnance, as appeared by the report they made. Such is now the cultome and oblimacie of all those Seafaring men under the Spanish surifdiction, as that by reason of the seuere order, set downe by the King to that effect, they will carelesty burne their Ships, and wares, if they can escape themselnes, vather then to grow to any composition to same balfe thereby. And the like was feene at Cades, by the Fleet ibat was ontwards bound for the Indies : who after they had entertained a parley with ve, to compound for their Ships, and all the merchandize, at a ranfome of halfe the valen : whilest they amufed vs with thusolaurable presence, shereby they gained time to flease out some of their goods, and afterwards set be 50 Shippes on fire, where they road. But this argueth as great secretic in the Sourraigne, as saury on

This Carrack was a Ship of infinite wealth, that at Saint Hellens watering as thee came from the East Indies, put ouer to Brail, and so coasted along ft the West Indies, and was fraughted with

theriches and wares both of the East and West. Wee hasted all wee could when wee saw her a ground, tottering and reeling, with those few Boats wee had left, to have entred her. But before wee could make vs readie, or come neere her, being three miles off, thee was on light fire in many places, her Ordnance thundring off apace, and too hot to bee approached, much leffe to bee entred at that time, without incustable destruction. And yet such hast was made to have prevented this mischiefe, that divers had like by overcharging Boates and Pitinaces, to to have foundred in the Seas, the Billowes going very high. And in that case was our Reare-Admirall amongit others, who for half to this banquet tooke his Row Barge, and was so ill able in her to indure the Seas that were rough, and went high at that time, as that I by chance feeing him fo ill hefted, & in danger was faine to clap him aboord with a good front shipboat that I was in having made haft also to that feath as fait as I could But in conclution were came all too late for the broth was growne to hot for our supping. To behold her thus fiaming was a grieuous fight to vs. but a most wretched spectacle for the Portugalls, so to see their goods by their owne deedes and fury. to perish with fire and water in a goodly vessell, judged to bee 1800. Tunnes at the least, Shee Carack of was a whole night, and all the next day in burning, and in beholding her, you might have feene 1800, Tungi the very shape, Cordage, Masts, and Furniture of a Ship so perfectly in fire, as no Painter could have halfe fo well refembled it with Art or Colours. And when the was cleane confumed to the water, there arose still a great smoake out of the Sea for many houres after, by reason of fome close Decks full of Spices and Sugar under water, which the fire had taken hold of.

This Tragedy ouerpast, wee then fell agains to looke out for our Army comming, but all in vaine. For if su any time, for fixe dayes together after their landing, they had come forwards from Villa Franca, the Towne of Saint Michaels, and the Carach allo had beene our owne, fafe without question. For if our forces had in all that time innefted them felues of the Towne (which they might have done, there being namber Wades nor Bulwarkes to hold them out) the Carack would have runne ber felfe a ground, under the Towns as thee did : " if thee bad, then bad thee fallen into the band; of our Generall, and his Trouvers ar. I fine had kens a Sca-board, then had free fallen into the mercy of our Fleet, which by no mennes fee conid have efected. But it was a leffe then as inexessfable as lamentable, for that no good reafor could bee yeelded (as was shought) nor durft bee demanded, why fo gallant a Company, fo eafily landed for so good a purpose, should so long linger in a little Towns, surfacting shemselnes and the whole a Army. 10 upon Fruits and Wine, to the neglecting of the fermice determined. But it was manifest, that besides their pleasure and good cheer, the great store of Oade, Corne, and Salt, did intice some Land men of good credite. (who had Ships there of their owne) rather to take the pencenbie, and prinate benefit thereof, then to una dergoe some paine and perill, for the winning of Saint Michaels Towns, for the publike good. And this was a proce of fernice very unforemately negtetted, but upon what good reason I could never learne. And I am persuaded, that if his Lordship had built lesse upon some mens violent counsells, and vaine conceits, bee might have done many things better, and long have lined in great prosperitie. But all his care was to

to the custome of the world) hee found many times ungratefully to deale with him , to ferme their owne turnes, drawing birs withall into ambitsom bumows, and affellation of popularitie, which, with our Great 40 men rarely succeeds will. And very strange it was, to see so many great fortunes lost in this one inurner: but that the very Heavens did in them (like Commets) foreshew the beaut and lamentable desting, that traced our Generall towards his end, whose bright shining felicities was some after eclipsed, and admirably metamorphofed into ruine and destruction. Onely this comfort remained to his friends, that hee ended his life with at great resolution, pietie, and penetencie, at was possible to bee expressed in the countenance or words of a man, veterly disorced from the world, and wholly denoted to celestial Contemplation, so the undoubted comfort of his Soule.

contont and winne unto him, certaine Polititians and Marshall men, whom notwithstanding (according

We from the thips looking thus fill in vaine, for those that neither came nor fent wato vs wherby we loft all opportunitie of watering and refreshing our felves ; for we in the Walffelte, and diuers of our Conforts, had not watered tince our fetting out from Plimonth) began to refolue to poe 50 to our Generall, feeing wee could neuer heare from him in all that time. And as we were entrine into this deliberation, wee might perceive the Admiralls Ship by her Flag turning out from the point of Pilla Franca: And two dayes before, many of our great Ships had left the Reare-Admirall, contrary to the Generall his order, which wee durit not breake in the Wall fine by a late causat, because it was flat contrarie to that which was appointed by a Councell, and the Generall his command. But as foone as wee had deferred the Admirall (by his Flag) putting roome; our Reare-Admirall tooke his Barge, and Captaine Morpan with him, and rowed to him; and the same night sent Captaine Morgan backe againe, with directions in the Generalls name, to command all the Fleet to weigh , and to come for Villa Franca. This was no little griefe to vs all, that had fo long and diligently waited on Saint Michaels Towner, and looked to have had a better account 60 of that place, then so harely and absuptly to lease it after all these offers. And (to say the truth) it was

either a groupe overlight, or a wilfull fault onexcufuble to the State, that it was not in better fort manna. ged. For (no diubt) they would willingly have ransomed their Towne, rather then have abidden the tortune of the Warres by Sword and Fire, and wee had amongst us, men of sufficient experience to deale on fuch compositions, which (for ought I know) they minds dog. Thus, with griefe and discontent we for returne.

left Saint Michaels good Towne, the Inhabitants whereof waning their Auncients, and shooting off their Ordnance, in great joy triumphed to lee this vnexpected modest departure of the whole Fleet, on a fudden without any further trouble: And to mee it was strange to see the Coronelle and Captaines, that a little before were to forward and violent to have landed at the Tercera, heing a place to difficult to attempt, and of to great thrength, to bee now to flow to come forwards to Saint Michaels Towne, that had neither Ditch nor Wall about it, they being already landed

Eut now approached the time of the yeere, that brings withit violent stormes, and extreame foule weather to those Ilands. In regard whereof, as also for that opportunitie was now past of doing any more good to our felues, or damage to our Enemies; vpon the meeting of the whole Fleet before Villa Franca, a generall commandement was given, that all forts should with all freed repaire abound their owne Ships, for the Wind and Seas began to rife too high to ride there any longer. And now our last worke, was to prouide for our returning againe into England: And therupon all the half and preparation that could bee, was made with the helpe of the small Pinnaces and Boates to conuey all our troupes aboord. Wherein, the best fort of Commanders spared no paines nor trauaile, and especially our Generall himselfe, who in his owne person was twice in very great danger of tumbing into the Seas, about the imbarking of the Souldiers, in overcharging his own Boat with those varuely people, among it whom at such times, it is hard to keep any order or moderation. And much trouble there was (confidering the rough weather, and how the Seas rowled) to get all our Land menaboord. Befides, our Ships began to find more tickle ryding 70 in that wild Road, then wee should have done eight dayes before at Gratiofa, where wee lost the Indian Fleet by tarrying one night. But now at our departure from Villa Franca, for a farewell the Spaniards and Portugues prefented vs with a brave skirmish, which being throughly answe-Knights, made, red, the Generall there did make certaine Knights. Our Army being thus brought aboord, and many ficke men amongst them, by reason of their lauish diet ashoare, where they more weak ened themselves then the Every. This Towne also was left intire, neither fired not demolished, But whon what considerations I know not, whelfe out of gratitude for the hospitalitie, Oade, Corne, and Salt, which it had alreadic yeelded : or elfe out of a provident regard to leave them in cafe to bee able to entertaine vs another time, or rather for some pettie ransome to some particular perfons that were more capable then our Generall, in vouchfafing to take any benefit whatfo- 30 euer. For fure I am, that fome reason there was, if I could light on it, wherein the Oademongers, and Corne Merchants might doe well to helpe mee, for they (I thinke) can ayme neerest to

Their returne.

Stills.

the marke.

The ninth of October, 1 597. wee fet faile from Villa Franca for England, with a faire leading winde for three or foure dayes together, and then it grew scanter and icanter, and at last starke nought and flat in our teeths, with fuch great flor nes, foule weather, and exceeding high grown Seas, as that many of our Fleet were much puzzeled in the nights in falling foule one of another, Insomuch that the Mary Rose, by meere carelesnesses of the Master, and his Mates, had like to liane stemmed the Wast fore, if wee had not beene very carefull and diligent to avoid the sudden and emminent danger : which, yet wee escaped to nerrowly, as that the Mary Rose, with her 40 Beake head, toreaway all the Gallery on the Lardboord fide of the Wallfpite. This storme on a fudden separated all the Fleet, and wee in the Wastipite after this shocke, had fundry dangerous leakes breake out vpon vs , in such fore , as that much to doe wee had by pumping and all other meanes to keepe her aboue water, being a very new thip, but withall the weakest built Vessell that ever Iwam in the Seas of her burden, and carrying tuch great store of huge Ordnance as shee did, most of the which wee were inforced to strike downe into hold, to ease her labouring sides that hoursly were like to flye afunder. Befides all this, wee were in fo great want of Fresh-water and drinke, as that I offered to give to one of the Victuallers of the Fleet, fixe Chefts of Su-Want of water. gar, for fixe Hog sheads of Fresh-water, and yet could not have it at any hand ! Infomuch as wee were faine to begin to fer our great Stills on worke, to prouide for the worft the best wee could. 12 For if the storme had longer held in that violence, wee might have taken the choice, whether we would haue beene drenched'in the Salt-water, or choaked aboord our Ship for want of frest. For with the extreamitie of this Northeafterly forme, we were put-back cleane from our course and coalt, into no little def paire. And as wee in the Waftfpite, fo were all the reft of the Fleet (as I after learned) difperfed atunder, infomuch that fearcefly two flips in all the Nauie kept company together. But at lait it pleased God, to fend we more faire and it windes, wherewith wee brought our felues againe into our due course, and within three or foure daves wee began to meet with one another, stragbing and ranging in the Seas. And after that, wee in the Wall pight chanced alto to defery our Generall, by his mayne Flag (as farre as wee could ken) wayted on onely with two little Barkes, who fixe or feuen dayes before, was attended with fourescore layle of 60 good Ships. A true type of this worlds inconftant pempe, which the winde and Seas did faithfully teach vs not to build too much vpon. And I would our noble Generall, for his owns fake and better fortune, had made that good observation thereof.

When wee had thus met our Generall, jand had hayled and faluted que another, with all the

joy that might bee, wee conferred of our course, and began to consult thereof with the adulse of our Mafters and Pylots. Wherein, ours in the Wast-fright somewhat varyed from the opinion of the Generals Nauigatours, but yet we submitted our ielues, and our skills to the wisedome and authoritie of his Ship, whose Directions wee were to follow. And withall, wee made knowne vnto his Lordship our great leakes, and scarsitie of Drinke, who told vs very Honourably, that we should want no helpe that hee could yeeld vs, and therefore he straightly of arged vs to keene his course, and to follow his Light, which wee did obserue, though our Maiter was very vnwilline thereunto, affuring himfelfe, that our Generals Matter was miftaken, and befides his courfe. by too much crediting the periwasions and Art of one John Danis a great Nauigator reputed,

10 who at that time tayled much of his Pilotage, and coniccture for the Sleene, to the no little hazard of the whole Fleet, as afterwards was seene. During this forenamed Storme, fundry Birds came flying into our Ships , when wee were two hundred leagues from our owne Coaft. First. there fell into vs an Onle, then a Taffell, and a Falcon, one of the which wee tooke, and brought Birds. into England, then at the laft a Done lighted on our Maine-yard, which we all liked well, and tooke it as a prefage of faire weather towards, and fo (thankes bee to God) it succeeded presently after two dayes. After wee had thus met with our Generall, and being well aduanced on our way for the Sleene, and as we coniectured not farre from the entrance of the Channell, wee began of all hands to fall a founding for ground, and the next day found ir, though indeed by that founding I faw few the wifer, or the more affured of the Coast. For it was the Banke of sucr. but

20 none could fay fo, nor then fo judge it, but onely the Matter of our Ship, whose name was Broadbant, a carefull man and a right good Marriner. For in the Generals thip, they were all of a contrary opinion, and according to their Errour shaped their courts, with straight commandement given to vs, and to the reft that were in his traine, to follow his Light and course. The which we did very diligently, my felfe indeed being most in fault for it. For the Master was losth to to doe. but that I vrged our dutie to the Generals commandement, and our danger in breaking it by former experience. And therefore I watched, and flood by the Helme, and Bitackle, most part of that night, to fee it performed, though with much repining of the Matter, and his Mates, against this dangerous Course as they tearme it.

This founding of ours, fo much in practice, and yet many times bringing no great certainty withall, 30 makes me now call to minde, an odde conceit and speech of a Spanish Prisoner, which the Generall game me in this Tourney, but never yeelded me other Ransome then some faire promises, and smooth discourses: For bee after confened or bribedhis keeper (a Captaine of a Pinnace) to whom I had committed him in charge, and very cleanely conneyed bimselfe away, without ever bidding me farewell. Howbest there found better fruites of their Prisoners, which the Generall game unto them.

This Spaniard of mine was a Gentleman, and a Souldier, but had of late geeres, traded the West Indies by may of Merchandize : With whom I one day talking and discoursing of their Voyages and Nawie ations (wherein hee was very well experienced) amongst wher things bee told me, that in their Nania gation from the Indies, they fought out Spaine in a more certaine and gallant manner, then wee did England, For (faid he) wee seeke out our Coast aiost with our Eyes, by the Heavens, by the Sunne. and

40 Starres, and with the vice of Art, and Instruments, w buch seldome or never fayles. But you (laid be) that feeke for England, when you are to runne into narrow Seas, are (as I heare fay) inforced for your fureft Directions (like men blindfold) to fearch under the water, and to ferape with Lead and Tallow to the bottome for Bankes, Sands, and Shelnes, as if you would rake Hell for instructions; to finde out the Channell, which you call the Sleeve, and yet for all your foundings, are oftentimes mistaken. I answered bim againe, indeed it was true, that our Humilitie taught vs, to goe by the ground : Whereas their Pride led them to gaze about the Clouds, and by that meanes fo dazeled their Eyes, as that they did often Sumble upon such men of Warre, that now vied as well to found Spanish Pockets, as the English Sleene. Whereat my Spaniard smiling, and shaking his Head, said, bee could not well denie it, bassing so lately made too true experience thereof, For indeed bee was throughly rifled and ranfackt of good short Wares,

30 before that ever bee came to my hands. These words of his I remembred, and found true upon our sonndings, and the uncertaine consectures thereof, with varieties of opinions.

For after wee had all found ground, all that Night wee held on so precisely in following our Generals light, as that very earely in the Morning, with the first peepe of day, wee in the Wast-fright looking about, found our selves on the North-fide of Sylley. Which when with cold comfort wee had perfectly made, and perceived with all our narrow escapes in that darke Night, hard alongft the Rockes called the Bifton, and his Clarkes : wee began of all hands to looke out for our comforts. And then wee difcryed our Generall and divers with him. advanced fome three leagues before vs, bearing in with all Sayles towards the Coast of Wales.

The morning was very close and foggie, and the Generall steering North-east, in stead of Eaft and by North, ranne right with the Sands of the Welch Coaft, on which in that darke weather hee had stricken; and perished, if hee had held on, but a few houres longer. But on the contrary, although wee reichied not to lofe the fight of his Lanthorne, yet wee kept our felues as farre to the East as wee could, and yet wee were scarce able to double Siller, but feil close aboord it, and a little to the North of it, at the breake of day. All which when I perceived Bbb bbbb b

(he later Watch being mine, and the Reare Admirai, being gone to rest) I did instantly coman the Mafter Gunner to fnoot off a great Piece to cause them to looke about, but both one ni it is, and the Matter Gunner were fo mad at me for forcing them to follow this course, asthat out hardly have suffered a warning Piece to bee shor, but said, they deserved to taste the or their owne wilfulnesse, having brought themselves and all the Fleet, cleane out of the into this danger. And out of very rage and discontent, these men had quite forgotten all

Charitie, and would by no meanes have bestowed a shot upon them, to alter them fi m that vnfafe courie, but that I vrged their Dutie, and inforced them to shoot, and shoot a-

o line three or foure times, one after another, much against their wills.

Whereupon we might within a little time, plainly percente our Admirall with all his Traine, to to tacke about finding their owne Errours, as afterwards they confessed. And therefore presently they beat it up, to double the Cape of Silley, thereby to enter the Sleene, which with muchadoe they performed. But we in the Wast-forgbe, being now by this time shot in along it the North fide of Cornewall, almost as farre as Saint Ines, our thip being extreame weake and leakie, and our Drinke and Water come to the last cast, at very bare allowance, wee durft not again put to the Seas in these wants, and in a Vessell so ill able to beat it vp against the winde, to double againe the Point of Siller, whereby to recouer the Sleene. And therefore food along it the Coaft, and that night anchored before Saint Imes, where wee found fundry Spanish Carauels, and Flee-boates of the Spanif Fleet, which was fet out under the Adelantado, to have incountred vs at our returne from the Hands, but were all dispersed and toffed with the same Storme, that before had scattered 20 vs. which fell our very happily. For if wee had met, wee must have tryed the Battell, chiefely by Boording, or elfe trufted to our Sayles, for that our best and greatest Ordnance (for the ease of our Ships in these stormes) were stricken downe under hold. So that wee should have found great disaduantage, to have incountred with a Navie, comming strong and fresh from the Maine, and wee tired, and feattered a funder, with a long and painfull Voyage. Herein was Gods fauout and mercy mightily shewed towards all sides : For by this Storme, which so furiously for the time afflicted vs, were wee, and hat Spanish Fleet under the Adelantado seuered, and kept from incountring, which had coft much blood, and mischiese: and to say a truth, in all likelihood, the worst might have fallen to our shares.

For when wee had lefe the Hands and were once croffe fayled for England, I observed, that be- 20 fore the Storme, divers of our best Ships, made all the haste they could homewards, never following nor attending the Admirals course, nor light. Which is an Errour too much vied amongit vs , and very diforderly and dangerous; as would have beene well found, if the Adelantado had then met with any of those straglers, or with the Admirall himselse homewards bound, so sten

derly accompanied. Which manner of disorder and scattering, in the Conduct of a Royall Nauie, especially info

long a Voyage, is very fit to bee ftraightly reformed.

Diforderly

wards.

hafte home-

Death of Sir

Lord Bargo.

These Spanish Flee-boates and Caravels, had made many landings by stealth, on that side of Cornewall, and put the Countrey in great frights, and amazements : especially, vpon the report of a great Fleet, that was comming after them for England, Whereupon our Reere Admirall from 40 before the Saint Ines, left the Seas, and went a Land, to take some order for the Countrey of Cornewall, whereof hee was then her Maiesties Lieutenant, seeing it then in much amazement and feare, and so meant to goe over land to Plansuth, there to meet with our Generall.

From the Road of Saint Ines, the next morning, wee in the Waft-fright fet fayle for Kingroad, and met with fuch foule weather, as that ouer against the flat Holmes, slice brake againe her Maine yard, which was before broken, and new fished in the beginning of this Voyage. But at last, with much adoe wee brought her about, to Kingroad, and within a few dayes after moored her fafe in Hungroad; where I tooke speedie order for the paying, and discharging of her

men, at the Spaniards cost, and also for the repayring of her decayes. By this time wee also had newes, that our Admirall and the rest of our Fleet, were safely met, 50 and arrived at Plimouth. And at the same instant also wee had intelligence, by a small man of Brafill, but newly come from Corke in Ireland, that Sir Iohn Norris Prelident of Munfter, and

the Lord Burgh Deputie of Ireland, were both lately deceased.

Of which two men, her Maiestie and the Realme had no small losse, being both Martiall men of as great worth, and feruice, as England bred in many yeeres before. And although it be no part of this matter to speake of them, yet their Deathes, being divulged to vs at the same time, cannot be thought vnfit, or vnworthy (by the way) heere to be remembred and lamented.

After I had thus taken order with the Officers of the Ship at Briffoll, I received Letters from the Lord Treasurer, and the Lord Admirall, for the accomplishing of that, which I had already (out of due confideration) gone in hand withall : I meane the discharging and paying of the 60 Marriners and Souldiers, being to the number of foure hundred men, which would have growne toa great, and needleffe expense, to have kept them in pay and victuals untill fach time as I could haue fent vnto the Court, to receiue directions backe againe for the fame. And therefore did first take up monies upon credit, and then by the Drum make knowne in Eriston, that there

CHAP.14.8.2. Thrift the fuell of Magnificence, Privat gaines, publike Hor fleach. 1969

were Sugars. Brailwood, and Fernanbuck aboord or Ships, which I would preferrly make fale of, to those that would give most for it, and not merchand it vinder hand, hor in ferrer, to the premdice and deceming of her Maieftie. And therefore with the knowledge and admice of the Mafter, the Purfer, and Boatiwaine of the Ship, and the Cuftomer, and Searcher of Briffow, I landed those Wares in fate Cellers, and fold them to the best Chapmen in publique, testified under the hands of their Officers of the Citie, and of the Ship, for my discharge in that behalie, and made thereof five hundre's pounds. The which lumme I delivered to one Asken then Puiter of the Wast-forght, to the end that hee by his Booke might pay the Marriners, and the Souldiers by the Powle, as a care of mine for those poore-men vinder my Charge, which was duely performed.

10 : The which I have beene the more precise to remember and notifie, for that I took e no small paines and care, in getting those Sugars, and Brasill-wood abourd os, out of a torne Brasillimm, that was ready to founder in the Seat before Saint Michaels, and abandoned to any that would adventure to ose absord her, to feich away the lading. Which bufineffe (in that vacant time that the Arpene lay at Villa Franca, and we before S. Michaels Towne) I put my felfe, and my Marriner wonto. And I had not fo much passes and travell in the getting, as trouble and vexation afterwards to preferre it, whileff it was abourd, when we came to Kingroad, from the purloyning and flealing of the Martiners, and Officers of the Ship. And to fay no more but a truth, I dare thus much anouch, and inflifie, that of there had beene in Some other of her Maiesties hips the like regard for these goods that were gotien, and of the Prizes taben in this lourney, and as faithfully answered as were thefe, that then for all the croffes and errours that 20 had bappened, it had fully returned to ber Maieffie, the double value of all the Charget, he had beene at for this Voyage. But it was frange to jee, what careleffe courfes were held in all fuch altions. as were let out by the State, and what poore returnes were made agains into the Exchequer. And therefore more Grange, that the Prince could Subsist fo often to fet out, fuch chargeable Voyages, without any manner of getting, more then to particuler persons. For fo jell it out before in the Indian Voyage, when Sando Domingo, and Cartagena were taken, and facte by Sir Francis Drake, and when Cades in Spaine was loffein many Surprised, and facht by the E 1g in Armie, where was infinite wealth. But that of Lisbons in Portu- Expeditions. gall, undertaken by Sir Iohn Nortis, where the Suburbes did fo abound with Merchandize and Spice-Tie, being wholly at the mercy and difficient of our Armie, was to be excused; for that our Ships kept not promise with him, in comming up the River, that should have both assisted the land Armie with Munic

20 tion and Villuals, and also carried away those Spiceries and rich Merchandize : wherem the Sea-men were greatly manting, and taxed by the generall voyce. But in this Voyage, wee all faw and knew, that there were besides Brail men, three good Prizes taken that came from the Havana, laden with Cochrmella, and other rich Merchandize, besides the Silver, Gold, Pearle, Cinet, Mushe, Amber-greece, which was amongst the Passengers. And those three Prizes (whereof one was about 400. Tunnes, by the report of those Merchants that same in them) were faid, and valued to bee richly worth above four bundred thouland Duckets. At the taking of them I flood in our Gallerie in the Walt fpight, with the Reere Admirall, and wee halled and called unto some, to suquire of their lading and Merchandize, and from what places they came, whereby wee learned, that they were come from the Houana, very rich, and at the least to the value abone faid. Wherenpon our Reere Anmiral faid unto me in private, that although wee an should be little the better for these rich Prizes, yet he was beartily glad for our Generals sake : because

they would in good fort give contentment to ber Marefre, fo that there should bee no reprint against the poore Lord, for the expense of the Voyage, And for my better fatisfaction in the value of them. I had canfed mine owne Prisoner to give me notice of the Ships, wherein bee had Adnentures, and according to the Rates thereof fet downe upon his owne knowledge: those three Ships could not be so little worth, as they all had formerly affirmed. Now if wee doe but looke into the bufbandrie and promidence of former Ages. and of the mightiest Empire, and best governed State that over was, wee foull plainely fee, that they ever scoke a more strict and just account of the benefit of their gettings and Victories. And that it was an espescall repard of the Roman Confuls, and Generals, at their returns from a profeerous Warre, to render a. plentifull gaine into the publique Treasure, which made their State still able to subsist in their great all to ons. And many times their greatest and worthiest Captaines were deepely called in question, for incise-

St. ling any part of fuch gettings, as amongst others, was that famous Scipio, furnamed Africanus, profecalled in that kinde by the Petil j, norwithstanding his many great services to the Common wealth. But 3 13 1 11 11 what became of all thefe our gettings God knowes. Onely I beare, that there was a Composition made afterwards with her Maieftie for the Cochynella, and other Merchandize, wet to a third part of that it was morth. For neither that, nor yet any of the other riches, could truely come to light or publique nowledge. because they were never fauthfully certified under the hands and testimonies of sufficient Officers, when they were first taken : nor any of that which was preserved fold when wee came home , but onely to the Buyers advantage. And yet in Conclusion, they that had fo played the wife Stewards, in fo providing for themselves, and their followers, had all the grace and gaine, from those that had more carefully and

60 inftly intended the publique Sernice. But this generall neglect of truth and merit throughout the world, is the came, that to few doe apply to fellow those sincere and unprofitable courses : especially, seeing how many doe daily, by fraud and flatterie, finde shorter and smoother mayes to Honours, wealth, and preferment : Enen beyond all measure and expellation.

CHAP.14.5.2.

The Conclusion of the Worke, with some later Advertisements touching His Maiesties Care for VIRGINIA.

VVE have now compassed the World in the Courses of so many Planets, every of which had a peculiar wandering, and yet none erring from the publike benefit of the Vniuerse. And as in Geometricall compasses one soocies to fixed in the Centre, whiles the other mooveth in the Circumsterence, so is it with Purchas and his Piligrimes, in this Geographicall compassing: they have their owne motions, but ordered in this Circumsterence, from, for, and by him which abideth at home in his Centre, and sever travelled two hundred miles from Thaxted in Effex (lately adorned and augmented with Franchises by his Maiestie) where hee was borne. All their lines tend to this Centre, and this Centre to the Basis and Ground thereof, that is to his Countrey, to the honour and benefit whereof, he and all his are due. All Nations dance in this Round to doe the English service, and English Travellers here enion the Mayne, others the By, to attend, and with their Travels to perfect the English, at less the knowledge of the World to the 20 English.

The Map of England.



Yea, in this English Centre also I have chosen the Centre of that Centre, the Renowmed Name of Queene Elizabeth, to which, because Mortalitie hath deprived vs of Her Person, wee have added that of King I ames, the All that is lest vs of Queene Elizabeth, and more then that will in further perfection of Sexe and Arts. With those aussicious Names, as the saire States in the Constellations of both Poles, our Pilgrimes begaine their Progresse; by the Light of those two Eyes of Great Britiains, they have taken view of the World, and therefore heere wee end in our Pilgrimage with 10 those two aussicious Names.

His Maiestie first (for Brute is uncertaine) hathcombined a Trinitie of Kingdomes into an Vnitie, Fecite on in gentem waters, & made the Ocean the Wall to his Inheritance, hath rooted out the wonted barbarisme of Borderers, of Seestish Fewds, of English Duells, of trish Bogges; hath confirmed and settled those cruder and more indigested beginnings of our prospertite; shath enioyed sourraignes tie longer then euer did any of Eritaines Sourraignes (and still of kill may we long long enioy him) hath giuen somanisod securitie against the extreamest and most stadingor, both in number, weight and worth of Royall pledges.

The Map of Great Brittaine and Ireland.



He is beyond comparison compared with others, a meere transcendent; beyond all his Predecessors, Princes of this Realme; beyond the neighbouring Princes of his own times, beyond the conceits of subjects dazled with such brightness Beyond our victorious Debora not in sex alone, but as Peace is more excellent then War, and

1.527.10

1072

Salomon then David, in this also that He is, and we enjoy his present Sunshine : in regard of posteritie not onely sowing thereto the fruit of his bodie, but of his learned mind, like a Salomon indeed by voluminous Writings, and not (which is more viesuall to Princes, with apophthegme-flashes, recorded by others like Saul sometime among the Prophets; a Miracle and Oracle both, this in polemicall. politicall, problematicall, apocalypticall, positive Theology, and Bookes of denotion also; that, in that his Royall body hath had the honour not to be polluted with women; aboue men, aboue Salomon. And as wee haue trauelled abroad that to wee may bring forraine rarities home, wee find no greater raritie abroad or at home then his Maiestie, the Father of the Clergie, the raiser of so many Families to honour, and of honours to Families; whose bountie and clemencie none deny, (let others beware least they perhaps have enill eyes, because his is good) so honoured of his Subjects with awfull loue, with louing awe, that himselfe hath professed no King herein his superiour : and we can , and all History will professe with vs. that England neuer enjoyed better daies then under her deceased Mother, and the present Pater Patria, who hath secured Britaine in peace and prosperitie, whiles all Christian Kingdomes haue beene shaken with warres: and that which alone hath escaped the Lions, hath beene bitten by the Adder, the Spanish Dominions being coasted, braued, spoiled of thousands of their people, besides wealth and security. by the basest of enemies, the Algier Pirates. Thus at home doth Great Britain enion this Gem of Goodnes, the best part of the Ring of the worlds Greatnes: & abroad, we fee that as Gods Steward to others also, His Maiestie hath ballanced the neerer World by his prudence, by inflice of commerce visited the remoter, by trueft fortirude without wrong to any man conquered the furthest North, and by instell temperance disposed the overflowing numbers of his Subjects, not in Intrusions and Inualions of weaker Neighbours, but in the spacious American Regions, 10 (some thinly, others not all inhabited) to breed New Britaines in another World. We have given Voyages thorow this Booke, and being now returned home and fixed on so illustrious a Name, I meane to travell no more, here I hang vp my Pilgrims weeds ; here I fixe my Tabernacle, it is good to bee here : wee have brought all the World to England, England it selfe to the greatest of her Soueraignes, King IAMES.

But yet the mention of his Maiesties Plantations, makes me gratefully to mention his gracious care of the same, euen since the former Virginian Relations were printed. I then left Virginia with some griefe and sorrow, because of her 4 distracted Children and Fathers, the divisions and mutuall distasts of the Company here and Planters there, fighing to God for them, who hath put in his Maiefties heart to compaffionate these his Subiects, and having appointed the Gouerament to be according to a Commission in that Gase directed, hath to further Virginias gaine beene content to suffer the losse of many thousands yearly in his Royall Eustomes arising out of Tobacco (so I have heard delivered in open Court) that so only that of the New Plantations may bee vendible till the Colonie may re-

His Maiestie is also pleased to send a Running Armie of Souldiers to scoure the 9 Countrey of the vnneighbourly malicious Naturalls; and to secure the planters from their privie ambushments. For openly they dare not attempt, but lurking in fecret places attend advantages. I feare not but so bright a Sunshine will quickly produce bleffed effects.

Of their undertakers for three yeeres Tobacco, I lust not to speake, because I wish, and even from that undertaking, shortly expect better commodities from thence then Tobacco. I cannot but magnifie His Maieslies care, and manifest that allo of the Honorable Lords of the Councel, who after diligent learch of Virginian Affaires the last yeere 1622, appointed Captaine John Harney, Master John Porey, Mafter Abraham Perfey, Mafter Samuel Maribens to fearch further ime the dilea-Resand possibile remedies of that plantation. In Februarie and March last a genes

rall Affembly was fummoned, and questions propounded to Sir Francis Wias Gonernour and the faid Affembly: First, what places in the Countrey were best and most proper to be fortified or maintayned both against Indians or other Enemics. Secondly, concerning the prefent flate of the Colonie in reference to the Sauages. Thirdly, touching the hopes really to be conceived of the Plantation, and fourthly roughing the Meanes thereunto, &c. Their answere I know not whether I may publish in other things; In this one I presume, for better confirmation of what hath beene faid before to incite and confirme Mens affections to Virginia: namely to their answere to the third, subscribed (as the rest) by about thirty chiefe mens hands. We hold it to be one of the goodliest parts of the Earth, abounding with Nanigable rivers full of varietie of Fish and Fowle; falling from high and steepe Mountaines, which by generall relation of the Indians are rich with Mines of Gold, Silner and Copper: another Sea lying within fixe dayes journey beyond them. into which other Rivers descend. The soile fruitfull and apt to produce the best forts of commodities, replenished with many Trees for severall vies, Gums, Dyes, Earths and Simples of admirable vertues; Vines and Mulberry Trees growing wild in great quantities; the Woods full of Deare, Turkies, and other Beafts and 20 Birds, Sir Thomas Gates and Sir Thomas Dales reports to the Company, concerning those praises were in no part hyperbolicall, nor any Countrey more worthy of a Princes care and supportance. Other reports concerning the healthfulnesse of the aire (especially where the ground is cleered of woods) and other needfull prouisions of the plantation in numbers of Men and Armes (which some had hyperbolically diffraced) and in all other necessaries, seeing the late massacre hath not permitted it better. I am glad & rejoyce that it is no worfe, and hope and pray for the fortunate increase thereof daily. I rejoyce also to heare (by one lately returned thence, Master Morell a Minister and man of credit) that the affaires of New England are There is re-30 thriuing and hopefull, which two Colonies of Virginia and New England (with all port also of an their Neighbours) God make as Rachel and Leah , which two did build the house of English Colo-Israel, that they may multiply into thousands, and there in large the Israel of God, Northin Guieand the Churches Catholike confines, doing worthily in America, and being fa- na full contimous in Great Britaine. These, with the rest of his Maiesties Dominions, and his nuing. neerest and deerest possession, Prince Charles his Highnest, the Count Palatine, Ruth 4.11.

the Lady Elizabeth (more thining, more pure in her fiery trialls, and like the

preater weight) with the sweet and princely Fruits of her wombe, still multiplied (like the Ifraelites vnder the Croffe) God preserue and prosper vnto the Maiesty of our Dread Soueraigne, the mighty Defender of the True Faith, KING IAMES;

preffed palme, and her Royall Godmother, spreading her boughes the more by

Amen O AMEN.

The end of the tenth Booke.

FINIS.



ALPHABETICALL TABLE OF THE PRINCIPALL

things contained in the flue Bookes of the fourth Part of Purchas his Pilgrimes.

Ays a Prenince in Florida, 1553 Abayia formozo, a Harbour in Brafile, where is found great fore of Amber preice, Coral, Brafil-wood, Filb. coc. Abaufango Retambuero a great mountaine in Brasile. Abaufanga, the name of a valiant Aquatorke, a place fitnate in the Camball. Abermot, a great Lord of Mawoo-Aboro la jangerous Sands & clifts in the West-Indies betweene the Cape and Spirito Santo, 1222 Abraham Cock an Englishman maried in America. Abrioio great Shoalds in the Latitude of 21 and 22 Degrees from Hil aniola mestward, 1834 Acara a towne in Peru, 1446 Acacoustomed a Riner in Mawoofhen. 1874 Acapulea, the lituation and description thereof, 1418.1446.1562 Acarewanas, Indian Kings & Lords so called, Acari, a Tonne, where is made the best and oreatest store of wine in all Peru. Accomack, a River in Virginia, Acela, a Tonne in Florida, 1531 Achele, a Tonnein Florida, 1536 Achneres, a certaine people fo called: their natures, habitations, fashions, and commodities, Acle, a Gulph fo called, 1244 Acoma, a Towne of 6000 Indians, she passage to which is by stayres I bewen out of arocic, 1561, 1562 Acuco, a Pronince in America,

Acus, a Prosince in America. 1560 Acuti, a beaft of Brafile, like a Adams Tree in Brafile. L. Admirall of England his deferned commendations. Adultery, how punished by the Indians, 1159.by the Æthiopians, 1234, by the Guianians, 1272 Aquacay, a Pronince in Florida, Coast of China on the North, 1412 Age renerenced among the Sausges, Ague, a speciall medicine for the Aio, an Iland in Orenoco. 1248 Aire causing swelling in the legges, Alaqua, a risser in Brasile, the depth thereof, and how passed, 1239 Alimama, a Town in Florida, 1545 sallcatrace a ranenous Sea-fowle de-Alegranca, one of the most northerly Ilands of the Canaries, 1155.the inhabitants and commodities ther-

S. Alexio an Hand described, 1238 Alexandro Vrfino bis relations of Terra Firma, and Peru, 1418, Alexander, viz, Sir William Alexander Knight, his tatent for the Plantation of Nous Scotis, Alfonso Gabrero his comming to the riner of Plate, Algernoone-Fort in Virginia kept by Captaine Dauics, 1748 All Nelico, a tree in Brasil very precious and rich, good against bruifes, 1229 Allen the Cardinall promifeth the

Alo, a kinde of drinke weed by the Spaniards in the West Indies, like Braggat, made of hot spices, 1174 A tamaca-towne. Aluarez Nunnez, made Generall of the Spaniards in Brafile, his men morable explises, &c. 1356, &c lequ. His Bip-wracke, land-trawell, and famine, ibid. His difrespect among his souldiers, 1357. fedition among his men, 1359. His dissembled sicknesse and trecherous cruelty toward the Indians. 1360. Hee is captinated and fent into Spaine, and the differnion en-fung ibid. Vide Nunnez. Arnaie, a towne in Florida, 1592 Amam Buquano, two Ilands in Brafile. Amapajo Riner. 1248 Amana River. Amariocapana vallies, and sheinhabitants thereof, Amazons country, 1559, 1218-The names of all the Rivers and Nations betweene it and the Brabiffes, 1286. The description of their nature, country, customes. and commodities at large, Amazon women, their falhious, and

1237,1240,1313,1377, 1796 Ambition among Sauages, 1213 Ambros, a beaft in Sthiopia, Ambush of the Caribes, Amecaxo, Indians of Bratle, 1210 Amichas-towne in the river Marwin,

countrie, 1358. Vide Women.

Amber, how called by the Indians,

Ambergreece where found, 1224,

America, 1221. How divided be-Crowne of England to the Duke | tweene the Spiniards and Portina

gals, 1435. The frife about it, Americaes strange beasts, plants, etc. 1225. 1326. & lequ. Strange Birds, 1329, 1330. Bees and Butterfies, ibid. The ener of the Americans, 1220. Americaesmedicinable plants, and venemous, 1330. With leaves of incredible bionelle . 1 2 22. The cause f their warres, 1 3 33. Their irreconciliation with their aduer aries ibid. Their affemblies, weapons, skill, archery, firstagems, their clamorous ficraenesse, capsines, 1335,1336 vid. Indians and Brafilians.

Anato, a berry or cod wherewith the Indians paint, 1251 Anapermia a riner, how situate,

Anaquia, fanages so called, 1299
Anaica, aplaces Affrica, 129
The substainest stored, 124
The substainest stored, 124
borness wader the Sanne; most
blacke of any, their religion, concubines, countrie, and commodisics; they are right under the line.

Anebas, a place in the Indies, 1248. certaine Moores (o called, 1250 Angola, a place in Ethiopia, 1212 The inhabitants, markets, lawes, King pompe et rites of obey fance. controuersies, et c. 1222. Their Religion, ibid. Description of the Country, their Canery to the Portingals, their coloured cleathes, prestelt disgrace, their feeding 3 lodging, 1233, 1234, their manner of taking Elephants, their coleblacke colour, frature, punishment of adultery, circumcision, how eafily their country may bee taken from the Portingals, 1234. yeerly shipped from it 28000 Claues.

Anhelim, Savages in the Maine of Braille, 1199 Anthors that are unfernicable, how mended without iron, 1390 Angra; the chiefe towne of Tercera, one of the Acres, the defirption and fortification shereof, 1668,

Anima, a bird in Brasile, that hath on his beake a medicinable horne, 1306 Anneda, a tree very sourraigne against the foresty. 1623 Atmes Hill the stream of it, 1142

S. Annes Hand, 1379
Aftorxi, «Towns in Florida the inhabitants whereof were taken by

the Spaniards,

Ant-Bearc, a beaft with a mofe of a
yard long, deceiving Ants with
putting forth bis tongwe, 1214 It
is also called Tamandros, 1216,

Ante, a place in Florida, the commodities thereof, 1503, 1504
Anteperittate, and the effects thereof, 1617

S. Anthonie, a garifon towns of the Spaniards in Florida, 1182 Sr. Antony Ralife forced to returne for England.

S'Autonio, a Riner, 1223, the deforpitien, commodities, &c. 1239
Artois, a Pronise neere Peur, nhofe
inhabitants worshipped Types
and great Stacks of 23 and 30
Types (125) Rec. Hot relation of the
fost lone, and hermelfet. 1427

Apalachen a place supposed very well flored with gold nit Florida, 1901 the clieft enough thereof described, their manner of building, and fortification, their commedities of build; sowlet, and plants: a geographical description of their courtie, their assume the Spaniards, &c. 1502,1503

Ge. 1502,1503 Apamatica, a country in Virginia, 1688

Apamatucke-riser.

Apanawaspek, a great river in Mawooshen, fring West and by South of Ramasloc, 1874 Apanmenseck, a great river in Mawooshen, ibid. Apes with beards and mustachees.

Apetupa, certaine Indians so called,

Apigapigtanga, certaine sanages so called in Brasile, 1298

Aponig, a great river not far from
Aponik, 1874
Aponik, a great river in Mawoo-

fhen, ibid.
Appisham, a towne on the river Aponik, ibid.
Apples of America, 1332 Apples at

ppies of America, 1332 Apples at Angola and Auanus, rleafant and wholesome but enting iron like Aqua-fortis, 1245. Apples in Guiana causing sleepe to death,

Aquirini Indians, 1299 Aquiguiva-Brassitians, 1299 Aquixo, a great Lord in Florida,

Aracawa Riuer, 1251. The commodities and inhabitants thereabout, 1251,1263 Aracuaizti, certaine Judian fanages,

1550 Araomi, an Ilandin Orenoco, 1248 fe of a Ararape, certaine Brafilian inhabitation in tants, 1298 Arawagatos, certaine Indians neere Orenoco.

Orenoco, 1248
Arbadaos Indians, their hungry
life, 1517
Archers, very expert and frong,
1502. Archers then him here

Archers, very expert and strong, 1503. Archers that kill birds slying silbes swimming beasts running,

Archers-hope, a point of land in Virginia so called, 1688. Archers relation of a Fleet sent to Virginia, 1733,1734 Arcias, certaine clists in Braileso called.

apt. Argals voyage and faces [6, 1758, x feq. His relation of his act in Wirefundantan 1613, his getting flore of corne for the plantation, 1764, 1765. His taking priforer Powhatons daughter, and freeing Englishmen, 1768, his returne, ibid. His valour in dissipation of the Fréch, 1768, 1808

Attrada funified against the English in the West Indies, their fight, 1398, & icq. An armada prepared against the Lord Howard, Admirall of her Maiesties steet at the Acres, 1114

ATTOWN running in at the menth of a man, and comming out at the pools, yet the mon faced, 1206, e.frowet size or size in one body escaping ibid. One med turns yet revues in one man that sixed after 4 boures, 1219, A hundred revowes in two men before they feld, 1256. Arrows of Indians that runne through a Target Pishell.

1688 1688

Atrowhotacks, certaine Indians of
Virginia, having but 30 fighting
men. 1692

St. Arthur Gorge, his relation of a voyage to the Iles of Azores, 1938

Articles offered to Port Ricco-men by the Earle of Cumberland, 1163. And received. 1164 Articles propounded by Mr. More to the Company planted in the Bermudas to hee subspicibed to

generaly, 1795
Arraroopana, an entrance into the river Orenocc, 1248
Armes ofed by the Indians, 1361
Aruba Ilina deferibed, 1146, 1246
Aruburguary, a town of the Epcurerini in the indies, 1385
Arwarcas, certaine Indians so called

that dwell in the Wyapoco,1253

Aliapana, the fuft Hand in Oceanque, 248 Aliacona, a Province in Guiana, 1285, Aliawais, certaine Indiana inhabitting the Plaines of Samia, 2448 Alhamabaga, a river in Mawoothen will med from Sagodok, 1875, Allhaw atoms on the river Aponeg in Mawoofhen. 1874

Allhaw a town on the riser Aponeg in Mawoothen, 1874 Aspiner a Gonernor in Nausse veder the great Massisters, his good entertainment of our English for-

Affumption, a place erelled by the Spaciards in the West Indies.

Asticon, a great Lord in Manooshen, 1874. Atabilipa Prince of Peru crastily taken by the Spaniards, and after-

wardsperfidionsly slaine, 1445,1452,1490 1491 Atacames Bay, the situation there-

of, 1401 Atacama, a towne in Peru, 1443 Athul, a pleasant Country neere the River Otenoce, 1248

Riner Otenoce, 1248
Atuhualpa,or Atabalipa, Emperor
of Peru, his warres with his brother, his villory crueltie, &c.

1483,1484,1485
Ataios-Indians, 1516
Atricco, a place five leagues from
Mexico, 1414
Attoca-River, 1248

Attoca-Kiner,
Atturari, certaine inhabitants of the
West Indies,
Anaialii, shirits possessing and vex-

ing the inhabitants of West India, 2213 Auguares, certaine Indians so casted,

Aubri a French Priest, lost in New France, and after many dayes found againe, being almost starued, all his food being a fruit worse

then wild cherries. 1622
Audacity of the English Admirallin
the voyage to the Azores, 1943

Augurati Brafilians, 1299
Autiamque a Pronnee in Florida
described, with the commodules
thereof, 1550, 1551

Axaaplace in America, 1561 Aximocuntla, a place in New Spaine, 1558

Azores Ilands, their number and nomination in particular, why called Azores, and why the Flemmillo Ilands, 1667, 1668. Azores Iles finated in the Atlanticks and Westerne Ocean, between

37 and 40 Degrees, 1982. the initiables of Porting 18 for the street of the Spanish and might be freed from them, and might be freed from them, if him night full with a Concernor the could preselt therefore the Spanish 1859.

Autalan a Pressince neere New Spains.

Ayard, Indian mood frouted, 1851

Ayard, a firefein Teccar. 1671

Ayard, a firme in Storied. 1871

Ayard, a Tome in Storied. 30 for the same of the s

Ayritay a Towne in Blorida, sailed by the Spaniards The towne of reliefe; the commodition and deferintion thereof.

8537

Bagies, a very france Fish in Rio Grand in Florida. 1548 Bahia a Towne in the West-Indies never the Line. 1189 Baldinia, his death by a cup of mol-

Baldinia, his death by a cup of motten Gold which she Indiam forcedhims to drinke, faying, Now glutthy felfe with gold. 1443 Baldinia, a places name neere the

Sonth-fea. 1391. Baldima Port 1442. 1443 Balparizo, a place in America.

Baliamum, of three farts in Tuppan Balic neere Bralile, white, red & llacke, all very admiferous. 1189 Bancke in the New-Jouind Lund knowne by Mariners to been ever by the tellimony of Birds. 1628.

The description of it, and the filting there, ibid. Banner of a Spanish ship, bung up in one of the Churches of Leyden, in token of triumph, 1909 Brothine of Spaniards leaseth no

character as the Indians, 1323
Baptime forbidden by the Denili to
the Saugees, 1564
Baratta, a delicate perfame, and admirable in curing greene wounds,

Barbudos Iland, the description and commodities thereof, 1255, 1256 Ba.ede, an Indian towne, 1364 Bareras Mermethues hils in Pareyna, 1237 Cupt. Barker of Bristowes naniga

tions, 1180 Capt. Backet flaine in Brafile, 1195 Backley, viz. Sir Iohn Backley bis noble refolution, ambition and convage, 1151

Baroti, an India towne, 1364 Barrenneise of women bow diffelled by the Indians, 2303 Barrennis Indian inhabitants, 1349

Batenetic of the Spanior ds in refufing the Earle of Effect his challed lengt.

Bills, group pleity fairment and winparties at Natzachieft. 1859 of Billimento Hands. 1244 A Bath remperately has in Domimics, 108 A Bath comparation.

A Bath temperately has in Dominica, 1138 A Bath caring disert diselect, 128,1128, But es beying meat, 1885 Battlein-Riverth Canada, 1611 Battlel of Sauages, 1218, 1134, 1232,1273,1273,1348, Bathlein-Riverth Canada, 1612 Battlel of Sauages, 1218, 1324, 1322,1273,1273,1348, Bathlein-Riverth Canada, 1885 Bathlein-Riverth Canada, 1612 Battlein-Riverth Canada, 1612 Bathlein-Riverth Canada, 1885 Bat

rell of Sanages with Spannards, 1200,1261 Batts very oreat and noxions, 1284 Baximete a place fertite with fine

Baximete a place fertile with finingold,

Bay of Cods in Canada,

Bay of heate,

ibid

Bay , a towne in Brafile, 1142.

Bayama, a Guife in the West Indies, 1241 Bayamond, a river in Port-Ricco,

Bayas de Sant Antonio, sands en the coufts of Brafile, 1238 Bayshas de Ambrobrio, certaino clifts so called, 1223

Beares tome taught by Sanages in feed of Ladders, to cary the climbers upon trees, 1644 Beares that from 14 Leagues from

the Continent to feed on Birds, 2605 Beafts with armed scales repelling

Iron in America, 1376

A Bealt called Hay that liseth upon haire, 1328

A Bealt with a monstrone sinut.

Beafts hideoufly howling, 1381
Beafts that carie their young ones in a bas under their belly, 1502. A beafts hide of strange forms and

faltson, 1540
Beds of whet kind wed amone the
Sauages, 1188
Beets how kept in the Illands of M

na and Sauona, &c. 1146 Beenes infinitely plentifull, 1171. 1421

Bees without stings, 1364
Belle a voire, a river of Florida,
discovered by the French, 1603
8222 Belligods,

Belligods. 1202 Bengulain Affrica. 1234 Saim Bent, an Ilond in Brafile, Bermuda plantation distrest by Rats denouring their fruits, bid. The

in infinite number, 1796. Their weaknesse and mortality succeeding, bid. & 1797. The predi-Elien thereof portended by Ranens, 1797. Bermudas Plantation mader the gonernment of Maffer.
Moore, ibid. Vnder Captage
Tucker, ibid. Its grawih in henefit and commodities, 1798. Its gouernment by Captaine Kendall and Captaine Birler, ibid, Lis Forts built by Wafter Moore, 1802. Its government by a Triumuirate, ibid. A Church built, much supplies of all necessaries, b. Bernudas plantation-affaires under divers Governours, and the fortification therof at large, 1804-180e.1811. Be muda impregmability . 1822 . Englands naturall and nationall right to plant in Bermudas.

Be muda Ilands infamous for formsand thunder their fituation 1 160. Called the Deui's Hands, 1737; zude, circuit, and latitude. [eafons and comate, 1718 Pearlefiling there ibid. The dan er of armall touther by fligs; their foile, mant of we emons beatts, fruits. Ledars, 1739. Palmes there. and their commodities; trees, Silkewormer, ibid. The reason why shey were not formerly inhabited, ibid. Their want of fre h water, fil erest fore, m. hing of falt there. 1740 The wholefomne fie of she fish, and its can e: store of Whales Fowles , ibid , Wild Hogs and Tortoiles, 1741. Bermudas liked by Sir Thomas Gares, and other Mariners, and preferred before Virginia, 1745. The religions orders in Beismudas under the faid Gouernour, 1746. Bermudas possession saken, their fa-lemmities, Preaching, Admini-Bration of the Sacraments, mariagerites, o.c. 1746. Bermudas. eroffe erofted by Sir Thomas Gos in memorial of his deline-

re, the infeription, 1747. Ber-

mudas plantation by the English,

\$793,1794. Articles proposed to

the plantationers, 1794, Bermn-

dis fore of Ambergracce, 1796.

Bermudas geographically descri-

hed. 1008. The faile, ibid. With other commodities at large 1200. 1800 Sta Another delminis on of statemental excellencies.

Bermuda Cingin Kirginia, 2767, Berries making drinke, of a referi-Stine operation Berria a River, 1306 Beuer-skins very plentifull in Car nada and New England . 1 902 Beuers berm by Sanages 1644 Baracaca & beaft in Brafile Nest

and doors, Biefaie a nation neere the River Parana in the W & Indies, 1:64 B grorgia, Ingrans of Brable 1 2 00 Bird-land, one of the Virgin Hands in the West Indies. Birds incredibly plantifull there.

killerb wish his Sienching free Vinen

Birds francein Brafile, 13 05, 1306 Bi ds that have two venerations. that dance, that found like hels. that have three skins, that have hornes, ibid, Birds that bring tidings of thirs ariuall, whole far is good for loofenelle, birds that die and line againe : their fenerall names, 1316,1317. B. ds in Americavery delicate and olittering, their natures, names, and diuersties, 1 229. A bird of amost monstrous bill, 1220. A bird no bigger then a Drone Bee , that makes most harmonious melody, 1330. Birds beleened by the Barbarians to bee fent from their friends with newes, 1220. Birds like Snipes that discover dance. rous Sheales, 1374. Birds zak'n with booke and line, 1383. Their a feripiion, ibid. Bords wor hipped as gods. Birds Strangely taken in the Bermu-

das, by men yelling, and howling, Biscaines, a sanage people inhabi. ting neere Grand Bay, on the Borth of New-found Land, Biscouers we to fight well, 1150 Bishop of Casco taken prisoner by the English at Cadiz; he is set at liberty without ransome, 1923 Bishop and his Clerkes, certaine Rockes on the north fide of Siller so called. Blanches Bar. 1286 Blancke a place whither the French Biscaines, and Portugals yearely

repaire for Fish, neere the South

Blacke Dinace Junke, 1167 Blacke-Rocke, a place recreit filled by stores or foure hundred farle of Spaniarde Blanco land Blafus a Frier of she Order of Francitens of Simila, being in great exercinity through the Ranilb bondage of the Spaniards, was releened by the Sanager of the Ile of Dominica, ** 18×2 Blazing far in the soure 1 500. Ouer Tercera, 1678. Another

oner England Arme 1606, page Bloody filx rife, and the causes Blew-be. de welfold for two or three binared bufhels of corne, 1710 Bores in Brafile that have their namels on their backes, by the fens of which the Doos hunt and delirey thome

Boates of trange forme andfallion. 140 1. B at's onely of hollowed trees by the Indians of New France. A Boar that Coiled from the Berning

dus so Irsland 1803. And there hungdap for a monument, ibid. Bo eyua; Snakes among the Sa-

Bogs and watry places engendring enill dijeafes, 1623.1624 Boicupecanga, a kind of Snake the hath wenemons prickles on his

Bolus, a River in Virginia, the commodities, and inhabitants, 1693 Bonas Avies, a place in the riner of Bonito or Spanish Mackarell, 1276

Boarding how to bee avoided in a Sea-fight, Boris a towne taken by Captaine Petuin in the Portugall voyage,

Boybona an Indian name of a mountaine in Brafile, in English the Rotten Whale,

Boycinings and Boicining peba, certain fnakes in Brafile that have hele in their tailes, and are very toyfonom,

Boyes of the Indians not suffered to take Tebacco, their renerence to their elders, their babit, &c.

Boytiapus, aFreq-eating Snake or Serpent, wherewith if a barren womans hips be ftrooke, the Indians fay the prefently conceines with Cape of New-found Land, 1886 Boynara, a place in the Indies, 1246 Boifterous Seas, not agreeable to London delscacie. Brabiffe Riner , and the particular names of the Rivers betweene u and the Amazons, and Nations,

Bracken neere the Paretaes in the West Indies. Branco de Malambo. Brafile, the Rivers, Capes, and Ports, thereof described : sheir danger or fafety for Navigasars . 1237, 1238, & /eg. Brafite when first found and discovered, and by whom , 1437. The controverse concerning it, betweene the Spaniards and Portugals.

Bralile , the difficulty of Cayling thither some times of the years, 11,6,

A Brasilian brought to K. Henry she eighth in his wilde accouffrements.

Brafile is fixe handred leagues from the Streights of M gellane. 1193 Brasilian coasts full of Shoales,

Brafilian Sanares, 1224.1226.feg. france and monfrous Beafts in Brafile, their names, 1242,12:3. Brafilians their nature, fubi dion man-eating hooting nake dnes, flat-heads, 1243. plenty of mynes, 1243. Brafil, and Brafilians. described, 1280 & fea their opimion of an Iland of God. of their Coule and paradife, ibid. Their mariages rites, drinkings, diet. ruling children , liberalitie drunkenne ([e, rudene ([e, manner of eating, 1290. Their lodging , nakedne ffe, modeftie, barre, boufes, child-birth, ceremonies, love of children, and education, 1291. Their entertaining strangers with weeping welcome, their holoitali-

tie their drinking smoake of Peti-

gina, their traffq ing ornaments,

the viage of their wines sealouse,

mulicke, 1292. Singing, infra-

ments, lone of poetry, their buri-

els and excelline lamentation,

tooles . weapons . archerie , their

arts, quick-lightednesse, trancis,

(wimming, filting, (words, 1293,

1294. Their manner of eating

mans flesh, and divers their cere-

monies at large , 1195 , 1296,

1297. Their creating Gentlemen,

the badges thereof, and their three

titles , Abaetes , Murubixab ,

Mocacara, 1207. Their langua-

ges and nations, ibid. The climate,

Tobacco, co.

Varietie of Arange milde beafts. 2201.1202.00 1202. Dwerfitt of fearfield Servents, and the ver nome of chatclimate \$202 1 204) The varietie of Parats, and frangenelle of other Birde 1295. 1 206. Diversiries and wenders of their trais and fruits for Phylick . and otherwise: the foverall names of their trees and plants . 11207. 1208.1200. Rese and admirable plants, their (eventil mames 1211.1212. Their muleisude and fingularitie of fiftes; and their names at large, 1914, 1214 & Sea. Their Fish that liverb altogether in Salt-mater . and their names. 1216 . 1217. The delicate fresh-water of Bralile. and Rivers, ibid. Thei ftrange, walt, and fearfull fea-fergents. and their feverall names . 3217. 1218, What Portugali commodiries in Brafile . 1319. Brafite hath few Lice and Fleas but infinite flore of venemous quats, ibid. Articles for the good of Brafile to the Spanift King, 1320. of fea. The want of instice. and the irregularitie of those parts. 1221. Their dis-respect of the lefuits in the matters of counsaile, ibid. How ernelly the Bafilians are dealt with by the Portugals, 1321. & feg. Their want of in-Bruction, and inhumane flauerie 1224. Brafils beafts . plants and other living things described 1325 . 1326. & leg. Bafile wood, ibid. Difference of plants, beafts, and commodities from ours. and their severall description, 1:25. cf (eq. Their aftonifhment at the hearing of God : Their inconstancie . naturall parts . de. 1240. Their mariages and polygamie, the manners of women with child, cf.c. 1341. The de-RruElion of families, and bounds of their possessions . 1342. Their how hold Ruffe, 1343. Their entertainment. 1344, 1345. Their Phylicke and demeanour towards the links, their buriall attended with dinellifbrites. 1346. Brafils description and criefe Havens. 1282. A Brafile Ship rakenby Sir Water Raleigh, 1938. Brafile commodities feut for Spaine, not mely gold, but much other

Branadoes are Commercianes the his depers of success in great proiets, Braveric of the English turnerb to

becorrie. Bridedrobines that give the firth hanfall of their paufer secheir hindred and friends. Brigalian Hand the firmation thereof

Buens Ventura, a River in the Wieft Indies , the descriptions thereof, 1413, 1414 Buenor Acres, a same in the Ri-.ver of Plate. Buccaw ganecants, a towns under . the dominion of Balhabez Sagamo of Mawoofhen. Building without tooles or engines. miraculous by the Indians of Peru. 1477, 1478 Burdones, a place fo called 260

Bi kes rebellion in Ireland. 1892 The Burlings, an Iland (o called : - aheloyle, commodition, and inhe bugnes described, - 3 13 1855 Butter how made by the Indians.

Abot, win. Sir Sebaftian Cabot his American tracels. 1177.1178. ch (ea be discovered so much of the continent of the New World, that it deferved to bee called Cabotiana, rather then Americ: Cabuito, a towne in Floria, 1544 Caact certaine Brafilians to called.

C. cra River. Cadiz taken by the English the Ca (He Corresdred ere 1921. Cadis described. 1022. It safet enfire andrased to the ground. 1033 Caiama Iland, the description therof.

Caiocame, a towne in Mawocfhen, Caioles, Cannibals (o called, living in Brafile Caiuari, certaine Savages of Bra. file living in Canes. Cale, a towne of Florida, . Calefornia, a/ea/o called , 1560 or an Iland , or many Ilandi, as others (av. 1181.1182 Calenture, Caliane, a River in Guiana , very aboundant with gold and filter.

Caliquen toine, 1533 treasures, as Ginger, Sugar, Hides, Callipuny a mountaine in Guyana.

·- 1302 Canari . a Province of More-1148 quito, Cannete, a towne in Peru, 1446 Canrie & towns in the River Marwin or America. Canibals with faces like does at Ports-delire. 1101. Other france and valerans Carnibals, 1208 Canibats profer famon to Candiffrie Santos, 1 20%. Cannihals naked and fearfull, 1204. cald Pories, 1208. Their france ensertalmment of Avaneurs, 1208. Canibals called Tamoyes, 1228, 1240, vid. Savares. Cano, a famous Nanigator . 1191 Canoas or boats of threescore foot land with 80 men in them. 1280 Cape Blanco, 3370 Cape Saint Francisco. 1400 Cape Saim Antonio, 1147 Capawucke a place in the laden. fored with gold, 1841 Cape bona Eiperman, the danger of the paffage there, 1151,1152 Cape Rico. 1170 Cape Verdia 1181 Cape de la vela, 118.,1244 Cape Frio, or cold Cape, its htmutien. 1202. Its Navigation, 1240 Cape Saine Augustine, 12:8 Cape Caldera, Cape de verde, its unhealthinesse, 1 270. Its Ilands, Capignramirinij a place in Bralile 1238. Cape Agreda, cape froward. 1286 Cape chiqui-towne, 1535. Cape Francois. Cape Saine Maries, Cape de Rare Cape Saint Lawrence, 1606 Capetrocca, a Saunge towne, 1285 Capicua a flat land in Brafile, 12;8 Cape-cod, 16 17. Cape Charls, 1601. Cape Henry in Fireinia, Caredenas, a Province in America, 1687. Cape Laware in Virginia, 1762. Its adjoyning Shosles, Captaines for marres, how chosen amone the Indians. Captaines errours checked, \$307. parience commendable in a Cap-Captaine Listers dineerous attempt in my Lord of Cumberlands voyage, 1143. Hee is drowned and his Ship in his returne, ibid. Captaine Bayly flaine, Captaine Munion taken captine, Canduacu, Brafilion beaftithat dare their brifles through a mant Captaine Nortons Vorage, ibid. Carracke wfed to returne from the

Captaine Caues farprivall of the Ar golie of Lisbone Captaine Nortons affailing a Pereineall, ibid. Capr. Caue, Admirall in the eighth Voyage of the Lord of Cumberland, flaine, Captaine Antonie killed, ibid, Captaine Dounton wounded, 1148 Capurifell & River. Capucaras, mater-Sergents in the Indies. Capari, a River neere Orenoque. Carrabouca, a place in India, 1249 Carcocies , Indians fo salled, 1364 Carder, viz. Perer Carder a farniff man , his bard fortune and escapes, 1187. The lote of bis company, 1 188. His fouing two moneths upon a fruit like Oranges, and his drinking of his wome Urine, bid. His converfing with Irdiane, be. Teacheth them to marre. 1189. His departure from them, ibid. His impresonment, deliverance. 1:89. 1190. His implayment, 1190. His escape from the Portingals, and winall to England after nine yeares voyage, Carigue, a Beaft in Brafile the that carseth her yong ones in a bag about with her. 1:46 Cari-River. 1148 A Carrak runneth a shore to avoid the English, aripo a tonne in Guiana, 1168 Caroli, a pleafant River neere Orenoco. Carraemba, Sanaves fo called, 1299 Carapana, a place in the Province of Emeria. Carraibas, certain Ingelers in Brafile. 1140 Carracus a place in the Indies, 1 242,1248 Carripapoory Ilands neere Guiana. Carendies a furce Nation of the Indies, neere the River of Place: their nature, warlikeneffe, and deferiorion. A Carrack runneth her felfe on ground for fewe of the English, Carracks taken and burnt by Englift Captaines , 1145 , 1147. Carracks not fo great as mealthy >

THE TABLE.

	_
ndies, at the Acores by Sep-	
remoer, 1109	
Carrack with four millions and	C
a halfe of treasure burnt in Port-	
Ricco, 1171	C
Ricco,	_
reat Carrack fired, 1182. Another	_
taken, 1183	C
archeonos <i>Indians</i> , 1364	
arcarifo, Indians fo valled, 1353	
	C
aribes neere Orenoco, 1249	
great enemies to the Indians,	C
1261	
arios Sauages,their nature, com-	
modities, customes, towne, fortisi- cation, &c. described, 1351 apraine Carre slaine in the Por-	C
anion de la Gril. I	_
catson, Sc. aejcribea, 1351	
aptaine Carre flaine in the Por-	_
tugall Voyage, 1924	C
cruolos Sauages, cheir nature,	
and description, 1232	
ana dejerspeion, 1232	
arruco, certaine Sanages in Flo-	
rida, 1510	
apt. Carfey slaine in the Portugal	
Voyage, 1924	
Voyage, 1924 artagena affaulted and taken,	С
artagena ajjaknea ana men,	~
1419, 1434. Tis massacred by	
Spaniards, 1584	
Carnell Holne by Fuelish can	
Spannards, 1584 I Caruell folne by English cap- tines, 2151	
	C
afcais, a towne of Portugall forfa-	·
ken at the approach of the Eng-	
lilb. 1923	: .
aliste, a great Floridan towne,	C
1541	C
	-
afuero Riser, 1348	·
alqui a great Gouernour in Ame-	
rico, his large domainions, and	
townes, 1547, 1548	
	1
making it, the goodnesse and de- feription of it, 1173, 1251 Cassia Fistula in Brasile, 1308 Castro, a place on the coast of Chili,	
making it, the goodnesse and we-	
Scription of it, 1173, 1251	
Caffia Fiftula in Brafile, 1308	
aftro, a place on the coast of Chili.)
1442	
astro his discoverie, 1447	C
Tastro his discoverie, 1447 Tasuays, a River in the Indies,	L
2123	
Cassipa River, 1248 Cassipogotos Indians, neere Ore-	
affinomaros Indiane merre Ore-	1
sampogotos manno, nere Ote-	1
neco 1248	_
Castle of Cascais yeelded to the	C
English, 1924	
Caftle of Saint Philip, neere Porto	1
Belle, 1244	
Caralan - Panishan in Florida	C
Catalte, a Province in Florida,	٠,
1353	1
Catagua Indians, 1300	1
Saint Catalina Hand, 1438	(
Caturi River, 1248	1
Caturi River, 1248 Catamaya, a towne in Florida,	1
atamaya, a rowne in Fiorida,	1
1550	1
Cattle infinite store in Port-Ricco,	1
1171	1
	- 1
Cat of the Mountaine, called by	1

the Indians, Marcavahite, fore in Brasile. mounes, alanguage of fome Indians in Florida. was a Moumaine in Port Ricco. xamalca, a large Indian Citie, described, with its chiefe ornavas, a towne of Florida, 1549 vegoleoocoora, a towne in the River Marwin inhabited by the Arwaccas Savages. zique, a Title of dignitie among the Savares, as much as to fay, a Lard. edars, in New France, 1622. In the Bermudas, 1720. Cedars in Alexandria reported by the Ienes to be them of Libanus, that beare old and new fruit all the yeare, ibid, Cedars ill for Shipping. cuola, a Province, 1560. Init are fenen Cities neere toverher, their manner of making houses, for summer and winter their commodities of Turquefer and Emeraulds, their beatts, and climate. hachapuya, a Province in America of valiant men, and faire wemen, that worthip Snakes, \$478 hagnate a towne in Florida, 1553 aptaine Chalons his voyage to the Northerne parts, his unfortuaduenture. North of Virginia, his comiferation towards a distressed Frier, his taking captine by the Spaniards. his goods divided into the Spanish | Chesepian-Bay, Ships , halaque Province. 1430 hampiains voyage into Canada in the yeare 1603, 1605 His ariuall at Canada: 1606. His discouering of divers Ilands hanca, avaliant Indian Nation, descending as they suppose from a 1457,1641 harges of certaine voyages to Virginia, little gaine for loffe of haritie, a oreat Ship landing at Plimouth in New England. 1856. Charitie of the Indians toby licknesse, 1860. Charitie and conrefic among favages, 1345 Christians defervedly controlled by Chawonock in Virginia, its diffe- the Indians, 1449 How thought

rent languages mentioned, 1604 Chereno, a great Commander in Port Ricco 1160 Chebegnados, a towne in Mawoofhen. Cherente, a River in Florida Chiaza, a Province in Florida. Chickhahamania, a River in Vir-Finia, 1602. The inhabitants anverned by Priests. Chicaca a towne in Florida, 1944 Chichilcale, a Province in Ame-1502 M. Chidleys voyage for the Magellane Streights. Children throwne to door 1.82 Child-birth, how and with what ease amone the Indians . 1262. Chile , arich Connery in the Indies, 1232. Its description and discomerie by some Spaniards, 1442. The taking thereof by the Souniards. and the towne first inhabited by China hath two wayes to it through the Streights of Magelfane, and Capút bonæ íbei. Chiribuana brutilb Indians fo calhagre, a River in the Indies, 1180 Chirigiana, a Province fabiett to A Chirurgion curing with words . nate hap to the loffe of the whole Chifaptack a brooke in Virginia, I Henry Chaltons voyage to the Chifcha, a Floridan Province, Choamo . a connrey in Port Ricco 1160 1648 1834 Chefupioc-Bar. 1688 Chily, a Province Subject to Peru. its fewerall townes. Chilea Paplace in America, 1398 Chinca, a place in the South Sea, there, ibid. His returne, 1619 Chinchilla, a beaft of wondrous eftimationby reason of a rich Furr, a Lyon, which they worthip for a Cholupaha, a towne of Florida, Cheuakget-Bay in New France. 1842 Choofs, a valley in the South fea, 1.1216 Christs name blafthemed by the perfidie of Spenis Christians, 1450 mord it ofe which are impoverified Christians conelite to tash other exceeding faveges,

afthy sheen an Indian definition of a Christian. 1450. Christians este one another. Chryffall. 1320 Chrystall Rocke in Virginia, 1772 Chryfall Mountains. Cholula a part of New Spannersinated in respect of the suh abitants, by Spaniards. 1577.1578 Challala, a place in the South Sea. 1577.1578 Chule, as liand sourch inhabit. d by the Spinismes in the South See, yearich with gold. 1392 Churches profasation partified.

1163 1461 Cibola, a Pravince in America, discoursed by the Spaniards. Conception, a town in Chili. 1443 Cicu. Indians of Brafile. Cicuic. stoppe in America. 1561 Cilicedenio, a mountaine in Guy-Cinque Llagas, a great Carrack

Circumcition among Ethiopians. Cinet Cats. Civill differnions. 1452,1453 Sir Nicholas Cliffords death by a Bot, as hee was at supper. 1184 A Climate unsufferably bot, and within fixe miles againe intolerably cold. Coaio's, or Coucho's, Indians.

Cobe, a place neere Hausnain she Well Indies.

Cobrus, vide Serpent. Coca, a Floridan Countres, the somes and commodities therein.

Coche, an Ile neere Margarita. A Cocke treading a form another

crowing clearely within swelve bourasse was batched. 1805 Cocos trees, and their fruit described. 1371,1372,1173 Corwina a towne. Coiula, a Province in New-Spain.

Cold very extreame freezing men to death, 1204.6 1205 Nid winter. Collick bow cared. 1308 Colliman a precious grunne in Guiana, for fundry difeafes. 1276 Colonies in Virginia the first.

1645,1683,1684 Colonies plantaries, requireth first afaire land, and a safe barbour. 1664. Colonies in Virginiaon what conditions granted, at it

appeareth by the Patent, 1683. Colonel Bret, flain in the Partugal Voyage. Comana a townes name. 1266. Its description and climate. ibid. Coman Ibes. Inhabitants in the Indies. Commanders, how farre to trust Officers. Comorratty , a towne in the River Marwinas America. 1282 Compate vied in travelling fandie Countries. Compostella Cirie. 1428

Concoe e, azonne in America inhabited by Sanages. \$283 Congo, a Region in Affrica, she King thereof: his great strength, his Christian Religion , quard, pompe, riding on Elephants, rites of State.

Conde de Andrada bie Armie.

1384

Cort trit head

Conibas lake, 1566. Neere it a fately Citie of Indians . their ornament and great fortification.

Connies of two fores in Florida, the manner how they are taken by the Indians there. Conquacus, chiefe Prince of the

great people of Nanohigganier, his challenge so the English men, he is terrified by a prefent of powder and Thot. Conjuration wied of the Indians. being in difireffe for want of raine.

Conversion of sinners, a morke mevitorious, witheffe a Sparish Cap-

Content a Small Slip of Sir George Carews, fought with three great Spanish Ships of fix hundred suns a piece,

Cooligoa, a Province in Florida,

Cocunibo, 'an excellent and safe harbor in the West Indies, 1 394. The markes whereby to findest.

Cordoua-towne. Cooropan, a place ten dayes intrney from the head of the River Marrawin, 1285. Directions for the iourney betwint Marrawin, and Cooropan, ibid. Directions to Cooropan from the head of the River Sebnama. 1286 Coofhebery, a Province in Guiana: the description , pleasantneffe .

healthineffe. and commodities thereof. Corburrimore, a some of he Epuremei in the Indies. 1285 Cape Corientes. Corne how kept in Tercera, 1660 Corn-hil a place in New-England, where the Savages were wont to hide their come, 1849. Corne much encreaseth in New-England. Coro, stemme in America, 1252 The fruitfulnelle & commodities shereof. 1248 Corrall. 1116 Combination of the English forces is New-England. Complaint of a Sanage weesan for her fonnes loffe , Stalne away by Hunt an Englisbman, Copiapo a soune of Chili, in the Coquinibo, en American ponne. Corefae Iland, how fit sate, 1146 Coro, a zowne and Cafile, burnt Mi Captain. Preston, and Captains Summers Corprocipe, or the River of Toads in America. Correr a Spaniard, comefteth with Don Antonio de Mendoza. for discoveries of land , (enderly forth Francis Vilua with a Fleet of shree Ships for shat purpose. Corupeo , a firit ving to pollefo and vexe the Americans, 1213 Cainero River. Costa Ricca, a West Indian towne, copious with gold, 1419,1446 Coverouinelle the cause of the dispeopling the Indies by the Spa-Couetoufnelle is an Idoll, unto which the Spaniards have facrificed millions of Indians, 1602, Couetousneise reproved by a Sa-Aprevinciall Councell held at Lvma. Countaile vsed among the Indians,

126e

1383,1334

Countries unhealthy.

on of them. Cowab, a Mountatine,

Countries very healthy,

Roe-Bucke in Brafile,

Countries unknowne, and descripti-

Cowardline Te of the Indians, 1154

Cowardlineffe of the Mafter of the

Cozco, the Imperiall City of Peru,

the opinion the Inhabitants have

of it, the admirable Temple of the Summe in it, rich hangings, imaces , profuse ornaments , Chappels, roofes, plates, gardens, beaves all Church-inframents in gold, their priefes , and charine fe of their Temple, 1464, 1465. Their divers Monasteries, their riches, manner in mariaces, care of Infants, 1457. Their Superstition fealts braverie falts folemn feast's for the Sunne, 1472. Their adoration, & facrifices foleunized at therifing thereof, hely fire, festi-vall eating, drunkennesse, 1473 Their footh-faying, ibid. Manner of creating Knights, and Ceremonies , 1474. Cozco, alfo deferibed, with its fituation , fortification and splendour, 1496, 1497 Crabs on the land in great abundance. 1 172.12 20:Tenor twelve

forts of Crabs, 1315 Crocodiles by the Indians called Aligartos, 1228. Their description and mener of filling for them, and best, ib. His Cods are muske, ib. Crocodiles in America harmleffe, and kept tame, 1326. Crocodiles in great Sconles, 1400.

Saint Croix point, and the countrey described, 1611, & 1622 Crooroorere, a Suppay towne in the Indies.

Croffes erecledby the Spaniards in New-Spaine intoken of poffeffion,

The Crozier, a Starre neere the Pole antartick. Crokemago, a Province in Mawoofhen, neere the River Sha-

Cruelty is companion of cowardize, 1395. And feare, ibid. Requited in the Spanish Governour by the Indians, 1449. Cruelty cru-

elly remarded, Cuba, an Iland described, 1147.115 want of fortification , the chiefe Port Lahanana, wherein is aca-Ale of Spaniards, 1415. The length and bre dib thereof, and the Christian towner thereof named, 1529. The King, commonaltie, men, women, and sucking children, how many murdered by Spaniards.

Cueremaghas, Indians fo called, their nature, strength , courtesie, and commodities, Cueruo, one of the Azories Iles, ta-

king its name from the multistude of Crows breeding in that place, 1939 1399 Cuighe Indian,

Cuigraio, Brasilians fo called , 1200 Cuimechi . warlike Indians that wander in drones in the mountains to focke food. China Province. 1557 Cuinquiro, a place in New Spaine,

Cuifeo Province taken by the Spaniarde Culiazzon, a Nation in the Indies,

Cultalculebes, Indians of Florida.

Cumberlands first Voyage discove red, 1141. The sinse when they fet forth, his hips and company, ib. His arivall at Brafile, 1142. Hee taketh four Ships from the Portingall, ibid. The kinderance of his Voyage for the South (eachis disaftrens losse of a Hulke, men, and goods, his returne to Englandibid. His fecond voyage, his acts at Sluce, the 88 fervice, his company returne, 1142 Histhird voyage ibid. His grinall at Saint Michael, and attempt there, danger by a Fift. ibid. Taketh a prize from the Spaniards, the enafion of some of his men with a small Boat , 1143. His surprizatiof Fiall atownsn Tercera ibid. His loffe of men, and danger of his person , ibid. His great want of drinke, his clemencie, and equity, ibid. The number of his prizes taken in the voyace. his returne , 1144. His fourth voyage, purchase, losse, returne for England, ibid. His fifth veyage, hindrances, defeating, retiring to London , and committing the charge to Captaine Norton, ibid. His gaines by the Portingal Carrack taken in that veyage, 1145 , 1146. His fixth voyage, purchases, sicknosse returne, ibid. The seventh verage, ibid. The eighth vorage, and the furprize of a Carrack, 1147. The ninth voyages successe, 1148. The tenth voyage, ibid. Eleventh voyage. 1149. Trelfih voyage its preparation, company, and hips, ibid. successe of his plot, 1150. Ariues at the Canaries, 1151. His care Caynaccard a Province, and covernment of his company, 1151. His discreetnesse, and guidance by reason, 1152. His proiects, ibid. His arinall at Dominica, and entertainment, ibid. His commine to Port-Ricco, 1153,

His perill at the affault of Port. Ricco, 1161. Besieging Fort-Mora, bes inflice, leveritie, and taking the fortroffe, 1162, 1162. Offers the ransoming of Port-Ricco, departesh bence, 1168. 1169. Meetes with his Fleet by Flores, 1176. His returne and danger on the coast of Northans die 1 176, His unfortunate milfing the Spanish Ships at the Azores, where bee loft forty millions. 1673. And others of fine millions,

Cumana, atowne, 1186, 1248 Cumpelie, Brafilian Sanages fo called. Cunames. Indiens in New Mexico their townes, and faculties of painting described. Cunarreo fands, Curenda, a populous Indian nation in the River Parana described. their apparell ornament and commoduies. Cures wronght by prayers, Curewapori Ilands. Curiadan, a place in Trinidad, the inhabitants called Saluaves. Curiapan, a place neere Orenoque,

A Current in the Sea, under thirty troo degrees, Currents that fet East or West man breed miftake in Navigators, ibid. Other uncertaine currents, 1400.

A Current festing to the Northward in forty degrees, 1759 Curucucu, Snakes in Brafile of 14 pans long very venemous, 1304 Curupija, Indians of Brasile,

Cusco, a place in the South Sea, 1416. A Citic as bigge as Rome, it hath in it a thousand Spaniards.

Customes of fishing, of wonderfull seine to the townes of Lubccke. Hamborough, and Embden,

Cuftomes paid yearely to the Prince of the Indians, His meanes to get intelligence , ill Cutifa-chiqui ,a Province in Florida.

D Ainty, a Ship of Sir Richard Hawkins, fortunate in voyage for her Maiestie, unfortunate for the owners. 1160, Toshe Canaries, 1155. Dale, viz; Sir Tho: Dales arinali

at Virginia, 1733. His relation of the passages there, and how the affaires food, An. 1514.p.1768, & feq. His commendation, 1770 Damarius Coue, a place neere Munhiggen , forty leagues from Plimouth in New-England, North-east-ward Dancing, distinguishing nations in the Indies. Dancing of the Virginians, 1687, 1573,1574

Dariene, a Sound in the Indies, Sir Ber. Drake, his arine at the New-found-land. Captaine Darmers fishing voyage, his coasting the shore till bee came to Viiginia, his men fall ficke, his returne to the New-found-1and his disconerie of many fruitfull Coafts, and pleasant Rivers from Hudions River to Cape Iames . 1820 The proberous fuccelleke: had in m curing a truce betweene us and the Savages : is treacherously betrayed, wounded, and fiveth to Virginia for /uccour, and there dresh. 1831 Capt. Davies voyage to the South

Sea, 1101. & leq. His loffe of Cap. Candish successe, ibid. & 1eq. Accused for treacherie, 1102 Candishes opinion of him, 1164 Daycao, a riner in Florida, 1554 Dayes of publike Thanksgiving in-Rituted in New-England, 1867 Dayes length in New-England, Dead, not lamented by fome Ind :-

an., Deaws very unhealthy to Englishmen, and Indians,

Deere worshipped by some Indians , 1479. Deere of feverall forts bringing forth two , three or foure at once, 1831. Decre good flore in New-England , and the manner of taking them, 1845. Deeres-flesh dried in the minae. food of the Indians, Dermers resolution by letter, of some passases in Virginia, 1778

1779 Description of the King of Spaines invincible Armada, De Todos los Santos, a torine in the West Indies neere the line, "

D. vill consulted with all brehe Indians of Wy poco: they call him Peyar, 1253. As alfo Watup: and blow , \$274. The Brafilians

cal him Curupira, Taguain, Pigtangua Machchera & Anhangalabey feare bim much, and think these foules after death are surned into Devils.

The Devils illuding wounding, and tormenting the Savages of Floridz. 1 5 16. 1 8 17. The Devill mor-Ripped by New Spaniards, shat is, in Noua Hifpania : their de-Infion by him, 1 558. Temples built for him, and an oratory made. and meat given him by them of new Mexico. . 1561

The Divell forbids Bapti me to the Indians The deuils policy in keeping the Indians poore, 1868. His triall of thole which are dedicated to him. ibid. His being worthipped by the Virginians, bis images, feare, and

name of Oke, Dyals, how admired by the Virginian Savages. 1708 D.amones in Brafile 1220. In Ca-

112 4.1612.in New France.1611 Difference betweene Campe and parison Souldiers, Dirgo Flores de Valdes a Spaniard

fent with a Flort to Brafile, and the successe, 1440, 1441 Diego de Almagro, the fir! Spanifb disconerer of Chili, 1475.

The next Pedro de Maldiusa, Discoveries of divers Ilands, and

Laker in Canada . 1614. 6 100. A D. scoverie of the English full of danger. Discoveries proue best. when leaft discovered, 1955 First discoveries of America the new World by English, and Sta-Dilea es very ftrange, 1191,1214,

Di order, the fore-runner of sill Suggeste in Cand flats Fleet . 1202 Diforder more weakeneth the Eng-Lift then the enemy, Difpinations touching Spanish crueltie in the Indies, 1601, 1602,

Diffequebe an Indian River 1260 Dogs worflipped, 1471. Ravenous dogs, 1172. Terrible to the 1;27, 1;28 Great dogs that fight with Buls and carie ffry pound on their backern

hunting, 1561 Dogs that devoure men, first taught by Spaniards, D'es that cannot harke, 1606 who beat them sometimes blacke Dolphin described, his sone to mankinde,

Saint Domingo, 1146. The defoription, riches, and fortification thereof.

Dominica, 1142. The inhabitants described, wish their bruts fineffe. 1685. The inhabitants have the Spaniards, lone the English, their prefents, tradings, and commedities ibid. Want of cleathes, ornaments Canons, Marchandise and red payming, 1158. Mare copiens description of the forla. moods mountaines towne, wanten, modefrie, King , familiaritie of their maids, chaffitie, defire of cloarbes. 1158, 1159. Their commonface. State, meat, baire, defire to learne English, 1159. Distinction of maids and wines. 1150 Dominica affaulted and taken by Sir Francis Drake, 1182. Inhabised by Spaniards, the fand of the Rivers mixed with gold, great plenty of Roots, and Sugar Canes,

Don Alfonto Perez de Guzman, Commander of the Spanish Fleet

Den Antonio de Mendoza, bis Arife with Cortez, for most difcoveries, and lending forth divers by fea and land for that purpofe,

Don Diego de Pimentell, taken prisoner in Zeland, Don John of Austria defeated of his intended treachery, to get to hime selfe Mary Queene of Scots bis rife. Dos Patos, a River in America,

Don Pedro and his company taken

prisoners by Sir Francis Diake,

12:8 Douer-cliff-found, on the North of Virginia, · A Done lighted on the Mafies of English Shirs,

Dragnanes, a certaine kind of Indians in Florida,

Drake-viz. Sir Francis Drakes for # discovery of the Southermost land, 1291. His treacherous viage by the Indians, 1302. His expedition with a great Fleet, \$434. His riches gotten by his voyages, 1439

Sir Frat . Drekes original parentage, education, progrelle, first voyage. surprising of the towne of Nombre de Dios , 1179. His burming 200000 Duckets in Merchandize, and protestation for the South fea, 1 1 80. His circumnauigation, the opinion of his riches, ibid.

THE TABLE.

Which were leauestred to the Queen, his voyage to Domingo, company and fhip: , arises at Saint Iaro, and takes it , 1181. His commune to Dominica, and Saint Christopher. 1181. Takes Saint Domingo 1 182. And Carragenaib. Fireth two Spanish fortresfes, ibid. His returne, benefit , loffe of men, ibid. His verage at Calz. bis Fleet and Prizes, ibid. Takes a Carrack. 1183. His going for the Azores, bid. His last voyage, His fellow Commifficner, his takine Rio de la Hacha, Rancheria, Tapia, S. Morthe, and Nombre de Dios, his death, successor, and Fleets arivall at Phimouth. 1182. His difarreeing with Sir John Hawkins 1184. His comparifon with him, 1185, 1186. Hisbariall, 1245. His clemency to conquered foe.

John Drake lined 1 e moneths with the favages, 1186. His mishaps, 1440,1441. Hisfame gotten by his tourney to the West Indies, and about the World, Drano, a River neere Orenoco. Its

unhealthy passage, Dreames feeming ominous, 1191 Drinke to some poison, to other bodies beneficiall, although the very same, 1173. Great drinkingmarch by the Indians, 1284 Drink made of roots great want of drink, 1364. Its quality and varietie among the Indians, 1381. Drinking esteemed by those of Peru the greatest courteste that can be offered by King, or Subjett, 1473. Strange drinking, 1519. Drinke made of Berries at the Bernudas, 1730 Drinke made of Plummes in Virginia , 1784. Scarcitie of

1143 drinke. Drowth extraordinarie in New-1866 England. Diugs in Guiana, 1276

Drunkennelle, a vice of Savages. 1189, 1473. Drunkenneile like to overshrow an English Armie, 1916

Ducks, the curiousnesse of making their nefts in the Magellanc Streights, Dudley, vie. Sir Robert Dudley

his voyage, and successe to Trinigada, and the conft of Paria, &c. Duke of Medina his kindue fe to the English, 1834. His yearely tri-

bare of the Fishers of Tunny . Mul-

lit. and Purgos, 1837. His pre-

Anno 1488. 1895 Duke of Parma his forces in 88, El estado de Arauco, the deferterion 1901. His apparell for horfes. 1002. His vaine hope of the Crowne of England. Duke of Medina is prohibited the Fi Ca'20, the Port of Lima 1446 Court becamfe bee returned with-

out the English Crowne, 1910 Duke of Parma's force against Eng-Hand. Capt. Du Pont his voyages into the

New-found-lands A Dutchmans courtefie to the Enolift, 1261 Dutchmens treachery to the Englishmens inhabiting Virginia.

Durchmens fall-beartedneffe, 1721 And abuse of Capt, Smith , by torning to Powhatan, 1721. Their treacherie frustrateth bis attempt for the furprizall of Powhatans houfe. 1725. Their plat to kill Capt. Smith, and fruis effe iffue.1726. Their continued base treacherie, and deserved pension; one comming to a miserable and amono the English; the others bavino their braines beaten out by Savages,

T. Arle of Effex, his worthy acts, L 1017 His valorous chalenge in Portugall Voyage, 1924. His voyage to the Iles, of Azores, 1935. His trouble, travell, and arivall: Heetaketh three Spanish Earth medicinable: earth like gunme in Virginia, 1765. Earth red like terra ligillata,

Earth-quakes, 1475 Farth quakes frequent in Tercera, 1670. Aterrible Earth-quake in S, Michaels Ile, and the dreadfull effects thereof, 1678, 1679

Eale and effeminate life, enemies to ereat practices. East-India warres, dishurden the Spaniard of West India gold and

Ecatepeck, Supposed the highest mountaine in the world, from the sop whereof me differend the north and South (car. 1177 Ecliples, what conceited to be by some

Americans. 1462 Echro, an Iland neere Port Ricco,

Eggs very hard; and sounding like 1306 Ekinnick, a kinde of norme that por faneth the water,

paration, for the Spanish Fleet in Elephants, how taken by the Ethiopians.

thereof, the fiercenesse of the inhabitants, and their opinion of the Spaniards.

Capt. Ellis his relation of Sir Richard Hawkins bis voyage, 1416 Q. Eliz peths providence in repairing her Army Royall. 1002

Q. Eliz beth denormeed excommumcate by Pope in the her lubsects are discharged from loveling and allegennee 1 802. Her enemies abroad are disappointed traitors et home taken in their owne pu, bid. Her triumph after the deliver rance in \$8.

O. Elizabeths Encomium. 1823 Q. Elizabeths martial offairs, 1181 Elizabeth-Bar.

Elizabeths Ilein Virginia, 1648 Its description, being thought fit and commodious for plantation, 1649 Atlarge, 1651, vide Ile of Elizabeth.

Elizabeth her manifold dangers, and gracious deliverances, 1800 Elizabeth Iles , inhabitants , described:their ornaments, nasure, proportion, wittinelle, courtelie, vet theeverie, 1691. The description of the climate. Embalming by the Indians . how

well performed, Embailage from the Enel: hto the Maffalove, chiefe Commender of the Savarer in Pacanokick, 1851 Embrodeije exercifed emone the

Savares. Emeralds of ineffiniable worst . 1410 10.16. An Emerald as lise as an Estriches Egge, and therefore was adored by the Indians, 1481. Emerald: Store,

Emeria the eastermost part of Dorado. 1436 . Enemies to bee kett in one , as the Spaniards by the Earle of Cumboiland at Port-Ricco, who though he meant not to boile their

towne, yet told them not formucha Enemics taken among the Savages are commonly killed and eaten, 1217.1218

Engines in morre by the Indians performed, 1267 Englishmens discoveries of Ancrica, An English Pilots treacherie, and

> adherence to the Spaniards, bbbb a Eng-

Englands gaine by Salt-fift, Toore-John, Salmonds, and Pilchards . Englishmen rather desirous to bee renowned for mercy and clemencie. then for dreadfull conquest. English miracles by Captain Smith in Virginia, fuch as the Spaniard eled in the Indies, English-Bay in the Magellane freights, the description of the in-babitants, 1288 English Captines delivered by the Duke of Medina. English Nany returneth from Azores Hes. Englith forces muftered, English gallants reprehended for their unpromidence in going to 1942 English inhabiting the River Wis-Englishmen chufing rather to truft God and the Sea, then the dentil, and the Spaniard: Englishmen frieing terrour in the Charibes, 1273. Take poffeffion of the Mountaine Gomerigo, 1278 English mens nature. 1440 Englishmen flaine in Virginia by the treacherie of the Indians, and the canfe why. 1841 Englishmens encounters in New-England, 1841 Englishmen cheat the Indian of their victuals, and turne (avase, Englishmenstbroats ent by the Por-English fugitines appointed to gine the first onset against their owne Englishmen finke the Spanish Ships, or take them. 1673, 1674 English Fleet fet forth , and successe , English returns from the pursuit of the Spaniards. English ships by their nimblenesse farre exceeding the Spanish Gal-English victory , toyned with cour-English famine and mortalitie in English fouldiers dye with drinking E. ish defire a battell with the Portingals, English forbidden to furnish the Spaniard with munition. Entingy imparted by fending a rattle,

THE TABLE. Snakes-skinne full of arrowes, 1854 Entertainment, how ftrange among the Savages of Pores , 1208, 1292. Amone Brafilians, Enuv eftyeth more in pretended, then in professed enemies. Eparigotos, enemies to the Epuremi in India. Epeoya, a great Iland in Brafile. 1241. Called by the Indians Sapeawera. Epuremi, Indians weere the River Oreneco, 1248 Equibone, a towne at the foot of Marwin in America, inhabited in the Arwaccas, and Parawagotos Savares. Eregooda, a place neere Orenoco. 1248 Escudo, an Iland, 1185 Estanca, that is, a farme place, where Lanes keepe cattle, and make Cusani bread among the Indians. 1146 Estechemins, Savages in Canada, enemies to the Irocois. 1607 Estriches tame. Eccowbo, a mountaine in America. 1114 Ecepararinge, a mountaine aboun ding with gold. Etaoca, a place in America, 1210 Etapuca, a great mountaine in A. merica. Etamatiqua, a Cape in Brafile, its fitnesse for Navigation , 12:8. And description. Etapulick, a place su the Indics, with fingular mynes of gold, Erechemins . Savages of New-France, that are theenes and treacherous. Etoica, a River in Brafile, its dangerous Navigation. 1240 Euill-peace, a towns fo named by the The Feags a strange sicknesse in the Spanards in Florida, and the reason thereof. Europa, a River that commeth into Fcare, the cause of Tyrannie, 1248 Orenoco. Example prevaileth more then pre- Feare, caufing death in the Indians, 1743 F. FAIs of water very violent and

Grange.

nift policie.

the treacherous Indians by Spa-

1552

called Mailachenicts , 1859 oneribron,

Of the Indians towards Mafter Westons men. Famine very wront in the Indies , 1214. Miserable in the Carne commercy. 1248 Famine among the French-men. 1325. Among the Dutch and Spaniards, at the River of Place, the unnaturall effetts thereof, 1 3 48. Famine among Spaniards, 1401, 1477, 1508. Among the Indians , and some few hungry Spaniards, 1517. 1518. Incredible famine , 1526, Famine and mortalitie of the English in Virginia, 2690. Famine in great extremitie, enforcing man-slaughter, and man-eating. Familing frangely escaped by Andiew Hillyard, all his fellowes perishing, 1802, 1802 araon, a somme burnt up by the Er. risfb , in their veturne from Cadiz. Fast, publikely instituted, and observed, by the English in New Englan 1, being in diffreffe for want of afts instituted in England, and Zeland, for Gods gracious deliverance in 83. ather Martin Perez, of the focietie of Icius , his relation of his travels, and description of Ginoloa . 1562 , 1563 , & leg. His baptizing many Indians, and instructing them in a knowne tonque, erc. 1564. What kinde of Christianitie hee taught them, 1564,1565 Favael, one of the Hands of the Azores, the description and taking thereof by the Earle of Cumberland, 1672. Their feare of the English Nany, Bermudas, much annoying the English, Feafts of Savages. Feathers vied for cloathes, 1212 Feuers, how eafed by plants, 1311 How gotten in hot Countries and 1370,1371 anoided. 1610 Febacco Iland, False-heartednesse how anoided in Ferdinando Gorge, his employment in the plantation of New-Scotland, Falle-heartednesse of the Savages, Captaine Fenton his expedition and

Fernambuc, apers in America, 1100.1202.1428 Fernandes Gires his discovery of a Land in the fouth Sea, with the rare commodsties thereof, 1422 Fetherstons Bay in Varginia, why fo called. Figs of Brafile. Fight betweene the English and and Spaniards in Saint John Port-Ricco, 1161. Betweene English and Indians with Portingals, 1197. Fighting against a native countrie rewarded 1404 Fighting betweene two Indian nations in Peru very extreame and bloody 1458. Betweene the Englift and Spaniards in the narrew Seas, 1906. A fight betweene the English and Spaniards before Greeneling, 1 908. A fight by fea betweene the English and Spanish before Cadiza Fire burning in the woods for the Space of three dayes, 1890. Great 1145,1918 danger by fire, A Fish endangering a boat and men. 1142. Fiftes flying, 1157, 12:4 Their danger of devouring in Sea or ATTE. Fishing of New England very commodious to the plantation of Vir-Filhing how commodious, and efpecially to the Hollanders 2821 Fishing with fwords, Fishing with golden hookes, 1216 Fishing nith wood, 1241 Fish oreat fore in Guiana, 1275.01 fill with foure eyes, two abone water, and two under: a fish also with warme blood like flesh. ibid. Fith made drunke with wood, 1276 Fish like beefe in taste and proportion, 1283. It is called the Qx-filb, the description thereof at large, 1212 1314. It bath eyes which it may elefe and thus at will, armes, and hands, in his head at hath 2 stones of approved (oversignmesse for the Hene in the body. A Fish that (norteth, and thereby is apprehended, ibid. A fish that hath two broad Genes in his mouth ibid, fish good against the poison of a Snake, and very wholesome. 1312. Fish that maketh the holders bands benummed, or Making as one that hath the pallie: Fish that maketh all that touch it to flicke fast varo it : Fishes like men and women , their fearfulness so the Indians, their manner of

water, and enadeth the Fisher Fish that prones aremedy for the Spleene : a Fish that easts bis much, fell and feet, 1314, 1315 & feq. A Fish with fingers, and vitaring a fqueaking found, 1231 Fifth to plentifull that it may bee kild in the water with clubs, 1 549 Fishes that have voices like Owles. 1620. Good filling.

1803 Flatterers, base kind of people, 1957 A Flemmish Ship burne at the fight before Cadiz. Flores, aplace in the Azores, 1144 The description thereof, 1175,

Florida possessed by the Spaniards. 1 cos. The inhabitants many of them tall of stature, and expert erchers, 1503. The towner and inhabitants thereof variously described, 1503,1504. & feq. Florida hash gold and pretious fromes on the fea coast, 1554. The di-Stance of Suidry places one from the other, necessary for transellers, 1556.Loss of inhabitants in Florida by Spanish cruelty, 1589. The great age of some men there, 1 604. They line in the woods 3 months in the yeare, upon bunting, 1604. Englishmen the first difconcrers of Florida, 1813 Flutes made of Reedes, 1687 Fluxes stared by fraits, as Guianas Papaias, and wild Grapes, 1172. by a berry, 1276, 1308, by a plant

Fooles-coat, a linery of the Spanish Inquisition, Foreits travelled by compasse,

Fort Mora summond, befreged, and taken by the Lord of Cumberland, 1163,1164. The Brength and danger of passage for ships by it,

Fort St. Iohn of the Spaniards in Florida. Fortilezi, a towne in Port-Ricco, 1164

Fountaines of pitchy fubiliance very hot chat (crue to calke Ships with-A Fountaine that turneth wood in-Fox-Iland, on the north of Virginia,

Francis Bouadilla chiefe Marshall of the Fleet in 88 feat for England,

killing men : Fish that dyes the Francisco de Zeres his relation of

the consuell of Peru and Culco. called New Caffele, 1491.& fequ. Francisco Pisarro a Spaniard bis discourt of Peru and Successe. -\$444.1451, \$418,1480 4400. 1491,1404,1403,1494. g S. Francis a river in America. 12 12 A some share mich Chimbery.

1640

Firs-Morrice flaine in Ireland.

Franciscan Fryers of great efficience in the West Indies. French-Bay in New France, French Pos cared with Saffafras, 1673 . French nauigations to the north America, \$600. Their diferent of Cape François, the River M.V. taking possession there, and disconering eight riners more, their diffention and overthrow, Towl. French famine on the Seas their milerable difireffed fearcity in Florida, muriny, and eafeby, Sir John Hawkins, 1604 Franchmen remove their plantation from St. Croix to Port Royall, 1626. Frenchmen feite themfelnes within the limits of the English in the Newfound-Land, though to their (mall advantage, 1813. Frenchmes courtefe to the Enslift nation, 18:4. Frenchmens conetousnesse, and their infams in that resard, 1638. Frenchmens mutiny against their Cuptaine, discourred and revenged, 1514. Frenchmen bastize Indians. 1644. French yearely repaire to the New-found Land for Traineoyle, 1884. French Kings wengs to England 1891, French Ambastador plotteth with Moody about the death of Querne Bizabeth, 1893. Frenchmen dif-

Risbop, Deane, and University of

Somerds

Spaines Armada, Fresh-water-springs in the Newfound Land. Fiver Marco de Niza accompanied with dissers other their voyage into New Mexico, and the adjoyning coults and lands 1560,7561 & leg. Fryers that flowed were charity to the Indians then Sine mariners of our English nation.

planted from Virginia by Captain

Argall, 1808, 1209. French-

men feife on part of the King of

Captaine Frobisher his galances and prosperous conflic with the Spansh Armada in 88, and re-

Int, and natural fortification, Bunerals among the Indians of Wia-21320000 Eures very good bought for knines,

Tanes rich and meetek of any thing

Fyall or Fayall, a towne in the Azo-100 the fertilitie, beene Je dweltings, and taking thereof by the Lord of Cumberland, 1143

Aboretho, an Indiantowne, Gachepe, a high land neere the enwence mustbe river Canada. 1606. The description and big-. weffe thereof, 1616 Galliaces in mumber 4 in the fleet in

88, under the command of Dom Vgo de Moncada, 1900, They are described. Gallies, and their power in fighting,

1183. Gallies of Anda luzia feife on a Barke of Plimouth,

Gallions comming to the West Indies were cast away on the Ile .1 Guaddopa, 1822. Galleons of the Fleet in 88 described, 1901. A Gallion barnt in the Portingall voyage. Games ofed among the Mallafoyes,

Garcilla(co de la Voga, his relation of the ancient Kings, and Lawes of Peru before the Spanish conquest, Gardens of Gold, 1454, &1 cq. 1465,1466 Garone ariser in Florida, 1603 Gates, viz. Sir Thomas Gates his

arinall in Virginia. Gates his Bay in the Bermudas, 1739. Sir Thomas Gates wrack and redemption on the Il.ind Bermudas largely related, 1734, & seq. His endurance of a grienous florme, 1734, 1735, 1736. Ari. wall at the Iland, 1737. His care jor the Virginian Colonie, fending Rauens there, and care and toyle to furnish Pinaces for a voyage, 1 742, 1743. His punishment and

cie against him, 1743. His crosses by a fecond musiny, 1744. By a third, ibid. His punishing of a fuctions fellow, 1749. His Letters to Sir George Summers, containing his defire of furthering a Plantation. and reclaiming the factions, 1745, 1746. His religiom orders in Bernudas, 1746. and possessing it for the King of Gilbert-point, on the coeft of the Englands, with good rites and seremonies, ibid, 1747. His fettine fayle for Virginia, and arimelcome ibid. His affuming the Presidenty there, 1749. His speech to the distressed Company, with its acceptation, 1749. bis proposing orders to the Colony, 1749. His aliotting times of labour, 1750. Purpose to leave the Country, 1781. Relianing the Presidency, 1784 unto the Lord Dela Ware, ibid. His returns for England, 1756. His testimonie under cathof the State of Firoinia. 1757,1758 Gawarba, the north west point of

Port-Ricco, somewhat dangerous for nanigation, A Generall Bould bee couragious in fight, and courteons in victorie,

The Generals authority among the Spaniards, Geneue: a Riner. Gentlemen, in what manner made knowne and flyled among the Bra-Sir George Carew ois valour in Gnats,

the voyage to the Azores Iles, 1840 | Goayar River, Mafter George Percies relation of the lanth colony of Virginia, 168; eticqu. Heis Deputy Gonernor in the absence of the Lord De la 1763

Mafter George Thorne too courteous to the Sanage-Tirginians, ernelly repaid. 1780 Saint George, one of the Hunds of

the Azores, the Stuation and de-Scription thereof, 5. Geo ge, one of the Berniudas or Sommer Hands, 1794

George Fenner, his valorous encounter with the Spanish Armada Gold (which is frange) very much 1006

Georges Foit, a plentation neere the river Sagadoc in Mawoo-1874 Giboya, a great land Snake without

poyson, in Brasile, Gilbert, viz. Sir Humfrey Gilbert pardon of musicies, and confpira- his arine at the New-found land, Goldin no valer,

1882. Loft one of his Ships at the Hesof Canady, and returning for England was overwhelmed in the

Captaine Bartholmew Gilbert bis voyage to Virginia, with the occurrents therein, 1656. 1657. et leg. He is flame and foure men more by the Indians. 16.8

New found Lands: Ginge a towne of Sanages in the In-

nall there; 1748. His miserable Ginoloa, an Indian Province, the description and situation thereof. 1563. The fruitfulnelle thereof. commodities, inhabitants, and their workmanship and apparell. their long haire, tall flature, orest valour, and weapons, 1563, 1564 readineffe in them to heave the Gospell, their Baptisme, and Cato bifme, Subjection to the Denill. and familiarity with him, their honses, incennity, and adoration of Caftles, with Matt, and conerings of Reeds, 1564. Their formes of mariages, and Polygamy, education of children, fashions in making Knights adopting somes, manner of barralls. ibid et 1565 Ginger plentifull in Port-Ricco.

> Ginger how it orometh, 1178 Gironde, ariner of Florida, difcowered by the French. Glaffes fold deare. Guamanga, a City inthe fouth fea, 60 leagues from Lina, 1416 1359

1248 God acknowledged by the Ethiopians, and called Cari-pongoa, 1233. by the Brafilians Tupan,

Godwin-fands, Gomeribo, a monntaine in Guiana very fruitfull possessed by the Englift 1278. delimery thereof to an Indian as tenant to the King of England, 1672 Gomora, one of the Canary Hands,

Iohn Goodmans voyage and di-Broffein New England, 1848 difprsifed, 1814, 1815. Gold in Post-Ricco, 1165, 1170. in Topimo,

Gold-getters shall have many corri-Goldready tried of great valen in the Rivers of Port-Ricco, 1170 1185

THE TABLE.

Gold among the Topinaques, 1229 among the Pories, fore, 1229. Gold, 1230, 1231 1232, 1358. In Affrica, 12:7. The marmer of purifying it in the Indies, 12A2. and plenty there, ibid. Gold in Guiana how, and how pure, 1249 1261. Gold in fbem, 1255, in the Riner Aracow, 1262. Gold how greedily defired, 1277. Gold fore in the mountaine Oraddo, and plaine of Mumpara, 1284. Gold gathered two waves, 1294. Plenty of gold, ibid. Gold pro-cureth trechery, 1415. Gold great store, 1419. Gold Bipped from Cartagena for the Spaniard euery yeare how much, 1420 Gold is not alwaies the oreatest elenation of the Country where st is,

A Gold-defirer how ferned by the Indians, 1391. The defire of gold mak th [bristians infamous among Pagans, 1449. Gold called by them the Christians god, 1443 Gold net valued. 1526 Golden Country,

A golden chain of incredible weight and bigneffe, 1480. Infinite fore of gold in Per., 1490. 1491, 1494. Agold-wedge, the greatell that ever was naturally found, lost in the Sea,

Goinols voyage to Virginia, their resolution to plant, and breaking off againe, 1647,et (q.

Goinols hope, Gotier & his connerting the Indians after the Spanish fusion, 1449 Gouernment necessary by Land or

Sea, Gouernours-Iland, a little Iland neere Port Ricco, abounding

with Store of Pigeons, Cap. Gourgues as renchmans navigation into Florida, his renenge on the Spania ds, for the wrongs his Countrimen (uft inedty them,

1604.1605 Grampus, a Bay in New England to called by reason of the multitude of Grampules found in that place all kand of hearber, roots, and trees, and a very fertile foile, 1846,

Granada, a new Kingdome of the Spaniaras in America, the plenty of gold, chiefe City, and fenerall Proninces therof, 1410. Extream desolation an these of inhabitants by the Sauace tor ures and cruelties of the Spaniards, 1591,1592 Guayanaguacu, cane. inhabiting Sa-- 1593,1594,1595 | wages,

Granata Iles, Grand Bay a Harbour on the north Grapes good against the flux, 1172, Graffe wanting in a blacke champlon

country of the Indies, Gratiola, one of the Iles of the Azo- Gurracayo, inhabitants of part of res, 1671. It Submitteth it felfe to the English Admirall. 1960 Graitaca-Indiane. Gregory 13. his rage against Q. El zabeth.

1891 Greedinelle a dangerous enemy, Guadianilla, ariner in Port-Ricco, 11 c2,139 z. Greedinelle tofeth his prey, 1964. Greedinelle of Guaire Brafile Indians. 1200 the Virginian Colony, 1751 Sir R. chard G cenuile Generall of Gulgaifi, Indians neere the riner of Virginia, his voyage and acts,

the Spanish Armadoes, 1061 Sir R chard Greenuites fight with the too unequal Spanish Fleet his stout resistance, and great presuhim, his taking and death, with his Encomium,

Guamimbique . france [mall birds chadas some thinke of bubbles of ! Guacapo, drinke made of the coor-

het fpices, in the Indies. 1174 Guacoya, a torme in Florida neere the river Rio grand, the inhabitaxts and commodities thereof,

Guada'canal, one of the Iles of Salo-Guadalupa-Ile, wherein is a Bathe so hot, that meat may bee seethed Guyrig Brasilians,

Guiahate, a towne in Florida, well peopled, and plentifull with Maiz Guaiacatu , Sanages of Brafile,

Guaiscones-Indians. 1510 Gualda a ftrange Spring in Terce a, 1670

Guaniguanico, IO? Guarionix, a Realme in Hit aniola, the King pittifully abisfed by Spaniards, Guanes, a fruit in S. Lucia which enten ripe (ets a man a scouring,

but greene, stayes from scouring. Guatatlan, a pronince in IVem Spain

1299

1186 Guayo, Brafilion Intains, Sti 209 Grande, a river in Florida, 1503 Gu vavag pl a suet with & Mands in the mouth: 1100 1446 of the New found Land, 1882 Gualco, a Pronince in Florida.

Gapes in New France, 1612 Guatimala, a Province in America dispeopled by Spanish truelty.

> Brasile, 1300 Guatalca, a principall Port Towne,

Mariners a maine preindice to Guirapanga, a bird that makes a found as hard as a Bell. \$ 106 Plate their description : 1350 1647. bis desperatenesse against Gumins of rare operation for frind ? diseases in Gayana. A Gunners carele neffe, Gunpewder fonne by Sanares.

dice the Spaniards Suffained by Guacouolica, aplaterich with filter Mynes, Guits on the West Indian Boures.

in Brafile, of admired colour hat- John Guy his Letter from the New found Land, 1305 Guyanio, a great mountaine in Po t

Ricco. fest Sugar called Molatics, and Gayauas, a little excellent fruit as big as a Peach, with little 'eeds in them lake Goofberies.

It is good against the flax, 1172 Guyana, a river in Am rica, not that of Sir Walte Raieighs, the flore of Cattell, Sugar-mills commodities, and inbabitants thereof.

1228

Guarda Tomalongano, a riser in Affrica.

Guyana, 1247, & feg. Therwers and countries adsorning, 1:49. The bounds and limits, 1 270. Riuers and l'rouinces . 1271, 1272. the government thereof, instice, iealoufie, marieges, ibid. Their divers languages, ancient inhabitants Caribes, 1272. Artillerie, orderinthe warres, 1272, 1273. Policy Seasons, acrompts of time by the Aloone, religion, rites at burying Captaines, 1273, 1274. Their drankenne (c, opinion of the dead, Priefts and conference with the Devill, 1174. The quality of the Climat, 1274. their promision, bread drinke honey poffeility of vines, beafts, fish. fowle, fruits, 1174,1275. Its commodities of

Merchandise, as Sugar-canes, cotton-wooll, wood for dyers of elosh. 1275. Sweet gums very precious in Physicke and Chirmgery, drugs, medscinall plants, strange wood Tobacco, 1276, 1277. The things these Indians most desire to trade for, ibid. 1277. hopes of Guvaxule-Pronince. Guyraupiaguara, a great land facke that south as fail on tops of trees as a man on the ground, 1303 Guyranhe eng eta, an excellent speaking Bird in Brafile. Giants Anatomy fent from China to the King of Spaine, of wondrom greatneffe, Gyants at Port-Defire, their length, bique (e, flinging-flones, 1232 Gvants at Brafile, 1 243.0f twelne for height, ibid. Gyants in Peru. of whom one eases as much as fifty men,

H.

TAberebin , a Plaine in the West Indies betweene Marwin and Coorepan, Marbours in Virginia verie fafe and admirable, Harbour of Pentecost, its de-(cription, and commendation, preferred before the riner O enoco. and others, 1664. Its senerall beneficiall matters of worth largely. 1665, 1666 Harbour of Frenchmen, called by

the Indians Aiurema Piafaue in Brasile,it : passage for nanigators,

Capt. Mich. Harcourt, his taking possession of Arrawary. 1278 Capt. Harcourts voyage 1267, & feq. His company, and departing from Dartmouth, 1267. His ariwall at the Canaries, and from thence to Wiapoco, and Guiana, 1267, 1268. commeth to Garipo, connerfeth with the Indians. 1268,1260 agreeth and relideth with them, 1270 taketh polleffion of the mountaine Gomerico, 1278 The loffe of his voyage 1279, leameth Guiana, 1281. Resurneth bome, his small losses of men by the ibid. & 1282 Harris, one that blew off his nofe in frofty weather, at the Straits of

Magellanc, Hadarinner atown of Suppay-Sauages in the Indies. Halle at big as Fran ges,

Haire as big as a mans finger, Halo, the circle Gen about the Moon very strange and large in the Barmudas Ilands. Hamaca-beds. Hamburgers Ships surprised by the English. Han, a Language of the Indians in Florida. Hanamob. a towne of the Arwac-Samages in the Indies. Haps hill in Virginia, Hapaluia, a great Floridan towne. and its commodities. Harbouring in enemies ports is verie denocrous. 1378 Hardoo an Arwacea towne in the West Indies. Hatuncolla, Pancarcolla, Indians that have diners fables of their Originall; they worship a Ramme, and facrifice unto him, 1461 Hawkins Mayden-land, 1384 Sir Iohn Hawkins his courtefie to the French, 1604, St. Joh, Hawkins voyage, 1177. His courtefie to the Spaniards repayd with trechery, ibids& feg. his missortune, 1179. Death, 1182. A comparing of him with St. Fran . Drake 1185.1186

Mafter Will. Hawkins men perfidsouffy flaine at Playa, Sie Richard Hawkins bis vorage, 1367, & leq. His comming to the Canaries, Ilands of Cape Verde, the West Indies, and accidents there en by the way, bid at large: the overthrow of his voyage, 1282 His comming to the Straits of Magellane, 1384. the danger of his hip upon a rocke there, 1388. their strange delinerance againe from (hipmracke, 1289. His commino into the Straits of Magellane, 1391. His taking five fisps, 1393. His fighting with the Spanish Armeda, his dangerous wounds, 1403, 1404, 1405, 1406 The successe and accidents of this fight at large, ibid. & 1407. 1408. His surrendring the Ship, 1410. His courteous vilage by the Spanish General, 1413.et leq. Imprisonment, &c. 1419. hisre-Spect with the Spaniards, 1417 Hauana, where fituate. 1242, 1501 Hay, a beaft in Brafile feeding on Hivara, a beaft in Brafile like a Ciarre and leanes of trees, 1243 Head-ache cured by a leafe, 1276 Herbes very medicinable in Brafile,

their names and qualities, 1310.

st feq. Herbes good againft the

poyfon of Snakes, against the stone. but burtfull to feners; others good for feners, with leanes of a faddome long, for vicers and the Poxe, for the stone, and liner, ibid. Good herbes againft the ague, for a purge, for the bloody-fluxe, for poylon, for feuers, for the wormer, for a momanife fluxe, for wounds, for old fores, for the cough and rheumes, for the scale, for abortion, 1311. An herbe that openeth or shutteth with the Sume, that is sensible, that hath no smell. Herbe that feemeth to have the

fense of feeling, 1174 Heardimen of Port-Ricco, their thankefulneffe to Mafter Chalons for giving them a poore Frier

Heaven refused by some Indians, and Heaven enery with the English po-

S. Helena a Spanish garison towns in Florida. Henrico, a towne in Virginia, the description and lituation thereof.

Henry Earle of Northemberland murthereth himselfe, being committed for treason, Highney, a realme in Hispanicla. the Queen and inhabit ants burnt. hanged, terne in pieces, or otherwife tortured by the Spaniards.

Andrew Hilliard his strange and miraculous preservation from familing, 1802. His fustenance for eleven dives on his fell, and a (poonfull or two of water, with a little blood. ibider 1803 Hills-hap, a place so named in the

North part of Virginia, 1646 Three Hils, markes of Namigators on the coast of Brafile, called by the Indians, Aquare, Wafon, Remitum, Hills worsh pped by some Indians,

A Brance Hill in Saint Michael an Hand of the Azores, wanting fire, and the Ayre cold, yet having hot fountaines neere it, 1243. A (moakie fiery Hill in Fuego,

met-Cat, that eateth nothing but Hispania Noua described, the inhabisants, riches, and commodities thereof, 1432, 1433. Discone-

ries of divers Provinces thereabout, with their names, 1556, 1557. & Seq. The time when a first it was begunne to be inhabited by the Spaniards, 1977. The fertilitie thereof, bid. The cruelty committed by them on the poore Indians.

Hispaniola described, 1146. Inbabited onely by Spaniards without one naturall , 1419. The number of inhabitants confumed by the drowning , roafting, paunching, Grangling, and other unknowne butchering of the Spanards , 1570. 6 leq. Hispaniola hath eventy fine thousand Rivers plenseous with gold, the Realmes thereof . \$571, 1572. The innocencie of the Inhabitants, and undeserved Spanish tortures, 1572

Hobbamoqui, a Power wor foisped of the Indians of New-England, the same which wee call Divell, 1867. His illufion, wherewith hee deceivesh that blind and superstitions people, 1867, 1868. His appearing to the Indians in fundry shapes, but usually in the forme of a Snake.

Captaine Hobson his voyage being directed by two Indians, the treacherie of his Indians, and bis returne with the loffe of the whole adventure, 1828,

Hollanders trade in Hudions River, 1830. Their yearely revenues by the commodities of fishing, the number of their fishing bonts; their industrie in providing Ships,

Hollanders and Spaniards enmitie each to the other is implacable,

Honduras a Bay. Honestie of certaine Indians, in restoring such things as they found in the woods, Honey, aboundance thereof in certaine Trees. Honour preferred before life, 1944 Stephen Horkins a factious fellow condemned, yet pardoned for mutiny in Bermudas, 1744 Horrura, amountaine, 1285 Hories cast ouer-board, 1910 Horfes all trotters, 1171 Hories shooed with gold, 1490 Horics eaten, 1504

lo. Hortops relation of

edven-

tures. Hofpitalitie of the Indians to tramellers. Hospitalitie among Savages, 1188, Hot-countries agree not with idelers,

Houses of two Bow-shot in Lingth, 1188. Houses on tops of trees, 128c. Houles without roofes, in Regions without Raine, 1 420. Houses of great men, how di-stinguished from those of inferiour ranke, among the Florida-Americans, Houses of the Savages in New-

England, the manner of their building, and description of their boulbold Auffe. Lord Howard . Admirall of her

Maiesties Fleet to surprise the Indian Fleet, 1144. His valorous conflicts with the Spanish Armada. Huamachucu, Indians neere Peru,

that wor ship party-coloured stones and facrifice mans flesh, conquered, and reformed by the Emperour of Peru. Hunapampa , Indians that goenaked, worsbipping birds, beafts, or

Huana Cupac, sometimes an Emperour in Peru, his worth, valour, conquest, enlargement of his Dominions , his subdued nations, clemencie, courtesie to women. 1480, 1481. Further conaucits, and atts, his dicreet conjecture of a power supremer then the Sunne, 1481. His feare, will and prophesie of the Spanish invasion, his death, 1482,

Hubates, a well-peopled Province,

Hugo de Moncada, flaine by the English in the narrow feas, 1908 An Hulke with nine tunne of gold, 1222. Threescore Hulkes laden with provision for Spaine, taken by the English. Humanitie among Savages of Flo-

tida, to the diffressed Spaniards,

Hungry fare of the Savares snhabiring New-England, 1852 Hunt, a worthleffe fellow of the English Nation, his cruetty and treacherous vlage of the Savaces to the great disadvantage of

many of our countrey-men, 1828

Hunting, how bandformely perfor-

med by the Indians in Florida. Fiunting the wilde Boars , how ot-

chiened by the English at the Bermudas. Huntly wasteth the esternies in the Portugall vorage.

S Aint lago, a towne taken by Sir Francis Drake, and other Englift, 1181. The fruits forsification, commodities, and inhabitants thereof. 1271, 1420

laguacini beafts that are killed by their fleepinesse. * lacus Indians, their defire of Reli-Iamaica, the situation and descriptionthereof, 1147, 1185; 1419. poffeffed by the Spaniards; out of which were flaughtered by them fixe hundred thousand quittlesse Soules without faith or Sacra-I anies Ilands, 1270, The commo-

dities thereof. ames town in Virginia, how firmate, 1692. The first founding thereof, 1707. The burning and repairing thereof, 1710, 1711. The chandoning, and re-affurning thereof by the English, 173 1. The description on, fituation, fortification, temple, building, and webealthmelle thereof, 1952,1753 langathus, things made of Canes.

and tyed together with Miths , in Read of boats, querequete . A tombe neere Saine Sebastian, 1211, 1212. The Inbabitants thereof. aquerealick, an American River,

1223. In what manner nausgable. laquetyus, a Tree growing in the mountaines in America, 1214 laques Carters navigations to Newtound-land . Bird-Iland, 1605

arraraca, venemons Serpents in Brafile whereof there bee fours kinds there mentioned, 1303.1104 Iararaques, Serpents that ofe the water among ft the Indians, 1211 Iawayri, a River in America iffuing from Potolin a mountain in Peru.

Iawayrippo, a towne in the West-1268,1212 Iberacua, a Snake whose wehement poison maketh the burt persons blood distributions hall the passages of his body, Ibiboca. cccè

Ibiboca, a Snake very faire to looke on, and of most veloement poyson, but very plentifull in Brasile,

Ico-mountaines of eight leagues,
1606. Ices of the NewfoundLand, how casted,
Idolatry how casted among the In-

dians, 1558 Idols fold to the Indians by Spania ards. 1883

Icalousie of Sanages, 1662,1272 Ienero, ariner neere the Line in the Weff Indies, 1190. the description thereof, 1240. three hundred houses on it, its description,

Ieperos, Indian: fo called, 1361
Icronimo-riuer, 1386
Ierome Benzoes relation of the new World, 1448.& (eq. Ieliuts Colledge at Samos, 1203.

Ichius Colledge at Sames, 1203.
Ichius Frands to Sanges, 1243.
Ichius bring up the children of the Brafilians, 1232. are great effection comon them, 1298.
Ichius altis the Indies, 1564, 1365. Ichius exploits and transls, either for denotion we ambition, 1309, there pride, thickness, 1309, there pride, the lawates and the same of Florida.

Itha grande, a plate neere Brafile,

Ilands on the North of Virginia, their description and commodities for fish and falt. 1654 Iles of Salomon, their discovery and

description, 1447 lle Mallado in Florida, 1508. the inhabitants, description, and commodifiest extreame mourning for children, and the needed of age, their burials, and mariagerites, their Phissicins, their hinses, beds.

forts, manner of curing the ficke, 1508,1509 Hes of Saim Peter, 7 neere Canada Hes of Saim Paul, 5 2606 Hand of Pearles in the South Sea,

1180.

He Francisco, 1180.1411
Faire Hand, 1384
Hand of Cockles. 1439
Hand of Birds innumerable, 1605
He of the Hare in the River Sagemay, 1610
He of Filbeards, ibid.
He of Orleans in Canada, necessary
profest with democrous stats and
foods, in description. F611
Tobry Wands full of Wantus meere

1612

Canada,

Ite of Saint Eloy, the fertility of the softe adsopting, simelf to be planted, 1611,1612 lles neere the Sault, or fall of Canada, description, various fertility of feedit, trees, and smits, 1613. Ile Percec in Canada,

Ile de Bonadventure, ils.
Ile d'S. Croix in New France, its
description and fertility in dissert
kinds, 1622. its three discommodities that hinder good wintering
in it, 1623, an Iland of Vines
thereabout, 1633. lies very com-

modians and has borous, 1884. Iland-woyage wader the Earle of Effect, 1935, & feq. Illas de Lobos, defart llands in the Indies abomding with Seales,

1400
Illas de los Galapagos , defart Ilards and fraitlesse, 1400
Ile of Elizabeth, the Trees, Fowles,
Beastis, Fruits, Fisher, Snakes,
Colones, Astetals, and Stones,
thereof described, 1651, 1652,

Image of our Lady at Mexico, 2178 Images of gold among the Indians,

1185
Imperiall, a City of Spaniards, the inhabitants familhs, 1477
Inca Roca, a Pernan Emperour, his alls and conquests, repairing Schooles for prossiciency in Arts, his death and successor. 1447

Incas, the name of the Emperours of Peru before the Spanish inuafion, 1458, their Sacrifices to the Sunne, their ceremonies, conceit of sicknesses, idolatry, Priests, Momasterses, dissission of Empires tythings, tything-men, officers, education of children, their Indges, and manner of deciding of controversies, Connsellors of Warre, Prinie Conneellors, and presended connersion of their neighbours, 1461, their Altrolorie, opinion of Ecliples, Thunder, and Rainbow, their Dreames, Geometry, Chorography, Arithmeticke, Musicke, Poetry, Commedies, Handicraft/men, 1462, 1463. The Incas, their Monasteries, and pretions golden ornaments, their life, challity, and emplayment, 1466, their manner of sharing of tillage, care of widowes and fouldiers tributes freedomes . mant of Beogars, Innes holpitals. treasuries, courses after victories, 1469, 1470. Inpendions riches and power of their Princesh bonger, and admired fingerflairy of gold on their emments, officers, bursting, and Poftes, 1470, 1471; the Incas morres their come Sifers, 1470, their should be supported from their comes for their comes, there is the support of their stands, bassifument, trecherous, company, and final extripation by the Spannard final extripation by the Spannard 1489, 1489, 1489.

Indians killing themselnes because they would not ferme the Spani. ards, 1419. A Brazasem of their against the Spaniards, \$442. 1447. Indians how deale with by the Spaniards, 1448. their aberfing all Christians for their fake, 1449 their magnatimity, and feare of horses, 1449, their diferees reproofe of unchristians Christians, 1450, and opinion of them, their name for them, the promulgation of their liberty. 1453, 1494. Indians wor hipting high mountaines 1450. Indians that worthin the lea because it yeelds them fift, and the Whale because of his greatmesse, 1471. Indian policy and overthrow of the Spaniards, 1476. Indian victories , 1477. their valour and dexterity in armes, ibid. Indians names beyond Moreshego, 1280. Indian nations and languages almost innumerable in Florida, 1421. Indian superstition, 1522. Indians countries dispeopled by the Spaniards, the feare they beare toward them, they are fooner reclaimed by lone then cruelty. 1525. Indians laz y life, 1154 Indian Sodomy, 1010 West Indians described, 1158. Camball-Indians afraid to eate A man, left he should have the Pox, 1177 Indians at leaft thirtie thousand staine and captimed by the Portingals at one time,

An Indians courage vad (Prifitan desire at bir death, 1219.
Indian, a Fish in the Sea, and Fore in the wood, 1243
Indians arvillery, 1261
Indians manner of punishing mentither and adulterie, their selousse of their wines, 1273
Policie on their marret, 1273
Indians anyding the sight of Christians, and other Indians,

Indians

Indians with rough skinnes like buffe, 1280. Names of Indian Rivers, 1281. et 1182. names of Nations, 1280 ct 1282. Indians how bruitifuly and trecherously dealt mithall by the Camball Portingals, chusing rather to flye to the mercy of their fleshdenouring enemies, then there Christian Ansichristian Sauares 1 322. Their fruitleffe baptilmeby the Portingali, 1 222 the Indians religion of Brafile, or rather irrelipion, the feare they have of the Denill, 1226, 1237. their folomn allembly, linging, 1227, & lequ. dancing, ibid. Ceremonics, super-Rition, idslatrie, ibid. Indian valour, 1295. Indians worfe then flanes to the Spaniards, 1398.Indians vouernment, disposition, and fate in generall, \$421. Indians valour, 1 447. and simplicity in matters of knowledge and religion, ibid Indians in New Engof hunting the beaft called Moile. 1832. Indians of Dominica taught to drive their Caneas with fayles, 1823. Indians fore terrified at the light of some Englishmen, 1843. Indians drinking enely at the Spring head, 1852. their feare of the English , upon report that they kept the plague buried in a store kouse permitting it to infect as it pleased them. 1855 they buy mens lives for Bekers skins, ibid. Indians of Mattachieft, their kinde vlage of the English, 18:8. Indians of Manomet much given to gaming, will play for the skin on their wines backes, 1859, their toyfull receiming some religious precepts, 1862 Indians in Port-Royall, their courtele in acting provision for the French Plantation, 1623. Indians oration and eloquence, courtesic, noblenesse, liberality upon mbat termes, \$632. Indians of the Northerne America, their playing & musicke their customes in curing wounds, their simplicity and ignorance, yet (subtility, threewifenesse, and traiterou/nesse, 1634. they must not bec depended on, but (wayed with fenerity. ibid. an Indian womans prefent ibid. the Indians disapproofe of garments, ibid. Indians of diners Imgrages, not understanding one another in New France . 16:5. Indians how they may best be ter-

rified, 1635. you must not express any (courity, but alwayes feeme to be marie, resolute, and prepared for them, 1635. Indians of New France their marfare, \$6:8. Indian Southsaying, and supposed trechery, 1639. Indians lone to their children, ibid, they are preferred before (hristians, ibid. Indians weepe at the departure of the French from their coals. 1640. Indians christned in New France by the Frenchmen, 1644. Indian battaile, victory, and the consequents thereof, ibid. Indians of Virginia, their france apparell, and other description. 1644 Their great delight in musicke, dances, sceapons, ornamenss, boats, gardens. &c. 1655 trechery, and discovery, 1656. Indians disposicion and trechery, ceremonies, idolutrie, women , and their nature, their ornaments, 1662, 1662. & feq. Indian Virginian words of language weed amongst them, 1667. Indians in Virginia creeping upon all foure, with their bowes in their mouthes, desperate and hara 1686, their women and maids habit, and other cu-Gomes, 1680. An Indian 160 years old with a long white beard very lufty which is even e wonder amonest them, 1680. Indians Subtility and rebellion to the Staniards in Florids, their Accepter by them, after flauerie, 1533, 1 = 2 A. their murder by the Spani & feruitirie, 1535. an Indian Lady that swaid a Nation of them in Florida, the commodities of her country, and the courtefie fice showed the Spaniards, 1537, 1538. an Indian burned, ibid. another christned by the Spaniards . 1e:8. Indian firatagem as sinft the Spanisrds, 1944 their Sudden Slaughter, and endangered vimolt overthrow of them, 1545. Indians paint themselves with terrible colour, to fivike terror in their adaerfaries, 1546, their trecherie, bid. Indian eloquence, 1550. an Indians valinat and wittie answer to an imperious Spaniard, 1552. Indians ridiculous custome at the death of their Catique, 1552. Indians how they are wont to expresse obedience to Some of their superiors in Florida 1553. An Indian throwne to the does by a Spaniard, 1554 Indians conspiracy against the Spa-

mads in Florida disconcred, the attor; greelly deale with all having their right hands cut off. sees. An Indian burnt for herefie, and conferracy by a Spanish Indre in New Spaine 1557 Indian idelatry and worship of the Denill. 1558. they must bee brought to Christianity by feare, as faith a Spanis Freacher, I sen, Indian bypocrifie, 1558. linea vltima. Indians fo couragions and valiant, that armed most with poore clubs, they contest branely with strongly wmed Spaniards on horse backe, 1558. Indians worthinping plants and birds, and finging Congs wato them : and that facrifice one mean yearely to a painted Serpent, which the facrificed man tak th patiently, 1360. Indian embroidery, 1560. Indian mane of Malle and instruction Minis fers, 1563. Indians capable of veligion, and their baptisme and instruction, 1 = 64 Indian fecrete Smothered by Spaniards lest they foould come to light with their defadnantage, 1567. Indies difebmered by the Spaniards, Anno 1492, the first Land inhabited the He of H fpaniols, 1560. The nature of the Indians in generall thereabout their simplicity, patience, mecheneffe, impocency, inge-nuitie, and tender breeding, 1569. Three Millions of Indians perils by the Spaniards in Hilpaniola. fine hundred thousand in the Lacayos, in all thereabout twelve or fifteene Millions, 1569, 1570 Indians to the number of a Mila lion flaine and confumed by them in John and lamaica Hands. 1573. Indians (appole Golden be the Spaniards God, 1573 Indians refule heaven, fewing to meet the Spaniards there, 1574. Indians how many in the Ile Guba denoused by Spaniards, 1574. Indians defirered by Scamards in Terra Firma, and their multitule, 1575, 1526. Indians in Nicaragina contumed by the Spaniards fine bundred thouland. 1577. Indians in New Spaine. and its fewerall Provinces, denonred by the Spaniards to two er three Millians, 1577, 1578. Indians in Guarvinala, dispatche by Spanierd innumerable, 1579 1580, and Spanifo Mancesters, that is, Spaniards allowing therebles of Mans-fleft for food, 1 5800 C C C C . 2

England, Infants flaine by the Savages to doe Cacrifice to their god Habbamok,

Inquisition in New-Spaine, the punishment of two Italians there, 1177. Inquisitions barbarous crueltse .

Infolencie of the Indians of Matfachaotet. Interpreters to necestarie to a land-

travell in a strange countrie, that without them it cannot bee Ioancho de Luyando, a Mini-

master in Port-Ricco, hisriches, and plenty of gold, John Ortis a Spaniard, his taking by

the Indians in Pamphilo de Naruaez, his veyage, his fundry misfortunes, and eleapes, with a happy meeting his countri-men, 1531. His large travailes with Captame Soto, his death, and the discontent thence is suing to the Captaine.

Saint Johns River in New France, its beauty, store of fish, vines, with other commodities.

Saint John de Port-Ricco , a Citie in the West Indies, taken by the English, its description, aire, dewes, greatneffe , Church, mant of Glaffe-windowes, doores , Standing of their Quire in the lowest part of the Church, 1144 Forti fication, 1165. Healthine ffe, ibid. Its situation, 1169 And fortifica- Irocois, Savages in Canada, 1607

Saint Iohns head, the eafterly part of

Port-Ricco. Captaine Iohn Smith his discoverie of Ruffels Iles, Point-Ployer, and Limbo Iles in Virginia, 1712. His entertainment by the Savages, with courtefic, and treacherie, his mens desire of returne, 1713. His many Savage bickerings, endinger by a stinging Fish, and (afereturne, 1714. His fetting forth agains, and encounter with the Savages, 1714, 1715. The lone bee received from Moico that Savage, ibid. His fight with the Tapahonecks, 1716. His great tempests, yet safe returne, 1716. His affeming the presidencie of Virginia, 1716. His oppo-Stion by the Councell, iourney to Powhatan onely with foure, 1717. His ftrange entertainment, ibid. His provision for Nanfamund, project for Powhatan, and

and passages with Powhatan. 1721, 1722. His escaping death amidft his treacherous vaffals, ibid. His abuse by some treacherous Dutchmen, 1723. His great danger with fifteene men. by a multitude of Indians, ibid. His valiant evafion, and forcing them to compesition, captinating their King in the midit of them, ibid. of 1724. His poyloning by the Vallals of Powhatan and elcane. 1725. His death plotted by Dutchmen, his escape, encounter, and captivating the King of Palpahigh, and other bickerings, 1726. His progresse in the plants. tion, hinderance, and defire of remonall thereof. 1727.1728. His . hatred by upftart plantationers. escaping their plots, and revenge onthem, 1729. His suppressing mutinies, appealing, concluding peace, endanger by powder, 1730. 1731, His endanger of murther, grieugus torture, returne for England, and the canse, with the confequents. 1731, 1732. His accufers, and accusation, 1731. His innocencie.

Master Iones his endenours, surthering the plantation of New-England.

Ippoa, a place neere the great Iland in America. Iraling, a place feven leagues from

Mexico.

Their River, and manner of fortification with Stakes, 1612. Their further description, provision, and townes, and warres, with their vangsishment, and affrighting 1643 with a musket-flot, Iron extelled above gold, 1814 Isla del Gallo, an Iland, 1444 Itshuera, a towne of the Caribes, one

dates iourney from the head of the River Mai win, Saint Juan de Lua, achiefe partin Nous Hispania,

Iuan de Ofnate, his discoverse of the North from old Mexico , bis armie and preparation, 1 563. His losse and revenge of his Nephen, his building a soune, and poffeffion for Spaine, Iuan Fernandes Ilands , their firma-

tson and plenty, Iucaran, how fo called, 1455. The inhabitants tortured, and coniumed, by the Spamards, 1581, 1582,1583

Setting forth, 1720 His discourse, Iumanos Indians,

THE TABLE.

Saint Iuo de Vilua . a Port towne, Juana the fecond fland in Orenoque Ixtatlan, a place in New-Spaine. Iyanough, a Governour among the Savages of Pechanochick , Saint Izabella, one of the Iles of Salomon.

[/ Aiwaire, atowne inhabited by the Careebees . in the River Marwin in America. 1282 Kebec, a place in New-France. wherein was a plantation of the French begun by Capt. Champlaine 1642. The natural fruit and commodities thereof ibid. Kecoughtan, a towne of Savages in Virginia, 1687. The inhabitants. maner of entertainment, dancing, Orations. Kenebek, a towne under the Don

minion of Apomhamen in Mawoofhen. Ketangheanycke, a town under the

Sagamos Octoworth, 1875 Capt. Keymish his voyage to Gui-Kiarno, a towne of the Sanares,

Kietitan, a god of the Savages,

Kine very france in Brafile, livino in water, without hernes or vdders, 1243. Kine ftrange necre Quiuira , with bunched backs,

A Kings distinction from others amone the Amazons, is by a crowne of feathers, a woodden fword, or a chaine of Lyons teeth.

Kings bodses how bestowed after death by the Peruans, before the Spanish conquest,

Kings dring among the Floridan Indians, and Tartarians, two your men are flaine, to wait upon them in the next world,

King lames his name nothing respected among the Spaniards. 1834. His faithfulneffe to the Queene of England , his mile answere to her Embassadour. 1912. His gracious letters to the Earle of Southhampton touching the Silke-wormes, and

ved fifteeene yeares at Santos, Kimbeki, a River in New France,

Knaw-faw an Iland, how situate,

Knights, how chosen and created La Buena Ventura, an unhealthy among the ancient Emperours of Peru, and who thought worth of Knighthood.

Kniners adventures, accidents, 1 102 He finds a cheft of Rials, 1203. Loseth his toes by frost, 1204. Narrow scaping death, 1205. 1206. His danger by a Sea-Monster, 1207. Eateth Whale. 1207. His escaping (all his fel-lowes staine) 1207. His comming to the River Innero, and escaping from drowning by a woman, his life there, 1208. His flaverie in a Sugar-mill, nakedne ffe, hame, and flight to the wildernesse, his life wage, 1208. By a Sharke-fift. 1209. His difastrous flight and wracke, 1209. Indanger offar-ving, ibid. His imprisonment, condemnation pardon, 1210. His wounding the Factor, fight, ionrney, and fortune, 1210. His fearfull travels through the wilder... nesse, and manifold dangers there, 1210, 1211. His returne to his old mafter after many perils. 1212. Kils a oreat dangerous Snake, 1215. Is stocked and brought to execution, laved, 1216 Paffeth in a weake veffell through a River that ran under-ground, 1217 His escape, all his fellowes devoured, ibid. His nakednesse, 1218. Returne againe to his Portingall Mafter, bis danger, ibid. C 1219. His adventure underwater, 1220. His escupe and vovage to Angola in Africa, his fending backe againe, ibid. His plot and dangerous discoverie, 1221. Saveth his master from drow-ning, ibid. Is imprisoned, 1222. Escapeth drowning, 1223. Ariveth at Lisbon, his sicknesse there, 1224. One and twenty times let blood, 1225. His recoverie, imployment, and imprison-

amongst the Indians, 1229, A Knife bought eight women,

Silve-graffe in Virginia, 1787 Kuskarawaock, a river in Virginia, Io. King Englishman , one that ti- the inhabitants thereof 1694

Abour well implored both in L reward one time or other,

place in Peru La Canela . a Country in Peru.

Lacana, a milerable come in Flor Laguada, a towns in Port-Ricco.

Lake of a bundred leagues in length,

A Lake wondrous oreat, 1612. A Lake of 80 leagues, 1614. Many others, ib. & 1615. One of three

hundred leagues. La Loma de Camana, a very fertile joyle in America, the description

there, 1208. His perillby a Sa- La Mocha an Iland in America.

Lampere , a fortified Citie of the Carios in the Indies taken by the Spaniards.

Lancerota, the town and Castle taken by the Earle of Cumberland. 1151,1159. It is one of the orece tell Ilands of the Canaries, I Ice The chiefe towne in it described, 1156. The inhabitants , armes, fituation, commodities, latitude. their feverall harnests. Church Religion,

anguage of Savages , 1237. A thousand languages of Savages, 1524. Languige mords of Virginian Savages, 1667.Language very copious and difficult.

La Pacheta, a small Iland, 1414 Laquedambaras, Nut-trees among the Indians.

La para Iua, a place in the Indies taken by French from the Spanish. and repossessed by them, 1428 Las Cabecas, Iles fo called, 1244 Las Ilhas , an American towne ,

Layfield, viz. Dollar Layfield bis relation of Port-Ricco voyage, 1155. 6 leq. His imployment under the Lord of Cumberland.

Kniues and Hatchets deare fold Lesfe in Guiana called Kellette curing poisoned wounds, and the heidach, 1276. Apparell made of leanes,

League betweene the Muffafois and the English, Leakes, how flop'd under-mater

France. Lepos Tomienos a kinde of Ca-Lerius his relation of Brafile, 1 325. 6-leg. 1836 Verrers lent from the Colony in New-England, Anno 1622.

1840. From New-found-land. 1889 Levhannos, a Savage people of the West-Indies.

Lignum Vita. Lightening hils two men, 1672 Lightening in a great tempest Cases Mariners from bipwracke.

Light at fea feene on the Shrouds in a hell darke might, conceits and names thereof, Lima Indians of Peru, 1365. Their

City, bigneffe, and inhabitants 1416,1421 Limbo-Iles in Virginia. Lime made of Oyfters,

Timo River. 1148 Line, bow and when most fafely to be pussed, Listers dangerous attempe, 1142 Liver, by what meanes corroborated

and preferved, Lizards eaten in America. 1326 A monstrous Lizard. Mafter Locks death neere the Line, the onely friend of Captaine Can-

dish in his last vorace, 1201 Lomioo, a town in the Indies, inhabitedby Arwacca Savages, 1285 Londoners voyage to New-Eng-

land, Anno 1616. p. 1838. To the Canaries from London , An. 1616. p. 1839. From London to New-England againe, An. 1620 enerthrowne by the rage of divers tempelts, to the loffe of goods and

Long-Ile in New-France, 1622 Long-reach aplace in the Straits of Magellane, 1389

Lopez de Agira, a mutinous Souldier among the Spaniards, his extreame cruelty, and event, 1436, 1437. His plot to poison Queene Flizabeth. Lonez Vaz. & Portingall, his voy-

are and Hiftorie touching places and discoveries in America, 1432 orfeq. Loquilla, A hill famous for Mynes

Port Ricco. Lopos Savages in B afile, called by the Portingals Bilreros : their houses, wyldnesse, harmlesnesse, Sharaclefneffe , beuftlineffe , momen, complexion, 1230. Store of

Lord de la Ware his happy arinall at the diffressed Colony in Virginia 1 - 22. His presidency there. \$754. his first Acts, and the constitution of Officers, his councell ibid. His fending Sir George Summers to the Bermudas for provision, ibid. His wrongs by Powhatan, marevenge, muh a message to him, 1755. Its successe and his pum (hing an Indian, 1756 His relation to the Lords and the Conncell of Vi ginia , southing his returne thence, 1762. 6 1cq. Hes fundry fickneffes, ibid. & 1763 His death in a verage to

Vaginia, Lord of Southampton Treasurer of Virginia, 1783. His provision and supply of it, ibid. Historiers to the Colony touching file-plants. 1787,1788

Lotterie fer up in London , for the Colony in Virginia. Lots cast for enery mans severall logding in New-England, 1848 Low-Countries supposed to have Ships great and smull of all forts , Saint Lucia, 1146. The description

and commodities thereof, 1165 Lukes-Bay, a pleasant harbour in New-Scotland.

Lutherans thought a title of ignominie to the Spaniards, though they cost fed God took part with

Luyfa, a tomue neere Port-Ricco,

Luys de Moscoso made Gouernour of Cube, and Adelantado of Florida after Sotoe: death, 1552. His and his companies resolution to travellby Land Westward in that countrey, his ariuall at seuerall Indiantownes, and entertainment, 1553. His being in danger

of tofing him felfe, and his company in the defert-countrers, ibid. His uncomfortable travels in the deferts, chendurace of scarcity there. his returning the fame way hee came, 1554 And taking paffage downe a River to the fea, the whole remainder of his company. their dangerous forme, and perill by the Indians in the River, 1555. His arinall at Panuco, 1556 Lying , how punished by some Indians.

Lyma, aplace in the West-Indies. 1242, 1393. The description of the Bay that leadeth to it, 1394 I vons in the West Indies, 1211. They call them Iswarolou, 1229. are worthspeed in Peru . 1457

M Acanao, the westermest point of Margarita, 1266 Mace, his vovage to Virginia, in a barke fent by Ser Walter Releigh, Machaleis, ariver in the West In-

Maccab, a Small River neere Ore-11000, and Guyana, 1246 Macucagua, a Birdresembling the Fealent, and bath three skins one ouer another. 1 206

Macurio, a River. 1247 Macuerendas a Nation in the River Parana in the Indies, populous and fierce, their description, 1250 Macuta Indians in Brafile, 1200 Midalena a River in Florida,

Madera Ilands, their description, disission, and commodities, 1369 Madera He disconcred by Master Challons, in his voyage to the North of Virginia. Madiopuera, avenemens frimme,

Magalines , a Portingall Naviga-Miguana, a Province in Hilpa-1473

Magdalene River, Magellane Straits described, 1384. Vide freights. Magellane freights extreame winter, 1193 Mogury a tree yeelding Wine, Vincger. Honey beats, threads, needles,

tables, and hafts of knines, besides many medicinable vies, 1421 Maiz of two forts, the one like Rice, the other like Ginny Wheat, 1173 1851. Maketh ftrong drinke,

1258 1399 Malabrigo Port, Manco

THE TABLE

Manco King of Peru, his diffresse by the faithlesse Spaniards, and the iffue. 1486, 1487 Mammeis, an excellent kind of fruit, Manarippano, an Iland in the midst

of the River Otenoco, 1249 Manilla Iland. Mandioco, the ordinary food of the suhabitants of Brafile, which ferweth for bread: the Grange effects thereof, 1214, 1309,1310.Wine made of the root Mandioco, which preferveth the Liver. 1210 Man-eaters , vid. Canibals.

Mans inconfrancie, 1190.1101 Mapies, certaine Indians fo called. their description, countrey, and commodities, they are a very marlike Nation , and treacherous , 1362,1362. Their overthrow by

the Spaniards. Marble Rocke of balfe a mile in length. Marchin-Bay, how fituate, and why

so called. Marcomwin, a village in the River Marwin. Saint Maries Hand, the fitnation and

description thereof, 1393, 1143, Mariages how undertaken and folemnized by the Inhabitants of

Peru, 1457, Mariage forbidden to him that hath not taken his ene-Mariquites certaine Canibals fo cal-

led, their stature, women , dwellings, religion, language, cloathing, 1226.1227 ofc. Maroer, a Brasilian Riner, 1242

Mariners, their duty and disposition. 1168, 1401 Martha, a Province in America very rich in gold and other com-

modities, 1583. It is now changed from a peopled Countrey to a defert, by Spanish cruelite. 1982.

Martha's Vineyard, a dis-inhabited

Saint Martha, a towne taken by Sir Francis Drake, Marwin River, and the Regions thereunto adjoyning, Mallafovs, a company of Savages in

New-England. 1840 MatTal ove, his acknowledgement of King lames to be the Conernour | Menehighon Iland, how fituate, of his Countrey, and himselfo his English, and prohibiting the 1852,1862 French, Mallangono, a Portmeall Fort in

Affrica, the description thereof, 1 \$220, 1234, Gold therein taken by the Portingals. Martines much recorded in Virginia,

Marauzas, the lituation and descrittion thereof. 1246, 1247 Matinin, a haven in America. 1146,1157

Saint Matthews Bar. Marra diabolo . a Fort in Port. Ricco. Mattaick, a Rocke which with the brightnesse thereof dazeleth the

Martouri an Ilandin Guiana, 1272 Mauriapigtanga , Inhabitants of Brafile. Mawooshen, a Countres discovered

by the English , Anno 1622. Maids how distinguished from maried women in Virginia, 1680. Their habite and behautour when they are to be taken to mariage.

1860, 1150 Henry Mays his voyage and hipwracke on the Bermudas, or Summer-Ilands, 1795. The loffe and faving of some men.

Meat made of Snakes, 1210, Meat how kept from corresping among the Savages, 1326. Meat not eaten by the Indians , voleffe fantified by the Spania ds. Mcccombe, a towne on the River

Apanawapesk. Mechuacan, a place in New-Spaine. 1557, 1580 M'echuacan, a place neere the South

Mecola, the lituation thereof, 1246 Mendozaes Indian voyage and fuccelle, 1347, 1348, & fea. Hee builds the citie Buenos Ayres. the miserable famine there, and warres wish the Indians . the death of his fouldiers : his returnino and death by the way . 1248. 1349,1350

Men of three hundred yeares are in Florida. Mendozakis intended treason against Queene Elizabeth . 1802. Hee being Embassador from Spaine is commanded to depart the English

man: his kinde entertainment of Merenes, a Nation in the River Parana in the Indies, their defeription, firength, and multitude,

Mermaids feene in Brafile , 1240 on the coast of New-found land

Mormen, or men of the Sea that kill men with embracing, and then feeme to figh, 1315. Some are as tittle as children, and doe no hurt,

Mefquiquez an Indianfruit, 1510.

Mestizo. one that is halfe a Sanave. and halfe a Portineall, 1207 Metall like Lead found in Canada on the South. Meuis He the Stuation , excellent bathes, and commodities thereof.

Mexico Navigations, 1177. The bienelle of the Citte, the nature and docibilitie of the naturals, the company of Spaniards there . 7 42 1 The populoufneffe thereof, 1412. Mexico and all the adiavaira Provinces unpeopled by Spanish crueltie, 1578. Two millions of Indians flaine by them there

Saint Michael a place in the Azores. 1142. A frange Hill, and wels there, 1142. Its description, 1671 Saint Michael, a River in Ameria ca, neere the River of Toads. 1223. It is dangerous for Navigation.

Saint Michaels Strait in Florida, Saint Michaels towne triumpheth

at the departure of the English, Mico, a river in Florida , which at the mouth is called Rio Grand.

Middletons voyage, 1246. 0 1247 Miles Standish his travell in Newfound-land.

Military orders established in New-England, 1849. Military difcipline as well showed in making a faire and fafe retreit, as in osvino a fierce and furious enfer, 1962 Will. Millington drawie into the

Sea by a Fift, and never feene Mines of goldin Port-Ricco, 1165.

Where the richest Mines, 1177. At Etapulick very rich Mines of gold and filver, 1222, 1229. Alines in plenty , 1230. Likewife, 12 ; 1, 12 48. Wines of A. palatei in Florida, 1604. Mines of Copper, of a metall like filver in Canada, 1617. Other Mines shere, o where to be found, 1618, 1619, Mine of Steele, 1639

West Indies. Mirth, a preservatine against the CHTHY,

Mists, fore and thicke, neere the Banke very cold, and the cause thereof, 1628. It is then faire at land though at fea for gie, 1629 Mocha, an Iland in the South Sea, 1201. The description and commadities thereof.

Mochocho, an Indian Governour in 1531,1532 Florida. Mogador, a place on the coast of

Barbary. Mehotie, a populous Indian Province.

Melopaques , certaine Savages of Brafile, 12 20. They have fore of gold, but efteeme it not, except to A withall.

Monasterie in Saint Iohn de Port Ricco, 1165. Monasteries in Peru and Cozco, 1456,

Moneta Ile, its difficult landing and unsteakable abundance of Fowle,

Monkeys rolled and eaten, 1213 Monkeys in Brafile called W1riua by the Inhabitants as bigge as a Spanyell, with long broad beards, 1226, 1302. Their King, bis fashion, and other feats of activitie. bid. Some that we mendenourers, ibid. Their care in providing the lafety of their your, 1228

Monferotta Iland. Monfeur de Montz voyages related, 1620. & feq. His focietie broken, and is enused ut, 1638 Monte Christo , a weake towne of the Spaniards on the Indies.

1418 Monte de Plata. Mooremoreno Iland, 1397. Itsinhabitants, description, their lone to the English, and hate of Spaniards. Mafter Moores Plantation and so-

vernment in the Bermudas Ilands, 1801. His building Forts. ibid. dispelling Spanish ships, and other acts, ibid. His death, and disposition,

Moratiggon, an Ile about a dayes Sayle from New-England, 1849 Morecapana Road , the fituation thereof,

Morecshego, a place in the River Marwin.

Morrequito, a certain country neers 1248 Orenoco. Moron, a towne of Canibals, 1227 Morrowina, Guyanian Province,

Captaine Morgan flaine in Brafile,

Morouishaua she Kinos name amone Some Savages of Brafile, 1229 Mosco a Savage, famous for his lone to the Enelin .

Molle, a certaine beaft as bigge as an Oxe, headed like a Deere, with a broad Palme, which hee mewes enery yeare: his haire is long like an Elke, hee hash a great bunch under his throat, his legges long, his skin maketh very good Buffe, his flesh is excellent food, very vsefull to the Savages in New-England, 1822

Motto of the King of Spaine in Saint Domingo, 1182 Mottayas certaine Canibals in Bra-

file their love to the English , feeding on Frogges, Snakes, Monkeys and Dogs, their man eating. haire, beafts, and commodities,

1220.1210 Mourning expressed by cutting of the haire among Indians, 1291 Mourning of the Indians for thefe that die,

Mount-maniell, an Iland on the roal of New-England, abounding with the Beaft called M II:,

Mount Howard, 1260, 1254 Mount Huntly, 1261 Mount Aldworth in Virginia,

Mountainiers, Savares localled in Canada, that make warres with the Irocos,

Mountaines flored with gold, 1284. A mighty mountaine (nowy on the top, and terrid at the foot, 1156. A mountaine exceeding fleepe, 1214. A glittering mountaine, 1216. A mountaine of Crab Lice, 1228. Mountaine of metals, 1232, Mountains abounding with filter and gold, 1248. Mountaines covered with Snow, that for their height may bee seene thirty leagues into the Sea,

Movemon, alarge towne in the River Marwin, Muccambro, an Iland and Mountaine in Guiana. 1272 Mumpara a plaine, abounding with graines of gold, 1284 Murther, how punified in Guiana,

1272. In Brafile. Murther punished by the Indians. with present death, 1870 Muskitoes, their venemons ftinging,

Mulo, a torme in new Granada; the exceeding benefit thereof, to the King of Spaine, 1428 Muske of a Crocodiles Cod, 1228 Muske-Snake , a freet fmelling Serpent of Brafile,

Mutinie like to receive its deferved reward. 120 I Mutinic, the overthrow of a voruse.

Mutiny among the Spaniards, 1436 Among the French in Florida. 1603. Among the English in Virginia, 1729, 1730. In the Bermudas. Mutinga abounderb with Mynes,

1208 Mutton-Port. 1620

N.

Maguatex, a come in Florida;

Namafchet, a somme under Mailaloyt, 1851. The Namalchets courteous entertainment of the

Names encreased, according to the number of persons, slaughtered among the Indians, Names altered amongst the Indians according to their acts and diftolitton, 1869. Names of certains Englishmen affistants in the Plantation of the New-found-land,

Names of the English Knights fighting at the flege of Cadiz, 1933. Names of the Captaines and chiefe officers in the Voyage to Azvies.

Naniamund, a River in Virginia, Nanoligganfets threaten the Eng-14%, 1853. Their great Superfish on in doing Sacrifice to their god

Habbamogni, Naruacz, his voyage, arinallat Dominica, Same Ligo. The Trinitie, bis fipuracke there, bis comming to the land of Marles, 1900, of a towne in Florida for the King of Spaine, 1501. His arinall at Apalachen, and entertainment there, his surprisall by other Indians, his comming to Ante, 1502, 1503. His diffreffed successe. 1504. And loffe of men by the

THE TABLE.

Indians , ibid. His mifery by thirlt . 1505. His companies extreame weaknesse, 1509. With insufferable famine and mortali-Napetuca, a towne in Florida,

Naragooc, a towne in Mawoofhen.

Nations that are barbarous, licenced by the Popes Bull to be subdued by violence,

Nauarre overthroweth the forces of the French King at the battell of

Courtras. Nauy of Queene Elizabeth Sent to

the Azores, Navigation the advancement of Na-

Nauigators instructions, 1368,

Naulets, a company of the Sausecs in New-England a bundred strong,

Nebamocago, atowne bordering on the River Aponeg, in Mawoo-

Negligence like to endanger the loffe of a great prize, The Portingals for the West Negro's rebelling against the Spa-

Neguiwo, an Ile neere the River Sagodohoc in Mawooflien,

Nepios certaine inhabitants of Trimidad Niewoc an Ile in Mawooshen,

Neredofhan, a towns on the River 1874

Aponeg, Nets made to carie travelling strangers from towne to towne in Bra-

New France, a great part of it thought to be fandie ground as far as Virginia, 1634. 1635. New-Frances commodities presented she King of France, 1641. The inhabitants when first christened,

New-France inhabited by the Frenchmen, because they lope to get a paffage thence to China, 1642, 1644. The manner of trading in New-France,

New-Frances difeases how they may beefcaped. 1624, 1625. New France, the bounds thereof, 1603. The probabilities of gold Mines there, 1621. Diamonds & Turkie Rones there, 1621. Grapes, Fift, and Cedars,

New-Mexico the towns thereof, and

hwilding the inhabit tous, and their Capr. Newports voyage to Virginia , and returne for England , 1:86, 1705, 1706. His Supposed preizdice to the English plantation there, ibid. His proceeding to discour Monacan in Virginia, and fuc-

New-England & the New-foundland disconered and implanted by the English, 1827. The climat very temperate, agreeable to the bodies of the English , making them line langer then in other countreys, the Soyle fertile, variety of nourishing hearbs, and roots, the coast full of commodious harbours and havens, many Iles fit for plantation, wood of all forts in abundance, 1831. The people have our English Nation in goed estimation , and are tractable in trading the Sea is stored with all kind of Fish, diversity of wild foule, Dones in great aboundance in time of Stramberries, abundance of rich Furs, 1831, 1822. Great Shews of Amber-preece and Pearle fore of Whales in the Seathereabout, ibid. New-England described, 1870. Enalish corne and cattle profeer

there. New-found-land described, the fertilier of the forle the temperature of the are, conveniencie of the Baies, the inhabitants, their nature and cuftomes, 1885. Herbs and flowers pleasant and medicinable, great increase of corne, fore of Decre and other beasts: great store of land and mater-foule, 1885, Store of trees fit to build with, 1886. Great probabilitie of Mynes , and fift in great

abundance, New-Plimmouth abounding with divers commodisies of oreas worth. and very necessary for mans suftenance : Timber of all forts , diuers Mines of unknowne worth . fore of fig. Beaners, and others,

Nicaragua Province, 1446, 1576 Saint Nicholas Bay, Nicholas Sanders his flunders apainst Q. Elizabeth ; Hee oltaineth to be the Popes Nuncio; entereth Ireland, winneth Definon: runnesh mad, and dyesh miferably, 1863

Nicorago, a River, Nilco, a Province or territory in Florida, one of the richeft in all that country, the townes, inhabitents,

and commedities thereof, 155 wer hipping the Denill, 1561 Noblemen imployed in the veragete the Azores Noble Perforages volentaries in 88.

under the King of Spaines banner, 1717. His opposing Capt. Smith, Nondacan, a province in Florida wel inhabited the commodities thereof.

Norrack, a Province neere the River

Arwin Guiana. Gen. Norris kis materiall education, Generall of all the English Forcest Martiall in the field under Conte Hohenlo, Martiell of the field in England: Generall of the Army in Frilland Lord Prefident of Msnfer in Ireland , 1916. Winneth great honour & fame by his welordered retrait in the fervice before Gaunt, 1962. His death, 1968 M Norwoods relation of the Bermudas, and the Enolish plantation

there. 1707. @ fcg. Noest, a famous Navigasor among the Dutch. Norumbera River and the fabulous narrations thereof, 1625

Note loft in cold weather. 1105 Noua Galitia. 1 = 26 Noua Scotia, a prosperous plantation,

by the dexterity of Sir Samuel Argall, 1828. Noua Scotia, a plantation in America 1871 . Abundance of Strawberries and all kind of wild foule, and very pleasant countrey,

Nunnez his relation of the Fleet which Pamehilo Naruaez was gowernour of in India, 1499. 6 icq. His shipwracke, 1500. His disastrous fortune by samine, ficknesse, Lubour, and nakednesse, am. 112 the Indians, 1509, 1510. His comming after divers perils to the Indians- Juanerez, 1514. His mishaps there, and dangerous escaping of burning , 1515. His curing the ficke by prayer and raifing one from the dead, 1916. His comming to the Harbridges, and the hungry Sufis hee made there, 1517, 1518. His repute among the Savager, their feare and admirat on of him, 1521. 1422, 1323. Histravell to the South Sea, and occurrents, 1524, C.c. His meeting with his country-men, 1526. His arinall as Composteila and Mexico.

Nunno de Guzmans his expeditions, 1 556.6 icq. Histaking polleffion for the King of Spaine in the dddd

O Ares of what fashion among the West-In lians, 1158. Oares of the Indians of the Newfound-land. Oaths and Blathhemie anainst God. and our Lady, forbidden in the Spani b Armado, 1 502. O. ths how punified emong the English in Virginia. Ocagna a place in America where is abundance of oold, 1419 Octwita, a pretty binge Iland in Orenoque, 1148 Ochete tonne. 15:4 Ochas . a Floridan Province .

Ocoa, a tomme in Hipaniola, 1186,

Ocute a towne in Florida, 1555 Occore, a high mountaine, 1:48 Offrings amont the Indians to the Dine 1 by the intercostion of their Priest Powsh. 1868 Olmoleigh River, Olyphoa mount in the Indies. 1252 Omit'an , a Province of the greater Soune in America: the deferietion of the countrey, feyle, and nottaking possession thereof by the Spaniaras, Opechankanow, a great King amengat the Irdians taken by an Pamau ke River,

mic, 1841. And in his own boufe, die against Captaine Smith ban-Somely revelled. Op ortunities neglected, 1196 Oringes their foveraigne vertue, 1378. Good against the surme. 1763 Order observed in the Spanish Fleet,

Ordnances helt for Ships : whether long or fort pieces, 1402 Oren que a River in Americ: de-Soribed, 1156, 1247, 1248. 1249, of feq. Parabel River,

Organs, aplace in the Wolf-Indies | Paracuona River. abourding with gold mines, 1222, | Paracee Port. Orillano a Spanish Captaine his dif-Olange, a Brance kinde of disease. Offriches astall as aman, 1189 Ouercharging pieces of Ordrance. and other pieces how preindiciall, 1297. 1208 Ouigondia towne of Savages in the Northerne America, 1638 Oxenhams vorage to the West-Indies, his attempts and travels to the South Sea, his prime and misfortune... 1180 1414 Oxen mostled like theore in Florida, 1550 Oxto Burch-back'd and very from af crived, which are ment driebe A soes, boules, fire, velals . c.k if ar mafters whole | Palini a towne in the River Mar-Gil A some Oxon and by their name in Pallaos Cape, in To the men 1 69.1670 Parogones , people of great flature 1313 1314 Oviter or stand boom Pents in Remove of om- In as for a quater of every ingerior. 1400 PAchaer & Engine of Der ikis 1-72 Pacaba Province. 1540 Parallaya Procuree 15-4 O'vinda atomne in Reafile. 1228 Patembos, or Piet has an Indian Savage Nation. 1:53 Palifema Province, 1:49 Palma one of the Canary Iled. 1833 Some Servents, the difference and Palmoto tree, and the front thereof delcribed. 1173.1375 1559 Palmes excellent to cure the Hameroides, 13:2 1600 Englishmeninthe midft of his er- Panace yname acacone, a great Mountains to called. 1723. 1721. His plots and perfi- Panama the figuation deferirties, and riches thereof, 1180,1418,1444 ibid. -Pan co a Prosince de Lesplastr the Spaniards, Oraddo, amo intaine plentifull for Panagoiri lecture of B aile, 1,00 1284 Panobleor, atomie openine River Ramaifue. Paos River, Paps which certains people bane reaching under their wast, and neere to their knees. Papricis a kin le of fruit like an Apple of a materiff tife, good Peafe which are venemous, 1206

against the Fluxe.

Papemena River,

1212 1217 1242 | Paraevua River, 1209,1211,1212 1237,1242 Paramaree, a some in the River Marwin, 1282 Paranapiacano, a Mountaine full of Snakes and wilde brafts , 1210, Parker, viz. Capt. William Parker his voyage and taking of Saint Vincent and Puerto Bello, 1242 1244,1244 Parrats & Parochettoes wonderful plentifull, 1172, 1264. 1304. 1305,1372. A ftrange relation of a Parrat in America, 1329 Par v his treafen against Queens E'iz.be.li in what manner renea-Partridges as bigge as Geele, 1329 win, like Guants. Patota Fromme de cribed, 1536 th m 121 - Orthers t'e meiv/n- Patewomeck, a Rever fixe or feven mules in breadth, and nanigable an bandred and forty miles, 1692 Patent of the French King to Monfeur de Mones, for the inhabiting of the Countreys of La Cadia Ca noda, and other places in New-France, 1619, 1620. New Patents thought on concerning the platation of New-England, 1820 A catent for the platation of Newfound-land. An. 1610, 1876 Patents oranted by his Maielty of England for Virginia's plantation. 1682.1684.1787, 1777 Pat xct a border of New-England ini abited by the English, 1849 Printing much ofed by the Indians, 1225,1358 Payen River, 1285 Paves Hand how Stuate, 1400, Peace: Muficult fignes thereof amove-I the Indians. Pearles plentifull, 1419, 1560, 166: , 1843. Pentle-fifting per-Great I with incredible toriure of the Indians, 1586. Pearles of menterfull bignesse, 1411. The best Pearles where found, and how knowne, ibid. Pearles found in Muscles and Oysters , 1205, 1235, 1315, 1316

1172 | Pedio Sermiento a towne in the

Straits of Magellane, 1416

Pedro Ordonnes de Ceuallos, a

THE TABLE.

Spanish Priest his observations concerning the West-Indies. Prionas a Savare Nation, 1262 Pemaguid River, Pemptegoer, Penguin Hand, the fituation and defeription thereof, 1187, 1191, Penguins described, and bom taken, Pentecost Harbour. People of the Kine, certaine Indians fo called their admirable propertion, agilitie beauty, behautour, People of Harts, other Indians fo called, Pepper hotter and fronger then the blacke Pepper vied with us, 1173 Peritoqua, a River that goeth to Saint Vincent Iland in Brafile, Pert, viz. Sir Thomas Pert his American travels, 1177.6-1eq. Peru language and letters, 1454 The originall lines, conquests. lawes and Idolatries of the ancient Kings of Peru. 1454 , 1455 . 0 feg. The first voyage to Peru, 1455. Names and traditions of Pensaibid. The wrongs which the inhabitants of Peru hane fustained by Spanis cruelty, 1 . 90 . Spanish forces, forts, and townes in Peru, 1418,1419. The discourry, commodities, and Provinces of Pe-TU. 1410, 1443, 1444, 1445. Neuer any raine in some parts of Peru, and the cause thereof 1444 The admired plenty of gold in Peru, 1490. Peruan expeditions by the Spaniards, and their successe in luch enterprifes, 1450, 1451. The Persans their opinion of God, andreverence in the very naming of him. Petinares or Petiwares, certaine Sawages in the Indies, their nature, flature, region, religion, superflition, diet, rites of childbirth , &c. 1225, 1216. Their man-eating, Intehering Captines, and the man ner thereof, 1 226. Their language. and how to trade fafely with them. Petritan River, Flulippina Hands discouered, 1446 Phili and lacob towne, Physicke hash the same operation in England, and under the Line,

Piache towne and River, Pianita towne, 1420, 1421. & fcq. Pico, one of the Ilands of the Azores, the description and commodities thereof . 1672. 1638. The high hill 1874 of Pico, which is more then fifteene 1625 miles in length, out of the top whereof iffue often flames of fire Like Etna, and is thought to bee 1384, 1385 higher then the Pike of the Canarics, 1180 1660 Pips without tayles. Pigmies of Brasile dwelling in 1221,1200 Canes. Pigru, certaine Indians of Braille, Pillars of stone, which are worshipped by certaine Indians. 1524,1525 Pines, an excellent and delicious fruit. Pinos, an Iland on the South fide of 1836,1184 Cuba. Pipicorwarra Mountaine, 1:85 Pirats English and Spanish, 1412. Misprision of that terme Pirats. and what a Pirat is, Pitch plentifull, and how made, 1556,1281 Plantines, afruit growing on a furub between an hearb and a tree, in taft like an Apple-Iohn, 1173,1371 Plants adored by Indians, 1479, 1560. Plants that have the fenfe of feeling, 1280. Venemous plants Plantations in New-England. 1812. In New-Plimouth, 1842. The necessaries required for plan-1621-1631 tation. 1141,12,2 Plate River. Plumbe-drinke. 1784 Plumbs that are venemous, 1230 Pocahonias, daughter to King Powhatan, her being baptized and maried to an English-man, 1841,1760. Her vertuous life and death. Poeticall Savages, Polizado, a Fort in N. W. England,

Pome-citrons to great as that two Pomegranats medicinable, 1794 Popajan Province, Popes authoritie devided by the King of Peru, Porco, a place plentifull for Gold, Pories certaine Sauages so called, 1157. Indian Phylitians their effective , and manner of curing ,

or three of them will load a horfe, 1445,1452 1213. Their ftature, diet, complexion, habitation, lodging, G.C. 2509 Portingals their cruelty to the Sava- Powhatan the Virginian Emperor

sec. 1207. 1221. ~ (cg. Divers of them maffacred by Savages . 1180, 1117, Portingali Ships furpriz dby Sir Bernard Dake, and brought into England luden mith Fift, 1882. The Portingals exquisitone fe in feering, 1279 Port-Ricco the situation and defeription thereof, 1153, 1169. 6 icq. 1415. It is the key of the West-Indies, 1166. The foreshcation thereof, 1161. Fi ht betwist the inhabitants thereof, and the English. Port St Iulian, 1187,1194,1383 Post-Femine lying at the mouth of the Straits of Magellane , 1204, 1233. The inhabitants. their commodities, coldne Te of the climate, 12:2.12:2 Porto B.lio , the situation and de-(cription shereof, 1601, 1245. The farprizing thereof by Cuptaine Parker, Per:a la Spaniola, 1247 Port de la Hene. 1640 Port Saitalet. 1640 Port-defire, 1193, 1194, 1232, Port-Reval, 1621, 1631. 1632. The French plantation remoued from Saint Croix thither. Porto Sequero, 1418. Porto ce Plata, 1418. Port Fortune, 16:5 Porto Reale, 1418. Port Calua, 1224. Port Negre, 1873. Port Valparizo, 1393. Porto Docalno, 13:8. Port du Roffignoll, 1630. Poit du Mouton, 1630. 1873 Port-Folly. 126 E Poll fion Bay, Pollowne, a ftrange beaft which reassumes her your ones into her belly at pleasure. Potofini a mountaine in Peru the inhabitants thereof, rich mines, nultitude of Spanish treasure, and Spaniards there, 1214, 1420, 1421,1365 Por fli a placerich in Mines, yeelding great store of treasure to the King of Spaine, Powah an Indian Prieft, 1868. The Pewalis innocation of the Di-

ucl!, and offering facrifices to him, Powels voyage from the Summer-Hands to the Indies, Powder and shot, how abominable to fame Savages, 1854. Straw-powder eaten by some Indians, and needy Spariards, 1229 Powhatan River, dddd 2

A pening in the way between the

his subsidie, flatterie, practices, ebc. 1721, 1722. Hee becomes Subject to the English governour, BRAL. His person , attendance , enard treasure, wines, authority, lawes, 1703, 1704. His policy and Coronation, 1778. His diwers treacherous practices against the English 1711, 1723,1724, 1724, 1756. His enuy to the English plantation, 1750. His death, Poxe how cured. 1208, 1210 Point of St Mathews 1606, Point of all the Divels, ibid. Point Plover, 1712. Point-Care, 1648. Point. Comfort, 1687 Poilor on trees, 1525. Poifon cared by a certaine leafe, 1276. by a 1310.1311 Prayer made by Q. Elizabeth, afser her delinery from the Spanish Pretious-stones variety and abundance. 1224,1231 Prietts and lefuits alwayes chiefe actors in projecting and effecting greafons, 1894. Virginian Prieft. 1358, 1701, 1274 their authority and manner of life, 1771 Prelident of Simil his cruelty to the 1835 English Captines. Priguica, a beaft like a shap-haird dog, in face like a woman, the laexelt of all beafts, Pringe his voyage fet forth by the Merchants of Bristoll to Virginia 2654, & sequ. his discourry of Fox-Island, Whitson-Bay, and Mount Aldworth, 1654, 1555. his danger by Sanages and fafe re-Prodigies portending desolation of the ancient inhabitats of Peru, 1482 Prophecy amongst the Indians concerning the destruction of their country, Prosperity, the effects thereof. Providence of the English in New England, in hourding up corne under eround. Prouisions foundnesse or defect prometh the furtherance or overthrow of a voyage, 1396, the mij biefe of corrupt or scanty provisions, 1396,1397 Purble de los Angelos, Puerro Vicio. 1400 Puerto Seguro, 1190 Puetto Sinto, 1186 Puerto Vicio, 1446,1481 Puma Iland, the place where the Spaniards build their principall

Shipping in the Indies, 1400. Canaries, and West-Indies. Neere st is the River Lima, which 1157. Continua!! raines at force is medicinable. ibid. The inhabitimes of the yeare upon the coaft tants proffe Idolaters, worthiping of Guiana , 1270. Countress Lyons, Tygers, and other beafts, where it never raineth, 1420. Prodigious raines of Sand and afbes, 1476. Exceeding cold Punta de Olynda. 1228. Punta de laraya, 1242. Punta de Santa raines. Elena. 1400. Punta de Auguila, A Rainbow appearing by Moone-light, and differing in colour from thole of the Sunne, 1949, 1951. Purging plants in the Bermudas . The forme of a Rainbow under 1801. A purge for the Aque, 1311,1379 a Cane. 1621 Purification of Mary, a River fo cal-Ramalloc, a great River in Mawooled in New-Spaine. men. Purapayma, an Iland farre up Rancheria, an excellent place for within the River of Orenoco Pearle-fibing, 1146. It is affaulted and taken by the English, ibid. Rapahanna, a towne in Virginia. Vebec ftrait, 1611. Along the 1687, 1688 Rapahanock River. Rafhneile in great enterprices monds in the Rocks of Slate, greatly blamed. Ra liffe, alias Sicklemore, flaine by Ouercius a Bird of admirable beauty, and great effeeme amongst the Powharan, Rats of twelne kinds , 1303, R is 1205, 1306 Querna Vaca, a towne in the Marthat sleepe all day, and wake all quelado of Hernan Cortes, thirnight, 1316. Danger by Rats, teens leagues from Mexico. and the preventing thereof in Ships, 1301. Rats innumerable in 1418 Quibiquellon, a famous Riner in the Bermudas,1796,1797. A Mawooshen. strange Rat-plaque, Quigaute a great Province, and a Henry Ravens, his woyage from Bermuda to Virginia, 2742 Ravens in Bermudas, which feevery plentifull Countrey, 1548 Quillacu, the most mi/erable of all Nations, neither having good med to portend a sequell of mortaland, nor Aire, nor water, whence Raleighs . viz. Sir Walter Ragrowes a Proverbe applyed to conetous Mifers ; Hec is a ve.y leighs his acts and effective at Orenoco , 1269. His fur-Quillacu, Quillacena, or Iron-nofe Pronishing Ships for the first Difvince, a vile brutish longe people coverie of Virginia, 1645. For a without Religion, eating any Carsecond, third fourth, fift and fixt voyage, 1645,1646. Heis accu-Quintera Bay, a place of good ansed of breach of Articles, in the voyage to the Iles of Azores, he choring, but an open Bay, 1204 Quipana, a sowne fine dayes iourney an wereth for himselfe , 1958. His men left in Virginia, and from Tulla, Quires Province. what became of them, 1561 Recibo, a towne in Port-Ricco, Quiriciguig, and Quirigma, certame Indians of Brafile To called. Red-Reed, a plant in the Bermu-1200 Quito the first Citie of the Kingdas causing a forcible vomit, and effectually purging the stomacke, dome of Peru, 1419, 1410, Registers observed by the Indians. Quiuira Province, the Situation and description thereof, and their manner of registring , 1561 Ouivoughcohanocke, pro Rivers (o called; and how fituate, 1692 Richard Duke of Yorke , father to Plantagenet, his wilfull cafting Quizquiz Province, away himselfe, Richard Sanders and his companions, their comming from the Ber-D Aines very vnwholfome, hap. mudas to Ireland in a Smell

boat without any instrument, in a direct line. Rinde of a tree which is more ftrong then any flice, in Virginia, 1653 Rio del Oro River, the breadth and death thereof. Rio de la Hacha, a place taken by the English, 1183. The riches and Arenoth thereof. Rio grand, an American River, the fituation, description, and commodities thereof, 1224, 1237, Rivers of gold, 1216. A River running under-ground 1217. Names of Rivers in America, 1282, 1286. A medicinable River, \$400. Rivers that encrease very much, and onerflow the bankes in dy weather, without the flowing of the Sea. 1552. River of Toads, 1223. 1240. River of Stones, 1222, 1238. River of Palmes, 1505. River of Kine, 1562. River of Saint Croffes, 1462. River Saint Margaret in Canada, 1617. River Canada, 1611. River de Carinas, from she end of which if there were a channell made of foure leagues in tength, there would bee a passage to the South Seathrough it withone passing the perilons straits of Magellane, Lord of Robewall Lieutenant to she French King, in the Counerers of Canada, Saguenay, and Hochelaga, Rocke of Christall, which if a man looke on in a Sunne-Shine day, will decell his eyes. 1285 Roccrafts Voyage to the New-found-land, his surprising of a French-Rarke , the constitucie of bis owne Mariners against him. the disconcrie of the conspiracie, etc. 1820. bis voyage to Virginis, kind vfage by Sir Samuel Argoll, the diftreffe hee Suffered in a tempelt his death in a prinate quarrell. Romanes custome in managing of Martiall affaires, Rome, a Citie of murtherers and baters of Kings, 1894. New Rome much more drunken with the blood of Christians, then heathenish Rome with the blood of Ethnicks, 1804. Romane policie, 1660 Rosier, his relation of a voyage to Virginia, 1641,& feq. Ruminnaui, an Indian Captaine, his ernell tyranny in Peru, 1486 Ruilels Iles in Virginia, 1712

Gil.

Ruffia, a little village in the River | Sandy Cape. Marwin, 128: Sanra Port. C Abbath, 1161,1657 Sabuco, a Riner and Towne in Port-Ricco. Sacatekas, the richest Mynes in the Santa Fe del Nueuo regno di Gra-Indies, Sachim of Mattachuest acknowledgeth the power of the English Sacrifices, and Sacrificers, 1472, 1531,1557 Sacrifices to the Denill, 1531, 1868 Sacrifices to the water. Sacriledge punished, 1162 Sagenay-riner, and the adiogning Countries described, 1606,1610 Sayles of cotton eloth. Sagadohoc, ariner in Mawoofhen, Sagamos, the name of a Captaine among the Northerne Americans. Saint Lucia, one of the Ant-Iles in the latitude of 14 degrees, and 20 minutes. Salma riner. Salomons llands, their situation, discovery, and lose, Salt how made and purified by the Indians. Saltcountrie, 1365. Salt made in New found Land, 1880 Salt-water dangerous to drinke, Salt-water made drinkeable, 1378 Samuel Champlain a Frenchman, his taking upon him the plantation of Kebec in New France, 1642. a conspiracy against him, ibid his aduice for a further discourry, 1642, 1643. bis fight with the Sanages, and returne for France. 1643. another voyage, ibid. & Samia-plains, neere the riner Orcnoque, 1248. Indians inhabiting those Plaines. Samambais a Tree in America. Sambo Ear. 1245 Sanctifying meat vsed by the Portingals in the Indies, Sands rained downe in Peru, 1476, Sands dangerous for nanigation in Brasil, called by the Portingals Bayhas de Sant Antonio, Sandy places transited by Compaste,

Santa Maria, one of the Azores I-Santa Cruce, a Carracke furprifed by Captaine Norton and St. John Burroughs, 1144,1145. is burne by the Portingals. nada, the chiefe (itie in new Gra-Santas, a towne 14:8 1866 Sapparow, the high countrie of Guiana. Saguarema, a naujeable river in Brafile, its description and commodicies. 1702 Saffafrage, 1649. its medicinable vertue. Safquesihunock, certaine Indian Grants their description, 1602 Sauleges made of the heart and outs of Cods and Lard Spiced , 1628 1874 Sauage-rocke, 1647 death of Q. Elizabeth, 1803 Sauages have their goods interred with them and why, 1605 Sauages fight with the English. 1187. Sauages of Tuppan Bais 1 188. Sauage towne described, ibid, their manners, warres, and vlage of their captines, 1188. 1218. drunkenneffe, 1180. their religion, commodities, they efteem not gold, ibid. their hospitall fidelity to Anthony Knivet Enelifeman, 1200, their infidelity, 1211. their ambition, 1212. Sauages called Cariyos, and their battells, 1218. Sauages called Peti-Heres, 1225. Marianites, 1226. Topinambazes, 1227. Tomominos, Waytaquazes, ibid. Waymores, ibid. Abasanquaretam, 1228. Wayanasses, ibid. Topina-ques, ibid. called Pories, Molonagues, Motayu, 1229 Lopos, Wayanawazons, 1220, Sauapes their religious defires, 1251. Sauages that make flat their childrens faces, that line in hollow trees, quartering their faces into foure colours yellow, azure, pariscoloured, and blacke, 1481. Sauages very courteous, and weeping at the distresse of Christians. 1507. Sauages that kill their children left they should marrie with their advertaries, that eate any kind of Serpents, that are great theenes lyars, & drunkards, their tormenting Files, 1512, 1513. their drinking onely raine-

ribes in the Indies, Scriveners voyage to Werswocamoco. 1719. his death by dron- | Scrpen: scalled lebna, 1226. aterning in the passage from lames Towne in Virginia, to the Ile of Scurule, reigning in New France,

1642. and under the Aquino Eliall, 1202. its cause, effects, fiones and remedie, 1273,1274. great raigning of it among Mariners, 1374. the things that are discommodious or beneficsall to the 1623,1763 patient, Scuruy-graffe, 1191. its medicinable operations,

Sea blacke in colour beyond the line. 1157. a Sea-monfter like a man, of complexion like a tawny Indian, 1187. another strange Seamonster.

Sea-water warme, the agre being cold 1627. Sea made fre hby a violent intermixture of rivers in Sheathing of Ships requifice, 1387 Florida, 1555. Sea-scum like pitch, and vied like pitch, called Coper in Florida, 1556. Sea difcommodious for meats in sickness, 1624. Scadanger, 3ca-fire, a mescer feene commonly in

rempelts, the disters opinions and names thereof. The Sea worfsipped by some Indians, 1471

Sea faring mens errors, 1368 Sea-fights, 1184, 1186, 1402, & Sherleys vorage, ieq. the requisitenesse of armour Showers of gold, betweene the Spanish and English,

at unequall hand, the successe largely related, 1780, 1781, da, 1520, 1521. Forty English Sea-voyages require a Princes 1822 Sea-ftratagem of the Enolife having good effect. 1215 1440 1605 Scales great fore, 1187. their nature and description. 1186 Scafons falling unequally under the same parallel. 1637 1471 Sea-men, their feuerall offices

Rhemes. 1625 1200

1264 Selinama riner, 1284. directions to tranell there. 1286 Seralta, an ancient Commander in Port Ricco.

> pent called Cobrus in Brafile, as big as a man, twenty foot long, his firange feeding, rotting, and reviving, 1242. A Surpent called Cururinba therey foot long , it's defeription, 1317,1318. Serpents that are armed with plates not pierceable by an arrow, ibid. Serpents called Guararici, which being heard fing by the indians, cau-Ceth theme to die, Go A-our is their imagination, 1318, a huge Serpent, 1350. two great serpents,

Shadden a towne of the Armaccas in the West Indies, Shambles of mans flesh among the Scaniards in the Indies. 1280 Sharke, a fifb fo called, deferited,

Showakotoc armerin Manooften,

Sheepe why forme in Port-Ricco, 1172. Sheep weed for caringes as burles, in the Indies, called Antidas, 1362. Sheepe as lig as burfes, with huge bornes, and small tayles, meere Alexico, 1560, one borne waigherly 50 pound, 1561 Shels of Pearle curionfly wroughely

nature. 1168 1395 in Sea-fights, 1408. a Sea-fight | Shooting at Sea how aduisedly to be wedertaken,

Sickneile, its cause and remedy. 1251. Sicknelles unknowne in New France, 162 ?, Sickneffe in Guiana 1261. Sicknetle bremented by good drer, 1624 Geleneile deftroring the whole Country in Paraxet in New England,

Sickene Mountaine. 1286 Sierra Leona, a country fo called.

Shipwracks, 1355, 1356, 1440. 1560, 1673, 1674, 1676, 1677 Ships, bow most connenientiv built for warres or Merchandise. 1 40 s 1406. Thips unprofitably built of Cedar in the Bermudas, 1747. thips taken by St. Francis Drake at the Cascois in the Portingall voyage, 1923. thips of ereat worth taken by the English at the fight before Cadiz, 1930 in thips whether race-building be commodious for men of marre. Silk-wormes in Florida, 1603. in

the Bermudas. Silk-graffe in Virginia. 1758 Silley, an Ile on the west of England

Siluer in Florida preferred to the French by the Inhabitants, 1603 Striarra, atowne neere the Fort of Morrin, inhabited by the Ar-

reacca Sauares, Sir Samuel Argal by vertue of commillion with much valour and difcretion dispossessed the French of their vsurped possession in the New found Land, 1828. his departure from the coasts of Virginia, 1830. His innention of trade with the Virginia Sanages,

Skin as ruffe as Buffe, on men, 1280 Skuls of dead men layd in the windowes of houses among some Indians perchance to put them in mind of mortality.

Sinte good store in Canada, affording Diamonds, 1610,1611 Sleeping-hearbe, Smiths Iles before Virginia, 1691

Capt. Smith of Plimonth his difafter rous voyage, with fudden returne by the unmercifulnesse of a raging tempelt, his second admentures to the Westerne Hands, hee is chased by the French Pyrates, is tiken prisoner, and the voyage ouerthrowne, 1829. Captaine Smiths Sufficion by the Councell of I irgima bis behaviour and clearing therefrom, 1706. his careforthe Plantation and further ance thereof, his disconerie of the riner.

THE TABLE.

1707. he fights and kils (avages, is taken by theme, brought to the Emperous, threatned death, and faned by the Kings daughter, resurneth to the Plantation, 1708. \$709 his fecond erriuall at Powhatans court, 1710, his better defire then power, to benefit the plansation, 1711. his firthing terror in the Sausoes ibid his desarture for a disconerie,

John Smith his voyage to New-England finished in the Spice of 6 moneths, with gaine of fifteen: hundred pounds,

Snakes-hearb excellent good against . the porton of Snikes.

Snakes enten. 1210. Inakes cieria venemous . 1212. A danterous . fnake kild, 1215.its quality, ib. name S:rocneu. 1230, its descriprion, 1231. Snakes without payfon, 1 303. their plenty and dinerfitie in Brafile, 1303 1304. with their names, ibid. & 1317, 1318 Snakes of thirty foot long called Amara, wor hipp:d 1457,1478. Snakes worshipped in Topira, 1560. Snakes worne about the neckes of the Virginians, 1698 Snowes exceeding orest in Florida

1551. Snowes made vse of in flead of drinke, 1561. Snowes as good as a furd-gowne for fruits,

Sozcatino, a towns in Ploride, very poore and deflicute of cronifion,

Socke riner, Sedomites burnt by the Indians. 1558

Semme-riner in Florida di concred | South Sea disconcred more largely by the French. 1603 Semmerfes-Hand in the Bermudus,

Sir George Sommers ariuall at the Bermudas, and death, 1733, his 1728. I'm departure from Virginia to the Bermudis, 1754

Sommer Hands commodities at Lurge, 1794, 1795. Vide Bermudas.

Somma aplace in America, 1112 Soto a Spaniard, his paverence time of his flouri ling, nature, and dignity, 1 5: 8, 1519. bus worning to Florida at Lorne related, and difcovery, 1520 the some my of his Bups, and wind er office & things, bis arinallas Floride and a the towne Fest; and meeting with I Indianiced Confiner there, \$530,1511.b.s comming to Pa-

racoffi, Acela, Tocaste, Cale, townes in Florida, his newes of Gold, and Maiz, sezz, bis avproach at other severall townes in America-Florida, and Seuerica to the Indians, 1922, 1534. his many bickerings with the Indians. his re olution for the Promince of Ochus, 1535. hee pretends himfeife to be the Some of the Sunne. 1536, his ingratitude to an Indian Princess that had weed him eshis company kindly, 1538,1539. burieth a letter neere a Pine-tree. to give direction to his loft followers, 1537, carieth the Caciques with them, till hee was one of their countries, 1541. the course of his tranels, 1542, his skirmift and loffe by the Indians, 1543. his other Indian occurrents, 1546. 1547,1548, 1549; et (cq. bis arinall at senerall Floridan towns, or cottages, his weaknesse and losse of his company. 1550, his hunderance by the loffe of John O.tiz. his dangerous passages over rivers and (nowes, his courteous entertainment by the Inhabitants of Nilco, 1551. his diffreste, miefe. ficknesse, death, praise, titles, and substituting Luis de Molcolo in his roome.

Soory-foory, a towne inhabited by Saugres neere Marwin in Ame-

Soule, the Braflians opinion thereof, 12,0. the orinion of the Indians of Canada, South-lea paffage board through

Virginia. 1822 then beretofore. Souricoua, a riner in Canada pa/-

fable with Carees, 1616,1617 Sevnoone, a towne of the Indians neere Marwin riner, 1285

care for the formar of those Hands, Spaine is faid to yould the King (the King kimfel'e, Dukes At. var.i fes and Firle . and their ratione excepted, from 18 were chi to 50, but 1125350 men, yag

> Spaniard, how effeemed of ly the Floridans,

Spanish pretended cures of the dife in the Indies, 1,13. Spanish porleffion of Peru, and it weilth, 1405, 1406 they este one at ther, 1512. Spaniards on Bear . abletrealure in Perist 487 S. a. niards preaching to the Indians. 1485. Spaniards Ecclefiafticall reaennues in the Indies, mast of

Bilops, bolding Councels, the Kings renemeres yearchy out of the Indies. twelve, Millions and whence it iffueth, 1422. Spanish d-fraction of force Indians from off their country altogether, 1415 Spanish Fleet for the Indies, and Piparacle. 1440. Spaniards precheronly circumvere the inhabitants and King of Pern, 1445. Spanish cruelty to their prostrate flaues, 1448. Spaniards came to the Indies for conserting, but not of Indians, but gold to their owne vier. 14:19. Spanish civill difaoreements in Pern. 1453. chigo of the inhabitants, 1453, 1454. Spaniards called by the Indian Vitacochie, thet is, Sea froth. Supposing such could not becborne of a moman, 1454. Spaniards loffe of foure Pripe, 1142. Spanish Gulleon, taken, 1144. Spaniards alliant and resulte. 1140. Spo-101a de vecla to the English 1164. their emeror desperatenesse, 1166 Spaniares best ruled with seuevity 1 168 their proratefull trechery, 1177, their perfidions in-(ulung crucky, 1178, and abufe of the English in Mexico, ibid. et 1179.S: anish destrelle in Chili-1476, 1477. Spaniards very rule in the Indies, 1242. Spanish att mpts defeated 1 475. they ere called in Trini leda, Conquerabians, 1247. Spaniards derence but by flealth trafficke with the English; the best things for wafficke with them, 1266. they are molested by the Caribes, 1281. their taking Lampere, an Indian fertified towne, 1352. Spaniards like to be denoured by the Indians. 1354. their fight and ouerconsning them, 1355, 1356, they firing to different the Amazons, 1359. Spanish cruelty and trethey towards the harmle Te Indians 1354.1360, 1361, they defirm the Indians called Mapais. 1;62, 1:63. Sportes of Spaniands w Pers, 1478 . Spenish civill de sur emenes in the Indies. 1:64. Spanifi perierie, 1:78. attrecherius and unarateful! Sonriad Pic. 1394. Spanift tabe with the English unequality 1204 Scan fle erlereline in fieler by featheir tenerall offices and entiresince their pring and imitating Look borders, 1404. their care-

fullife in being armed. 1408. wherein they onely accreame the English, ibid. a noble Spaniard, 1410. Spaniards carelefne fe for good Surgeons in fights, 1412. Spanish intelligence by trecherous Englishmen, 1415. Spanish forces how strong or weake in severall places of Peru and thereabout, their treasure, when, where, and whence conneyed into Spaine, 1419, 1420. the Spaniards lines and gonernment in the Indies, 1421. their courte sie, and conserfion of them as they call it, 1448. their hatred of gold, 1449,1454. Spaniards why called Viracoche 14ch, Spaniards ranfacking of our English hips, putting the men comoft cruell bondage, 18:4. the Spaniards ernetty to the dead carkaffe of an Englishman, holding him to hee a Lutheran , 1825. They dent to doe inflice, are very willing the English Should ferue their flate, ibid. They betray and take prisoner the men of Captaine Legat, 1836. Spanish pride and its iffue in an Indian Gouernour, 1677. Spanish Ships of great worth funke neere Tercera, commains from the Indies, 1672, another thip of good strength sunke by an Englishman of a great deale smaller force, ibid. Spanish ships taken by the English, ibid. Spanish ships, riches, and shipwracke of fome, 1673. Spanish Fleet caft away, great and rich, 1674. 0sberstaken, ibid. Spanish cowar dife, and infulting cruelty, 1675. Spaniards fmart for the crueltie and dissention with the English. \$676. Spaniards queld by the Englis , 1677. Spanish Shipwracke a suft plague upon them, 2679, 1680. Spanish infidelity worle then Pagan, 1527. Spanish manner of preaching to the Indians with the sflue thereof, 1528 . Spaniards eate dogs in Florida, and there due like does for mant of vi-Etuals, 1536. Spaniards thinke it a worke mericorious to consert the Indians, that is, with the fword, 1558. Spaniards conteft each with other for superiority in discomerine forraine Countries, 1560. Spaniards first discovery of the Indies and po [effion thereof, their eruelty and conetonfneffe related by a Fryer, the Millions of Indians flaine by them, for their gold, 1569, 1570. Spanish comar.in, and cruelty in broyling, burning, drewning, and twenty wayes elle

murdering them of Hispaniola, 1570. & leq. Spanish torturing undeferned by the harmleffe Indians, having not committed any thing against them punishable by the law of man, 1572. Spanish flaughter of a million in S. Ihor. and lamaica, 1573. Spanish in nention to dispeople those Nations, ibid. The Spaniards cod, 1574 Spaniards kill many in Cuba, men, women, and children, 1573, 1574. Spaniards difpeopling Terra Firma, 1576. They murther in the Pronince of Nicaragua 500000 men. 1576,1577. Spaniards kill two or three millions in Noua Hilpania, and its fenerall Proninces, 1577, 1578. an infinite number in Guarimula, 1576. Spanish Antbropophasi, 1580. Spanish torturing and de-Broying the Indians in Panucha, Machuachan, and Xalifco, 1 ,80 1581, of Yucatan, 1581, 1582, 1582. Spaniards fell the Indians Idols, 1583, denoure the Indians of S. Martha, ibid. & 1584. at alfoof Cartagena, 1384 of the Couft of Pearles, the Coaft of Paria, and the He of Trinine, 1585, 1586, 1587. Indians how vied as See by Spaniard. and at landing, 1586. at the fig. ino for Pewles, 1587, Spanish gluttory, 1588. Crnelty in Yuizpari and Venefula, to the ruine of foure or fine millions of Indians, 1587,1588 in Flories, River de la Plata, and the kinguomes of Peru, 1589, 1590, 1591. Spinish conversion of the Indians how weekely followed, 1594. their diuers feats of cruelty and inhumsnity to the poore Christians of New Granado and the senerall proninces thereof, 1591, 1592, 1593, 1594,1595. Spanish gold thir-Rine Te, and thouce if uing bloodthirflinelle of the Indians, 1596, 1597. Spania reformation of cruetties and wrongs in the Indies ought to bee performed, and upon what reafons, 1598, 1599, 1600, 1601, 1692 arepetition of fundry butcheries, ibid. Spanish rea. fons mouing them to a possession of the Indies, 1603. Spanish cruelthe Indies 20 millions, ibid. Spaniards maffacre the French in Florida, and plant themsfelnes, 160 s. are maffacred again by the French is they defermed, 1605

Spanish irregularitieinthe Indies derided by a French Catholike. 1621. Spaniards areg Englif Ships, 1893. Spanish preparation against England, Anno 1:92. p. 1895. Spanish policy , 1807. The Spanish Armada ferreth faile. is discomfitted by a tempest; is as inft descried by an English Pirat.

Spaniards vaine opinion concerning the English Fleet, 1909 Spaniards fire their owne thing. 1931. Span: Armada's cut their Cables, 1908. They fly for to fane their lines, 1010. They luffer miferable Shipwracke on the Irish Sea. They feize on some Scottiff Fifter-bonts, ib. Spanife plannes and miseries by the English, 1680 There flinht for feare of the Eno-Libaro 32. Spanish Fly-boats melest the English about the coasts of Cornwall, 1698. Spanish Carnels difterfed, 1698. Spanish fips at Sea, for the discoverie of the flate of Virginia's Colony, 1773. Spaniards haved by the Portingals, 1952. Spaniards variety of difositions in various fortunes. 1954. Their nature in generalla

Sparries relations of the Ile of Trinidad, Guiana, and the River Orenoco, 1247,1248, & fig. Spices excellent good, hos, and comfortable in the Magellane Graits.

Spiders with filten webs , and little eggs like Quick-filuer in the Bermudas, 1899. Notfound to bes venemans, Spignard wheref is a pracious ognis-

ment neade. 1164 Spilpergen a famous Navigator amone the Dutch. Spirito Santo a Portinthe Weft-

Indies neere the Line, 1190, 1196. Its description, and fortification. Spleene, how eafed,

Squanto a Savage of the company of the Mallaloyts, very helpfult and commodious to the English,

Squalachin wife to the great gonernour of the Savages, Squirrels flying in Virginia, 1695 tie hath kild and destroyed in all Cape. Standish his training up his menin New-England to military affaires, 1854. His tourney to the Mafacheuafets, 1863. Hecencountresh with a Savage, and putseth hims to flight.

THE TABLE.

		_
teth him to flight, 1865	Swearing forbidden amongst the In-	T
Stars older ned by the Indians, 1870	habitants of Peru, 1451	
Stately Statues in the Indies,	Swearers punished in the King of	Ţ
1403	Spaines Armada, 1902	
Secering a bip requirethexquisite	Swearing and blaspheming, its ill	T
care. 1370,1579		•
Stills fet on worke for want of water	Sweating vied by the Indians, to	
1967		Т
Stingeray Ile so named of a stinging	Swine with holes in their backs,	-
Raye, 1714	1	
Stomaccace a strange disease, its	Sword-fish, Symamios, Savages in the West-	
cause, and cure by scurvic-grasse,	Indies so called, 1364	
1624	Symarons fugitine Negroes in the	Ţ
The Stone how and with what car'd	West-Indies, 1414. Their	
1310. In approved medicine	h.bitation called St. lago de los	T
for it, 1312 Scopes like Chrystall, 1216	Negros, ibid.	
Diones me a major		
	т.	T
		T
No Stones in some part of Florida, 1504	Abaga Iland, 1415	
Stones medicinable, 1509	Tac iia Savages, 1299	
Stones how necessary in new France	Tagrona one of the richest valleyes	
1624. The benefit of them inge-	in the Indies, 1434	
nerall, ibid.	Tali a Floridan Towne, 1540	A
Straits of Magellane, how dange-	Tamgara a dancing bird, troubled	А
ross apalage 1439	with some disease like the falling	
Strawberies of rare bigneffe in Vir-	jicknesse, 1305	
ginia. 1686	Tamos a populous Pronince, 1562	
A Stratagem of the Indians. 1442	Tamkings a peece of wood of great	
1442 Perer Strolle in his delpe-	moment for shooting in peeces of	i
rate branery taken by the Spani-	Ordnance, 1413	
ands to the lolle of his namy. 1902	I ammin an incommendation of the	
The Stukeley, an English Jugi-	It's and the mountained of	
tine his faire promise to the Popes	Tapatu a Floridan riner, 1552	T
bastard,	Tapata a Toorman	
Stuelia an Indian riner, 1362		١.
Sturgeon fore in Vigina, 1758	in Port-famine in the ftreights	T
Suboris certaine Indians so called	and II Dorring	
a C Of the Coming forth		
Earle of Suffolkes fetting forth a		
1 *****		7
Sugar-Canes, 1171		
Sulphuy smels if ning from raine	1183	1_
Cap. Summers voyage, 118	S Tapuvas certuine Savages jo callea	1
Sun and Moone worthipped, 1233	1212. Many Nations Swaer	i
1464.1465		1
Suppayas certaine Indians inhabi	- Speech cannot bee understood,	1
ting Wiapoco riser, their de		1
Scription, 1263. Ther naked	L Tapy: Ou. Ca, was Interested and	İ
neffe, painting, child-birth, Fun		1
ralls,orc. ibio	I. Taragauig Braillians that fight we	
Supply to the Plantation in Virg	- enuenomed arrowes, 1199	
nia by the English 1841. Supp	y 11 or 1 alou a place metr Cition	i
to the plantation of New-Englar	id 1249	1
186		i
Superfition among Savages	1214. Targets beneficial a-	. †
Surarer a sowne of Savages call	ed gainft Savage arrowes, 1716	1
Araccaws in America, 128	Tarcalaca-Pronince, 1541	1
Sarcucufes a Savage nation the	en. Then a beat of Bralil that hath	1
commodisie s 13	56 scales like places on her back which	"
Sajolas-Indians, 15		ij
Ç		

piards. New Spaine, A borrible Tempest, 1175. Ex-1736,1737 Tenaferea a Mountatine in the found. Tepique a Pronince neere New-Spaniards,

Tatalacova a towne of the Indians, in Florida Imprized by Spa-Tatarcax a rich Kine in America. Tauparamunni a towne inhabited by Caribes in the riner Marwin. Taymayas the name of some Indian Savages, 1211, 1213. Tamoves de cription, their infinite fore of gold and precise stones. their nature and civilitie. 1221 Tecoantepeck the first Towne in

Teeth feedding by drinking a kind of water neere the River Rhine, Teixo a wood as hard as stone, 1670

Temple covered with fram in Topira, 1560. Temples to the Sun Moone and Stars, richly adorned in the ancient City Cozco of Peru, which women might not

treame Tempelis,1193, 1194, 1223, 1500. Frequent Tempefts, 1502, A dreadfull Tempest neere Tercera, throwing fiftes on the ground, ouer exceeding high cliffes , it's passifull offects, 1679, 1680. An extreams Tempest branely related, 1735,

East-Indies, where Dramonds are Teneriffa an Iland in the Canaries.

its exceeding high mountaines, great riches , fore of Sacke, 1156 1369,1370

Spaine, taken poffeffion of by Tercera one of the Azores Ilands, 1143. The description thereof. its forts & fortification, mountain and fudden disconerie of ships, it's chiefe Towne, wines, prouision, fruits, 1668. The chiefe trafficke, woad, 1669. Its birds fea-Cons. Stones, ibid. Corne. Vines, Oxen called by names like men, ibid. Subject to earth-quakes, Brange fountaine and wood, Inhabitants are all Portingalls or Spaniards, 1670, its frange difeafes, fromg windes, and other

and the flore of Gade growing Terra-Australis incognita, its dafeription at large, 1423, & feq.

villages, 1671 Whence fo called,

Terra Firma, 1146. it hath on the coast 70 Ilanis, 1434 the publieation of God there after the Spamards manner, eight hundred shouland inh bitants made away by Spanish cruelty, the momen there were mindered, which the Indians thought great comardife, 1575.1576

Tefician, a Pronin. e in New Spain,

Tentnicham Prozince, Thatletons perfidie, 1382,1383 Teftogos, a place fo called, 1242 Terattecoumovnetto, a towne of the Charibes, nere the river Marwin in Anerica, 1285 Theft: balenelle, 1153 Tireft senerely punished by the Indi-1870 Theft punified in the English army,

Thimogoa, Inhalitants of Florida,

Thirft in great extremity, 1505. Thirft breeding faistneffe and 1586 death. Thirty Cayle of Ships fent to fu ther

the plantation in New England, 18:2

1878 Thought flaveth a man, 5: Thomas fabled by the Indiane to preach to their ancestors, his C'appell, and miracle, Three Spanis ships taken by the

English Almirall, 1060 Tiree Armadaes of the King of Spaine caft away on the Goald called O'ca copos, or Catch-chops 1836

Three Spanifo Ships Surprised by the 1028 English, Thunders firange effetts, 1405 Thunders horrid and predictions in the Rermudas. Thunderbolts frequent in the In-

Tiembos, fierce and populous Indians weere the risec of Plate, their nature, fation, description, 1349 Tiguez, a Prosince in America,

diet, they often cleane great trees,

for a new Plantation, 1631

the Portingals in Brafile, 1298 Tipi. Indians in Brafile, that fight with venomed arrower, 1209 Titicaca, an Iland in Peru, of infinite riches, their precious Temple. word in and concest of the Sunne,

Tiuitinas, Inhabitants neere Orenoco, two forts of them, 1247 1285 Toads and Frogs eaten, 1214.1219 1236,1327 The Toad fift.

Toalli, a Floridan towne, and its description, its inhabitants and their disposition,

Tobaccoes first bringers in we. 1182. Tobreco, 1228 12:0. 1264.1271. Tobacco fane mens lines 12 58 Toba co fore. 1276 1277 its effects in Phylicke, and abuse, its name of the Holy herbe, and the manner how the Indians drinke it, 1311. how they blow it an cane; one on another, to encrea'e valour, 1228. a strange kind of tobacco, 1202. Tobacco not profitable in New England, the cance why 1871. Tobacco pipe of a Lobfters claw. 1662. Tobacco of Virginia how disparaged by Tobacco-mongers, 1775, Tobacco worth to Spaint 100000 pound yearly. 1211 Tebalos Indians. 1561 Tobyas Bay in the Straits of Magellane, 1205.1388

Tocafte towne in America. 1531 Tocoman, a place in the Indie, inhabited by Psomies, 1231. tis esteemed to be the utt rmost part of Brafile where it is ynes to Peru, ibid. \$ 1242

Tockwhogh river in Virginia,

Tocoy? a towne in the Indiet, 1258 Tocur, aplace of America, fertile with gold. Tohisbay firairs. Tohanna, Indians Goalled, 1262 Tonola, a pronince in New Spaine,

1558 Tomomimos, Sauages fo called, 1217, they line at Moregoge, their townes, and warres nich the Portingals.

Tooth ache cured, 1308 Torira, an Indian province abounding with gold and emerculds, armour made of silver, the inhabisame wor Pip birds and hearbes. they facrifice to a ferrent, 1560 Tillage, more necessary then mines Tortovie, its description in Bermindas, it lines 24 houres after its

head is off, 1800, a Tortoyle with 7:0 egges in his belly, taken and caten. 1255, they Ly moor three hundred egges at once. 13 14 Tottoyle nor fin nor fle,3, 1741 opinan bazes, Canages like the

Petinares, their carning, huire, finging. 1227. Vide Petipares. oudin Indians neare the river le-

Tranciling very easie and strange for a [mall vallew in the Indies. 1242, Trauell-direction in the Indies, 128 5 more directions for trauell, 1286. Trauelling in bot water.

A Tree that reeldeth the inhabitante most of the water they have, 1270 Trees , their nature and abundance in Dominica, 1158.Tr.es strange and unknowne in Port-Ricco, 1165. Trees that beare buds, oreen finit, and rive fivit. with leeds all together, 1173. Trees having the fenfe of feeling, 1280. Trees good ar sinft bruiles and destilling Ballome, 1239 trees of exceeding hard wood,exceeding great, 1256. Trees that have alwayes orgene leaves, that bere fruit twice in a yeare called Mangabitrees, flowing with milk that might ferme for hora Waxe, called Mirve ge. Trees that cause (th ir fruit being eaten) testh to fall , Trees whole frust makes haire fall their strange nature and severall name; in Brafile, 1307, 1308, 1309. Trees that ferne to cure preene wounds, having good Balme , 1308. For the Colicke, for the bloody Fluxe. for cold diseases, for the Poxe , for the Toothake, ibid. Trees fruis that killeth any fift in the water . that change leaves every monceh. that make Inke, that hath init a riner of water, fich frangineffe of trees, let 1 : 00, and their names ibid. Trees in Salt-water, 1316.

vide Plant. Bale Treacherie in an I Bman, 1200. in an Englishman . 1 20. Who'e miferable end, 1221. In 4 Savage, 1151. In the Indians, 1256 . 1258. To them elues , 1361. Treacher'e the loffe of A vorage, 1 .82. Trene erie in the Indiens, 1392 , vide P fidie. Triana, a towne taken and fired by Capt. Parker.

Trinity He peffered with Spanish cruelty, and robued of inhabitants, 1584 585 Tualty

Trinity barbour Ahanan in the 1281 New-found Land, Tripessey, a harbour commendious and temperate in the latitude of n6 deorees. Trinidade, 1186 she Indians there

bane 4 names, their commanders non called Captaines, inhabited by the Spaniards.

Trinity, abauenin Cuba, 1500 Trugillo, the vimeft towns of the Prennce Valenzuola in Ameri-Truxillo, a place in America,

1399 Triumphall Verfes of the English delinerie in 88. 1912 1145

Cat: Tuberone, Tuberones, the name of Dog-filbby T 2 Co the Portingals, Tucana, a bird like a Pye, mich a

bill a fran long very big, 1306 Tucanucu Sanage Brafilians, 1299 Tuccaman, atomne in the river of Plate, 230 miles from theex-

trance, ses fruitfulneffe, ses want of gold, Tuckers-terror, a fooale on the coaft

of Virginia, Capt. Tucker, contrnour of the plantation in the Bermudas, his acts

Tulshe, a fruitfull country neere 1248 Guiana. Tulla, a place in Florida, 1550

Tullumuchaie, a great Towne in Florida. Tu'u, a place inhabited by the Spa-

niards nerre Cartagena, sis force, Tumbez, a plaine country in Peru, 1444 its inhabitants are vitious

and luxurious, people that idolize Treers and Lyons, Tune, a fruit in Florida, on which onely the inhabitants line three

moneths in a yeare. 1511 Tunfteroito, a towne of Sauages in 1285 the West Indies,

Tunza, a place in America, 1419 Tupiquat, Brasilians denoured by the flavery of the Portingals, 1298

Tupinaba, Indians fo called, 1298 Tupinaquin, Indiani inhabiting Brasile. Tuppac Inca Yupanqui, Emperor

Sometime of Peru, bis valiant att: and attempts, conquests and enterging his Empire, civilizing many Jauage nations, his progeny death, and successor, 1478,1479

Tuppan Bals, Sanages fo called neere Brafile, 1188. their mirth, habit,

life and lodging, Tunac Amaru, heire to the Empire of Perufally accused, and cruelly executed by the Spanife Viceroy, 1488, bis well deferned iffne,

Tupan-boyers, a place inhabited by Canibals in Brafile, 1227. the Portingals call it Organes,

Tupijo, Brasilian Sanages, 1299 Tuquema, a Province subied to Peru, its senerall townes of gonern-

Turkes taken by the Spaniards, and made Gally-flanes, referred by the Englifb, and fet at liberty, 1933 Turky-Hones in New France, 1621 Turneps a remedy against the scur-

188c Mafter Turners relation of Brafile, Turners relation, voyage, successe,

1265,1266 at large, Turtles innumerable. Tutelpinco, a for aken towne in Florida, left by the inhabitants, and destitute of prouision, 1551 Tygers wer shipped,

TAcupa, a Pronince in America. Vahuar huacac, an Emperour in Peru, his acts and conquest, hee went blood at his natinity, 1457

Valpavilo, a place in the fouth Sea.

Valuation of the voyages of fishing Boats, to the coast of New found Land.

Varaua, a fift in Brasile as lig as an Oxes Vayracalics, abinde of Sauages,

Vbra Riner, 1248 Veita, a towne in Florida,its deferistion, and commedities, 1530 Vela Pampilona, an American place,

A Venetian Ship taken by the Eno-1006 Venter-hauen, a place in the mest paris of Ireland,

Vewgua, a towne in the West Indies plenteous of gold, 1419, it never rames there, an unhealthy country

Veru Cruz, anemtowne, Varginia, its hopefull commodities, the inhabitants idolatry and wor-

this of the Sunne, their other and fidelity thereupon . 1690 their enstomes, 1690 plantatun there. and mortality, accompanied with famine, 1689. 1690. Virg nias bounds, temperature, winds, entrance, mountaines, foile. 1691. vallies, and a faire delicate navigable Rivers neers the English Plantation, 1692, its severall and different languages thereabent,1694. Vide Virginia.

ia runa, Indians in Brafile denenred by the Porsingals, ictuals verie fcarce in Plimouth in New England, 1856. Victuals of the Spanish Fleet fent for England, Anno 1588. 1901 Vigo, a towne taken by the English in the Portingall voyage, 1926 Villa de Prava, atomne in Tercera, one of the Hands of Azores, 1668

Villa Franca, a towne of S' Michels one of the Acores Iles, 1963. the situation, fertility of the soyle, and fruits of the Land. incs fore in Canada Ilands, 1612

vines naturally growing in New England. St Vincent a port in the West In-

dies, 1190. called by the Insians Warapuimama, its description, Virachocha, an Emperour of Peru,

his first conquest, 1458. his fenerall asts, and death, with his fire-Valenzuola, a golden place in A- The V gines Ilands not inhabited. and description.

Virginia Companies adventures in figing Rips, one of them being taken by the Turkes, 1836. Virginia despised of the very abients, 1841. fruitfulnesse of the Land, fore of fift and Forele, ibid. Virginia why so called . the praise shireof, the first voyages and difconeries there, with their colonies. 1645, 1646. Virginias bealthineffe, ibid. a Virginian yellow haird, andfaire, 1689. Virginias naturall commodutes, trees, among which cypreffe, vines, wines fruits. gums faffafras, nourifhable roots . ram,they are poyfon roafted, not fo; but otherwise vied for bread, medicinable plants, beafts in variety. 1694.1695 birds fiftes, and minerals, 1696. fruits that are plantedin Virginia, the feafons there, their vie of corne, of flesh, the agree mildreffe, and commodities for trafficke with France, Swethland, Spain & Helland, 1696, 1697.

ccc 2

the commedities that may redound thence to the industrious, ibid. Virginians number, nations Janguages, their description. conftisution, Barbers, apparell, women, Bamefafineffe, attire, ornaments, 1607, 1608, their building, led. ging, bedding, gardens, exercise for men or women , child-birth, namine children, easie delinery, their manner of Bribing fire, of making bowes and arrowes, 1698 their fronds and targets, boats, fifting, finning, fift-bookes, himting, either in companies or alone, confultations before battell, 1699. Virginians neere the English Plantation, their enemies, their manner of embattelling, firatagens, ambuscadoes, painting to make themselues looke terrible, finging and relling in their combate, mulicke, and enterteinment of great men, 1700. their trade. Phylicke, Chirurgery, charming, 1701 their Religion, and adoration of any thing that can hurt them without their premention, wor hipping the Devil called Oke. buriall of their Kings, their ordswary burialls, and mourning for the dead , their Temples , their Supposed Santlitie, Priests, and their habite, times for folemnities, ibid, their coniuration, altars, aerifices to the water, their folemne customes for the making Southfagers, their opinion of their Kings and Priests Soules, and the common peoples after death, their opimion of the Christians God, 1702. manner of government which is monarchicall, their Kings pompe described, 1703, 1704. Virginian punishment of offenders, 1703. Virginia by whom discommended, the miserie it sustaimed by effeminate idlers, 1704. Virginian diffentions in the Englife plantationers, 1706. The Planters nominated, and their forft implorment, ibid. their milevie,famine, and fickneffe, with morsalier canfed by the President: a-## ice. 1706, 1707, with unexsectedremedy, ibid, reconded by the care of Captaine Smith, ibid. Virginian plots for the leaning the Plantation, 1707, 1709. VIFginian plantation and trading endamaged by the ambition of the Company, 1710 by desire of gaine in some prinate persons, 1711. Virginias golden hopes fruffrate.

ibid. Virginia its want of a good Prefident 1712. Virginias plantation (upposed overthrom, 1717 Virgina-Tanerne, the abuse of trading among Saylors there, 1710. Virginian first mariage of the English . 1720. Virginian Plantations Supply, 1708, 1716. 1719. Gold as easie to bee cotten as corne there, from the needy Samares, 1725, Virginian planters lode of armes by the trecherie of Dutchmen, 1725. Virginias buildings revaired, but by want of promision not profecuted, the cause of fuch want, 1727, and the miferie sustained by lazineste, ibid. Virginias unprofitable planters checked by the Presidents Speech. 1728. Virginias bealthine fe, and the care taken for licke men there by the English, 1728, the Plantations third Gupply , 1729, the change of government and Captaines, the presudice of the plantation, and muting feconding the Supply 1729. Virginia Plantation at the Falls, and Nan amund, 1720. Virginia tlenters breake peace with the Sanages, 17:0. Virg tir m levelerty of Prefidents, lofing Caprasne Smith the milerie famine, ant di comfort it sustained by his absence, 1732. its (upply by the wind! of the Lord La Ware, Ser Thomas Dale, 1722, 1722. Virginias innonation in gone omen; whether mutinous or no. 1734. Vi ginias distrasse by idle sellowers, 1743. the Presidency of Virginia affumedby St Thomas Gates, 1740 the miferie of it at that time , ibid . the causes thereof, Ibid. & 1750. Virginias hopes and advancement 1740. other carfes of its diffreffe, and the distresse it selfe. 1751. more at large, 1756, 1757. its commedities, 1757. Virginians triumphs after victory, feafling, simplicity, teare borrible and prodigious rites of fouthfaying their sudgement of powder, and other cuffomes, 1708, 1709. Virginians are al of all occupations . 1700 A Virginian exchanged for a Christian, 1710. Virginia Sanages strange mortality, 1712. Vi ginians courtefie to the Englift, 1713 and trecherous proiects ibid, exceeding feare of Muskets. ibid how Virginian Sanages may be dealt withall, 17 14. Virginia Sanages fight disquised like bufhes, 1716. Virginians made proud not awed by courtefue and benignity, 1717. Virginians in want and pouerty, 1725. 4 Virginian Sauages his Oration to Cabtaine Smith, 1727,4 Virginian (mothered at lames towns, and recovered, lunaricke, and refored. 1726, 1727. Virgina Sauares offer to fight under English ban ners, 1729, Virginian Sanaver brought perforce to peace with the Englift, 1769, 1770. Virginia Sauages religion and disposition, 1771, their countries described feafons climate beafts birds fiftee and other rarities, 1771, 1772. 1773. Virginian account of yeures, 1774. Virginians kill Some English, ibid. their trecherom and bloody nature . 1788. 1780. Virginians wordin the Denill but love him not, 1700. their fearing the hadow of a Piece or Ausket , with their Comine gunpowder, ibid. Virginians pol-Coffe come Pieces, with munition after the maffacre, destroyed cattell, ibid. Virginian plantations Presidency assumed by the Lord De la Ware, its firft (ucceffe, 1754 1755,1756. in what cafe it was left by the faid Lord, and the caufe why he left it, 1762.its commodities, ibid. & 1764. Virginias plantations benefit of corne by Captaine Argall . 1765, its rarities, ibid. Virginian affaires v. ricey, by the approach of diners Captaines there, 1766, 1767. 1768. its commodities, vamorthy Enolifo inhabitants, ibid, chiefe places the Bermida City and Henrico, ibid. its Forts, 1768. Virginias eleuation abone many count ies, 1770. Virginian affaires, Anno 1617, 1618, page 1774. Anno 1619.02ge 1775. the profits that may bee derined thence bid. Anno 1619 et 1620 page 1775, 1775. the Supplies from England in that time, ibid. with Ships men and their employments there, on what commodities for trading, 1775; 1777. Virginian benefactors, 1777. Virginian affaires in the yeare 1621, page 1783. with the Supply of men, goods, and Ships then lent, with other accidents, ibid. cc 1784. and supplies, with relation of matters of trading there, 1784. Virginia's prasses farther related, 1717 . with the hopes to pass

shence to China. 1786. Virginia's Late before the maffacre, 1788. The maffacre it felfe, the plot and execution, 1788, 1789, 1790. 1347. The Englishmen balely murdered in it , ibid. A Virginian converted, discovers be plots, 1790. Virginiaes plantations necessaries, without which it may not fo wel be effected, 1791 Virginizes maffacre freppofed canfe. Seconded by a sicknesse, \$702. Its authorsend , ibid. The fappir thereof by King lames, 1793. Virginia commended and discommended, according to mens diners humours , discovered in Letters, 1806, 1807. Virginia planted by French men, 1807. They afterwards difplanted by Str Samuel Argall, 1808. Virgimia's pollestion and plantation , by the English foundly and largely proved to be tawfull, by a naturall, and nationall right, 1809, 1810.1811. Virginia's firft difconerie, and disconerers, 1812. Virginia rightly poffeffed by the English , by acknowledgement of the Prince there, 1813. By buying, felling, cession, forfeiture, ib. Virginiaes plimation advanceth Gods glory, 1817, 1818, Virginia's mant of good exemped, 1814, 1815. Virginia-plantations loffe by the maffacre, 1816. The number there fince , ibid. Virginia's plantation to the profecuted, and for what reasons, 1826. & feq. As first Religion , honour of the Nation, Oc. Virginia deserves plantation for the profit, 1817. For disburdeming multitudes, 1818. For a temperate climate, ibid. For largemeffe, ibid. Commodions Rivers whose Siding embracements of the earth are finently described, ibid. Sibes Wines, Mines, drugs, &c. ibid. Waterials for Bipping. 1820. Fift.nr. 1821. Tobacco trading, ibid. Hopes of paffage to the South Sea, 1822. For other reasons & advantages, 1824. For being a refreshment to Sips tired with long voyages . ibid. & Virguano, a towne inhabited by Sa-

vages in America neere Mar-

Visitation of the sicke among the

Indians, the horrible hideons

nowle wied by those miserable com-

win,

A Vilion,

Vitachaco. a town in Florida, 1534 Vliffingers take one of the Portingal Gallions. Vllibaholi a walled towne of the Indians in Florida, and the fallion of those walls. Vndermining of termes, 1019 Unicornes horne (averb many from poifon. Vno a River. 1222 Vomiting to death, 1214. Vomi-

ting procured by what Plants in Bermuda Hande. 1891 Vna, a mountaine in the West-Indies. 1280 A Unicorne with a strange horne, 1560. With haire as binge as a

Vnrhankfulneile in Spaniards towards their Indian Benefattors.

Voyages are commonly overthrowne by the Captaines ziving way, or too much reelding lenity , 1389. Voyages by the Lord of Cumberland, 1141, 1142 & 1cq. Voyages by Sir Sebastian Cabot. Ser Thomas Pert, 1177. Ry Sir John Hawkins Sir Fran. Drake, ibid. & feq. Voyages by Capt. Michelion , Capt. Newport, Earle of Suffolke, Sir Ro-bert Dudley, bid. Voyages by Captaine Prefton, Capt. Summers . Sir Anthony Sherley . Capt. Parker, Sir Walter Raleigh, Mr Will. Hawkins, ibid. Capt. Parker, 1243, 1244, @ fea. M ddleton, 1246, 1247. Vovages by Reniger, Borey, Pudfey Steuen, Hare, Fenton, Ward, and Iohn Drake, 1186. Voviges by Captaine Candish, and Capt. Daures, 1191, 1192, coc. By Sir Richard Hawkins, 1367. Oc. By Pamphilo Niruaez Spaniard ,1500, 1501, & feq. By Francisco Pizarro, 1439. & fee. Voyages by Nunno de Guzman Spaniard, 1556. & Icq. Soto his Voyages and di'coveries of Florida, 15:0. at large in leq. Voyages by the the French, and discoueries of Florica, and Canada, 1603.6 fen. Voyages by Monieur de Montz, 1620. of fig. Voyages from Encland, the flips being furni Ged with two hundred pounds mouth to Bilboa with dry fift, 1839. A voyage of feven fayle

Voyages to Virginia furnished by Sir Walter Raleigh 16 6 1646. Voyage of Captains Golnel to Virginia, Anno 1602. pag. 1647. & fee. Voyage by Mr Pringe ro Virginia, 1654. o leg. By Captaine Gilbert to the lame, 1656.ef lea. By Capt. W cymouth to Virginia . 16 co. et lea Auntage to the He of Azon res by the Right Hongrable Rob. Earle of Ellex , 1935, Voyages by Sir Thomas Gates, 1724 16 fea. By Cuptume Argall. 17-8. Voyages to Son mer-lland by ibe Englift, 179: co feq. An admirable voyage from the Betmucas to Ireland in a (mall boat,

Vparafon . a River nanigable in Brafile. Vranaton, a River in the Indics. very commodious for matering,

Vpiegon, atomnein Mawooshen. under the Lord Ballibes, 1874 Vrarino towne, a towne of Atwaccas, and Pa. awogoto, Savagerin America.

Vraritan an Ilandin Brafile, called by the Portingals Alquarrut 1241 . Its description for Navi-Viapo, and Arieppo, ewo Indian

woods. Vrine drunke for want of water.

1188 Vrokere, Indians fo called, 1286 Viquam River. 1364 Vrinama, a Floridan towne: 1533

A Vulcan, a most dreadfull thing calling forth fire & flones as oreat as aboute carling una boltomnelle of thence-iffung waters, 15.9

Vuranqui his raigne over the inhabitants of Peru, his acts and cenquests his making a bridge of Oziers beautifying the Sunnes temple. extent of his dominions, transplantation of countries. 1463,1464 Vzela, a towne in Florida in Ame-

VV Abock yaway an Ar-Wacarimock mountaines neere the riner O. eneco. Walnuts, thirty Ilenas of them.

in Calb, 1838. From Plim- Wancecbanoua, a valley abounding with gold-grains mafied from

from the Welt-country, 1839. Wages detaining, how turbule: 1 ir a

Waratiua ariner in Brafile , its de-Cription for Navigation, 1440 Want of bread in the English Army,

Io. Want, a schriftnaricall and seditious fellow in the Bermudas, 1743 Wareteena, a place in America,

Warooca, a towne of the Arwacca Sapages in the Indies, 1285 Warraskoyat, Indian-Virginians,

Warres between the Portingals, and the Indians ; its effects, 1321 Warres made for the water, 1364 Warres betweene the Indians and Spaniards in Chili.

Warriers that have killed men among the Samages of Tuppan, have as many holes board through their milage in token of bonour, 1189 Warlike Fleets fer forth by the Eng-Wh Deborah, the Q. Elizabeth,

Supposed cause of unbealthinesse in

Port-royall among the French ,

1622. Water facrificed to by the

1712. Waterwanting in the Eng-

lift armie,

Warry iourneys.

with a good returne, Water thatis (alt dangerousity drunk, 1143. Strange kinde of watering, 1146. Water-arinhing endangereth many, 1178. Want of freshwater, 1188. Water too much Savares. drunke kils Will. Pircher, ibid. Capt. Weymoths voyage to Virgi-Salt-mater cureth fores, 1207 Water unwholfome and deadly, 1248 Water burning and tasting 1659,1660 like brimftone, 1:75. Water venemous, 1379. Water very hot

in a lake of Florida, 1549. Bad thony Kniuet. waters breeding fundry diseases, Whales have open heads , whereat 1623. Waters that being drunke, the Sword-fift, 1313, 1376, caused teeth to fall in two houres 1377,1685 space, 1624. Watry ground the

Whale-filling in the Berroudas, and its benefit, Whitfon-Bayin Virginia, 1654 Virginians in time of tempeft. Cast Rich. Whitbornes Voyages to 1702. Water want in Virginia, 1883 French Pirate.

Whelps dreft and caten, Wayanatles, Savares fo called in the West-Indies, 1211. Their comthe Indians. plexion, cowardlineffe, painting, ladging, Tobacco, chiefe towne, Wia a River in Guiarra, 1228 Wasnawazons, Canibels in Ameri-

co.1213. Their simplicity, stature, feeding lazinelle, women, 12:0 Waymores Savages in Brafile, their flature, valour, rudeneffe, fwiftnelle, man-eating, Way congazons, called by the Indi-

dians locoex, are Brafilian Sa- | Wiawia, a towne in the West-Inwages, their habitation, Stature, women-warrierrs, lodging, iarres, man eating.

Weaknelle of the English in New-England, canfing the Indians to Wealth fred ambition among Cap-

Weannocks . Indians in Virginia, their number of fighting men, 1692 Weearopona, a towne of the Arwaccas in America.

Weeping in falutation an expression Florida.

Three Wels, one very hot, another scalding bot . a third temperate, neere a cold Hill. 1243 Werowances, the title of a King in

1602 Virginia. Werawocomoco River in Virgi-1602

1658

West-winds constantly, Master Wests plantation at the Fals sa Virginia, West-country voyage in twelve Ships

Weltons men abuse the Savages of Maifachenfets, which canfed much unkindne fe to the English, 1857. Their mifery among the

nia, 1659. deleq His danger by lands and rock + Shoales, escape and arisall at Pentecost-harbour,

AWhale very great, enten by Anthey breathe, their battaile with

AWhale worshipped the New-found-land, 188 2. His gravage to Lisbone, is taken by a

1202 Whittingtons communication with Wiapogo River, 1250, Its commodiries. 1161.1163.1264.at large.

threescore learnes broad supposed the bigg fin the world, 1267, 1268. Its fituation and ftrength 1270. English plant there , ibid. Wiaumli, a River to the North of

dies, 1280. Or Wia Wiam. 1283. Tis inhabited by the Yaios and other Samages. Wighcocamoco riverin Virginia,

1848 Wighfacan, a medicinable plant in Virginia.

Wikeries are Indians that inhabite the Plaines of Samia, 1248 M' Will. Scrachy his relation of Sir Tho: Gares voyage, and of the Colony of Virginia, 1734

of obedience in some Indians of William Morgan his happy of most Arange deliverance. Wild-peefe in great Shoales, 1845 Willowes

M' Willons relations at large, 1661, 1262. Ofice.

Wine ouerthroweth more then the enemy, \$349. The Wine of the Nauvin 88. Wine canfeth embition & dissen-

Extreame winds, 1172. In the firmits of Magellane, 1194. An exceeding winde by Sea and Land, 1500. Winds that pierce iron and fone, Winter not durable by Christians,

Witawamack, an infulting flane among the Savages, opprobrious to the English. Vines counted a dignitie among the

Savages, the having of many of them only permitted to the King , and those that have proved them-Selues brane fellows, 1188, 1217. Wines and children fold for Hatthets and Knines, 1208. Wives put away for adultery or lo. Winkfield dreth at the fight in Cadiz, in warlike manner bu-

ried. Wolues in New-England purfising our Fralish Dogs, 1849. Wolucs in the New-found-land faming and playing with En lish masty dogs,

Womens frange entertaining ftraners among Savages, 1717. Women dancing frarke nabed, 1618. Indian womens modeftie, yetfimiliaritie, 1158,1159. Women got by valour among the Savages, 1209. Women Archers, 1216. 1228. Woman with voly bodies and good faces, 1228. Eight WOthen bought for a red-hafted knife, 1249. A woman reafied, 1272. Women farke naked, 1268 Women goe before men in Brafile, 1292. Their agreement there

THE TABLE.

amono themselve their chastitie if | Wounds, how cured, 1310, 1211 maried but loo enelle unmaried. 1341. A woninsprice among it the Carios of the West Indies, 1357. Women toile amone fome Indians, 1282. Women that rewomen the wrong of their bushands. not Colitarily by them Colves called Amazons, 1437. Women (no not Kings dangiters) might not enter the Temple of the Sunne a. mone the ancient inhabitants of Peru. 1465. Womens vlave and babite among some Indians of Florid 1.1 124. Women among ft the Indians put to vile flavery, 1860. Women not suffered to enter any of the Ships of the King of Spaines A-mada.

Wonders of the new World, 1477. Wood-bind, a place running on trees like a Vine , that causeth a welement and harmieffe purging,

Wood that maketh fift drunk.

Wood of all colours. 1670 Wood as bard as iron. ibid. Words of the Savages language in Virginia. 1667 Wormes how killed in the bodie,

Wormes breeding great-terment, \$251. Very pernicions in Brafile. but killed by Garlicke , 1382. Wormes poyloning water, 1286. Wormes denouring the flesh \$365. Wormes very presudsciall to Bips without Beating, under the LaninoEtiall.

Wyanalles, a towne in the West-Indies. Wyapocoories, inhabitants in a Youghtanund inhabitants of Vir-

Province of Guiana. Wywaypananii Indiani with dedrshigher then their heads, . 89

TAlisco . a Province neere the X South Sea. 1559. The great loffe of inhabitants in it by the Spanish inhumane cruelty, 1581. Eight hundred towner arned in those Realmes by Spaniar ds, ibid. Xalpa Province discourred by the Spaniards. Xaltenango Province.

Xaqua , a harbour in the flan! of Cuba. Xaragua, a dominion in the He Hifpaniola, its King and Lords trai-

teroufly burnt by the Spaniards. the Queene hanged, the youths thrust through, or having their legs cut off. they that fled condem. red to perpetual flaverie, 1572 Xualla, Province in Florida, 1539

TACS, Indians neere the River I Wyapoco, their nature and defeription, Yaguiana, atonne in Hispaniola,

Capt. Yerdly Deputy Governour sa Virginia, 1773. His acts and exploses there, 1bid. & 1774 Yerua viua, an hearbe that is ensible, and thrinkes at any mans touch, not resprouting till his departure,

ginia, Youwalprenay, a tomue of the Caribes.

Ytara an America Floridan town.

Ytaua, a towne in Florida, 1541 Yupaha, an Indian country in Florida, ruled by a woman , her great town commodities, and abundance of gold,

Yupanqui an Emperone of Peru before the Spanish conquest his difficult attempts, 1474. He fub. dued the Chunchus, and fo extended his Empire , ibid. @ 1475. His affants of the Chiribnana Savage Nation, and successe his proceeding to conquer Chili, 1475 his miraculous Fort and buils dings, other acts and death, 1477.

Yuia Pari, a Riverin America, ine inhabitants thereabout sortured by the Spaniards.

ZAcheo, a place so called, 1186 Zapatula, a place of New-Spaine, 8,71 Zemie, an Indian Nation neere the Riner of Place. Zemais Saluaisco, Indians (ocalled in the River Parana , their defeription, 1350,1352 Zumpanga , a towne of Indians,

FINIS.